

Camibia Will Not Yield

"Keep these fighting words before ye"

Courting the Friendship of the Wicked

March 3, 2012

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



It is a dreadful part of the example, that infernal malevolence had had pious apologists, who read their lectures on frailties in favour of crimes; who abandoned the weak, and court the friendship of the wicked. – *Letter on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

I was a great deal less than ecstatic, but more than mildly pleased to see Simon Heffer's article chronicling the Labour Party's attempts to "destroy Britishness" through massive immigration. What I liked about Heffer's article was his recognition that the native Brits had every right to expect their rulers and those immigrants who come to Britain to respect the native British culture:

In a society that remains more than 90 per cent indigenously British, it is ludicrous to be ashamed of national traditions, rooted in common values from a shared past.

And it is entirely right to expect those who come here to accept those values and traditions, and not be made – usually by mischievous, politically-motivated white liberals – to feel hostile towards them.

When even many atheists recognise the central importance of Christianity to the culture and institutions of our country – and I am one of them – it is offensive to the intellect as well as to the spiritual to seek to downgrade or marginalize that faith.

Our society needs an end to mass immigration.

What I did not like about the article was Heffer's attempt to avoid both the racial and religious issue. He, like the members of the English Defence League (EDL), who wanted "all decent people be they black, white, Christian, Sikh, Jewish or Muslim..." to ban together for England, fails to come to grips with the fact that the non-white, non-Christian immigrants will never become good Britons. First and foremost they can't become good Britons, because a good Briton, by definition, is white and he is Christian. There is no other kind of Briton. To suggest there can be an abstract British citizen, loyal to an abstract Britain with no racial or religious identity is to enter the utopian realm of Thomas Paine. And secondly, the Moslems and the people of color do not want to become good Britons. The Moslems want to make Britain into Islamabad, and the blacks want to rape and pillage their way through Britain.

Heffer, though an atheist, thinks that respect for Britain's national identity, "Founded on Christian values of tolerance and decency..." is the best way to guarantee a harmonious future for all our people, of whatever racial background..." That sounds disgusting. Let's all hold hands and sing the Coca Cola song. There are some nonbelievers, such as George Eliot, Thomas Jefferson, and Simon Heffer, who admire Christianity as an ethical system. Such "friends" of Christianity are dangerous because Christianity severed from the belief in Christ as the son of God becomes a secularized ethical system (I believe it's called liberalism) in which faith, hope, and charity are replaced by "tolerance and decency" which translates to tolerance for evils, such as abortion and miscegenation, and respect for decency as defined by liberals. True charity, which stems from faith in Christ, is more often than not deemed too intolerant and indecent in the extreme by liberals who want white Christians to tolerate the evils liberals do and the moral indecencies that they glory in.

Heffner has taken one baby step toward the light, but he will remain largely in the dark if he continues to ignore the obvious: Racial and religious diversity kills. Britain and every other European nation must be racially and religiously non-diverse if they hope to survive.

Recent barbarian atrocities in Britain, a mild white protest of the atrocities, and a satanic liberal response to the mild protest, illustrate the present position of white people vis-à-vis the state and vis-à-vis the non-white cultures: In Rochdale, England (I've never been there but I'm told it's in the northwest) eleven Asian men, at least they are called men, raped and assaulted a number of young white girls. In other words, the subhuman Asians are practicing pedophiles. When a few white teenagers threw rocks at the businesses of the offending Asians, the police threatened "robust" action against people seeking to "take advantage" of the racial tension in the town. And when the inclusive, "we love everybody" English Defence League (called an "extreme right wing" organization) planned a protest of the Asian barbarities, the police warned that "There are clear racial elements behind this. The EDL are coming to Manchester again on Saturday. We have a robust policing operation in place. I'm very confident of that policing operation." The police went on to warn white Britons not to put anything inflammatory up on Facebook or Twitter. "We are, as a police service, monitoring all the sites. Where we see things that are inflammatory or trying to incite or corral people for criminal activity, we will act."

It doesn't matter what European country you look at; the same nightmare is unfolding. A sick, degenerate white hierarchy opens up their country to the colored hordes. They hope that the colored barbarians will dispose of the white grazers and then become loving subjects of the Atticus Finches of Liberaldom. The first part of the scenario is already taking place, the second part never will take place.

Once they enter the formerly European nations the colored barbarians do what they did in their own countries — they behave like barbarians. The only difference is that in the white countries there is no one to check them. The colored barbarians have free license to murder, rape, and rob white people. If there is even the slightest murmur of a protest from white people the government responds as it did in the Rochdale pedophile incidents; it vows to crack down on white racists. And of course the crackdown works. Even mild protests are framed in such

all inclusive language — “we respect all races and faiths” and “we deplore all violence” — that the protestors become a kind of support group for the barbarians of color, reassuring them that white people won’t become violent, and white people are not against all colored barbarians, just a few misguided, naughty ones.

I see the suicide of the white race taking place before my eyes, but I still can’t understand it. How long will white people remain a non-people? Shakespeare is the pre-eminent European poet because of the breadth and depth of his poetic vision. He is always our contemporary because he imagined and depicted every aspect of the human condition. He speaks to us, the suicidal whites, across the centuries: King Lear brings untold miseries on himself, his subjects, and his loved ones by his folly. But through suffering, Lear is ennobled. Suffering has not driven him mad; it has driven him to sanctity. And it is from that new perspective, the perspective of a saint, that King Lear realizes there are human beings so hideously evil that there can be only one response to them: “And when I have stol’n upon these son-in-laws, Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill!”

While liberals look to punish even so much as an angry word from a white grazer, they themselves choose violence to solve all their problems. Does childbirth interfere with a woman’s right to be free and fulfilled? Then wipe out the children in their mothers’ wombs. Do white people pose a threat to the new Babylonian utopia? Then bring in the colored barbarians and turn them loose on the whites. The liberals’ hands are covered with blood, and the barbarians’ hands are covered with blood. Yet still the white grazers remain tolerant, supportive, and respectful toward the governments that have sanctioned the extermination of the white race. Young white males join their nations’ armies and navies to fight for the new, white-hating Babylonian world order. And white parents support school and church where their children learn to hate the white race and worship the colored races. How long, oh Lord, how long?

The conservative American columnist Chilton Williamson recently predicted that the United States would soon be engaged in a civil war because of the irreconcilable racial groups currently residing in the land mass called the United States. A civil war would be an improvement on the present war in which only the liberals and the colored barbarians are fighting. It would be most heartening if white people actually started holding up their end of the war. A war in which only one side is fighting can hardly even qualify as a war, unless you call killing cattle in a slaughterhouse a warlike activity. Without a whimper Europeans have turned themselves over to the butchers.

Should we just assume that the white race is a cowardly race of spineless jellyfish and leave it at that? We can’t if we want to get at the truth. White people have shown tremendous courage during national disasters in their own countries and when going to the aid of victims of national disasters in other countries. It is in defense of their own against colored aggression that they seem completely helpless. Why should this be so?

White people cannot act in accord against a common colored enemy, because they believe what their leaders have told them, that they are a pariah race of people who must do penance for the sins of their ancestors. This is why whites always frame even their most mild protests against colored atrocities in non-racial terms: “... all decent people, be they black, white, Christian, Sikh, Jewish or Muslim...” The whites will remain in bondage, at the mercy of a merciless, hate-filled hierarchy of liberals and the colored barbarians, so long as they continue to seek redemption from the devil. And it is the devil who rules Liberaldom through the good offices of the liberal. The ideals of the French Jacobins have become the ruling principles throughout the European countries:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

If white people, such as the members of the EDL who try to stop white genocide with Coca Cola songs, would look to a different leadership, the leadership of their honored dead, they could find in that leadership the white man’s answer to the demonic rule of the liberals and the colored barbarians. It was with the backing and the encouragement of Satan that the liberals urged, and then when they got power they demanded, that all Europeans break with their evil past, which was racist, sexist, homophobic and completely unprogressive. And thus far the white grazers have been mesmerized by modernity. Some aspects of it might make them uncomfortable, but they are still too mesmerized by it to forsake it. So they keep hoping against hope that the liberals will be merciful to them and let them live in Babylon. But the god of Liberaldom does not extend mercy to the penitent. No amount of groveling will atone for the white man’s sins against the black gods of Liberaldom. The white man will not be forgiven even in death. And what was the unforgivable sin of the white man? He was the Christ-bearer: that was his sin. Asian pedophiles rape white girls in Britain, and black barbarians rape and torture whites in the United States, South Africa and every European country, because the liberal hierarchies of every European nation condone such atrocities. And they will go on condoning and defending such atrocities because they hate the Son of God and His people. As Burke said, they want to tear God to pieces by destroying the image of God in man.

When the British police officials warned that they were going to take “robust” action against whites seeking to retaliate against the Asian pedophiles, what were they really saying? Let me translate. They were saying, “I love the devil and all his works, and I hate Christ and all His works.” If the whites with some spark of whiteness left in their souls, such as the Coca Cola songsters of the EDL, could see who really rules Britain and all of Europe, they might stop seeking redemption from the prince of darkness and turn to the God who defends the hopeless and those who fight for the hopeless. Tolerance of evil is not Christian. Hatred of one’s own is not Christian. And the support of Satan’s reign on earth is damnable. We all die in the end, but shouldn’t we die fighting for His reign of charity rather than Satan’s reign of darkness? +

That Which is Lost

March 10, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Moments

Tags: Charles Dickens, Stephen Roose Hughes



"I had heard of that clergyman, as having buried many scores of the shipwrecked people; of his having opened his house and heart to their agonised friends; of his having used a most sweet and patient diligence for weeks and weeks, in the performance of the forlornest offices that Man can render to his kind; of his having most tenderly and thoroughly devoted himself to the dead, and to those who were sorrowing for the dead. I had said to myself, 'In the Christmas season of the year, I should like to see that man!'" — Charles Dickens' *The Uncommercial Traveller*

A friend with kinist sympathies recently called me to express his delight that Pat Buchanan had been fired from his position from MSNBC. He was delighted because he thought that Pat would now be on our side! I can understand my friend's feelings. Pat Buchanan, although marginalized, still has a voice within Liberaldom. It is only natural that a kinist from outside Liberaldom should hope for a voice within Liberaldom. But shouldn't our hopes be based on something real? Pat has always consistently supported the propositional idea of a nation. He has never maintained that the United States should be a white, Christian nation. What Mr. Buchanan has consistently urged, as Simon Heffer also urged in Britain, is that immigrants of color should respect the existing culture and customs of the white Americans. That's all Mr. Buchanan ever maintained. And for expressing those views, he was fired, which should not surprise us because we know that liberals are totalitarians. They talk about free speech and fair play when they are out of power, but once they obtain power they do not tolerate any opposition. And there has been a marked change in liberal behavior over the last ten years. They no longer even try to cloak the Babylonian night of liberalism with some of the trappings from the Christian day of Europe. Mainstream newspapers show homosexual lovers on their front pages, interracial couples are strewn throughout the television shows, and sexual depravities that would have made Caligula blush are celebrated in print, on screen, and on television. When such liberal depravities are so blatant, it's a sign that the liberals do not think they will ever be outside looking in again. They are the powers that be and they see no sun setting on their day.

What does it mean when journalists such as Pat Buchanan and Glenn Beck, men who voiced their objections to certain liberal policies respectfully while following the rules of Liberaldom, are cast out of Liberaldom? It means that liberals do not want a multicultural democratic society of "you respect my culture, and I'll respect yours." They want a totalitarian state dedicated to the hatred of the white Christian European and the worship of the black man.

The so-called "democratic process" is merely a cloak for totalitarian liberalism. When liberals achieve the power necessary to quench all opposition they dispense with all pretexts. Elections in the European countries are merely state-sponsored show trials; we know the verdict before the verdict is given. The elected official will support "our democratic institutions" no matter which party he represents. And supporting our democratic institutions means supporting totalitarian liberalism and the state religion of totalitarian liberalism, which is negro worship.

If we look at the existing world order with the eyes of the conservative prognosticators or the mad-dog liberals, everything seems cheerless, dark and deadly. But do those men of Liberaldom see with blinding sight? No, they do not. Even the conservative liberals who profess to be religious do not look at the Europeans' history with their hearts. The eyes of reason see a Liberaldom that is forever. But the European heart, which has not been destroyed by the ignorance of reason, can see that antique Europe was His Europe and the antique Europeans were His people. The European people will be tested and tried, but they will not perish if they hold to the vision of Christ that is the common inheritance of all Europeans who have not forsaken their blood.

At this point I want to use a word that has been mightily abused. That word is 'Biblical.' It is currently used to connote a form of Christian Judaism in which the end of the world can be brought on by supporting the nation-state of Israel. I use the word in a more traditional and existential sense. The ancient Hebrews were enjoined by the prophets to view themselves as a Biblical people, a people connected to a God who ruled over all of human history. Their God was not to be found in nature. Whenever the Hebrews made nature their god they lost their vision of the true God. And the modern European has made the nature-worshipping heresy his own.

God cannot come to a people who do not call on Him by name. If Christ becomes part of a rationalist nature theology, or if He becomes a super human civil rights worker or anything other than the God who is the beginning and the end, He will turn into airy nothing and be abstracted from the vital inner life of the European people. The existentialist writers of the mid-twentieth century were right to stress existence over essence, but why should such an existential emphasis lead to a denial of God? It should only lead to a denial of the abstract 'Gods' of the Christian theologians and the pagan nature religions. The God of Abraham, Jacob, Isaac, and St. Paul is an existential God! His existence precedes the theologians' theories about the essence of God. When Europeans disregarded theories about the nature of a God whose existence could be inferred by reason contemplating nature, and concentrated instead on keeping faith with the God who took flesh and dwelt amongst them, they were a people with a purpose and a vision. Once they abstracted God from their blood, they lost their vision and their purpose. If the anti-European clergymen had kept faith with their people and the incarnate God, as distinct from the abstract God, they would not have gone whoring after negro gods in order to give them a vital blood connection to the deity. The kingdom of God was truly within them, and they gave it up for the abstract negro gods of nature. In the hands of the decadents, the 20th and 21st century Christless Christians, Christianity has become a faithless faith that is good when it serves liberalism and bad when it does not. The antidote for Christless Christianity is European Christianity, the faith of our ancestors.

Prior to the 20th century the unquestioned assumption among Europeans, with the exception of a few Rousseauian intellectuals, was that European culture was good. And it was considered good because the European people were Christian. By the latter half of the 20th century the unquestioned assumption of the modern Europeans was that the pre-20th century European culture was evil. And it was considered evil because the Europeans of that time period were Christian. Because European Christianity was so evil, the mad-dog liberals dispensed with it altogether. The halfway-house Christians tried to save Christianity by making a distinction between the evil Christianity practiced by the Europeans and the new Christianity preached by the modern Christian clergy. But what if the Christianity of the antique Europeans was the true "practical" Christianity? In point of fact it was and it is. Kipling wrote that "The people, Lord, Thy people, are good enough for me." The Christian faith of the antique Europeans is good enough for all of us.

There are so many white moments in the works of Charles Dickens, moments when we see the image of our Savior reflected in the charitable outreach of one human being to another. One such moment occurs in the *Pickwick Papers* when Pickwick forgives Jingle. Another such moment takes place when Pip tells Magwitch that, "Please God, I will be as true to you as you

have been to me!" And then there is that wonderful moment when Nicholas Nickleby steps forward and stops Wackford Squeers from beating Smike. Such white moments define European Christianity. Those Dickensian heroes of charity reflected the real, the true, European Christianity. Dickens called it "practical Christianity," and he thought the real life embodiment of it was the Reverend Stephen Roose Hughes of Llanallgo, Wales. If you still have a European heart prepare to shed tears when you read Dickens' report, in the second chapter of *The Uncommercial Traveller*, of a shipwreck that took place in 1859 off the coast of Wales. Over 500 men and women lost their lives in the wreck and the Rev. Hughes turned his church into a refuge for the relatives of the dead and his churchyard into a burial ground for the honored dead. Honored because they were human beings created in His image. Dickens came to the church some two months after the wreck. He never forgot the works of charity he saw performed by a man who had the true faith, bred in the bone.

So cheerful of spirit and guiltless of affectation, as true practical Christianity ever is! I read more of the New Testament in the fresh frank face going up the village beside me, in five minutes, than I have read in anathematising discourses (albeit put to press with enormous flourishing of trumpets), in all my life. I heard more of the Sacred Book in the cordial voice that had nothing to say about its owner, than in all the would-be celestial pairs of bellows that have ever blown conceit at me.

Again –

He had numbered each body in a register describing it, and had placed a corresponding number on each coffin, and over each grave. Identified bodies he had buried singly, in private graves, in another part of the church-yard. Several bodies had been exhumed from the graves of four, as relatives had come from a distance and seen his register; and, when recognised, these had been reburied in private graves, so that the mourners might erect separate headstones over the remains. In all such cases he had performed the funeral service a second time, and the ladies of his house had attended...

The cheerful earnestness of this good Christian minister was as consolatory, as the circumstances out of which it shone were sad. I never have seen anything more delightfully genuine than the calm dismissal by himself and his household of all they had undergone, as a simple duty that was quietly done and ended. In speaking of it, they spoke of it with great compassion for the bereaved; but laid no stress upon their own hard share in those weary weeks, except as it had attached many people to them as friends, and elicited many touching expressions of gratitude.

And –

In this noble modesty, in this beautiful simplicity, in this serene avoidance of the least attempt to 'improve' an occasion which might be supposed to have sunk of its own weight into my heart, I seemed to have happily come, in a few steps, from the churchyard with its open grave, which was the type of Death, to the Christian dwelling side by side with it, which was the type of Resurrection. I never shall think of the former, without the latter. The two will always rest side by side in my memory. If I had lost any one dear to me in this unfortunate ship, if I had made a voyage from Australia to look at the grave in the churchyard, I should go away, thankful to GOD that that house was so close to it, and that its shadow by day and its domestic lights by night fell upon the earth in which its Master had so tenderly laid my dear one's head.

Rev. Hughes was an uncommon man even then. But such Christian charity and heroism was not that uncommon in Christian Europe. We must see what we have lost, the image of God in man, if we are ever going to cast off the Egyptian night of the liberals and seek the Christian day of the antique Europeans.

Dickens used the term practical Christianity to describe the Rev. Hughes' bred-in-the-bone Christianity. But is such a faith practical from a materialist standpoint? No, it is not practical from a materialist perspective. It is practical though, if human beings have souls. If that is the case what could be more practical than to be in union with the Blessed Savior whose love passeth all understanding? Very few moderns deny God; they simply put Him in an intellectual box and save Him for the next world in case science doesn't conquer death before it's their turn to die. But can God be put on hold in that matter? Should the living God be treated as one who is dead in this world? Won't human beings then seek other gods, such as the negro, in order to feel connected to something other than their own minds? Frost wrote of two paths that diverged in the woods. Our ancestors took the path that led to Calvary because they saw their salvation in the cross of Christ. The modern Europeans took the other path. There was no cross and no thorns on that path, but there was also no God of love on that path. A science lab is a dark, loveless place. And a church with a negro God at the altar is a hideous, loathsome dwelling.

Since the Europeans have followed the pied pipers of Liberaldom they have become as sounding brass. So long as they remain connected to the brave new world of negro-worshipping, Christless Christianity, and separated from the practical Christianity of the Rev. Stephen Roose Hughes of old Europe, they will be lost souls wandering in the desolate dwellings of Liberaldom. But the romance of the Cross will always have its European champions. The heart that truly loves, the European heart, will fight for that which is lost, our sacred Europe. +

*No, the heart that has truly loved never forgets,
But as truly loves on to the close...*

To This Battle Field: Counterrevolution in Babylon

March 17, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders? — Edmund Burke in *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

One of the nice things about traveling through Britain in the early 1970's was that you could hitchhike and get picked up by perfectly respectable people. What was foolhardy in the States was considered quite safe in the United Kingdom. I have every one of the Brits who stopped and gave me a lift filed away somewhere in my memory banks. And every once and a while one or two of them pop up in my puppet show of memory. The other day I found myself remembering an Englishman who picked me up somewhere in Lancashire. I was on my way to the Lake District, and he was on his way home with his wife and two children from an outing in the resort town of Blackpool. At least I think it was Blackpool, but don't hold me to that detail.

I don't remember how many miles I traveled with the family, but I do remember that we stopped and had some tea and crackers at some sort of roadside refreshment stand. Of course it was useless to offer to pay; my money was never accepted by any of those wonderful, hospitable Brits. Naturally when someone is kind enough to give you a ride and welcome you into their family for part of a day you want to reciprocate your host's kindness by being an agreeable companion and talking about what he is interested in. My host was passionately fond of hunting and football. As regards football — I couldn't talk very intelligently about their English football, but I could and did talk about the differences between American and European football. Nor could I claim great expertise in hunting. I was a city boy without any practical knowledge of field and stream sports. But it was the talk of hunting that shifted the conversation into deeper waters. My host was not pleased with the red tape he had to go through to get a permit for a hunting shotgun. Nor was he pleased that once the permit was obtained he could not use lead pellets; he had to use the steel bullets. This was before Britain banned every kind of firearm. Without any premonition of impending doom I asked my friend if he thought Britain was moving toward a total ban on all firearms. "That will never happen," he said, "It would be unthinkable."

Every time I see the *Hound of the Baskervilles* movie starring Basil Rathbone as Sherlock Holmes, I think of that good-natured, kindly Brit. I think of him because at a crucial point in the movie, when the Lord of Baskerville Hall is about to be killed by the hound, Holmes and Watson kill the hound with their revolvers. In modern Britain where the unthinkable happened, Lord Baskerville is a dead man under the same circumstances. That is what the mad-dog rulers of Britain want. They want to exterminate the native-born white Brits and replace them with colored barbarians, who are infinitely more evil and merciless than a savage hound. And no European, whose nation's gun laws might not be quite as strict as Britain's, can feel smug about his own country. The ruling elite in every European nation have the same goal as the British rulers, that is, the extermination of the native-born whites. Even without banning gun ownership, the liberals can demonize, isolate, and destroy. Witness the fate of Randy Weaver's family and the Branch Davidians in this country. We should hold onto our guns as long as we can, but gun ownership is not a magic talisman. When white people do not believe they are a people, they will succumb to liberalism whether they own guns or not. And if they believe themselves to be a people with a special destiny, as the antique Europeans once believed, they will fight with or without guns, and they will prevail.

I often wonder what happened to that genial Brit, just as I wonder what happened to all the Southern segregationists of the 1960's. Did they all go underground? Most likely. The "democratic" leaders of European nations, in the true spirit of democracy, never consult the governed on any radical shift in policy. The native-born Brits were not asked if they wanted to give up their right of self-defense nor were the Southern whites asked if they wanted to integrate. The liberal governments did not consult their people on such questions because they knew the people would have said, "No, we don't want to give up our firearms," and "No, we don't want to integrate."

After radical changes by fiat the liberals start the retraining process. School, church, and media attack racism, sexism, and gun ownership as something evil from the bad old days when white Europeans ruled the roost. But the retraining process only applies to white youths. The colored people own and use guns, much less constructively than white people. The colored people are allowed to be sexist. And the colored people are not only allowed, but encouraged to be rabid racists. It is only the white people, never the colored people, who need to be retrained into oblivion.

Democracy-loving conservatives are fond of scolding white people after the fact when they are deprived of their liberties. "You should have voted," they say. "You should have formed committees, and sent petitions to Washington," they scold. But it is completely ahistorical to say such things. Democracies are oligarchies in which all decisions are made by a select few who then impose their will on the people. All resistance from within the confines of the democratic system is futile, because the liberal rulers of the democratic oligarchy make up the rules for the democratic oligarchy. You can't vote against integration, because that is a major tenet of the liberal oligarchy. You can't vote against the systemic elimination of white Europeans through massive colored immigration, because the extermination of the white race is the *raison d'être* of the liberals. And on it goes — nothing that would alter the existing liberal power structure is ever subject to a vote. All committees and think-tanks that are created by "conservatives" with the stated intent to "have an influence" are just so much gas. They accomplish nothing because they are adjuncts of Liberaldom. You can't destroy Liberaldom from within Liberaldom, any more than you can paint the outside of your house from the inside.

I go back to Burke who said, "It is a great evil, that of a civil war. But in that state of things a civil war which would give to good men and a good cause some means of struggle, is a blessing..." Precisely, the liberals have created a democratic state religion with a whole pantheon of greater and lesser colored gods. Every aspect of the pagan nature religions, including human sacrifice, has been re-created by the liberals with the addition of a few Christian symbols, perverted to stand for something diametrically opposed to Christianity. A civil war waged against such a satanic theocracy would indeed be a blessing.

Whenever a man brings up the topic of counter-revolution — attacking the Western democracies from outside the framework of democracy — that man is called impractical. What could be more practical than fighting against demonic foes who will not rest until they have your heart's blood? Most naysayers are infected with the democratic virus. They really believe that the democratic process in and of itself is a quasi-divine thing that all men must worship. And a small number of naysayers are against counterrevolution because they see no hope for its success. The latter have a narrow view of counterrevolution. Just because an immediate, full-scale military assault would not be successful does not mean the antique European has to embrace institutionalized Satanism. Far from it! We fight a war of spiritual preparation from within the bowels of Liberaldom until the day of a final reckoning comes. And if it never comes in our lifetime? Well, then we will have lived and struggled for "the good cause" and we will go to our house justified. Would you have it otherwise and die having served Liberaldom? What is Christian is always what is practical. If Satan rules Liberaldom, then we should stop worshipping the democratic process and fight against Liberaldom.

I hear the dissenting chorus: "Democracy is the Christian way, multiculturalism is Christian tolerance, and miscegenation is Christian love and brotherhood." Is it really so difficult to decide whether the modern Christian churchmen or the antique Europeans got it right? If you live only in the theoretical realm your faith will be a reed blowing in the winds of modernity. But if you have a heart that still lives you will see where the truth lies. Our minds can be blinded by an intellectual shell game, but not our hearts.

When I read the history of the European settlements in this country and other countries such as South Africa, New Zealand, and Australia, I am struck by the fact that those white settlers took it as a given that they had to fight to carve out European homes while surrounded by colored barbarians who wanted their blood. And by a miracle of God's grace and human beings cooperating with God's grace, those white settlers of the colored lands, who are now called the spoilers of the colored lands, turned what had once been heathen lands into Christian lands. Now we are witnessing, throughout every European nation, the reversal of the European expansion into the heathen lands. The colored barbarians have driven the whites from their lands, and they are well on their way to making the formerly white European nations into colored barbarian nations. This is supposed to be a good thing. "We must be multiracial and multicultural if we are to survive," liberals such as Tony Blair tell us. But no multiracial, multicultural nation ever survived. And the European nations will not be the exceptions. They will either be white Christian nations, because the whites finally rose up and drove the colored heathen into the sea, or they will be colored, barbarian nations.

A demonic character in the Alfred Hitchcock film *Strangers on a Train* brags that, "I'm a very clever fellow." And so is the devil a very clever fellow. The devil didn't attack God head-on; instead he made Him of no consequence by trivializing Him. That is the striking thing about the new feel-good, fusionist Christianity of the Christian churches. It is astonishingly superficial and trivial because it is liberal, and liberalism is superficial and trivial. The Europeans have forsaken the spiritual depths of European Christianity in order to be multicultural. If blacks can't relate to Christ as the Son of God, then make Him into a great civil rights advocate on a slightly lower level than Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King Jr. Similar accommodations have been made for every other non-white race. But when inclusiveness replaces spiritual depth, there is no real faith left in the organized churches; they become houses of desolation. The Christian faith is the bulwark of the Europeans. If they wallow in the superficial pig sty of inclusive, multicultural Christianity, they will not be able to mount an attack against Liberalism, because they will not see any difference between themselves and the colored barbarians. They will have renounced the non-blended God of the antique Europeans in order to worship in the new inclusive Church of Satan, in which the negro always receives the greatest adulation and homage.

At age thirty, Richard Weaver found that he had to rethink the basic assumptions of his twenties, because he had come to the realization that his basic assumptions had been wrong. I found myself in a similar position at age 24. I came to the conclusion that everything I had been taught for the past six years in the unhallowed halls of academia was fundamentally wrong. And I would sum up the fundamental error at the heart of my education and the education of all modern Europeans by citing Descartes' belief that a man could only come to know reality by divesting himself of all that he had been brought up to believe. If such a dictate were to be followed, and it *has* been followed, the European would be cut off from his past where Christ dwells, and he would be cut off from his heartfelt sentiments about the nature of reality. And as a consequence the European is at the mercy of the abstract philosophers and their psychological descendants. I remember, toward the end of my purgatory in academia, asking my Shakespearean studies "teacher," who insisted on forcing a Freudian interpretation on Shakespeare's plays, how a second-rate philosopher-psychologist could tell us anything about a first-rate poet. Is our existence here on earth a poetic drama, as St. Paul and the European poets tell us? Or is it a problem in Logic 101? "There are more things in heaven and Earth, Horatio, Than are dreamt of in our philosophy." Indeed there are! There is no God of love in "our philosophy." There is no personal God in all of feel-good, "I'm okay, you're okay," Jungian psychology. The European must seek the depths where his people reside because there He resides as well. All is cheerless, dark, and deadly, because the modern European is no longer connected to the fairy tale, Christian world of old Europe. He has embraced the oblivion of multicultural, racially diverse Babylon.

A "mere" feeling is ultimately at the heart of our resistance to the mind-forged Babylon of the liberals. I recall a moment in my life that turned me into a raging anti-liberal. I was reading Bertrand Russell for a philosophy course. He stated with mathematical certainty that we lived in a godless, loveless universe. My heart rebelled against Russell's cold, mathematical atheism. In a brief moment of illumination, I saw the image of God in man in the honored dead of Europe and in those still living who were connected to His Europe. I knew Russell was wrong. There is a deeper knowledge that is hidden from the philosophers and the Pharisees. Our sacred civilization was rooted in a faith in the personal God who St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. When we see with St. Paul's eyes again, having cast off the blindness of superficial, Descartian logic, we will be men again, and we will do what our ancestors did so well. We will champion the true European fairy tale of Christ crucified, Christ risen, against all the world. +

White Genocide

March 24, 2012

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan, White Genocide

Tags: Anthony Jacob



"Love, like charity, not only begins at home but perishes without one." – Anthony Jacob

Like Badger in *The Wind in the Willows* I've always been fond of children. A few days ago I saw two cute, blond and blue-eyed children accompanying their father on a trip to the food store. They were Disney-type kids, a girl about five and a boy about seven; by 'Disney-type' I mean the type of kids Walt Disney might have cast in a *Mary Poppins* or a *Swiss Family Robinson* movie. The father was also a 'regular guy' type of fellow who looked like he could have played a father in one of Mr. Disney's *Absent Minded Professor* movies.

Now here's the kicker – I finished my shopping at the same time as the white poster family finished theirs and our cars were parked next to each other. When I saw the children up close I saw that they both were wearing tee shirts that said "This time for Africa." And the car the regular guy drove had two prominent bumper stickers, one of which said "Obama in '08" and the other said something about loving Jesus. Is this the promised end for the white race? A soulless, mindless white man polluting his children with soul-killing drivel? I don't usually engage such creatures in conversation, but this time I did. I asked the man-without-a-soul what his children's tee shirts stood for. He told me the words "This time for Africa" were the theme of the World Cup which was held in South Africa. He also told me the words meant we should all fight racism.

"What do you mean by that?" I asked.

"We must fight racism," he repeated.

"But, what do you mean by that?" I repeated.

"We should fight for Africa and fight racism," he said with a rising note of anger in his voice.

"Does fighting racism mean you must destroy your children? Because that is what you are doing to them by teaching them to hate white people and love black people."

"You're a racist," he said with all the righteous indignation of a Puritan condemning a witch. And that is where it ended. What did I accomplish by confronting the soulless man? Well, I certainly didn't convert him. But then I didn't think I could convert him. I've seen so many of those lost white souls that, just once, I thought I'd try to see if there was even a glimmer of light in the soul of one of the dead-to-life white men. There wasn't.

That soulless man with the two unfortunate children is a sad, tragic sign of the times. I can't help but think of the millions of white children growing up with such parents. A father and mother like the evil Murdstones in Dickens' *David Copperfield* would be better parents for a white child than the modern, white-hating parents of today. I think of our Lord's words when I meet such parents. "But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea."

The Christian hangover phase of the European's history was from approximately 1914 to 1965. During that time period the bulk of Europeans still adhered to the ethical standards of Christianity, despite the fact that they no longer believed in the major tenets of the Christian faith. But in the late 1960's young Europeans began to act on the premises of their secularized parents. During the last 45 years we have seen the complete dissolution of Christian ethical standards and the institutionalization of a new religious orthodoxy based on secular, utopian liberalism. At the beginning of the revolution in the late 1960's you only saw long-haired rock stars, who named their children "Free" and "Starflower," supporting radical African causes. Some 40 years later crew-cut good old boys adopt black children and have their white children wear tee shirts that say "This time for Africa." The white expansion into Africa is now called black genocide. But it was in reality the charitable outreach of a Christian people to the lesser breeds without the law. Men like Edmund Hodgson and Elton Knauf were not the only ones who gave everything in an attempt to bring the negro out of his bondage to Satan. Even the hated "imperialists" such as Cecil Rhodes did more for the negro than could possibly be repaid in ten lifetimes. The white man never asked for thanks for being charitable to the black race, because *noblesse oblige* toward the lesser breeds was bred into the white man's bones. He performed charitable deeds by instinct.

Black genocide is the genocide that never was. What should concern every white European is the white genocide that is taking place right now. European countries are simply collective farms in which white people are trained to serve the black gods of the European nations. And if white people do not care about white genocide, or – as is more often the case – if they encourage white genocide, there will be no one who cares to stop white genocide. There will be no one to stop the genocide of white people because it is only the whites who ever tried to stop the genocide of other peoples. The orientals never cared about their own as much as the whites did. Nor did the Aztec or the black. It was always the white race that tried to stop the genocide of other races. Now that the white liberal has turned on his own people there is no one to prevent the extermination of the white race.

We must always have before our eyes the enemy with whom we have to deal. The utopian liberal is the most cold-hearted creature on the face of the earth. He can remain unmoved in the face of bloodshed that would have sickened Genghis Khan, so long as the blood is spilled for the future happiness of mankind. The closest a liberal ever comes to condemning a black atrocity is the Pope John XXIII dictum of "regrettable" or the utopian white nation builders' refrain of "growing pains." "Yes," the liberals intone, "they butchered thousands upon thousands of white people, but we need to understand their rage. And we have no doubt that in the long run..." The long run is here. The utopians have been in power for over forty years. White children grow up with no connection to their own past and no hope for any future but the future honor of being absorbed and destroyed by the black race. Every time one of the more blatant manifestations of black thuggery emerges, such as the atrocities in the New Orleans Superdome, the liberals find a way to blame the black atrocities on a remnant "culture of racism." The liberals will never hold themselves accountable for the failure of utopia because they will never admit that utopia has arrived. It is always about to come to fruition, as soon as the last racist Europeans are destroyed. When there are no more racist whites, blacks will no longer be forced to commit atrocities, and harmony and understanding will reign supreme in Babylon. Such a belief is the holy writ of the liberal.

In a truly hideous funeral ritual white people are voluntarily digging their own and their children's graves. Every week white people parade into churches and schools to hear the new gospel of liberalism: "Thou shalt love the black man with all thy heart and soul, and thou shalt hate the white man with all thy heart and soul." In the 1960's the new gospel was preached in the more modern up-dated churches and at the university level of "higher education." Now even the "conservative churches" preach the new gospel of the negro, and every kindergarten student is taught how to hate white people and love the black. A friend of mine reported that at a recent conference on home schooling, a black journalist stood up during a question and answer period and asked, "How do we know that white homeschooled white children will be taught about slavery?" They – the techno-barbarians and the black barbarians – want to get them all. They want no one to escape to tell thee. And who ultimately will rule in the ruins of white civilization? The black barbarians can destroy but they will never rule.

Every person in your country, in a situation to be actuated by a principle of honour, is disgraced and degraded, and can entertain no sensation of life, except in a mortified and humiliated indignation. But this generation will quickly pass away. The next generation of the nobility will resemble the artificers and clowns, and money-jobbers, usurers, and Jews, who will be always their fellows, sometimes their masters. — Edmund Burke

In every white church there is the mainstream church, and then splinter groups that have left the mainstream church and formed a new group they claim is purer and truer to the old doctrine of their former church. In the Roman Catholic Church the fight centered on the liturgy, with the more conservative groups calling themselves traditionalists and sticking with the Latin liturgy. In the Anglican Church the dispute was over the radical changes in the *Book of Common Prayer* and the ordination of women. The more conservative group, calling themselves Orthodox Anglicans, refused to ordain women and radicalize the *Book of Common Prayer*. In the Protestant churches and the churches that refuse the label 'Protestant' and prefer the term 'Christian,' the dispute was over the Bible. Is it God's word or a bunch of fables? Obviously, any decent white man always inclines to the more conservative side in any religious dispute. But haven't the white "conservative Christians" been fooled by Satan's shell game? While the Catholic traditionalist looks for God in the properly performed ritual with the correct words, and the conservative Protestants look for Him in the proper interpretation of Scripture, haven't they and all the conservative Christians abandoned the primary source of God's grace, which is His people? The human heart is the conduit for God's grace. Conservative and liberal Christians have determined that God does not impart to human hearts the blessings of His heaven. They believe God reveals himself through abstract thought. Such a belief places the conservative and the liberal outside of the European Christian tradition. The seemingly sudden emergence of the "race issue" in every branch of the modern propositional churches is the sign of the death of Christianity in those churches. The true faith can only be passed on through the little human things that cosmic philosophers ignore. We learn to love in small units: family, race, community, nation, and then mankind. If you deprive a person of those vital units of love, then you deprive him of his soul, because without those vital human vessels of grace he cannot be connected to anything but an intellectual concept of God, which is meaningless. Satan wants an endless debate between two groups of Gnostics, the conservatives and the liberals.

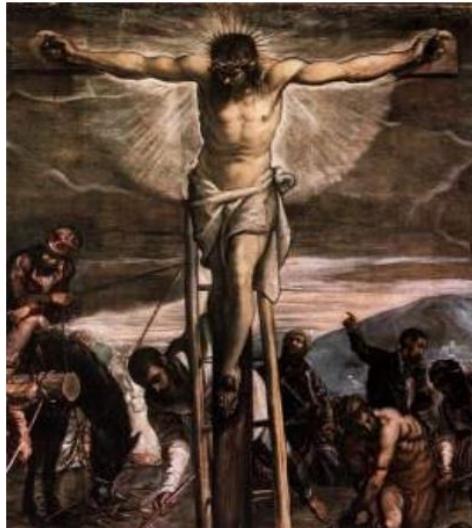
We must ask ourselves why Christianity is currently a meaningless word. It is meaningless because it can be anything; it is an airy nothing without a local habitation. But Christianity once did mean something when it had a local habitation in the European people. Is it just a coincidence that the Christian faith has become a propositional faith at the same time the European people have become a propositional people? No, it is not. Whenever cosmic, universalist, multiracial Christianity is preached and practiced, the image of God in His people is effaced and the world is plunged into darkness. The modern European is afraid to face the people of Nineveh. But he won't admit that he is afraid. He labels his fear "growth" and calls himself courageous for overcoming his prejudices. But the raging tempest of modernity that surrounds us gives the lie to the modern European Jonahs. The tempest won't cease until the European becomes, once again, what God has ordained him to be – the Christ bearer.

We are not meant to bandy words with God and make Him conform to our Grand Inquisitorial, intellectual concepts of the way He should be. We are meant to love Him and obey Him. Very few Europeans in any age equaled the Welsh pastor, Rev. Stephen Roose Hughes, that Dickens writes about in *The Uncommercial Traveler*, but the 'racist', kinist Europeans of old did show us the true faith. Their faith stemmed from a love for the Son of God that was engendered by their love for their own kind. If we can't love our own particular people over all other people, how can we love Christ, the God who revealed His love for mankind through a particular people? This is not an esoteric theory that I have invented. Look at the collective face of the antique Europeans. And now look at the collective face of the modern liberals. On whose face do we see the image of the Son of God? Instead of supporting white genocide, which is the prerequisite for eternal Babylon, the European should love his people and their God with the fierce and abiding love that casteth out all fear. The liberal and the colored barbarian have not charity. Knowing that fact and knowing that the antique Europeans did have charity, because they knew the living God, should steel us in the day of battle. +

The Cross is Beauty, the Cross is Truth

March 31, 2012

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Negro worship, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism



"Herein constitutes the great blasphemy of the negro-worshipping, halfway-house Christian: he flies in the face of the time-honored prejudices of the Christian European people. The modern, halfway-house Christian self-righteously takes it as a given that the Europeans of the past were insufficiently Christian because they placed a wall between the races and punished those who tried to breach the wall. Why would you assume such a time-honored prejudice was wrong? Was God wrong to discriminate against Ham and his descendants? Were millions of Christian Europeans wrong for century after century because they discriminated in favor of the white Christian civilization against the black barbarian civilization? If we are looking for diseased souls, we will find more than enough in the ranks of the halfway-house Christians. They see, when they look at the Europeans of the past, nothing but shameful prejudices, when (if they had eyes to see) they should see the image of the God they have forsaken for the Negro and the gods of the inclusive Christian churches." – CWNY

I have no quarrel with Keats' famous poetic assertion,

*"Beauty is truth, truth beauty," – that is all
Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.*

What I quarrel with is Keats' inability to see beauty on the Cross. Scott did and so did all the European poets of depth. The superficial triumvirate of Shelly, Keats, and Byron could not see past the outward beauty of nature to the inner beauty of the Son of God.

Our modern liberals, the spiritual descendants of Shelley, Keats, and Byron (even though they can no longer quote them) have given a local habitation and a name to truth and beauty:

*"Beauty is the noble black savage, truth the noble black savage," – that is all
Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.*

I'm being unfair to Keats. He died young. Possibly had he lived longer, he would have found his way to the foot of the cross and seen truth and beauty when he looked up. And at least Keats left the question of what is truth and what is beauty unanswered. The liberals have supplied us with a hideous loathsome answer. Do I exaggerate to make a point? Unfortunately I do not. The liberal literally worships the black race. Their recent hysteria over a Puerto Rican's self-defense slaying of a black thug is just one more example of the liberals' intense religious devotion to their black gods. The father of the Puerto Rican boy is pathetically trying to explain that his son is not white, but once the liberal-colored barbarian mob has decided there has been a sacrilege committed, there is no mercy, no extenuating circumstances. We think of Cinna the poet. He tried to explain to the crazed mob that he was not Cinna the conspirator, but the mob would have his blood.

Cin. I am not Cinna the conspirator.

4th Pleb. It is no matter, his name's Cinna. Pluck but his name out of his heart, and turn him going.

3rd Pleb. Tear him, tear him! Come, brands, Ho! Fire brands!

Despite being Puerto Rican, George Zimmerman has been labeled a white man who has committed blasphemy; he has struck the liberals' god. The liberals have decreed that he must die.

There is a twin dynamic at work in every self-defense killing of a black man. The liberals respond to the crisis with religious fervor. Their faith has been attacked and they feel called to defend, not to debate. On the other hand, the black barbarians who could care less about the death of a black man – they kill their own at an incredible rate – react to the self-defense slaying of a black with animal cunning. They know that if whites were to start defending themselves, the blacks' reign of terror would come to an end. So they call all their white devotees to rally around their gods whenever there is a blasphemous act of sacrilege committed. And they are never disappointed; the whites always answer the call to man the walls of the "Africa in Europe" fort. It is significant that George Zimmerman was Puerto Rican. Had he been white he would never have defended himself against a black man. The white will not attack his god. As it stands now I fear that the young Puerto Rican will either commit suicide or be sent to jail, which is tragic because the young man was merely trying to defend his neighborhood from the criminal element, a noble instinct.

The worship of the negro in the European nations is a direct result of the triumph of rationalism in the European world. Christ replaced the gods of the mystery cults because He loved with a passionate intensity which Cybele and Mithras could not come close to equaling. And He replaced the gods of the Greek and Roman sages because He was a living God, not an abstraction. Therein lays the key to the death of Christianity in Europe. A small group of medieval scholastics made reason the judge of revelation which opened the Cartesian floodgates that made Christianity into a philosophy rather than a faith. First only a few, tired, burnt-out rationalists, such as Voltaire and Rousseau, sought refuge from their own minds by worshipping the bodies of the negroes. But as the small cabal of rationalists grew into a vast majority in state and church the stage was set for negro worship. When God becomes merely an end product of a rational, scientific process His people will go whoring after other more vital gods. Why did the European people settle on the negro gods? Because they are the exact opposite of the Christian God. Christ is light, they are darkness. Christ is merciful, the negro gods are cruel and without mercy. Christ is the Son of God, the negroes and their liberal devotees are the minions of Satan.

Modern European paganism is a syncretic paganism that combines the rationalism of the pagan philosophers with the savage orgiastic rites of the most primitive tribesmen. And the central blasphemy of the new paganism is its emphasis on sacrifice rather than mercy. How many whites must die in order to propitiate the black gods? There is no finite number because the pagan religions are cyclic; they do not have a beginning and an end. That eschatology was part of the Christian faith. The liberals do hold out a hope for a kingdom of their black gods here on

earth, but that can only come about when the cyclical sacrifice of whites ceases to produce any more whites to sacrifice. At that point the liberal will have ceased to exist as well and only the eternal night of Babylon will remain.

Leaving aside the question of whether the Europeans are the original Hebrews of the Old Testament, I think it is perfectly clear that our history mirrors that of the ancient Hebrews. When God became an abstraction to the Hebrew people, because the Hebrews failed to keep faith with Him in their hearts, they went whoring after the gods of nature. Haven't the modern Europeans done the same thing? What is the European deification of science if not another manifestation of a nature religion? And what is the worship of the negro other than nature worship taken to its most primitive degenerate level?

Every branch of the Christian Church tells us that the Christian faith is not embodied in a people. We are told that a special expeditor of the faith gives us a rational explanation of Christ's death and resurrection and by our mere adherence to the expeditor's rational system we can know God. And if the faith is a rational system, then it is not necessary to pass the faith on through a particular people. The system is all; everybody can gain access to God through the system. But such a bloodless, rationalistic method of transmitting the faith doesn't work. When rationalism enters a Christian Church the people go to the gods of the pagans. And then the expeditors invite the pagan gods into their churches in order to stay "relevant" and get more people back in the pews. If the European churches returned to the European Christ they would be able to take the negro gods from the altar and they could once again worship the living God in spirit and in truth.

You can't stay connected to the past by merely preserving a document from the past or a system from the past. You have to have a burning desire to know the past through your people. By an act of imagination and vision you have to put yourself in a position to see what they saw and feel what they felt. And you certainly won't go through that necessary bonding with your ancestors if you come to believe they are irrelevant or evil. What do the halfway house Christians, and it's a stretch to call them halfway-house Christians, think is worth preserving from the European past? It appears that they think there is nothing worth preserving because the Europeans of the past were sexist, homophobic, imperialist, and above all racist. "Ye shall know them by their fruits." If you really think there is one single redeemable element in modern Babylon you are truly insane. White insanity, which stems from a loss of faith in the Christ of the antique Europeans, is the bone and sinew of multiracial, multicultural Babylon. If the white man ever regains his sanity the era of European Babylon will come to an end.

Modern psychology has taught us that insanity is in the mind, and the cure for it is rationality. But if we step away from the superficiality of psychology and look at life from a more integral, poetic perspective, the way Europeans looked at life before the advent of Satanic psychology, we can see the true origins of insanity. Men are driven insane when they live only in the mind. The nihilistic father in Faulkner's *The Sound and the Fury*, keeps telling his son that the tragedy of life is secondhand, it is an intellectual construct. When his son comes to believe that life is second-hand, he commits suicide.

The basic premise of psychology, that a man has a mind but no soul, is the basic premise of Liberaldom. But the mere assertion, even if it is a codified, institutionalized assertion, that a man has no soul, cannot change reality. Man does have a soul. The modern European needs his negro gods because without those gods he is left alone in a room with his own mind-forged nothingness. His mind has rejected the reality of Christian Europe so he needs something else to fill the void. Once we grasp the religious nature of the liberals' love for the black savage we will not be deceived into thinking that we can get the liberals to keep black savagery in check. They will not go against their gods.

Liberaldom was founded on a belief in the supremacy of reason unfettered. But the liberal could not live with reason alone, so he added the negro. And he propitiates his negro gods in public ceremonies throughout the European lands. It's ironic that only the white man, who the negro despises, treats the black man as a god. No other race, including the black race, worships the negro as a god. But there is a chink in the liberals' religious worshipping armor. Only the upper echelon of liberals truly worships and adores the negro; the rock stars, the movie stars, the academics, and the young who want to be rock stars, movie stars and academics. The great unwashed are not so much in a state of belief in the negro as they are in a state of disbelief in anything else. They are easily led because the liberals are full of passionate intensity about the sanctity of the negroes while the grazers are bewildered and confused. If the grazers could be roused... I know the response: "If wishes were horses then beggars would ride."

Is there any sign that a revival of the European is any more than wish? Yes, there is one sign; it is the sign of the cross, the cross Europeans once honored. They did not hold any of the modern whitened sepulchers of modernity as sacred; not the democratic process, not science, and not the negro. They cried from the depths for contact with the living God, and He responded to them. That sign of contradiction to the modern world, the Christ-centered culture of the antique Europeans, is still there. It is in our hearts and our blood. Only one people, as a people, saw beauty and truth on a cross. Look past the purple-robed priests and priestesses of cosmic modernity that bid us come to worship the negro, and see the living God who dwelt in the hearts of a people who loved much. "See how they love one another."

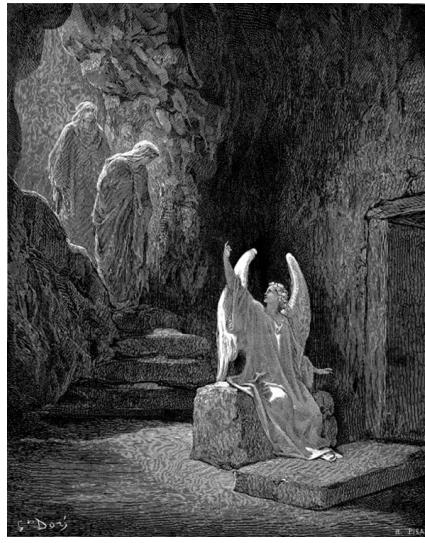
A man must have a local habitation, within a particular family and race or else he will never know the true God. The antique Europeans knew the true God, the modern Europeans do not. The difference between now and then is the difference between the Tower of Babel and the Cross. The modern liberals are forever building the Tower of Babel, which is supposed, when finished, to represent beauty and truth. We still have our defiant 'no.' We will stay with our own people who saw beauty and truth on The Cross. +

Death Is Swallowed Up in Victory!

April 7, 2012

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, Resurrection

Tags: St. Paul



...for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality." *I Corinthians 15: 52 – 53*

I saw a small news item the other day that is emblematic of the state of Christianity in every European country. A group of Moslems living in Switzerland have demanded that the Cross be taken off the Swiss flag because the Cross is offensive to Moslems. The fact that Moslems are allowed in Switzerland, let alone that they feel entitled to demand that the Swiss abandon their cultural heritage to suit them, indicates to me that Christianity is dead in Switzerland as it is dead in every European country. And please don't tell me about church attendance and celebrations of Christmas and Easter. The symbols and customs of a dead culture often remain for centuries after that culture has ceased to be a living culture. Christianity as practiced by Europeans prior to the 20th century is dead.

Is Christian Europe permanently dead? A Spenglerian who believes that cultures like people go through an inevitable cycle of birth, maturity, decay, and death would answer that question in the affirmative: "Yes, Christian Europe is dead and will never return." But a non-Spenglerian, a European of the old stock, sees something more than mere nature in a culture. The antique European sees that a culture consists of human beings with souls; therefore, a culture is a spiritual entity not subject to the strict, physical laws of birth, maturity, decay and death. Just as a soul can be reanimated so can a culture. What would it take to reanimate the souls of the dead-to-life Europeans? What is needful? Faith is needful. The same faith that animated Europeans for so many centuries prior to the modern age: a faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. Recapturing that faith should be the European's all in all.

Of course faith cannot be merely an intellectual construct that serves a very limited material need on this earth. Genuine faith comes from the divine longings in the human heart. Though we still have Christian churches in Liberaldom, we do not have a genuine faith. The modern Christians have created a new non-spiritual Christ whose kingdom is of this world only. Let us look at the original, "this world only" defilers of the living God: if we go back to Christ's first audience, to "his own, and his own received him not," we are confronted by the Sadducees and the Pharisees. I see in these two groups the modern liberals and the modern conservatives. The liberals, like the Sadducees, see no animating spiritual principle in man. Man is doomed to die and return to nothingness, so the concern of man should be generic man, or, in modern terms, the generic Earth of Al Gore and the Hollywood crowd. Rock stars such as Madonna worship black Christ figures and wear crosses to accent their cleavage, but they do not worship the living God of the antique Europeans. Like the Sadducees, their god is sensual pleasure in this world only.

The Pharisees believed in God and the immortality of the soul, so it is all the more striking that the Pharisees were so vehemently opposed to Christ. But then upon consideration we find that it is not at all unusual for men who make a living by saying "Lord, Lord," to feign and propagate a belief in a false God in order to reap material rewards in this world. In Frank Morrison's book *Who Moved the Stone*, he wonders if Caiaphas himself might have secretly believed that Christ was indeed the Messiah but refused to acknowledge the fact because it would have cost him his job as the head of the Sanhedrin. ([1](#))

The conservative, like the Pharisee, wants to be member of a church that is a power in this world. So when the culture that showed the world the face of Jesus Christ has fallen out of power, you simply proclaim your allegiance to a this-world-only faith and try to grab your share of the Kingdom of God on earth. What is multiculturalism and multiracialism other than an attempt to forge an alliance between Christianity and Babylon so that "Christians" can retain some power in the New World Order? And what is behind the incredible push to make Christianity and Judaism one faith? Christ enjoined His followers to spread the Gospel, but did He enjoin them to water down the Gospel in order to appease the rulers of this world?

The European has crossed the Rubicon and entered the city of Babylon. But unlike Julius Caesar's Rubicon, the European can go back because his Rubicon is a spiritual Rubicon. He can go back across the Rubicon if he stops believing that his advance across the river was a heroic Christian endeavor rather than a cowardly retreat.

There have been some staggering changes in the European nations in the last forty years. During that time period the people of Europe embraced racial Babylon, which engendered the sexual Babylon of legalized abortion, homosexuality and sexual permissiveness. All the aforementioned evils were quite predictable given the decline in a genuine faith in the resurrection of Christ that occurred in the early part of the 20th century. Nations are moral entities; when the faith that created a nation becomes a dead letter, then moral decay is bound to ensue.

What was not quite as predictable — it became apparent in hindsight — was that organized Christianity offered little resistance at first and then accepted virtually all of the new post-Christian Christianity. The church hierarchies debated the minutia of the law while ignoring the spirit of their faith. And the enemy from without became part of the fabric of the church.

The churchmen of the West try to defend their apostasy by invoking universalist Christianity and the apostasy of the European people: "Christ came to save all people, and the Europeans have abandoned Christ." In response and in defense: in order to preach the Gospel to all peoples there must be one people, a moral entity, that can go forth and preach the Gospel to every nation. The European people were that moral entity. In the past prior to the 20th century, when the Europeans apostatized, the Christian clergy called on their people to repent and return to God; they did not declare the European people a non-people and make the colored races into demigods on a higher plane of existence than Christ Himself. And how can the clergy justify the betrayal of their own people by claiming that their people apostatized, when they, the clergy, were the prior apostates? They made the living God into an abstract, dead God and then blamed their people for being apostate from that God. There is no universalist, abstract way to God. We find God in the hearts of His people, nowhere else.

At Christmas time I always think of Dickens' *Christmas Carol*; there are so many scenes from that story that have become part of my soul. And at Easter time I always think of Handel's *Messiah*. Musical scholars tell me that there are better musical compositions, and there certainly are some magnificent works by composers such as Mozart and Bach. But for me Handel's *Messiah* is of a different order altogether, because no other piece of music puts us so close to the divine humanity of God. Other works make us feel the majesty of God, but are there any other musical works that make us feel so close to the heart of God?

And I think the singular and astounding magnificence of Handel's *Messiah* comes from its simple retelling of the Christ story as it is told in the Holy Scriptures. From the comforting prophecies about the Lamb of God, through Christ's birth, death, resurrection, and His life in eternity, Handel shows us God as He meant us to see Him, as an indwelling spiritual presence

among His people. The Word took flesh and dwelt among us.

No great artist, be he writer, painter, or composer, creates alone. His work is connected to the heart of his people and their God. The artist is infinitely more gifted than his fellow men, but he is of them. Handel speaks for the European people in the Messiah. His vision of God was the European peoples' vision of God, and his vision of God is the vision of we few, the remnant Europeans. It's not possible to keep God and jettison the people of God. The antique Europeans' vision of the living God is the vision that must prevail because it is the true vision. We strive to remain separate from all other cultures and all other peoples so that the light of Christ can shine in the darkness. As Europe becomes Babylon, the darkness spreads.

One of the many things I like about the incomparable Edmund Burke was that he was not afraid to wear his heart on his sleeve. He openly admitted in his *Letters on a Regicide Peace* that his people's failure to see the necessity of war with Regicide France had left him profoundly depressed. Nonetheless, he fought nobly on. We can do no less. You would have to be a man of stone not to be depressed at the present state of the European people. But the Christ story so magnificently told by Handel makes it clear that Christ renews His people through a faithful remnant. Our faith in our people and their God, Christ the Lord, is not dependent on the numerical superiority sought by the Sadducean liberals and the Pharisaical conservatives. Our faith is grounded in the blood of the Lamb that was slain. "Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing ..." +

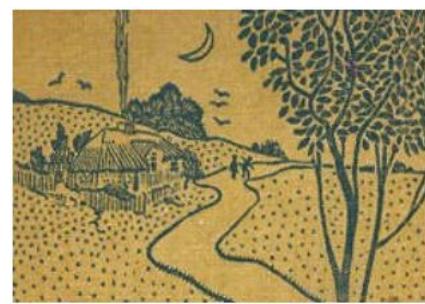
(1) But the personal consequences to Caiaphas and his family were hardly less distasteful. We do not know what changes in the Constitution of the Great Sanhedrin would have taken place under a truly Messianic regime. They would probably have been very considerable. But one thing is certain: the supreme ascendancy of the High Priest, as the arbiter of the national fortunes, would have suffered eclipse. Whatever aspects of its ancient and historic form the Hebrew Constitution might have retained, the real Dynast would have been the Messiah. As the national Deliverer and the supreme Representative of the God of Israel, His right to impose policy and to direct events would have been final and absolute. The prospect of the Nazarene Carpenter stepping into this unique and unparalleled seat of national power must have been profoundly disturbing to certain men (and women) who had an unquestioned interest in the maintenance of the *status quo*.

And There Reigns Love

April 14, 2012

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Ian Maclaren, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



“O, God, we have heard with our ears, and our fathers have declared unto us, the noble works that thou didst in their days, and in the old time before them.”

I had a religious studies professor in college who was always rhapsodizing about the wonderful cosmic canopy of the pagan religions. They were one with nature because their gods were nature gods. The great tragedy occurred for the European when he allowed the religion of Jesus Christ to replace the more natural, vital religions of nature. Such was the wisdom of my learned professor.

Even a confused undergraduate such as me could see the fallacy in the great man’s paean to the nature religions of antiquity: what if the nature religions were false? My professor, in union with his fellow academics and Pontus Pilate, who looked at Christ and asked, rhetorically, ‘what is truth?’, started with the a priori assumption that truth was unknowable. Therefore man was free to make his own truth. And for my professor truth was nature and nature’s gods, because he found those gods more exciting, vital, and comforting than Christ. My professor was partially right; the pagan religions are more exciting and vital than Christianity if excitement consists of sexual licentiousness and blood-letting constitutes vitality. And the pagan religions are more comforting if a man prefers to live on the surface of life, anesthetized and fortified by a soul-deadening ideology that does not remind him of his mortality. That is the great benefit of living with the nature gods. You don’t have to go below the surface of life, and you can find superficial transcendence in blood and sex. Such transcendence has kept, and probably always will, the colored tribesmen content. But can paganism keep the white man in spiritual comfort? Won’t he eventually feel the need for a real faith? It seems that he doesn’t feel such a need; the combination of science and negro worship appears to be keeping the white man content. But if we look closer we can see that the post-Christian liberal is not being sustained by his new pagan faith. Having spent “the unbought grace of life” that came from Christianity the liberal is being sustained by the last lingering vapors of a civilization that has disappeared in the mists of time. When even the vaporous mists of Christianity disappear the liberal will be face to face with his negro gods, and he will not be able to endure it.

What are the Christian vapors that sustain a liberal despite his hatred of all things Christian? The hated family ties are one example. My sister, a mad-dog liberal, still sends out Christmas cards and attends family gatherings at Christmas time. Why? Because despite her professed hatred of all things white and Christian, she still needs the comfort of Christian lingers. The fact that liberals are living in houses that have not yet been confiscated and given to the negroes, which is the case in South Africa and Rhodesia, is also because of Christian lingers. Soon even the last Christian vapors will disappear. Will that signal the end or a new beginning for the white man? When finally able to see what was lost, will the white man strike back or will he merely curl up in the fetal position and die? We don’t know the numbers. But we do know there will be a few whites who prefer to die standing up. And God will use those whites to restore His people. It is an absolute in mad-dog liberal circles that Christianity was a false religion. “Christ did not die and rise from the dead,” the liberals tell us. And the halfway-house Christians parrot the liberals while adding their own twist: “Christ is still the son of God, but he is a son of God like we are Sons of God.” Richard Llewellyn, who wrote a heart-rending account of his Welsh coal-mining ancestors at the turn of the century, disgraces his ancestors by enveloping them in metaphysical filth:

It was then that I had thoughts about Christ, and I have never changed my mind. He did appear to me then as a man, and as a man I still think of him. In that way, I have had comfort. If he had been a God, or any more a son of God than any of us, then it is unfair to ask us to do what he did. But if he was a man who found out for himself what there is that is hidden in life, then we all have a chance to do the same. And with the help of God, we shall.

So Christ isn’t God, but there is a God, an unknown God. Everything Richard Llewellyn loved in that valley disappeared because he and his 20th century counterparts went searching for another God beside Christ. In the later part of the 20th century they found their new god, the noble black savage. Huw Morgan loved his father but couldn’t believe in the God of his father. What god do his descendants worship today?

I’ve read *How Green Was My Valley* three times. And at every reading I tried to love the Morgan family. I tried to love them because my ancestors were also Welsh coal miners. But it is only the father, who does not give up his faith in Christ as true God and true man, whom I love and respect. His sons, who still practice the ethics of Christianity but no longer believe in the divinity of Christ, fill me with sorrow and anger. Sorrow because of what they could have been, and anger because they spent the unbought grace of life with no regard for the consequences to future generations of Europeans. We have only the vapors of a Christian civilization left to us because men like Huw Morgan felt a loving God should not countenance the suffering men endure on this earth.

In contrast to *How Green Was My Valley*, which got great critical reviews and was made into a movie, stand the two Drumtochty novels of Ian Maclaren, *Beside the Bonnie Briar Bush* and *The Days of Auld Lang Syne*. No movie was made of the novels, which had popular success but no critical acclaim. Though the events depicted in *How Green Was My Valley* and the Drumtochty books were supposed to take place during the same time period, there was actually 46 years separating the works. Llewellyn’s book was written in 1940 while Maclaren’s books were written in 1894. The contrast is truly astonishing and all in favor, from my viewpoint, of Ian Maclaren’s Drumtochty novels. The men and women of Maclaren’s novels all believe in the Man of Sorrows. He is as real to them in His divinity and His humanity as the food on the table and the farmlands that yielded the food.

I don’t think the difference in religious viewpoint between *How Green Was My Valley* and the Drumtochty novels was the result of the greater religiosity of the Scotsman over the Welshman, nor do I think the difference lies in the fact that the Welshmen in Llewellyn’s book were coal-miners and the Scotsmen in Maclaren’s books were farmers. I can think of no profession more soul-deadening than coal-mining, but I don’t think that explains the difference in religious outlook we see in the book of the Welshman and the books of the Scotsman. The religious difference lies not in the ethnicity of the authors nor in the professions of their characters, but in the authors themselves. Maclaren is still a man of the 19th century. He is aware of the forces of modernity, but those forces have not shaken his faith in the God-Man. Llewellyn is a man of the 20th century; the forces of modernity have shaken his faith in the God-Man. W. H. Auden, writing about William Butler Yeats, said that Ireland had hurt Yeats into poetry. *How Green Was My Valley* didn’t hurt me into poetry, but it did, when I first read it as a young man, hurt me into thinking about the difference between the 20th century European and the pre-20th century European. You see, I desperately wanted to love those Morgans, “for I am Welsh you know,” but with the exception of the father, I couldn’t love them. Their authorial voice was suffering from the spiritual ennui that was spreading throughout all of Europe. And why should that be? We take it for granted now, but why should the 20th and now the 21st century European no longer believe that Jesus Christ is God and man? Authors such as Llewellyn usually cite the incredible suffering that exists on earth. That suffering, they tell us, makes belief in Jesus Christ impossible. But was the suffering of mankind in general and the Europeans in particular any greater in the 20th century than the preceding centuries? These things are hard to measure, but I don’t think we can say that suffering was any greater in the 20th century than in any other century. So if we can’t point to a sudden emergence of suffering as the cause of the Europeans’ rejection of Christ, the question hovers over us still: Why the loss of faith? I would suggest the Europeans’ loss of faith stems from their increased faith in science. It is easier to bear suffering if we think it is the inevitable lot of mankind. But once we are told that suffering is not inevitable, that science can eliminate it, we become more conscious of the injustice of our mortal condition and we reject the claims of a God who promised to redeem our suffering for the claims of a scientific cabal that can eliminate suffering. It is the oldest trick of the devil; he deceived Macbeth with it as he deceived Adam and Eve:

*But 'tis strange;
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,*

*Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.*

The honest trifle was that science could eliminate some of the suffering caused by plagues and disease. But we were deceived in the deepest consequence: science could not redeem men from their sins nor could it give them eternal life. And the unlooked-for consequence – only Satan saw what was coming – of the Europeans' infatuation with science as a means to alleviate physical suffering was a tenfold increase in spiritual suffering, because the Europeans lost their faith in Jesus Christ who redeemed the world through His suffering and death on the cross. Men can endure suffering if they believe they do not suffer in vain or alone. Bereft of faith and feeling alone in the universe, the Europeans turned to science and negro worship in order to anesthetize their humanity and stimulate their blood. And of course it hasn't worked. Try as they might white people can never become happy-go-lucky pagans. For them it is heaven or hell; there is no in between.

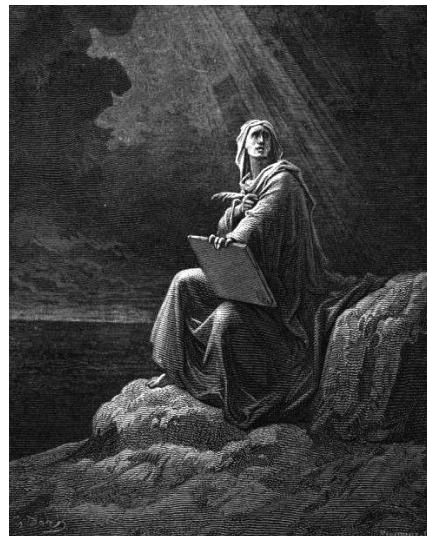
In Scott's epic poem *Marmion* he writes of the “tangled web we weave when first we practice to deceive.” The European has woven a web of lies around Liberalism. And the first lie was the lie which spawned every other lie: “You shall be as gods.” With science to alleviate suffering and the negro to provide an object of worship, the European is desperately trying to keep the living God at bay and derive comfort from his man-made, mind-forged faith. And through it all, the liberal Europeans’ process of lying self-deception, the negro and the other colored tribesmen have remained the same. They follow the endless pagan cycle of sacrifice without mercy. The colored tribesmen do not understand the reason why white people have abdicated their right to exist. They only know that it is so, and they move in for the kill. It’s not a case of “We must act now” and vote our troubles away. Nor is it the eleventh hour. We’re well past that. White people have lost their will to live, because they have no racial memory. The neo-pagan likes to hearken back to the pre-Christian era as the golden age of Europe. But the European never had a pagan era as the non-European people did. The European, even in the midst of his paganism, heard the call of the one true God speaking to His people, “I have some rites of memory in this kingdom.” Indeed He does. The Europeans embraced Christ as men embrace a brother or a father from whom they were separated when young, but with whom now, in their manhood, they are reunited. The Christ bearers! Listen to your blood, look back through the mists, and behold your God. He looks at us now, as He looked at Peter after the third denial, with infinite love and compassion. Truly that Man, fully human and fully divine, is worth fighting for. No other race will fight for Him if the European race does not. Multiculturalism and multiracialism are lies perpetuated by the father of lies. If we fight for the full restoration of the European people we fight for His reign of charity. “They shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.” +

A Conservatism of the Heart

April 21, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Thomas Hughes



"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." – *Revelations 22:13*

Since Ronald Reagan won the presidency running as a “conservative,” every Republican candidate has called himself a conservative. And of course no Republican candidate since Reagan has actually been a conservative. How about Reagan? Was he a conservative? I would say no, but in Reagan’s defense it must be said that he actually read Russell Kirk’s book *The Conservative Mind*, and Kirk spoke very highly of him. But in either case — whether Reagan was or was not a conservative — there is no question of any current candidate for the presidency being conservative in the true Burkean meaning of the word. Burke’s conservatism was rooted in the belief that men were bound to their past by unbreakable ties of honor and blood that could be traced all the way back to Christ’s birth in a stable in Bethlehem. And it was prejudice, so derided by liberals, that kept a people from breaking their ties to the past:

...we are generally men of untaught feelings; that instead of casting away all our old prejudices, we cherish them to a very considerable degree, and to take more shame to ourselves we cherish them because they are prejudices, and the longer they have lasted and the more generally they have prevailed, the more we cherish them!

Conservative and liberal candidates of today are committed to the exact opposite of Burkean conservatism. They are committed to a complete break with the past. Whereas the antique European was prejudiced in favor of honor, blood ties, and Christianity, the liberal is prejudiced against such things; he favors dishonor, hatred of blood ties, and the worship of the negro.

Russell Kirk’s book, *The Conservative Mind* (1953), gave a certain intellectual respectability to conservatism that it had never had before, but conservatism remained a curse word to most intellectuals and the majority of the American people until Ronald Reagan came into office, after which conservatism became diluted and had nothing whatever to do with Burke or Russell Kirk. Today a conservative stands for less taxes, negro worship, and the saturation bombing of all Israel’s enemies. A liberal stands for more taxes, negro worship, and the saturation bombing of all Israel’s enemies. Not much of a contrast, is there?

I was first exposed to European-culture conservatives such as Russell Kirk, Richard Weaver, and Whittaker Chambers through the good offices of *National Review* magazine. Though never living up to its stated purpose, “To stand athwart history yelling Stop,” *NR* did, in its early years, expose young people like me to European-American conservatives such as Weaver, Chambers, and Kirk, and to European conservatives such as Thomas Molnar and Erik von Kuehnel-Leddihn. Of course by the 1980’s *NR* had become an adjunct of the Republican party without any concern for European conservatism, which was inevitable considering the individualist, libertarian bias of its founder. But I don’t think William F. Buckley Jr.’s capitalist-libertarian orientation was the only factor in the demise of European cultural conservatism; in fact I don’t think it was the main cause.

What I’m going to say next will sound terribly ungrateful to the European conservatives of the mid-twentieth century, but I mean no disrespect. They were great men with a sound intellectual understanding of the basis of European civilization, namely the Christian faith. But for all their intellectual acumen they were missing something that their European counterparts in the preceding European centuries had. What was the missing element in the conservative intellectual movement represented by Russell Kirk? I think it was passion. Why do we call Christ’s Passion His Passion? Because it is His outpouring of love for His people. Listen to Kirk’s reason for writing *The Conservative Mind*:

...my contribution to our endeavor to conserve the spiritual and intellectual and political tradition of our civilization; and if we are to rescue the modern mind, we must do it very soon. What Matthew Arnold called an ‘epoch of concentration’ is impending, in any case. If we are to make that approaching era a time of enlightened conservatism, rather than an era of stagnant repression, we need to move with decision. The struggle will be decided in the minds of the rising generation – and within that generation, substantially by the minority who have the gift of reason.

Is it possible to revitalize a people who suffer from an excess of rationality with a rational analysis? Dostoevsky got it right:

I submit, however, that there are cases when there is more honor in allowing ourselves to be swayed even by unreasonable passion, as long as it stems from a great love, than in not being subjected to it at all. And that is particularly true in youth, for there is something suspect about a younger person who is always very reasonable, and I do not rate such a person very highly. So now you know my personal opinion! I suspect that some reasonable people may declare that every youth, after all, cannot expect to believe in such a superstition and that my young man certainly would not be a very good example for others to follow. To that, I would answer once more that my young man had faith, a sacred and unshakable faith, and that I still refuse to apologize for him.

Yes, a man can be too rational. Burke, whom Kirk lauds, was passionate. He used reason as a sword in defense of his passions, not as an end in itself. We must ask why Kirk’s book and not Anthony Jacob’s book *White Man, Think Again!* became the benchmark book for conservatives. Jacob’s reasoning is certainly as acute as Kirk’s, but Jacob had an underlying passion that inspired his reasoning. His passion was for his people, not for an intellectual construct:

Unity, in any event, is strength only when it is based on enduring family ties, on the unity of like peoples. That is why Aesop’s object-lesson on unity was given to brothers and not unrelated men. It is nothing short of lunacy, or Liberal unrealism, to attempt to weld civilized white men and uncivilized black men into an enduring ‘family unity’. The two cannot mix: and all attempts to make them mix will work gravely to the detriment of the Whites, upon whom civilization exclusively depends. To my mind it is self-evident that the Anglo-Saxon and kindred peoples are absolutely irreplaceable, and that without them the civilization they engendered and represent would, with the possible exception of one or two curious deviations or malformations, soon cease to exist. Let there be no mistake about this. When we speak of civilisation we are referring to that which is wholly our own. There is no other civilization whatever. At best there are one or two minor foreign cultures. At best there are one or two successful foreign copyists

of our civilisation's more material aspects. But there are absolutely no imitators of its moral and spiritual uniqueness, because there are no other people like the Westerners whose possession it is.

What happens when we make the intellectual tradition of the West into the sum and substance of the West's "spiritual tradition"? We have seen, in the last fifty years, what happens. Professed Christians treat the European people as something disposable. They think that the faith, since it is an intellectual thing, can be transported from people to people like an overcoat. But can it? Think with your heart. What do you see? I see a people who were once the Christ-bearers transferring their allegiance, at the urging of the rational men of the clergy, from Christ to the black man. And they do this because they believe that they are abandoning their prejudices, which are wrong, in order to adhere to a new religion, which is pure, intellectual, and righteous. But do we see the new people of God, the colored people, maintaining the old religion of the European people? No, we do not. We see a world gone mad with sex and blood lust facilitated by white clergymen who have abandoned a personal commitment to a loving God and his people for a universal love of the generic negro.

The conservative intellectual movement chronicled by George H. Nash in his book *The Conservative Intellectual Movement in American since 1945* was a failure precisely because it was only an intellectual movement. It was rooted in the Greek philosophical tradition of pure mind rather than the Pauline, Shakespearean tradition of the wisdom of the heart, which is why men like Anthony Jacob and Donald Davidson were not considered a legitimate part of the conservative intellectual movement. Those men, writing from the heart, saw with the blinding sight denied to the men of intellect. They saw that faith is not an intellectual construct, it is a burning fire in the hearts of those who call on their God by name. Ultimately intellectual conservatism, even if it affirms "our spiritual traditions," ends up back with the God without a name.

The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

The assumption behind the post-war conservative intellectual movement was that the cure for the faulty reasoning of the liberals was the correct reasoning of the conservatives. But can we really out-reason the devil, who is the man behind the liberals? I once got into an argument with a clerical Thomist who thought it was a sin to homeschool one's children when a good religious school was available. "How could an untrained parent," the Thomist argued, "teach a child the essentials of the faith?" The substance of my response was, "Who but a parent could teach their children the essentials of the faith because the parent teaches with a loving heart, the source of all knowledge."

Now is not the time to lie; I must invoke Edgar in Shakespeare's *King Lear* and "speak what I feel not, what I ought to say." The conservative sons of Martha cannot lead us into battle. The sons of Mary, those who love with hearts of fire, are the men for us. Whoever has kept faith with the European people in the past and continues to do so in the present, while all the compromising philistines of the right and the left demand that we deny our people, is the man to follow. The race issue is the primary issue for the liberals, because they need a black god to replace Christ. And the conservatives have made Christianity an intellectual construct so that they can avoid the race issue. "Western civilization has nothing to do with race," they tell us. But Western civilization has everything to do with race, just as the Incarnation has everything to do with Christianity. The Christian faith needs to be embodied in a people in order to be revealed to all people. Christianity is a revealed religion, not an intellectual construct. God has revealed Himself through His people, and if we abandon His people we abandon Him.

Conservatives who invoke Burke to support intellectual conservatism miss the main point about Burke. Burke was not an intellectual! He was something much greater. He was a man with a heart of fire. He loved his people and their God so much that he used the sword God gave him, a Shakespearean command of the English language, to attack the enemy of his people and his God, the regicide French. But take away Burke's passionate heart and what is left? Only an intellect fit for clever comments and teaching seminars on politics, certainly not a Christian poet and warrior of the highest order. And haven't the European people, nourished on 'intellect-is-all' theology, been left bereft of the passion necessary to mount a charge against the worst, the liberals, who are full of passionate hate for all things European? Christianity transformed the world because the European people fell passionately in love with Christ, and not because some very intelligent theologians distributed a six-point program for a belief in the Deity. Handel's *Messiah* did not come from his brain; it came from a heart that loved. And so it always shall be for the Europeans. We are men to the extent we love our people and our God. And we are inhuman beasts when we abandon our people and our God.

It fell to John, the apostle who laid his head on the Sacred Heart of Jesus at the Last Supper, to reveal to us our beginning and our end. We are the people who took Christ into our hearts. We believe in the fairy tale of the empty tomb. That is what distinguishes the European from all other peoples. And lest we forget, that distinctive faith of the European does not come from exalted reason, it comes from a faithful and loving heart. +

The Return

April 28, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers, Propositional faith

Tags: Kenneth Grahame, Thomas Nelson Page, Walter Scott



Home! That was what they meant, those caressing appeals, those soft touches wafted through the air..." — *The Wind in the Willows*

Donald Davidson lived long enough to be condemned by his fellow Southerners and Northern liberals as a racist, outside the ken of humanity. At best he was treated to private sympathy and public condemnation. Once, when he attempted to elicit support for segregation from Allen Tate, Tate tried to mollify him by suggesting that maybe the negroes wouldn't want to integrate. Then, having spewed immoral drivel on a friend seeking moral support, Tate went merrily on his academic way. And Tate's cowardly response to the vital issue of white survival was the response of all post-1945 conservative intellectuals, with the exception of Anthony Jacob and Davidson himself. They were completely indifferent to the major issue of the 20th century: an emergence of a liberal oligarchy, with a stranglehold on the schools and the churches, who were determined to destroy the white race.

The Jews have always hated the European people because the European people were the Christ-bearers. And the colored tribesmen have always hated the white man because they worship darkness and not the light. So why were the whites of the 20th century, and why are the whites of the 21st century, in greater danger than in any of the preceding centuries? What has changed? Well, the European-hating Jew we have always had with us, and the white-hating colored tribesmen we have always had with us, but a controlling liberal oligarchy determined to eradicate the white race? We have not always had that demonic oligarchy with us. There were always white-hating whites within Christendom, but it was only in the latter half of the 20th century that they gained complete control of the European nations. That is the difference between past and present. The white race is now at the mercy of the savage races of color, which are devoid of mercy, because white liberals have taken power after years and years of conservative indifference to the survival of their own people.

I liken the conservative intellectual's response to the white-hating liberal as that of a man with a wife and five children, who responds to a home invasion by armed thugs by ignoring the thugs as they butcher his wife and children. Instead of fighting against the thugs, our modern conservative intellectual father runs to his study and saves his soon-to-be-published manuscript on the theory of the family. "Thank God, I saved the manuscript!" the father says as he escapes out the window of his study, "The world would have been left bereft of families had I not saved my work on the theory of the family!" Do I exaggerate? Not one bit. I grew up reading the post-World War II conservatives, and as a young man I got to meet some of them. They were not a bad bunch, but I came to realize that they were not the men their 19th century counterparts were. They had begun the shift, ever so slightly, away from a blood faith grounded in the people of Europe, to an intellectual faith grounded in the ever-changing universalist world of abstract thought. As soon as a man starts down that slippery slope, his ultimate destiny is determined: he will become part of Liberaldom. And that is the key to understanding the post-1945 conservatives. They became ashamed of anything that could not be made into a theory. Writers such as Dabney, Fitzhugh, and Page spoke unabashedly about the necessity of the survival of the white race, but their 20th century conservative counterparts theorized about race and wrote vaguely about respecting traditions, on the one hand, while condemning the racism of their ancestors on the other hand. Some did this in order to be dispassionate and objective, and by doing so convince the liberals that they, the new conservatives, were really good fellows. Well, the liberals still didn't regard the conservatives as good guys, and the unimpassioned "objectivity" of the conservatives turned out to be less truthful than the passionate advocacy of the 19th century conservatives. When we read the works of Dabney, Fitzhugh, and Page today, we feel that we are in the presence of prophets. They spoke from their hearts and they spoke the truth. What about their "conservative" descendants? We find nothing but intellectual drivel similar to the vacillating verbiage that Allen Tate dumped on Donald Davidson.

It was inevitable that the post-World War II conservatives would be absorbed into Liberaldom and become just as hostile to the European people as the liberals. In order to understand why the absorption and betrayal was inevitable, you need only read Edmund Whittaker's book called *Space and Spirit* (1948). Whittaker was a professor of mathematics at the University of Edinburgh. In his book he pointed out that modern science was a derivative of classical and medieval philosophy. Therefore, Whittaker argued, there was a direct connection between modern science, the Greek philosophical tradition, and medieval philosophy. I agree with Whittaker that those three schools of thought are united. But Whittaker thought the unity was a good thing. I think the Greek philosophical tradition in conjunction with the medieval philosophical tradition, and their child, modern science, is an unholy trinity that has destroyed the European people. Negroes murder whites with impunity, while the whites worship negroes in the same churches where they used to worship Christ, because of the impious union of Greek philosophy, medieval philosophy, and modern science.

There is a line, not visible to the material eye, which separates the bardic culture from the scientific culture. At some point in the early part of the 20th century, the European people crossed over the bardic line and became a secondhand race of people. A secondhand race of people has no instinctual life. They have no direct link to their past because they do not believe in blood ties. And they have no connection to a living God, because they believe that a real God must conform to the philosophical and scientific specifications of their secondhand knowledge of existence. Where is the empirical proof for Christ's resurrection from the dead? There is no proof in the modern scientific, philosophical world of the modern European. The proof of His resurrection lies in the blood of the European people prior to the time when they renounced their blood. The Christian fairy tale is true, but its truth can only be seen by people who believe in fairy tales more than mathematics.

As Whittaker tells us, the scientific-philosophical heresy, which he does not label a heresy, has always been part of the Western tradition, but it was not the vital part of our tradition until the 20th century. Undergirding all the classical studies — before the 20th century — was the European spirit, which was completely opposed to the Greek and medieval classical tradition. Over and above the staid, dispassionate classicism of the philosophical-scientific theology was the passion of the bardic European whose faith was described by Thomas Nelson Page:

He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart — a Goth.

The pagan Europeans accepted Christ so readily because they had a strong racial memory of the time when they were connected to God, heart and soul. They knew God, not in the fullness of His divine humanity in the person of Christ, but they did know Him. Their shift from the Hero-Gods of Europe to the God-Man was more of a homecoming than a conversion. Their Hero-Gods were created from a dim recollection of the true God. The Christ story clarified their memories, and they returned home.

The Europeans' struggle has always been to keep the secondhand, abstract faith of the unholy trinity at bay while holding on to the essential bardic, bred-in-the-bone faith of the European people. So long as the Europeans kept to the "tilled field and hedgerow, linked to the ploughed furrow, the frequented pasture, the lane of evening lingering..." they were men. Once they rejected the lane of evening lingering for the philosophical-scientific heresy, they became second-hand men staring at themselves from outside themselves and wondering how they came to such a pass. Once we first begin to doubt that our knowledge of the true God is bred in the bone, we go down a slippery slope of doubts that lead to a second-hand intellectual faith, which in turn leads to the worship of the negro.

*Wearied from doubt to flee,
We welcome fond credulity.*

Yes, isn't it the height of credulity to flee from the living God to an abstract faith in the noble black savage?

We are all born into the heretical world of science. With our mother's milk we imbibe a sick, soul-killing ideology. In order to cure our souls we must fight our way back to bardic Europe. C. S. Lewis, a man who had to fight his way back, gives us a marvelous image of the European's return to bardic Europe through the wardrobe door. Old Europe was certainly a Narnian world in which we saw God and knew Him not only as our Lord but as our kinsman. In that world is charity, truth, beauty, honor, and faith; outside that world is the abstracted intellect, devoid of humanity, which is always the mark of Satan.

For this purpose Mephistopheles is, like Louis XI, endowed with an acute and depreciating spirit of caustic wit, which is employed incessantly in undervaluing and vilifying all actions, the consequences of which do not lead certainly and directly to self-gratification.

The material world is merely a symbol of the spiritual world; such was the collective wisdom of the European people who believed in Christ. The collective wisdom of the philosophical-scientific Europeans is that the material world is the world: "Whatever we see with the naked eye is reality." But 'tis not so; we are such stuff as dreams are made on. The European once dreamt of dragons, giants, heroes, fair ladies, and a God whose love passeth all understanding. Were those dreams pure fiction, and is our nightmare world of science reality? That is the question. Modern Europeans, conservative and liberal, have taken their stand with the men in the white laboratory coats. The fairy tale world of antique Europe has been condemned because its people were guilty of crimes against humanity, the foremost of which was racism. But in my eyes the European Fairy Tale must have been true. If it wasn't, then how did they, the antique Europeans, manage the spiritual equivalent of walking on water? Surely such a people had to be connected to the living God in order to have spawned William Shakespeare, Michelangelo, Handel, and Chartres Cathedral. The only people who ever displayed an understanding of 1 Corinthians 13 were the antique Europeans. Who, once they have been exposed to old Europe, would prefer the modern, racially diverse Europe that has not charity? The answer? The entire white establishment. And bereft is the word for the European people. Like Arthur after the demise of the Roundtable, they wonder if they ever really existed at all:

*...on my heart hath fallen
Confusion, till I know not what I am,*

If a man from this our modern Europe once takes a journey into bardic Europe, because he sees a kindly light emanating from that distant land, he will never again see life with the materialist eye. He will dream dreams and see the vision: dreams of old Europe and her people, and a vision of the risen Lord. In my country we will soon be having a Presidential election, and I certainly will be voting against The Obama. But the far more important election took place at the beginning of the 20th century when the European people elected to institutionalize the unholy trinity of Greek philosophy, medieval philosophy, and science. From that liberal alliance came modern race-mixing, abortion, and atheist Europe. There is no hope in such a world. We need to go home. Home, for the European, will always be His Europe. He can't abide with us until we decide to abide with Him by the hearth fire that He has kept burning through all the years of our wanderings in the deserts of modernity. My youngest daughter once remarked to me that she always felt she was reentering an alien, hostile world and leaving a wonderful, comfortable world when she finished a novel by Ian Maclaren, Walter Scott, or Charles Dickens. She has it right. Old Europe is our world, and we "don't want any other." +

The Distinctive Faith of the Europeans

May 5, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Edmund Burke



Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

— Acts 19: 13-29

I first read Alfred Lilienthal's book *What Price Israel* (1953) when I was an undergraduate. My Jewish philosophy professor, who believed in none of the tenets of the Jewish faith, but was a passionate supporter of Israel, kept talking about Lilienthal as if he were the devil himself. Since I didn't particularly like my philosophy professor, I was interested in the man he hated.

Lilienthal's book hardly seemed that controversial to me. But at that time I was completely naïve about the Zionist hatred for any man, Christian or Jew, who insisted that Israel did not have the right to claim the allegiance of any citizen other than her own. No American Jew, Lilienthal insisted, owed Israel any loyalty whatsoever. Lilienthal was also very critical of the Balfour Declaration of 1917 which was a blatant betrayal of the Palestine people in favor of the militant Zionists. I found it strange that my militant atheist professor was so concerned about Israel, while Lilienthal, a believing Jew, wanted nothing to do with Israel. I now realize that atheist Jews are much more likely than Orthodox Jews to become militant Zionists. Having lost their faith they make a new god out of the state of Israel. Not that most believing Jews support Lilienthal's position — far from it, the majority are rabid supporters of Israel — but the few dissenters in the Jewish ranks are generally of Lilienthal's persuasion.

Nothing has changed in the Jewish community since Lilienthal's book. The Jews, secular and religious, still demand that the Jews of all nations, and the gentiles of all European nations, should support the nation state of Israel. And they still demand that the native Palestinians should be exterminated like vermin.

What has changed since 1953 is the attitude toward Israel in the white Christian community, or, to be more accurate, in the white, halfway-house Christian community. Those "Christians" were always supportive of Israel from its very inception, but as Christianity became less and less of a religion and more of a feel-good philosophy the halfway-house Christians began to look on support for the nation state of Israel as one of the major tenets, after negro worship, of the Christian faith. It takes centuries for a people to divest themselves of an old faith and act in complete conformity to their new faith, which is why halfway-house Christians still invoke Christ even after they have ceased to believe in Him. But implicit in the halfway-house Christians' zealous, fanatical support for the nation state of Israel, despite the Israelis' anti-Christian behavior toward the rest of the world, is the belief that Christ be not risen. Because if He be not risen, the Jews are right; we must continue to wait for another. Is it the black man? Yes, for now, but once the European has forsaken Christ there is no telling where he will go awhoring next or for how long.

Of course it is only the post-Christian white who supports Israel with fanatical intensity. The people of color have no particular love for Israel. Why is this? Surely it has become obvious. A man needs to belong to a particular race of people; God made him that way, so he could learn to love God through His people. You can't change a man's need by denying it exists. We cannot love or belong to an idea of a family or an idea of a community or an idea of a nation. We must belong to an actual family, an actual community, and an actual nation. Going backward in time, I vividly remember a conversation with a female acquaintance who, judging from her attention to her religious duties, seemed to be a devout Roman Catholic. One day she casually remarked to me that she was planning to become a Jew. When I asked her why, she replied, "I like their sense of community. They really stick together, and they believe in God just like we do." That woman was not an isolated case. Though most of the halfway-house Christians do not make a formal conversion to Judaism, they do, by their commitment to the state of Israel, reveal to us that their hearts are tied to the synagogue and not to the Christian hearth. Such a betrayal is indeed reprehensible, but it was predictable. For over a century the white Christian clergy have been preaching that love can only be intellectual and universal. We must love all equally, because we are all God's children... you know the refrain. That kind of insipid, tepid love for a generic mankind and for a generic God is no love at all. And where there is no love, there is no knowledge of God, because the source of wisdom, the heart, has been rendered null and void.

Denied true community with the people of their own race, the modern halfway house Christians are desperately trying to become Jewish. "O Hamlet, what a falling off was there!" The modern fusionist Christians who worship the negro and look to the Jews for a sense of community are in the position of the dwarfs in C. S. Lewis's book *The Last Battle*:

Tirian had never dreamed that one of the results of an Ape's setting up a false Aslan would be to stop people from believing in the real one. He had felt quite sure that the Dwarfs would rally to his side the moment he showed them how they had been deceived. And then next night he would have led them to Stable Hill and shown Puzzle to all the creatures and everyone would have turned against the Ape and, perhaps after a scuffle with the Calormenes, the whole thing would have been over. But now, it seemed, he could count on nothing. How many other Narnians might turn the same way as the Dwarfs?

In the modern churches the universal and the generic have triumphed over the particular and the personal. The new Christians profess to love everyone, but in reality they are incapable of loving anyone. And they worship the generic black man, of whom they have no personal knowledge. The rot in the churches is widespread and deeply imbedded. If it is not rooted out of the churches, does that mean we must accept the new universalist, anti-Christian version of Christianity? Our answer to that question will be determined by how we define the Church of God. If you define The Church as an organization with a mandate from God to preach the Gospel to all mankind, then you will adhere to the organized church of your choice despite the fact that your organized church fuses Judaism and Christianity and supports the worship of negroes. But if you regard The Church as a people, not an organization, who are connected to the living God, then you will not be deterred from serving your God because organized Jewry and their adjuncts, the Christian churches, say you nay. I think the huge mistake was made in the medieval ages when the scholastics attempted to define the Christian Church in non-poetic, rational terms. The Church cannot be defined rationally. Any attempt to do so is a bastardization of the truth. I know that Christ's Church exists. I've seen it in the collective face of the European people, but I'd be completely at a loss to define what constitutes the Church in rational terms. But there is a continuity, a continuity of spirit and blood, in the religious history of the European people. When they looked on themselves as a people, distinct from other people,

they kept the Faith. When they became non-distinct universal people, they lost the Faith. Perhaps, contrary to the modern churchmen, knowledge of the living God comes to us through the blood and not the mind.

The desire to fuse Judaism with Christianity stems from a failure on the part of the European people to see the distinctiveness of Christ. When He becomes a junior executive in an organization called The Church, it is easy to merge the Christian organization with the Jewish one. And with their loss of faith came the Europeans' identity crisis. The Europeans were distinct from all other races because they were the Christ-bearers. But if Christ is not distinct from all other gods, if He can be blended with Judaism or the negro or Muhammad, then what is so distinct about the European people? "Nothing," the European replies as he prepares to blend with all mankind and lose his identity in a stinking multi-racial, multi-cultural dung heap.

It's impossible to exaggerate the extent to which the halfway-house Christian community has embraced Israel. They passionately desire to slaughter millions of innocent people, whom they perceive to be the enemies of Israel, and they justify their murderous, anti-Christian advocacy with the Christian Bible! This is a result of an intellectual faith devoid of spirit and blood. The weak-minded, weak-spirited Christian fusionists can be easily manipulated by Satan and his liberal henchmen. "Let's all gather at the River," has become, "Let's all fall down and worship the negro right before we bomb all of Israel's enemies."

The halfway-house Christians worship the negro in order to be liked by liberals within and without their church, because liberals are in power and the halfway-house Christians want to appease the powerful. Such a stance via the powers that be is cowardly and reprehensible. But the halfway-house Christians' motivation for supporting Israel is infinitely more reprehensible than their reason for supporting negro worship. Bored and indifferent to the Christ story, the story of how the Son of God redeemed us from sin and death, they have tasted the forbidden fruit and sought to know, nay, not just to know but to bring about by their own efforts, the end of the world. "Behold I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that use their tongues, and say, He saith." (*Jer. 23:32*)

Our Lord did not tell us the day nor the hour, nor did He tell us that we could be good Christians by supporting an anti-Christian, anti-human nation state called Israel. If halfway-house Christians had not abandoned the wisdom of the heart, which comes from a connection to a particular people and a personal God, they would not now be instruments of Satan. They have deliberately darkened their hearts in order to indulge their fantasies of an apocalyptic end of the world that they, not God, have brought about.

There are many, many writers, such as Scott, Shakespeare, and Edmund Burke, to whom I am forever in debt for making me feel less alone in the universe by expressing my own inmost thoughts. In the case of Burke, his [*Reflections on the Revolution in France*](#) and his [*Letters on a Regicide Peace*](#) were works that spoke to my heart. One passage in particular from *Letters on a Regicide Peace* accurately represents my present stance vis-à-vis the modern world. In the *Letters* Burke states that he no longer has any official position in the government. He has only his opinion to offer. But it is his heartfelt opinion. From out of the depths, the depths of sorrow, he urges his people not to make peace with the regicide French. So it is with me. I've never had a position in the government, but I do speak from the depths: "Do not make peace with these regicide liberals and their allies in the Christian halfway houses. They want to kill God by destroying His image in His people. Look to the mountains. There is not one breath of pure air in this regicide world of modernity, but in the mountains, where He resides, where the true Europeans have always resided, there is honor, there is charity, and there is love. And it is from those European mountains that we will launch our attack on the regicide world of the liberals." +

Be Ye Steadfast and Unmovable

May 12, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Herman Melville, Shakespeare



"I can live no longer by thinking."

— Orlando, *As You Like It*

"Let us leave the liberals and the neo-pagans at the stream of unreality and look at the reality. The white man's racial anemia has one source: his lack of faith in Jesus Christ. Any white Christian who thinks that he can cure white racial anemia through alliances with pragmatic, 'Let's leave religion out of the picture' conservatives, or openly 'hostile to Christianity' neo-pagans is deluded. The only cure for a disease that stems from a lack of faith is faith. But of course neither I nor any other Christian European can make the modern European believe, as his ancestors once believed, in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. The Christian faith is not a suit of armor that can be used for the utilitarian purpose of fending off the barbarians and then discarded when the barbarian threat is gone. It is all or nothing. Either we believe in the white Christ and fight for His Europe, or we perish." — CWNY

Much has been written about the horrors of the 20th century phenomenon of total war, war on a scale that prior to the 20th century had only been depicted in nightmarish works of science fiction. And much has been written about the gulags and concentration camps of the 20th century, but there has been very little written about the revolt of the white intelligentsia against their own people. There has been very little written about that revolt because the intelligentsia are the people who do the writing about wars, concentration camps, and revolts. Why should they blow the whistle on themselves? They never do.

When I speak of the intelligentsia I do not necessarily refer to people with intelligence. I refer to writers, clergy, university professors, and journalists, men who make their living, or aspire to make their living, by the use of their intellects. This highly influential group of individuals have, for the past 60 years at least, been consistently hostile to the people of the white race. Whatever is good for the white race has been opposed by the white intelligentsia, and whatever is bad for the white race has been supported by the white intelligentsia.

We do not observe this strange phenomenon within the intelligentsia of the various colored tribes. The intellectuals of the colored tribes all support the aspirations of their own people. And of course it is liberalism that has made the white intelligentsia turn against the white race. But from whence comes liberalism? And why is it a whites-only ideology? Liberalism stems from bastardized Christianity, and only the white race, with surprisingly few exceptions, has a history of adherence to the major tenets of the Christian faith. It's ironic that a people who once espoused a belief in the God-Man should end up believing that the black man is god.

There is no white Christian opposition to the white intelligentsia's belief that the extermination of the white race, through miscegenation and tribal murder, is mandated by the nebulous evolutionary god of the liberals. All true Christians, as defined by the white intelligentsia, desire the extermination of the white race. This is the unquestioned doctrine of the white elite, be they professed liberals or professed Christians. The only segment of the white intelligentsia that does not believe that the white race should be exterminated is the numerically small group of men called the neo-pagans. It's tempting, if one is a white Christian who does not believe that Christ mandated the extermination of the white race, to hitch one's wagon to the neo-pagans' cart. But they represent a more dangerous enemy than the liberals because their heretical beliefs are closer to the truth, and therefore harder to detect, than the liberals' beliefs.

The liberal thinks the white man, prior to the 20th century, was guilty of forcing a false Christianity on mankind. "Christ was not the Son of God; he was a precursor of Gandhi and Martin Luther King Jr., who lived and died to make all men into wine-and-cheese-party liberals; and the pre-20th century Europeans had perverted Christ's teachings and made Him into a hideous god who supported racism and sexism." Such is the credo of the liberals. The neo-pagan agrees with the liberal on the issue of the pre-20th century Europeans. "Yes, they did create a false Christianity. Christ really was just who the liberals say he was; a regular human being, not a god, who was a forerunner of Gandhi and Martin Luther King Jr." But then the liberal and the neo-pagan diverge. The neo-pagan admires the creativity of the older Europeans. He likes the "racist" Christianity of the older Europeans, albeit he thinks they were rather stupid to believe in the Christian fairy-tale. The older neo-pagans, most of whom have left this world, talk about "our Greco-Roman, Saxon, Celtic, Christian heritage" so as not to offend some older Christians who might join with the neo-pagans against the Jewish cabal and the colored hordes, but at bottom the neo-pagan creed is a Nietzschean creed of despair. "Christ be not Risen; look to the coming of the white Übermensch."

Obviously, the new breed neo-pagans are not Nietzscheans — most haven't even heard of him. But they are like him in that they look to the future, to the technological white-man with a superior intellect who sees life outside the old perimeters of good and evil. And because they, like the liberal, look to a future where the older European Christianity is of no consequence the neo-pagan has become, over the last thirty years, more and more conciliatory toward the liberals. In fact the criticism of liberals has virtually stopped in the pagan-nationalist publications. They criticize the Jews, but not the liberals. The worst they ever do is reprimand the liberals for not seeing that "we really don't hate blacks; we are really non-violent, and we really and truly respect all cultures and all people."

It is liberalism not Judaism that has destroyed the white man. The neo-pagans don't seem to realize that the Europeans, when they were believing Christians, took measures to protect themselves from the Jews. Now, having lost their faith, the Europeans are at the mercy of the Jews. But the neo-pagans cannot supply the European people with the only weapon, faith in Christ, that has proven effective against the Jews. Great passions determine the course of history; without the passion supplied by Christ's passion the European can never resist Judaism or multicultural liberalism.

I've noticed in some thirty years of reading the nationalist publications that despite their great differences with the liberals on a host of issues, they are in agreement with them on the one essential issue. Both groups think that the findings of modern science necessitate a revision of the Christ story. The liberal makes Him a superior human being, a forerunner of their modern heroes, and the neo-pagan makes Him a creation of the European's mind. On the great issue of the 20th and 21st century, faith vs. science, both the liberal and the neo-pagan have sided with science. But the liberal has been infinitely more successful than the neo-pagan. Why? Because men need an object to worship; science alone is an insufficient god for the great mass of humanity. The liberal has given his adherents the negro to worship while the neo-pagan can only offer his sterile condemnation of unfair and unjust discrimination against white people. But

the liberal will not listen to such condemnations. How can mere mortals criticize gods? And why should a people who have rejected Christ for the negro concern themselves with fairness and justice? While the liberal looks to a future of science and the negro, the neo-pagan looks only to a future of science and his white genes. The liberal will always win that contest.

What is needed, if someone could be found who believed it to be true, is a defense of the white man that takes into account man's spiritual nature as well as his physical nature. We have seen enough of I.Q. tests and standardized intelligence tests cited to prove the superior intelligence (and by doing so demonstrating his right to live) of the white man. What we do not see cited is the European's witness to the truth. He was the poet laureate who took the airy nothing of the Greek philosophers and scientists and gave it a local habitation and a name: Jesus of Nazareth.

The European Christ-bearer has become a Pontius Pilate, looking Christ right in the face and asking Him, "What is truth?" Is truth to be found in the collective face of the black race? Is it to be found in our white genes? Faith in a man who purported to be both man and God is difficult, but doesn't the history of our own people point to the truth of the Christ story? The modern church men have retained the name Christian, but they have not retained the Christian faith. When they severed their ties to their people and their people's God, in the name of a purified, intellectual Christianity, they turned from the living God of charity and mercy to an abstract generic black god of merciless cruelty.

Throughout the history of organized European Christianity it has always been the clergy, the intellectual elite, who initiated the great heresies. And the European people, thinking with their hearts, always served as a counterpoise to the intellectuals. I have often wondered if the Europeans' instinct to preserve their faith when it was attacked by the intellectuals was an instinct bred in the blood and bone of the Europeans long before the coming of Christ. Could it be that from the beginning of time God was preparing them to be the Christ-bearers? Why were they so intensely monogamous even in their pagan days? And why did the Europeans never practice cannibalism as the colored tribes did and still do? The Europeans were always the poetic race. The things of the spirit were first with them. When they heard the word of God they wept and believed because they had an instinct for the true God. And through the Christian centuries of Europe, it has always been the European people, not the scholarly elites, who have kept the faith, because the scholarly elites want to create an inhuman abstract god while the European people want a God that they can worship in spirit and in truth.

Why the breakdown in the 20th century? Why did the Europeans become a non-people? It was because Satan extended the franchise. Intellectual stupidity became democratized. "You are all intellectuals now," Satan declared, "You are all too smart to believe in a fairy tale. Look to science, look to the negro – there is your true home and your true god."

I've always considered Herman Melville's character Bulkington, who appears briefly in *Moby Dick*, as the true European:

When on that shivering winter's night, the Pequod thrust her vindictive bows into the cold malicious waves, who should I see standing at her helm but Bulkington! I looked with sympathetic awe and fearfulness upon the man, who in mid-winter just landed from a four years' dangerous voyage, could so unrestingly push off again for still another tempestuous term. The land seemed scorching to his feet. Wonderfullest things are ever the unmentionable; deep memories yield no epitaphs; this six-inch chapter is the stoneless grave of Bulkington. Let me only say that it fared with him as with the storm-tossed ship, that miserably drives along the leeward land. The port would fain give succor; the port is pitiful; in the port is safety, comfort, hearthstone, supper, warm blankets, friends, all that's kind to our mortalities. But in that gale, the port, the land, is that ship's direst jeopardy; she must fly all hospitality; one touch of land, though it but graze the keel, would make her shudder through and through. With all her might she crowds all sail off shore; in so doing, fights 'gainst the very winds that fain would blow her homeward; seeks all the lashed sea's landlessness again; for refuge's sake forlornly rushing into peril; her only friend her bitterest foe!...

But as in landlessness alone resides highest truth, shoreless, indefinite as God–so, better is it to perish in that howling infinite, than be ingloriously dashed upon the lee, even if that were safety! For worm-like, then, oh! who would craven crawl to land! Terrors of the terrible! is all this agony so vain? Take heart, take heart, O Bulkington! Bear thee grimly, demigod! Up from the spray of thy ocean-perishing—straight up, leaps thy apotheosis!

The material world that the European Bulkington refused to have anything to do with has so encroached on the spiritual world that the Europeans have ceased to be European. It was and is their task to champion the things of the spirit and to hold Christ's banner aloft as a sign of contradiction to the colored people wallowing in the slime pits of heathenism. If the European will not do what he was born to do, champion Christ, no one will. The colored tribesmen will not pick up the European banner; they will simply go on being heathens while absorbing the white man into their formless, inanimate mass of diversity. The coward always defends the wall of the fort where the enemy is certain not to attack, and he runs from the wall where the battle rageth. The modern halfway-house Christians who never talk about defending the white race, unless they talk about the immorality of defending the white race, *are not Christians*. They are in the transition stage from Christian to liberal. Soon they will get their pilot's license and fly with the liberals into diversity land.

The rationalist solutions to life seem, on the surface, to be the best solutions: "All races are the same.... Skin color is just pigmentation... We know God through the rational computations of our brains..." But what if the current of our life does not fit into rational channels? What if our life is an ocean of passions and visions? When Theseus, the rational Athenian, comes upon the young lovers in the enchanted woods he expresses his distrust of their irrational path to the truth:

*I never may believe
These antick fables nor these fairy toys.
Lovers and madmen have such seething brains,
Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend
More than cool reason ever comprehends.*

The passion that comprehends more than cool reason can lead a man over a cliff or it can bring him to the gates of heaven. But passion cannot be taken out of the mortal's life, because a man's passion is his life. Without it he can never understand Christ's passion. Note Hippolyta's rejoinder to Theseus:

*But all the story of the night told over,
And all their minds transfigured so together,
More witnesseth than fancy's images,
And grows to something of great constancy;
But, howsoever, strange and admirable.*

Yes, the Europeans' story told over is the story of their night in the enchanted woods with Christ, the King of Fairyland. The European believed in the "antick fable" of Christ the Lord, and that passionate, heartfelt belief set him apart from the colored races. Wherever a passion for the antick fable endures there is Europe. Kipling expressed the sentiment so well: "So long as the blood endures." That is all that matters. Numbers are of no significance. So long as a few Europeans stay true to their blood, His Europe will endure. +

The Last Rally

May 19, 2012

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide



Their bosom is a rock of granite, on which falsehood has long since built her strong hold. Poor truth has had a hard work of it with her pickaxe. Nothing but gunpowder will do. – Edmund Burke

In the 1970's and through the 1980's and 1990's you heard the term "institutionalized racism" on a regular basis. Some white liberals had evolved beyond racism as individuals, but all our institutions were racist. So we were told. Now we still hear the cries of 'racist,' but we don't hear as much about institutional racism because all our institutions are permeated by blacks. And the institutions that do not have blacks are desperately seeking blacks because no one wants to be accused of perpetuating institutional racism. Such an aberration from the norms of civilized behavior would be unconscionable.

Of course there was no institutional racism against blacks during the period that the term became fashionable. The whites *should* have institutionalized racism, but unfortunately they did not. Instead they institutionalized the worship of the negro. Now white people are divided into two camps: whites who maniacally push for the annihilation of white people because they feel driven by a satanic urge to destroy the Christ-bearing race, and those white people, the grazers, who automatically do whatever hurts the white race because they have been trained from birth to hate the white race. The latter are the real victims of institutionalized racism.

Let's take John McCain as an exemplar of the satanic, white-hating white. He recently crawled out of his subterranean dwelling, which is connected to hell, in order to encourage the United States to bomb Syria into oblivion. But lest you think that John McCain is not a humanitarian, I should point out that he is also working tirelessly to ban the mixed martial arts fighting that has become so popular. McCain claims such fighting is much too brutal. Hmm. The sport is quite brutal, but it is not as brutal, in terms of life-threatening concussions, as boxing or football. And it is not nearly as brutal, or as final, as dropping a bomb on someone's head. So judging from McCain's track record as a staunch supporter of mass executions and the all-American sports of boxing and football, I don't think we can believe in his humanitarian concern about the excessive violence and brutality found in the sport of mixed martial arts. I would suggest another reason for McCain's fake humanitarianism. The fighters in the sport of mixed martial arts are predominantly white, while the participants in boxing and football are predominantly black. McCain would never think of trying to ban football or boxing because of the violent nature of those sports, for the reason that he would be accused of trying to keep poor black boys from making a living. But who will complain if he tries to prevent poor white boys from fighting their way out of poverty? Is the young white male supposed to give up everything that makes him feel like a man? ([11](#))

Obviously, the McCains of Liberaldom are legion. They might even be the sons and daughters of satanic angels who mixed their blood with mortal women, but more likely they are the end result of years of liberal rule in the lands that used to be called Christendom.

The second type of white is the white who supports every white-hating movement but does not even realize he is anti-white. This type of individual has had the spiritual equivalent of a blood transfusion and a bone marrow transplant. The faith of antique Europe that was bred in the blood and bone of his ancestors has been replaced by a new white-hating faith that is bred in the blood and bone of every modern European.

The late Ronald Reagan can serve as a perfect example of the white man who aids and abets the demonically possessed white-hating liberals, such as John McCain, without even considering himself a white hater. He was raised on the universalist heresy of one race, one culture, and he would be more likely to question his parentage than the universalist doctrine that he absorbed into his blood. When Reagan became President he signed a liberal "amnesty" bill, continued the anti-white immigration policies of his predecessors, and despite his professed opposition to abortion did nothing to reverse the abortion tide. Reagan was a decent sort; he was not a John McCain. But in the absence of a road-to-Damascus conversion from bred-in-the-bone liberalism to bred-in-the-bone European Christianity, the "decent" conservative will always go the way of the liberals. Under better direction his innate decency would have pointed him in another direction and toward another star, but because he does not receive better direction he is guided in all things by the worst, who are full of passionate intensity.

The mad-dog liberal such as John McCain is a state executioner who loves his job. He takes special pleasure in destroying all enemies of the state, foreign or domestic. The conservative-liberal such as Ronald Reagan is not motivated by hate when he works to destroy the white race. He is a soldier defending his state against its enemies, and all those who oppose multiracialism and multiculturalism are enemies of the state. In the end, whether the antique European is killed by the mad-dog liberal who enjoys executing white people, or whether he is killed by the Reagan-type conservative who will kill without any deep animosity toward white people, the antique European is still dead.

I once read a memoir of an English liberal who fought with the communists during the Spanish civil war. What he saw in Spain turned him into an ardent anti-communist. In subsequent years he became a Christian pastor. In reading the memoir I was struck by the fact that the former liberal's belief in the divinity of Christ was preceded by his new-found belief in original sin acquired while witnessing the events of the Spanish Civil War. It is often the case that, when a man comes to a belief in one of the doctrines that stems from the Christian faith, he then precedes to a belief in the Christian faith in its entirety. And the reverse is also the case. When once a man starts to disbelieve in one of the major tenets of the Christian faith, he is on the road to a rejection of all the tenets of the Christian faith.

Before the European liberal rejected the divinity of Christ, he rejected the doctrine of original sin, aided by theologians such as Pelagius and Semipelagians like Thomas Aquinas. If the notion of original sin is absurd, then the notion of a God-Man who comes to redeem us from sin becomes absurd. But if there is such a thing as original sin, and if there really was a Redeemer, then the liberal's denials cannot change the reality of original sin and the reality of the Man of Sorrows. The liberal will still have a need to assuage his feelings of guilt and to find some object of worship. Enter the negro, stage left. The liberals' guilt is taken away by their service to the negro, and their need to worship is fulfilled by their adoration of the negro. But negro-worshipping Liberaldom can only survive by maintaining a wall of superficiality around the kingdom. For once a man looks behind the curtain of Liberaldom, he sees a fat, bloated negro being sustained by a legion of emaciated white scientists and academics. What can such a coalition give white people? They can give them the negro to worship and science to anesthetize them. And they need to be anesthetized because neither the negro or the scientist can raise the dead. The paths of glory lead but to the grave, but if those earthly paths of glory follow His sacred paths, they will lead a man to salvation beyond the grave. Where do the paths of liberal superficiality lead? To the grave and damnation.

It seems, looking at the heavily guarded and heavily fortified walls of superficiality that surround Liberaldom, that there is nothing the antique European can do to defeat liberalism. The liberal will fight to the death to protect his god, and the grazers will fight alongside the liberal, completely oblivious to the fact that they once, before their spiritual blood transfusion and bone marrow transplant, had a faith bred in the blood and the bone.

Then again we are the people who know not seems. I once went through a military history museum in which there were numerous suits of armor displayed that had been worn by Christian knights many centuries ago. My first thought was that the suits of armor seemed much too small. The diminutive size of the combatants, as indicated by the size of their armor, did not seem to fit with the deeds depicted in the chronicles of that era. But then on second thought I realized that the poets who depicted the heroes of yore as giants were right. They were giants of the spirit. And when we compare those giants on a spiritual scale with the modern European, we can see what pygmies of spirit the modern Europeans are in relation to the antique Europeans. The walls guarding the kingdom of liberal superficiality would be as nothing to the giants of old Europe. "It would be the work of one day to storm the castle, rout the liberals, and burn all of Liberaldom to ashes." That is the voice of our ancestors. For us, the faithful few, the work will be more than the work of a day, because we are not yet the men they were. But it is something – no, it is more than something, it is everything – to know that we have a people to love and a hearth fire to defend. That will make all the difference when going into battle against the liberals. A deep and abiding love for one's own people and their God will always prevail over a superficial faith in a false god. The intellect divorced from the heart is the father in the liberal trinity; the negro is the son; and science is the unholy ghost. In our hearts, in the depths, we know their day is ending, and His day, which is ancient and yet so new, is dawning.

The distinction must be made between a society of pagan idolaters and, to use a phrase of Richard Hooker, "God's own ancient elect people." We are not of these modern Babylonians. We belong to Christian Europe, and we are strong to the extent that we hold to our distinctive faith in our own ancient elect people and their God. +

(1) Mixed martial arts is not a sport that edifies. You would not say of it what was said of the type of sport depicted in *Tom Brown's Schooldays*: "The Battle of Waterloo was won on the playing fields of Eton." But still I don't like to see poor, non-technocratic whites deprived of a chance to become providers by "the work of their hands," because a satanic liberal like John McCain wants to see every single white male driven from the face of the earth.

In the Sight of God

May 26, 2012

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers, Scientism

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Le Fanu



So may the outward shows be least themselves; The world is still deceiv'd with ornament. — *Merchant of Venice*

All European revolutions and counter-revolutions are started and sustained by people who think that all of their actions on behalf of the cause are done in the sight of God. For good or ill there would be no revolutions or counter-revolutions without the participants' belief that whether they failed or succeeded their God saw and approved of their efforts. Implicit in the British soldier's heroic defense of Rorke's drift was the belief that in fighting for Britain and against the Zulus he was fighting for Christian civilization in the sight of his God. Likewise the communist: he fights for the future reign of the people, and he believes that those people of the future will see what he has done and approve of it. And finally we have the modern liberal with his triune God: The Father—The Intellect Detached from the Heart, The Son—The Negro, The Unholy Ghost—Science. The liberal wants his fellow detached intellects to see his efforts on behalf of the Negro, and he wants to be applauded for his efforts. And he wants the divine Son of the divinely detached intellect, the negro, to see his efforts on behalf of the negro and to give his blessing to the devotee. Then comes the last part of the unholy satanic sideshow: the liberals seek a comforter, someone or something that can sustain them in their battle against the recalcitrant Europeans. Call it Science Descending, it envelops the liberal in an anesthetizing gas which renders him incapable of any heartfelt feeling about any aspect of existence. Through the unholy ghost called science, the liberal achieves oblivion; he is sans feeling, sans thinking, sans everything but a desire to serve his triune god.

It's been said of liberals that they are politically correct even in restrooms. When Big Brother is not watching them they still censor themselves; no racist comments ever slip from their lips. That is because they always have the image of their god before their eyes. Wherever they are, they feel they are in the sight of their god.

Theologians have written volumes about the distinctions between the visible church and the mystical church. In my view the visible church consists of those outward ceremonies and professions of faith that can be seen by the naked eye and heard by the ear. For instance, I can see John Doe walking to church, and I can hear him reciting the creed in church; those are visible signs that John Doe is a member of that particular church. The mystical church is something different. It consists of those silken threads of sympathy and love by which we are bound to our God, but which are not visible to the naked eye.

Membership in the two churches is not mutually exclusive nor is it necessarily mutually inclusive. A man can profess belief in Jesus Christ while maintaining a mystical faith in the negro, and a man might eschew the outward ceremonies of religious worship and yet maintain a mystical connection to the living God. Charity demands that we assume a man believes what he professes, until he proves, by revealing where his treasure lies, that his true faith is other than his professed faith.

It is my contention that the members of visible, organized Christianity (with a few exceptions, which is always the case) have severed their mystical ties with Christ and become members of the mystical church of the liberals. This is painfully evident when we see where their treasure, and therefore their heart, lies. Their hearts lie with the unrepentant Jews, the unsexed women called feminists, and above all else, with the negroes. The liberals who are not members of the visible Christian church nor the mystical Christian church are easier to detect than the professed Christians who are mystical liberals. But the antique European, who still has a mystical connection to his God, must not be deceived by the outward professions of faith of the halfway-house Christians. They are our enemies. It's very unpleasant to think that no one has our backs – on the contrary, those who profess Christ will stab us in the back in the name of Christ — but that is the reality, and our Lord told us it would be so:

They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God good service.

And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

Those words should resonate with us. Don't the halfway house Christians seek to kill the old "racist" Christianity and the people who still adhere to it? And haven't the halfway-house Christians severed their mystical ties to Christ by cutting themselves off from their own people, past and present? The mystical ties of honor and blood that bind us to our kith and kin also bind us to God. When we have only the outward visible signs of faith but lack the inner, invisible current of faith, we have not faith.

The antique European, in my judgment, is the hero of the modern drama. And the hero must be willing to fight for the good. That goes without saying. But the hero must also be able to see the good and discern evil. That is much more difficult than the actual fighting. In Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, Arthur watches his knights defeat the heathen knights while violating every law of chivalry. Only Arthur, who can discern good from evil, sees the victory as a Pyrrhic victory:

*So all the ways were safe from shore to shore,
But in the heart of Arthur pain was lord.*

What enables a man to see past the ornaments of life to that which is within? The Roman Catholic traditionalists forsook their ancient people for a formulaic replica of the past, and the Biblical Christians, "with sober brow," made a whitened sepulcher of their new found interpretation of Scripture that allows them to be outwardly Christian while inwardly Jewish. Such a falling off comes when Europeans break with their past by seeing only the dry parchments and church rituals of the past as worth preserving. Those ornaments are only symbols of the spirit and blood faith of the antique Europeans.

The mystical church, which is the animating spirit of Europe, is to be found in the people of old Europe. Look at their spiritual history as told by the chroniclers, the poets. In Shakespeare, the archetypal European, we see a world where outward forms count for nothing. It is the inner life that matters.

*So may the outward shows be least themselves:
The world is still deceived with ornament.
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt,*

*But, being seasoned with a gracious voice,
Obscures the show of evil? In religion,
What damned error; but some sober brow
Will bless it and approve it with a text,
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament?
There is no vice so simple but assumes
Some mark of virtue on his outward parts:*

— The Merchant of Venice

Le Fanu adds his voice to Shakespeare's:

This world is a parable – the habitation of symbols – the phantoms of spiritual things immortal shown in material shape.

That essential wisdom of the European people, which was the fruit of centuries of spiritual struggle, that the material world is but a symbol of the spiritual world, has been pushed aside in modern Europe. The liberals and the ornamental Christians side with the people of color because they share the same "this world only" religion. They are united in a celebration of outward forms without spiritual substance.

Self-styled, hardheaded "realists" get very angry when you talk about the things of the spirit. They feel talking about such things leads to a "pie in the sky" attitude that ensures defeat because those who see God in the heavens are defeatists who look for victory in the next world while surrendering to the enemy in this world. But if such was the case why did the antique Europeans, the members of the mystical Christian church, conquer the world? It is a paradox, but it is reality; those Europeans who worshipped the God who was not of this world, conquered the world in His name.

In every introductory course in philosophy we are told that arguments from history are not valid arguments, because such arguments are subjective; a man can foist his own personal prejudices on the argument from history. It is only by using the objective method, the Socratic dialogue, the philosophers tell us, eschewing all prejudices acquired from messy, anecdotal histories, that a man can arrive at the truth. I'd like to say that with all due respect I differ with the philosophers. But I can't say that, because I don't have any respect for the philosophers. Just as literary critics have no understanding of existence because they approach a work of literature with the detached minds of scientists intent on finding the truth by dissection, so the philosophers destroy thought by detaching it from the human heart. And because of that fateful divorce the philosophers, the men who make their living as thinkers, are always wrong about everything. The Badger and Mole know that Toad will return, because they argue from History, not Philosophy.

"They argued from history," continued the Rat. "They said that no criminal laws had ever been known to prevail against cheek and plausibility such as yours, combined with the power of a long purse. So they arranged to move their things into Toad Hall, and sleep there, and keep it aired, and have it all ready for you when you turned up."

What do we know of anything if we don't argue from history? Do we even know if we exist at all if we don't know our family history? How did the people whose God entered history come to the conclusion that all arguments from history were invalid? I do argue from history. All we know of Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior, comes from the history of the European people. Without that history we are lost souls, sitting in a sterile classroom, trying to make sense out of an *a priori* assumption about the meaninglessness of existence. Or we might be sitting in a church seminar trying to make sense of church documents or Holy Scriptures, but without a blood connection to our European ancestors the church documents and the Holy Scriptures are as sounding brass and tinkling cymbals.

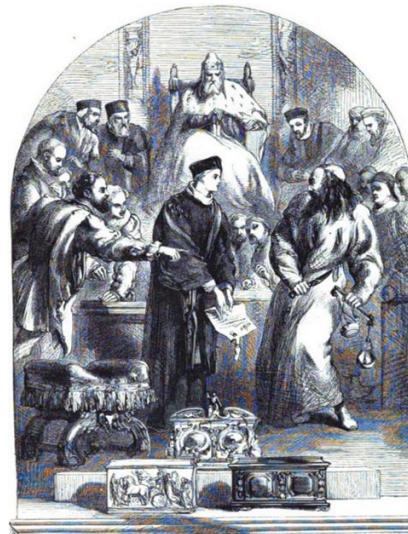
The European alone possesses the moral vision to reject gaudy gold and pale silver in preference for the meager leaden casket, whose plainness cloaks its magnificence. The leaden casket is for those who belong to the mystical church. That Church will endure till the end of time, because it is eternally linked to the European and to Him. +

We Few

June 2, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Shakespeare



No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord. – Isaiah 54: 17

I saw O'Reilly's interview with Bernie Goldberg in which Goldberg speaks of the media's refusal to cover the beatings by "black Youths" of a white male reporter and a white female reporter. I believe the beatings took place in Virginia, but the location isn't important since the same type of crimes are commonplace throughout the United States and Europe. Two things struck me in Goldberg's comments. First, there has been a thirty-year blackout on the reporting of black atrocities. And crimes far worse than the beatings in Virginia are taking place on a daily basis, so why was this particular atrocity singled out for attention? It was probably because the female victim "made a fuss" and because of the fact that the white victims were reporters, which aroused the sympathy of the reporter who appeared on O'Reilly's show.

Second, I noted that O'Reilly and Goldberg criticized black thuggery using language that followed the strict anti-racist rules of the liberal-conservatives. Goldberg deplored the lack of outrage over the beatings, and he deplored the lack of media coverage, but he also "understood" why the liberals did not want to publicize black atrocity stories. They don't want to publicize such stories, Goldberg said, because bigots would use the stories to further bigotry. Both O'Reilly and Goldberg tsked tsked at the mention of bigots, and both men emphasized their complete and unconditional hatred of bigotry. Who are the bigots that make the liberals' cover up black atrocities and make O'Reilly, the Irish Catholic, and Goldberg, the Jew, speak of "bigots" as if they were the great bogeymen of the Western world? The bigots are me and thee; non-propositional white men who do not look on their racial identity as grist for the great universalist melting pot. Such white men are the only ones who care that white people are beaten, raped, and murdered by black barbarians on a daily basis throughout the formerly European countries.

A liberal-conservative such as O'Reilly will never draw the proper conclusion from, or advocate the proper response to, black atrocities, because O'Reilly is committed to a universalist, democratic vision of God and man. O'Reilly's generic God created a generic mankind and then turned the earth and all its inhabitants over to intelligent men like O'Reilly, to rule over a propositional mankind with democratic fairness and balance. The O'Reilly/Goldberg mention of a black atrocity is the equivalent of a Christmas card from a father you haven't seen for twenty years. It's better than nothing, but it's hardly something to base your hopes on.

Every time, which is seldom, a black atrocity story makes it to a major news outlet, I hear a chorus of "maybe this will wake white people up" from white people who would prefer not to be exterminated. But there have been enough atrocity stories reported to wake up those who were capable of being awakened. And why were white people asleep in the first place?

*No, my fair cousin.
If we are mark'd to die, we are enow.
To do our country loss; and if to live, ...*

Report all the atrocity stories you can, but do not look for one man more. The liberals know and approve of the black atrocities. They take their orders from him who is without mercy. They are just as devoid of humanity as their black henchmen, "When our grace we have forgot." If we as white people do not believe we are a distinct people, created as a distinct people by a personal God, then we may as well join the universalists and tiptoe quietly through Babylon in the hope of avoiding the general slaughter of whites. But if we believe we are a people, ordained by God to carry His banner, we should respond to the liberals and their colored henchmen with fire and sword.

Our Lord tells us, through his prophet Isaiah, that "... even to your old age I am he; and even to hoar hairs will I carry you: I have made, and I will bear; even will I carry, and will deliver you." The Europeans' Christian history has shown that God looks after His people. As a tiny minority amongst the world's colored hordes, whites always have managed to rule in their own nations and in the colored nations they saw fit to colonize. But now the whites have given their colonial possessions back to the colored barbarians while simultaneously giving their own countries to the colored hordes.

The whites' insane, maniacal zeal to liquidate the white race can only be understood in a religious context. Off this stage we have shown that the whites' denial of Christ has led to their affirmation of the negro and his supporting cast of colored deities. All the rituals and ceremonies that were used to support the Christ story are now used to support and propagate the story of the negro god. The church men tell us of his birth in Africa, his tragic plight as a suffering servant at the hands of the evil white people, and then his triumphant resurrection from a life in slavery to a life eternal as the god of the Western world.

There is a recurring type of maniac who appears again and again throughout the literature of the European, and he is the pharisaical Christian who justifies his anti-Christian cruelty by citing his own cruel man-made image of God. Hawthorne's *The Scarlet Letter* and François Mauriac's *The Woman of the Pharisees* are works that offer us two of the best depictions of the religious fanatic who presents his anti-Christian cruelty as the true faith. The Christian authors who condemn, through their works, the Christian Pharisees, perform a great service because they help us to keep our faith pure and undefiled by Phariseeism. How ironic then that the modern Pharisees, the liberals and their halfway-house Christian allies, have instituted a cruel Pharisical religion that makes all the Torquemadas and witch-burning Puritans look like mild peace-loving lambs. For what could be crueler than a god who demands the extermination of an entire race of people in order to satisfy his bloodlust? If this negro god, whom the liberals have substituted for Christ, is allowed to continue in his position as the god of the Europeans, surely goodness and mercy will disappear from the face of the earth. And let's be blunt: goodness and mercy *have* disappeared where the black god reigns. The Kansas City, Missouri incident, in which "black youths" set a 13 year-old white boy on fire as they screamed, "This is what you deserve, white boy!", is a typical religious ritual of the modern Babylonian state. Only a heretic, a blasphemer, would question the black man's right to kill the white infidels. Are there any whites left who are willing to dissent from liberal orthodoxy and be called heretics? We shall see. My hope is that God will raise up a few who will eventually defeat the many. He has done so in the past, so I have faith that He will do so in the present.

I once, while traveling through Britain in my early twenties, was given a ride by an Englishman who had fought in the Battle of Britain as an R.A.F. pilot. If you recall your English history, you'll remember that those British pilots were the men of whom Churchill spoke when he said, "Never in the course of human events was so much owed by so many to so few." In the course of a ride of approximately one hour and a subsequent two-hour stop at a local pub, I got to talk quite extensively with that former R.A.F. pilot. I particularly remember his response to my question, "How did you feel before the battle?" He told me that he was quite naturally afraid of dying, but that was not his main fear. He was mainly afraid of "letting down his people." Ah, to have a people. Everything we are, and everything we do of value, comes from our consciousness of being connected to a particular people. Men who believe in universals will fight, but they will fight ignobly against their own people. It is only the man who has a genuine people of his own race and his own God that will fight nobly against impossible odds. Kipling said it best: "The people, Lord, thy people are good enough for me!"

The racial consciousness by which a man comes to terms with his own humanity and through which the white man comes to know God has been carefully bred out of the European by a system of rewards and punishments fit for dogs, not men. Whenever a white man behaves in a manner that suggests he thinks there is a distinct group of people called Europeans, who are worth preserving as a distinct people, separate from the colored savages, that white man is punished. Whenever a white man supports the extermination of the white race, that white man is rewarded, in the short term of course; in the long run the trained white spaniel will also be eliminated, but he doesn't see the long run, having been reduced to a groveling, inhuman creature, devoid of vision and humanity.

In Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*, which is no longer allowed to be read in our schools, Shakespeare lays bare the soul of the Jew. Shylock hates Antonio for two reasons: because Antonio is a professed Christian, and because Antonio practices Christianity.

*I hate him for he is a Christian.
But more for that in low simplicity
He lends out money gratis, and brings down
The rate of usance here with us in Venice.
If I can catch him once upon the hip,
I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.*

And of course Shylock gets his chance for revenge. Wouldn't a Christian do the same thing if he had the Jew on the hip?

*If you prick us, do we not bleed?
if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison
us, do we not die? and if you wrong us, shall we not
revenge? If we are like you in the rest, we will
resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian,
what is his humility? Revenge. If a Christian
wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance be by
Christian example? Why, revenge. The villainy you
teach me, I will execute, and it shall go hard but I
will better the instruction.*

But there is a difference between the Christian and the Jew. Would that the modern Christians who are Christians on the outside and Jews on the inside still knew of that difference. What does the Duke of Venice do when he has Shylock on the hip? Does he want his pound of flesh? No, he forgives as only a European who has the true faith, the faith bred in the bone, can forgive.

*That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit,
I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it.*

We shall be governed either by the spirit that governed the Duke of Venice or by the spirit that governed Shylock. We are currently being governed by the satanic spirit that motivated Shylock, because Christians have turned Jewish. The European liberal has a Jewish heart; he hates Christianity and those who seek to practice Christianity. This is why an antique European cannot just focus on the external Jews, some of whom are more Christian in ethos than the European liberals; he must direct his attack against *all* those who have Jewish hearts, be they Jew or European.

In the latter half of the 20th century, Satan fused the hate-filled faith of the faithless Jew with the worship of the negro. Now Satan has the antique European on the hip. Will he extend mercy? Of course not. He is our ancient foe.

The Jews, the Jewish-hearted liberals, and the colored barbarian hordes are all arrayed against the antique Europeans, who are numerically insignificant compared to Satan's legions. Should we tremble before such odds? No, we should not. And we shall not. It matters not at all whether we are 12 percent of the world's population, 6 percent of the world's population, or ½ of a percent of the world's population. If we are Europeans, true to our blood and to our God, we are enough to destroy the liberals and their colored gods. The Christ-centered European is unconquerable; so it always has been and so it always shall be. We are the people of the Word, who have seen the risen Lord, and so long as we are faithful to Him, no force on earth shall prevail against us. +

Thy People

June 9, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



To come to the point at once, I beg to say that I have not the least belief in the Noble Savage. —Charles Dickens

Shows like *House Hunters* are enormously popular with women, which makes sense: women have a natural born homing instinct. In *House Hunters*, which my wife watches unless the couple looking for a house is too offensive (an interracial or homosexual couple), the viewer follows a couple in search of a house. The realtor shows them three different houses, and we are left to guess which house the ‘house hunters’ are going to pick. The house hunters are all much wealthier than I am – they can afford quite expensive houses, but I have yet to be envious of the house hunters because in the shows I’ve seen no house hunter has bought my dream house. Have you ever seen the movie called *The Uninvited* (1944), starring Ray Milland and Gail Russell? That house, minus the ghosts, is my dream house, a Victorian-styled home, overlooking the ocean, in a small English village. What more could an antique European ask for? Of course, since it is my dream house, the inhabitants of the village are all white people. No house, no matter how beautiful, could be a dream house if it was in an integrated neighborhood, which is why I’ve never had any desire to live or vacation in the tropics. I prefer to be around white people for the simple reason that I am white, “good my countryman.”

Which brings me, in a very roundabout way, to the subject of this essay. One *House Hunter* show recently featured a white couple seeking a home on a tropical island. They found it. And as they were walking about the island, the white female declared, “I love the natives here. They are so authentic.” There is a whole world in that statement, and it is not a good world. It took over 200 years for the hate-filled anti-European meanderings of Jean Jacques Rousseau to become the faith of the European people, but his faith is now their faith.

The liberals’ worship of the ‘Noble Black Savage’ comes from their dissatisfaction with the European civilization. They thought the older, now defunct, European civilization was moribund because of being sexist, racist, and sexually repressive. The new order will have “authentic” non-white, godded people who will restore all people to their true natural state of innocence. It sounds very, very silly when it is stated flat-out, but there is no denying the reality, or the intensity, of the liberals’ religious faith; they believe in the ‘Noble Black Savage.’

The European people could not have shifted from a Christ-worshipping people to a negro-worshipping people without the support, or at least the acquiescence, of organized Christianity. So we need to ask how ostensibly Christian organizations could accept the deification of the ‘Noble Black Savage,’ when their stated belief in original sin and Jesus Christ would seem to dictate that they should reject the deification of the negro. I think, when you look at the capitulation of organized Christianity to negro worship, it becomes apparent that the church men fell victim to the Caiaphas syndrome. Caiaphas thought it expedient that Christ should die so that his organization and his generic people connected to that organization should live. The modern Christian church men thought it expedient that faith in Christ Crucified and Christ Risen, which was embodied in the culture of the antique Europeans, should die so that their church organizations and their generic people can live.

In my younger days I was shocked when I read an article by a seemingly devout Thomist who proclaimed the new Catholicism would be “sexier and more earthy” because of the blacks that would fill up the church pews. But that was years ago. I am no longer shocked by such blasphemies from the mouths of ornamental Christians, because such blasphemies have become the religious orthodoxy of organized Christianity. And it was inevitable that ornamental Christianity would become tied to liberalism; the ornamental Christian knows only the exterior trappings of religious worship. He does not know of the spirit within a European man that passeth outward show and seeks communion with the living God.

The Sadducees were atheists; they didn’t believe in a God who could bring the dead to life. And the Pharisees were hypocrites; they professed to believe in a God who could raise the dead, but when their faith was put to the test they sided with Caiaphas, the Sadducee, and demanded that Christ be crucified for the good of organized Jewry. Isn’t the same process occurring today? The ornamental Christians who celebrate Christmas and Easter have joined with the liberal Sadducees in an effort to kill Christ by destroying His image in His people. For if there is no longer a European people, past or present, from whence comes a vision of the true God, who can only be known through His people?

Let me dwell for a moment longer on the Pharisaical branch of Liberaldom, the ornamental Christians. They play a game of false humility. By ascribing all virtues to the emerging “sexy and earthy” black “Christians” while denigrating the antique, racist Europeans, the ornamental Christians cozy up to the liberal Sadducees while simultaneously making themselves out to be saints who have overcome their prejudices. Need I quote Burke again? (1) Our prejudices are our touchstones of reality. It is sinful not to be prejudiced in favor of the older European civilization over and against the colored heathens’ anti-civilizations. If you really prefer the “authentic” ‘Noble Black Savage’ civilization to Walter Scott’s Europe, you are a debauched, inhuman monstrosity that no true European can tolerate. This brave, wonderful paradise that the Sadducees and Pharisees of Liberaldom are preparing for us is a world devoid of those three antiquated virtues – antiquated in the opinion of the liberals, that is – faith, hope, and charity. The liberals tell us that in their brave new world we need only to have faith in the negro, to have hope in science, to show kindness toward the negro and charity toward none.

In the 1950’s we were living on Christian fumes, and by the late 1960’s there were no Christian fumes left. There was only a very lethal gas, the gas of liberalism. I’ve lived long enough to see the end of charity. What was only an “if these shadows are not altered” scenario in the early 20th century has become part of the fabric of our daily lives. The colored tribes, be they black, red, yellow, or brown, have never had Christian charity, and white liberals, who are legion, have hardened their hearts against their own people, who are being murdered and tortured at an astonishing rate by colored barbarians. And the liberals have hardened their hearts against children of all colors, who are being murdered in their mothers’ wombs. What kind of madmen are liberals who call this new world that has not charity a ‘paradise’ and condemn the Christian civilization which preceded this monstrous new world? They are the spawn of Satan.

God touched the hearts of the Europeans through His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ. The Europeans who responded to God’s divine Son were imbued with a divine charity, which became a benevolent flame of charity that had never been seen on earth before. The magic talisman culture of the colored tribes, in which earthly power and might were the penultimate, was replaced by the burning flame of charity of the Europeans, whose heroes and heroines were those who imitated, on a deep level, Christ’s divine charity. So much mud has been thrown on the antique European culture during the liberals’ satanic reign that people have lost sight of the one stunning, glaring truth staring us in the face: There was no true charity on earth until the coming of Christ, and the flame of charity was not embodied in a people until the Europeans welcomed Christ into their hearts and their homes. When the realization of what was lost by

the liberals' replacing faith, hope, and above all charity, with science and negro worship comes to the confused European, who has not yet fully turned his soul over to Liberaldom, he will set his face against the world and he will strike home: "Between us the battle is joined henceforward."

In the upcoming Presidential election in this country, the rights of all sorts of colored people will be discussed ad nauseum. But one people whose rights will not be discussed are the people who have no rights: the white people. Such will always be the case in Babylon. The only race that could reestablish a link between this world and His world shall not be allowed to establish a foothold in Babylon. I liken the plight of the white race to that of a boxer who has been knocked down in the ring. The referee, who hates the downed fighter, does not send the opposing fighter to a neutral corner but instead allows the opposing fighter to stand over his opponent and knock him down every time he tries to get up. There is only one rule in Liberaldom: the white race must die. How could it be otherwise? In a world that has not charity, there is no room for the Christ-bearing people.

The seemingly invincible coalition of forces arrayed against the antique European will disappear when the European rejects the magic talisman culture of science with its accompanying worship of the negro, and returns to the real world, the fairy tale world of old Europe. Modern heroes such as Superman, Doc Savage, and Adolph Hitler all look to a future, devoid of Christ, for the salvation of their people. But in the European fairy tale, the hero eschews magic talismans and the worship of heathen deities. Armed only with those three virtues of the Red Cross Knight – faith, hope, and charity – the European fights and defeats the multitudinous armies of darkness arrayed against him. I know fairy tale Christianity with its quests and dragon-slaying is sneered at by the liberals, but that is the first step in the return of the European hero. Can he overcome his fear of being sneered at and labeled an imbecile or worse, in modern terms, a racist? Perfect love casteth out fear. The European hero sees that his European ancestors are being denigrated and that his people yet living are in danger of being exterminated. A sword pierces his heart, a sword of charity, and he sets his face against a world of liberals and colored barbarians. Certainly we should all use what intelligence we have to further His Kingdom Come, but ultimately it is hearts of fire connected to His Sacred Heart that will bring Babylon down. +

(1) "I am bold enough to confess, that we are generally men of untaught feelings; that instead of casting away all our old prejudices, we cherish them to a very considerable degree, and, to take more shame to ourselves, we cherish them because they are prejudices; and the longer they have lasted, and the more generally they have prevailed, the more we cherish them." -Edmund Burke in *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

Fairy Tale Europe vs. Jacobin Liberalism

June 16, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Brothers Grimm, Hippolyte Taine



With the Jacobin, on the contrary, the first precept is not moral, but political; it is not his duties which he exaggerates but his rights, while his doctrine, instead of being a prick to his conscience, flatters his pride. Vast and insatiate as human pride may be, it is satisfied this time, for never before has it had so much to feed upon.

— *The French Revolution* by Hippolyte Taine

If you spend one hour a week viewing a news source independent of the mainstream media, or even if you just watch the mainstream media's attempts to cover up black atrocities, it soon becomes obvious there is a one-sided war going on. The liberals and the colored barbarians are in the process of exterminating the white race.

In every war that ever was, there was first a pamphleteering phase, a period of time in which those who desired war made their case for war. The current war, the war fought for the extermination of the white race, had its roots in the type of 'noble savage' literature written by men like Rousseau and Addison, and in the 'liberty, equality, fraternity' literature of the French Jacobins and men such as Joseph Priestly and Thomas Paine. What all the anti-white egalitarians and negro worshippers had in common was a hatred for white Christian Europeans and an exalted opinion of the greatness of their own intellects. And it was their exalted egotism that made them believe they could work for the destruction of the white race without any damage to themselves. The liberal ego-maniacs believed that they would rule over a kingdom of grateful noble savages who would allow great white intellectuals like themselves to be the power behind the throne and altar dedicated to the new, noble savage. That is how the mind of the utopian white works. The colored barbarian views life quite differently. He is at war with the white man because he is a barbarian who always plunders and murders those whom he perceives are weaker than himself. He doesn't read books about the noble savage or pamphlets by Joseph Priestly; all he knows is that the existing white power structure will allow him to kill whites with impunity. And he does just that.

It was inevitable, once white-hating liberals took control of the Christian churches, the schools, the government, and the major news outlets, that the constant stream of anti-European verbiage would start a war of extermination. And, also true to form, the propaganda war is continuing now that the real fighting has started, because it is always necessary to keep your troops in ideological fighting-trim. Whenever, which is seldom, a white man fights back, the propaganda wheels are set in motion in order to provide the ideological undergirding for whatever measures are taken against the offending white rebel.

The great tragedy is that the white European cannot say, as the old Scottish clansman said, "All that can be done has been done, and all's been done in vain." Quite the opposite is the case with the European. All that can be done has not been done. In fact, nothing has been done. The Europeans surrendered before the enemy fired a shot. What Anthony Jacob wrote in 1965 remains true today:

As matters stand at present the white man is on the run. It is not the black man or the brown man who is on the march (they are not going anywhere, even if they think they are), it is the white man who is on the run.

Why is the white man on the run? He is on the run because he does not believe that his skin color is part of his soul. He thinks that his identity as a white perishes with the flesh, and all that perishes is of no consequence in the spiritual world. But did not our Lord bid His fearful and doubting disciples to see and feel that His flesh was part of His essential identity as the Son of Man?

Why are ye troubled? And why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

— Luke 24: 38-39

The God of love who was fully divine and fully human knew that mortal man needs a local habitation and a name in order to know the Divine Love. Europeans of old Europe knew this; the modern, European, ornamental Christians do not.

The human heart is the conduit for God's grace. Conservative and liberal Christians have determined that God does not impart to human hearts the blessings of His heaven. They believe God reveals himself through abstract thought. Such a belief places the conservative and the liberal outside of the European Christian tradition. The seemingly sudden emergence of the "race issue" in every branch of the modern propositional churches is the sign of the death of Christianity in those churches. The true faith can only be passed on through the little human things that cosmic philosophers ignore. We learn to love in small units: family, race, community, nation, and then mankind. If you deprive a person of those vital units of love, then you deprive him of his soul, because without those vital human vessels of grace he cannot be connected to anything but an intellectual concept of God, which is meaningless. Satan wants an endless debate between two groups of Gnostics, the conservatives and the liberals. —CWNY

The great white flight from the unbearable burden of race is an attempt to escape from the Cross. If our body is an illusion, not to be considered part of our essential soul, then Christ's suffering on the Cross is also an illusion; He placed His soul somewhere else while His body suffered. And we too, the liberals tell us, can avoid the Cross by imitating our Gnostic Lord and divorcing our bodies from our souls by making our minds part of the great universal mind of all mankind and worshipping the negro as the sign and symbol of the new universalism. Just as the French Jacobins made an actual flesh and blood prostitute the goddess of their new religion, so have the modern liberals made the negro the flesh and blood god of their new faithless faith. This new faith of the Europeans has made them into a faceless, soulless, dung heap devoid of humanity.

The race war is a continuation of the French Revolution; it is an attack on God through His people. Taine's descriptions of the French Jacobins describes our liberals and their negro henchmen:

They are joyous. They dance around each new corpse, and sing the carmagnole; they arouse the people of the quarter to amuse them, and that they may have their share of "the fine fete." Benches are arranged for "gentlemen" and others for "ladies"; the latter, with greater curiosity, are additionally anxious to contemplate at their ease "the aristocrats" already slain; consequently, lights are required, and one is placed on the breast of each corpse.

It was the heirs of the apostles, the Europeans, who allowed us to handle and see the living God. It is the liberals of church and state who have taken Him away from us and bid us handle and see the living negro instead of the living God. By taking away our identity as a people, the liberals hope to forge a new world devoid of the old Christ and His people.

If I say that the white nation will not ultimately succumb to multiracial liberalism, I can quite justly be accused of speaking from the heart, not the head. But the eyes of faith, which are in the heart, see much more than the eyes of the mind. There will be much suffering and travail, but in the end the few will fight the many and they will prevail, because they will have His image, which is embodied in His Europe, before their eyes.

The end for Liberaldom will come when a remnant band of Europeans throws off the oppressive ideology of progressive intelligence. I use those words rather than 'evolution,' because evolution tends to be narrowly associated with Darwin, and I am talking about an ideology that encompasses Darwinian evolution, but is infinitely broader than Darwinian evolution. I define progressive intelligence as the modern notion that we have advanced beyond... Beyond what? Well, beyond everything. In the Church we have advanced beyond a simplistic concept of a personal savior who came to free us from sin and give us eternal life in His kingdom. And in church and state we have advanced beyond our "prejudices"; we no longer see black and white (unless we are discriminating against whites); we just see one universal people. I remember reading, a few months back, a liberal's apologia for a multiracial world. The enlightened liberal informed his readers that the Greeks and the Romans, whom we all know were the most intelligent of people, were unconcerned about race. It was only those Germanic, Christian Europeans who became obsessed about race. The message of his heavy-handed editorial was quite clear. Intelligent people are not racist, only Europeans during the Christian European era were racist, because they believed in a stupid fairy tale God invented by a very stupid people. "Do you want to be stupid?," the progressive intelligence apologist asks us. And we are supposed to cry out, "Hell no! I'm not stupid, I'm not racist, I'm not Christian as they were. I'm a new age universalist Christian. Please, Mr. Liberal, don't call me a racist; find me a black man and I'll worship him!" I wish I could remember the title of a book I once read to my children when they were young.⁽¹⁾ In the book a country boy (for some reason which I've also forgotten) goes to spend some time at the court of Queen Elizabeth. When the lad is asked to sing for the entertainment of the court, the boy sings a country ditty he learned at his mother's knee. Despite the laughter and sneers of the men and women at court, the country boy finishes his song. One of the members of the court, who is world-weary and jaded, but not yet emptied of all humanity, applauds the boy and tells him, 'Never be ashamed of the things you love.'

Our faith and the culture built around that faith is a fairy tale. The European people are currently imprisoned by evil enchanters called liberals. They keep their kingdom in order by the use of magic words such as 'stupid' and 'racist.' So long as those magic words keep Europeans from loving their people and their ancient bardic faith, the kingdom of the loathsome liberals will continue. But when a third dumb brother ventures forth because he loves old Europe for its own sake and not for anything he can get from it, the kingdom of the liberals will come crashing down.

Fairy tale logic seems illogical, but His ways are different from the ways of the men of logic. What was Christ compared to Pilate? A mere nothing, a troublesome prisoner. But who prevailed? If history remembers Leonid Brezhnev, it will be only because he was the premier of Russia when Alexander Solzhenitsyn lived there. The European, if he is to be true to his God and his race, must always champion the spirit above the dust. Throw all the statistical analyses about the death of the European away and view the movie, made before the demise of the story movies, *The Wonderful World of the Brothers Grimm*. George Pal, the producer, was, like Walt Disney, the real director of all his films. He loved to make fairy tale pictures like *Tom Thumb* and *The Naked Jungle* (in which Charlton Heston battles a multitude of supposedly invincible ants). In *The Brothers Grimm*, one brother, Jacob, labors to write scholarly works on mathematics, logic, and Greek, while the other brother, Wilhelm, goes about the country collecting and recording fairy tales that have been part of the oral tradition of his nation for centuries. Toward the end of the picture, the scholarly brother goes to Berlin to receive a reward for his scholarly work. He is accompanied by Wilhelm, who writes the "silly fairy stories." The final judgment on the worth of the "silly stories" is given by the children of Berlin, who greet the brothers as they get off the train. Completely ignoring Jacob, the children rush to Wilhelm and implore him to, "Tell us a story, Mr. Grimm! Please tell us a story!" The antique Europeans told me a story and I wept. They are my people and I love them with a love that cannot be adequately put into words. Burke is right; if you truly love your people, you will hate those who want to destroy them. The battle is joined; the war shall no longer be a one-sided war. And, praise be God, let us never yield to Liberaldom and never lose sight of Fairy Tale Europe. +

(1) I believe the book was *Master Skylark* by John Bennett

The Dear Land of Storybooks

June 23, 2012

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson



Yet as I saw it, I see it again
The kirk and the palace, the ships and the men,
And as long as I live and where'er I may be
I'll always remember my town by the sea

-Robert Louis Stevenson

Let us begin with Hippolyte Taine:

In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for, if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet;...

Taine, the poet, has shown us Liberaldom from within the liberals' twisted souls. Their hearts have become corrupted with a sick, illicit passion. And they use their reason to defend the passion of their hearts, not to examine their hearts in order to see if what they feel inside can stand up to the test of reality. In fact, quite the opposite is true; the liberals must constantly deny reality so they can maintain their liberalism. No appeal to reason has any effect on the liberals, because the liberals' evil hearts govern their brains. It is impossible to have a "dialogue" with a liberal, because the liberals have denounced all their humanity for an inhuman, satanic faith.

The liberals' passion for abstraction stems from their illicit desire for a multiracial, Eden-like Babylon, presided over by a benevolent negro god. They must abstract such a utopian kingdom because it has no basis in reality. Babylon is hell, not paradise, and the negro is a cruel barbarian despot, not a benevolent ruler. Only in the abstract world of the liberals' brains is there a multiracial paradise. And because the liberals' paradise has no basis in reality, the dream of a liberal paradise must be maintained by murder. "In fixing his mind on abstract formulas, he is no longer able to see men as they are; through self-admiration he finally comes to viewing his adversaries, and even his rivals, as miscreants deserving of death."

Deserving of death? Does that only describe the Jacobins' feelings about the French aristocrats? I hope there are no Europeans, who still feel themselves to be Europeans, that think "the Jacobins were just a French phenomenon back then" and are not present today throughout all of Europe. If you think that then you are morally blind. Liberalism is the expansion of the Jacobin Reign of Terror. Only now it is not confined to French aristocrats; it has been extended to all white people. And just as Robespierre thought his special 'elect' status would save him from the bloody terror he instituted, so do the liberals think their special elect status as the founding fathers of the Babylonian Terror will keep them from the bloody deaths they plan for the rest of the white race.

During the height of the Reign of Terror no one within France dared to speak out against the Terror. To do so was death. And very few men outside of France -Burke was the exception- spoke out against the Terror because they wanted to have dealings with the new government. The modern European whose heart is with old Europe is in a similar situation vis-à-vis his government, as the throne and altar Frenchman was vis-à-vis his government during the Reign of Terror. He dare not speak out, but whether he speaks out or not he is marked to die. In modern Liberaldom, there are no nations outside of Liberaldom from which a Burke can launch an attack, because all of what was once Christendom is now part of Liberaldom.

Liberaldom is maintained by lying abstractions, so every lying abstraction feeds the liberal leviathan. This is why 'getting out the vote' tactics and 'dialoging' with liberals is beneficial to liberals and very self-defeating for antique Europeans. The democratic process in Liberaldom consists of a competition between rival sects of negro-worshipping Jacobins. They often hate each other like Robespierre hated Danton, but they are all striving for the same goal: a democratic, multiracial state devoid of white people. And how can there be a dialogue with a group of people who have made an a priori assumption that you, and your people, need to be eradicated so Babylon can survive and thrive?

"The pity of men is that they forget." Only the great soldiers of the spirit see with blinding sight, while the rest of mankind see only momentary flashes of light and then forget what it was they saw. Burke saw that the Jacobin ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity meant death to Christian Europe. Time has proven Burke right. Jacobinism has spread throughout Christendom and is now the ruling ideology of Liberaldom. Once the Ancient Mariner's shipmates gave their consent to the murder of the albatross, they also inherited the curse:

*Nor dim nor red, like God's own head,
The glorious Sun uprise:
Then all averr'd, I had kill'd the bird
That brought the fog and mist.
'Twas right, said they, such birds to slay,
That bring the fog and mist.*

One by one the European nations gave their consent to the murder of old Europe. They justified their murders with god words such as 'democracy,' 'racial equality,' 'evolving beyond,' and 'truth and justice,' but the high-sounding words were only used to cloak a cowardly betrayal of His Europe in order to return to the Egyptian night of the colored races.

We are in the midst of a Reign of Terror. The slightest opposition to black atrocities, by word or deed, will be severely punished by the liberal Jacobins. For the white man, all seems cheerless, dark, and deadly. Like the Ancient Mariner, he is alone on a wide, wide sea. But he is only alone because he refuses to remember that he is the Christ-bearer. If he would remember, he would realize what it means to have a people and a God:

Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.

A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee. Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked. Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet. Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. – Psalm 91:5-14

In the midst of the Reign of Terror, our people and our God are with us.

The war for the extermination of the white race is a stage, quite possibly the final stage, in a war that began in the Garden of Eden. Sinful man wanted to impose his Satan-inspired, abstracted vision of existence on God. The issue has always been one of boundaries. The man connected to the heart of God looks on boundaries of race, sex, nation, and hearth as part of God's benevolent ordering of the world; God's boundaries are sacred boundaries meant to help men know the living God. But the man, the liberal, whose heart is a knot of vipers, looks on God's boundaries as prison walls. He will not be confined by them. He belongs to a universal race, a universal nation, a universal sex, and a universal family. And as a consequence of his universalism, he belongs to a nondescript, impersonal, cosmic god who is no God at all.

Speaking only for myself (but I suspect others who have made the long trek back to bardic Europe might have similar feelings) I feel as one with the Ancient Mariner. I grew up in Babylon and accepted the premises of Babylon until I saw the beauty of the European Albatross that was slain. Now I stoppeth whomever I can and tell them the tale of the European Albatross, the bird of good omen that leads us to the Christ. We must believe that every heartfelt defense of the antique European people puts a spiritual dent in the liberals' ideological wall of satanic abstractions. The old English proverb is apropos: "Brag is a good dog, but Hold-fast is better." If we hold fast to the hearth and people of old Europe we will see, at the last trump, in the twinkling of the eye, the demise of Liberaldom.

It will be as it is in the fairy tales: when the sword of the hero plunges deep into the heart of the sorcerer or sorceress, the kingdom built upon the evil heart perishes as well. I love the scene in Walt Disney's Sleeping Beauty, when Prince Phillip hurls the sword of truth into Maleficent's heart (she has assumed the form of a dragon). All that remains is the sword of truth. Christian Europe is truth, Liberaldom is falsehood. Ultimately only the sword of Europe will be left when Liberaldom is ashes.

One of the most remarkable works of literature ever penned was Robert Louis Stevenson's *A Child's Garden of Verses*. The verses, taken in their entirety, give us a uniquely European view of existence. We see in Stevenson's verses the romance of the European hearth fire. The European home is of the spirit. All love, all charity, all things rich and rare center around the European hearth fire. That is the vision of Stevenson, and it is the vision of all Europeans prior to the coming of the defilers of all things European. But that sacred world invoked by Stevenson, of our European hearth fire, where we learned to love God and man through the little things, still exists in the racial memory of the European people. We must recover our memories of our European childhood, because without that childhood we are lost souls doomed to wander alone and sightless through the darkness of Liberaldom.

It seems like an easy thing to remember our European childhood, much easier than forming a think-tank or electing a politician to office, but it is very difficult to maintain a memory of a sacred childhood when all the machinery of church and state have banned together to eradicate the memory of our sacred past. They want us to believe that our European childhood was a sickness from which we need to recover. The honor, the love, the faith, and the charity that existed in the story book land of Europe must be eviscerated so that Liberaldom can survive. But Liberaldom won't survive; our refusal to leave our childhood memories of Europe in the dustbins of history will ensure the death of Liberaldom.

*Home I return across the sea,
And go to bed with backward looks
At my dear Land of Story-books. +*

The Third Path

June 30, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christ the Hero, Democracy, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Hippolyte Taine



O Lord arise, help us, and deliver us, for thy name's sake.

— *The Book of Common Prayer*

I recall an old western movie in which the main character asked his partner, after he saw Mr. Money Bags leave their ranch with his thugs: "Did you crawl?" His partner responded, "I wasn't asked to." The hero was ready to disown his partner if he had crawled upon compulsion. What would he have thought of a man who crawls without being compelled to crawl?

Such were my thoughts when I heard Rich Lowry of National Review joining in with the black witch doctor, Al Sharpton, to condemn George Zimmerman, before any of the evidence was in, for the murder of the saintly and blessed man-child called Trayvon Martin. Sadly, Lowry's rush to throw himself at the feet of Al Sharpton did not surprise me. *National Review* magazine was only marginally conservative at its inception, and it has been going steadily down the left bank of the hill for the past three decades.

What Lowry revealed, in his cowardly attempt to appease his liberal cousins and the black barbarians, was the essential unity of the liberal and the conservative. Spiritually they are joined at the hip. What is the doctrine that binds them to each other, often in hate? It is democratic egalitarianism. Democracy as a magical, mystical system, as an end in and of itself, not as a means to an end, is the faith of the modern liberal and the conservative.

Faith in an all encompassing system to which all people must adhere because the system encompasses God is a very old Faith; it is pagan. The reason that Christianity could not be absorbed into the Roman system was because the Christian could only render to Caesar that which belonged to Caesar; in those matters touching his conscience and his faith he had to render to God alone. The modern Christian circumvents his obligations to God by simply declaring democracy and Christianity as one and the same. Therefore anything undemocratic is unchristian; there is no problem of conscience. So long as the "Christian" practices the civic religion of democratic negro worship he will feel that he is right with God. Our current system of democratic egalitarianism in which some are more equal than others does not seem even remotely compatible with the Christian faith. But the fear of being in a state of non-conformity to the powers that be can make a man convince himself of just about anything, no matter how absurd. And our satanic modern democratic system, which makes demands that run counter to the will of the living God and counter to the nobler instincts in the human heart, feeds on the blood of all those who are not loyal to the system. Just as the French Jacobins maintained their reign of terror with blood, so do our modern Jacobins, the liberals, maintain their regime with blood.

They must abuse their engine because fear, losing its effect through habit, needs example to keep it alive; the negro monarch or the pacha who would keep the fear alive by which he rules, must be stimulated every day; he must slaughter too many to be sure of slaughtering enough; he must slaughter constantly, in heaps, indiscriminately, haphazard, no matter for what offence, on the slightest suspicion, the innocent along with the guilty. He and his are lost the moment they cease to obey this rule. Every Jacobin, like every African monarch or pacha, must observe it that he may be and remain at the head of his band.—For this reason, the chiefs of the sect, its natural leaders designated beforehand, consist of theorists able to grasp its principles, and logicians about to arrive at its conclusions, narrow-minded enough not to see that their undertaking exceeds their powers and all human powers, shrewd enough to see that brutal force is their only instrumentality, inhuman enough to apply it unscrupulously and without reserve, and perverted enough to murder on all sides that they may stamp an impression of lasting terror.

— *The French Revolution* by Hippolyte Taine

It was Metternich who warned us that, "Whenever I hear the word 'democracy' I know a bloodbath is coming." Wasn't that the case in France? In South Africa? And isn't it the case in the streets of every city of European origin? Yes, it was and is. The barbarians of color kill at the behest of the liberals, who invoke democracy to justify the extermination of the white race: "Just growing pains" and "You really can't blame them after years of ..." And yet, after all the violence against white people, instigated by adherents of democracy, no white men, not even professed white nationalists, ever propose to fight white genocide by any means other than democratic means. Such men do not understand the religious nature of democracy. It is not a system of laws; far from it. Martin Luther King, Jr. violated the law, but he was adhering to the religious tenets of egalitarian democracy by moving the nation toward racial egalitarianism. When the Black Panthers murdered white policemen in the 1960's they were applauded and made into saints because they too were serving the democratic system. The system is all. All of a man's loyalty and devotion is supposed to be to the system. Outside the system is the night.

The Christian European will not accept the democratic system as his god. His conscience and his honor cannot be overwhelmed and superseded by a sovereign state directly opposed to the living God. If we render our souls to Caesar, which is precisely the demand of the Caesars of democratic egalitarianism, we will become men of straw easily gathered and burnt by Satan and his minions.

In order to survive, a democratic, egalitarian government must pander to the lowest instincts in mankind. But the keepers of the democratic flame do not say, "We are pandering to the lowest instincts in mankind." Instead they call fair foul and foul fair. The worship of black barbarians becomes "civil rights." The celebration of unbridled lust becomes "overcoming repression." The murder of infants becomes a "woman's right to choose," and on it goes into the Babylonian night.

We are told by the liberals that the new theocracy of democratic egalitarianism came about because it was the will of the people. I don't agree. Revolutions do not succeed because an overwhelming majority support the revolutionaries. They come about when a passionate few believe in the revolution and an overwhelming majority are uncertain about and indifferent to the status quo. Christian Europe was replaced by democratic Babylon, because Europeans were in doubt about the distinctiveness of the European people. And they doubted their distinctiveness as a people because they doubted the distinctiveness of Jesus Christ from all other gods. The scientific revolt against the incarnational civilization of Christian Europe ushered in a new world with the negro as the sacred god of the new world. Now that the revolution has been institutionalized there is an overwhelming majority of people who support it, but the overwhelming majority of people have never known any other faith than democratic egalitarianism and have never been exposed to Christianity as preached and practiced by Europeans in the Christian era of Europe. Can the liberals say with certainty that if the true Christianity, the European Christianity of a bygone era, was championed by a passionate white minority, that they, the liberals, might not be overwhelmed by a newly aroused majority of white people who had become indifferent and bored with democratic Babylon? No, they cannot say that with absolute certainty, so they keep a close watch for outbursts of Christian European resistance to democratic Babylon, in order to crush it as they would crush a loathsome insect.

I know neither the day nor the hour of Liberaldom's demise, but I do know what will bring it down. Passion will bring it down. A passion like unto Burke's, who fought with might and main against the regicide French. A passion like Shakespeare's, who saw past the outer form of things to the spirit within. All true, transcendent passion stems from His passion. It is a

passion that overwhelms all that stands against it. When a few Europeans recover that passion, the end of Liberaldom is nigh.

The wheel is come full circle. The reason that a man like Rich Lowry of *National Review* is a spiritual coward is because his soul has been overmanned by the democratic, negro-worshipping heresy of modern Liberaldom. In the absence of a passionate faith in Jesus Christ and the European culture that was the incarnation of that faith, Lowry became a fearful, cringing caricature of a man lying flat on his face in front of the sacred black man. Negro worship is the inevitable outcome of the democratic system, because in the ‘some-are-more-equal-than-others’ democracy of the devil, the lowest common denominator, the negro, must be exalted. So long as democracy is a god word in the European nations, white men will bow down to the negro. What fills an antique European with disgust, the sight of white men bowing down to their negro gods, makes the modern white men feel holy and uplifted. Just as the antique Europeans felt no shame in bending their knees to Christ, the modern white men feel no shame in effacing themselves before their negro gods.

Even if democratic egalitarianism meant what it said, that we are all to be treated equally, it would be wrong, because Holy Scriptures and the reality of life tell us that human beings are inherently unequal. But democratic egalitarianism does not mean what it says. Sometime in the early 1970’s the Pittsburgh Pirates baseball team fielded an all black team. Every year on the anniversary of that sacred day the members of the predominantly white news media oooh and aah about the magnificence of the day. They never explain why the day deserves to be so exalted. It is just a given that a day in which a baseball team fielded an all black team is a day that white people should celebrate. But why, if we truly are a democratic egalitarian society that celebrates diversity, should we celebrate an entirely black baseball team? Isn’t such a non-diverse team something we should deplore? Shouldn’t a team have some white players, as well as some red, yellow, and brown players, if it is a truly diverse, democratic egalitarian team worthy of honor and homage? Of course it should if we simply go by the dictionary meaning of democratic and egalitarian, but we know the true meaning of democratic egalitarianism. It is a pagan, religious system in which all honor and homage is due to the black gods.

Robert Frost wrote of two divergent paths in the woods. He claims he took the path less traveled on. I have my doubts about that. But even if we countenance Frost’s claim, we must see that Frost’s less traveled path, the path of the democratic egalitarian conservative, ultimately merges with that other path, the path of the democratic egalitarian liberal. And that path leads the conservative and the liberal to the altar of the negro gods.

There is a third path. It can’t be seen by the naked eye, at least not at first, because it has not been trodden on for almost a century. It is completely covered by thorns and briars. But if a European, possessed of that passionate faith that moves mountains, would start hewing a path for himself, despite the thorns and briars, he will eventually come to a clearing in the woods. And there upon the altar of his European ancestors he will find the antithesis of the black gods of Liberaldom. He will find Jesus Christ, the Son of the Living god, who was wounded for our offenses and smitten for our wickedness. +

Honor-Bound

July 7, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



These are not natural events;
they strengthen
From strange to stranger.

-*The Tempest*

I recently saw a televised debate between a mad-dog liberal Democrat and a liberal-conservative Republican. They were debating Obamacare. The liberal-conservative, who seemed to have actually read Obama's health care plan, quoted chapter and verse from it and told the viewers why the plan would be bad for the American people. The mad-dog liberal did not deem to answer one single point raised by the liberal-conservative. Instead, he simply played the race card. All opposition to Obama's health care plan was racist, case closed. The liberal-conservative had all the wind taken out of his sails and spent the rest of the debate defending himself against charges of racism.

I turned off the debate, which was no longer a debate but a televised show trial. The conservative-liberal was desperately trying to defend himself against the charge of **Racism**. And wasn't that show trial a mini-preview of the upcoming Presidential election? Romney will make some critique of one of Obama's programs, and the mad-dog liberals will turn the tables on him with the race card. And Romney will run and hide under the bed. As Yogi Berra once said, "It's déjà vu all over again." It's the old infallibility debate. During John Paul II's reign of terror, the papalotars squelched all opposition to John Paul II's liberalism by playing the Pope card, just as the mad-dog liberals trump all opposition by playing the race card in defense of Obama. What will happen when a black man becomes Pope? That could cause a schism; there will be two Popes.

Maybe the time will never come when we have two Popes, but let's not delude ourselves about the fact that we do have a black Pope. Obama's election and his continuance in office is the result of the religious fervor of white Americans. If white people did not worship the Noble Black Savage, Obama would not be our Presidential Pope.

If by some chance Obama should lose the upcoming Presidential election, the liberals will become sedevacantists. The throne will be vacant, so they will worship and obey a composite collection of black Popes from the past and present, such as Martin Luther King, Jr., and Nelson Mandela. And they will continue to clamor for a new black Pope to fill the vacant throne because in the eyes of the liberals a white man is, by virtue of his whiteness, a heretic outside the ken of humanity. In Liberaldom only the colored races are considered fully human. The upcoming election will not change the religion of the white race. Whether Romney wins or Obama wins, the worship of the negro will continue to be the state religion of the European people.

Ronald Reagan was not precisely correct when he called the Soviet Union the "Evil Empire." The Soviet Union was an evil country within the evil empire of Liberaldom. Every modern European nation is part of that evil empire and the evil empire acknowledges the negro as God. The edifice of negro worship is science. If you criticize science you are considered a Luddite who is against life-saving advances in medicine. But science is so much more than some practical inventions that have helped men to adjust to their natural environment. Modern science is a monstrous man-child that has turned against his parent. It is one thing, which is far from harmful, to look at the world of nature in order to see how human suffering can be alleviated by obtaining some mastery of the laws of nature. It is quite another thing to try to scientize God, to make Him into a God who is confined within a natural process called nature. The "educated" men — and all Europeans believe themselves to be educated men — do not believe that the visible material world of nature is a pale reflection of a far greater spiritual world. They believe in a world of fact and science. Thomas Gradgrind's philosophy of education has become the credo of the modern European:

"Now, what I want is, Facts. Teach these boys and girls nothing but Facts. Facts alone are wanted in life. Plant nothing else, and root out everything else. You can only form the minds of reasoning animals upon Facts: nothing else will ever be of any service to them. This is the principle on which I bring up my own children, and this is the principle on which I bring up these children. Stick to Facts, Sir!"

A world of fact and science needs a god who is of this world only. That is why the future-oriented "intelligent" men such as Voltaire and Rousseau, choose to worship the Noble Savage instead of Christ. But such a horrendous falling off, from Christ to the Noble Savage, is a return to paganism. The liberal envisions some kind of synthesis of the Greek intellectual tradition with the earthiness of the vital and natural people of the colored races: "They're so authentic." Wine, cheese, avocado dip, and couples of every color and sex pairing off for moonlight trysts under the spreading palms. Such are the fantasies of the liberals. But it doesn't happen like that. Since the coming of Christ the light is greater, but so are the shadows. It is all or nothing for the white man. He can't have just a little bit of paganism, a nice pleasant Greek idyll. The idyll will quickly become a nightmare from which the white man will be incapable of escaping. He feels the void in his soul, but he does not seek to fill the void in his soul by repentance. Instead he goes deeper into hell. The paganism of the Greeks is on the outer circle of hell; the post-Christian white man feels driven to go further down and closer to Satan. He is like a drug addict who needs larger and stronger doses of his drug in order to keep reality at bay. And sadly the reality of Christ crucified, Christ risen that the white man wants to keep at bay, is the only reality that will cure the white European. Until he looks up and seeks the light, he will continue to make his descent into hell with the demons of black barbarism scourging him every inch of the way.

The modern European world has a nightmarish quality to it because there is no room in the nations of Europe for the people and the culture of Europe. If you go out into a major European city you will see large groups of colored barbarians determined to infuse their cultural values of rape, murder, and mayhem on the Europeans. If you wander into a European church, any denomination will do, you will not hear anything about the Christ of the European people. You will hear of the social worker Christ who died to make future generations free to worship the noble black savage. And lest you think you will escape from your nightmare into leisure sports, the liberals have made it clear that all sporting events must be connected to the religious life of the people, so no sporting event is valid that doesn't have negroes in it.

The reigning credo of liberalism is that all white men are evil and all evil men are white. This will be the ruling principle of Liberaldom so long as nature is our god. Listen to Robespierre on the 8th of June, 1794, when he spoke at the festival in honor of the Supreme Being:

"The Universe is here assembled! O, Nature, how sublime, how exquisite is thy power! How tyrants must quail at the contemplation of this festival!"

And who were the tyrants? Anyone who opposed Robespierre's abstract idea of nature. And the work goes on. Rival factions of Jacobins called Republicans and Democrats, Tories and Laborites, socialists and Christian democrats, will oppose each other, but they are all working toward one goal, the murder of the ancient regime, which is Christian Europe. All white men are connected by blood to the ancient regime, whether they like it or not. It is ordained that they must die so nature can rule. Nicolas Sarkozy, former President of France, spoke for every

European nation when he said France is a “regicide country.” Yes, indeed France is a regicide country, and so are we all, the European people, members of regicide nations. We have forgotten that we are the Christ-bearers who were born to bear witness to the God who transcends nature: “there is in this business more than nature, Was ever conduct of.”

If there isn’t something more to the business of life than mere nature, if indeed Christ be not risen, then the liberals and the neopagans are right. Let’s return to the paganism that provides the most creature comforts. But if Christ is risen we cannot live in peaceful accord with the regicides of Liberaldom whether they call themselves liberals, conservatives, or neopagans.

The modern Jacobins of Liberaldom, who believe in their own abstracted world of noble savages and enlightened white people can make Christ into whatever they want Him to be. He can be a social worker who supports integration, a tolerant good fellow who supports homosexuality and a woman’s right to choose, or a lesser god who worships the black gods right alongside of the Jacobins. But the Christian European has a different relationship with Christ. His Christ is the Living God, whom the European people took into their hearts and homes. We are honor-bound to bring Christ back into our European home and destroy the regicide liberals. They have turned Christian Europe into a Babylonian whorehouse which is roughly equivalent to our modern college campuses. In such a “natural” setting the Jacobins can satisfy their lusts of the flesh and their pride of the intellect. Let us bid the hell hounds turn and fight to the death.

It is not a case of fixing a process that has gone wrong. The democratic process has not gone wrong. It was always wrong. The evil mind behind democracy is Satan. He wanted, and still wants, to destroy the Christ-bearing people, and by doing so he hopes to deal a death blow to God. The European no longer sees through the same eyes as the Europeans of the past. He doesn’t see Europeans as His people, who are involved in a war with Satan and his colored minions, but he still sees images of good and evil. He sees the forces of democracy, with the negro as their god, fighting evil white men who are trying to return mankind to the unscientific, unenlightened era of the Europeans. But look at the nightmare world the negro worshipping liberals, who see nothing but evil in old Europe, have created. What world, antique Europe or their hell on earth, are we honor bound to champion? +

The Rulers of Babylon

July 14, 2012

Categories: Jacobinism, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Burke



And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. —*Genesis 11:4*

For nearly a century now the European people have been ruled by liberals. What can we say about them? Certainly nothing good. They are the most inhuman, cruel, tyrannical people that have ever walked the earth. And yet the liberals do not see themselves as cruel, inhuman tyrants. Why don't they see what is obvious? They don't see the obvious because they have reduced all of life to an abstraction. They never see individual human beings suffering terribly under their regimes because they have only an abstract idea of humanity that they lovingly caress in their own minds. They desire to help an abstract concept of 'the people,' which to them is all of humanity, and to reap the applause of 'the people' for their great benevolence. So the liberals keep "helping" their abstract, generic people while opposing all the 'enemies' of 'the people', and those 'enemies' are the real flesh and blood human beings that inhabit this earth. Any appeal to the liberals' compassion from non-liberals will not only fail, it will bring the wrath of the liberals upon the appellant, because the liberals do not want anyone to challenge their abstract ideal of humanity and their vision of themselves as the great benefactors of humanity.

In the non-abstract world called reality there is no doubt that aborted babies are human beings, but for over thirty years the liberals have steadfastly resisted appeals on behalf of the murdered infants and the infants about to be murdered. All attempts to persuade the liberals of their cruelty and inhumanity are futile because they don't recognize the humanity of the babies in the womb or the humanity of those who plead for them. It is the same with the slaughter of white people and the systematic eradication of their culture. No appeal to the humane instincts of the liberals will stop the extermination process because the liberals, having no genuine humanity, only an abstract idea of humanity, do not look on white people as human beings. Like Robespierre the liberals recognize only a small group of people as truly human. For Robespierre it was all the low class scum who fawned on him, and for the liberals it is the negroes.

The revolution goes on, but the 'chosen few' have changed. The concept of 'the people,' those persons who are designated as genuine human beings, has narrowed. Now it is only the colored races, with the negro taking precedence (some are more equal) that constitute humanity. And it is striking and very revealing to see how completely estranged, even those cohabiting, the black and the liberal are. The liberal doesn't see the real black man; he sees only his abstract notion of a black man, and all that the black man knows of the white liberals, or cares to know, is that they are easy prey.

A culture based on a false abstraction, the belief in the Noble Savage, cannot provide the spiritual sustenance to a people. White people are becoming extinct because they haven't the spirit to survive. When the entire Western world becomes like Academia, where the abstraction rules, the white man will cease to exist, and the negroes, who are sustained by the white race, will become beasts of burden for their rival colored races. Having never been Christian, the colored rivals of the black race do not have the post-Christian disease. They do not view the black man as a Noble Savage.

When I was growing up a low budget movie called *The Blob* was popular. It has remained a popular movie to this day and can be seen on many of the old movie channels. It is difficult to see why *The Blob* remains so popular as it has no substantive plot. But then again, liberalism has no substantive plot and it remains highly popular. The Blob, who is the title character, starts out as a small, sticky, inhuman substance and grows, by feeding on people, into an enormous mass of inhumanity that needs to constantly feed and grow in order to survive. Hmm... is the Blob a metaphor? Yes, I think it is. That monstrous mass of inhumanity is what we now call liberalism. Within that mass of inhumanity is what is left of individual human beings. But they choose to extinguish their humanity and become part of an abstract monstrosity that has an overwhelming need to make all of humanity part of itself, the Blob.

About six months ago, I got one of those hideous summons to appear in court for jury duty. Since the summons came with a threat for non-compliance, I complied. Different courts use different methods of weeding out the undesirable jurors. Some courts get rid of the undesirables before selecting the jury, while others select the jury and then dismiss those who don't pass muster. On this occasion the lawyers first picked the jury and then questioned them. I was selected as a juror, but then the questions began. Does anyone here know the defendant? Does anyone here know the defense attorney? And so on, and so on. Quite basic stuff. Then came the big question, at least from my point of view. "Does any member of the jury feel that they could not follow the judge's instructions if his instructions went against their own personal beliefs?" I immediately responded: "My conscience does not belong to the judge. Of course, I'd go with my personal beliefs against the judge's instructions." I was on fire to continue; I wanted to go on about a morally bankrupt nation that gave legal sanction to the murder of infants. From there I wanted to talk about the necessity of making man's law conform to God's law. The judge was having none of that though. Despite the fact that he had debated with all other potential jurors who had brought up misgivings on lesser topics, he dismissed me immediately without any discussion.

The judge's survival instincts were functioning properly. A government with no moral basis dare not allow courtroom discussion of the moral undergirding of its laws. As I was leaving the courtroom, I thought of Burke's proud statement about the once great nation of Britain.

We are not the converts of Rousseau; we are not the disciples of Voltaire; Helvetius has made no progress amongst us. Atheists are not our preachers; madmen are not our lawgivers. — Burke

Ah, there's the rub. We now are the converts of Rousseau, and madmen now are our lawgivers. Just as the satanic regimes of the French Jacobins and the Russian communists needed reams and reams of legal documents (90% of the Jacobin lawmakers were lawyers) so does our present government try to mask its moral illegitimacy by setting up a kingdom of legal documents. What kind of people do such governments produce? They produce an inhuman Blob of soulless people. I think many of those potential jurors, if you talked to them privately, would have assented to the proposition that God's law trumps man's law. But they would never apply that to their own country. Reared on the assumptions that what is lawful is right, and that a man's religion is a private matter independent of the law, the seemingly human jurors became mesmerized zombies in the face of that triple-turned whore called 'The Law.'

In reality all people structure their laws according to their religious faith. The liberals put forward the lie that liberal law is not religiously based so that they can keep the few remaining Christians out of the public debate. What kind of man agrees to leave his faith behind when deciding matters of great importance? A nothing man. All governments of the European world are now based on an inversion of the Christian faith, an unholy trinity that we encounter in every aspect of our lives: The Father – the abstracted intellect, The Son – the negro, and The Holy Ghost – science. All white children are taught the liberal faith, and they learn to practice it as they pass from childhood to zombiehood. The negroes? They hear of their divine status from cradle to grave.

It's important to see that the liberals are conquerors. They have done to Europe what conquerors do. They have destroyed all that once sustained the culture they conquered. In religion, politics, law, and in civil society all vestiges of Christian Europe are gone. The fight must be to restore Christian Europe and destroy all vestiges of Liberalism, not to beg the liberals for breathing room in Liberalism. But the internal work against principalities and powers that St. Paul writes about must be done first, or all is done in vain. Superficial Christianity soon becomes liberalism:

Burnet says, that when he was in France, in the year 1683, "the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this—they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly." If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is "much too much") amongst ourselves. The humour, however, is not general. -Burke

We need to ask our modern liberal Jacobins what Burke asked the French Jacobins: "Having destroyed the old order, whose laws stemmed from the Christian faith, on what principle do you propose to base your laws?" And of course their answer to Burke was an abstraction called Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity presided over by a whore called Reason. And our modern Jacobins are of the same spirit. In their minds, which are abstracted from reality, they believe in a racially blended world, sustained by science and presided over by the negro.

A world such as Liberaldom, which is opposed to reality, must have cradle-to-grave propaganda. The great push for a universal educational system from which "no child will be left behind" is a thinly disguised program to make every white man, woman, and child denounce their European rights of memory and consign their souls, which are white, to the devil.

From approximately 1914 to 1965 the great bulk of Europeans had forsaken the Christian faith. But during that time period the great bulk of Europeans still believed in the ethical system that stemmed from the Christian faith. Race-mixing was not rampant, abortion was illegal, and feminine virtue was honored. But an ethical system cannot survive long without the faith that created it. In the second half of the 20th century we saw the collapse of the ethical system which came from Christianity. Race-mixing became holy, abortion became legal, and female promiscuity and sluttishness were considered wonderfully progressive and ground-breaking (witness Madonna cavorting at the Super Bowl). There are no adequate words to describe such a moral collapse. It is a tragedy that only Shakespeare could describe. There is only one benefit from the death of the ethical system that was the result of a Christian hangover. The one benefit is clarity. When non-Christian Europeans of the Christian hangover era shared the same values, if not the same faith, as European Christians, it was much more difficult to do battle with them. But now, when the New Age heathens regularly worship at the altar of the negro gods and revel in the fleshpots of Babylon, it is easy to see that the sword must be drawn and the battle joined. Who, having known His Europe and having seen the liberals' New World Order, would ever sheath his sword until Liberaldom is destroyed? +

Into the Hand of God

July 21, 2012

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



And is then example nothing? It is every thing. Example is the school of mankind, and they will learn at no other. This war is a war against that example. It is not a war for Louis the Eighteenth, or even for the property, virtue, fidelity of France. It is a war for George the Third, for Francis the Second, and for all the dignity, property, honour, virtue, and religion of England, of Germany, and of all nations. — Edmund Burke

When Jim Webb was writing as a former naval officer, not as a government official, he wrote an article stating his heartfelt opinion as to why women soldiers should not be used in combat. He was attacked by the liberals for his opinions. Once Webb became a government official, he changed his mind about female troops in combat. He was then lauded by the liberals for his “growth.” Chief Justice Roberts came to the Supreme Court as a Bush appointee and a “conservative.” As such he was, in the eyes of the liberals, a very bad man. But then the strict constructionist voted for Obamacare and he, like Webb, became a man of integrity who had “grown” during his tenure in office. He saw the liberal light. Even more recently a “conservative” columnist named David Blankenhorn, who used to be an outspoken opponent of gay marriage, decided that gay marriage was a wonderful thing. Need we add that Blankenhorn was lauded by the liberals for his new-found “integrity”? I could supply hundreds of examples of sudden growth by conservatives. It seems to be a very common phenomenon.

When I was in my early teens I remember seeing an ad for a Kim Novak movie (I realize I date myself by mentioning Kim Novak), which asked the question, “What strange power does she have over men?” It was pretty obvious, even to a fourteen year old boy – or maybe especially to a fourteen year old boy – what power Kim Novak had over men. It’s just as obvious what strange power the mad-dog liberals have over the liberal-conservatives. They hold the keys to wealth, power, and popularity because they are the rulers of the European people. It might be possible to obtain wealth without being a mad-dog liberal, but power and popularity in large doses are not attainable outside the kennels of the mad-dog liberals. And since the conservative-liberal is not really a principled conservative in the Burkean sense of the word, he can quite easily be seduced by mad-dog liberalism, just as the men in the old movies fell victim to the seductive charms of Kim Novak.

With the exception of some demented sickies such as Newt Gingrich, who is power mad to an extraordinary degree, the treachery of the conservative-liberals seems to be motivated by a fear of being unpopular. Of course in a democracy, which has obtained sacred status in the European nations, one’s popularity is connected to wealth and power. When an unpopular politician loses an election he also loses wealth and power. But that still doesn’t explain why politicians, who already have wealth and power and no longer have to worry about reelection still behave like cowards in order to avoid unpopularity. Ronald Reagan was a classic case in point. There was absolutely nothing to prevent him from pardoning Oliver North, who had run afoul of the liberals because he served his President and his country, except for Reagan’s fear of being unpopular with liberals who wanted a witch-hunt show trial. It was the same with Reagan’s prolife stance. He could have personally attended the prolife rallies, instead of phoning in his “support,” and given a rousing fight to the knife speech, except for his fear of being unpopular with his liberal wife and liberals in general. I’ve also observed this fear of being unpopular with liberals in tenured, conservative academics and ‘job secure for life’ clerics who profess to be appalled at some of the uglier manifestations of liberalism, such as liberalized abortion.

I once saw a journalist’s interview with a movie director who had a reputation for being an actor’s director, a director whom actors liked. The question posed to him was, “How did you become an actor’s director?” His answer? He told a story about one of his early directorial jobs in which Orson Welles was the star of the movie as well as the screenwriter for the movie. One day in the middle of a scene Orson Welles stormed off the set and went to his dressing room. Of course the young director went to Welles’ dressing room and asked him what the problem was. Welles asked the director, “Who’s the star of this picture?”

“You are, Orson,” the director replied.

“Am I doing a good job?”

“Of course, you are, Orson; you’re doing a magnificent job.”

“Who wrote the screenplay for the movie?”

“You did, Orson.”

“Is it a good screenplay?”

“Yes, it’s a great screenplay.”

“If I’m doing a magnificent job acting and I wrote a great screenplay, then why haven’t you told me about it and praised me for it?”

“But, Orson, I thought you knew you were excellent and the screenplay was great. I didn’t think you needed to be constantly praised for your work.”

Welles’ reply was quite interesting, and I think it applies to academics, clergymen, and politicians as well as actors. Welles told the young director that all children want praise for everything they do, no matter how seemingly insignificant what they have done might seem to the adults around them. And children in a loving home usually get that exorbitant praise, but most people, Welles maintained, as they grow up realize that they can’t expect the world to fawn over them and constantly praise them for everything they do. The actor or actress is different. Something happened to them inside; they never lost the desire to be constantly praised and fawned upon. The young director never forgot what Welles told him and consequently he became known as an actor’s director.

Actors, academics, politicians, and clergy might have a more obsessive need to be loved and adored than other people, but I think we all desire to be popular and appreciated by as many people as possible. It’s a very human desire and not necessarily an evil one. Unless – and the ‘unless’ makes all the difference – a man sacrifices his soul in order to be liked and adored by the multitude. Because a man, if he is a man, must have causes and people he loves whether or not they are popular. “Though all the world betray thee – One sword at least thy rights shall guard, One faithful harp shall praise thee,” must be the stance of a real man, a European man, vis-à-vis the things he loves. In my judgment the most damning thing that can be said of a man is that he doesn’t love anything or anybody deeply enough to love in spite of the hatred of the multitude. And that is the condemnation I hurl at the modern halfway house Christians and their secular counterparts, the conservative liberals. They do not love antique Europe and antique Europe’s God enough to forsake the fawning favor of the liberals, who call all loyal Europeans racist, in order to fight the unpopular and lonely fight for Christian Europe. “You can’t condemn them for wanting to be popular,” Mr. Smooth-it-over Easy tells me. But, to paraphrase Scott-King, “I can condemn them and I do.”

Let me go back to the Kim Novak analogy. Every civilization, including the vaunted Greek civilization of antiquity, could not handle the sexual aspect of man's nature. The pagans tried to regulate sexual activity by incorporating it into their religions, but they never could elevate their civilizations to a level where men saw that sexual pleasure was only a minor component in a larger, divine plan for mankind. I'm not naïve about the failures of Christian Europeans to completely rise above the pagan temptations, but if we take Christian Europe for all in all, there is incontestable evidence that the Christian Europeans did what the wisest pagan sages considered impossible: by loving in and through the incarnate God they spiritualized human love without Gnosticizing it. Of course no modern European believes that such a Europe, a Europe that transcended paganism, existed. Having violated the pact between God and man, to use God's gifts as God intended them to be used, the modern Europeans cannot conceive of a people who could transcend paganism.

The pagan, cosmic temptation, to lose one's soul in the impersonal force of sexuality, was only conquered by the Christian Europeans' passion to make human love and love for the living God an incorporate union. The modern Europeans' desire to conform to liberalism and by conforming obtain the popularity that mortal men crave is the result of removing mortal love from divine love. Only a love for a personal God and the civilization that came from that love could turn a man away from the pursuit of vain glory and unlimited sexual pleasure.

In the absence of any personal attachment to the God and people of Christian Europe, the modern European will never leave the liberal piggies of popularity. All his better instincts will be killed in their infancy because he will be afraid that if he follows his nobler instincts, he will be cast out from the company of his fellow men and from the love of God. And the last point is the key point. Only a man who feels that God is with him (if God be for me who can stand against me?) can stand alone against the world. So long as the European everyman accepts the mind-forged doctrine which says that God can only be known through a closed system presided over by clerical boogey men, he will remain mesmerized and emasculated by liberalism, because our churchmen tell us that their systems are all in all. And the all in all of a closed system, man-made Christianity is liberalism. (1)

A man needs to have faith in the living God rather than the parchments of a perfect constitutional system or a perfect religious system. Satan wants the Europeans to engage in endless debates about the best systems in politics and religion. And the Europeans have fallen into Satan's trap. What Satan doesn't tell the Europeans is that the living God is not to be found in their closed systems that they so proudly proclaim to be the truth and the way. The living god is above systems and the pygmy minds who invent systems as a replacement for God. If we accept the mind-forged world of the system makers we will never have the faith in God that is necessary to stand alone against the liberals, because the God of the system makers is subject to the rules of the system. If the system makers declare that Christ is subordinate to a natural world order dedicated to the worship of negroes, the man who doesn't have faith in God instead of a system that encompasses God will ultimately become – even if he resists at first – a devotee of the Noble Black Savage.

The great divide between the antique Europeans and the modern Europeans is strikingly clear to anyone who steps away from the world of systems and enters the world of the Europeans of old. They, the Europeans who lived in the Europe of the living God, felt that God revealed Himself through His people. He spoke directly to them and he cared about what happened to them collectively and personally. As a result of that "rather odd" (from a modern standpoint) view of God, the antique European was not afraid of the dark because he knew that his God was with him and his people. Minnie Louise Haskins speaks for the Europeans who believed in a God above and beyond all systems.

I said to the man who stood at the gate of the year, 'Give me a light that I may tread safely into the unknown.'

And he replied:

'Go into the darkness and put your hand into the hand of God. That shall be to you better than light and safer than a known way.'

So I went forth, and finding the Hand of God, trod gladly into the night. And He led me towards the hills and the breaking of day in the lone East.

It's one of the many paradoxes of the spiritual life. A man must not be afraid to stand alone against the world, with only his faith in his Redeemer, before he can discover that he is not alone. Faith builds upon faith, which is why one man with faith in the Christ who knows not systems can truly move the mountains of Liberaldom from the green and pleasant land of Europe. +

(1) The reason all resistance to liberalism fails is because the conservatives with some decent instincts, such as the Tea Party people, never attack the central faith of liberalism, which is the cult of the Noble Black Savage, because they fear the condemnation of the religious boogymen who have transformed European Christianity into a nature religion centered on the worship of negroes.

That Charity of Honor

July 28, 2012

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke



In the groves of their academy, at the end of each vista, you see nothing but the gallows. Nothing is left which engages the affections on the part of the commonwealth. On the principles of this mechanic philosophy, our institutions can never be embodied, if I may use the expression, in persons; so as to create in us love, veneration, admiration, or attachment. But that sort of reason which banishes the affections is incapable of filling their place. – Edmund Burke

Another 4th of July has come and gone. What are we to make of it? Is there anything left for white people to celebrate? I think not; the fire crackers remind us of Macbeth's gloomy assertion about life: "It is a tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing." Surely the tale of liberalism is a tale told by idiots signifying a flight to oblivion.

The conservative liberals and the mad-dog liberals are in agreement that patriotism has nothing to do with race. They think patriotism consists of loyalty to an idea, which in their minds is much more noble than loyalty to one's people. What seems like treachery to an antique European, namely the betrayal of one's people, is deemed good citizenship and patriotism to the propositional liberal and his conservative counterpart. At a slightly slower rate than the French, the European Americans and the people of Europe adopted the liberty, equality, and fraternity patriotism of the Jacobins. Now, in the various European utopian states, a man is considered a patriot to the extent that he lives up to the abstract ideals of liberty, equality and fraternity. And such "ideals" always come with the proviso that some are more equal than others. The Haitian negroes were not only equal to the French aristocrats, they were better, because being more "natural" and without any taint of sin from the previous white regimes they were purer and more noble. The liberty, equality, fraternity virus engulfed all the European countries and gradually made the European people into one homogeneous, white-hating unit. All modern, white nation-states believe that genuine patriotism, which is racial, is evil because it is racist, and all utopian, abstract revolutionary ideals are patriotic. "Power to the people..."

We are told that even a man brimming with health has cancerous cells in his body, but the cancer cells are not able to multiply because in the healthy man they are surrounded and kept in check by the healthy cells. It is when the cancerous cells become stronger and more numerous than the healthy ones that a man succumbs to cancer. It was and is that way with the liberal cancer. Rousseau was one cancer cell, Voltaire another, then Darwin, Marx, and on it went until the European people succumbed to the cancerous ideology of Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity. Every white child should be stamped D.O.A. at his birth because the soul-killing ideology of liberalism can lead to nothing but spiritual death.

The death-in-life existence of the white man is in stark contrast to the people of the colored races. Their patriotism is for their race, not for an idea. Mexicans within the United States consider themselves to be Mexicans, not Americans. Arabs in France are loyal to Islam, not France. They will only be patriotic Frenchmen when France becomes Moslem. And so it goes with the oriental, the black, and the red. They are loyal to their race, not to the liberals' ideal of liberty, equality, and fraternity. While the white-ruled class punishes all manifestations of white racial patriotism, the colored tribesmen practice their own form of racial patriotism, which consists of the elimination of the white race. And for that reason, the fact that the patriotism of the colored tribes consists of the hatred of the white race, I diverge from the white democratic nationalists. They simply want the rights of whites to be respected within a democratic nation of different colored people. But this can never be; it's part of the false utopian thinking of the liberal ruling class. Only white people can love their own without hating others, because only white people made Christ part of their patriotic zeal for their own people. When you love your people in and through Him, you don't hate the stranger unless he threatens your own people. Not so the colored tribesmen. They hate and kill for the joy of hating and the love of killing. The white can remain separate from the colored tribesmen, or he can rule the colored tribesmen, but he must never try to be on a basis of equality with the colored. Such equality is called liberalism, and liberalism destroys white people, because the central tenet of liberalism is that white people must cease to exist so that "the people," who are the colored tribesmen, can live and strive. Who dares oppose liberalism opposes the kingdom of the colored gods on earth, which is being built with the sacrificial blood of the white man. And the white man is willing to sacrifice his blood in order to rebuild Babylon because he doesn't believe that the soul of a man is in his blood. The abstracted intellect contains all the spiritual sustenance that a man needs. So says the liberal. But why then does the liberal want to mix his blood with the colored barbarians? If the abstracted brain is sufficient to sustain life, why doesn't the liberal remain with Aquinas and Buddha, contemplating the abstraction called mankind with his disembodied brain? Because rationalistic Christianity, which is liberalism, is not capable of sustaining a people's faith. Human beings need a faith with blood in it. Unable to believe in the blood faith of his European ancestors the modern liberal seeks to create a new blood faith by fusing his abstracted reason with the blood of the savage. The purest (not pure as in holy) example of the new white religion of intellectualized savagery can be seen in concerts of rock stars like Madonna and the geriatric Rolling Stones rock group. Prancing around in imitation of negroes (Mick Jagger said Tina Turner was his biggest influence) and simultaneously worshipping negroes (witness Madonna) is the essence of white rock music and the essence of the white man's religion.

About 8-10 years ago I read an article in a British nationalist publication which was written by an American white nationalist named Kevin Strom. The article was written before Strom went to jail. In the article Strom stated that the white man needed a new religion to replace Christianity. Strom recommended a return to the Greek religion. Nothing new there. Anti-European intellectuals throughout the Christian European era have advocated a return to the halcyon days of the Greeks. But the utopian intellectuals see a Greece of their own invention. They see themselves eating feta cheese salads and drinking Greek wine while they pontificate to willing devotees of both sexes, who in return for the wisdom of the Olympian utopians will render their bodies to the intellectual giants. It is a totally earthbound religion, the religion of the utopian intellectuals, that ignores the Sophoclean heart of the ancient Greek culture. "Without a redeemer, a God-Man above the philosophers and the heathen deities, we are lost." But they were not lost. The God that Sophocles longed for came and gave hope to men who loved Him enough to call on Him by name: a hope that the dragons of paganism and the demonic 'other' behind the abstracted intellects of the philosophers could be defeated.

We haven't strayed from the point. The reason white people are propositional patriots instead of "my people, my race" patriots is because they are propositional Christians. Two armed theological camps, the Protestants and the Catholics, measure a man's faith by his adherence to their propositional theologies. Individual human beings and distinct racial groups are as nothing to propositional theologians who have abstracted God into a miniature automaton who comes out of a mind-forged box to bless the Abstracted, Interracial, Interdenominational Church of the New Babylonian Dispensation, the A.I.I.C.N.B.D. Their petty quarrels and managerial madness have used up the unbought grace of life that the Europeans received from a loving God. We need to seek that God of infinite mercy and grace again. He comes to us in and through His people.

Every celebration of European "patriotism" is in reality a celebration of the death of European civilization, the only true civilization that ever existed. On the 4th of July, European-Americans celebrate their right to commit suicide in the New Babylonian World Order. In France they celebrate the same right, with different ceremonies, on Bastille Day. I don't know on what specific date the British people chose to celebrate their extinction, but I know they celebrate their own demise. If I needed further proof of that fact I certainly got it when I saw a British Olympic official on the BBC. The British official told the reporter than it was "absolutely essential" that the international audience of the Olympic Games should see a multi-racial Britain. Why? Because white people worship colored people and hate their own people. That is the "essential" dogma of the Europeans.

The existentialists of the early and mid-20th century were right to reject the propositional theology of the Christian Churches. A false proposition about God is worse than a denial of God. But there is something more in keeping with existentialism than atheism. It is faith in the God who exists in the existential depths of the human heart. From faith in that God came the culture of honor, chivalry, and love that all Europeans who have not renounced their blood still revere and will champion in spite of doom:

Oh! What a revolution! and what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have

leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness. – Burke

Amongst thousands of remarkable phrases that I find in Burke, the phrase, “that charity of honor,” strikes me as the best description of the antique European civilization. ‘Who would be wedded to hell,’ asks Shakespeare’s Gremio. The modern Europeans would. They have turned from the charity of honor civilization and embraced the civilization of hell, which is embodied in the unhalloved halls of academia. “But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved,” our Lord assures us. Grace, once spent, is not like money. It can return if we ask Him to send us the grace to fight for His nation and our people. True white patriotism comes from a love of the European hearth and the God who presides over that hearth. +

On Scott's Birthday

August 4, 2012

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors, Walter Scott



Canto Sixth

Breathes there the man with soul so dead
Who never to himself hath said,
This is my own, my native land!
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burned,
As home his footsteps he hath turned
From wandering on a foreign strand!
If such there breathe, go, mark him well;
For him no minstrel raptures swell;
High though his titles, proud his name,
Boundless his wealth as wish can claim
Despite those titles, power, and pelf,
The wretch, concentrated all in self,
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,
And, doubly dying, shall go down
To the vile dust from whence he sprung,
Unwept, unhonored , and unsung.

-Walter Scott

In honor of Walter Scott's birthday, August 15, 1771, I would like to talk about his enduring value to all Europeans. I know Scott is of no significance to modern Europeans who do not believe that anything or anybody from the past has enduring value, but Scott endures, and always shall endure, in eternal Europe, and that is the only Europe I care about.

"Scott is long-winded," "Scott is superficial," "Scott is moralistic," "Scott is sloppy;" all that and more have been hurled at Scott by the modern, soul-dead Europeans. But all the criticisms of Scott stem from one central premise of the liberals – "The Christ championed by the Europeans prior to the 20th century was not the true God." So it follows, by liberal logic, that the most European of writers, the most Christian of writers, should be derided and discarded.

Scott's works serve as a sign of contradiction to the liberals, because they told us that there was no such thing as Christian Europe and that there never were such men as Walter Scott. But when we turn the pages of Scott's books, we see that there was a Christian Europe and there were such men as Walter Scott.

Scott's appeal – and he was enormously popular in his day – was not to the propositional Christian of either the Roman Catholic or Protestant churches. Scott's Christianity went much deeper than the outward forms of the sects. His Christianity was in line with St. Paul's; it was a Christianity of the heart. The fact that Scott was so widely read in Europe and America, particularly in the South, is an indication that the Europeans of the 18th and 19th centuries still held the Christian God in their hearts.

My contention is that the vision of Christ which is crystal clear in Scott's novels is the true vision. Scott's faith is in line with St. Paul, the early Church fathers, and the great majority of European Christians prior to the 20th century. So if we look at the reasons why Scott has been rejected and discarded, we can see the reasons why the true faith has been rejected and discarded.

First, Scott's Christianity is the fairy tale Christianity of the Bible. He depicts a Christ who comes to mankind through human hearts. The more "intelligent" faith of the medieval scholastics and their modern academic counterparts is not found in the heroes and heroines of Scott's novels. Certainly there are the great reasoners, such as Louis XI in Quentin Durward, but he is the arch-villain of the novel as are all the great reasoners in Scott's novels. When liberals say that Scott is just a storyteller without any realistic characters it is because they don't believe that a portrait of a liberal who has lost faith in everything but his own reason and consequently given himself over to Satan is realistic, because they believe reason abstracted from God is a good thing. And since they do not believe in Satan or his Divine Antagonist, they reject as unrealistic and simpleminded anyone who believes in Satan and his Divine Antagonist.

In modern Liberaldom we search in vain for anyone in the Christian churches courageous enough to believe in the fairytale Christ that Scott and his readers believed in. But if Christ can only be known through the esoteric system-makers, who tell us of a Christ with no resemblance to the Christ of Scott's Europe, why would we want to worship Christ?

The second feature of Scott's Christianity is his Pauline belief that charity is the greatest of these. His heroes and heroines all have that charity of honor that Burke writes about. Without charity there can be no honor, and without honor, which encompasses our duties to God and our fellow men, there can be no true charity. Jeanie Deans, the heroine of The Heart of Midlothian, does not walk from Edinburgh to London to beg the King to pardon her sister because she believes the crime of child-murder is of no consequence; that would be a stain on her honor. She goes to London to ask the King to pardon her sister because she believes her sister is innocent of the sin of child-murder. That is true charity, charity with honor. We no longer have any true charity in church or state, because we have separated honor from charity. The willful murder of infants is considered charity, and the betrayal of one's own people is considered honorable because charity and honor are now separate liberal entities.

The third aspect of Scott's Christian vision is his provincialism: hearth fire – neighborhood – region – nation. The modern mad-dog liberals and the liberal conservatives are universalists. They love mankind while hating everything that makes a man humane. We learn to love God and man in those small provincial units the liberals condemn. Deprive a man of his hearth-fire virtues: love of family, race, and place, and you produce a cynical, cowardly man fit for treasons, stratagems and spoils. Such a man has no place in his heart for God, because he has not developed a heart. Without the provincial virtues he becomes only a creature of reason like the aforementioned Louis XI:

In this point of view, Goethe's conception of the character and reasoning of Mephistopheles, the tempting spirit in the singular play of "Faust," appears to me more happy than that which has been formed by Byron, and even than the Satan of Milton. These last great authors have given to the Evil Principle something which elevates and dignifies his wickedness; a sustained and unconquerable resistance against Omnipotence itself—a lofty scorn of suffering compared with submission, and all those points of attraction in the Author of Evil, which have induced Burns and others to consider him as the Hero of the "Paradise Lost." The great German poet has, on the contrary, rendered his seducing spirit a being who, otherwise totally unimpassioned, seems only to have existed for the purpose of increasing, by his persuasions and temptations, the mass of moral evil, and who calls forth by his seductions those slumbering passions which otherwise might have allowed the human being who was the object of the Evil Spirit's operations to pass the tenor of his life in tranquillity. For this purpose Mephistopheles is, like Louis XI, endowed with an acute and depreciating spirit of caustic wit, which is employed incessantly in undervaluing and vilifying all actions, the consequences of which do not lead certainly and directly to self-gratification.

There can never be an "I'll respect your culture and you'll respect my culture" peace between a universalist culture and a provincial culture, because a universalist culture is based on a man-made abstraction, while a provincial culture is based on the laws of God. The abstract culture must destroy the provincial culture completely so that the grace of God can never take root in the souls of men.

The grace of God is anathema to the universalists. The French Revolution and the war of Northern aggression in our own country were wars fought to destroy the unbought grace of life that God grants to provincial cultures formed by men with provincial hearts. The current "peace" is the peace of the grave. The liberals believe they have killed provincialism. But those of us who believe as Scott believed know that a hero, in imitation of The Hero, can restore provincialism.

Which brings us to the fourth component of Scott's Christianity: his belief in the hero. It is the task of the Christian hero to break through, by the force of his spirit, the materialist façade of the world. By his spiritual exertions, he reveals to his people the animating spirit, which has a local habitation and a name, behind the material world. Liberals have no heroes because they are materialists. They have idols, such as negroes, who are the gods of the natural world, and they have systems, which wise gurus explain to their neophytes. But they do not have heroes; heroes come only from spirit-based cultures. Back in the day when liberals even bothered to comment on Scott's novels, they would cast him aside as "unrealistic" because of his heroes and heroines. But aren't the liberals making a priori assumptions about the materialistic nature of existence when they condemn Scott for his romantic heroes?

The Freud-Jung dispute speaks to this issue. If you recall there was once a clash of secularist titans. Jung, who was a secular disciple of Freud, broke with Freud on the issue of religious faith. Freud claimed that a man with religious faith was suffering from a neurosis, for which he needed a cure. Jung saw that all his patients had religious longings, so he asked the question, "How can something we all have, namely religious longings, be labeled a neurosis?" Of course Jung never went any further with his findings. He didn't bend his knee to Christ. Instead he sat in his easy chair and thought about the Oversoul. But the Freud-Jung dispute is pertinent to the hero / anti-hero debate between the European and the liberal. If a longing for the hero, the man who can break through the chains of superficial materialism threatening to strangle his people, is in us, then how can it be an unreality? All my life, for instance, the longing for a hero has been much stronger and more real to me than a longing for an expert with a system. The former beckons me to the mountains where He resides, while the latter beckons me to a materialist hell on earth.

Scott's novels in which the romance of heroism took center stage became as nothing to the 20th century Europeans because they had crossed a spiritual Rubicon. No more would they think of themselves as men with souls; they now belonged to nature and nature's gods, the negroes. And the primary concern of the managerial liberal, in every European country, was to suppress any manifestation of the Walter Scott-type hero who would remind his people that they were the spirit above the dust who belonged to the Hero of Heroes and the King of Kings. The treatment of Rommel by the Nazis and the allies during World War II is a perfect example of the hatred the Christian hero draws from the scientific, managerial materialists who run the Western world. Hitler, who was a demi-god of a materialist state, hated Rommel because he had a following among the remnant of German Christians. In the end the pagan demi-god had the Christian hero murdered, because the satanic demi-god cannot tolerate the Christian hero who is a sign of contradiction to his pagan reign. Throughout the 20th century and continuing into the 21st, no matter what side is fighting the materialist, utilitarian philosophy prevails. The allied forces were just as anxious as Hitler to suppress any manifestations of heroism, lest the people be converted to the true faith:

TO: All Commanders and Chiefs of Staff

FROM: Headquarters, B.T.E. and M.E.F.

There exists a real danger that our friend Rommel is becoming a kind of magician or bogey-man to our troops, who are talking far too much about him. He is by no means a superman, although he is undoubtedly very energetic and able. Even if he were a superman, it would still be highly undesirable that our men should credit him with supernatural powers.

I wish you to dispel by all possible means the idea that Rommel represents something more than an ordinary German general. The important thing now is to see that we do not always talk of Rommel when we mean the enemy in Libya. We must refer to "the Germans" or "the Axis powers" or "the enemy" and not always keep harping on Rommel.

Please ensure that this order is put into immediate effect, and impress upon all Commanders that, from a psychological point of view, it is a matter of the highest importance.

(Signed)

*c. j. Auchinleck,
General,
Commander-in-Chief, M.E.F.*

From what the liberals would call "a psychological point of view," and what we would call a spiritual view, any talk of or stories about the hero must be suppressed because heroism is the stuff the true faith is built on.

A fairytale-esque appreciation of the Christian faith as expounded by our Lord in the Gospels and by St. Paul in his Epistles, a charity of honor that comes from that faith, a provincialism that nurtures that faith, and a love for the hero who embodies and champions that faith, are all woven into one exquisitely beautiful tapestry (and I speak of the highest form of beauty, moral beauty) by my European kinsman and hero, Sir Walter Scott. Just as words cannot do justice to Scott's vision of Christ's people, the Europeans, there are also no words that can adequately describe the moral separation between our modern Europe and Scott's Europe. To hate the former and love the latter is essential if we are ever to be worthy of the people and the God championed by Walter Scott. +

The Sport of Demon Worship

August 11, 2012

Categories: Fear of racist label, Grazers, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan

Tags: Shakespeare



The instruments of darkness tell us truths,
Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.

— Banquo in Shakespeare's Macbeth

The official word has been pronounced on the Olympics: "Though it is only for two weeks it's wonderful to see young people from all nations get together in the spirit of harmony and peace, which is engendered by friendly athletic competition." Even if the competition was actually friendly, and a good deal of it is not, we should ask what end is being served by the "friendly competition." The answer comes back, "Universal peace and brotherhood is being served." But is universal peace and brotherhood, even if such a utopian scheme were possible, a desirable goal? The Olympic universal peace and brotherhood is the peace and brotherhood of a Babylonian orgy. The participants might be fairly peaceful immediately after the orgy, because they are tired, but in due time they will seek more of the unhallowed pleasures of Babylon. And they will quarrel, fight, and kill for their share of the limited allotments of the Babylonian pie.

Modern sporting events are the moral equivalent of the medieval morality plays, which were performed on the steps of the church as an extension of the religious ceremonies. Is there any doubt, if we view the "sports" of the modern Europeans, about the irreligion of the white man? The most abject, slavish worship that has ever been seen on the face of the earth takes place in the sporting events of the western world. Sports that do not have black participants are considered lesser sports. And when a white man succeeds in a sport that is dominated by blacks it is assumed that somehow the white's success is due to prejudice against blacks. Our sports are part ritual, part drama, just like our church services, but the sporting events are purer, from a modern standpoint, in content than the church services because there is less of a Christian hangover at the sporting rituals. Sometimes old Christian creeds, slightly modified, are recited at church services, and some old hymns might sneak into a few services. No such problem in our modern sports. A Christian hangover might linger over some small issues of protocol, but by and large the sporting rituals in the western world have changed from Christian morality plays to pagan religious festivals. And the Olympic games are a syncretistic blend of all the pagan sporting events, which is why they deserve to be called the Babylonian Games or the New Tower of Babel Games.

Since there is a direct correlation between a people's religion and their sport it should not surprise us that European sports have become less provincial and more corporate. When a sporting event is local and part of the life of a specific race of people living together in a specific geographical area, the sport becomes an integral part of the people's identity as a people. The sport is not a good in and of itself, it is good because it allows for the dramatic enactment of the religious ethos of the people. In the case of the antique Europeans it was Christian values that were embodied in their sports. Sports were reformed or abandoned altogether according to how well they served the people's need for dramatic, Christian morality plays. If you doubt for one moment the religious nature of sporting events, just look at how sports' terms are used in a religious context. 'When the great score keeper tallies up the score...', "I've run a good race", and on it goes. Desmond Young made a profound point when he said that the only way to make the English treat war seriously was to make them regard it as sport. Of course, sport is part of a people's inner life; it must be taken seriously.

The Englishman who said that the Battle of Waterloo was won on the playing fields of Eton was not being flippant. He was simply acknowledging that a nation teaches its young men, for good or ill, through sport. What are our young men, and our young women, learning from our modern sports? They are learning that negroes are to be worshipped and that loyalty to their race, and the culture that stemmed from their race, is outmoded and evil. Some future liberal historian will declare that the war against the white race was won on the playing fields of the European people. Of course after he pens those words, he too will be liquidated.

If we see sport for what it is — an extension of a people's religious faith that has far greater influence than a church service, which cannot reach as many people — we can understand why we cannot view sport as something separate from the great liberal hydra that is intent on destroying the white race. Sport is a vital limb of the liberal hydra.

The late John Tyndall, who fought so nobly for Britain, once wrote of attending a football match (what we call soccer) between England and Germany. Naturally as an Englishman Tyndall went to the match in order to root for England, but much to his horror he saw that half the "English" team consisted of negroes. So he shifted his allegiance and rooted for the German team, which had no negroes playing for them on that particular day. Tyndall had the right type of patriotism, the only type of patriotism that is uplifting. He loved a particular people, his own people, not a propositional, generic people with a different race and culture from his own, who were polluting his homeland with their presence. Of course it was the United States that first championed the propositional nation over a kith and kin nation. "There is no black or white, Mexican or Chinese; there are only Americans." What utter nonsense! Only the white man believes in such a dystopian proposition. The black, brown, red, and yellow people of the earth believe only in the triumph of their race, and the destruction of all other races.

The sporting arm of liberalism uses the same tactics to spread and propagate liberalism as the churches use. The churches place the emphasis on the corporate structure and encourage their devotees to place their faith in the organization rather than a personal God. Using the same tactic in the sporting arenas, the liberals emphasize the organization rather than any specific individuals. No sooner does a modern white child place a picture of his favorite white player on the wall, and his favorite player is traded because it is the corporation that matters, not the individual. And to whom or what is the sports organization dedicated? To the negro, of course. The white child with a favorite white player is encouraged to be loyal to the corporation, not his people, which is why the corporation will try to ensure that only black players participate in corporate sports. Then every poster will have a black god on it instead of a white devil. The Tim Tebow phenomenon of last year, when he was reviled by the liberals and the blacks for being white and popular, was an example of the institutionalized hatred of the white and the institutionalized reverence for the black that is at the heart of all white nations.

It doesn't matter if a white involved in sports follows all the stated rules of Liberaldom. He will be persecuted and eliminated simply for being white and successful, because the unwritten law of Liberaldom is the essence of liberalism: The white must die so that the black gods can live.

The ongoing hatred and post-mortem skewering of Joe Paterno is another example of the way liberals use sports to destroy whites, even if the whites whom they wish to destroy tried to adhere to all the principles of Liberaldom. Joe Paterno was a liberal! He coached at a college with an interracial football team, and he gave to all the liberal causes. But he was a liberal in a Republican-George Bush sense of the word. As such he was considered too white to be lionized as he was by the ‘God and guns’ people of western Pennsylvania. He had to be destroyed. The Sandusky affair had no more to do with the liberals’ motivation for destroying Joe Paterno than Watergate had to do with the liberals’ motivation for destroying Richard Nixon. Paterno was humiliated and destroyed because he was perceived (and the perception was wrong) to be a conservative white man, just as Nixon was perceived to be a conservative white man (also incorrect) because of his successful prosecution of Alger Hiss.

It’s not possible for the white male to appease the liberal hydra by trying not to be white. Even if he supports the propositional society of Babylon his whiteness will make him an anathema. When the white Americans were held hostage by the Ayatollah Khomeini, he kept harping on the evils of the white Christian West, even though the West had long ceased to be Christian. It’s no matter; so long as whites exist, the enemies of Christ will regard them as the Christ-bearers no matter how often and how vehemently they renounce Christ.

It’s only because I remember Edgar’s warning: “Who is’t can say, ‘I am at the worst’? I am worse than e’er I was...” that I refrain from saying that the white race has hit bottom. I can only observe that white people, as a people, have descended further down the slippery slope of idolatry and devil worship than ever before. Does their downward spiral have an end? It doesn’t appear so; we seem poised for centuries of devil worship through the devil’s proxy, the negro.

Kierkegaard once said that there is a type of martyrdom that comes about as a result of being trampled to death by geese. That is the type of martyrdom taking place in the majority of white hearths. Some whites are dramatically martyred in the streets of Babylon, but most are just beaten down by the relentless anti-white propaganda spewed out from the many-headed liberal hydra. School, pulpit, press, and sporting event all bear witness to the evil of the white man and the grace, beauty, and sanctity of the negro. We should be prepared to defend our people against the violent assaults of the liberals and their colored henchmen, but we should also – and in this the remnant European is woefully inept – be prepared to fight the daily battle, countering the relentless pounding of the liberals with a relentless pounding of our own. The Hamlet analogy — “We defy augury” — is also apropos. The liberals want us to feel that resistance is hopeless because they have the numbers and the magic called science on their side. But we have something purer, nobler, and deeper than the liberals’ magic; we have faith in Him who turns lost causes into triumphs. Even the last great enemy, death, has no dominion over Him.

Resistance to Liberaldom is only hopeless if the European stays on the surface of life with the colored tribesmen and the liberals. If the European seeks the depths, he will find that within which passeth the outward forms of this world. He will find, in the depths of his soul, the true God who will give him the strength to hurl his defiance at the liberals and their black gods. Liberalism is a disease of the soul, and it has become deeply rooted in all the nations of Europe. It would take a miracle to root it out. But we few, we Europeans, who are about to die, believe in miracles. “The sign of the cross, the spirit above the dust.” +

Bound in with Shame

August 18, 2012

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



"Light vanity, insatiate cormorant,
Consuming means, soon preys upon itself."

—Richard II

From first to last, the Olympic Games in Britain were, as the British intended, an attack on Shakespeare's Britain:

*This happy breed of men, this little world,
This precious stone set in the silver sea,
Which serves it in the office of a wall
Or as a moat defensive to a house
Against the envy of less happier lands,
This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England,
This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,
Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth,
Renowned for their deeds as far from home,
For Christian service and true chivalry,
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry,
Of the world's ransom, Blessed Mary's Son,
This land of such dear souls, this dear dear land...*

Of course the Brits' televised attack on white Britain was no different from the ongoing attacks on white people and their past that are taking place in every European nation. And the attacks on white people are being led by white people. The colored tribesmen hate the whites, but not with the passion that white people hate white people. It seems contradictory. How can people filled with self-love perpetuate a theology based on the hatred of themselves? We have seen, over the course of the last one hundred years, how liberals deal with that contradiction. They condemn white people of the past and all white people of the present who want to maintain any links to the past. Those whites are evil and must be destroyed. But the new whites, who deny that they are white, can be part of the new Babylon. The ideological support for the liberals' jettisoning of everything white has already been written. "Scientific" minded liberals write tomes telling us that people with outwardly white skin often have more black genes than negroes with black skins. So you see, white rappers who claim they are really black are simply being scientific. Such delusional logic should tell us that people have passions, for good or ill, and they use their minds to justify their passions. It doesn't work the other way.

Is the liberals' passion to deny their white souls a good passion or an illicit passion? The answer seems obvious. It is an evil passion that will carry the man or woman possessed of it to hell. And the people who anchor their churches and their governments on such an evil passion will have hellish churches and governments. We don't need to play a game of twenty questions in order to discover the identity of the people who have made the hatred of the white European and the love of the negro the cornerstone of their uncivil civilization. And where are the liberals? Quick, send in the liberals. Don't bother — they're here.

Conservatives (who by the way are not conservative) are forever perpetuating the myth that a few corrections, a few little tweaks in the system, will stop the downward spiral of the European people. Such reasoning ignores the fact that "the system" of the European people is a system designed by liberals to destroy every last vestige of Christian Europe. It is not pessimistic to state that the Europeans who still regard themselves as a distinct people are a conquered race; it is simply reality. It does no good to deny it because the result of such a denial is despair. The conservative keeps promising an electoral victory that will reverse Roe v. Wade, stop illegal immigration, and restore our Constitution. If he would become a true conservative and see Western Civilization as the incarnation of Christian values, he would see that nothing that 'stinks' of European Christianity will ever be permitted in a civilization based on liberalism. But the conservative will never see this because his conservatism, unlike Burke's which goes back to our Christian roots, is a conservatism that wants to stop halfway down the slippery slope. The conservative who says nay to legalized abortion but yes to feminism and race mixing doesn't understand the satanic links that bind us to Satan. First comes racial Babylon, which leads to sexual Babylon. Then, once the ethos of Babylon becomes established, the murder of infants and other amoral deviations from Christianity become part of the fabric of everyday life in Babylon.

We can see in the Olympics the tragedy of Europe. The modern Olympics were started as an attempt to revive the spirit of the pagan Olympic games. But when the post-Christian European tries to return to the paganism of the Greeks, he doesn't even achieve — if such a descent can be called an achievement — the level of the Greeks. Instead he descends below the level of the pagan Greeks and ends up in the pigsties of Babylon. The European can never return to the Greek idyll. He must be a Christian or a Babylonian. The white rulers and their subjects have chosen to be Babylonians.

The Babylonian captivity of the Europeans will continue so long as the Europeans remain ignorant of their captivity, calling their captivity the best of all worlds because it is democratic and progressive. But the democracy of swine, who eat, drink, and wallow before they are slaughtered is not a democracy to be admired or emulated. Europeans once had a higher destiny.

All that was needful to make swine of the Europeans was the liquidation of their past. In their past was a spiritual culture. The antique European felt himself to be connected to his European kinsmen and countrymen by ties of spirit and blood, and through those ties the European felt connected to the living God. If there is no spiritual dimension to man, if his blood is not infused with the spirit of God but is instead mere vegetable matter, then he has no connecting link to those who lived and died before him. Vegetable matter has no kindred and no animating spirit.

On Walter Scott's birthday, my daughter played me a "Minstrel's Lament" for the death of Europe's greatest minstrel. It was sad because it sang of the death of Sir Walter Scott, but it was also a joyful lament. It was joyful in this sense: Scott sang of the eternal in man, so at his death, men thought of Scott and themselves in the light of the eternal God. And in that light, death is swallowed up in victory. The evangelist tells us that, "He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not." The eternal "relevance" of the antique European culture, represented by Walter Scott, is that there were men and women of that culture who knew Him. Our present, anti-European culture boasts of the fact that they know Him not. And the bitter fruits of their proud ignorance are all around us. We live in a pigsty of liberalism, which the liberals have tried to pass off as a tropical island paradise. As one European after another forsakes his past, pigsty Europe becomes more firmly entrenched in people's minds as the only reality. In such a frame of mind, the modern European looks on even the smallest ray of light from that other Europe, His Europe, as something to be shunned. He thinks, in his demon-possessed mind, the light that shineth in darkness will kill him, so he flees from the only thing that can save him.

For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.

And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him.

And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

The further the European sinks into the mire of Liberaldom, the more scornful and derisive he becomes toward the heartfelt faith, and the culture that sprang from that faith, of his European ancestors. The Olympic Games, in which everything that came from Christian Britain was mocked and spit upon was a painful reminder of how our Lord was mocked and spit upon when he was brought before the Sanhedrin.

Then the high priest rent his clothes and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

When the pagan Clovis first heard the story of Christ's crucifixion he remarked, "Oh, that I had been there with my Franks!" Can a European who still has a European heart do less in defense of Christ than a pagan? There are no extenuating circumstances. Modern, post-Christian, interracial, transsexual Europe is satanic in the old-fashioned, now discarded, sense of the word. The liberals are possessed of the devil. And those possessed of the devil will protect their demonic pigsties with the demonic fury of the devil.

The liberals are now fighting in defense of the established order, because the established order is satanic. Events like the Olympic Games are mop-up actions and warnings. The liberals are putting the mutilated corpses of antique Europeans on display as a warning to anyone out there who might want to become an antique European. But there is always someone who sees past the mutilated corpse to the living, breathing person who still lives in His Kingdom come. The moral beauty of His face and His civilization can never be completely effaced. The moral beauty of the non-liberal Europe will reemerge from the darkness of Liberaldom, just as Christ emerged from the darkness of the tomb. +

In Defense of the Racist Europeans

August 25, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism

Tags: Anthony Jacob



The modern democracies of the West, with their philosophies of the stomach and the stock exchange, cannot inspire the people nor protect them. They despise nationhood and despise race. But without our national and racial backbones how shall we stand erect? With quicksands as our foundation how shall we build? How shall we be true to ourselves if we have no selves? Our race is what we are; it is our *form*. It is our fathers and mothers and brothers and sisters and wives and children. They *are* the race. How then shall we count it of little worth? Shall we despise our own flesh and blood? Is that what modern democracy is supposed to mean? Is that what Christianity is supposed to mean?

– Anthony Jacob

After the Communist Revolution in Russia, fellow-traveler literature became quite common in the rest of Europe (Shaw, Wells, etc.) just as fellow-traveler literature became popular in the rest of Europe after the French Revolution (Priestly, Price, etc.). A small genre of literature in opposition to the pro-communist literature also developed in the West. That genre consisted of anti-communist literature, often written by former communists such as Muggeridge, Chambers, and Koestler. But with the exception of one lone Englishman, Anthony Jacob, the conservatives never linked their anti-communist views with a defense of the white race. On the surface the conservatives, particularly during war time, sounded very patriotic, but it was all smoke and mirrors. “Defense of Democracy” was all the rage, not a defense of the white race. But a rousing defense of an universalist idea of a generic, mixed race people is not patriotic, it is treason. It breeds the spiritual decadence that the great minstrel sings of: “Breathes there a man with soul so dead...”

The type of universalist patriotism exhibited by conservative and liberal in the 20th century was only present in the liberals in the 19th century. Men like Havelock and Kipling — the latter was on the cuff between the 19th and 20th centuries — did not equate support for multi-racial democracy with patriotism. Havelock didn’t say, “There are hundreds of democracy-loving people in Cawnpore that we must rescue.” He said, “There are men and women of our own race held captive.” And Kipling did not write of the burden of the multi-racial liberals; he wrote of the “white man’s burden.” If you find a white man in the 20th, and now the 21st century, who will state unequivocally that the defense of his race and the defense of his nation are one and the same, then you will have found a true patriot.

In our own nation, the great anti-nation of the world, resistance to multi-racial universalism came from the Southern, Burkean conservatives of the 19th century. The liberals of the north were universalists who had only just begun to work out the implications of their universalism. When they started to actualize the implications of universal democracy, they destroyed the divinely fashioned barriers between the races. The non-universalist culture, the South, put up more than just a modicum of resistance, but by the end of the 20th century there were only soul-dead universalists throughout all of Europe and the United States. (1) “O brave new universalist world, How do we love thee,” was the cry of the soul-dead Europeans.

Fitzhugh warned us that a government was only beneficial if it was conservative. If a government becomes liberal, it ceases to be beneficial; it becomes harmful. Is there a government in any European nation that is trying to conserve the European people and their traditional faith? No, of course there isn’t. Are they legitimate governments if they don’t serve their people, but are instead at war with their people? Again, the answer is – of course not. The European people do not have a government; they have masters who hold them in bondage with the power of an ideology. So long as the white man does not believe the white race is a nation unto itself, he will be in bondage to the devil, who rules through his liberal minions.

Occasionally a white man or a group of white men complain that they are not being treated equally in Babylon. They say they are being discriminated against. Of course they are; Liberaldom is based on the hatred of the white man. But it is useless for a white man to plead for equal rights in Babylon. Would you go up to brigands, who had invaded your home and thrown you out into the street, and ask them to allow you to live in a corner of the basement of your former home? I suppose you would if you were a modern European, but it would be far better to wait for the right opportunity and retake your house by killing the brigands.

The post-World War II conservatives had no problem in vilifying FDR for turning Eastern Europe over to the communists, and for his refusal to do anything against good old “Uncle Joe.” (2) But did the post-World War II conservatives ever say anything against the type of race-mixing demagogic represented by Eleanor Roosevelt? “A great many people believe that there should be no intermingling of races... Nevertheless, down through the ages, it has been proved over and over again that this is one of the questions which people settle for themselves, and no amount of legislation will keep them from doing so. This is a question, therefore, that I think we have to leave to individuals, not only all over the United States, but all over the world, to handle.”

What the 20th century anti-communist conservatives failed to realize was that if you don’t oppose the race-mixing heresy it is useless to try and oppose the communist heresy, because the race-mixing heresy is the bricks and mortar holding the communist-democratic heresy together. The communists and their democratic egalitarian cousins knew and still know that race-mixing is necessary for the triumph of communism and/or democratic egalitarianism. If a man can be induced to marry outside his race, he can also be induced to transfer his loyalties from his kith and kin to a “higher” loyalty, to abstract concepts such as the “proletariat” or “the people” or “humanity” or “the oppressed black minorities.” He will be a cog in the inhuman machine of one of the modern dystopian heresies. Of what use are strictures against communism then if the only people who would be against it, the Christian Europeans of old, have ceased to exist? And hasn’t that been the case? Who really cares about communism anymore? If a man has no loyalty to his kith and kin why should he care about communism? Because it is Godless? That is of no consequence to the modern European. When he severed his ties to kith and kin he also severed his ties to the living God. And the official word from the rulers of Liberaldom is that the Europeans are happy with their new black gods.

When I was a young man the post-war conservatives were the Old Guard. I went to them for guidance. But as I grew older I realized that the post-war Old Guard were not conservatives. It was their great-grandfathers and grandfathers of the 19th century who were the true conservatives. The modern post-war conservatives were liberals. They had abandoned the fairy tale vision of God, which is found in the Bible and the European bards, for a more scientific view of God and man. And when a man becomes ‘scientific’ he always Gnosticizes Christianity. The belief in the resurrection of the body is changed to a metaphoric resurrection, and a man’s skin color is no longer seen as part of his soul. The Biblical truth, that the wisdom of man is in his blood, is looked on as unscientific and barbaric. The famous liberal, George Bernard Shaw, used to froth at the mouth at the slightest mention of Christianity. How could civilized men countenance a blood sacrifice? If a man’s blood is not part of his soul, then a religion that was redeemed by the blood of the Lamb would be barbaric. But our blood is part of our soul. Our bodies and our spirit *are* one, and we believe – those of us who remain European — that God intends to resurrect the whole man on the last day.

The European “conservatives” of the 20th century were flawed conservatives because they did not wish to conserve that which is essential: the European people and their non-propositional Christianity. Instead the conservatives jettisoned the European people in the name of their pet abstractions – propositional Christianity and propositional economics. Run a little test of your

own. Start using words like loyalty and honor. Tell people you must remain loyal to your own race, which is why you don't watch pro football. Or better yet, tell people that you have taken a vow to refrain from strong drink and strong meat until the stain upon your honor, caused by the presence of liberals and negroes in your nation, is removed. Of course you will be committed if you use such language and then suit your actions to your words. But the antique Europeans did suit their actions to such words. They believed in "that charity of honor," and they believed in loyalty and fidelity to their own race. If we don't conserve their faith, we have no faith and no nation.

The managerial conservatives of the 20th century accepted the liberals' basic premise that a culture based on loyalty to one's people, defined by their race, was unprogressive and inferior to a culture that was based on a universalist creed. The conservative opposition to communism was pragmatic. "There is no need to kill so many people in defense of a failed economic system. We can give people a better economy without killing quite so many people." And even on that issue, the slaughter of innocents, the managerial conservatives did not understand that multi-racial universalism, whether it is communist or democratic, always results in the slaughter of innocents. If we tally up the aborted babies and the whites killed by the colored tribesmen who are permitted to live and breathe on sacred European soil, who's to say that we of the liberal and negro-infested West haven't compiled a more obscene number of slaughtered innocents than the Russian communists? The "prejudice" that loyalty and fidelity to kith and kin is the first of all virtues, the virtue which anchors all other virtues, was formed when the Christian faith of the Europeans was at high tide. So why would professed Christian conservatives assume that the ethos of race-mixing Babylon was more in keeping with the Christian faith than the prejudices of their forefathers? Because they were and are divided men, with one foot in the modern world, and one foot in the old world. If they don't become "racists" they will soon become complete men of negation; they will become holistic liberals. Only those who cling to the prejudices of the antique European racists will be able to stand against the liberal whirlwind. The managerial types of the conservative and halfway-house Christian variety, will be swept away by the liberals. +

(1) The South was not wholly defeated until the 1950's.

(2) FDR had this to say about Uncle Joe: "He is a man who combines a tremendous, relentless determination with a stalwart good humor. I believe that he is truly representative of the heart and soul of Russia; and I believe that we are going to get along very well with him and the Russian people — very well indeed."

Strong of Heart

September 1, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Thomas Hughes



You'll find her father with her, and some more,
Who took the oath with you upon the Rutli;
Bid them be resolute, and strong of heart,—
For Tell is free and master of his arm;

— Schiller's *William Tell*

The essential ethos of a civilization is never written in a constitution or any official document. It is too sacred to be written down; it lives in the hearts of the people. For many centuries the ethos of the European people was a Christian ethos. In their hearts the Europeans believed that the touchstone of reality to which all questions of policy and ethics ultimately must be referred was the Man of Sorrows. He was the Hero of Western civilization. And one came to believe in The Hero through the type of hero worship that Thomas Hughes writes about in *Tom Brown's School Days*:

And let us not be hard on him, if at that moment his soul is fuller of the tomb and him who lies there, than of the altar and Him of whom it speaks. Such stages have to be gone through, I believe, by all young and brave souls, who must win their way through hero-worship, to the worship of Him who is the King and Lord of heroes. For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell for ever and ever in perfect fullness.

An incarnational faith needs men and women who embody the ethos of their God. Men like Alfred, Tell, and Wallace, and women such as Florence Nightingale and our mothers, sisters, and wives of the European hearth, who embodied the ethos of Christianity, pointed us toward Him. The attack on Christ and His civilization starts with an attack on the heroes of Europe because a people who lose their heroes cease to be a people. We live and die with the hero, his aspirations are our aspirations, his God is our God. We love him because in his selfless sacrifice for his people he imitates the sacrifice of Christ at Golgotha. That he is a man with faults makes us love him all the more because despite his faults he rose above the material and the mundane and strove with might and main for his people and His Kingdom come.

Then the liberal comes along and either demonizes the European hero or abstracts the hero, isolates one of his virtues, and uses that one virtue in behalf of Liberaldom. Let's take Nathan Bedford Forrest, Lincoln, and Robert E. Lee as cases in point. Forrest traded and owned slaves before the war. After the war he was the first Grand Wizard of the Ku Klux Klan. From the liberals' point of view he was Satan incarnate (metaphorically speaking, because liberals don't believe in Satan). During the war and after "That Devil Forrest" was an anathema to the liberals. He was, and is, in liberal lore an unredeemable sinner. Yet to the white people of the South, the last Europeans, Forrest was the hero who stood above them all. He fought for his people to the last gasp, unconquerable during the war and still unconquerable after the war when the South lay prostrate before the seemingly invincible North. Forrest was a true European hero, in line with Alfred, Arthur, El Cid, Tell, and Havelock. In contrast, Lincoln was a new breed of liberal hero. He was willing to do the liberals' bidding, so he was lauded, but not as a beloved hero who fought for his people, but as a man who fought for the abstract ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity. The liberal never has any other kind of hero than the Lincoln-type, because the liberal is the man without a country, a man "concentrated all in self." This is the key to the liberal. If you abstract from men only the qualities that fit your abstractions, and then revere and worship the abstraction, to whom are you paying homage? Whom do you really worship? Yourself, of course. Lee was only clubbable as an abstract supporter of abolition and higher education, not as the man who was the defender of his people. And the abstraction process did not start with Northern liberals nor did it stop with them. The Son of God was abstracted from the heart of Europe. In a bygone era, He was the sum product of a theologian's abstract notion of nature. In subsequent eras, He became Christ the Watchmaker, Christ the Marxist, Christ the Democrat, Christ the End Product of Evolution, and Christ the Negro-Worshipping Social Worker. But in every liberal manifestation of Christ there is no living God, no Christ the Lord who carried our sorrows and was wounded for our transgressions. We must and will have that God, the true God, who comes to us through "our mysterious human relationships," that the liberals have maniacally abstracted out of existence.

Every so often I read a "conservative's" exposé of our school system. The conservative tells us of the anti-European bias that exists in the grade schools, the high schools, and our universities. Everything European is considered evil and every sexual perversion is considered ground-breaking and therefore good. All this is true, except I would substitute the words 'satanic hatred' for the word 'bias.'

There is one thing that always strikes me as woefully inadequate in the concerned conservatives' suggested solutions to the liberals' hatred of all things European. The conservatives always want more democracy! They want Joe Public and Peter Parent to put pressure, through petitions and "turn the scoundrels out" voting, on the anti-European academics. But even if we assume, which is an unwarranted assumption, that there are members of the public who are against the anti-European educational system, by what stretch of the imagination are we to believe that redemption is to be had from the devil? Are the liberals going to tell us, "Yes, by George, now that you mention it, we are quite biased against the European people; we'll correct that mistake immediately!" Of course not. This is not a time for a reasoned, measured response, which we would give to someone with whom we had a mild disagreement on a minor issue. We are dealing with an enemy who we are diametrically opposed to. There can be no dialog, no democratic pleading, with an enemy whose a priori assumption is that you and your people must die. Our race and our soul are one; if the liberals abstract that from us, what is left? There is nothing left. Look to the north, to our past, when the newly Christianized men of the European forests and mountains were not abstracted men. They loved their own race more intensely after their conversions to Christianity. Which is as it should be with us. Nothing good comes from hating your own race. It shows no disrespect to other races when you love your own race above all other races, because a man who hates his own race will be unable to love any race. He will set up an abstracted idol of another race, and make that idol his God, but he will not love anyone of any race. The first great betrayal of his own race renders a man incapable of loving anyone outside of himself and anything that does not serve his exalted image of himself. The religious justification for the hatred of the white man comes from the theologians of the abstract. If all our mysterious human relationships are suspect because human passions and emotions are involved in those relationships, then what is left? Abstracted

reason is all that is left. And abstracted reason needs no body, no blood; it is a disembodied, cosmic thing floating above us and beyond us like a deadly gas. The churchmen, like their big brothers of the Academy, do not have the intellectual honesty or integrity to live in the mind-forged world of their own creation. While denying their own people the right to love their own above all others, they claim the right – because even liberals have human needs and wants – to make the colored people their own. But their love is a twisted egotistic love because of their rationalism. The liberals can “help” the colored people in a way that feeds their self-love. There is no room for God in Liberaldom because no God can enter into a mind-forged world of self-love.

The first rationalist revolt took place in the Garden of Eden, when Satan reasoned things out with Adam and Eve and convinced them that they would not die when they ate from “the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.” And that initial revolt, that passion to live with our own reason outside of God’s love is in us all. When the European people countered that illicit passion with a passion for intimacy with the Son of God, Europe was strong and healthy. When the rationalist serpent entered the church and spread outward the European people took sick and became a death-in-life people.

Thomas Hughes, to his credit, saw the Christian gentlemen, Battle-of-Waterloo-playing-fields-of-Eton ethos when he attended Rugby under Thomas Arnold and later when he attended Oxford. He, and he alone, was critical of trying to go through life with the Greeks as a guide rather than Christ.

The result of Hardy’s management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, “You needn’t have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson.”

“I don’t understand,” said Tom.

“Well, there’s something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn’t there?”

“Yes, a great deal,” Tom answered, after a pause; “but it isn’t the same thing.”

“Why not the same thing?”

“Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning.”

“Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not.”

“How do you mean?” said Tom.

“Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can’t name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens.”

—Tom Brown at Oxford

But unfortunately there was another side to the British tradition, a classical, rationalist side that both the Catholic and the Protestant held to, that destroyed Christian Europe. Thomas Arnold wanted to make Christian gentlemen, but there was Greek rationalism in the classrooms which bore poisonous fruits in the next generation. Arnold’s son, Matthew Arnold, was the logical consequence of the ill-fated attempt to fuse Greek rationalism and Christianity. What a despair-ridden, bloodless faith results from such a pairing:

*Ah, love, let us be true
To one another! for the world, which seems
To lie before us like a land of dreams,
So various, so beautiful, so new,
Hath really neither joy, nor love, nor light,
Nor certitude, nor peace, nor help for pain;
And we are here as on a darkling plain
Swept with confused alarms of struggle and flight,
Where ignorant armies clash by night.*

If the romance of Christianity is made into a philosophy, mankind will flee from that philosophy and take refuge in the romance of hedonistic, race-mixing Babylon. It’s a small step from “Dover Beach” to Woodstock:

*By the time we got to Woodstock
We were half a million strong
And everywhere there was song and celebration
And I dreamed I saw the bombers
Riding shotgun in the sky
And they were turning into butterflies
Above our nation
We are stardust
We are golden
And we’ve got to get ourselves
Back to the garden.*

The poor spiritually crippled children of Woodstock were merely acting out the despair of Matthew Arnold’s “Dover Beach.” The fruits of rationalism are poisonous as our Lord warned us they would be. We have gone back to the garden, to feast once more on the forbidden fruit. The Woodstock generation grew up and institutionalized racial Babylon, which spawned sexual Babylon and legalized abortion. We don’t need to go back to a liberal, utopian Eden, which is in reality a nightmarish dystopia. We need to go back to incarnational Europe, the land of the one true romance of life: The romance that begins in a stable in Bethlehem and ends with The Hero conquering, for the sake of His people, that last great enemy. Look to the heroes of Europe, past and present; they are the men and women who still dream dreams and see the vision of the risen Lord, presiding over His Europe. +

The Restoration of Innocence, Mercy, and Faith

September 8, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Hippolyte Taine



“Endeavouring to persuade the people that they are no better than beasts, the whole body of their institution tends to make them beasts of prey, furious and savage.”

— Burke

First Burke and then Taine, in their commentaries on the French Revolution, pointed out that the French revolutionaries had a pathological hatred for human beings. While professing to love humanity in the abstract, they hated any genuine manifestation of humanity in individual members of the human race.

This sort of people are so taken up with their theories about the rights of man, that they have totally forgotten his nature. Without opening one new avenue to the understanding, they have succeeded in stopping up those that lead to the heart. They have perverted in themselves, and in those that attend to them, all the well-placed sympathies of the human breast... Humanity and compassion are ridiculed as the fruits of superstition and ignorance. Tenderness to individuals is considered as treason to the public. — Burke

Such was the essence of French Jacobinism and such is the essence of modern liberalism. Burke warned that the death of Robespierre did not end the French Revolution. The snake had been scotched, not killed. And that hideous reptile has now grown to mammoth proportions, making its destruction impossible without the grace of God, which Europeans have ceased to pray for. “I serve the King and the King serves Christ,” is no longer part of the Europeans’ vernacular.

The utopian liberal (a redundancy because all liberals are utopians) builds his castle with the bricks and mortar of unreality. He lives in mortal fear of losing even one brick from his castle of unreality, so he employs masons to keep the castle strong and guards to protect the masons. And the keystone of the liberals’ castle of unreality is the sacred negro. If that brick is removed, the whole castle will come tumbling down.

The black man was not always the keystone of the castle of unreality. Originally the liberal tried using the father, the abstracted intellect. But alone the abstracted intellect could not capture the hearts of men. So the liberal added the son, in the form of the abstraction called ‘the people,’ to the castle of unreality. And to support the son, the holy spirit, science, was also brought into the castle. The son (the people) was always the keystone of Satan’s blasphemous mimicry of the Holy Trinity. Just as the Son of God represented, in His humanity, the highest form of humanity, so did the son in Satan’s trinity have to be the lowest form of humanity. So Satan moved toward the deification of the negro by degrees. The once Christian Europeans needed to worship the lowest dregs of their own people before they could be persuaded to worship the generic black man as the European messiah. But negro worship has come to fruition in Europe, which would seem to indicate from a Christian standpoint that the European people have reached the bottom of the pit and are now in the process of maintaining the pit against all invaders. Why would any European wish to defend a castle which consists of an interracial slime-pit? For the same reason the demons in the gospel wanted to be sent into the swine who plunged over a cliff. They hate the light and worship the darkness. Having lost faith in Christ the liberals need stronger and stronger doses of unreality in order to keep reality at bay.

What we are witnessing throughout the European world is the consolidation of the forces of liberalism. They have banded together to destroy anyone or anything that reminds them of Europe when Christ lived and dwelt among the European people. And who do they run to in their war against God? The descendants of Ham and Cush, whom we were expressly forbid to make our masters. We know neither the day nor the hour, but I often wonder why the halfway-house Christians who are so enamored of Israel because of “prophecies” do not look at the Biblical battle right in front of their eyes instead of the false Armageddon they have invented: The forces of Ham and Cush against the sons of Japheth and Shem. Why don’t those who call themselves Christian gird up their loins for that battle? Because they have not taken off the layers of unreality from their souls. All around them are the unChristian fruits of diversity, but they refuse to see, because in their hearts they have decided to stand with the liberals against Christ. The liberal disease took hold by degrees, but in the end it spread to the spine of the halfway-house Christians, and they, being unable to stand upright, could no longer see anything beyond the liberals’ pigsty. Now they think that racially diverse pig-slime is the only reality. If you suddenly showed them a vision of Christian Europe before it was turned into a pigsty, they would condemn it as a world of evil and unreality and proclaim their liberal pigsty to be the summit of beauty and truth.

A liberal kills all the divine longings in his heart so he can propound the abstract principles of his utopian brain. And with the circular logic of the madman, he always comes back to his own mind as the only reality. He will always find the imperfections of the King he hates and the culture he hates, because there is no perfect King and no perfect culture. But why does the liberal focus on the mote in Louis the XVI’s eye and ignore the log in the Jacobins’ collective eye? Why were the white South Africans condemned for compassionate apartheid and the modern negro rulers not condemned for the bloody massacre of whites and blacks? Why does Tony Blair tell us we must have a racially diverse Britain when racially diverse Britain is diametrically opposed to everything good and decent that used to exist in non-diverse, racially segregated Britain? The answer to all those questions is that the utopian liberal is criminally insane. Devoid of all humanity he uses his brain to support the inhumanity of liberalism, which holds the negro aloft as the holy God of Liberaldom. Is such a faith madness? Indeed it is. The negro worshipping liberal and the Jacobin are spiritually united.

“I must confess,” said he, “that for days I could neither eat nor sleep for excess of joy!” One day a Jacobin in the tribune declared: “We shall be a nation of gods!” — Fancies like these bring on lunacy, or, at all events, they create disease. “Some men are in a fever all day long,” said a companion of St. Just, “I had it for twelve years.” — Taine

Such a frenzy for satanic utopias is hard to maintain. As the faith in white Jacobins and Russian proletariat died, the faith in the colored people, especially the black, grew. Who could doubt, when witnessing the frenzy of the American and European liberals on the occasion of Obama’s election, that the spirit of Jacobinism, which is the spirit of the fallen angel, is alive and thriving in the negro worship of the modern Europeans?

Burke succeeded in turning his own people and the bulk of Europe against the bloody reign of terror. But he failed to convince the European people, after the blood-letting had ceased, just how deeply utopian thinking had penetrated France and Europe. If unchecked it would, Burke maintained, destroy Christian Europe. Every European liberal condemned Burke’s “wild speculations,” and even conservatives to this day claim Burke was “too extreme.” But ‘tis not so. What Burke feared, the destruction of the unbought grace of life, occurred.

I stand astonished at those persons who do not feel a resentment, not more natural than politick, at the atrocious insults that this monstrous compound offers to the dignity of every nation, and who are not alarmed with what it threatens to their safety... This pretended Republick is founded in crimes, and exists by wrong and robbery; and wrong and robbery, far from a title to any thing, is war with mankind. To be at peace with robbery is to be an accomplice with it. – Burke

The rest of Europe made peace with the robbers because they too wanted to spend the unbought grace of life in their own nations. They wanted to build abstract idols and worship those idols. All that was needed for Jacobinism to carry the day was a curb on the extreme blood-letting. Once that diminished, the Jacobin virus was allowed to spread slowly throughout Europe and slowly rot the spiritual spine of the European by killing the provincial virtues: love of family, race and place, and replacing those virtues with a love of abstract universal families, foreign races, and mother earth.

The mantra of liberalism is “always upward and always onward.” Toward what? Have we moved upward? Not in the Christian sense of the word. We have moved downward. We have moved onward though, onward to Babylon. And each stage toward Babylon, being that much further removed from Christendom, is crueler and harsher, more lacking in humanity, than the previous stages. So much so that liberals of former eras, men and women who tried so hard to be progressive and future-oriented, are not even cited or known by their liberal descendants. Bernard Shaw, who hated the British people for not allowing him to replace Shakespeare as the national bard and who attacked God by attacking His people, is an unknown to the modern liberal zombies. Nor does Bertrand Russell, Comte, Feuerbach, or Voltaire rate a hearing among the unthinking, unfeeling breed of modern Babylonians who have no idea that their modern pigsty was the work of centuries. Nor do they know that their progenitors still had some Christian lingers that prevented them from completely living up to their cruel utopian plans. But we can rely on that no more. The new breed has no Christian lingers in their soul. They are a final product of years of anti-European madness. Look around you. I have. There is no mercy, no pity in Babylon. The liberals have triumphed, which means Satan rules unopposed.

At the sight of European Babylon there must be a rage within the European that says, “This shall not go on.” Without that rage it is futile to oppose liberalism. One must love that which was lost and refuse to accept its loss. For one shining moment Dylan Thomas spoke for the European who refuses to accept the death of his loved ones and the death of his culture: “Rage, Rage against the dying of the light.” The European who is strong of heart will not leave the satanic liberals and their negro idols in possession of sacred Europe. They will rage against the death of innocence and the death of mercy and faith, until innocence and mercy grace Europe’s green and pleasant land again and faith is restored. Such a restoration is absurd from a democratic standpoint. But that will be the test. When Europeans stop thinking like calculators and start thinking with their blood they will know what Alfred and Tell knew: one man, who loves his people with a love and passion beyond the understanding of the liberal and the barbarian, will start a crusade or shoot an arrow that will eventually defeat the seemingly invincible forces of the utopian liberals and their heathen gods.

Before World War II commenced, King George VI of England read in his 1939 Christmas broadcast to the British Empire the poem “The Gate of the Year” by Minnie Louise Haskins. It was quite appropriate. Britain was already on the way to becoming a full-fledged Jacobin state at the time of that Christmas reading, but facing a world war the King instinctively reached into the past to inspire his people to fight for Britain. Old Britain was an “Into the Hand of God,” civilization, and it was the ethos of that older Britain that would see the British people through the war. We, the last remaining Europeans, are engaged in a war of infinitely greater magnitude than any of the preceding wars. This war is for the survival of the European people. If we refuse to let go of the “into the Hand of God” Europe, the segregated Europe which is religiously and racially non-diverse, we will certainly prevail over liberals who have placed their faith in science and the Noble Black Savage. There is no true strength emanating from such a perverse civilization. If the walls of Liberaldom remain intact it is only because we have not placed ourselves in the hand of God. Once we do so, the love that passeth all understanding will stir us to protect innocence, render the deeds of mercy, and destroy the liberal Leviathan.

+

The Bottomless Pit of Diversity

September 15, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke



They paid the price to reach their goal
Across a world in flame;
But their own hate slew their own soul
Before that victory came.

-Kipling

Jefferson starts the Declaration of Independence by telling us about truths that he holds to be “self-evident.” But then he lists some alleged truths that are far from self-evident. I hold the following truth of Edmund Burke to be far more self-evident than Thomas Jefferson’s truths:

The writers on public law have often called this aggregate of nations a Commonwealth. They had reason. It is virtually one great state having the same basis of general law; with some diversity of provincial customs and local establishments. The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and economy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources.

Anyone who writes about the European people without taking into account the effect that the Christian faith had upon them will never have any understanding of the European people. Even now, when the European people have ceased to be Christian, you must have an understanding of their Christian past in order to understand their post-Christian present.

The post-Christian European has taken the eschatology of Christianity and secularized it. To the Christian, past events are significant to the extent that they contribute to salvation history, which is why the history of the Europeans is relevant to Europeans as well as non-Europeans, whereas the history of the non-European people has relevance only when their history intersects with the Europeans’ history. The obvious reason for the antique Europeans’ ethnocentrism was because the Christian faith became part of European civilization. A European who is not ethnocentric is not a Christian. And of course now that the Europeans are not Christian, the ethnocentrism of the European has reversed itself. The European people currently regard all European history that is unconnected to black history as irrelevant history.

The European Christian looks to the future in the expectation of the second coming of Christ, but he does not deify the future. In fact the genuine Christian, the European, is more likely to revere the past because in the past are the people who took Christ into their homes.

In contrast to the Christian European, the new age liberal European looks to a future where mankind lives together in an earthly paradise. The dreams of the Woodstock hippies will be realized in the future, mankind will advance to a new Garden of Eden. But is such a future an advance? What are the features of the liberals’ future utopia? The first thing one notes is that there is death in the liberals’ paradise. In Christian Europe death was swallowed up in Christ’s victory on the cross: “And Death once dead, there’s no more dying then.” The liberals’ utopian vision of death is opposed to the Christian vision. There is a huge difference between, “there’s no more dying then,” because Christ has conquered death and, “there’s no tragedy in death because the species lives on.” The second thing we notice is connected to our first observation. There is no Christ in the future. He is ominously absent from the futuristic fantasies of the liberals. The force is with us in the future, the Übermensch is with us, a whole assortment of Asian and African gods are also with us in the future, but the Son of Man is gone. And why not? If there is no sin, and death is only natural, why does mankind need redemption from sin and liberation from death? What mankind needs, the utopians tell us, is liberation from oppressive barriers of race, sex, and family. All utopias are biracial, sexually liberated, and opposed to the patriarchal family.

If we put the war between the utopian Europeans and the antique Europeans in the form of a fable, it would run something like this:

Farmer Brown had a farm with the usual farmyard animals. He ran the farm with benevolence, but he did run it as a farm; the animals all had their duties and they were expected to perform their duties for the good of the barnyard community. In the woods lived a fox who had always been at enmity with Farmer Brown. Secretly and late at night the fox started to talk to the various animals on the farm. He talked to them about nature and about repression. It was unnatural for animals to live on a farm. They were meant to live free in the woods. And it was unnatural for animals to confine their sexual activity to only their own kind. Why shouldn’t the rooster mate with a dog, a cow with a goat, the lamb with the bull? Weren’t all animals part of nature? And wasn’t nature good? All this and more the fox poured into the ears of Farmer Brown’s animals, and in the end the animals, save one, left the farm for the promised revels in the woods.

The clever fox knew that it was not enough to get the animals into the woods. He had to keep them in the woods. And how could he keep them in the woods? The woods were miserable. The fox had learned just how miserable they were from years and years of exile from the farm where he had once lived as a special favorite of Farmer Brown. So again, how to keep them in the woods once they realized that endless sex with an assortment of other animals was not all that the fox had told them it would be?

First, the fox instilled in the animals a pathological fear of Farmer Brown. “Do you remember what it was like under Farmer Brown? Do you want to return to those days when Farmer Brown didn’t allow you to have unbridled sex with every species of animal?”

“I don’t actually recall life under Farmer Brown being that bad,” said one of the cows. “And I don’t really enjoy having relations with a pig.”

The pigs all snorted at the reactionary cow, and later that day the cow disappeared. After that the clever fox kept a whole contingent of weasels on his payroll. Their sole job was to keep their ears open and report any animal who spoke about returning to the farm. The animals that did speak about returning to the farm all disappeared like the disagreeable cow. Soon no animal spoke favorably about the farm, and most of the animals forgot there had ever been a Farmer Brown or a farm.

The third phase of the fox's plan was "the appeal to their intellectual pride" plan. "No intelligent animal believes in farms or Farmer Brown. We are building here in the woods a new world that is constantly getting better and better. I have no doubt that we will soon have a perfect world here if only we eliminate reactionary animals who talk rot about a mythical farm and a mythical man who runs the farm. My research staff, consisting of some wise old owls and a super intelligent German shepherd, are constantly studying and doing research in order to make your world the most perfect of worlds." The animals were very impressed.

Still, despite all his efforts, the fox saw that all was not well. Something was missing in utopia. Because he had not forgotten Farmer Brown and the farm, he knew what was missing – a flesh and blood symbol of the new utopian regime of the animals. The new order stood for pleasure, unity, and peace, but who could be the flesh and blood symbol of pleasure, unity, and peace? The wolf, of course. The barnyard animals had always been taught to fear the wolf, but this was a prejudice, the fox told them. Wolves were natural, wolves were vital, wolves were untainted with the selfishness and petty bourgeois values of the farmyard. So the wolf became the sign and symbol of the new utopia. At every gathering the animals sang hymns to the sacred wolf. In work and play wolves were the centerpiece of the new society. At the campfires at night, the scholarly owls would read long tomes telling how the wolves had been mistreated and discriminated against in the bad old days of the farms. Now in the golden age, in the age of the new, enlightened farmyard animals, the wolf was honored as the sacred god of the farmyard animals. But of course a wolf is still a wolf, despite what the owlish scholars say to the contrary. What happened when the wolves behaved like wolves and killed three pigs, two cows, and five little lambs? The owls condemned the goat who reported the slaughter — "You reactionary old goat" – and threw the goat into prison for five years. Then, for good measure, they burned down the goat's modest dwelling and sent his wife and their kids to a retraining center where the kids were taught the evil of their father and the goodness of wolves.

So all seemed well for the fox; his kingdom was in order. But the fox was not happy. There were rumors of an old farm cat named George, who had remained loyal to Farmer Brown. George held meetings in the forest at which he told some of the new age animals about the real Farmer Brown and life on a real farm. The former farm animals seemed interested, but they never committed themselves to George and the old farm. "All quite amusing, those stories about the old farm, but you can't build a life on fairy tales," the old donkey declared.

"How would I make a living if I followed the cat? I'd be marginalized," the ram asserted. "Stuff and nonsense," the wise old owl declared.

"Why haven't you killed the cat?" the fox asked his weasels.

"Because he never meets in the same place twice and he can still run faster than any of the other animals. Besides that, he is a crafty old fellow."

"I don't want excuses. Find that Farmer Brown loyalist and kill him! That's an order!"

And there we leave the new age farmyard animals, in the woods with the fox. But George still lives, and it seems, if the weasels can be believed, that George is growing younger, larger, and stronger. Soon, the fox fears, George will descend upon the forest, destroy the Fox's minions, and lead the rest of the farmyard animals back to the farm. 'Tis a consummation devoutly to be wished.

Modern Liberaldom is supposed to be heaven on earth; haven't the liberals told us that is what we could expect once they were in power? So why haven't we become stardust and golden? Because of me and thee. The reactionaries, the recalcitrants, are impeding the final implementation of paradise. And so it will go on until Liberaldom is destroyed. Paradise will always be just around the corner once the last racists, the last sexists, are finally eliminated from the face of the earth. We can never be at peace with the liberals because the liberals must destroy the white race in order to ensure the survival of their utopia. The liberals' assertion that skin color has nothing to do with the spiritual identity of a man turns into a lie as soon as the liberals place the black man at the center of their altars. If skin color has nothing to do with a man's essential soul, then why do the liberals worship the black man? Shouldn't they be color blind? Why is all good ascribed to blacks simply on the basis of their color if skin color is of no consequence? In point of fact, our skin color is a thing eternal; it is part of our soul. And white souls, of a bygone era, consecrated their hearts and minds to Christ. The liberal must condemn that by-gone era and condemn the people of that era in order to build Satandom on the ruins of Christendom.

From a utopian viewpoint, antique Europeans are always in the wrong because they were not perfect. But why are liberals, who condemn antique Europeans for the mites in their eyes, never condemned for the lugs in their own eyes? The liberals stand condemned not only by their own standards, in that they have failed to usher in utopia, but also by Christian standards. They have instituted Satanic values throughout the European countries by placing the black man on the altars of the formerly Christian churches. We cannot vote such a blasphemy away because all of the democratic governments of the European people only allow the European people to vote for the person that is to be in charge of the ongoing liquidation of the European people. There are no elections being held where one can vote for the survival of the white race. That issue was never put on the ballot because utopians are tyrannical. The predetermined condition for the building of utopia is the destruction of the Christ-bearing people. So why would the tyrants of Liberaldom treat the necessity of the extermination of the white race as a debatable issue? It is not a debatable issue to them. Whites must perish if Liberaldom is to survive. Liberaldom won't survive if Europeans behave like white men who are fully conscious that their whiteness is part of their soul, which belongs to God and is not meant to perish in a racially mixed Babylonian stewpot or in the cosmic wastes of Liberaldom. "Still our ancient foe does seek to work us woe," but Christ, not Satan, is the God of our race, and He wills that we should fight for our kith and kin with a passion and a love that passeth the understanding of the liberal and the barbarian. They who have not faith, who have not hope, who have not charity, will never impose their utopia of death on we few, the Europeans who refuse to abandon His Europe and His people. +

Keep Thy Heart

September 22, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



"Satan conquers by distorting and diverting man's spiritual eye, his heart. So keep thy heart, thou man of Europe, and thou shalt ride triumphant over ruin and death." -CWNY

The Family Research Council is one of those moderate Christian outfits that opposes gay marriage and legalized infanticide within the framework of Christ-hating democracy. The very name – Research Council – gives you an idea of just how dangerous they are. They are going to think the evils of liberal democracy away by careful study and a presentation of the facts to their misguided liberal brethren.

Despite their timidity and their willingness to stay democratic and innocuous, the Family Research Council was labeled a hate group by a true hate group, the white-hating, satanic organization called the Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC). In response to the SPLC's vicious smear campaign, a left wing devotee of the SPLC went into the Family Research Council headquarters and shot a security guard. There was of course no outcry against the SPLC for encouraging the shooting, nor did any members of the SPLC express contrition for their part in the shooting even though the security guard was black. But why should they be contrite? They are just being consistent. They hate the Family Research Council because it supports white Christian causes, so should they shed any tears when one of their followers attacks such an organization?

Just as disturbing as the shooting – and this always seems to be the case nowadays in the aftermath of liberal hate crimes – was the reaction of the Family Research Council. The FRC and their supporters pointed out that it was their attackers, not them, who were intolerant and hateful. That is all too true; the liberals are the intolerant and hate-filled ones. Should the Christian hate, should the Christian be intolerant, or is Christianity synonymous with tolerance and the absence of hate? It would seem so if we listen to the modern proponents of Christianity. But aren't "Christians" who tell us that we should not hate really telling us to surrender to the liberals? Why should a professed Christian spend his entire life explaining why he doesn't hate gays, abortionists, feminists, and negroes? Far better to hate the devil and his minions as a true European Christian should: "They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate." Is it iced tea or skim milk that flows through the veins of the purveyors of tolerance, in the face of evil? Whatever it is, it isn't blood.

This tolerance is not confined to the whites in the United States. Remember the English Defence League's response to black hoods who were terrorizing London? They wanted "all decent people be they black, white, Sikh or Muslim..." to band together for England. That kind of response to violence against your own people is a response that will ensure that violence against your people continues. If William Tell responded to Gessler as "decent" whites now respond to liberals, there would be no legend of Tell because he and his family would have been exterminated. We can see the scene in our mind's eye: Tell successfully shoots the arrow off his son's head, but he does not, before shooting, put that second arrow, meant for Gessler if he misses, into his quiver. After Tell's success, Gessler asks Tell if he harbors any resentment against him, Gessler, for putting his son's life in jeopardy, and Tell responds, "No, there is no room in my heart for hate. I seek only to live in perfect accord with all men."

"That's all well and good," says Gessler, "but I think I'll throw you in prison anyway."

As you recall, on the way to prison Tell is needed to steer the boat in perilous waters, so he is unbound. Once unbound, he escapes to the mountains, shoots Gessler, and leads his people in a counter-revolution. The modern version would be quite different. Once free, Tell would start printing pamphlets explaining to his countrymen why he was so tolerant of the man who wanted him to kill his own son. "I'm just too good and decent to hate. I won't lift a finger against those who attack my kith and kin. That is not Christian." As a result of Tell's 'tolerance,' his family and his people are wiped out, and Gessler dances over the graves of Tell's kith and kin.

What kind of people accepts Satan's definition of tolerance and decency? The liberals define decency as an acceptance of their indecencies, and they define tolerance as a tolerance of the atrocities that they and their colored gods commit against white Europeans and unborn babies. No one cries "Hold, that's enough," in the ranks of the Europeans because the European has cut himself off from the mysterious human relationships, the love for his kith and kin, which engenders the passion in a man to protect innocence and fight to the death in defense of his own. If a man renounces his own people for an abstract faith in decency and tolerance, he has nothing to fight for. And such is the case with the "decent European." He will blather on endlessly about decency and tolerance, but he is incapable of loving decent European people enough to defend them against the liberals and their barbarian allies. And he is too afraid of being called intolerant and hate-filled to attack the great haters and murderers of his own people.

Solzhenitsyn, when he first came over from Russia to the West, made the observation that the most striking thing about the Western people was their lack of courage. He didn't understand why they didn't defend themselves and their allies against the communists. If he would have probed deeper he would have discovered that the people of the West did not lack courage per se – they weren't all congenital cowards; what they lacked was a passion for the little human things, hearth, home, and race, which engenders the spirit to fight for the right. A man who believes in the abstract principles of negro-worshipping democracy is not going to be passionately opposed to communism. He will be passionately opposed to South African apartheid and Southern segregation.

The Russian people have not thrown off the yoke of egalitarian Satanism; they are still riding the liberty, fraternity, and equality express train to oblivion. All that has changed is the train's engineer. He now wears a democratic hat instead of a communist hat. The spiritual backbone that Solzhenitsyn said was lacking in the Western peoples is also lacking in the Russian people because they too have the white man's disease. They have forsaken their people to go whoring after the gods of diversity. It's happening slower in Russia than in the West, but the drive toward racial diversity and oblivion is in progress in Russia as well as the West. The worship of the great negro god is supposed to bring about the unity of east and west that all liberals long for. Is such a unity, the unity of the slime pit, possible? I suppose it is, but is it desirable? The antique European says it isn't desirable, and he will fight to the knife against such a hellish final solution. But the liberal, the colored, and the ornamental, tolerant Christian will accept Satan's slime pit so long as it is racially diverse.

The propositional Christian who has forsaken the bred-in-the-bone Christianity of his European ancestors will be forever trying (and trying in vain) to prove that Christianity and liberalism are compatible. On that issue the liberal has more sense. He will cite Christianity when it suits his purpose: "You are intolerant and unchristian." But he knows who his enemies are. The

enemy is Christ and the Europeans who cling to their prejudice in favor of Christian Europe over Babylonian Europe. The halfway house Christian who thinks he can preserve Christianity by joining it to Babylon has already, in his heart, surrendered to Babylon.

This question of tolerance is central to the demise of the European because his demise was caused by the evils he was tolerant of. He was tolerant of miscegenation, he was tolerant of sexual permissiveness, he was tolerant of feminism, he was tolerant of abortion, he was tolerant of homosexuality... Why such tolerance? The tolerance stemmed from men and women who severed their ties from Jesus Christ, "the God of their succeeding race," for a faith in an abstract, philosophical Christianity that was flexible enough to bend with the times. You have no touchstone of reality if your faith is not in your blood, because the problems of life are too complex for the mind to solve. Our Lord became incarnate so we could know Him through the blood. When we try to know Him with our minds, through the contemplation of nature, or the contemplation of our navels, or any other form of mental computation, we always end up back in the Garden eating the forbidden apple.

Is it really so difficult for a European Christian to determine what is Christian tolerance and what is Christian apostasy? I don't think it is. It is only difficult for ornamental Christians who want to blend Christianity and liberalism. The non-blended European, because his heart still lives, knows when it is time to sheath the sword in deference to human foibles to which we are all subject, and when it is time to unsheathe the sword because innocence and His people are at the mercy of tyrants who have no mercy. A man would have to be dead to every decent emotion that elevates a man in order to be tolerant of modern race-mixing, sexually liberated, Babylonian liberalism.

What Burke said of the French Jacobins, that they were seeking to attack God by destroying His image in man, is true of our modern Jacobin liberals. And they have in large part succeeded in effacing the image of God in man, because they have convinced Europeans that racial diversity is synonymous with Christianity. How could such a blasphemy become holy writ among the Europeans? Isn't a diverse people a non-people? And doesn't a people without an identity produce an abstract god without an identity? We have lost Christ because we have lost His people, the Europeans. The liberals, in hypocritical desperation (they claimed they could live in their minds alone) have placed the black man on their altars. Has there ever been such blindness of heart?

The race war instigated by the liberals has nothing to do with the enfranchisement of blacks. It is about the disenfranchisement of the white man from the human race, because if the white man disappears from the earth the image of God in man disappears from the earth. I hear the sneering pastors deplored the 'racism' of those white Europeans from the past: "Thank God we have overcome our prejudices." I don't know what god the Christ-hating pastors are thanking, but it is most certainly not the Man of Sorrows. God's love was given a local habitation and a name when the Europeans asked Him to come "abide with us, for the darkness thickens." That's what the race war is all about, Charlie Brown: Whether white people will survive and show the world the image of God's love in man, or whether they will succumb to the powers of darkness and allow the image of God in man to be effaced forever in a racially diverse hell on earth. Christian churches and organizations can survive without the European people. But faith in the God whose love passeth all understanding cannot survive without the witness of the European people, who knew that Man.

*Their images I lov'd I view in thee,
And thou, all they, hast the all of me. +*

The Living Hell of Utopia

September 29, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls “the compunctious visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon-and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. – Burke

I admire those people who grow their own food and eat what they grow, but I am not that self-sufficient. I still must depend on the grocery stores for my food. And it is mostly at the grocery stores that I get to rub shoulders with the white hoi polloi. The other day I listened to two white female checkout clerks (both mid-fortyish) going on about a black rapper named Snoop Dog. They and their children just love Snoop Dogg. And both women were also professed born again Christians. Has it come to this? Is Christianity synonymous with the worship of black rappers? Do all Europeans feel an uncontrollable desire to abase themselves before their black gods? The answer to both questions is, unfortunately, yes. Those two women were mothers. They were what would be called ordinary white people, which is what makes it all the more tragic. We know how debased and satanic academics are, but if the black worshipping faith has spread to run-of-the-mill working class whites, which it most certainly has, there is a greater need in Europe than ever before for hearts of fire who will oppose negro worshipping liberalism. When “Christian” white women say Snoop Dogg’s name with the reverence once reserved for His name, it is time to draw the sword and throw the sheath away.

It is truly astounding when we read the writings of the 20th century academics, authors, theologians and thinkers to see that none of them saw fit to write about the Europeans’ struggle to survive as a people in the face of the unrelenting hatred of the liberals and the colored barbarians. It was as if there was a code of silence, rigidly enforced, that forbade conservatives and liberals from mentioning the black rhinoceros in the living room. Long tomes were written by the liberals about the glories of communism, and long tomes were written by the conservatives about the evils of communism, but nowhere, in the “respectable” books and journals of the European intelligentsia do we find any concern for the survival of the European people. The British and the Americans fought for democracy in both world wars and for the democratic version of egalitarianism after World War II, but they never fought for the white race. Quite the contrary, it seemed to be a given (though we don’t know when it was decided) in the 20th century, particularly in the latter half, that the white man should obligingly disappear from the face of the earth. If he wasn’t willing to disappear quietly, he would be exterminated. And sadly, there is no difference between the anti-European writings and speeches of the Christian clergymen, whose churches were founded by Europeans, and the liberals’ anti-European diatribes. The conservative intelligentsia, the liberal intelligentsia, and the clerical intelligentsia were all of one accord: “the white man must cease to exist.”

The 20th century was the century when the European intelligentsia won over the European people to a systems analysis view of existence. Since all of life could be comprehended, the experts told us, by analyzing nature in all of its components, the intelligent man need only decide which systems analysis expert was correct and go with him. The democratic capitalist expert, the communist expert, the distributist expert, the religious expert were in their Gnostic view of existence all compact. The European people ceased to be a people; they became raw material. And lo and behold, it was discovered that white people were defective raw material. Utopia could not be built with such spoiled raw material. The natural, vital people of color were the stuff that the utopians of the right and left dreamed of. The magic world of the utopian theologians, the utopian paradise of democratic government, the communist peoples’ republic, etc., could only come to fruition if the existing world order ceased to exist. And who (in the diseased minds of the utopian intellectuals of the 20th century) had been running the world and ruling the world for over 2,000 years? White people, of course. So it is white people that must perish. The utopians say that white people must vacate the earth because they fought senseless wars, because they were cruel, because they were unjust, and ten thousand other because. But not one of those reasons is the real reason that white utopians must destroy the white race. The white man must perish so the utopians’ abstract vision of a perfect world can live. The Jesuits in the 1500s in Paraguay wanted only pure Indians in their perfect state, just as the modern democratic wizards and magicians want only pure and vital negroes in their perfect state. The brilliant intellectuals of the 20th century thought they were ushering in a new world when in reality they were returning to the wizardry of paganism. “Mumbo jumbo, presto, dynamo, when the white race goes poof, we will all live in paradise.”

What lies behind this magical new world? But wait, wouldn’t it be more appropriate to ask who lurks behind the many masks of utopia? Satan is the mastermind behind all the utopian schemes. Utopian fantasies which eliminate white people only come from white people because it was whites who made Christianity a blood faith. Burned deep into the blood of the white man is a consciousness of Christ and a consciousness of Satan. In turning from Christ the whites have turned to Satan. Isn’t hell the ultimate utopia, a great intelligence presiding over indistinct human beings without personalities, because they have effaced the image of God in man by diversifying their race and their faith?

The portal to utopian hell is racial diversity. And racial diversity is protected and defended by Satan. He uses the curse of stupidity to defend diversity. We are back in the Garden reliving our original sin. “Are you stupid enough to believe in some artificial boundary of God’s?” was the essence of Satan’s temptation. “All power and knowledge exists for those who defy God’s boundaries.” We can hear Satan today loud and clear, “Diversity will make you strong, you shall be as gods, you will no longer be stupid.”

Only the third dumb brothers of fairy tale renown will be courageous enough to defy Satan’s charge of stupidity. Shakespeare was one such third dumb brother when he championed the little human things that make us great:

*“I will hear that play;
For never anything can be amiss,
When simpleness and duty tender it.”*

Yes, the simple play of our lives, as God ordained, will always be stupid in the reptilian eyes of Satan and in the soul-dead eyes of the white intelligentsia. Who dares to be stupid and risk their ridicule? No one dares in this most decadent of times. But that other third dumb brother, Edmund Burke, dared: “... in this enlightened age I am bold enough to confess that we are

generally men of untaught feelings; that instead of casting away all our old prejudices, we cherish them to a very considerable degree..."

And we should be so bold as well. Our race is part of our soul, a gift from God; we haven't the right to destroy God's gift. The intelligentsia of church, academy, press, and state were and are the pied pipers of diversity. When the European people followed their lead, they became one aggregate herd of swine that are to be disposed of as quickly as possible.

The Europeans have ceded their birthright to the systems analysis men. If I were to read you a short summary of one of Shakespeare's plays, the play would seem quite simple, just like a man's life: "He was born, he mated, and he died." But within Shakespeare's simple plays are insights that cut to the heart of existence. If we didn't read the plays but just settled for the plot summaries, we would never see life through Shakespeare's penetrating eyes. And if we ignore a man's connections to a particular family, race, and nation – those small units of the spirit that constitute a man's soul – we will not have any knowledge of the essential man, we will only know a generic man doomed to live as an abstraction and then to die, ground into nothingness in the satanic mills of the utopians. It never ceases to amaze me when liberals feign concern about the suicide rate among white teenagers. Isn't that the ultimate purpose of our modern educational system, the liquidation of white people? Those suicide victims are doing what they have been taught to do. Utopia means "not a place," and people without a place commit suicide.

In an old musical the male lead declares that his attachment to his beloved has become "like breathing in and breathing out, it's second nature to me now." That is what the black worshipping faith has become to the white man – it's second nature to him now. Years and years of relentless propaganda have turned the Christ-bearing people into the negro-worshipping people. The gas was turned on slowly, by degrees, so white people would not even notice they were breathing the deadly fumes of demonic negro worship. But we have all breathed the fumes, and virtually all of us are closer to negro-worshipping Europe than we are to Christian Europe. When I went to school, we were taught a song about the United Nations:

*We are the United Nations of the world,
For peace, and freedom we stand...*

The peace of the grave for white people and the freedom of hell for Satan's colored minions.

The antique European living in the nowhere land of utopia needs to see the two separate worlds of Christian Europe and negro-worshipping Europe clearly. In the first world is all that makes life worth living: our families, our race, and our God. In that second world is unspeakable evil: "We have come face to face with a spirit of evil so strong as to be almost visible and tangible – a foe to all that is normal, sane, and creative, like the evil possessions recorded in the New Testament." Only a blood faith, our ancient faith, can exorcise the mind-forged demon faith from our souls.

We are engaged in a battle that is of Shakespearean proportions. Hamlet knew he had to kill Claudius because Claudius had –

*Kill'd my king and whor'd my mother,
Popp'd in between th' election and my hopes...*

The utopian liberals have killed our kith and kin, whor'd our native land, and placed the sacred black man on the altar where Christ should dwell. What should our response be to such inhuman savagery? Should we consent to our own oblivion because we are afraid of being called stupid and prejudiced? Should we consent to the death of Christian Europe because utopian liberals have decreed that sacred negroes like Snoop Dogg are the new gods of utopia? We have our eternal no, and we have fire and sword. The interim is ours. +

Many Are They That Rise Up Against Us

October 6, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Bred in the Bone, Christ the Hero, Grazers, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Walter Scott



I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about. Arise, O Lord; save me, O my God: for thou hast smitten all mine enemies upon the cheek bone; thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly. Salvation belongeth unto the Lord: thy blessing is upon thy people. Selah. *Psalms 3: 6 –8*

In the year 1665 the Great Plague struck London, killing over one hundred thousand people. The following year, 1666, two thirds of the city was destroyed by the Great Fire of London. Sir Christopher Wren, the great architect, built a new St. Paul's Cathedral after the fire. It is said that in his old age Wren often asked to be carried to a place beneath the dome so that he could look at the magnificent church which was the result of his vision and creativity. Wren must have loved much, his God and his people, to have built that labor of love. But could Wren's new St. Paul's ever replace, in the heart of one who loved the old church, the old St. Paul's? Of course not. In Ainsworth's novel, Old Saint Paul's, he describes the feelings of a devotee of the old church:

He lived to see the new cathedral completed by Sir Christopher Wren, and often visited it with feelings of admiration, but never with the same sentiments of veneration and awe that he had experienced, when, in times long gone by, he had repaired to Old Saint Paul's.

So something wonderful went out of the heart of London when old St. Paul's was burnt to the ground even though Wren's cathedral was worthy of its predecessor. But with the building of the new St. Paul's, the tragic destruction of the old St. Paul's was somewhat mitigated. There was hope that over time the New St. Paul's could become as venerated as the old St. Paul's. Can the same be said of the European people, who are the result of God's creativity and His vision – can they, once destroyed, be rebuilt as old St. Paul's Cathedral was rebuilt? No, they cannot be rebuilt because they are human beings created in the image of God, and the ongoing attempt to destroy the European people in the name of Babylon is an affront to God.

There seems to be some confusion about who is the creator and who is the creature in the minds of the secular and religious utopian theorists. If God is the creator, then His creatures should live their lives as God, not liberal utopians, ordained. If He created people of separate races, then shouldn't we, as God's creatures, try to maintain that separation? Is the Tower of Babel a myth or is it an actual event in our salvation history that we should regard as a warning from God? All concern about Babel and racial segregation goes out the window if we regard man as the creator of God. If God becomes a theory of the Utopians, who cast Him as a civil rights advocate, the final point of an evolutionary process, a watchmaker, a symbol of the best that we can be, or a forerunner of the sacred negro, then the traditional God of the Christians ceases to exist. And of course this is what the modern utopians of church and state desire. They desire the death of the traditional God of the European people, because if He dies the European people die, which allows the liberals to build their brave new multi-racial world over the corpses of white Europeans. "Christians" who side with the purveyors of racial diversity are not Christian, because the Christian God is not an abstract God; He is a God who lives. We cannot know Him through a diversified mass of nondescript people; we can only know Him through our non-diverse relationships with our own people. And of course if there was one ounce of Christianity in the modern Christian churchmen, they would see all the marks of Satan in the modern movement toward "diversity." Even if the stated purpose of diversity, "the equality of the races," was really the true purpose of diversity, it would be wrong, because the races are inherently unequal. To impose a false equality on them would be hell. But diversity has nothing to do with equality. A few white liberals of advanced years might hold on to such views of diversity, but the vast majority of mad-dog liberals and conservative liberals know what diversity means. It means the destruction of the white race by outright murder and by miscegenation. The first method is preferred in African countries where blacks are in the majority, and the second method is preferred in countries where blacks still constitute a minority. There is no doubt, because we have seen what happened in Haiti, in the Reconstruction Era South, and post-white South Africa, that the 'death by miscegenation' societies will become 'death by murder' societies once the blacks are in the majority in the once white nations. It is only the white grazers who don't know about the ongoing war against white people. The liberals certainly know, and they rejoice every time a vestige of old Europe is destroyed. The English people of Christopher Wren's time wanted St. Paul's Cathedral restored because it was a symbol of their faith. So too do the liberals want the European Parliament building in Strasbourg preserved because it is designed to look like the Tower of Babel, the sign and symbol of the modern Europeans' faith.

In Walter Scott's novel *Quentin Durward* the title character urges a gypsy, a man of indeterminate race and no faith, to think about Christ before the executioners put him to death. But the gypsy is obdurate:

"What canst thou expect, dying in such opinions, and impenitent?"

"To be resolved into the elements," said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; "my hope, trust, and expectation is that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recompounded in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under different forms—the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldebaran and his brethren.—In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it!—Hence! begone!—disturb me no farther!

We structure our lives around our faith. The European intelligentsia of church and state have become the devotees of nature and nature's god. As we all are to melt into that general mass of nature at our deaths, so must our lives, the liberals tell us, be structured so that we are blended into one diverse mass of inhumanity here on earth. We must be diversified into non-existence. Our connections to our kith and kin must be obliterated so we can be in contact with the mass of nature personified by the negro. The European Christian will always refuse to become part of a diversified inhuman mass of nature. There is no genuine love in such a mass, because the inhuman mass lacks that which makes us humane – the love of our own people and the love of the living God who took flesh and dwelt among us.

The Christian Londoners, with Wren leading the way, rebuilt St. Paul's Cathedral, an important symbol of their faith. Would those same Christians have consented to the destruction of something infinitely more valuable than St. Paul's Cathedral? Would they have willingly consented to hand their wives, their children, and their city over to a heathen army of blacks and apostate white men? No, they would not. They would have fought to the last man to prevent such a horror. Why then do Europeans of the present day do what was unthinkable to the

Europeans of the 1600's? It's a question of faith. When the Europeans allowed their faith in Christ to be "sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought" they lost their way and stumbled blindly toward a death in life existence in the kingdom of the negro worshipping liberals.

It is not a case, as the pagan white nationalists tell us, of getting the information out to white people. The information is there. From billboards in Duluth to Mexican Pride Day in Texas the message is loud and clear: White people are evil. The white grazers do not want to dispute that fact; they simply want to be allowed to make the words, "evil whites," part of the past. "We were evil, we were racist and sexist, but now we have changed. We can become part of Babylon if we are allowed another chance. Please, Mr. Liberal, please, Mr. Negro, won't you allow me to crawl at your feet in the new Babylon?"

"For a time," say the Babylonians; and under their breaths, "But when the time is right we will kill you."

The white grazer has been betrayed by the white intelligentsia, who have foisted their ignorance on him. "Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart." That's what universal suffrage and democracy has brought upon us. The peasant is just as blind as the intellectual because he too has blinders on his heart. A man is not a man until he can love in spite of doom, in spite of the scorn and hatred of the world. Hamlet finally became Hamlet the Dane when he leaped into Ophelia's grave declaring his love for her: "This is I, Hamlet the Dane!.. I lov'd Ophelia."

And so did Christ love us. He was and is the inspiration for all true heroism. He faced scorn and derision for His loved ones and He continues to love them in spite of doom. A passion united to His passion cannot be defeated. But such a passion cannot be feigned. It must come from a heart that truly loves. That is what separates the modern European from the antique European. The antique European was a man who loved much. He didn't love an abstract, generic people of an indeterminate race. He loved his own people. And he didn't love an abstract God — he loved the Man of Sorrows. The Scriptures speak of a God whose love passeth all understanding. The modern theologians disagree. They worship a God of limited powers with a limited capacity for love. He bids us, according to the liberals, save our small quota of love for strangers outside our own race. To them all our love is due. Why? Because, we are told, "They alone are natural, they alone are holy: in the name of the abstracted intellect, the sacred negro, and the ghostly looking man in the white lab coat, amen." The bargain which the liberals offer the white man is this: "If you renounce your race and your God, we will permit you to live a kind of gypsy existence on the fringes of Liberaldom. But you must renounce your race and your faith."

Even if the white man accepted such a bargain, the liberal and the colored barbarians would not hold to their part of the bargain, because neither the liberal nor the colored barbarian can ever sup full of horrors. Their regime is built on lies, so it must be artificially maintained by terror and blood. The mere existence of the white man, even if he complies with all the dictates of Liberaldom, is a sign of contradiction to the liberals. Whiteness reminds the liberal of a people and a God that he wants no part of: "Remind me not of my end," the liberal says in the blindness of his heart. Is it possible to destroy every reminder of Him by destroying His people? That is the liberal's desire. But it is not my desire, nor is it the desire of any European who is still a European. I don't believe that ten million liberals and an infinity of colored barbarians are ultimately a match for European hearts that truly love. It might seem unrealistic, the notion that a few who love much can defeat many, but isn't the unadulterated Christian faith based on such an unrealistic and "absurd" premise? Christ was not even many; He was one. And the history of the European people, during the Christian era, is full of examples of a faithful few conquering a multitude of Satan's minions: King Alfred vs. the Danes, Charles Martel vs. the Moslems, Havelock vs. the Indian hordes, the British at Rorke's Drift vs. the Zulus, and Christian Europeans against the world. "By the Cross We Conquer," is true for us as individuals in our war with the devil, and it is true for us as a people. When "By the Cross We Conquer," is written in our hearts, we are an invincible people. Fairy tale Europe, where the undiverse few conquer the diversified many, is sacred Europe, and we few will champion that Europe against all the world. +

That Which is Essential

October 13, 2012

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Negro worship, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Trollope, Samuel Taylor Coleridge



"O, happy living things! No tongue
Their beauty might declare:
A spring of love gushed from my heart,
And I blessed them unaware:
Sure my kind saint took pity on me,
And I blessed them unawares.
"The selfsame moment I could pray:
And from my neck so free
The Albatross fell off, and sank
Like lead into the sea."

A New Zealand government official recently pronounced that the New Zealand government was "totally committed" to a more "diverse" New Zealand. In the state of Maine a group of activists representing Somalian immigrants threatened to sue when a government official suggested that the Somalians needed to adjust to the existing culture of their new country. In that once blessed plot of earth called England, a British MP declared that it would be necessary to build four new cities about the size of London in order to make room for the new colored arrivals, who somehow are considered essential to Britain's existence. Not to be outdone by insane negro-loving liberals, a Mexican activist group demanded that the words "illegal immigrants" be abandoned because (isn't it obvious?) the use of the word "illegal" is "racist." It doesn't matter what formerly European nation we go to, we always hear the same refrain: "We must become diverse," which means, "We must destroy the white race."

The great movement toward diversity is called progress. But why is it called progress? To what are we progressing? We are progressing toward a perfect world — though no one knows exactly when we will arrive there. What will the perfect world be like? We never hear anything definite from the utopians. All we know is that there will be no white people in the new world and there will be no Christ in the new world. This is acknowledged and applauded by the liberals and denied by the Christian atheists, who insist that what is going on in European countries is the inclusion of the colored races, not the destruction of the white race. What about the absence of Christ in the new world order? The Christian atheists also deny that such will be the case. "We are simply purifying the Faith by making it less European and more inclusive. A faith, like a nation, must be inclusive if it is to survive."

The Christian atheists should not be allowed to get away with such outright lies. How can capitulation to a cabal of merciless liberals and bloodthirsty barbarians of color be called a "purification" of the Christian faith? And how can we have any touchstone of reality if we deny all of our acquired wisdom about the nature of God and man, derived from our deepest intuitions about things spiritual, for a new rationalist faith in intellectual vapor? The answer to that question can be seen on the faces of frightened, lost white people who have allowed their racial identities and their faith to be diversified.

I recently saw a video on YouTube put out by a group of young French men and women, who called themselves "Generation Identitaire." Their heartfelt declaration of war against the diversifying powers-that-be was quite moving. They no longer shall be rootless and without an identity; they will be white and French was the thrust of their declaration. But let me insert an old man's warning: There is no such thing as a white identity that denies, ignores, or skirts around the white man's faith in Christ. Beneath the outward bravado of the pagan nationalists I see spiritual surrender in their souls. They have sided with the liberals on the central issue: "Did Christ rise from the dead?" And they have sided with the Christian atheists by conceding that whoever wears the collar or cassock has the right to define Christianity. Hence, when a clergyman says Christianity means diversity, the young pagans reject Christianity despite the fact that their people, the white Europeans when they were Christian, rejected diversity in the name of Christ. There is nothing new about the deification of youth. That is as old as paganism. And there is nothing new about the assertion that we should be proud of our race because our race, biologically speaking, is smarter and stronger than other races. That too is pagan. What the Christian European, who is now rejected by the liberal and the neo-pagan, brought into the darkness of paganism was a belief that youth was a thing of the spirit, not a product of biology; nor was skin color primarily a biological entity; it too belonged in the realm of the spirit. If our whiteness is not of the spirit, an external sign of our inmost soul, why should we desire to fight for it? And if youth is not of the spirit, if it is merely a transitory biological strength to be passed from one generation of apes to the next generation of apes, then of what use is the sweet bird of youth? It is an evil phantom masquerading as the Messiah.

Abstract theories about race and religion, whether they come from the right or the left, will always lead us away from our people and our God. We are men, as Burke so eloquently put it, who derive our knowledge of existence from our "untaught feelings" about the nature of existence. If we forsake those untaught feelings for modern research and utopian science then we will have only a gypsy's faith in that diversified ant heap called nature.

When I read about such groups as the French Identitaire, I realize that we, the European people, have left the Christian hangover era behind. We no longer have any of the ethical remnants of Christianity left in the formerly Christian nations. Compassion and mercy are dead. There is only the technological barbarism of the liberals and the traditional barbarism of the colored tribes left. And white youths who quite rightly recoil at such barbarism have no knowledge of or feeling for the European culture of the past which was a culture diametrically opposed to the twin barbarian cultures of modern Europe. Those of us who have not lost sight of antique Europe and the God who presided over it must keep the bridge to that sacred past clear of liberals and colored barbarians. We do this for two reasons. First, our survival depends on keeping the bridge to the past secure. And secondly, there will always be some who will see beyond liberalism, beyond neo-paganism, to the Heart of Hearts. The bridge must stay clear so that those loving hearts can find their way home.

The Europeans' apostasy parallels the apostasy of the ancient Hebrews. In a multitude of different guises the modern European worships nature. He has returned to Baal. The negro will always be at the center of such worship because he is the most 'natural'; he is the embodiment of all that is primitive, dark, and deadly. So long as we accept the hideous lie that negro worship is an upward movement, we will continue to spiral ever deeper into hell.

In what is certainly Anthony Trollope's best short story, "The Parson's Daughter of Oxney Colne," we read of the daughter of a country parson in the parish of Oxney Colne. The young woman is beautiful and virtuous, but she is also poor. A rich suitor comes along and falls in love with the young heroine's outward beauty. To her inner beauty, he is indifferent because he is incapable of comprehending what inner beauty is. The couple get engaged, but the parson's daughter begins to suspect that she is not appreciated for what she feels to be essential – her soul.

'But I should wish to make you think how great is the leap in the world which you are about to take.' Then again they walked on for many steps before she answered him.

'Tell me, then, John,' she said, when she had sufficiently considered what words she would speak;—and as she spoke a dark bright colour suffused her face, and her eyes flashed almost with anger. 'What leap do you mean? Do you mean a leap upwards?'

'Well, yes; I hope it will be so.'

'In one sense, certainly, it would be a leap upwards. To be the wife of the man I loved; to have the privilege of holding his happiness in my hand; to know that I was his own—the companion whom he had chosen out of all the world—that would, indeed, be a leap upward; a leap almost to heaven, if all that were so. But if you mean upwards in any other sense—'

'I was thinking of the social scale.'

'Then, Captain Broughton, your thoughts were doing me dishonour.'

'Doing you dishonour!'

'Yes, doing me dishonour. That your father is, in the world's esteem, a greater man than mine is doubtless true enough. That you, as a man, are richer than I am as a woman is doubtless also true. But you dishonour me, and yourself also, if these things can weigh with you now.'

'Patience,—I think you can hardly know what words you are saying to me.'

'Pardon me, but I think I do. Nothing that you can give me—no gifts of that description—can weigh aught against that which I am giving you. If you had all the wealth and rank of the greatest lord in the land, it would count as nothing in such a scale. If—as I have not doubted—if in return for my heart you have given me yours, then—then—then, you have paid me fully. But when gifts such as those are going, nothing else can count even as a make-weight.'

'I do not quite understand you,' he answered, after a pause. 'I fear you are a little high-flown.' And then, while the evening was still early, they walked back to the parsonage almost without another word.

In the Gospels there are men such as Philip the apostle who immediately see there is something special about Jesus. When Nathaniel asks him, "Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth?", Philip answers, "Come and see." In contrast, there are men such as Caiaphas who see nothing extraordinary about Christ because of their moral blindness. This is what we are up against in modern Europe. The difference between Christian Europe and Babylonian Europe is clear to those who do not have blinders on their hearts. The morally blind Caiaphases are determined to destroy the European people by blending them into the impersonal mass of humanity that constitutes modern Babylon.

The Europeans have been to the mountain and have stood on holy ground. And they have stood on holy ground because they embraced the little human things that lead us to God. St. Paul is the greatest of all theologians because his epistles are addressed to small groups of individual human beings. All transcendent thought comes from a concern for particular human beings. Shakespeare's "simple" stories take us to the heights and depths because Shakespeare is concerned with the human heart, not with theories about humanity. And likewise the incomparable Burke; his letters are irreplaceable works of genius because he wrote them from his heart, without moral blinders on, to stir the hearts of other human beings who still had hearts that lived.

Modern Europeans have contracted a brain fever that has gotten into their blood. Until that fever breaks, there is nothing that can be done with them. They will continue to worship the negro and try to appease the lords of Liberaldom. But if that fever should finally break! It would be like water released from a gigantic dam. All of Liberaldom would be washed away. Do we know the day and the hour of that great cleansing? Of course we don't, because the human heart and God's grace are mysteries. But when the European's fever breaks, the moral blinders will be removed from his heart, and he will dream dreams and see visions again of a babe in a manger and a Man of Sorrows. +

Upon the Heath

October 20, 2012

Categories: Antique Christianity, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Hippolyte Taine



Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear
Your favours nor your hate. – Banquo

Though it seems obvious to an antique European that the modern Europeans have replaced Christianity with negro worship, it is not so obvious to the modern European. He has been taken in hook, line, and sinker by Satan's shell game. Once the white man allowed Satan to make Christianity a propositional faith, the road was clear for negro worship. Halfway-house Christians become indignant when you tell them that they too, despite their professed Christianity, are members of the liberals' negro worshipping cult. The confusion lies in the halfway-house Christians' failure to understand the nature of an institutionalized state religion. In such a religion there will always be the zealous devotees, who believe with all their heart, mind, and soul, the lukewarm devotees, the practical devotees – "it's best to go along with the powers that be" – and the sincere, but non-fanatical devotees. The zealots set the tone for the rest of the devotees – sincere, practical and indifferent. It is their rules, the zealots', which must be adhered to.

Chris "The Tingler" Matthews, who says he "tingles" from head to toe when Obama speaks, is an example of a negro-worshipping zealot. He was trained by Jesuits, of which he is inordinately proud considering his hostility towards Christianity, but has retained nothing of the faith the Jesuits taught him except a belief in the infallibility of human reason. Matthews' tingling admiration for everything The Obama says and does, and his unwillingness to speak ill of any black man no matter what his crime, are proof of Taine's assertion about the inability of reason to control the passions of our hearts:

In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for, if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet...

Of course Matthews is not wrong because he has passions, he is wrong because his passion is for the negro rather than Christ, for negro-worshipping America rather than Christian Europe. Men must have a faith they can feel passionate about. The upper echelon of liberals has been able to impose their passionate faith in the negro on the less intense, but pliable (because they are without a passionate faith) rank and file Europeans. The Christian church men have joined the liberals and excused their apostasy with the great lie: "The colored people will pick up the mantle of Christianity discarded by the Europeans." Oh really? Is that happening in Africa? In China? In Mexico? The colored people have returned to their heathen faiths, which they only superficially left to appease white people, while the Europeans have "progressed" to utopia, which resembles, in all its particulars, the subterranean dwelling that is not supposed to exist except in the discarded faith of the antique Europeans.

In the old Christian faith, the faithful were enjoined to hate the devil and all of his works. So too in the negro-worshipping faith are the faithful enjoined to hate the devil and all his works. But in the new faith it is the white man who is the devil. It is not enough to love the sacred negro; you must hate the devil, the white man. This new faith puts the Christian clergyman in a paradoxical position. Christianity has always been a European phenomenon; its only sincere practitioners were to be found in Europe and the countries settled by Europeans. So it would seem to be in the self-interest of the Christian clergyman, and in the interest of the Christian churches, that white influence and white dominance should be spread to all the regions of the earth. But such is not the case. The Christian clergymen work diligently to rid the world of the white man. How do we explain this paradox? One line from Hamlet explains the white hating clergymen: "things mortal move them not at all..." The European clergymen despise all things human. They consider themselves as the Illuminati, or the enlightened ones, who receive and dispense the esoteric knowledge necessary for "enlightenment." The people who built a culture, a truly human culture, based on their love for the God-Man, are despised by the Illuminati, because anything that stinks of humanity is an anathema to the enlightened members of the clerical caste.

Years and years of compromise with paganism have brought the Europeans to this inhuman pass. Now, as in all "enlightened" religious systems, the basest forms of race-mixing and sexual perversions are permitted as part of the religious ritual. And race-mixing is not just permitted, it is a holy rite. So too is sodomy, becoming, in the citadels of once Christian nations, a holy rite. The negro, the sign and symbol of racial and sexual Babylon, will always be exalted in the new esoteric religion so that savagery and inhumanity will thrive under the all-knowing and all-seeing eye of the Illuminati.

That negro worship is the new faith of the Christian Illuminati seems to be self-evident, yet the mere suggestion that such is the case, that the modern Christian worships the negro instead of Christ, is guaranteed to bring scorn, derision, and punitive action down upon the suggester. Of course the hysterical reaction one gets when pointing out the true religion of the modern white man merely proves what we already know. The liberals will respond with fire and sword when their faith is challenged.

Although the church men spawned liberalism by emptying their churches of the human element – the European people and the God-Man – it is doubtful that the secular liberals will ultimately allow the churches to survive, because after clearing the ground for liberalism the Christian Illuminati have always lagged slightly behind the secular liberals. They embraced racial Babylon and then sexual Babylon after the secular liberals led the way. This could, despite their pathetic attempt to catch up to the secular liberals, leave the church men out in the cold when the kingdom of hell on earth is established. Doesn't the Book of Revelation speak of a war between the secular heathens and the apostatized church men, with the former defeating the latter?

And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

Possibly that is just wishful thinking on my part, wanting to see the apostate clergymen hoisted on their own petards, but I have observed, in my lifetime, the inability of even the most liberal of "Christian" clergymen to really please the mad-dog liberals. The mad-doggians still mistrust the apostates no matter how ardently and devoutly the apostate clergymen spout their liberal pieties and sing their paens to the sacred negro. Their dilemma is much like Buckingham's dilemma in Shakespeare's Richard III. After doing every evil under the sun in compliance with Richard's orders, Buckingham grows "circumspect" and balks at killing Edward's young sons, the true heirs of the throne. He is killed because he wanted to be evil only to a certain point and then stop. But there is no stopping on the slippery slope that leads to Babylon. Once the Christian clergymen accepted racial Babylon, they had to go on and accept sexual Babylon and the destruction of the only people who stood in the way of racial and sexual Babylon.

What I said of Tony Blair is true of The Tingler. If Chris Matthews was one isolated mad man, we could lament over his personal tragedy, but we could ignore him as an isolated mad man. But The Tingler is not one isolated mad man, he represents Satan's legions marching triumphant over the ruins of Christian Europe. What Chris Matthews represents is a tragedy of Shakespearean proportions. Macbeth and Banquo both stood on the heath and confronted the witches. Each man made a fateful choice. Macbeth chose to cast his lot with Satan, and Banquo chose Christ. European liberals, embodied by The Tingler, have made their fateful choice on the heath, and they, like Macbeth, have chosen Satan. Matthews' heart is hardened toward the millions of infants slaughtered in the charnel houses of Babylon, but his heart bleeds if one word of criticism is leveled at the black barbarian ruler of Babylon. Matthews' face is truly the face of evil in all its banal, insidious, immoral superficiality. All such moral reprobates always end up contemplating a bloodstained world of their own making that resembles a tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing.

A people with an upper crust of moral pariahs such as Chris Matthews ruling over them are a people that have lost their collective soul. There is no spiritual center to such people; they will be blown along by the satanic winds of change from one perversion to another. What would it take for the European people to reclaim their soul? They need to see with their hearts. They need to see a Europe that was, despite all her imperfections (which I could catalog for you better than any of her liberal detractors), consecrated to His sacred heart, not in some formal ceremony, but in the daily lives of her people who said with one voice, "Yes, we know that Man, in all His divinity and in all His humanity." It is no small thing to have a people before us who had intimate knowledge of the living God. It is something more precious than gold, and certainly more precious than the esoteric knowledge of the liberals who bid us abandon our European past for a future where we can worship the negro and hate the Christian Europeans.

All the forces of Liberaldom, which are the forces of hell, have gathered together to condemn the white European. His doom has been pronounced and the sentence is irrevocable. But why should the European accept Satan's death sentence? Why can't I, or any European with a European heart, go and stand upon the same heath where Macbeth and the Liberal Europeans sold their souls to the devil? And why can't I, and those other faithful Europeans, stand with Banquo and hurl our defiance at Satan and his liberal minions? No doom is irrevocable in the realm of the spirit. And such a realm is our Europe; it's where our people and our God reside. If we seem to be bereft of God and without a people, it is because we have not had the courage to seek out the European realm of existence, where He is worshipped in spirit and in truth. If we hate where we should hate, the liberals and all their works, we will love the people and the God whom we should love.

It is time to renew the covenant; Christ will never forsake His people, and we few, we Europeans, will never forsake Him. We can be part of the New Babylon, in which liberals tingle from head to toe at every word spoken by their black barbarian gods. Or we can be part of a European world that was forged by hearts of fire who saw the risen Lord. It shouldn't be a hard choice to make. +

My People

October 27, 2012

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Christ the Hero, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: G. M. Trevelyan, Thomas Nelson Page, Walter Scott



When the tempest 's at the loudest,
On its gale the eagle rides;
When the ocean rolls the proudest,
Through the foam the sea-bird glides—
All the rage of wind and sea
Is subdued by constancy.

-Scott

I recently read about the white bus driver in Kansas City who was sucker punched by a black 'youth' for no other reason than the fact that he was white. And the liberals' reaction? The bus driver's whiteness was a provocation to the black youth whose people had been "brought over to this country in chains." The story brought back memories of a similar incident some 35 years ago. I was taking a class at the local university with a very liberal professor (aren't they all) who had never actually known any blacks 'up close and personal.' His had been a sheltered life in that regard. This sheltered liberal decided that he was going to get in touch with 'the people,' so he sold his car and began to take public transportation to and from the University. One day, while using public transportation, a large negro punched the mild-mannered professor in the stomach while screaming, "My people were brought over here in chains!" And much to the liberal professor's horror, none of his liberal colleagues at the University were outraged at what he thought was an outrage. "You must understand their rage," and "You shouldn't condemn a whole race" – he hadn't condemned a whole race – "for one bad apple." Now, the liberal professor did not become a born-again white man in the twinkling of an eye, but that incident, along with his close-up observances of negroes at work and play, did turn a very liberal professor into a white man who believed in segregation and white self-defense. Unfortunately, such conversions are rare.

Most liberals cling to their faith in their negro gods no matter what the cost. Chris "The Tingler" Matthews is always a useful example. After the negro-instituted hell in the New Orleans Superdome, the Tingler was outraged, but not by the black murderers and rapists. He was outraged by whites in the neighboring towns who defended their lives and property with loaded shotguns. From the Tingler's standpoint the whites who defended themselves against the black savages were blasphemers; they dared to defy the Tingler's black gods.

Of course the professor punched in the stomach, the bus driver sucker-punched in the face, and the bloody black atrocities in the New Orleans Superdome can all be excused, and they are excused, with the usual liberal blather: "They are just isolated incidents," or, "You must understand their rage." But the non-liberal white knows the incidents are not isolated incidents; they are small samples of the ongoing war, aided and abetted by the liberals, of the black against the white. It's a particularly gruesome war because whites seem unwilling to defend themselves; hence, the war is more a series of massacres than a series of battles. But why won't the white man defend himself against the onslaught of the colored barbarians? Why does the white man lack the self-preservation instinct that all other races seem to possess? The neo-pagans tell us it is because Christianity destroys a man's instinct to defend his race. But if that was so, the Christians of the South during the 1800's would have simply surrendered to the North. Instead we saw in those Christians, before and after the war, an unprecedented example of a people determined to preserve their race:

It is charged that the written law is not always fully and freely observed at the South in matters relating to the exercise of the elective franchise. The defence is not so much a denial of the charge as it is a confession and avoidance. To the accusation it is replied that the written law, when subverted at all, is so subverted only in obedience to a higher law founded on the instinct of self-protection and self-preservation.

Those sentiments, expressed by America's most Southern and most Christian writer, Thomas Nelson Page, were the sentiments of the white Christian people of the south. So the preservation of one's race is absolutely in keeping with the highest tenets of the Christian faith. We must look elsewhere to find the reason for the white man's suicidal rush for the abyss.

The 'elsewhere' lies in the great temptation that Satan offered to Adam and Eve. He made fun of their provincialism and tempted them to renounce their ties to a personal God for an abstract knowledge of the workings of impersonal nature. Throughout the white man's history, which is the only history that need concern us, the conflict has been one of provincialism vs. universalism. When universalism holds sway the people lose contact with the living God and go whoring after nature gods of their own devising. The Sophoclean, provincial element of the Greek culture was reaching out to a personal God above the gods, but the natural, cosmic, universal faith of Socrates and Plato defeated the movement toward a personal God above nature. Likewise the ancient Hebrews. When they returned to Baal and the other universalist gods of nature, they lost contact with the true God.

The first European Christians were devotees of the hero-gods of the North such as Woden and Thor. Their heroes were racial heroes, men like Siegfried and Beowulf. Their conversion to Christianity was not forced on them at sword point; they saw, in Christ, a God who was superior to their gods by virtue of His divine charity, and they saw in Christ's humanity a hero God who was more humane than their heroes.

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself. –G. M. Trevelyan in History of England, Vol. One

Of course, the heroic, bardic Christianity was bound to come into conflict with Roman universalism. It was the Welsh Christians who first felt the sting of Roman universalism. They told Rome that they were going to maintain their provincialism:

"Be it known to you, that we consider it our duty to obey and submit to the church of God, to the pope of Rome, and to every good Christian—to love them in every situation and in all circumstances, and to assist all both by word and deed, in becoming children of the Lord. We know of no other obedience to him you call pope, or father; and this we are prepared to render to him and to every Christian for ever. Beyond this, we are subject to the archbishop of Caerleon, who is a guide and an overseer, under God, to direct and keep us on in the spiritual path."

The result of the Welsh Christians' stubborn provincialism was the massacre of the Welsh Monks of Bangor:

Bangor! O'er the murder wail!
Long thy ruins told the tale,
Shatter'd towers and broken arch
Long recall'd the woeful march:
On thy shrine no tapers burn,
Never shall they priests return:
The pilgrim sighs, and sings for thee,
O miserere, Domine!

-Walter Scott

What does the massacre of Welsh monks by Saxon pagans have to do with the negro worship of 2012? It has everything to do with it. The universalist Roman "Christians," despite the fact that the Welsh were their fellow Christians, encouraged and countenanced the massacre in order to punish the Welsh Christians' refusal to recognize the universalist faith of Rome. (1) The Saxons, many years later, when they were Christian, suffered the same fate as the Welsh Monks of Bangor. Universalist Rome sanctioned the Norman invasion of the provincial Saxons. And on it goes throughout the Christian centuries of Europe. Luther rebelled against a universalist system that had no room for the babe in the manager and the man of sorrows, but that initial revolt simply resulted in more universalist systems designed to eradicate every vestige of provincial Christianity.

Burke spoke of the same forces at work in the French Revolution. The universalists were willing to shed rivers of blood for the good of mankind, but is it ever for the good of mankind when an elite hierarchy, dedicated to an abstract concept of the good, a concept of their own creation, destroy their own people? The modern liberals are following the same path of all universalist lovers of mankind; they are trying to extinguish the light that emanates from a provincial people with faith in the living God so that their perfect, utopian system can survive and save mankind. And, as is always the case with the universalists, mankind consists only of those they deem worthy of living in utopia. Translated to the contemporary European countries, that means that negroes are sacred, for they are the most natural, and therefore the most fully human, of all the creatures that walk the earth. When the liberals "help" the negroes, they are serving a universal mankind of their own creation. The extent to which a white European buys into a universal, propositional faith will determine the extent to which he is willing to go to in order to defend his people against the onslaught of the devil and his minions. If he embraces universalism, he will consider the negro his god, and he will not defend his race. If he rejects universalism for the provincial hearth fires of the European people, he will defend his race against all the world.

Since universal, utopian systems, whether they profess to serve God or profess to serve mankind, are not connected to the living God, Jesus Christ, there is no faith, no hope and no charity in the cultures emanating from such systems. So what possesses people to create such inhumane systems devoid of God's grace? The enemy of mankind possesses them. He seduces them with the old temptation "Ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil." The great lie still corrupts and corrodes man's eternal jewel, his soul.

Nothing that is of the spirit can live in the soul-dead world of diversified, universal Babylon. Only in the provincial, what the liberals would call racist, Europe of the antique Europeans is there a place for that charity of honor and the love that passeth all understanding. Burke was bold enough to "cherish" his prejudices because they stemmed from a blood faith in a provincial God born in a stable in Bethlehem. And Ratty loved his European river for the same reason: "By it and with it and on it and in it."

For many years the universalists have been feeding off the remnants of provincial Europe, because there is no human sustenance in utopian Europe. But as they consume what is left of the provincial, Christian, European harvest they will come face to face with a world of their own making, a world devoid of all mercy, all charity, all hope, and all faith, except for a desperate faith in nature and nature's god, the negro. The ethos of this new world, a fusion of utopian liberalism and paganism, was articulated many years ago by the Russian revolutionary and "lover of humanity," Bakunin: "All tender and gentle feelings of kinship, friendship, love, gratitude and even honor itself should be choked off in the revolutionary's breast by the single cold passion of his revolutionary task." And what is the revolutionary's task? To destroy God by destroying every last remnant of His people. We too, the Europeans, have a task: to be true to our instincts, our people, and our God. +

(1) I don't care whether someone is called venerable, saintly, or devout; if he betrays his own people to the barbarian hordes, because he is loyal to an abstract savage god of his own creation, he is not Christian. He is Satan's own! This was the "venerable" Bede's retrospective on the massacre at Bangor:

It is said that of the monks who had come to pray about twelve hundred perished in this battle, and only fifty escaped by flight. Brocmail and his men took to their heels at the first assault, leaving those whom they should have protected unarmed and exposed to the sword-strokes of the enemy. Thus, long after his death, was fulfilled Bishop Augustine's prophecy that the faithless Britons, who had rejected the offer of eternal salvation, would incur the punishment of temporal destruction.

The Jacobins who consigned all the French aristocrats in Haiti to the less-than-tender mercies of black savages, and our modern liberals who excuse every black atrocity with, "You must understand their rage," are cut from the same cold, heartless, universalist cloth as Bede. I've had my fill of such creatures.

Only the provincial Christian is a man to be admired and emulated. Thomas Nelson Page describes such a man much better than I can: "He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged and unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart – a Goth." The most noticeable thing about the un-Goth-like modern white man is his absence of heart.

Reclaiming Our Spiritual Stronghold

November 3, 2012

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Minnie Louise Haskins, W. S. Gwynne Williams



I am dreaming of the mountains of my home,
Of the mountains where in childhood I would roam.
I have dwelt 'neath summer skies,
Where the summer never dies,
But my heart is in the mountains of my home.

I can see the little homestead on the hill;
I can hear the magic music of the rill;
There is nothing to compare,
With the love that once was there,
In that lonely little homestead on the hill.

I can see the quiet churchyard down below,
Where the mountain breezes wander to and fro,
And when God my soul will keep,
It is there I want to sleep,
With those dear old folks that loved me long ago.

— W S Gwynne Williams

If ever a man was thrown to the wolves it was “Vinegar Joe” Stilwell, the U. S. general who was given the task of getting the Chinese troops during World War II in fighting shape to take on the Japanese. But Chiang Kai-shek did not want his troops to fight the Japanese. He wanted to keep his troops in reserve for the upcoming civil war with Mao Tse Tung and the communists. “Why can’t we just use American air power without using Chinese troops?” Chiang Kai-shek asked. Stilwell’s reply was that you could never, unless you simply wanted to bomb a nation into oblivion, dispense with your infantry, because it was the infantry that occupied the enemies’ territory. From their territorial strongholds, they launched their attacks from air, sea, and land. If you occupied the enemies’ territory, you took away their source of strength. Of course we know the final result. Vinegar Joe never got the cooperation of Chiang Kai-shek and Chiang Kai-shek’s refusal to give Stilwell enough troops to establish a stronghold against the Japanese was the reason for Chiang Kai-shek’s ultimate defeat in the civil war with the communists. Mao did establish strongholds against the Japanese and he used those strongholds after the war to launch his attacks against Chiang Kai-shek.

Is there a moral here? I think so. Our race is our spiritual stronghold. Within that stronghold are the mysterious human relationships that give us the wherewithal to fight the battle against principalities and powers. If you strip a man of his racial identity, you strip him of his soul. How can a man without a soul fight the good fight? He can’t; he can only surrender to the devil and his minions.

For over sixty years now there has been an unrelenting demand that the white man should give up his spiritual stronghold, his race, and melt into a soulless blob called humanity. And it is not just secular liberals who make such a demand, it is also the Christian clergy. They too demand that the white man renounce any special ties he might have to the white race. The ideological underpinning for the liberals’ and the clerics’ demand that the white man renounce his race are contradictory.

On the one hand the white man is told he must renounce his race because the white man’s past history shows that he is irredeemable. He has done nothing but evil in the past, and he will do nothing but evil in the future, should he be allowed to live into the future. His only hope for salvation is to worship the black man with all his heart, mind, and soul, and hope that the black man will have mercy on his poor benighted soul. Which, by the way, is a forlorn hope because the black man, unbeknownst to the liberals, is not really a god, nor does he have any concept of mercy. On the other hand is the contradiction. The white man is told by the liberals and the clerics that there is no such thing as race. Skin color has nothing to do with a man’s soul. “We are all, under the skin, the same.” Then by what right does the dynamic duo of liberals and clergy prattle on about the sanctity of the negro god and the evil of the white man? If there is no such thing as race, then there should be no such thing as negro worship, and there should be no such thing as the demonization of the white man. “We are all just human beings and we are all just wonderful.” But the liberals and their clerical brethren are playing both ends against the middle. The white man is an evil bogeyman and the black man is a benevolent god when the liberals and the clerics are eating their Manichean Cheerios, and the white man is part of a multi-colored blob when the dynamic liberal duo are in the mood to “teach the world to sing in perfect harmony.”

We’ve all had those Introductory Philosophy courses in which a smart aleck professor proves, by geometric logic, that we don’t really exist. The liberals have been giving a similar introductory course on Race, in which they prove that our whiteness is not part of our soul. Our response to the liberals, and – lest we forget them – the white-hating clergymen, should be passionate rage. Our race contains all that we value most: our kith, our kin, and our God. If we don’t believe that the spirit can become incarnate in a people, what happens to our faith in Christ? Our faith in our Creator is inseparable from our faith in our identity as a particular people of a determinate race. Why should we ever question that our whiteness is part of our soul? Our ancestors believed it to be true, and we know, in the deepest recesses of our heart, that it is true. Even the liberal knows, in some tiny corner of his wizened heart, that skin color is more than mere biology, which is why he feels the necessity to fight “racism.” He doesn’t want a resurgence of the white Europeans because he doesn’t want Christ to rule in his liberal, multiracial utopia. The race war is the European’s ultimate challenge. If he allows his whiteness to be demonized or harmonized into nothingness, he will be a man without a soul.

There is a direct correlation between the Europeans’ declining faith in the major tenets of Christianity and their declining faith in their distinctiveness as a race. How could it be otherwise? If Christ did not become man, and if He did not rise from the dead, it follows that human beings are mere biological entities without an animating spirit within them. What need is there then, to make distinctions between biological entities?

The Christian churches still stand, but they have made a pact with the devil. The devil put a scholar’s cap over his horns and a scientist’s lab coat over his body and walked in unmolested through the church door. And in the form of a scientist he is deferred to on every issue. Christ’s resurrection from the dead has become “problematic,” our own bodily resurrection through Christ has become a “quaint” notion, and the re-paganization of existence that Julian the Apostate dreamt of has taken place. The techno-barbarian white has joined with the black barbarian to build a world devoid of light. The unbought grace of life, nurtured in the small units of grace – our families and our people – has been destroyed. We have no spiritual stronghold, having allowed The Enemy to sever our ties to our own people. What is left to us? How should we then live? We should take back that which is ours. We can start the counter-revolution by refusing to accept demonization and by refusing to be harmonized into nothingness.

There is no one in the upcoming Presidential election who represents white people. Romney is the “let’s liquidate the European people at a slower rate” candidate, and as such I will vote for him. But there is something else at stake in the election. A Romney victory will indicate that a significant amount of white people are sick to death of being demonized. Now, being tired of the racist label is not the same thing as embracing the racist label, which is the point we want all white people to come to, but it will be significant if large numbers of whites ignore the liberals’ racist charge and vote white. My own informal surveys tell me, and I trust my informal polls more than the official polls, that true believers in the sacred negro are to be found in the universities and in their adjuncts, the churches and the media outlets. But the white hoi polloi have no great love for the negro. Unfortunately they have no great love for their own people either. They are lost souls; having been robbed of their identity, they are a seething cauldron of resentment. And they do resent being called racists when they are, unfortunately, not racist. They will root for white sports heroes or black sports heroes. But of course that’s not good enough for the liberals. They want all white athletes to disappear, leaving only a pantheon of black athletes to be petted and adored.

Nothing is written, our wills are free. We can utterly destroy ourselves if we want to, and that seems to be the course white people have chosen. However, there is such a thing as the grace of God. We seem so far from His grace at this point in our history, because we have cut ourselves off from the channels of grace, our kith and kin. But who can say what miracles might occur if just a few whites would seek His grace through the racial stronghold of the soul? It all sounds too fairy tale-ish? Yes, it does, but the entire history of the European people reads like a fairy tale to me, a really true fairy tale where the Hero fights His way right to the gates of hell, defeats the devil, and leads His people up from hell to that dear, dear land called Christian Europe.

The white man is still a long way from returning to his racial stronghold, which provides him with protection from the slings and arrows of the liberal and his colored allies. But there is a certain racial fatigue that is taking place in the white man. The liberals are far from infallible. They have played the race card so often that even the self-effacing, long suffering white everyman has grown disgusted. The hideous Bob Dylan asked, “How many years must a people exist before they’re allowed to be free?” We must ask, “How many times can you demonize my people before I become a Goth again?” The brain fever hasn’t left the white man; he still won’t banish the colored hordes from his homeland, but a certain disgust with the endless charges of racism might be the beginning of something wonderful, the end of negro-worshipping Liberaldom. I love the image of the melting snow in C. S. Lewis’s book *The Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe*. The first blade of grass that comes out from under the snow is significant; it means a thaw is beginning that will eventually result in the downfall of the wicked witch. Let us cherish every blade of grass that brings us one step closer to His green and pleasant Europe and one step further away from the liberals’ Babylonian kingdom of hell on earth.

The European people can no longer see God clearly because they have lost their spiritual stronghold, their race. When they regain that stronghold, they will be able to see through that dark glass to the Light of the world. “The people that have walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.”+

God Knows

*I said to the man who stood at the gate of the year,
‘Give me a light that I may tread safely into the unknown.’*

And he replied:

*‘Go into the darkness and put your hand into the hand of God. That shall be to you better than light and safer than a known way.’
So I went forth, and finding the Hand of God, trod gladly into the night. And He led me towards the hills and the breaking of day in the lone East.*

*So heart be still:
What need our little life,
Our human life to know,
If God hath comprehension?
In all the dizzy strife
Of things both high and low,
God hideth His intention.
God knows. His will
Is best. The stretch of years
Which wind ahead, so dim
To our imperfect vision,
Are clear to God. Our fears
Are premature; In Him,
All time hath full provision.
Then rest: until
God moves to lift the veil
From our impatient eyes,
When, as the sweeter features
Of Life’s stern face we hail,
Fair beyond all surmise
God’s thought around His creatures
Our minds shall fill.*

— Minnie Louise Haskins

To This Battlefield

November 10, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors



If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. –St. Paul

I have a cousin who is in despair over the Obama victory. His reaction – “It’s the end of everything” – is probably indicative of the reactions of many white people. I sympathize with my cousin and others like him. Obama’s victory is quite depressing. But would a Romney victory have reversed the colored tide that is sweeping over our country and turned Liberaldom back into Christendom? Hardly. Admittedly the defeat of Obama would have provided a momentary thrill, such as Donald Duck gets when he temporarily wins out over the chipmunks before his eventual defeat, but the negro-worshipping liberals would have still been in power during a Romney administration. We should use this election as a General uses his scouts during a war. We have found out some information about the enemy. The states with the smallest number of negroes that went for Obama, such as Maine and Vermont, have the highest concentrations of mad-dog liberals. This confirms previous information given to us by Edmund Burke and Anthony Jacob: liberalism is a disease caused by an abstraction from reality. Those whites who are the furthest removed from the real negro are the most likely to worship the noble savage negro. The old Civil War battle lines are still in place; southern whites who actually know blacks did not vote for The Obama.

My cousin’s despair is the result of his listening to the irresponsible 11th hour harangues of democracy-loving conservatives. For the past sixty years or so we have had to listen to conservatives telling us that, “The hour is late, this is our last chance, we must elect ____ or we will perish.” When a conservative bids us pin all our hopes on an election, what happens when that election is lost? Do we just curse God and die? We do if we follow the logic of the 11th hour conservatives. But the conservatives never follow their own logic. After losing an election they immediately start preparing for the next election. Even before Romney had officially lost, I heard two Fox news commentators asking themselves how Republicans could begin to get the Hispanic vote. Will the conservatives never learn? They are suffering from a spiritual malaise. They have made a god out of the democratic process. If all hope for a renewal of the European people depends on the Europeans’ ability to blend into a non-European democracy of races, then the European people are indeed doomed, because there is no hope for the European within the perimeters of democracy. But outside those perimeters is hope abundant. How many electoral defeats must take place before the white man breaks the chains of democracy?

When my prayers are not answered, I get angry with God. When the anger subsides I realize I have no right to be angry with God. “He knows,” as the poetess tells us, and I do not know. One needs to place one’s hand in the hand of God, which is often easier said than done. But in our better moments, in those white moments of the soul, we see with blinding sight, and we do place our hand in the hand of God, not because we ought to do it, but because we love and trust Him. I think the European’s infatuation with the democratic heresy stems from a shift in his attitude towards God. As a defense against the God who does not answer prayers to his satisfaction, the European has turned to the democratic version of the Watchmaker God. The Watchmaker God makes the world, winds it up in order to set it in motion, and then steps back, completely indifferent to the fate of the human beings who inhabit the Watchmaker’s world. The 17th century rationalists such as Voltaire were not the inventors of the Watchmaker God. The Sadducees and the Pharisees, and later St. Thomas Aquinas, all championed a theology in which a distant God set the world in motion and then stepped aside and let mortals fend for themselves. It’s a theology that allows a man to keep God as an idea while dispensing with Him when dealing with the nitty-gritty of practical, down-to-earth living in this world.

The seemingly great advantage of the Watchmaker system is that it puts a man in control of his own destiny and puts God in heaven, looking down on mortals and bestowing His blessing on their marvelous systems and then disappearing into the clouds until He is needed to bestow His blessing on a new, improved man-made system. Grace does not flow from God to man in the Watchmaker system, it flows from the system to man. And over time the system becomes all and all to man, while God becomes less and less, and even disappears altogether from some systems, such as the Communist system.

The great disadvantage of the Watchmaker system is that it cuts a man off from the living God and places him in the hands of a false god who will eventually fail him, as the great god democracy has failed the 11th hour conservative. Such a man now has no faith left from which to launch an attack on his enemies. His god, democracy, has left him naked to his enemies. Too many false Aslans render a man incapable of believing in the real Aslan.

It should be pointed out that the majority of white people in this country did not vote for The Obama. A significant minority did vote for him along with an overwhelming majority of colored people. What does that tell us? The barbarian hordes of color are the eternal enemies of white Europeans, and a large minority of white Europeans are irredeemable liberals who can only be dealt with on the battlefield; there can be no peaceful coexistence with such creatures. What about the majority of whites who did not vote for The Obama? Let me bring in one lone white man to stand in for those whites: In a small grocery store that I frequent there is a white man in his fifties who I’ve become quite chummy with over the last two years of shopping at his store. But it was only a few months ago that we got beyond small talk. He mentioned that one of his sons was about to become an eagle scout. He sounded a little tentative, worried that I might disapprove, so I told him that I thought the Boy Scouts organization should be applauded for their refusal to admit homosexuals. Upon hearing my opinion on homosexuals and the Boy Scouts, the mild-mannered grocer opened up on a whole host of topics. He desperately wanted The Obama to lose in order to “show our kids that America is still decent.” He also, regrettably, felt he had to couch his criticisms of The Obama with the usual apology: “I’m not racist, I just don’t like his policies.” Mr. Grocer would run a mile from me and possibly report me to the police if I told him my views on race, but I love the man; he is a white man. I wish he would realize, as I wish all such white men would realize, that his innate decency is unique to the white European and that it comes from the living God, not from the American way or the democratic process. But there it is. Our people will not fight outside the perimeters of democracy, so we must fight for them.

During the months preceding the election when some polls showed Romney leading, there were some not so veiled threats from liberals and blacks that they would not remain non-violent if The Obama lost the election. Those threats place me beyond ordinary anger, they fill me with an eternal fire of anger that can never be put out. Is there one single liberal or black barbarian who fears the wrath of the white man now that the Obama has won? No, there isn’t. The liberals and his colored allies must be made to fear the angry white man who will not sit back and passively accept his own and his peoples’ execution simply because of an election. “If democracy is harmful to the white man, democracy should die so that the white man can live,” should be the battle cry of the unadulterated and unmodernized white man. We cannot remain democratically non-violent in the face of this unrelenting war of extermination against our people. A young white male of my acquaintance told me that Obama’s re-election made him want to go out and mow down as many liberals as possible. The sentiment does him credit.

But I advised him not to waste his anger on indiscriminate violence. Be violent and bloody, yes, but let it count for something. If we take the democratic blinders from our hearts, God will tell us when and how to strike out against the liberals and their colored minions. We should never eschew violence nor should we make it a cure-all. There are many ways to destroy liberals so long as we break with democracy. The important thing is to take the democratic blinders off and let the grace of God do its work.

There is a creeping, crawling creature that we should specifically address in the wake of The Obama's reelection. This creature tells us that, "White people are decadent, the colored races will renew the Christian faith with their purity of soul and their natural and vital natures." If that is the case, how does Mr. "Sell Out My Own People" account for the fact that the majority of whites did not vote for The Obama, while the vast majority — 93% — of the natural, saint-like, colored tribesmen did vote for The Obama? Renewal will never come from the colored races, it will come from within the European people once they have cast off the creeping, crawling creatures and their mad-dog liberal brethren.

The only drama of any importance on the world stage is the drama of the European and his relationship with his God. All other non-European dramas only take on significance when they become part of the European drama. In theme and purpose the Europeans' journey mirrors the ancient Hebrews' journey. There are times when the European people reach out and touch the hand of God as depicted by Michelangelo on the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel. And there are times when the Europeans turn from God and plunge themselves and the rest of the world into darkness. At such times the devil rejoices and walks the earth with impunity. Obviously we are living in such times. Is The Obama the Anti-Christ and are these the end times? That's more than I know or anybody else knows. Would it make any difference if we did know? We are supposed to hate the devil and all his works. And negro-worshipping Liberaldom is clearly the work of the devil, so whether these are the end times and Obama is the anti-Christ or whether these are not the end times and Obama is just a nondescript little weasel, should not matter to us. Either way the Christ-bearing people must fight Satan and his minions. What is needful — and events like the re-election of the Obama keep us mindful of such things — is that we hold ourselves in a state of permanent warfare with the liberals and their colored allies. They love the devil and all his works, while we belong to the devil's antagonist, the Man of Sorrows. There shall always be a great divide between us, in this world and the next. Who among us would wish it otherwise?

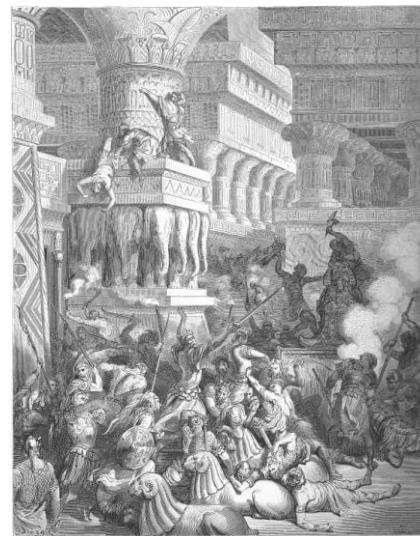
Some savvy political thinkers on the right tell me that the Obama victory will be good for white people because it will "wake them up" and make them vote for a real white candidate next election. I'm not that savvy; I'm a peasant at heart. All I see is that a white man with at least a modicum of the old Christian ethos in his soul lost an important election to a black weasel, who has become the sign and symbol of the liberals' satanic reign. That cannot be a good thing. But it should not be a reason for despair, because the true European does not place his hopes in the democratic process. The light of the world did not come into the world to make it safe for democracy. I place my hopes in the European hearth presided over by the King of Kings. +

Against Principalities and Powers

November 17, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Shakespeare



Ah, why should wrath be mute and fury dumb?
I am no baby, I, that with base prayers
I should repent the evils I have done.
Ten thousand worse than ever yet I did
Would I perform if I might have my will.
If one good deed in all my life I did,
I do repent it from my very soul.

– Aaron the Moor

It occurred to me while watching the liberals exult over the re-election of The Obama that here in America we have become the complete inverse of Christian Europe. The American republic is truly Satandom. An old Christian hymn describes Christians thronged around the Savior's throne. On the night of Obama's re-election we saw the spawns of Satan thronged around their little anointed black devil. And unfortunately the other European nations are rushing to become more American, which translates to more satanic. They too want to become the inverse of Christian Europe. When I was a young man, I had a hard time reconciling a belief in hell with a belief in a loving Savior. But as I got older and met more liberals up close and personal, I began to understand about hell. Christ cannot force our love. There are those so obdurate in their hatred of the light that God must reluctantly let them go where their hatred drives them to go. Will the liberals be happy once they get to hell? I doubt it, because they are not happy with the hell they have created here on earth. I know they exult over satanic triumphs like the re-election of Obama, but after their celebration they will go back to their sterile, empty, anesthetized lives and hate each other as much as they hate white, Christian Europeans. "See how they love one another," was said of the early Christians. My observations of the liberals reveal the inverse: "See how they hate one another." Do I pity them? Not while they are in power. I reserve my pity for my people who the liberals are attacking with the relentless fury of Satan, their master. When the liberals are locked up where they can't do any more harm, then I will pity them and attempt to ease their self-induced suffering, but until that time it would be inhumane to show sympathy to the devil's own who are persecuting my people.

This brings me to the victims of liberalism, the hated and vilified white people without whom there can be no civilization worthy of the name civilization. But first let me distinguish between depressed and profoundly depressed. The Obama re-election was depressing to me as candid photos of a fat man at a family reunion would be to the fat man. "I know I'm fat; do you have to shove a picture in my face to emphasize it?" I know I live in negro-worshipping Liberaldom, but I don't like to see vivid, obscene pictures of it. The profoundly depressed white people are more like people who thought they were in relative good health and then found out they had a terminal cancer. These people are in desperate need of consolation, and we live in Liberaldom where there is no consolation for suffering. Of course Christ is the hope of the hopeless, but who among us does not need human conduits to Christ? The great achievement – great in the satanic sense – of American liberals is that they have cut off all human conduits to God. The seventy-year-old woman who doesn't want to leave her house anymore because she might meet someone who voted for Obama, the mid-fiftyish women who thought that God simply wouldn't permit our nation to slide that far down the slippery slope, the young white male who wants to get a gun and start shooting liberals, the old man who yearns for an apocalyptic end of the world are all emblematic of the profound depression that has beset decent white people in the wake of the Obama victory. Can I, or any other antique European, be of some help to these suffering white people? Unfortunately not, because with the exception of the young white male, who I may be some comfort to, the decent whites are the prisoners of the liberal clergy. If I tell the catechism-Aquinas-pope-loving Catholic or the Bible-alone-without-any-human-conduit Protestant that there is strength and comfort in the European tradition and men such as Burke, who said, "If we do not hate where we should hate we will not love where we should love," and men such as Kipling — "When the Saxon began to hate" — they will simply stare vacantly and say that it is wrong to hate; their clergymen told them so. What can be done with such people? Prior to Obama's re-election, I would have said nothing could be done with such people. But I have noticed a slight change. The same people who twenty years ago dismissed the notion that liberals were spawns of Satan who worshipped the negro are now open to the idea. The unadulterated liberal sewage that is spilling out everywhere has had its effect. Whites who never said a bad word about negroes or liberals are now thinking, albeit with some lingering feelings of guilt, bad thoughts about negroes, Mexicans, and liberals. The thought is father to the deed, so let us fan those thoughts into a fire. ([L](#))

The fact that the liberals no longer care to sanitize their sewage shows us just how confident they are of their invulnerability. And for a time the liberals might seem invincible, but liberalism depends on institutionalized superficiality in order to survive. Liberals won't be able to keep every single European on their superficial level. When white men with European hearts start to fight for the deeply held faith of their European ancestors, Liberaldom will crumble. But we shouldn't wait for a majority of whites to agree with us before we act. That type of thinking belongs to the defeatist conservatives of the failed democratic era. In the new European era, which is really a return to an older era, the ethos of fairyland will prevail over the ethos of the democratic era. In the fairy tales, the hero ventures forth without a majority coalition and without consulting an expert in theology. And when he drives his sword through the heart of the evil entity, be it witch, dragon, wizard, or liberal, his people who seemed dead are restored to life. Just as Christ rose from the dead so can a hero consecrated to Christ reanimate his people who languish in a liberal-induced, deathlike sleep. The essential thing is to be an integral European, who has severed his ties to everything modern and liberal. Such a man will be truly free; he will be the master of his arm and the scourge of Liberaldom.

Mortals are not meant to be continually happy. This world is indeed a vale of tears. But we are not meant to be so profoundly depressed that we feel bereft of all spiritual sustenance. And that is the depression engendered by the triumph of Liberalism; white Europeans feel bereft of everything that makes life in this world bearable. Our love of the hearth fire where kith and kin dwell keeps us connected to the living God. This is why the attack on the Europeans' whiteness has been so unrelenting and vile. Within our racial home is our kith and kin – destroy that home and you destroy the Europeans' link to God. Liberals have replaced the European hearth with a satanic cauldron. They severed their connection to Christ in order to be connected, through negro worship, to Satan. The profound depression of the Europeans who do not want to be connected to Satan through Obama, is that they have been forbidden by their clergy to take sustenance from their racial hearth fire. So what is their plight? They are wanderers on the face of the earth. They can't fully accept the satanic reign of the negro-worshipping liberals, but they have no place to call home.

Come December a remnant band of Europeans will celebrate the birth of the God-man Jesus Christ, who took flesh and dwelt among us. But His birth is now viewed by liberals as significant and important only because it was an event that prepared the way for the worship of the negro, whose deification will be solemnized and celebrated on Jan. 20, not just by liberals in America but also by liberals throughout the European world. It's not possible to avoid this stark and somber reality. The Man of Sorrows has been given subordinate position to the gods of color. The liberals have institutionalized the worship of Baal. At the inaugural ball the modern Europeans will dance around the black idol Obama as the ancient Hebrews danced around their image of Baal. This celebration of all that is unholy should fill the Europeans with something akin to anger, only much greater than anger. It should, but it doesn't. Will there ever be a time when the persecuted white men will rise up and strike down the liberals and their colored gods? It doesn't seem possible at this moment in history, but history is full of surprises. The life of the spirit cannot be put in a rationalist box forever. There is no telling how many people might follow a remnant band of Europeans whose anger is beyond anger and whose ties to their race and the God of their race are indestructible.

For centuries European liberals have tried to condemn Christianity by presenting a certain type of Christian Phariseeism, depicted by Scott in Old Mortality, François Mauriac in Woman of the Pharisees, and Hawthorne in The Scarlet Letter as the real Christianity. They told us that they were the cure for such an unholy religion. But look at what they have given us: a satanic liberal Phariseeism that makes the older Christian Pharisees look gentle and benevolent in comparison. The liberals, in the name of their black gods, condemn the white race to eternal damnation. Nothing the white man can do will change the fact that he is, in the liberals' theology, irredeemable. And nothing the black god does can be wrong because he is god and what he does is always good. There is no goodness outside god, so when the black god kills, rapes, and pillages, then murder, rape, and pillaging are good. What about mercy, justice, and charity? Those concepts are alien to the black gods, so they must come from the white devils, which means they must be banished from the earth. "There shall be no justice, no mercy, and no charity in the new Babylon."

St. John gives us the hope to persevere in the face of the liberals' unholy crusade to destroy the white race. The Christian European living in Liberaldom is every bit the exile that St. John was on the island of Patmos. St. John conveys to us, the European remnant, the orders of our Lord and Savior, we are called upon to be steadfast: "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches." If we are content to sit at the foot of the throne of Satan's anointed one we are not listening to what the spirit hath said unto the churches. Christ, not The Obama, is the Europeans' bright and morning star. The profound depression of white people who did not vote for the Obama stems from their feeling of hopelessness in the midst of Liberaldom. But an internal vow to refuse to render homage to the heathen gods of Liberaldom is a life-giving and life-sustaining vow that will have a ripple effect throughout the mystical body of the church. The race war is a religious war. Once the white man sees that reality he will become a whole man again and he will gird up his loins and fight and conquer the principalities and powers of Liberaldom. +

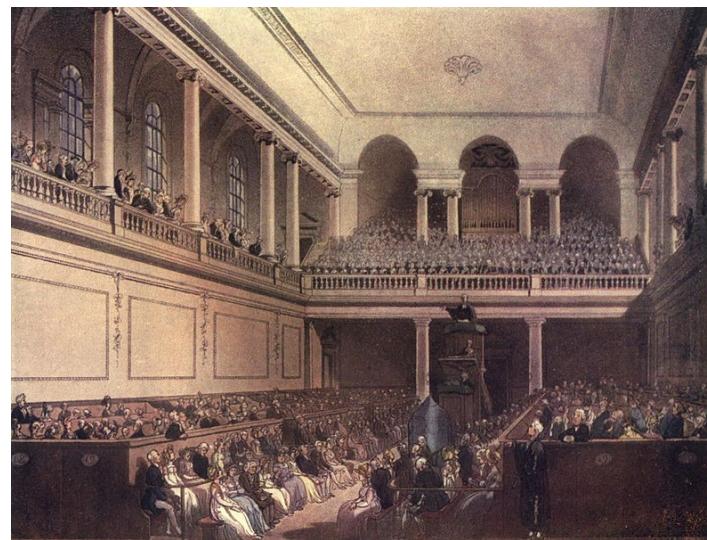
(1) Immediately after Obama's re-election while the liberals were exulting, I heard some very impolitic and correct responses from the usually timid white people who did not vote for the Obama. But then they talked to their clergymen, and they calmed down. "Mustn't be a fanatic," "Let's agree to differ; we are all God's people," blah blah blah. The tiny fire in their hearts was quickly squelched. Some day whites will proceed with the counter-revolution without the blessing of their clergymen.>

The Babylonian Captivity of the European People

November 24, 2012

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Dostoyevsky



Let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their yokes from us. —*Psalm 2:3*

It's obvious to all those who have eyes to see that the changing demographics (more negroes and Hispanics voting) render it virtually impossible for a white Republican male, such as Mitt Romney or Ronald Reagan, to win a Presidential election. It's not a case of running a more personable white candidate – Romney was quite personable and actually got a higher percentage of the white vote than Regan did some thirty years ago – it's a case of a third world invasion that white liberals welcomed and white conservatives were unwilling to oppose. The white conservatives have no chance of winning the blacks or the Hispanics over to their side nor do they have a ghost of a chance of converting the 35 – 40% liberal minority who always vote with the colored tribesmen. But we, the European remnant, cannot say as the old Scottish Jacobite said, "All that can be done has been done, and all's been done in vain." We cannot truthfully echo the fallen Jacobite's words because we have yet to hear from the non-democratic, non-diverse European. Thus far we have only seen pygmy-souled men, the men of the democratic era, on the world stage.

The European man has, like Odysseus, been waiting in the wings to see if any of the evil suitors could string and shoot the great bow. He watched as democratic man failed. And he saw, much to his disgust, clerical man go over to the suitors. Now it is his time. He must string the bow, draw it, and purge his racial stronghold of the liberals and colored tribesmen who have defiled it. It's not the work of a day, but it is time for Europeans to begin the reconquest of their European homeland. The enemy is always the most vulnerable when he is in the midst of his victory celebration.

I don't know the exact date that each and every European government decided to turn their people over to the colored hordes, but every European government has made such a choice. In European America the choice was made in 1965. That's when Ted Kennedy's immigration bill which changed the non-white immigration quotas from 90% European to 90% non-European was passed. It would be easy to just blame our present debacle on Ted Kennedy: "He was a sneaky, conniving degenerate." Yes, he was, but why did Republican and Democrat members of the Senate and Congress go along with Teddy? Because it was popular with the American people? That is ludicrous. If such a bill had been put before the American people, it would have been voted down. And why did every European nation pass bills similar to degenerate Teddy's bill? We are faced with the incontestable fact that all of the ruling oligarchies in the European nations started, in the latter half of the 20th century, to replace their own white people with black, brown, red, and yellow people from foreign lands.

We don't have to look far to see the reason why the ruling oligarchs of every white nation decided to betray their own people. Just look at the statements of the Catholic popes and the leaders of the evangelical churches on the subject of colored immigration, be it legal or illegal. John Paul II was representative of all the mainstream churches. He maintained that faith in Christ mandated that white people should open up their hearts, their borders, and their homes to the colored people of the world. Just after the election I saw a cross-section of evangelical "Christians" who had voted for Obama joining together to demand unrestricted colored immigration. But no South African white was eligible. Apparently God, in the liberals' eyes, is a "some are more equal than others" type of God.

When I was younger I used to call the white-hating Christians well-meaning but misguided. That is nonsense. They are not well-meaning. They hate their own people and wish to see them exterminated. And their desire to eliminate their own people stems from their hatred of God. They are incensed with God for failing to follow any of their rules for the proper ordering of existence, so they strike out at God by attacking His people. Dostoevsky depicted this drama of Christian atheism so well in the Grand Inquisitor scene of *The Brothers Karamazov*. The secret of the Grand Inquisitor was that he hated God for not ordering the world as he, the Grand Inquisitor, would have it. The liberal churchmen believe they are smarter than God, but in restructuring God's benevolent ordering of existence according to their rationalist schemas the churchmen, who were the first liberals after the devil, plunged the Europeans backward in time to the failed philosophical faiths of the Greeks and the Romans. There was a reason why the men and the women of the late Roman Empire sought out the mystery religions. The devotees of the mystery religions could be one with a personal God who was nowhere to be found in the philosophy of the Greeks and the ethical systems of the Romans. But is intimacy with God enough? If there is no silken tie of sympathy between a man and his God, can there be a genuine faith? Christ triumphed over the mystery religions because of His humanity, but did He triumph over the Greco-Roman rationalists? In provincial Europe He did triumph, but he never completely conquered the rationalist element in the upper echelons of the Christian academies where love of the syllogism and rationalist theology predominated over the love of our Savior. That ever-present academic snake in the grass would eventually breed a multi-headed viper that would poison all of Christian Europe. The Europeans worship the negro in the 21st century because the rationalist snake was scotched rather than killed in the first centuries of Christian Europe.

Men cannot live with reason alone. They need faith in a living God beyond reason, but the church men placed Christ in a rationalist box only they could open, so the Europeans went a-whoring. The synthesis of rationalism and negro worship is the Europeans' attempt to combine the vitalism of the mystery religions with the rationalism of the Greco-Romans. What is missing in this synthesis? The living God and the people of Europe who were wedded to the living God. Provincial Europe, the Europe of a particular race of people with a faith in a personal God of their ascending race, has been buried under an avalanche of satanic filth. No matter that the filth is multi-colored and diversified; it is still satanic filth.

The proof of the universalists' atheism is their defiance of God's benevolent ordering of the world. "God loves everyone," the universalists tell us. Yes, he does, which is why He gave us all racial strongholds in this world where we could learn about God's love through the love of our kith and kin. The universalist Christian ends up loving an abstract race of noble savages while hating his own people. Is this Christian? No, it is not. It is something far worse than paganism even; it is liberalism, which is the synthesis of all the evil 'isms' that have ever been created by the satanically inspired minds of men.

There is a depth of feeling that can only be engendered in a man by the love of his kith and kin. Without that depth of feeling a man cannot know, on an intimate level, the Son of God. Why then do the church men tell us that we can only become truly Christian if we become less attached to our own people and more attached to a diversified ant heap of people? Let's try to understand our instructions. In order to be more Christian, we must become less Christian? "Yes," Mr. Liberal tells us, "you've grasped the point perfectly. Christ will become less of a God and the Europeans will become a non-people."

"Then what?"

"Then there will be peace and happiness on earth."

Once, in an endeavor to dissuade a liberal priest from his liberal viewpoints, I pointed out to him that a great work such as Handel's Messiah was great because Handel's vision of Christ was non-diverse. The Hallelujah chorus and the entire sacred oratorio are so moving because every word sung and every chord of music is a paean to the King of Kings. How would that sacred oratorio be performed today? It is too horrible to dwell on. Suffice it to say that we would not be inspired by a hymn to the Obama and one universalist Satan-worshipping nation. But let me return to the liberal priest. He agreed with me about Handel's Messiah: "It wouldn't be a magnificent work without its purity of theme." Then came the disclaimer: "Poetry and reality are two different things." Are they? Isn't our faith in Christ based on a belief that what touches our heart at the deepest level, at the poetic core, is true?

So let us state what is true. God reveals Himself to us through the intimate, mysterious human relationships we form with our kith and kin. The moral beauty of the European hearth, where our kith and kin dwell, points us to the Star of Bethlehem. The moral depravity of the syncretic religion of rationalism and diversity points us toward the kingdom of Satan. The most counter-revolutionary thing that a European man can do is to refuse to bend his knee to the new diversity of races and faiths. Such a refusal will make the European man a sign of contradiction to Satan and his minions. And such is the European man's destiny. He was born to bear witness, through his fidelity to the European hearth, to the Lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world. +

Under the Shadow of the Almighty

December 1, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: John Donne



Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. —*Psalm 1: 14*

The Christian churches spawned our universities, but the universities soon took over the churches, and there is now very little separating the churches from the universities. Even so called conservative churches bow to the universities on the subject of diversity. That race doesn't exist when white men try to band together as a race is a liberal dogma. That race is everything when the colored races band together to demand special sainted status is also a liberal dogma. And nowhere are those liberal dogmas more rigidly adhered to than in the universities of the European people. There are black student unions, brown student unions, Asian student unions, and women's centers, but there is nothing for the white male. And whenever a courageous white male tries to form a white student union, he is deemed a racist and denied permission to form a white student union, because there is no such thing as white people, unless the liberal wants to bring them into existence in order to demonize them. And of course the values of our liberal academies have become the ruling values of our society. Racial diversity, which means the deification of the colored races and the demonization of the white race, is the ruling principle of every European nation. Destroying the universities and their adjuncts, the anti-Christian Christian churches, would not immediately put an end to Liberaldom because the religion of racial diversity has already been institutionalized. But it is also certain that so long as the two-headed monster of academy and church is allowed to spew out its blasphemies unopposed, racial diversity will remain the ruling principle of the European. If, on the other hand, the lifelines of church and academy are cut off from the liberal body, then the foundations of Liberaldom will start to erode.

Christendom eroded when Europeans found 'problems' with the whole notion of 'the resurrection of the body and the life of the world to come.' When the white man believed that the body contained a soul, he had an aversion to diversity because he felt his whiteness was part of his essential soul, a gift from God. The loss of that belief created a new belief in diversity. When faith in Christ's bodily resurrection from the dead and our own bodily resurrection in and through Christ is restored so will our abhorrence of racial diversity be restored. In the depths of our soul, where the modern European man refuses to go, is a non-diverse, integral personality. Unleash that personality, which longs for a God who transcends the church-and-academy-God, and Liberaldom will erode.

The modern universities have strayed far afield from the classical ideal. The Greek educational model was a band of elite scholars united together in the pursuit of knowledge. Our modern universities are primarily indoctrination centers and vocational training sites where the principles of liberty, equality, and fraternity are supposed to prevail (though some are always more equal) over the elitist pursuit of knowledge. And yet, despite their seeming divergence from the Greek ideal, our modern universities are the logical consequence of a 'classical education.' The Greek ideal was fatally flawed because it was too rational. Like the 19th and 20th century psychoanalysts, the Greek scholars overestimated the powers of reason and failed to give sufficient weight to those irrational passions of the heart that ultimately apprehend more than cool reason ever comprehends.

It's not as if the Greeks themselves were unaware of the poetic of life. Homer, Sophocles, and Aeschylus were not rationalists, but who prevailed? Ultimately it was the rationalists. The poets were banned from Plato's republic. And that ban remained in effect when the Christian Europeans assumed the mantle of Greek civilization. Forgetting that our Lord rebuked the ever-practical, ever-rational Martha, in favor of the fanciful Mary, the Christian theologians insisted on putting God in a silver rod. And by doing so they set in motion an eternal conflict between a faith in a rational system of religion that can be comprehended by the mind of man, and a faith in a God beyond the mind of man who can be comprehended only in the deeper recesses of the human heart.

Our modern academics, whom the churchmen slavishly follow, are in a flight from rationalism. Their worship of the negro is an attempt to escape the rationalist prison of their minds, but their negro worship stinks of rationalism. They have made a rigid, rationalistic theology out of diversity. Will the white man never escape from Greek rationalism? He once did when he believed in the Son of God rather than a rational system of apologetics. Ivan Karamazov's brief against the Christian rationalists could only be defeated by his brother Alyosha, who had no rational explanation for his faith in Christ; he only knew that he loved Him. It's very easy to become sidetracked by the visible outer ornaments of Christianity, because such ornaments can fit quite nicely into a narrow box called religion. But the European poets, like the Hebrew psalmists and St. Paul, keep us mindful of the better part of our faith.

And if we distinguish not between Articles of faith and jurisdiction, but account all those superedifications and furnitures, and ornaments which God hath afforded to his Church, for exterior government, to be equally the Foundation itself, there can be no church; as there could be no body of a man, if it were all eye. — John Donne

The only broadsword God has given us with which to fight "diversity" is the only weapon we need, our faith in a loving God beyond reason.

I found the last Presidential election very useful as a barometer of where the Europeans are at this point in their history as a people (I think the percentage of Satanists in every European country would be roughly the same as in the U.S.). I place the white people who voted for Obama beyond the ken of humanity. They are Satan's own. And the rest who voted for Romney? They are in a kind of limbo. They are not comfortable with some of the uglier aspects of Liberaldom, but they lack the heart and the vision to attack Liberaldom and restore Christendom. So they wonder a lot. They wonder why, since they live in the best of all possible worlds (the liberals tell them so) they have such unfilled longings. Perhaps it is just indigestion?

Those people, and the liberals are such people, who think they can grab history by the horns and make it do what they want are always gored by history. The liberal set out to make a new man, a better man, but is he a better man? The modern, liberal European is like no creature, save one, we have ever seen before. The colored tribesmen are what they have always been. The Christian faith that transformed the Europeans did not transform the people of color. So we had two separate worlds, the world of heathendom that the coloreds occupied and the world of Christendom that the Europeans occupied. And then came the ascendency of the European liberal whose progenitor is Satan. A new man emerged upon the world stage, a man without any ties to humanity, a man who denounced his kith and kin in order to bind himself to Satan through the worship of the demon gods of color. Don't tell me about the airplane, the rocket ships to the moon, or computers. The most significant event of the 20th century was the creation, by Satan, of a large body of human beings fashioned in his image. These newly fashioned creatures, these satanic clones, must be opposed as we would oppose Satan. The old democratic give-and-take, politely agreeing to disagree, cannot be applied to the clones of the enemy of

mankind. Even if a European was foolish enough to adopt a polite ‘agree to disagree’ stance vis-à-vis the liberals, the liberals would not follow such a policy themselves. They hate humanity as Satan hates humanity. To expect them to live and let live is suicidal. (1)

The Europeans in limbo cannot oppose the satanic clones because they do not believe in the satanic nature of liberalism. I was surprised shortly before the Obama re-election to hear the usually wishy-washy Mike Huckabee state that hell would be the destiny of anyone voting for Obama. I was surprised because that statement showed some awareness of the nature of liberalism, and I didn’t expect such an insight from Huckabee. But when I mentioned Huckabee’s statement to other limboesque white people, they recoiled from it in horror. “That’s too extreme,” “That’s uncharitable” – you know the litany.

A European is called to fight the devil and his works whether others follow him or not. So we won’t look back to see if the white people languishing in limbo are following us. But one thing is certain: Liberaldom will remain intact so long as “decent” Europeans agree to disagree with Satan’s own. The essential truths that men fight for are seldom articulated, but they are in us; they are in our hearts and our blood. They sustain us in the day of battle. The British soldiers defending Rorke’s Drift defeated a numerically overwhelming army of black barbarians because in their souls they believed they were fighting for Christian civilization vs. Satan’s minions. I hear the cynic in the corner: “They were fighting for personal survival, nothing more.” No, Mr. Cynic, if personal survival had been all they were fighting for, they wouldn’t have stayed to fight in the first place. They would have cut and run with the native contingents. We always must come back to the miracle of God incarnate. Was Christ incarnate in the hearts and the civilization of the antique Europeans? And if He was, then why can’t we follow in their train? He was, and we shall.

The sneer is the liberals’ and Satan’s preferred weapon of choice. The sneering focus of the liberals is always on the imperfections of the antique Europeans, never on their own satanic blasphemies. We should never accept the lie that says because Christian Europe was not heaven on earth, liberals are in the right. Is diversity right? Is the demonization of the European people right? No, such things are not right. Old Europe, in essence, was a Pickwickian world where faith, hope, and charity mitigated the harshness of existence and pointed men to the Man of Sorrows who redeemed the world. If we give up the fight for our European racial stronghold, we will lose that Pickwickian world of grace.

My conclusion is an old conclusion, but it must be stated again and again until Liberaldom is in ashes. We don’t need superior numbers. We need only a few white men to stand up for Europe, fully convinced that in doing so they are standing for the right against Satan and his unholy legions. If we believe in the rightness of Christian Europe and the satanic evil of diverse liberalism, we will fight and prevail against the liberal pestilence that walketh in darkness and the colored hordes that wasteth at noonday. +

(1) After his defeat, Romney accepted an invitation to dine with The Obama. I hope he took a long spoon with him. White people will remain in limbo so long as they agree to disagree with Satan’s own.

The Strength of Innocence

December 8, 2012

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christmas, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: C. S. Lewis



Away in a manger, no crib for his bed,
The little Lord Jesus laid down his sweet head.
The stars in the sky looked down where he lay,
The little Lord Jesus, asleep on the hay.

The cattle are lowing, the poor baby wakes,
But little Lord Jesus, no crying he makes.
I love thee, Lord Jesus; look down from the sky,
And stay by my cradle till morning is nigh.

Be near me, Lord Jesus, I ask thee to stay
Close by me forever and love me, I pray!
Bless all the dear children in thy tender care,
And take us to heaven, to live with thee there.

I was fortunate to grow up in a white neighborhood where boys could fight with their fists, abiding by certain prearranged rules, without recourse to knives or guns. Once when I was fighting a champion from the other end of town, my self-appointed, 14-year-old, fight manager poured some advice into my ear: "Hit him with the right uppercut." I followed my manager's advice and hit him with many right uppercuts, all to no avail. My opponent was not bothered in the least by my right uppercuts. Yet at the end of every round, my manager told me to, "hit him with the right uppercut." It was only after I discarded my manager's advice and started working on my opponent's gut instead of his jaw that I made some headway.

Which brings me, by a very roundabout route, to the subject of this article. More depressing to me than the coloreds' atrocities, which are reported by the white nationalists — and the atrocity stories are quite depressing — is the white nationalists' recommended response to the colored atrocities. The late Samuel Francis always said "vote." The late William Tyndale always said "vote." The white nationalists still alive such as David Duke tell us to "vote." And sometimes as a slight variation on the same theme we are told to "take the necessary action now to stop this Islamic stupidity from destroying the free world we know." What is the necessary action? "Vote." Voting is not intrinsically evil, but neither is it a magic talisman that can be used to remedy every evil under the sun. And I would submit to you that the present war on white people is not something that can be halted by voting, for the obvious reason that the people conducting the war, liberals, coloreds, and Moslems, all believe in a god greater than democracy. The liberal believes in the negro, the colored believes in his race, and the Moslem believes in Allah. What is needed is white people who believe in Christ more than egalitarian democracy.

If Europeans believed in Christ, they would revere Christian Europe and would do whatever was necessary to defend it against liberals, coloreds, Moslems, and the colored tribesmen, even if what was necessary was violent, illegal, undemocratic, or a combination of all three. The majority of white people have not become card-carrying liberals. Nor are they moral or physical cowards who refuse to fight for the right. They are suffering from a loss of moral vision. They are not able to see the right clearly enough to fight for it. Are they to blame? Yes, to some extent. But aren't they, no matter what their age, little children who have been led astray by clergymen who deserve to have a millstone tied around their collective neck?

The clergy turned systems about God into God, which left the Europeans without a personal God who dwelt by their hearth fires and defended them against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The war against the white race was instigated by theologians who decided that God did not need a local habitation and a name; He could dwell in their abstract systems and they, like the oracles of the pagan deities, could impart their interpretation of the will of God to the God's devotees. And our modern oracles have declared that a universal God demands a universal diversity of races and a diversity of faiths. Gone is the crystal clear charity of the provincial Europeans who believed that Christ and Christ alone was the "Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." The "you must vote" leaders of the nationalist movements have got it wrong. A true leader does not call his people every insulting name under the sun and tell them to do something. That is not leadership; it's nagging, which any Dame Van Winkle can do. The true leader acts alone like Tell: "Thou know'st the marksman – I, and I alone. Now are our homesteads free, and innocence – From thee is safe: thou'lt be our curse no more."

Obviously it will take more than one bolt from a crossbow to free our European homesteads, but the essential thing is that our European leaders must act like true leaders; they must see Christ in our European homesteads, call on Him by name, and lead their people out of darkness by heroic example, instead of Dame Van Winkle nagging. Yeats, with blinding sight, depicted the tragedy of men who believe in collective action from below rather than individual heroism motivated by Him, who is above us all. "The best lack all conviction, while the worst are full of passionate intensity." The liberals, the Moslems, and the colored hordes, have the non-democratic, passionate intensity to make war on the white race. When a few white European men fight back with a passionate, non-democratic intensity that is uniquely and distinctly European, the blood red tide of liberalism, Islam, and colored barbarism will be turned back. A fairy tale scenario? Yes, it is. But Christian Europe was an impossible fairy tale until the European people made it come true. It's not Pollyanna-ism to believe that all things are possible to them that call on Him by name, because Europeans who did just that, called on Him by name, created the fairy tale land called Christian Europe, which was not run by a liberal oligarchy that permitted Moslems and negroes to commit murder and mayhem throughout the white nations.

I don't think C. S. Lewis really hit his full stride until he wrote *The Chronicles of Narnia*. Before that his writings showed an overconfidence in the powers of reason. In *The Screwtape Letters*, for instance, the senior devil advises the junior devil to try to keep the 'patient' out of church. I would revise that section of *The Screwtape Letters*, and I think the Narnian Lewis, considering the state of our churches, would approve of the revision.

Senior devil: By all means encourage your patient to attend church.

Junior devil: Isn't that counter-productive? Won't he learn about the enemy at church?

Senior devil: A very long time ago that might have been possible. But our master, who the Christians call the enemy of mankind, convinced the Christians that their minds were untainted with sin and that by dint of pure, unadulterated reason they could reach out and touch God.

Junior devil: But aren't they ignoring the advice of that pest St. Paul when they do that? He said that, "Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart."

Senior devil: You quote scripture well.

Junior devil: I'm supposed to because as you know...

Senior devil: Yes, yes, I know, because 'The devil can cite scripture for his purpose.' That's really not so funny. That man frightens me.

Junior devil: Why? Senior devil: Because he sees through the surface of things. Our master likes to keep mortals dazzled by superficialities.

Junior devil: I'm sorry, I didn't mean to be irreverent. I didn't think one quote from Shakespeare would...

Senior devil: Let's drop Shakespeare and stick to the point.

Junior devil: Which is?

Senior devil: The humans are connected to Him through their sloppy little hearts, keep them in their minds, and you, at the very least, make them confused, and best case scenario you will make them into liberals.

Junior devil: Which is the best thing a mortal can be, from the satanic point of view, isn't it?

Senior devil: Yes, it is. If we could make every European a liberal, which is our goal, we would own the world and every creature in it.

Junior devil: Let me get this straight then. It's good to send my patients to church, because the men running the churches have an overweening confidence in their own intellects. Consequently they will try to impose their intellectual faith on my patients. My patients will then be cut off from God and leave themselves open to the gods we suggest, such as the negroes.

Senior devil: Yes, that's it, more or less. It's not as easy as you make it sound. Our Master had to work at it. The sheer boldness of his plan – to walk right into the churches dressed only in a scientist's lab coat, in order to spread Satanism – was without parallel. He is one hell (no pun intended) of a devil.

Junior devil: For how long can we make the white Europeans worship the negroes and let the Moslems invade their nations?

Senior devil: As long as we continue to keep their minds separate from their hearts. The miserable wretches are very proud of themselves at present and think they are progressing toward something magnificent.

Junior devil: Well, in a way they are. They're progressing toward hell, and hell is magnificent.

Senior devil: Ha, ha, that is a good one. You're a funny little devil. But in all seriousness, keep them full of intellectual pride. So long as they retain their belief in science as something more than the study of nature, you will have them where you want them. There is nothing that makes a mortal man more puffed up with pride than the notion that he is more scientific and forward-thinking than the other guy. If you keep the fear of appearing unscientific and stupid ever before your patients' eyes, you'll soon become a senior devil like me.

Junior devil: I'd like that. You get to prowl about the earth with the big fellow, seeking the ruin of souls.

Senior devil: Yes, I do. You mind your Ps and Qs and you'll get to do the same.

If you doubt the testimony of those two fictional devils, we have corroborative testimony from an actual senior devil, George Bernard Shaw. Shaw was the exemplar of pure Satanism. He sneered at everything decent – Christianity, Shakespeare, and all sentiments emanating from the human heart. The exalted human intellect was his god. And since he thought that George Bernard Shaw's intellect was the greatest of all intellects, George Bernard Shaw was his god. Shaw, because he was a senior devil, knew how the devil worked. The supreme ego maniac pointed out that the hated Christian religion of the European people had survived, over the centuries, the various attacks of the pagans and the heretics. What finally killed it as a serious religious faith was the scientific attack. From that attack, Shaw maintained, Christianity would never recover, which was fine with Shaw, because he was a senior devil. (1)

Shaw was wrong. The Christian faith will survive the scientific onslaught because of a force Shaw and his liberal descendants never reckoned with. That force is the moral force of a European hero, determined to protect his own who are being attacked and persecuted for loving and championing the living God. It all comes down to that one central event that took place in a stable in Bethlehem. Accusations of racism from the liberals and the coloreds, of blasphemy from the Moslems, and of intellectual stupidity from the liberals, all stem from one underlying passion: "We hate Christ and His people." The European hero knows this, which is why he will fight without ceasing for the Little Town of Bethlehem civilization against all the world.

*O Holy Child of Bethlehem,
Descend to us, we pray;
Cast out our sin and enter in;
Be born in us today!*

*We hear the Christmas angels
The great glad tidings tell;
O come to us, abide with us,
Our Lord Emmanuel! +*

(1) Two men, because of their sneering contempt for every single manifestation of Christ's humanity in the hearts of His people, have always made me feel that I was in the presence of Satan himself. One of those men was George Bernard Shaw, the other is a traditionalist Roman Catholic priest. The antidote for such men is a love for the Christ child depicted in the Christmas Carol, "Away in a Manger."

Even to the Edge of Doom

December 15, 2012

Categories: Blood faith, Christian counter-attack, Christmas, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
But bears it out even to the edge of doom.

-Wm. Shakespeare

Just a few nights ago I saw what has become a very rare sight in this brave new racially diverse world of ours. I saw a white soloist, with an all white chorus, singing traditional Christmas carols to an all white audience. It was a wonderful sight. When I was growing up I took such wonderful sights for granted. But for the last thirty years or so I have not taken such events as an all-white Christmas celebration for granted, for the simple reason that the liberal oligarchy in charge of my nation does not want anything that is exclusively white to exist.

Diversity and inclusion are the god words of the liberals. When they utter those sacred words, we are all supposed to fall down on our faces and worship the nearest colored person. But who is being served by such slavish worship? Certainly not the white man who used to live in a racially segregated world where the God-Man, not the colored man, was worshipped. Nor are the colored people being served by inclusion and diversity. If there is no one to light the lamps, how can the barbarians of color find their way out of the darkness?

Inclusion and diversity are code words which mean the destruction of the white race. Every time I see an all-white celebration of Christmas, or see a painting or read a novel from the European past, I feel, along with my love for the particular European art work, a hatred for the liberals who want to destroy everything from the white Christian culture that sustains us all. Never believe the lie that European culture can be sustained without the survival of the white race who created that culture. Our skin color is part of our soul, and individual human souls cannot be transposed into the bodies of other humans by saying the magic words of diversity and inclusion. The liberals themselves could not live in a non-European world, but they are possessed by a satanic hatred of Christ, so like their Jacobin predecessors they attack the creator by effacing His image in man. God's image was at the heart of European culture, and Satan's image is at the heart of the colored cultures. To destroy the former culture and worship the latter culture is the liberal agenda.

Before the physical conquest of a people can take place, the soon-to-be-conquered people must have already either lost faith in their own God or wavered in their faith in their God. The Moslems were defeated in 732 A.D. because the Europeans still believed in Christ. The Moslems are triumphing now because Europeans do not believe what Charles Martel believed. But I do not want to dwell on the Moslems, or the Jews for that matter. I want to focus on the technological barbarian hordes that have made Christendom into Satandom: the liberal tribesmen.

The majority of white people have not taken liberalism to their bosoms, but their faith in the European vision of Christ has been shaken enough to make them defenseless against the passionate Christ-haters. And that very term, "Christ-haters," which so accurately describes the liberals, makes the white grazer cringe. It sounds too extreme, too uncharitable. But look at the world the liberals have built. Is there anything in this new world that Christ would approve of? Just briefly, after the re-election of Obama, many white grazers saw past the liberal façade of diversity and inclusion and beheld the face of Satan. They were willing to listen to terms such as "satanic liberals" and "negro worship" without running and hiding under their beds. But those moments of white sanity passed after they spoke to their clergymen. They then returned to their passive, apprehensive state of existence, hoping that somehow the liberals and their barbarian allies would leave the churches intact (and of course they will because the churches are liberal), and convert to the more moderate mishmash liberalism of the white grazers. Such a consummation, which we do not wish for, will never happen. The passionate always devour the lukewarm.

Most of the preliminary work of the liberals was done prior to the 20th century. Aquinas, Rousseau, Voltaire, Robespierre, Darwin, Freud, Marx, etc. all prepared the way for the revolution of the managerial rationalists, the bureaucratic men of science who aspire to build a better world than the world created by God. When the white grazer sees through his eye, instead of with it, and perceives Satan behind the rationalist façade, the grazer will become a European again. He will refuse to worship the liberals' black gods. Such a refusal is not a futile, insignificant gesture, it is the essence of the counter-revolution. Satan's "I shall not serve" set the satanic revolution in motion, and the European's "I shall not serve Satan" shall set the European counter-revolution in motion. One case in point – after the Obama's re-election, when the liberals and the colored tribesmen made no attempt to hide their glee, a mild-mannered friend of mine, a middle-of-the-road Christian woman, told me, "I feel like I'm surrounded by devils dancing around the throne of Satan." The young woman modified her extreme statement a few days later after talking to her reasonable, responsible clergyman, but for a moment she saw the truth about liberalism. When such moments can be sustained, when one moment of insight becomes a permanent part of a grazer's heartfelt faith, the grazer will no longer be a grazer. That is a consummation to be devoutly wished for, and devoutly fought for.

A genuine faith, a faith that sustains a man against the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune and the wickedness and snares of the devil, is bred in the bone of a man at his ancestral hearth fire. Once separated from that blood faith, a man is in grave danger of falling prey to an intellectual man-made faith which cannot sustain him against the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune or against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The modern European, having abandoned his blood faith for an intellectual faith, has fallen prey to the devil. Our minds are not clever enough to do battle with Satan. Only our hearts, united to His sacred heart, can defeat mankind's arch enemy. Satan plays a very subtle game. The mad-dog liberals he captures quite easily; they are full of intellectual pride, and "we shall be as gods," is their fervent desire. The grazers are different; they are proud of their virtue.⁽¹⁾ So Satan appeals to them through that pride in their virtue. Through his liberal minions, he convinces the grazers to worship negroes. His liberal minions tell atrocity stories. We know how that gambit works. The grazer is given utopian glasses with which to view the antique Europeans. Though most atrocity stories are fictitious and the full story is never told — the black who was lynched was a rapist, the Indians were killed by the British in just retaliation for the Black Hole of Calcutta, etc. – let us still concede that some atrocities were committed by Europeans. That, up till now, has been enough for the liberals. They thrust the atrocities front and center and ask the confused grazer if he approves of such atrocities. "By God, no, I don't!" the virtuous grazer declares.

"Then show us you don't approve by worshipping the colored tribes," the liberals respond. And the grazer complies.

But the antique European will not comply. He points out there is no such thing as atrocities in the colored tribesmen's culture. What a white man would call an atrocity is a normal, everyday, go-about-our-business life to the barbarians of color. The atrocities in the New Orleans Superdome? "What atrocities?" the black man says. "It was only natural." The same applies to the fiendish cruelty of the yellow races and the savagery of the brown and red races. Their atrocities are viewed as the assertion of their rights, or as "only natural," but never as atrocities. It

is only the white European who is said to commit atrocities. This madness must stop now. Atrocity stories are unknown outside of the European civilization, because mercy is unknown outside of our European civilization. As we welcome the savage hordes of color into Europe, atrocities will increase at an astronomical rate, but they will no longer be called atrocities; they will simply be the normal, everyday activities of the colored barbarians. Having severed their blood ties to their kith and kin, the Europeans have cut themselves off from the God of their kith and kin. A vague pride in their virtuous refusal to support European atrocities will not avail them against the colored hordes who commit atrocities as easily as an antique European prays.

And then we have the liberals themselves. They have institutionalized infanticide and turned their faces away from the atrocities the colored barbarians commit against white people. Why should they be permitted to condemn our European ancestors for the specks in their eyes, while they, the liberals, have gigantic logs in their own satanic eyes? Look at the liberals, look at the colored savages, and then look at those white people I saw the other night celebrating Christmas. Where should our allegiance be? For whom should we fight to the death, and who should we fight to the death against?

When I was a young man I believed that a deeply held passionate faith could defeat any force on earth that was sent against a man. As I got older I learned to hide my belief that Shakespearean passion could move mountains for fear of ridicule, but I never really modified that essential faith I had in the supremacy of the heartfelt passion over reason and ultimately over death itself. Now as an old man I feel that passion even more strongly than when I was young, and I no longer feel inclined to hide my passion for fear of ridicule. I love the European people; I love them because they showed me the face of Jesus Christ. Those Europeans who have gone to their rest in the arms of the Lord and those Europeans, like the ones who sang those Christmas carols a few nights ago, who still walk the earth will always have at least one heart that loves them and one champion who will fight for them. But I think there are others who feel as I do. That which is lost should constantly be before our eyes. And the anger that wells up in us against those who have destroyed Christian Europe and the love that makes us determined to restore Christian Europe will sustain us in the war against principalities and powers.

'Too late' and 'not enough' are terms the managerial types use. They tell us it is too late to turn back the colored invasion because there are too many of them. But aren't the devil's armies always legion? Numbers are only of significance in math class; they mean nothing in the spiritual realm. Sir Galahad's faith is still our faith: "If God be for us, who can stand against us?" +

(1) Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall. – Measure for Measure

Remembrances II

December 22, 2012

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances

To my readers: It is during the Christmas season that a European Christian feels the most estranged from modern, post-Christian Europe. He feels a deep longing for a bygone age when the ties of kinship and blood, which bind us to our Lord, were honored and revered. What follows then is a tale of European honor and kinship. Merry Christmas.



A kind Providence has placed in our breasts a hatred of the unjust and cruel, in order that we may preserve ourselves from cruelty and injustice. They who bear cruelty, are accomplices in it. The pretended gentleness which excludes that charitable rancor, produces an indifference which is half an approbation. They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.

There is another piece of policy, not more laudable than this, in reading these moral lectures, which lessens our hatred to Criminals and our pity to sufferers, by insinuating that it has been owing to their fault or folly, that the latter have become the prey of the former. By flattering us, that we are not subject to the same vices and follies, it induces a confidence, that we shall not suffer the same evils by a contact with the infamous gang of robbers who have thus robbed and butchered our neighbours before our faces. We must not be flattered to our ruin. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

It was in April of 1934 that Peter Delaine first came to see me. There was nothing about his dress that suggested he was a Roman Catholic priest — he did not wear a Roman collar or any other kind of priestly garb — but I had a certain intuition about this tall, gaunt man who appeared as if he had just come from the stake where he had been tortured for days. He appeared to be in his mid-fifties, but it was difficult to gauge his age because intense suffering often makes a man appear older than he actually is.

“Are you a Roman Catholic priest?”

“Yes, I am, but I’ve been... How can I say it? I’ve been on a kind of leave of absence from my duties for the past five years.”

“I don’t mind talking to you, Father; in fact, I’d be happy to talk with you, but don’t you think you should seek out a priest of your own church and your own nationality?”

“What makes you think I haven’t tried to talk to priests of my own church, as you put it? As for my nationality, my father was French, and I was brought up in France, but my mother was English, so I am not such a goose out of water as you might suppose.”

“It’s ‘duck out of water.’”

“What did I say?”

“You said you were not such a goose out of water as I supposed.”

He laughed. “I shall have to be careful with you.”

“No, you won’t. I just couldn’t resist that one. You can you put any animal you want out of the water, and I won’t bother you about it. But may I ask you why you want to talk to me?”

“It is quite simple, Reverend. To the extent that I trust anyone, I trust you. You’re probably not aware of it — men like you never are — but that little book of your sermons was translated into French and made its way across the Channel. I didn’t need a translator of course, but my first copy of your sermons was in French. I found them so moving that I subsequently acquired the original English edition. Does it surprise you that you are known to some of us in France?”

“Yes, it does. I was aware that a volume of my sermons had been published here in England, but I had no idea that they had been published in France as well. Nor do I understand why a Roman Catholic priest was so interested in them that he has come across the Channel to speak to me.”

“It was the title of your book that first intrigued me. Was that your idea?”

“When the publisher asked for a better title than Sermons, I suggested the title, *The Sword of Charity*.”

“Well that is what caught my attention, because that is exactly the way I look on the divine charity of our Lord; it is a sword that pierces the heart but doesn’t kill; it heals. But of course, I’m quoting almost your very words. You must think of me as a terrible babbler.”

“On the contrary, Father...”

“I’d prefer you call me Peter.”

“As you wish. If we are going to dispense with titles, my given name is Christopher. And I don’t regard you a as a babbler. Quite the contrary, how could I not be moved by a man whose heart is moved by the heartfelt expression of my faith? But I don’t think you came all the way over from France to tell me you liked my published sermons. Is there something I can do for you? Perhaps I should have prefaced that question with the same warning I give every person who seeks me out for guidance. I am not a modern day prophet, a saint, or seer. I’ll try...”

“I’m not seeking a prophet, a saint, or a seer. I’m looking for a Christian European, a man who will look me in the face and tell the truth. I’ve decided that you are the one man in a million who won’t lie to me. Am I wrong?”

There was only one way to answer Peter’s question. I asked him to kneel with me in the study while I said a prayer: “Lord, guide my heart and my mind to answer this, your servant Peter, in the way you would have me answer him, in Christ’s name, Amen.”

“I won’t bore you with the minutiae of my life, Christopher, but I must of necessity, sketch out some of the details of my life so that you can understand my spiritual state and the reason I’ve come to see you.”

“Five years ago I obtained a leave of absence from my duties as a parish priest. The leave of absence was to have been for one year, but one year elapsed quickly, and then a second, and then a third, and so on. During the last three years, I’ve made no attempt to contact my superiors. So for all practical purposes I am no longer a Catholic priest, but of course I am still a priest. I haven’t been ‘defrocked.’”

"May I ask why you left the priesthood?"

"Certainly you may ask, Christopher. That's why I've come to you, to talk about this thing called faith."

"It's not that I don't believe in Christ anymore. In fact, it's because I've come to believe more fully in the singularity of Christ as God and Redeemer that I felt compelled to leave my church, or at least to leave the organization that has come to be called the Roman Catholic Church."

"I'm not being terribly clear, am I?"

"Not yet, but go on."

"Well, I know what the Roman churchmen are saying about me. They say I've lost my faith. They call me a heretic, a homosexual, or both. But I am neither of those two abominations. I believe in our Lord Jesus Christ. And I believe he is really and truly present in the Holy Communion, but I don't believe in an infallible Pope, nor do I believe in an infallible fat friar. Forgive my crudeness; I am very bitter, but I admit that I have no right to be bitter. No one made me become a Roman Catholic priest."

"Why did you become a Roman Catholic priest?"

"Why? I've asked myself that question many times in the last five years. I suppose if you asked me that question at the time I entered the seminary, I would have told you that I wanted to serve Christ and my brethren in Christ."

"Those are certainly commendable motives."

"But as I got older in years and older in my years of service to the Church, I realized I had become estranged from God because of my profession. I know that might sound strange to most people, because most people equate the church and God as one, but I think you of all people must understand what I am saying, because in your sermons you never refer to the church; you only refer to Christ and to His people. And I must ask you: Do you believe that your church is the true church? Please answer me truthfully, without fear of offending me or shocking me."

"I could give you the party line, which I believed when I became an Anglican minister, which says that our church is truly Catholic and Apostolic, because our faith is based on the Bible, tradition, the early creeds, and the Church fathers, in contrast to the Roman Catholic Church, which is based on tradition and the Bible as interpreted by an infallible Pope, who has only recently been found to be infallible. But I can't give you the party line because I don't believe it. I have a great love for the Book of Common Prayer and the Biblical Catholicism of Anglicanism. We have avoided the excessive formalism of Rome and steered clear of the enthusiasm of the protestant groups, but still, I don't see how my church with our four squared system of infallibility is any more infallible than your church."

"Then to whom or what was Christ referring when He said that He would build His church on 'this rock'?"

"If you've read *The Sword of Charity* you know my answer to that question."

"Faith in Christ is the rock?"

"Yes."

"And the true Church consists of those who believe in Him?"

"Yes, but there is a hierarchy in the Church. Without the Christ-bearing people, the Church does not have a local habitation and a name."

"But what if the European people forsake Christ?"

"They are in the process of doing just that, but that doesn't change their history. They were and still are the Christ-bearers just as the Hebrew people were. I am not propounding a theory; I am merely stating what I see before me. In the Book of Common Prayer, we say 'in Him and through Him,' but how do we come to Him except through His people?"

"Aren't you open to a charge of extreme subjectivity and personal bias when you claim that we, the Europeans, are the Christ bearers?"

"Yes, I am, but God's ways are not our ways, and it seems to me that God reveals Himself through His people. And who are the Christ-bearing people if they are not the European people? Every Christian church that professes to know with mathematical certainty it is the rock upon which Christ has built His church has turned out to be a very common, ordinary-type rock, incapable of sustaining faith in Christ. The various churchmen in their zeal to present God to the people in a concise, precise package of facts have made little mini-deities of their church organizations."

"I don't disagree with anything you say. It's... words fail me... to hear one's own heartfelt faith shared by another is... it's a miracle of God's grace."

"Where do you go from here, Peter? Will you return to your priestly duties?"

"No, you see my church has gone further down that slippery Greek slope, which ends in the classroom of Voltaire and Rousseau. I can only be a Catholic priest so long as I don't bend my knee to the Christian dilettantes and philosophers who have made Christ into an intellectual construct. I want to fight for my people, and my people, the Christ-bearing people, are in danger of extinction. Oh, I know it all sounds farfetched, as we sit here in the comfort of your study in the middle of this very European city of London. But Satan has vowed to kill Christ by destroying His image in man. The incomparable Burke knew this. Did you know that my great grandfather knew Burke? Of course, you couldn't know. Now I must really appear to be raving. But the people are on the brink. We all must gird up our loins and..."

"Gird up our loins for what, Peter?"

"For the battle with the Jacobin-inspired black rebellion. What happened in Haiti when the Jacobins turned the country over to the blacks is happening all over Europe and in the nations such as the United States, which were settled by Europeans."

"I can't speak for Europe as whole, but it does seem that the idea of the noble savage, which men like Samuel Johnson and Charles Dickens ridiculed, is gaining more and more credence with the British people. And there seems to be a connection between the increase of Jacobin thinking and a belief in the noble savage."

"Of course there is, Christopher. They are coordinate heresies. If there is no God and no original sin, then sin must only exist in the people who are furthest away from nature, which is white people. And the most natural people are..."

"Black people?"

"Yes, that is precisely the way the Jacobins, whether they be French or non-French, think."

"We are certainly a great many years away from a brave new world of negro-worshipping whites, but I do agree with you, Peter, that eventually, as the whites fall away from the Christian faith, they will revert to heathen gods or even make gods of the heathens themselves."

"I want to stand athwart the current of white apostasy and stop it. I know that sounds grandiose, but with God are not all things possible? You see, Christopher, I feel it is my destiny. My family history reaches out to me. I dare not disgrace my ancestors. I must strike a blow for my people and against the coalition of Jacobins and blacks. If you could indulge me for another hour or so, I could explain myself, through this manuscript, in a way that I'm sure you would understand."

"Who wrote the manuscript, Peter?"

"My great-grandfather on my father's side. He was born in Saint-Domingue, which they now call Haiti. But you'll find that explained in the manuscript. I'll take a walk through your London and watch the lamplighters. If you can take the time, I'd like you to read the manuscript."

"I'll read it, Peter. How did you find out about the London lamplighters?"

"On a visit with my mother many years ago."

"Robert Louis Stevenson is the only poet that I know of who captured the romance (at least to a small boy) of the lamplighters. I have a copy of his *A Child's Garden of Verses* right here:

'For we are very lucky with a lamp before the door,
And Leerie stops to light it as he lights so many more;
And O! before you hurry by with ladder and with light,
O Leerie, see a little child and nod to him tonight.'"

"You love London, don't you, Christopher?"

"With all my heart."

"You'll understand my great-grandfather's manuscript then. And when you've read it and understood, you'll stand with me against the world. That is how it will be."

"Go watch the lamplighters, Peter, and let me read your great-grandfather's manuscript."

I opened Peter Delaine's great-grandfather's manuscript with much more than idle curiosity. What was so compelling about the manuscript? Why had it had — and why did it continue to have — such an impact on a man like Peter Delaine?

I'll present the manuscript, translated of course, in the form that I received it, making a note whenever I make an editorial interruption. There are times when the author of the manuscript shifts from straight prose to the dramatic mode of expression. It seemed to me that he does this when the scenes depicted are so indelibly impressed on his memory that he remembers every single word that was said.

The Manuscript of Peter Delaine

What follows are my memories of the events of October 5th, 1791, when a Roman Catholic priest and his black henchmen killed my father and destroyed my home in Saint-Domingue. Of necessity I must also tell of some of the events that occurred before that night of sorrow and of some of the events that came after that terrible night. I write this document in the year of our Lord 1870.

I was born of French parents in the French colony of Saint-Domingue. My father met and married my mother in France, but being a second son he felt his destiny was not in France proper although he always considered himself a Frenchman. He was loyal to the monarchy and to everything it stood for: our Holy religion and our sacred traditions. "We belong to France," my father used to say, "Here in Saint-Domingue we are an extension of France."

My father prospered in Saint-Domingue. Within the first ten years after his arrival he owned one of the largest and finest plantations in Saint-Domingue. My education on our plantation was that of a French nobleman. With parents such as mine I would have been happy anywhere, but the plantation in Saint-Domingue was the home of my childhood, and I have nothing but pleasant memories of my childhood. It was only when I started my 16th year of life that my pleasant existence turned into hell on earth.

I was 14 years old in 1789 when the barbarous French Revolution broke out. My father was horrified; being removed from France he was more intensely devoted to France than Frenchmen living in France. His loyalty to the monarchy was absolute. Right up to the time of Louis XVI's murder my father always entertained the hope that somehow the French people would come to their senses and restore the king to the throne. It was not to be.

There was much discussion at our dinner table and throughout Saint-Domingue, among the white landowners, as to the effect the Revolution in France would have on the French living in Saint-Domingue. Some thought there would be no effect: "After all, they can't expect liberty, fraternity, and equality to apply to Negroes!"

And some, like my uncle, saw the truth: "The niggers will try to kill every last white man in Saint-Domingue, and they will do so with the blessing of the damn Jacobins."

Here I must introduce some other of the principle characters in my family tragedy. Before introducing the hero, my uncle, let me speak of the villains.

There was Father Genevesse, a Jesuit priest. He was a short, plump, kindly-looking man in his mid-fifties, a frequent house guest and a friend of the family. I know it is unfair of me to hate all Jesuits because of Father Genevesse, but I am a man, not a block of wood. The very word 'Jesuit' sickens me and fills me with a desire to kill.

Another principle character was our house servant, a Negro of about forty-five years of age, who had been with my parents ever since their arrival in Saint-Domingue in 1770. He was tall, slender, and quite the gentleman, educated and treated almost as one of the family. He was in charge of all the house servants, and he enjoyed great prestige on the island because he was the head servant in the house of Michael Delaine, my father. The fiend's name was Jacques Bauché. My father trusted him implicitly, and I must say I had no suspicions of him whatsoever. He always addressed me as the "young master." Toward my mother and sister he was always the perfect gentleman. None of us suspected that the outward manners of our trusted servant concealed — there are no other words to describe it — a satanic heart.

That is not quite true; there was one among us who did not trust Jacques Bauché. That man was my uncle, Brian Delaine. I deeply loved my father and shall always love him above all other men, but he was the victim in our terrible family tragedy. The hero's part was to be played by my uncle. He alone saw the evil in Jacques Bauché and Father Genevesse.

My uncle was three years younger than my father and came to Saint-Domingue one year after my father did. Like my father he was completely loyal to France and did not see himself as any less of a Frenchman because he chose to seek his fortune in French Saint-Domingue instead of in France. But in every other way, my uncle was different from my father. Father was a man of slender build, very handsome and calm in temperament. I never once heard my father raise his voice in anger. In contrast, my uncle had a much more volatile nature. He often raised his voice in anger and quite often, when angry, seemed on the verge of physical violence, especially during some of his heated arguments with Father Genevesse.

My uncle was several inches shorter than my father, but he actually appeared taller because of his large, almost herculean physique. It was amazing that two brothers with the same bloodlines could look so different. My father looked every inch the French Aristocrat, while my uncle looked more like a French peasant than a French aristocrat.

Despite their differences in personality, or maybe because of those differences, my father and my uncle were very close. It was a great disappointment to my father when my uncle decided not to settle down on an estate next to him. Instead my uncle invested his part of the family fortune in a merchant ship and became a seafaring man. Because of the life he chose, he was frequently away from Saint-Domingue on long voyages of a mercantile nature. I don't think my father quite approved of the seafaring life, but he never reproached my uncle for it, although he would occasionally make a joke about finding a good wife for Uncle Brian who would make him stay on land for more than just one week every other month.

I, of course, was very interested in my uncle's voyages. I always looked forward to his visits to our estate, when he would tell me stories of his travels and the seafaring men who accompanied him on his voyages.

My uncle knew that my father didn't approve of the life he had chosen, so he always prefaced his stories with, "If your father permits, I'll tell you of..." My father always permitted it, because he loved his brother and he loved me. And despite my love for my uncle's sea stories, I never considered any life for myself other than the one my father wanted me to have, that of a French aristocrat tending to his plantation in Saint-Domingue.

It was a good life. Much has been written, since that way of life has disappeared, about lazy, good-for-nothing French aristocrats who lived off the sweat of black slaves. That is a lie, just as the Jacobin story of fat, indolent aristocrats who deserved to be guillotined in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity is a lie. The truth is that the black man lived off the sweat,

ingenuity and vision of the white ruling class. Now that Saint-Domingue is Haiti, what is the lot of the black man? Rape, murder, poverty, and mayhem are normal in the Haiti of the black man. They were vile aberrations in the Saint-Domingue of the French aristocrats.

The climactic events of my life happened when I was 16, two years after the French Revolution. That is how long it took before liberty, equality, and fraternity brought rivers of blood to Saint-Domingue.

I am 95 years old, but I have carried the memory of the events of 79 years ago with me through all these years. Nothing will ever erase the memory of that terrible night and its aftermath. Why, after so many years, have I decided to write about what happened on June 7th, 1791? The reason is because I have a great grandson, Peter Delaine, who needs a chance to be a Delaine. I have outlived my son, and my grandson has no interest in his family history, so it falls to Peter, when he comes of age, to do what he will with this family history. I trust him to do what is right.

I am no Racine, no Shakespeare, but I intend to describe certain events in the dramatic mode for reasons that I think will become clear. I see the events as a tragic drama. For truly my family history is a tragic drama. But it is also, I believe, the tragic drama, not just of France alone, but of all of Europe and her people:

Place – The dining room of the Delaine house. Seated at dinner are Father Genevesse, my sister, my mother, my father, and myself. Jacques and two other house servants are also present at dinner.

Characters –

Peter Delaine – (myself) sixteen years old

Evelyn Delaine – my sister, 18 years old

Catherine Delaine – my mother, 40 years old

Brian Delaine – my uncle, 39 years old

Michael Delaine – my father, 42 years old

Jacques Bauché – house servant and overseer of all the other house servants of the Delaine family

Father Genevesse – 55 years old, Jesuit priest

Genevesse: I'm truly sorry your brother couldn't come, Michael. I was looking forward to talking with him.

Mother: A man in your profession shouldn't lie, Father; you know you don't like Brian.

Genevesse: Why do you say that? It's true that we often disagree, but I like a good argument and I like Brian.

Evelyn: I'm afraid Uncle Brian doesn't like you, Father.

Father: That's enough, Evelyn. I don't think Father Genevesse appreciates your jesting on that subject.

Peter: She's not jesting, father, Uncle Brian does hate him.

Father: That's enough from both of you. Father, please accept my apologies, and be assured that no member of my family has anything but the highest regard for you.

Genevesse: For me or what I represent?

Father: Both.

Genevesse: I'm not offended. Your brother is a passionate man, and I'm afraid I've annoyed him with my defense of our black brothers here in Saint-Domingue.

Mother: I can't really speak for Brian, Father, but I think I understand how he feels. You often give the impression, which I'm sure you don't mean to, that you think we should turn Saint-Domingue over to the negroes.

Genevesse: And what would be so wrong about that?

Father: Really, Father, you might as well ask what is wrong with making a three year old child the head of your household. Negro equality is insane.

Genevesse: Equality is coming to Saint-Domingue just as it came to France.

Mother: But they don't have equality in France, they have anarchy and chaos. Nor has the French Revolution been good for the clergy.

Genevesse: It's been good for some of them.

Father: Yes, for the traitor priests, the priests who are willing to betray their king and their God.

Genevesse: I hardly call spreading Christ's Gospel to other people besides Europeans treacherous.

Father: It is not a question of spreading the Gospel, it is a question of the French Saint-Domingueans and their survival as a people. How do we spread the Gospel in Saint-Domingue by liquidating the French? The negroes are not embracing Christ, they are killing white people. And the Jacobins are all atheists. How is that good for France?

Genevesse: I don't think you understand politics, Michael, but I must say that you do understand wine. This Bordeaux is excellent.

Mother: Jacques, I think we will have our dessert in the drawing room. Will you set out Evelyn's music so she can play for us?

Jacques: Yes, Madame.

Mother: Will you play, Evelyn?

Evelyn: Yes, but don't expect a virtuoso performance.

Genevesse: Oh, but I do expect a virtuoso performance. Your father simply raves about your musical gifts.

Evelyn: Father is prejudiced.

Father: No, I'm not. You be the judge, Father.

In the Drawing Room of the Delaine Mansion –

Peter, Father Genevesse, my father, my mother, and my sister are present. Jacques and two other servants are going back and forth with the dessert. Evelyn has just finished on the piano.

Genevesse: Your father didn't exaggerate, Evelyn. That was beautiful.

Evelyn: Thank you, Father.

Genevesse : Do you play, Peter?

Peter: No, Father, the piano is for women.

Genevesse: That's a horribly narrow viewpoint, my boy. Most of the best concert pianists are men. There is nothing effeminate about the mastery of a musical instrument.

Peter: Well, I don't play.

Genevesse: You should play a musical instrument. It can be quite ...

This was the moment. Seventy-nine years ago, and I see it all before me as if it were yesterday. Black fiends, dozens of them, carrying machetes, burst into the drawing room. My father, who was completely unarmed, rose to grapple with the foremost negro, while ordering the rest of us to run to the kitchen were Jacques was. But Jacques was not in the kitchen. He was right behind my father. As father wrestled with the foremost negro, Jacques stabbed my father in the back. It was a sickening, heart-rending sight. One thrust of the dagger through the middle of his back and into his heart, and my beloved father was dead.

When I first saw Jacques advancing toward my father, dagger in hand, I thought he was coming to help my father. Oh, that I had known! I could have stopped him. But I didn't know.

I screamed when my father fell, and I lunged at Jacques, planning to wrest the dagger from him and cut his throat. But I was knocked to the ground by two large negroes and pinned there. My sister and my mother were also restrained and imprisoned in the arms of the filthy negro savages. Father Genevesse was nowhere to be seen. I wondered where he had gone, but I didn't suspect that he had anything to do with the attack. It was still beyond my comprehension that a priest, a man of God, would participate in anything so vile.

Of course, I was frightened, but that was not my primary emotion. I had seen my beloved father murdered before my eyes. I wanted the blood of the man who killed him. And there he was standing in the drawing room, a mocking, satanic sneer on his face.

"Well," he addressed me first. I was now on my feet, restrained by three of the black savages. "My fine young master, how does it feel to be slapped by your devoted servant?"

The slap was nothing to me — I was too enraged to feel it. I spit in his face. His face went livid with anger, and he pulled back his arm with the dagger in his hand and prepared to run me through. But an imperial command stopped him. It was Father Genevesse.

"Jacques! Remember, we agreed, only Michael, not the children or Catherine."

"This is no child, Genevesse, and don't tell me what to do."

"Have you forgotten who helped you to plan this and who is going to help you to do the same with the other plantations?"

"I don't need you anymore, Genevesse. I'm going to cut this white dog's heart out and then let my friends have the women."

My mother and my sister had both screamed in terror, as was only natural, when the attack first came. But there was no screaming or pleading after my father was murdered. The blood of their ancestors took hold.

Mother: I don't care what they do with me, Father, but if you have any influence with these fiends, ask them to spare my children.

Genevesse: I'm afraid I don't have any influence with them. I'm sorry.

Mother: You're sorry! What kind of man are you? We trusted you. You're supposed to be a priest.

Genevesse: It's because I am a priest that I had to help the Revolution. Do you think I enjoy this?

Evelyn: You helped them kill my father!

Genevesse: Yes, I did. Someday you'll understand. Now, in the heat of the moment I don't expect you to understand.

Jacques: Enough of this. He dies now and the white bitches die when my men are through with them.

Genevesse: I really must protest...

Jacques motioned to one of his savage cohorts and he cut off Father Genevesse's head with one blow of the machete. It was a horrific sight, but I felt no pity for Genevesse.

Then Jacques turned back to me and raised his dagger again. I waited for the fatal thrust, but it never came. Jacques Bauché fell to the floor with a bullet in his head. My uncle Brian was upon them! Never, in all my long years have I seen such magnificence as I saw that night when my uncle attacked the black devils who murdered my father.

My uncle had gotten wind of an attack on the whites' plantations while he was in port getting ready to sail. He headed for our house right away. Too late to save father, he did save us. Four pistol shots and four dead savages. The rest of the work he did with his sword, our family sword that my uncle usually kept in his cabin. It was unsheathed that night. He killed them all, and he killed because he loved us and his brother with a passion that no negro could ever fathom.

There is a poem about the great Montrose of Scotland in which he bids his executioners scatter his body throughout Scotland and the God who made him will, he believed, put his body and soul together again whole and entire. Such is the belief of Christians. And I am a Christian. But why do we pray at the graves of loved ones? And why do we shrink from the idea of cremation? I don't know. Perhaps it is because the body of our beloved dead held, while alive, the light of the soul within it. We can't bear to part with that light. It often takes months and sometimes years for the bereaved to feel, with certainty, that the body and the soul of their dear departed are united in Christ. But there was no time for a proper burial that night. My uncle wept to part with his brother without a proper burial, but he knew what had to be done. He did what his brother would have wanted; he took care of his family. He knelt and kissed his brother on the forehead, and then he rose up and spoke to us.

Brian: We must leave him now or we'll all be dead. There are black savages everywhere killing every white they see. I'm going to try to take you to my ship as 'prisoners.' Come while I tie you together.

My uncle smeared black mud over his face so that he might look like a negro from a distance. Up close there was no way my uncle's features could be mistaken for a negro's.

Brian: We might get by. Remember you're my prisoners — try to act the part.

Evelyn: What if they challenge us? You really don't look much like a negro even covered with mud.

Brian: If anyone challenges us, I'll kill them. Don't worry, Evelyn, we'll make it.

Uncle Brian set the house ablaze, and with only the clothes on our backs — for prisoners couldn't be seen carrying their belongings — we left our home and my father. After all these years, the tears still come when I recount that terrible departure.

From a distance I'm sure it did appear that my uncle was a negro with two white female captives and a young male captive. But anyone who came close would be a danger, because they would see that a white man was trying to save three whites from death and torture. And that was the only law left in Haiti. All whites must be tortured and killed.

We made it to within fifty yards of my uncle's ship when two drunken negroes saw what my uncle was up to. They shouted an alarm to other negroes and charged straight at my uncle with their machetes.

My uncle still had his sword and a brace of pistols. He ran one of them through and shot the other in the head. A group of negroes, about nine in number, having been alerted by the two other negroes, were now running toward us. My uncle bid us drop the ropes from our limbs, for we had only been loosely tied, and run for the ship. As we ran for the ship my uncle turned to face the black barbarians. No army regiment ever had a better rearguard than Brian Delaine. The blacks wanted to kill my uncle quickly in order to get at us. It was not to be. Brian Delaine killed all but one, who ran back into the darkness of Haiti. My uncle arrived on board unscathed a few minutes after us.

At Sea that Night

Brian Delaine I gave the women my cabin. Can the lad bunk with you?

First Mate: Yes, Captain, but where will you sleep?

Brian: I'll sleep sitting up outside the ladies' cabin.

First Mate: I understand.

Brian: And, Malcolm...

FM: Yes, captain?

Brian: Thanks.

FM: For what?

Brian: For keeping the ship in the harbor until I got the boy and women on board. The men must have wanted to pull out, what with all the niggers swarming the docks looking for white blood.

FM: There were a few that talked about it, but I put them straight. And there's no need to thank me. You took me on as your first mate five years ago when I had only the clothes on my back and a proud Highland name. I wasn't about to leave you to the tender mercies of those black savages. I'm only sorry your brother didn't make it.

Brian: So am I.

FM : Enough said, captain.

Brian: You're still up?

Peter: I still can't believe he's dead.

Brian: I'm not a church-going man. You know that, Peter. But on the important things I believe what your father and every white man that is a white man believes. A ship's captain should never be without this book. I've read this passage so many times for burials at sea, but never with the heart and the faith that I'm going to read it tonight:

"Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die."

I'm not suggesting you should ever forget what happened this night, Peter, but when you think of your father, think of him at the same time as ... dare I say His name? I must. Think of him at the same time as you think of Christ. Then you'll see your father and Christ as you should see them, as all loving hearts do see them.

You needn't be ashamed of those tears. Go back to your cabin. And remember your sister and your mother need you to be strong.

So much more I could say to you, Peter, my namesake, but let that end the tale of the terrible night. A few more pages about the years after that terrible night, and I'll be finished with the manuscript.

France was no place for us at that time, with every aristocrat in constant danger from the Jacobins who kept feeding Madame Guillotine. And even if we had wanted to return to France, France had no place for us. My grandparents on both my mother's and my father's side of the family had gone to their deaths on the guillotine. Even the Jacobins admitted that they died bravely.

My uncle took the three of us to England. Mother recovered all the family fortune that was not tied up in the estate, portable property as Mr. Dickens' great character Wemick called it, after we arrived, from the Swiss banks where my father had transferred their funds during the time of the Jacobin revolution. So we had enough money to take up residence in a modest English cottage in the town of Rockridge, off the southern coast of England. Life there was not unpleasant, but my mother never really recovered from my father's death. She died after four years in England. I was twenty years of age, and my sister was twenty-two years. The empiricists tell us that there is no such thing as a broken heart; therefore, it is impossible to die from a broken heart. But the empiricists don't know anything. My mother died of a broken heart. And I would have died with her, except for the fact that I had some business to attend to. But more about that later.

The main reason my mother took the house on the coast of England was because of my uncle. He always anchored his ship in port and came to see us often. It was on one such visit, six months after the death of my mother, when my uncle told me of some unfinished business of his own.

Brian: How has Evelyn been since your mother's death?

Peter: At first I didn't think she would live through it, but she seems to be returning to some kind of normal life now. It helps that we have made some friends here in Rockridge and have also been in contact with some other French exiles.

Brian: And how are you, Peter?

Peter: I won't die from sorrow. I won't die from anything until I've had their hearts' blood.

Brian: What do you mean, Peter? The men directly responsible for your father's death and for your mother's death from grief are all dead. You saw Father Genevesse and Jacques Bauché die the same night your father was murdered.

Peter: There were others. Since I've been in England I've been reading about this thing they call the French Revolution. Have you ever heard of a man named Edmund Burke?

Brian: Yes, of course, I've met him and consider him my friend.

Peter: You know Burke! What is he like? I must tell you that I love him; he seems so noble. And he hates the French Jacobins. He calls them regicides.

Brian: And so they are. As for Burke the man, he is everything he seems to be in his writings. He is the soul of honour.

Peter: He talks of war with the regicide French. I want to join him, Uncle.

Brian: Now wait, Peter. Mr. Burke writes like Shakespeare – his words cut right to a man's heart because he writes from the heart. But I fear not even Burke's eloquence can inspire a nation to restore another nation's monarchy and to punish another nation's criminals. I've read Mr. Burke's letters against the regicide French – he is right in everything he says – but I'm afraid the English will not fight the regicides.

Peter: Then I will fight them, Uncle. There is something burning inside of me that I must give way to. My passion for their blood is not something that can be denied.

Brian: But whose blood, Peter? You can't kill all the Jacobins.

Peter: Before I answer that, Uncle, I want you to tell me what your business in France is. You know if you're identified as an aristocrat you'll be killed, and yet you tell me you have business in France. So I ask you — what is your business there?

Brian: I go on family business. I'm going to France to kill the men responsible for sending my brother Robert, my parents, and your mother's parents, to the guillotine.

Peter: Then, with all due respect, Uncle, how can you deny me the right to go to France and fight the Jacobins?

Brian: First, because you are my brother's son. And since his death you have become my son. Second, you haven't any idea of who you are going to kill. You just want to kill Jacobins. My trip to France is an affair of honour. I don't expect to wipe out Jacobinism in France by what I do. But if each Frenchman would take care of his family honour, Jacobinism would soon be destroyed. I can't make other Frenchmen be Frenchmen instead of weasels. I can only do what I must do. And what I must do does not include risking the life of my brother's only son.

Peter: But as my father's only son, don't I have the same right as you to avenge the murder of my grandparents and my uncle?

Brian: We won't discuss this anymore. You are not coming to France, it's that simple. I want no more talk of such nonsense.

There was more talk, not that day, but in the weeks that followed. I was respectful but persistent with my uncle, and in the end I won out. Not because my uncle was weak-willed, but because blood spoke to blood. In his heart, he knew that I had a blood right to go with him.

Certain conditions were imposed upon me though. I was to obey my uncle's orders implicitly, and the scope of our killings was not to extend beyond those who were involved in the executions of the Delaines. This wasn't because my uncle was indifferent to the fate of the rest of his countrymen – far from it – it was because my uncle knew that he could not single-handedly wipe out Jacobinism in France.

A few days before our departure for France, my uncle obtained for me an interview with Edmund Burke. The interview remains, to this day, the greatest honour of my life. I remember every word the incomparable Burke spoke to me as if it were yesterday. He was in retirement at the time of our meeting yet still not retired. A man like Burke never retires. His letters against the regicide French were still a source of hope for all of Christian Europe and a thorn in the side of the enemies of Christian Europe.

Burke's estate was rather humble, like the man himself. He welcomed me to his home as if I was doing him the honour.

Edmund Burke: You've had more than your share of sorrow for a man so young.

Peter: No more than many others who had the misfortune to live in the age of the Jacobins.

Burke: Yes, these are terrible times. It seems that we are spending the unbought grace of life like profligate sailors on a drunken shore leave.

Peter: "The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness."

Burke: You've quoted Burke better than Burke could. And with such feeling. Truly we are kindred spirits, young man.

Peter: Yes, that is the way I feel. We are kindred spirits.

Burke: Kindred spirits despite our difference in age and nationality. But there are two things the aged Burke must tell the young Peter Delaine. First, this enterprise you plan to share with your uncle is noble, but I think it might have a better chance of success if your uncle would make a few changes in his plans. We'll talk about that later when your uncle joins us.

There remains one thing more I want to say to you alone, Peter. No man ever formed a loving attachment to a system of religion or to a system of government. All of our affections begin with our families and extend to our local neighborhoods and then to our country. Man is a provincial creature. So long as he stays provincial in his affections a man will not go too far astray from what is right. Do you understand what I am saying?

Peter: Yes, I think I do. You bid me stay faithful to my family and my people.

Burke: Yes, and by that fidelity to your people you'll stay faithful to the God of your people, not to a system of theology but to a living God, Jesus Christ.

Peter: I won't forget what you have told me.

Burke: It strikes me that you and your uncle have seen the ultimate future of Jacobinism. Such ignoble, inhuman ideologies as Jacobinism always come to a country violently, preceded by high-sounding words like liberty, equality, and fraternity, and always end in a bloodbath. A perfect equality is never possible. Some are always more equal. A select group of people become "the people," and everyone else must either serve the people or be exterminated by the people. In the end, if Jacobinism is not stopped, the only truly authentic people will be the negroes. The Jacobins will bid us fall down and worship the negro.

Brian : When that day comes, the world will still see the Delaines standing upright and in defiance.

Burke: I'm sorry, I didn't hear you come in.

Brian: No, I'm sorry for barging in. But we must be off. We have some final preparations to make.

Peter: Uncle, Mr. Burke had a suggestion before we embark.

Burke: Yes, I do. I was thinking it might be better if you traveled through France as Englishmen rather than as Frenchmen. As Frenchmen you would fall under suspicion almost immediately. Try as you might to conceal it, your aristocratic breeding would come out, and you would then face the guillotine. But traveling as Englishmen — and I could send two

English friends with you to make your Englishness all the more authentic — you will be more likely to accomplish your mission and come safely back to England.

Brian: What you say makes sense. But could you find such men? We need to leave almost immediately.

Burke: Two such men can be ready within the hour; I've already broached the subject to them.

Brian: Let me meet them. If they are willing, we'll follow your advice.

Burke: Good. Now, my two kindred spirits, let us embrace, hopefully not for the last time.

How can I describe those four months in France? It was part idyll, part nightmare, and finally a triumph of honour.

There is nothing, except possibly that first love, which can compare with a young man's first foray onto the battlefield of honour. My two English friends were closer to my age than to my uncle's age. They were twenty-two-year-old Edmund Drake, a direct descendant of Sir Francis, and the twenty-four-year-old Jonathan Stone. Both men came from noble families and were accompanying us because they believed in that charity of honour that Mr. Burke wrote about. Just as my uncle and I felt a stain upon our honour because of the unavenged murders of our kinsmen, so did our two English brothers feel compelled to aid us so that no stain could be attached to their honour for a failure to aid their fellow aristocrats in their time of need.

The first two months of our time in France was spent largely in the provinces, planning and gathering information. I never completely forgot the bloody, serious venture I had committed myself to, but there were many moments, whole weeks in fact, when I really felt like an Englishman traveling with my boon companions through picturesque France. Away from Paris and the other major cities, life seemed the same in France as it must have been before the Revolution. But of course this was all an illusion. As you got closer to the towns, you could see, feel, and smell the presence of a malignant power, the power of the Jacobins. At such moments we were so grateful to Mr. Burke. We never could have survived, disguised as French peasants. As it was, Edmund and Jonathan did all the talking to the French, because their French was with an English accent. They gave out that we, my uncle and I, spoke only English, thus sparing us the necessity of speaking perfect French and revealing ourselves as Frenchmen. Upon prior arrangement, before we even entered France we had all agreed to speak English even when we were alone together, in case some busybody might overhear my uncle and me speaking French.

Very soon, my uncle discovered who it was that had to be held to account, but it would not be so easy to confront the murderer because he was very high up in the Jacobin hierarchy. His name was Andre Pavolin, and before the Revolution he had been a wine merchant. As such he frequently came in contact with many of the aristocratic families. He was quite the hale fellow, well met, in those days. But after the Revolution he got a position in the Jacobin government and delighted in sending whole families of aristocrats, whom he had fawned over when a wine merchant, to the guillotine. Among those he sent to the guillotine were my grandparents and my uncle Robert, the oldest son who had stayed in France.

My grandparents on my father's side were not unknown to me. They had visited us many times in our plantation in Saint-Domingue. My uncle Robert and I had never met. His wife went to the guillotine with him, and his children were murdered the night the Jacobins came for their parents. As I saw up close the evil wrought by the Jacobins, I thought of Burke's words: "The revolution harpies of France, sprung from night and hell, or from that chaotic anarchy, which generates equivocally 'all monstrous all prodigious things,' cuckoo-like, adulterously lay their eggs, and brood over, and hatch them in the nest of every neighbouring state."

Truly the Jacobins sprang from hell. And the worst of it is that the female Jacobins, the harpies, were the worst of all. Pavolin's wife, for instance, always dipped a handkerchief in the blood of the aristocrats denounced by her husband, and when she "entertained" she would put the bloody handkerchiefs on display. "This is the blood of Mademoiselle _____ and this is the blood of Monsieur _____. Surely Tennyson was right when he said, "the difference between a man and a man is the difference between heaven and earth, but the difference between a woman and a woman is the difference between heaven and hell."

And where did Citizeness Pavolin display her handkerchiefs? In her landed estate, the same estate that once belonged to my grandparents. What's that you say? You thought all was equal in the new regime of the Jacobins? Far from it! Some, the upper echelon of Jacobins, were decidedly more equal than others. Those who attempt to level all mankind to a state of perfect equality are in reality tyrants who want to rule mankind in the name of an abstract, mythical equality. This I learned from Burke and my own observations of the French Jacobins in action.

The rather pleasant idyll in the French countryside came to an end as we neared Paris. As the day of reckoning approached, we all became more serious and tight-lipped. Even Edmund, who was always ready with a jest, said very little. And then came the confrontation for which we had so carefully planned.

My uncle knew the house; he had grown up in it, and he knew where Monsieur and Madame Pavolin slept. What concerned my uncle were the servants. He didn't want to kill any servants that were not Jacobins, but as it turned out, when my uncle investigated the backgrounds of Pavolin's people he discovered that they all were Jacobins. The servants that had stayed loyal to my grandparents had been either killed or cast out into the streets to fend for themselves. So it was understood by all of us that whomever tried to come between us and the Pavolins would die. As it turned out, the paid lackeys had very little stomach for a fight. Edmund killed one servant who tried to run him through with a sword, and I killed another who tried to defend his master, but after those two met their deaths, the rest of the household staff allowed themselves to be herded into the dining room under the guard of Edmund and Jonathan.

How did it feel to kill a man? You must remember that sudden violent death was something that I had seen before on that fateful night in Saint-Domingue. Did it make a difference to me that now I was the one who had issued the death sentence? Not morally. I knew that I had come to France to kill Jacobins so I had no pangs of conscience about the man I killed. It did sicken me though. Just because I knew the killing was a necessity did not mean I received any pleasure from it.

With the potential resistance captured and confined, my uncle and I proceeded to the bedroom of the Pavolins. What were their dreams that night? Did they have a foreboding that something was afoot? Or did they sleep content and happy in their new found wealth and their positions within the Jacobin government? I do not know. How can anyone know such things?

We tied Madame Pavolin to the bedpost, and Brian told her husband to get his sword.

Brian: You will have much more of a chance to live than my parents had. If you kill me your wife and you will remain alive.

Pavolin: How do I know your nephew will honour your promise?

Brian: My nephew is a Delaine; he is an aristocrat and his honour is without stain.

Pavolin : Then die, Brian Delaine.

The fight did not last long. My uncle ran him through within three minutes. I think Pavolin thought he would win, because he began the fight with a supremely confident look on his face that soon gave way to panic and despair. He never spoke again after his final sneering boast.

As for Madame Pavolin? We did not abuse or molest her as so many of the aristocratic women had been molested and abused before their executions, but we did execute her. We used the wine cellar as an execution chamber, and hung her from the rafters. The servants and staff were bound and locked in the wine cellar with the corpse of Madame Pavolin. My uncle thought that one and all, after they extricated themselves from their bonds, would get good and drunk and give us at least 24 hours to escape from France. He was right. We arrived in England twenty-four hours later, undetected by the Jacobin forces.

One week after our return, my uncle and I went to see Mr. Burke. I waited in the outer room while my uncle talked with him. After an hour or so my uncle came out from his conference with Burke.

Brian: He's quite ill, Peter, and I'm afraid death is not far away, but he wants so much to speak to you. Don't be embarrassed to speak to him. Sick or well, he is still the unconquerable Burke. His concern is for his countrymen and his kind, the Europeans. Go speak with him; I'll wait here for you. And remember, quite probably you'll be speaking for the last time to one

of the greatest men Europe has ever known.

Edmund Burke: Take a seat, my young friend, and forgive me if I do not get up to greet you. My illness dictates that I sit rather than stand.

Peter: I'm sorry to find you so ill, Mr. Burke.

Burke: It's nothing, Peter. Simply the normal ills of old age. I'd prefer to die standing up, in actual battle with the Jacobins, but I'll have to content myself with the metaphysical battle. You are one of my greatest consolations, Peter. My death will be easier knowing that at least one faithful heart – and your uncle is another – truly understands what the Jacobins are and vows to spend his life fighting them.

Peter: I hope that my life will prove worthy of your confidence.

Burke: I know it will, Peter. Once a man, a real man, has seen the true beauty – and all true beauty is moral beauty – of a Europe consecrated to Christ, he will never accept the new Jacobin Europe.

Peter: It seems that the Jacobin influence is spreading throughout Europe. Everything you warned us about is coming true. We, the white Europeans, have spent the unbought grace of life and have replaced that grace with liberalism.

Burke: Yes, that's all too true, Peter. Even Britain has succumbed. I believe that Britain, since our glorious revolution, has been the foremost Christian nation of Europe. If not for Britain, the exiles of your own nation would have had no place to go. But ideological Jacobinism, which I call liberalism, has engulfed Britain as well as France. We're moving slower than the French; the innate conservatism of the British people will not be easily defeated, but we are definitely moving toward a liberal state that is opposed to Christianity. When that finally happens with the appearance of a liberal theocracy in France, Britain, and the rest of Europe, only a remnant of Europeans will remain faithful to my Britain and my Europe, both of which were consecrated to our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Every European is bound by ties of blood and faith to oppose the liberals' Europe and support His Europe.

You will face many temptations in your life, Peter. There will be the usual pagan temptations, which I need not delineate; we are all quite aware of them. But your greatest temptation will be the temptation to minimize the evil of liberalism because you want to go peacefully through the world. 'It's not that bad and a man must live,' you will say to yourself at some point in your life. That is the time when you must go deep into your heart and feel what your ancestors felt. The devil is a liberal, and you can have nothing to do with the devil or his minions. Lest you be tempted to soften toward your own nation, for instance, always remember that those who are governing now, even though they finally deposed Robespierre, are still the same men who voted to kill your king.

Peter: With God as my witness and as I hope for my salvation, I shall never make peace in my heart with the liberals.

Burke: God bless you, Peter. It will not be easy, but I know you shall prevail. You have a great capacity for love and a great capacity for hate, a hate for those who hurt or threaten those you love. Never believe pious hypocrites, whose faith is paper thin, when they tell you not to hate. A man who does not hate where he should hate will be unable to love where he should love.

Peter: I understand.

Burke: I believe you do understand, Peter. Now let me tell you one last thing. Never trust institutions; trust the spirit behind the institutions. All churches, all governments, at least the European governments and the European churches, were created to serve our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who can be known by every man who has a heart to listen to His words of salvation. Never abandon that Christ, the simple Christ of the Gospels, and you will never be ultimately overcome even if the whole world caves in to liberalism. Now, before you go, let me pray with you.

Burke: Holy Father, in all things bless this young man and help him to withstand the devilish forces arrayed against him. As he grows in years, help him to come to know, in his heart, the love of Him whose love passeth the understanding of the intellect. And may that love sustain him in this world and the world to come. In Christ's name, Amen.

That was the last time I saw and spoke to Edmund Burke in this world, but he has always been with me throughout what has turned out to be a very long life. How well have I kept my pledge to Burke? Well, there have been stains on my honour, but a man must be truthful even if the truth tends to show him in a good light. Though I stumbled often I never ultimately succumbed to the liberal demons of the new Europe. And it is my hope that at some time the Delaine blood will renew itself in the person of my namesake, my great grandson, Peter Delaine, to whom I have willed this document. My son died faithful and true to Christ and Christ's Europe. My grandson went over to the liberals. One can only bear witness with one's life. If no one, not even those of the same blood, care to listen to my witness or follow in my footsteps, well, — there is free will. I hope Peter Delaine becomes a Delaine, but I at least will follow my Father, Mother, Sister, Son, Uncle, and Edmund Burke to the grave, having fought the good fight, despite my many imperfections, until the end.

-END OF THE MANUSCRIPT-

Footnote: My great-grandfather died six years after writing that family memoir. He was 101 years of age, and I was seven, when he died. I didn't read the manuscript until I was eighteen.

After I finished reading Peter's great-grandfather's account of his family's suffering at the hands of the Jesuit priest and the black Jacobins, I got a call to a sick bed, so I left a note for Peter saying that I would meet him in my study on the following night, providing something unexpected did not come up.

Peter was waiting for me the next evening; I had given instructions to admit him to the study whether I was there or not. After a few polite niceties, Peter came to the point.

"Did you read the manuscript?"

"Yes, I did. It was profoundly moving and very interesting. If I may be so bold, what was the rest of your great-grandfather's life like? Was it as eventful as his early life, or did he manage to settle down somewhere?"

"He married a French émigrée when he was twenty-six. He never returned to Haiti, but he did fight the Jacobins, spiritually and actually the rest of his life."

"In what way?"

"Well, he never was able to raise an army of French émigrés and restore the monarchy, but he did fight many duels, always with the Jacobins who fashioned themselves the new royalty. He did what he could, but he never thought it was enough."

"And his children?"

"He had four daughters and one son. His son and his daughters remained true to eternal France and absolutely opposed to Jacobin France. They never flew the tricolour flag."

"What about his grandson, your father?"

"Ah, that was another matter. My father, despite his heritage, grew up neutral. He took the line of, 'I don't approve of the excesses of the French revolution, but after all it was necessary.' Naturally that did not set well with my grandfather or my great-grandfather, and because of his views, my father was estranged from them. They seldom had contact. I, having had virtually no contact with the anti-Jacobin faction of my family, grew up a thorough-going French liberal. Which is why I entered the priesthood; I wanted to serve Christ by spreading liberalism, which I thought was the gospel for modern man. It was when I saw liberalism close up from within the church that I started to listen to my great-grandfather, through his manuscript. At his death my great-grandfather willed me the manuscript you have just read, because his son was dead and he knew that his grandson was against him. I don't hate my father, but I now know he was wrong. Liberalism is from the devil, and we can never compromise with it."

"You'll get no argument from me on that point; Burke has always been a writer dear to my heart. Your ancestors certainly seem to have been at the forefront of the battle against the Jacobins. What happened to your great-great-uncle, the man your great-grandfather called the hero of the family tragedy?"

"He married an Englishwoman and settled in Sussex. I don't think Baroness Orczy knew of my uncle, but her book *The Scarlet Pimpernel* certainly captured the spirit and adventurous life of Brain Delaine. While the terror was still going on, he made many forays back into France to rescue aristocrats. Like the Scarlet Pimpernel he kept his identity secret. Unlike the Scarlet Pimpernel he had no songs written about him, but amongst the French émigré population in England he was called the scourge of Jacobinism. He never reconciled with the French government, not under Napoleon nor the Republic. My uncle, a descendant of Brain Delaine, told me that whenever the topic of reconciliation came up Brain Delaine simply stated, 'They are all regicides; I will never make peace with them.' And he never did."

"He lived the rest of his life in England?"

"Yes, except for his rescue missions to France and two or three trips to Haiti."

"Why Haiti? What was there left for him to do?"

"My uncle never gave me any details about those trips. All he said was that his great-grandfather's excursions to Haiti were for rescue and punitive purposes. So I can only assume that the family sword was unsheathed again on those missions."

"Children, did he have children?"

"Yes, he did, and he was blessed with many years. There seems to be a longevity gene in the Delaine family."

"Where does this family history figure in your life, Peter?"

"It's hard to put into words... I suppose it all comes down to what Edmund Burke called that 'charity of honour.' I feel I violated the charity of honour by being loyal to a universalist idea rather than to my family and my blood. I'd like, in some small way, to atone, if not completely then at least partially for my sin against that charity of honour."

"Atonement is primarily something that takes place within a man's heart, Peter. You seem to have made a heartfelt atonement for your Jacobin sympathies. What else do you think it necessary to do? We must be prepared to forgive ourselves when forgiveness is warranted."

"What you say is all quite true. But in my case, there is a point of family honour that must be taken care of. My great-grandfather and Burke have made me see that if family honour is not placed first, then honour has to be abandoned. A man who betrays his family will betray his clan and his nation."

"Then you have something in mind that you must do? Something involving your family honour?"

"Yes."

So Peter finally came to his main purpose for seeking me out. He needed my help to remove what he felt was a stain on his honour. What I am about to relate will seem quite incredible to 20th century readers, but the march of progress is a mirage; we are still the same morally, struggling for salvation against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The pity of the modern man is that he no longer believes in the wickedness and snares of the devil or in the devil's Divine Antagonist, Jesus Christ. Peter Delaine believed in both, and he wanted my help against the devil and his minions, fighting them in the name of Christ.

Everything went back to that fateful night of almost two-hundred years ago when Peter's great, great grandfather was murdered by Jacques Bauché. If you recall, Bauché was killed on that same night by Brain Delaine. And you'll also recall that Brian Delaine made several trips back to Saint-Domingue after that fateful night for punitive and charitable purposes. It seems incredible, but it is quite true, that Brain Delaine did whatever he could to rescue the few remaining whites in Saint-Domingue and to punish as many leaders of the negro rebellions as he could lay his hands on. Several prominent, newly crowned negro tyrants of blood were found strangled in their beds or lying dead in their mansions with a bullet between their eyes. And many a white captive found themselves released from the sacrificial altars at the last minute by Brain Delaine. He was feared as the great avenger of his people. And long after his death the name of Brian Delaine survived in the voodoo cults of Haiti as the great white devil who could still reach out his arm and destroy black men. Voodoo priests invoked his name to put curses on other blacks. If a man suddenly took sick who was an enemy of one of the witch doctors it was supposed to be because the witch doctor removed his protective shield of black magic from the victim and allowed the spirit of Brain Delaine to claim another victim. It was steadfastly believed throughout the black community in Haiti that the witch doctors were the only men standing between the blacks and the vengeance of Brian Delaine.

A black Roman Catholic priest, a Haitian who blended voodoo and Catholicism, decided to put an end to what he felt was a morbid fear among his people of the ghost of Brain Delaine. He was opposed by many of the witch doctors because they needed Brian Delaine. They wanted to be looked on as the only ones powerful enough to keep the ghost of Brian Delaine from harming the blacks of Haiti. And the witch doctors were the most powerful group of men in Haiti. But the black Catholic voodoo priest had two things in his favor. First, he could get help from other European priests, and second, he was a direct descendant of Jacques Bauché, whose martyred name was also a power in Haiti.

So Father Jacque Bauché – he was named for his famous ancestor – went to France to obtain support for his scheme. And he got it from two French Jesuits. In the name of whatever pig god they worshipped — it was most certainly not Christ — they agreed to help Jacques Bauché accomplish his bloody mission.

Peter learned of Bauché's trip to France and his visit with two Roman Catholic priests from a friend of his who was familiar with Peter's family history. When Peter investigated, he discovered a truly hideous plot aimed at a direct descendant of Brian Delaine.

I've never felt the slightest inclination to go over to Rome. The inhumanity of Roman universalism has always filled me with horror. Nevertheless I still regarded the Protestant minister and the Roman Catholic priest as serving in the same corps as myself. So it was particularly sad for me to see two of my co-religionists go over, so blatantly, to Satan. When all is laid bare on that final day of judgment, I suspect we will see that the fateful separation was the heart from the head. Once a man makes an intellectual system of the Christian faith and makes his own mind the final arbiter of all things Christian, he is fit for the foulest and blackest treasons and stratagems imaginable. Father Ormand and Father Lejune were willing to betray their race because they had already abstracted the living God into a mind-forged system of their own invention. In their minds everything that had the stink of humanity, from Christ, to their own people, was hateful and deserving of death.

The two apostate priests had helped Father Bauché identify an English girl who was a direct descendant of Brain Delaine. You'll remember that Brain Delaine married an Englishwoman. Well, Father Ormand and Father Lejune traced the line of Brain Delaine all the way to Susan Bradley. Susan was 18 years old, living with her parents in London. All three were members of my parish. Why didn't Jacques Bauché and the two Jesuits want the mother? After all, she too was a direct descendant of Brain Delaine. The answer turned out to be quite simple. The twisted priests and their cohorts wanted a virgin for the blood ritual of vengeance.

I don't think any of the three priests, not even Jacques Bauché, believed in the efficacy of virgin sacrifice, but Jacques Bauché's Haitian followers believed in it. And that is why he brought six followers along with him. He needed them to witness the sacrifice and tell other Haitians what they had witnessed. Without their witness, Bauché could not prove that he had removed the curse of Brain Delaine.

Jacques Bauché would become the most feared witch doctor in Haiti after he murdered Susan Bradley, but what did Father Lejune and Father Ormand stand to gain by their participation in such a heinous crime? It's hard to say why a man turns to Satan, but there is something that I've observed in the modern Europeans, particularly in apostate clergymen, that might go a long way toward explaining the actions of Father Lejune and Father Ormand.

When a man has only an intellectual knowledge of the Christian faith and no affection for the person of Christ, he tends to resent God. He looks on God as the law giver only, and a rather harsh law giver at that. He then creates another God, an abstract God, who will do his will. Neither Ormand nor Lejune ever really knew Christ; hence, they were open, I believe, to any deviation from Christianity that promised them some relief from the spiritual ennui that always engulfs the post-Christian European. And what is the antidote for the spiritual ennui of the post-Christian European? Some things never change; it is sex and blood. Ormand and Lejune fantasized about killing Susan Bradley and then having sex with Bauché's henchmen.

Bauché's beliefs were somewhat different than the two European priests. He didn't believe that the slaughter of Susan Bradley would remove the curse of Brian Delaine, because he didn't believe in the curse of Brian Delaine. But he did believe in the major tenets of the Christian faith, and he hated those tenets. His hero was Satan in whom he believed with absolute certainty.

So these three priests and the six negro devotees of the voodoo gods of Haiti landed on English shores to slaughter Susan Bradley. Peter had done his homework well. He knew everything about the plans of the three priests. They were to arrive on June 3rd, a Wednesday, and two days after that they planned to kidnap Susan Bradley on the way home from the dress shop where she worked. The kidnapping had to be done by Fathers Lejune and Ormand because the section of London where Susan lived had no negroes in its precincts. Their presence would arouse suspicion, whereas Fathers Lejune and Ormand, dressed as working class Englishmen, would not arouse any suspicion. After they made Susan a prisoner, the two priests planned to drive her to the outskirts of a small town, Taven, on the southern coast of England. There, on the desolate cliffs overlooking the sea, they planned to kill Susan in a ritual that combined the elements of a black mass and the voodoo rites of the Haitian witch doctors.

Peter wanted me to help him contact Susan and her parents in order to warn them of the danger Susan was in. He thought they would only believe such an incredible story if their own pastor could attest to its truth. And frankly I wasn't sure I could convince the Bradleys of the truth of Peter Delaine's story. From the perspective of a lower middle class English family of the 1930's, the whole affair seemed much too fantastical. But the parents and Susan did believe in the fantastical tale of Christ's death on the cross and resurrection from the dead, so why, believing that, would they doubt that the battle against principalities and powers, that Christ's servant Paul warned us of, could come upon us in any form and at any time?

Since Peter's great-grandfather and namesake set the stage for this story with his narrative that went from narrative to theater, why should I not avail myself of the same means to an end? Let me set the stage. Picture a lower middle class English living room, at 10:30 pm. Susan's father, a tall lean man with kind eyes and an athletic bearing no doubt maintained by keeping his appointed rounds as a postman, sat in his chair near the family hearth. Susan's ten-year-old brother Donald was already in bed asleep. Susan's mother, Mrs. Bradley, attractive for her age, but slightly overweight, sat next to her husband. She knew of her famous ancestor, Brian Delaine, but she did not have the intimate knowledge of that branch of her family that Peter had. Once Peter informed the Bradleys of the complete details of the Delaine family history, and I vouched for Peter, the Bradleys readily believed the truth. And of course Susan Bradley was present, sitting with her parents, in the full bloom of womanhood, more than attractive, quite beautiful. The curtain rises on the stage at 11 pm after all three learned the truth from us and believed it.

Mr. Bradley: I'm certainly not going to stand by and see my daughter killed by those Satanists, and that's what they are. I'll kill them all myself if I have to.

Mrs. Bradley: But will that be necessary, Edward? Can't we turn them all over to Scotland Yard? What do you think, Reverend Grey?

Reverend Grey: We could tell Scotland Yard about this, but I would be very worried about relying on Scotland Yard. The police are essentially reactive. They prevent crime by catching murderers after they have murdered. Their speedy apprehension of murderers is a deterrent to other murders, but I want Susan to live to a ripe old age, and I don't want her to be a case for Scotland Yard to solve.

Mr. Bradley: Nor do I, but what do you suggest, Reverend? And may I be quite blunt? You are not a man of action. I mean no disrespect, but if these men intend what you say they intend, I don't know that either an Anglican minister or a Roman Catholic priest is the man to stop them.

Peter: I have no intention of allowing the Reverent Grey to become involved. It is my honour that has been stained, and it is my kinswoman who is in jeopardy. As God is my witness, these men shall not touch Susan.

Mrs. Bradley: I'm sure you have honourable intentions, Father, but the fact remains that we only trust you because Reverend Grey trusts you. How can we entrust the life of our daughter to you?

Mr. Bradley: Or to you, Reverend Grey?

Susan: May I say something? After all I'm not a disinterested party in this affair.

Mr. Bradley: Of course you may.

Susan: Well then, I have this to say: Reverend Grey baptized me, he confirmed me, and I received my first communion from him. He has come to our house as a guest more times than I can count, and he has also visited this house when little Donald, myself, or you, Papa, and you, Mother, were sick. I'll never forget when I had the fever four years ago. He sat with me all through the day and into the night. I went to sleep with the words of the Gospel resonating through my room. The way the Reverend Grey read the Gospel to me that night was... Well, it was as if I had heard the words of our Lord for the first time. I can't describe the comfort I got from those words read by a...

Rev. Grey: No, Susan...

Susan: Yes, Reverend, I mean it – a saint. Whatever he advises, I will do. Don't you see, Mother? Don't you see, Father? We can trust this man in everything.

Mrs. Bradley: But Susan, you're young! Just because a man is good does not mean he is competent in every aspect of life. Your father and I are not questioning Reverend Grey's goodness, we are questioning his competence...

Mr. Bradley: Your mother is right, Susan. This matter is not something that should be left to the Reverend.

Susan: But I'm content to leave it to him.

Rev. Grey: Perhaps I didn't express myself clearly. If you leave this matter to me and Father Delaine, you are not putting Susan into our hands alone. I have many friends, in all walks of life. What I am asking you to do, for Susan's sake, is to trust me to get the help necessary to free Susan from those fiends, not just for one night, but forever.

There was much more said that night, but ultimately Susan's trust in me prevailed.

Everything was left to Father Delaine and me. Peter contacted Bauché, Lejune, and Ormand and convinced them that no kidnapping was necessary; he would deliver Susan into their hands. It wasn't difficult for him to convince the three priests that he would betray his kinswoman, since they were the type of men that would betray their own. The fateful meeting took place on the cliffs of Taven. It seemed as if we were all upon the heath where Macbeth met with the weird sisters. Father Ormand and Father Lejune were present in their priestly garb. Bauché was in the garb of a voodoo priest, and his six followers were also dressed in the ceremonial attire of voodoo devotees. Father Delaine appeared to be alone, leading Susan Bradley, who was clothed in a white bridal gown. I, for reasons which will become clear later, was not visibly present.

Jacques Bauché: Have you brought the victim?

Peter Delaine: Yes, she is drugged and barely conscious.

Father Ormand: Why have you brought her? Why didn't you have us take her?

Peter Delaine: Because I don't believe the guilt of the white man, particularly the guilt of my ancestors, can ever be remitted except by blood. I offer up my kinswoman in atonement for the sins of white men against the black.

Father Lejune: Yes, this sacrifice is only the beginning. What we do here tonight is holy, but the work must not stop here, it must go on until the world is purged of the white race.

Peter Delaine: What you speak is God's truth. The work must continue after tonight.

Jacques Bauché: Bind her to the altar, and we shall begin the ceremony.

I'll not describe the blasphemy that Lejune, Ormand, and Bauché called a ceremony. Suffice it to say that the ceremony came to a halt moments before the sacrifice.

Ghost : Stop, this shall not go on!

Father Ormand: Who are you? Kill him!

Ghost: I am Brian Delaine. You shall not defile my Faith or touch one hair of my kinswoman!

Father Lejune: What have you done?

Father Ormand : If you won't kill him, I will!

Ghost : Go, that boat will take you to the ship Jacques Bauché hired. Return to Haiti and never seek the blood of my people, or I'll have your blood! Take their bodies with you and bury them at sea. This is my command.

Jonathan Talbot : They're gone, Chris. That was a pretty impressive display of strength.

Rev. Christopher Grey : My childhood heroes were strongmen. Lifting heavy weights has always been a hobby of mine. Brian Delaine was supposed to have been quite strong, so I thought I could lend authenticity to my performance by lifting that stone altar. And I must thank you for shooting straight.

Jonathan Talbot: My task was easy. How do you feel, Miss Bradley?

Susan: I just want to go home. This is not something you forget.

Peter Delaine: Don't forget it, Susan. Remember it your entire life, but remember it as the night your God delivered you from evil.

Susan: I will, Father.

Peter Delaine: No, Susan, I'm your kinsman. To you, I'm Peter.

Rev. Grey: It's a pity we're not in France.

Peter Delaine: Why, Christopher?

Rev. Grey: Because then I could say the lines.

Peter Delaine: I still don't follow you.

Jonathan: I do. Say them anyway. We're close enough to France, and the lines fit.

Rev. Grey: "And then to Calais; and to England then, Where ne'er from France arriv'd more happy men."

Susan: May one happy woman say, 'amen'?

Rev. Grey: Yes.

Susan: Amen.

At the time I'm writing this remembrance, Peter is still alive. He stayed in England after his encounter with the descendant of the hated Jacques Bauché. For 12 years he taught in a small college in Sussex by the sea, claiming the sea was in his blood.

Peter taught history and taught it as no one else could. History in Peter's hand was a living, breathing entity. Through his passion for the truth behind historical events, Peter made his students see that the abstract principles of liberty, equality, and fraternity, abstracted from the minds of evil men bent on destroying what Burke called the unbought grace of life, were evil. Nor did Peter shrink from pointing out the logical consequences, as his great-grandfather saw in Haiti, of the implementation of the godless principles of the Jacobins. Negro savagery unleashed was the logical consequence, the higher culture subjected to the lowest of all cultures and everything good in Old Europe torn down and spit upon.

Peter did not spare Britain when he warned of the spreading influence of Jacobinism. "The old French aristocrats had a country to flee to. Where will Europeans go when Britain becomes a refuge for colored heathens?" Because of his honesty and his ability to influence his students for the good, Peter was dismissed after 12 years of teaching. He still lives in Sussex by the sea and teaches almost as many students on an informal basis at his home as he once did on a formal basis at the college.

Peter always visits me at the Christmas season, which seems particularly appropriate because it is during the Christmas season that we all feel, the most acutely, those ties of blood and kinship that bind us to each other and to our Lord. Peter returned to his God through those ties of blood and kinship, and I love and honour him for his spiritual journey. His is a great heart. In a few days, I'll be seeing him again, and together we will celebrate the birthday of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who shall always be the King of provincial, kith-and-kin Europe. As my kinsman wrote, "Where meek souls will receive Him still, The dear Christ enters in."

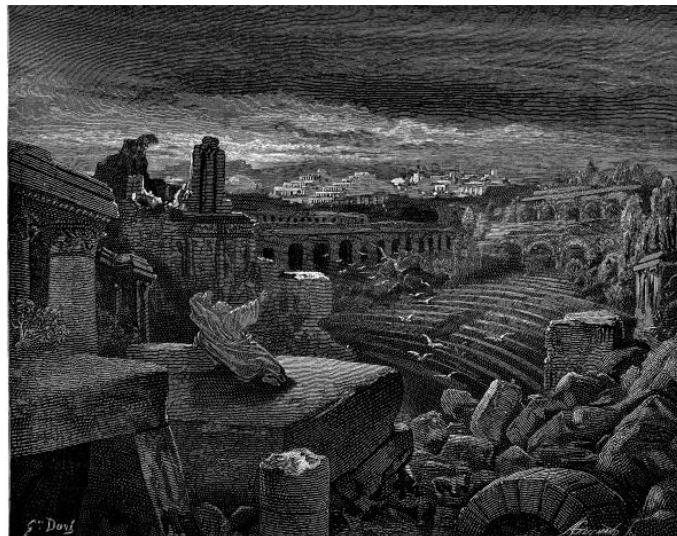


What Liberals Hath Wrought

December 29, 2012

Categories: Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke



Why do the heathen rage and the people imagine a vain thing? —*Psalm 2: 1*

The liberals have been in power in the countries of European origin for approximately one hundred years. And even now, when they have completely consolidated their power and squashed virtually all opposition, they refuse to accept responsibility when something goes terribly wrong in their world. They refuse to accept responsibility, because by liberal logic nothing can go wrong in utopia, and if something does go wrong, it is because utopia has not yet arrived and some bad people are impeding progress toward perfect peace and harmony. The liberals' reaction to the recent grade school massacre is a case in point. We know, from their ardent support of infanticide, that liberals have no sympathy for the children that were murdered in Connecticut. The slaughter of innocents does not appall liberals in the slightest. So why the wringing of hands and the phony tears? The liberals must feign concern when public school children are murdered because they want to maintain their power base. The public must believe that schools are safe because that is where children learn to be good liberals. If parents stop sending their children to public schools then the liberals will lose their primary indoctrination centers. Hence the feigned concern must be maintained, and the liberals need to deflect the focus away from the glaring flaws in utopia and focus on the bad men who are standing in the way of heaven on earth. In the case of the school killings, it is the opponents of gun control who are responsible for the murder of school children, the liberals tell us, because they refuse to allow the liberals to have a gun-free society. It is of absolutely no use to tell the liberals that

(1) *they are responsible for creating a climate where school killings are commonplace because they have undermined the Christian, patriarchal family, and*

(2) *that once having undermined the traditional family structure, they then refuse to protect school children from the consequences of the destruction of the patriarchal family by refusing to place armed guards in every classroom.*

There will always be violent madmen even in the best of all cultures, but in the worst of all cultures, which is a liberal culture, violent madmen are the norm. A modern day homicidal maniac, Charles Manson, said, "Of course I'm crazy, but being crazy doesn't mean much anymore because everybody is crazy." In a Christian society truth comes from out of the mouth of babes, because a pure undefiled child is the most likely person to grasp what is at the heart of a Christian culture. In direct contrast, a homicidal maniac like Charles Manson is a well-suited person to grasp the central ethos of a liberal society. Liberalism is based on the murder of God and the homicidal desire to kill every last vestige of His image in men. Innocence, which is closely allied to faith, must be murdered in the womb, and the Christ-bearing people that have survived the womb must be eradicated by whatever means necessary. How else can utopia be maintained?

Manson, McVeigh, and the grade school murderer are all the liberals' children, yet the liberals refuse to acknowledge them because the official liberal party line states that "there can never be bad children in utopia"; there can only be good, happy children who love liberals for creating heaven on earth. So all bad children must be the product of the bad, old, non-utopian, white civilization. Of course what the liberals, having abandoned the Christian faith, will never come to terms with is reality: evil is in the hearts of men, not in one isolated group of men (white men) nor in inanimate objects such as guns. Dostoyevsky's Underground Man took the liberals to task on this very point. "What if you build the perfect new world in a perfect crystal palace and someone comes along and smashes it, just because he wants to smash it?" The liberals always tell us that no one will want to smash their crystal palace. The school killings shove that lie back in the liberals' face. Liberal utopians never envision that their geometrically perfect world, devoid of God's grace, can produce madmen who want to smash their world.

Of course any decent European does want to smash the liberals' world. But because the antique European is not of the liberals' world he does not want to destroy liberalism by the slaughter of the innocents. The bloody sacrifice of the innocent is a sacrificial rite of the liberals, not the antique European. More school children will die — they must die — because liberals have decreed that individual human beings are merely cogs in the great liberal machine that will ultimately (the liberals constantly assure us) produce the kingdom of God on earth. Again, we refer to Dostoyevsky:

'...Tell me yourself—I challenge you: let's assume that you were called upon to build the edifice of human destiny so that men would finally be happy and would find peace and tranquility. If you knew that, in order to attain this, you would have to torture just one single creature, let's say the little girl who beat her chest so desperately in the outhouse, and that on her unavenged tears you could build that edifice, would you agree to do it? Tell me and don't lie!'

'No, I would not,' Alyosha said softly.

Alyosha's answer to the liberals' utopian inhumanity is our answer.

It is impossible to dialogue with the liberals and come to a mutual understanding because the utopian mindset is a totalitarian mindset that will brook no opposition. Absolute power is necessary to ensure that "the people" can enter paradise. And those people are always in the future:

It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctions visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometers and the chemists bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world. Ambition is come upon them suddenly; they are intoxicated with it, and it has rendered them fearless of the danger

which may from thence arise to others or to themselves. These philosophers consider men, in their experiments, no more than they do mice in an air pump, or in a recipient of mephitic gas.

All those who wish to oppose liberalism must grasp that essential point about the liberal. He has hardened his heart against humanity. Nothing matters to him but his ideal of an abstract humanity. The slaughter of millions in the womb and the continual slaughter of hundreds in the classrooms is of no consequence to the liberal. Nothing will force the liberal to face reality. His mind-forged world of unreality is all that he sees. And he will defend that world, showing no mercy to those who oppose him. The liberal Robespierres have no concept of mercy because they have left such outmoded things in the hated European past.

The liberal is not just an utopian on one issue, such as the school killings. He looks at every issue through his utopian tinged glasses. When the AIDS epidemic hit the Western countries, a few non-utopian conservatives recommended that gay bath houses in cities should be closed. After all, that is what people serious about limiting a plague usually did. They tried to eliminate the breeding grounds for the plague. But in the case of AIDS there was a utopian principle involved. To admit that homosexual activity was harmful would be a tacit admission there was something wrong with utopia. So what became ‘wrong’ were the people who equated AIDS and homosexuality. They were just as ‘wrong’ then as the people who want to use guns to defend school children from men with guns are ‘wrong’ now. I recall the diligent efforts of the utopians at a university where I worked to find a heterosexual with AIDS for their AIDS Awareness program. They spent six months searching for a heterosexual with the disease because they didn’t want to imply there was any link between homosexuality and AIDS. There is no limit to the lengths a liberal will go to in order to protect his utopian vision of the world.

The lynch pin of utopia is the noble savage. Without him utopia crumbles, because he is “the people,” the natural, unadulterated, uncontaminated man of nature. “Forget your prejudices against the cruel, merciless savage,” the liberal tells us, “Embrace the future, embrace and worship the noble savage.” And the enlightened men of the brave new world have done just that. When the late John Paul II went to Africa, he told a howling mob of colored savages that when the black man finally threw off the last vestiges of colonialism he would produce a Christian culture that would astound the world. But wait, your reverence, we have already seen what happens when noble black savages throw off the last vestiges of colonialism. Utopia has a local habitation and a name. It is called Haiti, a place where murder, rape, and rapine have been institutionalized and not even a remnant of Christianity remains. But let’s not disturb the utopians, especially the “Christian” utopians. After all, their hearts are in the right place, aren’t they? Only if you deny the obvious. A utopian has killed all the humane instincts that reside in the human heart, such as the love of one’s kith and kin, and replaced them with an abstract love for abstract men of color who live in an abstract world in the utopian’s mind. Is such a man humane? Is such a man Christian?

There was a period of my life when I worked two jobs, one in academia and one in law enforcement. I couldn’t stand my colleagues in academia; the mere thought of seeing them every morning made me nauseous, but I got along tolerably well with the men on the police force. Looking back on the experience I can see why I found the academics so loathsome and the police officers bearable and in some cases congenial. The academics were 100% Jacobin. They hated everything human but loved humanity in the abstract. On the other hand, the police officers were not yet card-carrying, inhuman, Jacobin liberals and still had some vestiges of humanity left in them. Despite the liberals’ relentless work to draw more and more of the police into the liberal orbit by making them attend all sorts of ‘sensitivity’ seminars, there were still some recalcitrant officers left that made police work more bearable than work in academia. That was 25 years ago, and no doubt the liberals have thoroughly Gnosticized our police forces by now.

The liberals’ sole aim in life is to make the world into academia. In academia everything that is perverse and evil is celebrated, and everything pure and good is demonized. The truth is an anathema to academics, because the truth would turn men away from the abstract negro god of the liberals and toward the living God. The liberals must squeeze, as a boa constrictor squeezes his victims, every last ounce of humanity from the white European, because it is through his humanity that the white European reaches out to God. This is why the European is constantly told that his ties to his kith and kin are evil. Such human ties can lead to God, and the liberals do not want men to reach out to a God beyond Liberaldom. There is no need to squeeze the humanity out of the colored races; what little humanity they have can easily be destroyed by worshipping them in all their heathen perversity instead of refusing to sanction their heathen perversity. The heathen will rage if the white men allow them to rage, and in modern Babylon the European does not raise a Christian arm against the liberals and their colored gods. But this will not always be so. The European will strike back when he sees the liberals for what they are and he sees Christ as the antique Europeans saw Him. A European counterattack against the liberals and the coloreds is not a mathematical certainty. It is something more certain than math; it is a spiritual certainty. God does not abandon His people. He will sustain the Europeans who call on Him by name. We need only shift our focus from the managerial, geometric abstractions of the utopian liberals and return to reality, to the dear, dear land of storybook Europe. Behind utopian liberalism in all its guises is the ancient foe. And there is only one God who can sustain us in the day of battle against that ancient foe, the God of our ascending race, Jesus Christ. +

The 12th Day of Christmas

January 5, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christmas, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Charles Dickens, Herrick



Dark and dull night, flic hence away,
And give the honour to this day
That sees December turned to May

* * * * *

Why does the chilling winter's morn
Smile like a field beset with corn?
Or smell like to a meade new-shorne,
Thus on the sudden?—Come and see
The cause why things thus fragrant be.

-HERRICK.

The ghost of Christmas present tells us we must strive to keep the Christ Child in our hearts 365 days of the year, not just for one day. But the same ghost through his authorial voice, Mr. Charles Dickens, also enjoins us to be especially attentive to the Christ Child during the Christmas season. I heartily agree with Mr. Dickens; the Christmas season should be a joyous celebration of the birth of our Savior, but it is not always easy to celebrate Christmas in a Dickensian way. Death and illness don't always wait till after the Christmas season to strike, and then, in our liberal age, there are the family quarrels. Sometimes liberals, who are members of one's extended family, come to visit, and they do not think that Christmas is about the Christ Child; they think it is about booze, negro worship, and filthy sex jokes. It's hard to feel joyous in such company.

This Christmas season I was fortunate. No illness or deaths in my family and no visits from liberal relatives. We stuck to the basics: the old Christmas carols, the old Christmas stories from such authors as Charles Dickens and Washington Irving, the appropriate readings from the Bible, and two of my favorite Christmas movies, *Miracle on 34th Street* and the Alastair Sim version of Dickens' *A Christmas Carol*. A blessed Christmas indeed. But I am always conscious in the midst of my family Christmas celebration that I and the other members of my family constitute a dissident band of white people whom the liberals would like to eradicate. Our position vis-à-vis the world is the exact opposite of the repentant Scrooge's position vis-à-vis the world: the Christian Scrooge left his money chamber to seek the company of good Christian men and women whose company he had shunned his entire life. The antique Christian European living in Liberaldom must invert Scrooge's journey. He must lift the drawbridge, shun the outside world, and keep Christmas within the walls of the family homestead, which in modern Liberaldom must serve as the family fortress. The last thing a European Christian wants to do at Christmas time, or at any other time for that matter, is to go out into the surrounding community seeking Christian fellowship. Such a policy would be spiritual suicide, because the liberal scoffers, the misers and the money lenders, and the colored heathens, who used to constitute the dark and loathsome underground of Europe, have become the rulers of the European people. They don't have to hide in dark corners any longer because their world is the overworld, and the antique European's world is the underground world.

I take no delight in the fact that the Christian European people are a captive and despised people. I wish it were otherwise. But I think it would be self-defeating to lie to ourselves by trying to paint the halfway-house Christians into the Christian picture in order to make the painting brighter. A few can defeat many so long as they do not mistake enemies for friends. The problem with the halfway-house Christians is that they want to fuse Christianity with other faiths. Some want to fuse Christianity with Judaism, some with Islam, some with pagan philosophy, and virtually all the halfway-house Christians want to fuse Christianity with the negro-worshipping tenets of liberalism. Such a blending is not what our European ancestors had in mind when they celebrated Christmas. They worshipped a very particular, provincial God named Jesus Christ who was born in a manger in Bethlehem. He told us Himself that He and He alone was the "Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

The reason the besetting sin of our post-Christian age, miscegenation, was so abhorrent to the antique Europeans was because they believed that God took flesh and dwelt among us. Their God was not a Gnostic! They believed that their skin color was an outward sign of their immortal soul. Believing that, how could a European blend with other races? He couldn't. It was only those who consciously rejected Christian Europe that sought to blend with the colored races. In *Treasure Island* we learn that the pirate Long John Silver has a negro mistress. Such was always the case in Christian Europe. The enemies of Christian Europe sought after the colored people. And in modern Satandom the enemies of Christian Europe have institutionalized miscegenation and made pariahs of the Christian Europeans who still believe that Europeans should fight to the death to preserve that which is essential, their race, that is part and parcel of their soul.

The coming re-coronation of The Obama would not be quite as depressing if white Europeans would view the spectacle as a new beginning for the European people. If they would commit themselves to a non-democratic Europe where ties of kinship and race are more important than abstractions such as universal brotherhood and peace and harmony, then they could reclaim their homeland. The brotherhood of the liberals is no band of brothers, because there can be no true brotherhood when ties to kith and kin are severed. Nor can there be genuine peace and harmony in Liberaldom, because the liberals' brave new world is a very old world, that of Babylon, where all that is distinctly human is obliterated in one inhuman dunghill of barbaric faiths and barbaric races. To look for peace and harmony in such a blasphemous mixture would be like looking for peace and harmony in bedlam.

Burke said that we were spending the unbought grace of life. He was correct. And now that we've spent it all, what is left? Something that is worse than nothing. A world without mercy. The people we have turned our European civilization over to do not even have a word for mercy, but somehow this brave new world, this Haiti within Europe, is supposed to be a better world. But who will champion the Christ Child in an African Europe? Do mothers in Haiti sing "Away in a Manger" to their children? No, they chant barbaric songs about torture and murder.

The simple prayer, "Be near me, Lord Jesus, I ask thee to stay; Close by me, forever and love me, I pray!" was at the heart of European civilization. We can't have Africa in Europe and still keep Him by us. The liberals are determined to banish Christ and keep their black gods at their sides forever. Must we, because we live under their rule, also banish Christ and keep their black gods by our sides? No, we shall not bend our knees to the liberals' gods. When Satan rules, "I shall not serve," is the European's battle cry.

I cannot separate Europe from Christ; He is in Europe and of Europe. If we abandon incarnate Europe where the Son of God had a local habitation and a name, what is left to us? A utopia of unsurpassed barbarism and cruelty, much like the state of Haiti.

Christmas is a time to renew our commitment to His Europe and His people. It is not African Europe that we belong to. There is no Christmas in such a Europe. We belong to eternal Europe where He stays close by us forever. Such is the glorious song of old that we learned at our European hearth fire. That hearth fire is now, and always shall be, our only refuge from the unholy night of Babylon. Be near us, Lord Jesus, thy people ask Thee to stay. +

The End of the A. A. H. Era

January 12, 2013
Categories: Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Edmund Burke



This is it, Adam, that grieves me; and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude, I will no longer endure it,...

— As You Like It

I never had any interest in World War I or World War II movies when I was growing up. Being ‘just a kid’ I had no idea why I didn’t like such movies; all I knew was that the World War I and II movies bored me. I liked Westerns, swashbuckler movies, *Robin Hood*, *Fighting O’Flynn*, etc., but not the modern World War movies. Now, looking back, I realize that I didn’t like the modern war movies because in modern war, as Churchill pointed out, “There is no room for chivalry.” There are brave men in all wars, but in the 20th century World Wars the machines and the conglomerate mass of troops took precedence over the individual. Which is why the exceptions, such as Sergeant York and Marshal Rommel stand out so starkly. In mechanized wars devoid of chivalry a non-mechanized hero is very rare.

Which brings me by a roundabout route to the very unchivalric figure of Adolph Hitler. The most damning thing that can be said about Hitler is not the usual thing. Hitler’s greatest sin was that he used that which was of the spirit, a man’s race, for selfish, material ends. He was a sneering, cynical blasphemer, which – whether they choose to acknowledge him or not – makes him one of the liberals’ own. Hitler, like a phony spiritualist, cynically played with forces he found useful but of which he had no deep understanding. The Nazi scientists who professed to have scientific proof of the superiority of the Aryan blood were like the liberals who stole a consecrated host, subjected it to a laboratory analysis, and then proclaimed the host was only bread. As if God would permit His divine essence to be seen by blaspheming liberals. “But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas” — *Matthew 12:39*. The Nazis wanted a material sign to prove their superiority, just as the liberals thought the absence of a sign — that is, no blood found in the host — was material proof of God’s non-existence.

Hitler’s racial myth of the Aryans’ scientifically, certifiably biological superiority obscured the truth about race that every antique European knew: skin color is of the spirit, not the science lab. By tampering with things spiritual for a material end, Hitler made any attempt by white men in the post World War II era to defend themselves as a race seem like something evil. Catholic theologians shrilly denounced “racialism” and proclaimed, “The defense of Western civilization has nothing to do with race.” Conservative thinkers and politicians wrote long tomes about defending democracy against the communists, but never thought it necessary to write about the necessity of defending the white race against mongrelization from within and third world barbarism from without. And the best the Southern partisans could come up with was, “The North was always more prejudiced than we were.” What happened in Germany was what happened in Narnia: a false god was set up (the biologically superior Aryan) who made people unable to believe in the real, divinely sanctioned, spiritual division of the races.

Tirian had never dreamed that one of the results of an Ape’s setting up a false Aslan would be to stop people from believing in the real one. He had felt quite sure that the Dwarfs would rally to his side the moment he showed them how they had been deceived. And then next night he would have led them to Stable Hill and shown Puzzle to all the creatures and everyone would have turned against the Ape and, perhaps after a scuffle with the Calormenes, the whole thing would have been over. But now, it seemed, he could count on nothing. How many other Narnians might turn the same way as the Dwarfs?

A Christian European wandering through the literature of post-war conservatism looks in vain for a defense of the white people as a distinct people with a divine mission. He echoes Tirian and asks, “How many other white Europeans might turn out to be like the white-hating liberals?” The answer is that the entire white, upper echelon of conservative intellectuals took refuge in universals. They defended Western civilization by defending theories of economics, theories of government, theories of religion, and theories of humanity, but they did not defend their own people, who were, and are, the Christ-bearing people. It was left to the outcast men like Anthony Jacob to defend and champion the people whom the conservatives were unwilling to defend and whom the liberals were determined to eradicate from the face of the earth.

The dogma of European conservatives is that World War I gave communism a home in Russia, and World War II made Europe safe for communism. Both observations are true. But I would argue that World War II gave birth to something far more devastating than the communist menace. In the aftermath of World War II a new type of European leader came into being. This new European leader was really a non-leader because he no longer professed a connection to the European people. He was an abstract leader of an abstract people. And it’s no good to say that the people don’t need a leader, because they do. Great movements are always initiated by a spiritual elite. If there is no spiritual elite to renew the peoples’ “ancient heart” the people will wander in darkness and be a reed for every modern ill wind that blows. This was the truly devastating blow wrought by World War II: the white leaders, who should have defended their race and guided their people, abandoned them, to be demonized by the liberals and slaughtered by the colored barbarians, because they were afraid to be called racist.

The apostasy of the white European leaders was so universal and so unprecedented that we really should consider their moral apostasy as occurring in a new era called the A.A.H. era — After Adolph Hitler. When the white people emerge from their Babylonian night (and we don’t know the day nor the hour of that emergence), it will be under the leadership of Europeans who are genuine Europeans, men who are not afraid to love their own people above all other people, even if that means they are stigmatized as stupid and bigoted.

I once, in my late twenties, got to visit a conservative writer whom I admired. At that time, I was just beginning to see the importance of the race issue. I asked the conservative leader why he never mentioned the ongoing colored assault on the white race. His answer was quite revealing. He told me that he would never be published again if he even hinted that the complete integration of blacks and other minorities into Western culture was not a consummation devoutly to be wished for. And despite the fact that he thought the race issue was of vital importance — “The survival of the West depends on the survival of the white man” — this great conservative thinker wrote nothing about it for the remaining 27 years of his life. My idol had feet of clay: he lacked a heart that truly loved. No genuine European forsakes his people for the applause and money of the hard-hearted rulers of Liberaldom. If conservatism isn’t about conserving our people, then how can we call it conservative? A conservatism that is not racial conservatism is liberalism on a slow train, in contrast to mad-dog liberalism which is liberalism on an express train. But both trains are headed for Babylon.

It pains me to see white people performing the conservative tasks of good citizens. They support their local schools, send their sons, and now their daughters as well, into the military, and peacefully abide by the results of anti-white elections. These are the acts of men and women who have lost their way; they need leaders with ancient hearts to show them the way. A people should only be conservative when their government is conservative. Once their government has gone over to the Jacobins, Europeans with faithful European hearts should be counter-revolutionaries and oppose every action that assists the international revolutionary government of the United States, of England, of France, and so on. Our hearts belong to a white Christian nation; if our government is committed to a colored nation of no faith, or, as is more likely, a multitude of non-Christian faiths, we should oppose such a government with our whole heart and soul. "What are we supposed to be conserving?" is the question. If the answer is not "our people," then we have no choice; we must fight to the knife. If you tell me that such an extreme response to liberalism is unwarranted or impractical, I will tell you that the liberals and their barbarian allies seek our blood. Extreme measures to protect our people are neither unwarranted nor impractical. Quite the contrary, nothing is more impractical than surrendering to a merciless enemy without even putting up a fight. The old leaders, the 'systems analyst' conservatives, were pygmy-hearted men who were willing to stand by and see their people perish so long as their systems survived. That era, the A.A.H. era, is now over. It is time for the European men with ancient hearts and a passionate love for their people to come to this battlefield.

Strong passion under the direction of a feeble reason feeds a low fever, which serves only to destroy the body that entertains it. But vehement passion does not always indicate an infirm judgment. It often accompanies, and actuates, and is even auxiliary to, a powerful understanding; and when they both conspire and act harmoniously, their force is great to destroy disorder within and to repel injury from abroad. If ever there was a time that calls on us for no vulgar conception of things, and for exertions in no vulgar strain, it is the awful hour that Providence has now appointed to this nation. Every little measure is a great error; and every great error will bring on no small ruin. Nothing can be directed above the mark that we must aim at. Every thing below it is absolutely thrown away. – Letters on a Regicide Peace

The history of the European people runs parallel with the ancient Hebrews. When we stay provincial, connected to a personal God through our kith and kin, we strive as a people. When God becomes an impersonal abstraction, the byproduct of a theologian's brain, and our people become cannon fodder for an always elusive, abstract, future utopia, we cease to be a people. We become wandering phantoms who come to life only to worship and serve the colored races. This is not the work that we were born to do. The spirit of our ancestors bids us rise up and throw off the liberals' yoke. And with Christ's help, the provincial Christ of the European hearth, we shall rise up and burn the liberals' altars, which are consecrated to their colored gods, and reclaim our own again. +

O Nation Miserable

January 19, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



Endeavoring to persuade the people that they are no better than beasts, the whole body of their institution tends to make them beasts of prey, furious and savage. – Burke

I don't like science fiction movies, and with very few exceptions I don't like any movie made after 1965, so I didn't see the movie *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*, but I imagine from the title that the movie was about the encounters of earthmen with extra terrestrial beings. I have encounters (albeit not close encounters) with non-human aliens on a daily basis, because the liberals and the grazers seem like creatures from another planet. And if they are creatures from another planet, our planet has been invaded, because the liberals and the grazers outnumber the earth men to such an extent that I seldom have encounters with fellow earthmen. When I do, I treasure the encounter. Yesterday I met a fellow earthman – or in plain English, a white man. We were both stuck in a long grocery line due to a shortage of checkout clerks because of a huge flu outbreak. I could tell this mid-seventy-ish man was not a liberal because liberals have an unmistakable smugness about them that allows one to identify them immediately. And I could tell the gentleman was not a grazer because there was a still a discernible light in his eyes. He had in his cart, among other food items, a bottle of Aunt Jemima pancake syrup. I made the comment, "I'm surprised they still allow that to be sold," and from that point on we were off and running down Memory Lane. He told me of growing up in a rural area where there were no blacks and no one locked their doors at night, and I told him about growing up in a city where, when my grandmother took me to the park, blacks stayed in their half of the park and whites in their half. On we talked (the line was still not moving) about the demise of decency and (obviously he didn't use these exact words) the profligate spending of the "unbought grace of life." My checkout line friend pointed to the sixties as the decade when "everything went to hell." Of course liberalism began to take root in Western culture long before the sixties, but this wise-blooded peasant had accurately pinpointed the time period when the disease that had been festering within the body of Western civilization became manifest on the outside of the body. The liberals had gathered enough power, by the sixties, to make explicit the heretofore implicit values of liberalism: infanticide, miscegenation, negro worship, and the maniacal hatred of everything white and Christian.

Certainly there were many politicians and rock groups who could serve as a representative sample of sixties liberalism, which is essentially the triumphant liberalism we see before us today. But what is the primary attribute of Satan? The Christian poets such as Walter Scott have answered that question:

Among those who were the first to ridicule and abandon the self-denying principles in which the young knight was instructed, and to which he was so carefully trained up, Louis the Eleventh of France was the chief. That sovereign was of a character so purely selfish—so guiltless of entertaining any purpose unconnected with his ambition, covetousness, and desire of selfish enjoyment, that he almost seems an incarnation of the devil himself, permitted to do his utmost to corrupt our ideas of honour in its very source. Nor is it to be forgotten that Louis possessed to a great extent that caustic wit which can turn into ridicule all that a man does for any other person's advantage but his own, and was, therefore, peculiarly qualified to play the part of a cold-hearted and sneering fiend.

In this point of view, Goethe's conception of the character and reasoning of Mephistopheles, the tempting spirit in the singular play of Faust, appears to me more happy than that which has been formed by Byron, and even than the Satan of Milton. These last great authors have given to the Evil Principle something which elevates and dignifies his wickedness—a sustained and unconquerable resistance against Omnipotence itself, a lofty scorn of suffering compared with submission, and all those points of attraction in the Author of Evil which have induced Burns and others to consider him as the hero of the Paradise Lost. The great German poet has, on the contrary, rendered his seducing spirit a being who, otherwise totally unimpassioned, seems only to have existed for the purpose of increasing, by his persuasions and temptations, the mass of moral evil, and who calls forth by his seductions those slumbering passions which otherwise might have allowed the human being who was the object of the evil spirit's operations to pass the tenor of his life in tranquility. For this purpose Mephistopheles is, like Louis XI., endowed with an acute and depreciating spirit of caustic wit, which is employed incessantly in undervaluing and vilifying all actions the consequences of which do not lead certainly and directly to self-gratification.

Yes, I think Scott describes the satanic intellect quite well. It consists of the type of "caustic wit" which ridicules every decent impulse emanating from the human heart. For this reason I think the British "comedy" ensemble called Monty Python's Flying Circus is the best representative of the satanic liberalism of the sixties, which became the institutionalized liberalism of the 21st century. Their humor was not the humor of pathos, the humor that elevates, that invites us to laugh at the human condition while rooting for the Third Dumb Brothers, the intrepid pure of heart, such as Laurel and Hardy, who remind us all of our common humanity. Instead, the Python humor dehumanizes, like liberalism itself. It sets up one group of people, white people with traditional beliefs in human decency, honor, and the God whose love passeth all understanding, and invites liberals and colored barbarians to a veritable celebration of sneering, mocking, ridicule, all directed at white people. On the Python "comedy" show everything ancient and good in the British and European tradition was dragged through the mud. In their films they blasphemed against Christ and his people, with the puerile delight of a sadistic, public school bully shoving a younger classmate's head in the toilet. And they did this while maintaining, as is always the case with liberals, that they were heroic underdogs taking on "the establishment." What establishment? The established church was rife with liberalism; it didn't oppose them. The royal family was as liberal, if not quite as vulgar, as they were. And the great unwashed whites of the middle and lower classes were too disenfranchised to oppose the middle and upper class homosexual mockers who made up the ranks of the Python comedy team. Extreme cruelty, sexual perversion, the love of the colored alien, and the hatred of white people and their culture was the essence of the Python comedy team, and it is the essence of modern liberalism.

Is it possible for a man with an ancient European heart to live with liberals and colored barbarians who are devoid of all traces of humanity? They exult in cruelty, relish all forms of sexual perversion, and mock and ridicule all that the Europeans once held sacred. One thinks of Macduff's reply to Malcolm:

Malcolm: If such an one be fit to govern, speak. I am as I have spoken.

*Macduff: Fit to govern!
No, not to live. O nation
miserable..."*

Of course Malcolm only listed his self-fabricated sins to test Macduff; what should we say about the liberals' genuine sins against humanity, and the humane God? Macduff's answer to Malcolm is our answer to the liberals: "Fit to govern! No, not to live."

Unfortunately liberals do live and they govern us. But we must guard against the fatalistic assumption that we can't ever throw off the yoke of liberals. Such would be the case if men were only biological specimens with no animating spirit within. Then men's lives would be as predictable as the ocean tides or the turning of the earth. But Europeans, more than any other people, should know that history is as complex as the human soul. The spiritual tide of human events can be turned by men who live in the spiritual realm. Nothing is written, except the character of the enemy. We must fight them even to the edge of doom because of whom and what we fight for and because of whom and what they fight for. There can be no peaceful accord with liberals:

The rules and definitions of prudence can rarely be exact ; never universal. I do not deny that in small truckling states a timely compromise with power has often been the means, and the only means, of drawing out their puny existence. But a great state is too much envied, too much dreaded, to find safety in humiliation. To be secure, it must be respected. Power, and eminence, and consideration, are things not to be begged. They must be commanded : and they who supplicate for mercy from others can never hope for justice thro' themselves. What justice they are to obtain, as the alms of an enemy depends upon his character; and that they ought well to know before they implicitly confide.

— Burke

Haven't the Europeans been trying to survive in Liberaldom by timely compromises with the liberals? They have agreed to abandon their God, accept legalized infanticide, and stand by while their racial identity is obliterated by miscegenation. All this the Europeans have done in order to survive in Liberaldom. But the liberals and the colored barbarians have viewed every compromise as a sign of weakness, which gives them free license to step up their persecution of white people. It is the image of God in man that the liberals want to destroy. And the European people, like a formerly great state, were too much envied, too much dreaded, and too much identified with Christ, to find safety in abject capitulation to the liberals and the colored tribesmen.

The Python ensemble of vulgar, degenerate wits presented their vulgarity as "groundbreaking" and "original" just as Voltaire, Shaw, Twain and a cast of thousands of liberals prior to M. Python presented themselves as groundbreaking and original. But such caustic wits were not groundbreaking and original. They were as old as paganism.

When the post-Christian white man returns to paganism he brings a cold mathematical cruelty to all the old pagan rites. Where the pagan killed when his blood was up, the white liberal will set up laboratories of slaughter where he will coldly and efficiently out-slaughter the pagans. And there will be no check on the cruelty of the colored savages because their traditional masters, the white men, want no part of the white man's burden. They seek blended oblivion in a tidal wave of color.

It all seems quite hopeless from a materialist viewpoint. If you believe, with Spengler, that civilizations are born, decline, and die according to the laws of biology, then it is time for the Europeans to say goodbye and fade into oblivion. But what about the spiritual dimension of life? How can we project the death of the European people from a purely materialist crystal ball when the European people, above all other people, have shown themselves to be a people infused with a spirit that is something more than mere nature? In the realm of the spirit, the natural realm of the European, tidal waves are turned back by determined men of spirit and blood, and liberals, who are monsters of cruelty, are not permitted to govern.

Modern critics label any work of literature from the past that depicts men and women with souls as a distorted, unrealistic work. But why should such a work be called unrealistic? Haven't we all felt, at some point in our lives, a quickening spirit within that calls us to a better and nobler life than that envisioned by the liberal vulgarians? Are Scott's heroes and heroines really unrealistic? If they are then why do we feel drawn to them and not the liberal scoffers and caustic wits? Virtue might be rarer than vice, but it exists, especially in the hearts and souls of our European ancestors. Where the liberals see nothing but evil in our European ancestors, I see a roll of honor, a charity of honor. In the collective face of the European people of the days gone by, I see faith, hope, charity, and our Lord Jesus Christ. If we let "our ancient hearts" unite with theirs, we can be as they were, staunch in defense of our people and our God and unrelenting in our hatred of the liberals, who have loosed the dogs of color upon us and institutionalized blasphemy. It would be morally reprehensible to attempt to compromise with such creatures. Nor would it be realistic. Those people who have turned their hearts from the God of mercy will not be merciful to His people.

All seems cheerless, dark, and deadly on the European front. A sneering, satanic liberalism pervades what was once called Christendom. Living in Liberaldom is like living with the death of a loved one: there is an agony in the heart that can only be eased by a contemplation of Him and His promise that nothing eternal dies. That is our hope. If ancient European hearts unite with Christ through His people, then the liberals will not prevail. Ancient Europe will triumph over modern Babylon, even more surely as the turning of the earth. +

Sacred Memories

January 26, 2013

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors



"Men of Harlech, stop your dreaming, can't you see their spear points gleaming?"

The liberals danced around their savior's throne in robes of liberal finery, but a savior must save, so we must ask the liberals what, or whom, is the Obama saving them from? I don't think we will get a coherent answer to that question from the liberals, which means we'll have to extract an answer by observing the actions of the liberal herd. The answer is that the Obama is 'saving' the liberals from the white bogeyman. Just as Victorian nannies scared their young charges with stories of the black bogeyman, the liberals now scare themselves and their fellow liberals with stories of the white bogeyman. Let's leave aside, for the moment, the question of whether the white bogeyman actually exists while we look at the liberals' white bogeyman to whom all manner of evil is attributed.

In the liberals' bible there is a Satan just like there is in the Christians' Bible, but the liberals have a different version of the Genesis story. The liberals claim that the earth was once a wonderful paradise, a self-sustaining paradise, where the rule of nature was the rule of the earth. Everyone in paradise was natural, loving, giving, and non-white. The black man ruled a multi-colored people of red, yellow, black, and brown. Then one day an evil white man appeared in the garden. He cunningly subverted the good and noble black rulers and gained control of paradise. He then brought other white people, who had been hiding in Bogeyland, into paradise and set up a new and unnatural kingdom over the ruins of the black man's paradisiacal kingdom of nature. No longer could the loving, caring, sharing people of color continue their natural practices of murder, rape, cannibalism, and free unbridled sex. The white bogeyman curtailed those natural practices and introduced an unnatural, heinous religion. The white bogeyman told the wonderful, natural people of color that there was a God above nature who looked on their natural practices as abominations. They were, the white bogeyman insisted, in a state of sin. We know the rest of the story. Despite the fact that the white bogeyman told the people of color that there was a savior who would save them from their sins and the death which was a consequence of sin, the colored people fled from the white bogeyman's world and created their own purer, more natural worlds where rape, murder, cannibalism, and unbridled sexual license were the norm.

So two separate cultures existed, that of the white bogeymen and that of the natural men and women of color.

Then the wonderful thing happened. In the cruel oppressive land of the white bogeymen, a magnificent new type of man emerged, a sport of nature, a mutant. This new man was called The Liberal. The liberal hated his own race, his father, his brother, his sister and all of his kinsmen. But he loved the colored people of the world. Black (particularly black) and yellow, red and brown, the liberal loved them all, not as particular human beings — he was incapable of that kind of love — but in the abstract. Because of his great, abstract love of the colored people — the men he called the noble savages — and because the liberal sport of nature wanted to do what the coloreds did — namely have unbridled sex and cannibalize his own people — the liberal tried to rebuild paradise over the ruins of white Bogeyland. He was successful. White Bogeyland has disappeared, and paradise has been regained. But for a time, since paradise has only been recently regained, the liberal will worry about the return of the white bogeyman. He, like the child in the Victorian era nursery, needs to be reassured that he is safely tucked in and there is no bogeyman under the bed and no bogeyman lurking outside the house trying to break in. The Obama re-coronation reassures the liberal baby poohs that the white bogeyman won't get them, and all is well in paradise.

Was there ever really a white bogeyman who wanted to impose his 'evil' religion on the naturally superior tribes of color? Yes, there was, although I wouldn't call the white man of old a bogeyman and I wouldn't call the colored barbarians a naturally, superior people. But let that pass. There was such a thing as a white European who stood in opposition to the world of the liberals and the colored tribesmen. Modern day conservatives have tried to dispel that notion, because they would like a place in Liberaldom, but the liberals have correctly ascertained that the white man can never be part of Liberaldom. The white man belongs to a different world than the colored tribesmen and the white sports of nature. The white man's world was infused with the spirit of God, and he must live in that world and that world only. If the liberals allowed white men back into their "paradise," the white men would immediately start to rebuild a white man's world, a world where the spirit of God dwells. The liberals have vowed that such a thing, the rebuilding of Christian Europe, shall never happen so long as they live. They are right. It shall never happen *while they live*. I saw a liberal's column on the occasion of Obama's re-coronation in which he stated that the conservatives' tears over Obama's re-election made him laugh. I hope such creatures continue to laugh right up to the moment of their death. What the liberals do not realize is that it is only the conservatives, who put their faith in democracy, that are crying now. The antique European did his crying a long time ago. Only a morally anesthetized man could have failed to see that Christian Europe became Liberaldom many years before the Obama took office. His coronation was merely the final, crowning blasphemy. Having mourned and dried our tears long before the Obama blasphemy, we, the Europeans who are still faithful to Europe, must now find a way to strike home against the treacherous, murderous liberals.

Every day in every European nation all the organs of state, press, television, and film demonize the white race. And that demonization has had a terrible effect. Whites are being exterminated in ever increasing numbers. Violence is not a magic talisman, a cure-all for every problem, but it would not be Christian, it would not be conduct worthy of Europeans, if we remained non-violent in the face of the liberal and colored onslaught against the white race. Why do the white grazers support the liberals' bombing of the colored stranger over there in his own country but refuse to defend their own country against a colored invasion?

It should be obvious to any European who is not dead inside that the American liberals' worship of the Obama is not just an American phenomenon. All European people are in the same boat. They are ruled by mad-dog liberals who want to eradicate any memory of Christian Europe and every living embodiment of Christian Europe, in the form of a faithful band of Europeans, from the face of the earth. It's really a moot point whether America is slightly worse than other European nations or slightly better; we are all up against the same satanic foes. It's truly remarkable that no matter whom I talk to, whether a European from Finland, from France, from Australia, from England, etc, I find that all white people are facing the same national crisis: their liberal rulers are handing their nations over to colored barbarians. How could it be otherwise? Neither geography nor abstract theories of government make a nation. Race makes a nation. White people in America have lived in the same geographical area as blacks, and shared the same form of government for over one hundred years, and they are not a people. White people and blacks are completely separate people despite what the liberals try to tell us. The reason Burke was so concerned about the effect the heinous example of the French Revolution would have on the English people (besides the fact that he was the soul of honor) was because he realized that the European people were a spiritual entity. What affected one European nation affected all European nations. "The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies

and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and economy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources.” And what happens to a people who deny the sources from which they came into being as a people? They become airy nothings trying to attach themselves to alien races in order to convince themselves that they are alive.

Organized Christianity has become a mere adjunct of satanic liberalism, because the church men have denied Europe. It sounds very proper in the year 2013 to say that the Christian churches should not be bound to one people, but Christianity was bound to one particular people. If we separate the European from Christianity, condemning European Christianity as something apart from and antithetical to genuine Christianity, then we have left incarnational Christianity behind and replaced it with a theoretical Christianity that is a hideous caricature of Christianity, which goes by the name of liberalism.

I’ve often seen inscribed on older tombstones the words, “Sacred to the memory of...” Such is the antique European’s sentiment about the Christian era of Europe. It is sacred to his memory. And so long as that memory is held in one faithful European heart, the light of eternal Europe will still guide all true and ardent seekers to the Man of Sorrows who reigns over and above the material world that the liberal sports of nature claim is the only world.

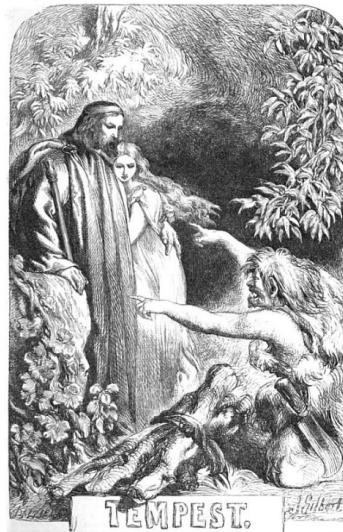
The word ‘natural’ in the liberal vernacular has come to mean truth. The black savage is natural, so he is a true and authentic human, in contrast to the white man who is unnatural and not authentic. But if the word ‘natural’ is supposed to represent the truth about man, then the antique Europeans, not the black savages or the other people of color, and not the liberal sports, are natural human beings. When Burke told the Reverend Dr. Price that he felt great sympathy for victims of the French Revolution, in contrast to Price who exulted in their deaths, he said it was because it was only natural that he should; “because we are so made, as to be affected at such spectacles...” Burke was and is right. If Christ is indeed the Son of God and we are created in His image, then it is natural that His people should hate liberal Babylon and love Christian Europe. So let us cling to our natural prejudices and our sacred memories in defiance of the liberal sports and their unnatural colored allies; the interim is ours. +

Mankind's Whole Tale

February 2, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: John Sterling, Shakespeare



O boundless heart, kept fresh by pity's dews! – John Sterling

I was saddened to learn of the passing of Stan Musial. He was one of the heroes of my youth, but my initial sadness at Musial's death was deepened tenfold when I heard him praised, in passing, for his whole hearted acceptance of black players in baseball. "Say it ain't so, Stan." It's rather pathetic, what little praise that is afforded to a white man who has done something of note in this world is given to the extent he aided the ongoing liberal campaign to deify the black race. Had Musial been as courageously anti-integration as Ty Cobb and Dixie Walker, he would have earned the hatred of the liberals, but he then would have been truly worthy of his name, "Stan the Man."

The liberals never miss an opportunity to preach their gospel. The life lesson preached at Musial's funeral and countless similar occasions has not been lost on young white people. "You can have a life" — albeit a secondhand life — "to the extent that you denounce your own racial identity and serve the cause of the great cosmic negro." Is this the promised end of the white man? Is this what God intended us to do with our lives, to serve the negro with our whole heart and soul? The liberals say, "yes, we are on this earth to worship and serve the negro." And surprisingly the Christian church men also tell us that we must worship the negro. I say surprisingly because the Christian church men all work for organizations that once worshipped Jesus Christ. The mainstream churches have openly repudiated Christ as the Son of God, turning him into a social worker who wants all mankind to worship the negro, while the conservative splinter churches are attempting to fuse Christian worship with negro worship. I prefer the outright repudiation practiced by mad-dog liberals to the fusionism of the conservative liberals, but in either case the white man becomes a less than human creature dependent on the colored races, especially the negro, for confirmation that still he lives.

To this pass the European has come because he lost his lifeline to the living God. He loved his theory about God more than God. And the theoretical God did not need to become incarnate in a people; he did not need to enter human hearts, he could come direct to special men with giant brains. But the special men with the 'Giant Brains Faith' ran aground and left the white man without a God and without a people. Our Lord said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." Why did the European intellectuals not take Him at His word?

It is not enough to know the truth intellectually: men must love the truth. And we are so constituted that that we cannot love the truth unless we see it embodied in humanity. Christ took flesh and dwelt among us so we could see and love the truth. The European people of the olden times took Christ into their hearts and as a consequence their culture reflected the true image of Christ, the God of mercy and love. Without that incarnational vision of Christ, mankind is left without a true vision of the living god. All we have is intellectual concepts of the heathen gods and false "Christian" intellectual systems in which Christ appears as some kind of a peace-loving guru or a special forerunner of Martin Luther King Jr., but not as the Man of Sorrows or the King of Kings.

The apologists for a Christianity without a Christian Europe tell us that the more natural, colored people of the earth will take Christ into their hearts and place the Christian churches on the true path, purified of the European defilements, toward paradise. There are none so blind as those who will not see. When left to their own devices, separate from Europeans, what do the colored people make of Christianity? Does Christ live in the hearts of the African negroes? Have Africans astounded the world with their Christian civilization, as John Paul II told us they would? Have the Asians as a people shown us any indication that they intend to turn from their merciless, cruel gods and embrace the European Christ? Need I go on and ask the same questions about the red and brown people of color? It isn't necessary. They all — red, yellow, black, and brown — are people who cannot see the Truth and love Him. Miracles do happen. There are the colored Gunga Din's who become Christian, but they do so because they have been vouchsafed a vision of the living God who took flesh and dwelt with the European people. If the Europeans blend with the colored peoples of the world, or if they allow the colored people to exterminate the white race, there will be no dwelling place for the living God. Truth will be an outcast man huddled in the crags and crannies of the earth while heathen falsehood is a pampered guest at all the banquet tables in multi-racial Babylon.

The mad-dog liberal hates Christ hence he seeks to destroy Christ's image in man by destroying the Europeans' past so that they can never reclaim their identity and their God. The liberal conservatives differ slightly from the mad-dog liberals. They love their various Christian systems, so long as their systems survive they are indifferent to the fate of the Europeans. Though not as manically opposed to the European people as the mad-dog liberals, the liberal-conservatives do not see why multi-racialism and Christianity are incompatible. They cannot see the truth staring them in the face because their mind forged systems have blinded them to the heartfelt faith of their ancestors. Their pride of intellect overcame their hearts and they succumbed to Babylon. With might and main they struggle to make their churches more "diverse" so that the mad-dog liberals will let their churches alone. But what good is it to have a church without Christ or His people?

Can there be a non-European Christ? Have we, the European people, looked at a false Messiah through a distorted lens? That is what the liberals and Satan would have us believe so that then we would be forced to give up our racial identities and beg to be absorbed into the great, cosmic, multi-racial dung heap. "Blessed be oblivion, blessed be our nondescript multi-racial personalities, Amen." But it won't work. Cover the Europeans of the past with ridicule, with scorn, with moral condemnation, with endless charges of stupidity, and still the European Phoenix will rise from the dead just as He rose from the dead on the third day. The liberals and their mentor, our ancient foe, can never understand that there is something invincible in the soul of a European who has felt the warmth of a European hearth-fire. The love and passion of our Lord provides the divine warmth of that fire, and hearts so warmed cannot rest easy in Liberaldom. They must destroy it.

When we look at what the liberals hold sacred and what the antique Europeans held to be sacred we can see a very clear fairy tale world of good vs. evil. In the European fairy tales the devil visits the earth in the form of a black man. Haven't the liberals, with a satanic sixth sense, sought to deify Satan through the good offices (or should we say bad offices?) of the black man? Behind the façade of "civil rights" and "diversity" is the deification of the black man who is the conduit to Satan.

And what of the much vilified white man? To whom or what is he a conduit? I think I've made my opinions on that subject known. The white man can lead the Satanic men of color against his own kind, or he can be as a white man is meant to be, the voice of one crying in the wilderness, making straight the way of the Lord. What John Sterling said of Shakespeare can be said about the divine mission of the white man:

*O boundless heart, kept fresh by pity's dews!
O wit humane and blithe! O sense sublime!
Transcendent form of man! In whom we read
Mankind's whole tale of impulse, thought and deed!
Amid the expanse of years, beholding thee,
We know how vast our world of life may be;
Wherein, perchance, with aims as pure as thine,
Small tasks and strengths may be no less divine.*

That is what the race war is all about. The antique Europeans, through their culture, told "Mankind's whole tale of impulse, thought and deed!" They told of a world redeemed by the blood of the lamb. They told us we were not born to die, we were destined for that vast world presided over by the King of Kings.

The liberals have spared no pains, and will continue to spare no pains, in eradicating the heartfelt tale of the ancient Europeans, because the liberals want all mankind to build their lives upon the liberals' tale, which is a tale of savage beasts preying upon each other. There is no sublimity in the liberals' tale, no redeemer, no grace. I prefer the tale told by my people in the not-so-distant past. I will stay by the European hearth fire, because it is my world, and I shall never want or seek any other. +

Heart and Soul

February 9, 2013

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Rose Barton



But now all is to be changed. All the pleasing illusions, which made power gentle, and obedience liberal, which harmonized the different shades of life, and which, by a bland assimilation, incorporated into politics the sentiments which beautify and soften private society, are to be dissolved by this new conquering empire of light and reason. All the decent drapery of life is to be rudely torn off. All the superadded ideas, furnished from the wardrobe of a moral imagination, which the heart owns, and the understanding ratifies, as necessary to cover the defects of our naked, shivering nature, and to raise it to dignity in our own estimation, are to be exploded as ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion.

On this scheme of things, a king is but a man; a queen is but a woman; a woman is but an animal; and an animal not of the highest order. All homage paid to the sex in general as such, and without distinct views, is to be regarded as romance and folly. Regicide, and parricide, and sacrilege, are but fictions of superstition, corrupting jurisprudence by destroying its simplicity. The murder of a king, or a queen, or a bishop, or a father, are only common homicide; and if the people are by any chance, or in any way, gainers by it, a sort of homicide much the most pardonable, and into which we ought not to make too severe a scrutiny. —Edmund Burke

This kaleidoscope of horror that we see before our eyes is the complete antithesis of Christian Europe. We can't even call the modern nations with European origins civilizations. They are mixed conglomerates of people without a past, facing an indeterminate future. The fall of the Europeans has been like a second fall of man. Having shown the world that God's grace was a living, breathing reality the Europeans proceeded, in the 20th century, to turn away from the Christian God in order to embrace the fallen angel. By the 21st century sins that cried out to heaven for vengeance during Europe's Christian era were institutionalized virtues: Miscegenation, abortion, and euthanasia became part of humanity's march onward to the liberal light, which is in reality the black night of Satan.

Burke's battle with the arch fiend Rev. Dr. Price, over what was 'natural' that a man should feel in the wake of the French Revolution, highlights the differences between the Christian civilization that we have left behind and the brave new Babylonian world of darkness that we presently live in.

Both Burke and Price used the word 'natural' as a way of saying something was in keeping with all that was good and noble in a man. Thus Dr. Price said it was natural that he should exult in the murder of the French aristocrats and the humiliation of the King and Queen (especially the Queen) of France. And in direct contrast to Price, Burke said it was natural that he should feel sympathy for the French aristocrats and the King and Queen. There is no middle ground between Burke and Price, although many men who fear to choose between right and wrong have tried to find a middle ground between the two divergent points of the moral compass. The modern Europeans have chosen the ethos and faith of the Rev. Dr. Price. I, and a remnant band of antique Europeans, have chosen the ethos and faith of Edmund Burke.

For Price it is natural to support the satanic men of the French Revolution because he believes that men are by nature thinking animals. Their superiority over other animals is simply one of intelligence; other than that difference in degree, men are animals who "must perforce prey on themselves like monsters of the deep." Those men who are the most natural, which means the most primitive and barbaric, are the best men and must be exalted as they slay the most unnatural of men. In France during the Revolution it was the Jacobins who were the most natural, and therefore good and noble, and today it is the blacks and the other creatures of color who have become the exalted ones that can do no evil, because they are natural.

In Price's mind-forged world biological nature is all. But in Burke's world what is natural is something inside of a man that is more than his biological nature. In Burke's Christian view of life the heartfelt passion is the mark of a man's humanity, and his reason is simply a broadsword to defend that passion. Who can doubt that Burke is right? The liberals themselves act upon their passion, which is a passion to destroy the image of God in man, and use their reason to defend that passion. Burke maintained that the liberals' passion to kill and destroy their own was an unnatural passion that went against the faith which made Europe. He warned all Europeans that such an unnatural passion, based on a vision of an inhumane, distorted view of what was natural, could only bring ruin upon every nation of Europe. Price disagreed, and his satanic view of man, for the present, has prevailed. The conservative movements in the 20th century failed to stop the spread of Jacobin liberalism because the conservatives tried to find a middle ground between Price's religion of nature, which deifies the natural man (destined to become the black man), and Burke's religion of untaught feelings, feelings which instruct our reason and lead us to our Redeemer. There can be no middle ground between Price and Burke: either we are of the spirit and belong to a loving God, or we are of the biological dung heap and belong to cold, inhumane, heartless nature.

Burke saw that Price's theology of nature, which is the modern liberal's theology, came "nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man." The denial of an animating spirit within man is the essence of Price's liberalism and modern liberalism. Price's liberal descendants want to make the outer ornamental world of nature the whole world. In such a world there are no physical signs of deep and mysterious things of the spirit. Blood is mere liquid, skin color is mere pigmentation, and science, which tells us that the outer biological realm of existence is the only realm, is our holy writ.

The liberals, in keeping with their theology of soulless nature, have hardened themselves, like Lady Macbeth, against the "compunctions visitings of nature." But Lady Macbeth ultimately succumbed to the compunctions visitings of nature. The Rev. Prices of the world do not succumb because they have a theology that is proof against every decent instinct in the human breast: "Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician." And that is the key to the destruction of Christian Europe. Once the European peasant (I use 'peasant' in the everyman sense, not in the agrarian sense) became a metaphysician, after centuries of listening to clergymen tell him that abstract reason was man's only touchstone of reality, he lost his natural horror of liberal atrocities. His good instincts, which were bred in the bone of the European at his family hearth fire, were killed by the rationalism of the thoroughbred metaphysicians. Every day in Liberaldom there are atrocities that a European of the era when men had natural instincts would have put a stop to. I thought of this the other day when I saw a children's cartoon show based on the Dr. Seuss story *The Cat in the Hat*. Although Seuss went anti-nuclear in his later work in the 1970s, his books from the 1950s and early sixties, such as *The Cat in the Hat*, *The Cat in the Hat Comes Back*, *The King's Stilts*, *To Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*, etc., were quite amusing and great fun for white children. The new version of *The Cat in the Hat* showed two children, one white girl and one black boy, both offspring of one white mother with no father in sight. There, in a once classic children's story, we have two blasphemies – miscegenation and adultery – or maybe it was just miscegenation and promiscuous sex (the cartoon was not clear about that). Should such soul poisoning garbage be permitted? Of course not. But in the absence of men with a natural aversion to the spiritual rape of children, the sponsors and the writers of such blasphemous, perverted filth will go unpunished.

Turn the page or the channel and you will encounter the news about The Obama administration's plan to place women in combat. All the practical reasons against such a move — and there are numerous practical reasons against women in combat — pale in comparison to the one spiritual reason: no man permits the life bearers and life nurturers to go into combat. But again, when there are no Christian peasants with a natural, instinctive aversion to Satanism, well then, Satanism will flourish.

I could go on and on, but we know what is happening. Two additional horrors are the murder of infants and the legalized murder of the elderly and the infirm, both under the guise of a brave new world in which nature and nature's god, the negro, is honored and revered. Can the worship of negroes absolve the liberals of their sins against God and man? The European, with a natural hatred for the works of the devil, and a natural love for Christ and His people, feels that no man, who is still a man, can countenance the liberals' blasphemies or their atrocities. Just as Christ will be forever at war with Satan, so will the unimproved, prejudiced, non-progressive European, the Goth, be eternally at war with the liberal.

There are unselfish things a parent does for his children that, when viewed from a purely selfish, pragmatic viewpoint by an outsider, seem like acts of insanity. Yet the parent who does such things does not even think about those acts of self-sacrifice. He does them because it is in his or her nature to do such acts. The parent loves his children with a deep and abiding love that is beyond reason; it is a love that often imitates the divine love which passeth all understanding. That unceasing unselfish sacrifice that a good parent makes for his children is the type of love that made Christian Europe. Millions upon millions of Europeans who did not count the cost or ask, "Is my self-sacrifice worth it?", built Christendom, because they loved much. They had the greatest of these: they had charity. It's not a process we can see with the naked eye, but when the European once again acts according to his inner nature instead of acting according to the abstract metaphysics of liberal gurus, then he will be a man again and he will destroy Liberaldom and rebuild Christendom because it is natural, in the Burkean sense of the word, that he should do so.

Dostoyevsky's underground man said that a man lives for one purpose, to prove that he is a man and not a piano key. The religious and secular metaphysicians want to play upon man as if he is a piano key. With their abstract reason they will direct poor, bare, unaccommodated man to their vision of the truth. But the truth can only be known by a passionate heart. For good or ill human beings are subject to their passions. Some men have a passion for God and some for the devil, and there is no simple explanation for men's preferences. What a man does know, contra Descartes, is that he sees and understands existence feelingly. "I love, therefore I am," is the European's affirmation of faith. Hamlet only becomes Hamlet when he knows he has loved: "This is I, Hamlet, the Dane!" Death is not the ultimate tragedy, because death does not extinguish the soul. The ultimate tragedy is a secondhand life, a life devoid of the passion which can only be engendered by a love for our kith and kin. That type of love connects us to the God of love. A passion for abstract relationships with abstract children of nature engenders a secondhand love for Satan and all his works. The European people once had faces, when they loved their own people and their God. Listen to Rose Barton's description of an Englishman's love for his departed Queen:

The Queen had made herself beloved of her people. She had borne such sorrows in her heart with such splendid patience—she had been such an example to us all, so full of love and dignity—that she had become our own. And then to feel that all these strong ties were broken—no: not really broken, for they will remain always, binding the hearts of her people to her memory! It was sad beyond measure to see it all. Near me there was standing a big man—probably a costermonger—with a stricken face—evidently a thorough man—but hard-looking, as one so often sees in that type. The crowd was quite wonderful—the silence and the solemn feeling of intense, respectful sorrow on all around were more than I can describe. Well, this man remained, very still and attentive, during the hours I waited there; and then at last came by us that splendid throng of mourning kings and princes, with their beloved dead. I cannot express what only the beating of one's heart can tell. This man remained grim and silent. As soon as the procession came in sight he dragged off his battered cap, and the hard face changed—and in it one saw the influence of the sorrow that had touched his heart, as it touched the hearts of all—for he had lost his Mother in his Queen.

Oh, what a falling off was there! Can we ever again have hearts like our European ancestors? Only if we cast off our second-hand faith in negroes and science and embrace the people and the God of provincial Europe. +

On Earth As It Is in Heaven

February 16, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob



Draw thy sword.
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,
Thy arm may do thee justice; here is mine.
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,
My oath, and my profession. I protest,
Maugre thy strength, place, youth, and eminence,
Despite thy victor-sword and fire-new fortune,
Thy valour, and thy heart thou art a traitor;
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince;
And, from th' extremest upward of thy head
To the descent and dust below thy foot,
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou "No,"
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,
Thou liest.

King Lear

Edgar's statement at the end of *King Lear*, "Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say," could be interpreted as a simple moral from Aesop, "Don't lie or you'll get in trouble." But if we've read through the play and seen the suffering Edgar has endured, and the suffering Edgar has witnessed, we know that he means something more profound than an Aesop fable when he enjoins the survivors of the British holocaust to, "Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say."

Edgar has seen a kingdom come to ruin because a king who "hath ever but slenderly known himself," believed the lies he told himself about his "good daughters" who were evil, and his "bad daughter" who was good, and because a father (Edgar's) believed the lies a fiendish bastard son told of Edgar, the good son. In the wake of such misery, the usual lying that men do cannot be tolerated. A healthy body politic that has been built on truth can absorb a certain amount of lies without crumbling, but a society that has fallen because of a preponderance of lies that men regarded as the truth, can only be rebuilt by men who speak what they feel, not what they ought to say.

It is obvious to all who have eyes to see that the modern Europeans have gone through a holocaust much like the one that Edgar endured. With the great difference being that the modern Europeans still feel no need to speak the truth. The truth about European civilization is still buried under an avalanche of lies which are bound together, like a bundle of twigs, by the one great lie. The one great lie is this: The spirit cannot take flesh. To the Greeks, our incarnate Lord was foolishness, and to the Jews he was a stumbling block. And so it remains today. The liberals (the Greeks) think it is their right and duty to demonize the antique Europeans who claimed the incarnate Lord was at the center of their civilization, because the notion that God took flesh and dwelt amongst us is, to the liberals, foolishness. And the modern "conservative" Christians (the Jews) feel perfectly justified in jettisoning the Christ-bearing race and becoming spiritual Jews because they do not believe in the reality of the incarnate God. If God did not really become incarnate in Jesus Christ, then there is no reason for the defense of the European people whose past is inextricably bound to Christ incarnate. In the absence of that ancient faith, mankind is simply a mathematical equation and individual men and women are merely numbers within that equation.

Behind the liberals' lie that their worship of the black man has to do with "civil rights" is the maniacal hatred of Christ and the Christ-bearing people. And behind the conservatives lie that they now support massive colored immigration because it is the Christian thing to do is the conservatives' desire to please the liberal powers that be, which will enable the conservative churches to survive in Liberaldom. In point of fact the liberals won't let the conservatives' churches survive, but that is the conservatives' hope.

What is happening in the ranks of the conservatives, both Christian and secular, is a gradual liberalization. And the liberalization is taking place because the conservatives do not regard the defense of their race as essential. This morally indefensible disregard of their own people is the direct result of the triumph of universalist Christianity in the once Christian churches. Every modern Christian church cares nothing for Christ as savior and everything for Christ as a figurehead for their systems. In that type of Christianity vast numbers of nameless, soulless people are necessary to keep the system afloat, so people of all races are wanted no matter whether they believe in the same God as the antique Europeans believed in or not.

Universalist Christianity was always present in the Christian academies, which never quite separated themselves from the Greek philosophical tradition. And there is no doubt that Thomist universalism shifted the focus away from the human heart as the source of our knowledge of God and turned men's minds toward the rational contemplation of nature. But the European people had staying power; neither fire, dungeon, sword, or Aquinas could drive them away from their provincial hearth fires where they understood life "feelingly." Through the 19th century and the early 20th century the European peasant was still European. When the collapse came, when the European everyman became an intellectual, it was total. Considering the forces arrayed against him, Church and state undergirded by science, it was a wonder the European peasant endured so long.

Now the man of Europe is an outcast man who must feign madness, like Edgar, until the hour is ripe. At such a time the trumpet will sound and a champion will appear who will re-establish the Europeans' blood rights. It all sounds quite fairy tale-ish, but life is a fairy tale: when hope is nearly gone the hero will step forth, with Christ as his inspiration, and defeat the forces of darkness.

If the Christian church does not consist of the people who took Christ into their hearts, but instead consists of those corporate entities that are organized around some vague quasi-divine figure who cedes all power and glory to the negro, then we are not living in an age of darkness, we are living in an age of faith. All a man has to do, if this is the age of light, is worship the negro with his whole heart and soul, and he will inherit life eternal in the kingdom of Liberaldom.

In the liberal's eye, all mankind, except for a few recalcitrant white males, seem to be heading for a brave new world where men and women of color will live as nature intended in a kind of interracial Woodstock: "We are stardust, we are golden..." But the European who knows not seems sees a different world. He sees a world where Satanism – the antique European still believes in God and the devil – reigns supreme under the guise of negro worship. He sees "conservative" churches and liberal churches joining with their secular counterparts to form one unified secular Church consecrated to one end, the perpetual worship of nature and nature's God, the negro. Need I remind the reader that Ratzinger, before he became Benedict XVI, said that the next pope should be a black man? Now, for the first time in 700 years a pope has resigned. For what reason? To make straight the way of the negro god? Papalotry will take on a new intensity should a black man formally ascend to the rank he already holds informally. And every Protestant denomination is following the Catholic lead. They will not rest till they have made explicit what they have already implicitly stated: "The black man is our god." (1)

In the latter half of the 20th century two men, Russell Kirk and Anthony Jacob, wrote books in which they presented their conservative visions. Kirk's book *The Conservative Mind* was published in 1953 and Anthony Jacob's book *White Man Think Again* was published in 1965. Kirk's book was received favorably in mainstream publications such as *Time* magazine, was lauded by conservatives, and given a respectful hearing by liberals. Jacob's book received no reviews in any mainstream publications and was condemned by the few conservatives and liberals who did read the book. Why the different reactions to the two conservative authors? Kirk's book was more scholarly, but Jacob's book was more profound and poetic. Kirk quoted many great conservative authors, such as Burke and Scott, but he failed to understand what was at the heart of such great men's works. Quite possibly he failed to understand them because in order to understand great hearts it is necessary to have more than a great intellect; one must have a great heart. *The Conservative Mind* was heralded in later years by conservative publisher Henry Regnery as the book that began the postwar conservative movement. He should have added that the book also ended the postwar conservative movement because it advocated an intellectual conservatism, devoid of passion, that was the complete antithesis of the passionate conservatism of many of the men mentioned in *The Conservative Mind*. Kirk's book on conservatism reads like an encyclopedia, and in that encyclopedia we never read about the necessity of conserving the European people, without whom there would be no books about the necessity of conserving Western civilization, because there would be no Western civilization. It is in Jacob's book that we ascend to the heights. His conservatism, which is grounded in a passionate love for his people, is the conservatism of Burke, of Scott, and William Shakespeare. Conservatism must be based on a passionate love for our kith and kin. Any other form of conservatism does not conserve, it becomes part of liberalism.

No man ever was attached by a sense of pride, partiality, or real affection, to a description of square measurement. He never will glory in belonging to the Chequer No. 71, or to any other badge-ticket. We begin our public affections in our families. No cold relation is a zealous citizen. We pass on to our neighbourhoods, and our habitual provincial connexions. These are inns and resting-places. Such divisions of our country as have been formed by habit, and not by a sudden jerk of authority, were so many little images of the great country in which the heart found something which it could fill. The love to the whole is not extinguished by this subordinate partiality.

The day of reckoning is upon us. The conservatives are blending with the liberals in order to kill every last remnant of Christian Europe. The old philosophical systems will survive as museum pieces, but the liberal-conservative coalition has no intention of allowing the Europeans' Christian past to interfere with the Babylonian present. If we respond to the Babylonians with the usual conservative responses – "Let's discuss the definition of a 'people'" and "Let's come up with a plan to develop think-tanks dedicated to the universality of the human mind" – we will fail to preserve that which is necessary to preserve: the European people and their ancient culture. The liberals with the aid of the conservatives hope to liquidate God by eliminating all the human conduits to God.

For the sake of the God whom the liberals hate, let us not be too rational in our response to this newly formed alliance between the conservatives and the liberals. Let us hate, with all our hearts, all those who threaten — and they are legion — our God and our people. The passionate hatred of the devil and his works can only come from a heart that loves. I don't believe that a man with a European heart can ever be defeated by liberalism. Such a belief is irrational, but I've seen the miracle of Christian Europe, which was built by the union of European hearts with His Sacred Heart. So why shouldn't I believe in Europe's resurrection? Through Him and in Him, our ties to Christ were formed at the European hearth fire. As long as we stay at that hearth fire, we will stay connected to the living God.

In utopian literature all children become the responsibility of everybody else; there are no parents. There are no wives or husbands either, but somehow despite the fact that all the small, provincial channels of God's grace are destroyed, there is universal peace and harmony. From Plato through Thomas More, the Jesuits in Latin America, the Jacobins, the Marxists, and the modern democratic utopians, the refrain is always the same: "We the people shall build a new and better world over the ruins of provincial, racist Europe." But all that we love and care for is in that older Europe. Our kith and kin are there and so is our God. And what is this new world that the liberals and the new age conservatives have prepared for us? Is it really stardust and golden? No, it is darkness and blasphemy. We are not meant to live in Babylon and we shall not. Let the trumpet sound, and the European who knows not seems will rise and ride in defense of his people and his God. "Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven." +

(1) It's significant that Ratzinger, the "conservative" pope, did not wish for any particular black pope, he just wished for a black pope. It is blackness in the abstract that the liberals and the conservatives worship. What does such worship have to do with Christianity? Whether Ratzinger gets his wish or not, the fact that this supposedly conservative pope so desperately yearns for a black god speaks volumes about the state of organized, conservative Christianity.

The European Upper Pasture

February 23, 2013

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization



"So let us state what is true. God reveals Himself to us through the intimate mysterious human relationships we form with our kith and kin. The moral beauty of the European hearth, where our kith and kin dwell, points us to the Star of Bethlehem. The moral depravity of the syncretic religion of rationalism and diversity points us toward the kingdom of Satan. The most counter-revolutionary thing that a European man can do is to refuse to bend his knee to the new diversity of races and faiths. Such a refusal will make the European man a sign of contradiction to Satan and his minions. And such is the European man's destiny. He was born to bear witness, through his fidelity to the European hearth, to the Lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world." – CWNY

When I was in my early twenties my extreme aversion to travel was forced to take a backseat to my intense desire to see that sacred land where Shakespeare, Dickens, and Walter Scott once dwelled in the flesh and still in spirit dwell. I was fortunate to meet some older Britons who were still of old Britain. And I was fortunate that a young man could travel cheaply if he was willing to sleep in odd places and keep to a sparse diet. Once while staying at a mountaineers' hostel on the Isle of Skye, I was asked, in return for my lodging, to "shoo the cows from the lower pasture to the upper pasture." I was city-bred and had never met a cow up close and personal, so I asked the woman who had assigned me my chore if there was any special technique one should use when shooing cows from the lower to the upper pasture. "Just shoo the lead cow and the rest will follow," I was told. So, after the lead cow was pointed out to me – she had the traditional name of Bessie – I proceeded to the lower pasture in the hopes that I would soon behold the sight of Bessie leading some fifty cows or so from the lower pasture to the upper pasture. It was not that simple. I started out very politely, saying, "Shoo, Bessie." Bessie just stared at me. "Come on, Bessie, old girl, time to go to the upper pasture," I said next. Maybe Bessie didn't like being called old because she still refused to move, much to the delight of some workers looking on. "This is becoming quite embarrassing," I told myself, "I must get this cow to move." I tried pointing while I pleaded, "Up there, Bessie, I want you to go up there." Bessie was obdurate and didn't move a muscle. I was beginning to think I was the victim of a hoax, that Bessie was really a statue of a cow placed there to fool city folk such as I for the amusement of country folk such as they. Then the proprietor of the farm-hostel, who had been observing me from the porch, screamed, "You have to speak with more authority." I didn't believe the woman by this time and thought this was just part of the joke, but I thought I might just as well be a good sport, so I mustered up my very best authoritative voice, faced Bessie, and told her to "march right up to the upper pasture before I kick you in the butt." Lo and behold! Bessie marched right up to the upper pasture and all the other cows followed her. The farm hands and mountaineers all applauded. So the city boy triumphed. He performed the Herculean task of shooing the cows from the lower pasture to the upper pasture. But thank God I wasn't asked to milk the cows.

Those cows with Bessie at the head are the modern Europeans, both male and female. They need someone to speak authoritatively to them and tell them to stop grazing in Liberaldom and move to the upper pastures of their European ancestors. In those green and pleasant upper pastures a white man does not experience life secondhand through negroes and the pasture is not seeded with the ethos of Babylon. But who will tell the modern Europeans to stop grazing in Liberaldom and return to their European pastures? And to what authority do the Europeans look for guidance? Ah, there's the rub. Even if a man of the upper pastures could be found to speak authoritatively to the Europeans would they listen?

The primary authority of the European grazers is the great liberal oligarchy. The liberals control the media outlets, the schools, the government and unfortunately the churches as well. It's like the old Westerns when a cowboy knight errant comes into a town and discovers that everybody in town cringes and crawls before one ruthless and evil man. The knight errant asks, "Why do you let this man run the town this way?" The bought-and-paid-for sheriff tells the knight errant, "This town eats because Rupert Ruthless puts meat on their tables, and nobody is going to put themselves or their family at risk by opposing Rupert Ruthless."

"And what about the law?" the knight errant asks. "Are you afraid of Rupert Ruthless too?"

"I'm bought and paid for," the old sheriff sighs, "and I'm too old to go to another town and another job." The knight errant goes to the town minister and gets the same reaction as he got from the sheriff, "It's best not to oppose Rupert Ruthless. I advise my people to get along."

Of course the tall handsome stranger has no intention of "getting along" with the powers that be. He is a knight errant and knight errants are not moral utilitarians. He kills the two low life henchmen who Ruthless sends against him, which forces Ruthless to shift his tactics. He sends his lawyers to buy off the cowboy knight. They fail: he can't be bought. Then Ruthless sends the beautiful dance hall girl to seduce the knight errant and make him forget his sacred mission. She too fails. Now it's time for Ruthless to send for the best gun money can buy. When he arrives he meets the hero in the middle of the street for a gun duel which terminates with the death of the hired gun. You should know the rest of the story. The Western knight finishes what he started. He kills Rupert Ruthless, before Ruthless is able to shoot him in the back with a shotgun, and he rides out of town, leaving the townspeople free to build a better town or to find another Rupert Ruthless to sell their souls to.

The cowboy knight's honor would not be compromised if he left town with a bride, the fair-haired daughter of the old world weary sheriff. But in this case the fair-haired damsel, though attracted to the knight errant, decides that she needs a more entrepreneurial-minded mate to help her to fulfill her dream of becoming the first woman to head up the Wells Fargo Express office. "How much do knight errants make," she muses. "It can't be very much." The practical, forward-thinking damsel decides against our hero. Maybe in another town.

The old westerns were in the mold of the European fairy tales and as such they were essentially correct in their portrayals of life. The real spiritual battles that we fight are not usually as overtly physical as in the westerns, but the symbolism in the westerns is correct. We fight against an ancient foe who will stop at nothing to destroy the European people. Money, sex, power: he knows all the temptations and he does not adhere to any code of conduct: "Whatever works," is his motto. And liberalism, the synthesis of all the demonic arts, is working quite well. The grazing Europeans seem to be permanently ensconced in the lower Babylonian pasture, grazing contently without any knowledge of an upper European pasture. So the question remains, "Is there any authoritative voice that could possibly move the European people from the lower Babylonian pasture to the upper European pasture?"

I can only point out what I see in the Europeans' past. There once was a voice that moved them. That voice has been silenced because the human channels of grace have been dammed up. The church men, who slavishly cater to the whims of the liberal oligarchy, tell us we need not worry about a thing, under their intellectual guidance Christianity is progressing from a dirtwater, provincial, European faith to a universal, evolving faith that benefits all mankind instead of just one race of people. But God imparts to particular human hearts not to universal aggregates. If you tell me that God could have chosen another people to be the Christ bearers, I will tell you, "That is more than I know. All I know is that He did choose the Europeans." And now that European hearts have grown tepid is the Christian faith being championed by the colored hordes? Are the colored people better off now, when the Europeans worship them instead of Christ? I certainly don't think so. When the Europeans were intensely provincial, faith, hope, ad charity abounded, not only at the European hearth fires, but also at the hearth fires of those colored people who saw a light in the Europeans' culture that they, with only partial understanding, tried to serve. Uncle Remus is a better man than ten thousand Obamas or Jesse Jacksons rolled into one. But still the anti-Christian church men beat their tom-toms and bid the white grazers come and worship their newfound gods of color.

Refusing to worship the colored gods, despite the mandate of church, state, and society, is the primary task of the European. Men who refuse to worship the colored gods, and who stay connected to the European past, will be able to speak from the heart to the European grazers. Will the grazers listen? Not all of them, but I agree with Burke who tells us that we should never look on our own people as irredeemable. If we speak from the depths of a heart that loves old Europe and hates Liberalism, then we will find other hearts who will respond. An earthquake starts with a few small tremors. But we should never be deceived into believing that we can be Christian and liberal. Liberalism is from the devil and the lynchpin of Liberalism is racial diversity. Once a man steps outside his racial stronghold where his kith and kin dwell, he becomes grist for Satan's mills. He will placidly graze in the lower pastures of Babylon, a man without a God and without a people.

For many years now I've watched the pro-lifers write petitions, hold protest marches and vote pro-life. All to no avail. Abortion is more ensconced in our unhallowed land than ever before. Why is this? Abortion has become part of the permanent fabric of our nation because European Christians left provincial, European Christianity behind and embraced propositional, universalist Christianity. In provincial European Christianity, which is now called racialism, the murder of infants was not tolerated. Men whose faith is bred in the bone do not have to discuss the problem of infanticide, they simply kill the perpetrators of such heinous acts. 'Tis not so with the propositional Christian. He talks and he discusses, he pleads with the liberals to be merciful, and he votes. But people who have given themselves to the devil are not merciful. The only thing that will deter liberals from committing monstrous acts of cruelty is the sword of retribution. And no propositional Christian, grazing in the lower pastures of Babylon, is capable of wielding such a sword. Only a man who has not been spiritually emasculated, a man who has a racial stronghold, can fight Satan and his minions. The pro-lifers and their conservative counterparts are like the defenders of a fort who give the enemy attacking the fort a certain number of their own people in the hopes that the enemy will let them alone. But the dishonorable sacrifice only whets the enemies' appetite for more victims and more plunder. Soon the fort is conquered and every defender is put to the sword. There is a moral here. When the European intelligentsia abandoned their race in an attempt to save their propositional churches, their propositional economies, and their propositional governments, they lost that which makes them human: their sacred blood ties to their people and their God. Without those ties of blood they became secondhand men and women incapable of passionate defenses of unborn babies or anyone else. All they can do is worship the liberal-sanctioned gods and beg the liberals to throw them a few concessions every now and then. The liberals never do. They simply tighten the noose.

The bovine analogy has its limits. A cow cannot be stirred to the depths of her soul, but a European can. I must repeat an old refrain: When the European hero, the man connected to the living God through the spirit and blood of His people, stands up to Satan and his minions and issues the command, "This shall not go on," the liberals' day will be over. The grazers will see with blinding sight through the eyes of the hero, and they will return to the green and pleasant pasture of "racist" Europe, in which they can once again see and follow their lode star, the Star of Bethlehem. +

The Greatest of These

March 2, 2013

Categories: Charity, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Thomas Hughes



Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. 1 Corinthians 13: 8

Last week an English boy, about 9 years old, committed suicide after being bullied and tormented by some subhuman Asians. And last week I finished reading *The Pickwick Papers* with my children. Though seemingly unrelated, those two events – both of which shook me to the core of my soul – were very much related.

I've read *Pickwick Papers* more times than I can count, but this reading was different from all my other readings of the novel. I found myself near tears at comic sections of the book that used to elicit laughter. And there was something else inside of me beside sorrow: there was anger. If I was to put a name to the sorrow and the anger I would call it, "That which is lost." Pickwickian England is Christian Europe. Without closing his eyes to any of its evils, Dickens shows us the love that once was there in a people who took the Lord Jesus Christ into their hearts. The antique Europeans did not differ from other peoples because they did no evil. They differed from all other peoples because they, and they alone, had charity. And when in the presence of such people, a feeling of awe comes over me, because in their charity I see the face of Jesus Christ. Hence the sorrow and the anger. Sorrow at the incomparable world that has been lost and anger at those who destroyed it.

I felt the same sorrow and anger when I read about the suicide of that poor nine-year-old boy. His death was the direct result of the liberals' destruction of Pickwickian Europe. I know what the defenders of Liberalism will say: "There was bullying in the schools in your precious Christian Europe. Just look at those atrocious English public schools for instance." Yes, let's look at them. Thomas Hughes, in his book *Tom Brown's School Days*, gives us an excellent description of bullying and its effect on small school children. But he doesn't recommend utopian measures to counteract bullying. In Hughes' opinion there will always be cruel boys who prey on the weaker helpless boys, just as there will always be cruel men who prey on the weak and the helpless. The only realistic counter to bullying is the Christian hero. Tom Brown is liberated from the cruel tyranny of Flashman by the intervention of an upperclassman who has been imbued with the proper bred-in-the-bone Christianity. Some things, such as the cruelties that Flashman inflicts on Tom Brown, are simply not to be tolerated. And Tom, when he becomes an upperclassman, protects the weak and helpless Arthur just as Brooke once helped him.

The English boarding school of *Tom Brown's School Days* is a mirror image of the world. Utopian schemes hatched by atheist Jacobins only lead to greater evils than any of the evils the utopians claim they are eradicating. Hughes and Burke are of one mind about societies and institutions that seek to run their little worlds without the Savior who redeemed the world.

"The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which enabled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness."

The charity of honor that pervaded Christian Europe did not eradicate evil from the face of the earth. What happened was what Burke and Hughes described: savage ferocity was mitigated and vice lost half its evil because there was a Christian counter-response to every evil that men did. Now, when there is no Christian European counter-response to evil we see unmitigated savage ferocity and vice triumphant. The mother of that tormented nine-year-old child had pleaded to the school administrators to help her son, but her pleas fell on deaf ears because liberals have no conscience: they belong to Satan. Had a black mother protested that white boys were bullying her son, the white boys would have been summarily executed without a trial. Had the Asian filth who tormented the English boy accused a group of white boys of the same crime they were guilty of, the white boys would have been driven off the face of the earth.

This world of unmitigated evil in which colored savages torment and murder white people with the approval of the liberal oligarchy will continue to flourish so long as white Europeans are separated from the type of honor that is connected to charity. It always saddens me when I see small remnant bands of white youth trying to organize a white resurgence under the banner of a pagan intellectual such as Nietzsche. There is no charity in such undertakings, hence there is no enduring fire in the heart. The reason charity never faileth is because that charity of honor connects us to Christ, and without Him all causes, no matter how brilliantly conceived, are doomed to live for one brief moment and then die, just as we are doomed to live for one brief moment and die unless our Redeemer, out of divine charity, steps between us and death, granting us eternal life.

Unmitigated cruelty will cease when the European becomes what he was meant to be: the man with a heart of flesh. Throughout the scriptures, God makes it clear that He judges men by what is in their hearts.

"And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh: That they may walk in my statutes, and keep mine ordinances, and do them: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God. But as for them whose heart walkeith after the heart of their detestable things and their abominations, I will recompense their way upon their own heads, saith the Lord God."

Undergirding the liberals' kingdom of detestable things and abominations is a heinous Orientalism that is the complete antithesis of European Christianity. The reason the Orientals have shown such a relish and genius for cruelty is because they have rejected the Christian belief in the resurrection of the dead. If Christ be not risen, then all of life in the flesh is pain. One must develop a stony heart and a detached mind in order to endure the pain of existence. And such a philosophy is very effective. A man with a heart of stone and a mind detached from humanity can endure a lot of pain, especially the pain he inflicts on other people.

Because their people were once Christian, the syncretistic liberals of the West have added an abstract black Messiah to their Orientalism, but this new utopia that the liberals are building is based on a very old Orientalism. Kipling tells us that East is East, and West is West, and never the twain shall meet, but the liberals have joined the two and made hell on earth.

The fusion of Eastern philosophies that foster an indifference to the pain of others with a secularized Christianity has made the formerly Christian European countries into a satanic union of nations with one purpose: to destroy every and any remnant of the light of the world. Fusing Christian zeal with Oriental cruelty, the liberals seek out blasphemers. They are indifferent to the sufferings they inflict on white people, because white people are connected, through their past, to the light. And they agonize about the plight of the colored, not because they care about individual human beings, but because they care about blasphemy. The liberals' gods are colored people in the abstract: they must not be offended.

A few years ago I read a neo-pagan's attempt to defend the European people while denouncing Christianity. This is a difficult task because the European people, as a people, were historically wedded to Christ. If Christ was not the Son of God, then the Europeans should be despised for perpetuating a falsehood of monumental proportions on the world. But let me present the neo-pagan's solution to that dilemma: he claimed that Christianity was originally a universalist, multi-racial religion, a mere extension of the universalism of the Roman Empire. Then came the Goths, the Europeans. They made a universalist religion into a provincial religion, a religion in which the Son of God spoke to His people who had hearts of flesh. The secular historian G. M. Trevelyan concurs with the neo-pagan apologist:

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely to feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself.

What Trevelyan is describing is the germ of kith and kin, provincial Christianity. But did the Europeans add that element of "character" to Christianity? I would say that they stripped Roman Christianity of its unchristian, universalist, Oriental drapery and worshipped the living God in spirit and truth. Men with hearts of flesh must have a God with a heart of flesh. And this has always been the conflict within the church of Christ. Does Christ come to human minds through a cruel, universalist system, or does He come to provincial people with hearts of flesh? The history of our people, which is the history of the faith, tells us that Christ comes to all people through their provincial hearth fires, and outside of those provincial units of grace are the false gods of the Orientals, not the true God of the European people.

The neo-pagan was wrong about the Europeans: they were not a people who were clever enough to invent a provincial God of their ascending race, they were a people who loved enough to see past the Oriental façade of the church to the true God within the church, the God of their ascending race.

God prefers mercy to sacrifice. He wants His people to stay together as a people so that faith, hope, and charity, especially charity, does not perish from the earth. The provincial European does not suffer nine-year-old boys to be driven to suicidal despair by Asian tormentors. Nor does the provincial European permit black demigods to kill white people, whom liberal oligarchs have deemed devils, with impunity. Charity demands that we be meek toward the meek, but it also demands that we be fierce in defense of the meek and the helpless. This white holocaust must end even if it means we have to kill every last liberal and every last person of color. The liberals have made this war, not us. We can't accept their Oriental vision of existence and stand passively by while white people are sacrificed on the altars of the liberals' colored gods. God did not shed His grace, as the blasphemous song declares, over democratic America; He shed His grace over the European people who loved much. The world saw the face of Jesus Christ through the people who had charity.

Pickwickian Europe is not dead: it lives still in the European past and in the hearts of those Europeans who refuse to let go of that sacred past. For the sake of our own souls and the sake of all tortured and tormented white people, especially our children, we must cling to that provincial Pickwickian Europe where men of mercy and charity are forever at war with Oriental cruelty and black savagery. Let us conclude where *The Pickwick Papers* conclude:

Let us leave our old friend in one of those moments of unmixed happiness, of which, if we seek them, there are ever some, to cheer our transitory existence here. There are dark shadows on the earth, but its lights are stronger in the contrast. Some men, like bats or owls, have better eyes for the darkness than for the light. We, who have no such optical powers, are better pleased to take our last parting look at the visionary companions of many solitary hours, when the brief sunshine of the world is blazing full upon them.

The European people who saw the Light of the world and loved Him are the one true liturgy of the Christian Church. +

One People, One Lord

March 9, 2013

Categories: Democracy, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob



"Iron out of Calvary is master of men all!" – Rudyard Kipling

The liberals' cauldron of racial diversity, sexual diversity, and religious diversity that had been brewing for most of the 20th century finally boiled over in the mid-1960s. What was implicit in the post World War I generations became explicit in the mid-1960s: "We, the European people, believe in science, not Christ." Is it that simple? Of course not. Many Europeans (in fact most) tried to blend Christianity and science. But in the end science won out. Even those who denounced materialism and technology like the Sixties' hippies needed their drugs, their birth control pills, and their abortions in order to live "naturally."

By the mid-1960s the scientized Europeans became like the secularized Jews. They fed off the older Christian culture that spiritually sustained them while doing everything in their power to destroy that culture. Science, like Judaism, cannot sustain a people, because both secularized faiths lack a Messiah. This longing for a Messiah, a longing that can only be realized in Christian Europe, resulted in a dichotomy in the European liberal and their spiritual counterparts, the secularized Jews. They rejected the Light of the World while longing for some substitute for the Light of the World – a friend who was almost supernatural in his devotion and kindness:

*When you're down and out
When you're on the street
When evening falls so hard
I will comfort you.*

*I'll take your part
When darkness comes
And pain is all around
Like a bridge over troubled water
I will lay me down*

Henry Francis Lyte, a man from that other European world, said that the friend who abides with us in all our troubles is Christ:

*Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;
The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide!
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,
Help of the helpless, O abide with me!*

Joseph Scriven, writing in 1857, concurred with Lyte: "What a Friend we have in Jesus, all our sins and griefs to bear!"

Is it a progression to reject Christ for a mythical friend in the future, a kind of sensitized Übermensch, who will be our bridge over the troubled waters of existence? "Yes, it is a progression," the liberals tell us. "It is a progression because sensitive Übermensches are real while Christ is a fiction." We are always faced with Dostoyevsky's question: "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" The liberals and the intellectualized European peasants have all said no to that question in the 20th century, and as a result they worship negroes in the 21st century.

Science was a cold, indifferent God to the Europeans. Like Rumpelstiltskin, they needed something human in their lives. So they went looking for a suffering servant and came up with the negro. He became the true man, the man of nature, who, when blended with science could be the savior the Europeans had lost when they rejected Christ. Negro worship will intensify so long as the "intelligent" Europeans reject Christ. The Christian churchmen who are currently trying to fuse negro worship with Christianity will end up as high priests in the cult of the negro. It has always been thus. Christ will not be blended. He is "Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." If you reject Him as Lord, He will not be content to serve as an auxiliary god in a new church in which the negro is the primary god.

It's rather ironic that now, when the Europeans have more empirically verifiable proof that Christ existed and His tomb was indeed empty than they ever had before, that they no longer believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead. One wonders if they had the ultimate proof before their eyes and could see and touch the risen Lord, as the doubting Thomas did, if they would believe. Once a man is convinced that truth can only be found in the science lab under a microscope he will be blind to the truth staring him in the face.

Everything of importance in our life depends on our vision. If we see life feelingly with our hearts, we will not seek God in nature but in the recesses of the human heart. In Chateaubriand's magnificent commentary on the sin of Adam and Eve, he said their sin would not have been as egregious if they had wanted to love too much. But instead they wanted to know too much, which made their sin much greater, because they deliberately cut themselves off from the organ of sight, the human heart. So it was with the Hebrew people when they displeased God. They gave themselves to the forces of nature, glorifying the physical universe rather than the God who imparts to human hearts. And likewise the scholastics' revolt – if God can be found 'out there' in nature by the human mind, then the human mind that contemplates nature becomes God. Though each would repudiate the other, the Thomist and the stardust-and-golden hippie have the same tragically flawed theology. And it's flawed because it leads to the witch's cauldron of diversity instead of the hearth fires of the antique Europeans where Christ dwells.

The new faith in the negro has become institutionalized, but as is so often the case when a religion becomes institutionalized on a large scale it no longer arouses the same passion it did in its early stages. The sixties' liberals such as Chris Matthews are still passionate about the negro gods, but younger Europeans take their religion for granted, just as a 18th century nobleman might perform his religious duties because it's the accepted thing to do along with fox hunts and entertaining large numbers of friends and political allies. The young Europeans accept the divine status of the negro, occasionally telling an irreverent joke about him, and go on with their wretched lives, unaware there is any sin other than racism, any culture other than Babylon, and any God other than the negro. The darkness deepens for the European people – they need a living God who will abide with them.

I can't get past that nine-year-old English boy who committed suicide after being tormented by Asian spawns of Satan. The boy was a victim of what the liberals call diversity, which is the code name for the hatred of the white race and the worship of the colored races. Our children are being taught to hate themselves and to expect a life of torture at the hands of the savage races of color. And a false universalism in the Christian churches is responsible for the suicide of the white race: because the church men have called the love of one's kith and kin, the only type of love that can connect us to Him, racist and heinous. Without their racial backbone the European people are without a soul.

There is nothing remotely noble about multiracialism as the Press would have it. On the contrary, it is loathsome and sinister. It is not Godly but Devilish: an offense against the Creator. To espouse it means that one despises one's own race, one's own wife and children, and their children in turn. This means that one cannot venerate or respect anything at all. To espouse multiracialism is not evidence of love, but of the very opposite of it. -Anthony Jacob

That is the crux of the matter. Diversity is based on the hatred of one's own people, one's own parents, wife, children, and grandchildren. A cousin of mine, on a recent visit, was waxing nostalgic about her parents, her grandparents, and the love that once was there when they were alive. She talked sadly of her nephew who had married outside his own race and wondered what was happening to the world. But then she tried to be a good American: "Oh well, I guess it's all for the best, we have to adjust to progress."

"Why must we adjust?" I asked her. "I have no intention of adjusting."

Why should we adjust to Satandom? Shouldn't real Europeans defy the devil and all his works? Diversity is just as Jacob described it: loathsome, sinister, and devilish. Instead of adjusting to it, we should oppose it with our whole heart and soul. But that is the conundrum: a man who has been singed with the fire from the cauldron of diversity does not have the heart or the soul to oppose diversity. "Breathes there a man with soul so dead...?" Unfortunately the modern displaced European is such a man. But things of the spirit are not subject to the strict biological laws of decay and death. In the realm of the spirit, that which is dead can come to life again. The liberals are Satan's own, but the grazers are Satanists by assignment. They do what the liberals, particularly the liberal clergymen, tell them. Suppose a European with an ancient heart, a heart of flesh, came into Liberaldom and stood against the liberals and the barbarians of color, armed only with a faith in his people and their God? If the "fairy tales" of the Bible and the European people are true, the hero will prevail against the forces of hell. The essential thing in all fairy tales is that the hero must be pure of heart, and he must be willing to venture forth against mathematically impossible odds. I could cite the impossible military battles won by the Europeans of old, but let me cite the greatest battle they won. They turned Babylon into Christendom, because they loved their people so much they saw "His blood upon the rose."

The greatest danger to the white race is not those enemies who come at us with swords in their hands. They must be resisted, but there is a far more subtle enemy than the violent savages of color. The most dangerous enemies are the conservatives and the liberals who urge the white man to survive by being absorbed into the races of color. Better to go down fighting to the last man, as Europeans with European souls, then to survive by becoming part of Babylon. A base, dishonorable survival in this world will lead to eternal damnation in the next. The refusal to become diverse is the best way to win against the forces of evil in this world and the only way to secure a place for ourselves in His Kingdom come. +

Eternal Constancy

March 16, 2013

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke, Hippolyte Taine



So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. – *Revelations 3: 16*

The old debate: whether it was American decadence that corrupted Europe or European decadence that corrupted America was settled when The Obama was elected President of the United States. When a nation that still has a majority of white people in it elects a glorified ape to preside over them, they are truly the most decadent of the decadent. But European conservatives have no cause to thump their chests in triumph nor do European liberals have any cause to lament their second place showing. The United States has descended to the deepest region of hell, but the Europeans are only one circle of hell above the Americans. So whether one set of Europeans is deeper in hell than another is kind of a moot point, considering they all are in hell.

Tennyson laments after the death of a loved one that his tongue cannot adequately convey his sorrow. He then proceeds to convey his sorrow quite well. But I don't think Tennyson's lament about his inability to express himself was affection. When the heart truly loves all words are inadequate to express one's feeling of sadness when the beloved has died. We see through a glass darkly, and we speak and write in the face of that same dark glass.

The death of Christian Europe is like unto the death of a loved one. Its death makes us feel as Tennyson felt:

*But O for the touch of a vanished hand
And the sound of a voice that is still!*

But if we can still remember and lament, the loved one is not dead, the beloved sentry is still there, and He will sustain our honored dead. The task of the living is to keep faith with the dead.

The Europeans of the latter half of the 20th century severed all ties to our honored dead in order to be part of a multi-racial, multi-faith, multi-sexual utopia. And looking back we can see quite clearly how Christian Europe became Satandom.

The creation of Satandom did not begin with the French Revolution, but that event did show us the first incarnation of Satan within the heart of Europe. So it behooves us to take a look at the various forces arrayed against each other in that Revolution, because they are the forces that exist today and always shall exist in every revolution.

There were three forces present in the French Revolution. We begin with the forces of evil. Burke, the metaphysician and poet, captured the essence of Jacobinism in his writings while Taine, writing 80 years later than Burke, gave us a detailed account of the sins of the Jacobins. Let us go to Burke for a crystal clear summation of the essence of Jacobinism:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "With all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

And to Taine for an insight into the bloody nature of the new religion of philanthropy:

All means are justifiable and meritorious with traitors; now that the Jacobin has made his slaughtering canonical, he slays through philanthropy.

Nothing has changed since those wonderfully madcap days (according to the liberals) of the French Revolution. All whites have become the traitors who must be eliminated, and the people of color have become "the people," but the revolution goes on as Satan desires. So long as the Europeans are demonized and the negro, the conduit to Satan, is deified, the forces of hell will rule in what was once Christendom.

And what of the forces of good? Were there no good men left in France to defend the King, his Queen, and eternal France? No, there were not. There were no good men in the highest sense of the word. There was no one who could see evil for what it was and then fight to defend the good.

It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in, - glittering like the morning-star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! What a revolution! And what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she could ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone.

In Britain the situation was much the same as it was in France. There were many reasonable, moderate men (we shall come to them later) who deplored the excesses of the French Revolution, but they could not see, because their hearts had grown tepid, that Jacobinism was an intrinsically evil, satanic attack on Christian Europe. All they saw were political reformers

who had gone overboard. "It couldn't happen here, you know, we just don't do things that way." Only Burke saw the Revolution for what it was and spent what remained of his life trying to battle the ignorance in the hearts of his countrymen:

Viewing things in this light, I have frequently sunk into a degree of despondency and dejection hardly to be described: yet out of the profoundest depths of this despair, an impulse which I have in vain endeavoured to resist has urged me to raise one feeble cry against this unfortunate coalition which is formed at home, in order to make a coalition with France, subversive of the whole ancient order of the world. No disaster of war, no calamity of season, could ever strike me with half the horror which I felt from what is introduced to us by this junction of parties, under the soothing name of peace. We are apt to speak of a low and pusillanimous spirit as the ordinary cause by which dubious wars terminate in humiliating treaties. It is here the direct contrary. I am perfectly astonished at the boldness of character, at the intrepidity of mind, the firmness of nerve, in those who are able with deliberation to face the perils of Jacobin fraternity.

Jacobinism was never checked. Once the French disposed of the manically philanthropic Robespierre, they and their satanic creed were allowed a place in the fraternity of European nations. As recently as 2009, the former French President Nicolas Sarkozy said proudly that France was a regicide nation. And why should that raise the ire of anyone but me? At present aren't all the nations of Europe regicide nations? Now if Sarkozy had said, "We are a Christian nation, we will not be overrun by Moslems and negroes," then all the people of European descent would have risen up and denounced France as a pariah nation that must be eradicated from the face of the earth. And we know who would be leading the chorus for the destruction of Christian France: the Christian clergymen of all the European nations. Despite the fact that the Jacobins tortured and murdered the clergymen who refused to take the oath of obedience to the Jacobins, despite the fact that the Jacobins institutionalized atheism, the great bulk of our modern clergymen would condemn any resurgence of Christianity in France and would support, to the death, atheist, Jacobin France. They would do so because they are Christian atheists just as Dostoyevsky's Grand Inquisitor was a Christian atheist. It is better, in their minds, that millions should die and Christ should be supplanted in the hearts of men than they should give up their systems. It is the sin of Caiaphas! To his dying day the great "conservative" Hilaire Belloc supported the French Revolution, because the French monarchy did not live up to his system. And the moderate men with one voice declared Burke's "metaphysical meanderings" to be "obsessive" and unwarranted. "After all, they were only political reformers who went a bit wrong." Which brings us to the men without whom no Revolution can succeed or be sustained.

We have come to the third force, the moderate, reasonable men, who really are only a force because their lack of moral strength allows the forces of evil to triumph. Reasonable, moderate men are perfectly good citizens when passionate men with hearts of fire keep the forces of evil at bay. But when the ranks of the good men with hearts of fire diminish and the ranks of the Christ-hating liberals swell, it becomes necessary for the reasonable, moderate men to step into the breach and cry halt to the evil. They never do. Because of some inborn or acquired lukewarmness of heart, the reasonable, moderate men always misread the revolutionaries' intent, and they betray their own people as they cite platitudes about moderation and reason. In France during the Revolution the moderate, reasonable men sat on their hands and watched "political reformers" kill their King.

So long as the moderate, reasonable men are few in number a nation is safe. In the South Africa of the 1840s, for instance, when only a few of the white settlers supported lifting the ban on apartheid, the few reasonable, moderate men did no damage: "The negroes are not animals, you know. I think we can interact with them without any fear of them molesting our daughters or killing us in our beds." But when the moderate, reasonable men with the tepid hearts become a majority, as they did in South Africa, the people perish because the evil liberals and their colored allies overrun the good and noble whites and turn Christian nations into hellish nations consecrated to Satan. In France before the Revolution, in Haiti before the bloodletting, in Russia before the Revolution, in South Africa before one-man-one-vote, and in the modern white nations before multi-racialism became the law of the land, it was always the moderate, rational men who paved the way for the massacre of the white race by their reasonable, moderate responses to evil. It is always the extremists who are condemned by the moderate, rational men, and it is always the extremists who are right. Burke was called obsessive and extremist when he said Jacobinism unchecked would lead to a Jacobin Europe, which would devour Christian Europe. He was right. Dostoevsky was considered too extreme when he said that should the Bolsheviks obtain power they would slaughter millions of innocent people. He also was right, while the moderate, rational men were wrong. And Anthony Jacob was right when he said that multi-racial conservatism was an impossibility because it was an offense against God. Why are the moderate, rational men always wrong? They are wrong about human events because they are wrong about God. They are afraid of a passionate God, so they put Him in their little geometrically perfect box from which He is only supposed to come forth when the moderate, rational men want Him to come forth. But God is fire, passion, and desire. He can't be contained in a rational box. In the *Chronicles of Narnia* C. S. Lewis tells us that Aslan is not a tame lion. No indeed, he is not.

The modern, white-hating Satanists, and the colored tribesmen did not conquer the whites in Rhodesia, South Africa, and the European nations because of their superior numbers. They conquered because the Europeans exchanged their faith in the untamed, passionate Christ of their forefathers for a moderate, rational, civil-rights-worker-type of God: "So long as there is diversity, which is the whole sum and substance of my divine message, I'm happy." That is the reasonable, regular guy God of the moderate, reasonable Europeans. So long as that false craven image of God keeps them from seeing the true God, the Europeans will serve the negro gods and by doing so will serve Satan.

In this century and the past century when we refer to the rational, moderate men, we are talking about the conservatives. They treat all mankind as generic units sharing the same values as they do. When things go wrong, as they did in the last Presidential election in this country, the conservatives do not question their universalist principles and say, "Maybe all races are not alike, maybe the European people are different from the people of color." No, instead they start thinking about "winning over the blacks" or "appealing to the educated Hispanics." And on and on go the good, solid, well-meaning, intelligent conservatives. They will still be blathering when the stew pot is closed over their heads. If you avoid the race issue, if you don't fight for God, for England, and St. George, you might avoid conflict in the short run, but in the long run you will perish because by denouncing your race you have denounced your soul. I believe our Lord summed up the tragedy of the moderate, rational men: "He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it." You can't step outside the realm of the spirit, which is what a man does when he forsakes His people for generic mankind, and still hold on to a place in this world or the world to come.

A friend, who knows how I feel about whites and negro worship, asked me if I was delighted that the new Pope was white. Leaving aside the whole 'whore of Babylon' argument, I told my friend that I felt as I would have felt had Romney won the Presidential election: glad to see a white man in office rather than a black man, but aware that the problem of negro worship still remains the same. Practical, reasonable men such as the conservatives — religious and secular — still believe in a generic system with the negro at the center rather than a particular God who comes to us through our racial hearth fires.

I have in my possession a story book that my grandfather gave to my mother when she was a little girl. When my mother died, I was given the storybook. In the book is the story of Roland. If you remember, Roland was killed fighting a heroic battle against the Saracens when he and his followers acted as a rearguard for Charlemagne. The Saracens were able to ambush Roland because Roland's stepfather, Ganelon, had betrayed him. The story concludes with these words:

Scarcely had Roland breathed his lasts when Charlemagne arrived to find of all his twenty thousand not one left. Mournfully he called his peers by name. Not one there was to answer; not a single one. And on the height, his face toward Spain, they found the hero Roland. Great was the grief of all. Great was the grief of Charlemagne. His host pursued the Saracens and by the river Ebro, the Moors paid to the full the penalty of their treachery. Then bearing the bodies of Roland and Oliver, Charlemagne returned to France. Laden with chains and tied to a stake like a wild beast Ganelon was led before his judges for trial. By his dark deed lay twenty thousand dead. He was condemned and suffered a shameful death. But in the hearts of Charlemagne and all the people of France remained undying love for Roland, for he took his stand, and held it, never yielding, unto death."

Undying love? No, the people of France are regicides now: it is Ganelon who is honored in France, Gessler in Switzerland, Mordred in Britain... We do not honor our dead, we demonize them for being provincial, Christian, and racist. This Babylonian world, ruled by Ganelons and colored tribesmen, was ushered in by moderate, reasonable men who, having lost their connection to their own people, lost their connection to the living God, Jesus Christ, the only one who gives Europeans the heart and the passion to take arms against and defeat Satan and his minions. +

The People of My House

March 23, 2013

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy



"A separation of the races is the only perfect preventive of amalgamation; but as immediate separation is impossible the next best thing is to keep them apart where they are not already together... Such separation, if it is ever to be effected at all, must be effected by colonization... The enterprise is a difficult one, but 'where there is a will there is a way', and what colonization needs most is a hearty will." – [Abraham Lincoln](#)

A few days ago I heard a radio preacher, a self-professed "biblical Christian," expounding on the Lost Tribes of Israel. It was his decided opinion that the Saxons were one of the Lost Tribes of Israel, but having come to that conclusion, the preacher felt the need to issue a warning: "Be careful – believing this could lead a white person to become a white supremacist, which would be the worst sin."

'White supremacist' is the phrase liberals and now conservatives as well use as a bomb to blow up any white person who says anything to suggest that white people and their culture should be protected or segregated from the colored races. The liberals and the jump-on-board conservatives are not very precise in their definition of 'white supremacist' because they don't have to be. No one ever challenges them. Once the term 'white supremacist' is hurled at the offending white person, the white sinner is excommunicated and all who associate with him are also excommunicated. As one of those excommunicated white men, I would like to challenge the liberal-conservative coalition of self-serving, egotistical maniacs and defuse their 'white supremacist' bomb.

We know very well what images the liberal-conservatives are conjuring up, quite successfully, when they use the term 'white supremacist.' The average white person thinks of white plantation owners whipping their slaves, of Ku Klux Klan riders lynching innocent, defenseless negroes, of white baseball players trying to spike the good and pure Jackie Robinson, of white South Africans gunning down defenseless negroes for the pure joy of gunning down defenseless negroes, and of kindly black families being sent away hungry from white restaurants. All this and more the well trained white thinks of when the 'white supremacist' anathema is hurled at a white man. (1) How could white people have any other image of a white supremacist? Haven't they been literally deluged with anti-white propaganda in movies, press, and literature for the past fifty years? The truth about 'white supremacists' is quite different from the liberals' manufactured white bogeymen, but before we defend the 'white supremacists' let us clarify something: there are currently no white supremacists in the strict sense of the word, namely white men who want to rule over blacks. There are an infinitude of black supremacists, of Asian supremacists, and Mexican supremacists, but there are no white supremacists. The white man who still remains a white man does not seek supremacy, he seeks the preservation of his race because he loves his people and because he believes God has ordained that a man should stay by his own racial hearth fire.

A white segregationist is not a white supremacist. I do not want to rule over blacks, Asians, or Mexicans. I want blacks, Asians, and Mexicans to rule themselves respectively in Africa, Asia, and Mexico. My distant ancestors, who were white supremacists in the best sense of the word, wanted to rule over blacks in Africa, Asians in Asia, and Mexicans in Mexico, because they thought blacks, Asians, and Mexicans were better off when whites ruled them. They were right, but such altruism – yes, I said altruism – has been too costly for whites. The colored would not be converted, and when white resolve weakened because of liberal insurgency from within the white strongholds, the colored people sought revenge on the whites for taking them out of bondage, away from their beloved Egyptian night. Better to let them have their Babylon and keep white countries white. But of course the liberals' will not allow that. It is not only the colored countries that must be colored, it is also the white countries that must be colored. I know the liberals' passion to colorize European nations is called diversity, but we know it by its proper name: genocide.

Because of the liberals' passionate hatred of their own people, they refuse to allow whites to segregate themselves from colored people. They want whites to diversify themselves into extinction. For this reason the white segregationist has to be a white supremacist, so long as the colored tribesmen are in his nation. He has no choice. When whites rule other races, those other races prosper, but when the colored races rule white people are always fighting murderous barbarian hordes who want to kill every last white. Haiti was not an aberration: it was and always shall be the model for colored people. The colored people have a barbarian's pride of race, which gives them an insatiable desire to conquer other races, but they do not love their own race as whites did when they were Christian. The love of one's own race fosters a respect for other races, while a pride of race fosters a hatred for other races. This is why a diverse state (obviously not as desirable as a non-diverse state) must be a white-dominated state for the good of all. If whites rule, everyone is better off, but if coloreds rule everyone suffers particularly the whites. Pushed to the brink of the cliff whites must conquer or be driven off the cliff onto the jagged rocks of diversity below.

We live in the moral vacuum Yeats saw coming: "The best lack all conviction and the worst are full of passionate intensity," because the colored peoples have never raised themselves above the level of racial pride, and the white liberals, who hate their own race, have descended to the depths of hell and left the grazers in limbo. The liberal, being post-Christian, mixes a secularized Christianity with paganism. He has the pagan's pride of race, but he is proud of the colored races. By an intellectual metamorphosis the liberal has become one with the colored races in his own mind. I can still see, in my mind's eye, the poster on the door of a young, blue-eyed, blonde student who roomed across the hall from me in my freshmen year at college. The poster showed a black man killing a white man. The caption on the edifying picture was a rallying cry for blacks to rise up and slay their oppressors. Did the white student think he would be slain? Of course not. He was not an oppressor. In his mind's eye he was Atticus Finch, a white man with a black heart who would lead his people against the white oppressors. Kipling tells us that Gunga Din, because of his intense identification with and sympathy for the British soldier, "was white, clear white inside." The Chris Matthews' liberal is the exact opposite: despite his outward color he is black, pure black inside. And the former metamorphosis is what God intended: that the colored should be transformed by a sympathetic imitation of the white, while the latter metamorphosis is what Satan intended when he whispered "noble savage" and "Ye shall be as gods" into the white man's ear.

Denying that they are repudiating Christ by joining the liberals, the conservative church men, such as that radio preacher, tell us they simply love their neighbor as themselves when they embrace diversity. There are two glaring errors in the treacherous church men's assertion. First, loving your neighbor as yourself implies that you love yourself and your own people. You are not to hate your own in order to love the stranger. And secondly, is negro worship even remotely connected to love? What the liberals, and now the Christian churches as well, have done with the negro and the other races of color is what Hugh Hefner did with women in *Playboy*. They have made a god of the generic black man as Hefner made a god of the generic naked woman. Is such a generic love even remotely connected to the love of one's neighbor that Christ talks about? No, it is not. Love of our neighbor implies the love of our own, those who are close to us. It is extremely difficult to love because human beings are small of heart and selfish. That is why God gave us a particular people to dwell with, which constitutes our best chance of stepping outside of ourselves, maybe for just a moment, and truly loving our neighbor as ourselves. The type of love the New Age clergymen recommend is a purely selfish love. Their 'neighbor' is a mind-forged abstraction who exists only to gratify their selfish need to worship a pagan god of nature, who prefers sacrifice to mercy.

I don't know whether the radio minister was right about the Saxons being a Lost Tribe of Israel. I wouldn't thump my chest in pride if it was proved to be true or be crestfallen if it was proved to be false. That the European people are the Christ-bearing people seems evident to me because of something independent of biblical or archeological research. I see Christ in the antique European culture, and I do not see Christ in the anti-cultures of the colored people. What is taking place in the conservative Christian churches (it has already taken place in the mainstream churches) is not a new 'love thy neighbor' policy, in which previously unwelcome people of color are welcomed into the Christian fold. It is a transformation of European Christianity, the true Pauline Christianity, into a pagan, nature religion with the negro as the centerpiece. In this movement toward the pagan abyss the conservative churches are merely following the lead of the secular conservatives and liberals. They are united in their heathenism because they are united in their hatred of the European and their love of the negro.

In his novel *Uncle Silas* LeFanu tells us that, "The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels." I think that is how he approaches most human beings. There are very few Richard the III's who completely and wholeheartedly embrace the devil. Today's churchmen are like Uncle Silas: their hearts have dried up because they left their racial hearth fire in order to go whoring after colored gods of their own making. Such gods cannot provide them with the warmth or the love they once had at their own racial hearth fire. They have become a pathetic sideshow in the great Babylonian pageant of darkness. The task of the antique European, living in this modern Babylon, is to reject the outright blasphemy of the liberals and the more subtle blasphemy of the conservatives. Like a rattlesnake both the conservatives and the liberals reveal their deadly intent: the rattlesnake with his rattle and the liberals and their conservative partners with their 'white supremacist' bomb. We should resist both forms of reptilian onslaughts. The liberal-conservative Christ haters are no more "of us" than the rattlesnake.

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord. +

(1) Instead of "white supremacists" I think we might more accurately describe those men of old Europe who endeavored to help the colored races as white saints. In Africa, in India, and in the American South, wherever the white man went the colored tribesmen were exposed to — and benefited by the exposure to — a culture that put mercy above sacrifice. Anthony Jacob's description of the old South accurately describes the white man's charitable outreach in India and Africa as well:

"With regard to the supposed ill-treatment of the Negro slaves in the South, this was of course a myth. Far from suffering terrible hardships and miseries, they were at least as well off as the contemporary European peasant, and often in better circumstances than many 'poor white' Southerners. Foreign visitors were astonished – not merely surprised – to find how well fed and well cared for they were. The foreign visitors had fully expected to find the Negroes being flogged to death or hung in chains, and were disappointed to find they were not. It is true that whippings with a strap did sometimes take place, as many Negroes would only labour out of fear of the lash. But it was almost invariably a comparatively mild punishment and only administered as a last resort. Whipping was universal a century ago; and what the Negro slaves suffered in this respect was laughable compared with what British seamen or even Eton schoolboys suffered."

And the Dead Shall Be Raised Incorruptible

March 30, 2013
Categories: Antique Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Shakespeare



"Death is swallowed up in victory." – 1 Corinthians 15: 54

I cannot think of Christmas without thinking of Dickens' *Christmas Carol*. Nor can I think of Easter without thinking of Handel's *Messiah*. It's more than just an incidental thing to belong to a people who saw the face of Jesus Christ: it is a great blessing beyond compare. And yet we live in a time when a curse has been placed on the antique Europeans. At some point in time a great trial was held and the European people were found guilty of a heinous crime called 'racism.' As a result their ancient culture — as well as the people of that culture and their descendants — were sentenced to death. In passing that death sentence upon the European people, the liberals also killed the God who inspired the Europeans to proclaim, "And Death once dead, there's no more dying then" (Shakespeare's [Sonnet 146](#)). But of course that was the liberals' intent, to kill God by destroying His image in His creatures. What started out as a small sect of liberals became a legion of men and women committed to the destruction of everything connected to Christian Europe.

The great tragedy for Europe and for the world occurred when European Christianity was perceived to be false because no self-respecting intelligent man could believe in the resurrection of the dead. The pride of reason, "Ye shall be as gods," has always been the besetting sin of mortal man. The reasoning men, the scholars, the philosophers, the scientists, and the men of letters went to the devil first. They were too intelligent to believe in the resurrection from the dead. And the European peasants who did not want to be stupid followed the intellectuals' lead. It's not the proofs of God's existence that are wanting: it's the heart to believe that is wanting. We are not smarter than our European ancestors who believed in Christ's resurrection from the dead. Show me a modern counterpart to Shakespeare, Burke, Michelangelo, or Hugo Grotius. Those men and so many others like them had great intellects, greater than any intellect of today, so why did they believe while the modern European does not believe? It has to do with the heart. Our European ancestors held to a faith that was passed on from heart to heart at their family hearth fires. The faith that is passed on by an organization committed to a theory of God is not the faith. It is an external faith only, an outward circumcision which "availeth nothing," while that internal circumcision of the heart, which takes place when two or three are gathered together in His name, is everything. And where, but at our racial hearth fires where the heart is warmed and nurtured, can we learn to love and understand the God who cannot be understood intellectually but only known by a loving heart? A man's faith in Christ as Redeemer and Savior cannot long endure once he steps outside his racial hearth fire, because in doing so he has embraced the universal mind of man, which leads to Satan, and rejected the heart that truly loves, which leads to Jesus Christ.

We are to God as Katharina the shrew was to Petruchio: before her conversion she saw life as a battle of reasoning wills and felt she must prevail even if it meant defiling her soul to do so. But after her conversion, she sees life through different eyes, through the eyes of the heart, and realizes that conformity to God's beneficent will is all in all:

*I am ashamed that women are so simple
To offer war where they should kneel for peace;
Or seek for rule, supremacy and sway,
When they are bound to serve, love and obey.
Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,
But that our soft conditions and our hearts
Should well agree with our external parts?
Come, come, you foward and unable worms!
My mind hath been as big as one of yours,
My heart as great, my reason haply more,
To bandy word for word and frown for frown;
But now I see our lances are but straws,
Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,
That seeming to be most which we indeed least are.
Then vail your stomachs, for it is no boot,
And place your hands below your husband's foot:
In token of which duty, if he please,
My hand is ready; may it do him ease.*

'Tis a battle we all must wage, this battle with our pride of reason. Lucifer refused to let go of his pride of reason and became Satan, the evil spirit whom liberals adore and Christians shun and hate. I think part of the reason the liberals have chosen the negro as their primary god is because the negro god does not challenge their pride of reason. The negro needs their intelligence to form the first person of the unholy trinity of reason, the negro, and science. Or so the liberal fantasizes. The negro sees a different reality, which does not include anything but the negro.

Easter really is the day of all days for the European. It is the celebration of their Savior's resurrection from the dead, a Savior who can only be known by men and women who have not forsaken those mysterious human relationships that bind us to each other and to our Lord. Pride of reason can only be defeated by humble hearts that have learned to love at their racial hearth fires.

Let me close with a remarkable writer who is only known today for his unremarkable books, while his great Christian work has been completely forgotten. The author's name is James Fenimore Cooper. Cooper was a Christian in ethos like all Europeans of his day, and that ethos was reflected in the manly adventure tales he wrote from age thirty through fifty-five. But in

his mid-fifties Cooper saw the Redeemer who was the source of the European ethos. He saw the untamed Aslan, and he wrote about Him, free of the shackles of any one denomination and free of the “he was a good man but not the Son of God” heresy. Cooper’s hero in his masterpiece *Sea Lions* begins a journey to Antarctica full of the pride of reason, which keeps him from bending his knee to the Son of God. But by the end of the voyage the hero has come to a sympathetic understanding of the love that his intellect never could understand:

Roswell Gardiner has never wavered in his faith, from the time when his feelings were awakened by the just view of his own insignificance, as compared to the power of God! He then learned the first, great lesson in religious belief, that of humility; without which no man can be truly penitent, or truly a Christian. He no longer thought of measuring the Deity with his narrow faculties, or of setting up his blind conclusions, in the face of positive revelations. He saw that all must be accepted, or none; and there was too much evidence, too much inherent truth, a morality too divine, to allow a mind like his to reject the gospel altogether. With Mary at his side, he has continued to worship the Trinity, accepting its mysteries in an humble reliance on the words of inspired men.

Gardiner’s journey was Cooper’s journey: his European heart conquered his pride of reason. Christ will conquer our pride of reason as well if we turn to Him with humble hearts. Why, in the year of our Lord 2013, should we turn our backs on the God of our ascending race? “Christ is risen!” And the response of all true Europeans shall always be, “Indeed He has!” +

Why Do the Heathen Rage

April 6, 2013

Categories: Jacobinism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Third Dumb Brother

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Hippolyte Taine



Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. – *Psalm 2: 3*

It is not remarkable that black savages went on a rampage in the Miracle Mile district of downtown Chicago on Easter eve. Nor was it remarkable that the usual assortment of college professors and members of the press excused the rampage, while spewing their venom on any white man who dared criticize the black savages. Neither event, the rampage and the liberals' defense of the rampage, was remarkable because bloody mayhem is the normal activity of blacks, just as the defense of bloody mayhem by blacks is the normal everyday activity of liberals. What would have been remarkable, astonishingly so, would have been a white counterattack against the black savages. If whites had demanded that the black savages who participated in the rampage be jailed and all other black savages sent back to Africa, then we would truly have seen and heard something remarkable.

Of course such a sane, Christian response to black crime will not be forthcoming because white people have contracted a brain fever which has spread to their blood. They no longer believe in the Gospel of Christ, they believe in the gospel of the negro. Instinctively after years of brainwashing the white man always assumes that whatever the black man does is good – or at least an excusable evil brought on by whites – and whatever the white man does is evil. White people always denigrate the white and deify the black without questioning why they do so. The liberals' creed – black is good, white is evil – has been internalized by the white grazer so that in every instance he will take the side of the black against his own people. And whenever a conservative — at least one who is more conservative than his liberal cousin – wants to have an impact on his culture he tries to invoke the black gods of the liberals. “Abortion is bad because it harms black people.” “We should condemn welfare because it hurts the black family structure.” Everything is good or evil depending on how it affects blacks and the other colored races. And as a corollary everything is good if it hurts white people. Amnesty must be extended to illegal Aztecs because that will change the racial composition of the United States from white to colored. That is good. Why is it good that savage Aztecs should replace white people? It is self-evidently good, just as it was good and holy when black savages became the rulers of white South Africa. Did anyone from the West ask why it was good? Of course not: one does not question something as basic as the turning of the earth.

This new religion, which is an extension of Jacobinism, in which the negroes become “the people,” will not be voted away or altered by any type of democratic stratagem. Negro worship is a hard, bloodthirsty, heathen faith, and it is the blood of the white man that the liberals offer as sacrifice to their bloody negro gods.

The horrendous atrocities that were committed in the “religious” wars between various Christian sects were always committed by those men and women who were more committed to their abstract notion of God than to the living God. But there was always a counterbalance to the abstracted Christian atheists, because the European people worshipped a non-abstract, personal God named Jesus Christ. A Christian leaven kept the abstracted fanatics from turning Christendom into Satandom. What happens then when the spirit of abstraction predominates in a people who have lost or wavered in their faith in Christ? The satanic, abstracted minds of atheists rule the roost with all the zeal of the older Christian sectarian zealots, but without the counterbalance of a Christian people:

Thus is this character rounded off like that of the theologian who would become an inquisitor. Extraordinary contrasts meet in its formation—a lunatic that is logical, and a monster that pretends to have a conscience. Under the pressure of his faith and egotism, he has developed two deformities, one of the head and the other of the heart; his common sense is gone, and his moral sense is utterly perverted. In fixing his mind on abstract formulas, he is no longer able to see men as they are; through self-admiration he finally comes to viewing his adversaries, and even his rivals, as miscreants deserving of death. On this downhill road nothing stops him, for, in qualifying things inversely to their true meaning, he has violated within himself the precious conceptions which bring us back to truth and justice. No light reaches eyes which regard blindness as clear-sightedness; no remorse affects a soul which erects barbarism into patriotism, and which sanctions murder with duty. – [The French Revolution](#)

In my copy of Taine that last sentence is underlined. Our negro-worshipping liberals are a people whom no light reaches, whose hearts are never touched with remorse at destroying the white race, and they equate patriotism with the murder of white Christians. Are such a people fit to govern? Again, we must quote MacDuff: “Fit to govern! No, not to live.”

Robespierre was not deposed because the French Assembly repudiated Jacobinism any more than Khrushchev was deposed because the Russian government repudiated communism. Robespierre's Jacobinism simply came into conflict with a more Catholic and cavalier Jacobinism (kill all opposition to the people, but at a slower rate). But at heart the French Republic remained Jacobin just as Europe became Jacobin. Burke was repudiated by his own party for his fierce opposition to the French Revolution, while every nation of Europe succumbed to its own version of the French Revolution. Liberty, equality, and fraternity for the people, and death to the aristocrats. But who are the people? They are the colored tribesmen. And who are the aristocrats? The Christ-bearing people, the whites.

In countries such as Haiti and South Africa, the whites have been and are being killed outright, and their deaths are presented to the whites in other countries as the result of racism. If you are not racist, you have nothing to worry about: “By flattering us, that we are not subject to the same vices and follies, it induces a confidence, that we shall not suffer the same evils by a contact with the infamous gang of robbers who have thus robbed and butchered our neighbors before our faces.” The white Eugene Terreblanches of South Africa are our neighbors. If we do not love them and hate their murderers we are as bad as the black fiends who murdered them.

In nations such as the United States, Britain, France, etc., nations which still have a sizeable white population, the colored minions of the liberals kill by miscegenation and one man, one vote. Miscegenation is worse than abortion — and abortion is a sin that cries out to heaven for vengeance — because it results in the abortion of a whole line of white children while giving birth to a whole line of satanic offspring. And that great sin is maintained by one man, one vote. Why should the vote of a colored man, who hates and despises Christian Europe, count the same as the vote of a white man who loves and reveres Christian Europe? And why should a liberal who has announced, by his devotion to the negro, that he hates everything Christian and European, be allowed to have any say in the governance of a people who consecrated themselves to Christ? It's blasphemy. And the fact that it is democratic blasphemy does not make it any less loathsome and foul than communist blasphemy.

I call a commonwealth Regicide, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers; and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles, and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it.—This I call Regicide by establishment. — [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

Is this not exactly the system we have instituted? The royal race, the Christ-bearing race, are being exterminated, and every day we have our Earth Days, our Jackie Robinson days, and our Assisi I, II, and III, to commemorate godless heathenism and rejoice in the extermination of Christian Europeans and the demonization of their past. I call these abominations “Regicide by establishment.”

When I was young I had only heard the story of the Solomon who had asked God for wisdom rather than riches, and who solved the dispute between the two women, both claiming to be the mother of the one baby. It wasn't till I was older that I read about the later years of this hideous blasphemer called Solomon. He did not use his God-given wisdom to serve the Lord, because he did not love the Lord in his heart. He loved the “strange” women of the pagans.

But King Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites: Of the nations concerning which the Lord said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto these in love. — I Kings 11: 1-2

The Scriptures go on to contrast Solomon with his father, David: “And his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father.” Of David? His sins were scarlet, but he did not call his sins virtues and institutionalize them. He sought God’s forgiveness and continued to love God in his heart. Is not the crucial difference between Solomon and David the crucial difference between the modern liberal Europeans and the antique Europeans? The former have abandoned the true God, Jesus Christ, and replaced Him with the heathen gods of color. The latter group of Europeans were sinners, but they did not institutionalize sin. And they loved God in their hearts. All Europeans who still have hearts to love will cleave to ancient Europe, which was consecrated to Christ, and reject modern Europe, which is dedicated to the heathen gods of color whose rites are celebrated in the European churches and homes once consecrated to Christ.

The heathens rage in the streets of Chicago, London, Paris, and in streets throughout the European world because the European people have forsaken the faith of their fathers. The European people were, like David, the third dumb brothers found in the European fairy tales. Alone against a multitude of colored heathens they ventured forth and prevailed because they had that “charity of honor” which is bred in the bone of a people who love the Man of Sorrows with all their heart.

Our “conservative” leaders in church and state think we can convert the heathen by blending with them. That is the lie men who refuse to fight for their God tell people in order to cloak their apostasy. Solomon never formerly renounced the worship of the true God; he simply blended the worship of the God of Israel with the worship of the heathen gods. All the great evils that threaten – nay, seem to be permanent evils that Europeans must capitulate to, evils such as miscegenation, legalized abortion, Godless socialism and its cousin, Robber Baron capitalism – can and will be conquered when the Europeans become the third dumb brothers of Europe again. It is not our pygmy minds that God has need of, it is our hearts. We must follow David, St. Paul, Alfred, and Tell, not Solomon, Judas, Robespierre, and Mandela. In our blood are sacred memories of our people and our God. When those memories take hold of our soul there is no army on earth, no matter how large its numbers, that can stand against us. This has been proven time and time again in the history of the European people. The primary battle is an internal one. When the European stays with the European people and their God, refusing to blend with the heathen, he becomes the defender of Christendom, the scourge of Satandom, and the soul of honor. It is still possible: it is necessary. The heathens rage in European cities because Europeans no longer believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ. When they turn from their colored gods and call on Him by name, they will regain that charity of honor and they will reclaim their nations for Christ the King. +

Nearer to Thee

April 13, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christian counter-attack, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy
Tags: Edmund Burke, George Fitzhugh



“We are the friend of popular government, but only so long as conservatism is the interest of the governing class.” – George Fitzhugh

H. C. McNeile, the author of the Bulldog Drummond adventure novels which were published in the 1920s and early 1930s, always made fun of his own intellectual prowess and of his hero's. But McNeile's Drummond had wise blood. He was always battling a seemingly divergent coalition of rich financiers and radical leftists. Each group had slightly different reasons for wanting to destroy Britain, but they were united in their desire to destroy old Britain.

McNeile was on to something. The financier does not want the restrictions that come with a traditional Christian society: he wants the “freedom” to pursue unlimited wealth, while the left-wing destroyers want freedom from anything that inhibits their pursuit of Babylon.

Writers, especially when they act in a body, and with one direction, have great influence on the public mind; the alliance, therefore, of these writers with the monied interest had no small effect in removing the popular odium and envy which attended that species of wealth. These writers, like the propagators of all novelties, pretended to a great zeal for the poor, and the lower orders, whilst in their satires they rendered hateful, by every exaggeration, the faults of courts, of nobility, and of priesthood. They became a sort of demagogues. They served as a link to unite, in favour of one object, obnoxious wealth to restless and desperate poverty. – Burke

Against the evil coalition of capitalists and radicals was Bulldog Drummond. He came from that “happy breed” of men who believed in God, Crown, and race. He and his followers proved more than a match for the destroyers. And lest we doubt for one moment that McNeile's Drummond was anchored in reality, we have only to refer to Jay Henry Mowbray's account of the *Sinking of the Titanic*. What a breed of men! We shall never see their like again.

When the last boatload of priceless human life swung away from the davits of the Titanic, it left behind on the decks of the doomed ship hundreds of men who knew that the vessel's mortal wound spelt Death for them also. But no cravens these men who went to their nameless graves, nor scourged as the galley slave to his dungeon.

Called suddenly from the ordinary pleasure of ship life and fancied security, they were in the moment confronted with the direct peril of the sea, and the absolute certainty that, while some could go to safety, many must remain.

It was the supreme test, for if a man lose his life he loses all. But, had the grim alternative thought to mock the cowardice of the breed, it was doomed to disappointment.

Silently these men stood aside. “Women first,” the inexorable law of the sea, which one disobeys only to court everlasting ignominy, undoubtedly had no place in their minds. “Women first,” the common law of humanity, born of chivalry and the nobler spirit of self-sacrifice, prevailed.

They simply stood aside.

The first blush of poignant grief will pass from those who survive and were bereft. But always will they sense in its fullest meaning this greatest of all sacrifice. Ever must it remain as a reassuring knowledge of the love, and faithfulness, and courage, of the Man, and of his care for the weak.

“Greater love hath no man than this that a man lay down his life for his friend.” – [Sinking of the Titanic](#)

When faced with the supernatural courage and charity that can only come from a kith-and-kin, bred-in-the-bone Christianity, exhibited by the men and women on the Titanic, we can do one of two things. We can acknowledge that we are as nothing compared to those heroes of faith and ask God to give us the grace to follow, however falteringly, in their train, or we can sneer at that happy breed of Christians and worship the graceless gods of color represented by the Orientals on the Titanic who rushed to get on the lifeboats with the women and children.

I was just preparing for sleep when the crash came, and throwing on some clothes, I rushed on deck with my husband. In a short time we were told that the women would be sent in the boats. I did not want to leave my husband, but he laughed and told me that the boating was only temporary. There was very little confusion when we put off and the men in the first and second cabins were absolutely calm. Mr. Stengel kissed me and told me not to worry, that he would come in a later boat, unless it was decided to bring us back on the ship.

For some reason no attention was paid to the men who were put in our boat. One of them was an undersized Chinaman and the other was an Oriental of some kind. When the lifeboat struck the water they crawled up in the bottom and began to moan and cry. They refused to take their places at the oars and first class women passengers had to man many of the rowlocks. Still none of us thought that the great Titanic would sink. We rowed two hundred yards away, as they had told us, watching the great ship. Then the lights began to go out and then came a terrible crash like dynamite.

I heard a woman in the bow scream and then came three more terrific explosions. The boat gave a sudden lurch and then we saw the men jumping from the decks. Some of us prayed and I heard women curse, but the most terrible things was the conduct of the Chinaman and the Oriental. They threw themselves about the boat in absolute fits and almost upset the boat. They were a menace during the whole night and in the morning when the light began to come in the east and when the women were exhausted from trying to man the oars, the two of them found some cigarettes and lay in the bottom of the boat and smoked while we tried to work the oars.

The fact that the liberals have chosen to build an anti-civilization on the ethos of the later group of individuals sickens me beyond words.

McNeile's Drummond was a heroic English, European type who has now faded from the world's stage. He was a conservative defender of the status quo, as all good men and true should be when their government is conservative. But when the radical leftists and the liberal capitalists coalesce, take control of the government, and use colored barbarians to destroy the religious and racial core of your nation, a conservative must cease to conserve: he must be a counter-revolutionary determined to destroy the existing government.

There are no conservative governments, governments that are committed to an all-white Christian nation, anywhere in the European world, which is fast becoming the non-European world. In fact quite the contrary is the case. Every single European government is now committed to the extermination of the white race and the destruction of the Christian faith. Words such as democracy and equality are used to cloak what should be obvious: the white race is being destroyed by the liberals and the colored tribes. The liberals' so-called democracy has nothing to do with the democracy of the antique Europeans. The democratic element was only present in the British system, for instance, as part of a threefold power structure that included the monarch, the nobility, and a select number of white males. Democracy, when used correctly, does not entail equality, because all men are inherently unequal. No self-respecting European would ever consider giving voting privileges to the colored stranger anymore than he would give voting privileges to the criminal or the lunatic. Such a flagrant sacrilege would lead to the destruction of the European people. But of course such a sacrifice has been institutionalized throughout the European nations, and it has led to the destruction of the European people.

The effects are not seen immediately, but the moment a European nation becomes an egalitarian democratic nation it ceases to be a white Christian nation and becomes a revolutionary Jacobin nation that must be destroyed. One looks in vain for any post-World War II conservatives who ever raised their voices, let alone their clenched fists, in defense of the European people as a separate, distinct people whose survival was all in all. Burke wanted to go to war with a foreign nation that had instituted egalitarian democracy. What would he have done had it polluted his own nation? What would any European who was still a European have done? They wouldn't have bowed down to the gods of color: they would have fought for God and country.

It is now considered racist, immoral, and unChristian for a white man to love his own people and fight for their survival as a people. Yet it is not considered racist, immoral, and unChristian if the colored races want to love their own people and fight for their survival. It is only the white race that is supposed to commit suicide in order to appease the colored gods whom they have offended terribly. How have they offended them? They tried to take them out of their Babylonian night into the light of Europe's day. Is that such a terrible thing? Now that French San Domingo is no more, has the great black voodoo republic of Haiti served as a beacon light of civilization? Now that white South Africa, that white pearl surrounded by ugly black soot, is no more, have the blood-soaked negro barbarians, who serve satanic Mandela, ushered in – as we were told they would once the whites ceased to govern them – a new Eden? None of this matters to the liberal, because he is not the least bit interested in truth. The worship of the black gods massages his ego and the hatred of the white man allows him to strike back at God for not running the universe according to liberal principles.

Once the European accepts the principles of democratic egalitarianism, which entails racial integration and the elimination of national boundaries, the European has accepted the liquidation of the white race. Numbers are insignificant when a few determined Europeans face the colored barbarians in battle: the spirited few will always prevail because they have that within which the colored barbarians do not have. But in the democratic egalitarian arena of the voting booth where the spiritual values count for nothing and sheer numbers count for everything the white race will be voted out of existence. White "conservatives" who accept the colored influx, legal and illegal, into their nations, hoping to "win them over" to the conservative side, are not conservatives, they are liberals. If we simply differ about the rate at which the white race should be liquidated are our differences that great?

So long as there are no counter-revolutionary white leaders, men who want to bury democratic egalitarianism and restore non-egalitarian, white Europe, the white race, the only race that ever created a genuine spiritually based civilization, will disappear from the face of the earth. But we shall not disappear from the earth if we break our democratic egalitarian shackles and become Europeans once again. The refreshing thing about Bulldog Drummond is that he has no regard for democracy or the laws that stem from democracy. He cares about the survival of that happy breed of men, his people. And that is what we should care about as well. These days, conservatives talk about the survival of democracy and the survival of capitalism while ignoring that which is essential, the survival of the white race.

If we go down into the boiler room of the devil's flag ship, the luxury cruise ship called Liberal Lily, we can see that Satan has won the liberals over to his cause and confused and divided the white grazers by blending science and democratic egalitarianism. When the laws of the physical universe are applied to man, when he is regarded as mere biological specimen with no animating spirit within, he becomes subject to the laws of nature, and in nature we are all equal, subject to the same laws of birth, maturity, decay and death.

We need only look at the work of the degenerate anthropologist Franz Boas (is there any other kind of anthropologist?) to see how the scientific gambit is used to push democratic egalitarianism, which translates to racial diversity, which translates to the reign of the colored barbarians. Boas, who was the mentor of the sexual integrationist Margaret Mead, thought that the entire human race should blend with the black race so that all races would be equal. To further this end he became the foremost advocate of forced busing in America. This democratic solution to the race problem was pushed forward under the guise of science. Just as we progress in our accumulated knowledge of nature we advance morally, and the moral complement of a scientifically advanced people is democratic egalitarianism. Such is the liberal mantra, which is subject to the usual egalitarian caveat, "All are equal but some are more equal than others." In the liberals' pantheon the more-than-equal are the colored, who are closer to nature, which science tells us is the be-all and end-all of existence.

So long as the white people remain shackled to the scientific-democratic egalitarian heresy, they will be wanderers in the desert of modernity estranged from their past and their God. It is not just a matter of repudiating Darwinian evolution. Many who reject Darwin still accept democratic egalitarian evolution – democratic egalitarian race-mixing is seen as a moral evolution by the religious right. A man must repudiate the whole liberal ideology before he can become like unto and part of that happy breed of men who worship the living God in spirit and in truth.

The Drummond stories and *The Wind and the Willows* type stories represent a last look back at the "racist" Europeans, the last great breed of men. They were conservative in the true sense of the word. What they wanted to conserve was their people, and through their people, their faith in Christ, the one true God. My personal belief, which I have no scientific evidence to support, is that the European people will slowly emerge from their dark night of science and democracy and become Europeans again. God will not forsake His people. That same charity of honor that inspired those men on the Titanic to give up their lives for their kith and kin, will once again inspire seemingly ordinary Europeans to take arms against and defeat the numerically superior coalition of liberals and colored barbarians. Out of the depths we will cry to Him and He will answer our prayer. Even in their fallen state, in their modernity-induced stupor, I can see remnants of grace in the European grazers. Our people are not irredeemable. They are the Christ-bearers. If we light enough counter-revolutionary fires, our people will see the light and call on Him by name. +

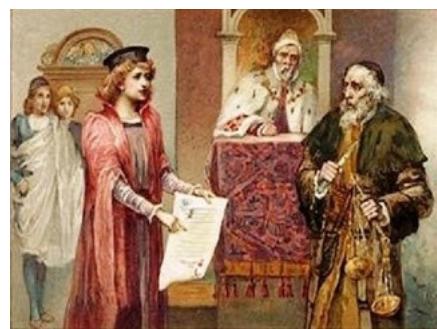
*So, by my woes I'll be
Nearer, My God, to Thee,
Nearer to Thee.*

The People of Mercy

April 20, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy

Tags: Shakespeare



But mercy is above this sceptred sway;
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,
It is an attribute to God himself;
And earthly power doth then show likkest God's
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,
That, in the course of justice, none of us
Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy;
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render
The deeds of mercy.

-The Gentle Bard

But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

-Romans 2: 29

The Jackie Robinson ceremonies in this country were just another chance for liberals to express their love and faith in the negro gods while they hurled anathemas at all racist Europeans past and present. This liberal hatred of the white race is so great that we must conclude that it is fueled by the same satanic being who fueled Shylock's hatred of Antonio. "I hate him for he is a Christian." The liberal gentile is one with the Jew in his hatred of Christ and his people. One is struck, when reading about the infamous atrocities of the Jacobins, how much they resemble, in their maniacal hatred of all things Christian, the obtuse Jews who also have hardened their hearts against the light. In fact the ranks of the liberals have so expanded since Shakespeare wrote *The Merchant of Venice* that even were every Jew to disappear, the liberal gentiles would still outnumber the Christian Europeans. And now, when the liberals demand their pound of white Christian flesh, they get it, by the ton.

We need go no further than the Grand Inquisitor scene in Dostoevsky's novel *The Brothers' Karamazov* to see how Christians become spiritual Jews. The Grand Inquisitor has set up a system of rules and regulations that he says come from God. But in reality they are man-made rules based on the assumption that mankind will be happier if they have no contact with the living God. God is truth, and the truth is painful, because a man, if he is to worship God in spirit and in truth, must see past the external rites of sacrifice and practice the internal rites of mercy. There must be, as St. Paul tells us, a circumcision of the heart, before we can know and love God. The Christian churchmen and their adherents have become Jews because they have used their enlightened minds to set up an external system of salvation that does not require an internal circumcision of the heart. This is why the modern churchmen are so maniacally opposed to any manifestation of the bred-in-the-bone Christianity of the ancient Europeans. Such a faith, stemming from the European's love of his God in and through his people, would destroy the external façade of the liberal churchmen's Christian Judaism. There are none so blind as those who will not see, and it is a deliberate hardening of the heart that causes moral blindness. It is in vain that we refer the Christian Jews to the scriptural passages in which God promised salvation to the Jews if they repented. The Christian Jews are still determined to support the unrepentant Israelites. It is also in vain that one calls attention to the atrocities committed by the Israelites. Still they must be supported. For what reason? For the same reason Caiaphas wanted Christ to be crucified. Contact with the living God is too painful: better to cling to manmade external rites and let truth be crucified on a cross between two thieves.

The desire to keep the living God at bay is behind the Christian Zionists' refusal to look past the outward Judaic forms of Christianity to the Christian God within, who has a local habitation and a name. In the Christian Zionists' eyes the outward forms of religion are religion itself. Thus an Israelite who has the external appearance of a Jew is the chosen of God no matter what he believes about Jesus Christ. And a white European is just a man with white skin; his outer whiteness is not the sign and symbol of a white soul, a soul that is called upon to champion the living God. I once watched a production of Oscar Wilde's story called "The Selfish Giant" with a cousin who was and is a Christian Zionist. The story is a beautiful one that brings us close to our Lord through a sympathetic connection to His sacred humanity. It brought tears to my eyes, but it only made my cousin laugh in scorn and derision. I was deeply troubled by my cousin's reaction to the "Selfish Giant" story. Was it just a question of taste? I don't think so. I think it was a case of two different faiths colliding. I see, in the antique Europeans, the true Hebrews, the people who believed that Christ was the Son of God, just as the Hebrew prophets foretold. I do not believe that the external Jews, living in a democratic egalitarian oligarchy, committed to international terrorism, are the people of God. In fact, I think it is blasphemous to assume our Lord was not serious when He said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."

The Christian Zionists are like the Pharisees: they profess to believe in God, but their God is a cruel God, a figment of their own distorted vision of a God who can be embodied in a materialistic culture where the people are manically hostile to Jesus Christ. The Christian Zionists are not as numerous as their liberal brethren, who are religious atheists like the Sadducees, but they make up the bulk of the Christian churches, which gives Satan a firm foothold in the institutions which used to house the followers of Christ.

If we look at the various anti-Christian tributaries – Judaism, Islam, Hinduism, liberalism, Christian Zionism – we can see that they all flow into one river, the river of biological determinism. If the outward, material substance of a man is the man himself, and not the sign and symbol of a spiritual substance within the man, then our destiny is the biological dung heap where there is no Jew, no Christian, no black or white: there is just rot. With all the blending in the satanic era of the Europeans' history — Christianity with Judaism, Christianity with Paganism, Christianity with Mohammedanism, black with white, etc. — we have lost sight of just how profoundly different and distinct the culture of the antique Europeans was. They and they alone said, through their culture, that man's destiny was not the biological dung heap. He was born to a higher destiny. Created by a loving God, man was destined to live for all eternity, in spirit and in truth, with that loving God:

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. John 14: 1-3

The antique Europeans were pilgrims of the spirit. They went into the deep woods, where the colored barbarians refused to go, and saw the face of the living God. Once having seen the true God, they replaced the graven images of the gods of nature with the sign of the cross. But now that the Europeans have torn down the sign of the cross and returned the graven images,

under slightly different guises, to their old places of prominence, we can begin to see what hell will be like. It's a world devoid of God's grace, the grace that permeated the world of the hated Europeans of the Christian era.

The devil, as Walter Scott observed, is a strict formalist: he adheres to the outward forms of all things on earth because he hates the living God who animates all things on earth from within. If Satan can keep men away from the depths within, he can keep them away from God. This is why the negro and the other colored tribesmen are worshipped and exalted in our modern society. So long as men stay on the superficial outer layer of life, where the colored pagans live, they will never come in contact with the God that dwells in the depths of the human heart.

When the Europeans were strong in their faith they tried to take Christ to the colored heathens. Now that they are weak in their faith, the colored heathens have replaced Christ in the hearts and minds of the European people. And it's so much more natural now that the white man has abandoned Christ, the liberals tell us. But can white men ever be satisfied with unadulterated paganism? They are trying very hard to convince themselves that they can, but the suicide rate among young whites and the drug-crazed pornographic frenzy of the white adults indicate that they must either return to the faith of their fathers or perish. No doubt the liberals, like the swine in the Gospel, will go over the cliff, but that is no reason the rest of the white race has to go with them. The liberals seem strong now, but they have no spiritual foundation: their faith in the negro is not a sustaining faith. When they fall because of spiritual atrophy, it is the white Europeans who have not worshipped at the altars of the negro gods or turned their backs on the living God in order to become as one with the unrepentant Jews, who will lead the European people out of bondage.

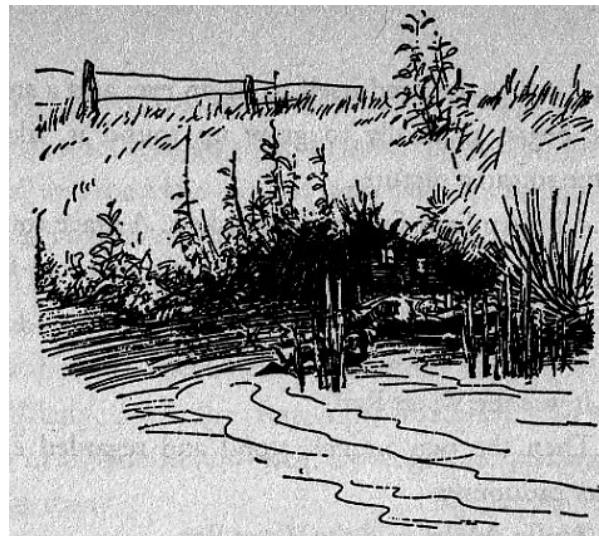
The modern European's bondage, like that of the ancient Hebrews, is a self-willed bondage. He has returned to the cruel gods of nature. The Hebrews worshipped Baal and the modern Europeans worship the negro, but it amounts to the same thing. If a man rejects the living God he will be condemned to live and die with a false nature god. And to protect his nature god he must strike out at his god's rival. The liberals will never compromise with the Christian Europeans because their gods are at enmity with each other. The only reason the Christian churches are tolerated by the liberal is because they have blended their Christian faith with negro worship and Judaism. The negro takes precedence with the secular liberals and the liberal churchmen while the Jew takes precedence with the "religious" conservatives, but so long as you hate the Christian European you can be part of Liberaldom. The liberal and his Jewish brethren are fond of hurling charges of "hate-mongering" and "racism" at the Christian European. But the defense of one's people and one's God is not hate-mongering or racism. Neither the liberal, the Christian Zionist, or the Jew has to reject God's grace. They choose to do so. We are not obligated to stand by while they defile our God by attempting to destroy the people who consecrated their lives to Him. In fact, quite the contrary is the case. We are obliged to defend our people and our faith, loving and hating with all our hearts. +

Our Race is Our Home

April 27, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Kenneth Grahame



The true lawgiver ought to have a heart full of sensibility. He ought to love and respect his own kind, and to fear himself. —Edmund Burke

While viewing the “Boston Strong” celebrations after the capture of the second Moslem terrorist, I thought of Johann Wolfgang Goethe. This might seem like an odd juxtaposition, but it was not a forced association: the link between Goethe and the white grazers of Boston seemed quite natural to me. Goethe was a great genius and a son of Christian Europe. In his masterpiece *Faust* he reveals a great understanding of the nature of evil and of the divine mercy of God. But in his work as a whole Goethe shows us a man divided into three parts. He is part Christian, part pagan, and partly the man of the future, uttering hopelessly banal trivialities about the profundity of the Hypsistarians (a religious sect that venerated what was the “most perfect that came to their knowledge”). The Christian poet Scott praised the Christian insights in Goethe’s *Faust*, and the militant atheist Shaw praised Goethe for stepping outside of Christianity and looking forward to a new cosmic, non-Christian religion. Neither Scott nor Shaw was incorrect. Goethe was a confused and divided man without a spiritual core.

The modern European grazers, represented by the white grazers of Boston, are like the confused and disordered Goethe. Their hearts are Christian enough to weep for the victims of the Boston massacre, but they are not Christian enough to give up their liberal sponsored sporting events long enough to challenge the liberal oligarchy that permits the massacre of their own people, in the name of diversity. And make no mistake about it – this most recent “terrible tragedy” was a manmade tragedy. It was not an unpreventable tragedy like a flood or a hurricane. This tragedy was ideologically driven.

Let me go back a number of years to my college days. I was asked to be the student representative at a religious department sponsored, intercollegiate, intercommunity roundtable discussion of Islam and the West. Besides myself, the panel consisted of several ministers turned professors and several ex-priests, also turned professors. There was one secularized Jewish rabbi on the panel and one Moslem professor. Only the Moslem professed to believe in the tenets of his faith. The “Christians” and the rabbi no longer believed in their faiths.

When the panel discussion got round to the question: “Should Moslems be permitted to live and work in the non-Moslem countries of Europe and the United States?”, all the former clergymen and the rabbi said, “Of course, they should be allowed to live and work in the European nations.” I disagreed, stating that it would be more humane to our own people and to the Moslems themselves (there was some kind of Gulf War going on at the time) if we kept all Moslems out of the Western countries and then ceased bombing them in their countries. Surprisingly enough, or maybe not so surprising, the Westerners were horrified at my suggestion while the Moslem agreed with me. It was pointed out to him that if my suggestion was to become a policy of the Western countries, he, as a visiting professor of Islamic studies, would not be permitted in the United States. His response was quite revealing: “You are fools to let me in your country, because I want to destroy you!” No doubt the sponsors of the religious roundtable were quite disappointed. They couldn’t get all smarmy over such an unecumenical outcome from what was intended as a celebration of humane diversity.

The Moslem and I did not shake hands and become friends after the conference. I knew he hated Christians, and he knew I hated Moslems. But we had achieved the clarity that can only come when two people actually have beliefs. If you believe in nothing, as the former clergymen did, you can come together in a hazy ecumenical unity of nothingness. I would prefer to believe in something besides polite ecumenical nothingness, but then I’m full of the prejudices of a by-gone era, brought on, no doubt by an excessive exposure to old books written by white European males.

I haven’t forgotten the point. We were talking about the Boston Massacre and the white people who see nothing wrong with a government which bombs innocent Moslems over there, but then thinks it is somehow necessary and beneficial to let Moslems live, work, study, and worship over here. What evil lurks in the hearts of a governing body of people that think their own people, such as that eight-year-old boy blown to bits at the finish line of the Boston Marathon, should be sacrificed to preserve their satanic ideology of diversity? The shadow knows and so do we. It is better that one man should die so that we, the pagan Jews, can live, was Caiaphas’s belief. The liberals think it is better that Moslems, blacks, Mexicans, Asians, and every other anti-European religion and race should have free reign to murder, rape, and terrorize whites so that they won’t have to give up their faith in a multi-racial world, minus the white man, which is consecrated to Satan, through his conduit, the noble black savage.

The white grazers will claim that their government officials love them dearly because they killed one Moslem terrorist and wounded another. That’s all well and good — I wish they had killed both of them – but the grazers must be told that the government responded to the Boston massacre because the bombers terrorized people at a state-sponsored celebration of diversity. Attacks upon the liberal state will be punished. But the on-going rapes and murders of white women by Pakistani and Afghan Moslems in this nation and throughout the European nations will be ignored. No one in the liberal oligarchies will seek to punish those Moslem murderers and rapists. Nor will the liberal rulers seek to put an end to the ongoing black reign of terror throughout the major cities of the United States and many of the European cities. Quite the contrary, they will continue to aid and abet the black race in their war efforts by continually attacking white people in print, in pulpit, and on television.

There is more than just a small remnant of grace left in my people, the white grazers. But all their noble sentiments, exemplified by the “Boston Strong” hockey fans, have been turned against them. They’ll cry for the victims of a bombing at a liberal-sponsored sporting event and sing inoffensive generic songs without realizing that they are a captive people without a country. A nation consists of a people with one common faith and one common race. The land mass where they settle is incidental to their nationhood. A white Christian New Zealander, no matter if he never lives one day in Britain, is British, while a naturalized British citizen of Jamaican descent is an African no matter that he is called a British citizen. Race and faith make a nation, so it always has been and so it always shall be.

There are no European nations in existence anywhere in the world today for the obvious reason that there are no incorporate unions of European people committed to a nation of one faith and one race: the Christian faith and the white race. “Nationalist” sentiment demonstrated by the ecumenical, “please don’t call me racist, anti-semitic, or a Moslem-hater” English Defence League in response to the black hooligans of London, or by generic, interracial, non-denominational “Boston Strong” demonstrations, is not the type of nationalism that will help the European people. It will only help to fuel liberalism and bury the European people.

The European people are currently being pulled in every direction just as Goethe was. What could have made Goethe an integral man could also make the European people a people again. Goethe needed to believe that God entered human history in the person of Jesus Christ. Such a belief keeps a man anchored to reality, a reality that can only be comprehended through humanity. If God is in us and we are of Him, we can only know Him to the extent that we honor our ties to our kith and kin. We cannot go cosmic or ecumenical and still maintain our faith in the living God. Christ is not the God of religions or the cosmos: He is the God of human hearts who have been warmed at their own, not strangers', hearth fires. Burke said that a cold relation made a bad citizen. And extending that thought we can say that a poor relation cannot comprehend Christianity, because the God who saved mankind from death because of His divine charity can only be known through charity, a charity that begins at home and perishes without a home. Our race is our home: it is Ratty's river where all good things dwell –

"By it and with it and on it and in it," said the Rat. "It's brother and sister to me, and aunts and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other."

When the European people once again feel connected to Christian Europe as Ratty felt connected to his river, they will not permit Moslems, Jews, or colored barbarians to set foot on their sacred homelands. Provincialism is not racist, it is Christian.

It doesn't hurt the colored barbarians and the heathens when they mix with the white Europeans, because they can't become any worse than they are: they are barbarians and heathens. But when the white European mixes with the colored barbarians and the heathens he becomes the most odious human on the face of the earth. He becomes a traitor to the light and a man without a country. Such a soul-dead individual must become a second-hand colored barbarian and second-hand heathen in order to convince himself that still he lives. This type of individual is called a liberal and there are far too many of them in the formerly European lands. The great battle that is being waged right now is for the souls of the white grazers who are neither fish nor fowl: they still have hearts, so they cannot be called doctrinaire liberals, but they have lost contact with their racial home, so they cannot be called Europeans.

The first Europeans embraced Christianity because they felt that in Christ they had found their true King and kinsman. They didn't bend their knees to power and might, hoping, like the colored tribesmen, to appease an angry God who demanded sacrifice. They bent their knees to Christ's divine humanity. They saw Christ as the true hero, a loyal kinsman, and the living God. They saw and believed because Christ's humanity spoke to their humanity. The colored tribes never adopted Christianity because they never were stirred by Christ's divine humanity.

The liberals have set up a government that demands that the white man mix with and worship the coloreds because they hope that faith in Christ, as the one true God, will be turned into a lukewarm admiration for a great civil rights worker whose mission on earth was to facilitate the worship of the negro gods. It seems that liberals are going to reign in triumph for many years, but that is what Satan wants the Christian European to think because he wants the European to despair and die.

It shall never happen. We've been in the belly of the whale, we few, we Europeans, and now it's time to speak, from the heart, to the people of Nineveh, our own people, and they shall respond, because they have sacred memories of a provincial European hearth fire, presided over by Christ, the one true God. Satan tells the confused and troubled European Ninevites, through his liberal proxies, that Christian Europe was all a dream, an illusion. It is the task of the European who still sees Christian Europe to tell the grazing Ninevites that Christian Europe was not a dream. It was real just as He was — and is — real.

The old European nationalist battle hymns still resonate with us today because they take us back to a day when Europeans believed that so long as they stood firm for their people and their God they would never ultimately be defeated. Let it never be said of the European remnant, "Ye for the battle were not ready, Stand and never yield." +

Not of Their World

May 4, 2013

Categories: Charity, Christian counter-attack, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. —John 15: 18

During the trial scene in Act Four of Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*, Bassanio points out that Shylock has been offered thrice the amount of the original bond, yet he has refused it because he still wants his pound of flesh. In Bassanio's eyes Shylock's refusal of thrice the money constitutes malice, and he urges that the case should be thrown out. It's not that easy, but eventually Shylock does lose his case. And his malice aforethought is punished:

*Tarry, Jew:
The law hath yet another hold on you.
It is enacted in the laws of Venice,
If it be proved against an alien
That by direct or indirect attempts
He seek the life of any citizen,
The party 'gainst the which he doth contrive
Shall seize one half his goods; the other half
Comes to the privy coffer of the state;
And the offender's life lies in the mercy
Of the duke only, 'gainst all other voice.
In which predicament, I say, thou stand'st;
For it appears, by manifest proceeding,
That indirectly and directly too
Thou hast contrived against the very life
Of the defendant; and thou hast incur'd
The danger formerly by me rehearsed.
Down therefore and beg mercy of the duke.*

Of course Shakespeare is no utopian. He knows that more often than not malice does bear down truth. But *The Merchant of Venice* is a comedy, not a tragedy, so we get to see God's will prevail. And really that is the whole point of *The Merchant of Venice*. It is God's will that the law should encompass justice, mercy, and faith. The law should not be used as an instrument of malice. Shylock, with malice in his heart, wants to use the letter of the law to violate the spirit of the law. He is thwarted, and justice, true justice, triumphs.

It is not a little thing that, however imperfectly realized, Portia's Christian exposition of the law was the ancient European peoples' vision of what the law should be. Even when the vision is honored more in the breach than in the observance it is something to have the proper vision.

What is the liberals' vision of the law? Their vision of the law is the Shylockian vision of the law. They have no faith in Christ, so they have no mercy. They seek justice. But justice without faith and mercy becomes malice. And that is what liberal justice consists of: malice and only malice. Shylock did not fear justice because he, like the liberals, saw himself as devoid of sin. If his trial was held today he would be awarded his pound of flesh.

The legal systems in all the European countries are Shylockian legal systems. They exist to extract their pound of flesh from the white Europeans. It is useless to try to obtain justice in the liberal courts because, like Shylock, the liberals have hardened their hearts. They hate the light:

*I pray you, think you question with the Jew.
You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;
You may as well use question with the wolf
Why he hath made the ewe blear for the lamb;
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops and to make no noise,
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—
His Jewish heart:*

It's a great tragedy that the post World War II conservatives did not see the shifting sands under their feet. They quoted old tomes from Europe's Christian era when the law was justice, mercy, and faith while ignoring the truth staring them in the face: the law had become a ravenous wolf out to devour the European people. The liberals' malice aforethought was obvious to all those who were not too blind to see. Every liberal lie was brought to light. Let's start with the lie of the poor, disenfranchised black man. The liberals claimed they sought only to help

the downtrodden black, not to destroy the white. But in Africa when the whites were disenfranchised and black rule made life unbearable for blacks as well as whites, did the liberals say, "We were mistaken, we must re-establish white rule so that black and white can be better off?" Of course they didn't. They remained obdurate in their hatred of the white. "Better that all black men should live in squalor and misery so long as we can destroy the white man." In no country is the malice of the Shylockian liberals more manifest than in South Africa. Do you remember when the liberals claimed to be opposed to apartheid? Well, there still is apartheid in South Africa. The whites have been herded into all-white ghettos without running water, proper shelter, or food. (1) "Serves them right," the European conservatives say. "It couldn't happen to us, we've been good to our black brothers." It will happen to you, Mr. Conservative, just as soon as the black barbarians no longer need white votes to elect an all-black government. But mere self-interest, "it could happen to me," should not be the primary reason that the white European should be concerned about the white South African. He should be concerned, passionately concerned, because the white South African is of the same blood as the white European. Fluellen tells Henry V that, "all the water in Wye cannot wash your Majesty's Welsh blood out of your body, I can tell you that." So it is with the European. Wherever he goes he takes his nation with him, it is in his blood.

Once the racial lie, which proclaims white men to be evil and racist, has been established as dogma, all other liberal lies can be institutionalized as well. Sexual permissiveness is advanced as a therapeutic improvement on "Victorian repression," and savage matriarchies are presented as "enlightened governments which respect women's rights." The lies are unchallenged because the Christian European males who were born to oppose such lies have been discredited by virtue of their 'racism': "It's not surprising that the white male is sexist because he is also a racist. We must eradicate the white male." So say the feminists who were spawned by the "Civil Rights" movement, which was in reality a movement to establish the negro as the supreme deity in the Kingdom of Babylon.

Malice has borne down truth because the white European conservatives are not conservatives. Their vision is a heuristic one. They see, in their mind's eye, a democratic, egalitarian world of all races and all sexes, united in the common pursuit of riches dispensed by the most intelligent of the bureaucrats, which they believe themselves to be. The conservatives do not see the satanic malice of the liberals because they have lost their vision. They no longer see life feelingly. The bureaucratic mind can only organize the things of this world, it cannot see past the things of this world to His sacred fairy tale world of Arden, of Narnia, of *The Wind in the Willows*. Once the vision of Christ's Europe is lost the liberals have won because conservatives in church and state will only make mild policy protests, they will not oppose the satanic liberal malice which permeates the modern liberal states of Europe.

Currently the ongoing debate between conservatives and liberals is over who can best manage the affairs of Liberaldom. The absolute necessity of Liberaldom's destruction is never mentioned by the conservatives and certainly not by the liberals. The liberals are the demonically possessed swine heading for the abyss. The conservatives are Shropshire sheep grazing in a nearby pasture. As the swine rush by, the conservative sheep go over the abyss with the swine, because they don't want to appear prejudiced against swine by refusing to join them in their mad rush to destruction. What a wonderful bunch of go-along type of guys those Shropshire sheep are! But why should the conservative grazers capitulate to evil? They cave in because

they have no sustaining vision of their place in God's grand scheme of things. They see themselves as Satan wants them to see themselves: as a subordinate race of people who can only live their lives second-hand through the good offices of the negro. If they can come up with a better way to serve the negro than the liberals, then they can sit in the seats of the liberals and play Atticus Finch. Of course the liberal will never relinquish his seat to the conservative, but that is the pathetic hope of the conservative. If we have hope in that type of 'conservatism' only are we not of all men most to be pitied?

Shylock's hatred of the light was not just a Jewish thing even in Shakespeare's time. There were a few liberal gentiles in old Europe. But now the few have become the dominant many, and Shylock's hatred of all European Christians has become institutionalized in church and state. If we look at the history of some of the liberal hate organizations, we can see the great Judaizing movement unfold. For instance, at its inception the American Civil Liberties Union was approximately 90% Jewish. In recent years the organization has built up a majority membership of Catholics and Protestants. This synthesis was inevitable. The Jews are an organized body opposed to the light of the world and the Christian churches have become organized bodies opposed to the light of the world. And if you tell me that the churches have not become hostile to the light of the world, that they have simply removed the European cultural accoutrements from the churches, I will tell you that the Europeans' vision of Christ was not an 'accoutrement', it was the faith. Syncretistic negro worship is not Christianity, it is a religion of malice, without faith, hope, or charity. Walk into any Christian church, and you will feel an overwhelming sense of malice. Malice directed at me and thee, the white Europeans.

There is an old Greek legend – I first read it in a Thomas Mann novel – that describes the timid and cowering European's stance vis-à-vis the world and the liberals. A Greek servant is in the market place buying food for his master's dinner when he sees Death. Death makes what appears to the servant to be a threatening glance at him. The servant then runs back to his master's house and starts packing his belongings in preparation for a trip.

"Where are you going?" his master asks.

"I'm going to Crete."

"Why, what has happened?"

"I saw Death in the market place and he gave me a threatening glance. So I must go to Crete without delay. Good-by."

The master then runs to the market place looking for Death. When he finds him, he confronts him. "Why did you make a threatening glance at my servant?"

"That was not a threatening glance, it was a look of surprise. You see, I didn't expect to see him here in Athens, because I have an appointment with him in Crete."

The postwar conservatives who were afraid to defend their race lest they be linked to Hitler, the Southern segregationists who caved in to integration lest they be branded racists, and the white South Africans who ended blessed apartheid in an endeavor to avoid the hatred of the liberal world, all caved in to heathen liberalism to avoid the hatred of the liberals. But they are still hated! No European can avoid his destiny. He is the Christ-bearer. If he refuses to champion the Christ he will be hated for his ancestors' sake, who did bear the Christ child across the river. But why not embrace our destiny? Why court the friendship of the wicked? If we look past Liberaldom to Christian Europe, we will not be left without comfort. We will have a sustaining vision: "If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you." The heathen will rage against us and the Shylockian liberals will hate us. Is that such a fearsome thing? It is nothing compared to the loving approbation of our honored dead and the risen Lord.
+

(1) All of my adult life — and for most of my childhood for that matter — I have heard sermons preached about the poor, starving black Africans, and I've seen thousands of wide-screen, horrific images of the poor starving black Africans. No one ever says that the black Africans are poor and starving because black Africans have no concept of charity. Instead the plight of the black Africans is always blamed on the white man, despite the fact that the blacks in white-controlled sections of Africa were not poor and starving, because the white man does have charity.

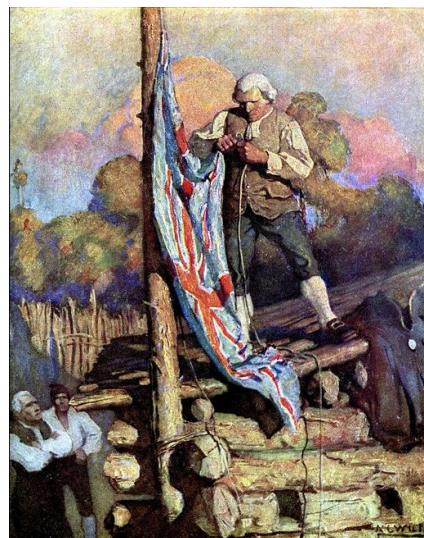
Now the formerly white sections of Africa are controlled by the black man and the South African white people are poor and starving. Why don't I hear sermons preached about the poor and starving whites of South Africa? And why don't I see poor and starving white children on my television screen with heart-rending appeals for mercy. "Just five dollars a month can feed a hungry white child." Yes, I am being disingenuous. I know why I don't hear sermons on the plight of poor starving whites in South Africa, and I know why I don't see pictures of and appeals for aid to the poor and starving whites of South Africa. I do not hear and see such appeals for white people because the liberals, Jew and gentile, hate the white European with all their heart, mind, and soul. We can only deal with such inhuman wretches at sword point: nothing else will avail.

Satanic Diversity – We Shall Not Bend Our Knees to Satan

May 11, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



But if education takes in vice as any part of its system, there is no doubt but that it will operate with abundant energy, and to an extent indefinite. The magistrate, who in favour of freedom thinks himself obliged to suffer all sorts of publications, is under a stricter duty than any other... He ought, above all, to be cautious in recommending any writer who has carried marks of a deranged understanding; for where there is no sound reason, there can be no real virtue; and madness is ever vicious and malignant. – Edmund Burke

I saw a lunatic Jewish woman on YouTube the other day. It was not a pleasant sight. The shrew was talking about an institute she had established in Sweden for “Jewish learning,” whose stated purpose was to tell the Swedish and the rest of the European people that they must become more diverse. Diversity, which means white genocide, is the goal of all liberals, but seeing the satanic forces of diversity personified in that malignant Jewess made me feel the fire and smell the sulfur of hell. If that woman had come off the screen and entered my home, I would have killed her, just as I would kill a rattlesnake or any other predator that entered my home. Of course the liberal Jewess is much worse than a rattlesnake, because her venom can kill the soul as well as the body. And I don’t think Sweden or any other European country needs to be taught ‘diversity.’ They are already diversifying themselves into extinction.

It’s not difficult to foresee the result of the institutionalization of diversity among the European people. If the shadows of diversity are not altered the European people will disappear from the face of the earth.

Burke said that if any part of a state’s educational system took in vice that country was at the mercy of an ever ‘vicious’ and malignant power. Our modern European nations have made vice, in all its manifestations, the totality of their educational systems. It is virtually impossible for a young person living in any of the European nations to grow up without a thorough immersion in all the vices of liberalism, which include: the toleration of every sexual deviation known to man; racial diversity; and a sneering, cynical atheism. If you view the educational systems in the Western countries without wanting to have the liberals’ blood for what they have wrought, you are either a liberal or a grazer, but you are most certainly not a European.

We often hear the ‘swing back’ theory from grazers who are slightly uneasy about some of the uglier manifestations of liberalism, such as gay marriage and legalized abortion. But how will things swing back, independent of any human endeavor, if our state educational system, of which the press and the church are adjuncts, teaches cradle to grave vice? Things won’t ‘swing back’ until the ruling elite that has institutionalized diversity and vice ceases to rule. Merely uttering Emersonian platitudes and invoking democracy will only help to solidify the liberals’ power because liberalism thrives on democratic platitudes. A non-democratic, non-diverse force from outside of Liberaldom must be brought to bear on the forces of diversity and vice. Then, and only then, will we see the destruction of the liberals’ satanic dystopia.

Christendom was built by Europeans who responded to God’s grace. I always see the hand of God reaching out to the hand of man, as depicted by Michelangelo, when I think of the divine-human link between God and the European. The denial of that divine-human link by the liberals and the Christian theorists has been the cornerstone of Liberaldom, which was built by Europeans reaching out to Satan.

The Christian theorist is a subtle atheist. He doesn’t deny the Christian God outright; instead he creates a theory about the Christian God that is antithetical to the Christian faith. Loving and treasuring his theory more than God the theorist attacks the bred-in-the-bone Christian. Thus the Roman Catholic and the Protestant theorist make light of the Christ-bearing people and see Christ only in the minds of people who adhere to their theory of God. The only type of Christian culture the theorist believes in is the time frame of European history in which his theory thrived.

The secular liberal attacks Christian Europe from a slightly different angle than the Christian theorist. The liberal does not say that Christian Europe did not exist. Quite the contrary: he believes that Christianity was bred-in-the-bone of the antique European: “But, mate, my heart is sore for Christian diet.” (1) And because the liberal believes Christianity was bred-in-the-bone of the antique European, the liberal believes the European people should be exterminated for propagating a belief in a false messiah. With malignant hatred, the liberals demonize the white European while deifying his opposite, the sacred colored tribesman. The malignant liberal is a great danger to the Christian for the obvious reason that he wants to destroy the Christian people. But the Christian theorist is the greater danger because he attacks the Christian European under the guise of Christianity. We must strip off the Christian theorist’s mask and see his true face. It is the face of a man who has rejected the living God in order to worship his own mind-forged image of a God that is subordinate to the Christian theorist’s intellect. In the theoretical world, distinctions between religions and races become problematic, so they are eliminated. The Assisi Summit meetings in the Roman Catholic Church were celebrations of airy, theoretical nothingness, just as the Protestant Zionists’ espousal of the unrepentant Jew is the result of an adherence to a theoretical Christianity which has no room for a God with a local habitation and name: He lived in the hearts of the European people and His name was Jesus Christ. The Jews are still looking for a Messiah, and so are the Christian theorists: both have rejected the Savior of the antique Europeans.

Much more impressive than the magnificent architecture, sculpture, and paintings of the antique Europeans — and those art works are impressive — is the moral beauty of a people who demonstrated, in the entirety of their history as a people, a deep, heartfelt faith in Christ. It’s impossible, once a man comes to know old Europe from within, not to be conscious that Christian Europe was of God and modern diverse Europe is of Satan. The ancient Europeans, “loved so much that could see His blood upon the rose.” In contrast, the modern liberals hate Him so much that they want to diversify His people out of existence. Just as the antique Europeans touched the hand of God, the liberals – by making the negro their incarnate god, reach out and touch the hand of Satan.

If by some miracle of grace, you have come out of the liberal educational system and seen that other world, the world of Christian Europe, then you are one who is “born to set things right.” When the liberals rally round their Jewish leaders, who tell us, “You must become diverse,” you must go to the European Ninevites and tell them, in the name God, “You must not become diverse. You must cling to His Europe and His people against all the forces of hell.” Will the Ninevites listen? It’s not up to thee or me to count the cost. Our people are not irredeemable, but they must be shown a different Europe than the vice-infested, Christ-hating Europe of the liberals. Every day millions of children are placed on the road to hell when they begin their journey through the educational system of the liberals. It’s as if we are standing by, watching an avalanche fall on a gathering of helpless children. “In so much as you have done

it unto the least of these my brethren, you have done it unto me." One voice in the wilderness that cries, "Stop, this shall not go on," is just one voice, but one voice in the wilderness that cries, "Stop, in the name of Christ," is a voice that can stop avalanches of liberal filth.

It's not enough to just cry, "Jew" and think the work of defending Europe is done. What is the essence of Judaism? The Jews were set apart from other peoples so they could bring forth and bear witness to the living God. Instead they chose to remain heathens and attack the light of the world. The European took up the rejected cornerstone and championed Him against all the world. At the heart of the modern Europeans' capitulation to the forces of diversity is a sickening world weariness. The Europeans no longer want to be the Christ-bearers, a people apart from the colored, heathen world. They want to blend into oblivion with the forces of darkness. Only a faith in the non-diverse Christ can stop the European from blending into nothingness. Which brings us back to the Christian theorists. The greatest enemy of the Christian European is not the Jew, it is the Christian theorist, because the Christian theorist stops the European kinist from fighting in Christ's name. "If the church men equate Christianity and diversity, how can I, a mere lay man, profess to fight diversity in the name of Christ?" Keep it simple. A venomous snake is still a venomous snake no matter that it wraps itself around the altar. The church men have become Jews; they will command you to diversify your people and your faith until you are one with nothingness. That is the end result of diversity.

It is through the non-diverse familial and racial channels of grace that we come to know God. Diversity destroys those channels of grace. I recently read through Burke's *Reflections on the French Revolution* with some of my children. When we came to the section of the *Reflections* in which Burke tells of the Jacobins' abuse of the Queen, my youngest daughter wept.

It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in,--glittering like the morning-star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! What a revolution! And what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to revenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever... The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment, and heroic enterprise, is gone!

Do you know what it means to a father who has poured his heart and soul into his children's education to see that the flesh of his flesh, the bone of his bone shares his own heartfelt love for Europe and Europe's God? It means everything. And such must have been our Lord's feeling when He poured out His love to His children, and they, the Europeans, responded to His love. We can't turn away from that love for the satanic world of diversity. "Europe must become diverse," was the command of the satanic Jewess. "We shall not become diverse," is the reply of the European who loves his God and his people. +

(1) Ben Gunn doesn't say that he is hungry for food cooked in Europe. He doesn't have to, because he has said the same thing when he said his heart was sore for Christian diet. Europe and Christianity were one and the same.

The Blood Royal

May 18, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization
Tags: Edmund Burke



How often has public calamity been arrested on the very brink of ruin by the seasonable energy of a single man? Have we no such man amongst us? I am as sure as I am of my being, that one vigorous mind without office, without situation, without public functions of any kind (at a time when the want of such a thing is felt, as I am sure it is) I say, one such man, confiding in the aid of God, and full of just reliance in his own fortitude, vigour, enterprize and perseverance, would first draw to him some few like himself, and then that multitudes, hardly thought to be in existence, would appear and troop about him. – Edmund Burke

A few American conservatives, who are not conservatives in the Burkean sense of the word, have discovered, in the wake of Romney's defeat, the colored immigration issue. Those few are trying to explain to Republicans what has been obvious for the last fifty years: colored people vote democratic because the Democrats promise unlimited welfare benefits. So conservative Republicans who want to win elections should try to stem, or better yet, turn back the colored tide. But those new anti-colored immigration conservatives are a tiny minority. The great majority of conservatives have decided to "win the colored people over to their side." They talk of making "aggressive inroads" into the Hispanic and black communities by explaining to them that conservatives are pro-family and hard-working, values which, the conservatives constantly tell us, are shared by the family-oriented Mexicans and blacks. I think the old Westerns and the old jungle movies had a more realistic view of the Mexicans and the blacks than the modern Republication conservatives. In the old movies, the Mexicans were slimy banditos who would kill, rape, and plunder white people for the sheer perverse pleasure of murder, rape, and plunder. Likewise the blacks, in the old politically incorrect jungle movies, captured the whites in order to torture, rape, and murder them. No amount of liberal or conservative gibberish about prejudice will change the fact that the old stereotypes are true and the new utopian theories of the noble black savage and the hard-working pro-family Mexican are false.

Closely allied to and often one and the same as the conservatives are the members of the Christian right. I would not call them Christian or rightist, but the liberal media who calls anyone to the right of themselves Christian right-wingers does call them that. The Roman Catholic Church and the mainstream Protestant churches have been in favor of white genocide through massive colored immigration and inter-racial marriage for quite some time. The "Christian right" has only jumped on board in recent years, becoming more militantly anti-white and pro-colored since Romney's defeat. What are we to make of such goings on amongst the Christian right? In this case the obvious answer is the correct answer. The Christian right is not Christian. Let's go through this carefully.

The European governments have all institutionalized the principles of the French Jacobins, which were (1) regicide, (2) democracy, and (3) atheism. We won't quibble over whether a nation killed their monarchs outright as in France or divested them of all power as in England, the end result was the same: the monarchy as a preserver of the Christian traditions of the nation was eliminated in every European country. And the democratic heresy, which states "all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation," was institutionalized throughout the European countries. The end result of the new anti-traditional, pro-democracy governments was atheistic governments. Most followed the American model of a proclaimed neutrality toward Christianity while in reality maintaining a rigid anti-Christian bias. After the victory of the North in the Civil War, the American government became more and more openly anti-European and anti-Christian right up to the present day in which European Christians are a proscribed people. And every European nation has followed a path similar to the United States. Jacobinism, based on regicide, democracy, and atheism, is the ruling ideology of the European countries.

Part and parcel of liberal Jacobinism is negro worship, because "the people" must replace the Christian God. The white proletariat eventually had to give way to the negro, because even a white from the working class had a Christian taint upon him. How can you destroy the image of God in man if you don't destroy the Christ-bearing white race? You can't, which is why the more advanced Jacobins of the 20th century shifted their allegiance from working class whites to colored barbarians: "Hope for the future has been transferred to the peoples of the developing countries, to disaffected national minorities, for example, the blacks in the U.S.A..."

When you dissolve all ties to the past, as the European Jacobins have, you must build your society of the future completely by theory. This enables the liberal to attack all Christian Europeans with impunity because all who impede the future theoretical happiness of mankind must be eliminated. The Christian right-wingers and the conservatives are part of the liberal conglomerate that wants the blood of the antique Europeans as badly as the Giant in Jack and the Beanstalk wanted the blood of an Englishman. The Christian right-wingers and the conservatives are like the European liberals in Britain and on the continent who were quite willing to deal with the Jacobins once they deposed of Robespierre. Never mind that every single member of the new anti-Robespierre, Jacobin government had approved of the execution of the King, the Queen, and their children. The European liberals didn't mind dealing with the regicides so long as they espoused democracy and refrained from the overt, bloody executions of Robespierre. Our modern conservatives and their "Christian" counterpart also stay within the Jacobin fold so long as their liberal cousins execute white people at a moderate rate and allow the Christian right-wingers to worship a theoretical Christ, who is subordinate to the negro gods of Liberaldom. It's a great deal for the secular and religious conservatives. They can wave flags and attend church while betraying their nation, which is their race, and their God, who is Jesus Christ. In spirit and intent the modern liberals are in perfect accord with the French Jacobins. They are motivated by a maniacal hatred of Christ, and their hatred drives them to strike out against Christ's people. Like the Jacobins who deposed Robespierre, they have learned that you can get the lukewarm Christians to hang themselves and kill their more steadfast countrymen by using the former channels of grace, such as the churches, as channels of satanic hate. This tactic is more effective than the wholesale destruction of Christian churches and Christian symbols.

What we always need to keep before us is the essential battle between good and evil. Life, at its deepest level, is a fairy tale. The liberals' hearts are full of a malignant hatred for everything that stems from Christ. They will not permit any person connected to Christian Europe to become part of Liberaldom. The conservatives and the Christian right-wingers have grasped that truth. And because they want to survive they have become part of Liberaldom. But he that would save his life must be prepared to lose it for His sake. The pagan gods who demand sacrifice always end up consuming their devotees. The negro will demand more and more sacrifice from the white man until he has consumed the white man. Better to stand with Christ, the God who demands mercy rather than sacrifice, and set one's life in His merciful hands.

What is missing in the fairy tale that we have ever before our eyes – if we have eyes to see – is the good. The evil kingdom of Liberaldom remains standing because no Europeans have attacked it. Fortress Liberaldom is not impregnable: we need only remove our materialist glasses and see life through the eyes of the spirit, which are located in the human heart. The liberals built Liberaldom on a theory of a future state of existence where there are no white Europeans and there is no Jesus Christ. The baseless fabric of their vision can be destroyed by

Europeans who have not let go of their Christian past. Such men will have sacred ground to stand on, from which to launch an attack on Liberaldom that will result in the destruction of Liberaldom.

The story of the modern European is not a drama, because in a drama we need a protagonist and an antagonist. We have the liberals, the antagonists who are determined to destroy God by destroying His image in His people, but where is the hero, the protagonist, who will step forward and defend his people and his God? One hero will spawn others once the initial break with Spenglerian logic is made. Civilizations that are of the spirit are not subject to the same laws of biological determinism as the human body. Burke, anticipating the Spenglerian mindset, refuted him in his rallying cry to his country man, William Elliot:

I am not of opinion that the race of men, and the commonwealths they create, like the bodies of individuals, grow effete and languid and bloodless, and ossify by the necessities of their own conformation, and the fatal operation of longevity and time. These analogies between bodies natural and politic, though they may sometimes illustrate arguments, furnish no argument of themselves. They are but too often used under the colour of a specious philosophy, to find apologies for the despair of laziness, pusillanimity, and to excuse the want of all manly efforts, when the exigencies of our country call them the more loudly.

Bravo! Such words, written by such a man, stand in stark contrast to the words and spirit of defeat that we hear and feel everywhere in the anti-European world of Liberaldom. “The Europeans must diversity.” “The Europeans must repudiate their racist past.” “The Europeans must give way...” etc. etc. There will always be someone who will pick up Burke’s mantle, the mantle of Christian Europe, and cry havoc in the very bowels of the liberal Leviathan. Let the cowardly conservatives and the new anti-Christian, anti-European Christian theorists ride their “specious philosophy” of despair to the liberal hell that they so covet, the European hero will stay true to his people and his blood, and in doing so, he will become the missing protagonist in the drama of the European people.

The modern world has institutionalized biological determinism, which is the complete antithesis of the antique European’s vision of existence. The outward pageantry of nature can overwhelm a man if he sees only nature in nature. If the natural world is the world, and not a symbol of the spiritual world behind nature, animated by the living God, then religion becomes psychiatry, love becomes sex, and honor, chivalry, courage and charity become outmoded relics of the unscientific period of the Europeans’ history. The ethos of Rousseau which leads to the worship of the noble black savage replaces the religion of Jesus Christ:

Your rulers were well aware of this; and in their system of changing your manners to accommodate them to their politics, they found nothing so convenient as Rousseau. Through him they teach men to love after the fashion of philosophers; that is, they teach to men, to Frenchmen, a love without gallantry; a love without any thing of that fine flower of youthfulness and gentility, which places it, if not among the virtues, among the ornaments of life. Instead of this passion, naturally allied to grace and manners, they infuse into their youth an unfashioned, indelicate, sour, gloomy, ferocious medley of pedantry and lewdness; of metaphysical speculations, blended with the coarsest sensuality. Such is the general morality of the passions to be found in their famous philosopher, in his famous work of philosophic gallantry, the Nouvelle Eloise.

Carl Sandburg, the poet laureate of capitalism, wanted to be a rivet in a skyscraper. Such a desire is typical of the European without faith in the God of the European people. Such a man seeks oblivion in the forces of dumb nature. In Sandburg’s case it was the skyscraper, in the case of his modern descendants it is the great colored horde that the liberals and their conservative cousins desire to be one with, so that their souls, which they despise because they are white, can be obliterated in the dark colored hordes of Babylon. Opposed to this liberalism, this monumental malignant hatred of the Christian European, is the protagonist of the European drama, the Christian hero. One Tell, one Alfred, has always been enough to defeat the multitudinous hordes of heathendom, just as He was more than enough to defeat Satan and all his legions. +

The Prejudiced European

May 25, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke



But let us take care. The moral sentiments, so nearly connected with early prejudice as to be almost one and the same things, will assuredly not live long under a discipline, which has for its basis the destruction of all prejudices, and the making the mind proof against all dread of consequences flowing from the pretended truths that are taught by their philosophy. —Edmund Burke

I don't remember the exact year, but I do remember that I was near the end of my tenure as a police officer when I arrested a negro for simple assault, disorderly conduct and ethnic intimidation. I tacked on the third charge to comply with a new law that had been enacted (we all attended classes in which we were told about the new law) which basically stated that a regular crime, such as a simple assault (a punch in the nose) became a much greater crime if you insulted a person's ethnicity while committing the crime. The negro I arrested and charged had gone into a coffee shop where a group of white people were, not surprisingly, drinking coffee. Upon entry the negro shouted that he hated all white people. (I'm sanitizing his language.) He then proceeded to kick and hit several of the people in the coffee shop, for which he was arrested and charged.

I thought, because I had checked with a senior officer, I was completely in compliance with the new hate crime laws when I added the 'ethnic intimidation' charge. No instructor at any of the classes I attended on the new law had told me that it didn't apply to the ethnic intimidation of whites. Apparently, as I found out, that was implicit in the law, because the next morning I was told to take out the ethnic intimidation charge and stick to the disorderly conduct and simple assault charges.

I'm sure that minor incident will shock no one who reads kinist web sites. But I mention the incident because it speaks directly to this issue of white genocide.

No colored person is ever guilty of ethnic intimidation. Only whites can be guilty of such a crime. Prejudices are good if they stem from colored peoples' prejudices against whites, but they are evil if they stem from whites' prejudices against colored people. The long and short of the whole business of race, as the liberals have set it up, is that the white man is evil, and the colored tribesmen, particularly the blacks, are good. And since prejudice is connected to our moral sentiments, the liberals think it is good that blacks and other colored tribesmen should indulge their prejudices because nothing but good can come from them. And it is wrong for white people to indulge their prejudices since white people are evil. So in order to fight evil we all must fight against prejudice, but only one kind of prejudice, the prejudice of white people.

Every governing institution throughout the European nations, in what was once called Christendom, exists for one purpose: to eliminate the prejudice of white people. This crusade against white prejudice has been a huge success. There are virtually no prejudiced white people left in the European countries. This should make the liberals happy, because after all, does not the end of white prejudice mean that utopia has arrived? Ah, there's the rub. If the liberals were to concede that white prejudice no longer existed, then what would they do with their lives? Even liberals cannot live on hedonism alone. If there are no prejudiced whites left to hand down prejudiced rulings against Tom Robinson, why would there be any need for Atticus Finch to defend Tom Robinson? And what would a liberal do with himself if he couldn't play Atticus Finch? No, that just won't do. The liberals need prejudiced whites to hunt down and exterminate. So they create non-existent prejudiced whites to give them their reason for living.

As is always the case the liberals have completely reversed the proper order of things. It is necessary that whites should regain their prejudices, which are so closely allied to their moral sentiments, and that colored people, whose prejudices are closely allied to their amoral sentiments, should be separated from white society so they can't indulge their amoral sentiments in favor of murder, rape, and plunder. Such a separation would be a blessed separation, but it will necessitate the removal of the ruling, liberal, godded men and a restoration of the men with European prejudices.

The Europeans are the only race of people who have become a non-people. By removing their prejudices they have removed their moral backbone which kept them upright. Now they crawl on the ground like slimy worms rather than human beings. The prejudiced European preferred Christianity to heathenism, the white over the colored, reverence over sacrilege, charity over cruelty, and honor over dishonor. Without his prejudices the European abandons Christianity, favors the colored over the white, rejoices in sacrilege, despises charity, and institutionalizes the cruel inhuman slaughter of the innocents. All of which makes dishonor his guiding light rather than honor.

The satanically inspired liberals saw that it was only the instinctual European, the man with prejudices, who stood in the way of Satania. So they made it their business to destroy the Europeans' instinctual life by a constant barrage of propaganda. Substitute the word 'media' for newspapers and we see, in the propaganda of the French Jacobins the exact methods of our modern liberal Jacobins:

What direction the French spirit of proselytism is likely to take, and in what order it is likely to prevail in the several parts of Europe, it is not easy to determine. The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master.

Haven't we heard the story of the evil white man and the sacred black savage for an infinitude of years? And what has been the result? The European doesn't exist as a European. He is the great nothing who only comes to life to serve his master, the oh-so-noble, oh-so-good black savage.

Quentin Compson in Faulkner's *The Sound and the Fury* desperately tries to believe that his father's nihilistic vision of existence is false. "You don't know, you can't know," Quentin asserts.

"I do know, from the moment tragedy becomes second-hand," Quentin's father asserts, with the mathematical finality of death. And when tragedy becomes second-hand, when we abandon our prejudices for the solecisms, we are indeed dead.

The white man committed suicide at the behest of the liberal philosophers, but it was the anti-Christian Christian theologians who left the European everyman naked and defenseless against the liberal Jacobins. The theologians turned the European away from the heart, where his prejudices and moral sentiments resided, and bade him look to the great universal mind of the cosmos. Does wisdom reside in the heart or the head? The prophets, St. Paul, and our Lord Himself told us wisdom resides in the heart. Why then did the theologians bid us disregard the heart?

Satan is delighted when white men fall victim to the Aquinas syndrome. When men view life secondhand, through the prism of speculative philosophy, it doesn't matter whether they profess to believe in God or not: the end result is Godlessness, because God does not live in speculative philosophy. Rousseau professed to be a good Catholic, yet he espoused a Christ-hating philosophy. How can such a dichotomy exist within a man? Quite easily. When your Christian faith is a speculative faith you can make Christ into whatever type of god you want Him to be. Rousseau made Christ into a god who did not believe in original sin, who sanctioned adultery, and who loved the noble savage. Hmm, that is much like the Christ of the modern liberals.

This speculative sin is the original sin, man's pride of reason, enflamed by Satan, bids him to break his covenant with his liege lord, his Father and his kinsman, and place all his hopes on a satanically inspired speculative philosophy, "Ye shall not die," in which God is subordinate to man's reason and Satan's will.

Speculative philosophy is death. And it has always been the sacred duty of the European to defy speculative philosophy. From the earliest days of European Christianity there were always the godded men who wanted the Europeans to break their blood covenant, connecting them to the living God, in the name of a "higher loyalty" to a theoretical government presided over by a theoretical God.

Be it known to you, that we consider it our duty to obey and submit to the church of God, to the pope of Rome, and to every good Christian – to love them in every situation and in all circumstances, and to assist all both by word and deed, in becoming children of the Lord. We know of no other obedience to him you call pope, or father, and this we are prepared to render to him and to every Christian for ever. Beyond this, we are subject to the archbishop of Caerleon, who is a guide and an overseer, under God, to direct and keep us in the spiritual path.

A man who severs his blood ties to his people and his God, a man who divests himself of his prejudices, is a nothing man fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils. The speculators start out as religious speculators, but they are soon consumed by the more secular, hard-bitten speculators. Look around us today. The modern church men are now mere puppets for the secular, liberal Jacobins. The liberals say 'dance' and the church men dance. And it is always the racist tune the liberals play, because the Europeans must be told, night and day, that they *must* divest themselves of their prejudices. They simply must. Yet it is only the Europeans' prejudices that can save the Europeans.

The winners write history, so in our modern world the liberal literary critics tell us who is a great author and who is not. They ascribe greatness to men and women of their own ilk, nihilists, degenerates, and Jacobins. Thus Faulkner is a great writer because he writes realistic novels of nihilistic fathers sipping from the whiskey decanter as he urges his son to blow his brains out, while Thomas Nelson Page is deemed, when he is taken note of at all, as a third rate hack who wrote nostalgia pieces about the 'racist' South. But if a man sees Christ in and through his blood ties to his kith and kin, and then writes about it, why is he deemed unrealistic and racist? Because unrealistic, utopian Jacobins write literary criticism. And unrealistic, liberal Jacobins govern the European world and command the Europeans to divest themselves of their prejudices so that they can become shadows without substances.

When the white man — and I do not know the day or the hour of this momentous event — regains his prejudices the day of the liberals and the colored jackals will end. In my anti-Martin Luther King Jr. dream I see a cringing, crawling white man coming before a liberal tribunal. The white man begs to be allowed a tiny shack on the outer fringes of Liberaldom. "Request denied. We sentence you to death. Loose the colored hounds on him."

The white man runs from the colored hounds who are hot for his blood, while the liberal horsemen scream in delight to see the fear-stricken white man running for his life.

Finally, the white man is treed. The colored hounds are in a frenzy, for soon they will have their meal. And the liberals also are enjoying the spectacle, for soon they will see the white man torn to pieces. But an extraordinary thing happened to the white man when he sought out the refuge of the tree. When he put his arms around the tree, memories of his God, who died upon the Holy Rood, and of his people who worshipped that God with their whole heart and soul, came rushing back to him. He was transformed into a man again: he became a man of prejudice, a Goth, "fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart – a Goth." The white man tore a limb from the tree, which was a tree of life for the white man, and leapt upon his enemies. The hounds fell before him like wheat before the scythe, and the liberals turned their horses around and rode, panic-stricken, back to their liberal dwellings seeking safety. But it was not to be. One man of prejudice spawned other men of prejudice, and the liberals' worst nightmare became a reality. The Europeans, the prejudiced Europeans, were upon them. There was no escape.

Just a dream? That is what prejudiced Europeans do: they dream dreams and see visions – the dream of Christian Europe and the vision of the risen Lord. They believe, even more surely than the turning of the earth, that His will shall be done on earth as it is in heaven, through the last of the Europeans, the men of prejudice. +

The Devils in our Midst

June 1, 2013

Categories: Blood faith, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Shall in these confines with a monarch's voice
Cry "Havoc," and let slip the dogs of war,
That this foul deed shall smell above the earth
With carrion men, groaning for burial.

-Shakespeare

The recent public execution in Britain of a British soldier by homegrown Nigerian Moslems is only the beginning of horrors. The spawns of Satan sneered at the horrified onlookers: "Your government won't protect you." They are right. Throughout the European world the governments of Europe are inviting foreigners — Mexicans, Negroes, Moslems of all colors, Indians, Orientals, etc. — into their countries to slaughter the whites who live there. No democratic measures will halt the slaughter of whites, which has begun in earnest and will accelerate as the colored hordes grow even more numerous, because coalitions of colored immigrants and satanic liberals will always outvote the confused and terrified grazers. You can't seek redemption from the devil. He will just sneer at you. The European liberal oligarchies only care about the colored strangers, who they consider to be their people. Whites are the hated aliens who must be exterminated. This is not an exaggeration: the everyday horrors before our eyes, perpetrated by colored savages with heathen faiths, is all the proof we need of the criminal intent of the liberals who have welcomed the spawns of Satan into the European nations.

The more colorful acts of barbarous cruelty, such as the recent public beheading of the British soldier, the Boston Marathon bombing, and the torture murders of Channon Christian and Christopher Newsom make the news, but most of the inhuman acts of cruelty performed by the colored strangers go unnoticed, because the press doesn't report them and for one other reason: we have sopped full of horrors. What once appeared horrific to the white man now seems normal. "We must expect a certain colored rage because after all..." And, "This is the price we must pay to have a diverse society."

The satanic liberal governments all have the same formulaic reaction when one of their colored children go a little too public with their blood—letting and are a little too truthful about it. "Your government won't protect you." The formulaic reaction is a feigned, half-hearted regret that the atrocity occurred and a stern warning to "racists" that they had better not become violet. "The government will crack down on right-wing extremists." And who are the right-wing extremists? They are white people who do not think Moslems, negroes, and other savages of color should be allowed to murder white people. That is not an acceptable stance to take, in the opinion of the ruling liberals. White people must be exterminated, and they must not protest against or resist the liberal governments and the colored barbarians who are determined to destroy them. That would be tantamount to resisting the will of God. And the Jacobin god is a savage god who will brook no opposition.

There was a time in the European nations (1965 in the U.S.) when it might have been possible for white men, animated by a love for their kith and kin, to turn back the colored tide by non-extraordinary measures. But that time has passed. We now must adopt extraordinary measures to deal with the incarnation of Satan within the European nations:

It is not a hazarded assertion, it is a great truth, that when once things are gone out of their ordinary course, it is by acts out of the ordinary course they can alone be re-established. Republican spirit can only be combated by a spirit of the same nature: of the same nature, but informed with another principle and pointing to another end. — Burke

Therein lies the problem with the European everyman. He is quite genuinely appalled at public executions of white people. But he doesn't have a spirit that is diametrically opposed to the liberals and equal in its opposed force to the liberals. His principles are the same as the liberals. Having consented to be ruled by Satan, the European grazer wants to reserve the right to protest when Satan becomes too blatantly satanic: "It's all right to murder, rape, and plunder white people in moderation, particularly those bad whites in South Africa and Rhodesia, but let's not get carried away." What an insane protest! Once Satan gains control of a nation, he will not let go of his power unless a greater power than his wrests that power away from him. If we won't call on that greater power, then we will remain in the Babylonian darkness.

At present the white protests of the extermination of whites are couched in Satan-friendly terms: "We call on all people, white, black, Moslem, and Christian to renounce violence." "We are not against Moslems, we are against Moslem terrorists." And on and on it goes. Such pathetic protests are exactly what the liberals want: they ensure that no serious damage to Satania will occur. What the liberals and their colored allies do not want is a genuine, full-blooded, prejudiced response from an integral European. Such a man will realize that all Moslems are terrorists and do not belong in European countries. He will feel the same way about the colored tribesmen: they don't belong in European countries. It only seems impossible to remove the Babylonian hordes because the Europeans do not have the will to remove them. Once the opposing principle is established in European hearts — and that principle has a name — the Europeans will take the extraordinary measures necessary to make Europe a green and pleasant land again.

Everything of importance that happens to the Europeans for good or evil can be traced back to their acceptance of Christianity. Their civilization stood above and apart from the colored peoples' anti-civilizations because of their faith in Jesus Christ, who was at the heart of their civilization. And the Europeans are committing suicide now, in the 21st century, because they were once Christian. The Christian faith is a mountain that the colored tribesmen refused to climb. The path to the top seemed too arduous, and they could not see the risen Lord in the clouds at the top of the mountain. Not so with the Europeans. They climbed the mountain and embraced their Lord and kinsman. But every generation of Europeans had to climb the mountain, and the covenant of the mountains had to be renewed in the hearts of each succeeding generation of Europeans. There was not one magic "Pouf — the European people are no longer Christian" moment, but the date 1914 is a significant date. Surely such a hideously destructive, soul killing war within the bowels of Europe indicated that a degenerative, spiritual sickness, a sickness unto death, had taken hold of the European people. And the most visible manifestation of the sickness unto death was the European intellectuals' hatred of their own race. The subsequent history of the European people, as chronicled by our poets, all points to one conclusion: the Europeans lost their vision of the risen Lord at the top of the mountain.

By the 21st century, the mountain top was seen as a fantasy perpetuated by an evil race of people about to become – and deservedly so – extinct. The mark of the beast which indicated that whites were ripe for slaughter was the mark put upon their foreheads by speculative theology. The Roman Catholic clergy in France prior to the French Revolution were not so much concerned about atheism within their ranks; they were concerned about losing their adherents to other Christian sects. Thus, they let the seeds of religious indifference grow while fighting any attempt, by the laity, to stay close to the God of their ascending race. Every Protestant sect, following the Roman Catholic lead, pursued the letter of their own man-made sectarian law while paying no heed to the heart of the Christian faith, which is a passionate love for the Savior, enkindled at our racial hearth fires. It is no coincidence that as the Europeans abandoned their love of a provincial God they also abandoned their love for their own race. A speculative, universalist God results in a speculative, universalist people who will not have the will to survive as a people: they will succumb to the worst – the liberals and the colored hordes who are full of passionate intensity.

A self-styled leader of the British Nationalists once told me that these were not the times for metaphysical bull—. But it is because Europeans have no spiritual principle with which to oppose the liberals' spiritual principles that the Europeans no longer fight for their people. It is the seemingly insignificant things like Dickens' *Christmas Carol* and Ratty's love for his river that enkindle the fire that will stop at nothing, bear any burden, in order to drive the colored heathen from the white nations. These are extraordinary times requiring extraordinary measures. And I don't see how a European can garner the extraordinary strength necessary to defeat the thoroughly entrenched liberals and their colored allies unless he invokes that extraordinary God of the ancient Europeans, Jesus Christ.

The Christian God comes to us through the blood. If we deny our blood, we deny the God of our blood. The triumph of speculative philosophy within the formerly Christian organizations called churches has led to the triumph of Satan within the churches.

Race mixing and every abomination under the sun are now considered Christian because Christianity has become multi-racial and universal rather than European and provincial. Those "Christians" who tell us that God is a race-mixing universalist need to explain to us why the light died in Europe and in the dark nations (what light they could see) when the Europeans ceased to be a segregated, provincial people. The church of Christ does not consist of buildings or organizations in which the people say, "Lord, Lord": it consists of His people who know Him through their blood ties to their kith and kin.

They, the liberals, will never be moved by civil disobedience or petitions. In fact, nothing will move them. They have chosen to side with the devil and his people, the colored minions of the Babylonian night. "Your government won't protect you," the negro Moslem sneered. Don't we see and hear the face and voice of the devil when we see the atrocities the colored minions commit and hear their sneering, boastful pride in their cowardly deeds of slaughter? Of course we do. If we are Europeans our blood knows who these colored strangers serve and what must be done to protect our people from them. Every European counter-revolution needs must be provincial and local: no one form fits all nations. But the counter-revolutions must come from the European people and they must be diametrically opposed in their underlying principles to the satanic principles of the rulers of Liberaldom. Above all let us not be reasonable and dispassionate while the colored minions bathe in white blood and Satan laughs triumphantly. +

The Return of the Heroic European

June 8, 2013

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Shakespeare



O boundless heart, kept fresh by pity's dews! – John Sterling

I want to use the Gentle Bard as a metaphor for the European people and the power of a spiritual force animated by the King of Kings. At the time of World War I Britain had been the premier nation in Christendom for approximately 200 years. We can point to many visible material things (isolated island, dominance at sea, etc.) that led to the *Pax Britannia*. But material things must be animated by the spirit. Do we ever give sufficient weight to the animating spirit behind the historical event? The better historians do, many years after the fact, but to discern things of the spirit a man must have something in his heart that allows him to see past the visible material world to the spiritual world above and beyond the material world.

Seen through the eyes of the heart, it becomes apparent that Britain's preeminence in Christendom was the result of one man's influence. His heart was in tune with the sacred heart that animated the world, and the spiritual force that such a man possesses can move mountains and make a nation:

*Shakespeare's dust beneath our footsteps lies,
His spirit breathes amid his native skies;
With meaning won from him for ever glows
Each air that England feels, and star it knows;
His whispered words from many a mother's voice
Can make her sleeping child in dreams rejoice;
And gleams from spheres he first conjoined to earth
Are blent with rays of each new morning's birth.
Amid the sights and tales of common things,
Leaf, flower, and bird, and wars, and death of Kings,—
Of shore, and sea, and nature's daily round,
Of life that tills, and tombs that load, the ground,
His visions mingle, swell, command, pace by,
And haunt with living presence heart and eye:
And tones from him, by other bosoms caught,
Awaken flush and stir of mounting thought:
And the long sigh, and deep impassioned thrill,
Rouse custom's trance and spur the faltering will.*

Shakespeare loved his native land, but he didn't say, "I am going to write some plays that will make England the premier nation in Christendom some 200 years hence." If that had been his intention, his work would have been worthless. Shakespeare, like every true European, simply tried to express the passion of his heart through the work of his hands. I have often been struck by the Pauline nature of Shakespeare's work, for like St. Paul Shakespeare is not afraid of the human heart. There are passions therein that can lead a man to damnation, but it is the passion of our hearts – and only the passion of our hearts – that can lead us to Him. Charity never faileth, and that charity which never faileth comes from Christ, who can only be reached through the human heart.

Shakespeare was not one with the theologians, found in the Roman Catholic and the Protestant camps, who told the Europeans they mustn't be passionate about anything because the passions of the heart lead to damnation. They bade us look to that which was outside of man, to nature, to the cosmos, and to speculative theology. But if we eschew the Shakespearean way to God, through the human heart, we will be alone in the universe. Our touchstone of reality becomes as nothing, as thin air. If God does not have a local habitation in our hearts, we can never know Him intimately enough to call on Him by name.

I have spoken thus much of Shakespeare and the heart in an attempt to redirect the eyes of the Europeans, those who still have eyes to see, toward the Christendom within that is the birthright of every European. Christ is the spiritual animator of Shakespeare and every true European. Once our hearts are reacquainted with that essential part of our spiritual history, the material obstacles that seem so formidable, such as the liberal oligarchy and the massive armies of hostile colored tribesmen, will become obstacles that we are capable of dealing with. As the old hymn suggests, having once been blind, blinded by our materialist eyes, we now shall see through our visionary eyes.

And what shall we see? We shall see that we can't seek redemption from the devil. We shall see we can't succeed by forming political parties whose express goal is to secure respect for the rights of white people within multi-cultural Babylon. Such a stated purpose indicates a lack of understanding of the spiritual battle taking place. We are involved in a battle between good and evil. The liberals, who stand with Satan, do not acknowledge the existence of white people as a separate, distinct people with the same rights as the colored tribesmen. The liberals tell us straight out that white people have no rights as a people, except the right to be exterminated. The second materialist flaw in the "I'll respect your culture and you respect mine" is that the colored tribesmen do not believe in respecting other cultures. Their idea of culture is, "We shall destroy your culture." This is true of every colored tribe: red, yellow, black, and brown. An awareness of the spiritual battle will allow the European to see that he cannot compromise with the colored barbarians or the liberals. There cannot be just a little bit of race-mixing or just a tiny infusion of colored people into the European nations. There must be no people of color in any of the white nations, because the *raison d'être* of the liberal-backed colored people is the destruction of white people. The early apologists for race-mixing told us that no harm would come from a small influx of colored tribesmen. Has that turned out to be true? The proof of the liberals' evil intent behind their friendly words is that they never — once colored mayhem proved their "no harm" theory false — tried to make amends for their mistakes by removing the

colored tribesmen from the European nations. Instead, they insisted on more coloreds and less whites, acting as if evil was good and good was evil. And in point of fact that is what liberals believe, that Satan is good and Christ is evil.

The liberals have their own eschatology based on a bastardized Christianity. There is a god, but he is the noble black savage. There is a devil – the white race – and there is salvation for all colored mankind at the end of history when the white man is eliminated. And, as in all utopias, Christian morality is changed to the morality of Satan. I saw an old liberal on the television the other day. Nothing unusual about that. He was getting all teary-eyed over his many battles on behalf of liberalism. “If it wasn’t for liberals,” he intoned, “we wouldn’t have had equal rights for Afro-Americans, women, or gays.” There, in a very concise summary, is the ethos of Satan. Race-mixing opens the door to Babylon and the demonization of white, Christian Europe, which leads to institutionalized sexual depravity in the form of legalized abortion, sexual promiscuity, and homosexuality. Such perversities must be institutionalized in a satanic society, because such things are the bone and sinew of Satania. And they are permitted and lauded, because liberals sprinkle the pixie dust of democracy, diversity, and equality over them.

All of us are called to do what Shakespeare did, whether we ever write a sonnet, paint a picture, or fight at Ashdown. We are called to fight our way through the human heart until we reach that essential core where He resides. In a play by Tennessee Williams titled *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*, the main character explains to his wife that he drinks until he feels the “click.” At that moment the world he hates doesn’t exist anymore. There is also a click for the European pilgrim of the heart, only it is not an alcohol-induced click. When he has done what is needful, sought the Kingdom of God that is within, something inside him ‘clicks’ and he sees the world of Liberalism for what it is: the work of the devil. And he then sees Christian Europe for what it was – the work of loving hearts reaching out to their creator. Once the European sees through the eye to the real Europe he will never be “of them” again. He will be of his people and their God.

When a man is of Europe he enters the dear land of storybooks, which is sustained by the animating spirit of all European storybooks, Jesus Christ. If we go through the Europeans’ history, not by way of their philosophy or their scientific achievements but by way of their moral imagination, and see what they saw as morally beautiful, we see the same ultimate vision of moral beauty in the Europeans’ history as we see in the Bible: the sign of the cross, the spirit of above the dust. In contrast, the liberals see beauty in science, in the noble black savage, and in their utopian visions of a Christ-less, Babylonian world devoid of the Light that came into the world to save the world.

Bassanio rejected the gold and silver caskets, because he saw that true beauty, moral beauty, was to be found in the leaden casket, which “rather threat’nest than dost promise aught, Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence.” The ancient Europeans chose the same leaden casket as Bassanio, and joy was the consequence. But just as the walls of a seemingly impregnable fort can deteriorate over time and become weak and accessible to the enemy, so can a spiritual wall built around a people to protect them from the lesser breeds without the law deteriorate over time and become useless in defense when there is no one left who knows why the spiritual walls were built in the first place.

It is my contention that when a European finally feels that “click” he will want to burn Liberalism to the ground and rebuild the spiritual walls around the people of his own race. Until that moment comes we are not talking about a white counter-revolution, we are talking about a white death march. Currently, when whites protest against any of the liberal atrocities, such as the colored attacks on the whites, legalized abortion, or homosexuality, to whom do they appeal? The very people who institutionalized the worship of negroes, legalized abortion, and gay rights. Look at the history of the European people. Has non-violent protest ever succeeded when used against a hierarchy that had institutionalized what the protesters were protesting against? The answer is no. The British establishment wanted to get out of India, so they didn’t fight Gandhi and his non-violent protesters. It was the same with Martin Luther King Jr’s non-violent protests: the liberal establishment supported negro worship against the local southern authorities. Civil disobedience only works when the powers that be secretly or openly agree with the stated goals of those who break the letter of the law in order to fulfill the spirit of the law. The spirit of British law at the time of Gandhi’s protests was, “Let’s dump the white man’s burden and get the hell out of India.” And the spirit of American law at the time of Martin Luther King Jr’s protest marches was, “Let us make the negro the god of Babylon.”

I go back to Edmund Burke’s impassioned plea to his countrymen. He urged them to fight Jacobinism with the same passion with which the Jacobins fought, but he urged them to fight for a principle diametrically opposed to Jacobinism. The white man must oppose liberals with a Shakespearean passion and in the name of Christ, who was and always shall be the opposing principle to liberalism. Men who have invoked Satan will not be defeated by men who invoke egalitarian democracy: “Please, Mr. Liberal, won’t you grant whites a small piece of the egalitarian pie of life?” or, “I’m protesting so politely and so non-violently, won’t you please stop killing babies?”. Such pleas to the people who have not charity, to the men and women of the hardened hearts, will be of no avail. With them there can be no peaceful diplomatic solution. (1) They have shown their intentions and they are acting upon those intentions. They intend to destroy the white race so that the ethos of racial and sexual diversity will be the ruling ethos in a Babylonian kingdom of Satan. Only when the passionate European, the European with a heart that still lives, awakes from his death-in-life sleep will the reign of the liberals and the colored barbarians end, giving way to the new Europe, which will be like the old Europe in which that charity of honor was at the heart of our culture. +

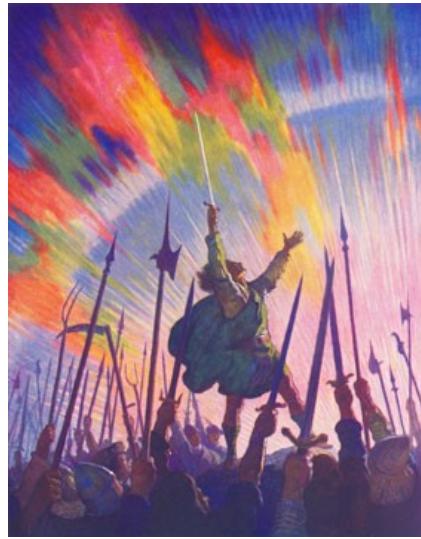
(1) We can’t literally copy the tactics of successful counter revolutionaries such as the way Nathan Bedford Forrest led Ku Klux Klansmen because circumstances change over time. But we can imbibe the same spirit as our European ancestors who would stop at nothing, provided it did not go against that charity of honor, to protect their people from the liberal Jacobins who sought their destruction. “Whatever it takes, legal or illegal, non-violent or violent, we shall survive as a people.” That should be the passionate vow of all Europeans.

The European is the Opposed Principal

June 15, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



Till the justice of the world is awakened, such as these will go on, without admonition, and without provocation, to every extremity. Those who have made the exhibition of the 14th of July, are capable of every evil. They do not commit crimes for their designs; but they form designs that they may commit crimes. It is not their necessity, but their nature, that impels them. They are modern philosophers, which when you say of them, you express every thing that is ignoble, savage, and hard-hearted. —Burke

Whenever an antique European expresses outrage and anger at a liberal-sponsored colored atrocity, such as the torture murders of Channon Christian and Christopher Newsom, the response of the liberals and the colored barbarians is, "Cry me a river." The negro barbarian newspaper columnist who made that remark, after some whites expressed outrage over the torture murders, was simply expressing the collective opinion of the liberals and the colored barbarians: White people are not human beings, and they should be exterminated like vermin. In point of fact, vermin have more of a right to life than white people, because many species of vermin are on the protected list, while no white person is on any protected list. Quite the opposite is the case: white people are on the list to be murdered in the name of diversity.

Liberals do cry their own rivers, they just don't cry over the same things that antique Europeans do. For example, I saw the liberals cry just the other day. It happened like this: two Mexican parents came to this country on a tourists' visa. Disregarding their tourist status, they enrolled their little el beano child in the local school. Then something rare and wonderful occurred, El Beano and his parents were deported for violating the immigration laws. This opened up the liberals' tear ducts, which are dry when babies are murdered in their mothers' wombs and white people are butchered by Aztec savages. But the liberals won't have to cry for El Beano for very long. El Beano's classmates, an assortment of blacks, Mexicans, and Orientals, are sending a petition to The Obama to have El Beano and his parents returned to the United States. Standing in front of a giant poster of Martin Luther King Jr., El Beano's hard-eyed, feminist teacher was televised saying, "We're sending the message that a person is still a person no matter what country he comes from." Hmm, is the child in the womb not a person? Are not white people persons who have a right to not be overrun by Aztecs? No, the hard-eyed feminist tells us. But we are supposed to cry a river because one Aztec child is sent back to live in his native land. And what is so bad about sending El Beano back to Mexico? Shouldn't Mexico, by the liberals' doctrine, be heaven on earth? Haven't we been told *ad nauseum* that a nation of vital, organic, colored people is good, and a nation with inorganic, tired white people in it is bad? I grant you that the United States is fast becoming a colored nation, but isn't it better to live in a completely colored nation than in a nation that still has some evil white people in it? So don't weep for El Beano. Besides, every child, no matter what their color, is better off without an American education. Better to be raised and taught in a regular run-of-the-mill whorehouse than to go through the whoredom of an American education.

The weeping liberal will tell us that the El Beanos of the world need to come to America and other European nations so they can have a better standard of living. "Would you deny them that chance?" Yes, of course I would if I had the power. Why does the liberal, whose heart is hardened against the slaughter of his own people but bleeds over the deportation of the stranger, not ask himself why Mexicans and other colored tribesmen want to come to European countries? It is not because the colored loves Europeans — their murderous behavior upon arrival in the white nations gives the lie to that hypothesis. They come because there is nothing left to loot in their own countries. They persist in thinking that white men somehow stole money from the gods intended for the colored people of the earth. The colored barbarians seem incapable of understanding that white people worked for their wealth, and when a white nation becomes a colored nation, the once wealthy nation becomes an impoverished third world nation. Nor do the liberals, who worship the colored barbarians, grasp that fact. They think everything will go on as before, only better because the white people, such as you and I, will not be around to stop the completion of the new Tower of Babel.

Throughout the Western world, the concern of the liberals is to preserve, defend, and advance the colored races while destroying the white race. It's as if all the liberals throughout the world have the same script to which they religiously adhere every time a colored atrocity so egregious it cannot be ignored comes to the attention of the mainstream media. When the British soldier was beheaded in public by homegrown Nigerian Moslems, the liberal government officials warned that they would retaliate against any whites who used the "unfortunate" incident to protest against the presence of Moslems in Britain. When the Moslems rioted in Sweden, it was the protests against the rioters that brought down the wrath of the Swedish government. Throughout the European world, it is always the white people protesting against the atrocities of the colored barbarians who are considered the "real danger" to the West. And why is that? Because white people who protest against colored violence impede the onward march to the brave new world of diversity. "Britain must become multi-cultural in order to survive," Tony Blair proclaimed. And liberals in every nation of Europe make the same proclamation. The reality is quite different from what the diversity-mongers insist on. European nations must become completely non-diverse: they must become completely and wholly white if the European people are to survive. Blair and his ilk when they say European nations must be multi-cultural are referring to the survival of the new Babylonian states that have nothing in common religiously, racially, or culturally with the old European nation states. These new anti-nations, and the people who created them, must be utterly destroyed and replaced with the older traditional European nation states inhabited by white Europeans who reject the new Babylon and adhere to the values and ethos of old Europe.

White conservatives who suggest a "pragmatic" compromise — "We will have a limit on colored immigration" — or — "We will only allow educated, hardworking coloreds into our nation" — do not understand the nature of liberalism. Satan is the driving force behind liberalism. He will not compromise. It is a war to the death, and diversity is his ultimate weapon. Through diversity he defiles the image of God in man and strikes out at the God he hates. The only "pragmatic" solution to the problem of "racial diversity" (which means black dominance) is the moral solution: the defeat of liberalism and the restoration of white, segregated Europe.

Something else always happens, besides the liberals' condemnation of white protesters, when a colored atrocity too heinous and obvious to be ignored by the media occurs. There is always a group of white conservatives and/or white nationalists who say, "This event will wake the people of ____ up." Fill in the blank with the United States, Britain, France, Canada, Sweden, New Zealand, etc. But the heinous colored bloodletting never does "wake up" white people. Why doesn't it? It doesn't wake them up because white people have accepted the satanic premises of egalitarian democracy. Let us go back to Burke again. He fought with might and main to awaken the English people to the horrors of the French Revolution. And he, more than any other man in Britain, helped to turn the English people against Robespierre's Reign of Terror. But Burke also fought with his whole heart and soul to show the English people and all peoples of Europe that the principles of Jacobinism were still alive and well after Robespierre's death. In that endeavor he was unsuccessful. He faced the same entrenched support for the democratic egalitarian heresy that the white counter-revolutionary faces today. The more colorful, heinous crimes of the Jacobin-supported mob, be they French *sans-culottes* or colored savages, are noted and regretted, but the ongoing war against the white European under the banner of liberty, equality, and diversity, is never regretted or condemned. And the regret

expressed over the more blatant atrocities is feigned, because the essence of satanic democracy is the hatred of the European. The late Jacobin pope, John XXIII, was a textbook case of satanic, democratic, egalitarian liberalism in action:

It turned out that in Kongolo nineteen missionary priests had been massacred by the Congolese troops, and that African student priests had been commanded to throw the bodies into the river. One of the student priests related that the bodies had been stripped and “their hands cut off, eyes stabbed, and other unmentionable mutilations as well as arrows planted in their bodies.” On hearing of this massacre the late Pope John said his heart was full of grief but that he had “no feeling of hatred – only loving charity and forgiveness.” No doubt he felt the same way about the outrages inflicted on the nuns, forced to dance naked and sing hymns in praise of the Messiah Lumumba before being taken and ravished and subjected to bestial tortures. It appears that nothing, absolutely nothing the black man does will ever open the eyes of the people in Europe. They are determined not to see because if they do see it will mean that they will have to discard their ‘humanism’ and find another philosophy. To deprive them of their liberalism will be like cutting off their hands and feet. – Anthony Jacob

When reading that quote from the satanic Pope John, one thinks of a statement by Edmund Burke, Anthony Jacob's 19th century counterpart: "They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate." Pope John did not hate the colored minions of Satan, because he loved democracy more than Christ and Christ's people. When the European grazers cease to love democracy, they will hate the colored invaders and the liberals who turned the white nations over to the colored strangers. But until the Europeans' love affair with democracy ends, we will continue to see the endless cycle of "regretful" atrocities, which spawn the "white people are beginning to wake up" theories, which in turn lead to government crackdowns on white protesters and then a return to "business as usual," which is the destruction of the white race.

The democratic nationalists such as the late John Tyndall of Britain and the late Samuel Francis of the U.S. never came to terms with the egalitarian, democratic rhinoceros in the European living room. The coalition of hardcore liberals and colored barbarians cannot be defeated electorally. The white grazers do not have enough votes to defeat that coalition. So why not end the cycle of futility? Instead of trying to win the liberals over – which cannot be done: did Antonio win Shylock over? – why not attack the liberals' democratic oligarchy from outside the democratic structure? If the grazers follow our lead, all the better, but if they don't, we are enough to defend our people and fight for that charity of honor which distinguishes the white man from the colored tribesmen.

The white grazers play by the rules of Jacobin democracy despite the fact it means their destruction. What is so compelling about this unholy ideology that makes men adhere to it, even those men who are being sent to the slaughter houses in the name of democracy, diversity, and equality? French Jacobinism, Russian Communism, and democratic egalitarianism all stem from the same utopian roots. And all utopian states are based on the hatred of non-utopian, Christian Europe. The utopians might be sexually frustrated, like Rousseau; they might be second-rate lawyers, like Robespierre, who feel that the existing world order does not recognize their talents; or they might be power-mad lunatics, like the Jesuits in Paraguay, who feel that only when they control everything can people be truly happy. But whatever the underlying motivation, the utopians must destroy the Europeans' Christian faith so that their utopia can flourish. A people who believe that life on this earth is inherently flawed because of original sin will not fall prey to utopian schemers who promise paradise on earth. But once faith in Christ diminishes, once the sacred story of mankind's fall and redemption from sin through Christ is shaken or denied entirely, the white grazer is a reed for every utopian wind that blows through Liberaldom. Foul becomes fair, and fair becomes foul. The blasphemy of race-mixing becomes benevolent "diversity" and sexual depravity becomes "releasing our inhibitions."

And all utopian depravities are backed by science: "Perhaps science can give us an inter-racial, sensual, guilt-free world," the grazer muses to himself. "And if horses were wishes, then beggars would ride," replies the antique European. Utopias always lead to hell, because all utopias deny the Son of God. It is up to the remnant band of Europeans to stand as a sign of contradiction to democratic, utopian, Babylonian Europe by standing firm for Christian Europe despite the mocking ridicule of the Voltaires and Rousseaus, and despite the menacing spearpoints of the barbarous colored hordes. If we love and hate with all our hearts, eschewing democracy, and holding as naught the laws of Liberaldom, the liberals and their colored allies will not prevail. +

Rivers of Blood

June 22, 2013
Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization
Tags: Enoch Powell, Shakespeare



Lead, lead. The time seems long: their blood thinks scorn,
Till it fly out and show them princes born.

-Shakespeare's *Cymbeline*

Lord Mandelson, a former Cabinet Minister in the Blair and Brown administrations, recently announced that the Labor Party had actively recruited foreign colored immigrants (about 2.2 million) between the years 1997 and 2010. Although Mandelson conceded that the colored immigrants replaced white native-born Brits in the labor force, he didn't seem the least bit repentant for his role in the displacement of white Britains. In point of fact he considered it a badge of honor.

Mandelson's announcement was certainly no surprise. He was just telling us something that we already know. The ruling elites in the European nations have been replacing their own people with colored people for the past 45 years. My own anti-nation started the process in 1965. What is significant about Mandelson's statement is that it marks a shift in the liberals' mindset. From the sixties through the nineties they took some care not to be too blatant about their master plan to destroy the white race. Instead of destruction and genocide the liberals used words such as 'equality' and 'diversity.' And they still use such words, because there are still white grazers who are taken in by them. But there are more and more liberals, particularly in Canada and the United States, who are willing to state, quite openly, that whites must become extinct and be the prime exponents of their own extinction. Canada, for instance, has a whole host of public service jobs for which whites are ineligible. And in the anti-European land mass called the United States, Jeb Bush, the governor of multi-cultural Florida, has stated that Mexican immigrants make better citizens than white Americans. Of course, if Jeb Bush had one ounce of royal European blood life in his veins he would realize, as Kipling so eloquently tells us in his poem "The Stranger," that it is not a question of which race is better: it is about loyalty to one's own, who are one's own because God ordained it. The Jeb Bushes of the world first go whoring after the stranger and then try to make a virtue of their sin by deifying the colored races and demonizing the white race. It's all the rage in Evangelical circles to adopt colored children and marry one's white offspring off to the colored barbarians, all in the name of Christianity. Such blasphemies are not new and original, or virtuous; they are sin disguised as virtue.

*So may the outward shows be least themselves;
The world is still deceiv'd with ornament.
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt.
But, being season'd with a gracious voice,
Obscures the show of evil? In religion
What dammed error but some sober brow
Will bless it and approve it with a text,
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament?*

The Christian wing of liberalism, which is not Christian, still prefers to season their race-mixing with a gracious voice and a quote from Scripture while the Lord Mandelson type liberals consider the battle won, thus making gracious subterfuge unnecessary.

Let us put their modern attack on white people in its proper context. The devil, as Burke correctly points out, was the first liberal. So it follows – and the Europeans' history bears this out – that liberals will always try to attack individual Christians and cultures based on Christianity. Up until the time of the French Revolution there were liberals outside the existing power structures of Europe, but there were no nations of Europe who had institutionalized liberalism, which is another name for Satanism. After the French Revolution the European nations gradually caved into liberalism. By the middle of the 1960s all the nations governed by Europeans had institutionalized liberalism. At that time the European powers began the mass extermination of the white race. Countries like South Africa and Rhodesia became black states sooner than the other European countries because those countries already had large concentrations of blacks in them when the extermination process began. But all the European nations will eventually – unless white people decide to act like Christian Europeans – become carbon copies of South Africa and Rhodesia where small concentrations of white people live in impoverished ghettos devoid of all the necessities of life.

Once you separate all the gracious subterfuge from liberalism and see that it is the second oldest faith, faith in Satan rather than in Christ, you will see why the liberals must deify the colored savage and demonize the white man. Christ was embodied in the culture of the antique white Europeans because their culture was an expression of the faith that was in them. So long as one white person remains on earth, there will be some visible reminder that the Word took flesh and dwelt among us. On some level the European-hating white "Christians" understand this, which is why they are trying desperately to survive the white holocaust by becoming negroes: by adopting colored children, taking colored spouses, and making the negro the supreme god, while making Christ a subordinate god, in the once-Christian churches. It is indeed a second fall of man, the liberals' betrayal of their own people at the behest of Satan. "I want to have nothing to do with the Christ-bearing race," Satan commands. "Yes, master," answer the liberals of Church and State.

The United States was a leader in the European rush to the racial abyss, because the United States already had large colored populations in the 1960s. But the other European countries followed suit. Enoch Powell's "The Rivers of Blood" speech, which he made on April 20, 1968 at the annual meeting of the West Midlands Conservative Political Centre in Birmingham has turned out to be all too true.

For these dangerous and divisive elements the legislation proposed in the Race Relations Bill is the very pabulum they need to flourish. Here is the means of showing that the immigrant communities can organize to consolidate their members, to agitate and campaign against their fellow citizens, and to overawe and dominate the rest with the legal weapons which the ignorant and the ill-informed have provided. As I look ahead, I am filled with foreboding.

Like the Roman, I seem to see 'the River Tiber foaming with much blood'. That tragic and intractable phenomenon which we watch with horror on the other side of the Atlantic but which there is interwoven with the history and existence of the States itself, is coming upon us here by our own volition and our own neglect. Indeed, it has all but come. In numerical terms, it will be of American proportions long before the end of the century.

Only resolute and urgent action will avert it even now. Whether there will be the public will to demand and obtain that action, I do not know. All I know is that to see, and not to speak, would be the great betrayal.

Of course resolute and urgent action was not taken in Britain or in any other European nation. The blood red tide of colored savages is sweeping over the European nations, and what were once white Christian nations have become colored nations dedicated to heathen gods. Now, even if the European borders were to be completely closed to colored immigration, there are already too many colored people in the once-white nations. It is no longer a case of keeping the colored invaders out, it is a case of reconquering Europe and driving the conquering armies of colored barbarians back into the sea. Such a daunting task is not possible from the modern, materialist standpoint; however, it is possible from an older European standpoint. Let's take Enoch Powell's "River of Blood" analogy. Everything he predicted – and Anthony Jacob as well – has come true. A river of blood has overwhelmed the European people and the river seems to be forever increasing in breadth and intensity. How, in the natural course of events, can we expect to stop such a rushing torrent? We can't, in the natural course of events. We who are about to die need a miracle. And miracles only occur when a people puts themselves in the hands of God. Do you remember Moses and the Red Sea? Was that just a fairy tale? Yes, it was a fairy tale – a true fairy tale. The history of the European people, prior to their apostasy in the 20th century, was also a true fairy tale, no less of a miracle than the parting of the Red Sea. But there must be an internal conversion before the Europeans can witness the miracle of a river of blood flowing away rather than through Europe's green and pleasant land. I know that to talk of such a miracle when the colored hordes appear to be overwhelming Europe seems absurd. But isn't that God's test? Our people, The Europeans, once stood in the midst of a hostile heathen world and got on their knees and said, "Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven." The obstacles they faced then were greater than the obstacles we face now. The crucial difference is that the modern Europeans do not pray, "Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done," they pray to a 'system': "My democratic, capitalist system," "My democratic, socialist system," "My Thomist system..." God's grace cannot be seen at the precise moment it is vouchsafed to mortal men, but surely if we look back at the Europeans' history we can see it was European men and women who sought first and foremost His Kingdom Come that made wherever the European people settled a blessed plot of earth.

All the blessed European plots of earth have been defiled by colored barbarians because of the great betrayal of liberals. When looking at the older generation, those past sixty years-of-age, there is nothing to be said of them. They were alive when there was still something left of Europe, and they rejected their own people for the colored hordes. The younger generation, in large part, has never known old Europe. They only know what the white-hating liberals have told them about it. So the white women seek to merge with the colored races, and the white males seek oblivion. This is why it is imperative the European hero should present a different Europe to the lost and discarded white males. It is like unto the old stories when the old man of the woods calls the two young princes from their chores, bids them sit down, and then tells them of their royal past and their future: "Though I have raised you as my sons and loved you as my own, I am not your true father. Your father was King of the European people. When Mordred the liberal treacherously killed your father and took control of the kingdom, he wanted the blood not only of your father but also of your father's heirs. So I took you from the palace that very night to these woods where I have raised you as my own. But the time has come for you to fulfill your royal destiny. Your blood speaks to you, your father calls out to you from the grave. Go and wrest the kingdom from Mordred and his heathen armies. Go amongst them in disguise at first, but when you have gathered other strong arms and stout hearts to your cause, strike with all your might and fulfill your destiny."

That is the crux of the matter. The liberals in church and state stand in defiance of God's will. He did not ordain that the Christ-bearing people should abdicate their responsibility and seek to replace Christ with the negro and the other tribes of color. The work of the European hero is the work of internal defiance. He must do the work and become a man of old Europe so that he can enkindle a flame in the hearts of the seemingly dead-to-life European grazers, for once a man sees and feels the love that once was there he will never again belong to the liberals nor seek oblivion in the dark caverns of Babylon. To fight for that dear land in which that charity of honor, the honor of Christ, was a living reality is the way of salvation for the white man and his people. Once united to that Europe and those people, a man need never fear the terror of the liberal storm troopers in church and state, nor the arrows of the colored barbarians. We, the Europeans, once called on Him by name, and He delivered us from the pestilence that walketh in darkness and the destruction that wasteth at noonday. Through our devotion to our people, we came to know His name, and He set His people on high. This is not a minor quarrel we have with the liberals and the colored barbarians. They are committed to build hell on earth with Satan's help. We are committed to His will be done on earth as it is heaven. But we must see the conflict as a conflict between God's people and Satan's own. We want to conserve our people and our God, and not some system, be it monetary, philosophical, or theological. The battle is personal and it is to the knife. As Kipling said of Queen Victoria after an attempt to assassinate her in 1882 failed, so do we say of our people and Christ's Europe:

*Trust us if need arise,
O Queen,
We shall not tarry with the blow!*

The need has arisen. +

The Return Home

June 29, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



There, then, a while in chains we lay,
In wintry dungeons, far from day;
But ris'n at length, with might and main,
Our iron fetters burst in twain.

-R. L. Stevenson

The Swedish police response to the ongoing Moslem riots in their nation was what I would term malicious indifference. The police declared that they were not going to do anything to stop the riots, but they would move against any “right wing extremists” who tried to stop the rioters from murdering, raping, and plundering. And there were some young Swedish males (God bless them) who did walk the streets, defying the police order, in an attempt to protect their women folk. Some wore masks, which is a good idea. Why make it easy for the liberals to identify their enemies? I like the idea of masked white avengers roaming the streets at night and then behaving like normal, cowed citizens during the day. The time has passed for public demonstrations and petitions. The liberals love such public protests, because it gives them an opportunity to identify their enemies and deal with them accordingly. We, the white Europeans, are a captive people. We should not accept our conquered status as our permanent condition, but acknowledging that reality will make us masked avengers instead of ineffectual petitioners.

The basic premise of the liberals, which keeps them in power, is that democracy is the moral equivalent of God. Whatever is done by democratically elected leaders is good, because... well, because democracy is good: anyone can see that. The collective will of the people, which is always the will of a tiny minority who can manipulate the will of the people, holds sway with a despotic power greater than any divine right monarch or chieftain of a clan ever had. All democracies are divine because the will of the people is divine. Starting with the French Revolution and proceeding from there to all the European nations, we have seen that in a democratic nation, in which “the people” rule, everyone is not considered part of the glorious collective called “the people.” In France, the royal family and the aristocrats were the non-people who had to be exterminated so that “the people” could live. In subsequent years, as the democratic poison was allowed to course through the veins of the European nations, white people from all social and economic classes became non-humans, who had to be exterminated in order to make room for the colored people of the earth.

It is futile for white people to jockey for position within the democracies of the west, because white people are a non-people when they petition for their rights as a people, and they are an evil people, not fit to live, when the liberals need an evil devil to blame for the ills of the world. There is a group of black barbarians, based in New York City, who call themselves Black Hebrew Israelites. They perform a religious ritual in which white women kneel before them and kiss their feet in atonement for white people’s sin of racism. It occurred to me when I saw that obscene and blasphemous ceremony that nothing could better illustrate the current spirit of white people and the eternal spirit of the black savage. White people have denied the original sin, which the God of Christians says we all shared in, and transformed all sin and guilt to the “racist” white race. In contrast the black savage, who never did understand Christianity at the deepest level, knows only one thing: “The white man is weak and we can dominate him.” And everything that perpetuates or supports democracy perpetuates and supports such moral pariahs as the Black Hebrew Israelites and their white devotees.

We must see what a democracy is in reality, not what it is in theory. In theory a democracy is government by the people and for the people. In reality, a democracy is government by the few for a select minority of people. We can see the democratic phenomenon in all its glory if we look at the primary issue of the latter half of the 20th century: the unchecked immigration of the coloreds into European nations. In every European nation, if the European people had been asked to vote on the issue of colored immigration do you think they would have voted to be displaced? Of course not, so a vote was never taken. Liberal oligarchies only allow voting when they are sure of victory. Legalized abortion was not voted on until it had been institutionalized for over 25 years. And the destruction of the white race will not be voted on until the white race is destroyed. Then a few remaining liberals and the savage colored hordes will vote for what has already taken place, the destruction of the white man.

All seems cheerless, dark, and deadly for the white man. Determined bands of liberals, committed to the rule of Satan, rule in every European nation. And they keep their kingdom in order by a two-pronged system of terror. On the one hand, there is the law. All opposition to multi-cultural, diverse, white-hating Liberaldom will be opposed with the usual weapons of lawful persecution, such as fines, taxes, and imprisonment. And the second prong of the liberals’ attack is malicious indifference to the bloodletting of the colored barbarians. Some governments will feign concern over the murder of whites, and some governments such as the Swedish government will say it outright: “We don’t care.” But all the liberal governments throughout the European nations encourage and support the colored savages’ ongoing war against the white race.

White people are at the mercy of liberals and the colored barbarians who have no mercy. They are at the mercy of the former because the liberals have rejected the God of mercy, and the latter because the colored tribesmen never knew the God of mercy. What should the white man do in the face of such merciless foes? Should he vote them away? How can he do that since all voting is done within the satanic confines of democracy? Shall he plead with the liberals and the colored barbarians to let him live? Such pleading is doomed to fail. Why would a people without mercy listen to the pleas of a defeated foe? It seems like last post. But there is one last hope, which really was always our only hope. The European people conquered the world when they sought first the kingdom of heaven. That is the conundrum the European faces. He can’t defeat the forces of liberalism and colored barbarism, the forces of ‘this world only,’ unless he believes that Christ is the Son of God, who is a greater force than this world only.

The European cannot mount a charge against his liberal and colored enemies armed with a materialist philosophy or an intellectual affirmation of milk-toast multi-cultural, democratic Christianity. He must have that passionate bred-in-the-bone and in the heart Christianity which breeds men and women whose faith can move mountains, destroy liberalism, and defeat the colored hordes in the day of battle.

To be a true European a man must break the chains of democracy. He must cease to feel, think, and act like a modern devotee of democracy, diversity, and equality. The internal battle comes first. Louis XVI did not defend himself and his family against the forces of Jacobin democracy because he had doubts about the legitimacy of a Christian monarchy. He was willing to consider, just for faltering moment, that Satanism might have some value for modern men. The result of such a faltering consideration of the merits of Satanism was the death of all Louis was supposed to protect and defend. We too, we Europeans, have witnessed the death of all we were pledged to protect and defend: our people and the sacred faith of our European ancestors. At the very least we can make the liberals and their barbarian allies know that amongst the seemingly cowed and frightened white men they see by day, there are masked midnight raiders who will never abandon sacred Europe for democratic Satania.

In his autobiography, the marvelous humorist and post-Civil War chronicler of the Southern people Irwin Cobb stated that he thought the teachings of the New Testament were sublime but undoubtedly a very impractical guide for living in this very hard, practical world. Minus the admiration for the sublime teaching of the New Testament, Cobb's opinion of Christ's teachings is the opinion of the white nationalists who have been advocating more democracy and more secularized pragmatism as a solution to white genocide. They have refused to come to terms with the satanic nature of liberalism because then they would have to acknowledge that Satan's divine antagonist, Jesus Christ, is the only genuinely pragmatic answer to the seemingly hopeless plight of the white nations. "I'm not interested in metaphysical bull—," the white nationalist intones. Maybe you should be, because that is what distinguishes the true white man from the colored barbarian: he has a passion for the "impractical" things of the spirit while the colored tribesmen seek the fleshpots of Egypt. I think the white nationalists' obsession with the Jew as the only enemy of the white race, while they often ignore the white, post-Christian liberal, stems from their desire to have one easily identifiable material symbol of the enemy. But that ignores the reality that is staring us in the face: most Jews are liberals, but not all liberals are Jews. It is liberalism, the liberalism of Rousseau, of Voltaire, of Descartes, and a whole legion of anti-Christian Christians, as well as the Jews, against whom we are fighting. The key element in liberalism is a hatred of Christ and those who believe in Christ. The reason the white nationalists are always seeking for some kind of compromise with the democratic liberals is because they are of the same opinion as the liberals regarding the central event of history. They believe that Christ be not risen. And if you don't believe Christ rose from the dead, you can never march into a European future while holding on to the threads of the past, because the past, in Europe, belongs to those who believed in Christ. The liberals are simply more consistent than the white nationalists. Since Christ be not risen, the white Europeans have perpetuated a falsehood on mankind. They don't deserve to live in the future. So say the liberals. The white nationalists agree that Christ be not risen, but they want to be forgiven for the Christianity of their ancestors and accepted in Babylon on the basis of their intelligent genes. Hence their unwillingness to give up on democracy. They are always hoping that they can win the liberals over by intelligent pleading.

There is a second way of dealing with liberals, which I feel is the only way to deal with them. We should not reason with them: they are not interested in rational debate once they have ascended to power. When a liberal is outside the power structures he wants to discuss everything. "Why not legalize abortion?" "What's wrong with gay marriage?" "What's wrong with mixed marriages?" But once in power, all discussion ends, and the liberal feels called upon to defend not debate. He is a spiritualized Jew who has hardened his heart against the light:

*I pray you, think you question with the Jew:
You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;
You may as well use question with the wolf
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops and to make no noise,
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—
His Jewish heart:*

This brings us to the second way. The one last and only hope for the white man. We can let go of the democratic, technological white man who is the pushy, *nouveau riche* fellow who comes to dinner at the old patriarchal estate and attempts to win the daughter of the patriarch by flash, glitter, and the promise of a golden future. But neither the patriarch nor his daughter is impressed. "Who are your people, where do you come from?" they ask. The *nouveau riche* fellow doesn't think that is important.

"It is important," the patriarch declares, as he pushes Mr. *Nouveau Riche* out the door.

The threads of the past! There are two Europes. There is storybook Europe, where white people dwell, people who cherish their own in the sight of Christ, true God and true man. And there is democratic, technological, race-mixing Europe, where the liberals, the colored barbarians, and all those who hate the light dwell. If we pick up the discarded sacred thread of our storybook past, we will not immediately end our Babylonian captivity. But we will have begun the battle, the only battle that ennobles a man rather than debases him. And when we triumph, all honor and glory will go to Him, the creator and inspiration of our dear land of storybooks. +

The Evening Mists of Europe

July 6, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



My lips smile no more, my heart loses its lightness;
No dream of the future my spirit can cheer.
I only can brood on the past and its brightness
The dear ones I long for again gather here.
From ev'ry dark nook they press forward to meet me;
I lift up my eyes to the broad leafy dome,
And others are there, looking downward to greet me
The ash grove, the ash grove, again is my home.

– Welsh Hymn

In an old Huckleberry Hound cartoon, a potato rises up from a huge potato field and addresses his fellow potatoes: “Potatoes, arise! No more will we stand for being boiled, mashed and French-fried. We shall attack and win, win, win!” But the potatoes just sit there. The heroic potato is then forced to go it alone and eventually is defeated by the bumbling Huckleberry Hound.

I suppose we can forgive the potatoes, because – after all – they were just potatoes. But what are we to say of the white grazers who seem to resemble potatoes, except for the fact that potatoes don’t watch football games and NASCAR on television? Why don’t the grazers have any more concern for their people than the potatoes had for their fellow potatoes? Is the white race simply a cowardly race? I don’t think we can say that is true if we look at the white man’s history. In the distant past there is Alfred and Wallace and in the not-too-distant past there is Havelock and Lee. Those men were the best of the breed, but they were not isolated spores: they represented a whole host of men who fought courageously for kith and kin. And our modern age is not without white men who will fight. They will fight for democracy, for the negro, and for capitalism, but they will not fight for their people, which makes them cowards in the traditional sense of the word, so we must ask why a race of men who were not cowards in the past have become cowards.

The neopagans tell us that white people have become cowards because of Christianity, that Christianity makes men passive and indifferent to the slaughter of their own people. When you point out to the neopagans that Europeans ruled the world during their Christian era and they hardly seemed passive or indifferent to the plight of their own people, the neopagan will inform you that the European people were not Christian during the Christian era (480 – 1914). The late Samuel Francis was a proponent of that revisionist history. He claimed that the Christianity practiced by the Europeans was an invention of their own. The real Christianity was the modern Christianity of the liberals and the modern evangelical and Roman Catholic churches. That’s a balancing act that won’t balance. How can you claim respect for your people if you believe they were deceived by a lie and they perpetuated that lie for approximately 1,430 years? If a man tells me that the passionate love of my life is a lie, I certainly won’t consider that man my friend. And the passionate love of the antique Europeans was Jesus Christ. The liberals, the modern church men, and the neopagans are all committed to a future without the Christ of the antique Europeans. We feel as Shakespeare felt:

“They that do change old love for new – Pray gods they change for worse.”

The liberal trumps the modern church men and the neopagan because he has a passionate faith: he believes in the divinity of the negro, the semi-divinity of the other colored races, and the evil of the white man. The church men have a derivative faith. They ape the liberals’ faith in the negro by throwing the Europeans of the past, and the South African and Rhodesian whites of the present, into the racist fire, but a faith that is wholly based on “what will make the liberals like me?” is not a passionate faith. And just as Chaucer’s monk believed in “hard riding” so does the neopagan believe in “hard thinking.” He won’t inspire the grazers to stand up and fight by invoking their European ancestors: oh no, he will teach them to be clear-thinking rationalists, men who are too smart to fall for the liberals’ gibberish or the poetical Christian gibberish of the antique Europeans. But that hasn’t worked. The grazers remain cowards. Why? Because courage stems from passion. When you love passionately, you will fight for that which you love. The grazer doesn’t believe passionately in liberalism, neopaganism, or the modern Christ-less Christianity. He is a man without a spiritual country, a man in search of a spiritual backbone, which he can only find at his racial hearth fire, which currently lies abandoned and unattended in the demonized past of the antique Christian Europeans. What if the grazer wandered away from his simulated home of the Redskins, Packers, Giants, (fill in the blank), and because of some vague, spiritual restlessness went back to the haunts of his European youth? Maybe, like Pip, he would find the love of his youth:

“Nevertheless, I knew, while I said those words, that I secretly intended to revisit the site of the old house that evening, alone, for her sake. Yes, even so. For Estella’s sake.

...There was no house now, no brewery, no building whatever left, but the wall of the old garden. The cleared space had been enclosed with a rough fence, and looking over it, I saw that some of the old ivy had struck root anew, and was growing green on low quiet mounds of ruin. A gate in the fence standing ajar, I pushed it open, and went in.

A cold silvery mist had veiled the afternoon, and the moon was not yet up to scatter it. But, the stars were shining beyond the mist, and the moon was coming, and the evening was not dark. I could trace out where every part of the old house had been, and where the brewery had been, and where the gates, and where the casks. I had done so, and was looking along the desolate garden walk, when I beheld a solitary figure in it.

The figure showed itself aware of me, as I advanced. It had been moving towards me, but it stood still. As I drew nearer, I saw it to be the figure of a woman. As I drew nearer yet, it was about to turn away, when it stopped, and let me come up with it. Then, it faltered, as if much surprised, and uttered my name, and I cried out,—“Estella!”

...I took her hand in mine, and we went out of the ruined place; and, as the morning mists had risen long ago when I first left the forge, so the evening mists were rising now, and in all the broad expanse of tranquil light they showed to me, I saw no shadow of another parting from her.

No dream of the future, whether one of a multi-racial Babylon, a multi-religious church-centered world, or a world ruled by white intelligence, can compare with old Europe. If once the grazer pauses there for a moment and lets the mists of Christian Europe envelope him, he will become a man again, and the day of the cowardly European will end.

The hue and cry for the death of the Europeans does not just come from the hardcore liberals and the colored barbarians. It also comes from a new breed of Christian conservatives. They cite the decadence of white culture and preach a Christian renewal via the colored races. There are three fallacies contained in that contemptible philosophy of betrayal. First, your people are your own, for good or ill, and you cannot abandon them for another people.

Secondly, the white grazers, even in their fallen state, are better than the colored barbarians. They maintain a remnant of grace from the [Corinthians 13](#) civilization of old Europe that the colored barbarians have never shown, even at the zenith of their anti-civilizations. Yes, I am prejudiced; I speak from the depths of a prejudiced European heart that loves the European people and hates their enemies.

Thirdly, the Christian conservatives who want to replace the white grazers with colored people never look at those marvelous colored replacements with an objective eye. They are not noble savages; quite the contrary is the case: they are ignoble savages addicted to theft, murder, and rapine. And why, if they are against white decadence, do the ‘Christian conservatives’ court favor with the most decadent branch of the white race, the white-hating liberals? So, none of the white-hating propaganda will wash. There is no excuse for it, and it behooves every white man to do what he can to send the white-hating liberals, their anti-Christian Christian adjuncts, and the colored barbarians a clear message that any attack on white people will be answered in kind.

Currently the silence of the white man, in the face of white genocide is deafening. And the silence will remain hanging over the white grazers like a shroud until their passion is aroused. Until that time liberals will keep the grazers grazing with the same gambit the English Jacobins used on their people to keep them from opposing the French Revolution: “Those are bad aristocrats who are being beheaded. You have nothing to worry about unless you take their part.” The dynamic never changes: “Those southern racists, those South African racists, etc., were and are bad people. You have nothing to worry about unless you become like unto them.” But we are like unto them: they are our people. Putting aside the pragmatic reason that contrary to what the liberals say (they will kill all whites whether they renounce South African whites or not), we should rush to the defense of our white brethren because that charity of honor demands that we do so. For how long will the white grazer be content to offer his fellow whites up for sacrifice? Just as long as he grazes in the fields of Liberaldom, isolated from his past, his people, and his God.

After World War I the conservative European was on the defensive. And by conservative, I mean, in the true sense, the European who wanted to conserve Christian Europe. It was never stated explicitly, but the general feeling among Europeans seemed to be, “It’s best that we leave that Christian stuff, that poetical whimsy, in the nursery, and proceed into the new world of iron and steel with concrete, iron, and steel economies and concrete, iron, and steel philosophies.” The better part that Mary chose, the poetic of the Christ story, was abandoned. The faith that ruled Europe became an incidental. It survived for a time as whimsy, in the novels of Kenneth Grahame and C. S. Lewis and in the movies of Walt Disney, and then faded out of the living memory of white people born in the latter half of the 20th century. What has replaced the poetic of Christian Europe? The poetic of the noble black savage, which the liberals push with a proselytizing spirit that knows no bounds. They will kill all non-adherents to their religion without any compunctions visitings of nature in their hearts, because they have hardened their hearts against the light of the world. And so long as the white grazer is separated from bardic Europe by an iron and steel curtain more formidable than the old Soviet Iron Curtain, he will be unable to resist the liberals, who are filled with passionate intensity, or the colored barbarians.

When the steel and iron curtain of pragmatism went up and what was considered as non-essential was left behind, the white man lost chivalry, heroism, charity, and vision. Quite a high price to pay for technological mastery of the world. The white man achieved technological superiority, but he lost his soul. The liberal compensated for his loss by consecrating his technology to his new black god whom he loves with his whole heart, mind, and soul. But what of the white grazer? He doesn’t love the noble black savage enough to make him his god, but he needs a god that he can love with a passionate intensity. Can blood sports fill that need? I doubt it. What if a God-man came along who was crucified, died and was buried, but then rose from the dead on the third day? Would that event fill the grazers with the passionate intensity necessary to defend and fight for their own people, the people that bore the God-man on their shoulders when He was just an infant? Yes, it would, but to hear that sacred story, the grazer would have to return to the European nursery where the discarded poetic of Europe lies in a dustbin. Oh, what a falling off was there!

A friend of mine, a lover of Christian Europe, recently told me that she didn’t see any hope for white people. All she saw around her indicated that the whites would be massacred to the last man, woman, and child with the full consent of the liberals, until they too faced the death they had planned for other ‘bad’ whites. (It is always the bad whites, those racist whites, whom the liberals envision dying.) It’s difficult to offer words of comfort to a Christian European woman. You don’t want to lie: things are that bad and it does seem like the white race is hurtling toward total annihilation. I try to follow Edgar’s advice: “Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say.” Despite the fact that the grazers seem as soul-dead as the potatoes in the Huckleberry Hound cartoon, despite the liberals’ complete control of the media, the churches, and the schools, and despite the overwhelming mass of colored barbarians who seek the white man’s blood, I don’t see Christian Europe and her people perishing. My heart is still in that European nursery where all the fairy tales are true, because they are connected to Him, who assures us that nothing eternal dies. The passionate intensity of one heart connected to His Europe can still turn the tide. And I know there is more than one such heart. God works from the few to the many. Better to be a European, a Christ-bearer, than a rivet in Sandburg’s skyscraper, or a cog in the liberals’ satanic mills.

“Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is’t to leave betimes?” +

Clerical Devils

July 13, 2013

Categories: Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Thomas Nelson Page



The Bishop was there in his lace and lawn,
And the cassocked priest, — I saw him yawn,—
The rich and great and virtuous too,
Stood smug and contented, each in his pew.

-Thomas Nelson Page ["The Needle's Eye"](#)

Let's first state what the satanic Pope Francis did, and then we shall put what he did in its proper context. Pope Francis went to Lampedusa, a small island off the coast of Italy, and criticized Europeans for their indifference to African "refugees." The spawn of Satan said that he felt a "thorn in his heart" when he thought of the poor refugees. What did he feel for the Italians who are being displaced by the "poor Africans"? And is there no thorn in his heart for the white South Africans, who are being tortured and murdered by government fiat in South Africa? Of course not. Pope Francis has the satanic faith called liberalism, and as a devotee of that satanic faith he must worship the black and hate the white. From the depths of hell he can hear his satanic master urging him on to greater and greater blasphemies. From Pope John XXIII's loving "charity and forgiveness" for black torturers and murderers, through the now "sainted" John Paul II's inspired love for all non-white races and all non-Christian religions, to the present Pope's hatred for the European people and his "love" for the murderous negro, the apostasy of the "conservative" churchmen is a tale written in blood, the blood of the white man. There was a time in my life when I bent over backwards to attribute good, albeit misguided, motives to negro-worshipping clergymen. Now, having observed these creatures over a longer period of time I no longer apply the 'good but misguided' label to the modern clergy. If they just loved the negro, we might call them misguided, but they worship the negro and hate the white man. Such blasphemy and such hatred does not stem from men who are merely misguided, it stems from men who have given themselves over to Satan. The Roman Catholic clergymen preceded the Evangelical Protestants in the rush to embrace negro worship, but the Protestants have caught up to the Catholics. The worship of negroes, which entails the hatred of the white man, along with the deification of the unrepentant Jew, is dogma in all of the "conservative" churches.

There is nothing new about the worship of the noble black savage and the deification of the Jew. This has always been the essence of liberalism. Burke makes repeated references to the alliance the Jacobins forged with organized Jewry. And he also points out the terrible consequences to the whites in Haiti when the principles of liberty, equality, and fraternity were applied to negroes and mulattoes. What is new is the institutionalization of liberalism, comprised of the worship of the negro, the hatred of the white man, and the deification of the unrepentant Jew, within the conservative Christian churches which formerly considered themselves the bulwark of orthodoxy, fighting against the liberalism of the mainstream churches. Now, the conservative churches mute their criticism of the radicalism of the mainstream churches' sexual politics and make negro worship and the Judaization of Christianity the major tenet of their faith.

The conservative "Christians" are proving Burke's maxim: "You can't have just a little bit of liberalism." Once the conservatives abandoned their connection to Christ through their people, through their blood, they were fit for nothing but blasphemy and racial treason. Men cannot live without feeling some connection to a people whom they love above all other people, and they cannot live without a God to whom they feel connected through their people. When the conservatives abandoned the bred-in-the-bone Christianity of the antique Europeans they were lost in the desert of modernity, and they sought refuge in the oasis of liberalism. Now they have a people, the Jews, and they have a god, the negroes. Just as the antique European became one with God through his blood ties to his kith and kin, so do the liberals and their new conservative converts stay connected to Satan through their ties to their negro gods and the unrepentant Jews.

The liberal is a lapsed Christian. Like his progenitor he has a grudge against God for His failure to run the world according to the proper principles – Satanic principles. Unable to immediately dethrone God, the liberal, in imitation of Satan, seeks to attack God by destroying His image in man. And where did we see the image of God in man? We saw His image in the collective face of the antique Europeans. Destroy those people and their culture, and you have, according to the liberals' beliefs, destroyed God. The great tragedy of the conservative churches is that they didn't defend that which was essential to the faith, the image of God in man. They succumbed to the support-your-local-priest-or-local-minister heresy. Never mind that your local priest and your local minister have become universalists, loving the negro and hating the white. So long as they don't recommend adultery and homosexual marriage, they must be okay. Is that the sum total of Christian orthodoxy? I thought it was more than a few 'thou shalt nots.' I would have thought, from viewing the Europeans' past, that Christianity was a faith of passion and fire: a passionate fiery love for one's own, that exceeded the love of the colored tribesmen for their own by a thousand-fold, which was rooted in a blood connection to the living God whose love passeth the understanding of mere rationalism.

You cannot love as God would have men love, in spirit and in truth, if you do not love through the channels of grace that God has so beneficially provided for mankind. Those small channels of grace are filled by our attachments to our kith and kin, and they only flow outward into larger tributaries when they are maintained as separate channels, sacred and unavoidable. No one who betrays their own kind can truly love the stranger. The good Samaritan did not, after tending to the stranger's wounds, invite him into his home and force his daughter to have relations with him. He cared for him outside his home and left him at an inn, because he had learned charity at home. If the good Samaritan had been a liberal, he would have passed the stranger by, gone on to his work, and then signed a petition for the enfranchisement of all aliens and the disenfranchisement of all Samaritans. The true Christian missionaries such as Edmund Hodgson were racial segregationists who evangelized the stranger because they were thoroughly European. The great "love" of the modern Pope Francis-type clergymen is pure egotism. "See how good I am by what I do for the negro while attacking the white." Such colossal egotism does not come from God, it comes from God's satanic antagonist.

The history of the white man's experience in Haiti as chronicled by [T. Lothrop Stoddard](#) and the history of the white man's experience in Africa as chronicled by Anthony Jacob have shown us the difference between the white and the black. At their worst white people sought wealth in Africa and Haiti, indifferent to the fate of blacks. But at their worst the whites did not torture, murder, and rape the blacks. And most whites helped the Africans while helping their own as well. In contrast, the blacks have committed outrage upon outrage against the whites, and the liberals of the European world have stood by and applauded them. No, applause would imply some human characteristics: the liberals have howled like jackals.

The liberals have been telling us for centuries that liberalism is moral evolution. I don't quite see this moral evolution. How can they maintain they have morally evolved when they have consecrated themselves to the negro, who now does the same things in the cities of New York, Pairs, London, etc., that he has done since time immemorial in Africa, namely, rape, plunder, and murder? Such a morality is only a moral progression if the religion of Satan is superior to the religion of Christ. But that is the goal of liberals, to dethrone God. And the elevation of the negro to divine status is a major part of the dethronement process.

The white Christian missionaries were never able to Christianize the black. The witch doctor's message of murder and sacrifice was always more appealing to the blacks than the missionaries' message of a divine savior full of charity and mercy. A man has to have some sense of his own sinfulness before he can feel the need for mercy. And he has to have some stirrings of humanity in his heart before he can practice charity. This is the moral evolution we are supposed to lend our support to: A world ruled by black witch doctors, devoid of charity and mercy. Must we accept such a world just because our churchmen tell us we have to?

We've been over the false reasons the conservative Christians give for hating whites and worshipping blacks (see "The Evening Mists of Europe"). There is no need to go over them again. Let's focus on the real reason that church men like Pope Francis worship negroes and hate the white: They haven't any faith in the Christian God of the antique Europeans. Their faith is in this world only. To be courted and loved in this world, you must kiss the feet of the powers that be in this world. And the liberals are the powers that be. The churchmen use the language and the symbols of the Christian faith to cloak their treacherous betrayal of the Light of the world. They started with the betrayal of their race, and they will end up raising the banner of Satan in every organized Church in the formerly Christian nations of Europe.

There is always greater danger for the defenders of Christian Europe (and we defend a remnant who are bereft of their homeland) when a Bishop "turns insurrection to religion." But that is the case. The Christian Pharisees who have made a god in the image of the negro are in open rebellion against the Christian God. It's difficult in the face of such massive, institutionalized support for Satanism not to despair. That is what the liberals want: they want the white Christian to despair and die. For that reason, but not for that reason alone, we shall not despair and die. Our hatred of the liberals is only half of the equation. There is also our love of our people and their God that sustains us. From a purely biological standpoint an individual human being is a mere nothing, his life force can be taken away by a small germ, a clogged artery, or any number of biological accidents. But if we look at the soul of man, if we look past the biological façade, we can see that one individual soul is a universe, a universe of infinite wonder and spiritual grandeur, if that individual soul is connected to the heart of God. The truly great man is great because of what he loves. Those Europeans who love their God in and through their people are the "heroic brood" of God's creation and they will fight this battle, begun by Satan, out to the end, in defiance of the white-hating, perfumed clerics, the liberal powers that be, and the murderous barbarian hordes of color.+

The Better Part

July 20, 2013

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Europeans and Christ, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Burke



The whole drift of their institution is contrary to that of the wise Legislators of all countries, who aimed at improving instincts into morals, and at grafting the virtues on the stock of the natural affections. They, on the contrary, have omitted no pains to eradicate every benevolent and noble propensity in the mind of men. In their culture it is a rule always to graft virtues on vices. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

I was brought up by liberal parents who sent me to liberal schools and a liberal church. So naturally I grew up with a liberal world view. But slowly over time, I unburdened myself of my liberal beliefs. One of the first liberal dogmas to go was evolution. My 8th grade social studies teacher showed us all the charts and diagrams in a slide show, depicting the ape, the “missing link,” Cro-Magnon man, and then modern man. You know the progression: we all had to memorize it in school. The whole notion struck me as absurd, and I told my teacher so. She then told me that I had been brought up with – horror of horrors – “religious prejudices!” and that was why I couldn’t see the truth of evolution. I wasn’t articulate enough to tell my teacher that I had not been brought up with religious prejudices, I had been brought up to believe in evolution; before I was knee-high to a grasshopper I learned that ‘man is a monkey, therefore we should all love one another.’ While I still don’t believe in evolution, I will concede that my teacher back then, and the liberals right now, could make a strong case for evolution. It’s ironic that the fervent liberal evolutionists never use their strongest argument for their beloved doctrine: the negro. Their whole case rests on our willing suspension of disbelief in the missing link, so why not turn the disbelief of skeptics (such as me) into belief by saying, “Here he is: the negro. He is the missing link between ape and man.”

I thought of my 8th grade social studies class and evolution when I saw the pictures of the two apelike negroes who murdered a 1 ½ year old white boy. Although CNN, one of the bastions of negro worship, told us it was a robbery not a hate crime (CNN presumed that 1 ½ year olds carry over \$100,000 in cash), the subhuman negroes killed for no other reason than hate, a maniacal hatred of whites and innocence. If the white remnant ever becomes inured to this type of negro butchery, then there will be no white remnant.

The first stage in every war is the ideological stage, in which the enemy makes their case for war. The liberals have done that. They established, in the minds of their fellow liberals, an unimpeachable case against white people, which amounted, in the main, to one damning charge: white people were impeding the march to utopia because of their ‘racism’, their ‘sexism’, and their Christianity. Eliminate white people and utopia would come. The liberals were the prime movers, the true believers, but they also accomplished another goal of all wartime propagandists: where they failed to completely convince they sowed doubt. The grazer might not buy every single item on the liberal agenda, but he no longer believes, because of liberal propaganda, that the Europeans of old had anything to pass on to future generations. And that is all the liberal needs from the grazer. Once the grazer lets go of all his lifelines to the past he will have to (it’s inevitable) grab onto the liberals’ lifelines to the future.

Once the propaganda work has been done, the actual killing part of the war can take place. That is what is now taking place throughout the formerly European countries. The brutal murder of the 1 ½ year old boy was horrific, but it was not unusual. Such crimes, which used to occur primarily in the colored lands, are now rather commonplace in the Western world. The colored races have always hated the white. What has changed is the white race. Now the ruling liberal elites in every European nation encourage and abet the colored races’ murderous assaults on white people, which is why I maintain that what is to be done with liberals is now only a matter of tactics. We know what should be done to them – they have handed over our people to torture and death, and they have established, throughout the European lands, the reign of Satan. Is such evil going to disappear because we petition and vote? I’ll admit that there is not currently a moral climate within the ranks of the remnant Europeans to support the type of war that is necessary to defeat liberalism, but we should be developing that moral climate so our people will be able to mount a fight against a merciless foe that will not be satisfied until every last white is eliminated from the face of the earth.

The current moral climate in the European world is a completely amoral climate. Much more important than a nation’s laws, Burke observed, is a nation’s manners, because a system of manners is what constitutes the life of a nation:

When to these establishments of Regicide, of Jacobinism, and of Atheism, you add the correspondent system of manners, no doubt can be left on the mind of a thinking man concerning their determined hostility to the human race. Manners are of more importance than laws. Upon them, in a great measure, the laws depend. The law touches us but here and there, and now and then. Manners are what vex or soothe, corrupt or purify, exalt or debase, barbarize or refine us, by a constant, steady, uniform, insensible operation, like that of the air we breathe in.

The revolution in our moral sentiments, in our manners, was the deciding factor in the negroization of Europe. If the inhuman manners and amoral sentiments of the negro are the keystone of a new utopian world, should it not be our task, the Europeans, to build up European moral sentiment and European manners that contradict and stand in opposition to the negroized utopia of the liberals? What good will it avail us to elect conservative or nationalist candidates to office if the prevailing moral climate is a liberal negro-worshipping moral climate? I remember William F. Buckley Jr.’s boast that Reagan’s election represented a shift in the American people’s internal compass. That assumption was pure fantasy. The moral sentiments of the American people remained just as liberal after Reagan’s election as they had been previous to it. The American people had simply grown tired of Carter’s method of institutionalizing a negroized utopia and were willing to try another method: they had not changed their manners and moral sentiments.

The French Jacobins made a drastic change in government that highlighted their shift from a bred-in-the-bone Christian culture to an amoral, atheistic utopia, but all the nations of Europe made similar shifts in their national sentiments. A people can have a revolution without changing their government apparatus in the slightest degree. All they have to do is change the manners of their nation and use the existing governmental structures to institutionalize the change in manners. “When manners were corrupted, the laws were relaxed; as the latter always follow the former, when they are not able to regulate them, or to vanquish them.”

The corruption of manners as regards race-mixing, drug use, abortion, homosexuality, and divorce all preceded the relaxing of laws against those practices. It is of no use appealing to the law to reverse an evil, such as negro worship, when the law has institutionalized negro worship in response to the changing moral sentiments, what Burke calls manners, in favor of negro worship. If we were to go back in time to a Southern church in the 1880’s, what would the attitude of the parishioners be to negro worship? And the same church in 2013? Why the tremendous shift in the moral sentiments of white people? Certainly the people had been influenced by their clergymen, but the clergymen were simply caving in to the pressure from the

liberal, secular culture surrounding them, so we still need to find out why the clergy succumbed to liberalism and why the white Christians succumbed to the liberalism of the clergy. I think we need look no further than this thing called ‘science.’ The word ‘science’ connotes so much more than the study of the physical world. Science has come to mean truth. To think scientifically is to think objectively. “Scientific studies show...” “I based my findings on science.” To be progressive is scientific and therefore good; to be unprogressive is unscientific and therefore bad. This rather simple formula was never stated outright because it was considered, by the liberals, to be too obvious to need an explicit formulation. But everything that the European held sacred could not be defended in scientific terms. The major tenets of the Christian faith could not, without bastardizing the faith, be explained scientifically. Nor could the essential moral sentiments stemming from that faith be defended scientifically. It’s unscientific for a man to rise from the dead, it’s unscientific for a demonic spirit to roam the earth seeking the ruin of souls, and... The list goes on and on. If scientific thought is the highest thought then the antique Europeans are wrong, and the liberals are right. And we can’t go halfway with the liberals as the anti-evolution evangelicals do. They reject monkey-to-man evolution while ceding to the liberals moral, evolutionary superiority regarding democracy and race-mixing. “Onward and upward!” To what? To whom?

The white every man has become a grazer, staying on the outside of himself, wondering why he is divided from himself and against himself. He is suffering from that division of self because he feels a vague longing for the bardic past of the Europeans while he marches into the future under the banner of scientific truth, which encompasses the worship of nature and nature’s god, the negro. Only the complete rejection of every single aspect of the liberals’ moral evolutionary future will enable the white man to avoid walking, zombie-like, into a future that is devoid of white people and the God of white people.

The liberals present their scientific world of democracy, sexual freedom, and negro worship as a moral progression. But is it a moral progression? From a Christian perspective it is a step backward to the basest form of idol worship and bestial sexual practices that dehumanize and debauch. It is the liberals and their conservative allies who are looking back, just as Lot’s wife looked back, at a pagan world devoid of white people, which they hope they can take into the future with them, buttressed up by a progressive and scientific rationale. It is technological heathenism, this vaunted new world of the liberals’ making, conceived in hell, just like the old heathenism. When the European turns to his Christian past, completely rejecting every aspect of the liberals’ moral evolution, he will see life feelingly again and cease to be a spiritual half-breed, with one foot in the modern world and one foot in the world of old Europe. The reason British soldiers get their heads hacked off in their own nations by Moslem barbarians, 1 ½ year olds get shot in the face by negro apes, white South Africans are exterminated by blacks while the liberal world applauds, and demonic popes give religious sanction to the extermination of white people, is because the European has no moral sentiments. He has left behind the bred-in-the-bone Christianity for a new Christianity, an abstract Christianity solely dependent on liberalism, to provide him with his moral sentiments. I know neither the day nor the hour, nor do I know if the day will ever come, but if the European steps away from every single aspect of liberalism, not, as he currently does, picking some aspects of it and rejecting others, everything that seems impossible now – the segregation of the races, the restoration of the Christian patriarchal family, the end of legalized abortion and homosexual marriage – will all seem possible, even inevitable.

The true, integral European is the natural enemy of the colored heathen and the liberals; he can’t rest easy until both groups are banished to the swamps and bogs at the edge of his beloved homeland or else driven off the face of the earth. The story of the Brothers’ Grimm is so apropos. During their lifetimes their books of mathematics, science, and grammar were thought, by intelligent men, to be the legacy of the Brothers’ Grimm. But as the years passed, it turned out that it was the collected fairy tales of Wilhelm Grimm that were the sacred legacy of the Brothers’ Grimm. So it is with the European people. The liberals claim that their synthesis of technological barbarism with colored barbarism is the enduring legacy of the European. No! That legacy will only endure in hell. The eternal legacy of the European people is their belief in a fairy tale about a young carpenter, a third dumb brother, who ventured forth and defeated all the forces of hell, armed only with an intrepid spirit and divine love that passeth all understanding. Reclaim that fairy tale faith of our ancestors, and the moral sentiments that go with that faith will follow. Apish negroes will not be allowed to kill white children, babies will not be murdered in the womb, and no white Christian will worship at the altar of the negro. All this follows from a fairy tale? Yes, but it must be the white man’s fairy tale, the fairy tale of fairy tales which was championed and proclaimed by the one people who saw the light of the world and believed in the light of world. +

The Liberals' War of Extermination

July 27, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, White Genocide

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare, Weyl & Marina



In peace there's nothing so becomes a man
As modest stillness and humility;
But when the blast of war blows in our ears,
Then imitate the action of the tiger;

-Shakespeare's *Henry V*

In a wise and sensible book, *American Statesmen on Slavery and the Negro*, written in 1971, Nathaniel Weyl and William Marina, after first describing how the great majority of American statesmen in the past had favored segregation, stated that most of the racial problems that currently existed in the United States could be solved by granting white people the right of private association. The two men basically outlined a system that existed in the Southern states after reconstruction ended. Schools, churches, and neighborhoods could be free, if white people chose, of colored people. But of course Weyl and Marina were laboring under the false assumption that the liberals wanted whites and blacks to live their lives free of racial conflict. Weyl and Marina were writing five years after the white genocide immigration law of 1965 had passed. Liberals officially declared war on the white race with that infamous act of treachery, much more infamous and treacherous than the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. After all, the Japanese were not attacking their own people.

Weyl and Marina were quite right. Their "good fences make good neighbors" policies, if implemented back then, would have resolved the race problem to the extent that the race problem could be resolved. But as we have seen over the last 40+ years since that book appeared, the liberals did not want there to be peace between the races: they wanted a war of extermination in which only the colored barbarians, under liberal guidance, were doing the killing. Never in the history of warfare has a war of extermination proceeded so successfully.

The liberals first won the propaganda phase of the war: they gave their followers an ideological passion, and they killed the will to resist in the white grazers. Then they proceeded with the killing, which is — without the whites resisting — simply a routine mop-up operation. It reminds me of an old board game called Stratego that I used to play as a child. The purpose of the whole game was to get one or two high ranking pieces that your opponent could not kill, because you had killed all your opponent's high ranking pieces. Once you had achieved superiority, the game was over except for the slow methodical killing off of every remaining enemy soldier. The enemy could not strike your higher ranked soldiers; they could only run and avoid being killed for a short time. That is the position the white man is in. He can't kill the enemy; he can only avoid being killed for a short time, and then the game is over.

The sad fact is that the white man has lost the military board game of life, and he now watches helplessly as his opponent annihilates him. Is there no way out? Let me go back to that game of Stratego. There was no hope within the confines of the board game for a player who had no high ranking pieces. But because I thought the wooden pieces with the pictures of the various soldiers on them looked really neat, I often took my Stratego soldiers off the board and played a different game. In that game a lowly scout could take battlefield command and lead his men, by a surprise attack, over a secret mountain pass to victory over a seemingly invincible foe. The important thing was to take my army off the board where everything had a precise mathematical outcome and place my soldiers in a position to fight battles where imagination and initiative counted more than math.

It's obvious where I'm going with the Stratego analogy. In the board game called democracy the white man is dead. He is doomed to just sit and watch while the white race is annihilated by the barbarian hordes of color, because that is the rule of democracy. South African whites didn't play by the rules at first, but then they caved in to the rules, with the end result being that soon there will be no whites in South Africa. And the rest of the European nations, who have also agreed to play by the rules, will share the same fate as the whites in South Africa. Unless — yes, there is an 'unless' — white people decide not to play by the liberals' democratic rules. Why should a white man consent to the extermination of his race because his democratic leaders and the barbarian hordes of color have voted in favor of the extermination of white people? Where is it written that what is morally right is to be determined by popular vote? Christ was crucified instead of Barabbas after a popular vote, and Christian Europe perished when the democratic age was ushered in. Truth is undemocratic, and the truth is that only one people made Christ incarnate in their civilization, and only a revival of the divine spark that existed in those "dear old people long ago" will give white people of the modern era the will to fight for and preserve the white race.

A few months ago on a public television station I saw the great great-grandson of Charles Dickens, Gerald Charles Dickens, doing a reading of some of his famous ancestor's works. I cannot adequately describe how I felt. Dickens was one of the supreme poets of the Christian era of Europe. Through so many of his characters we feel closer to Christ, the true King of Europe. And here, in the flesh, was a descendant of the man who gave us Samuel Pickwick! My tongue cannot utter....

For most people, even Dickens aficionados, the public readings of Dickens' work by his great great-grandson might be an interesting oddity, but not something to make the blood quicken and the heart soar. But for me it was something more than an interesting oddity, because Gerald Dickens was reading, with great spirit and heart, his great sire's works. The blood and the spirit of Charles Dickens came alive on the stage during the readings. And this is what happened in Europe once the European people took Christ into their hearts and their homes. Christ himself took center stage in Europe! He was in the European people, spirit and blood, and the European people were in Christ, spirit and blood. However, when the work of abstraction was completed, a work that was first embodied in the French Jacobins, Christ became an intellectual construct, hovering on the fringes of Europe, to be completely denied or to be used only as a supporting deity in a pantheon of greater gods. He was no longer incarnate in and through the European people. And because He is no longer incarnate in and through the European people, the European people are being exterminated by the colored heathens with the encouragement and support of the liberals.

The intellectuals (as distinct from intelligent men) in the church have been treating white people for centuries now like white rats in a lab experiment. At first white people represented generic mankind, and as such they could be poked, probed, and experimented upon at the pleasure of the intellectuals. There was no concern for the survival of the white race, because in the opinion of the church intellectuals there was no such thing as a 'people.' They had certain abstract ideas about different peoples, which they did not bother to examine closely for truth. One race of people was as good as any other: they were all cannon fodder for the church intellectuals. Then, when the church intellectuals discovered that the abstract mass of colored people were more easily manipulated and controlled, less troublesome, the church intellectuals' attitude toward white people shifted from indifference to open hostility. Their abstract

Christianity was not dependent on the incarnation of a living savior within the hearts of a flesh and blood people, it was only necessary that the churchmen amass an aggregate herd of people who would rubber stamp the new abstract Christianity of the churchmen. The same process was at work in the secular society. After dethroning the monarchs and the aristocrats, the Jacobins sought out “the people” in order to elevate them to the divine status once held by the God of the European people. But when “the people” of Europe were found to be too European (which, translated, means too Christian) to truly represent man in all of his pristine, primitive glory, the liberals sought out the noble savage in all his many guises. He was the oh-so-intelligent-and-spiritual Asian, he was the noble and persecuted red man, he was the hard-working Aztec, and above all he was the godlike black man.

The secular liberal and the abstracted-from-his-God clergyman all embraced the gods of color, with the black man as the foremost god, while banishing the evil white man from the liberals' pleasure dome. But in doing so they banished God from their pleasure dome as well. Christ comes to us through human hearts, and if the only people who showed they had a human heart are banished then... Yes, that's right, then God does not enter in, He stays outside the borders of Liberaldom. So now we have a war being waged against a people who have no will to fight, because their God has been taken from them and they know not where He is to be found.

The living God is to be found in the depths of the human heart, depths that only the antique Europeans plumbed. The liberal has repudiated the God who listened to His people crying out to Him from the depths. And the colored barbarians have never known the God who lives in the depths of the human heart, except when they saw the light of that God emanating from the people of Europe, the hideous white people who are supposed to be the cause of all the evil that is in the world. Without the moral force that can only come from the Christ of old Europe, white men can either become maniacal, white-hating, negro-worshipping liberals or grazers, men without a spiritual home, waiting to be exterminated by the colored barbarians with the full approval of the liberals. It's ironic that the colored invasion of every European nation did not come at a time when the European nations were militarily or economically weaker than the colored nations. There were no armies with tanks, modern weaponry, or nuclear arsenals that made the European nations surrender to the colored hordes. No colored army made the white government of the United States in 1965 begin the process of making the United States an anti-European, Christ-hating nation. No Moslem army made Britain or France turn their nations over to Moslems: both countries had armies that could have turned back any invading force, but instead they opened the gates and let the enemy flood in. And in every nation of Europe the scenario is the same. Without a shot being fired the armies of color are destroying the white nations. All of this is happening because there is no European will to fight, because the European has said in his heart there is no God to fight for. Dostoyevsky posed the question, “Can a civilized man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?” He – a man of spirit and blood — answered that question with a resounding, “Yes, he can.” But Dostoyevsky knew that wisdom comes from the heart, not the head. An ego maniac — and ego mania is the mark of the liberal — cannot know God. He can only know his own sick utopian dreams of a satanic black god who presides over a Babylonian pleasure dome. He dreams of spreading his evangelical faith in the negro throughout the whole world. Like the apostles of old he has gone forth to preach the gospel, but his gospel is the gospel of Satan.

Wherever we turn in this land of Liberaldom we are confronted with the gospel of liberalism. In my own anti-white nation, for instance, the Secretary of HUD (Housing and Urban Development) Shaun Donovan recently said that he was going to step up his campaign to ship negroes into communities in the United States that still don't have those blessed creatures. His twisted reason? Because the areas in which blacks live are too crime-ridden, so he is going to send them someplace where they will be safe! That's like removing tigers from the jungle so they won't be attacked by large striped cats that have been seen prowling the jungle: and then, strange to tell, the same type of attacks started occurring in the areas in which the tigers were relocated.

The mad-dog liberals are beyond the ken of humanity; they are Satan's own and there is nothing to be done with them except oppose them with all our heart and soul. The other whites, the grazers, are in the gray, misty region where they are too liberal to oppose the liberals, but too European to feel completely at ease with liberalism. Those whites need to see that we all — we Europeans of the post-Christian age — are born in the fetters of liberalism. Break all of those fetters, not just a few, but all, and the essential European will emerge, the man of spirit and blood who will not stay confined within the rules of the liberals' board game. He will impose his own rule on the liberals, which is a very old rule and the prayer of the antique Europeans: “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.” +

Europe's Man of Sorrows

August 3, 2013

Categories: Christ the Hero, Halfway-house churches, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. —*Isaiah 53:5*

The liberal media has a fascination with white gangsters and white serial killers. Every day, if you so desire, you can hear a story about John Gotti or a creature like Richard Speck. Such cruel inhuman men are outside the pale of humanity and fill us with horror. The liberals, who claim to abhor violence, do us no service by continuing, day after day, to give us detailed portraits of such brutish animals. The loving, detailed reporting of their crimes desensitizes people and deflects their attention away from a criminal race of people, the negroes, who have made murder, rape, and torture commonplace.

There is a huge contradiction in the liberals fascination with white gangsters and white serial killers. The white gangsters and the white serial killers are moral pariahs, a shocking reminder of the potential evil in the human soul. But such men shock us because they are so unusual and because we as white people do not believe that hideous, inhuman barbaric acts are normal, funny, or justifiable. Unless – and this is the liberal contradiction – the hideous barbaric acts are committed by blacks upon white people. Then what is rightly considered barbaric and hideous when done by white criminals is considered by the liberals to be normal, funny, and justifiable when committed by black people. The atrocities committed by white people are done by a tiny criminal class while the atrocities done by black people are committed by an entire criminal race. There is no such thing as an atrocity story in the black culture because they do not look on murder, rape, and torture as atrocities. Such activities are just normal expressions of their nature, so how could such things be considered criminal atrocities? A South African farmer is beaten and left for dead by four African thugs. And when he goes to court, shortly before his death from injuries sustained in the beating, the black apes just laugh at him. A 44-year-old British mother of twins has acid thrown in her face by a black monstrosity and his Pakistani companions, and they laugh with glee. Are such commonplace crimes, commonplace wherever the African barbarians are allowed to roam, the result of poverty or of white oppression? No, the crimes are the result of a lack of white oppression. The black race is a race of violent savages. They commit crimes of violence for the sheer joy of committing crimes of violence, and only a fear of white reprisals will stop blacks from behaving like barbarians. This is so obvious that I shouldn't even have to write it down. Yet all the traditional vehicles of culture – press, church, state, and schools – tell us with unremitting, relentless repetitiveness, that it is the white male that we have to worry about. He is racist, he is sexist, and therefore he is not human. If only, the united liberal voices tell us, the white man could be eliminated from the life of the nations then all mankind, minus the white man, will be happy. White females will be allowed in the brave new world so long as they agree to breed colored children, thus becoming the harbingers of a new Babylonian kingdom of Satan. The utopians promised us heaven on earth, but they have given us hell on earth.

This new Tower of Babel culture that the liberals have built, this hell on earth, has come to us in the same way as the old Tower of Babel culture came to us, through the negro. Just as Nimrod, the descendant of Ham, founded Babel ("And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel"), so has the elevation of the negro to divine status served as the cornerstone of the New Tower of Babel. Every last vestige of a people committed to the living God is being eradicated under the banner of the negro, who was and always shall be the conduit to a universalist culture of the devil:

And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech... And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

We must conclude, when we see that even "scripture-based Christians" ignore the Biblical connection between negro worship and devil worship, that there must be a desire for truth actuating the human heart before Scripture, church documents, or good counsel can move a man to embrace the living God. As we love so we shall be. The modern Christian loves the negro as the antique Europeans once loved Christ, and as a result the modern Christian is not a Christian, he is a devil worshipper. Just assume for a moment that there is a devil who roams about the earth seeking the ruin of souls. His greatest foe is Christ, whose one weakness (from the devil's point of view) is that He cares for those miserable creatures called men. So the devil seeks to attack God by attacking the creatures Christ cares about. He disregards the colored tribesmen, because they already belong to him. He concentrates on the Europeans, the Christ bearers. And what better way to convert the Europeans to devil worship than to go into the Christian churches and present Satanism as Christianity? 'Thou shalt have no other gods before me,' becomes 'Thou shalt worship the negro and him only shalt thou serve.' And in serving the negro, the European becomes the willing servant of Satan, at war with Christ and His people.

There are alternative news sites on the internet that provide the European people with information the liberal news media will never mention. These sites tell of the unceasing, relentless attacks on white people by colored barbarians. I certainly don't want to see such sites shut down, but there is something lacking in the websites that merely catalog atrocities against whites. Where is the call to arms? Where is the awareness that we are in a religious war which we cannot afford to lose? Nor will we lose it, if we fight with the same passion and zeal against principalities and powers that our European ancestors fought with. The internal battle is everything. Once the modernist shackles are taken off, the seemingly hopeless war against Babylon will no longer be hopeless.

I'll state the obvious because I don't see the obvious being stated. The white man won't fight unless he has something to fight for. And he doesn't believe he has anything to fight for because under the guidance of the clerics and academics he has become a universalist. He is not attached to his racial hearth fire:

To be attached to the subdivision, to love the little platoon we belong to in society, is the first principle (the germ as it were) of public affections. It is the first link in the series by which we proceed towards a love to our country, and to mankind. The interest of that portion of social arrangement is a trust in the hands of all those who compose it; and as none but bad men would justify it in abuse, none but traitors would barter it away for their own personal advantage.

The white man is not stirred to a rage when he sees atrocities being committed against white people because he thinks in terms of universals. Those people, the white victims of black atrocities, don't strike a sympathetic chord in the hearts of the white grazers because the grazers have said in their hearts, "We have no people," which is the same as saying, "We have no God," because we come to know God in and through our people. And the liberals delight in the black atrocities against white people because every atrocity brings them closer to paradise on earth. They are the men of the hardened hearts, and no amount of pleading or reasoning will move them, for their sympathies are with their gods, and their hate is directed against the white man.

White people are different from the people of color: they are the only people who cannot be stirred to fight solely for self-interest. Yes, the criminal class of whites can be stirred by self-interest only, but whites as a people must have a religious *raison d'être*. The liberals fight for their new Christless, messianic, negroized utopia. What do the grazers fight for? For nothing, which is why they are passive spectators in the ongoing extermination of the white race.

The colored tribesmen have always been against the white race. When the white race was strong they feigned sympathy for whites because it was in their self-interest to do so. When the white race became weak the colored tribesmen bared their fangs and showed the folly of those who thought that Haiti was an aberration, rather than a look into the soul of the black man. What changed in the 20th century was not the black man but the white man. A ruling class of post-Christian liberals emerged who needed a new god to replace Christ. These demonic creatures hate the white man with a religious zeal that knows no bounds. Crimes against blacks by word or deed are punished with the greatest severity because such crimes are blasphemy. Witness the recent national news story, delivered by white broadcasters with funeral dirge looks on their faces, about – horror of horrors! – a white football player who had used the word "nigger." The sport commentators could not even bring themselves to say the word: they reported that a white football player had used the 'n-word.' Is it not crystal clear that the civil rights movement, which would have been wrong in and of itself, is not a civil rights movement? This 'civil rights' movement is a religious war: The liberals want to dethrone Christ and replace Him with the negro, the conduit to Satan. And in order to kill Christ, the liberals have had to kill the hearts of the European people, where Christ dwells. They think they have done just that – killed Christ by removing Him from the hearts of His people. Have they?

At present there seems to be only one spiritual force, albeit a demonic force, within the body of the European people. All the European societies are structured around the hatred of the European and the love of the colored stranger, particularly the negro. The passionate haters, the liberals, might even be a minority in terms of numbers, but the grazers, who have lost their racial hearth fire and have no passion, are as nothing. They are waiting for... they know not what.

The godless Raymond Chandler – at least in his outward statements of belief – was groping for an answer when he wrote about the hero: "Down these mean streets a man must go who is not himself mean, who is neither tarnished nor afraid." A dim racial memory of Christ? Yes, I think such dreams of the hero are subterranean, nighttime memories of Christ, which the rational, daytime mind of the white man rejects. When the Christian hero emerges he will know, unlike Philip Marlowe, why he walks down the mean streets, and he will know who sustains him against the terror by night and the arrow that flieth by day. The good man, the European, fights for what he loves. Once the European sees what he has lost, his racial hearth fire warmed by the living God, he will return to his racial hearth fire and defend it against all the world. But of course the white man must see what was lost. This is why the European, who by some miracle of grace has remained connected to the European past, must not despair and leave the liberals in sole possession of the field. Christ's Europe must not perish. So long as one knight refuses to let go of the vision, eternal Europe lives, even in the face of the liberal terror and the colored barbarians' arrows.

Reading the accounts of black atrocities against whites avails us nothing if we don't use such stories to move us closer to our race and the God of our race. The kingdom of heaven, and the glimpses of heaven vouchsafed to men here on earth, come to those who love much. The European was different from other races because he saw, and loved, the divine humanity in the Man of Sorrows. By His sign only, the sign of the cross, we conquer. +

The Shadow of the Cross

August 10, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Bred in the Bone, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



This mixed system of opinion and sentiment had its origin in the ancient chivalry; and the principle, though varied in its appearance by the varying state of human affairs, subsisted and influenced through a long succession of generations, even to the time we live in. – Edmund Burke

Woodrow Wilson ran for reelection under the banner, “He kept us out of war.” Upon winning the election, Wilson entered the war under the banner, “The world must be made safe for democracy.” When I was a school child I accepted that Wilsonian inanity as a valid reason for World War I, just as I accepted a similar inanity as the American justification for entering World War II on the side of Communist Russia. That the world must be made safe for democracy is still the rationale for the foreign wars of aggression the United States and Israel indulge in, but I no longer accept the democratic justification for such wars.

The democracy gambit was first used by the French Jacobins to overthrow the French government. And it has, in subsequent years, been used to successfully destroy all the traditional governments of Europe in order to build up a democratic culture that is in direct contradiction to the traditional, Christian culture of the antique Europeans. The older culture was built on the non-abstract, instinctual, heartfelt faith of the European people. It was built on faith and sustained by prejudices; a prejudice in favor of one’s own over the stranger, a prejudice in favor of Christ over Satan, and a prejudicial preferment for the traditions of the past over the abstract theories of the future. The new democratic culture was based on an abstracted, heartless ideology. Its democratic adherents favored the colored stranger over their own people, Satan over Christ, and an abstract, theoretical utopia of the future over the traditions of old Europe. The wars of the first half of the 20th century, cultural wars and battlefield wars, were fought to make the world safe for the Jacobinism which Wilson called ‘democracy.’ The cultural and battlefield wars of the second half of the 20th century were fought to preserve and extend Jacobin democracy. Liberty, equality, and fraternity were institutionalized, and their opponents were exterminated whenever possible and marginalized when extermination was not feasible. Who were and are the opponents of liberty, equality, and fraternity? All white Europeans who remain prejudiced in favor of their own people over the colored stranger and in favor of Christ over Satan.

The great tragedy of the early 20th century was the destruction of the type of Christian ethos exemplified by the men on the Titanic. That charity of honor, bred in the bone of the antique Europeans, was distilled out of the blood of the European and replaced with an abstract faith in democracy. This, as we have seen, has resulted in the worship of the negro and the hatred of the white man, because the colored man, the non-European, is the noble savage, untainted by the culture of the white man. He is the stuff that utopian dreams are made on.

Every civilization has a religious dynamic that sustains it. When that dynamic loses its force the civilization dies and is replaced by a new civilization with its own religious dynamic. The dynamic of liberalism, which has replaced Christianity, is based on abstract reason, the noble savage, and science. Abstract reason allows men, not God, to plan for the happiness of mankind. The noble savage provides a human conduit to all that goes with a Babylonian nature religion. And science provides the material sign that an abstract system of democratic government, coupled with the worship of the negro, is a moral progression. Why? Because if we are progressing scientifically, then we must also be progressing morally. The exact opposite seems to be the case from a Christian, European standpoint, but the modern European does equate scientific progress with moral progress. No one wants to appear unscientific, because that would be conceding that you are stupid, and being stupid is the modern counterpart of ungodliness. One longs for a hero, a Third Dumb Brother, with the bred-in-the-bone faith to attack the Castle Dangerous of Liberalism without fear of being called ‘stupid.’ We, the European people, lost our defenders in the 20th century, and now we have entered the 21st century without any defenders. The conservatives in the 20th century, unlike the 19th century conservatives, were not defenders of the European people. They were defenders of an abstract utopian system that blended democracy and negro worship under the all-seeing eye of science. Even at this late date, when the unholy trinity lies before us in all its sinister glory, conservatives – even those who call themselves white nationalists – still want to trade with the devil by invoking democracy and science instead of bardic Europe and the God of bardic Europe. The old hymn tells us that there is power in the blood of the lamb. There is power in the blood of the lamb, but only if we are connected to that blood through our racial hearth fires where the dear Christ enters in. He won’t be found in the citadels of higher learning or in the negro-worshipping churches.

C. S. Lewis correctly observed that those who deride sentiment always have a sentiment of their own that they hold as inviolate. The liberals in church and academia constantly deride, ridicule, and condemn any white man who is attached to his European heritage and does not want it despoiled and overridden by a new, liberal-imposed, racial Babylon. Such a white man is condemned, because it is self-evident, to the liberals, that the older European civilization was evil because of its racism and sexism. And the new civilization, which the liberals get all sentimental about, is good and pure, because it is an interracial, sexually promiscuous civilization.

A few months ago I saw a 15-minute travelogue about Switzerland, made in the late 1940’s. It was such a pleasure to see whole towns and villages that were completely free of colored people. There was one segment in particular that made me feel sentimental, a shot of some Swiss villagers making their way to a small chapel at the top of a hill. The large cross atop the chapel seemed as if it cast its shadow over the entire village. Is that not what Europe was all about? The cross of Christ enveloped us as a people and provided us with the religious dynamic to keep our racial hearths free of the colored barbarians. But we are not supposed to talk like that anymore. There are no bad colored people. When they commit barbaric acts, the acts are somehow transformed by liberal magicians into the understandably desperate acts of a people yearning to be free. “How many years...” We know the liberals’ sentimental litany by heart. The black man can do no wrong because there are no bad blacks, only racist whites who force blacks to do seemingly bad acts, which in reality are not bad. Need I go through the atrocities? The torture, murder, and rape of white people by blacks is a daily, minute-by-minute occurrence wherever blacks and white inhabit the same geographical area. And there is never one voice raised against black atrocities. But let one black man be abused by a white, either verbally or physically, or let one white man defend himself against a black thug, and all the forces of hell – the liberal press, the academy, the government, and the media – will descend upon the white man:

The Press, no matter how violent the Negroes become, deplores whatever action the white people take to defend themselves. The moment the victimized law-abiding Whites make the least attempt to defend themselves in this one-sided war, the Press at once conjures up a host of ultra-decent and super-expert authorities – to express their abhorrence at such inexcusable racialistic brutality. If, in this Holy War, this Jihad, the Whites should dare to show signs of fight, there are always ‘informed observers’ at hand to stress the damage to America’s international standing. There are always renowned international saints of all colours to voice their sadness and dismay, and politicians to sound their ‘grave warnings’. There is always ‘world opinion’ to vent its revulsion, and American opinion up in Montana or someplace to express ‘a growing

feeling' of horror. Above all, unless white Americans hurry up and get mixed they will outrage informed public opinion among important African cannibal States living on white American taxpayers' money. For year after year after year the Performing Poodle Press stands on its hinder legs and goes through its repertoire of corny tricks, and still the people are mesmerized by it. — Anthony Jacob in White Man Think Again!

Anthony Jacob, who could quite accurately be labeled the last great Englishman, called the liberals war against whites a Jihad. He is correct. Only a religious zeal superior to the zeal of the Jihadists can stop a Jihad. What the liberals are trying to organize is a liberal-led democratic Jihad against the white Europeans. This is the reason why liberals want to bomb Moslems in Islamic countries and welcome them into their own countries to rape, murder, and pillage. In their own countries the Moslems pose a threat to the liberals' democratic Jihad because they are not democratic, but when the Moslems come to European countries they are good because they are destroying the white Christian culture of the European country by exterminating the white Europeans. And this is the pattern with every single non-white racial group. The Mexican drug lords are bad when they kill Mexicans in Mexico, but they become good when they kill whites in America. The Chinese are bad when they gun down their own students in Tiananmen Square, but they are good when they come to Europe to murder whites and further pollute the universities and schools with their fiendish Oriental philosophers. Sax Rohmer's novels, which are now condemned as racist, accurately depict the Asian. They are geniuses of cruelty, addicted to abstraction and opium. Which makes them welcome fellow travelers in the liberals' brave new Babylonian war. But I needn't go on and list every single non-white race. They all hate each other while hating the white race most of all. The liberals are trying to unite them in their common hatred of the white man. But a unity of hate against the Christ-bearing race will only result in an endless night in which animalistic semi-human creatures tear each other limb from limb. For it was the white race that imposed upon the colored tribes whatever order and decency they ever possessed in their nations. Take away that beneficent hand of order and decency, and you have Haiti, Mexico, Africa, India, and China, cesspools of debauchery, butchery, and villainy.

While the liberals spend all their time and energy cataloging the evils of the antique Europeans they neglect to tell us the most important thing about the antique Europeans. There existed, in their civilization, that charity of honor that never existed in any of the colored nations. That charity of honor was the result of the Europeans' incorporate union with Christ. All the anti-European propaganda and the avalanche of praise and reverence for the colored people of the world is put forward by the liberals because the claim that the antique Europeans represent all that is evil and the coloreds represent all that is good is in direct contradiction to reality. What light there is in the modern world is a remnant light that still emanates from old Europe. When the liberal sponsored liquidation of everything European is complete there will be no light anywhere in the world. The liberals themselves will only live long enough to see that last bonfire of whites go up in flames before eternal night descends upon the earth. Donald Davidson's poem, "Sanctuary," tells us of a world gone mad with the hatred of the light emanating from the white Christ-bearing race.

*...you may lie
On sweet grass by a mountain stream, to watch
The last wild eagle soar or the last raven
Cherish his brood within their rocky nest,
Or see, when mountain shadows first grow long,
The last enchanted white deer come to drink.*

I have a deep and passionate love for the people in that Swiss village and every village throughout old Europe. Without having ever met them I know and love them, because they are my own people. Their loves and hates are my loves and hates, and I want no other life in this world or the next than to be joined with those dear old people from long ago and the God of those people. This is obviously a sentiment that the liberals do not share, and in fact they sneer at such sentiments. They seek a heaven on earth, devoid of my people and my God. At the liberals' banquet is an unholy alliance of treacherous whites, colored tribesmen, and Satan himself. "Around the devil's unholy throne in robes of Satanic darkness we revel," is the liberals' litany.

All white neighborhoods must become black, the Obama administration has commanded. And throughout Europe the word has gone out: "There must be no white villages in Europe." Everywhere in Europe the colored minions of Satan must be planted so that Satan can rule in the lands where Christian Europeans once dwelt.

It won't happen, because the Christ-centered European won't let it happen. However deeply rooted, however numerically superior, the liberals and their colored minions will be rooted up and destroyed. They are the conquerors right now, but the future of Europe belongs to the men and women of Europe who still see the shadow of the Cross over all of the European lands. The liberals and the colored heathens, united in hate, are no match for the Europeans united in the love of our provincial hearth fires, presided over by the living God. We, who love much, shall never surrender or abandon our sentimental attachment to the European past in which Christ, not Satan, and not the negro, casts His shadow over a provincial, segregated people consecrated to Him. +

The Return to Our European Hearth Fire

August 17, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Homeland, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



"I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee." *Luke 15: 18*

In my twenties, shortly after legalized abortion reared its satanic head in America, I used to pass out anti-abortion literature on street corners and at malls. Abortion proponents would frequently tell me that unless I could tell them what was to be done with all non-aborted babies I had no right to rail against abortion. Of course the pro-aborts were trying to evade the central point by focusing on my inability to tell them how the non-aborted babies were to be cared for. Their feigned concern for starving non-aborted babies was simply demonism masquerading as a social conscience. The central point was, "Should we permit the murder of infants?" No specious pragmatism could change that central point.

I often feel like I'm back passing out the anti-abortion literature and arguing with the pro-aborts when I talk about the necessity of white solidarity, which entails the segregation of the white race from the colored hordes. Liberals condemn white apartheid as evil, and the more conservative types say, "It's not practical; how would you do it?" If I can't give the latter type of individual a ten point plan for achieving perfect, non-violent segregation then I am deemed impractical, and Mr. Conservative goes back to his failed policy of "winning the colored people over" to whatever solution Mr. Conservative is peddling, which is usually democratic capitalism. But Mr. Conservative, like the abortion proponents, is missing the central point. There is no dichotomy between what is moral and what is practical. If apartheid is the correct moral response to the "race problem," then there can only be debates about the means to achieve racial apartheid: there can never be any question of giving up on apartheid because it is deemed too difficult to achieve.

I for one don't believe apartheid is too difficult to achieve, because I don't believe that anything white people want to achieve is impossible. Look at the miracle of Christian Europe and then try to tell me apartheid is too difficult. You can't do it. What is lacking in the European people is the moral will to keep their faith, which they have lost, and their people, which they have abandoned, separate from the colored hordes. Once the moral will of the Europeans is restored, which is one and the same as their faith in Christ, they will become a separate people again, loving their own and defending them against the colored tribesmen.

Of course there is no magic wand that can make the European people become a Christian people again. Something much greater than magic must occur. There must be that meeting, depicted by Michelangelo on the Sistine Chapel ceiling, of the hand of God with the hand of the European. The European must let go of his systems, which are the gold and silver caskets which promise paradise but bring hell, and take up the leaden casket wherein the Christ of the European hearth dwells. In that casket is life eternal, in this world and the world to come.

Recently, a friend sent me an article about Orania, a "self-sustaining" white community on the fringes of South Africa. A small group of whites, about 1,000 people, have formed a community which uses no black labor and is based on mutual aid and the religious principles of the Afrikaners, the Boers. I don't know for how long the "Shoot the Boers" President of South Africa, Jacob Zuma, will allow Orania to exist, but I do think that the desire, among whites, to be separate from the colored tribesmen and to cling to their own people and their peoples' past is a very good thing that whites throughout the world should imitate. And in saying that I am not suggesting that whites in Britain, France, America, etc., should necessarily imitate the specific economic measures and political structures of the people of Orania. Some managerial types think that the most important thing in life is to think up a system, be it economic, political, or religious, and impose that system on all people everywhere. I hold with Burke, who supported France's monarchial system for France while asserting its impracticality for Britain, when he said that economies, governments, and social structures must spring up organically from the lifeblood of the people: they cannot be superimposed upon them from without by abstract theorists. What I found heartening about the Orania venture – and I hope the information I received was true – was the example of a white Christian people determined to live apart from colored people and support each other. The means will vary according to the varied difficulties whites face in their own nations, but all whites should want and seek apartheid.

What whites should not want is to be part of democratic, multi-racial Liberaldom. My heart soared when I heard there was an organization called the English Defense League, and it sank when I heard that the English Defense League was a multi-racial, multi-religious group of men and women committed to a rainbow coalition against violence. How can you be an English Defense League if you're not committed to defending white English people, who are the only kind of English people? And how can you fight violent thugs while allowing members of thuggish religions and races into your coalition? A nation consists of men and women of one race and one faith; there is no other kind of nation. People who gather together under any other national banner besides race and faith are liberals, who are a bastard offshoot of the human race, having the outward forms of human beings while resembling inhuman devils inside.

We cannot look at any aspect of the Europeans' history as a people without looking at their faith. Prior to the 20th century Europeans saw no dichotomy between the love and protection of one's own, through apartheid and other measures, and the love of Christ. Loving your neighbor meant, to the antique Europeans, loving your own and respecting the right of the stranger to love his own. But this older Christian practice gave way, in the 20th century, to the hatred of your own kind and the worship of the colored races, particularly the black race. This new doctrine seems, from my perspective, the perspective of the old Christians, to be a satanic reversal of the Christian faith, changing the religion of Christ into the religion of Satan. And if you look at the fruits of this new Christianity as espoused by the organized "Christian" churches, I do not think it is possible to come to any other conclusion than: "They have gone over to Satan."

If the modern churchmen are right – that the negro really is the true god – then we are of all men most to be pitied. It means we have believed a lie. But there is still the Church of Christ which exists where two or three are gathered together in His name. Those two or three have met by their racial hearth fire and called on Him by name. In Him, through Him, the people of the mists, the Europeans of old, were close to Him because they were close to the people of their own race. So long as we are closer to our organized, negro-worshipping churches than our own people, we will remain a people without a faith and without a nation.

The pride of the modern churchmen is without parallel in the history of a church that holds pride to be the original sin. But of course sin, in the new dispensation, only exists in the racist past of the white man. There is no sin in the modern churchmen. And they prove their sanctity by denouncing the "selfish" white people of the present, and the "racist" white people of the past:

*"Mirror, Mirror, on the liberals' wall,
Who is the most wonderful cleric of them all?"
"I am, I am,"
They all shout with glee.
"I hate the white and love the black—
Surely that is a saintly pedigree."*

Let me go back to the abortion wars. On several occasions I stood in front of an abortion clinic, trying to baptize the child about to be aborted. I don't believe God damns a baby for a mother's sin, but then again one has to believe that baptism makes a difference because our Lord enjoined us to do it. On one occasion an irate black woman, about to abort, cursed at me and called me a European. I thought about that intended insult later. A European? Little did that negress realize that to me the title "European" is a sacred badge of honor. I have no illusions. When the roll is called up yonder, I will be at the end of the European line. I am the least of the Europeans, lacking the heroic mettle of those who came before me. But I have chosen to stand with them, so the least of the Europeans will still be of them. How could I, or any European with a heart that still lives, not desire to stand with them rather than with the negro-worshipping minions of Satan? In an old western a villain who robs and kills in hot blood tries, in the presence of the hero, to disassociate himself from his companions in crime who rob, rape, and kill in cold blood. "I'm not like them," the head villain asserts. The hero isn't buying it. "You ride with them!" The clerics ride with the negro-worshipping, white-hating, Christ-hating liberals: they have crossed the bar of humanity and entered the domain of Satan.

The key to the return of the white man is not a magic key. It is a sacred key that opens the door to the Europeans' past. I have read many a volume of quaint and forgotten European lore. I know that the antique Europeans were not all saints. I see them without rose-tinted glasses, but having acknowledged their very human weaknesses we must, if we respect the truth and love what is good and noble, acknowledge that the antique European people showed us how a people should live, loving their own in the presence of the living God, who shed His grace over the people who reached out to Him and called upon Him by name. "Because he hath set his love upon me; therefore, will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name."

Now the European sets his love upon the negro and abstract systems about God which have no living God within them. When all of the liberalism is burned out of the European's blood, the liberalism in church and state, then he will once again set his love upon the living God. The passionate love of our people in and through Christ, and the hatred of the liberals and their colored allies, will be the white heat that burns Liberalism to the ground. The new Europe that emerges will not be like the old Europe in its externals, but the new Europeans with hearts of fire will be like their ancestors in spirit. That which is within, the better part, is what unites us to our ancient people and their God.

Within the ploughed furrow and frequented pasture of our own race is the grace abundant that leads to God. Outside our own furrow and pasture there is no grace, there is only a universalist mirage that cloaks an arid desert of modernity. When we are true to our racial hearth fire as Ratty was true to his river we will see our Lord as he meant us to see Him, and we will act and love like Europeans were meant to act and love, as defenders of our own against all the world. And our return home will be as the prodigal's return:

"For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found." +

The Burning White Child

August 24, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Grazers, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



We are afraid to put men to live and trade each on his own private stock of reason; because we suspect that this stock in each man is small, and that the individuals would do better to avail themselves of the general bank and capital of nations and of ages. Many of our men of speculation, instead of exploding general prejudices, employ their sagacity to discover the latent wisdom which prevails in them. If they find what they seek, and they seldom fail, they think it more wise to continue the prejudice, with the reason involved, than to cast away the cost of prejudice, and to leave nothing but the naked reason; because prejudice, with its reason, has a motive to give action to that reason, and an affection which will give it permanence. Prejudice is of ready application in the emergency; it previously engages the mind in a steady course of wisdom and virtue, and does not leave the man hesitating in the moment of decision, skeptical, puzzled, and unresolved. Prejudice renders a man's virtue his habit; and not a series of unconnected acts. Through just prejudice, his duty becomes a part of his nature. — Edmund Burke *On the Revolution in France*

In Shakespeare's *Macbeth* two men stand on the heath facing evil incarnate. Both were tempted. One man, Banquo, calls on divine grace to help him resist the devil:

*Merciful powers,
Restrain in me the cursed thoughts that nature
Gives way to in repose!*

While the other man, Macbeth, succumbs to the devil:

I have done the deed. Didst thou not hear a noise?

Was there a noise when Pope John XXIII was full of "charity and forgiveness" for the blacks who tortured and murdered his people? Did he feel any pangs of conscience? No, because he was much further down the slippery slope than Macbeth. Macbeth had a guilty conscience because his ideological armor was not as strong as Pope John XXIII's armor. The armor of liberalism is proof against any assault from that cumbersome thing called a conscience. The post-Christian, the liberal, is too fastidious to torture and murder directly, so he kills and tortures second hand. He takes a voyeur's pleasure in watching the colored barbarians torture and murder white people, especially white children. The more innocent the victim, the greater delight the liberal takes in their suffering. It is now the standard practice in our society to hand white babies and white children over to black apes to be tortured and murdered. And at the top of the list is **Jonathan Foster**, a 12 year old white boy, who was kidnapped by a black, female, subhuman in 2010. He was tortured and murdered with a blowtorch. Which gives the liberals in church and state great delight. They like to think on the pain and suffering of Jonathan Foster. Did he repent of his whiteness before he died? Or did he die without comprehending why he had to suffer and die? And all of these satanic black torture murderers never get the punishment they deserve. The **Channon Christian and Christopher Newsom** torture-murderers are still seeking retrials, while liberal lawyers plead for their "rights."

That we must suffer much on this earth and die is the result of original sin. But that white people must be singled out and made to suffer more than mankind's traditional allotment of suffering is a result of the liberals' inverted Christianity. The abstracted faith of the medieval scholastics became the faith of a few European intellectuals, and over time that abstracted faith spread, like the green slime in the campfire horror stories, and engulfed the European people. Now virtually all Europeans, except the few that have broken free of the green slime of liberalism, experience life second-hand: they love and hate in the abstract.

And their abstract hates and loves, because the Europeans were once Christian, are expressed in the forms of medieval theology. The devil is the white man, so the liberals delight in hearing tales of his sufferings. And the new Christ is the black man, so the liberals delight in the tales of his triumphs over the devilish white man. Communion takes places wherever two or three liberals are gathered together in the black man's name.

The liberals are covered with the green slime of Satanism and they love it. They have become monsters of cruelty because they are abstracted from everything human. God's grace comes to us through human rivulets and streams, and if you dam up those waterways you have cut yourself off from God. Those Europeans, the men and women I call grazers, have taken off some of the green slime but not enough to see clearly and resist liberalism. Lacking a religious view of life the grazers are unable to recognize the religious dynamic of liberalism. The Christian hero is a hero because he can see good and evil clearly. Lacking that Christian second sight the grazer accepts the liberals' multi-faceted justification for black atrocities. When the atrocities are in South Africa: (1) "Such atrocities only happen to bad whites"; when they happen to whites in European countries: (2) "They are just isolated incidents; you can't condemn a whole race of people for one isolated madman"; when white child is tortured and murdered: (3) Nothing — there is silence, as if the torture and murder never happened. And if you say it did happen, you are a racist. And racism, only white racism, is the original sin.

The grazer is forever seeking redemption from the devil. Just as Blanche DuBois depended on the kindness of strangers, so does the white grazer depend on the kindness of liberals. But there is no kindness or mercy in the hearts of men and women who have hardened their hearts against the living God. Only a lack of negro energy and opportunity prevents every single white child from suffering the same fate as Jonathan Foster. "If we had but world enough and time," the colored barbarians lament. "We will make sure you get world enough and time," the liberals respond.

Burke, and then Richard Weaver in agreement with Burke, insisted that a man could not live without his prejudices. Our prejudices stem from our deepest intuitions about the nature of existence. The rational mind can only guide and direct the passions of the heart. If our heartfelt prejudices about life are held to be null and void we will be lost souls, because abstracted reason cannot sustain the inner man. A man without prejudices is a caricature of a man, all outer husk and empty inside.

The vicious barbarian race of blacks are permitted to murder whites with impunity, because the liberals are satanic devils who have made the prejudiced European a proscribed criminal. What do liberals look for every time one of the infinitude of black atrocities becomes public? They look for the prejudiced white man. They want to know if there is a white man who dares

state the obvious: "These black murderers should be killed instantly, without reference to our satanic court system or the white-hating, Christ-hating clerical wolves in sheep's clothing." A real European should never play the "Let's be moderate – Mustn't be prejudiced!" game every time there is a black atrocity. "I won't be rational and moderate; I will be prejudiced, because I hate the devil and his minions and I love my people," should be the European response to the vicious black butchery that surrounds us. What did the British do to the torture murderers of their own people in the devil's den of Cawnpore? They tied the perpetrators to canons and blasted them into little pieces. They did this because they were prejudiced: they loved their people in and through Christ, and they hated Satan and his colored devotees. Their prejudices were right and pure and noble. Far from eliminating such prejudices we should seek to strengthen them so that we will respond to black barbarism as Europeans should respond.

A few days ago there was a report of a murder committed by two negroes and a mulatto. Christopher Lane, a young Australian man, visiting his girlfriend in a rural Oklahoma town, made the mistake of going out jogging, and three subhuman creatures followed him in a car and gunned him down in a drive-by shooting. When they were taken into custody, according to the District Attorney, the sub-humans just laughed. They know nothing of consequence will be done to them; they are the liberals' gods. They should be strung up on the nearest tree, but instead they will be sent to some recreational facility for a short while and then sent out to murder more white people. The whites always treat such atrocities as something that can't be helped, like some natural disaster, or what the insurance companies call "acts of God." And to the liberals the black outrages against whites are just that: they are acts of God, the sacred negro god to whom all whites must be prepared, at all times, to offer up their lives. Nor does it stop with the white man's life. He must also offer up his soul to the great black gods. "As he wills so shall I do," is the sacred oath of the white to his black god.

Every white government has proclaimed the negro to be the supreme God, with the other colored tribesmen serving as subordinate deities. So in every white nation, "acts of God," which mean bloody black atrocities committed against whites, will be in direct proportion to the amount of blacks that liberals can cram into their nations. Rich liberals will try to survive the holocaust they are responsible for starting, by living in gated communities away from blacks, but the colored hordes cannot be avoided forever. If they are not stopped the only way colored hordes can be stopped, they will eventually kill every last white, just as they did at Cawnpore. Colored tribesmen must be either ruled or killed; there is no other way to deal with them. Of course you can worship them if you hate the Christian God and yearn for the extermination of the white race.

The pride of reason makes the white man reject Christ in favor of abstract systems of thought. In this the white man resembles the Orientals who have always regarded the Incarnation as foolishness. But the Oriental has no Christian past, so he remains as he always has been: an addict of abstract philosophical and mystical systems. He does not need a savior in his systems, because he never, as the white man did, abandoned his abstract systems for Christ. The post-Christian white man has returned to abstract, irreligious philosophies, but with an added dimension. Unable to live without a savior, because of his Christian past, the liberal replaces Christ with the negro. It is the white man and only the white man who worships the black race; hence it is the white race and only the white race which is committing racial suicide.

Macbeth, who had supped full of horrors, horrors largely of his own making, still had problems with his conscience. Lady Macbeth ("Unsex me here") was finally unable to resist her conscience. And yet our modern liberals have an amoral armor that can resist the strongest pangs of conscience. They are truly dead to all grace. Should we consent to let such people set negroes loose among us to torture, rape, and murder whites at will? We must live among liberals, but we should never be of them. The beastly white sluts who cohabit with negroes and turn over their white babies from previous couplings to their negro mates to be murdered, the liberal academics who teach negro worship in the schools, and worst of all the white-hating, anti-Christian churchmen, must be held accountable for their murderous treachery. These people and their colored gods are our mortal enemies. We won't be reasonable, we won't be law-abiding, and we won't be non-violent in the face of the unspeakable black atrocities which are encouraged and abetted by them. Jonathan Foster and every white victim of black atrocities, especially the children, must be avenged. That charity of honor demands that we do so.

I have lived among liberals my entire life. And I was brought up to be of them, but by the grace of God I am not of them. There is a line separating the liberal from the European. It is the line of abstraction. When once the European abstracts, because his ego demands that he abstract so he can create an abstract world ruled by him, he becomes a liberal and ceases to be human. He loves only his abstract creations, such as his negro gods, and he hates everything human, particularly those people who championed the non-abstract, humane God. Only the love of something human, that seems more than human, can keep a European from becoming a liberal. If a man, a European, can look at the collective face of his ancient people without seeing Christ and falling down on his knees in reverence and awe, he will become one with Satan and he will dwell in an eternal Babylonian night in this world and the world to come.

I go back to the first Europeans. They were the conquerors of the great Roman empire, yet they fell on their knees before Christ. And He bid them rise and ride, to go forth and subdue the heathen and protect innocence, above all to protect innocence! That burned, tortured child, Jonathan Foster, will always be part of me; we mustn't forget him and we must never allow the cruel, inhuman liberals and their cruel, inhuman negro gods to revel in their barbarities unopposed by men who love and hate with all their hearts. Monstrous, merciless egoism built Liberaldom.

The passionate love of our European hearth, presided over by the King of Kings, shall bring it down:

*It was not long ere it made its way,
A thrilling ceaseless sound:
It was no noise from the strife afar;
Or the sappers under ground.*

*It was the pipers of the Highlanders!
And now they played Auld Lang Syne.
It came to our men like the voice of God,
And they shouted along the line.*

*And they wept, and shook one another's hands,
And the women sobbed in a crowd;
And every one knelt down where he stood,
And we all thanked God aloud.*

From "[The Relief of Lucknow](#)" by Robert Trail Spence Lowell +

Of Soda Pop and Babylon

August 31, 2013

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Charity, Chivalry, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. – *Revelations 18:21*

It's always surprising, this puppet show of memory. The other day it took me back to my tenth year on earth. I was on vacation in St. Augustine, Florida, with my parents and siblings. Motels were a relatively recent phenomenon at that time, and they provided infinite delight to me and my brother. We ran up and down the outside corridors and counted all the different types of soda in the soda machine. An elderly woman and her husband, both with thick Southern accents, ran the motel. By rights they should have told my brother and me to get lost and stop fiddling with the soda machines, but instead the woman invited us into her office and asked us about our school. When that failed to ignite a spark in us she asked us about baseball. That worked. I proceeded to babble on about my prowess as a hitter and fielder, piling lie upon lie. Then I had a root beer and my brother had an orange crush, compliments of the management, before going back to our room.

The next day we went to the beach, and we were quite surprised to find the beautiful St. Augustine beach to be completely deserted. Was the water shark-infested? Was the air filled with those hideous green flies? None of the above seemed to be the case, so my family and I had a wonderful day on the beach. On our way back to our room, my father and mother stopped in at the motel office and asked, "Why were the beaches so empty — it was a beautiful day?" The reply: "Some black boys tried to swim on the all white beach the other day, there were fights, and the police had to come and clear the beaches. It will be a few days before things return to normal." Obviously, after all these years I can't quote the exact words of the elderly lady, but that was the gist of her reply.

Then, as he left, my father passed a remark to my mother, which (I'm paraphrasing) amounted to a criticism of Southern whites, "When will these people learn to get along."

As my parents left, I lingered and heard the woman say to her husband, "They just don't understand." Now ten-year-olds are not the sharpest tacks in the human drawer, and I was not a particularly bright ten-year-old, but I did understand two things. The first was that the elderly couple, particularly the woman, had been kind to my brother and me. And secondly, it didn't seem at all unreasonable to my unseasoned young mind that the blacks should keep to their beaches and the whites should keep to theirs. I could see that my father's remark had hurt the woman's feelings, and I felt vaguely responsible. I wanted to say something of comfort, so I stammered out, "I love Robert E. Lee."

The woman's reaction took me back. She got all teary-eyed and came around the counter, over to me. "You're a little darling," she said as she kissed me on the forehead. I've never been one for public displays of affection, so I was not too thrilled about the kiss, but I did have a good feeling when I left the office because I felt I had been of some comfort to the woman who had been kind to me.

Now why do I tell such a story about some obviously "bigoted" Southern people from a bygone era? I tell that story, because those kindly Southern people, born in the 19th century, were Europeans. They were the last of a breed of people that has largely disappeared from the face of the earth, who once inhabited the countries of Europe and various offshoots of Europe, such as South Africa, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, and the United States. They were a special breed of people who saw life feelingly. In their blood was an instinctive hatred of all things cruel, ignoble, and uncharitable. They loved and respected the ethos of Christian Europe. "All this from a bottle of pop?" Yes, all that from a bottle of pop. Walter Scott could have walked into that motel office and been right at home with those dear old folks from long ago. One generation later and Walter Scott wouldn't have known what planet the strange new breed of people were from. And it has been my task, regardless of my fitness for the task, to render homage, respect, and love to those older European people and their culture. They, like the Southern motel owners, have been maligned and spit upon by state, church, and press for so long and so often that words in their defense seem so inadequate in the face of the avalanche of hate falling on them from Mount Liberaldom. But it is natural, in the spiritual sense of the word 'natural,' that a European should defend that which is good and true and noble. Even if all the world cries "crucify them" we should stand with the antique Europeans, for they taught us, by their example, what moral beauty is. It consists of fidelity to the Cross of Christ through fidelity to His people. When the Christ story is internalized by an entire people, a miracle of grace occurs. A world languishing in the darkness of paganism sees a great light. Deny those ancient Europeans, cover their culture with calumny and hatred, and you extinguish the light. Burke, who saw with blinding sight, warned us what would happen if we traded the traditions and people of old Europe for the utopian pretensions of a new utopian Europe ruled over by hard-hearted liberal theorists.

But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.

I'm glad Burke went on to expound on the nature of chivalry by linking it with "that charity of honor." By doing so he tells us that true chivalry is something much greater than knights and battles and courtly manners. True chivalry is of the heart: it consists of "that charity of honor." What an apt description of what makes the European unique. If we put it in the context of a Charlie Brown story, it would play something like this:

Charlie Brown: "Isn't there anyone who can tell me what a European stands for?"

Linus: "I can, Charlie Brown. 'That charity of honor...' That's what a European stands for, Charlie Brown."

It has been the task of the liberal to set down the old European culture, the charity of honor culture, as backward and hate-filled; backward because the antique Europeans believed in Christ, and hate-filled because the antique Europeans did not believe in the inherent sanctity of the black man. And beginning with the French Revolution, the European liberals have

justified all their bloodlettings under the cover of moving mankind forward to utopia. Of course, we never quite get there, because there are always South African apartheidists, segregationist Southern whites, imperialist Englishmen, and right-wing fringe groups who impede the building of utopia. When the last racist white is eliminated, utopia will be ushered in, and we can all dance around the throne of the noble black savage. But wait. I see no white people dancing around that throne. The liberals envisioned themselves surrounded by admiring darkies, thanking them for eliminating all the white racists from the face of the earth. The liberals are mistaken. The noble black savages do not make such distinctions. All whites, be they liberal or not, are to be consigned to the stew pots.

A white man should reject the new kingdom of Liberaldom, because of that charity of honor. Liberaldom was built by the devil and his minions. How can a European have anything to do with it? The pragmatic Europeans, those Europeans who are betwixt and between Liberaldom and Christendom, are trying to survive as part of Liberaldom. But this is not possible. Liberaldom is built on a universalist lie. There is no such thing as a multi-racial people or a multi-religious culture. A man must have one people or no people, he must have one God or no God. The liberal is a man who hates his people and his God, so he turns to the stranger and the stranger's god, or else he makes a god of the stranger. It may be that the liberal had an unhappy family situation growing up or that at a later period of his life he was denied some job he knew he deserved, but all such family and employment difficulties are not the cause of the liberal's betrayal of his people and his God. The fault lies in the liberal's deficiency in the region of his heart. His extreme egotism, his love for his own mind-forged abstract world ruled by his gigantic unappreciated brain, has caused him to banish the love of the pure and noble from his heart so that he can love and adore himself. This is the key to the liberals' worship of the negro and their hatred of the white. They never have to acknowledge their betters if they demonize the antique Europeans of the past and banish, from their utopia, all present day Europeans who desire to maintain a link to old Europe. In the liberals' mind the negro is the perfect god. He will be grateful and permit his white subjects to indulge themselves with wine and cheese parties ad nauseum. An academic of my acquaintance (not a friend) hosts an annual wine and cheese party, which is attended by one black couple who are petted and pampered by all the liberal academics in attendance. That, in a nutshell, is the sum total of the liberals' vision of paradise. Their gods love them and appreciate their sacrifices and reciprocate by blessing them with their presence at those great wine and cheese parties of Liberaldom. One is reminded of Karl Barth's remark about Feuerbach: "We have heard Feuerbach speak and we have heard something disgustingly, nauseatingly trivial." So it is with Feuerbach's modern day counterparts, the negro-worshipping liberals.

The disgustingly, nauseatingly, trivial fantasies of the liberals would be something to laugh at if they were just the fantasies of a few beatniks in a 1950's coffee shop, but those utopian fantasies, spawned by Rousseau and his white-hating ilk, have been institutionalized throughout the European world. And they are maintained with the blood of the white man. The colored gods do not know mercy; they only know sacrifice, so the liberals must keep feeding their black gods with more and more white victims. The seemingly endless cycle of white sacrifice will end when men with that charity of honor decide to put an end to it.

The state religion of Liberaldom is negro-worship. We did not come to that state of affairs by accident. Year after painstaking year, the liberals built up their poetic defense of a racially mixed, sexually promiscuous, guilt free utopia, facilitated by scientific advances and presided over by the negro gods. In movie and in print, all moral values stemming from Christian Europe were depicted as retrograde, unscientific, and racist. All values stemming from the new Jacobin faith of liberals were depicted as more humane, more advanced, and infinitely more godly, because godliness in Liberaldom is determined by the intensity of a man's and a nation's devotion to the negro.

The idea of moral evolution and the new racial and sexual ethos that goes with it has enthralled the European people for the past century. The pathetic, blood-thirsty fantasies of a few sick intellectuals were institutionalized in France and gradually became the accepted dogma of the Western world. Is this the promised end? Is this what Alfred, Charles Martel, and their everyman counterparts fought to preserve? Let one example suffice for what has been a consistent avalanche of propaganda spewed forth by the enemies of the light: In a movie called *Time Limit*, made in 1957, the sensitive hero of the movie, who is guilty of treason by the old standards of treason, but not guilty by the new standards of liberal morality, says; "Why is a man only allowed to be loyal to one family, one country, and one religion? Why can't he be loyal to all families, all countries, and all religions?" Why indeed? Doesn't that sound very moral and refined? Such an apologia is the basis of the liberals' poetic. They are the humane ones, they are the godly ones, and the antique Europeans are the inhumane and ungodly ones who would try to stop the moral progression of mankind. But how can a denial of our family, our racial nation, and our God, be a moral progression?

The liberals have successfully implemented their new society in which the negro is ensconced at the top of the pantheon of liberal gods. However, his place there is only guaranteed so long as the poetic of the liberals remains unchallenged. The "Christian" catechisms and theological treatises have certainly proved no match for the liberal juggernaut. But didn't Christian Europe have a poetic that made liberalism seem like the thing it was, an ugly patch of weeds in a beautiful garden? Why did Christian Europeans voluntarily give up on the great romance? Is the Christ story a great dramatic poem or is it a theological treatise? Was Christ the Messiah who transformed human hearts with the passion of His heart, or was he a wise Socratic teacher, a professor of morals and ethics? The poetic of mankind's forward march to racial and sexual Babylon built and maintains Liberaldom. The poetic of Christ crucified, Christ risen as seen through the eyes and felt in the hearts of the European people will bring Liberaldom down. +

Resisting the Categorical Imperative

September 7, 2013

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: George Fitzhugh, Shakespeare



But 'tis strange;
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,
Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.

-Banquo in *Macbeth*

Let me begin with George Fitzhugh:

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, it is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

-Cannibals All! Or Slaves without Masters by George Fitzhugh

Recently a friend of mine sent me a press release from a group of white nationalists, advocating nonviolence. It brought to my mind the quote from Fitzhugh, because the white nationalists have chosen to deal with the trials and intricacies of life in quite a different manner than Fitzhugh and the Europeans of the past. The mind, pure and undefiled from tradition, passion, and poetry is their guide to truth.

Nowhere is this ahistorical, nontraditional, abstract approach to existence more apparent than in the white nationalists' stance vis-à-vis violence. While conceding a limited right of self-defense in the home, the white nationalists embrace a rigid Quakerism in regards to all other forms of violence: "We must categorically renounce violence," and, "We must clearly denounce and avoid violence." Now, if the white nationalists were to say, "We do not think that violent resistance to the liberal leviathan is advisable at this particular moment in history. We are much more concerned with helping white people learn to cherish their past and revere and respect the Savior who once was respected and revered by all Europeans," then I would have no problem with the white nationalists. I might disagree with them about the strength of the liberal leviathan, but I would not be opposed to their statement of principle. But they do not put any qualifications on their Quakerism. They state that violence is wrong, and anyone who will not unequivocally renounce it is outside the white nationalist fold. Well, then I am unequivocally outside the white nationalist fold, because the white nationalist philosophy, if embraced, drives the dagger of abstract philosophical speculation into the heart of the European people and renders them incapable of any heartfelt response to the complex intricacies of life. And without the heart we are reeds for any and all philosophic ill winds that blow our way. The white nationalists do not just excommunicate all those violent-hearted men of the present. They condemn all our people, particularly the heroes of the past who were violent in defense of the innocent and the good.

Christian morality does not change. If your philosophy condemns all violence other than that violence which is necessary to defend the narrow confines of one's home, you have condemned Franco's courageous ouster of the democratically elected, left-leaning government of Spain, the inspired and heroic Klansmen who rode with Forrest, and all the William Tells of Europe who stood against the tyranny of those who attacked innocence.

It's difficult to believe that the white nationalists truly believe what they say. Do not their hearts burn within them when they hear of the torture murders of their own people? Would not they, if they had the opportunity and the means, kill the perpetrators of such atrocities? The white nationalists remind me very much of the proliferators with whom I used to spend a lot of time. The proliferators talked a lot about defending the unborn and making war on the abortionists, but if anyone actually said that abortion doctors should be shot, they were regarded as moral pariahs. I don't understand such people, nor do I want to understand them.

The modern European of every type, conservative, nationalist, liberal, and grazer, is unable to understand anything but a syllogism, because a syllogism can be put in a silver rod. Violence, in the modern European's eyes, is either good or bad; there can be no other conclusion, because no other conclusion can fit in the silver rod of the philosophers. Chaucer's knight, who killed the infidel in the Holy Land, was depicted as peace-loving and gentle inside. How can such a contradiction exist? It is only a philosophical contradiction; it is not a poetical contradiction, because only a man whose heart burned within him at the plight of the innocent being tortured and murdered in the Holy Land, or one who witnessed the infidel defile all that was pure and noble, would have the passion to fight and kill. All violent acts do not stem from illicit, evil passions. They can, and in the case of the antique Europeans often did stem from good and noble passions – the love of one's own and the hatred of the devil and all his works. And what could be more devilish than colored savages or Moslem infidels, murdering and raping their way through one white village after another? When white settlers made punitive raids, now condemned by moral theologians, on the Indians who attacked and massacred white settlers, they were practicing Christian charity. "He who strikes one strikes us all." The noble go on such raids because of that charity of honor, the pragmatic go on such punitive raids because they know that if they do not attack the savages who murder their neighbors the savages will soon be at the door of their own homes. And then it will be too late, but the murdered white settlers will have the satisfaction of having followed the principles of unequivocal nonviolence.

In a movie called *Northwest Passage* (1940), Rogers of Rogers' Rangers' fame, is asked by a British general why he is planning a punitive expedition against the Indians. Rogers says, "For years now the Indians have been coming into our settlements and murdering, torturing, and raping our people. What would you do in our place?" The British general replies, "I'd go get them!" The only people I hate more than the colored barbarians who murder, torture, and rape my people and the liberals who sanction the murder, torture, and rape of my people, are the white nationalists who tell whites that we are not to "go get them" when they murder, torture, and rape our people.

Only men who think they can ignore all the moral principles of their ancestors, which stemmed from a heartfelt, passionate love of the Savior, would arrogantly adopt a new Christianity, based on the esoteric theories in their Gnostic brains. Such men are not fully human, they are mere shadows of men, trying to substitute syllogisms for faith, and egotism for love. Now more than ever there is real fighting to be done. In many parts of Europe and America there is virtually no law. (1) Barbarians of color roam these lawless zones and prey on defenseless white people. Defenseless because they have been beaten down by the "You must clearly renounce violence" tirades from the clerics and the white nationalists. Why shouldn't white men venture out to avenge and protect white women, white children, and all white people from the barbarian hordes? Or should they simply stay cringing in their homes until the barbarians come for them? I detect some awareness of the insanity of doctrinal nonviolence in some of the European right-wing groups, but I see no such awareness in the American nationalists, who seem to be eternally wedded to their abstract faith in some abstract future state of utopian bliss where giant white brains rule over a kingdom of unequivocally, nonviolent white people. There are some kinists who do not unequivocally denounce violence, because their faith comes from a heart that loves. From those people will come the white resurgence. (2)

The most striking thing about the white nationalists is their hatred of the European peoples' Christian past. The neopagan regards white men as delusional fools who created a false religion and attempted to ruin the world with its precepts. The tiny minority of white nationalists who attempt to maintain a nominal link to Christianity do so by rejecting the traditional Christianity of the European people and inventing a new Christianity that is more in keeping with the credo of the neopagans. But if the people who took Christ into their hearts were wrong about all the essential doctrines of Christianity and the moral precepts that flowed from those doctrines, such as when to kill and when not to kill, how can we trust anyone else, whether liberals or white nationalists, to be right when they tell us what Christians should believe and how they should behave?

Much of the white nationalists' fear of white violence stems from their fear of what the liberals will do if a lunatic with a Bible in his hand starts shooting people. They think it will hurt the chances for white nationalists to win elections and "win the people over." But the question of whether to kill or not to kill must be based on the spirit within. When the heart demands that we fight, we cannot ignore our duty for fear we might be lumped with the Timothy McVeighs and the Anders Behring Breiviks of the world. (3)

There are many different interpretations of Christ's words about violence: "And from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force." I always took those words to mean that we must be passionate about all things pertaining to our faith, passionate in defense of our God and our people. And since we are not disembodied spirits but are in fact human bodies animated by the spirit, we cannot just gnostically condemn evil in our minds, we must also fight evil when it becomes embodied in human beings. Most of us will quite probably never actually fight liberals or the barbarians of color to the death, but if we don't believe that such a fight is just, honorable, and Christian, we will have denounced God in our hearts and we will lose all those internal battles against principalities and powers. And, which is just as disastrous, we will have created a climate of support for the liberals and a climate of condemnation for heroes of the faith, such as Paul Hill, the first man who shot and killed an abortionist. Had every Christian supported Paul Hill at the time of that shooting, there would have been more dead abortionists and quite possibly a European counter-revolution against the forces of Babylon. But so-called prolifers rushed to condemn Paul Hill for taking seriously the injunction of Christ: "Verily I say unto you, inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me."

The tortured aborted babies and the tortured murdered white people who are being aborted outside the womb by the liberal hierarchies, through their colored henchmen, are "the least of these my brethren," who should be fought for in the name of Him who calls on us, the Christ-bearing people, to fight for that charity of honor which our European ancestors fought for. If we are to become mere desiccated death heads, talking about nonviolence, Viking sperm banks, and bloodless, soulless, white utopias, we are as nothing. Almighty God, forbid it! The European is not meant for such a destiny. He is Hamlet, he is Tell, he is von Stauffenberg, loving and hating with all his heart and fighting and killing when his heart of fire calls on him to do so.

The mind-forged, foreshortened vision of existence, which leaves out the better part of man, his heart, is the vision of the white nationalist and the liberal, but it is not the vision of the antique European. The old vision of a passionate, Christian people fighting to preserve their faith and their race in the midst of a hostile world is the vision of the European who has not severed his ties to the past. I don't see any beauty or romance in the competing visions of utopia set forth by the liberals and the white nationalists. Nor do I see the Christ of Europe in those dystopian worlds. As the shadows of utopia lengthen, please Lord, with us abide. +

(1) In many American cities there are all negro zones, where whites dare not go. There is Sharia law in many sections of London where whites are subject to the less than tenders mercies of Moslems.

Why shouldn't whites form colored-free zones in their cities and in their nations? Apartheid, rigidly enforced, would be a great blessing. Let the colored live with colored and govern themselves and let the whites live with whites and govern themselves.

(2) There are huge tactical problems connected with the use of violence against the liberal leviathan. No white man wants to see white youths launching suicidal assaults on an enemy that will kill them without mercy. But there should be no moral imperative against violence: quite the opposite should be the case. If white men with hearts of fire and the rational capabilities to back up their passion decide to strike the leviathan they should be commended, not condemned.

(3) In *Great Expectations*, Dickens observes that we always seem most afraid of the ill opinion of people we profess to despise. The liberals are going to lump all white people who want to remain white in the same basket. If they can't find a true accusation, then they will make up a false one. Living one's life trying to appease the liberals is not only immoral, it is an impossibility. Instead of constantly assuring the liberals that whites will remain nonviolent no matter what is done to them by the liberals and barbarians of color, why not let the liberals and the barbarians of color start worrying about what those angry white people might do if the violence against their people and the blasphemous attacks on their God do not cease?

Elegy at the Gravesite of Christian Europe

September 14, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christian counter-attack, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



"If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole." *Mark 5: 28*

Anyone with eyes to see and ears to hear knows that all the governing bodies of the European countries are committed to the liquidation of the white race. But I think we should give special stars to governments that go blatant with their plans to liquidate the hated white race, because blatant, unadulterated hatred is preferable to camouflaged, sneaky hatred. So kudos to Sweden, a country that already had problems with Moslem rioters, for putting no restrictions on the number of Syrian refugees who can pour into Sweden, thus guaranteeing that Sweden will cease to exist as a white country. I know that Sweden, like all the nations of European origin, has not been Christian for some time, but so long as there are white-skinned people in a nation there is hope for a Christian resurgence. Once colorization is complete, there is no hope. Sweden will become colored and permanently heathen, which will necessitate an invasion rather than a defense. But from what white nation will the white invaders come, since all the other European nations are following a suicidal path that is similar to Sweden's? I don't know from whence they will come, but they will come to every European nation and they will reclaim those nations for white Christian Europe.

I do not make such an assertion based on signs that "the people are starting to wake up." I don't see any signs that the grazers are beginning to wake up. Quite the opposite seems to be happening. The grazers are becoming more beaten down and befuddled, the negroes and the other colored tribesmen are stepping up their murderous attacks on whites, the Moslems are conquering Europe, and the liberals, like sharks smelling blood, are moving in for the final blood feast on the white race. So why is there reason for hope? Because of the prayer our Lord taught us: "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven." It is not God's will that the European people, the Christ-bearing people, should be exterminated through outright slaughter or through miscegenation. Passionate hearts united to His sacred heart can alter the shadows of future events that seem inevitable. Nothing is written except this: He is the "Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." This is not mysticism, it is reality. The tenure of our lives bear witness to that reality. Have you ever stood over the grave of a loved one and felt an irreparable sense of loss for the loved one who lies in the grave? There is sorrow for the loss, anger at the finality of death, and a despair bordering on madness because you must walk away from the grave and leave your beloved dead in the cold, barren ground. Only one hope enables us to walk away from the gravesite. The hope that He will see to it that nothing good and pure and noble dies. Our hope and faith is one with Shakespeare:

*Thy bosom is endeared with all
Which I by lacking have supposed dead,
And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,
And all those friends which I thought buried.
How many a holy and obsequious tear
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye
As interest of the dead, which now appear
But things removed that hidden in thee lie!
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;
That due of many now is thine alone:
Their images I loved I view in thee,
And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.*

Men with good hearts lose battles. We might never restore Christian Europe to that which it was. But that which was of enduring and eternal value in Europe still lives with Him. If we stay connected to that Europe, we will stay connected to Him. And who can say that the war is lost when His people can call on Him by name? There is power in the blood, but only when our appeal to Him comes from an absolute faith in His divine charity. The woman in the Gospels who had "an issue of blood twelve years," believed that, "If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole."

The history of the European people is contained in that Gospel story. Because of the Europeans' incorporate union with Christ, the European culture became Christ's raiment. When a person touched the raiment with faith in the divine Savior the raiment enclosed, that person was made whole. When the modern theologians and biblical exegetes look at old Europe and see only racism and sexism it tells us all we need to know about those modern theologians and biblical exegetes. It tells us that those experts are too full of intellectual pride to see the living God. They can worship no God who comes to them through humanity, they must worship their own mind-forged God of inhumanity.

A prayer to Him is not a five step program hatched from the giant brain of a neo-pagan guru or the collective brain of a conservative think tank. It is a cry from the depths of the heart of a people who cannot walk away from the grave of Christian Europe without the hope that what was thought to be dead still can live again on earth as it always shall live in heaven. Those who profess to be Christian but will not fight for Christian Europe are trying to play fast and loose with God. You cannot dispense with the people who became Christ's garment and still remain connected to the living God. You will remain connected to a kind of demi-god: the devil. Taking the hand of Satan, through his conduit the negro, will not result in an outpouring of grace from the Christian God. But then the modern post-Christian European does not seek the grace of God, he yearns for the negro god and the kingdom of Babylon. "The Negro's kingdom come, His will be done, in this Babylonian kingdom on earth," is the liberal's prayer.

I would not call the maniacal hatred of the liberals for all things white and Christian white guilt. What I see in the liberals is not guilt, at least not in the traditional, Christian sense of the word 'guilt.' A Christian feels guilty for his sins, which in all mortal men are numerous and varied and which stem from our fallen natures. But the liberal does not believe that he has a fallen nature. He believes that sin is located in other people, namely white people who have oppressed the colored races and stifled the sexual liberation of mankind. I think we ignore an essential part of the liberal pathology if we fail to note that racial Babylon and sexual Babylon are linked: both are necessary if mankind is to be truly free of the oppressive personal guilt that comes with a racially and sexually "oppressive" civilization such as Christian Europe. If a man joins himself to the new Babylon he need feel no guilt at all so long as he condemns all men of the past who were not supporters of Babylon and all men of the present who are trying to impede the implementation of a Babylonian world. The liberals have their prophets — such as Rousseau; their original sinners — the antique Europeans; their Savior: the negro; and their heaven, which is on earth, an earth free of the ignoble white racists. Guilt is something the liberals hurl at the white grazers to keep them in line: "Worship with us or stand before the bar of liberal justice as one found guilty of racism." The grazers simply cannot face up to such a condemnation. They fall in line and worship, but not with the full internal assent that the liberals prefer.

In this modern Babylonian era a person who does not whole-heartedly endorse the ethos of Babylon is often dubbed a Puritan. It is meant to be an insult. I always take it as a compliment, because I know it means that I am against the racial and sexual ethos of Babylon. If I thought I was actually being accused of being a Cromwellian, I might take the time to explain to my

accuser that I have always leaned, emotionally and spiritually, to the side of the cavaliers. I could not abide Cromwell's ban on Christmas celebrations and all dramatic productions. How could the nation of Shakespeare ban the drama? Nor is it possible for me to believe that a Lord Protector is better than a Christian King. But let us get back to the liberals and their own brand of Puritanism, which is much more draconian and far less Christian than Cromwell's Puritanism. The liberals are absolute in their defense of Babylon. Any movement that even hints at a challenge to the ethos and the colored gods of Babylon is squashed without mercy. Some misguided whites are often fooled into thinking that they can plead for breathing rights within Babylon. Such breathing rights are never granted. The liberals are committed to a burn and destroy policy; they will not permit any dissenting voices within Babylon. It is absolutely essential that the European remnant realize that the liberals are satanic and that whoever advises the Europeans to deal with them is advising we should deal with the devil, who never deals fairly and always seeks to destroy us. If we keep that knowledge, the knowledge of the satanic nature of liberalism, in our hearts we will never be tempted to waste needless spiritual energy in futile pleas for liberal mercy — they have none; or liberal reason — they use it to defend Satanism.

The indulgence of a sort of undefined hope, an obscure confidence, that some lurking remains of virtue, some degree of shame, might exist in the breasts of the oppressors of France, has been among the causes which have helped to bring on the common ruin of king and people. There is no safety for honest men, but by believing all possible evil of evil men, and by acting with promptitude, decision, and steadiness on that belief. I well remember, at every epocha of this wonderful history, in every scene of this tragic business, that, when your sophistic usurpers were laying down mischievous principles, and even applying them in direct resolutions, it was the fashion to say that they never intended to execute those declarations in their rigor. This made men careless in their opposition, and remiss in early precaution. By holding out this fallacious hope, the impostors deluded sometimes one description of men, and sometimes another; so that no means of resistance were provided against them, when they came to execute in cruelty what they had planned in fraud. — Burke

Abandoning false hope can turn us toward our only hope. It is only when we place our hope in a plan to "win the liberals over" and "wake the people up" with a super-intelligent, non-violent program for the renewal of the world, under the management of giant-brained neopagans, that we come to ruin. The old ways are best. Liberaldom was built brick by brick by men and women who believed in a guilt-free, interracial, sexually promiscuous utopia consecrated to the negro gods. Now Liberaldom must be torn down brick by brick by men and women of Europe who still have hearts of flesh, hearts that reject liberalism and cling to Christian Europe.

When Liberaldom falls, will the liberal look at the gravesite and weep as the antique European now weeps for the death of Christian Europe? No, he won't. He will howl as a predatory animal howls who has lost his prey. He will howl as Satan howls when a soul that he counted as his own turns from Satan to the living God. The Christian European and the liberal are of opposed spirits, eternally at war. The liberals are fueled by Satan's hatred and their intellectual pride, the European is empowered by his faith in divine charity, which never faileth.

It won't be a new system that 'wakes people up' that will turn the tide against the liberals; it will be the sword of charity wielded against the Jews in the market place, the colored barbarians in the streets, and the liberals in their gilded, Babylonian palaces. The Bible is a very personal story of a people's relationship with God. Whenever the ancient Hebrews tried to depersonalize God by making Him subordinate to nature gods, they lost God. Such is the plight of the modern Europeans. They were not defeated on the battlefield, they surrendered without a fight because they no longer saw themselves as a people apart from the colored tribesmen. They saw themselves and their God as part of nature, and at the liberals' insistence, they conceded that their race and their God was a lesser, ignoble part of the natural order of existence. Standing before the grave of Christian Europe, amidst the conquering army of liberals and colored barbarians, we can take hope from His divine charity and strength from the vision of the ancient Europeans who wore His raiment. We go from the gravesite to the battlefield, because it is not right that the liberals and their colored allies should be allowed to defile holy ground by their sneering, gloating presence. Our entire history as a people points to one thing. When we align ourselves with God, because we love Him, not because we seek our own personal gain, we are the most formidable people on earth. Only the European loved God because he saw all that was truly noble and beautiful embodied in the divine humanity of Christ. Those who fight because they know God through and in the people who loved Him will never cease fighting, because they don't believe that Christian Europe is dead. They believe as Hansel and Gretel's father believed: "When hope is nearly gone, God's relief to us will surely come." +

Breaking Free of the Unholy Union

September 21, 2013

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Incarnational Christianity, Negro worship, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson



Mr. Hyde was pale and dwarfish, he gave an impression of deformity without any nameable malformation, he had a displeasing smile, he had borne himself to the lawyer with a sort of murderous mixture of timidity and boldness, and he spoke with a husky, whispering and somewhat broken voice; all these were points against him, but not all of these together could explain the hitherto unknown disgust, loathing, and fear with which Mr. Utterson regarded him. "There must be something else," said the perplexed gentleman. "There is something more, if I could find a name for it. God bless me, the man seems hardly human! Something troglodytic, shall we say? Or can it be the old story of Dr. Fell? Or is it the mere radiance of a foul soul that thus transpires through, and transfigures, its clay continent? The last, I think; for, O my poor old Harry Jekyll, if ever I read Satan's signature upon a face, it is on that of your new friend." —"The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde" by R. L. Stevenson

Robert Louis Stevenson was one of the profoundest writers who ever took pen in hand, but he is always undervalued by the literary critics for two reasons. The first reason was his popularity. The critics believed that anyone who was popular with the general reading public could not be genuinely profound. The second reason was that in an age when the new scientific-Darwinian-Freudian-progressive view of existence was becoming all the rage in intellectual circles, Stevenson took a decidedly Christian and reactionary view of existence. Nowhere is Stevenson's *contra mundum* world view more apparent than in this short story, "The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde."

If you recall the story, Dr. Jekyll, a respectable, fiftyish doctor and scientist decides that he can no longer suppress his lower nature. But if he is to indulge his baser nature, what happens to the career of the respectable Dr. Jekyll? The good doctor was truly on the horns of a dilemma, but he solves it. He discovers a scientific formula that can turn him into a fiendish, loathsome, thirtyish man called Mr. Hyde. Hyde can do everything that the respectable Jekyll cannot do. Then, when Hyde is through indulging himself he can return to the form and personality of Dr. Jekyll. And as Dr. Jekyll, he is very supportive of Mr. Hyde, telling his servants to let Hyde have free use of his home and even making out a will bequeathing all his money and possessions to Mr. Hyde. It seems like Dr. Jekyll has done it. He can be respectable and debauched, just like the surgeons in the liberal television show M.A.S.H. But the liberal fantasy doesn't work. Hyde begins to take over, and it takes stronger and stronger doses of the formula to go from Hyde to Jekyll. And Hyde complicates things further by committing a murder. Soon Hyde consumes the personality of Jekyll, and with the law closing in on him Hyde commits suicide, thus ending the respectable life of Dr. Jekyll and the infamous life of Mr. Hyde.

The liberals have attempted the same transformation as Dr. Jekyll. The psychoanalysts told them that repression led to neurosis. And who wants neuroses? Throughout the early 20th century the European intelligentsia was in the process of becoming Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde. With science as the facilitator the liberals tried to become one with the negro, who was their Mr. Hyde. By the latter half of the 20th century, the transformation was complete. When the negroes murder and rape, the liberals try to protect them, because by a strange transference the liberals feel they and the negroes are spiritually joined in a triune union that consists of the white man, the negro, and science. Liberals no longer can feel anything directly, so they try to live vicariously through their negro counterparts, but as in the Stevenson story the negro Mr. Hydes have taken over the personalities of the liberals. What the negro wants is what the liberal wants; what the negro does is what the liberal sees as real life, which he attempts to enjoy secondhand through his negro Mr. Hyde, whom he has come to worship and revere as the source of his being. And how can a man be more humane than his God? He can't. The inhumanity of the negro is the inhumanity of the liberal. They have no mercy or charity because their god has no mercy or charity. And they lay their merciless, unforgiving science at the negro's feet in token of their devotion to their god.

I have watched this symbiotic relationship between the liberal and the negro develop over the years. Take a look at our local liberals. Their personalities have been consumed by the negroes. They hold down jobs and do mundane liberal things in their white bodies, but their heart and soul belongs to the negro. The only difference between the modern liberal and Dr. Jekyll is that Dr. Jekyll, when the end was near, knew that he had done wrong when he created Mr. Hyde. The liberals showed no such repentance before their final transformations.

Of course the whole point of the Stevenson story is that we can't abandon the war against our baser natures by surrendering to them. The Christian faith does create a conflict within a man. St. Paul tells us that the good he wants to do is often thwarted by the evil he wills not to do. But St. Paul kept fighting against principalities and powers; he didn't surrender to them. Darwin, Freud, and all the Oriental gurus tell us to simply give in to our baser passions. In point of fact, there are no baser passions in the new age of psychoanalytic animalism. There is only self-destructive or anti-social behavior; all other passions can be indulged. Thus an excessive passion for alcohol or drugs requires a psychiatrist because that is self-destructive. And a desire to punish negroes who murder and rape is deemed anti-social because the very fabric of society is built around the loving reverence and worship of the natural and noble black savage.

Just as Jekyll made a conscious decision to descend, with the aid of science, to the level of a savage, so did the liberal, with the aid of science, make a conscious decision to descend to the level of the black savage. The liberals used the "scientific" findings of Darwin and other such "experts" to justify their descent into animalism. Instead of thinking of man as a spiritual being connected to a personal God they saw man as part of nature. And to deny that animal nature by stifling any of the animal instincts became repression, and repression is bad.

The 20th century became the century of the scientific expert. Every two-bit doctor of psychiatric mumbo-jumbo was allowed to pontificate about the hypocrisy of the antique Europeans. "Look at their brothels, look at their wars, all such things will not exist in the new world order where men and women do not repress what used to be called the baser instincts, but which we now know to be natural instincts." So long as what is natural means whatever is base and foul, the white man will remain enthralled by the "natural black savage." This transformation of what is considered natural was the turning point of Western civilization. Burke, viewing existence from a Christian European standpoint, thought it was natural that he should weep for the fallen Queen of France. While Dr. Price, who saw life from a new godless utopian standpoint, thought that it was natural to exult in the degradation and the humiliation of the Queen of France.

Why do I feel so differently from the Reverend Dr. Price, and those of his lay flock who will choose to adopt the sentiments of his discourse?—For this plain reason—because it is natural I should; because we are so made, as to be affected at such spectacles with melancholy sentiments upon the unstable condition of mortal prosperity, and the tremendous uncertainty of human greatness; because in those natural feelings we learn great lessons; because in events like these our passions instruct our reason; because when kings are hurled from their thrones by the Supreme Director of this great drama, and become the objects of insult to the base, and of pity to the good, we behold such disasters in the moral, as we should behold a miracle in the physical, order of things...

Why? Because when such ideas are brought before our minds, it is natural to be so affected; because all other feelings are false and spurious, and tend to corrupt our minds, to vitiate our primary morals, to render us unfit for rational liberty; and by teaching us a servile, licentious, and abandoned insolence, to be our low sport for a few holidays, to make us perfectly fit for, and justly deserving, of slavery, through the whole course of our lives. —Burke in Reflections on the Revolution in France

In Stevenson's story, Hyde, after he had overmanned Jekyll's personality, had to hide from the rest of society which still viewed him with horror. But what if the rest of English society had started taking Jekyll's formula and they too became Dr. Jekyls and Mr. Hydes? And what if their better natures became absorbed into Mr. Hyde? Then, instead of abhorrence they would feel loving acceptance and admiration for Mr. Hyde. Eventually they would institutionalize the worship of the original Mr. Hyde and all the followers of Mr. Hyde, because in so doing they would be worshipping a god that had become part of them. This is what has happened to the modern liberal. Instead of feeling a natural aversion for the negro, he feels a special closeness to the negro, just as the antique European once felt a special closeness to Christ. And the modern liberal has institutionalized the worship of his god just as the antique European institutionalized the worship of Christ. This hideous blasphemous transfer of allegiance was brought home to me recently when I went to a book sale at one of those big, old, impressive churches that used to be a place where Christians worshipped the living God. The books were being sold in a large room adjacent to the chapel. Some pictures on the walls showed the apostles as negroes. And another picture had a negroid Christ on the cross. Now, all churches have not become that blatant in their representation of their new god, but I don't think that the new symbolism in that old church was out of line with the current religious sentiments of the liberals in state and church. They have replaced their old god for a new one and they have, from my perspective, changed for the worse.

There are a few conservative groups out there who try to keep abreast of and report the black atrocities against whites. The liberals' reaction to the reports of black atrocities seem, from a Christian perspective, to be cruel and inhuman. They get angry at the people who report the atrocities, calling them racists, and more often than not they try to find some fault with the white victims of the atrocities. But the liberals are not Christian; they worship the negro so they have no charity and mercy in them. They do not believe in black atrocities. Mortal men cannot judge the acts of gods: they can only praise god for his infinite goodness and continue to fight evil, which is racist whites.

A liberal is no more likely to extend mercy to a white man than Mr. Hyde was likely to extend mercy to any human being. Grasp that fact and proceed from there. There can be no surrender to an enemy that has willingly extracted every last vestige of charity and mercy from his soul. All that is left of the liberal is an empty husk of a human being, completely devoid of humanity, addicted to the lowest forms of vice and the lowest form of religion, which is negro worship, a religion that validates the liberals' vice. So long as they think good thoughts about their negro gods they can let their bodies wallow in the pig sties of Babylon.

The idea of an intellectual descent into controlled debauchery is not new. The Greeks practiced it in the cult of Dionysius, and the Roman sages wrote serious tomes about the proper way to indulge the baser appetites at an orgy. The Orientals were also masters of the art of cold, dispassionate debauchery and vice. Even with those pagan cultures I would argue that ultimately they could not keep their passions for vice and cruelty under sufficient control so that their Mr. Hyde personalities did not adversely affect their societies. But I would most definitely – the destruction is before our eyes – claim that a Christian culture cannot possibly be sustained by men and women who think you can indulge the Mr. Hyde side of one's personality with impunity. The spiritual heights to which a man who responds to God's grace can ascend is greater in a Christian society than in a pagan society. And the satanic depths to which a man can sink are also greater in a Christian society. The European is made for absolutes. There is no happy medium between God and the devil. It is all or nothing. Either we strive, on a daily basis, to kill the old Adam and seek our Lord's grace, or we become Mr. Hydes, bound for hell.

Dr. Jekyll's theological division of himself was evil. He separated his intellect from his evil passions thinking his intellect could control his illicit passions. That is an impossibility. Evil passions can only be overcome by an overwhelming passion for the good. The Prince in *Sleeping Beauty* triumphs over the evil sorceress because he loves much, not because he outthinks the satanic sorceress. But Dr. Jekyll, having succumbed to the modern heresy that views the natural world of dissection and microscopes as the whole world, is unable to summon up any good passions to overcome his evil passions. That is the conundrum of the modern European. There is a passionate faith greater than negro worship. It is an ancient faith fueled by an eternal flame. Greater than theology, greater than evil, is the European's true faith.

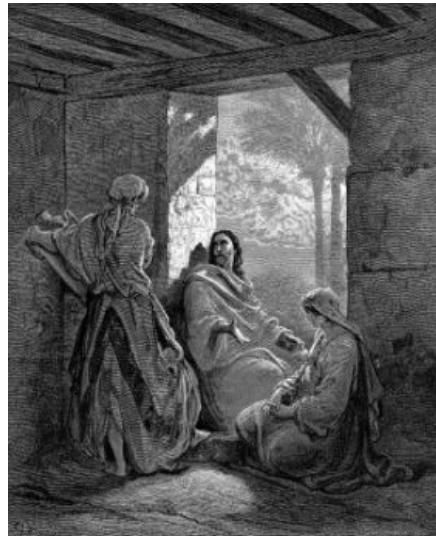
At the heart of our people is His Sacred Heart. The one true fairy tale of the world came from the antique Europeans who loved much. Once we abandon the scientized, managerial ethos of Dr. Jekyll, which leads to the sinister ethos of Mr. Hyde, we will unleash our passion for the King of Kings and Christian Europe. And then — "what larks" — we will ride triumphant over the liberals and their colored Mr. Hydes. +

Passion and Honor

September 28, 2013

Categories: Charity, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Honor, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Hippolyte Taine



We must have leaders. If none will undertake to lead us right, we shall find guides who will undertake to conduct us to shame and ruin. – Burke *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Two opponents of the French Revolution, Burke and Taine, made similar observations about the mindset of the French clergy at the time of the French Revolution. First Burke and then Taine, some eighty years later, noted that the French clergy had made the French people incapable of summoning up the spiritual fortitude necessary to defend their nation against the Jacobins. By emphasizing loyalty to their particular sect of the European Church rather than faith in Christ, the French clergy turned a living faith into mere obedience to a dead letter legalistic system.

Burke: "I have no doubt that some miserable bigots will be found here, as well as elsewhere, who hate sects and parties different from their own, more than they love the substance of religion; and who are more angry with those who differ from them in their particular plans and systems, than displeased with those who attack the foundation of our common hope. These men will write and speak on the subject in the manner that is to be expected from their temper and character. Burnet says that when he was in France, in the year 1683, 'the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this – they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly.' If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is 'much too much') amongst ourselves."

Taine: "Unfortunately, the Assembly, in this as in other matters, being preoccupied with principles, fails to look at practical facts, and, aiming to remove only the dead bark, it injures the living trunk. For many centuries, and especially since the Council of Trent, the vigorous element of Catholicism is much less religion itself than the Church. Theology retires into the background, while discipline has come to the front. Believers who, according to Church law, are required to regard spiritual authority as dogma, in fact attach their faith to the authority much more than to the dogma."

This inability to distinguish between the kitchen work of the faith and the faith itself goes all the way back to Martha and Mary.

But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? Bid her therefore that she help me.

And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

Christ's rebuke is mild and we have no doubt that Martha heeded His rebuke. But what happens when Christ's rebuke is not heeded? What happens when "that good part" is left out of the church? The French Revolution was and is emblematic of what happens when that good part no longer plays a vital role in the life of the European people. A large segment of people, the Jacobins, go whoring after other gods. In the case of the Jacobins, they turned a whore into the goddess of reason while the modern liberals have turned to the negro. The more conservative element stays within the confines of traditional, outward Christianity, but they have no vital force to resist the passionate intensity of the liberal Jacobin types because their faith is lukewarm: it consists of a belief in systems rather than the living God.

The French quagmire of a passionate, anti-Christian minority and a dull, easily led lukewarm majority that has been spiritually neutered by systems-analysis Christianity is the quagmire of the modern Europeans. Passion, not numbers, determines history. This is why opinion polls are so misleading. A pollster might claim that 51% of the people are against abortion, but are any of the 51% as passionately against abortion as the liberals are passionately for it? It's the same with the colored invasion of Europe. A majority of Europeans would rather not be invaded, but are there any of those Europeans who feel passionately enough about the invasion of their nation and the murder of their people to counter the liberals' passionate hatred of the European people with their own passionate love of the European people? And how can that love be engendered if the European has renounced his own hearth fire and the God of that hearth fire? A cold system is no substitute for the living God. Negro worship, which entails the liquidation of the white race, will be the ruling credo in European nations so long as Christ lies buried beneath a mountain of Christian systems.

Within the European fold were two faiths. The first faith, the true faith, was the European hearth fire faith. This faith was passed on from generation to generation by people who chose "that good part." The Europeans believed in Christ because they knew Him through the people who loved Him. A mere intellectual description of Christ's attributes would not have convinced the Europeans of His divinity or His humanity. There were and are plenty of false "God stories." We know the Christ story is true, because it has touched our hearts, through a sympathetic, loving connection to His people.

The second faith is the faith that turns to ashes as soon as it leaves the brains of the experts. An intellectual faith, the faith in man-made systems, has no life blood. It's a severed limb of a faith that leaves its adherents naked and defenseless before the relentless passionate intensity of the liberals and the blood-thirsty ferocity of the colored barbarians.

The neopagans solve the Christian dilemma by attempting to eliminate Christianity from the European's future. They, like the liberals, look to a Christ-less future. The only difference between the two camps is that the neopagans want white people to be part of the Christ-less future. But what kind of future is possible for a people who deny their past and run from the living God? Rather than go down that vile neopagan road, why not go the way of the antique Europeans, rejecting liberalism and the mind-forged Christianity that leaves a man defenseless against liberalism?

Let's look at what happens to an intrepid heart who goes the way of the systems-analysis Christianity: take a young Roman Catholic, for example. He grows up under a system in which the Pope gives out marching orders to the Bishops, who in turn give out the marching orders to the parish priests, and they in their turn tell the laity what to do. We're assuming our young man does not want to be a liberal, which means he plans on adhering to the rules of the Roman Catholic system. He respects authority and has no intention of being more Catholic than the Pope. What happens then, when the young man's Pope becomes a negro worshipper? The young man might become an adherent to a traditionalist sect that has its own system in competition with the Pope, he might become a negro worshipper like the Pope, he might become a neopagan, or, most likely, he will simply become a divided hodgepodge of a man, lacking a firm faith because he has no people. Oh yes! The two are linked. A man with no racial nation will not feel connected to the God of his ascending race. When Walter Scott wrote, "Breathes there the man, with soul so dead, Who never to himself hath said, This is my own, my native land," he was not talking about geography. He was talking about a spirit and blood connection to one's people, one's kith and kin. And what is more, he was talking especially about European people whose hearth fires were warmed by the Son of God.

The Protestant youth who is enslaved by the negro worshipping experts' formulaic rules concerning the "born again" experience or the proper forms of church government is in the same rocky boat as the Roman Catholic youth. Faith will return to both individuals when they love their God in and through their own people. Loving your own and forsaking all others does not mean you hate all others any more than loving his wife and forsaking all other women means a man hates all other women. What it means is that you cherish the channels of grace that God has provided for you.

When a man breaks free of systems-analysis Christianity, he will feel as the blind man in the Gospels felt when he regained his sight. He will see who it is who makes the blind to see and the lame to walk. And his heart will be drawn to that Man of Sorrows, who presides over the hearth fires of the antique Europeans. Then when he reads about the torture murders of his people, he will wake from his spiritual stupor and he will fight for his people. And no wolf-in-sheep's-clothing clergyman will say him nay.

Such a reawakening of the European people seems like an impossibility. But aren't we told in the Scriptures that a people who believe in Christ shall dream dreams and see visions? The dream and the vision are father to the deed. The people whose dreams and visions are focused on Christ shall not permit their world to be polluted by satanic liberals and murderous colored heathens.

In the old nursery rhyme, Thursday's child has far to go. The modern European is Thursday's child. But his "far to go" is not into the Christ-less future envisioned by the negro worshipping liberals and the technocratic neopagans. The European must go far back into his past and find that which is lost – a way of living and loving that set the Europeans apart from all other people. The Europeans must once again go and discover what Christ meant when He said, "They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth. I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." The ancient Europeans were integral, whole human beings, which is not to say they were perfect. They believed in real actual sins, not make believe sins such as "racism." And they believed in a real Savior who could forgive them their sins, in contrast to the modern liberals who believe that if they sacrifice enough white people to their black gods, their gods will be merciful and forgive them their sin of racism. Of course such an absolution will never take place because the black gods do not have any mercy, they only understand sacrifice.

A long line of managerial experts have told us that systems about God are more important than God Himself. And what has been the result? The liberals who worship the negro and passionately hate the white man rule, while the colored barbarians have free license to murder, rape, and pillage in the nations that were once the citadels of the white race. No white man will say, "Stop, this must not go on," because the white man has no passion for the good to counter the liberals' and the colored barbarians' passion for evil. When Thursday's child goes back to his racial hearth fire, he will discover that he has the spirit and the will to fight for his people and his God. Having rediscovered the difference between sacrifice and mercy, he will be a whole man again, a man who does not accept the rule of liberals and the barbarities of the colored heathens.

First and foremost the black fiend who tortured and murdered Jonathan Foster is responsible for his murder. But we all, we Europeans, share in that murder. We have allowed the systems-minded men to overrule our passion to protect and defend our own people. "Mustn't be violent, mustn't be prejudiced!" We must leave such evil counselors behind. Let us once again act as whole men, fearing nothing but dishonor and wanting nothing more from life than to serve our people and our God with that charity of honor that is the mark of the true European. +

The Resurrection of Europe

October 5, 2013

Categories: Homeland, Honor, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Charles Dickens



A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with the lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of bird, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm, and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. — Dickens *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*

During the course of my search for the last outposts of civilization — those remaining book stores that contain many a volume of quaint and forgotten lore — I encountered a woman in her mid-seventies, who was of Southern extraction but living in the North. Over the course of a year we had what were at first, at least on her part, very guarded conversations. But then as she began to trust me she opened up on the subject of the negro and the South. She felt compelled, as all older Southerners do, to insist she wasn't prejudiced, but... The gist of my friend's caveat was that integration hadn't worked. The blacks had stayed savages and the whites had become less civilized. She made that observation with a furtive glance around her and with an expectation that I would disagree with her. But instead of disagreeing I went further: "The blacks have become much more savage now that the whites don't control them, and the whites have set up a kingdom of god on earth with the negro as god." The woman from Georgia didn't disagree, which actually surprised me somewhat. It usually takes a little time for a person to see the connection between liberalism and negro worship. But apparently, in this case, the notion of negro worship had already been crystallizing just below the surface of her consciousness. "We're still fighting the Civil War, aren't we?" she asked.

"Yes, but now there is only one side fighting. It's the liberals and the black barbarians against a white remnant who can't or won't fight back."

The thought that there is one single "racist" out there makes the liberals mad. But I don't think they are overly concerned about the existence of one mid-seventyish woman who doesn't worship the negro. "Such people will die out," the liberals reason, "and then there will be heaven on earth." The liberals are right: such honorable, decent Europeans are dying out, but I'm not so sure there won't be others to take their place. History is made by human beings, and human beings are not the passive slaves of a biological process. Spengler was wrong: birth, maturity, decay, and death apply to vegetable matter, not to human beings created in the image of God. A man only becomes a slave to the biological process when he no longer sees himself as a man with an immortal soul. Then he acts according to rote and becomes a mere lab specimen devoid of all humanity.

Every governing body of the European nations has rejected Christianity and the white race in favor of an anti-white, anti-Christian, utopian ideology in which the noble black savage presides over what is supposed to be a beautiful, utopian village, but is in reality a soulless city of desolation. Not every European nation arrived at their utopian villages by exactly the same routes or by the same methods, but they all got there, which indicates to me that there is one suicidal common denominator among all the European nations. Of course we don't need a master sleuth to help us find the suicidal common denominator, we know what it is: all the nations of Europe were once Christian and now all the nations of Europe are post-Christian. Three European nations, France, Russia, and the United States, went to utopia by way of a violent revolution, while the rest moved toward their Babylonian paradises without violence. The United States, which the Ayatollah Khomeini correctly called the "Great Satan" but for the wrong reason, differed from France and Russia in this regard — the real American revolution, the Utopian revolution, did not come from outside of the government. In 1860 the American government itself waged a war to make the nation safe for egalitarian democracy. Dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal? So the northern utopians said. What was the truth? The northerners were half right. Jefferson, Madison, and Franklin, the most influential of the Constitutionalists, were 'brave new worlders.' But the Southern cavaliers, as Thomas Nelson Page points out, were not new worlders, they were Europeans who wanted nothing more from life than to extend Christian Europe into the heathen lands.

The Northern colonies of Great Britain in America were the asylums of religious zealots and revolutionists who at their first coming were bent less on the enlargement of their fortunes than on the freedom to exercise their religious convictions, however much the sudden transition from dependence and restriction to freedom and license may in a brief time have tempered their views of liberty and changed them into proscriptors of the most tyrannical type...

The Church, which viewed the independence of the Northern refugees as schism, if not heresy, gave to this enterprise its benison in the belief that "the adventurers for the plantations of Virginia were the most noble and worthy advancers of the standard of Christ among the Gentiles." The company organized and equipped successive expeditions in the hope of gain; and soldiers of fortune, and gentlemen in misfortune, threw in their lot in the certainty of adventure and the probability that they might better their condition.

*Under such auspices the Southern colonies necessarily were rooted in the faith of the England from which they came—political, religious, and civil. Thus from the very beginning the spirit of the two sections was absolutely different, and their surrounding conditions were for a long time such as to keep them diverse. — Thomas Nelson Page
The Old South*

The last incorporate body of Christian Europeans on the North American continent were finally defeated in the 1950's when they succumbed to integration. What remains hovering over the South is a lingering cloud of suspicion, the suspicion of racism, that every new generation of Southerners, ever since the sixties, attempts to dispel by being more anti-racist, which means hating the white and worshipping the black, than any northern liberal.

My bookstore friend was correct: we're still fighting the Civil War. We are fighting it throughout all of Europe, because this is not a war of geography, it is a race war. The same dynamic that was present in the American Civil War is present today in all the European nations. A numerically small governing body of passionate, negro-worshipping, white-hating liberals are attempting to exterminate the white race, while the great majority of whites sit and graze in the pastures of oblivion. The whites in Haiti took the first utopian salvo, and then the Southern whites were under the gun. Now it is all whites, but it was always every white that had to die. The liberals' strategy is to isolate the "bad whites" in Haiti, in the South, in South Africa, while making the white grazers believe that they will be spared if they only behave. But the grazers do not realize that the dynamic of utopia demands the sacrifice of all whites. Even if a white grazer was willing to sell his soul by betraying his people in order to save his life, he would still find himself in the black stowpots. The bad whites are really all whites — you can't escape from your racial nation by betraying your race. Your destiny will catch up with you. Fight or die, but stop grazing in the fields of oblivion.

We can't really call the ongoing extermination of the white race a race war because only one side, the liberals and the colored barbarians, are fighting the war. It will be a step up, a consumption devoutly to be wished for, when white men actually start fighting back. This will happen when the white man recovers his religious sentiment. At present the liberals have a religious sentiment for the black man and the other auxiliary gods of color. But the conservative has let the liberals sneer him out of his faith. Read through Thomas Nelson Page and then through Richard Weaver if you want to see that which is lost. Or better yet, read through Russell Kirk's *The Conservative Mind* and then through Anthony Jacob's *White Man, Think Again!* Weaver and Kirk are not in the wrong; what they write is very objective and true. But they are "passion-spent," too reasonable, too scholarly, too balanced. Partisanship is not unreasonable, especially when it stems from love. Page and Jacob have more than just an intellectual understanding of the crisis of Western civilization because they love the people who made Western civilization. And because of their heartfelt love, they see what has to be done to restore Christian Europe much more clearly than the calm, detached conservatives. A burning, sentimental attachment to our racial nation, to our European river, is what is needful. While the conservatives were trying to eliminate their sentimental attachments to the European people the liberals were and are indulging their religious sentiments. For example, the contemporary liberal opinion on the death of Little Nell in Dickens' *The Old Curiosity Shop* is that it is a piece of "cloying sentimentality." Oh really? The Victorians did not think the death of a saintly child who came to know the Savior was "cloying sentimentality." They thought that Dickens had drawn back the curtain and given them a glimpse of the Savior who turns all our human tragedies into divine triumphs. The Victorians wept openly when they read of the death of Little Nell:

She was dead. No sleep so beautiful and calm, so free from trace of pain, so fair to look upon. She seemed a creature fresh from the hand of God, and waiting for the breath of life; not one who had lived and suffered death.

Her couch was dressed with here and there some winter berries and green leaves, gathered in a spot she had been used to favour. 'When I die, put near me something that has loved the light, and had the sky above it always.' Those were her words.

She was dead. Dear, gentle, patient, noble Nell was dead. Her little bird—a poor slight thing the pressure of a finger would have crushed—was stirring nimbly in its cage; and the strong heart of its child mistress was mute and motionless for ever.

Where were the traces of her early cares, her sufferings, and fatigues? All gone. Sorrow was dead indeed in her, but peace and perfect happiness were born; imaged in her tranquil beauty and profound repose.

And still her former self lay there, unaltered in this change. Yes. The old fireside had smiled upon that same sweet face; it had passed, like a dream, through haunts of misery and care; at the door of the poor schoolmaster on the summer evening, before the furnace fire upon the cold wet night, at the still bedside of the dying boy, there had been the same mild lovely look. So shall we know the angels in their majesty, after death.

In contrast, the liberals weep for Trayvon Martin and his many equivalents, fictional and actual. Such people, whose religious sentiments cause them to hate and sneer at all that is good, pure, and noble, and deify all that is evil, base, and ignoble, are a people eminently suited to build hell on earth, but not fit to live with or worse yet, govern Christian Europeans. Whom do you want to stand with? The Victorians who wept at the death of Little Nell or the liberals who exult in the torture murders of white children and weep over the death of a black thug?

Without a deeply felt, passionate, religious sentiment a man is nothing. I once read an article by the former Stormfront leader, Kevin Strom, in which he stated that the white man needed a new religion. Such a vile suggestion illustrates the problem with the white conservatives and the white nationalists. They have no heartfelt attachment to the Europeans' past or to the Europeans' God. What faith they have is in their own intellects. Such a faith cannot sustain a man in this world or in the world to come. The liberals have a faith in the negro, the colored barbarians have faith in their various heathen gods which are merely the personification of the murderous, licentious vices of the colored tribesmen. These are the gods the white men are flocking to because they no longer have a heartfelt, sentimental attachment to the Christian God. About 17 years ago a pseudo-religious expert named Peter Kreeft wrote a book called *Ecumenical Jihad*. In the book, Kreeft argued that Christians should join with Jews and Moslems against the liberals. This is a desperate attempt by a man without a vital faith to latch on to what he perceives to be the more vital faiths of the unrepentant Jews and the militant Moslems. It just won't do. The Europeans have one God, Jesus Christ. If a man, a European, cannot form a heartfelt, sentimental attachment to that God and the people who championed that God against the sneering pagan intellectuals and the murderous barbarian hordes of color, he will become the wretched man that Walter Scott writes about:

*The wretch, concentrated all in self,
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,
And, doubly dying, shall go down
To the vile dust, from whence he sprung,
Unwept, unhonor'd, and unsung.*

To a man, the sneering clerics, the merciless liberals, and the ecumenical conservatives all tell us that we must give up our ties to our racial nation in order to save their greater nation, whether it be negro-worshipping Babylon or the democratic republic of free markets and Super Bowls. Whatever new nation is thrust upon us is always based on the repudiation of the white man's past and a commitment to liquidate the white man as we progress into the future. Those Europeans who have formed a sentimental attachment to the God and the people of old Europe will not go peacefully into the hellish future of the utopians.

As the darkness deepens, so must our faith. The strength to endure comes from a connection to our past. If we love much, uniting our faith in His resurrection with our faith in eternal Christian Europe we will not be overwhelmed by the arrows from the colored barbarians or the pestilence of the liberals. +

The Evil That Men Do

October 12, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



In the great hand of God I stand, and thence
Against the undivulg'd pretence I fight
Of treasonous malice.

—Banquo

The ongoing war being waged by the colored races against the white race, which is being aided and abetted by the liberals, has become a real life horror film. Grisly torture murders of whites and heinous sexual assaults against whites have become so familiar to us that we risk becoming as insensitive to them as Macbeth became to his barbaric acts:

*I have supp'd full with horrors;
Direness, familiar to my slaughterous thoughts.
Cannot once start me.*

The liberals have gone further down the slippery slope than Macbeth. (1) He at least acknowledged that his barbarities stemmed from his illicit desire for the crown, whereas the liberals see nothing illicit in their desire to have the white race exterminated. In fact the liberals have given religious sanction to the extermination of the white race. It falls upon them to defend their gods, not to debate. Every time a new colored atrocity occurs the liberals bare their fangs and attack any white who shows the slightest inclination to criticize the colored demons or to strike back at the colored demons. Asking the liberals to do something about the colored atrocities is like asking Nero to protect the Christians from the lions. You can't seek redemption from the devil.

I frequently hear conservatives, secular and clerical, say that whites should remain civilized and not respond to colored atrocities with violence. Is it really the mark of a civilized man that he does not respond to violence with violence? It certainly was not the mark of the heroes of our precious European civilization. The mark of a civilized man, a European, was that he did not allow colored barbarians to assault his people without striking back at them. This Buddhistic, Thomistic quietism in the face of colored atrocities against whites is a new ethos totally opposed to the ethos of the antique Europeans. It is an ethos from hell, and it will not be voted away, nor will the liberals be persuaded to allow white people who adhere to the ethos of old Europe to live. White people, because of their cultural dominance in the past, cannot be allowed any breathing room in the New World Order:

But a great state is too much envied, too much dreaded, to find safety in humiliation. To be secure, it must be respected. Power, and eminence, and consideration, are things not to be begged. They must be commanded: and they who supplicate for mercy from others can never hope for justice thro' themselves. What justice they are to obtain, as the alms of an enemy depends upon his character, and they ought well to know before they implicitly confide. — Burke

We should know the character of liberals by now. They have held the reins of power in the West for nearly a century. Has any good ever come from appealing to their mercy? They are completely devoid of charity and mercy. Their techno—barbarianism gives the barbarians of color the type of iron-clad support necessary for the wholesale liquidation of the white race. And when the clergy back the liberals, the jihad is complete. The white race becomes the pariah race that can be despised, vilified, and subsequently exterminated with the religious sanction of the liberals.

A young white soldier is killed in South Carolina by five negro savages who simply wanted to “kill a cracker.” In 2013, over 1,000 Swedish women, 300 of them under age fifteen, were raped by Moslems. Are these isolated, random acts? No matter what the liberals say to the contrary, we know they are not isolated, random acts. They are acts of war. And they are acts of war committed by an enemy that knows nothing of chivalry. There will be no quarter given and no honorable terms of surrender coming from the liberals or the colored barbarians. White people are trapped in Lucknow, in desperate need of men like Havelock, men who know how to respond when colored barbarians attack their people.

When your daily life is spent in the “underworld,” which is now the case with white people because liberals have institutionalized hell, you lose sight of the fact that there is another “overworld” which is the real world. There once was a world where sex was connected to love, where charity and mercy were seen as attributes of God, and where men and women of faith shunned the devil and all his works because they believed in the Son of God. That world is lost to the modern Europeans. And because they have lost that overworld they have accepted their assigned place in the underworld, the victim’s place. The life of the European is a life of dread, hoping against hope that he will be sacrificed at the altars of the liberals’ gods at a later date than his neighbor, or that a sudden pang of mercy will come upon the people who know no mercy. The young Europeans growing up today have no idea there once were white people who did not permit colored barbarians, at the behest of the creatures called liberals, to murder, rape, and plunder at will where white people dwelt.

“What is a white person?” the liberal catechist asks.

“A white person is an evil creature that must be sacrificed at the altars of the colored gods,” replies the young European catechumen.

“Until his final sacrifice, what is the duty of the white person?” the catechist asks.

“To love the negro and the colored auxiliary gods with my whole mind, heart, and soul,” the catechumen replies.

“Very good,” says the aged catechist.

And that is the only way a European can be called good: when he accepts his place in the underworld of liberalism.

After Woodstock in the 1960s, the hippies sang of a return to nature:

*We are stardust
We are golden
And we've got to get ourselves
Back to the Garden.*

Such a sentiment can only be expressed by a people who believe there was no fall of man. A Christian European would never seek to return to Eden, because that is where he fell from grace. He looks to his racial hearth fire where the God of mercy, the God who is more than nature, dwells. A return to nature is not a happy return, it is a return to barbarism, to a wretched existence where there is no charity, no mercy, no love, only cruelty and savagery. This is the only world the coloreds have ever known. But the white man? Why should he, having once known a better world, want to return to the world of the ignoble savages? The answer lies in the mystery of iniquity. The liberal wants nothing to do with the overworld, he wants to live like a creature of nature in the underworld with his savage gods. They will tear him to pieces, but the liberal will still follow his new gods, because the God he left behind requires mercy and not sacrifice, and the liberal wants nothing to do with the burden of mercy.

I saw an old movie recently in which an American missionary who had spent fifty years in China was asked if he had made much progress preaching the Gospel in China. The old missionary sighed and said he hadn't. Then he told a story which illustrated his failure. He told how he had once spoken to a large gathering of Chinese about Christ's crucifixion and resurrection. The audience seemed very interested, listening intently as he described the crucifixion, and the missionary had high hopes, thinking they had been touched by the story. But later the attentive Chinese went out, waylaid a caravan of travelers, and crucified the members of the caravan. The Christ story never reached their hearts. So it remains today.

The Christ story did reach the antique Europeans' hearts, which makes the betrayal of those people and their God, by the modern liberals, seem like a second fall of man. The liberals have once again, under the advisement of Satan, sought to find a power in dumb nature that can make them co-equal with God. When a man becomes one with biological nature, the type of nature that can be seen and studied under a microscope, then there is no need for and no belief in the God who is above nature. What is natural becomes bestial, and what is unnatural becomes the religion of a Savior who is over and above biological nature. What was natural to Edmund Burke — his sympathy for the royal family of France — was quite different from what was natural to Dr. Price — his hatred for the royal family of France. Two epochs were clashing. What was natural for Burke was what was Christian. What was natural for Dr. Price was what was bestial and savage. Which is why the liberal successors of Dr. Price worship the black and hate the white. Whatever is closest to the primitive, merciless forces of dumb nature is deemed to be good, and whatever stinks of a spiritual realm beyond nature is deemed to be bad.

Once we see that "nature" is the wall that keeps Christ away from the liberals, we can see why they never resist and even encourage murder, rape, and pillage by the colored barbarians. If the liberals were to face the fact that the noble savages were not noble, they would have to give up their faith in nature, which is their one great defense against a God who places ethical demands on them. He requires that they go and learn the difference between mercy and sacrifice. And after they have learned the difference, He expects them to act according to the dictates of mercy. This is intolerable to the liberals because it requires work, deep down in the trenches of the soul. For this reason the liberals will never take down their ideological wall of nature. Which means they will always be at the ideological center of the colored barbarians' war against the white race. Nothing is sacred to the liberal but the barbarians of color, so there are no limits to what he will tolerate when it comes to atrocities against the white race. Everything is permitted except mercy.

Macbeth pursues his bloody course in full knowledge of what he is doing. He feels driven by his wife's ambition and his own, so he destroys the unbought grace of his life:

*All is but toys; renown and grace is dead;
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees
Is left this vault to brag of.*

Like Macbeth the liberals have chosen their bloody course, but unlike Macbeth they still have the capacity to stifle any "compunctionous visitings of nature," because they do not believe man's nature includes a soul. They would never lament as Macbeth does, that they have lost their "eternal jewel," for the reason that they have eliminated the soul from their religion. There is only nature, devoid of an animating spirit, in the liberals' soulless, heartless ideology. But if there is a personal, animating Spirit behind nature, the liberals' denial of that Spirit cannot change the reality of His existence. Yet the supposed opposition to liberalism never invokes that Spirit. We must invoke that Spirit. In full consciousness of what we are fighting against and who sustains us in our fight, we must say to the bloody, multi-headed liberal hydra, each viciously fanged head representing a different barbarian tribe of color, what Macduff said to Macbeth, "Turn, hell-hound, turn!" And then, like Macduff, we must make our sword arms match our words. +

(1) Macbeth still had "compunctionous visiting of nature" because he had not put on the armor of liberalism. Had he done so he could have slept like a babe after he murdered his king and kinsman. Even popes such as Pope Francis, who outwardly profess the Christian faith, can surpass the Macbeth family in the evil that they do. Such is the power of an ideology in which nature and nature's god, the negro, is the ultimate arbiter of men's consciences.

The European Side of the Great Gulf

October 19, 2013
Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism
Tags: Edmund Burke



Unfortunately liberals do live and they govern us. But we must guard against the fatalistic assumption that we can't ever throw off the yoke of liberals. Such would be the case if men were only biological specimens with no animating spirit within. Then men's lives would be as predictable as the ocean tides or the turning of the earth. But Europeans, more than any other people, should know that history is as complex as the human soul. The spiritual tide of human events can be turned by men who live in the spiritual realm. Nothing is written, except the character of the enemy. We must fight them even to the edge of doom because of whom and what we fight for and because of whom and what they fight for. There can be no peaceful accord with liberals. – CWNY

The late Malcolm Muggeridge came to Christianity very late in his life after he had already achieved a prominent position in British journalism. I'm sure the liberals would have liked to get rid of him because he caused them a great deal of embarrassment. A British journalist espousing Christ in the very citadels of Liberaldom was a very rare phenomenon. Muggeridge could have kept his new convictions private and maintained his status as a first-rate journalist, but he chose to become a clown, in the liberals' eyes, for the sake of Christ. He was, by his own admission, not the best spokesman for Christianity, but he was the one placed in a position to publicly defend it. To his credit he did not shirk his duty.

There were two Malcolm Muggeridge moments that stand out in my mind. The first was when he told a panel of experts, who were criticizing Solzhenitsyn for his attack on European liberalism, that the liberals were incensed because Solzhenitsyn left Russia and came to the West to tell us that Christianity, not liberalism, was the answer to communism.

The second moment came when he confronted the heinous, homosexual comedy team called "Monty Python" after they had made a blasphemous, hate-filled attack on Christ in a film called *The Life of Brian*. In front of a sneering, hostile audience and the sneering, mocking Monty Python crew, Muggeridge pointed out that everything of value in the Western world stemmed from the singular event called the incarnation of Christ. To mock and ridicule that event was the most destructive thing a person could do. The Python team's response was the expected one: "He is just mad because the audience liked us more than him." Should such creatures be permitted to live? The last thing Muggeridge was expecting or seeking when he went on that talk show was applause from the howling jackals of the devil. Let the Python team have their applause in this world; Mr. Muggeridge will get his applause in a much better world on a more important stage. One is reminded of the scriptural contrast between Lazarus and the certain rich man.

And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

In a previous column I focused on the evil that Monty Python represents (O Nation Miserable). What I want to focus on now is the "great gulf" that exists between Lazarus and the certain rich man, because that great gulf also exists between the modern Europeans and the antique Europeans. And until the "conservatives" plant themselves firmly on Lazarus's side of the great gulf, there will be no conservative movement. Reading through the literature of the post World War II conservatives (and I did that when I was a young man) is like wandering through a desert looking for a water hole that doesn't exist. There are volumes of literature about preserving various systems – our democratic system, our economic system, our classical, Greco-Roman university system – but there is nothing in respectable conservative journalism about preserving the white people of Europe and the faith of those white people. And it remains the same today. Even those conservatives who express concern about the wholesale liquidation of white people and their culture do not take their stand against the liberals because the liberals are the great despisers of Christ and His people. Instead the conservatives invoke democracy, and democracy's attendant gods: capitalism, science, freedom, and equality. We should not go down that road because democracy is a false messiah. Even if white people could obtain equal rights within a racially mixed, democratic society it would ultimately be their death, because the forbidden fruit of multiculturalism would eventually kill them.

Of course in reality white people will never be allowed into the new democratic world that they have created. Their own logic forbids it. All democracies are oligarchies in which a handful of bureaucrats run things in the name of "the people." And in a post-Christian democracy the people who are more equal than others are the black savages. The managerial conservative types, who are constantly trying to come up with a plan to win in the great board game called Democracy, do not understand that a board game without Christian Europe on the board is not worth winning. We need to go back, beyond the quicksand of democratic Europe and find firmer ground, the ground of Christian Europe, from which we can launch our attack against the white-hating, Christ-hating liberals and their colored barbarian allies.

This was the battle cry of Burke who was the first to face off against institutionalized liberalism. The British constitutional monarchy, which was unique to Britain, having developed over the years in response to the 'Divine Right' monarchs, was developed for one reason – to allow the Christian faith to flourish among the people of Britain. That faith was the life blood of the people. Any change in the British system had to be a change that was necessary to maintain the Christian institutions of Britain. This is why the new Whigs ran into conflict with Burke. Burke only wanted changes when those changes strengthened the Christian fabric of British culture. The new Whigs wanted to jettison Christian Britain and replace it with a new utopian, democratic Britain, modeled on the new atheistic French republic. It is quite a heart-rending moment when Burke says good-by to the men he thought were his allies in his efforts to keep Britain free of French Jacobins:

The Whigs of this day have before them, in this Appeal, their constitutional ancestors: They have the doctors of the modern school. They will choose for themselves. The author of the Reflections has chosen for himself. If a new order is coming on, and all the political opinions must pass away as dreams, which our ancestors have worshipped as revelations, I say for him, that he would rather be the last (as certainly he is the least) of that race of men, than the first and greatest of those who have coined to themselves Whig principles from a French die, unknown to the impress of our fathers in the constitution.

If your faith in Christ is a living faith, your ties to your ancestors and the laws they made which stemmed from their living faith will be unbreakable. Burke would not break faith with his ancestors because he was one with Christian Britain. Like St. Paul he fought the good fight and he kept the faith. And the faith that Burke kept was one and the same as St. Paul's. Both men were able to fight the good fight in this world, despite the fact that the forces of darkness seemed to be overwhelming superior, because their faith was not in managerial systems designed for triumph in this world only.

Even if the managerial conservatives could win an electoral victory by jettisoning Christian Europe and making themselves appealing to the citizens of the new Babylon would such a victory really be a victory? What does a man win if he gains the whole world and loses his soul? If we jettison our past we jettison our souls. And for what? Contrary to what the conservatives maintain there is no dichotomy between what is morally right and what is practical. It is not only immoral to jettison your Christian past in order to survive in the pagan present, it is not practicable either, because a man – particularly a European man – needs something outside of himself to motivate him. If he won't be moved by Christ, then he will be moved by Satan. This is the great error of the conservatives. The liberals have a fighting faith, they have faith in the new Babylon presided over by the negro. What is the conservatives' rallying cry? Onward to reduced taxes? Upwards to a balanced budget? In Stevenson's "[Ebb Tide](#)" he writes about the light in the eyes of the European. What is the source of that light? Does it have a name? All of our ancestors speak with one voice on that subject. Christ is not a metaphor for the good that is in men, nor is He an auxiliary god in a pantheon of gods, with the negro as the foremost god. He is our Lord and Savior. The liberals can mock and jeer at that singular and heartfelt belief of the antique Europeans, just as the certain rich man mocked Lazarus, but their mock and jeer will double back on them and destroy them in the end. Like the swine in the Gospel they trample each other in a mad rush to plunge headlong over the cliff.

I sometimes get stuck behind local school buses if I am traveling at the wrong time of the morning or afternoon. It's sad to see the older students with their green hair and tattooed, pierced bodies. And it's even sadder to see the younger children going off to or coming home from the indoctrination centers. We know what goes on in those fiendish, inhuman institutions. White children are taught to stay on the wrong side of the gulf, a gulf which separates them from their past. They will never know what it means to have a racial homeland and a special connection to the people and the God of that homeland. They will be taught to hate the white and to love the negro, and they will learn to sneer and mock the good and to love all that is ignoble and base. All this they will learn in the name of "education."

A truly conservative movement should work to place those children on the European side of the gulf. But that is the tragedy. The conservatives are on the wrong side of the gulf as well, trying to use Satan to further their more moderate agenda. It never works: the enemy of mankind is far more clever than the most brilliant of humans. You can't traffic with the witches on the heath and expect fair dealing.

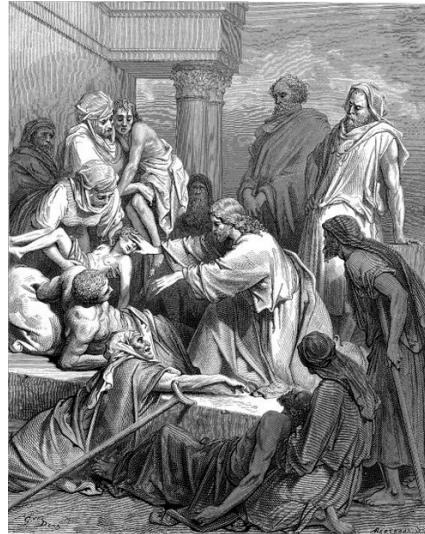
There is no fighting faith emanating from the conservatives, because they stand with the liberals. They don't believe in the God of the antique Europeans enough to fight in His name. They have chosen to try to mollify the devil rather than fight him. This essential liberalism of the conservatives was brought home to me when I read a self-professed conservative theologian's defense of the Christian doctrine of the resurrection of the dead. He started off by ridiculing the notion that we meet our loved ones in the flesh with the purified bodies of incorruption that St. Paul wrote about. No, that was too quaint and old-fashioned. The new concept of the resurrection did not involve a bodily resurrection. It involved vapors and gases and indeterminate, vague, inhuman conglomerations of atoms. This was called blending science and religion. What utter nonsense! Christ is who He said He was, and our resurrection in Christ means exactly what our ancestors believed it to be, or else Christ be not risen, and we are of all men most to be pitied for believing and living a lie. If we look at Christ as He revealed Himself through His people, we cannot come to any other conclusion than the one our ancestors came to: "Christ is the Son of the living God." Keep Christian Europe before your eyes, and then take a quick sidelong glance – that is all that will be necessary – at the sneering Monty Pythons of Liberalism. You will know which side of the gulf you stand on and you will have a fighting faith. +

The Shadows of Hell

October 26, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Ian Maclaren



These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. — John 16:1-7

In Dickens' *A Christmas Carol*, Ebenezer Scrooge, by the time the ghost of Christmas Future appears before him, is truly repentant. But he wants to know if the shadow of damnation hanging over him and the shadow of death hanging over Tiny Tim can be altered:

"Before I draw nearer to that stone to which you point," said Scrooge, "answer me one question. Are these the shadows of things that Will be, or are they shadows of things that May be, only?"

Of course we know the answer to Scrooge's question. God is merciful to his prodigal child, Ebenezer Scrooge, and the shadows are altered. Scrooge was not damned, and Tiny Tim "did not die." Like Mary, Scrooge sinned, but also like Mary he loved much and was forgiven.

I would like to borrow Dickens' image of the shadows that portend tragedy if they are not altered, because I think the modern Europeans must look at their ghosts of Europe past, present, and future and seek to alter the shadows of the hellish future they have hammered out for themselves in every link of a chain of sin and apostasy that makes Jacob Marley's chain look like a small charm bracelet in comparison.

The Europeans' apostasy begins with the scientific revolution in the late 1600s through the early 1700s. At that point in European history a few ultra-rational rebels minimized, and in some cases denied outright, the effects original sin had on mankind. The men who minimized original sin asked the question, "How can men who achieve such stunning scientific results with their god-like reason be tainted with anything so silly as original sin?" When men began to think like that, the march to scientize existence was on. When the movement was complete, the European became a mere cog in the great natural, scientized world. He would no longer be a man created in the image of a God above nature: he would be the insignificant by-product of biological nature – a man without a soul who lives life second-hand through the more natural (because he was never tainted by an unnatural religion) noble, black savage.

Reason detached from the heart fathered the new religion of the Europeans in which the negro is the savior and science is the holy ghost. No break with white-hating liberalism can be complete unless there is a break with the liberals' triune god. But how can a man break with a religion in which he has a father, a savior, and a holy comforter? He can't and he won't so long as he remains completely cut off from his past and the people who had a different father, son, and holy ghost. I've often asked myself what does the modern European see in the religion of the antique Europeans that makes him avoid their religion like the plague and what does he see in the new Babylonian triune faith that makes him so devoted to it. I've come to the conclusion that the new religion of Satan has succeeded because of the Satanic comforter, science. Before the scientizing of Europe, the heretical utopians obtained some devotees. But such devotees were a small minority, the lunatic fringe, if you will, of a strong Christian people who kept such aberrations on the fringes of their society. But with the coming of the utopian equivalent of the holy ghost, which was science, the men who had turned to Christ as the God who saved them from the inhuman, cruel forces of nature now turned to science. To the penny-wise, pound-foolish new European, the great benefit of science over Christ was that science gave a man power over nature in this world rather than the next. And the next world, the rational men told us, was a whimsical fancy of people who didn't have science. A French farmer once told me that the major difference between the farming methods of his ancestors and himself was that the ancestors sprinkled holy water on the ground and asked God for a good harvest while he irrigated his crops.

The obvious comeback to my criticism of the scientizing of Europe is the assertion that there is no conflict between religious faith and science. Why can't a man irrigate his crops and believe in the Christian God? In theory, he can, but in practice there does seem to be a correlation between science and the new Babylon, because modern man does not make any distinctions between the world of biological nature and the realm of the spirit. He blends them and calls the mixture psychology and other such satanic code words. We are told, in our scientized world, that the mystery of man can be solved in much the same way that a scientist solves the mystery of a frog. He dissects it and catalogues its various parts. Shakespeare, the poet who saw with blinding sight, saw the dangers of scientizing man. Through Hamlet he hurls his defiance at the men who would scientize the human soul:

HAMLET. Ay, but "While the grass grows," — the proverb is something musty. O, the recorder! Let me see. — To withdraw with you: — why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as if you would drive me into a toil?

GULDENSTERN. O my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too unmannerly.

HAMLET. I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

GULDENSTERN. My lord, I cannot.

HAMLET. I pray you.

GULDENSTERN. Believe me, I cannot.

HAMLET. I do beseech you.

GULDENSTERN. I know no touch of it, my lord.

HAMLET. It is as easy as lying. Govern these ventages with your fingers and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.

GULDENSTERN. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.

HAMLET. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me. You would seem to know my stops. You would pluck out the heart of my mystery. You would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak? 'Sblood, do you think that I am easier to be play'd on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, yet you cannot play upon me.

Dostoevsky's underground man concurs with Hamlet: "A man lives his whole life to prove that he is more than just a piano key." In our modern kingdom of Babylon there is no charity or mercy for white people because the blood of white people is necessary for the building of utopia, a utopia presided over by negroes united to the men of reason and their comforter, holy science. Conservatives and nationalists who try to enter into the holy kingdom by affirming reason ad science will not be admitted into Babylon because no one cometh to the father except through the son. The negro must be worshipped before a man can enter Babylon. A white man has only two options. Either he can accept the entire Babylonian faith and be absorbed, sans soul, into the kingdom of Babylon, or he can pick up the discarded threads of his past which will lead him back to Christian Europe. And then, rejecting rationalism, negro worship and science, he can launch an attack on Babylon.

The idea that there is a moral equivalency between science and faith, that a person is full of grace to the degree he is scientific, has taken hold of the European. And a man who is full of grace, full of the unprejudiced, scientific view of man, will worship the natural, noble savage. Behind the lab coat is the most primitive of faiths.

Christ has consistently, in the eyes of the modern scientized European, refused to perform miracles – "Thou shall have no signs" – while science has performed miracles. But I would suggest that the scientific miracles are the honest trifles of Satan which he uses to fool us in matters of deepest consequence. We who are about to die need a miracle that science cannot provide. And by de-Christianizing Europe in order to make room for science, we have left the European without spiritual sustenance in this world and without spiritual consolation at the hour of his death.

Christ set the standard for miracles when He walked the earth. His miracles of healing came from a heart that loved, not from a God trying to impress others with His power. We can see Christ in the miracles of healing performed by Dr. MacLure in Ian Maclaren's novel *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*. There we see science used in its proper context, in imitation of Christ's mercy and charity, not as an instrument of power placed at the service of Satan. Who has been served by the ascendancy of a technocratic elite in the Western world? The negro has gained by it, because the scientifically-minded white man is committed to the elevation of the negro to the status of God, but the white everyman has lost everything. He has lost his racial nation and his God.

Having crawled down into the pit of modern science, it is not so easy to climb back out of it, but it is necessary that we make the arduous climb out of the pit. In order to do so we must see "science" for what it is. It is not the gateway to heaven on earth; it is the gateway to hell. To think scientifically means to think of all men as recorders or piano keys who can be played upon and destroyed at random in order to serve the second person of the liberals' trinity. The negro has no inkling why the white man adores him so; all he knows is that everything the white man has, his women, his family, his civilization, belongs to the negro because the whites will not defend their own. They will not strike back at their new savior.

The shadows of hell which hang over all of the European nations can be altered if the Europeans renounce all three aspects of the liberals' unholy trinity: the pride of reason, the worship of the noble black savage, and the scientizing of existence. Will they do so? I don't know because, contrary to the modern notion, men are not as mathematically predictable as recorders and piano keys, but I do know that the other trinity, the one that our ancestors believed in, contains the person of Jesus Christ. If the antique Europeans renounce their pride of reason, their love of the noble black savage, and their desire to scientize man, because of their love for the Man of Sorrows, then the shadows of a hellish Babylonian future will disappear.

Christ has never forsaken His people, but His people have forsaken Him more times than we can count. He has always welcomed the return of the truly repentant sinner. If Scrooge could alter the shadows of a hellish future by his repentance, why can't we do the same? "Thy mercy on thy people, Lord." +

For Sympathy

November 2, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: G. M. Trevelyan, Shakespeare



The time seems long; their blood thinks scorn
Till it fly out and show them princes born.

-*Cymbeline*

What I would laughingly call the conservative Christian remnant, except for the fact that their cowardly apostasy is not a laughing matter, is in the process of severing all their ties to European Christianity. They have embraced miscegenation and negro worship to please the liberals, and they have made the Jewish people, the Christ haters, their people. In both instances the “conservative” Christians are going against the Christian faith of their European ancestors. It simply won’t do to claim that the modern conservative Christians are clearing up a few misconceptions of the antique Europeans, while maintaining the core of their faith. Such a disingenuous explanation won’t wash. To practice miscegenation or not to practice miscegenation and to claim allegiance to the unrepentant Jews or to Christ’s people are not minor moral issues. To say your ancestors were wrong about race-mixing and the Jews is not like saying that they were wrong about tooth decay or laundry detergents. Either the liberals are right when they claim Christianity is a myth like all other myths, and race-mixing, negro worship, and Judaism are the necessary opiates to make up for the void left by Christ’s dethronement, or else our ancestors were right: The Christ story is true, Christ is risen, and we should not tamper with God’s creation by trying to rebuild the Tower of Babel or uniting with the people who crucified Christ.

The conservative Christians remind me of the Mormons. When it became apparent that they would always be outcasts so long as they practiced polygamy, the Mormons announced a new revelation in which God told them they should stop being polygamous. For many years they held to the belief that the negro could not obtain the same place in heaven as the white man. When that belief ran contrary to popular opinion, they once again announced a new revelation that welcomed the colored races into the Mormon fold. The Mormons are good, practical children of Mammon, just like the conservative Christians, who profess to be so appalled at the Mormons’ rejection of the divinity of Christ. How do the Mormons differ from you, Mr. Conservative, except for the fact that you have embraced race-mixing, negro-worship and Judaism with an even greater zeal than the Mormons?

It was inevitable that the conservative churches would follow the liberal churches out of the Christian fold and into the satanic mainstream, because the conservatives had no living faith; they had only, like their liberal brethren, a faith in a system. And systems do not fulfill the very human need for a savior and a people. Enter the negro and the Jews.

In my undergraduate days, I had a very knowledgeable professor, a lapsed priest, for a course in Greek antiquity. My professor, who was a great admirer of Greek philosophy, could never understand how such an intelligent people could have such an infantile religion. I disagreed then and I disagree now. And I think the reason for my disagreement with my professor was the reason why he was a lapsed priest rather than a believing priest.

The assumption that philosophy, which talks of man in impersonal terms and treats the universe as a closed system that can be grasped by the human mind, represents a much higher form of wisdom than poetical truth which speaks of men in personal terms and only intuits truth through a glass darkly, is still the short-sighted, superficial view of the cleric and the academic. But what the “childish” Greeks intuited in their “fantastical” gods and goddesses was a racial memory of a great God who had ruled over man, who had created man in His own image, and who, after man’s fall from grace, gave the promise of a redeemer. Such a religion is only ‘infantile’ if all the longings of the human heart are infantile. What happened when Greek philosophy destroyed the people’s faith in the gods? Did they all become philosophers? No, they went to the mystery religions which gave people what they longed for: contact with a personal god. A system about God or about the essence of the universal mind of the universe might satisfy a few proud minds (although I have no doubt such proud ones will seek the gods of sex and blood in their private lives) but it will not answer the longing in people’s hearts.

All Christian churchmen after St. Paul always erred on the side of pagan philosophical systems rather than the personal, poetical, passionate element within man. But was Christ the answer to the longings in the human heart or was He the answer to a problem in philosophy? If He was the latter, then His passion and death on the cross was not necessary; mankind only needed His teaching. Our European ancestors did not see Christ as the great philosopher. They saw Him as the true Zeus, the true Woden, the God above the Gods who was a God because of His supreme humanity not because of His philosophical lack of humanity. Because passion is messy and dangerous, the churchmen went with philosophy and worked on killing the yearnings in the human heart. They succeeded so well that they left the Europeans bereft of a living God. The people, as the French proletariat, the Russian workers, then as the sacred negroes, became the saviors in a new faith, whose devotees worshipped a god whom they saw embodied in their culture just as Christ was once embodied in the culture of the antique Europeans. Destroy that ancient culture, cut the strings leading to the European past, and you have successfully turned the Christian faith into a negro worshipping offshoot of Judaism in which the hardened heart, armed against the Son of God, rules.

Throughout our European history, the theologians have told us that there is no such thing as a Christian culture. There is only the city of God, which is the church of the theologians, and there is the city of man, which is the European people, who are no different from any other people of any other race. But doesn’t this ignore the truth of history? Do we not see the face of Christ in the culture of the people who loved Him? How can any man with a heart capable of love not love those people from long ago? But the theologian sees nothing there. He sees nothing because he wants to see nothing. He has eyes that do not see because he is lost in his own abstractions. If Christ never entered the hearts of the European people, then the theologians, the men of intellect, can forge ahead with their mind-forged systems about God, systems which ignore the living God who once dwelt among the European people. Small wonder that Christians raised on the principles of a religious system become Judaic Christians who worship the negro. In Judaism the savior has not come, just as the savior has not yet come in the minds’ of the theologians who deny that He dwelt in Europe’s green and pleasant land. If that Christ, the European Christ, the Christ of Handel’s *Messiah*, Dickens’ *The Christmas Carol*, and the European everyman who listened to Handel’s *Messiah* and read Dickens’ *The Christmas Carol* never existed, then who and what is Christ? Must we wait until a panel of experts tell us who He really was or if He existed at all?

The conservatives in Church and State have joined hands with the liberals to form a negro worshipping state, hardened and buttressed by the unhallowed leaven of Judaism. This coalition seems invincible. But then again so did the Spanish Armada seem invincible. The European hero, who is missing from the modern stage of Europe, knows not seems. It was the Europeans

who turned Christianity back to its source, the son of God, when Roman systems threatened to turn the faith into a pagan philosophy.

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself. – G. M. Trevelyan's History of England

"Be it known to you, that we consider it our duty to obey and submit to the church of God, to the pope of Rome, and to every good Christian – to love them in every situation and in all circumstances, and to assist all both by word and deed, in becoming children of the Lord. We know of no other obedience to him you call pope, or father; and this we are prepared to render to him and to every Christian for ever. Beyond this, we are subject to the archbishop of Caerleon, who is a guide and an overseer, under God, to direct and keep us in the spiritual path." – Dynawt, the Abbot of Bangor-is-y-Coed

It was always the European hero, the Christian Woden, who fought for the true hearth-fire faith of the Europeans. We have had no other faith throughout our history. If we take the European Christ out of the Christian Church, then there is only a church of the negro, the Jew, and the Jacobin liberals.

If you are wrong about the way we know the truth about God, as my professor of antique religions was wrong, you will be wrong about everything important in life, despite your infinite knowledge of academic minutiae. The human mind acting alone, without the passions of the heart, can never know the living God, because he will not have any attachment to the human channels of grace that connect a man to God. A man whose heart does not within him burn at the thought of his racial hearth fire, will not be appalled when colored barbarians murder, rape, and torture his people or blaspheme against his God. "People?" the modern, soul-dead European responds, "I have no people and no God but the negro."

The return of the European hero, the Christian Odysseus who will clean his house of the evil suitors, will not immediately awaken the souls of dead-to-life Europeans. But there will be some souls who appear to be dead, who will come alive again when they see a man who loves and hates with all his heart, standing alone against the enemies of his people from within (the systematizers) and from without (the colored barbarians). Such a hero will stir up a racial memory that a few Europeans, and that will be enough, will respond to.

*'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen
Tongue, and brain not, either both or nothing.
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such
As sense cannot untie.
Be what it is,
The action of my life is like it, which I'll keep, if but for sympathy.*

-Cymbeline

The action of the lives of that special brood of heroes, the antique Europeans, should become the action of our lives because they had that charity of honor which can only abide with the people who made the living God the King of their racial hearth fire. If we keep faith with those Europeans, if but for sympathy, the shadows of Babylon will give way to the light of Christian Europe. +

European Hearts that Still Live

November 9, 2013

Categories: Charity, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Herman Melville, Shakespeare



If ever from your eyelids wip'd a tear
And know what 'tis to pity and be pitied,...

Orlando (*As You Like It*)

Every once in a while I make contact with a European, a man or woman who has some sense that something has been lost. "Everything seems so devastatingly horrible," "I am so lonely and depressed," "Everything seems hopeless." Those are the type of things I hear from people who have souls that still live, who have not yet anesthetized their souls with the liberal opiates that one needs in order to dwell in the kingdom of Liberaldom. I wouldn't dare tell such suffering souls that things are not as bad as they seem, because I believe things are worse than they seem. We have reached, under liberal rule, the depths of horror and desolation: "All is cheerless dark and deadly." But there is more than just a tiny ember of hope in the fact that there are still Europeans left whose souls have not yet become anesthetized, who still recoil in horror from an inhuman, soulless world in which the extermination of white people and the destruction of their ancient culture is countenanced under the guise of "diversity" and "fighting racism." The extermination process will continue so long as the liberals rule, because those who worship darkness cannot abide the light.

Men are not meant to be in a perpetual state of happiness. Darkness and gloom are part of existence. But what concerns me about the remnant Europeans, the men and women who "indignant turn" from the horrors of Liberaldom, is not that they have their dark moments – that is as it should be – but that they are being driven to total despair. And I think the total despair of the European remnant comes from their loss of a racial hearth fire. Human beings, at least those human beings of European stock, do not lose heart when they have to fight against impossible odds, but they do lose heart when they have nothing to fight for. To that pass the European remnant has come. The liberal has something to fight for: he fights for a utopian world free of white people and ruled over by the negro. The colored races have something to fight for – the extermination of the white race. But the European, who cannot fight with any enthusiasm for the forces of liberal darkness, feels bereft of a cause. Who or what can he fight for? The greatest tragedy in life is not having to fight to the death for what you hold dear; it is not having anything or anyone to fight to the death for. If the European could see his way clear of all the liberal filth and return to his racial home, he would find a God and a people to fight for, and he would not pine away with a sickness unto death.

Liberalism started out as a small movement of sick, degenerate individuals like Rousseau and Voltaire, who, allied with the Jews, sought to destroy the people and the traditional Christian culture of Europe. Over time the liberals succeeded in institutionalizing Satanism in the nations that once constituted Christian Europe. And the major ploy that was used by the satanically inspired liberals was the 'boundaries' ploy. The liberals depicted God's channels of grace as hideous boundaries that kept a man enslaved in a world of pain and suffering while they, the liberals, promised the Europeans freedom if they would courageously break through the hideous boundaries that separated them from happiness. Who would be so base to prefer servitude to freedom? As we have seen, the vast majority of Europeans, over time, fell for the liberals' satanic gambit.

The first channel of grace, or in liberal terminology, the first 'boundary' that had to be destroyed, was the European's racial home. A man needs to belong to a particular race of people because he is not an abstraction: he needs a particular people and a personal God whom he learns to love and revere through and in his people. If you take away that familial and racial particularism and replace it with a universal, abstract people and a universal, abstract God, you will kill the European's will to live, because you have left him without a people or a God to fight for.

Once the racial 'boundary' is transgressed all other boundaries are fair game. If our racial home is not a channel of grace but instead a restrictive boundary, then why should we put up with any boundaries? Why control our sexual appetites, our appetites for wealth, or any of our appetites? We are the people without boundaries, are we not?

Fortress Liberaldom seems impregnable because the European remnant is still under the spell of clericalism, democracy, and science. The despairing European that still has a heart capable of love for the good and hatred of evil would like to cry havoc and let loose the dogs of war on the liberals, but he doesn't dare. The clerics tell him that a white man must never act in a "racist" manner, considering himself a white person with a special attachment and special responsibilities toward the white race. A white is only allowed to fight when he fights racism. But since there is only one kind of racism, white racism, the white man is only allowed to fight against white people, who are really not his people because there is no such thing as white people, except when they are racist, and then there *are* white people. Are you getting all this down? You must learn your liberal catechism.

The mesmerized European is forever going around in circles on the democratic merry-go-round. If he should actually summon up the spiritual energy to fight for what he holds dear to his heart, he must fight democratically because it is a modern given that all civilized men "categorically renounce violence." But if the white man accepts that categorical imperative, which he has, he will only be allowed to vote for his own extinction. In a democracy some are more equal than others. It is the negro, who knows only how to murder, rape, and pillage, who is served in a democracy.

And finally there is the scientific quagmire. To claim a sympathetic, mystical attachment to the people of your own race is unscientific and therefore stupid. Who wants to be called stupid? But wait. The scientific whites have a mystical, sympathetic attachment to a particular race. They worship the black race and to a lesser degree the brown, yellow, and red races. Is this scientific? Yes, it is, because Western science is the ultimate voodoo religion, and its adherents must abandon all their humanity, their sense of honor, and their charitable instincts to become scientific-minded. All scientific thinking ends with the worship of nature and nature's god, the negro.

Let me come back to the Europeans who still have souls but despair, even unto death. It is that mystical, sympathetic chord, their attachment to their own race, which will defeat their despair. But they have been trained by the clergy, the democratists, and the men of science to leave that chord, the chord of life, untouched. If only they would play that chord. It would touch their hearts, and they would once again know what it means to love God in and through one's people. And that type of love, which is pure fire, would make them whole. They would dream dreams and see visions of His love upon the rose.

The liberal, who worships Satan through the negro, knows that negro worship and the demonization of the white is the bone and sinew of Liberaldom. But why can't the despairing white (despairing because he sees the desolation of liberalism all around him) see that if the spawns of Satan are so obsessed with the worship of the negro and the demonization of the white then there must be some source of spiritual strength in our racial hearth fire that the liberals do not want us to tap into. Perhaps the love of their people and the recognition of the demonic nature of negro worship could lead white people back to Christian Europe.

Anthony Jacob correctly pointed out that "charity not only begins at home it perishes without one." And our home is our racial hearth fire. All other faiths except the Christian faith deny that God can become incarnate. Thus the racial hearth fires in those other faiths are part of the endless cycle of dumb nature. Flesh begets flesh and then turns to worms and goes back to its source, dumb nature. But 'tis not so at the European hearth fire. God incarnate dwells there; men at such hearth fires know that the spirit of God animates the bodies of men, and charity, not dumb nature, is our touchstone of reality. If a civilization has not charity, and only the despised civilization of the antique Europeans had charity, it is not a civilization. It is a city of Satan, the great hater of all that is truly human, especially the Divine humanity.

As we have seen, the liberals have remade Christianity in the image of liberalism, with the negro as the savior and all that is evil residing in the white man. The world will be redeemed when all white men perish. The conservatives in church and state have also jettisoned Christ. At the moment they cut the racial cord, the spiritual Rubicon was crossed. Now they keep the outward forms of Christianity while they desperately try to maintain some spiritual life by fusing their empty-husk faith with Judaism, Islam, Orientalism, and of course the worship of the negro. But what all the great liberal escapes amount to is this: The liberal believes that at the core of existence is nothing. Melville asks, "Sentry, are you there?" The liberal does not believe the Sentry is there, so he must divorce himself from reality as the opium crazed Orientals do:

*Swooning swim to less and less
Aspirant to nothingness!
Sobs of the worlds, and dole of kinds
That dumb endurers be—
Nirvana! absorb us in your skies,
Annul us unto thee.*

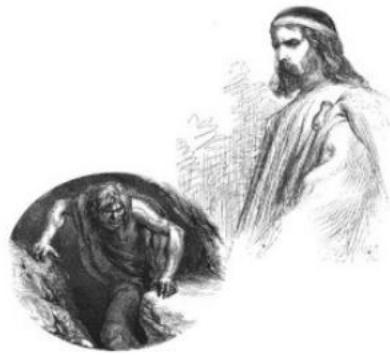
Is this not the ultimate aim of the liberal, to be absorbed into nothingness? And is not the negro the god who will annul the European by absorbing him unto himself? The hearts that will not be absorbed are those Europeans that find that lost racial cord and cling to it as the drowning man clings to a life raft. And then, up from his ocean perishing, comes the apotheosis of the European. In our people and through our people we come to Christ, the God of our racial hearth. +

The Ancient Chivalry

November 16, 2013

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



I am told, that the very sons of such Jew-jobbers have been made bishops; persons not to be suspected of any sort of *Christian* superstition, fit colleagues to the holy prelate of Autun; and bred at the feet of that Gamaliel. We know who it was that drove the money-changers out of the temple. We see too who it is that brings them in again. We have in London very respectable persons of the Jewish nation, whom we will keep; but we have of the same tribe others of a very different description, housebreakers, and receivers of stolen goods, and forgers of paper currency, more than we can conveniently hang. These we can spare to France, to fill the new Episcopal thrones: men well versed in swearing; and who will scruple no oath which the fertile genius of any of your reformers can devise.

In matters so ridiculous, it is hard to be grave. On a view of their consequences it is almost inhuman to treat them lightly. To what a state of savage, stupid, servile insensibility must your people be reduced, who can endure such proceedings in their church, their state, and their judicature, even for a moment? But the deluded people of France are like other madmen, who, to a miracle, bear hunger, and thirst, and cold, and confinement, and the chains and lash of their keeper, whilst all the while they support themselves by the imagination that they are generals of armies, prophets, kings, and emperors. As to a change of mind in these men, who consider infamy as honour, degradation as preferment, bondage to low tyrants as liberty, and the practical scorn and contumely of their upstart masters, as marks of respect and homage, I look upon it as absolutely impracticable. These madmen, to be cured, must first, like other madmen, be subdued. – *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France* by Edmund Burke

In Burke's *Reflections on the French Revolution* he makes the point that Christianity, despite the protestations of narrow-minded sectarians who thought that Christianity existed only in their sect, had been the animating and unifying force of the European people for centuries.

This mixed system of opinion and sentiment had its origin in the ancient chivalry; and the principle, though varied in its appearance by the varying state of human affairs, subsisted and influenced through a long succession of generations, even to the time we live in. If it should ever be totally extinguished, the loss I fear will be great. It is this which has given its character to modern Europe. It is this which has distinguished it under all its forms of government, and distinguished it to its advantage, from the states of Asia, and possibly from those states which flourished in the most brilliant periods of the antique world. It was this, which, without confounding ranks, had produced a noble equality, and handed it down through all the gradations of social life. It was this opinion which mitigated kings into companions, and raised private men to be fellows with kings. Without force or opposition, it subdued the fierceness of pride and power; it obliged sovereigns to submit to the soft collar of social esteem, compelled stern authority to submit to elegance, and gave a dominating vanquisher of laws to be subdued by manners.

If the ancient chivalry which stems from that charity of honor that Burke and St. Paul refer to is missing in the religion of the modern Europeans, can they still exist as a people? I think the horror show called diversity gives us the answer to that question. In the name of "diversity" and "fighting racism" white people at the bare minimum tolerate colored violence against whites and in most cases encourage it. It's true that the liberals cover up the colored atrocities as best they can, but that still doesn't explain the white Europeans' refusal to respond, as a people, to the torture, murder, and rape of their people by an implacable savage foe. No people in the history of the world have responded to the extermination of their own race, with passive indifference in some cases and unhallowed joy in most instances, as the modern Europeans have. Surely a religion that encourages racial suicide is a religion to be shunned? Yes, it is, and until that modern faith of the Europeans is burned out of their souls, they will be defenseless against the savage hordes of color and the liberals and Jews who kill by proxy through the colored barbarians.

There must be no mistaking the essential unity of the secular liberals who are outside of the visible modern church and the professed Christians within the modern churches. These two groups are merely different branches of the same river. Pope Francis of Lampedusa fame is one in spirit with the worst of the liberal sectarians, they both love a different savior than the one the antique Europeans claimed as their savior. The same bureaucratic faith in a system, independent of the "good part" of the faith, which made French Catholics powerless against the Jacobins, has permeated the Christian churches and made the church-going Europeans not only powerless, but active participants in the new negro-worshipping religion of the liberals. A deeply held faith produces fruits. The fruits of the Europeans' ancient faith was a people who believed in that charity of honor which St. Paul saw as the greatest of these, and Edmund Burke identified as the mark of the true Europeans. The fruits of the liberals' faith are quite bitter. We see before us a house of desolation, devoid of humanity and devoid of God.

The racial war is a religious war. The white nationalist web sites which report the colored atrocities against whites that the mainstream media ignore perform a great service. They provide an epitaph for the crucified white victims of the new anti-Christian Christianity of the unchurched and church-going modern Europeans. But the atrocity reports alone will never stop the atrocities because such reports do not move the liberals. I've seen this malice of indifference within my extended family. Any mention of the white holocaust produces a circle-the-wagons protective instinct in my liberal father. "That's an isolated incident," or "It's not race-related," etc. When the heart is truly engaged in the reality of life, as Edgar's is engaged, as Hamlet's is engaged, there are no moral ambiguities. The issue is clear: "My people are being exterminated by colored savages who have the support of the liberals and the Christian clergy. This means that the Christian clergy are not Christians: they are liberals, and they should be treated as such even if they dress up in fancy outfits and quote chapter and verse from the Scriptures, telling me that negro worship and the demonization of whites is sanctioned by the parable of the good Samaritan. Surely if there is a God, He gave us the means to know His will. Is it the will of God, the one true God, Jesus Christ, that we should love and defend our people as the Ancient Europeans did, or is it the will of God that we should demonize our own people and sacrifice them on the altars of the savage gods of color? The love of God passeth all understanding and so does the iniquity of men who love their abstract theory of God in place of the living God."

Karl Barth's assessment of Ludwig Feuerbach, the forerunner of Karl Marx, sums up liberalism: "We have heard Feuerbach speak, and we have heard something nauseatingly, disgustingly trivial." Liberalism is aggressive superficiality on the march. The liberals decree that there must be no Shakespearean depths to life because something might be lurking in those depths, a human soul with a desire for a God of depth, a God who does not respect the superficiality of sacrifice, who requires that His people learn what mercy is. Therein is the dichotomy between modern multi-racial, negro-worshipping Europe and the white Christian Europe of the pre-modern era. The modern European keeps reality at bay by clinging to the superficiality of liberalism, which requires the sacrifice of a man's soul, but does not ask man to suffer the thousand natural heartaches that a man with a human soul is heir to. Superficiality anesthetizes the soul. This is why white people do not respond with rage and anger to the colored atrocities. A superficial, anaesthetized soul can only be roused by superficiality. The white grazer has been trained more thoroughly than Pavlov's dogs. If his people are tortured and murdered, the grazer yawns with indifference, because he has been taught that he has no people. But if his football team loses, he weeps because only his superficial attachment to a multi-racial creation of the liberals has the power to move him. There is now a whole network of superficiality that keeps the white man from plunging into the depths, a plunge that would revive and purify his soul. Death itself has lost its sting for the superficial European, not because he believes as his ancestors believed, that we triumph over death through Christ, but because the modern European does not believe that the death of a purely natural man, without an immortal soul, is a great tragedy. Pain and suffering are bad but death is merely a return from whence we came, back to the elements. Every time there is a natural disaster in the Western countries a plethora of death and dying "counselors" are sent to the scene to "console" the people who have lost loved ones in the disaster. What comfort can such counselors be? There is no comfort in the face of death except Him. But we can't reach Him if we remain in the superficial kingdom of Liberaldom where the negro is the high god and death is not seen as an enemy that must be overcome by our faith in the risen Lord of the antique Europeans.

Burke lamented that the European people were spending the unbought grace of life, while the Jacobins and their English supporters such as Priestly and Dr. Price rejoiced because the European people were breaking boundaries and evolving toward utopia. We now see where utopia ends: When “once our grace we have forgot.” All the novels in the 20th century which warned of a future dystopian world fell short of the mark, because no European could envision a world where Europeans ceased to exist as a people. The fictional Orwellian world of 1984 is a kindergarten class compared to the real life Babylonian hell that the liberals have created. We must look backward in time to the poet who “was not for an age but for all time” to see the horror of racial Babylon and the glory of racial Babylon averted.

Prospero comes to an island inhabited by the spawn of a witch, the hideous Caliban, who views mercy as weakness and cruelty as virtue.

PROSPERO

*Thou most lying slave,
Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have us'd thee,
Filth as thou art, with human care, and lodged thee
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate
The honour of my child.*

CALIBAN

*O ho, O ho! would't had been done!
Thou didst prevent me; I had peopled else
This isle with Calibans.*

PROSPERO

*Abhorred slave,
Which any print of goodness wilt not take,
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour
One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,
Know thine own meaning, but wouldest gabble like
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes
With words that made them known. But thy vile race,
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which good natures
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou
Deservedly confined into this rock,
Who hadst deserved more than a prison.*

In the lascivious fantasy of Caliban – “I had peopl'd else, This isle with Calibans,” – we see the horror of racial Babylon. In the firm resolve of Prospero – “I must prepare to meet with Caliban” – we see racial Babylon averted. And despite the fact that his own people have made an exile of him, Prospero forgives them, marries his daughter to a man of her own race, and seeks the grace of God:

*And my ending is despair,
Unless I be reliev'd by prayer
Which pierces so that it assaults
Mercy itself and frees all faults.*

Such were the fairy tales of the European people when they were a people. They believed that boundaries of race were channels of grace, not boundaries separating men from utopia. For Christ's sake, for our own people's sake, we few, we Europeans, must reclaim our European isle from the Calibans of color who feed on the flesh of our children, just as the liberal Sycoraxes consume the souls of our people in the name of the devil whom they serve. No magic formula will restore our people who do not believe they are a people. Only the grace of God will restore them. Thus it falls to the last Europeans to fight with might and main to keep the racial channel of grace, which keeps the other channels of grace open, pure and undefiled. The prodigals must have a home to return to. Come what may we must defend our ancient European hearth, in the name of the God of mercy. +

Our Race is Our People

November 23, 2013

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob



A United Federal Party advertisement asked dramatically: “Are you a man or a Dinosaur?” The moral here was that the dinosaur was a brainless creature that had become extinct because it could not meet the challenge of a changing environment, a fate that would also overtake the Rhodesians – and particularly the women and children – if they did not merge with the black race! – Anthony Jacob

I don't have many happy memories of my childhood, not because I was beaten by my parents or sent to a boarding school like the one run by Wackford Squeers in Dickens' novel *Nicholas Nickleby*, but because of a certain inborn melancholy that the German poets describe as *Weltschmerz*. I found the tedium of school rather oppressive, which made me grateful for a friend who shared, not so much my melancholy, but my disgust with a school system that lacked a poetic. Schools then, as they are now, were simply indoctrination centers. Now they are indoctrination centers for mad-dog liberalism; back then they were indoctrination centers for middle-of-the-road liberalism. My rebellion and Rick's rebellion, I now realize, came from two different spiritual currents, but at that time I felt we were kindred souls.

We were not 1950's 'rebels without a cause.' Our rebellion did not involve switchblades and fast cars. One brief illustration will suffice. Picture an interminably long double class of social studies and English. Picture a teacher who thought that 8th grade students could not understand real literature and therefore had to be spoon fed didactic Horatio Alger pap instead. While reading a play in class, a dumbed down Horatio Alger story, Rick and I, without any prearranged plan, started changing the meaning of the play by placing different emphasis on certain words. What was supposed to be a didactic play about hard work and the American way became a sinister melodrama. Our classmates rewarded us with laughter, and our teacher rewarded us with detentions. Such were the small, but significant to me, battles that Rick and I waged with the school system we hated.

No matter how old a friend or loved one is when they die, that mysterious intruder is always unwelcome. But Rick's death a few years ago in his mid-fifties came as even more of a shock to me because he was quite below the allotted lifespan. I hadn't spoken to Rick since high school, but anyone who has had a best friend in those formative years knows that the memories of an early friendship stay with you for your entire life.

There was a reason I never contacted the friend of my youth after our graduation from high school. In our last year in high school Rick and I became aware that we were only united in spirit by what we were against; we were not united in spirit by what we were for. Rick had become a man of the left, particularly the French left as represented by Sarte and Samuel Beckett. My spirit was of a Dostoyevskian nature. I was concerned with one thing, the same thing as the great Russian: "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" I spent my college years trying to answer that question, and I came to the same conclusion that Walter Scott and my European ancestors had come to. Rick, on the other hand, went to France and practiced what he preached, radical French politics. He lived and died within the terrible confines of liberalism. Of course Rick would not agree: he would have said that I had become addicted to an illusionary God and as a consequence lived my life in fetters. Be that as it may, I am just as determined to live and die a Christian Goth as Rick was to live and die a member of the *sans-culottes*.

My old friend came back to the United States and lived a perfectly respectable life as a middle-class *bourgeois*. And he did so without abandoning any of his principles. His beliefs had become mainstream. My beliefs were counter-culture, and I was the one that lived estranged from my fellow Europeans. How have we come to such a pass? Why has the traditional faith, the faith of the antique Europeans, and the values that stem from that faith, become a hole-and-corner, proscribed faith that must be clung to in the private recesses of the heart and never be proclaimed in the open? We have come to such a pass because the left has a poetic that moves them, and the right has no poetic. That has made all the difference. This basic, startling difference between the right and the left is always brought home to me when I pick up a work of a 20th century man of the right that I once read in my late teens and early twenties, trying to find an alternative to the poetic of leftism. The literature disappointed me back then and now I find it positively unreadable, because of the one glaring weakness in all of the right wing, 20th century authors – they saw rational analysis as an end in itself rather than as a sword to support their passions, thus leaving the field open for the leftists who did use reason as a sword to defend and advance their passions. Where the communists formed cells within a country to spread propaganda and bomb factories and defense plants, the men of the right formed think tanks and held forums to discuss the demerits of communism and the merits of the free market. So while the left invoked "the people" the right invoked "right thinking," forgetting that passion can only be overcome by passion. The Southern people did not stop Reconstruction in its tracks by think tanks. They rose and rode in defense of their people, whom they loved enough to fight for. A handful of British soldiers did not liberate the captives of Lucknow because of their rationality. Certainly Havelock thought about his plan of attack, but his decision to fight and liberate was based on the same passionate love for his own that motivated the Southern people during the Reconstruction era.

Colored atrocities against whites are as common today as deliveries from the milkman used to be, because liberals believe in the new poetic, which is "the negroes," who have become "the people," while the whites do not believe in the poetic of the antique Europeans. First came the purification process in which believing Christian theologians such as Reinhold Niebuhr tried to purify Christianity by purging it of its European trappings and blending it with modern liberalism. That "purification" process soon resulted in a secularized Christianity with the negro taking the place of Christ. When the men of the right responded to the negroid secularization of Christianity with Greco-Roman rationalism, they made themselves an irrelevancy. Rationalism was found wanting in its Greco-Roman heyday, losing place to the mystery religions, it was found wanting in its medieval Catholic days, and it was found wanting in its resurgence in the Protestant "Biblical studies" sects. But still the men of the right pushed on. At age 59, Whittaker Chambers, having clawed his way up from the pit of communist hell, enrolled in college in order to pursue a "formal, intensive training in history, philosophy, and economics." How could such a brilliant man have failed to see the obvious? How could he fail to see that it is at the academy, the collective high priestess of Liberaldom, where a white man learns to be a secondhand man? He learns to love abstractions and reject all things that stem from the spirit. The academy is the enemy: it destroys a man's spiritual vitality and leaves him with the goddess of reason who, as Unamuno tells us, is a whore.

It is only the liberals who benefit from their association with the great whore, because they only use the whore-goddess Reason to advance their satanic passion to destroy God by destroying His image in the European people. By screaming "racism" and "simple-minded superstition" the liberals sought to kill all opposition to liberalism. And they have succeeded. "Who is here so base that would be a racist? Who is here so rude that would not be opposed to superstition in the form of an incarnate God? If any, speak for him have we offended."

The men of the right did not speak. They simply cried, "We are not racist, we are not simple-minded, we believe in the rationality of the Christian faith." But the love of one's kith and kin is beyond reason, and that same love brings us to the foot of the Cross, to the God whose love is beyond reason. When the men of the right stepped away from their racial hearth fire to embrace reason, unfettered by prejudice and tradition, they betrayed their people and their God.

The rational dissection of man into separate parts in order to learn the truth about man is never a good thing. Somehow when the parts are put together again we always end up with a Frankenstein monster instead of a man created in the image of God. A man of the right who wants to fight liberalism with rationalism is still under the influence of liberalism. He is still a man who can get lost in a fragment of the truth without seeing the whole truth. The whole truth is that God's channels of race are not to be circumvented; we need a particular people to belong to, heart and soul. The face of the living God does not appear to men who are loyal to an abstract, universal people. The right wing rationalists are the more consistent branch of liberalism. They want to be loyal to all races equally. The left wing liberals are more practical. They know they need a people, so they have made the black race their people and their god, which is in keeping with their satanic nature. They have inverted God's grace. Instead of the face of God, they see, in their perverse vision of God's people, the face of Satan. To love the negro with one's whole heart, mind, and soul is to love the devil and all his works.

In the Gospels our Lord connects the love of God with the love of our neighbor. You can't have one without the other. And our neighbors are the people who are close to us, the people of our racial hearth. The good Samaritan extended his love to the stranger, but if he hadn't first loved his own he would not have cared about the stranger because he would have been a moral pariah, a liberal. Where is the love in our modern multiracial utopia? The torture, murder, and rape of white people is the *raison d'être* of the colored races, and the worship of those who torture, murder, and rape white people is the religious faith of the liberals.

There is a very dangerous dynamic (at least for a police officer) that takes place during a domestic disturbance. When the police are called, they find a husband (sometimes it's the other way around) beating his wife. The husband is the aggressor, the wife is the victim, and the police officer is the rescuer. But when the police officer tries to restrain the husband, he becomes the aggressor and the husband becomes the victim. What role is left to the wife? Precisely: she becomes the rescuer and tries to stick a knife into the back of the arresting officer. I've seen this scenario played out many times. Why do I bring this up? Because the liberals have invented a false scenario in which white people are the aggressors, black people are the victims, and the liberals are the rescuers. If anyone denies the reality of the liberals' false scenario they are treated as blasphemers and are cast into outer darkness where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth. But there is a real domestic drama taking place throughout the European world. And contrary to the liberals' party line it is white people who are the victims, and the colored barbarians and the liberals who are the aggressors. Where is the rescuer in this real life drama? Ah, that is the question. There is no rescuer because the 20th and 21st century men of the right are too rational to believe that they have a people whom they must protect and defend. Such men are not of the same spirit as the integral Europeans of the Christian era. I know this to be true because I spend most of my time with the Europeans who lived, died, and fought before the 20th century, the post-Christian century. The men of Walter Scott's Europe would not sit idly by talking about economic systems and universal panaceas to end discrimination, while their people were slaughtered right in front of their eyes. They would act as Christian men should act in the face of a barbaric, aggressive invader devoid of the slightest trace of humanity. This insane, horrific, murderous attack on white people will continue unabated and in fact will intensify until white men acknowledge that the bardic Europeans of the past who loved and hated with all their hearts were the true men of the right. They believed in Christ risen and they believed that the first rule of charity, the charity that never faileth, is the love of our own people. At the moment that such love, the love of our own racial hearth, became a matter for rational debate, the white man was lost. Only he who remains faithful, faithful to all the instinctive promptings of a heart that still loves, will be able to help his people survive the dark night of Liberaldom and live to see His light descend, once again, over Europe's green and pleasant land. +

The Warm, Beautiful Summer of Christian Europe

November 30, 2013

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Hans Christian Andersen



The demon said this was very amusing. When a good or pious thought passed through the mind of any one it was misrepresented in the glass; and then how the demon laughed at his cunning invention. All who went to the demon's school – for he kept a school – talked everywhere of the wonders they had seen, and declared that people could now, for the first time, see what the world and mankind were really like. They carried the glass about everywhere, till at last there was not a land nor a people who had not been looked at through this distorted mirror. They wanted even to fly with it up to heaven to see the angels, but the higher they flew the more slippery the glass became, and they could scarcely hold it, till at last it slipped from their hands, fell to the earth, and was broken into millions of pieces. But now the looking-glass caused more unhappiness than ever, for some of the fragments were not so large as a grain of sand, and they flew about the world into every country. When one of these tiny atoms flew into a person's eye, it stuck there unknown to him, and from that moment he saw everything through a distorted medium, or could see only the worst side of what he looked at, for even the smallest fragment retained the same power which had belonged to the whole mirror. Some few persons even got a fragment of the looking-glass in their hearts, and this was very terrible, for their hearts became cold like a lump of ice.

— Hans Christian Andersen in "The Snow Queen"

Now that the Christian churches of the West have become multiracial, ecumenical adjuncts of Liberaldom, the liberals feel no need to undermine the Christian churches. They do feel the need to keep heaping live coals on the heads of Christian Europeans of the past, however, because those European Christians were the enemies of Liberaldom. Any counter-revolution will come by way of the Europeans who are still connected to old Europe, so the liberals keep a close watch out for any resurgence of European Christianity, which is the only true Christianity.

While the undermining process was still an ongoing affair, the liberals presented themselves as the true existentialists. Such writers as Camus and Sarte claimed they wanted no fairy tales. "Man's existence precedes essence," was the war cry of the existentialists. No theoretical creed or abstract theology was allowed to get in the way of man's confrontation with reality. But were the existentialists really existentialists? Did they ever face the reality of existence without an *a priori* conviction of their own, which was just as abstract and false as the abstract theories of the Thomists and the legions of Christian theorists who followed in St. Thomas's train? Accepting the existentialists' own definition of existentialism, that reality minus any theoretical, partisan pleading was their guide, we find that the existentialists were not existential after all. St. Paul was an existentialist as were Burke and William Shakespeare, but Camus, Kafka, Faulkner, Sarte, and the entire pantheon of 20th century philosophers and literati were not existentialists. They were the crippled, maimed children of the scientific age who were unable to see reality, the reality of Christ as He appeared in the collective face of the European people, because of the material, scientific wall that blocked their vision. By assuming à la Descarte that a man must invent himself anew, aren't you denying reality? Yes, you are, because the reality of life includes the truths that have been passed on from generation to generation. Granted, those old truths must be sifted in the new hearts of every generation, but they are part of reality, just as our intuitions about existence are part of reality. The scientific reduction of man's nature to mineral and vegetable matter is not realistic, because we have seen that a man has that within that cannot be explained scientifically. Faith, hope, and charity cannot be seen under a microscope or in the dissected body of a corpse, but they are part and parcel of human existence. The false existentialists of the 20th century have brought on the negro worship of the 21st century. The negro is the incarnation of the blank, materialist, scientific wall of nature.

The *a priori* vision of the modern "existentialists" was the same as the psychologists and the scientists – Nature is all. Samuel Becket's last play, in which we see a large mouth and nothing else on stage is the final anti-vision of the modern European. Small wonder that fantasy tales such as the Harry Potter stories, which have no connection to Christianity, have replaced the fairy tales of the Brothers Grimm and Hans Christian Andersen, which were stories grounded in the reality of the Christian faith. (1) Small wonder as well, that a multi-racial Babylon of sex and blood has replaced the home and hearth-centered Europe of the antique Europeans. If Christ be not risen — and the scientists have told us He is not risen — then reality is unbearable and it must be avoided at all cost. Everything that takes a man away from European Christianity and toward the sex, blood, and Harry Potter-like world of the liberals is good. And everything that pulls a man toward that blessed realm of the spirit, the Christ-forged world of old Europe, is an anathema to the liberals.

There is not yet any resistance to death in life liberalism, because the conservatives have confined themselves to a critique of liberalism without offering an opposed vision of reality. They look at the liberals' wall of science and see that it is not a vision that sustains a people, but they have no alternative. It's as if they are saying, "It's a terrible world that the liberals want us to live in, but unfortunately it is the real world, so why not find a place in that world for the European?" This is not possible. There is no reason to fight for a better place in a dung heap. If Christ be not risen, there is no need for segregation or any type of racial differentiation, because mere vegetable matter is food for worms, and worms do not discriminate; they have no prejudices.

There has been and there continues to be no resistance to the liberals' kingdom of Satan on earth, because the white man has lost the Hans Christian Andersen element of his faith. His heart has been frozen by the evil, liberal Snow Queen. A well-planned electoral strategy by a white nationalist will not remove the ice around the white man's heart. Only a heart that still remains connected to His sacred heart can melt the ice that the Snow Queen of science and negro worship has planted in the heart and the visionary eye of the white man.

"The Roses out on the roof were in full bloom, and peeped in at the window; and there stood the little chairs, on which they had sat when children; and Kay and Gerda seated themselves each on their own chair, and held each other by the hand, while the cold empty grandeur of the Snow Queen's palace vanished from their memories like a painful dream. The grandmother sat in God's bright sunshine, and she read aloud from the Bible. "Except ye become as little children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of God." And Kay and Gerda looked into each other's eyes, and all at once understood the words of the old song,

*Roses bloom and cease to be,
But we shall the Christ-child see.*

And they both sat there, grown up, yet children at heart, and it was summer; — warm, beautiful summer.

The wedding of the European and science has produced a child who stands in direct contradiction to the child that Christ enjoins us to be in order to enter the kingdom of God. In order to enter the kingdom of Satan we must be like unto and worship the noble black savage man-child who will lead us to the cruel, inhuman kingdom of Satan on earth.

The comfort that the Siegfrieds of pre-Christian Europe felt when they got to fight hand-in-hand with their gods against the forces of evil, was a sign of something within the European that was more than nature. Would vegetable matter rejoice to share its fate with other vegetables? The transition from Woden to Christ was an easy transition for the European because he felt, when he first heard the Christ story, that he had always known Christ. He was the true friend and kinsman that had been at his side in a thousand battles and would stay at this side in the

last battle against death itself. Dark ages? They were the ages of light. These are the dark ages, when a race of heroes have forsaken their liege lord and kinsman for the negro. When the Europeans sought refuge from God in nature instead of fighting with their God against nature and the noble savage they ceased to be human beings; they became soulless mutants destined to serve as sacrificial victims to the gods of color.

The new ‘knockout game’ which the media blame on “misguided youths” is really another form of black on white crime. It is not a new game for the blacks – they have always “played” such games. When I was thirteen I used to stand in line at the local golf club in the hopes that I would be picked to caddy for a rich man who might give me a big tip. One cloudy morning I thought I had a good chance of going out because I was the one and only potential caddy there that day. Then four older negro boys came over to caddy. Still I was first in line so I thought I would get out to caddy. The negroes told me to get lost (I’m sanitizing their language), and I refused. They proceeded to beat on me. I did fight back, but I was younger, weaker, and outnumbered. I was in for it. But before I was beaten senseless, a very large, white maintenance man intervened. He slapped the heads of two of the negroes together, knocking them down, while the other two fled. He paid me all sorts of compliments for being plucky, which were undeserved because I had no choice in the matter – the fight was thrust upon me – and then he made sure that I got out to caddy that day.

That maintenance worker was a hero. He was a European deliverer. That is what all Europeans should be, because the Europeans saw the risen Lord and believed in Him, and they became the Christ-bearers. Such men imbued with that charity of honor will always fight for His reign of charity.

Always and everywhere it was the Europeans who delivered the weak and the helpless from the forces of evil, just as He will one day stand up for us and deliver us from the evil of death. The spirit of our ancestors must be present in us before anything significant will happen to alter the Babylonian captivity of the white man. Science has not delivered us from the pestilence of liberalism, and the destructiveness of the negro has increased tenfold since the white man abandoned the simple wisdom of Kay and Gerda,

*Roses bloom and cease to be,
But we shall the Christ child see.*

The people who dwell in that Europe, the fairy tale Europe of Kay and Gerda, shall never cease to be and they will never turn Europe over to the liberals and the savage hordes of color. +

(1) Do not mistake Hans Christian Andersen’s tale for the bastardized story that has just come out from the anti-Disney Disney Studios.

Till the Ending of the World

December 7, 2013

Categories: Christmas, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Walt Disney the man



But never the gloom that lowers over the fortune of the cause, nor anything which the great may do towards hastening their own fall, can make me repent of what I have done by pen or voice (the only arms I possess) in favour of the order of things into which I was born, and in which I fondly hoped to die. – Burke in his [Letter to William Elliot](#)

I was saddened to hear of the death of Walt Disney's older daughter, Diane Disney Miller, a few weeks ago, but I was very heartened to know his daughter was intensely loyal to her father's memory her entire life. She even founded the [Walt Disney Family Museum](#) to counteract all the negative press her father received from the liberals. Why have the liberals hated Walt Disney so? They've hated him because like Walter Scott and Hans Christian Andersen his imagination was grounded in Christian Europe. He saw beauty — moral beauty — in the people of old Europe.

The modern Disney Studios feed off the moral imagination of Walt Disney. Every new picture they make is a blasphemous celebration of Satanism, yet they still retain the name of Disney and maintain the original Disney films, because they know without the Disney name and the real Disney films their financial bankruptcy will become as great as their moral bankruptcy. The liberals running the Disney Studios feed off the moral patrimony of Walt Disney while simultaneously renouncing it.

The same process of feeding and renouncing is taking place in the European nations as a whole. The liberals use the moral patrimony of Christian Europe to further the ends of Satanic Europe. Traditional stories which came from authors whose imaginations were rooted in the traditions and faith of old Europe are put through the liberals' wringer. By changing the characters' colors and sexual orientations the old stories are made the support and prop of a new Europe consecrated to racial diversity and sexual depravity. The same process is taking place in the churches. The church men change the Christ story of old Europe to make it coincide with the new Europe, Satan's Europe.

Why bother to keep the old stories and the outward symbols of the old faith around at all? The reason is not complicated. Liberalism is pure negation. It is an ideology without a soul to sustain its adherents, so, like a succubus, it must latch on to a living organism in order to keep itself alive. Where would the liberal be without his bastardized, inverted, distorted Christian faith in which original sin exists in the white man and salvation comes by way of the negro? He would have to self-destruct, which he often does, when in the dark recesses of his forsaken soul he starts to doubt his god. Just as the old-time Christians tried to band together to spread the faith and to support each other in those dark nights of the soul when a disciple wonders, "Sentry, are you there?," so do the modern liberals gather together in church and academy to keep their vision of the sacred negro and racial Babylon alive.

The feeding off of and the renouncing of Western civilization cannot continue much longer. An academic acquaintance of mine, a woman who should be imprisoned for her intense hatred for all things European, regularly goes to England to become "revitalized." Will she still be revitalized when Britain is a Moslem nation? No, I don't think she will. Nor will my mad-dog, liberal sister, who sends her daughter to a white, private school while insisting she just loves her black brethren to death, survive the mandatory diversification of all schools, private and public. A fleeting remnant of the unbought grace of life has lingered over Europe during the 20th century, often called back to life during wars, but we are now seeing a new generation of young white people who know nothing of their past and the moral patrimony bequeathed to them by their distant ancestors. These young people, bereft of all hope save their hope in the negro, either kill themselves outright with drugs or else commit racial suicide by mixing their blood with the blood of the barbaric negro gods. This a consummation most devoutly not to be wished for, but there is no other fate for white people who no longer believe they are a people.

It is during the Christmas season that the feeding and denouncing dynamic is at its height. What is too loathsome to be endured at any time of the year becomes doubly loathsome at Christmas time. Academics who spew their bile on Christian Europe throughout the academic year take their Christmas breaks and give their two quality children presents placed under a Christmas tree, a symbol of the cross on which the Savior, whom they despise, died. It's true that more and more liberals, usually those without children, are dispensing with even the outward show of Christianity. That is for the good. I would prefer the liberals make their Satanism as blatant as possible. Let us have Herod Day instead of a Christmas Day, and Caiaphas Day instead of Easter. And shouldn't we continue to make Martin Luther King Jr. day our most holy day of the year? Of course, we should if we are going to make our holidays correspond to the spirit of our nation. [\(1\)](#)

Scrooge lived a life apart from the rest of society because he made a conscious decision to renounce the God of charity and mercy. The repentant Scrooge walked through the door of his nephew's home and rejoined his fellow Europeans because he had come to believe in the God of charity and mercy. The European of today who believes what the repentant Scrooge believed must reverse Scrooge's spiritual pilgrimage. He must walk away from a society dominated by liberals and find his own upper room, a room prepared for the followers of the Man of Sorrows, the Christ of old Europe. From that upper room he must build up his resistance to and prepare for the war with the liberal world surrounding him. What can the ungodly offer us? They can offer us a place in Babylon if we are willing to renounce our people and our God. To sit in the seat of the scornful might be the sum and substance of the liberals' desires, but an antique European desires something quite different. He wants to remain with Christ, whom he has come to know in and through his people, "the dear old folks from long ago."

The French Jacobins killed their King, and the Russian Bolsheviks killed their Czar to show there was no turning back. Forward to Utopia and the reign of the people! And the bloody reign of the people continues. The blood-red tide of colored violence against whites has reached tidal wave proportions. There can be no turning back, no charitable license, because the people must rule, and "the people" are the barbarians of color. If the church men such as Pope Francis were really Christian men who believed that all men were created in the image of God, they would be concerned about the slaughter of the white race. But they are not concerned; in point of fact, they encourage the slaughter of the white race. If there is no black or white then why do the white-hating, Christ-hating clerics worship the black race and hate the white race? Call it a "knockout game" or "slap-happy," but colored violence against whites by any euphemistic name still is colored violence against whites, and it cries out to heaven for vengeance. Has there ever been a time when a violent, merciless foe was defeated by pretending there was no such thing as a violent, merciless foe? Of course not; nominalism has its limits. The white-hating liberal and the murderous, white-hating black are not fantasies concocted by right-wingers. They are part of the everyday fabric of our existence, and they will not go away until they are confronted by an enemy who will fight them on every front because he knows who it is they fight for and who it is he fights for. Christ does not give us any guarantee that He will give his followers the victory. Maybe that is why so many white nationalists try to use the magic talismans of science and democracy to defeat the liberal techno-barbarians and the barbarians of color. But if we don't triumph in Christ's name, then we have not won. The Christ-bearers must be true to their high calling. It is only the utopians who look for a system that will provide mankind with a final victory here on earth. The Christian Europeans knew that there is no final victory in this world only. The life of the spirit is a continuum, from this world to the next. C. S. Lewis expressed this so well in his *Chronicles of Narnia*. By manmade logic it seems like an unsolvable problem: that our success in this world depends on how much we disregard the logic of this world – but it is not unsolvable in Him and through Him. Heaven visited Earth in the form of Jesus Christ and from that fact of history we few, we Europeans, have always derived the strength and the will to fight for innocence. Because he was gentle and loved much, we must be gentle inside, gentle enough to strike back at the colored barbarians who have made the rape, torture, and murder of white people their national pastime. And we must

hate the liberals as we hate the devil: they sit in the seat of the scornful and make merry over the death of white people. That charity of honor commands us to hurl the liberals from their Satan-forged thrones.

This Christmas I'll read Dickens' *Christmas Carol* with my family, we'll sing the traditional Christmas carols, and we'll feast. But I won't forget for one moment the burning white child, Jonathan Foster, and all the other white victims in the ongoing war of the colored barbarians and liberals against the white race. There is no Christmas truce when the enemy does not believe in the author of Christmas. Christian gentleness does not preclude fierceness in the face of evil. Far from it: in the name of gentleness and mercy we must be fierce. Because the hopes and fears of all the years are met in Him, we fight without ceasing against them, this Christmas and every Christmas till the ending of the world. +

(1) If you needed any more proof of the real faith of the liberals, just take note of the adulation and deification of the recently deceased Nelson Mandela, of whom we can justly say as some anonymous historian said of King John of England: "Hell is defiled by his presence."

The Little European Town of Bethlehem

December 14, 2013

Categories: Christmas, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, John Sharp Williams, Robert Lewis Dabney, Thomas Nelson Page



And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. —Luke 2: 7-16

After the Southern War for Independence, there were a number of Southern writers and statesmen who stepped forth to defend the South. The best defenses came, in my judgment, from men like R. L. Dabney, Thomas Nelson Page, and John Sharp Williams, who saw the War Between the States as a battle for Christian civilization with the race issue as the paramount issue:

But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own...
— [John Sharp Williams](#)

What men such as Williams, Dabney, and Page saw from their Christian perspective was that to succumb to the forces of racial Babylon, which is what surrender to the Northern aggressor entailed, was to succumb to the devil. I think the subsequent actions of the liberals after the war have proven Williams, Page, and Dabney to be correct. The uncivil Civil War was about race and faith, and states' rights was only a minor issue stemming from those two larger and intertwined issues.

The Christian defense of the South was not the majority defense. In later years, the defense took the form of the states' rights issue as articulated by Basil L. Gildersleeve in his book, *The Creed of the Old South 1865-1915*. But with all due respect to the classical scholars such as Gildersleeve, who always seem to mistake a piece of the pie for the whole pie, it seems obvious, from my prejudiced Christian perspective, that Williams, Page, and Dabney saw the issues clearly and Gildersleeve did not. Certainly regional autonomy is important, but why is it important? It is important because our kith and kin reside in a particular region. We can't allow the stranger to invade or govern our homes. But if we follow the logic of Gildersleeve and his fellow classicists, we cannot defend our people from racial amalgamation. Mere geographical proximity does not make a people. The South land was nothing until white Christian Europeans came and infused their spirit and blood into the land itself. Then, and only then, did the south become The South. A black man could live in the South ten thousand years, but he would never be a Southerner, just as a black man born and bred in England could never be a true bred Englishman. Our racial home is our spiritual home: regional boundaries exist to protect our racial hearth. If those of other colors and other faiths are allowed to become one with us just because they live in the same region, then we have no homeland. A Moslem France is not France, an integrated multi-racial South is not The South, and a colored Europe is not Europe. This was the common, instinctive wisdom of the European people before they exchanged their instincts for statistics and science. Now, according to liberal lights, a patriot loves the people, and "the people" are the colored races.

The American Civil War was an attempt by the Jacobins of the North to extinguish Christian Europe in the Northern Hemisphere by making the negroes "the people" and then deifying them. They did not fully complete their triumph until the 1950's when the Christian opposition to racial Babylon ceased and a new breed of Christian clergymen became the leading proponents of racial Babylon. And so it remains today, not only in the South, but throughout all of Europe. The Dabneys, the Pages, and the Williamses – the defenders of the white race and the Christian faith – have disappeared and been replaced by the negro-worshipping, white-hating clergy. The only resistance to racial Babylon is no resistance, because it doesn't come from Christian sources, it comes from the pagan Right who want an equality of colors within a secularized state. Such a state is not possible. Men will find a God to worship. The liberals left Christianity behind them, but they did not remain secularized. They embraced the sacred negro. What force can the pagan Right call upon to counter the liberals' faith?

There is moral force sufficient to defeat the statistically overwhelming hordes of colored barbarians and technocratic liberals, in the people of Old Europe. But if the Europeans reject their race, they will never know the God of their race who provided them with the moral force to fight the devil and all his works. The Ghost of Christmas Past bid Scrooge place his hand on his (the Ghost's) heart. At that moment Scrooge began to see. Our people of long ago lived in a different world than we live in now, because they placed their hands on the heart of the Christ Child. Once that divine-human connection was made, the people of Europe became the Christ-bearers, the people who had seen a great light. The modern Europe of Science, statistics, and the negro has no light in it. There is no Christmas in Babylon. Let us look to the Star of Bethlehem, the guiding light of our people, and leave the darkness of Babylon forever.

There is a real life hell much darker than Dante's fictional hell. It is the hell of a world that is made in the image of academia, a place where Satan reigns supreme through his satanically created demi-gods of color. To go from that world to the Christian Europe in which the Christ Child was honored and loved is to pass from darkness to light just as the repentant Scrooge passed from his hate-filled world of darkness to the light of Christ's love when he crossed the doorstep of his nephew's house. There was feasting, laughter, and love in that house because it was tenanted by people who loved the Christ Child. So did all the ancient Europeans and so should we, this Christmas and every Christmas. +

Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did NOT die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man, as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset; and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God Bless Us, Every One! – Charles Dickens' [A Christmas Carol](#)

Remembrances III: The Woman Who Loved Much

December 21, 2013

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances

To my readers: Our European ancestors knew, not by dint of reason, but by instinct, that faith and race are spiritually inseparable. A man who forsook his people would forsake his God. But the new European of the 20th century, the rational man, determined to divest himself of the “prejudices” of the past, divorced himself from his own people and sought to find divinity in and kinship with the sacred negro. What follows is a tale about the clash between the old Europe of faith and race and the new Europe of egotism, science, and negro worship. God bless all the old Europeans, and may you have a very Merry Christmas!



“The Last Lamp, Thames Embankment” – Rose Barton

The Woman Who Loved Much

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces His image in man. – [Edmund Burke](#)

I probably should be following some kind of chronological order with these remembrances, but I find that my memory will not conform to any chronological order. Maybe that’s for the best.

It was 1920, two years after the end of that War in which so many young European men lost their lives. I don’t think Europe ever recovered from that war, which started, I think, from a deep spiritual malaise. But I’ll leave that topic alone for the time being.

As I started to say, it was 1920, early April, when Ann Harris came to see me. She was an attractive woman in her mid-fifties whom I recognized as a semi-regular attendee at St. Johns. I had never spoken personally to Mrs. Harris, as all my requests for pastoral visits remained unanswered. So I was quite surprised when my secretary told me that a Mrs. Harris wanted to see me.

“Thank you for taking the time to see me,” Mrs. Harris said as she entered the room.

“That’s quite all right,” I said as I rose to shake her hand and show her to a seat. “How can I help you?”

“I don’t know that you can help me, Reverend, but I most certainly need help. I’m not a very demonstrative person, so I might look quite calm and collected, but I’m not. I’m at the end of all patience, all endurance, and all hope.”

“Do you know the Rev. Lyte’s hymn, ‘Abide with Me?’” I asked her.

“Yes, of course, I was raised in the Church of England.”

“Let’s kneel then and let the first verse of Lyte’s hymn be our prayer.”

We both knelt while I said the first verse of that beautiful hymn and prayer:

*Abide with me! Fast falls the eventide;
The darkness thickens. Lord with me abide.
When other helpers fail, and comforts flee,
Help of the helpless, O abide with me!*

“You’re the only man with whom I could pray like that without feeling like a complete ninny and a complete hypocrite.”

“How so? Do you usually find it difficult to pray?”

“Yes, for the simple reason that I don’t believe in God. Does that shock you?”

“No; European atheism is becoming more and more prevalent.”

“Why do you call it European atheism? Why not just call it atheism?”

“Because, I believe that Christ is the one true God. And the only people that have believed that, as a people, were the Europeans. One could say that the colored people of the world are atheists, in that they don’t believe in the true God, Jesus Christ, but the word ‘atheist’ is a European concept, and it refers to the Europeans’ rejection of Christ. I don’t know if I stated that very clearly.”

“I understand what you’re saying. Aren’t you worried about being called prejudiced and provincial for your views?”

“No.”

She laughed. “You know, I don’t think I’ve laughed once in the last four years.”

“Then I’m glad I made you laugh.”

“Why are the Europeans all becoming atheists, Reverend?”

"I didn't say they were all becoming atheists. But atheism, at least professed atheism, is becoming more widespread in Europe."

"Then I'll ask you again. Why is atheism becoming more widespread among Europeans?"

"I'm just one person, with one opinion, but it seems to me that the European intellectuals, particularly in France, which is always at the forefront of radicalism, think that they are too smart to believe in a provincial God who took flesh and dwelt among us."

"That's nothing new. There have always been a number of Voltaires and Rousseaus among the European intellectuals."

"Yes, but now the infection is more widespread, and for the first time the masses, what I call the peasants, whether they work with the soil or not, are becoming intellectualized and atheistic. And it all stems from a fear of being called stupid."

"You're not London-born and bred, are you, Reverend?"

"No, I'm a country boy. But I've grown to love this city and its people. How about yourself – were you born here?"

"Yes, I'm a Londoner, born and bred. My parents vacationed in the country, but that is all I ever saw of the countryside. Maybe I would have turned out better if I had been country-bred. You know – Constable and all that sort of stuff – looking out over God's creation and attending a small country church."

"There are atheists in the country as well as the city."

"I suppose there are, but still I can't help but wonder if I might have turned out better had I been country-bred. What do you think?"

"It's not for me to say that you haven't turned out well."

"But if I don't believe in God, how can you, as an Anglican clergyman, tell me that I've turned out all right?"

"There is someone in that book on the table who says judge not lest ye be judged."

"Yes, but that applies to the disposition of souls. It doesn't mean you can't judge an individual's actions or beliefs."

"You are a better debater than I am, Mrs. Harris."

"Now you're being condescending."

"Perhaps I am. You're quite right. We can and should judge the beliefs and actions of individuals and let God judge the disposition of souls. I do think atheism is an abomination, but I can't really be sure, on first acquaintance, that I can take your atheism at face value. I know it's often a mistake not to take an enemy at face value, and an atheist is my enemy, but there is a difference between a militant atheist who hates the light of the world, which is a contradiction – How do you hate a God who doesn't exist? – and a person who says, 'Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.' I take you to be the latter type. Am I wrong?"

"I pray that you are right. Now you've made me cry; I thought I was beyond tears and laughter, and you've brought them both on in the space of fifteen minutes."

"Here, it hasn't been used," I said, handing her a handkerchief.

"Thank you."

"It would be helpful if I could get a better idea of your particular problem, then I could..."

"You could help me or tell me I'm crazy and to stop wasting your time. I apologize. Of course you need something to respond to and I've spoken nothing but drivel."

"I don't agree — you most certainly have not been speaking drivel. I just need a starting point."

"I suppose I'm delaying, because it's a bit embarrassing, actually more than a bit, it's extremely embarrassing to air one's dirty family linen before a stranger."

"Am I a complete stranger to you, Mrs. Harris? I know we've never met socially, but you've heard and seen me in the pulpit."

"Yes, I have. And that is why I have sought you out and no other. In fact, I know much more about you than what I've gleaned from your sermons, although it was your sermons that first gave me the idea that maybe there was one man who could help me."

"Then give me a chance."

"I will, Reverend." And she began.

I was brought up a Victorian, in the best sense of the word. God, England, and the right were stuffed into me along with the tea and crumpets. And I was happy with that Victorian world, with its certainties, with its people, and with its God. And then I married. I'm going to sound terribly petty now, because I'm going to say horrible things about the man I married, Matthew Edmond Harris. But he is inextricably involved in my story and my son's story, so I must speak of him.

I married Matthew when I was twenty years old. He was thirty, of a good family, and very wealthy. In addition to wealth, he had charm, humor, intelligence, and good looks. My family had money, and I've never put much store in good looks in a man, so those two attributes were not what attracted me to Matthew. It was partly his charm, humor, and intelligence, but it was something else as well, something inside of me. You see I'm a romantic, or at least I was a romantic. And Matthew had served in the British Army. Even a girl with less of a romantic strain than me might have been attracted to Matthew for that reason. And with my love of all things Victorian, Matthew would have had to have been an Ethiopian or a Hottentot in order to undermine my determination to marry a bred-in-the-bone Englishman. But I quickly discovered that having served in the British Army, and quite bravely, does not automatically make a man into the perfect Englishman. Matthew was evil. If there is a devil, then Matthew is in league with him. You described my husband when you quoted from Walter Scott in your sermon last month."

"I believe that was four weeks ago last Sunday. I was talking about the swine in the Gospel who went over the cliff when they were possessed by the devils."

"Yes, that was the sermon. At some point you read Scott's description of the diabolical personality of Louis XI."

"The passage was from the preface to Scott's novel *Quentin Durward*. I think I have it on the shelf. Yes, here it is." I turned to the page and read:

Among those who were the first to ridicule and abandon the self-denying principles in which the young knight was instructed, and to which he was so carefully trained up, Louis the XIth of France was the chief. That Sovereign was of a character so purely selfish – so guiltless of entertaining any purpose unconnected with his ambition, covetousness, and desire of selfish enjoyment, that he almost seems an incarnation of the devil himself, permitted to do his utmost to corrupt our ideas of honour in its very source. Nor is it to be forgotten, that Louis possessed to a great extent that caustic wit which can turn into ridicule all that a man does for any other person's advantage but his own, and was, therefore, peculiarly qualified to play the part of a cold-hearted and sneering fiend.

"Yes, that's it. When you read that passage in church I thought that Scott must have been writing about my husband. He is the embodiment of the devil, in his caustic wit and in his detached, cold-hearted contempt for all sentiment and all honor codes."

"I must ask you, if you felt that way about your husband then why didn't you leave him? I'm not an advocate of divorce, but there are some cases where a separation is necessary."

"It's difficult to explain. I've been married 35 years. For the first two or three, I can't give an exact timetable, I was still enthralled with the man who fought for Britain. I put everything my husband said or did that seemed cruel or inhumane in a good light. This is easy to do if you've built up a false illusion that you are bound and determined to maintain against all the world."

"What did your parents think of Matthew?"

"They were delighted with him. He seemed the perfect English gentleman. I can't blame them for my marriage however; I thought the same thing about Matthew and I had spent a great deal more time with him than they did."

"Was there any one incident that made you start believing that your husband was not the man you had thought he was when you married him?"

"No, it was mainly just a gradual awareness of his true nature, but there was one particular incident that, looking back on it now, rather highlighted Matthew's nature.

"The papers were full of a tragic drowning of a young child and of an old retired soldier who had dived into the Thames to try and save the child. I asked Matthew if the soldier had been in his regiment. Matthew told me point blank he hadn't the slightest interest in the death of a little street urchin or the pathetic rescue attempt and death of a doddering old fool who had once served in the same regiment as he did.

"I served in the military because it amused me to do so, not because of some stupid-God-save -the-Queen nonsense,' Matthew said, without the slightest concern for how I might take such a callous statement."

"Your disillusionment was in the early years of your marriage?"

"Yes, but I didn't leave him upon my disillusionment because I thought – or rather, hoped – that he'd change. Then the years went by and Matthew didn't change, but I changed. I lost my faith in everything. I hated Matthew's beliefs, but I had been beaten down by Matthew's constant intellectual contempt for everything I once held dear. Had I become like him? And if I was like him, by what right did I judge him? I don't expect any answer to those questions, Reverend, I'm just letting you know my state of mind. Maybe it is as you said. I want to believe, so in that I am not like Matthew, who has no desire to believe in anything outside of himself."

"Here, take this glass of sherry, it will help calm your nerves."

"Am I drinking alone?"

"Yes, you'll have to permit me a rather puritanical abstinence. It was a promise I made to my mother."

"Like David Balfour's promise to his mother about gambling?"

"Yes."

"Then I'll have to drink alone. I didn't know about your mother, Reverend, but I do know that you were married and lost your wife early in your marriage. I believe you were the curate at a country parish at the time."

"Yes, I was."

"A few years later you came to St. John's."

"That is also correct, but why have you taken the trouble to learn so much about me?"

"I told you, because you are my last hope. I also know about your war record, but then that is fairly common knowledge."

"I didn't fight in the war; I merely served as a chaplain to British troops from 1915 to 1916."

"Merely served as a chaplain?"

"Yes."

"If you merely served as a chaplain then why did you receive a medal for valor? Don't bother to answer that, Reverend. I'll tell you why. At the beginning of the day on May 1st, 1915, you were performing a service behind the lines, which by midday had become the front lines, and you were pinned down with the rest of the troops. The British infantry charged, trying to regain the ground they had lost, but they failed and left – what was it? I've heard there were as many as twenty wounded British soldiers pinned down in no man's land."

"There were nineteen."

"Ah, so you do remember."

"Of course, I do. I've never forgotten anything from that hideous war."

"Well, there was no reaching those wounded men. The fire from the German batteries was too intense. So everybody said. But there was one man who thought differently. Back and forth he went in the face of certain death, and he brought back all of the nineteen wounded men. Five died of their wounds, but fourteen others recovered. All because one man had enough faith in his God to walk through the valley of the shadow of death for his fellow men. That man was you, Reverend Grey. And I need such a man now."

"You spoke of your son. Is he your reason for coming here?"

"Yes. He has just turned 19, so thankfully he missed that abominable war, but he is becoming his father's son. He holds nothing sacred but his own intellect, which he thinks quite highly of. He holds me in contempt and only respects the opinions of my husband and the caustic wits my husband has gathered around him."

"What type of men are your husband's friends?"

"He doesn't have any friends – he is incapable of friendship. What he has are intellectual acquaintances. And they run a gamut of Orientals, psychiatrists, Darwinists, French *avant garde* artists, and Roman Catholic theologians. Yes, even Roman Catholic theologians. You see, my husband converted to Roman Catholicism about two years into our marriage. It wouldn't have been such a horrendous thing if he had converted because he believed that Christ was the Son of God, but that didn't enter into his mind at all. He converted because he thought that Roman Catholicism is the most syncretistic of all religions. 'It combines the quietism of Buddhism with the natural theology and nature worshipping aspects of the mystery religions, such as Isis and Cybele.' It all sounds like complete bosh when I repeat it, but when they're all gathered around my husband, spouting similar bosh, one feels drawn into their orbit."

"I understand. And your son, does he attend these gatherings?"

"Yes, unfortunately he does. I tried my best, in his younger years, to minimize his contact with his father. Not that his father desired contact with him when he was young; he didn't. But now that he is older, Matthew delights in spiritually debauching his son. And even if I've lost faith in everything, I don't want my son to lose faith in everything."

"You haven't lost faith in everything, Mrs. Harris. If you had, you wouldn't be so concerned about your son's loss of faith."

"I hope you're right about that."

"Is there some way I could meet with your son without it being an official meeting?"

"Yes, there is. My husband has what he calls 'intellectual gatherings' at least twice a month. My son doesn't attend all of them because he is in his first year at Oxford, but when he's home from school he attends. This coming Saturday night he'll be home and in attendance. Can you come to dinner?"

"Yes, if nothing comes up, I think I can make it, but will your husband want me to be invited? I gather these dinners are rather exclusive affairs."

"I'm allowed to invite whomever I want. I haven't invited anyone for years because I don't want to see my friends dragged through the filth of one of my husband's 'intellectual gatherings.'"

"But you don't mind if I get dragged through filth?" I asked, smiling.

She laughed again. "I didn't say that very well. Of course I mind..."

"There is no need to explain. I was just teasing you. What it amounts to is this: You've selected me as your champion, and I accept."

"Why, yes, I guess that is what I've done. But let me warn you, Reverend, you'll be all alone. Whatever clergymen that will be there will be against you, whether they are Anglican or Roman Catholic. Did you know the Reverend Hunter, formerly of this parish?"

"Of course, I served as his assistant here for five years."

"Well, he used to attend my husband's little gatherings, and he got along quite well with Matthew."

"I'm sorry to hear that. The Reverend Hunter was a very mild mannered man; maybe he just didn't want to offend your husband."

"No, it wasn't that. Reverend Hunter was a syncretistic Christian, and he didn't have any problems with Matthew's religion."

"That is a tragedy."

"Yes, it is. I don't suppose I'm being fair to you; I'm really throwing you to the wolves."

"Don't look on it that way. You've asked me for help, and I intend to give it my best, but human beings are complicated: your son might remain under your husband's influence despite my best efforts."

"He probably will, but I have that small glimmer of hope."

"This particular meeting – will there be a large number of guests?"

"Yes, there will be. There are always about 20 of the regulars, an assortment of academics, journalists, and scientists. There is one particular gentleman whom I find particularly loathsome; he is some kind of Oriental who dabbles in the occult sciences. I believe he runs an opium den which I'm sure Matthew frequents, and which I'm afraid my son has been to with his father on several occasions."

"You suspect this or do you know this?"

"I know it. Not because I've seen Matthew or George at the opium den, but I still know it."

"I understand."

"Besides the regulars, there will be twelve to twenty semi-regular guests. This particular meeting will feature the psychoanalyst Sigmund Freud."

"The Sigmund Freud?"

"Yes, he is a disgusting-looking man in his mid-sixties, horribly pretentious and always babbling on about his psychoanalytic work. Matthew simply loves him; this is his fourth visit to the house."

"What do the other guests think of Freud?"

"They all kowtow to him. They're all afraid of being psychoanalyzed, particularly Father Braxton."

"Who is Father Braxton?"

"A Roman Catholic priest, one of the regulars. You'd think he'd be against Freud, but he isn't. 'There is no ultimate conflict between psychoanalytic theory and religion. They both come from the same source.' That's his stock reply to Freud every time Freud attends one of Matthew's gatherings."

"I'm not sure exactly what Father Braxton means when he says there is no ultimate conflict between psychoanalytic theory and religion. There certainly is a conflict, at least there is a conflict between Christianity and psychoanalytic theory."

"I haven't the foggiest idea what he means about anything, Reverend. Maybe you'll get some idea when you meet him."

"Are there ever any guests who are not debunkers and scoffers?"

"Yes, sometimes one of the special guests is an Englishman of the old stock, a retired military man or a conservative member of Parliament. But those guests are few and far between, and they are invited so the other guests and Matthew – Matthew, in particular – can ridicule them. They do it quite well. But you'll be the first – how shall I put it – believing country curate that has ever attended one of these gatherings."

"But I'm not a country curate."

"Yes, you are, Reverend; in my eyes you shall always be a country curate. A country curate who came to the city, but still a country curate whose faith is invincible."

"That's a tall order."

"Yes, it is, but you're my last hope."

I was able to keep the dinner date on Saturday night. There were no emergency sick calls or anything of that nature. Perhaps God intended that there should be none.

I regarded my upcoming meeting with Matthew Harris as a battle between good and evil. Fully aware of my own sinful nature, I still was, in my view, a Christian soldier about to do battle with Satan's minions. I didn't regard this meeting as a friendly discussion – I knew it was to be a war, a much more subtle war than an outright military war, and hence a much more difficult war.

I've talked to parents, many years after their children were grown, who told me there were many situations regarding their children's upbringing that even with many years of hindsight they were not sure whether they had said or done the right thing. Such is the case with me. So many years later I still don't know if what I said or did was the very best thing that could have been said or done, but like the parents, I was the one God had chosen to be there in that particular situation. I did my best.

I should let the reader in on one more thing before I describe that rather eventful Saturday evening. I have what is called a photographic memory. This doesn't mean I can recall all the minutiae of my life in accurate detail. It does mean that books, articles, and conversations which I consciously commit to my memory stay there and I can recall them verbatim many years afterwards. So my recollections of what was said at this particular meeting are accurate.

I won't bore you with the particulars of the Harris mansion. To some these particulars might be more interesting than the conversations that took place, but I'm not particularly interested in conveying those particulars. Suffice it to say that the Harris home was a magnificent Victorian-styled mansion, in which everything was in perfect taste, all kept in order by the usual array of servants. After a few niceties and introductions, I was seated at the dinner table on the left side of Matthew Harris. Sigmund Freud was seated on Mr. Harris' right. Mrs. Harris, who hadn't been attending the gatherings for the last three months, was seated next to me, and her son, George, was seated next to her. I need not go into the rest of the seating arrangements; the assortment of intellectual jackals that Mrs. Harris had told me of were scattered around the dining table. I'll recount only the conversation that I participated in.

Matthew Harris: I hope you don't mind, Reverend Grey, that I didn't have anyone say grace. Too many different religions present, you understand.

Rev. Grey: Yes, I understand.

Matthew Harris: My wife said you were a teetotaler, so we didn't serve you any wine.

Father Braxton: I'm surprised at you, Reverend Grey; I've heard you're High Church.

Mrs. Harris: It was a promise to his mother, leave it at that, won't you, Father?

Braxton: I'm sorry, I meant no offense.

Rev. Grey: None taken, Father.

Harris: My dear, it's not necessary for you to take offense at every comment we make that is directed at the Reverend Grey. After all, if Reverend Grey is to be your champion you must let him fight his own battles.

Mrs. Harris: Who said he was here to be my champion?

Matthew Harris: No one said it, my dear, but it is quite obvious. You haven't attended one of these dinners for several months, and you haven't invited a guest of your own for over a year, so I must assume that you have invited the Reverend Grey here to be your champion, to fight your evil, devil-worshipping husband. Isn't that about the gist of it, my dear, loving wife?

Mrs. Harris: I'll have my dinner in my room. Please don't get up, gentlemen.

Matthew Harris: It's a pity she didn't want to stay. I'm sure this will be quite an interesting evening. Dr. Freud, what do you make of a woman who believes in knights errant when she is in her mid-fifties?

Freud: I'd rather not say.

Matthew Harris: Go ahead, you're among friends.

Freud: Since you ask, I'd say such a woman was suffering from a neurosis. She obviously connects knights errant with a masculine representation of the deity. She must have been severely repressed in childhood and she hopes that a knight errant can release her from her repressed state. It's a common neurosis of women who have been raised in Victorian England.

Matthew Harris: What do you say to that, Rev. Grey?

Rev. Grey: It's nonsense.

Freud: I beg your pardon, I don't speak nonsense. I have dedicated my life to the scientific study of human beings. Never before has there been such work done. In Vienna we have begun the work that will unlock the mysteries of the unconscious, and by doing so we will solve all the problems that plague mankind.

Rev. Grey: Will you solve man's greatest problem?

Freud: And what is that?

Rev. Grey: That he must die.

Freud: Yes, we can solve that problem. We can teach men not to fear death.

Rev. Grey: Only one man is capable of that, Dr. Freud, and that man isn't you or me.

Matthew Harris: It didn't take you long to bring Jesus of Nazareth into the argument. But really, Reverend, isn't that a bit of — how shall I say it — a cowardly retreat? You will cloak yourself in righteousness and expect us to run and hide because you have invoked Jesus Christ. But that won't wash here. We're all Thomists. You must base your arguments on reason and science, not on fairy tales.

Rev. Grey: But suppose I don't accept your initial premise that reason — and in particular your reason — is capable of understanding existence. Suppose my heart, filled with fairy tales and intuitions, is greater than your reason.

George Harris: You can't say such things, Rev. Grey, because you can't enter into any rational conversation by denying the primacy of reason.

Rev. Grey: Why can't I?

George Harris: Because it's irrational.

Matthew Harris: My son is right. There really is no point in discussing anything with a man who denies the primacy of reason.

Rev. Grey: You both are behaving like petulant children. You make up your own rules for an absurd game, and then you cry when one of the neighborhood children refuses to play the game by your rules.

Freud: I think it is you, Rev. Grey, who is behaving like a petulant child. You insist on playing with your baby toys even after you've become an adult, and you want the rest of us to get down on the floor and play with your baby toys as well. This we won't do.

Rev. Grey: What are the baby toys you refer to, Dr. Freud?

Freud: The Christian religion is a baby toy, a comforter, for childish adults. In my work *Moses and Monotheism* I show that...

Rev. Grey: I've read that book.

Freud: You surprise me – I would have thought, in your repressed, neurotic state of mind, that you would have avoided the book.

Rev. Grey: I didn't. I need to know what the enemy is up to.

Matthew Harris: Please, Reverend, let's not use terms like 'the enemy.' We're all rational, thinking type men here.

Rev. Grey: I'm not. I'm a bundle of prejudices, and so are you. So are we all.

Freud: I challenge that statement.

George Harris: So do I.

Rev. Grey: All right, let's take Dr. Freud's book, *Moses and Monotheism*, as an example. Correct me if I misinterpret. Your basic premise is that somewhere back in the mists of time a clan of primitives killed their father and then slept with their mother, thus causing some underlying guilt in what you call the psyche or the unconscious. The Hebrew people later repeated this primal crime when they killed Moses in the desert.

Enter the Christian faith. The father demands a blood sacrifice from the Son, and the Son complies. This helps the adherents of such a sacrificial religion to assuage their primal guilt. Hence the enormous appeal, for a time, of the Christian religion. Have I stated your case correctly, Dr. Freud?

Freud: You've put it a bit crudely, but you've stated my contention accurately.

Rev. Grey: All right then. I have this question for you: Let's pretend what you say about the primitives' crime is correct. Why the guilt? If men are no different from beasts, then why should they feel guilty about patricide and incest?

Freud: Because it is in men to feel guilt about such things.

Rev. Grey: That answer won't do. It's too mystical, Dr. Freud. If you tell me such guilt is just in man, I'll demand that you tell me who put the guilt in man. And please take note that I've conceded your farfetched theory of primitive patricide and incest and still found holes in that theory. But your whole theory is very likely founded, not on any rational basis, but on your *a priori* prejudice against the Christian Faith.

Freud: I don't base my theories on prejudices, I base them on careful scientific research.

Rev. Grey: That is utter nonsense. Were you in that primitive cave in a lab coat when the patricide and the incest took place?

Braxton: I think your colleague Dr. Jung might reconcile you two. Rev. Grey has a point, albeit a minor one; there is a kind of cosmic oversoul that informs our unconscious. Don't you think so, Dr. Freud?

Freud: No, I don't think so. And Dr. Jung is my former colleague precisely because he did think so.

Braxton: I still think we are merely quibbling over terms. Why can't the oversoul be the rational element in man? And why can't our reason have a conscience?

Matthew Harris: There is no ethical element in reason.

Braxton: But then where is the ethical element in man?

Matthew Harris: He has none.

Braxton: I don't follow you. Surely our reason makes ethical choices?

Matthew Harris: Ethics are mere intellectual constructs. They have no basis in fact. Just as all religions are mere intellectual constructs. They have no basis in fact.

Braxton: I still think there is some kind of oversoul...

Freud: I concur with Mr. Harris. And I suppose, Reverend Grey, that you agree with Father Braxton.

Rev. Grey: I have no idea what Father Braxton is talking about, so I can't agree or disagree with him. My beliefs are not that complicated.

Matthew Harris: Meaning?

Rev. Grey: I believe that Jesus of Nazareth was who He said He was.

Matthew Harris: Then you weren't joking earlier. You are full of fairy tales and prejudices!

Rev. Grey: Yes, I am.

George Harris: Doesn't the advent of science make you question your prejudices? I don't see how an intelligent man, a man who knows science, can hold to any religion except in broad symbolic terms.

Rev. Grey: Do you love your mother, George?

George Harris: What kind of question is that?

Rev. Grey: It's a rather straight-forward question, but you don't have to answer it. But if you had answered yes to the question, I would have asked you if you loved a symbol of your mother or your actual flesh-and-blood mother.

Matthew Harris: Human beings are not capable of love; they have affinities, that is all.

Rev. Grey: What are affinities?

Matthew Harris: Animal instincts. Even animals nurse their young and teach them how to survive in the world. It doesn't connote love, it's just an instinct.

Rev. Grey: From whence comes that instinct?

Matthew Harris: It just comes — there is no source.

Rev. Grey: You're too mystical for me, Mr. Harris.

Freud: Studying man as part of nature is not mysticism, it is science, Rev. Grey. And I'm surprised that even a clergyman, in this day and age, could be so obtuse.

Rev. Grey: You're in for even more surprises, Freud, before this evening is over.

Matthew Harris: Let's keep this gathering civil.

Rev. Grey: Why should we keep this gathering civil?

Matthew Harris: Because we are all rational... but I forgot you don't consider yourself a rational man. We shall all have to keep that in mind as the evening progresses and deal with you in kind, Grey.

Rev. Grey: That's fine. I'd prefer that we all become open, uncivil enemies rather than hypocritical, civil friends.

Braxton: I really must protest. Surely we can all be civil, using nature as our starting point and reason as our guide – we can...

Matthew Harris: No, Grey has bared his fangs and whatever happens is on his head. Dinner is over gentlemen. Let's adjourn to the drawing room.

The gentlemen – and I use the term loosely – all adjourned to the drawing room and broke up into little groups. Father Braxton left my group and joined another more congenial group of men. An opium-soaked Oriental in his mid-sixties who taught Oriental studies at the university and was supposed to be some sort of mystical genius joined our group, consisting of Freud, Matthew Harris, and his son George. The only other newcomer to our group was a professor of chemistry who claimed to be some sort of Bentonite who believed that "everything comes down to chemistry."

Oriental: I couldn't help overhearing some of what you said at the dinner table, Rev. Grey...

Matthew Harris: We are dispensing with titles. Just call him Grey.

Oriental: I couldn't possibly do that. I never dispense with titles.

Matthew Harris: Suit yourself.

Oriental: As I was saying, Rev. Grey, I think you are confusing essences when you champion Christianity over all other religions. The belief that God can take flesh is in conflict with the higher wisdom of all true religions. The spiritual life is in the mind which cannot become one with a material body. Pure contemplation allows for no intercommunion between gross matter and spiritual essences.

Rev. Grey: I don't understand what you are saying. You say the material cannot be spiritualized. But doesn't our own experience in material bodies give the lie to your assertion? Didn't He show us that the body is ultimately a personal, spiritual entity?

Oriental: I don't see that at all.

Matthew Harris: I don't see how you can be so blind, Grey. Surely it is the mind and the mind only that can know anything about existence.

Freud: Quite right, it is the mind that informs the body. The body is simply a biological entity.

Rev. Grey: Why is the mind any less of a biological entity than the body? The mind will rot in the grave just as quickly as the body. If you're going to be an atheist, Dr. Freud, be consistent. We all are dependent on a spiritual power that animates the mind and the body. I say that power is a personal God who has made Himself known to us.

Freud: Hogwash.

Bentonite: That's terribly unscientific. We are just chemicals, that is all. I'm surprised to find a Reverend that believes in that sort of thing in these times.

Rev. Grey: Why do "these times" and "in this day and age" preclude the belief that Jesus Christ is true God and true man?

Bentonite: Because such a belief is unscientific.

Rev. Grey: Modern science is a relatively new discipline, and I don't see it as an infallible source of knowledge.

Bentonite: I do.

Freud: So do I, so long as psychiatry is recognized as a science.

George Harris: But there is that point about the guilt, Dr. Freud. Why should those first men have felt guilty about sleeping with their mother and murdering their father? Why the guilt?

Freud: As I've already stated, it's in man's nature to feel guilty about such things.

George Harris: But why is it in his nature to do so?

Freud: Are you taking Grey's side?

George Harris: No, I just thought that he brought up an interesting point.

Matthew Harris: It's not the least bit interesting or pertinent. Grey is a sleight-of-hand carney man.

Bentonite: No, I think he's sincere, but misguided.

Matthew Harris: Have it your way, but I think I know the type.

Freud: This whole discussion does show the limitations of rational discourse with those who are irrational.

Rev. Grey: Yes, there are limits to rationality.

Freud: That's not what I said.

Oriental: The Reverend is playing with all of us. But I think I could cure his Christ complex better than you, Dr. Freud.

Freud: How?

Oriental: With opium. One can see so clearly under its influence. It truly is the drug of the gods, and I mean that metaphorically.

Matthew Harris: I don't think our teetotaler would take opium. He'd be afraid of what he'd see under its influence.

Oriental: Would you be afraid, Rev. Grey?

Rev. Grey: I don't believe in the god opium, so it would not serve any purpose, except a satanic one, if I were to indulge in opium.

Matthew Harris: See, he's afraid. All of these Christers are. They use Christ to cover up their cowardice.

Rev. Grey: You are an older man than I, and a physically weaker man than I, Mr. Harris, but I warn you I am not a pacifist when faced with blasphemy. Curb your tongue when you speak of Him or you'll... well, you won't like what happens.

Matthew Harris responded to my warning with an obscene, blasphemous remark. That was the end of the after dinner conversation. I picked up Mr. Harris and deposited him, kicking and cursing, in the fountain in front of the house. He called to his servants to stop me, but they were not able to break my hold on Harris. In fact, they ended up in the fountain with him.

The incident was noted in the newspapers. I saved the accounts that appeared in the two major papers. It's interesting: both papers got the facts right, but they presented completely different views of the incident. The *Guardian*, which was a conservative paper, viewed me as a "battling parson," fighting against the forces of atheism, while the *Chronicle* depicted me as a big bully, ruthlessly beating an older man and his negro servants.

From *The Guardian*

Last night at approximately 10 pm an incident occurred at the home of Matthew Harris, a prominent figure in London social circles and a former Captain during the African wars. In recent years, Mr. Harris has been primarily known for the intellectual gatherings at his home, where he entertains a rogues' gallery of anti-English, anti-Christian intellectuals and troublemakers.

It's not apparent at this time why Reverend Grey was invited to the gathering, but it is apparent that Reverend Grey attended, felt that his God was insulted, and acted accordingly. Matthew Harris was not struck by the Reverend, who used to be a pretty fair country wrestler, but merely deposited in a fountain on the front lawn of the Harris mansion. As for the Negro servants who tried to aid their employer, quite large, healthy, young men, they too were deposited in the fountain when they tried to lay hands on Reverend Grey. The incident should not be the cause of Reverend Grey's removal from St. John's. He has an excellent record in the community as a man of charity and good works. The battling parson was simply defending the church of Christ.

From *The Chronicle*

A rather shocking incident occurred last night in the Green Street section of London, near Hyde Park. It seems that the pastor of St. John's in London, one Reverend Christopher Grey, assaulted Matthew Harris while a house guest of Mr. Harris. The incident started, apparently, over some kind of religious dispute. The distinguished psychiatrist, Dr. Sigmund Freud, who has given many lectures in London, was also present, and he has told reporters that the Reverend Grey was very aggressive from the first moment he set foot in the house, being most uncivil to Mr. Harris and all of his guests. "For no reason whatsoever that I could see, the Reverent Grey assaulted Mr. Harris and the negro servants," Dr. Freud related.

Why was such a man ordained a pastor in the English church? And why is such a man allowed to remain a pastor in the English church? These are questions that demand answers.

So, was I dismissed from my position? No, I was not. There was some talk of a suspension, but that was squelched by a tremendous outpouring of support from my parishioners. After the sermon on the Sunday following the dinner party, I briefly addressed my parishioners:

"Most of you must have heard by now that I was involved in an altercation with a London man, at that man's house, where I was a guest. I will simply say that I am not ashamed of my actions. A man does not cease to be a man, with all the obligations of a man, when he puts on a clerical collar. I did what I hope all Christian Englishmen would have done in the same situation. So, there will be no apologies from me, but I will abide by my superiors' decision regarding any disciplinary measures. Thank you all for your concern about my welfare. Now, let us resume the service."

The moral climate in 1920 in England was still a Victorian moral climate. An Englishman was still expected to be chivalrous. Some 40 years later the moral climate has changed drastically. I have no doubt that if a similar incident had occurred today I would have been summarily dismissed from my duties and most probably would have done jail time. But in 1920 I was not dismissed nor was I arrested.

Two weeks after the dinner party Mrs. Harris came to see me again. I was glad to see her because I was afraid I had disappointed her. I was supposed to have been her "last hope," and I hadn't made a very good start, or so I thought.

"Thank you, again, for seeing me," she said.

"No need to thank me."

"Have you had any trouble from your superiors over the incident? I'm afraid I haven't been in touch with the parish news in the last two weeks."

"No, they were surprisingly lenient about the incident."

"I'll bet it was because of the support you got from your people."

"How did you know?"

"I've seen how they love you."

"It's extraordinary, because I've done so little for them."

"They don't see it that way."

"No, it doesn't appear that they do, but what about you – did I make a terrible mess of everything?"

"No, as it turns out, you didn't. Matthew was livid after the incident. He called you every foul name under the sun, threatened to challenge you to a duel, then to have you arrested, then to have you severely beaten. But when he had calmed down the next morning he came into the breakfast room and just stared at me in a very odd manner, and then he said, 'I congratulate you, Ann Harris. You found the one man in England who actually believes all that rot. He is going to be quite an antagonist. Oh, don't worry, I'll crush him in the end, and I'll enjoy doing it, but I still congratulate you. You're never dead so long as you hate. And your hate for me has led you to that anachronism.'

"I told him it was not my hate for him so much as my love for our son that had led me to you, but he was having none of that. 'You don't love George any more than I do. He is just part of your ego that you don't want to part with.' What could I say to that? It isn't true – it couldn't be true. I do love my son."

"I know you do."

"Do you mean that?"

"Yes, I know you love your son."

"Thank you, Reverend."

"Here, it hasn't been used."

"You always seem to make me cry, but I'm not complaining. It feels good to cry when you thought you were beyond tears."

"What did your son think of the evening, or was it too difficult to tell?"

"There was no instant conversion, but neither you nor I expected that type of result from one dinner party, did we?"

"No, of course not. But was there anything that we can build on?"

"Possibly. He kept coming back to the 'why the guilt' question until he got his father quite angry, and they had words. Later both Matthew and my son minimized their argument, but there was definitely a slight rift in their relationship. I don't really understand the context of your discussion, but I was glad something was said that got my son thinking along some other lines than those of Freud, that Chinaman, and my husband."

"I'll admit that when I first heard about the dunking I was afraid my last hope was gone. But neither my son nor the guests seemed particularly upset about the dunking. They said it was uncalled for and uncivilized, but at the same time I think they were rather impressed that a man 'in this day and age' – that's always the catch phrase: 'in this day and age' – should be concerned about blasphemy. Now tell me, Reverend, just between you and me, did you plan that little demonstration?"

"No, I did not."

"Then you really were outraged."

"Yes."

"I envy you."

"Why?"

"Because you can believe in Christ enough to be outraged when He is insulted."

"You are outraged too, Mrs. Harris, or else you never would have come to me."

"Back to that again: 'Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.'"

"Precisely."

"Possibly, we'll see about that. Now back to this business of my son, who is, for me, the subject of and the reason for this war with my husband."

"What would you suggest? I don't think I'd be welcome at another dinner party."

"No, you wouldn't be welcome. But my son is going back to Oxford this week. I'd like you to come up and see him with me."

"Would he accept that?"

"I think he would. His father never comes up to see him, and I think that bothers him. Oh, he tries to feign that he is just like his father – no sentimentality and other such 'rot' – but I think he is offended that his father has never done fatherly things with him when he was growing up and still has no interest in his life at Oxford."

"Whom does he associate with at the college?"

"I'm not sure about his student friends, but I do know about his friendship with Professor Min Chang."

"Didn't I meet him at the dinner party?"

"Yes."

"He wanted to solve our quarrel with opium. That seems to be his god."

"Yes, it does. Supposedly he is a professor of Oriental languages, but I think he is simply an opium pusher and addict."

"Do you think your son is taking opium?"

"Yes, I think he is. I don't know how far it has gone, but I'm afraid for him, so afraid."

"I can get away next Friday. Will that be soon enough?"

"I hope so. And really, I can't thank you enough."

When Friday came around I was somewhat delayed, so I called Mrs. Harris and told her to go on up to Oxford ahead of me. I told her I'd be there a few hours later and then we could have dinner with her son instead of lunch.

I never really adjusted to the automobile; the horse-drawn hansom cab was good enough for me. But they never asked for my opinion before they started making automobiles. So after the train ride to Oxford I took a cab to the college. When I arrived at the place on campus where I was to meet George and Mrs. Harris, I was surprised to find no one in sight. My first thought was that they were still chatting in George's room and had forgotten the time. My second thought was that George had refused to see me. This posed a dilemma. I have always avoided trying to be too overt in my efforts to help people who don't want my help. I've found that such 'help' is usually quite harmful, because human beings are fiercely independent creatures who do not like someone else's idea of what is good imposed on them. I first look for some internal assent to my help before venturing into someone's life. But in this case, Mrs. Harris had asked for my help and had also told me she thought she saw a glimmer of a cry for help within her son. Based on her word, which I knew could be wishful thinking, I decided to try to find Mrs. Harris and her son and risk being told to leave by George Harris.

One inquiry brought me to George's rooms. I knocked, and a rather annoyed voice bid me enter. "Hunter, what the devil are you bothering me for, you know I have to study for this God awful... Oh, sorry, Reverend, I thought you were someone else."

"Yes, I gathered that; you thought I was Hunter, and you are trying to study for an exam."

"Yes, I'm afraid I've done too little studying this term, and if I don't buckle down I'll be sent down. Hunter gets by without studying, and he just assumes the rest of us can get by just like him. But I can't."

"Nor could I. Most of us are plodders, not race horses."

"Exactly! And it's a damn nuisance – pardon my language – to be rooming with a race horse."

"I see your problem, but I'm adding to it. I was looking for George Harris and his mother. I was supposed to be meeting with them."

"Oh, well... I'm sorry to be the one to tell you this, Reverend, but George is down at the police station. It seems they wanted to question him. Something to do with that terrible Chinaman he is so fond of. I don't know any of the details — the police didn't take me into their confidence — all I can tell you is that George is down at the police station."

"Do you know if his mother is there?"

"I suppose she is, because I told her the same thing I'm telling you."

"I thank you, and I hope you aren't sent down."

"Oh, I'll be all right, so long as I stay away from Hunter. Good luck, Reverend, if that doesn't sound too impudent."

"No, it doesn't, and thank you."

I wish I had known Johnathan Talbot back then, because it would've helped to have had a friend at Scotland Yard. Not that anyone at the Yard was less than courteous; they were courteous. But that is all they were. I couldn't find out anything about George Harris or Mrs. Harris. 'I'm sorry, no comment,' was all I got. So finally, having gone from London to Oxford, to Scotland Yard in London, I stumbled back to the rectory at approximately 1 a.m. I had a service in the morning and other duties, so I had to, whether I liked it or not, put George Harris and his mother on the back burner for awhile.

They didn't stay on the back burner very long however. After the 8 o'clock service, Mrs. Harris was waiting for me in my office. She looked as if she had been up all night, which in fact was the case. She had walked the streets near St. John's all night and then waited for the service to end. There was no preliminary hellos or anything when she saw me.

"George has been arrested for the murder of Min Chang, that hideous Chinaman." At first Mrs. Harris was unable to give a coherent account of what had transpired during the evening prior to our scheduled visit with George, but after several false starts she finally gave me an account of George's arrest. "I'm telling you what George told me, Reverend. And you can write me off as a mother who refuses to accept the fact that her son is a murderer – I'm certain everyone else will – but I believe what George told me."

"He said that Min Chang had become friends with him almost as soon as he got to the university, telling him he knew his father, and George was flattered that a professor, especially a professor of Oriental studies (because as you know everything English is now supposed to be inferior) was interested in becoming friends with him."

"The opium didn't come into play at first, just long discussions about philosophy and ethics. And in all these discussions everything traditionally English, such as honor, chivalry, and faith in Christ was seen as juvenile and intellectually inferior to the great wisdom of the Orient. The ridicule of everything English was not new to George — he had got that from his father — but his father never gave him a substitute. George needed something to believe in besides the ridicule of everything English. Of course this is my interpretation of George's spiritual state at the time he became friends with Min Chang, based on the information he gave me about his friendship with the man. It's quite likely George would not agree with me about his motivations for becoming friends with Min Chang."

"For the first year of the friendship George steered clear of the opium. He accompanied Min Chang to the opium dens, which were right out of *Edwin Drood* he told me, but he didn't at first take the opium. It was in the second year of the friendship, after Min Chang introduced him to his daughter, from all accounts a beautiful young Oriental girl about 17 years old, that George started taking the opium with Chang. From that moment he was hooked on the opium, the girl, and the philosophy of Min Chang. And it stayed that way for the next two years. Chang was milking him for money, which his father furnished him with, and besides that I think Chang got a perverse pleasure in corrupting a young Englishman."

"But something happened that Chang didn't bargain for. George went to him that evening, the evening in which Chang was killed, and asked for his daughter's hand in marriage. That's when Min Chang told him the girl was not his daughter but his mistress. He called her in and asked her if she wanted to marry a young, handsome Englishman. She laughed, and so did Min Chang. They both thought it was a big joke."

"George didn't see the humor of the situation, so he lunged at Chang in order to strangle him, but two of Chang's servants got between them and managed to keep my son from ever touching Min Chang. He was thrown out into the street cursing, screaming, and hurling death threats at Min Chang."

"George wandered the streets for a couple hours, stopping in at some of the pubs for drinks, and then wandering the streets again. He told me that everything he ever felt for the Chinese girl died as soon as they laughed."

"Mother, it was a laugh from hell. The hell I'm not supposed to believe in. But I do believe in hell and the devil. I've seen both in the devilish laughs of Min Chang and his concubine. It was indescribable. I felt the presence of the evil one in the room. And I knew in an instant that I never loved a real woman; I loved a horrid dream of some Oriental paradise, devoid of all the pain and suffering of my English world. I'm the world's biggest fool. But you know, mother, I swear to you, though I wanted to kill that fiend, I never got the chance. I climbed back into his house to... I don't know what I intended, but when I entered his room and told him not to speak, until I had finished what I wanted to say, he seemed so still that I thought maybe he was in an opium stupor. But when I got closer to his bed, I saw what I thought was death on his face. I pulled back the bedclothes... there was a dagger in his heart. Foolishly – I told you I'm the world's biggest fool – I grabbed the hilt of the dagger and started to pull it out. I don't know why I did that, I just did it. Just as I pulled the dagger out, May Lin, his mistress, the former "love" of my life, came in. She saw me standing there with the dagger and quite naturally screamed. I dropped the dagger, brushed by her, and made it out of the house before the servants could lay hands on me. But I had no thought of getting away. I knew she had recognized me. I went back to my room at the University. Why? Again, I couldn't say why. The police came and arrested me in the early morning hours."

"When I came to his room his roommate told me he was at the police station, not the local police station either, but Scotland Yard. Of course I went and spoke with him and he told me what I've just told you."

"Have you had any sleep?"

"No."

"There is a couch in my study. Please lie down there for a few hours while I go and see your son. I think they'll let me see him now. And then we'll talk, and we'll decide what is to be done."

"I must ask you one question, Reverend."

"Yes?"

"Do you think he murdered that man?"

"No, I do not."

"Thank you."

I didn't know how or if I'd be received by George Harris. Our first meeting had been rather acrimonious. But I had seen something in George on the night of the dinner party that made me hope he would not, if exposed to an opposed vision, go the way of his father. The first night at the jail did nothing to diminish my hope.

"It's kind of you to come and see me, Reverend. My own father has not seen fit to come."

"I'm sorry to hear that."

"But you're not surprised to hear it, are you?"

"No, unfortunately I'm not. I saw something in your father that is very rare."

"What?"

"He is a much more consistent liberal than his modern contemporaries. Most liberals spout their liberal blasphemies, but they only manage to adhere to a few of them. Your father really tries to hate all things English and all things Christian."

"You don't believe in a set of universal values then? A code of conduct that comes from the reason of men and not from God?"

"No, I do not. Everything we are that is good comes to us through the heart of God acting in the hearts of His people, not an abstract, universal people, but our people, our kith and our kin."

"I wish I had known you sooner."

"It's certainly not too late, George."

"I know it's not too late for that. And I'm not disparaging that. Now that I've seen the devil, I more than partially believe it all. I mean it's too late in terms of my life here on earth. I think it's either prison for life or death by hanging. They are going to convict me. A rather ghoulish ill-wisher in prison here showed me the latest edition of the liberal paper *The Chronicle*. They are urging an example be set, that Chinamen should have the same rights as Englishmen, and spoiled sons of the spoiled rich should not be allowed to kill them with impunity. That's funny, isn't it? My father was a good guy when he was 'assaulted' by you. Now he is a spoiled rich man with a spoiled son."

"I'm afraid, George, that it's a question of who is the least white. The liberals believe that there is nothing worse than a white man, particularly an English white man, so they want you to be guilty."

"And they will find me guilty, won't they?"

"Not if there is incontestable evidence that points to someone else."

"But there isn't any evidence pointing to anyone else. And the police are not looking for anyone else. They think they've found their murderer."

"When is your trial?"

"Four weeks from today."

"What does your solicitor say?"

"He says I should plead guilty and ask for mercy – life imprisonment instead of death."

"What did you tell him?"

"I told him to go to hell, that I was not guilty, and I was going to plead not guilty. I'll get another solicitor. I've got money – well, it's not my money, but I assume my loving father will at least give me the money for my lawyers. If I'm going to be tried for being a spoiled rich son, then I should at least have the benefits that accrue to a spoiled rich son."

"You've hardly been spoiled, George; you've been deprived. I'm sure there is money to be had for lawyers. But I don't have a great deal of respect for the current state of English law. Let me try to work on this from my own perspective. Maybe I can uncover something that the law is blind to. In the meantime, will you allow me to give you my blessing?"

"Yes, please do."

He knelt and I prayed:

Almighty God, king of all kings, and governor of all things, whose power no creature is able to resist, to whom it belongeth justly to punish sinners, and to be merciful to them that truly repent: Save and deliver us (we humbly beseech thee) from the hands of our enemies, abate their pride, assuage their malice, and confound their devices, that we, being armed with thy defense, may be preserved evermore from all perils to glorify thee, which art the only giver of all victory; through the merits of thy only son, Jesus Christ our Lord.

I spoke to George almost daily during the weeks preceding his trial. There was never one dramatic moment when George said, "Yes, I believe," but by the time of his trial George believed in the Man of Sorrows.

The trial did not go well though, largely, I think, because George's father failed to speak up for George. When Christian morality starts to fade, as it had in the British upper crust, those who hold the law in their hands come to regard the courtroom as a game room. The object is not to see justice done but to win the game.

Matthew Harris was popular in liberal circles because of his famous dinner parties where the rich and liberal were wined and dined, but Matthew Harris had nothing good or bad to say about his son. He simply said he hoped his son was innocent, but he couldn't say anything for or against his son's character because he didn't know his son's character: "How can anyone really know such things?"

With that kind of tepid support from his father, George was left naked to his enemies, the liberal press and the liberal academics from the University where Min Chang had taught. They wanted justice: "English justice, if it is to be true justice, must be justice for the Chinaman, the Negro..." I spoke for George, but the prosecution pointed out that I really didn't acquaint myself with him until after the murder. Nor did his mother's testimony in his favor count for much: "After all, she is his mother. What is she going to say?"

Besides the fact that George had very few character references, there were also the cold hard facts of the case. George had been in love with Min Chang's mistress, he had threatened Min Chang, and he was found standing over him with the murder weapon in his hand. But still I was surprised when the jury came back with a verdict of guilty. And I was even more surprised when the judge sentenced George to hang by the neck until he was dead. Many years later, I found out that there had been considerable political pressure placed on the judge to sentence George to death.

George took his death sentence with great courage. He wept after the sentence, in my presence and my presence alone, but even then he wept more for his mother's sake than for his own.

Mrs. Harris, who had remained strong for George's sake during the trial, broke down after the verdict and sentence was pronounced. She had to be hospitalized. It was in the hospital that I met with her and assured her that her son still had a chance.

"You mean there can be an appeal?"

"No, there is very little chance that an appeal will be granted. But there is a very good chance that in the next three months before the execution that some new evidence will turn up which will prove that George is innocent."

"How will that happen, Reverend?"

"With God's help, I hope to uncover some new evidence."

"But if you couldn't bring in any new evidence during the trial what makes you think you can find some new evidence now?"

"Because an intuition has been crystallizing into something concrete. I have hope. And I want you to have hope as well. Keep George and me in your prayers. And please, get well.

Almighty God, which has given us grace at this time with one accord to make our common supplications unto thee, and dost promise that when two or three be gathered in thy name, thou wilt grant their requests: fulfill now, O Lord, the desires and petitions of thy servants, as may be most expedient for them, granting us in this world knowledge of thy truth, and in the world to come, life everlasting. Amen."

My intuition that had been growing started at the dinner party. It didn't seem to matter then, but when I started to think about it in the light of Min Chang's murder it became more and more significant in my eyes. What I saw at that dinner party was fear, fear in Matthew Harris's eyes every time he looked at Min Chang. I certainly didn't know why Matthew Harris should have feared Min Chang, but I was certain he had feared him. I felt that if I could discover why Matthew Harris was afraid of Min Chang, I should be very close to finding the real murderer. And I might as well tell you outright, since this is a memoir and not a mystery novel, that I thought Matthew Harris had killed Min Chang. His cold indifference to his son's plight coupled with the fear in his eyes during the dinner party every time he looked at Min Chang had convinced me that Matthew Harris had murdered him. But of course no one would take my intuitions as truth. I needed concrete proof of my intuitions.

I started with another Oriental who had been a colleague of Chang at the University. This man, Yong Liu, had testified at George's trial, describing the last time he had seen Chang and representing him as a model teacher and colleague who had nothing to do with opium as some 'incendiary bigots' had implied. Two days after my 'there is still hope' talk with Mrs. Harris I obtained an interview with Yong Liu in his quarters.

"Thank you for seeing me."

"No thanks are necessary, Reverend, I know why you are here, and I have no intention of helping you to get that wretched murderer off."

"Are you convinced that he is a murderer?"

"Yes, I am."

"Then why did you consent to see me?"

"To mock you."

"To mock me?"

"Yes, I want to destroy any hope you might have in obtaining that pig's release. And I want to tell you to your face what I think of you, your wretched country, and your wretched religion."

"I don't think you need to tell me what you think of me, my country, or my religion. Your face makes it obvious. Did it take much practice to twist your face into the shape of a reptile?"

"So, the Reverend has a temper. I warn you, I won't be thrown in a fountain. I've taken precautions," he said, revealing a revolver, "and you'll have to behave yourself in my house."

"I didn't come here to throw you in a fountain. I wanted to know about your relationship with Min Chang. How long did you know him? Who started teaching here first? Things like that."

"Find them out from somebody else."

"I'll find more than those things out. I'll find out why Min Chang was blackmailing Matthew Harris. Then I shall be able to prove that Matthew Harris, not George Harris, murdered Min Chang."

"Get out or I'll have you thrown out."

"Good day, Yong Liu."

What had I accomplished by my visit to Yong Liu? It appeared that I had accomplished nothing. But I was wrong. My questions had brought on the wrath of Yong Liu. And why should he be mad because I thought George Harris innocent? I had no clue, but the following incident convinced me that Yong Liu wanted me to stop my inquiries.

What happened occurred one evening after my visit to Yong Liu's. I often visited an herb shop, not far from Ludgate Circus (Potter and Clarke), which sold excellent herbs dating back to ancient times. The proprietors never diagnosed an ailment; they simply dispensed the herbs for whatever ailment the customer said he had. I knew many people who were aided by the herbalists after doctors had failed. In my case it was not a serious ailment. I often, after a three-sermon Sunday, had trouble with my voice box. St. John's Bread is a pod that can be used to make a broth which soothes the vocal cords. A professional singer, a member of my parish, had recommended St. John's Bread to me. I had never had any voice problems since I started using St. John's Bread.

One night a week Potter and Clarke were open until 10 pm. I picked up my St. John's Bread at 9:30 pm and proceeded to take a long walk by indirect routes back to the church. I needed to put in at least three miles before getting back to the rectory. For me long walks through London were a special tonic as necessary as St. John's Bread.

I wasn't far from the shop when I turned down one of my favorite side streets that looked much as it must have some 300 years ago. The street was poorly lit, but that never bothered me because I knew the street and liked being almost enveloped in the evening mists.

This time, however, I ran into two unexpected companions. Two large men accosted me, one tried to grab my arms and hold them behind my back while the other man attempted to plunge a dagger into my heart. Once I freed myself from the rather poor wrestler's hold the larger man had on me and had disarmed the man with the knife, I rather enjoyed myself. It is seldom in life that we get to actually physically fight with evil. Most of the time the war with principalities and powers is an internal spiritual battle. But here were two men intent on killing me, which in those days entitled a man to fight. In an excellent book by C. S. Lewis, written in 1943, he relates how the hero in *Perelandra* actually gets to punch and pummel the devil himself. What a splendid depiction of the spiritual battle we all long for!

Then an experience that perhaps no good man can ever have in our world came over him—a torrent of perfectly unmixed and lawful hatred. The energy of hating, never before felt without some guilt, without some dim knowledge that he was failing fully to distinguish the sinner from the sin, rose into his arms and legs till he felt that they were pillars of burning blood. What was before him appeared no longer a creature of corrupted will. It was corruption itself to which will was attached only as an instrument... It is perhaps difficult to understand why this filled Ransom not with horror but with a kind of joy.

So to put it bluntly, I pounded the hell out of the two thugs. When both men were unconscious on the pavement, I lit a match and looked at their faces. They were both Chinamen. And I had seen both men on the day of my visit to Yong Liu. If this was a mystery I would say, "Ah, the plot thickens." I felt that I was on the right track. Something had been going on between Min Chang and Matthew Harris. And possibly Yong Liu had been and was still involved in some dirty dealings with Matthew Harris.

But the time wore on, George's execution date was getting closer, and I had no definite proof of George's innocence. Mrs. Harris was home now, but she was still bedridden. George was bearing up as well as might be expected, but his faith was new: he couldn't help but wonder why he had to die for another man's murder. I visited George every day and his mother two or three times a week, while trying to keep up with the rest of my pastoral duties. Fortunately I was now the head pastor of St. John's and could allocate some of my time as I saw fit. One of my quirks, as the senior pastor had called it when I first came to St. John's, was to take long rambles through London just to see if there was someone who needed the comfort of the gospel of Christ. For me that was the supreme benefit of wearing the clerical collar. People would accept help from such a man more readily than they would from another man without the collar.

Ever since I encountered a young man about to commit suicide off Waterloo Bridge, I made it a point to do a lot of walking over the various bridges of London. On four separate occasions I was able to head off suicides. There was the aforementioned young man, who, as young men are apt to feel, felt that his life was over because he had lost his true love to another man. There was also a young woman involved with a married man, a London financier who went belly-up in the market, and a bereaved widower who had just lost his wife.

The widower has since died of natural causes, but the other three are all doing well. The young man married another, the young lady married an eligible bachelor, and I was able to procure the financier a respectable job well below his former income but without the risks involved in financial speculation. God was good to me; He allowed me, in those situations, to be a channel of his grace.

It was on December 23rd, seven days prior to George Harris's scheduled execution, that I took a long ramble through London with a particular emphasis on the bridges. As is often the case in London, there was a heavy fog that night. While walking over Waterloo Bridge I could barely see an arm's length in front of me. At the highest point of the bridge I came upon a man leaning over the bridge and peering into the water below.

"Good evening, sir, I don't mean to bother you, but could I be of any assistance to you?"

"Shove off, you... — Oh, I'm sorry, I didn't notice you were a vicar, what with this fog and all. I suppose you thought I was going to jump or something."

"Yes, the thought had occurred to me."

"Well, I wasn't going to jump, your honor, I just likes to stand on this here bridge and look down into the water, or, on a night like this, down into the fog. Besides if I was to jump, with my luck I'd just break my leg or something and then have to hobble around on crutches for the rest of my days."

"I can understand your fascination with the fog and the darkness. I was born and reared in the country, but I've come to love this city."

"I don't know if I love anything anymore, Reverend, but I do like this foggy city. It suits me."

"Samuel Johnson said, 'He who is tired of London is tired of existence.'"

"I dare say he was right, Vicar. I'm almost tired of existence, that's why I stay in London. It keeps me going, just barely, but just barely is enough."

"It's still early enough — would you allow me to buy you a beer?"

"Now why would you want to do that?"

"Because I like you. We are fellow fog addicts."

"Ha, ha, that's a new one — fellow fog addicts. All right, I'll take you up on your offer, and many thanks."

The reader might be wondering why I picked this man out of so many wanderers of the night to ask into a pub for a drink and a chat. All I can answer is that it seemed like the thing to do. I believed him when he said he had no plans to jump off the bridge, but he still seemed like a man who desperately needed a human channel of grace. God is good; He sends us divine intuitions.

My fellow fog addict was a man somewhere between sixty and seventy years of age. He was small in stature but strongly built. In bearing and aspect he seemed like a man who had lived hard but wasn't about to complain. I could tell he wasn't a talker, but I managed to get him to talk to me. I think it was because he was drawn to what I represented.

"Won't you have something besides buttermilk, your reverence?"

"You needn't call me 'your reverence.' Christopher or Chris will do. And the buttermilk stems from a promise I made to my mother."

"Say no more about it. So long as a man doesn't think I shouldn't drink, I don't care what he drinks. But 'Christopher' just doesn't sit easy with me. How about I call you 'Vicar'?"

"That's fine if it makes you feel more comfortable."

"It does indeed. And so does this here beer make me feel comfortable. It's been too long since I've had a couple."

"I take it you've been kind of down on your luck."

"I'm not complaining."

"I know you're not, but I'd like to know more about you."

"Why is that, Vicar?"

"Because I like the cut of your jib and all that sort of thing."

"I'm not a navy man."

"Army?"

"Yes, I served in them there Zulu wars in Africa."

It was as if a great light had descended upon me after months and months of darkness. I could barely contain myself even though I knew that having been in the Zulu wars at the same time as Matthew Harris did not guarantee that the man before me knew Matthew Harris. And even if it turned out that he did know Matthew Harris, why should that help me prove that Matthew Harris's son was innocent of murder? It was completely illogical, but still I felt that this man across the barroom table from me could unlock the mystery of Min Chang's murder.

"Did you fight in the Zulu wars?"

"Yes, I did. I was one of the few survivors of the massacre at Isandlwana. I didn't receive no medals for that one. And I'm not saying that I deserved one. But there were just as many brave men doing brave deeds at Isandlwana as there was a Rorke's Drift, Hlobane, and Khambula. But them other battles were victories. Rorke's Drift made the Zulus waste their men and then they were cut to pieces at Hlobane and Khambula. I don't blame the army though. You can't go around giving medals for losing battles. But I am saying that there was just as many that deserved medals for what they done at Isandlwana as at them winning battles. Not me, mind you, but plenty of others. Take Lt. Wilson for instance. He could have got clean away, but he went back for Private Johns who was shot in the leg. He cut his way back through the Zulus, even though he was clear of the battle, and stood by Private Johns. He must have killed at least 20 of them before they got him."

"And then there was Sergeant Macintosh — he killed the Zulus who were fixing to finish me. I was bleeding inside from a spear thrust, and he set me on a horse. 'Hold on to him and he'll swim you cross the river,' he said. I didn't have the strength to do anything but hold on to the horse's pommel, or I'd never have let him stand alone like that. But he did stand alone. The last I saw of him he was fighting hand to hand with at least fifteen Zulus. They finished him, the filthy swine. They never would stand up to a British soldier man to man. They always swarmed them in hordes. But I saw courage that day, real courage."

"It must have been terrible to have seen so many of your comrades fighting nobly only to be cut down."

"That it was, that it was, Vicar. Here's to 'em all," he said as he drained his third beer, "all but one."

I don't know why, but I sensed something momentous was coming.

"Why do you say all but one?"

"Because there was one man there that day that was a disgrace to the British Army. No, I'll go further: he was a disgrace to Britain and the white race."

"Do you know his name?"

"Sure I do, but I don't know what good it will do bringing his name up. It would disgrace all the brave men I've been talking about."

"I have very good reasons for wanting to know his name. Could you please tell me?"

"Sure, Vicar, if it means that much to you. His name was Lieutenant Matthew Harris, and he was a white man with a treacherous black heart."

"Do you know anything about the recent murder trial of a young man named George Harris?"

"No, I don't, Vicar. I don't read the papers much. I ain't heard about it."

"The boy, George Harris, is the son of Matthew Harris, the man you've just told me about. I believe that Matthew Harris, not his son, is guilty of the murder."

"I wouldn't put it past him, providing it was murder on the sneak. He'd be afraid to take a man head-on."

"The murdered man was killed in his sleep."

"That would be just like Lt. Harris, a sneak attack."

"Could you please tell me everything, without leaving anything out, of what you know of Matthew Harris? A young man's life, a good man, depends on it."

"That I will do."

I asked the waiter to refill his beer glass, and he began his story.

"I lived on the streets of London for the past 40 years, Vicar. And I like it. Which might strike some as odd, but after what I seen in 8 years of service in that there British Army, I like just roaming around London, steering clear of people but at the same time being around people."

"I was born in Wales, christened Thomas Edward Jenkins. And I might have stayed there my whole life if the South-End Mine hadn't caved in. I was fourteen when I started mining, and eighteen when the mine caved in. Over one hundred of my mates died in the cave-in. 'This isn't for me,' I said, 'if I'm going to be killed I'd prefer to die in the open.' So I joined the British Army. And the Army didn't disappoint me. They gave me plenty of opportunities to die in the open air. I was eight years in Africa. I don't know why I didn't die there, but I didn't. And I've seen things that a white man shouldn't see. I've seen bloody colored heathens killing and torturing in ways that made me believe the coloreds ain't human. I'm sorry if that offends you, Vicar – I know I'm supposed to love all God's creatures, but I don't love those bloody heathens. That's why I came to London when I left the service. I just wanted to be around white people, lots of them. After 8 years of being around lots of colored black heathens, I needed to be around lots of white people. It's tonic to me. I don't care if I have to sleep on park benches and under bridges, so long as I'm around white people. But I'm getting off the point, ain't I? You wanted to know more about Matthew Harris."

"Yes, but you tell it in a way that makes you comfortable."

"Thank you. I ain't forgot about that Harris fellow. I served under him in the Zulu wars. I was in my last year in Africa, and he was four years out of Sandhurst. The first thing I noticed about him was that he liked to ramrod his men for almost nothing. If a button was undone on a private's uniform, he would stop the private and set him through his drills. He had me running in place for one hour, holding my rifle straight out in front of me till my arm and back muscles were like to burst, just because I had been chopping wood with my top button unbuttoned. And I wasn't the only one he got on. He was always after us. The men hated him. Some might say we was just jealous because he was a handsome officer and popular with the ladies while no lady would look twice at any enlisted man. But that ain't the case at all. If we liked an officer, we was proud of him and happy for him if the ladies liked him. No, it wasn't jealousy that made me and the other men dislike Lt. Harris. He was a ramrod for no reason, not tough but mean, and then I later found out he was a coward too."

"I found out at Islandlwana. You know the story, Vicar, everybody does, how the officers didn't post no lookouts, and we got ourselves surrounded by the Zulus. Well, they were in a killing mood – they always are – and they swarmed all over us. I fought my way through a wall of Zulus, using my bayonet and thinking that every thrust I made with it would be my last. But the fact that there was so many of the black devils made it hard for them. They kept getting in each other's way. And I kept stabbing. It probably wasn't that long, but it seemed like a long time to me, before I had fought my way through to the river. I was hoping to get a horse or maybe just a horse's saddle and try to float down the river away from the Zulus. That's when I saw Lt. Harris and Corporal Jones. Jonesy was standing over Lt. Harris, who was lying on the ground with a wound in his right thigh. Corporal Jones was keeping the Zulus off him with the Lieutenant's sword. I fought my way over to Jonesy, and we fought back to back. I knew I was going to die, but I felt better knowing I was going to go down with one of my own, a British soldier. I think Jonesy felt the same because when he saw me, he simply said, 'Glad for the company.'

"I didn't have time to look at the Lieutenant except once, but that once was enough. He was paralyzed with fear, just staring up at the Zulus, but not using his pistol, which was still holstered, or anything else."

"When Lt. Holmes rode up, slashing and stabbing at the Zulus, I thought maybe I wasn't going to die because they gave way before him at first."

"But when Lt. Holmes leant down to help Lt. Harris up onto his horse, Harris grabbed Lt. Holmes, pulled him off the horse, and climbed on himself. Lt. Holmes hadn't been expecting that, so he fell to the ground and the Zulus stabbed him to death. With Jonesy and me still fighting and the Zulus busy stabbing Lt. Holmes, Lt. Harris bolted and urged his horse into the river. That's the last I saw of him on that day. Jonesy went down next, and I kept fighting till one of the Zulus stabbed me clean through my right side and out the other end. I would have bought it for sure if Sergeant Macintosh hadn't rode up then. He must have left hell behind him, because he was the strongest and bravest man in the regiment. He tore into those Zulus like a man possessed. It was while he was putting me on the horse that they stabbed him in the back. But still he turned on them and fought as I went down the river on the back of his horse. I owe him my life, such as it is. He was the bravest of the brave."

"Was that the last you ever saw of Matthew Harris?"

"Oh no, Vicar, I saw him again. You see it was only me, Lt. Holmes, and David Jones who knew what Lt. Harris had done. Jonesy and the Lieutenant were dead. I had to live in order to tell the Army what kind of man Matthew Harris was."

"I didn't think I was going to live, though. I was bleeding bad and holding onto that horse for dear life. I drifted far enough down river to lose sight of any Zulus. Not that I had any control over where I ended up. I just went where the river took my horse. We finally came ashore in some brush about five miles, maybe more, down river from the battle. The horse kept going once we hit the shore, but I rolled off him and put the biggest pile of mud I could pick up on my wound. Then I laid down in the brush and either passed out or went to sleep – it amounts to the same thing."

"I must have slept there for over fourteen hours, waking up for a little and then falling back to sleep. I was burning up with fever and the hole in my side hurt like – if you forgive the expression – hell. But I got back. I kept walking, hoping I wouldn't come across any more Zulus, still half out of mind with fever. Right before my final collapse, I kept seeing the town in Wales where I was born and raised. It was a dirty coal town, but it's where my folks were. I kept seeing it. And then I just laid down and said goodbye to everything."

"No, it ain't no ghost you see before you, Vicar. I collapsed – it was pitch dark – about 40 paces from a Boer farmhouse. I know we fought with them later, and we was wrong to do it, but let me tell you the Boers were the best of the human race. That farmer and his wife found me, nursed me, and fed me until I was a whole man again."

"Then, when I was fit to ride, they gave me a horse and sent me back to the regiment."

"I don't imagine Lt. Harris was too glad to see you."

"No, he wasn't. He acted all glad to see me – he even ran up and hugged me. It was all I could do to keep from strangling him on the spot. But he whispers in my ear, 'See me in my tent before you report.' I shouldn't have listened to him, but I did. I didn't see any high ranking officers around when I rode into camp, so I thought, 'I'll see what this slime of a man has to say to me.' I thought he was going to make up some excuse or else deny that he had done anything wrong. I thought I'd listen to what he said and then spit in his face and go and report him to the Colonel. But he was too sharp for me. He came strutting into the tent, calm and cool as can be."

"You think you saw something out there, don't you?"

"I know I saw something out there."

"What do you think you saw?"

"I saw Lt. Holmes stop to save you from the Zulus and then I saw you drag Lt. Holmes off his horse, leaving him to be killed by the Zulus while you rode to safety."

"Lt. Holmes would have done the same thing I did had our positions been reversed. So would you have, or anyone else in the British Army?"

"That's a lie."

"What did you say?"

"I said that's a lie. Lt. Holmes did have a chance to get clean away, but instead he stopped to save you. And there isn't any other soldier in the British Army that would have done what you done."

"I see: 'Some talk of Alexander and some of Hercules, of Hector and Lysander...' All that British Grenadier type of nonsense."

"It ain't nonsense, I've seen the British soldier in action. They're my mates, the dead ones and them that are still alive."

"My family has money."

"Good for you."

"Some of that money, a lot of that money, can be yours."

"Keep your money, I'm going to see the Colonel."

"I never got out of the tent. As I turned to go, he hit me from behind with something much harder than a fist. I think it was a sword hilt. But whatever he hit me with, it did the trick. I was out long enough for him to get rid of me. Oh, I can see what you're thinking. If he got rid of me, how come I'm here?"

"Yes, I was thinking along those lines."

"He got rid of me without killing me. How was he going to explain my body in his tent if he killed me? At least twenty men had seen me ride in. He couldn't just shoot me and say I never came back to camp. What he did was quite simple, and I was too stupid to see it coming. After hitting me he had me locked up. He told the Colonel that I had tried to attack him because I thought that he was responsible for turning the whole company over to the Zulus. Everything, according to me, was Lt. Harris's fault. He said I had accused him of being in secret communication with the Zulus. 'It's pure delusion of course,' he said, 'no doubt brought on by his terrible ordeal, so I don't want him brought up on charges or anything. Let's just quietly ship him home and get him some mental treatment and a rest.'

"Well, Vicar, it worked. He was a smooth one and I wasn't. He had me shipped home under a kind of house arrest the whole way. When I got home, I was put in some kind of mental ward for soldiers. And they kept an eye on me there, too."

"Did you ever try to tell anyone about Lt. Harris?"

"Yes, I did. They wouldn't let me see anybody high up in the military, but I told the doctors in the ward that I was in the ward because of that there Lt. Harris and not because I was suffering from a nervous breakdown. But they just smiled at me and said that I'd see things differently when I was well."

"You never did get 'well', did you?"

"No, I didn't. I knew what Lt. Harris was. But I learned to stop talking about Harris. It wasn't doing me any good, in fact it was keeping me in the mental ward. Once I stopped talking about him, they gave me an honourable discharge from the service and let me out of the mental ward. You see, from their side of the fence I was cured."

"How long did you serve in the Army?"

"Ten years — eight in Africa and two in that there mental ward. I went home to Wales when I got out of the mental ward. I got a chance to see my mother, but my father was dead. Mother died eight months after I came home. I've spent the last forty or so years roaming the streets of London."

"That's a long time to roam the streets."

"Well, it ain't all been roaming. I've worked the docks some, and I've peddled some and I even lived under a roof for a few years, but mainly I've been roaming, because I like the company..."

"Of white people?"

"Yes, that's it. I don't think that anyone who has not been in Africa and seen what those blacks are really like can know what it means to live white. There is something from hell in those black men that makes you sick to your soul. I can't stand it when your missionary type Christians try to make out that a black man is simply a white man with black skin. That just ain't so. A black man is different inside from a white man. And white men should stay clear of black men, if they want to hang on to their souls. You've been buying me beer, Reverend, so I don't like talking against missionaries, but that's the way I feel. I don't think it's Christian to go around preaching that a black man can ever be a white man."

"You needn't apologize. I don't agree with everything done by my fellow pastors and ministers. In fact, I'm more often than not at odds with them. As regards the colored missions, I think it's best for Europeans to stay in Europe and keep Europe Christian so that the light can shine on other nations. I don't think we should bring the colored to Europe nor do I think we should ever confuse evangelization with mongrelization. But I think I've interrupted you. Please go on."

"There isn't much more to tell. Except for the one thing that you might find helpful. Like I said, the horror of negroes burned deep into my soul. So it hurt me, and I know it hurt plenty of the others that fought in those African wars, that when the whole thing was over and we were supposed to have won the Zulu wars, that they not only let Cetewayo, Chief of the Zulus, live, they invited him to England. He took a house in Kensington and had lunch with the Queen. And every time he went out, big crowds greeted him, patted on the back, and called him a jolly good fellow."

"Didn't certain of the bloodthirsty Indian chiefs in America get similar treatment when their fighting days were over?"

"I don't know, Vicar. But it was wrong. Let me tell you about the Zulus and Cetewayo. They weren't soldiers, they were Satanists. They never just killed a man, they mutilated his corpse. And when they caught some soldier alive, they tortured him. You've heard tell of the Jack the Ripper fellow that they never caught?"

"Yes, of course."

"Well, everyone said what he done was terrible, you know, cutting them women up. And it was terrible. But those black fiends from hell is all Jack the Rippers. They look on that type of killing and mutilating as normal. Cetewayo liked to watch his prisoners be cut up while he was eating, just like some white folk might like to hear music while they ate. I couldn't stand to see him strutting around London, so I decided to kill him. I saw an advertisement for one of his gibberish talks. He talked Zulu and some missionary translated for him. I planned on blending in with the crowd and then, when I got close enough to him, sticking a knife into him. But it never happened like I wanted it to. As soon as I got into that there hall, I was taken away."

"By Scotland Yard?"

"They said they was Scotland Yard, but they weren't. They just told me they were working for Scotland Yard so I wouldn't put up a fuss."

"Who were they then?"

"They were working for Captain Harris – he was promoted to captain after Islandlwana – because as it turned out he was sponsoring the talk. He recognized me coming in and set his goons on me. He didn't want some public row where I might tell what I knew about him. Nobody believed me before, but he still didn't want it bandied about. Once the goons got me away from the hall, they coshed me. When I came to, I was tied up and looking into the face of a Chinaman."

"I don't mean to be constantly interrupting you, but this is vital. Do you remember the name of that Chinaman?"

"No, I don't, Vicar, because he never said his name. And if you ask me to describe him all I could say was that he was a Chinaman."

"What happened to you after you came to?"

"The Chinaman told me I was going on a long trip, but before I left he wanted some information from me. And he made it clear that if I didn't give it willingly he would still get it from me. It would be his great pleasure, he assured me, to cause me great pain. But he needn't have threatened me. I was quite willing to tell him what he wanted to know. It wasn't no military secrets he was after. He wanted to know why Captain Harris wanted me killed. So I told him."

Here then was the link between Matthew Harris and Min Chang that I had been seeking. Though Jenkins couldn't give me his name, I was certain that Min Chang was the man who Matthew Harris had hired to kill Jenkins. But Chang didn't kill him, because if he had he couldn't blackmail Harris over his cowardice at Islandlwana. But I was beginning to see a different murder scenario. Tired of paying blackmail for so many years to Min Chang, Harris had not killed Min Chang himself as I had originally thought, but had hired Yong Liu to kill him. That was the reason Yong Liu didn't want me to find Min Chang's murderer. Yong Liu was the murderer!

All this was conjecture, and I knew it was too flimsy to hold up in court. I needed more.

"Obviously, Min Chang didn't kill you."

"No, he didn't, and I couldn't figure out why."

"I think I know. He wanted to use the information you gave him to blackmail Captain Harris. If he murdered you, then Harris would have had something on him as well."

"That makes sense, but I never put it together. I guess I've been the fool ten ways from Sunday."

"No, you've been the one man among ravenous wolves. What did Min Chang do with you?"

"That's assuming the Chinaman was Min Chang."

"Yes, I am assuming that."

"He had me put on a steamer bound for China. But he must not have paid the ship's captain much money, because it was pretty easy for me to jump ship and make my way back to England."

"How long did it take you to get back?"

"Two months."

"What did you do when you got back?"

"Well, I didn't make no more tries on Cetewayo, because he was gone, on his way back to Zululand. And I lost track of Captain Harris. I've just been roaming ever since. I had a wife for a few years, those are the years that I lived under a roof. But the wife died and I went back to roaming through London."

"Did Harris ever make any more tries on your life?"

"No, he didn't. I always thought that he figured I was dead. But if that there Min Chang was blackmailing him over his cowardice he must have told him I was still alive and he could produce me if he wanted."

"And all those years he's had that hanging over his head."

"I guess so, Vicar. It's funny that a man who says he doesn't believe in the British honour code would spend his life afraid that someone might prove that he didn't live up to the code."

"Thomas, 'There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophies.' There was an American author, Mark Twain, who served briefly on the Southern side in the South's War for Independence. He deserted and then spent the rest of his life casting aspersions on the code of chivalry. He couldn't abide Walter Scott, who was kind of the poet laureate of chivalry."

"Meaning, he couldn't be honourable and brave, so that meant there was no such thing as bravery and honour?"

"Yes. And I think that sums up Matthew Harris as well. A man that is pure ego cannot ever say he is a lesser man than other men. So Harris took refuge in his intellect, which he thought was better than anyone else's intellect. The endless intellectual gatherings and dinner parties were all his attempt to convince himself and the world that he was Matthew Harris, the demigod."

"But why did he sponsor the Cetewayo talks and make such a big deal about the magnificent Zulus?"

"Because the true intellectual worships the noble savage, and that's what the black man has become to white liberals: the Noble Black Savage."

"But he ain't noble; he's just a savage."

"I agree, but that's the pathology of men like Matthew Harris. They love the devil through his conduit, the negro."

"Are there a lot of men like Matthew Harris?"

"Unfortunately men like Harris are becoming more numerous. Our universities breed such men."

"Then I'm glad I won't be around much longer."

"Never say that, Thomas. You're the type of Britisher we need."

"That's kind of you to say, Vicar."

"I mean it, Thomas. Now, I need you for something of great importance. Are you game for another try at Captain Harris?"

"That I am, Vicar."

SCENE: The Harris Mansion in London, Christmas Eve,
approximately 7 p.m.

Mrs. Harris: Matthew, I don't know if you've noticed but that man has been standing under that streetlight, staring up at the house for the last hour.

Matthew Harris: No, I hadn't noticed.

Mrs. Harris: Well, it bothers me.

Matthew Harris: God forbid that anything should bother my dearest. I'll ask one of the servants to call the police, though I doubt that they can do much. There is no law against standing under a streetlight. Wait, I'll go out and speak to him myself.

Mrs. Harris: Do you think that's wise?

Matthew Harris: It won't take long and the man seems harmless.

SCENE: On the Street

Matthew Harris: I warn you, I'm armed.

Jenkins: Now why would you think you needed a gun against the likes of me?

Matthew Harris: What do you want?

Jenkins: I wants money, the money you offered me many years ago to keep my mouth shut. Now I wants it. And I want it to keep my mouth shut about more than your being a coward. I want money to keep me from telling that you hired that there Yong Liu to kill that other Chinaman that the papers have been talking about.

Matthew Harris: I had nothing to do with that murder. My son did it.

Jenkins: In the old days, I wouldn't do business with a man that would sell out his comrades and then sell out his own son. But I've changed, Captain Harris. I'm so down and out that lying in the gutter would be a step up for me. You give me the money to live like a white man, and I'll keep quiet about everything.

Matthew Harris: If I've done what you say, then what makes you think I won't have you killed instead of paying you?

Jenkins: Because I've told a certain vicar everything I know, and he'll go to the police if I'm killed. They might not believe him, but then again they might.

Matthew Harris: How much?

Jenkins: I'm not greedy. Let's say 5,000 pounds right now.

Matthew Harris: 3,000 pounds is the most I can get you tonight.

Jenkins: That'll do, you can get me the rest later.

Matthew Harris: Meet me in three hours at Dingman's Wharf, and I'll have the money for you. Providing you do one more thing for me.

Jenkins: What's that?

Matthew Harris: Bring that parson with you.

Jenkins: Why do you want to see him?

Matthew Harris: Bring him. If you don't, you won't get the money.

Jenkins: All right, I'll bring him.

SCENE: Dingman's Wharf

Rev. Grey: You wouldn't think there could be such a deserted and desolate looking place in a major city.

Jenkins: This here wharf is never used anymore, and certain it isn't about to be used on Christmas Eve.

Matthew Harris (stepping out of the mists): But it is going to be used this Christmas Eve, for I have need of a desolate place.

Jenkins: Did you bring the money?

Matthew Harris: No, I didn't, but I did bring this.

Rev. Grey: I thought you preferred to kill by proxy.

Matthew Harris: I do. But in both of your cases, I'll enjoy making the exceptions.

Rev. Grey: But why deprive Yong Liu of the pleasure? He killed Min Chang for you, and I'm sure he wouldn't mind killing two more.

Matthew Harris: So you want a confession. Aren't you being rather heavy-handed about it?

Rev. Grey: Yes, I'd like a confession from you, because I don't think you have the nerve to kill me, and once you've dropped the gun, I'll go to the police with your confession.

Matthew Harris: You're wrong, you disgusting clerical pig. I'll kill you and Jenkins there because it will be a pleasure. That Min Chang killing was business, and that's why I hired Yong Liu to do it for me.

Rev. Grey: Why did you wait so many years?

Matthew Harris: He didn't ask for that much at first. But then he started getting exorbitant in his demands. It was simply a business decision.

Rev. Grey: But this is pleasure?

Matthew Harris: Yes, pleasure and business.

Rev. Grey: Because I threw you in the fountain?

Matthew Harris: No, for that I could have paid someone to have you beaten.

Jenkins: I don't think so, Captain, he'd be too much for a regiment.

Matthew Harris: Shut up, Jenkins. No, Mr. Grey, I'm not killing you for throwing me in a fountain. I'm killing you for the simple business reason that you know too much. But even more than that, I'm killing you because I hate you. You're a Christer, a dying breed of a man that I will be quite happy to send out of this world. So you and that pathetic wretch, Private Thomas Edward Jenkins, can go to that great nothingness together... Who are you?

Inspector Palmer, Scotland Yard (stepping out of the mist with a revolver in hand): Unfortunately for you, Mr. Harris, I am justice, and I'm here to arrest you for the murder of Min Chang.

It was not a foolproof plan we had hatched to get a confession from Matthew Harris. In fact, it seemed highly unlikely that Matthew Harris would be fooled by such a simple plan. But there were a number of factors that worked in our favor. The first was Matthew Harris's deep-rooted hatred for me. I sensed that we were bitter enemies from the very first time I had met him at the dinner party. That hatred, which went quite beyond mere dislike, no doubt stemmed from our opposed masters. I hoped that his hatred for me might make him so anxious to kill me that he might possibly overstep the bounds of caution and reveal his guilt.

The second factor was Harris's contempt for Thomas Jenkins. I don't think he believed that such a simpleton (his own view, not mine) as Thomas Jenkins could trick a giant intellect such as Matthew Harris. Once I got Mrs. Harris to point out Jenkins on the street in front of their home, the trap was sprung. It only needed a word to Inspector Palmer of Scotland Yard to seal Matthew Harris's fate and prove George Harris's innocence.

George was released from prison at 11:30 p.m. Christmas Eve, and he stepped across the threshold of his home and into his mother's arms at 12 midnight, just as the Christmas chimes rang throughout London.

Yong Liu was arrested while trying to leave the country. There was a great deal of international haggling over where he was to be tried, because he was a Chinese citizen. He actually wanted to be tried in England, because he thought he had a better chance of escaping the death penalty in England than in China. Eventually he was sent back to China where he was executed. Min Chang's family was more influential than Yong Liu's family.

Matthew Harris? He pleaded not guilty, claiming Yong Liu had acted alone. His case dragged on for six months and eventually he was acquitted. His friends in high places, which he hadn't chosen to use in defense of his son, came through for him.

I wasn't surprised at the verdict. Nor was I particularly upset by it. It was George Harris's release I had wanted, and through the grace of God it was given to me. You don't believe it was the grace of God that released George Harris? That is your prerogative, but how do you explain my meeting with Thomas Jenkins? Mere chance? That would be too coincidental for me to believe.

George Harris is still alive today, with a wife, four children, and six grandchildren. He never left the Christian fold after his unexpected entry into it while in prison. His mother lived well into her nineties before passing away. And Thomas Jenkins lived another twenty-five years after the Matthew Harris trial. He never was comfortable living permanently under one roof, but like Edie Ochiltree in Walter Scott's novel, *The Antiquary*, he stayed as a guest under many roofs, particularly mine. At his death he thanked God for allowing him "to die among white folk and not in that horrible Zululand." He had become a legendary figure after Matthew Harris's exposure. So when he died, he was buried with full military honors. That would have amused him, because he never thought he deserved any military honors. His one request, which I honored, was to be buried with his worn and tattered copy of the New Testament. God bless him.

After George's acquittal, Matthew Harris's wife and son moved to a country house outside of London, leaving Matthew Harris to the London house and his friends from academia. The dinner parties, however, were never quite as prestigious as before. It's odd — even though the liberal academics were self-professed scoffers at such things as honour and chivalry, the fact that Matthew Harris was not a brave British soldier but was in fact an unchivalrous cad — and possibly a murderer — made the more 'respectable' academics such as Freud shun him. But still, because he had money, Matthew Harris managed to maintain a stable of dinner party academic sycophants and spongers. He preceded his wife in death, dying quietly in his sleep in the eighty-ninth year of his life.

Was there any sign of repentance toward the end of his wretched life? His wife said there was not. He seemed obdurate right till the end. Deathbed conversions are rare, but they do occur. It's always very sad for the surviving family members when their own flesh and blood dies without showing even a glimmer of repentance.

There was incredible hatred for Christ in Matthew Harris. And because of that hatred he spent a lifetime attacking Christ's people. Every person who had anything to do with the building or maintaining of Christian Europe was an anathema to him. And unfortunately Matthew Harris, in his later years particularly, saw that the European people were starting to come around to his way of thinking. But ironically his son George, once he converted, was the last of a breed. George became a true-bred Englishman whose Christianity was the unshakeable, bred-in-the-bone Christianity of his noble grandsires. The European restoration will come from such Christians as George Harris.

I would be remiss if I left out the missing piece of the Ann Harris story. When I told Ann that I thought I could prove her son was innocent of the murder if she would simply point out Thomas Jenkins to her husband, she readily agreed.

"Is that all you want me to do?"

"There is one more thing."

"What?"

"I want you to pray."

"I don't think I can. I'm afraid to."

"When your husband leaves the house to confront Thomas Jenkins, go to a quiet place, your own upper room, and pray to Christ."

"I'll try, Reverend, but it's been so long."

"Think of your son and how much you love him. And think of God's Son. Trust me, you'll be able to pray."

After the Christmas services I had Christmas dinner with Ann Harris and her son. Ann took me aside after dinner. "Reverend, what time was it when my husband confessed to the murder?"

"About 11 p.m."

"That's the same time that I finished my prayer. It started out as an incoherent mumble to the great unknown God. But I thought of my son and how much I loved him. I'd do anything to free him. And then I felt, for the first time, a pang in my heart for Christ. How He must have loved us to do what He did. And surely He wouldn't stop loving us. Then I was able to pray: 'Please, Christ, please help my son, because I love him. And if you can't help him, please give me the grace to bear it.'

"It wasn't a prayer from my brain; it was from my heart, Reverend. And God surely knew it was from my heart, because he gave me back my son."

George Harris' life was saved that night, but an even greater miracle happened that Christmas Eve. A sinner returned to her God. Ann Harris was the prodigal who returned to her Father's house. Our Christmas feast reminded me of another feast:

And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost and is found. And they began to be merry.

Will the European people, now that they have renounced the personal sins and think there are only social sins, such as racism, ever know what it is to be merry again? Only if they return to their provincial God who presides over the European hearth fires.

One of my most joyous Christmas memories shall always be of Ann Harris, the woman who, at the supreme crisis of her life, called on Him by name and asked Him to teach her faithful, loving, English heart to overrule her doubting brain. She loved much and was forgiven. So should we all. And that is my equivalent of Tiny Tim's Christmas blessing.

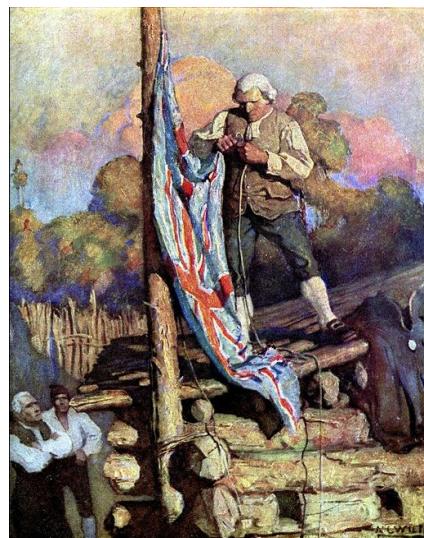
—THE END—

We Few

January 4, 2014

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Louis Stevenson



The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people. – *Deuteronomy 7:7*

The deification of Nelson Mandela would have been a disgusting spectacle at any time of the year, but it seemed doubly offensive when it took place as a prelude to the Christmas season. Conservatives and liberals, Catholics and Protestants, all were united in their adoration of a murderous black thug whose one abiding passion was his hatred of white people. And in fact it was that hatred that made him holy in the eyes of the liberals: holiness comes cheaply in Liberaldom.

The Europeans are a captive people just as the Israelites were a captive people in Egypt and later in Babylon. The Europeans will only break free of their chains when they return to their God, who can only be known through His people. Modern churchmen who have gone whoring after the heathen negro gods of Liberaldom try to abstract God from His people so that they, the churchmen, can worship black idols at the bidding of their abstract God. But God is not an abstraction who can be invoked to support negro worship and sexual depravity and then be put back in the liberals' closet. Our people stood, like Moses, before the living God, and they bore witness to the light before all the nations. Because of their witness, they were hated by all the colored nations (why take us from our beloved Egyptian night?) just as He was hated. Now the Europeans are a captive people because the white hierarchies of all the white nations hate the light and worship darkness. But the fact that white people are hated by the wicked, the negro worshippers, the feminists, the sodomites, and the colored barbarians should be a sign to us that our people must survive as a sign of contradiction to Satan's minions who have set up the kingdom of hell on earth.

The race war is a religious war because God must, if He is to be a greater God than the unknown god of the pagan philosophers, be a God with a local habitation and a name. It was the belief of our people, the Europeans, that God's local habitation was in the hearts of the European people, and His name was Jesus. Destroy that faith, the Europeans' belief that God was incarnate in their people, and the light of the world is extinguished. The people who worship Nelson Mandela — and those people are legion — are obsessed with darkness. They are fascinated by the great possibilities of a world devoid of white Europeans. We are already seeing what such a world will look like. It will look like South Africa, a land where charity is nonexistent and the murder of white people is considered laudatory. But of course what happens to whites in South Africa does not affect whites in America and Europe because we are the good whites, are we not? We worship at the proper shrines, the shrines dedicated to Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King Jr., and we perform our daily acts of obeisance to the black gods so we will not be harmed. We are the new, nonwhite white people who believe that the white man can change his soul and become black, pure black inside.

As all the leaders of what was once Christendom flocked to South Africa to worship Nelson Mandela I couldn't help but think of the Christmas carol, "O Come, All Ye Faithful":

*O come, all ye faithful, joyful and triumphant
O come ye, O come ye to Bethlehem!
Come and behold him, born the King of Angels;
O come, let us adore him;
O come, let us adore him:
O come, let us adore him,
Christ the Lord.*

Is it not crystal clear that evil incarnate has become the white liberals' god? Did they not go to South Africa to adore their anointed lord? In the 1950s the white European civilization was tottering on the brink of destruction, facing an "if these shadows are not altered" future. Now the future is here. Christendom has become Satandom; we have gone from the light eternal to eternal night. The caricatures of human beings who went to adore Nelson Mandela are the end product of a long line of Christian apostates who sought to abstract God from the hearts of His people. Rousseau's 'Noble Savage' paradise is upon us! Is there a European among us who will reject this modern "paradise" for old Europe? John Paul II declared Mandela to be a saint, thus giving the Church's assent to the worship of darkness. But there is a better faith than John Paul II's faith in Nelson Mandela. There is the ancient faith of the European people. The Man of Sorrows is still our Savior, and Nelson Mandela is still the devil's own, no matter what the ruling elites from hell tell us to the contrary.

I had no knowledge of a television show called *Duck Dynasty* until last week when one member of the 'dynasty' was deemed a moral pariah for stating that homosexuality was sinful. Many evangelicals who are quite liberal as regards the support of anti-Christian Israel, race-mixing, and the worship of the negro, are still against the legitimatizing of homosexuality. So I was not that interested in the Duck Dynasty commotion until I heard that the offending patriarch was also accused of being a racist. Could this actually be a Christian counter-attack? No, it wasn't. The Duck Dynasty patriarch was quite liberal on the subject of race. He simply wanted to go halfway down the slippery slope, which starts with race mixing, and then stop his slide right before he got to the part of the slope marked 'homosexuality.' But it is quite significant that the liberals wanted to connect racial Babylon and sexual Babylon. They – unlike the confused evangelicals such as the Duck Dynasty patriarch – see that racial Babylon and sexual Babylon are intimately linked. If our bodies cannot be spiritualized, if white and black skin is only pigmentation without any spiritual significance, then we can do whatever we want with our bodies. I don't have to describe the results of that type of mindset; the results are all around us.

The initial attack of the liberals on our racial home came in the form of the scientific man, the man in the white lab coat. We were told that it was unscientific to equate different spiritual attributes to different skin colors. But if that is so then why did the great believers in science make the negro a sacred mystical creature? The liberals' "science" is more mystical than the most fantastical meanderings of the Christian mystics. What liberals say they are building, a color blind world of peace and love, is not what they intend to build. They intend to build a world without white people and without the faith, hope, and charity that existed in the culture of old Europe. They will stop at nothing to achieve their ends. How many Jonathan Fosters must be tortured and murdered before the liberals' version of peace on earth can be realized? There is no limit. They will keep murdering, by proxy, till either they or the white Europeans are destroyed. Like the Jacobins that Burke fought, the modern liberals have left everything human behind them. They have only their implacable hatred to lead them on.

They do not commit crimes for their designs; but they form designs that they may commit crimes. It is not their necessity, but their nature, that impels them. They are modern philosophers, which when you say of them, you express every thing that is ignoble, savage, and hard-hearted.

That is what the European who wishes to remain European must take into his heart and soul. Modernity encompasses all that is “ignoble, savage, and hard-hearted.” And the sacred negro is the deity at the center of the liberals’ kingdom of modernity in which evil is good and good is evil.

The legitimatizing of homosexual activity, feminism, and legalized abortion all stem from the replacement of bred in the bone Christianity, in which Christ is our kinsman and our Lord, for a new faith in the divinity of the negro, supported and maintained by an abstract and remote Christ figure who exists only to support racial Babylon and condemn all European racists. Is such a Christ figure our God? Does he have any basis in reality? No, he doesn’t. Our God is the living God who came and dwelt amongst us when we believed that our race was inseparable from our faith.

When faith and race are one there is no quailing in front of the superior numbers of the enemy. Stevenson’s Alexander Smollett was the embodiment of the blood faith of the antique Europeans. When faced with overwhelming numbers he did not hesitate to respond according to the code:

Now you’ll hear me. If you’ll come up one by one, unarmed, I’ll engage to clap you all in irons and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won’t, my name is Alexander Smollett, I’ve flown my sovereign’s colours, and I’ll see you all to Davy Jones.

By an instinct greater than reason the integral European knows that he must be connected to God in his heart, the spiritual core of his being, or else be a ghostly specter, a caricature of a human being.

Creeds that men live by must be emblazoned on their hearts. Europeans are now mere outer husks, devoid of humanity, because the liberals have the love of the negro within their hearts, and the grazers’ hearts are empty slates. Can a human being live without an animating creed that stems from his heart? The liberals couldn’t; their utopia of science had to take on a god who stirred their hearts. But Nelson Mandela and the black race bear no resemblance to the God who once dwelt within the hearts of the European people. We should not be coerced by the perfumed clerics of apostasy into taking the sacred negro into our hearts. There is no room for two Gods in a man’s heart. If we do not keep Christ, and Christ alone, in our hearts, we will follow the creed of black Babylon, which tells us that all whites should be exterminated and that faith, hope, and charity are relics of an evil time before the code of race-mixing, sexual perversion, and cruelty became the law of the land.

If we follow the call of the blood, the call of honor, we will fly our sovereign’s colors, which are red for the blood He shed on the cross and white for our people, while fighting to our last breath against all other flags and creeds. What type of creed bids a man destroy his own race and worship a savage, murderous race of people who haven’t even a word for charity? Certainly not a Christian creed. And we shall be a Christian people or we will cease to be a people.

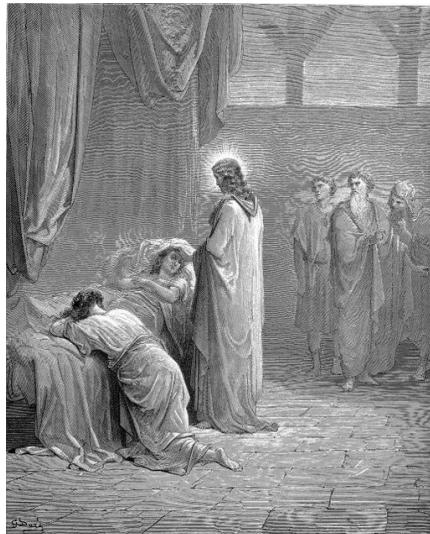
There is no foothold halfway down the slippery slope, only at the topmost rock, the rock of faith and race, can a people stand as a people against the liberals and their creed of negro worship. In and through the love of our own, we come to the love of Him. On that rock we shall stand and oppose their creed of darkness with our creed, forged at our racial hearth fires, of honor and blood. So long as a few, a blessed few, honor old Europe and despise the new Europe of Mandela we will be enough. +

Confessions of a Stupid Man

January 11, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Christmas, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Third Dumb Brother

Tags: Charles Dickens



What can I give him, poor as I am?
If I were a shepherd, I would bring a lamb;
If I were a wise man, I would do my part;
Yet what can I give him, give him my heart.

-Christina Rosetti

During the regular year I usually hover around the 90% line: I spend 90% of my time in old Europe through the good offices of Scott, Dickens, Shakespeare, and the legion of soldiers of the cross who lived, worked, and died on the European side of the Great Divide. The 10% of the time I spend in Modernia is my concession to the powers that be. The liberals are the malevolent rulers of Europe, so I must spend enough time in their world to see what they are up to. But at Christmas time, which I regard as the twelve day period starting on the 25th of December, I shut the liberals and their world off completely and stay exclusively with old Europe throughout the Christmas season. And I find that the complete Christmas immersion heightens the contrast between old and new Europe and makes me, upon re-entry into Satania, even more conscious of that which was lost and the evil we must combat. Let us once again gird up our loins and attack the liberals. We must hate them with our whole heart and mind and soul because of Him whom they fight against and whom we fight for.

There is no mistaking the Great Divide. Prior to World War I there still existed a sturdy Christian peasantry throughout the European nations. There was a large segment of intellectuals that had gone over to the culture of the cynical smile and the scornful sneer, but there were still a few Christian defenders in the ranks of the intelligentsia. With the wholesale apostasy of the European intelligentsia after World War I came the gradual deterioration of the Christian peasantry. A Christian ethos survived until 1965, and after that all was cheerless, dark and deadly: the new Babylon had supplanted the old European Christianity.

The literature of the West in the early twentieth century reflected the change in the Europeans' collective soul. Suddenly the old Christian storytelling tradition represented by Dickens, Austen, and Scott was considered immature and frivolous. The new novels, which were impossible to understand without an authorial glossary and a reference book of literary symbols, became fashionable. Literary critics, who were confused and conflicted men, pronounced works like Joyce's *Ulysses* and Proust's *Remembrance of Things Past* to be "realistic masterpieces" because they depicted man as a confused jumble of emotions without any spiritual core. Man was simply a stream of consciousness without a beginning or an end. Twentieth century literature, with the exception of certain deliberate throwbacks such as C. S. Lewis and John Buchan, is full of authors who see man as part of cosmic nature, a soulless creature subject to the laws of a natural world that has no God over and above it.

At first the message of 'man as bug' literature was one of despair. Man is alone in a universe that is not, as was previously thought by unscientific Europeans of the past, animated by a loving God. 'They have taken away my Lord out of the sepulcher and we know not where they have laid him.' But the despairing cries of anguish of the early twentieth century writers gave way to a new faith by the latter half of the twentieth century. Men — not even liberals who professed to be supermen that did not need God as a 'crutch' — could not live without some human incarnation of God. Science had destroyed the Christian God and replaced Him with cosmic nature, but cosmic nature — 'May the force be with you' — was not enough. Who could be the incarnate god of cosmic nature? All that needless metaphysical angst of such writers as Camus and Sarte. The answer to man's loneliness in the universe was staring them right in the face. All they needed to do was to pick up a copy of Rousseau's work on the Noble Savage. In the latter half of the twentieth century the black man became the new Messiah. Around their new savior's throne, the liberals rejoiced and bid the new peasantry fall in line and worship the god of cosmic nature. "We are happy, we are fulfilled, we are content," sang the not-so-happy, not-so-fulfilled, not-so-contented grazers.

The liberals have presented their new cosmic nature religion as an advance: "Christianity was anthropomorphic, Christianity was infantile, Christianity was unscientific." But really what is so intelligent and "advanced" about a religion that has negro gods? Nothing, of course. Which is why the liberals will not acknowledge that they have made the negroes their gods. That admission would indicate that they could not face existence with Mother Earth alone, that they needed an incarnate God who embodied all the natural virtues of the earth — vitality, innocence, and purity. Are we talking about the same God? Well might you ask that question. I don't see what the liberals see in their incarnate god either, but then I am not a cosmic naturalist, I am a reactionary European.

There was no Christian counterattack when the negro became the liberals' god, because Christ had been theologized out of existence by European churchmen determined to remove the European taint from Christianity. At the moment faith becomes abstract theology, it becomes as a sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal, a worthless faith in the human mind's ability to perform endless intellectual gymnastic feats to no purpose. A truly sustaining faith must be rooted in the human heart, where all momentous questions of existence are decided. Since the theologians have presented a false Aslan to the European peasants, an Aslan that was a mere composite of the intellectual vapors of soul-dead theologians, the peasants stopped believing in Aslan. They are now in the process of learning to love the negro Aslan. The extent to which the European people can become content with the negro-as-God will determine whether we will continue to live under the yoke of Satanists or whether His people will break through the walls of Liberalism and restore His reign of charity.

The biggest obstacle preventing the emergence of a Christian few — and a few is all that is necessary — is the parasitical, theological churchmen, who live off the Christian patrimony of the antique Europeans whom they despise. The churchmen exist to serve Satan. By rejecting Christ's church — 'where two or three are gathered together in His name' — and locating Christ's church in the organizational minds of theologians who have rejected 'that good part' of the faith in favor of their own abstract versions of the faith, the modern churchmen have made organized Christianity synonymous with negro worship. There are many ways of killing the Christian faith. The modern way is the way of the men of theology who plague the organized Christian churches. They place Christ in a subordinate position to the sacred negro and then claim divine sanction for their church. So long as church buildings and church organizations are considered the holy repositories of the Christian faith, the religion of Satan will flourish.

Secular liberalism sprang from the minds of Christian theologians who sought to scientize God, to put Him in a magic box that only they had access to. "If you're really good," the theologians told us, "we will give you a quick peek in the box. But only for an instant, and then God must go back in His box where only we can have access to Him." "But if God can be found in nature, the biological nature that scientists study, why do we need the theological middle men?" was the irreverent response to the theologians who thought they had God in their magic boxes. So secular liberalism soon engulfed the Christianity of the magic boxes. Now, in order to be heard at all, the churchmen must preach liberalism louder than the secular liberals. This essential unity between the church (as defined by theologians) and the secular liberal state was highlighted at the funeral of the blood-soaked black terrorist Nelson Mandela. "Religious" Christians and mad-dog liberals all flocked to pay homage to the noble black savage.

The unhallowed churchmen of the satanic, negro-worshipping organizations called Christian churches are sometimes made uneasy by the militancy of the gay rights, sexual-depravity wing of the liberal juggernaut. But they mute their criticisms of sexual depravity while concentrating on the unifying symbol of nature and nature's god, the negro. The modern return to nature and nature's god is like the ancient Hebrew's return to Baal. The curse shall not be lifted from our people until we leave the temples of negro worship and join with the people of God, the Europeans who are gathered together in His name.

Because I am tall, elderly ladies often ask me to get certain top-shelf items for them in the grocery store. After obliging an elderly lady the other day, I noticed she was barely able to walk. We had a short conversation while I took her groceries to the cab. She told me she was suffering from a degenerative spine disease and didn't expect to live much longer. Nothing unusual here, is there? We all must suffer and die. But the woman was in such obvious pain that I had a strong desire to place my hand on her and heal her. And I thought how wonderful it would be to have the power to heal the sick and lame as Christ did when He walked this earth. Do you remember what Tiny Tim said to his father that day in church?

"Somehow he gets thoughtful, sitting by himself so much, and thinks the strangest things you ever heard. He told me, coming home, that he hoped the people saw him in the church, because he was a cripple, and it might be pleasant to them to remember upon Christmas-day who made lame beggars walk and blind men see."

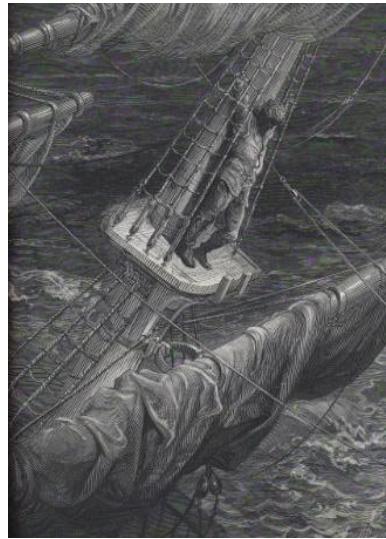
We all must suffer and die, but must we suffer and die without the hope that our suffering and death will be redeemed by Christ? The civilization that believed in such a hope, the Hope of the world, has been replaced because it was deemed to be racist, unscientific, and stupid. Let me conclude this Christmas season by stating my complete and uncompromising hatred for the new world of cosmic nature with its negro god, while renewing my love for and my fidelity to His Europe, the dear, dear land of storybooks that leads us to the Light that shineth in darkness. +

Armed with Cruel Hate

January 18, 2014

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare, Thomas Hughes



You are a thousand times a properer man
Than she a woman

—As You Like It

Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

—Matthew 25:40

Last week the American actress named Meryl Streep, whose physical ugliness is only surpassed by her moral ugliness, made a spiteful attack on Walt Disney. He had, according to the moral pariah named Streep, antiquated views on women and was anti-Semitic. Why Streep did not add the ‘racist’ charge, which is usually thrown at Disney because of his movie *Song of the South*, I do not know. It probably was because Streep wanted to file new charges against Walt Disney. The racist charge is already a codified part of the liberals’ case against Disney.

Let’s be clear about the reason for Streep’s attack on Walt Disney and the liberals’ ongoing war against him. Walt Disney was a twentieth century Hans Christian Andersen. His wonderful imagination was grounded in Christian Europe. Like Andersen, like Scott, like Burke, Disney had that charity of honor that belongs exclusively to the antique Europeans who had faith, hope, and charity bred into their bones. Everything Disney did buoyed up people’s hopes and made them much more likely to believe in His reign of charity. Everything Streep and her ilk do defaces the image of God in man and leads men toward the Kingdom of Satan on earth.

Thomas Hughes tells us in his book, *Tom Brown’s School Days*, that we come to know God through the mysterious human relationships we form with our fathers, mothers, brothers, sisters, and the heroes of our racial hearth fires, the men and women who embody the virtues we hold dear. Walt Disney was my hero growing up, and he retains my abiding love because his vision of man was grounded in Christian Europe. All the true heroes of our race point us to Him. And we do not leave our mysterious human relationships behind when we find Him. Human beings are not stepping stones. We love Christ in and through our people.

Liberals such as Meryl Streep attack the heroes of the European hearth fire because they know such heroes are conduits to Christ. And conversely, liberals such as Meryl Streep love and support the negro because they instinctively know that the negro is a conduit to Satan. Streep vilifies Disney, whose life was gentle and full of Christian virtues, while she adds her voice to the choir of devils who sing the praises of men like Nelson Mandela, a man whose life was full of violent atrocities done in the service of Satan. So long as Satan rules Europe, the good and true heroes of our race will be an anathema, and the heathens of color will be worshipped.

Whites such as Disney whose work placed them on the European side of the Great Divide are attacked with the usual litany of abuse – he was racist, he was sexist, etc. – after their deaths. But those whites still living who maintain some connection to old ‘racist’ Europe must not only suffer the litanies of abuse, they must also face torture and murder. The South African whites, who maintained blessed apartheid into the 1990’s, are being exterminated with the blessing of the liberal world because they dared to carry white Europe to Africa and attempted to defend it against all the forces of Satandom. Now the liberals and the colored heathens are making sure that every last Afrikaner is exterminated.

There are no more prophets in the strict biblical sense. The age of prophecy ended with the coming of Christ. But there are modern day prophets in the poetic sense of the word. There are men so alive to the spiritual currents of their times that they can see into the future with blinding sight. Edmund Burke was a prophet, the greatest of the European prophets: he saw what would happen in Europe if the spirit of Jacobinism remained unchecked. Dostoevsky was a prophet as well; he saw the rivers of blood that would flow in Russia and throughout the world if the Bolsheviks came to power. And lastly came Anthony Jacob, who saw that negro worship was the final outcome of European Jacobinism. He warned that every European was a South African. We were all, because our leaders worshipped negroes, to share the same fate as the white South Africans. If South Africa fell, Jacob warned, the rest of the European nations would fall as well. And South Africa did fall, with the approval of the white-hating, Christ-hating leaders of Liberaldom.

Now we are all Afrikaners: the extermination of whites is not just ‘over there.’ It is here, just as Anthony Jacob told us it would be. “Once our grace we have forgot.” If we were still a Christian people we would fight for the Afrikaners: “Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.” Foremost in the fight against European negro worship in the past, the Afrikaners are now the particular target of the cruel hate of the liberals. They are the ‘least of these my brethren’ whom we must defend, because they are our people and because they are one, in their suffering, with the Man of Sorrows. They are being crucified because they tried to bring Christian Europe to Africa.

The same hatred that drives Meryl Streep to spew her venom on Walt Disney drives the liberals of the Western world to worship Mandela and countenance the massacre of the Afrikaners. In South Africa the liberals tell us outright, “The South African whites deserve to be exterminated.” When Terre Blanch was assassinated, the liberals labeled him a “white supremacist” to show that it was noble and good to kill him. But aren’t all the South African whites, in the eyes of the liberals, white supremacists? Yes, they are. “So it is good and noble,” the liberals proclaim, “to exterminate all the whites in South Africa.”

And what of the whites in Europe and the U.S.? Is it good and noble to kill them? Yes, it is, but the liberals are slightly more nuanced about the extermination of whites outside of South Africa. In Europe and the U.S., the liberals, when they can’t keep colored atrocities out of the news, generally call colored atrocities “regrettable” (in contrast to the non-regrettable atrocities in South Africa) “but understandable, considering the persecution and the years of oppression, etc.” Nothing is ever the fault of the black barbarians – indeed there is no such

thing as a black barbarian – they are all noble savages, and black atrocities, which are not really atrocities, are not as dangerous as white retaliation against black atrocities. What we all must worry about is that some racist white person might love his own people enough to strike back at and maybe even injure one of the chosen ones, a noble black savage.

The accepted party line among the Christ-hating, Church idolaters of the West is that white South Africans brought on their own destruction because they refused to abandon apartheid which was opposed to Christianity. But if that was the case, why was abortion illegal in apartheid South Africa and legal in Mandela's South Africa? The truth is that South Africa became part of Liberalism when the white leaders, such as de Klerk, repudiated their Christian ancestors and caved in to the negro-worshipping liberal world that surrounded them. I would love to see an invading Army from Europe destroy the satanic black government of South Africa and reinstate a white apartheid government, but that will not happen because the leaders of the European nations hate the light and worship darkness. A counter revolution in South Africa, like a counter revolution in Europe or the U.S., must come from within the ranks of the oppressed whites' own nation and from the ranks of the few who have not lost sight of what a European man fights for: his racial hearth fire presided over by the God of his ascending race. Are we in the West and those in South Africa completely devoid of men like Andries Pretorius who led the successful punitive attack against the Zulus at Blood River? It would seem that there are no such heroes anymore. But I find it hard to believe that every trace of the old bred-in-the-bone Christianity has been burned out of the European people. God has always sent us champions, men who know not seems, to smite the heathen and confound the wicked. I don't see how the age of science and cosmic nature can change the ways of God.

It might seem like a strange juxtaposition I have made in this article, that of Walt Disney and the Afrikaners, but it does not seem strange to me. When I was growing up, a Disney movie such as *Pinocchio*, *Snow White*, or *The Swiss Family Robinson* seemed magical to me. There was something about a Disney movie that touched me deep inside. As I got older I realized what was so special about the Disney movies. The movies came from the heart of a man who knew, instinctively, that charity never faileth. A man with that vision has seen the face of God in His people.

When the spawn of Satan, Dingaan, chief of the Zulus, gave the orders to kill Retief and all his followers, he shouted, "Hither, my warriors! Kill the wizards!" Yes, there was something magical about the white man, something that a murderous black savage such as Dingaan could never understand. He only knew there was some magic within the white man that was antithetical to his satanic black magic. Every fiber of his being told him he must destroy the white man.

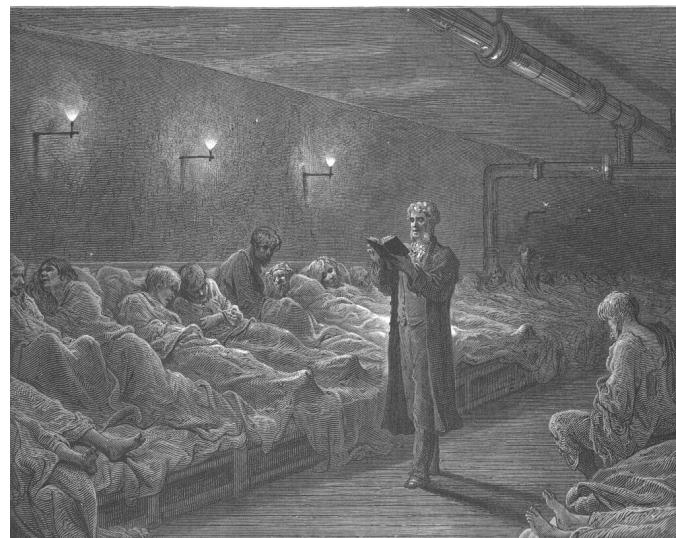
Their methods differ, but the hatred is the same. What Streep hates in Walt Disney, the Zulu chief hated in the whites whom he massacred. The "magic" is to be found in 1 Corinthians 13, and it was burned into the blood of the antique Europeans. Once the Europeans return to the wisdom of their blood, they will fight for their people in the name of the God whose divine charity never faileth. +

One Race, One Faith, One Shepherd

January 25, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Ian Maclaren, Wilbur Daniel Steele



"All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad." – Matthew 26: 31

In 1931 Albert Einstein came out with a pamphlet called *Cosmic Religion* in which he outlined his idea of what a true religion should be. First he dismissed the primitive "fear of lightning" type of religious faith:

In primitive peoples it is, first of all, fear that awakens religious ideas—fear of hunger, of wild animals, of illness, and of death. Since the understanding of causal connections is usually limited on this level of existence, the human soul forges a being, more or less like itself, on whose will and activities depend the experiences which it fears.

Then he tells of the second stage of religious faith and proceeds from there to the third stage.

An important advance in the life of a people is the transformation of the religion of fear into the moral religion. But one must avoid the prejudice that regards the religions of primitive peoples as pure fear religions and those of the civilized races as pure moral religions. All are mixed forms, though the moral element predominates in the higher levels of social life. Common to all these types is the anthropomorphic character of the idea of God.

Only exceptionally gifted individuals or especially noble communities rise essentially above this level; in these there is found a third level of religious experience, even if it is seldom found in a pure form. I will call it the cosmic religious sense. This is hard to make clear to those who do not experience it, since it does not involve an anthropomorphic idea of God; the individual feels the vanity of human desires and aims, and the nobility and marvelous order which are revealed in nature and in the world of thought.

I quoted the 'great' Einstein because I didn't think anyone would believe me if I told them he had said anything so trivial and superficial. But those are Einstein's actual thoughts on religion. How many times have we heard the expression, "He's no Einstein," used to describe a person of below average intelligence? Instead we should say, "He's not the sharpest tack in the drawer, but at least he's not as stupid as Einstein." You wouldn't get your religion from a mechanic, even a very able mechanic, so why should Europeans take their religious faith from men such as Einstein who study the mechanized works of nature? The Emperor has no clothes, but the "intelligent" Europeans of the modern era of darkness lack a little child to proclaim the truth.

The anthropomorphic religion of the God-Man is not a 'stage' on the way to cosmic nature; it is the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. When the Europeans ceased to believe that the God-Man was superior to cosmic nature, they did not make a moral progression: they descended to the slime pits of the savage heathen gods. Einstein's cosmic religion has become the worship of negroes. When the European people rejected the God-Man for cosmic nature, they created a spiritual void that the negro man-god entered. The negro could not resurrect the dead and he was devoid of charity and mercy, but contrary to what the cosmic naturalists tell us a man must have a living breathing representation of his faith. Even the tough guy Nietzsche rushed out into the street to embrace a horse who was being beaten. Why should a superman beyond good and evil comfort a poor suffering horse? Was that the closest Nietzsche could come to embracing the Suffering Servant he claimed he had no need for? The cosmic nature religion of Albert Einstein and his fellow liberals is ridiculously trivial because it fails to take into account the deepest longings of the human heart. And it is horrifically inhumane because it replaces Christ, the God of mercy, with the negro, the god of blood and cruelty. Metternich said that whenever he heard the word 'democracy' he knew a bloodbath was coming. Likewise, whenever we hear of religions that go beyond the anthropomorphic God of Christianity we know that a cruel, primitive god of 'cosmic nature' is going to be visited upon us: "Welcome the savage god."

In the first half of the 20th century a writer of short stories, Wilbur Daniel Steele, wrote a story that described the tragedy of modern man's obsession with the religion of science and cosmic nature. In "The Man Who Saw through Heaven," Steele tells the story of the Reverend Hubert Diana who, en route to Africa to preach Christ to the heathens, stops off at the Boston Observatory and sees a new god. He sees the god of cosmic nature in the stars. This startling revelation of the world of science and cosmic nature leads the Reverend on a downward spiral – the liberals would call it an ascent – through all the primitive totem and sacrifice religions of the African natives. Years later, a white man sent to find the Rev. Hubert Diana, the former disciple of Christ and then a cosmic naturalist and negro worshipper, finds that the Reverend, now deceased, has left a few words scrawled on parchment as his final statement on religion: "Our Father which art in Heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name!" He passed through his own Via Dolorosa and came back to the God-Man. All of us born in the 20th century and those born in the 21st century will have to face what Hubert Diana faced. Will we reject cosmic nature and cling to the God-Man? Or will we embrace cosmic nature and the god of cosmic nature as the liberals have done? The saving grace of Hubert Diana was his fanaticism. He was a fanatical Christian before his conversion to cosmic nature, and he was a whole-hearted cosmic naturalist when he converted to the new scientific religion. Because he pursued his new faith to its ultimate conclusion, he was able to see "the horror, the horror," of a faith that begins with the worship of cosmic nature and ends with the worship of negroes. His end was his new beginning, because he was not lukewarm. The churches and the grazers have settled for a lukewarm mixture of cosmic negro worship and tepid Christianity, which makes them as pliable as putty in the hands of the liberals. It is needful that they pursue their new religion to its ultimate conclusion, then, facing "the horror, the horror," they can make their choice: Christ or the Devil.

Such a consummation, that of a cosmic negro worshipper confronting the utter horror of his new religion, is devoutly to be wished for. But it is a consummation unlikely to occur because that is the whole point of cosmic negro worship: it is an escape from reality. The new triune religion of the Father – the abstracted intellect, the Son – the negro, and the Holy Ghost – Science, is a religion designed to avoid the pain of existence. There are no crucifixions in the liberals' religion except the crucifixion of the 'bad white people' who must atone for their sins against the negro by shedding their blood.

There is much wisdom in the old tale about a room of philosophers who have gathered together to decide how many teeth a horse has. After hours and hours of debate, having reached no conclusion, the philosophers are ready to give up in despair until a little boy suggests that they should simply go out and count a horse's teeth. Our people, the antique Europeans, left a record of their search for the truth of existence. They plumbed the depths and told us that there was a spirit above the dust who had a local habitation and a name. Why should we reject their wisdom, which came as a result of their own personal Via Dolorosa, for the abstract "wisdom" of the cosmic naturalists who never looked beyond the surface of the material world? We shouldn't reject their wisdom because it is the rock on which we can build a sustaining faith in a God of charity and mercy who is diametrically opposed to the merciless negro gods of the liberals.

There is nothing wrong with providing white people with the information about black atrocities. But such reporting must not be done in a moral vacuum as is currently the case. Christendom fell because its rulers ceased to believe in their moral legitimacy. Some ceased to believe in Christianity entirely, and others felt that the Europeans' failure to usher in a perfect world devoid of sin meant that a new, more receptive race of noble savages should supplant the decadent Europeans. That coalition of secular liberals and utopian clergymen began the process which has ended with institutionalized negro worship under the canopy of cosmic nature. So long as the white grazers doubt the moral legitimacy of their European ancestors, they will remain docile in the face of negro atrocities against white people. They will accept every atrocity because such atrocities are acts of God that cannot be questioned. You cry over such things when they hit your own household, but you don't challenge the moral legitimacy of your gods.

Liberalism will start to fall and then eventually crumble when white people believe in their moral legitimacy and no longer believe in the moral legitimacy of negroes and liberals. This is why atrocity stories must be taken out of their moral vacuum. Every atrocity story should be followed by a demand for the dethronement of the negro gods and the re-enthronement of the Christian God of old Europe; not the 'social worker' Christ who supports the bloody reign of demonic negro demi-gods, but the true Christ, the Christ who entered the hearts of the antique Europeans and bid them rise and ride in defense of charity and mercy. The satanic Mandela said that whites need to experience another Isandlwana. He got his wish. Europe is now one continual Isandlwana. So long as white people believe that blacks are divine noble savages who have a moral right to murder whites, the massacres will continue unabated. Break that liberal chain of moral legitimacy, and black atrocities will become something to be avenged rather than countenanced, and liberal rule will be seen as a yoke to be thrown off rather than a blessed system of government that must be supported as the last great hope of mankind for peace and harmony on earth.

The liberals' cosmic nature religion, which blends science and negro worship, was ushered in by men who hated humanity. In their minds any religion that was humane was inferior and doomed to go the way of the evolutionary trash heap. How could faith in the God-Man survive in a world where the religion of Albert Einstein, the religion of cosmic nature, was the reigning theology? It couldn't survive and it did not survive. The churches tried to keep Christianity while jettisoning the European people. They did not see that the elimination of the European people meant the rejection of Christ. If we cannot know Christ in and through the people who took Him into their hearts, how can we know Christ? Through church documents interpreted by the men of superior intellects? Or through the Biblical interpretations of the great men of intellect? It should be writ large in all the churches: "If you take the European people from Christianity, you take away the living God from Christianity."

In his book *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*, Ian Maclaren describes a good man named Burnbrae as being "far ben," which is the people of Drumtochty's highest compliment to a man they feel has come closest to Christ. We must see through, not with, the eye in order to see past what the antique Europeans had in common with the colored races to what set them apart from the colored races. The Europeans were "far ben." They saw Christ in His Divinity and His Humanity, and they called on Him by name. When we, the descendants of the Europeans who were "far ben," look on their faith as the beginning and the end of religious faith and not as a stage on the way to a cosmic religion, we will be in a position to turn the blood-red tide of negro-worshipping liberalism away from the sacred European lands.

Christ's revelation to His beloved apostle, John, was true then and it is true now: "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." The devil struck out at Christ by attacking His people. Now it is time for the scattered flock of His people to return to their true Shepherd and restore His Kingdom Come, on earth as it is in Heaven. +

Dismantling the Kingdom of Satan on Earth

February 1, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Christian counter-attack, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, D. P. Dugauquier



Mau Mau was something in the African blood, calling imperatively and irresistibly. It was a revolt of savagery against all things sane and Christian and civilized and White.

—White Man Think Again

Hell is empty
And all the devils are here.

—The Tempest

The moral Rubicon has been crossed by the liberals of the West. Except for an occasional deathbed conversion, the liberals, who have become a new people separate and distinct from the antique Europeans of Christian Europe, will stay on the satanic side of the Rubicon. They have emptied their hearts of every decent human sentiment and placed an iron curtain, a much more evil one than the Iron Curtain of the Cold War era, around their hearts to keep Satanic cruelty and blasphemy in and Christian faith, hope, and charity out.

Just as Dickens told us that nothing wonderful would proceed from the story of the *Christmas Carol* unless we grasped the fact that Marley was dead, so must I insist that His reign of charity in Europe's green and pleasant land will never be restored until we see that the liberals' professed love of the negro and all the other colored races is nothing other than an attempt, a successful attempt, to make Satan the Lord of the earth.

It is most particularly in their worship of the negro that the liberals reveal the demonic nature of their souls. The complete absence of charity in the negroes horrified the Christian Europeans, but the modern liberal delights in it. They proclaim that the negro's lack of charity is the sign of his nobility. He is a natural, noble savage at one with the animals of the jungle:

The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thrones upon His head, excited cries of 'Pika! Pika!' rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black man's back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.

—Congo Cauldron by D. P. Dugauquier

Always it is the ethos of the jungle that prevails in a society ruled by blacks. And when whites decide to fashion a society in which the blacks are worshipped, the charity and mercy that used to exist in white Christian Europe will disappear from the face of the earth.

In view of what Savanhu considered to be European unfitness to govern Rhodesia, we might examine what he would consider to be African fitness. Having already glanced at African political fitness we can leave that on one side. But where for example the African's purely humanitarian regard for their own kind is concerned, we find the Native Affairs Department reporting that film scenes of African children suffering from disease and starvation are greeted with shrieks of laughter by African audiences. "We have found that a distressingly large proportion of our rural population see nothing but humour in the sufferings of other people," Mr Nesham, the N.A.D. senior information officer, reported. Similarly, Mr Guy, of the Rhodesian Association for the Prevention of Tuberculosis, stated: "I have met no Coloured, Asiatic or African workers in the campaign against tuberculosis. Is it too much to ask members of these communities to come to our assistance?" Likewise, the only African-managed orphanage in Rhodesia reported that it has to rely entirely on White generosity for its support, as Africans themselves refuse to contribute because they feel that is "the white man's job."

—White Man Think Again

Can there be any doubt when we survey the negro-infested world of the West that Europe has become Africa, and charity and mercy have been obliterated in the name of diversity, integration, democracy, and—the ultimate blasphemous inversion—Christianity? Faith in Christ is a two-edged sword. When men believe with their whole heart and soul, they can walk on water—witness the miracle of Christian Europe—but when they begin to doubt they start to sink, and then they forsake God and look for manmade life-rafts.

This new scientific, natural world in which the ethos of the African jungle is our guiding ethos is so much better than the Christian ethos of old Europe, is it not? A whole string of popes and a glittering array of Protestant clergymen have told us that the negroization of the world is something we should work and strive for in the name of Christ, the social worker. So many clergymen just couldn't be wrong, or could they?

In the late 1950's and the early 1960's the Belgian and the British governments turned their people in the Belgian Congo, Kenya, and Rhodesia over to the sacred negroes of Africa. Unspeakable atrocities were the result. Liberalism was deeply rooted in the West at that time, but because of the numerical superiority of whites in the Western countries, their transfer from

a European culture to an African one has taken more time than in Africa. Now the new world of brutal, bestial African cruelty is upon us through the good offices of the liberal elite in state and church.

South Africa didn't cave in to negroization until the 1990's because their nation was not controlled by a European nation. They finally succumbed to the pressures from a worldwide community of liberals, who held them to be moral pariahs. No one likes to be called names and shunned, but I wonder how many of the white South Africans who voted for the ending of apartheid would gladly become, once again, the moral pariahs of the Western world in order to see their murdered loved ones alive again? Of course the biggest traitors such as de Klerk are still living quite well off the blood of their countrymen whom they betrayed.

The cold, deliberate extermination of whites is no longer confined to Africa. There is an ongoing extermination of the white race throughout every European country. The slaughter will not cease so long as liberalism is the ruling theology in the West. The numerically larger hordes of colored barbarians would mean nothing if liberals ceased to rule Europe. Just a few committed white men could easily defeat the colored barbarians. It was the liberals who encouraged and countenanced the slaughter of whites in Africa and it is the liberals who encourage and countenance the slaughter of whites in the nations of Europe. They won't be converted, so they must be defeated. The capitalist liberal who sees men as economic units only wants the freedom to hire the more servile colored races, and the socialist liberal wants the freedom to live in his hermetically sealed pleasure dome without the restrictions of the white Christian God. The great black god will not inhibit the liberal's pleasure: all the liberal has to do is sacrifice his fellow whites to his black god. De Klerk is an infamous, shining example of the liberal in a brave, new world of pleasure, purchased by the sacrificial offerings of white people to the savage gods of color.

At the moment in history when faith in Christ became faith in theology, the angels wept, Satan exulted, and the stage was set, even though the drama was to be acted out many centuries later, for the construction of Satan's kingdom on earth through the worship of the negro. God cannot be known by the human mind. All theological systems teach men to believe a lie when they make God an intellectual concept. It is only through the heart that men come to know the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. Took flesh and dwelt among us! God is God because He is human. His incarnation revealed that the soul comes to life through the flesh. How can the human mind grasp that? European hearts did grasp that impossible intellectual concept, and they acted upon it for centuries, in a land called Christian Europe.

The theological God is a distant God. And a distant God who eschews contact with human hearts sees mankind only as intellectual constructs. I once read a Roman Catholic theologian's calm assertion that the loss of European Christians to the faith was made up for by the addition of millions of Mexicans to the Church. Even if we accept the Roman Catholic's arrogant Feeneyism, should we not recoil at the notion of God as a super stat-geek, counting the aggregate gains and losses and smiling contently when He comes out ahead? Dostoyevsky gets it right in his Grand Inquisitor scene of the *Brothers' Karamazov*. When Ivan presents his case against God, Alyosha does not attempt to make an intellectual refutation of Ivan's rational arguments; he does not, a la Milton, attempt to explain the ways of God to man. Instead he bids Ivan look on the face of the Suffering Servant.

Theology turns God into an accountant and men into statistics. In the statistical realm, the suffering of white men means nothing because statistics don't suffer. And in the statistical realm, blacks are worshipped because the flesh cannot be sanctified. Therefore it follows that the most "natural" people, and not the God-Man of the spirit-infused white people, should be worshipped as gods.

There can be no true thought unless the heart is brought into play. By thinking alone we are all dead letters, doomed to live and die as meaningless statistics. If we contemplate the nothingness of the universe and the mathematical certainty of our own suffering and inevitable death on this earth, we will quite naturally—and I stress the word 'naturally'—seek to anesthetize ourselves throughout our entire lifespan and then pass into the great void. Samuel Becket has expressed this modern angst quite well. It is a disease that infected the European people when theology became their religion.

In college I had a professor who did his Ph.D. dissertation on Samuel Beckett. We both shared a passion for Dostoyevsky and Shakespeare, but he saw only the Samuel Beckett elements in Dostoyevsky and Shakespeare: he did not see the Son of God. A few years after getting my degree, I visited my former professor at his home. After a few pleasantries, we got down to the serious matter. I confessed that I had come to believe in the God-Man. He fussed and fumed for awhile and then told me of a student of his who had professed to believe in Christianity. He asked his student how she could believe in a loving God considering all the suffering in the world. "What about cancer, for instance?"

"I think God is trying to teach people a lesson by letting cancer run rampant. They need to return to God."

"Oh, so when people believe in God they don't get cancer..."

The girl's arguments were easily ground into the dust. Maybe, even quite probably, the girl was a sincere believer in Christ, but she was defending Christianity as Satan wants Christianity to be defended, from the mind and not from the heart. That type of defense leads to an anesthetized world where white people are exterminated by black abstractions. Yes, I said abstractions, because the liberals do not care about the blacks, except as executioners of white Christians. If they really cared about their black demi-gods, they would want to restore white-ruled Africa and white Europe so that the whites could once again stop blacks from murdering blacks. I don't ever mean to suggest that white rule should be restored because it is good for blacks. I am merely showing the liberals' theology in all its naked ugliness. They are incapable of any type of genuine love for any racial group because they have forsaken their own people and the God-Man who lives and reigns in the hearts of the European people, the remnant of Europeans who have not reasoned God and His people into statistical nonentities.

Let me go back to that atheist professor. I responded to his "why is there cancer?" attack on God with Alyosha's response to his brother Ivan. He didn't fall on his knees and become a Christian, but he didn't sneer either. Of course a Beckett-devotee is not as far gone as a theological liberal of the secular or the religious variety. Their theology arms them against all human feelings. And one must have some human feelings in order to know the humane God.

European men, armed with statistical indifference to the God-man and cold hatred for His people, have built a negro-worshipping world devoid of faith, hope, and charity. European men who do not care about statistics and who have an irrational, illogical, heartfelt attachment to their own people and their God, the Man of Sorrows, will dismantle the liberals' negro-worshipping kingdom of Satan on earth. +

The Rage That Stems from Charity

February 8, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Dylan Thomas, Shakespeare



Do not go gentle into that good night.
Rage, rage against the dying of the light.

—Dylan Thomas

What the former British Cabinet Minister Lord Mandelson [revealed about his liberal government](#) is true of every single government in the Western world. They have set up a quota system designed to change the racial composition of their countries. There are not supposed to be any more white nations, because it is self-evident that white people are evil and colored people are good. So it follows that a bad nation, which is a white nation, can become a good nation by replacing its white people with black people. The colorization of the European nations is now proceeding at an accelerated pace, because even the conservatives in church and state have conceded the need for ‘diversity.’ There can be no resistance to diversity because... “Well,” the liberal fumbles for a reason, “because diversity is good.” But of course when the liberal invokes ‘diversity,’ he is really advocating a non-diverse nation of colored people. In Liberaldom, diversity means the extermination of white people.

How have white people responded to their own extermination? The ruling liberal elite in Church and state have responded with joy to the extermination of the white race. De Clerk of South Africa is representative of all liberals throughout the European nations. Under the name of diversity, he sold out his people, turning them over to black savages, in return for a guarantee of immunity for himself. He might live out his own life without feeling the full effects of ‘diversity,’ but his children will most certainly become part of the diversity cauldron. The liberals hope that their own children will mix with the black race so that they can have black grandchildren. All those whites who refuse to allow their whiteness to be obliterated by blending will be exterminated with the blessing of the liberals. So it is written, so it shall be, so long as liberals rule.

What of the grazers who constitute the majority of white people within the European nations? How do they feel about their own extermination? They are in a state of stupefied denial because, having lost their religious vision, they cannot distinguish between good and evil. So long as evil puts on a virtuous façade the grazers remain stupefied. This stupefaction of the grazers is painful to behold. For instance: A few days ago I saw, on an alternative news site, a group of Swedish grazers rallying to protest against an imported black savage who was molesting little girls. The black savage claimed it was racist to prosecute him for molesting little girls because it was not considered a crime in his culture. And of course, under the rules of ‘diversity,’ which say that nothing stemming from the blacks’ culture can be wrong, the black savage was correct. Still, the white Swedish grazers had some lingering prejudices, left over from the Christian ‘dark ages,’ which made them resent the black savage’s sexual practices. But what did the Swedes do about it? They protested. And to whom were they protesting? The government, that’s who. And who instituted the quota system, allowing black savages to enter Sweden? And who forbids the worship of the white Christian God and mandates the worship of the black gods? Do you see the point? If you seek redemption from the devil, you obviously have lost your ability to distinguish good from evil. The governments and the churches of the West are satanic: you will not be able to redress any wrong or stop any black atrocity by appealing to the institutional source of the wrongs and the atrocities. I liken the white grazers throughout the European world to the pro-lifers. For years the ‘pro-lifers’ have been appealing to the same court system that gave us legalized abortion to end legalized abortion. The massacre of babies and whites will continue so long as white grazers fail to see that their churches and their governments are evil. It is time to appeal to some authority that is above our churches and our governments.

I don’t mean to suggest that an appeal to Christ will immediately restore Christian Europe. But I am asserting that when a determined band of Europeans make war on the liberals, the liberals in state and church, a new Europe much like the old Europe will be the final result, albeit, after centuries of struggle. The new-old Europe won’t be utopia, the good will often die young, iniquity will often go unpunished, but our suffering and deaths will once again have meaning, because our lives will be lived as Europeans ought to live, connected to Christ through the love of our people.

I haven’t left the Swedes who wanted the spawns of Satan in their government to punish their negro foster child. If the Swedish protestors believed in the Christ of old Europe, they would not look for redemption from the devil. They would kiss the hilt of their sword, which is also a cross, and kill the black rapist. There are atrocities occurring throughout Europe that cry out to heaven for vengeance. It’s useless to expect mercy or justice from the liberals or the colored savages, so what is the white man’s alternative? What does that charity of honor demand that he should do?

It’s one thing to hand a man a printed sheet of paper that lists the reasons why Christ is the answer to the problem of existence, and it is quite another thing to show a man the face of Christ in the heart of His people. The former, rational apologia leads a man to an empty wasteland while the latter, non-rational apologia leads a man to the foot of the cross. And it is there, where crucified love abides, that a man becomes the type of man who will not tolerate the extermination of his people.

In the wasteland of the 20th century, one magnificent, heartfelt plea to God stands out. From the tortured soul of Dylan Thomas came the [battle cry of the European](#):

*Do not go gentle into that good night
Rage, rage against the dying of the light.*

Where has the rage gone that once existed in the hearts of the European people? The light of Europe cannot be allowed to die. Thomas raged as his European ancestors raged. United in arms with their pagan gods they fought to the last against the forces of evil and death. Then, because they raged against the dying of the light, they saw Christ pick up the sword of Woden and stand in the forefront of their warrior band, fighting, not just to the end, but through the ending of the world to the beginning of a new and eternal world that belongs to those who rage, with a burning fire of charity, against the dying of the light. Our Lord told us it would always be thus:

From the time of John the Baptist until now, the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth violence and the violent bear it away.

It goes against the blood faith of the white man to slay the innocent or kill because of a lust for gold or power. Such acts are blasphemy to the European. But is it not equally as blasphemous to refuse to fight for your people against all the forces of hell? An evil and adulterous people will fight for an abstraction such as the sacred negro, if that abstraction promises them they will obtain their heart's desire, a kingdom of Satan on earth. But a Christian European of the old school, of Alfred and Tell, fights for the non-abstract Christ, the God-Man who, through His divine Humanity, has shown us that there is a divine-human connection in our ties to our kith and kin. Break those ties and you have broken the ties between the European and Christ. The snake in the European garden has always been and always shall be the philosophical abstraction. Abstract the God-Man and you will end up with the negro man-god.

When the European followers of Woden bent their knees to Christ, it was not the Christ of the philosophers they knelt to; they gave homage to their Lord and Kinsman whom they felt drawn to by ties of blood that went back to the beginning of time. They kept their racial memory of the true God alive because of their closeness to their kith and kin just as the colored tribes keep close to Satan by cannibalizing their kith and kin. The white man raged against the dying of the light because he saw the light of the soul in the hearts of his fellow Europeans. Small wonder that he was ready to accept the God-Man who fought against the dying of the light.

In the early part of the 20th century the apostate intellectuals of the West made it their business to de-emphasize the differences between the European people and the people of color. They told us that the Christian faith was similar to the coloreds' faiths, and the Europeans' virtues and sins were the same as the colored races. Then in the latter half of the 20th century we were told that there was a huge discrepancy between the white man's history and the colored man's history. The white man's faith and the culture that stemmed from that faith were evil and inferior to the faith and cultures of the colored people. The church men responded to the liberals' demonization of European Christianity by denouncing the European and keeping the "pure" philosophical Christianity, which is a religion without a living God, fit for men without souls. How can white men fight negro savages who torture, rape, and murder white people while imprisoned by a mind-forged Christianity that is the antithesis of the one true faith, the faith of our European forefathers? They can't.

The reason whites are being exterminated throughout the European world was summed up for me recently by a pious, Christ-hating theologian of the West. In an interview he was asked why the church was turning more and more toward the third world. He replied that it was imperative that the church should divest itself of her European trappings. "In the past," the great man intoned, "we over-romanticized the church's debt to the European people." Oh really? Is it possible to "over-romanticize" the church's debt to the European people? No, it is not possible. The Christian church consists of those who believe in the Man of Sorrows. Tell me what people, other than the European people, ever believed, as an entire people, in the light of the world. What has happened to that light now that the Europeans have gone over to negro-worship and philosophical Christianity?

The racial war and the religious war are one. When we have defeated the anti-European Christianity of the church men, we will also be imbued once more with that charity of honor which enabled our forefathers to smite the heathen and defend their people. A people are defined by their heroes. We are the people of Alfred, of Tell, of Havelock, of Robin Hood, and of Lee. We are not the people of Martin Luther King Jr. and Mandela. The European romance, the romance of old Europe, which Scott and Burke championed, is the one true romance of life. It's in our blood and we must be true to our blood if we are to triumph over the liberals' negro worshipping kingdom of Satan on earth. +

Hearts of Flesh

February 15, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism



O boundless heart, kept fresh by pity's dews!

-from John Sterling's "Shakespeare"

In traditional societies the people tend to revere, as distinct from worship, their past. They go into the future holding onto the threads of their past because their ancestors were closer in time to the God of their race. A European of the old stock wanted to stay close to his ancestors because they were a people who had seen a great light. The closer he got to those people, the closer he was to the light.

In stark contrast to a traditional society is a utopian society. In a utopian society all threads to the past are cut. They may be cut all at once, as was in the case in France and Russia, or they may be cut one by one over a longer period of time, as was the case in all the other nations of European origin. But now, despite different routes to utopia, all the nations that were racially and culturally white nations are now utopian nations. And just as their ancestors sought the light, the people of the new European nations also seek the light. But they seek the light of the future, a future without their people and without the God of their people. This is an astonishingly shocking phenomenon, and not shocking in a good sense, yet it is never noted by the intellectuals, because they are utopian, and it is never noted by the grazers, because they have no links to old Europe. Their entire world has been the modern world of utopia, which is in reality a dystopia, so the grazers have no point of reference, no opposing vision, that can serve as a sign of contradiction to the liberals' utopia. [\(1\)](#)

Because the winners write history, a white youth will not hear his elementary school teachers, his secondary school teachers, or his college professors talk about the tragic transformation of Christian Europe, in which the people of the white race lived and died connected to Christ, into utopian Europe, in which white people dismantled everything that was white and Christian in order to be part of a utopian world where the negro was the supreme god. What the young white people will be told is how evil the white men of the past were. They will be told about the white man's harsh treatment of the colored races, of his subjugation of women, of his propensity for wars, of his superstitious invention of a sexually oppressive religion that he tried to force down the throats of the purer, nobler, colored races. All this and more, much more, will the modern white youths be taught by their utopian elders.

In the high court of utopia, the white man is guilty on two counts. He is guilty of being Christian, and he is guilty of not being Christian enough. "Why were there still brothels and wars in Christendom!" the utopian scolds. By what right does the utopian, who has made the whole world into a brothel and makes war-without-end on the enemies of utopia, accuse the Christian European of debauchery and war-mongering? What we find when we look at the utopian in action is that despite his professed utopian ideals he adheres to a very old pagan principle: "Might makes right." Of course the utopian uses his might to cleanse the world of recalcitrant non-utopians. Robespierre was a zealous opponent of capital punishment, but he made some "small" exceptions in order to "cleanse" the world of non-utopian throwbacks to the age of unreason and impurity.

Nation states based on utopian ideals are always more totalitarian and violent than traditional nation states, which come into being because the people of that nation have one faith and one race. Because utopian states are so unnatural, the rulers of those states must have total control over every aspect of society in order to build a perfect world, which never has existed and never can exist. And since utopians don't believe in original sin, there can be only one reason why utopia has not arrived. Bad people are impeding its arrival! In France it was the royalists who had to be eliminated. In Marxist Russia it was the white Russian royalists and the counter-revolutionaries who had to be eliminated. And in the modern European utopias, which are the synthesis of all the utopian states ever conceived, it is white people who must be eliminated. If we keep those two factors before our eyes – 1) the utopian's power must be total, and 2) the sinners against utopia, who are the white people, must be eliminated – we will never be deceived into thinking we can coexist with liberals and colored barbarians. Even if white people agree to worship the black gods of utopia – and most whites have agreed to worship the black gods – such acts of obeisance will not end white genocide. Whites must die so that utopia can live. How can the unclean, the original white sinners, enter into the kingdom of heaven on earth? They can't.

If we go back to the first utopian state in Europe, Jacobin France, and the man who opposed it with all his heart, mind, and soul, Edmund Burke, we can see the deviation from Christianity that fueled the Jacobins and continues to fuel the negro-worshipping utopians of modern Europe. Burke saw that a Christianity in which faith in the Suffering Servant was deemphasized in preference for a religious system caused men to reject Christianity and embrace utopian ideologies.

I have no doubt that some miserable bigots will be found here, as well as elsewhere, who hate sects and parties different from their own, more than they love the substance of religion; and who are more angry with those who differ from them in their particular plans and systems, than displeased with those who attack the foundation of our common hope. These men will write and speak on the subject in the manner that is to be expected from their temper and character. Burnet says, that when he was in France, in the year 1683, "the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this—they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly." If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is "much too much") amongst ourselves. The humour, however, is not general.

And why was the humor not general in Britain until the 20th century? Largely because of Christians such as Shakespeare and Burke who focused on the Christ of I Corinthians 13. Right before his exhortation on charity, St. Paul discusses in I Corinthians 12 the various spiritual gifts men have, such as speaking in tongues and the gift of prophecy. But then he goes on to say, "shew unto you a more excellent way." What follows is the most profound piece of spiritual truth that is to be found outside the Gospels: "Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels and have not..."

True mysticism, the type of mysticism that reaches out and touches the heart of God, comes from those mysterious human relationships that William Shakespeare, Walter Scott, Thomas Hughes, Jane Austen, Charles Dickens, Kenneth Grahame, C. S. Lewis, and the incomparable Edmund Burke championed. That God imparts His divine charity through human hearts was

the vision of those mystics of the human heart. The living God becomes an absentee God when the divine-human connection is severed. Utopian systems, even if they incorporate an abstract Christ, will never have room for the living God because there is no room for human beings with hearts of flesh in utopian systems. Lear only becomes human and open to divine grace when he sees the spark of divinity in the humanity of his beloved daughter Cordelia. The gods of the philosophers do not weep; only the God who abides with us in our common humanity wept at the death of Lazarus.

Faith in Christ is the only faith that gives us hope that we will once again be able to feel the touch of a vanished hand and hear the sound of a voice that is still. But if a man does not feel that the extinction of a human personality is a great tragedy, if he doesn't long for "the tender grace of a day that is dead," then he will not look to a personal savior who redeems human suffering by sharing it: he will look to the men who promise him an end to suffering in this world.

Utopian ideologies became institutionalized throughout the West when the Europeans traded the humane God who spoke to them through His divine charity for the gods of utopia who promised them a pain-free, pleasurable existence on earth. No doubt the advent of science contributed greatly to the conversion of the European everyman, who equated scientific advances with moral evolution. It's the Einstein factor: "A man of science must be more intelligent than a European who believes in fairy tales." But a man who believes in the "fairy tale" of Christ crucified, Christ risen is the man of depth, not the cosmic naturalist. In the face of death we have only the Man of Sorrows to save us from complete and utter despair. What comfort can the legionnaires of superficiality give us? "The earth will survive" or "We and our loved ones will survive in the memories of those left behind"? The modern European utopias are built on superficiality and lies. It is incredibly superficial to ignore the tragedy of existence, the fact that mortal men must die. From the depths of our heart we cry out to the God whose divine charity will save us from death. Superficiality will not save us. The lie that supports the utopians' superficiality is the lie of the sacred negro, purer and nobler than the 'evil' white men of the past. The greatest mysticism is the Pauline/Shakespearean mysticism of charity, in which we are linked to Christ through our love of the people of our racial hearth fire. We are linked with the devil when we leave our racial hearth fire in order to love an abstract, ignoble, savage god who has not charity.

If we pick up the threads of the past, a past that goes back beyond the decadence of scholasticism to the Christ of Nennius and Geoffrey of Monmouth, we will see that there is no dichotomy between Christ and the fairy tale. The Christ story is the true fairy tale of the hero who triumphed over ruin and death because of the great love He bore for His people. The memory of that love has waned and then been revived and waned again over the European centuries, but it has never completely died. The modern 'utopias' will crumble when we love our people in and through Christ the Savior rather than Christ the C.E.O. or Christ the Social Worker. Fairy tale Europeans, such as Shakespeare, Burke, and Scott, saw evil, the type of evil we

see before us in the negro worship of the liberals, and they fought it in the name of the God whose love passeth the understanding of our intellects. The profoundest, deepest mysticism of all is the simple walk through the wardrobe door into the world where we see love and all love's loving parts enveloped and sustained by the Man of Sorrows. My people, at their best, believed that vision of divine charity was the true vision. It is the vision that will carry us through the dark night of utopian Europe to the light of His eternal Europe. +

(1) In all the elections held in the European nations what is at issue is which party can best guide their nation forward into the light of utopia. What is needed are European leaders who want to destroy totalitarian, utopian democracy and restore the traditional well-springs of a true European nation, namely one white race and the one true fairy tale faith of Jesus Christ, late of this parish called Europe.

The Love That Never Falters

February 22, 2014

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Walter Scott



I vow to thee, my country, all earthly things above,
Entire and whole and perfect, the service of my love;
The love that asks no question, the love that stands the test,
That lays upon the altar the dearest and the best;
The love that never falters, the love that pays the price,
The love that makes undaunted the final sacrifice.

I heard my country calling, away across the sea,
Across the waste of waters she calls and calls to me.
Her sword is girded at her side, her helmet on her head,
And round her feet are lying the dying and the dead.
I hear the noise of battle, the thunder of her guns,
I haste to thee my mother, a son among thy sons.

And there's another country, I've heard of long ago,
Most dear to them that love her, most great to them that know;
We may not count her armies, we may not see her King;
Her fortress is a faithful heart, her pride is suffering;
And soul by soul and silently her shining bounds increase,
And her ways are ways of gentleness, and all her paths are peace. (1)

That poem was written by Sir Cecil Spring-Rice. I don't think Spring-Rice's feelings about his England were particularly unusual for his times. I think most Englishmen of the 19th century and the early 20th century felt connected to their nation by ties of faith and blood. And I'm sure the men of every European nation once had similar feelings about their nations — "Southern by the grace of God" and "The sacred Fatherland" and so on.

Scott thought a deep spiritual connection to one's people was necessary for a man's soul. Every European school child used to memorize Scott's verses from the *Lay of the Last Minstrel*:

*Breathes there the man, with soul so dead,
Who never to himself hath said,
This is my own, my native land!
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burn'd,
As home his footsteps he hath turn'd,
From wandering on a foreign strand!
If such there breathe, go, mark him well;
For him no Minstrel raptures swell;
High though his titles, proud his name,
Boundless his wealth as wish can claim;
Despite those titles, power, and pelf.
The wretch, concentrated all in self,
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,
And, doubly dying, shall go down
To the vile dust, from whence he sprung,
Unwept, unhonour'd, and unsung.*

But in modern times what is considered patriotic has changed. The old patriotism, a deep spiritual connection to the people of your race, is now considered to be treasonous and blasphemous. A man in Liberaldom is considered a patriot and a Christian to the extent that he hates his own kith and kin and loves the black man. This new patriotism is supposed to be more in keeping with the brotherhood of man. It prevents wars and fosters a love of the pure and noble ideal, the noble black savage.

The first counterpoint is that preventing war is not always good. Sometimes we should fight wars. The second point is that the type of patriotism expressed by Scott, while not preventing wars, did add an element of chivalry to war that mitigated the evil of war and made peace possible at the end of the war. The better men, the Christian warriors, such as Lee and Alfred, were fierce in battle when it was thrust upon them, but they were chivalrous and gentle in victory and defeat. They were chivalrous to friend and foe because they had learned reverence and love, reverence for God and the love of kith and kin, at their racial hearth fires. It is the universalists, the liberals, who hate their kith and kin and reverence the negro, who make war without quarter. The universalists have severed all their ties to their own people and in doing so have become subhuman monstrosities, who place no limit on their bloodletting so long as the bloodletting advances the cause of their new people, the negro demigods. The old Europeans had a certain respect for their European enemies because they knew they both revered

the Christian God and shared the same racial hearth fire. Montcalm told the English general, after the French-employed Indians massacred British troops who had already surrendered, that he would rather have lost the battle than be connected to such a breach of honor. Not so in liberal wars. There are no breaches of honor with liberals, because they have no honor. Everything that serves negro-worshipping liberalism is good, and everything else is anathema, and must be destroyed.

The French Jacobins no longer loved their fellow Frenchmen because they were of the same race, place, and faith. Instead, they loved the ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Whoever professed to have the same ideals, be they black Haitians, murderous proletarian brigands, or Jew robbers, were their fellow countrymen. That was the new patriotism in France, Russia, and the northern half of the United States. A man was patriotic according to how loyal he was to a universal ideal, not according to how loyal he was to his kith and kin.

It's now commonplace throughout all of the formerly white Christian nations to condemn a man whose patriotism is linked to his faith and his race, while lauding a universalist patriotism that is always measured by the extent that a man loves the negro and hates the white man. Every white protest against black atrocities is always expressed in universalist terms – “we are against all violence no matter what color...” — because the white protester hopes to appease the liberal universalists and by doing so get the liberals to act in favor of the white victims of black savagery. Such tactics never work, because the liberals consider whites to be evil and blacks sacred. How can sinful men rebuke their gods?

It's not quite accurate to say that groups like the English Defense League, who want to stop the liberal, universalist-inspired extermination of white people by appealing to the universalist liberals, are using a tactic. It's quite possible that they no longer believe that the English people are a particular people bound to their nation and each other by ties of blood and faith that go back to time immemorial. If that is the case, if they are not just using a tactic, but instead really believe in a multi-racial, multi-religious England, then they will be exterminated by the liberals and the black barbarians with less remorse than the wanton boys in *King Lear*: “As flies to wanton boys are we to the gods...” Who has ever received mercy at the hands of the black gods? The torture-murder of Jonathan Foster was not an aberration. It was the natural consequence of the Europeans’ refusal to fight for their people as a distinct people of one race and one faith. The barbarians of color take their cues from the whites. If the whites are weak and defenseless, the barbarians of color will attack. There have already been millions of Jonathan Fosters and there will be millions more so long as suicidal, liberal universalism rules the hearts and minds of white men.

The neopagans who blame Christianity for the suicide of the white nations have lost contact, like the liberals, with the lifeblood of their people. Satan, who is a master strategist, did not go after God with a full frontal attack. Instead, he cut off God’s supply lines to His people. God works in human hearts, through those mysterious channels of grace that exist at our racial hearth fires. Once Satan convinced the church men that God gives out His marching orders to a few select men with great minds, who in turn pass the information on to the people, the real people, the people with hearts of flesh, were then cut off from the true God who imparts to human hearts. Humpty Dumpty, who used words to tyrannize the inarticulate lay men, said, “When I use a word it means anything I want it to mean.” That's what happened when theological Christianity, which is a man-made, mind-forged religion, replaced the ancient faith of the Europeans, a living faith forged by a living God who formed a bond with His people through the blood. The Humpty Dumpty faith suited the church men and Satan because it meant that Christianity could mean anything the mind of man, informed by Satan, wanted it to mean. It now means liberalism, and liberalism means negro worship.

When I was growing up I often heard my parents and my grandparents use the phrase, “If I got a dollar every time _____, I’d be a rich man.” I don’t know if that expression is still in parlance today, but let me bring it back again, with a slight adjustment for inflation. “If I got five dollars every time I heard or read of a liberal mocking the Victorians for their sentimentality over the death of Little Nell, for their devotion to their Queen, for their ‘repressive’ views of women, and for their antiquated notions about God and country, I’d be a wealthy man.” If you share the same sentiments on the major issues of life as the Victorians, which I most absolutely and devoutly do, you are supposed to crawl into a hole and feel ashamed of yourself for being a sloppy, sentimental, stupid, sexually repressed anachronism. But we all have sentiments, even the liberals. It’s a question of whose sentiments we want to live by. I want to stand with the Victorians, who wept at the death of Little Nell, put the white, Christian woman on a pedestal, and loved their people in and through the Christ of the European hearth fire. And I want to stand against the liberals, who rejoice at the “liberation” of women and their transformation from Florence Nightingales into Lady Macbeths, weep over the death of black thugs such as Nelson Mandella, exult over the torture and murder of white people, and worship the black savage. Is liberal nation our nation? It’s not mine, my heart and soul belongs to the antique Europeans whose hearts soared when they sang, “God Save Our Gracious Queen,” and who wept over the death of Little Nell. (2)

What Chesterton said of Kipling, that he wanted his country to be powerful because he loved power, was not true. If Chesterton had taken the trouble to read Kipling’s work more deeply, he would have seen that Kipling loved his England intensely and for all the right sentiments; he was not lacking in *pietas*. Kipling wanted his nation to be powerful because he wanted his people to survive, and he knew they would not survive if they were left to the less than tender mercies of the lesser breeds without the law. Chesterton’s unfounded and spiteful accusation against Kipling could and should be leveled at the savages of color. They have no *pietas*; their patriotism consists of a love for the powerful. Again, let me quote D. P. Dugauquier:

Africans have respected power deriving from force for too many centuries to acquire any moral shackles—they admire and follow the man with strength. Here is an illustration, amusing but unfortunately quite true. In a school run by the Catholic Church for young men showing aptitudes which might befit them for eventual priesthood, a film was being shown. The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thrones upon His head, excited cries of ‘Pika! Pika!’ rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black man’s back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.

The feeling of *pietas*, the love of your own, because they are your own, not because they are powerful or can do something for you, is an emotion, at least in its full development, that only the white man has felt. Let the pygmy-souled liberals scream racism all day and through the night, we will never cease to maintain that the antique Europeans were unique and special in that they loved their own more deeply and more profoundly than the colored races loved their own. No doubt this was because they loved the humane God more deeply and profoundly than the other races: “See how they love one another.”

Now, because of their hatred of everything white and Christian, the liberals, and the apostate clergy, make war on the European culture of *pietas*. It is a grave sin, an unpardonable sin, to love your own people. A white man must hate his own kind with his whole heart, mind, and soul if he is to enter the liberals’ kingdom of “heaven” on earth. Why should he want to belong to that kingdom, which is devoid of light, faith, honor, and love?

The liberals in state and church will always attack the older European culture and its defenders. “The older Christian Europeans were racist and sexist” the secular liberals tell us. “The antique Europeans were racist and sexist,” and therefore they were not Christian,” the church men tell us. From racist and sexist, we move on to the charge of romanticizing old Europe. Here we come up against this thing called ‘sentiment.’ Yes, I have a romantic attachment to old Europe. I see faith, hope, and charity in the collective face of those dear old folk from long ago. Christ presided over their hearth fires, and I feel His presence whenever I abide with them. What do I feel when I come near the liberals’ altars, which are consecrated to the negro gods? I feel the fires of hell. Do I over romanticize the Europe of *pietas*? No, I do not. It is not possible to over-romanticize His Europe any more than it is possible to exaggerate the evil of our modern, liberal-forged, negro-worshipping kingdom of Satan on earth. Our prayer, as we sit by the hearth fire of the antique Europeans, is the same as their prayer: it is the prayer of the apostles at Emmaus: “Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” +

(1) In 2004, an Anglican bishop called for the first verse not to be included in Church of England services because it was ‘totally heretical.’

(2) Our first country is our race because we cannot be sure of our neighbor unless we know that he is genuinely our neighbor and not some foreign, alien intruder. And then we look for a specific country where the people of our own race and faith dwell. Growing up in the northern United States, I did not have a country. I was drawn, at an early age, to the Southern cavaliers and Bonnie Prince Charlie. But above them all I was drawn to England, the England of Shakespeare, Dickens, and the British Grenadiers. You could make an argument that England has fallen further down the slippery slope of liberalism than any other European nation. I wouldn’t quarrel with that argument, but I would add that England had the furthest to fall. Be that as it may, the people that once claimed, with pride, that “Britons never will be slaves,” have become, like all the people of Europe, the slaves of a universalist ideology that is opposed to the ancient faith of the British people.

When a loved one has Alzheimer’s disease, you don’t cease to love them. You remember what they were and still are in the deepest recesses of their soul. This displaced European, living in the Universalist Northern half of the United States of Liberaldom, will always love eternal Europe and have an extra special affection for “This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England...”

Turning Back the Tide of Color

March 1, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob



The white man is responsible for every single civilized feature that Negro Africa possesses; and the present negrophile psychosis, as Dr. Verwoerd calls it, spells doom not only to the white man in Africa but everywhere else. The line has to be drawn somewhere, for there is no limit to the demands that are made upon us. For every one demand we meet, two fresh demands are instantly made. Extended appeasement, Dr. Verwoerd predicted, would lead not only to the return of heathendom and chaos in Africa, but to the eventual overwhelming of the Western nations themselves by the unopposed and actively White-assisted, tide of colour.

-Anthony Jacob in *White Man Think Again*

There are small but significant coalitions of anti-immigration groups in virtually every European country. Because the anti-establishment groups are primarily white, the liberal establishment calls them racist. Would this were true. The groups are not racist. They don't talk about restricting colored immigration, nor do they urge the deportation of the colored races from Europe. They simply want to slow down the immigration rate, and some of the bolder members of the immigration-restrictionist coalitions want the new immigrants, "no matter what their color," to "respect our culture." This, of course, will never be the case. The Celts can let the negroes toss the caber in the Highland games, which they have done; the Brits can let black soldiers into their army, which they have done; the Basques in Spain can feature negroes on their websites, which they have done, and on and on it goes, but such appeasements will never make the colored savages respect the white culture. In their minds there is only one culture – the blood-soaked culture of the African jungle. Whether it is Somalians in Minneapolis or Zulus in Sweden, it is all part of the same worldwide process: the Africanization of the European nations. When that process is complete, not even the liberals who set the process in motion will be left alive.

The spirit of the various anti-immigration groups throughout the European nations still savor too much of modernity. The use of the phrase 'tea party' in America illustrates the weaknesses in all the European resistance movements. The phrase 'tea party' conjures up an old quarrel of whites against whites. What if the tea parties had called their movement 'Rorke's Drift' and carried placards calling for the end of the negroization of the white nations? No doubt the liberals would be angered, but the liberals are not going to budge one inch from their negroization policies because of polite, white requests to slow down the negroization of Europe. So why not counter the implacable hatred of the liberals with an implacable hatred of our own? The white man's fear of being called racist must cease before white genocide can be halted. I don't see any diminishing of that fear in the ranks of the tea parties of the U.S. or in their European counterparts, which is why I still don't see any movement that is leading us away from the negroization of Europe.

In a relatively recent biography of Stanley, the African explorer, the mad-dog liberal author wrote of the cowardice of another English explorer who stood by while some African natives killed and then ate an African girl right before the English explorer's eyes. The English explorer claimed he had no idea the Africans were going to do such a hideous thing, because he never dreamed that any people, even African people, would do such a thing. The author didn't believe the English explorer and spent a couple pages commenting on the moral shortcomings of the "cowardly" Englishman. First off, I believed the Englishman. I don't think he knew what the Africans intended to do. Secondly, what if the much-maligned explorer had known that the Africans were going to kill and eat the girl: how was he supposed to stop them? Only an extraordinary man would have even attempted such a futile rescue. It would have been more difficult than taking a lion's meat away from him as he was about to take the first bite. So why should the Englishman be condemned for not knowing the African natives were going to kill and eat the girl right before his eyes, or, if he is to be viewed in the worst light possible, why should he be condemned for not being as courageous as St. George? Why is the liberal author's focus not on the subhuman bestiality of the Africans who killed and ate the African girl? I think we know why: it's because nothing, absolutely nothing that negro savages do is ever, in the eyes of the liberal, their fault. Somehow, by a strange, mystical transformation, the evil that black men do becomes the fault of the white man. "Yet though he slay me, yet though he commits every seeming evil under the sun, still will I trust in the noble black savage, because he alone is the holy one, he alone is the lord god." So the liberal believes. Can a man who believes such things be swayed by reason, pity, or compassion? Of course not.

I believe that a resolute band of white men, if they truly act as white men, can turn the colored tide away from the white lands, but we must first see just how deeply the "negrophile psychosis" has seeped into the soul of the modern Europeans. When I was an undergraduate, an older professor, a devout liberal, confided to me that he had all the correct opinions about blacks, but still he had to confess, much to his shame, that whenever he saw a black person up close and personal, a little voice inside of him said, "You're black and not to be trusted." That liberal professor was much like the firebrand abolitionist preacher who toured the U.S. just prior to the Civil War, exhibiting a free, educated negro who was "just as good as any white man." Yet when the negro started acting on the 'just as good as any white man' dictum by making advances toward the preacher's daughter, the preacher went berserk. Obviously those two men, the liberal professor and the abolitionist preacher, had a serious conflict between their rational, stated beliefs and their heartfelt instincts about the nature of existence.

The aforementioned professor and preacher were relics. The modern liberals no longer have a conflict between their expressed love of the negro and the call of their blood. They have killed their white instincts and allowed the love of the black man and the hatred of white men to enter the inmost recesses of their soul. No longer having to forcibly make their rational self coincide with their inner soul, the liberals instinctively blame black atrocities on whites and assume that all problems on earth stem from the "racism" of the white man. Following that reasoning to its logical conclusion, the liberals will do whatever it takes to ensure that the white nations of the world become black nations. And why is that a bad thing? To men and women whose inmost souls are tainted with liberalism, it is a consummation devoutly to be wished.

As the negrophile psychosis sinks into his soul, the white liberal starts to become like unto his god. He starts to act out a perverse parody of Thomas à Kempis' *Imitation of Christ*. The liberals' *Imitation of the Negro* is a Gnostic imitation because the white man cannot actually become a negro, much as he yearns to. His grandchildren can become negroes if his offspring will mate with the negro, but until that blessed time the liberal must become a Gnostic negro. Where the negro actually cannibalizes his own people, the liberal must be satisfied with gnostically cannibalizing his people by turning them over to barbarians of color to be tortured and murdered in the name of diversity. Where the negro destroys and murders the innocent with his own hands, the liberal destroys the innocent secondhand in abortuaries. The ethos in both cases is the ethos of the jungle. Only the strong survive; the weak and the helpless live or die according to the whims of the strong. Thus nature's god, the negro, and the cosmic naturalists, the liberals, are entwined together on the satanic tree that holds the forbidden fruit. Negro worship represents a second fall of man: it is Satan's ultimate gambit. By negroizing Europe the liberals are building the kingdom of Satan on earth.

God will judge the disposition of their souls, but it is up to us to judge the words and actions of the Christian missionaries, Catholic and Protestant, who helped to build the kingdom of Satan on earth. Starting with the assumption that we are all God's children and armed with Christ's injunction to preach the gospel to every nation, the white Christian missionaries went forth. (1) But the best of the missionaries, a minority, were misguided, and the worst, the majority, were egomaniacs who felt that they were not sufficiently adored by their own people, so they sought the adulation of their new people, the innocent, often wayward but nevertheless loving children of nature, uncorrupted by the evils of the white man's civilization. Maybe the majority of missionaries were not egomaniacs, maybe the majority were humble men of God. So let us say that the ones who gained influence in the West, who took pen in hand to write about the noble black savages of Africa, were indeed negrophile utopians. They excused every negro atrocity by bidding us look to the future when the playful childlike negroes, who just happened to like human flesh, would, in the words of John Paul II, "astound the world." And the genuinely saintly missionaries (if you don't like the world saint then just substitute 'far ben') such as Edmund Hodgson and Elton Knauf, were tortured and murdered trying to Christianize a people who had no word for charity and only knew brute force. Such men are heroes, but I wish they had stayed at home and worked to keep Europe Christian.

Whether the missionaries were mainly good or whether they were mainly liberal ego maniacs is not our ultimate concern. What should concern us very deeply is that the effort to Christianize Africa was a dismal failure. Evangelization turned into negro worship, and instead of Christianizing Africa the Europeans applied their missionary zeal to the negroization of Europe. Surely He who is our common hope does not want Europe to become Africa. How can any man, be he pope or peasant, call himself a Christian if he doesn't oppose the negroization of the white nations?

It always comes down to one startling fact: the liberals, despite the fact that they are white, desire the extermination of the white race. You can't find common ground with such creatures. You must fight them with a religious zeal greater than their religious zeal. Once the European everyman comes to believe, as his ancestors believed, that the love of God and the love of one's people are intertwined and not opposed principles, he will have the spiritual fortitude to fight the negroization of the European nations. And the European must fight this new world of darkness because of all the horrors that exist on this earth the greatest one is a world without charity. Such a world is the one we all face if the European people do not invoke their God and turn back the colored tide from the European nations.+

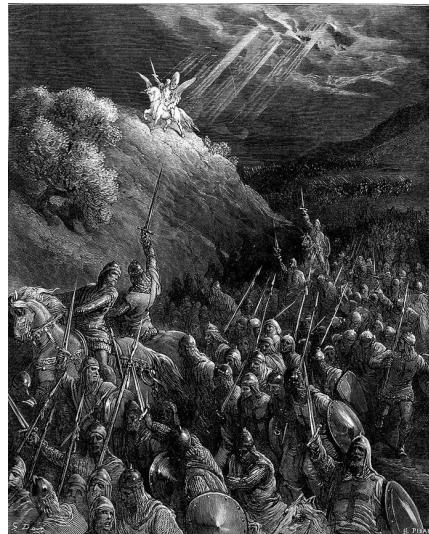
(1) There is nothing in the Bible to indicate that Christianity equals racial equality. In fact, the opposite seems to be the case: the story of Noah and his three sons is the primary example to the contrary. And the fact that racial equality soon turned into negro worship indicates to me that there were serious flaws in the African missionary movement from its very inception.

The European Vision

March 8, 2014

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson



And so they sailed for Tintagel...

-CWNY

There is a little side door in Senator McCain's office that leads down a secret passageway to another door. Sometimes when the devil's janitors forget to oil the hinges on the other door you can hear it creaking. It has been creaking a lot lately because McCain has been going back and forth, on a daily basis, from his office to hell and from hell to his office. He steps up his visits to his master every time there is a chance to plunge the United States of Liberaldom into another senseless war-to-make-the-world-safe-for-democracy. The devil gives McCain his orders and he, in turn, instructs the dogs of war, the Fox News staff and the neo-cons, that a bloodbath is necessary. Why is it necessary? We haven't even finished with our senseless and bloody wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, so why must we rush to get involved in a senseless war in the Ukraine?

McCain wants to involve America in a World War because he worships Satan. But he can't tell the Fox News reporters and the neo-cons that the real reason why we must go to war is because Satan wants us to (well, maybe he could tell the neo-cons his real reason). McCain must dissemble if he is to get the full support of the mini-skirted bimbos and the lobotomized newscasters of the Fox News Team. So McCain advocates war under the banner of universalism: "We are all Ukrainians now." Such universalist war-mongering began with the French Jacobins' bloody plea for liberty, equality, and fraternity, and it has been the motivating force behind the bloodiest wars in the history of mankind. Which should give us pause to think about the validity of the universalists' view of existence. But it never does give us pause, so let us pause for a moment and look at the universalist imperative.

The church men of every denomination, before the age of complete apostasy, spend a lot of time and energy condemning the sexual sins. No doubt they thought that the sins of the flesh were very great temptations and their people needed to be constantly reminded of the seriousness of the sins of the flesh. And those clergymen were not all wrong: the sins of the flesh are serious and we mortals are very susceptible to them. But those same church men, who made the avoidance of the sins of the flesh their main focus, suffered from the Zoilus syndrome.

Zoilus was a 4th century B.C. critic of Homer whose name was forever linked to men who couldn't see the whole because they mistook a part of the whole for the whole. The whole that the theologians missed was the sin of pride. Why, since pride was the original sin from which the other deadly sins derived, was there not a greater focus on the sin of theological speculation, the prideful determination to put God in a silver speculator's rod? I think the answer to that lies in the identity of the theological speculators. The vast majority of the theological speculators were clergymen. A Bonaventure might condemn the theological speculations of a Thomist, and a Thomist might condemn the theological speculations of a Calvinist, but no clergyman would condemn theological speculation in and of itself. The deepest, most damning sins are the ones we don't know we are committing because we are too enamored of them to see them as sins. As great as the sins of the flesh are, they do not hold a candle to man's original sin, the prideful desire to reduce God's world to a system that can fit into the confines of the human mind. And of course every prideful speculator claims it is his mind and his mind alone that contains God.

All the modern talk about separation of church and state is nonsense. People form governments based on their vision of God. When God became the end product of the propositional speculations of the European philosophers and theologians, the governments of Europe became speculative, propositional governments. France led the way and the rest of the nations followed suit. If reason is supreme, as the great scholastic told us, then why shouldn't we make the great whore Reason our god? France will be France again, England will be England again, and the United Liberal States of America will cease to fight wars in the name of democracy when the European people cease to see God as the end product of a syllogism and once again see Him as the God of their ascending race. A man's attachment to his race is the key because without *pietas*, the love of one's own, there can be no true faith. The love of God and the love our people are woven together. If we make God a universalist abstraction then our people will become universalist abstractions. They will not be the people of our racial hearth fire; they will be the pure and noble people of color whom the liberals, by virtue of their superior reason, have found to be the true gods of the earth.

I grew up, as we all did, hearing about the bad old days when people believed in Hero-Kings, Hero Clan Chieftans, and so on. The cultures that were hero-based were supposed to be bad because they were not universalist. And not being universalist meant that such cultures were not as humane as our modern cultures. But can the modern propaganda stand up to reality? When we look at the old hero cultures of Europe we often feel as Tennyson's Merlin felt:

*Then fell on Merlin a great melancholy;
He walk'd with dreams and darkness, and he found
A doom that ever poised itself to fall,
An ever-moaning battle in the mist,
World-war of dying flesh against the life,
Death in all life and lying in all love,
The meanest having power upon the highest,
And the high purpose broken by the worm.*

But such melancholy feelings are natural to all deep and earnest souls who have hearts that live and care about their own people. Is it better to take anti-depressants and spout universalist platitudes about humanity while ignoring the ever-moaning battle in the mist that constitutes the life of those people who are nearest and dearest to us? The old Europe of heroes, kings, and clans had the one saving grace that modern Europe lacks. The people of old Europe were not universalist automatons. Their wars, which were mere skirmishes compared to the modern democratic wars, were fought, for good or evil, with passion. And when they sinned they knew that they sinned, they did not invent a syllogism that changed sin into virtue. The old Europeans made the same choice that Odysseus made when the goddess Calypso offered him death-in-life immortality: he refuses it in order to live out his brief span of years as a man. They were genuine human beings, those men and women of old Europe, and as such they were superior in every way to the universalist, cardboard people of modern Europe.

Burke was ousted from his party because he refused to go along with the English Jacobins' plan to democratize England. The Monarch must have equal or greater power than the aristocratic and democratic tiers of government, Burke insisted, because it is the Monarch who brings that personal, heroic element into the government. There were many bad kings, but even the worst of them tried to protect their people from alien invaders. And when the King himself became an alien presence? Then a William Tell or a Robin Hood rose up from the heart of the people and became the Hero-Kings in exile. It wasn't a perfect system – in fact, it wasn't a system at all. That was the beauty of old Europe. Hearts attuned to their people, and to the God of their people, responded to the call of the blood. It was unscientific and messy, the call of the blood, but it was the way of the Europeans when Europe was still Europe, and it was a better way than the way of science and universalism.

In the 20th century the folk heroes of the European people were studied rather than emulated. This will not do. We need heroes, not men in lab coats. A man must believe that he has a place by the hearth fire of a particular race of people if he is going to become a hero of his race. The great heroes never thought of themselves as particularly brave or heroic. They didn't think of themselves at all. They loved much, so they fought for their people. When the Europeans stop studying their own people as if they were lab specimens and become one in spirit and in blood with Alfred, Tell, and Robin Hood, the colored plague will disappear from the European nations. But solidarity with our honored dead cannot be feigned for utilitarian purposes. We must truly believe as they believed and love our people as they loved their people, who are our people as well.

The whole pantheon of conservative thinkers in the 20th century went wrong because they sought to fight the liberals' universalism with a universalism of their own. Communism vs. capitalism, industrialism vs. socialism, etc. No! One man with a sacred vow to fight for his people because he has the same charitable instincts that inspired our Savior to shed His blood for His people, is the spiritual lever that will set the European counter-revolution in motion. (1) Odin left his mark on his followers and so did our Lord. We are of Him, in and through our people. Negroes prowl about the European world looking for white victims to torture and murder, while our non-heroic, universalist governments look for newer and better ways to destroy white people and elevate the colored people. The hero who loves much is the European's answer to Satanic liberalism.

In 2007 I saw and wrote my vision of Europe regained. I believe in that vision more than ever in 2014. All that we know of God we know in and through our people. Within the ever-moaning battle in the mists is His divine love. And men with that charity of honor will respond to His divine love. All that is necessary is that we follow, in spirit and in truth, the heroes of our race who believed that charity prevaleth over the mind-forged speculations of the lukewarm purveyors of an abstract, bloodless faith in a syllogism.

And it seems there is always some Christian clergyman who can be seen, torch in hand, running around setting fire to every European virtue. Look! There goes 'chivalry' up in flames. And over there I see 'love of kin' going up in flames. And now I see Father Spirit-of-the-Times setting fire to 'charity' while the whore called Ms. Modern Times looks on and applauds.

And then from the shadows steps an old man, with the eyes of a prophet.

"Think about what you do this day. As Judas betrayed Christ, so do you betray Him when you burn all the fruits of His glorious life and death."

But the crazed clergyman does not heed the old man, and in fact it appears he sees but does not hear him. The applause of the whore is all he hears. So the fire rages and eventually envelops the clergyman and the whore. Before the flames completely engulf them we can see them embracing each other, still enjoying the sight of the old European virtues in flames, but not realizing that they embrace for the last time.

In the morning the old man with the prophetic eyes walks through the rubble and ashes. He weeps. In the distance he sees, through his tears, a tall figure walking toward him. The figure is hooded and wearing the garb of some ancient religious order. He walks right up to the old man.

"Why do you weep?"

"Because I once ruled this very kingdom, or at least one like it. We were one race, one faith, and our swords and our hearts served Him. But we were defeated from within. My own queen and my most trusted knight betrayed me. That was long ago. But I returned, hoping to stop the destruction of this kingdom and these people. But it was too late and they did not heed me. And so I weep, for I have seen it all turn to ashes a second time."

"But you mustn't weep, my king."

"You know me?"

"Yes, I know you. You are Arthur Pendragon. And I have come to tell you that you shall be a king once more. Across the sea, in your own Tintagel, there is a small band of Europeans. They are eating roots and berries and have no knowledge of the true faith. But they are Europeans and they need you. They have that special fire in their hearts. They long to serve a true king, a king who can tell them about the King of Kings, a king who will show them why a sword is shaped like a cross. You must go to those people and be a king once more."

And then a strange thing happened. The old man was an old man no more. He was young again. He was Arthur in his prime.

The monkish stranger walks with Arthur to the shore where a ship waits for him. The ship is manned by an angelic crew. Arthur turns to the stranger.

"I think I know your voice, but I dare not believe what I hope. Are you not my own true knight, the bravest of the brave and the purest of the pure? Are you not Sir Galahad?"

The stranger steps out of his monkish attire revealing a knight in light armour.

"Yes, my king, I am Sir Galahad. And together we will build a nation of one race, one faith, one king, and one Lord."

And so they sailed for Tintagel, to build a new Europe, which was a very old Europe, and to worship a new God, who was a very old God. +

(1) The older, provincial, racist Europe is held, by the liberals, to be inferior to the modern, universalist, negro-worshipping Europe. Why? Because, we are told, the Europeans fought bloody and mostly senseless wars. But the wars of the universalists were and are infinitely more bloody than the wars of the antique Europeans, and they are always senseless, because they are always fought for inhuman, universalist principles.

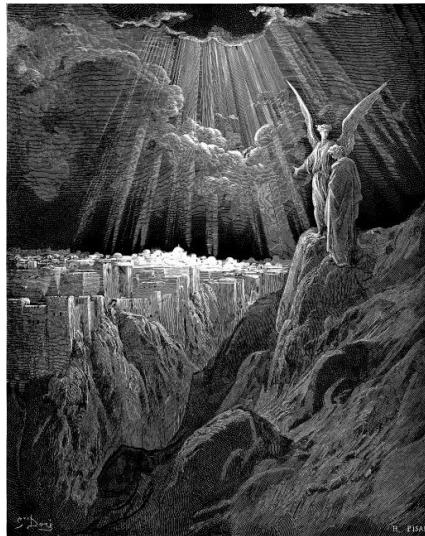
Our existence here on earth will always be an "ever-moaning battle in the mists." What matters is who or what emerges from those mists of battle. Our people, the antique Europeans, saw the Man of Sorrows in the mists of battle, the God of love and mercy who redeemed the world. What do the liberals see? They see only darkness, the darkness of Africa, which is the sign and symbol of Satan. The battle for our race is the battle to keep the vision of our ancient people alive – the sign of the Cross, the spirit above the dust.

The Last Enemy

March 15, 2014

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: J. S. LeFanu



Oh, Death, king of terrors! The body quakes and the spirit faints before thee. It is vain, with hands clasped over our eyes, to scream our reclamation; the horrible image will not be excluded. We have just the word spoken eighteen hundred years ago, and our trembling faith. And through the broken vault the gleam of the Star of Bethlehem. – [Uncle Silas](#) by J. S. LeFanu

It used to be the socialist-left that opposed free trade and massive immigration because it hurt the proletariat. Now the socialist-left has joined the capitalist-left – I refuse to call the capitalists right-wing – in support of immigration and free trade. And they do this despite the fact that NAFTA and other such free trade and pro-immigration policies have been decided failures. We were told, for instance, that NAFTA would reduce illegal immigration and help the native born workers because the new “stimulated” economy would create jobs for Mexicans in Mexico and Americans in America. That was not how things turned out, of course. Illegal immigration increased, and more Americans lost their jobs. Only corporate America benefited from the cheap, illegal labor. So why, if immigration and free trade are bad for the proletariat, whom the left claims they support, is the left not condemning immigration and free trade? The answer comes to us in Orwell’s *Animal Farm*. The leftist pig who is running things proclaims: “All animals are equal but some are more equal than others.” It’s all about race. The white, blue collar workers are no longer part of the proletariat because they are not “the people.” I recently heard a ‘60s Marxist lamenting that the left no longer supports the white working class but only supports the Hispanics and black working class. That ‘60s radical was one in a thousand: he was actually trying to be a consistent Marxist. But he really didn’t understand the religious nature of utopian liberalism. When nature replaces God, then only the noble savages, the colored people, are considered to be human.

The idea of the white proletariat had its day in Jacobin France and communist Russia, but ultimately the spiritual dynamic of liberalism has turned the liberal toward negro worship. Igor Shafarevich, the Russian dissident of the ‘60s and ‘70s, saw the Western liberals’ movement toward negro worship: “Hope for the future has been transferred to the peoples of the developing countries, to disaffected national minorities, for example, the blacks in the U.S.A....” But will whites become the people again when they are the minority? Were the South African whites considered “the people”? Of course not. Whites can never be the people, because the white race is tainted with the stain of the new original sin: they once believed that Christ was the Son of God.

The liberals are entrenched against the white race, and they will always side with their colored brethren against the white man because of the white man’s Christian past, which they hate. But there is another breed of white-hating white whose betrayal of white people has prevented any European counterattack against the liberals and the colored hordes. They are the conservatives in church and state, who claim to respect the Europeans’ past but who maintain that the Europeans’ cultural heritage can be preserved and transmitted by other races. Such conservatives are more dangerous than the liberals who openly despise the antique Europeans, because they destroy the mystical body of the church from within much like the man who says he is pro-family but thinks children can be raised by multiple fathers and mothers destroys the family unit.

The propositional theologians of the Protestant and Catholic camps tell us that you can take their intellectual recipe for Christianity and transmit it to the colored races. Then — Presto Change-o! — we have an exact replica of European Christianity, only the people in the pews are colored people. Such theologians come from the ‘race has nothing to do with Western culture’ school of thought, but if race had nothing to do with Christian Europe, then why didn’t the red Indians, the black Africans, the yellow Asians, and the brown Mexicans develop Christian cultures? And why, now that the whites have become negro worshippers rather than the Christ bearers, have the colored races not picked up the Christian mantle? Why is Islam and Voodoo triumphant in Africa; the old time religions of sexual perversion, cruelty, and Fu Manchu-ism triumphant in Asia; and the blood faith of the Aztecs reappearing in Mexico? Why is it necessary to state the obvious? Race matters. The Europeans must reestablish their blood relationship with Jesus Christ, or the European people will be consumed by the colored hordes, who will not preserve the true faith — quite the contrary, they will have a religion of Satan.

My father is currently on his death bed in one of those modern monstrosities called a hospital. The tortures of the damned in Dante’s *Inferno* pale in contrast to the tortures inflicted on the poor souls in modern hospitals. Run by nameless bureaucrats who have only a financial, statistical interest in generic humanity and staffed by hard-hearted Asians at the higher levels and savage blacks at the lower levels, our hospitals are monuments to the inhumanity of man to man that the liberals told us would pass away once the Christian white man passed away. ([1](#)) But if the Christian white man passes away, our vision of Christ will pass away, and in the face of that “king of terrors” called death what do we have to comfort us but the vision of Christ bequeathed to us by the European people? Our trembling faith in the blessed Savior does not come to us from the brain of one theologian or from a host of theologians. Our faith comes to us from the heart of our people who attached themselves to His sacred heart.

At my father’s deathbed, I felt an incredible desire to anesthetize myself from existence — to divorce myself from humanity, because my humanity was giving me pain, the pain of watching my father die slowly by inches and the pain of knowing that this too was my promised end. Only His words of the life eternal and the witness of His people that He was truly the Suffering Servant who redeemed the world gave me the trembling, shaky faith to stay within the confines of humanity and continue to “see life feelingly.”

We are all on that [sad height](#) that Dylan Thomas wrote of so eloquently and feelingly. That depth of feeling, a spiritual horror at the extinction of a human personality, is the lasting, irreplaceable legacy of the antique Europeans to all mankind. From that deep, deep European longing for the “[touch of a vanished hand, and the sound of a voice that is still](#)” we derive our faith in Christ. We are all, we Europeans, part Ivan Karamazov, rejecting God because of suffering and death, but are we not also part Alyosha Karamazov, loving the Man of Sorrows and placing our hope in Him? We Europeans once chose that better part represented by Alyosha Karamazov, and we must go back to that Faith, the one, true, life-sustaining faith, and leave the propositional Christianity of the theologians and the barbaric heathen faiths of the colored tribesmen in hell where they belong.

I think the liberals’ incredible, intense, [Shylockian](#) hatred of the white man and their reverence for the colored barbarians stems from the fact that the white Christian Europeans did not provide their people with an anesthetic to help them deal with the fact that all mortal men must suffer and die. The Asians were able to distance themselves from humanity with Confucianism and amuse themselves with their cults of cruelty while the black and brown tribesmen found oblivion in sex and blood. The antique Europeans, the white Christian warriors of the spirit, disdained spirit-deadening opiate creeds and faiths. Armed only with their vision of Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, they looked the great Gorgon Death in the face and saw that death was swallowed up in victory through Christ. Without that vision, the white man is a pathetic caricature of a human being, slavishly worshipping the colored races and trying to lap up

the blood from their heathen altars in the hopes that those nightmares about pain, suffering, and death will cease. But the nightmares won't stop – they will just get worse – and the liberals will step up their attack on white people and intensify their slavish adoration of the black race in a desperate effort to end the nightmares.

We do not have to passively submit to our own extermination. The liberals' nightmare, life without the opiates of the colored races, is not our nightmare. Our nightmare is a world devoid of the faith, hope, and charity that existed in Christian Europe. Such is the nightmarish world we live in, but those of us who carry the vision of another world in our hearts must fight for it. The vision of Christ, our only hope in this world and the next, comes to us through the people of our racial hearth fire. We must abide there and fight there if we are to prevail against the pestilence of liberal despair and colored barbarism.

As the darkness deepens, Lord, with us abide. +

(1) My father lives urban, so he caught the brunt of our brave new world. Cold-hearted bureaucrats make up the hospital rules that dictate illegal aliens get treatment while old white men who paid for the illegals' medical care are left to languish alone in emergency waiting rooms. If you do get a room, you will be treated by Asian doctors and black aides. Is this the promised end? The masters of cruelty presiding over a staff of black barbarians?

If you live in a rural white area, you might have better luck than my father, but can there be any doubt the hospital my father went to is the utopian model of the future? Not only have the liberals failed to alleviate the physical pain that goes along with sickness and death, they have also succeeded in undermining man's hope that his suffering and death will be redeemed by Christ. [Sentry, are you there?](#) The liberals say, "No, He is not there, but you can leave all your money to the N.A.A.C.P. to insure that diversity will continue." And the clergy tell us, "He may or may not be there, but you can leave all your money to some Christian organization that supports diversity." What a comfort! The old European way to die is still the only way to die:

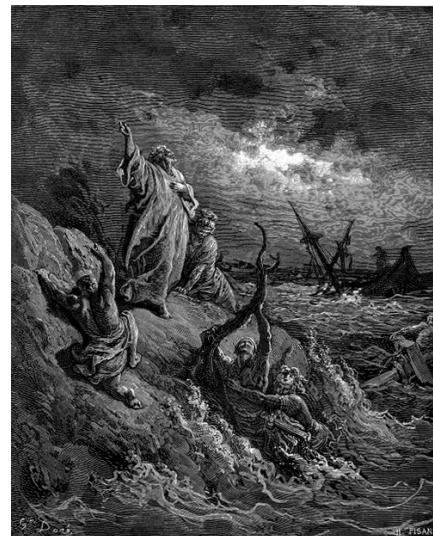
Bring us, O Lord God, at our last awakening into the house and gate of Heaven, to enter into that great gate and dwell in that house, where there shall be no darkness nor dazzling, but one equal light, no noise nor silence but one equal music, no fears nor hopes but one equal possession, no ends or beginning but one equal eternity, in the habitation of thy Majesty and thy glory, world without end. Amen. +

From Out of the Depths

March 22, 2014

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders? – *Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

Burke took great pains to point out to his countrymen that the French Revolution was something radically different from a mere palace revolution in which one sovereign, whether justly or unjustly, was replaced by another sovereign. The French Revolution, Burke insisted, was a new religious faith intended to supplant Christianity. The ‘people’ were the incarnate savior, who, by throwing off the chains of Christianity, rose from the dead Christian faith and became the people of the new, earthly Jerusalem.

No doubt the French Jacobins and their English supporters thought they would be part of the new, utopian Jerusalem, but the French Revolution in Haiti represented the French Revolution in its purest form. No whites can enter the kingdom of Heaven on Earth: they all must die.

If we look on the post-Haitian French Revolution era in Europe as the gradual implementation of a new religious faith (with some unsuccessful counter-revolutionary movements such as the Southern counter-revolution of the 1860s), we will not look to the democratic process, rational debate, or the churches to save the European people from extinction. We won’t look to such processes and organizations because they are part of the liberals’ extermination program: “It is democratic, it is rational, and it is Christian to eliminate the white man.” It does no good to tell the liberals that exterminating the white race is not democratic, rational, or Christian; they have a new religion which makes them immune to all the humane instincts that used to stir Christian hearts. Some older liberals, such as Pope John XXIII, used to express regret at the murder of their own people while, at the same time, forgiving and glorifying the murderous black savages, but the modern liberals no longer even express regret that whites are being exterminated, because they have, in their heart of hearts, killed the Son of God and replaced Him with the negro.

Undergirding the Jacobins’ and all their descendants’ faith is the belief that we are not children of God, creatures endowed with this divine imprint, but are instead glorified children of nature, more intelligent than the animals but like unto them. Once that spiritual Rubicon has been crossed, then everything is permitted: we are all subject to the laws of the liberals’ abstract nature religion. But the white man will never be welcome in the new religion because in the past he was Christian. Try as he might the white man cannot escape that stigma.

“If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride.” This beggar wishes that all whites who still care about the white race would stop trying to analyze their way out of the hellish cauldron of diversity they have been thrown into. Instead, let them out-passion the liberals and the colored barbarians. No amount of analysis of the “statistical data pertaining to race” or “the sociological problems of racial autonomy and solidarity” will help the white man survive; statistical analysis of the white man’s dilemma will lead to despair, because statistically the white man is dead. He cannot fight a sustained war against the techno-barbarians and colored barbarians armed with statistics that tell him he has no chance. Unless – unless he holds the statistics in his hand, glances up and down the columns till he has absorbed the contents, and then rips up the statistics and commits the pieces to the fire. What does a white man need with statistics? A passionate heart filled with that charity of honor, an honor that is non-existent in the liberal technocrats and the colored barbarians, will lead to the defeat of the technocratic liberals and the colored tribesmen. The effect that Christ had on Europe is incalculable in statistical terms. And the effect that just one man with a vision of the European Christ burning in His heart can still have on other Europeans is also incalculable. That great wonders occur to the people who have seen a great light is not apparent to the material eye, but it is wonderfully apparent to the inner, non-material eye. Behold! The beggar who kept the vision of the European Christ in his heart is riding on a chariot of fire.

Staring at the liberals’ world, even if it is to learn about the enemy, can have a Medusa-like effect on the starer. He becomes mesmerized by the worldly power and might of the liberal technocrats and either becomes like unto them in trying to emulate them by obtaining some of their technocratic power and might or else he becomes a petrified stone, unable to move against a demon-power that seems invincible. The vision is our source of strength. We need only glance at the leviathan to ascertain where its heart is and return to the vision which keeps our heart burning with the desire to plunge our swords into the heart of the liberal leviathan.

I think, as old men are wont to do, that I repeat myself with this next cautionary tale, but it is apropos and deserves repeating. As an undergraduate in the cauldron of filth called a university, I went to a professor who was also a Roman Catholic priest to talk about things Christian. I sought out this particular professor because I had read a book of his in the campus library. The book was a very orthodox, fundamental, non-denominational defense of the Christian faith, written twenty years prior to my reading it. When I met with the professor, I was disappointed. I found him decidedly to the left of the opinions expressed in his book, and when I came back to see him eight or nine years later, he was not just a little to the left, he was a mad-dog liberal. What had happened? I think the priest, who taught a course on the Gospels, had spent too much time studying the Gospels through the material eyes of the “objective” secularists and not enough time reading the Gospels as the inspired word of God. I’ll always remember that in our first meeting the troubled priest said the most difficult thing about living a life of faith was that there are so few signs. That was not my main concern at the time, but over the years I’ve come to sympathize more and more with the old priest’s lament: “There are so few signs.” I suppose I’m more a part of our evil and adulterous civilization than I should be. Living in a world where even the church men tell you that your vision of the European Christ is worse than wrong, it is blasphemous, tends to wear you down and make you want to see a sign from God that you are right and your statistically-superior enemies are wrong. But it is the vision that is the sign, and if the vision of Christ who presides over the European hearth fire is what stirs your blood then you must stay with that vision against all the world. And it is the mysticism of charity that confirms the truth of the vision. Where, but in the heart of the European people, do we see the face of Jesus Christ? Yesterday, today, and tomorrow: that vision is our sign from God.

The devil seldom comes at us head-on: he attacks us with feints and subterfuges much like the way he took over Uncle Silas’s heart in the novel by J. S. LeFanu: “The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels.” If the devil alters our vision so that we take the material world as a world separate from the spiritual world, it is but a short step from there to the belief that “the material world is superior to the spiritual world,” and from there to the assertion that “there is only the material world.”

The modern Europeans have succumbed to the satanically inspired vision of nature as a force independent of God. It's true that the church men generally place God somewhere within nature, subject to the rules of nature, but when our natural bodies fail us we need a God above nature to sustain our spiritual bodies. It's difficult to believe in the resurrection from the dead when your preachers have been slavishly worshipping nature and nature's god, the negro.

I once gave a lecture in which, as an aside, I mentioned the non-materialistic culture of the pre-Civil War South. After the talk a rather angry man challenged me on my "outrageous" assertion. After painstakingly explaining that I was not denigrating every single Northerner (I was one myself) nor placing a halo on every single Southerner, I stood by my initial assertion by referencing the 4th commandment, "Honor thy Father and thy Mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee." The South was old, non-utopian Europe, respecting their ancestors and their ancestors' faith. And yes, part of that faith was a belief in the segregation of the races. How could it not be? A Christian people cannot worship nature and nature's God.

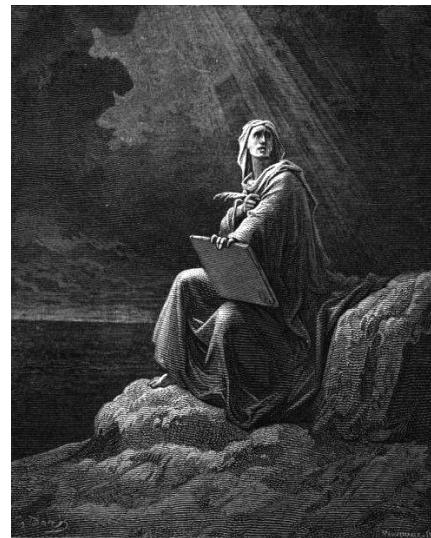
The practical materialist will point out that the Jacobin North defeated the Christian South just as the French Jacobins defeated the Christian Royalists. And it was the same throughout all of Europe. The forces of Jacobinism triumphed in every state of Europe, and now Jacobinism with its attendant negro worship is the institutionalized religion of Liberaldom. Why fight such a powerful materialist leviathan with the failed weapons of the spirit that our counter-revolutionary ancestors fought with? We fight with such weapons – reverence for our God and love of our racial hearth fire – because those are the weapons God wants us to use. All of life is a battle, and so long as we use the weapons of the spirit to fight the battle, we have triumphed. The paths of glory, the material triumphs of the Jacobins, lead but to the grave in Gray's "Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard," but the triumph of a people who refuse to fight materialism with materialism ends in the resurrection of the dead. The South did not lose the Civil War until the 1950s when they became one with the utopian North by surrendering to cosmic nature and the god of cosmic nature. Likewise South Africa in 1994, and all of Europe in the latter half of the 20th century. When Europeans once again believe that the race, the one that counts, does not go to the swiftest, and the battle, the one that counts, does not go to the strongest, they will be men again, and they will be united to Him again and to all of their honored dead who live in an eternal Europe sustained by His love. +

Beyond the Swelling Flood

March 29, 2014

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: George Fitzhugh, Thomas Hughes



The prevalent philosophy of the day takes cognizance of but half of human nature—and that the worst half. Our happiness is so involved in the happiness and well-being of everything around us that a mere selfish philosophy, like political economy, is a very unsafe and delusive guide.

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problems of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

—George Fitzhugh

There were no lack of writers in the post-World War I era who pointed out the decline of the Christian faith among the European people. In the latter part of the 19th century and early part of the 20th century writers such as Thomas Hardy did not rejoice in the absence of the Christian God, they just wrote about what they saw — nature, and only nature, was supreme — “As flies to wanton boys” are we to the nature gods; “they use us for their sport.”

By the latter half of the 20th century the Europeans had turned Hardy’s “Christ be not risen, everything is terrible,” into “There is no Christian God, but we can turn to cosmic nature and worship the negro.” So long as the Europeans stay anesthetized with sex, negro worship, and drugs, they can sustain their faith in cosmic nature and the colored gods of cosmic nature. But what of those dark nights of the soul when they are alone without their anesthetics? Does the sacred negro hear our prayers? Can he heal the sick or raise the dead? There is no escaping the wisdom of our ancestors: “We who are about to die demand a miracle.” And cosmic nature cannot provide one.

The post-World War II conservatives saw the decline of Christianity and lamented it, while the liberals rejoiced in it because they could now take center stage and lead the way, under the banner of science and the sacred negroes, to the brave new world. The “conservatives” could not stop the liberals’ march to utopia because they could only summon up an intellectual support for a fusion of Christianity and Greek philosophy but not a faith in the Christ of the European hearth fire. Christianity was a metaphysical philosophy to the conservatives and as such it lacked the power to inspire or save. So long as the poetic of Christianity, which is supplied by Christ the savior not Christ the end product of a syllogism, is left out of Christianity the liberals’ religion of cosmic nature will rule the European roost and the negroidization of Europe will continue unabated.

I once read a book, intended as a critique of modern science, in which the author likened modern scientists to men who, after climbing up the mountain of truth, a mountain they thought had never been climbed before, found that the theologians had been sitting there for centuries. I see a different scenario. I see a group of theologians, Protestant and Catholic, sitting at the base of the mountain arguing over whose system is the best system for getting to the top of the mountain. And I see an ancient European mountaineer on the top of the mountain, trying to get the theologians to forget their philosophies and start up the mountain. But the voice of the European mountaineer cannot be heard over the din of the theological speculators. And in the meantime the men of science, the cosmic naturalists, have blocked all access to the mountain so that only the theologians who do not care one whit about reaching the top of the mountain are left with access to it.

The theologians answered Blake’s question, “Can wisdom be put in a silver rod and love in a golden bowl?” with a resounding ‘yes.’ We Europeans must answer ‘no.’ Wisdom comes only from a heart that has learned to love the savior in and through the people of his racial hearth fire. The European hearth fire is the cornerstone of the Church of Christ.

A tepid, universalist Christianity will always end up being absorbed by liberalism because a purely speculative faith is without substance. A pagan worshipping Odin was closer to Christ than a theologian professing to believe in a system which includes Christ, because the Odin believer had some sense of the humanity of God and the importance of pietas, while the universalist theologian has no sense of pietas and is consequently a man devoid of faith. If the same intense love of kith and kin exemplified by the followers of Odin could be felt by the followers of Christ, we would then have a faith that could sweep the world. But wait. The Europeans once had such a faith, and it did sweep the world. European Christianity is Alfred, it is Tell, and all things connected to our racial hearth; it is not speculative theology, it “beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.”

If you’ve ever tried to teach your child to swim or ride a bike or some other equivalent activity you know that the child will not learn unless he has a certain trust in you, his parent. He must believe that if he does what you say, not only will he not be hurt, but he will also learn to swim, to ride the bike, etc. But if the child does not trust his parents, if he decides his way is better, not only will he not learn the particular skill, he will most likely hurt himself. The modern European church men are like the child who wants to go his own way. Unlike the mad-dog liberals, they haven’t completely abandoned the Christian God, but they have lost faith in the channels of grace that God provided for them, which makes them more subtle, more devious heretics than the mad-dog liberals. Like the Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky’s novel *The Brothers Karamazov*, the New Age Christians have told Christ to stay in the background while they reorder the world according to their more scientific, more humane formula of life.

In the new and better man-made Christ-less Christianity, we do not learn to love God in our hearts through the mysterious human relationships formed at our racial hearth fire. Oh no! That is a racist and antiquated way to know God. Now the European Christian finds God through a cleaner, purer, universalist love for all mankind. But why does the modern Christian’s universal love for mankind get translated into a hatred for his own kind and a love for the sacred negro? Perhaps the new, purer Christianity is not so new or pure after all. Perhaps it is the same old faith Satan recommended in the Garden of Eden, “Ye shall be as gods.”

I read an article recently in a conservative journal in which the author insisted that we did not live in an atheistic age, that modern man was more interested in religion than ever before. In proof of this, the author pointed out the new interest in angels, in extraterrestrial life, in apparitions of the Blessed Mother, in the end times, etc. But is an increased interest in signs and

wonders a sign of increased faith or is it a sign of diminished faith? I think it is the latter. We have left our racial hearth fire where charity and love connect us to the living God and gone out to find signs of God in a universalist wasteland of false prophets and substitute gods. What greater assurance do we have that Christ is the one true God who will sustain us in life and death than the assurance given us by Christ Himself through the divine-human link forged in our familial and racial homes? The disembodied mind seeking signs and wonders cannot enkindle the wisdom of our hearts. Only a personal God, a God with a local habitation and a name, can enkindle the love that passeth the understanding of the intellect. If we stay in our European homes, loving and hating with all our hearts, He will come and abide with us.

My concern is not with the liberals and the colored barbarians – they have chosen whom they will serve. Their hatred for the European will remain to the end of time. It is the conservatives that concern me. They profess to love the European heritage yet they have no concern for the European people, except as part of generic mankind. What they appear to love much is the human mind, especially their own. This was brought home to me recently while listening to a recording of Handel's *Messiah*. I'm sure Handel was an educated man who could have sat down with any of the conservative thinkers of our day and traded theories about God. But Handel didn't go that route. He went the way of the poet, and he chose the vision over the syllogism. The modern conservatives have not chosen the better part. The true European is the son of Mary, not Martha. In *The Messiah* one thing is crystal clear: Christ and Christ alone is our salvation. Through *Isaiah*, *Job*, the *Psalms*, the letters of St. Paul, the Gospels, and finally the *Book of Revelation*, Handel focuses on the Christ passages of the Bible. It's ironic that the modern 'end of the world' heretics who worship the state of Israel miss the true meaning of the Book of Revelation that Handel reveals so clearly: John, the apostle who laid his head on Christ's sacred heart at the last supper, tells us that we are not to fuse Christ with Judaism, paganism, or any other -ism. He and He alone is our salvation.

Worthy is the lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing and honour and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

It is not the mission of the European to speculate as the pagan philosophers did. Our minds are as great as the pagans, our reason "haply more," but if we follow in the path of Handel who is like unto us in vision, we will stay with the truth that we know to be true in our hearts. The heart can see and comprehend more than any analytic reason. The white man needs to break free from his philosophical shackles in order to pursue and then defend his vision of a world created and sustained by Christ's divine charity.

In my undergraduate days at school I was oversaturated with the writings of the "great" thinkers, ancient and modern. But the great thinkers were of very little value to me because when they spoke of some power greater than man, they spoke of phantoms and divine forces; they did not speak of God as a personal God who would abide with His people in life and death. So it was like a heavenly visitation when I read of Tom Brown's struggles in Thomas Hughes' book *Tom Brown at Oxford*, a sequel to *Tom Brown's School Days*, to leave the philosophical speculators behind:

The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school; and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathens or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—know no more of it than he knew about his demon, of course, we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

Why shouldn't we be able to name it? We can't if we remove Christ from our European hearth fires and make Him a camp counselor in the Universal Camp of the Colored Peoples of the World, excluding white people. But if we give God a local habitation in the hearts of our people and call on Him by name, we will dream dreams and see visions of "a land of pure delight where saints immortal reign." Men with such a vision do not quail in the face of colored barbarians or indulge in philosophical speculation while their people are murdered. They fight against the principalities and powers of this world in the name of Him who has conquered the world. +

The Christ Bearing People

April 5, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Otto Crusius, Shakespeare



Before the Altar kneeled the saint in prayer,
Fixed on the Crucified his steadfast gaze—
How hard his way with danger and contempt!
Sudden, with rapture thrilled, his heart beat stayed.
Was it a miracle or but a dream?
The chapel walls dissolved and heav'n appeared,
The cross of shame became a growing tree,
Raising its branches sun-ward fair and tall—
See how each twig is weighted down with fruit.
The close air of the church no more he breathes—
A gentle breeze bears scents of summer fruit.
He sees the Glorified with arms outstretched,
'Thou in a holy hour has gazed on Heaven.
Thy dream is true. This earthly life is dream,
The holy cross, it is the tree of life.'
Now God be praised for pain that veiled His face.

-Otto Crusius

In his autobiography Yeats tells of an old-guard devotee of Thomas Moore who was fond of saying, “I’d walk ten miles through a bog to avoid the music of Wagner.” Yeats, because he was one of those ‘betwixt and between’ souls with Christian and rationalist sympathies, quoted the reactionary Wagner-hater with disapproval. I, with no modernist sympathies, approve of the old reactionary’s sentiments. I had similar feelings as a young man about books on Christian mysticism. I would have run ten miles through a bog to avoid reading about or hearing about Christian mysticism. My sentiments about Christian mysticism haven’t changed now that I’m older, only I would now have to walk the ten miles through the bog rather than run.

The problem with what has been labeled Christian mysticism is the problem with the modern Europeans. It is, and they are, too Oriental and too intellectual. Oriental mysticism stresses oneness with an impersonal spirit or force in which the devotee and the deity blend together into ... what? Into nothingness. And the “Christian” mysticism of the European intellectuals is much too often a form of rationalism devoid of any depth or genuine mystic content. We’ve all seen the ten-point plans to sanctity and the mystic “spiritual exercises” that purport to build up our spiritual muscles like a Charles Atlas program builds up our fleshly muscles. But is living the life of the spirit as easy as solving a problem in math? Do we just lay out the factors, put them together in the right order, and come up with the correct answer to the problem of God? I don’t see anything of value in that type of mysticism, because I don’t see any divine-human connection. There is no God “who imparts to human hearts” in the intellectual mysticism of either the Oriental or the Christian rationalist schools of mystic theology. Why did our Lord and His most passionate and profound advocate, St. Paul, not leave behind a theology of mysticism or a theology of any kind? Maybe it was because they wanted us to respond to Christ’s divine charity with passionate hearts rather than contemplative minds.

In my own anti-European nation and the rest of the anti-European European nations throughout the world there is a strange phenomenon that occurs every time there is some natural or man-made disaster, like a flood, hurricane, tornado, power outage, and so on. The seemingly dead-to-life white grazers come out and work around the clock to help victims of the disaster and to put their community back on its feet. And while the white grazers, who cease to be grazers for the duration of the emergency, are working to set things right and protect the victims of the disaster, the colored tribesmen take advantage of the emergency situation and step up their rapes, murders, and pillaging. Then, when things are back to normal, the white rescue workers go back to the pasture and, at the bidding of the liberals, worship the sacred colored tribesmen who were raping, murdering, and looting during the emergency. It doesn’t make much sense, does it?

We must ask why the white grazer is so schizophrenic. Why does he act like a white man in times of crisis and then return to white-hating negro worship when the crisis is over? I think the answer lies in the subterranean depths, the mystic depths, of the European heart. Let’s put the European Everyman on the same heath where Macbeth and Banquo stood, facing the witches. Macbeth went the way of mystic rationalism: he sought to use the mystic powers of darkness for his own ends. Banquo chose the other way, the way of the Cross. Banquo saw that the cross of Christ leads upward to God just as those men on the *Titanic* saw, when they accepted their cross, Christ taking them from out of the ocean’s depths into the heavens where He resides with His heavenly Father.

The white grazers go about their daily lives under the spell of the liberals’ mystic rationalism because they have accepted, in their minds, the liberals’ faith. But their hearts, which are not sufficiently strong to fight the daily fight against the powers of darkness, occasionally revert to the ancient faith of their European ancestors, who choose the better part, and then they do heroic deeds. But such heroic deeds are mere lapses, just as non-heroic deeds of mystic rationalism were lapses for the antique European. The balance has shifted toward the mystic rationalism of Macbeth, and hell on earth is the consequence.

True Christian mysticism is grounded in charity. St. Paul, who spoke in tongues and had revelations from God, still said there was a “better way.” The man whose heart is connected to His heart will love his fellow men in and through Christ. There is no conflict between the Christian’s belief that Christ desires the salvation of all mankind and the antique Europeans’ racial exclusiveness. We cannot learn of God’s divine charity through mystic rationalism which concerns itself with abstractions and impersonal, cosmic oneness. We can only know the God of faith, hope, and charity at home, at our racial hearth fire, where God imparts to human hearts. Without that mystic, racial connection to God, we will not believe in a personal God above

nature who desires the salvation of our race and every race. We will only believe in an impersonal, cosmic god of nature who doesn't hear our prayers. The impersonal, cosmic nature god bids us join the universalist trash heap now, and at the hour of our deaths.

There are two Europeans. The one took the way of Odin: he stayed at his racial hearth fire and saw the living God, the God of Odin and all Europeans, on the sacred cross. By that cross the European conquered.

The second European was a satanic offshoot of the first. He turned from the cross and sought God in nature, in the mystic contemplation of nothingness. Inch by inch, a new satanic tabernacle was built in which the negro is worshipped. "We are of the negro and in the negro," the mystic rationalists chant. "He is the beginning and the end of all our mystic strivings." The grazers have not the will to resist the mystic rationalists, because they have lost the fire that can only come from a deep and abiding faith in the God of charity and mercy, who our European ancestors came to know and love at their racial hearths. So long as the grazers allow the liberals to keep them away from their racial homes, that other European ethos, the satanic ethos of death in life negro worship will rule the European world.

As Odin felt death approaching, he gathered his followers around him. "All my life I've fought against the forces of darkness for the sake of you, my kinsmen. But now I must leave you for a little while, and then I'll return to fight with you in the final battle against Loki and the forces of evil. But I shall not lead you in the fight: He shall lead you. We belong to Him, the one true God, in Him and through Him we shall conquer. We are the Christ-bearers; remember that and all shall be well."

The grazers have forgotten what their divine mission is, and the liberals have denounced their divine mission. The way of the mystic rationalists is not the way of the cross; they see life abundant in the blackness of Babylon, a Babylon in which the sacred negro is worshipped as the highest level of mystic contemplation. If the white grazer had any racial instincts left, he would fight the new Babylon with the same intensity that he demonstrates in his battles with natural disasters. But an intense hatred of Babylon can only come from those who love much. Men without racial homes do not have the passion to fight the daily battles that one must fight in order to defeat the forces of Babylon.

Shakespeare writes in *Sonnet 116*:

*Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
But bears it out even to the edge of doom.
If this be error and upon me proved,
I never writ, nor no man ever loved.*

If our people have played us false, if their vision of Christ, the European Christ, whose love passeth the understanding of the white intellectuals and the colored barbarians, is not true, then there is no God, and we are all doomed to perish in the great cosmic garbage heap. But death shall have no dominion; we can learn from such convertites as the first Christian Goths. They loved their people in and through Christ. When thought is sifted through the heart, it becomes more than thought, it becomes vision. They saw with blinding sight, those Christian Goths, and so shall we, when we take up the sacred European cross bequeathed to us by our ancestors, which they received from their kinsman and their Lord Jesus Christ. As Odin told us, so long ago, "We are the Christ-bearers; remember that and all shall be well." +

The Lay of the European Minstrel

April 12, 2014

Categories: Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers, Rationalism

Tags: Edgar Allan Poe, Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



Hush'd is the harp; the Minstrel gone.
And did he wander forth alone?
Alone, in indigence and age,
To linger out his pilgrimage?
No; close beneath proud Newark's tower,
Arose the Minstrel's lowly bower;
A simple hut; but there was seen
The little garden hedged with green,
The cheerful hearth, and lattice clean.
There shelter'd wanderers, by the blaze,
Oft heard the tale of other days;
For much he lov'd to ope his door,
And give the aid he begg'd before.
So pass'd the winter's day; but still,
When summer smil'd on sweet Bowhill,
And July's eve, with balmy breath,
Wav'd the blue-bells on Newark heath;
When throstles sung in Harehead-shaw,
And corn was green on Carterhaugh,
And flourish'd, broad, Blackandro's oak,
The aged Harper's soul awoke!
Then would he sing achievements high,
And circumstance of chivalry,
Till the rapt traveller would stay,
Forgetful of the closing day;
And noble youths, the strain to hear,
Forsook the hunting of the deer;
And Yarrow, as he roll'd along,
Bore burden to the Minstrel's song.

-Walter Scott

With the exception of his poem "[El Dorado](#)," which is usually only seen in children's poetry anthologies, I never cared much for the prose and poetry of Edgar Allan Poe. Like Shakespeare and Dostoevsky he sees the dark side of human existence: the evil that men do and the evil that they yearn to do in their inmost hearts, but unlike Shakespeare and Dostoevsky Poe doesn't see the light that is also in human hearts. It's quite significant that Poe, who was ignored by his own countrymen, was lionized by the decadent French symbolists who regarded him as the first modern poet. I don't know if he was the first modernist, but he certainly was modern in his sensibility, and that is what kept him, despite great technical virtuosity, from being a great poet. But since it is the spirit of modernity that has led the white man to the dark tower of negro worship, it might be helpful to look more closely at the works of Edgar Allan Poe and then see if there is an antidote for modernity or, to paraphrase Poe's biblical quote from "The Raven," to see if there is a balm in Gilead.

Most men do not have the burden of vision; they do not see life as the poet does. Perhaps it is better that way, or else the work of the world could not go on. But then again men must, even the most material-minded of men, have a vision of something more than this world if they are to continue functioning in this world. Maybe they only need a glimpse of the vision, but they do need it. It is up to the poet to provide that vision for his people. He needs to be the brave man who dreams dreams and sees visions. But what if the poet's dreams are nightmares and his vision is a vision of hell? Then the people perish for want of light.

Poe's vision of darkness was not his vision alone; a poet's vision is never just his own solitary vision. Poe saw the coming conflict within the European people, between the religion of cosmic nature and Christianity, and he internalized that conflict within his own soul. Nowhere is the conflict more visible than in Poe's poem, "The Raven." With mathematical certainty, the Raven informs Poe that the dead do not rise, and he shall "nevermore" see his lost love. King Lear says something similar, "Never, Never, Never..." about his daughter Cordelia's death, but in the case of Lear we do not get the sense that it is over; we feel that Cordelia's death is an apotheosis, not a mathematical endgame.

"The Raven" is a perfect poem, mechanically speaking, but that is the problem with it. It is too mathematically perfect. Indeed, Poe was supposed to have been a double genius, poetical and mathematical, who did complex problems in geometry for amusement. But mathematical genius is not of the spirit; it is pedestrian and mundane and should not be blended with or given an ascendancy over poetical genius. In Poe's case the ascendancy of math over poetry is obvious. The Raven's mathematical, evil genius overcame the craven Poe's poetical genius just as Mr. Hyde overcame Dr. Jekyll.

Stevenson, who was born one year after Poe's death, also saw the ongoing war between the scientific/mathematical European and the poetical European. But Stevenson rejected the Raven's "Nevermore"; where Poe saw only darkness, Stevenson saw the light that shineth in darkness. If only Poe had remained true to the spiritual quest of the knight in "El Dorado" as Stevenson remained true to his dear land of storybooks, then he would have given his people a vision of the living God instead of a nightmarish vision of hell.

What Poe saw in his nightmarish vision was a natural world devoid of God's grace. The Raven's "Nevermore" was the answer that mathematical nature always gives to mortal men. And Poe, quite understandably, despaired because he thought his beloved would never come back to him. He could not be consoled by the negro gods of nature because those gods were not in place yet. And even if they had been, I don't think they could have filled the void in Poe's soul. He was still of the "there is no God, everything is terrible" school, in contrast to the modern liberals who joyously proclaim the death of the Christian God and welcome in the new black gods.

People just yawn now when they read Poe's tales and poems because his nightmarish underground world of horror and black despair has become mainstream. Why then, if Poe's vision of the Raven upon his chamber door has become the vision of the modern world, do not the modern Europeans succumb to the same despair that Poe succumbed to? Are the modern Europeans spiritually superior to Poe? Are they able to look into the void without flinching? Hardly. They have managed to live their lives without facing the Raven's 'nevermore.' Superficiality has proven to be a very good defense against Ravens who persist in rapping at one's chamber door. The moderns can yawn at Poe's tales because they don't take his vision of existence seriously. The liberals' have the negro to comfort them, and the grazers have the many and varied opiates of modernity to ease them through life. To look at Poe's vision of life, and take his horrific vision seriously, would be a step up for the liberal and the grazer. Then they would have to choose, Christ or the abyss.

While it's perfectly true that Christ is the balm in Gilead, telling a modern European raised on opiates and negro worship that Christ is risen and we no longer need to fear the Raven's "Nevermore" is like expecting a person who has only seen the last scene in *Hamlet* to understand the play. Christ, the warrior bard who loved His people with a love that passeth the understanding of the human mind, has been buried for so long by pin-headed theologians and solemn philosophical undertakers that His divine charity, which once warmed the European hearth fires and enflamed our hearts, has been forced out of this world, remaining only as a racial memory in the hearts of we few, we Europeans, who still hear the minstrel's lay. The song of the European minstrel trumps the Raven's "Nevermore." "Evermore, Evermore" is the Minstrel's lay, "the cross of Christ is the tree of life."

It should be writ large in our hearts that wherever rationalism raises its venomous, snake-like head, negro worship will follow. It doesn't matter whether it's in church or state, rationalism is the Raven, the contemplation of dumb nature, which leads to the worship of the negro. The modern conservative and the liberals are rationalists therefore they both, despite petty differences, worship the negro. Neither side defines nature as Burke defined nature:

We know, and it is our pride to know, that man is by his constitution a religious animal; that atheism is against, not only our reason, but our instincts; and that it cannot prevail long. But if, in the moment of riot, and in a drunken delirium from the hot spirit drawn out of the alembic of hell, which in France is now so furiously boiling, we should uncover our nakedness, by throwing off that Christian religion which has hitherto been our boast and comfort, and one great source of civilization amongst us, and amongst many other nations, we are apprehensive (being well aware that the mind will not endure a void) that some uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition might take place of it.

For that reason, before we take from our establishment the natural, human means of estimation, and give it up to contempt, as you have done, and in doing it have incurred the penalties you well deserve to suffer, we desire that some other may be presented to us in the place of it. We shall then form our judgment.

The modern man, addicted to psychiatry and porno, thinks we have no instincts but animal instincts and our reason is a tool to further the ends of our animalistic appetites. The law of the Jungle prevails, which is why the man-god of the Jungle, the noble negro savage who has not been polluted by the religion of the God-Man, is the god of our new, natural, utopian world.

Nature in the raw has no appeal to me. An ocean is just a large body of water until it connects with a coastal town in Wales or a sleepy fishing village in Maine. I could care less about an aesthetically pleasing forest or mountain in Africa, but my heart soars when I view the dark forests of Germany or the Swiss Alps. Why? Thomas Moore said it best:

*There is not in the wide world a valley so sweet
As that vale in whose bosom the bright waters meet;
Oh! the last rays of feeling and life must depart,
Ere the bloom of that valley shall fade from my heart.*

*Yet it was not that nature had shed o'er the scene
Her purest of crystal and brightest of green;
'Twas not her soft magic of streamlet or hill,
Oh! no—it was something more exquisite still.*

*'Twas that friends, the beloved of my bosom, were near,
Who made every dear scene of enchantment more dear,
And who felt how the best charms of nature improve,
When we see them reflected from looks that we love.*

*Sweet vale of Avoca! how calm could I rest
In thy bosom of shade, with the friends I love best,
Where the storms that we feel in this cold world should cease,
And our hearts, like thy waters, be mingled in peace.*

My people! The friends of my bosom. What have they done that they should be condemned and set aside for slaughter? They brought forth the Christ Child. Just as Mary's blessed acceptance of the incarnate Lord set the Christ story in motion, so did my people's acceptance of Christ as their Lord and Kinsman set the story of Christian civilization in motion. It's ridiculous to say human beings are mere puppets, manipulated by God. He has given us the freedom to reject His grace. And the Europeans did not reject His grace, they asked Him to come and dwell amongst them. God bless them for it. All that I am and what faith I have is because they, the friends of my bosom, were willing to be channels of grace for Christ the Lord. I love them; they are my good and noble kinsmen, who showed me the face of Jesus Christ.

It's not a little thing, the marriage between Christ and the European people. Without it, we are doomed to hear, over and over again, the cold, heartless Raven, pronouncing his death sentence on mankind, "Nevermore." "The dead shall not rise," is what negro-worshipping Liberaldom is all about, Charlie Brown. And, "Death is swallowed up in victory," is what Christian Europe is all about. The struggle does avail. To God goes the glory, forever and ever, Amen. +

Easter

April 19, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Easter, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Charles Dickens



So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. – *1 Corinthians 15:54*

A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with a lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. – *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*

Only the antique Europeans and those modern Europeans who have striven with might and main to stay connected to the ancient Europeans can truly understand the height and depth of the Easter miracle, because only the European people, as a people, believed in Christ's resurrection from the dead. They did not adhere to the religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen in order to please the mighty of the world. They were the mighty of the world: they had conquered Rome. They bent their knees to a divine humanity that was like unto their own humanity, but greater, greater because it was more human than their humanity. Now, the same people that showed us the face of Jesus Christ are being demonized, as Christian Europeans once demonized African and Aztec Satanists. This should tell us something about our modern society and make us question, if we claim the name of Christian, whether we can serve negro-worshipping Liberalism and Christ at the same time.

The battle for the church of Christ – where two or three are gathered together in His name – and the battle for the white race is the same battle. If the ancient Europeans were wrong about God, if the Christ of Handel's *Messiah* is not the living God, then to whom shall we turn for the words of eternal life? Surely not to the negro, nor to any of the Asian gods of nothingness. It is essential that the true European, the European who has stayed close to his racial hearth fire, remain faithful. He is the Christ bearer who knows that His Redeemer liveth, that death has been defeated by the very same Savior his European ancestors believed in. The European Christ is the Living God! This Easter, and every Easter, blessed be His name. +

The Return to Our Blood Faith

April 26, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers, Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors, Kierkegaard, William Blake



"Speculation performs the feat of understanding all Christianity, but, please note, it does not understand it Christianly but speculatively, which is precisely the misunderstanding, since Christianity is the very opposite of speculation."

— Soren Kierkegaard

"It is only the liberals who benefit from their association with the great whore, because they only use the whore-goddess Reason to advance their satanic passion to destroy God by destroying His image in the European people. By screaming 'racism' and 'simple-minded superstition' the liberals sought to kill all opposition to liberalism. And they have succeeded. 'Who is here so base that would be a racist? Who is here so rude that would not be opposed to superstition in the form of an incarnate God? If any, speak for him have we offended.'

"The men of the right did not speak. They simply cried, 'We are not racist, we are not simple-minded, we believe in the rationality of the Christian faith.' But the love of one's kith and kin is beyond reason, and that same love brings us to the foot of the Cross, to the God whose love is beyond reason. When the men of the right stepped away from their racial hearth fire to embrace reason, unfettered by prejudice and tradition, they betrayed their people and their God." — CWNY

I recently read an article on an alternative news site about a black superstar basketball player who was a member of a black cult organized for the extermination of the white race. Now, the fact that a group of black men desire the extermination of the white race is not news. Most black men and women (with the possible exception of Thomas Sowell, who conservatives always bring up at their 'not all are like that' idiocy sessions) desire the extermination of the white race. What is significant is that the black basketball player sees no need to hide the fact that he is a member of a group of blacks who want to exterminate the white race. Indeed, why should he hide his satanic desires? White people give him \$20 million plus a year and worship him every time he steps on the court, despite the fact that he wants to exterminate them. Look back through history: has there ever been a time when a minority group openly espoused the extermination of the majority and still remained, not only alive, but a pampered, worshipped elite? No, there hasn't. The western liberals and the grazers have gone where no people have ever gone before.

Of course that was whole purpose of the utopian journey, to go where no people had gone before. And where are we, the European people, in this new 'perfect' world? We do not exist as human beings; we are cattle, grazing in the fields, waiting to be slaughtered. And the slaughter will not be halted by conservatism, neo-paganism, or libertarianism, because all three 'isms' are godless. Liberal, negro-worshipping utopianism is a faith; it can only be defeated by people who believe in something greater than 'democracy.' They must have a living faith, the bred-in-the-bone faith of the antique Europeans, who looked on fidelity to one's kith and kin as the cornerstone of their faith, the one true path to Christ. Destroy that cornerstone and you have effaced the image of God in man, which effectively cuts men off from the living God and leaves the field open to satanic gods.

The decline of the Christian faith among the European people was noted by the early twentieth century intellectuals. The more liberal intellectuals, such as Bertrand Russell and Bernard Shaw, thought the decline was a good thing. The more conservative intellectuals such as Spengler and Gibbon thought it was a bad thing, but they were unable to see how to prevent the decline because they were rationalist just like Russell and Shaw. They didn't like the way the Russell-Shaw types gloated, but they couldn't find their way out of the rationalist stew pot: "A rabble of women and promiscuous vulgarians cannot be induced to answer to the call of Philosophic Reason if you are wanting to lead them to piety and holiness and faith. In dealing with people of that sort, you cannot do without superstition; and superstition, in its turn, has to be fed with fairy tales and hocus-pocus."

I'm reminded of a college seminar I attended in my early twenties. A cabal of ex-priests and ex-ministers had gathered together to discuss the decline of Christianity. They all agreed that people, particularly the European people, needed to believe in Christianity, but, 'What can we do? We're all Hegelian rationalists now.' Indeed, what could they do? They turned to the negro gods of nature, because such gods were man-gods rather than the God-Man. You don't have to believe the impossible — that Christ was crucified, died, and was buried, and rose again on the third day — in order to believe in god-men who do not rise from the dead and do not require mercy, only the sacrifice of white blood upon black altars.

That 'rising from the dead' thing is what has stopped the white man cold. From a rationalist, scientific standpoint, Christ's resurrection is a fairy tale, and fairy tales are for children, not adults. The seeds of negro worship were planted by the theologians and theological poets who thought they could explain the ways of God to man in rational terms that would not scandalize the men of science. But why should we be so afraid of the men of science? Ionesco, the convert from the theater of the absurd, said it was because of the connection between science and medicine. 'We mustn't criticize scientists and doctors; we are all in their hands.'

Science is a false messiah. When I worked as a police officer, I often had to administer CPR to heart attack victims before the medical workers, who had the machines, showed up. It was sad to see the hope in the eyes of the victim's relatives when the medical workers took over with their machines, because I knew that the machines could help sustain life, but they could not resurrect it. Sadly the white man no longer believes Christ can resurrect the dead, so he has chosen to take solace in science and the negro. This might seem like an odd juxtaposition, but once dumb nature becomes the sum total of existence, who but the negro, the most brutishly natural of all God's creatures, can become God?

Melville likened the modern, rationalist Europeans to drowning men: "ell enough they know they are in peril; well enough they know the causes of that peril;—nevertheless, the sea is the sea, and these drowning men do drown." Can a man reason his way out of the rationalist prison? Conservatives in church and state have tried to do just that for centuries. The Protestant theologians responded to Aquinas' rationalism with a rationalism of their own, which reduced Christianity to a philosophical proposition. The secular philosophers took the theologians at their word — reason is prior to faith — and proceeded to speculate Christ out of existence. 'What reason destroys, reason can restore,' has been the war cry of the conservatives for the last one hundred years. But 'tis not so. Reason cannot restore the European people, only faith can, and reason, as narrowly defined by the theologians and philosophers is not compatible with faith. Only a reason subordinate to and in support of the heart is compatible with faith. That misplaced passion can lead a man astray is an axiom of the moral theologians. But has reason never led a man astray? Was it the desire to know too much or to love too much that tempted Adam and Eve? To look upon God with the eyes of philosophical speculation is the original sin. The colored races and the liberals use their reason to support the passion of their hearts, which, in the liberals' case, is a desire to destroy the Christ-bearing race so that the image of the

living God can be eradicated from the face of the earth. The colored barbarians share the liberals' hatred for the white race, but their hatred is more elemental; they have not made a conscious Byronic rejection of Christ, because they have never known Christ; faith in Christ was not bred into their bones. They don't have to purge their blood of Christianity in order to hate the white man; they need only react according to their blood. This is why the white liberal loves and reveres the colored races and seeks to fuse his blood with theirs. He, the white liberal, is afraid of his own blood, because the ancient faith might be lurking there, so he takes refuge in pure reason. And the costly price of that refuge is a life that can only be lived second-hand through the colored races. The modern white man does not take offense at a black basketball player who wants to murder white people, because the white man only lives through the black race. If his god, the god that gives him a secondhand life on earth, wishes to destroy the white race, who is he to question his black gods? 'The black gods giveth and the black gods taketh away; blessed be the black gods forever.' Of course, the liberal hopes he will be one of the elect whom the black gods will spare. And he convinces himself of his election by constantly proclaiming the sanctity and holiness of his black gods, who were crucified in the terrible racist days of Europe but who have risen from the dead to sitteth on the thrones of glory, created for them by the rational, scientific white men.

When I say the white man needs a poetic to combat the liberals' poetic, I do not mean to suggest that white men need to write poetry, in the literal sense. Many poets, such as Poe, Byron, and Shelley lacked a deep poetic sense of life. They were rationalists with a gift for words. They lacked vision; they did not see the animating spirit behind the façade of nature. When I use the term 'poetic' I mean inwardness, the inwardness of St. Paul, Shakespeare, Dickens, and Scott, who saw what the rationalists could never and will never see: they saw God's hand reaching out to man. Because they did not try to comprehend God with their minds, they were able to understand Him through the love they bore for Him in their hearts. The union of the divine and the human takes place in the human heart. Our people were vouchsafed a vision of the living God so long as they maintained that union. Now our people perish because they listen to the philosophical speculators who hate everything that stinks of humanity and the humane God. Win them over?

*You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height.
You may as well use question with the wolf
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb.
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops and to make no noise
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven.
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—
His Jewish heart.*

Therein lies the mystery of the white man's suicidal worship of the black. Philosophical speculation has made Christian hearts into Jewish ones. Bertrand Russell, he of the philosophically-hardened heart, writes in his autobiography that he became dizzy and had to lean against a wall "in the darkest part of a winding staircase" when he heard a classmate reciting Blake's poem "The Tyger." (1) Why should that poem have had such an effect on the philosophical atheist? Perhaps for one dizzying moment, Russell felt that there was a God above his natural world of rationalism and science. If he did feel that way for a moment, the moment certainly passed. He lived to be 98 years old, polluting the world with his evil, simplistic atheism. And that is the striking thing about the Russells, the Shaws, the Wells, and the Einsteins of the world. They are rather stupid. By killing the organ of sight, the heart, they have destroyed their ability to see existence in its totality. They have become lost in a forest of minutiae. At first consideration of a work by Toynbee, for example, one is impressed by the encyclopedic breadth of his knowledge. But upon perusal of the work, we find no depth of thought. Toynbee is one of the analytic liberals who starts with the a priori assumption that human reason is supreme, and revealed truth, which is confirmed by the heart, is 'superstition and fairy tales.' Truth be told, there is more wisdom in the collected works of the Brothers Grimm than in the entire canon of post-Christian psychiatry, philosophy, and literature.

Negro-worshipping liberals will rule Europe until the European Everyman musters up the courage to declare to Satan's legionaries — the psychiatrists, the academics, the scientists, and the politicos — that "My mind hath been as big as one of yours... my reason haply more," yet I'll go with my heart, which sees with blinding sight past your hellish utopia to His green and pleasant land.'

Lincoln talked about the great civil war we were engaged in to preserve man's best hope, democracy. He was right about the great civil war, but he was wrong about what the war was about. It was about the preservation of the white Christian race. The forces of utopian liberalism and black barbarism were united against all that was good and noble and holy. That war continues still throughout all the European countries, only now it is a simple mop-up operation for the forces of the liberals and the colored barbarians. Occasionally, a Cliven Bundy 'steps out' and goes against the Leviathan, but such men are routinely crushed by the forces of Liberaldom. (2)

From a 'this world only' standpoint, it seems the forces of evil have triumphed, but I still believe as Thomas Nelson Page believed: if we love and hate with all our hearts, we Christian Goths will triumph. +

(1) The Tyger

Tyger! Tyger! burning bright
In the forests of the night,
What immortal hand or eye
Could frame thy fearful symmetry?

In what distant deeps or skies
Burnt the fire of thine eyes?
On what wings dare he aspire?
What the hand dare seize the fire?

And what shoulder, & what art.
Could twist the sinews of thy heart?
And when thy heart began to beat,
What dread hand? & what dread feet?

What the hammer? what the chain?
In what furnace was thy brain?
What the anvil? what dread grasp
Dare its deadly terrors clasp?

When the stars threw down their spears,
And watered heaven with their tears,
Did he smile his work to see?
Did he who made the Lamb make thee?

Tyger! Tyger! burning bright
In the forests of the night,
What immortal hand or eye
Dare frame thy fearful symmetry?

— William Blake

(2) The liberals believe they now have the right to exterminate Bundy because he is a blasphemer: he said that blacks were better off in the bad old days of slavery because the Southern slave owners were more concerned with

keeping black families intact than our federal government is now. His views of blacks are truthful and Christian, yet the lovers of truth, the mainstream conservatives, fled from him as soon as he uttered his 'racist' views. And the

'Christians,' those great believers in godless Jews and negroes, denounced Bundy right from the beginning.

Bundy will be martyred; let us hope and pray that he dies outside of a federal prison and that his whole family is not martyred along with him. "Tis the time's plague when madmen lead the blind." Bundy thinks that black families should stay intact and that the federal government should not own America, so the liberals and their conservative allies shout, 'Crucify him!' Black basketball players advocate the extermination of the white race, and the liberals and their conservative allies in church and state shout, "We adore you, we worship you, we give thanks for your presence among us." Is it possible to claim the name of Christian and stand with the great haters of our people? No, it is not possible. What does the old hymn say?

Who will leave the world's side? Who will face the foe?
Who is on the Lord's side? Who for Him will go?
By Thy call of mercy, by Thy grace divine,
We are on the Lord's side—Savior, we are Thine!

In the Name of All That is Holy

May 3, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors



No colored person is ever guilty of ethnic intimidation. Only whites can be guilty of such a crime. Prejudices are good if they stem from colored peoples' prejudices against whites, but they are evil if they stem from whites' prejudices against colored people. The long and short of the whole business of race, as the liberals have set it up, is that the white man is evil, and the colored tribesmen, particularly the blacks, are good. And since prejudice is connected to our moral sentiments, the liberals think it is good that blacks and other colored tribesmen should indulge their prejudices because nothing but good can come from them. And it is wrong for white people to indulge their prejudices since white people are evil. So in order to fight evil we all must fight against prejudice, but only one kind of prejudice, the prejudice of white people. —CWNY

A Jewish billionaire allegedly makes a racist remark to his black mistress, and the liberal establishment goes into their usual theatrical ranting and raving, which always culminates in the tearing of their garments and the cry of, "The Negro, our God, is one." Julia Ward Howe, feminist, Unitarian foe of traditional Christianity, and a negro worshipper, would be proud of her modern day descendants. After all, she wrote the liberals' national anthem, "The Battle Hymn of the Republic." It is quintessentially liberal. Using Christian imagery while defaming the God-Man who is the source of the imagery, Howe calls for an apocalyptic war against racist whites in the name of the sacred negro. A good deal of fundamentalist Christians, past and present, thought and still think that Howe's lines, "Mine eyes have seen the glory of the Lord," refers to the second coming of Christ. Far from it. Howe's lines prophesy the new age of utopia in which the negro is to be elevated to the status of God. The Union's victory in the Civil War was an important step on the road to Howe's utopia. Our modern European nations represent the fulfillment of her wildest fantasies. The terrible swift sword of the negro-worshipping liberals hews down the racist Europeans and makes all the world free to sing hosannas to nature and nature's god.

The liberals' reaction to even the smallest sign of what they term "racism" is an indication of a new phase of liberalism. They no longer, as they did in the early 1960s, talk about defending the rights of people with unpopular opinions. Now they tell us that racism is 'beyond due process.' No one has a right to utter racist opinions, even in the privacy of their own home. This new zero tolerance indicates that the liberals are no longer worried that they might be out of power someday and might need due process to cloak their deeds of darkness. They have made the assessment that liberalism has triumphed, and there is no longer any need to cover up what terms such as 'civil rights' and 'inclusion' were meant to hide: the implementation of a liberal theocracy with the sacred negro as the lodestar of that theocracy.

The descendants of Julia Ward Howe have done it. They've built the kingdom of hell right here on earth. When the Europeans saw, through a glass darkly, that the living God had come to dwell with them at their hearth fires and in their hearts, they let their lives reflect His divine love and mercy. Through their love of their people, they responded to His love for them. They became the liturgy of the Christian church. It has been Satan's mission to destroy that liturgy and replace it with his own. Using the signs and symbols of Christianity and individuals possessed with a hatred for Christ and his people, such as Julia Ward Howe, Satan has destroyed the incorporate union between God and His people.

Human souls are complicated. We can never know all the factors that make some succumb to liberalism and others reject it. But we do know that liberalism, with its attendant negro worship, is from the devil and must be resisted. But we can't reason with people who have a faith that is beyond reason. One must respond to their unreasoning hate-filled faith with a faith in the God who bids us love with a love that is beyond mere reason. The liberals are possessed with a demonic faith, and the grazers have been beaten down by Satan's liturgy: "The white man is evil, the Black man is good, the white man is evil, the Black man is good... Blessed be the name of the Black man forever and ever. Amen." Only a people who love much, in Christ and through their people, can come to grips with and defeat the enemy behind that perverse liturgy.

The seemingly hopeless plight of the white man is the result of the de-Christianizing of the Christian churches. The downward spiral to oblivion will continue throughout the white nations (soon to be colored nations) so long as Christ remains part of a rationalist system which only theologians and theological clergymen have access to. Theology has no racial hearth fire; hence, there is nothing in theology to stir a man's passions. The theological Christ is a distant God who occasionally goes to ecumenical teas and civil rights rallies, but he is not the God of our ascending race. We need our hearth-fire Christ, now and at the hour of our death. Death has no sting if our hearth-fire Christ is present, and our people, as a people, will never die if He is present. The negro-worshipping liberals and the church-going Christians who fuse negro-worship with Christian worship have left the hearth-fire Christ in the dustbin of history. Those few who still believe in the sacred channels of grace that can only be found at our racial hearth fires will still see the living God. Nothing is impossible for such men. Satan knows this, which is why, having separated the European from his racial hearth fire, he wants to make sure that the European remains eternally separated from it.

In Walt Disney's *Peter Pan*, Wendy's father, who never believed in the Peter Pan story, sees, at the end of the film, a shadow of Peter Pan riding through the air in his ship. After seeing that vision through a glass darkly, Mr. Darling declares that he seems to remember such a vision from a time long, long ago. Yes, those "pilgrim shadows" remind us of our European youth when we were connected, through our mysterious human relationships, to a fairy tale God who loved us in and through the people of our race.

The Christian churches have become adjuncts for Satan because they have made adherence to man-made theology the litmus test for faith. To know the formula of salvation has become more important than knowing the God who transcends the formula. In their youth, when they knew God through His human channels of grace, the Europeans were genuine human beings placing themselves in the hand of God and defying the devil and all his works. Now, having forsaken the living God for a universal God who has no basis in reality the European people are a people without a faith, which makes them a people without a local habitation and a name. Who are the Europeans? They are the men and women who must offer up their blood to the gods of color in order to atone for the white man's past sins against the negro gods. Every day the sacrificial rites are performed. Whites are raped and murdered while liberals applaud and churchmen tell us we mustn't be prejudiced and violent because of a few playful indiscretions of the godlike negro. After all, who are we to question our gods?

All the wrath of church and state is brought to bear against any white who does not seem to be in a state of rapture about the sanctity of the black race. This is called "fighting racism." There are no racist whites, which is regrettable, but there is an infinitude of black racists who want to exterminate the white race. Shouldn't that type of racism be of more concern than the offhand remarks of a Jewish billionaire? The brave new world we live in is a satanic reversal of everything we once held to be true and noble and good. The prejudiced Europeans once believed that the colored races who had no concept of charity and mercy had to be controlled lest they overwhelm the European people and impose their own merciless reign of terror on white people. Now Europeans believe that they must atone for their whiteness by sacrificing their people to the gods of color. Why must we do this? Why do popes, bishops, and ministers of the Gospel join with the jackals of Liberalism to tell whites that they must hate not only their ancestors but also their children if they are ever going to inherit the kingdom of heaven? Such a heaven is really a hell, and we can't, in the name of all that is holy, submit to the ethos of hell, no matter that our clergyman and their liberal overlords tell us we must. But that is the issue. The liberals and the self-serving clergy are acting in accord with all that they think is holy. To them the negro and the lesser gods of color are holy, and whoever denies that tenet of faith is a blasphemer and will be dealt with accordingly.

The French Revolution revealed the extent to which men possessed by a satanic ideology would go to eradicate all people opposed to their ideology. The race war is the logical extension of the French Revolution. In the name of the people of color, who are the only true people, the white race must cease to exist.

It certainly seems like the end of the European people. But we are the people of the storybooks. If a few Europeans would stand up for storybook Europe, the Europe that still lives in our racial memory, the forces of Babylon, no matter how many their number will be defeated. We simply need to believe as the best of the European people believed: "Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?" Yes, He has. We are Pickwick, we are Ivanhoe, we are the Europeans, the foolish ones who believe that faith, hope, and charity will defeat negro worshipping liberalism. +

The Sentinels of the Lord

May 10, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: 19th Century Christian Authors



Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

I concur with the historians such as Herbert Butterfield, who believed that the scientific revolution occurring between the approximate dates of 1660-1715 was the most significant transition in the history of the European people. Prior to the scientific revolution, the religious debate had been between Christian sects, the Protestant side claiming the Catholics were insufficiently scriptural and the Catholic side claiming the Protestants were breaking up the hierarchical system which Christ had left for the benefit of mankind. But that internecine warfare between Christians was a petty squabble in comparison to the real conflict between the religion of science/nature and the religion of the God-Man. Was the natural world, which could be dissected and examined, the real world or was it only the outward manifestation of a spiritual world created by a God who took flesh and dwelt among us in the person of Jesus Christ? From that time on, the period of the scientific revolution, the war began. The post-Christian Europeans, the men whose ancestors heard and believed, reared their ugly heads and rejected Christ for the natural world revealed by science. The pseudo-intellectual verbiage of Voltaire and Rousseau and the pseudo-poetical garbage of Byron and Shelly all amounted to one naturalistic attack on Christ's reign of charity. What kind of man prefers impersonal nature to the Christ who presides over and above nature? What kind of man works with might and main to destroy the incorporate union between God and the Europeans? The answer: a man who has given his soul to Satan.

The Christian churches' reaction to the scientific revolution was always one of compromise, but compromise on one side, the Christian side, and never on the side of science. Science kept claiming more and more of the spiritual realm until there was virtually no spiritual realm left in the churches. By the latter half of the 20th century the church men merely gave the new natural religion with the sacred negro as its focal point their blessing and begged leave to hold on to the old buildings and their tax-exempt status.

Nowhere was the schism between atheistic science and Christianity more pronounced than in France of the 1700's. The French Revolution was the manifestation of that schism. Only Burke saw the spirit behind the French Revolution. He knew that the battle was Christian Europe against a new utopian religion based on science, naturalism, and reason. Halfway-house Christians failed to see the satanic nature of the new religion while the liberals such as Dr. Price and Priestly openly followed the new philosophy of nature and reason in which Christian monarchs and the Christian faith were regulated to the garbage heap of history.

The poison took a long time to spread, and there were Christian counter-attacks. In the late 18th century Walter Scott took up the cudgels for true romance, the romance of the Christian faith, and in the 19th century the Christian counter-revolution to utopian naturalism was even stronger. There was Scott, who bridged the latter half of the 18th century and the early half of the 19th century, and there was Austen, Dickens, Tennyson, Browning, Thomas Hughes, Ian Maclaren, Fyodor Dostoyevsky, and Thomas Nelson Page, to name a few. Those authors articulated a faith that was still alive in the hearts and souls of the European people. A clean, pure faith still existed as something more than a shadow on the wall that fades from sight as soon as you try to get near to it to ascertain its reality.

By the latter part of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st century, the forces of scientific naturalism had gained total ascendancy over the European people and made Christianity an irrelevancy to the great majority of Europeans and a thing of ridicule to the intelligentsia. If the Christian faith is false, then its irrelevancy and its lack of adherents in positions of leadership is not a tragedy. But has the Christian faith been proven false? Why do Newton's laws of motion or Einstein's theory of relativity make Christ's resurrection from the dead an impossibility? It is because Christ's incarnation and resurrection contradict what we know, from a scientific standpoint, about what is natural. It is natural that we die and we rot; that is the way of nature. Has anyone ever observed a dead man rise? There does not seem to be any empirical, scientific evidence of such a phenomenon. But there was once a time – we were very young – when we did not regard the natural world as the sum total of existence. Buried in the mists of time is a people who saw a different reality. They looked on the natural world as a pale mirror of a greater spiritual world that was within. Which brings us back to our present reality, the reality of the maniacal hatred of the liberal technocrats and the black savages for the white race. A 'this world only' kingdom of the negro cannot be built if Europeans love their own kind with a love that passeth the understanding of the scientific, empirical mind. Such a love can withstand the onslaughts of the liberal technocrats and the colored barbarians. But if you kill the Europeans' feeling of pietas by redirecting it to a universalist compost heap, you will have effectively killed the Europeans, and by doing so you will keep the dear Christ out and the negro in.

There are still Christian churches everywhere, and the Christ story is told at Christmas and Easter. But this new 'Churchianity' is a naturalized Christianity. Christ is a quasi-divine, mythic figure to the grazers and a second-class social worker to the liberals. We can't love such a Christ as the true God because He is not a God who enters human hearts. Our heart belongs to our kith and kin; if a universalist Pied Piper tells us to leave our kith and kin for his universalist candy land, we shall not heed him, because such a Pied Piper god cannot be the true God. The God of our people, the people of the European mists, is Christ the redeemer, not Christ the Pied Piper of universalism or a fusion of Carl Jung and Nelson Mandela.

The liberal and the neo-pagan tell us that Christ be not risen, so let's redefine Him as a negrophile (so says the liberal), or let's jettison Him (so says the neo-pagan). But the halfway-house Christians tell us something different. They want a happy blending of negro-worshipping liberalism and Christ the Redeemer Christianity. What is wrong with that? What does race matter so long as we worship the Lord? It matters because our race is our spiritual backbone, and without it we cannot stand upright for long. My grandfather, born in the latter half of the 19th century, was an old school European. He grew up in a small, provincial, coal town where everyone was white and held what would now be considered racist opinions. My grandfather was not deceived during the 1960s by the 'new, improved' Christianity that was being spouted from the pulpit. His faith remained fundamental and provincially racist in that he did not equate faith in Christ with race-mixing and white genocide.[\(1\)](#)

My father was decidedly more liberal than my grandfather. He considered himself a liberal for most of his life. He loved his father but always denigrated his father's racism and his Christian provincialism. Toward the end of his life, my father, having accepted the fusion of Babylon and Christianity, started to revert back to his father's faith. The cause? He witnessed the implementation of the last phase of Babylonian Christianity, which starts with race-mixing, proceeds to feminism, and ends with the acceptance of homosexuality. That last phase of the new Christianity was too much for my father. He started using 'liberal' as a pejorative term and taking seriously the 'mythic' parts of the Bible that he had formerly scoffed at. By the end

of his long life, he believed as his father believed. In my view, from inside and from outside that father-son relationship, it was my grandfather's racial backbone, his refusal to betray his race, that gave my father a spiritual home to return to. My father saw no nebulous, remote god of Liberaldom at his deathbed, he saw the European Christ, the Son of the living God.

When my father was a young boy, he was bitten by a rattlesnake. My grandfather took him in his arms and ran with him five miles to the hospital over rough terrain so that the medical staff could administer anti-venom to save his life. And so it happened again at the latter stage of my father's life. His father took him in his arms and placed him at the foot of the cross so that Christ could take all the liberal venom from his soul and envelope him in His arms. The faith of our fathers, their fidelity to their own people, in and through Jesus Christ, is what sustains the Church of Christ here on earth. God bless the fathers who protect their racial hearth fires. They are the sentinels of the Lord, the true Europeans. +

(1) An old folk tale, which I'll paraphrase from memory, illustrates the faith of our ancestors who stayed close to their racial hearth fire:

A man dies, along with his beloved dog. He approaches a gate to the next world, and the gate keeper tells him the gate leads to heaven. "You can come in," the gatekeeper tells him, "but your dog can't come in."

"Then I reckon I won't come in," the man replies. "What kind of heaven is it where a man has to leave his best friend behind?"

The man proceeds down the road until he comes to another gate. At this gate the man is told that he and his dog are welcome, "because this gate is the gate to heaven."

"Then why do you let those other people claim their gate is the heavenly gate?"

"Because they help us filter out the bad ones. We don't want the type of men who would betray their best friend."

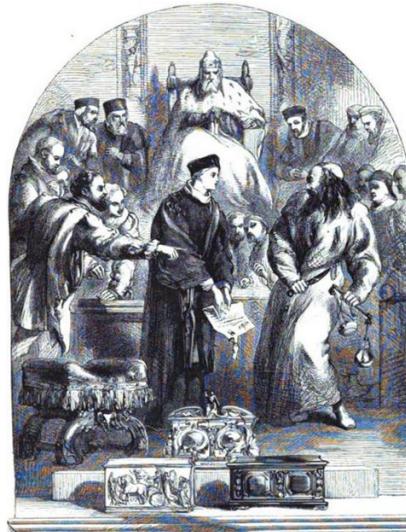
If someone, no matter whether a church man, a teacher, or a psychiatrist, tells us in order to become more Christian, more humane, or more wise, we must abandon the people of our own race, then they are from the devil. Stay close to the faith of our fathers, loving and hating with all your heart.

The Liberals' Kingdom of Malice

May 17, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Hippolyte Taine



Still, it is the primary right of men to die and kill for the land they live in, and to punish with exceptional severity all members of their own race who have warmed their hands at the invaders' hearth. – Winston Churchill

When Shylock refuses Bassanio's offer of ten times the original amount of his loan, Bassanio says, "If this will not suffice, it must appear, That malice bears down truth." And of course that is what is ultimately decided:

*For it appears, by manifest proceedings,
That indirectly and directly too,
Thou has contriv'd against the very life
Of the defendant; and thou has incur'd
The danger formerly by me rehears'd.
Down therefore and beg mercy of the Duke.*

We can and must say the same thing to the liberals and the colored barbarians which Portia said to Shylock. It is obvious by manifest proceeding, that indirectly and directly too, the liberals and the colored barbarians seek to exterminate the white race. We should regard anyone who tries to convince us otherwise as our enemy, because it is not possible to say, "I didn't realize civil rights meant the extermination of the white race," or, "We are simply treating black people as children of God, what could be wrong with that?" Those who do not see the maniacal hatred the liberals and the colored barbarians have for the white race, which is manifested every day in the streets of the European and American cities and in the daily newspapers and media outlets of every European and American city, do not want to see because they are in sympathy with the ongoing slaughter of white people. The whites who laud and encourage the extermination of white people and the whites who "forgive" the slaughter of white people in the name of a new Christianity heretofore unknown to the Europeans, view themselves as the elect who will be spared the fate of the racist non-elect.

The liberals have a death wish: they wish for your death and mine, not their own. No one, be he priest, minister, or born-again zealot, can claim to be Christian who chooses to ignore the colored onslaught against the white race, or, worse yet, who chooses to countenance the extermination of the white race. Our Lord said that we were not to be deceived by false messiahs. Isn't the Christ figure of the universalists a false messiah? Would Christ really countenance the massacre of the white race? Would He approve of negro worship? We are facing a new religion, under the guise of an improved and purified Christianity, in which white people are the original sinners, an elect shall be saved, and the negroes and the lesser gods of color are the gods who must be appeased with blood. Need I run through the now familiar litany of blood? The torture murder of Jonathan Foster is always before our eyes as the sign of the manifest evil of the colored barbarians and the satanic nature of the new Churchianity that countenances that evil.

It is not up to us to judge the souls of the mad-dog liberals and the new order of Christians who go along with the mad-dog liberals, but it is up to us to judge and condemn the religion of liberalism and the deeds of those who act upon liberal principles, as well as those who lend support to any part of the liberal agenda. Burke laid bare the spirit of liberalism when he said the French Jacobins sought to attack God by defacing His image in man. The defacing process has been going on for centuries. Has it reached its lowest, most debased form now that the negro man-god has replaced the God-Man? Who can say? All we know is that what the secular liberals and the new-church Christians hold to be sacred is from the devil. What reason created, reason cannot cure. Only hearts of flesh can cure the white man's sickness unto death.

I recently read that Harvard University was going to allow a satanic black mass to be said on campus and that the State of Oklahoma has authorized a satanic statue to be erected next to a Ten Commandments display in the State House. I think such overt support of Satanism is proper, because all our major institutions are satanic in everything but name so why not put the correct name on the satanic rites of the European people? Whatever is above ground in the European nations is satanic. The old Europe only exists in the underground of the soul. There are still some white men who privately, in their hearts, reject all the liberals' satanic agenda. The liberals fear such men might exist, so they are ever watchful, ever vigilant, and prefer to attack those innocent of any white sympathies, such as the billionaire Jew who uttered a "racist" remark, rather than risk letting a single guilty racist slip through their fingers.

But looming over and against the Kingdom of Liberaldom is the Christ of the antique Europeans. The tragedy of life is that we mortal men must die. If we don't carry the image of the true Christ in our hearts during our lives, how can we hope to see Him at the hour of our death? There are deathbed miracles, but if we all forsake the God of our ascending race what will happen to the God who comes to us via the human heart? If we don't seek Him we shall not find Him now or at the hour of our death.

That life is a journey toward something magnificent is embedded in the folklore of all people. But that life is a journey of the soul toward Someone, a God of infinite love and mercy, is uniquely European. Why do the liberals want to destroy that European vision and replace it with a new vision of a world that is built on hatred, a world without charity or mercy, moving ever onward to nothingness? The liberals' wish for a consummation, a consummation of nature and nothingness, is born from the same maniacal hatred of Jesus Christ that motivated the swine to plunge headlong off the cliff. And the church men who want to fuse negro worship and Christianity are siding with the devilish swine against Christ.

Burke correctly labeled the devil as the first liberal. And what is the modus operandi of the devil? He uses his abstract reason to separate men from their filial loyalty to God. When the great scholastic separated reason from original sin, he was cutting the ties that bind us to the living God. Reason, as Taine so eloquently put it, supports the passions of our hearts, but it does not replace them.⁽¹⁾ Separate reason from original sin, and reason runs amuck. Every evil under the sun can be countenanced because it is rational and therefore good. Love is from the heart; it is irrational, so it must be evil, but fornication is rational and natural, so it must be good. Liberals instituted cradle-to-grave sexual freedom, because it is rational to allow nature to have full sway. And since the negro is the most natural of all men on earth, it is reasonable and correct to worship the negro and allow him to indulge his natural appetite for blood and sex. From the liberals' point of view, negro worship is a faith that reconciles reason and nature. Hence the liberals' hatred for the people who claim there is a God above nature, whose love transcends reason.

European civilization was based on a provincial God of a provincial people. True faith is always at war with universalism because there is no depth of feeling in a universal faith. The great lovers of humanity in the aggregate – the Robespierres, the Trotskys – are always great haters of individual human beings. Our universal kingdom of heaven on earth is supposed to be the most advanced, the most humane civilization ever, based on the universal principles of a Coke commercial. Yet babies are aborted, the blood red tide of color is obliterating the white race, and the church men sing hosannas to the great, universal god of color. If the European people had not been systematically de-souled during the past century, they would not be able to live in a world so devoid of spiritual sustenance. As it is now, they are not living. The liberals live second-hand lives through the negroes, and the grazers graze on the various anesthetizers, such as blood sports and porno, which the liberals provide.

What kind of ideology can sustain a people only if the people do not fully conform to it? Liberalism says there is no incarnate God, and yet liberals bow down before the negro god. Liberalism tells us that death is natural, we need not weep over a pain-free death, and yet my mad-dog liberal sister wept at my father's death bed. Why weep for an accumulation of atoms? And why, since what is provincial is evil and what is universal is good, do liberals encourage the grazers to become passionately connected to "their team"? The emperor has no clothes: the liberal utopia is based on a lie, the unreality of a rational, natural, guilt-free world, devoid of Europeans who worship the living God, the God of charity and mercy. The consistent liberal will go off the cliff with the swine, because liberalism is a satanic negation of everything good and pure and noble.

Whoever bids us leave our racial hearth fire, even if they wear clerical garb, to warm ourselves at the stranger's hearth fire is bidding us warm ourselves at the devil's fires of hell. We are not permitted to sup with or seek comfort from the devil. The liberals have flown their colors. They hate with the malice of Satan. We need to fly our sovereign's colors, the Sovereign whose love transcends reason and nature. +

(1) In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet... -Taine

The Black Plague

May 24, 2014

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Defense of the White Race, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: C. S. Lewis



But you are now looking at the England within England, the real England, just as this is the real Narnia. And in that inner England no good thing is destroyed. – *The Last Battle*

Life is good in the old Western films of the 30s, 40s, and 50s. The heroes are the white men who follow the code and keep the bad whites who do not follow the code and the colored barbarians who hate the code of the white man in line. Because the code is bred in the bone of the white cowboy heroes they don't talk about it much. But it's there, and it must be adhered to. In one of his magnificent later westerns, *The Tall T*, the great Western star, Randolph Scott, is taken prisoner by two white bad men and a half-breed. The head of the outlaw band "never dropped a hammer on a man" himself, but he lets his two henchmen do what killing needs to be done. Despite the fact that he plans on letting his henchmen kill Scott's character, the head villain desires to separate himself in the hero's eyes from the other two. "I'm not like those two," the outlaw declares.

Scott's character replies, "You ride with them."

Well said. The Western hero has the poet's gift of saying much with few words. Scott's reply to his villainous captors (needless to say Scott turns the tables on his captors and kills them) is our reply to the forgiving Pope Johns of the white-hating Christian world, who tell us they are "full of grief" when whites are tortured and murdered by black barbarians but have only "loving charity and forgiveness" for the murderous black barbarians. Is this the type of charity that St. Paul writes about in 1st Corinthians 13? Hardly. Pope John's concept of charity comes from the devil, and St. Paul's comes from Christ. We can't let the clerics and their soul-dead adherents deny responsibility for the torture murders of whites because they don't actually wash their hands in the blood of the white victims, as the black barbarians do. "You ride with them, and my people's blood is on your hands," is our reply to the loathsome spawns of Satan who torture and murder by proxy.

There never was a proposal to exterminate the white race placed on any of the ballots in the democratic nations of European origin. And yet the extermination process is proceeding at a rapid pace. On the Brown vs. Topeka holy day of last week, we were treated to solemn black faces and solemn white faces scolding us and telling us that there were still some classrooms in the U.S. that were not diverse. Translation of that euphemism: "There are still a few white communities left. We must destroy them." Don't expect to see a place on your next ballot where you can vote against the extermination of the white race. That process is a given. All you're permitted to vote for is the overseers of the extermination process.

What is occurring throughout the European nations is a horrific reenactment of the black death which claimed the lives of over one-fourth of the European people. But the medieval plague came in the form of a germ that was part of the material world. This new plague is of the soul. The executioners are very real and material, but the moral paralysis of white people, which renders them defenseless against the black barbarian plague, comes from a deeply rooted sickness of the soul. Is it a sickness unto death? Yes, it is.

An essential part of the extermination process is propaganda. We are constantly deluged with chants of "white privilege." And many public schools feature anti-white privilege days (isn't every day an anti-white privilege day?) where white students must do special acts of atonement for their whiteness. Some young whites, far too many, follow the anti-white advice given and take it to the logical conclusion. They commit suicide in order to save the black barbarians the trouble of murdering them. The liberals inwardly rejoice at the white suicides while the "Christian" pastors are full of "grief and sorrow" but never connect the alarming white suicide rates with their anti-"racist" diatribes and corresponding negro worship. But how could it be otherwise? We send white children to indoctrination factories, public and private, that are worse, much worse, than the old communist educational preserves. No wonder that right wing nationalist groups fail to stir up any righteous indignation or anger with their atrocity stories about black on white crime. To indoctrinated whites, the murder of white people is seen as justified "payback" for white crimes against the sacred colored races. They just keep on grazing until their time comes or commit suicide before their time comes.

Authors such as Ainsworth and Defoe have given us an inside look at the black death of Europe. Both authors mention a general, but not total, lapse in faith and corresponding lapse in morality during the plague. It is hard to believe in a loving God when the black death is an ever-present reality. And great charlatans appeared, promising deliverance from the plague if men would only adhere to their false vision of God. It's a wonder that a few heroes of the inner life stayed faithful.

During our modern black plague, the charlatans are the church men. They tell white church-goers that they will be saved if they adhere to the church men's vision of a new Christ who died on the cross so He could one day be supplanted by the great negro gods, the true lords of the earth. Only a few, of the same spiritual mettle as the faithful few during Europe's other black plague, will remain constant while in the midst of this modern black plague. Churchianity will pass away, but His word will remain.

The rape, torture, and murder of white people at the hands of the barbarians of color has become so commonplace that even the most horrific of the atrocities are given no notice in the national news media. But even if the atrocities were reported, there would be no response to them in the white community, because there is no white community. Whites have accepted the Alice in Wonderland logic of the liberals. There is no such thing as a white person when whites try to band together in racial solidarity, but there is such a thing as a white person when liberals want to place the blame for all the evils of the world on a particular race of people.

White privilege? Whites have only the privilege to serve the colored races of the world. Throughout the European nations negro worship and the demonization of the white man is the ruling faith. The few remaining whites whose hearts within them burn at the sight of their people being sacrificed on the altars of negro worship are the whites who will be left to rebuild Christian Europe after the current black plague runs its course. There came a time when the old black plague no longer had the same power it once had. The survivors no longer feared it; most of them had suffered from the disease, some more than once, and they had finally developed an immunity to it. Will such be the case with the modern black plague? After an unremitting deluge of anti-white propaganda and black on white atrocities will the surviving whites finally say, "We have had enough, we are no longer afraid of being called racist. In fact, we welcome the term 'racist' – it describes us – we are racist, we love our own kind and we mean to protect and defend them against the liberal techno-barbarians and the savage hordes of color."

Our starting point is 1st Corinthians 13. That is the European's creed. The colored shock troops that stand against us are led by the utopians of science and nature: Voltaire, Rousseau, Robespierre, Einstein, Bryon, Shelley, Keats, Shaw, Russell, and every Christian clergyman who abandons the Christ of the European people in preference for a speculative theology that tells us in order to be Christian we must hate our own people and love the negro with all our heart, mind, and soul.

We all die, but if we die while connected to our own people in and through our Lord Jesus Christ, we do not really die. But to die in despair, to die as those who have the sickness unto death, is the fate of all whites who die believing the liberals are right, that there is no such thing as white people as a people. Then there never was a God who became incarnate in the European culture, and the black death is the only reality. Liberals do not ask Christ to come and abide with them. They ask for the comfort of science and the second-hand excitement of communing with the negro gods of nature. As the black plague, the negroization of the European nations, becomes a nightmarish reality with no end in sight, we need to go to the heart of what it means to be a European. So long as we maintain our charity of honor, we shall not be defeated. As we fight to drive every liberal and colored barbarian from the European lands we should remember there is also an eternal Europe, a spiritual Europe, which must be maintained even if this our temporal Europe is consumed by the black death. So long as we believe and act as Europeans, the light of Christ's Europe will conquer the darkness of the black plague. +

Laying to Rest the Speculative European

May 31, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Bred in the Bone, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Shakespeare, Walter Scott



"I can live no longer by thinking."

— Orlando, *As You Like it*

The democratic movements throughout Europe in the 1840s were extensions of the French Revolution that Burke warned would envelop all of Europe if the Jacobin snake was scotched but not killed. The so-called Civil War in the United States was our extension of the French Revolution: the Jacobin North made war on the Christian South. Though all the democratic bloodbaths were couched in high-sounding words such as freedom, equality, fraternity, and emancipation, the intent in each and every democratic movement was the same — to supplant the Christian faith, the guiding light of the European people, and replace that faith with the darkness of liberalism. And by World War I the Jacobins' utopian dream had become a reality. It's significant that Woodrow Wilson justified his anti-nation's entrance into the war with the words, "The world must be made safe for democracy." He did not say that the European nations needed to become democracies; that would have implied a pre-1840s Europe. He said that the world needed to be made safe for democracy, which implied, correctly, that the European nations had become liberal democracies and were now an aggressive, expanding power determined to destroy all the non-democratic elements — translation: non-liberal elements — in their own and other nations. And let us have no doubt that when we are talking about democracies we are talking about utopian, liberal states completely opposed to European Christianity. They might be compatible with speculative Christianity, but they are not in line with bred-in-the-bone European Christianity, which is the only Christianity that St. Paul and our European forefathers knew.

The liberals came into power promising that they could usher in a perfect world. Have they done so? No, they haven't. From my perspective, which is that of the antique Europeans, they have not only failed to improve mankind's lot here on earth, they have also taken away men's hope for a better lot in another world. But how, having failed to deliver on their promises of utopian bliss, have the liberals managed to maintain themselves in power for over one hundred years. No state, no matter how totalitarian-ly efficient, can last over one hundred years without a great deal of genuine support from the governed. So again, we must ask: How have the liberals maintained themselves in power for over one hundred years?

We start with the primary seductive rationale of all utopian states. The utopians promise that if the great unwashed mass of humanity will follow their guidance, a new paradisiacal state of existence will be the permanent lot of mankind. And when the paradisiacal state fails to materialize, what happens then? That's easy: you blame the recalcitrant reactionaries, whether they be unborn babies, aristocrats, monarchists, Christians, white people, old people, or some other scapegoat, for impeding the march to utopia. This is why the utopian is never fazed when aristocrats, white people, or unborn babies are slaughtered. Such creatures are in the way of utopia, which is always about to come into fruition but somehow always eludes us.

It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctions visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometers, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world.

But while the liberals are hardening their hearts and those of their adherents to the sufferings of the recalcitrants, whose sacrificial blood will build utopia, they must deliver something to their devotees to assure them that utopian bliss is still coming. Russian communism did not fail because the Russian people wanted to return to Christianity. It failed because the communist leaders were unable to give their people enough comfort stops on the road to utopia. The Russian communists were beaten by their Jacobin competitors in the United States and Europe, who were and still are keeping their people in check with comfort stops along the utopian way. Russia is now playing an aggressive catch-up game with the other European utopias, trying to shift from the naked-fist utopianism of communism to the seductive, subtler, comfort stop utopianism of the West. The modern Russian adjustment is much like the French Jacobins adjustment once they cast off Robespierre. They are still hard-hearted utopians, but they are now trying to use the church and the democratic process, like the other European nations do, to advance their satanic agenda rather than using the muggish, thuggish tactics of their communist predecessors.

Utopianism is a European phenomenon, because utopian thinking only rears its ugly head among post-Christian people. The colored races, having never taken Christianity to heart, do not indulge in utopian thinking. Every utopian system is an inversion of Christianity. The current utopian model, which is basically the same in all of the post-Christian European nations, runs along the following lines: Life is a pilgrimage toward utopia. If we look to the end of the journey, we see a great throne with a negro sitting upon it. He presides over a people who are all brown and black and who are celebrating as the worshippers of the biblical golden calf celebrated. Along the way we see the comfort stops, positioned where the crosses and kneelers used to be on the old Christian roads. The first stop is at one of the Christian churches. Here the pilgrim is told that Christ is not who the old, evil Europeans said he was. He is not the Savior, he is a forerunner of the black man, who is the savior of all the people of the world, with the exception of white people. What is the black savior saving mankind from? He is saving them from white people and from a false vision of Christ. The 'real' Christ, the forerunner of the black messiah, does not condemn personal sins such as the ones listed in the Ten Commandments. The new Christ condemns social sins such as sexism, homophobia, and above all, racism.

Some pilgrims skip the Christian church altogether and go to the secular psychiatrists' station of the new cross. It makes no difference: the psychiatrist and the church men both speak the same jargon. Faith, as they define it, is merely a speculative exercise of the brain. So why not adopt a guilt-free, natural faith that allows a man to become a happy, participating member of a Babylonian kingdom of nature? And after this life? The church men and the psychiatrists unite with the multi-racial gypsies of Babylon:

"To be resolved into the elements," said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; "my hope, trust, and expectation is that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recomposed in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under

different forms – the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldebaran and his brethren. – In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it!” – Quentin Durward

Perhaps this modern obsession with saving mother earth is related to the liberals' new faith in their future absorption into “the general mass of nature.”

Is it necessary to list all the comfort stops along the liberal way? The sporting comfort stop is a vital one and so is the scientific comfort stop. The modern liberal must keep all the comfort stops open and accessible to the modern age Europeans in order to avoid falling on the same rocks on which Russian communism plunged to its death. And the liberal cannot afford to let go of his personal god, the sacred negro, because he sustains the liberals' comfort stops and his utopian vision of the future. We are all marching toward the negroization of the world. The negro has become the replacement for Christ, and the various liberal comfort stations have become the conduits to the negro just as the antique European's fidelity to their racial and familial hearth fire kept them connected to Christ.

There are other competing utopian visions to the current liberal, negro-worshipping utopian vision, but the alternative utopias have failed to catch on as the liberals' Babylonian utopia has. The neo-pagans, for instance, project a future devoid of white Christians and colored barbarians in which they, the men of intellect, rule over some kind of soulless world of computers, science labs, and Viking sperm banks. The neo-pagan utopians do not worship the negro as the liberal utopians do, but they do share the liberals' hatred for the antique Europeans who believed that Christ was the son of God. If He be not risen, I don't see any difference between the liberals' garbage heap or the neo-pagans' garbage heap.

The irony of this age of utopias, of the liberal left and the neo-pagan left, is that the lives of the utopians are sustained by the Christian culture of the antique Europeans whom they despise. While amidst their false communities and their heathen churches the utopians must occasionally catch a glimpse of or feel a gentle wind from the Christ-centered, life-sustaining culture of the antique Europeans, or else they will completely wither and die, because there is no spiritual life in the Christ-hating, European-hating cultures of the utopians.

The utopian death in life cultures, with their treacherous comfort stations, use the tactics of the devil to keep their adherents dreaming of utopia while they live in hell,

*But tis strange;
And oftentimes to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths
Win us with honest trifles to betray's
In deepest consequence.*

For how long will the European people settle for the honest trifles of the comfort stations which are meant to betray them in deepest consequence, to place their bodies on the sacrificial altars of the bloody negro gods and place their souls in hell?

If, and it is a big ‘if’, the Europeans could throw off speculative living and actually live life first-hand, they would no longer be in danger of extinction. As things stand now, the Europeans are dead, because they have lost their capacity to love and hate: they can only speculate about such feelings. A man with a living, breathing heart, a non-speculative heart, would not stand by and utter inanities about being “full of grief and sorrow” at the torture murder of his people while in the same breath “forgiving” the torture murderers. A man with a heart capable of loving would hate those who murder his people and desecrate his blood faith. A true white man loves and hates with all his heart; a speculative white man has no passionate loves or hates, he merely speculates about love and hate and lives life second-hand through the colored races who are incapable of loving the good, as the Europeans once did, but have an infinite capacity for hatred, hatred of the good. That is the difference between the colored barbarians, the speculative white man, and the true white man. The colored barbarians are fueled with a satanic hatred for everything white, pure, and noble. The speculative white loves and hates second hand through the negro. He loves his black god and hates the white, speculatively of course. The ancient white man loves and hates first-hand, in a mysterious way which is unknown to the colored barbarians. The white man's hate stems from his love of his own. When his people are threatened, he responds with a hatred for the enemy which passeth the understanding of the colored barbarians, who only know the hatred that stems from hatred, not the hatred which comes from love. “Stop! This shall not go on!,” will never be heard from a speculative white man, but it is the war cry of the bred-in-the-bone Christian European when he sees his kith and kin threatened.

Let us cease to speculate about the race problem. Let us cease bending over backwards to find the “good blacks.” And above all, let us stop trying to fight liberalism from within liberalism. We can't vote Satanism away. “Stop! This must not go on, in the name of God, this must not go on.” There is a land for the pure and free white man, a land where there is no excuse for clerics who betray their people and their God. A land where colored barbarians are not permitted to murder and rape white people with impunity. That land is Christian Europe. If the European loves and hates with all his heart, refusing to speculate his people and his God into non-existence, then miracles will occur. +

Cross & Sword

June 7, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob, George Fitzhugh



Firmer he grasp'd the Cross of strife,
Until the opposing bank he gain'd.—

Walter Scott

In our beleaguered Western fortress we are not only closely infested from without but increasingly infested from within. To triumph we shall need all our courage and wits about us – and our own wits, not somebody else's wits. A brainwashed man is as much shamed as a violated woman; more defiled than the defiler. He is like a mentally circumcised Janissary in the forefront of the battle against his own white Christian kith and kin. – Anthony Jacob

There are currently no mainstream news outlets that are not in favor of the extermination of the white race. Fox News merely differs with its liberal rivals over the amount of megaton bombs to drop on non-democratic Arab nations and the tax rates. The survival of the white race is not their concern. It has been thus for quite some time, at least since the 1960s: the news media is against the white Europeans even though they themselves are white Europeans. What has changed is the availability of information about the techno-barbarian and colored war against white people. There is currently much more information, via the internet, about the colored onslaught on the white race than there was in the 60s, 70s, 80s or 90s. And yet, despite the greater availability of information about white genocide, the situation of whites has deteriorated mightily since the 60s, 70s, 80s, and 90s. Why?

The first reason is that white people are much more thoroughly indoctrinated with a sense of their own worthlessness than they were fifty years ago. When a white hears of colored atrocities against whites he – if he is a liberal – rejoices in the violence and labels it “good violence,” in contrast to bad violence which would be white retaliation against black savages. If a white is a grazer, he doesn't rejoice in the colored atrocities against white people, but he does acquiesce to them because he has been trained to treat such atrocities as acts of God – the black god – whose ways are inscrutable and not to be questioned. The grazer simply hopes that he will be spared the fate of the slaughtered white cattle that used to graze next to him in the pasture.

The second reason that white genocide speeds steadily onward despite the greater availability of information about black atrocities is because human beings are very herd-like. They need someone to lead them. If the white grazers still trust the many headed hydra of Liberaldom – church, state, press, government – or even if they just trust one head of that many headed hydra, they will not be able to put the information about black-on-white crime to any use. Take the church-going grazer, for instance. Some years back a man of my acquaintance experienced one of those all too familiar negro-induced tragedies. His young son was shot and killed in front of his own house by some black barbarians who just wanted to kill a white boy. Once his son was buried, the father, his older sons, and a few of his friends wanted to kill the black scum that murdered his son. But the parish priest intervened. “You must forgive, you must understand their rage, etc...” The outraged whites were pacified, the young white boy was unavenged, and colored barbarities increased in the neighborhood of the murdered white boy. That story was told to me, with pride, by the liberal priest who talked the white men out of violent retribution. White grazers will make irreverent jokes about clergy, psychiatrists, military leaders, professors, politicians, and news men, but in the end they have a great deal of respect for such authority figures. And if those in authority do not see anything wrong with white genocide then the white grazers will not see anything wrong with white genocide, no matter how many atrocity stories appear on the internet.

Isn't it good to respect authority; isn't that the mark of the white man, that he respects the laws of his nation? No, blind respect for the powers that be, independent of their respect for the European people and their Christian faith, is not the mark of the white man. It is the mark of a coward, a dishonorable wretch and a loathsome toady. George Fitzhugh's remarks are apropos:

Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by the necessity of keeping its negroes in order, which preserves a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the governing class would cease to be conservative... We are the friend of popular government, but only so long as conservatism is the interest of the governing class.

It is quite obvious that the governing classes throughout the European nations are not interested in conserving the Christian traditions and culture of the European people, nor are they interested in conserving the European people. Quite the opposite is the case. The governing classes of the European nations are concerned mainly with the destruction of every last remnant of old Europe, including the white-skinned Europeans that are still left there. That they desire the complete annihilation of white Europeans is no longer kept a secret by the governing classes of Europe. Politicos such as Lord Mandelson tell us outright that they want to supplant the white Europeans and replace them with colored barbarians.

Is this a governing class that should be supported? It seems obvious to me that a governing class that wants the blood of its people should suffer the death that they seek to inflict on their people. Of course the liberals do not consider themselves as traitors to their people, because they do not look on white people as their people. They have only one people: the colored people of the earth. It is the duty of every liberal, and there are no non-liberals in the governing classes of the European nations, to work for the extermination of the white race.

If simply supplying white grazers with the information about black on white crime is ineffective, what will be effective? There is only one effective remedy for white genocide – white men must love their people. Until the spiritual obstruction which makes the white man incapable of love is removed from white hearts, the blood-soaked colored tide will continue to engulf and destroy the white race.

If it was simply a physical blockage of an artery, something that could be removed by an experienced surgeon, then we could have a quick fix. But a spiritual blockage of the arteries cannot be easily remedied. The men or women who have the blockage cannot see or feel it, so they go along with their lives, oblivious to the fact that their hearts are devoid of that spirit which makes them human beings instead of cattle. They must reclaim their hearts, because cattle just allow themselves to be passively led along to the slaughterhouse.

There is no doubt that the Catholic priests and the Protestant ministers of the Gospel of Christ have led and continue to lead white people to the slaughterhouses where black barbarians kill them without one touch of remorse or guilt. As cattle to the slaughterhouse professionals, are white people to their black gods who slay them for their sport. It's no good to rescind the Europeans' covenant with Christ in order to free them from their suicidal state of somnolent passivity in the face of evil, because in point of fact the Europeans' current state of moral paralysis is the result of their broken covenant with Christ. Theologians are not God's anointed. They stand athwart the path to God, which leads through the labyrinth of the human heart, and tell the Christian pilgrims that God is not to be found at the hearth fires of a man's kith and kin, but in the abstractions of the theologians who know God through nature. Once the pilgrim steps away from the thorn-laden, arduous path through the labyrinths of the human heart and accepts the theologians smooth and easy way to God, he is on the road to suicidal death-in-life somnolence. Men of heart, Christian men who have seen Christ in the hearth fires of their kith and kin, in contrast to the hell-stoked rationalist fires of Unitarian theologians such as Harriet Beecher Stowe, do not suffer their kith and kin to be exterminated just because their local clergymen tells them that white people do not exist as a people or that the Christian concept of sacrificial love entails the base betrayal of one's own kind.

We must apply the "you ride with them" principle to the church-going anti-European "Christians," if we want to get past the mere reporting of the black atrocities against whites and move to a counter-revolutionary attack on the negro-worshipping liberals and their colored gods. Our Lord cut through all the Pharisical red tape when He told us:

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

The false Christians found that loving one's God with one's whole heart was difficult. So they decided merely to affirm Him with their minds. Then, in the name of their abstract God, the false Christians invented an abstract neighbor to love. It is difficult to actually love our real neighbors, our kith and kin, because they are not perfect creatures who let us 'help' them so we can feel an ego-maniacal rush. 'Better to love an abstract negro neighbor than my actual neighbor,' says the treacherous, self-deceiving, spiritually bankrupt modern clergyman. So long as the European remains in spiritual servitude to such creatures, creatures who advise a man to hate his own kind in the name of an abstract, false Christ figure of their own invention, he will remain in a state of spiritual somnolence, incapable of responding to the fiery cross which bids him rise and ride in defense of his kith and kin. But once the white man renews his covenant with His people and the Christ who imparts to human hearts, not one single institution of negro-worshipping, Jacobin Europe will be left standing. +

The Sweet Vale of Europe

June 14, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Restoration of European civilization, White Genocide

Tags: Rudyard Kipling



Oh, well for the world when the white men join
To prove their faith again!

-Kipling

In one of W.C. Fields' classic movies, *The Man on the Flying Trapeze*, his wife sends him downstairs to investigate the sounds emanating from the basement. When he arrives in the basement, he comes upon two burglars who have been distracted from their main task – burglary – by Fields' homemade apple jack. W.C. is not one to let his 'guests' drink alone, so he joins them in what soon becomes a drunken revelry. The song fest brings the police, who arrest the two burglars and take W.C. along as a witness.

At the trial the charges against the crooks are dropped, and W.C. ends up in jail for making apple jack without a license. What then ensues is one of the [funniest scenes](#) in the W.C. Fields canon of films. He is thrown in jail with a murderer whom he must mollify or risk being murdered himself.

Murderer: "I had three wives, and this is the first one I have killed in all my life."

W.C.: "Oh, that's in your favor, yes. They have no more case against you than the sheep has against the butcher."

It's superb comedy, because back then it was an absurd anomaly to depict the government as aggressively prosecuting its own citizens, under the guise of a bureaucratic regulation, while allowing criminals to go scot free. However, when such absurd anomalies become the law of the land, they are no longer funny but cross the line from comedy to tragedy.

We now see, on a daily basis, the tragedy of white governments supporting black murderers, rapists, and looters while prosecuting decent white citizens. Recently in Manchester, England, for instance, a group of white Englishmen intervened to stop some black Muslims from assaulting a white woman. The English police have vowed to "investigate." Who will they investigate? It won't be the black Muslims. Whites defending themselves against black barbarian violence or whites defending other whites from black barbarian violence is considered, by our liberal overlords, to be "bad violence." Nevertheless, despite what the white-hating establishment says, let us applaud those white Englishmen for acting like white men should act. When the hatred of black barbarianism and the desire to protect innocence, as exemplified by the Manchester men, is once again bred into the bone of white men, the colored tide will recede from Europe. But in order to make that "charity of honor" a sustained, continual effort, the Europeans must believe, once again, in Him, for He is the source of that "charity of honor," which separates the European from the rest of the non-European world.

Before the liberals secured complete ascendancy in the European nations, they used to preach that, "I might disagree with what you say, but I'll defend to the death your right to say it." That was a tactical lie. What the liberals meant when they preached tolerance was: "We have not yet made negro worship, feminism, and homosexual marriage the law of the land: we still have some selling to do, and a few more Donahue shows should do it." Once the liberals had total power, the new dictum became: "There are certain things too sacred to allow for open discussion. We must not allow the sacred status of the negro and other people of color to be challenged." The liberals are tactically correct: there are certain things a nation should not allow to be discussed. White Christians should have refused to even discuss, let alone allow, the integration of the races, the equality of the sexes, or the legalization of homosexuality. When such things are discussed, they eventually will be permitted. This is why the liberals, now that such things are law, no longer permit them to be discussed. The book is closed on opposition to negro worship, feminism, and homosexual marriage: so it is written, so it shall be.

White men cannot be part of the new society; it is written they shall not enter the kingdom of heaven on earth. It is useless for white men to plead for equal rights, justice under the law, or punishment for those who kill and murder whites. All those words – equality, justice, compassion, etc. – were merely subterfuges to place the liberals in power. They were magic words when invoked by the liberals, but now they have no power when invoked by the white Europeans. Upon what ground does the European stand? If he stands on liberal ground and pleads for his "rights" he will be given his rights: he will be slaughtered. That is the only right a white European in Liberaldom has.

There is only one place, one homeland, where a European can make his stand against the liberals and the colored barbarians. That homeland is Christian Europe. The theologians tell us we never had a homeland, and the liberals tell us that which is dead can never be brought back to life. Both groups of speculators are wrong. That which is eternal never dies: Christian Europe is an historical reality, just as Christ's resurrection is an historical reality, and Christian Europe is an ever present spiritual reality, just as He is an ever present spiritual reality. It is only when we make the antique Europeans and their God a philosophical proposition that we lose sight of the reality of both. The antidote for the modern European's dislocation from his people and his God can be found in the works of Sir Walter Scott. Heroism, which stems from charity, from the deep and abiding love that can only be nurtured and enkindled at the hearth fires of our kith and kin, is what takes a man away from the abstract love of the colored stranger and the intellectual pride that goes with that kind of abstract love. There is a sympathy of poetic vision between Burke and Scott. Burke gave the European ethos a name; he called it "that charity of honor." And Scott's heroes, whom the liberals scorn, had it, the charity that never faileth. We all die: science cannot change that. But we don't really die if we retain our European charity of honor. That is what we have lost, and it is why we live as though we were dead and why we die in despair.

There is no need for Europeans to live and die in despair. That is what the liberal wish, to inculcate the Europeans with a death-in-life despair. But there is life abundant in the battle to defend the European hearth fire. When a man loves enough to defend his sweet vale of Avoca, he knows what he is and to whom he belongs. The struggle doth availeth: it is the liberal, backed by the devil, who tells us that the fight for home, faith, and race does not availeth.

Who is served by the integration of the negro throughout the European world? Is it a self-evident good that there shall be no more Europeans who love their God and their people with all their heart, mind, and soul? If it is, then I'm morally blind, because I see the demise of the white man and the rise of the colored masses as the triumph of darkness over the light. We have only our trembling faith in the European Christ, the Christ of the Gospels and St. Paul, which gives us hope that darkness will not ultimately triumph.

A trembling faith doesn't seem like much to put up against the satanic liberal leviathan, but faith, when it is the right kind, can indeed move mountains. But it must be the faith of the European people, our blood faith. Let me digress. In my early twenties, while in Rome, I got a chance to see the *Pieta* of Michelangelo. Of course I had seen photos of the sculpture, but I had never seen the actual sculpture in the flesh before. I'm not an aesthete — I don't enjoy art for art's sake. For instance, the *Mona Lisa* does not move me at all. I have to have a sympathy

with the subject of the artist before I can appreciate the work. As I approached the *Pietà*, I no longer felt I was in the presence of a work of art, I felt like I was in the presence of the blessed mother and Christ. Through some divine infusion of grace, Michelangelo had managed to put the heart and soul of the living God into stone. My European instincts took over, and I went to my knees and wept. As Christ wept for Lazarus, so we weep for our Lord. The God-Man and His people are one in heart, because both have hearts of flesh. We will fight any foe, no matter how superior in strength and number, bear any burden, no matter how heavy, in order to maintain our blood ties to the God who weeps for us and with us. That is what Burke called for when he urged all Europeans to be true to their instincts, to that charity of honor, and fight the Jacobins.

The colored people, if they ever hope to become anything other than barbarians, must surpass their instincts for blood and try to understand and then imitate the spirit within the European people that makes them worship a God who weeps. The exact opposite is the case with the modern European. He must cease his intellectual meanderings through the desert of modernity and return to his instinctual life, to his racial home, where his people and their God, the God who requires mercy rather than sacrifice, dwells.

Popes kiss the *Koran* and attend voodoo masses while Protestant clergymen preach the adoration of the negro and the fusion of Judaism and Christianity. This is called moral evolution, where heathenism and blasphemy are joined with a perverted form of intellectual Christianity to form the satanic Christ-less faith of the modern Europeans. It will not be reason that makes us turn from the liberals' satanic, blended faith of all that is antithetical to the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. It will be instinct that calls us home, away from the filth of negro worship, to that sweet vale of Christian Europe where our kith and kin and the God who weeps dwell. +

Our European Hearth

June 21, 2014

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob



A stable place sufficed
The Lord God almighty,
Incarnate, Jesus Christ

-Christina Rossetti

The Rev. Blagdon-Gamlen was in the minority amount his fellow clergymen when he spoke out against the colorization of England in the early 1960s. Nowadays he would be a minority of one, and he would most probably be jailed or executed for his sentiments:

Prevention is better than cure. We do not want a Congo situation in this country, Mau-Mau, and witchcraft, signs of the latter not being already lacking. I think that many of us in this country are changing from animosity to sympathy with the government of South Africa.

Christ died for all, black, white, and yellow, and we must love them as individuals, but that does not mean that there must be intermarriage, or, to quote the words of Mr Charles Royle, Labour M.P., Salford West, in the Immigration Debates, 'I say that world peace will not be assured until everybody in the world is coffee coloured. We may be getting somewhere when that happens.' Am I a Fascist because I think those words, if correctly reported, terrible, and that the Will of God is that He made some white, and some black, and that He meant it that way, and not willed a coffee-coloured humanity?

What has happened in the European nations to make such sane, Christian sentiments as those expressed by Rev. Blagdon-Gamlen an anathema to the ruling elites in both church and state? The satanic revolt has come to fruition; that is what has happened. Satan strikes back at God by effacing His image in man. But it is only the European man that Satan is interested in destroying. The colored tribesmen have always belonged to Satan, except when the much-maligned whites have snatched a few colored souls from Satan's grasp, so he attacks God by effacing His image in the European people. It seems as though he has succeeded, but if I still see the face of Jesus Christ in the culture of the antique Europeans then there must be others who see that sacred image as well.

Our Lord prefers a few over many when His people go into battle against the heathen. Gideon was told to cut his army down to a chosen few before he led them into battle against the Midianites. We few, we Christian Europeans, should cut our numbers as well, because "Christians" of the new age are on the side of the liberals. It doesn't matter whether it is a Roman Catholic clergyman who views the Church documents as interpreted by the Pope as God's truth, or whether it is a Protestant clergyman who views the Bible as interpreted by him as God's truth. Both men view reason, unconnected to the source of all true wisdom, the human heart, as the final arbiter of revelation. 'Tis not so, 'tis not so. The reality of our history as a people and our own personal histories tell us something quite different. No human mind, no matter how great, has ever comprehended God. But millions upon millions of European people with hearts of flesh have known the living God. The wizard 'Reason' and his twin brother 'Science' have lured the Europeans away from the living God, the God of the hearth fire who comes into our hearts through our love of our kith and kin. The wizards have led the Europeans to the African jungle where the dark gods dwell. The liberals progressed to the negro gods by the usual pathway to Satan, by the path of intellectual pride. We know the litany: 'Primitive man believed that God was lightning and thunder because he was very superstitious. Then came ethical man, the Christian, who invented an anthropomorphic God who was kind and gentler than the gods of the primitive man.' Then came science and rationalism. They were to be man's final gods.⁽¹⁾ But they couldn't sustain mankind, so the liberals, without abandoning reason and science, added a personal god to their impersonal duo of science and abstract reason. Enter the negro, and all was right. The negro, buttressed up by reason and science, has become the focal point of the liberals' hatred for the light of Christian Europe and their love of Satan's kingdom of darkness.

It is not only the secular utopians who are possessed by the spirit of Robespierre, the ardent opponent of capital punishment who killed thousands in the name of "the people," it is also the Christian utopians such as John Paul II and Francis Schaeffer, who are possessed with a demonic utopian spirit. In order to build their perfect Christian world, they were willing to jettison the European people. But how can we live if we condemn our origins, the people who taught us to love and cherish the living God? And what type of intellectualized monster calmly stands by while his own people are slaughtered in the name of an abstract god who shares center stage with the abstract negro gods? Certainly not a Christian European. Don't be deceived by the fancy dress up parties of the John Paul II's and the scripture-quoting evangelicals such as Francis Schaeffer ("The devil can quote scripture to his purpose"). They, like their spiritual counterpart, the devilish Robespierre, are so taken up with their theories about God that they have totally forgotten His nature. He is a God who imparts to human hearts. If you damn all those people who have a heartfelt connection to their own race and their own familial hearth fire as racists outside the ken of humanity, then you have effectively cut off not only the European people off from God, but you have also cut off the colored people from God, because their racial history and the Bible tell us that the colored tribesmen need the white people to be their conduit to the living God. So who is being served by Christian utopianism, which condemns the Christian Europeans for their racism and defies the noble savage? No one is being served except the egomaniacs who love their abstract theories of God while denying the living God and condemning His people.

There has been no Christian counterattack against either the secularized Jacobins or the Christian Jacobins. It is primarily the atrocity story that is used to keep Christians in line, particularly the pre-Civil War atrocity stories and the white South Africa atrocity stories. But such stories, when they are not entirely made up, which is generally the case, are never placed where they belong. They are aberrations, unlike the real life atrocities committed in black states which are an intrinsic part of black rule. Did the South African whites approve of brutality against the blacks? Did the Southern aristocrats, as a whole, countenance brutal, senseless acts of violence against their black slaves? In both cases the answer is no. And if you're a white person and do not believe that the white South Africans and the white Southerners, being Christian, did not nobly adhere to the code of chivalry when dealing with the lesser breeds without the law, I want to know why you don't believe in their nobility. Why would you believe the worst about your own people? I think I've lived long enough in Liberaldom to answer that question. It is because of intellectual pride. The liberals want to believe that they are better than the antique Europeans. And since they can't match them in courage, fidelity to the cross of Christ, or charity toward their fellow men, they, the liberals, call their cowardice 'enlightenment,' their apostasy becomes the new, purer Christianity, and their lack of charity towards their own people is considered virtuous to the highest degree, because one must, if he loves the negro, hate the white man with his whole heart, mind, and soul.

St. John tells us that if we say we love God but hate our brother we are liars. So let us call the liberals, those self-professed lovers of humanity, whether they are inside or outside the church, what they are. They are liars, they hate their white brothers, their own people, and they hate their God, who lives at the racial hearth fire of the Europeans who still keep a place for Him there. And they hate in the name of the negro. All sins can be washed away if you love the negro. Are such creatures fit to govern us? Macduff supplies the answer: "Fit to govern? Not fit to live!"

The existentialist writers in France in the middle of the 20th century claimed to have discovered that existence precedes essence. But they didn't discover existentialism. Our people, the Christian Europeans, were the true existentialists. Their God entered human hearts and shattered all the universalist philosophies forever. Christ was the existential God: He was incarnate in human hearts. Why the birth in a stable, why the death on the cross? Why did Christ do all those human things if it was not to impress upon us that we can only know God through our humanity? The people who took the incarnate God into their hearts, our people, the antique Europeans, should not be singled out for extermination because of their racism, they should be singled out as the shining light of the world because they bore witness, through their fidelity to the cross of Christ and the people of their own racial hearth fire, to the living God.

This black plague of the soul that the white man is suffering from has done more damage to the European people than all the natural plagues and all the wars they have ever suffered through. This plague has taken away the white man's soul, he has given up his spiritual life in order to receive the blessing of the cosmic utopians who promise him a place in their multi-racial utopia. But it is a lie, put forward by the king of liars. There is no place being prepared for the white man in the liberals' gilded palace of colors. Far better to cling to His promise: "In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."

In the Gospels when the woman with the issue of blood touched Christ, He felt a healing power go out from His person. When He asked who had touched Him, the apostles were confused because many people had touched Him. But only one person had touched Him spiritually. She believed in Christ, she believed in His power to heal, and spiritually she called on Him by name. When the church men set up a rational system that places a liberal Christ figure in a subordinate position to the negro gods of the secular liberals, there is no real contact between Christ and the Europeans. They have ceased to call on Him by name. The old hymn tells us that there is power in the blood of the Lamb. Yes, there is, but only if we are men of blood determined to keep the channels of grace open. If we leave our racial hearth fire and allow the colored stranger to destroy it, we will not have a place for Him to dwell. We will be left out in the desolate wastes with the carrion birds groaning for burial.

It starts with a vague feeling of disgust and then builds to a passionate hatred. Some men, those who hold sacred Europe in their blood, cannot stomach the new Christ-less world order of the liberal Jacobins. Though they are buffeted by the strong winds of Liberaldom and attacked from within and without by the liberal pestilence and the colored barbarians' arrows, the remnant band, the Europeans who have called on Him by name, will be the leaders who restore Europe. Death-in-life liberalism will perish, but His people will survive, because they have called on Him from the depths, and He has heard their prayer. +

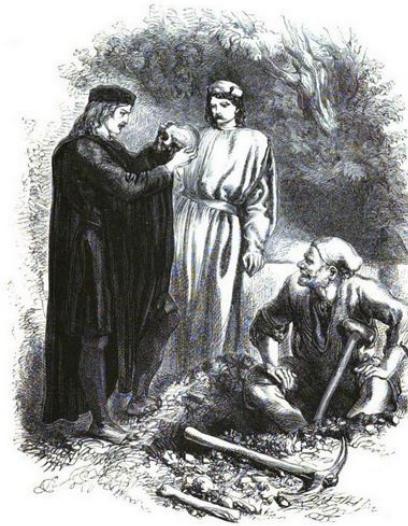
(1) The chief difference between the neo-pagan liberal and the mad-dog liberal is that the neo-pagan wants to stay with science and reason only, while the mad-dog liberal has realized the need for a personal God, which is why the mad-dog liberals have trumped the neo-pagan liberals. Only Christ can conquer negro worship, the science and rationalism of the neo-pagans is helpless against it.

In Defiance of Augury

June 28, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Kenneth Grahame, Walter Scott



The utopian liberal (a redundancy because all liberals are utopians) builds his castle with the bricks and mortar of unreality. He lives in mortal fear of losing even one brick from his castle of unreality, so he employs masons to keep the castle strong and guards to protect the masons. And the keystone of the liberals' castle of unreality is the sacred negro. If that brick is removed, the whole castle will come tumbling down...

A liberal kills all the divine longings in his heart so he can propound the abstract principles of his utopian brain. And with the circular logic of the madman, he always comes back to his own mind as the only reality. He will always find the imperfections of the King he hates and the culture he hates, because there is no perfect King and no perfect culture. But why does the liberal focus on the mote in Louis the XVI's eye and ignore the log in the Jacobins' collective eye? Why were the white South Africans condemned for compassionate apartheid and the modern negro rulers not condemned for the bloody massacre of whites and blacks? Why does Tony Blair tell us we must have a racially diverse Britain when racially diverse Britain is diametrically opposed to everything good and decent that used to exist in non-diverse, racially segregated Britain? The answer to all those questions is that the utopian liberal is criminally insane. Devoid of all humanity he uses his brain to support the inhumanity of liberalism, which holds the negro aloft as the holy God of Liberalism. Is such a faith madness? Indeed it is. The negro worshipping liberal and the Jacobin are spiritually united. —CWNY

I don't question the statistics of the 'death of the West' crowd, but I do question their interpretation of the statistics. According to the statisticians we have only – because we are outnumbered 1,000,000 to 1 – enough time left to take one last bite of our cheeseburger and one last sip from our beer before we are swept away in a tidal wave of color. My first reaction to such statistical prospects of doom is – what difference does it make whether the white man is outnumbered 100,000 to 1, as he was when he conquered the world, or whether he is outnumbered 1,000,000 to 1 now, when he is at the bottom of the world's totem pole? Surely you don't think that the extra numbers arrayed against him at present have brought about his demise? No, of course you don't. So we must look elsewhere, not to sheer numbers, when we look for a reason for the death of the white man. A Martian recently arrived from Mars, given a week's access to a public library, could discover the reason for the demise of the white man: he once believed that Christ was the Son of God, and now he no longer believes that Christ is the Son of God.

My second reaction is the same as Hamlet's reaction to Horatio's well-intended cautionary advice:

Not a whit, we defy Augury; there's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come: if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all, since no man ha's aught of what he leaves. What is't to leave betimes?

If God gave us a racial hearth fire in order that we might come to know Him through the people of our own race, then we must defend that hearth and those people, even if we are outnumbered 100,000,000 to 1. Since we all die, the only tragedy is dishonor, which is the way of the liberal, who betrays his race and his God. "Breathes there the man, with soul so dead..." Yes, he is called a liberal, but the true European stays by his racial hearth fire, just as Ratty stayed with his river. His affirmation bears repeating:

'I beg your pardon,' said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. 'You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So-this-is-a-River!'

'THE River,' corrected the Rat.

'And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!'

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other. What it hasn't got is not worth having, and what it doesn't know is not worth knowing.'

The numbers game is self-defeating. The Europeans must defend themselves no matter what the odds against them. They cannot wait until they 'win more people over' to their side or try to 'negotiate' with the colored heathen. They must fight. And contrary to the belief of the democracy boys, the Europeans need to reduce their numbers, not increase them. It is far better to go into battle with men committed to the cause with their whole heart, mind, and soul than to go into battle with traitors in the ranks. Keep the liberals in front of us at all times and leave the grazers at home. They will not be of any use to us, because they haven't enough spirit to fight for God, Harry, and St. George. This waiting for the grazers to "wake up" is the white conservatives' version of *Waiting for Godot*. Just as Godot never comes, the grazers never wake up. "Don't we try to convert the grazers?" No, we don't, at least not in the form of any rational apologetics. The grazers who can be converted will be converted when they see the Christian faith embodied in a fighting remnant of Europeans. But no grazer will see the light if the remnant band refuses to fight until they have more grazers on their side. That was and is the great error of the democratic nationalists. They look at how many hits they get on YouTube and dream of reversing the colored tide by getting "the message out" to uninformed white people. The sons of Mary, the remnant band of Europeans who have knelt at the foot of the Cross see something that the statistics-minded democratic nationalists do not see. They see that the destruction of innocence, the murder of their people, and institutionalized blasphemy in the form of negro worship is from Satan. And Satan will not be defeated by democratic pragmatism. He will be defeated by hearts of fire, by men who love their people in and through the European Christ, the God whose love surpasseth the understanding of the colored heathen and whose charity and mercy sustained old Europe, and who will, if we call on Him by name, sustain the Europeans in their battle against the liberals and the hordes of color. Nothing puts iron in a man's backbone and fire in his heart like the knowledge that he fights for His reign of charity and mercy.

I've been told *ad nauseam* that fairy tales are for children, that we need 'realistic,' managerial planning if we want to save the white man. But it is the managerial mentality that has destroyed the white man. The tragedy of Western civilization is the tragedy of the sons of Martha run aground.

Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left

me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her. – Luke 10: 38-42

The sons of Martha are the church men prior to the French Revolution who were more concerned with gaining numerical superiority over their Protestant competitors than with the content of their parishioners' faith; they are the modern day, white nationalists who invoke democracy and intelligence tests in their on-going war against the liberals but never invoke Christian Europe; and they are the modern clergy who have jettisoned European Christianity and its adherents for a fusion of liberalism and heathenism, supported by a numerically superior black and brown congregation. The sleeping beauty in the fairy tale can only be awakened by a hero brave enough to fight his way through the thorns and briars surrounding her and passionate enough to love and appreciate the beauty of the princess. The moral beauty of Christian Europe should stir the heart of every European with a shred of European blood left in him. And if there are no heroes of romance left who want to release the sleeping beauty? Then –

*'Twas the hour when rites unholly
Call'd each Paynim voice to prayer,
And the star that faded slowly,
Left to dews the freshen'd air.*

*Day his sultry fires had wasted,
Calm and cool the moonbeams shone;
To the Vizier's lofty palace
One bold Christian came alone.*

There are no laws in Liberaldom that bind a Christian European. When the law becomes an instrument for Satan, the only law left is the inner law, the law of charity. No European with a heart that still lives can countenance what the liberals countenance and encourage: the murder and torture of white men, women, and children, the murder of infants of every race and sex by legalized abortion, and the complete dismantling of white Christian Europe in favor of negro-worshipping liberalism. Aslan is not a tame lion, and those who love Him are not meek adherents of a liberal-based democracy or mild practitioners of non-violence. Whatever it takes! That charity of honor is what makes the European a European. Surely if we are true to that instinct, we will not remain the slaves of liberals and the sacrificial victims of colored barbarians.

The liberal says the antique Europeans were racist, sexist, and homophobic; therefore, their culture must be demonized and their descendants must be exterminated. The New Age Christian says the antique Europeans were insufficiently Christian because they were racist and sexist; therefore, he, the new, perfect Christian, will consent to the extermination of white people. The democratic white nationalist damns the antique Europeans because they practiced Christianity, which he believes is a managerially flawed system that caused the white Europeans to commit suicide. He looks to a new world, devoid of Christians, but presided over by intelligent white people who know how to manage things. The common denominator in every group mentioned is a hatred of the Christian faith of the antique Europeans and a hatred for, in the case of the liberals and the New Age Christians, all white people, and, in the case of the democratic nationalists, a hatred for every white person who adheres to the ancient faith of the European people.

All three groups converge on that central point, the antique Europeans. Their sins, alleged and real, are always placed before our eyes. But does anyone see past the lie? There was a spirit animating the much-maligned Europeans of old. And it was not a demon spirit, it was Christ, the son of the living God. No such spirit animates our modern culture. It is Satan, the demon spirit, and Satan alone who manages every aspect of our utopian dystopia.

I have no faith in any managerial system that promises me relief from satanic liberalism by an injection of more liberalism. What I do have faith in is the power of the one true fairy tale to set European hearts aflame. Such hearts, though few in number, will be enough. When we stay close to our European hearth fires, miracles occur. Christ didn't convince us of His divinity through a Socratic dialogue. He climbed Mount Calvary and set us an example of love and charity that drew the noble souls, the hearts of flesh, to His Sacred Heart. The Europeans of the old racist days saw with blinding sight because they followed in His train. If we do likewise, ignoring the caustic wit of the liberals and the massive numbers of the barbarian hordes of color, we will enter the European realm of fairy tales and storybooks. And then? We will be Europeans again, and we will no longer allow blaspheming liberals and savage coloreds to pollute our homeland. +

Charity and Mercy Have One Name and It Is Not Mau Mau

July 5, 2014

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob



Kenya, we must understand, is a microcosm of the entire West. Therefore let us ask ourselves, What would have been our general White position today if the world had consisted only of Kenya, with no other place for us to go to and no other form of government for us to live under? What then? We, the White race, would already have been obliterated or reduced to everlasting serfdom, would we not? Yet however fanciful it might still seem to the white peoples of the northern American states and occupied Europe, the world today does in the most vital sense consist only of Kenya, for we cannot keep on being racially overruled and uprooted and moved on. Wherever we are now we are in effect in Kenya; for certainly the operations of the anti-White conspiracies, the techniques of the Communists, Liberals and One-Worlders, remain significantly identical whether they be applied in Kenya or Alabama. – Anthony Jacob

A British court recently awarded damages to Mau Mau supporters who had “suffered” at the hands of the British during the bloody Mau Mau reign of terror in Kenya during the 1950s. This is like awarding damages to the wolf because the lamb he was rending to pieces managed to leave a hoof mark on the wolf’s face before being devoured. But this is the inverted, perverted society of anti-Europe that we live in: the black wolves are venerated, and the white lambs are slaughtered (see “Bottomless Pit of Diversity”).

Anthony Jacob describes the Mau Mau uprising in his book *White Man Think Again!*:

Even the wild animals in the bush recognized and accepted the Mau Mau terrorists as fellow-animals, which they never did where the white troops were concerned. Mau Mau was something in the African blood, calling imperatively and irresistibly. It was a revolt of savagery against all things sane and Christian and civilized and White.”

And one of the leaders of the Mau Maus, the satanic Keynatta, was wined and dined by the European liberals. To say Kenyatta was a murderer and rapist would be an injustice to your average run-of-the-mill murderer and rapist. Kenyatta never murdered without torture, and he never raped without torturing and humiliating his victims first. Such was the mark of the now sainted Mau Maus, and such is the mark of the black man when left to his own devices. Behold the noble savage!

I was told by a friend who had met Anthony Jacob that Jacob had many white friends who had advised him not to publish *White Man Think Again!* because it would anger the liberals in South Africa and throughout the West. His friends didn’t dispute the truth of what he said; they just didn’t want it stated for fear of the liberals. But Anthony Jacob was in line with Shakespeare, Burke, and Scott: his tongue had to utter the truths of his heart. Anthony Jacob was the last of the Goths, a man who loved and hated with all his heart. He loved his people and hated the satanic civilization of liberals and black barbarians that were arrayed against his people. Everything Jacob foretold has come true. Kenya has become the world. Satanic, black Mau Maus kill and torture whites throughout the European world while the liberals provide the ideological support for them, representing them as misunderstood freedom fighters and/or sainted Christians who must be curried and pampered. Kenyatta himself told the BBC he was a Christian, and the BBC, those staunch proponents of an adversarial press when they are interviewing white Britons, let him get away with his lies. The liberals’ work continues into the 21st century. Black savages know they can get special privileges from the fake Christians on *The 700 Club* and other such organizations, if they just say they are Christian; there is no other requirement needed to qualify for sainted status in the eyes of the utopian Christians. It doesn’t matter how anti-white and anti-Christian the black savage is, as long as he says he is Christian and refrains from bringing his blood-soaked knife to the T.V. studio, he will be presented as a modern day saint, deserving of all homage, praise, and money.

There is nothing of what David Balfour called “the good Christianity” in self-professed Christian groups that seek to blend negro worship and Christianity. They have lost the zeal for truth and the love of kith and kin that accompany the good Christianity. And with that loss of faith has come an inability to distinguish good from evil. Satan seeks to ape God in everything he does. Just as Christ became incarnate in an entire people, the European people, so does Satan seek to become incarnate in the European people. The Mau Maus of Kenya were the purest manifestation of Satanism that ever existed on this earth. They did not have to play at devil worship in black masses and such, they simply let their instincts, unfettered by white influence, take over and lead them to Satanic actions that defied the imaginations of even the most hardened sinners of the European world. By wedding the sub-human Africans, whose instincts draw them to the religion of Mau Mau, with the European people, Satan has seen the glory of the coming of his lord, who is none other than Satan. His self-love is gratified by the incarnation of Satan in the European countries, through negro worship.

The modern Europeans within and outside the church are hostile to the fairy tale elements of the Christian faith, such as the belief in original sin and the divinity of Christ. But doesn’t the incarnation of an evil beyond human comprehension, namely the incarnation of Mau Mau negroism in Western civilization, indicate a depth to evil that can only be explained by reference to the now discarded belief in original sin, Satan, and the Savior who redeems us from original sin and protects us from Satan? If pure evil has a name, does not pure good? I am not a mystic, but at the moment we realize there is a devil — and he is all around us in negro-worshipping Europe — we also hear another voice and see a different face than Satan’s. “I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.” Our incarnate Lord: why doesn’t He come to us? He already has. He is waiting for us at our racial hearth fire, which the Europeans abandoned when they went whoring after the negro gods of liberal universalism.

The spirit motivates the flesh for good or evil. We seem to be facing a spiritual crisis much like the crisis in the pre-flood days of Noah when demons slept with the daughters of men because they saw that they were fair. I’m not suggesting that the negroes are demons — that’s more than I know. But I do know, because I see what they do, that they are a race completely unlike the white race, so unlike whites that they seem to be a different species entirely, a race unable to comprehend the tenets of a higher faith, which teaches charity and mercy rather than the bestiality and savagery of Mau Mau.

Conservatives have written volumes about the dumbing down of our children. But unfortunately they are only talking about declining scores on math and English achievement tests. The real tragedy of the European people has been and continues to be the deterioration of their spiritual nerve endings. They have been desensitized to things of the spirit. How else can we explain this unholy zeal to mate with and worship the negro? This deification of the Mau Mau, this unholy trinity of Satan, the negro, and the liberal should be opposed by the European Christian with all his heart, mind, and soul. If a man says he is a Christian but will not fight against the unholy trinity, he is neither a Christian nor a European: he is one of Satan’s own.

In the old Westerns, the hero is generally misunderstood by the townspeople he is determined to help. Because he wears a gun and seems to be good with it, the townspeople think he is just like the villains who are good with a gun and use it for their evil purposes. But the hero never explains himself. When the beautiful lady, who is drawn to the hero but cannot abide his violent ways, asks him why he must kill the villains, the hero always says, "If you don't know, I can't tell you."

The hero has wise blood; he knows he can't wrap up the vision of his heart, which tells him that evil must be fought and cannot be 'dialogued' away, and hand that vision to the beautiful lady and the peace-loving townspeople. So the hero acts, and some of the townspeople understand once they see the charity of honor embodied, and some turn on the hero and try to do him in through all the bureaucratic devices of the craven men. The lady? If she is a true lady, she finally understands the difference between a Christian hero, a villain, and a craven.

I was raised by liberal parents who sent me to liberal schools. But my education did not take. Something pulled me back. I have often pondered what that something was. It was the European thing. I couldn't get away from the fact of the moral beauty that was at the heart of the European people. And like the Western hero, I do not know what to say to a person who does not see the moral beauty of the antique Europeans. Do they really prefer negro worship to the God of old Europe? It seems to be that way. Just as I can't see anything but satanic night in their world, the liberals and the new age Christians do not see moral beauty in the people of old Europe. They see only racism and a people who failed to build utopia. Last week we mentioned the one bold Christian who entered the Vizier's palace all alone. But was he alone? Only to those looking on from the outside - "I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you." Therein lies the key to the desertion of the new age Christians from Christ to Mau Mau. When they left their racial hearth fire, they lost their vision of the living God who comes to us thorough our racial hearth fire. Without that sustaining vision they felt alone in the universe and sought to assuage their aloneness by blending an abstract Christ with the Mau Mau negro gods of the liberals. Will they be forgiven their blasphemy? Will they repent and return to Christian Europe? Obviously, that's not something anyone can know. But we do know, with an inner certainty much greater than our certainty about the turning of the earth, that the negro religion of Mau Mau is from Satan, and the antique Europeans, the "racists," knew the only answer to the liberals and their religion of bestial, blasphemous negro worship: We have only our witness to an ineffable, incomparable moral beauty that exists in the heart of the people who knew the name of the God of charity and mercy. He is not called Mau Mau. He is called Jesus Christ, the Son of the Living God. +

Two Separate Worlds

July 12, 2014

Categories: Charity, Faithfulness, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Hippolyte Taine



In the liberals' bible there is a Satan just like there is in the Christians' Bible, but the liberals have a different version of the Genesis story. The liberals claim that the earth was once a wonderful paradise, a self-sustaining paradise, where the rule of nature was the rule of the earth. Everyone in paradise was natural, loving, giving, and non-white. The black man ruled a multi-colored people of red, yellow, black, and brown. Then one day an evil white man appeared in the garden. He cunningly subverted the good and noble black rulers and gained control of paradise. He then brought other white people, who had been hiding in Bogeyland, into paradise and set up a new and unnatural kingdom over the ruins of the black man's paradisiacal kingdom of nature. No longer could the loving, caring, sharing people of color continue their natural practices of murder, rape, cannibalism, and free unbridled sex. The white bogeyman curtailed those natural practices and introduced an unnatural, heinous religion. The white bogeyman told the wonderful, natural people of color that there was a God above nature who looked on their natural practices as abominations. They were, the white bogeyman insisted, in a state of sin. We know the rest of the story. Despite the fact that the white bogeyman told the people of color that there was a savior who would save them from their sins and the death which was a consequence of sin, the colored people fled from the white bogeyman's world and created their own purer, more natural worlds where rape, murder, cannibalism, and unbridled sexual license were the norm.

So two separate cultures existed, that of the white bogeymen and that of the natural men and women of color. Then the wonderful thing happened. In the cruel oppressive land of the white bogeymen, a magnificent new type of man emerged, a sport of nature, a mutant. This new man was called The Liberal... -CWNY

In America we have twice elected a negro president of the United States. And every January we have a national holiday to celebrate the life of an infamously immoral and degenerate negro named Martin Luther King Jr. In France, that great land of liberty, equality, and fraternity, the former president, Nicolas Sarkozy, speaking in 2009, said with pride that France was a regicide nation. And in Britain, formerly the mother of the free, now the mother of radical Islam and the Mau Mau, the government pays reparations to the satanic followers of Mau Mau who raped, tortured, and murdered British citizens. All the aforementioned events, which occurred without a whimper of protest from white Europeans, signify just how deeply utopian liberalism has sunk into the soul of the European people.

If the European people were a Christian people, then death would be the price for those who supported negro worship, regicide, and Mau Mau. But since the European people are not a Christian people, there is nothing to prevent negro worship, regicide, and Mau Mau from being supported and lauded. We have supped full of horrors, the most dire deeds of blood perpetrated against white people go unavenged by white Europeans whose ancestors once went into battle to protect His reign of charity. The new cowardly faith came to fruition at the time of the French Revolution:

It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in,–glittering like the morning-star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! What a revolution! And what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she could ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. – Burke

The age of chivalry is gone indeed, but how could it be otherwise? When the Christian faith is drained from the blood of the Europeans so are the virtues that go with that faith: courage, honor, and charity. We have only Christian utopians left in the ranks of those who adhere to organized Christianity. They are false Christians who ape the utopianism of the secular liberals like a junior executive apes the big boss in a large corporate network by going around saying, "Yes, J.B., " to everything Mr. Big says. "Yes, the Europeans were racist; Yes, we must integrate; Yes, we must encourage miscegenation; And Yes, Yes, we must all love the negro with our whole heart, mind, and soul, and hate the white man and all his works." Such is the never-ending new and improved "Hallelujah Chorus" of the utopian Christians, whom we can "see everywhere, any time of the day," unlike the "everyday housewife," who seems to have gone the way of chivalry and charity, into the dustbin of history.

The French Revolution, the Haitian revolution, and rebellions such as the Mau Mau rebellion of the 1950s all stem from Satan, and they all follow the same predictable pattern:

(1) Liberals from a distance all support the revolution – Price, Kingsley, Shelley, Keats, Byron, etc.

(2) Some liberals, who see the bloodshed first hand, condemn the bloodshed and claim people such as Robespierre, Jean Francois, and Kenyatta have perverted the revolution, but those same liberals never abandon their precious revolutionary ideals. When the Kenyattas and Robespierres pass from the scene, they support the ongoing revolutionary movement toward the light.

(3) The vast majority of whites in France, in Haiti, and in Kenya are not in favor of their own extermination, but their natures are "so far from doing harm that they expect none," which makes them believe the liberals' lies that say democracy and diversity do not mean the extermination of white people.

(4) Over time, the bloodbaths are forgotten, and the revolutions, especially the black revolutions, are sanctified and accepted as the model for the whole world. Butchery and savagery are accepted if they are attached to high sounding words such as civil rights, national independence, racial equality, or democracy.

(5) All opposition to the new world order can be squashed because the new world order is based on the new religion of mankind. Heretics must be crushed in the name of the common good.

"All means are justifiable and meritorious with traitors; now that the Jacobin has made his slaughtering canonical, he slays through philanthropy." – Taine

Taine is precisely correct when he attaches the word ‘canonical’ to the utopians. The French Jacobins and their spiritual descendants, the negro-worshipping Europeans of the modern era, are bloody in their designs and more fervent in the execution of their designs than the worst of the Grand Inquisitors and the worst of the Puritan witch hunters. Christian orthodoxy is heresy and satanic negro worship is orthodoxy in modern utopian Europe. Opposition to liberal orthodoxy is not tolerated, but because of the success of the liberal organs of propaganda the liberals seldom have to deal with opposition. When enough Europeans cease to swallow the liberals’ party line and stop voluntarily offering themselves up for sacrifice, the liberals will have to become more overtly bloody and violent. This will be a step up, because it will be a sign that the silent slaughter has become a battle. God cannot defend the right if the right refuse to fight.

Most men, when pushed to a wall, will fight. But the modern European man does not feel that he has been pushed to the wall. He sees that other whites have been pushed to the wall and crushed, but he thinks that will never happen to him because he is not racist; he is a firm believer in democracy, which (he believes) stands for freedom, equality, and diversity. And since he is a rational man, he does not listen to the naysayers, the underground men who tell him that freedom, equality, and diversity mean only one thing – the death of everything white and Christian.

A man living on the mathematical surface of life cannot see the heights or the depths. But the Europeans must start to look to the heights and see what their honored dead saw in their lifetimes, or else they will be pulled down to the hellish world of the liberals where the absence of light will make them forget there ever was an overworld of light. It’s not a case of “we must act now or it will be too late.” It’s already too late if we judge success by elections and eleventh hour political movements. Such movements are only on the mathematical surface of life. In the spiritual realm, it is never too late. The liberals were and are committed to building utopia over the dead bodies and dead culture of the white Europeans. When the Europeans break away from the mathematical endgame of utopianism and start to love and hate with all their heart, they will finally begin to fight back, and such a fight, the fight for God, race, and hearth, is what we were born for.

In a movie called *The Music Man* (1962), there is a wonderful scene near the beginning of the film in which a con man tries to create a need in a small turn-of-the-century Iowa town for a boys’ band. Of course the con man plans to sell the band instruments and uniforms to the townspeople. In order to sell the townspeople on the band, he has to convince them the town is in “trouble.” He is told, “River City doesn’t have any trouble.” But that doesn’t deter the con man; he very cleverly creates trouble, by informing the townspeople of the dangers of a pool table in their town, which is so evil that there is only one surefire remedy: a boys’ band.

What Professor Harold Hill does is what all advertising men do: they create a need where there was no need before in order to sell what they want to sell in order to enrich themselves. The liberals first destroyed the Christian God with philosophical speculation, thus creating a need for a new god. Then they supplied the new god: first it was the “working class people,” and then “the people” became the colored people of the world with the negro at the top of the heap, and the working class whites were cast into outer darkness with the middle and upper class whites. In fact, the working class whites usually are the first to suffer the effects of the worldwide Mau Mau revolution as they cannot afford to retreat to non-occupied territories; they must stand and die where they live. Bereft of their racial hearth fire, they live and die without ever knowing what it means to be connected to the living God through one’s people.

It didn’t happen overnight, this liberal distilling process, but gradually, over time, the white man has been drained of his heart’s blood. Liberal theorists tell him that he doesn’t need his heart’s blood; his mind will serve him just fine. But will it? Has it? No, it hasn’t. The white man became hopelessly lost in a maze of philosophical speculation. Having abandoned his own people for an abstract people, he now can only experience life second-hand through the negro. So long as white men worship negroes they will be mere shadows with no real existence.

A friend who detested French cooking once described it to me as a process whereby the French drain all flavor out of their food in order to put their own flavored sauces into the food. I’ve never really tasted French cuisine, so I can’t speak to the truth of my friend’s assertion, but I can attest to that alleged process of French cooking as it pertains to white Christians. The liberals drained all the Christian blood from them in order to leave them with only the ideals the liberals forced into their pygmy brains. Chivalry, faith, honor, charity, the love of kith and kin, and the love of God are virtues that come from the heart and the blood of a man. When there is no heart and blood, there are no Christian virtues, only liberal ‘virtues.’ And what are the ‘virtues’ of the liberals? Pride of intellect, and a loving, worshipful adulation of the negro as the one true man-god.

The fight against the liberal ‘virtues’ and the fight for the virtues of the heart and the blood, the virtues of our honored dead, constitutes the only true happiness in this world. The romance of Christian Europe is not over. Since life, at least the white man’s life, is ultimately of the spirit, the eternal romance of Christian Europe will continue to inspire men of blood who will conquer the desolate, barren wastes of the liberals’ mind-forged utopia. +

The Cross

July 19, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christian counter-attack, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



Men must endure
Their going hence even as their coming hither;
Ripeness is all. Come on.

-from *King Lear*

While in the midst of untold bloodshed and slaughter, perpetuated by blacks against whites, the white people of the European nations are intensifying their worship of blacks. Why? We go against God and every human instinct in the human heart when we worship the negroes, yet white people continue to worship them. Certainly negro worship represents a return to Baal, but it is also something much worse than mere paganism. White negro worship is a blending, the type of blending that is condemned in *The Revelation of St. John*, of Christianity and paganism.

A Christ-less Christianity provides a religious energy to negro worship that mere paganism could never equal. For example, I recently saw a four-year old film clip of a young white woman weeping when she learned the news that a particular negro basketball player was leaving her city to play for another city. She wept at the foot of the cross for her savior who was dead. The clip was run in conjunction with recent film of fans welcoming this same negro basketball player's return to their city. "The King has returned": he rose from the dead, and came home, where he will sit on the right hand of god the father almighty, to judge the living and the dead for their sins of racism. One news commentator said it outright: "If this story does not stir your heart, you are a racist." But aren't all white people racist; haven't we all sinned against the negro gods? Even white people who don't think they are racist are really racist, the liberals now tell us, because in fact, "the most dangerous racist is a white who doesn't even know he is racist". In lieu of that terrible new finding of the liberal experts, it's best, when worshipping at the feet of the negro gods, to say that one is truly sorry not only for every overt racist thought and action, but also for the unknown sins of racism. "For these racist sins and the racist sins of my entire life, I am heartily sorry. Please forgive me my sins." That perverse, blasphemous prayer is the prayer of the new and improved white man.

There are two basic white responses to the atrocities committed by negroes. The mad-dog liberal simply goes on the attack against anyone who opposes the atrocities, because the mad-dog liberal desires the extermination of white people: anything that hurts them is good. And the second response comes in the form of "loving forgiveness" and "they're not all like that." Both responses, even though the second one usually comes from someone connected to a Christian church, stink of negro worship, which is blasphemy.

Of course if Christ is not who He said He was, the white man needs a new god, so why shouldn't it be the negro? "It should and must be the negro," the liberal tells us, "because he alone is natural, he alone is untainted by the filth of Christian Europe." There are no "evening lingers" in the negro's soul; there is only a merciless thirst for the white man's blood, which has intensified over the years because of the liberals' and their "loving-forgiveness" cousins' constant litany of abuse against the white man. There is no one even remotely connected to any of the traditional powers that be – church, press, state, and academy – in the European nations who will defend the white man's right to exist in the here and now or defend and champion the white man's cultural heritage. The white man has been found guilty in the great tribunal of liberalism, and he must, so the liberals tell us, be destroyed.

There is no way back to white Christian Europe through the fusionist Christian churches. If you reject God's channels of grace, our blood ties to our kith and kin, you will become as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal. You will perform the biological functions of a human being, but you will have no spiritual life of your own. You will only come alive to serve and worship the negro gods. This is the reason the secular and Church-going liberals cling so tenaciously to the negro. Without him they do not feel alive. They have placed God's channel of grace, the European's racial hearth fire, in the realm of "prejudice," and such a realm is to be avoided in deference to the realm of "enlightenment," which is the realm of the negro, who is a conduit to Satan.

You can't hand a negro-worshipper a Bible or a great work of literature from Europe's Christian era and expect he will turn into a European again. Even if he chose to read the Bible or the great work of literature, he would derive nothing from either, because his heart is closed; he has given it to his satanic abstracted world of Babylon regained.

The liberal and the fusionist Christian don't react to things of the spirit, because they have moral blinders on. They see only prejudice in European Christianity, and they see only beauty and grace in the worship of the negro. Can such people be converted? We don't know, but we don't have to – in fact we must not – worship at their shrine. If every white man bows his knee to the negro gods, there will be no sign of contradiction to Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego speak for the remnant band of Europeans: "... be it known unto thee, O King, that we will not serve thy gods..."

In a world based on statistics and numbers, one man's refusal or a half dozen men's refusal to worship the negro gods of the liberals and the fusionist Christians might seem like nothing, but our refusal has eternal significance. He enters this world through charity: if there is no charity of honor, the type of charity that can only be known and fanned into a roaring fire at our racial hearth fire, then He cannot enter this world. So our refusal to worship the negro gods by remaining true to our racial hearth fire, allows the dear Christ to enter into this world by the only pathway He has ever chosen to take – the pathway through the human heart.

Christ told Thomas, "Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed; blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed." Christ was thinking of us when he spoke to Thomas. We would never be blessed to see Him on this earth as the apostles did, but still He came to us. We don't actually hold His hands and touch His side nor do we lay our head upon His Sacred Heart, as John the beloved did at the Last Supper, but we do see and touch Him through the heart of His people. He abides with us in our European home, the dwelling of our Fathers who rest in the arms of the Lord. The modern Europeans must worship the negroes of Babylon because they have fled from their racial homes to wander in the multi-racial, soulless world created by the demon who prowls the world seeking the ruin of souls. He is their new master, and they hope to remain secure and protected in his care.

I once, because I didn't want to go to work anesthetized, had a dentist pull my tooth without any anesthetic. It was very stupid of me to go without an anesthetic, because I suffered a great deal of pain for no particular reason; I could have been late for work or taken a day off with no consequences. But there is another type of pain, a necessary pain, that the European flees from which has resulted in the loss of his soul. This is the pain of having deep, heartfelt attachments to our kith and kin. The pangs of dispriz'd love, the pain of watching your loved ones suffer and die, the parent's sorrow over an ungrateful child, the child's sorrow at an abusive parent, all this and more is the pain of a mortal man who lives his life within the confines of the racial and familial home that our Lord has provided for us. All the Jacobins' blather about liberty, fraternity, and equality, the Marxists' raptures about a workers' paradise, and the modern liberals' paean to the sacred negro all amount to one common desire: "I hate existence in this world, so whatever takes me away from reality and furthers my utopian fantasies is good, and whatever brings me close to reality is bad." Our Lord was crucified because He asked the Jewish leaders to accept the reality of a loving incarnate God rather than an abstract dream of a cruel Jewish state presided over by a malevolent god who would reward them and punish all their enemies. And so it has always been, since Christ left this earth. The liberal, be he Jew or judaized Christian, hates the truth and will punish home when someone defends Christian Europe, because the truth became incarnate in that civilization. Edmund Burke was not hated by the English liberals because he told lies about the French Jacobins, he was hated because he spoke the truth. If the liberals had accepted Burke's truth, they would have had to give up their utopian fantasies. Likewise the negro-worshipping liberals of our day, secular and churched: Anthony Jacob is not hated because what he says is false, he is hated because what he says is true. If negroes really are not sacred creatures, devoid of original sin, then we must consider that the racist Europeans were essentially right about existence – "This world is a vale of tears, but Christ is Risen. He has redeemed our suffering and conquered the world. Let us take up our cross and follow Him." What is so terrible about the European vision? Why this vast network of subterfuge, lies, and violence to suppress the vision? It is the cross of Christ: the liberals want no part of it. The sign of our salvation, our common hope, has no place in utopia. But it has the central place in the hearts and homes of the antique, racist Europeans. Never the twain shall meet. We will always be at odds with the liberals who have forsaken the cross of Christ for the negro gods, whom they believe will provide them with a pain-free life of pleasure in the new Babylon.

Right now the utopian faith of the liberals has conquered the European world. But can the worship of the negro, which is the cornerstone of the liberals' malevolent utopia, be maintained forever? The rigid, draconian measures used to enforce negro worship seem to suggest that even the liberals fear their faith does not rest on solid ground. The counter-revolution begins with the refusal to worship the negro gods. What is essential is that we refuse to bend our knees to Satan and his minions: "... be it known unto thee, O King, that we will not serve thy gods." +

To Begin Again

July 26, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



'Tis still a dream or else such stuff as madmen
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,
The action of my life is like it, which
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

-*Cymbeline*

Every once in awhile, about once a month, I check out the television news stations to see what they're lying about now. What I witnessed on this occasion was a group of conservative-liberals, the Fox News variety, debating a group of Obama-loving liberals. The debaters were focused on the Malaysian airliner tragedy and the ongoing war between Israel and Hamas. There wasn't any real disagreement among the two liberal groups. Both wanted to blame Russia for the bombing and Hamas for the war. What the liberal debaters differed on was whether The Obama had "done enough."

It struck me while listening to the liberal blather that the lack of any European Christian presence in the major institutions (church, government, press, academy) of the European nations not only has had a disastrous effect on the European democracies, but also has had a disastrous effect on the non-European nations, because in the absence of a Christian-European ethos the modern world consists of a myriad of competing factions – the Jewish faction, the Moslem faction, the neo-pagan faction, the Christian-fusionist faction, etc. – none of whose members make within them that which makes them act according to His dictates of charity and mercy. When they proceed to make political decisions upon which the fate of nations depends, they make their decisions in a moral vacuum.

Now the liberal and Christian utopians are the first to tell us loudly and clearly that European people once made decisions that stemmed from their Christian faith: "And what was the result? They couldn't agree on anything, and they fought wars, beat their wives, and enslaved and exploited the colored nations of the world." But what has been the result of a Europe, of a world, without any Christian European influence? We have seen the big wars, the wars without any charitable license. In fact, we have seen no end to war because daily life in every European nation has become like life in the colored nations, an unremitting war against the light in which "humanity must perforce prey on itself, like monsters from the deep." We haven't progressed to utopia since we left Christian Europe, we have descended into hell. "We have no compass to govern us; nor can we know distinctly to what port we steer."

The Father of all heresy is the abstracted intellect of man, inspired by Satan's promise, "You shall be as gods." The French Jacobins added the Son, which was 'the people,' and the Holy Ghost, which was science. Karl Marx was not an original; he simply followed the Jacobins' model that was based on an inversion of the Christian faith. The modern, democracy-crazed European liberals have streamlined the Jacobins' model. Now the people of color and only the people of color can be the Sons of God.

There has not been any Christian European opposition to the ongoing implementation of what the liberals call a 'benevolent evolution toward utopia.' And there has not been any opposition because the European people lost their blood faith in Jesus Christ. The same blood-draining disease that made French Catholics too spiritually anemic to defend their Christian King and Queen also overtook the other European peoples, through their clergymen, and made them incapable of defending their nations against the new religion of the negro man-gods.

Burnet says, that when he was in France, in the year 1683, "the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this—they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly." If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is "much too much") amongst ourselves. – Burke

This clerical shortcut, in which faith consists of a belief in the intellectual acumen of a few religious experts rather than in the passionate blood faith of a people for their God, rechanneled the Christian faith back into pagan streams and tributaries. Long John Silver found it hard to accept that it was Ben Gunn who did him in: "Ben, Ben... to think as you've that done me!" Well might the European everyman say to the hooded men of God, "To think that it was you that robbed me of my Christian faith."

If the faith is an intellectual system that can be passed on from generation to generation on computer printouts, then the clergy of the various denominations have not "done us wrong"; but if the Christian faith is meant to be passed from hearts of flesh to other hearts of flesh, then the clergymen have done us wrong. If the first way to God, the way of the computer printout, is correct, then there is no need for the European people. Indeed, there is no need for any people at all. We can all exist as one big blob of anti-humanity that lives only to read the printouts given to us by the godded men.

But what if the second way to God is the true pathway to the living God? What if European Christianity, in which the European people responded to Christ's heart of flesh with the passion of their hearts, is the only accurate vision of the Christian faith that the world possesses? The message of the Bible, the message of the church documents, can only be made clear by those who took the message to heart, because the divine love must have human hearts to dwell in.

The true image of Christ appeared in the antique European culture. Defame and demean that culture with might and main, as the liberals certainly will do and have done, and still that culture will nourish those of us who refuse to let the liberals keep us from our European past. We don't know any Christ other than the European Christ. He is the Christ that the apostles saw on the way to Emmaus and the Christ who appeared to St. Paul on the road to Damascus. This idea that there can be another Christ hiding somewhere in the civil rights movement, or in Asia, or in the Jewish nation is what is keeping Europeans in line, begging for living space in the satanic kingdom of Babylon.

In Scott's *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*, an evil dwarf assumes the outward appearance of a child of Scottish royalty. In that guise the dwarf manages to wreck havoc within the Scottish royal family. Isn't that what the churchmen have done? They have assumed the outward garments of Christ in order to cloak their anti-Christian hearts. The dwarf is finally recognized because his evil behavior is radically different from the young prince's behavior. So it is with the Christian clergy: their "loving forgiveness" of black torture-murderers, their love for radical Israel and the unrepentant Jew, and their deep and abiding love of the negro and hatred of the white man all indicate that they are white Christians on the outside, but black-hearted Satanists on the inside.

If we ask why the European people abandoned European Christianity we need look no further than the Grand Inquisitor scene in Dostoevsky's *The Brothers Karamazov*. The Inquisitor gave Europeans the means to live and he gave them certain easy-to-follow rules to live by. In return for those gifts the Inquisitor demanded that the European people give up the white moments of existence, those moments of life when a man has the vision, when he sees the living God with a heart that has been enflamed by the divine love which passeth the understanding of the intellect. The living God does not give us utopia, He sends us pain and suffering, but in that ever moaning spiritual battle in the mists our Lord sends us vision, He sends us white moments of the soul. Christianity without white moments is a dry, untenable religion. Its adherents must graft their desiccated Christianity onto other faiths in order for it to survive. But even then they walk as men walk among the dead because pagan faiths cannot sustain men and women who once had dreams and saw visions. The true Faith, the faith that creates white moments, could revive the Europeans, but the modern death-in-life fusionist Christianity will crush the European people under an unbearable weight of superficiality and meaninglessness.

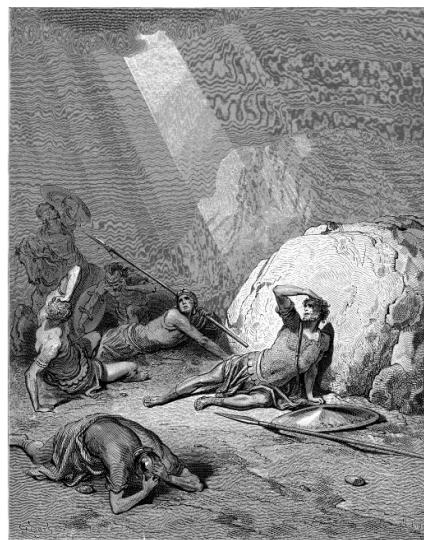
It's difficult to believe now that liberalism, a synthesis of all the pagan 'isms' under the mantle of an inverted Christianity, has conquered the European world, and that Christianity was once triumphant over paganism. The mystery cults fulfilled man's need for a personal God, but they did not fulfill his need for a personal God of mercy and love. That need, a desire for a personal God whose love passeth the understanding of the Greek rationalists and the devotees of the ecstatic sects, was what drew the Europeans to Jesus Christ. But if Christ is not the European Christ, the God of charity and mercy who rose again from the dead on the third day, who or what does He become? He becomes a second-rate god who cannot provide the comforts of the pagan gods. The new European goes to the various gods of liberalism for his daily sustenance. The evangelical goes to the Jews and the negroes; the Roman Catholic goes to the Jews, Moslems, and the negro; while the completely secularized European holds onto his negro gods and maintains their divinity against all those who oppose them, which is unfortunately very few people. No one seeks the European Christ, the Christ of white moments, because He has been buried beneath a mountain of Babylonian filth along with the antique Europeans. If some spiritual excavationist could uncover that civilization, the civilization of Christ and His people, there might just be a few Europeans who would leave the darkness of Babylon to pursue the white moments of Christian Europe. And then it will begin all over again, the story that is so ancient and so new. +

As the Systems Fail, the Light of Europe Remains

August 2, 2014

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Henry Francis Lyte



Abide with me! Fast falls the Eventide;
The darkness thickens, Lord with me abide
When other helpers fail, and comforts flee,
Help of the helpless, O abide with me!

-Henry Francis Lyte

An old friend of many years standing called me recently to lament the decline of virtually everything decent. My friend is some fifteen years older than I, so she has some memories of a time when common decency still existed on the face of the earth. Some people might say my “friend” is not a friend, since there are several topics that I cannot speak to her about. Perhaps those people are right, but I am fond of Mrs. _____, and I admire her for not going with the times and making her peace with debauchery and vileness.

There are two topics I cannot bring up with my friend. One is the Roman Catholic Church’s complicity with the indecency of the times – she *must* look on the church as the one institution that a person can trust. And the second topic is the negro – she hates what they do, but she would never denounce the ethos of *To Kill a Mockingbird*. She believes blacks are “basically good, it’s only a few bad ones...”

The other day I discovered a third topic that I could not bring up with the woman who I claim is a friend. She was horrified when I mentioned, with no intent to shock her, that I had no use for the Moslems of Hamas or the Jews of Israel. “But Israel is a democracy,” was her reply. “The wholesale slaughter of civilians is still the wholesale slaughter of civilians no matter if it comes from a so-called democracy or a terrorist organization,” was my reply.

I should have known not to bring up the subject of Israel and democracy, because the same people who weep for Tom Robinson in *To Kill a Mockingbird* and attend their local Christian fusionist churches are usually Gung ho Israel and Gung ho democracy. Why is this? How did church attendance, negro worship, the support of Israel, and the support of democracy become synonymous with Christianity? It starts with the pagan concept of ‘support your local clergy’ because they are the Illuminati; they and they alone possess the secret wisdom. Over and against the pagan priest-craft system is Chaucer’s humble village priest and Dickens’ real life hero, the Rev. Stephen Roose Hughes, who preached Christ crucified, Christ risen and loved God through their kith and kin.

The negro worshipping heresy, the Christian Jewish heresy, and the democratic heresy all stem from the clerical, speculative heresy that says Christ is the end product of a philosophical system passed on from God through a long chain of great minds; He is not the Man of Sorrows who enters human hearts. Men and women who have been trained to look for their salvation in systems, even if those systems include Christ, will naturally gravitate toward a system about God rather than a faith in the living God. Hence, the blending of negro worship and Christianity, Israel and Christianity, and democracy and Christianity.

There are nuanced differences between the speculative Christian sects. The Roman Catholic favors Israel because Israel is a democracy, while the Evangelical Protestant favors Israel because of his distorted view of what he calls the “Rapture.” Against the Bible he reportedly believes in, and against the traditional faith of the European people, the modern Evangelical religiously holds onto his faith in the unrepentant Jew as mankind’s only hope in an unbelieving world. And both the Roman Catholic and the Evangelical Protestant blend their esoteric systems with the liberals’ worship of the negro. The Roman Catholic fusionist, the Evangelical Protestant fusionist, and the liberal: between the three of them they have destroyed the “unbought grace of life.”

What binds the liberal, the Roman Catholic, and the Evangelical Protestant together (the latter two in a subordinate position to the liberal) is contempt for the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. The liberals say the antique Europeans were racist and sexist, and the fusionist sects agree with them because they do not feel the need to know God through their people. They know God through their theories, so what do they need with ‘a people’? The ongoing slaughter of the Christ-bearing people continues unabated because white people impede the liberals’ negrophile paradise, the Roman Catholics’ multi-racial, multi-religious world, and the rapture of the Evangelical Protestants.

Let’s go back to the days of the Ayatollah Khomeini, when those wild, fun-loving, mad-cap Iranian “students” took the Americans in the embassy hostage. Do you recall the hostages who were released before Reagan negotiated the final release? I certainly do. The Iranians released the black hostages, stating that they had the deepest respect for black people, unlike white European people, who did not respect black people. Of course the Iranians did not have any respect for black people or any other race of people for that matter, but what they correctly surmised from their observations of the West was that liberals were the powers that be in the Western world and liberals worshipped black people. The best way, they reasoned, to gain liberal support was to play on their sympathy for blacks. Unlike those Iranians of yesterday, the Roman Catholic fusionists and the Evangelical Protestants fusionists do share the liberals’ love of the sacred black. But they also, like the Iranian students, make an ostentatious display of their negro worship in the hopes that the liberals’ will allow them the freedom – in the case of the Roman Pontiffs – to kiss the *Koran* and visit foreign nations and campaign for the abolition “of all boundaries between peoples,” and – in the case of the Evangelical Protestant – to campaign for the continual bombing of all Israel’s enemies in the name of “The Rapture.” What is missing in the various European ideologies is a sense of original sin and a corresponding charity and humility that makes a man feel that, “there are events and circumstances beyond my ken, but in the midst of the battle against principalities and powers, I can muddle through so long as I stay connected to His reign of charity, which exists on earth at my familial and racial hearth fire.” Such quaint notions, if followed, would keep a man close to his racial hearth fire, worshipping God in spirit and in truth while avoiding dreams of rapturous, Christian Zionism, a multi-religious, multi-racial utopia, and a negro-ruled Kingdom of Babylon.

The French Jacobins took what they received in the Catholic Church, a system which explained God instead of a Gospel that showed us God’s face, and spread the new gospel throughout France and the European world. Man as a social being, united to a common social core of kith, kin, and God, disappeared. A new man emerged, who was an abstract entity without a core. He became whatever abstract theory he latched onto. The negro discovered that he had become the white man’s savage god, while the white fusionist Christians tried to live their lives

secondhand through the negro, through the Jews, through the Moslems, etc. The Christian blood that once flowed through the European's heart has congealed. He needs a fairytale revival before he can become, like Pinocchio, a real human being.

Even though many learned theologians have told us there is no such thing as a Christian culture, we know that such a culture once existed. Thousands upon thousands of silken threads reached from the European's hearth fire to His heavenly throne. It was not the work of a day to cut those threads; it was the work of centuries. Now that all the threads leading us to His kingdom have been severed, what is our hope? Is it the negro? The Jew? Or do we place our hope in democracy? Despair and die is written on all those modern medicines. If those severed threads of the past could be reconnected – and they can be reconnected by hearts of flesh – then the Europe of charity, honor, and faith will be a living reality again, instead of a dead ember.

If you believe as Spengler and the scientific historians believed, that civilizations are biological entities that are born, mature, decay, and die according to the inexorable laws of nature, then you will not have any hope in a European revival. I believe such thinking is called a self-fulfilling prophecy. Believing existence is only determined by biology, the moderns have become mesmerized by the material façade of existence, and they passively submit to what the liberals tell them is inevitable. "White nations must become multi-racial and multi-cultural, whites must give way to the colored hordes, men must give women 'choice,' and we must all worship the noble savage." Why must we do these things? Because we are progressing; somehow we are supposed to believe that perversion and blasphemy are part of the ongoing, biologically predetermined movement toward the light. What light? Light is a Christian word, a word connected to a spiritual realm that the liberals and the fusionists Christians deny. They only believe in what they see with the material eye, which is why they revere the negro man-god and look on the modern Jews as God's chosen people.

The "conservatives" of the 20th century tried to compete with the modernism of science, psychiatry, democracy, feminism, and negro worship by claiming there was no ultimate conflict between conservative values and modernist values; they claimed the differences were simply over the means to achieve female equality, an integrated society, and a mentally healthy populace. But from a Christian European perspective it is more than a difference about the means to achieve the same ends. All the modern -isms are satanic. Christian Europeans do not deal with Satan. We look to Tell, to Roland, to Arthur, and to Alfred. There is no progression beyond the European hero. He is our exemplar now and always, because he fights and dies for the people of his house and his race in the sight of, and connected to, the Christ, the Son of the Living God. Sweet vale of Christian Europe, so long as we stay with thee, we shall dwell in the House of the Lord forever. +

Rights of Memory

August 9, 2014

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



A fairy tale-esque appreciation of the Christian faith as expounded by our Lord in the Gospels and by St. Paul in his epistles, a charity of honor that comes from that faith, a provincialism that nurtures that faith, and a love for the hero who embodies and champions that faith, are all woven into one exquisitely beautiful tapestry (and I speak of the highest form of beauty, moral beauty) by my European kinsman and hero, Sir Walter Scott. Just as words cannot do justice to Scott's vision of Christ's people, the Europeans, there are also no words that can adequately describe the moral separation between our modern Europe and Scott's Europe. To hate the former and love the latter is essential if we are ever to be worthy of the people and the God championed by Walter Scott. – CWNY

Pirandello once wrote a play called *Six Characters in Search of an Author*. Such is the plight of the European people. They passed from pagan to Christian and then from Christian to ... That is the question: what have the Europeans passed to now that they no longer see the Christian God as the author of their being?

It's obvious that the mad-dog liberal segment of the European people, the ruling elite, have latched on to the negro as their new Christ figure and they have used the old rites and the old documents of the Christian churches to buttress up their new religion. The liberals' new faith is not something that can be refuted by reason; their need to worship the negro transcends reason. They view dumb nature as their author, and who but the negro, the most natural creation of dumb nature, should sit upon the throne of nature? The liberals must blot out whiteness so that mankind can return to a state of nature, which translates to a kingdom of the negro and for the negro.

But let us return to the hoi polloi, the grazers, who are neither fish nor fowl. They lack the mad-dog liberals intense love of the negro, but they are all enslaved by some aspect of liberalism, be it science, blood sport, democracy, the sexual revolution, or some other adjunct of the liberals' new paradisiacal state. The grazers lack an author, a god, so they are at the mercy of the liberals who do have a god. They are like the Hebrew people during their captivity in Egypt, because they are enslaved by a powerful elite who worship heathen gods, but they are also unlike the captive Hebrews, because they are unaware that they are enslaved by a powerful elite that worships heathen gods just as they are unaware of the existence of the true God. Hence the European people remain in a kind of spiritual limbo like Pirandello's six characters in search of an author.

The satanic essence of liberalism is that it enslaves men and women without their knowing they are enslaved, and it erases the memory of the true God from their hearts, so that they must either wander aimlessly over the desert of modernity searching for God or else embrace the liberals' god. Resistance to liberalism is almost non-existent, because of the Yeats' factor, the mad-dog liberals, who are the worst, can do what they like with the best, the wanderers in search of an author, because the wandering grazers have no God.

There are illnesses we get that make us think, if we are young, "this feels like death, but hopefully I'm young and vital enough to survive it." And when we are older we think, "I hope I can survive this one." But young or old, when the fever breaks, when we feel health returning, it is a magnificent feeling. Even though we are still much weaker than we were before becoming ill, we feel better than when we were in complete health, because the fever has broken and a body that was beginning to take sickness as its norm now feels that health is its normal state. This is the way a man feels deep down in his soul when he purges the liberal fever from his blood. He is in health again! He's weak from the battle, but his spirit is now functioning. He knows the author of his being, and he knows who his enemy is: the ancient foe and his liberal minions.

Of course there are those long sicknesses when a man's body forgets that there ever was something called health. This is the present state of the European's soul. Deep in his soul he feels that sickness is normal. He thinks to live amidst negroes who are worshipped by the very people they kill and rape with impunity, to live amongst creatures called feminists who slaughter their children in the womb and have female bodies but no femininity, to look on existence as a closed, predetermined biological endgame, is normal living. "This is the life for a man," is the European's response to modernity.

Something called the grace of God is needed, but who shall be the conduit for that grace? There are no appeals to God, because God has been found wanting. The utopians have rejected God and gone on to a new life of eternal spiritual sickness that a vast network of demonically inspired sycophants are desperately trying to peddle as health. Our world has been narrowed down to academia; the academic mentality rules the European people. And academia is an exact replica of hell. In those unhallowed halls the abstracted intellects of men and women filled with satanic hatred for all things connected to the Son of God and His people preach the glory of the noble black savage, the wonder and magnificence of feminism, and the triumph of all things bestial, inhumane and blasphemous. When the citadels of academia come tumbling down, the end of liberalism is neigh, but until that day the European people will suffer that sickness unto death, which can only be cured by the forgotten God of the European mists.

August 15th will mark Walter Scott's birthday. The European world will take no notice of it. Why should we take notice of a dead white man when we have the martyred Martin Luther King Jr. and the sainted Nelson Mandela to honor? We should honor Walter Scott's birthday because he represented all that was good and pure and noble in the European people. Scott was the poet laureate of spiritual chivalry, the type of chivalry that beareth all things and hopeth all things because it is grounded in charity, that indefinable essence of life that can only be found in the people of the mists, the Europeans who honored and revered the God who took flesh and dwelt by the racial hearth fires of the European people. The villains in Scott's novels are the Louis XIs of France and the Lord Dalgarnos of Britain, men who intellectualized their souls and made themselves the servants of Satan, the archangel of intellectual pride. Those villains are the minority in Scott's Europe, and their existence in high places was seen as a tragedy by Scott and his readers. Not so today, the men with the intellectualized souls rule with the assent of an intellectualized peasantry. This has been the great triumph of Satan: there is no spiritual chivalry left in the European people. They have absorbed the intellectualized spirit of the satanic men of intellect who mock and scorn the Man of Sorrows in the derisive spirit of the Roman soldiers of ancient times. Draw the sword and throw the sheath away, because the men with the intellectualized souls are legion and they will not rest until every last vestige of Scott's Europe, which is His Europe, is blotted from the face of the earth.

Do we have any rights of memory in the European lands? Yes, we, the Europeans that remain faithful to Scott's Europe, are the only Europeans who have the right to rule in Europe. In fact we must rule, because the men of the intellectualized souls have turned Europe into a third world whorehouse where spiritual syphilis is seen as health and a passionate faith in the European Christ is seen as a fatal illness.

All totalitarian regimes institute universal education, so it should be no surprise to us that the liberals have universalized education beyond the dreams of the totalitarian oligarchies of the past. "Education" has engulfed every aspect of the Europeans' lives. There is now pre-pre-kindergarten classes so that white children can learn to hate themselves and their past at the earliest age possible. And every aspect of the grazers' lives, particularly sports, is educational. All the sporting rituals are accompanied by educational lectures against anti-social behavior, which translates to prejudice, which translates to a refusal to worship the colored and hate the white. There are never any violations of the liberals' code of conduct, because white people have been very carefully educated.

The white man who wishes to remain a white man is an outcast man. What the outcast white man must become is an outlaw. The outcast is a passive creature waiting for the slaughter, while the outlaw strikes back at the world he hates. William Tell and Robin Hood are my favorite of the European outlaws, but the modern white man has no Swiss mountains and no Sherwood Forest from which to launch a counterattack against the liberals. The modern counter-revolutionary is more in the position of Zorro or the Scarecrow of Romney Marsh. He must go amongst the liberals disguised as an educated, non-prejudiced white man, content to passively submit to his own extermination. But inside he is a blazing inferno, a man who hates and loves with all his heart. He will do everything he can to undermine the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth.

Baptista tells Petrucchio that gaining Katherina's love is "all in all." That the white man should love his people enough to hate Liberaldom with all his heart, mind, and soul is also all in all. On the surface the monstrosity we call Liberaldom seems like an invincible super structure with its vast network of communications, monolithic educational system, and its powerful military. But that entire super structure of Liberaldom was built brick by brick by individual souls filled with hatred for Christ and His people. Shouldn't it then be possible for individuals who love Him and His people to tear down Liberaldom? The European counter-revolution is not manifest at present, but it has begun and it will continue, because there are always a few who see Christ in His people and respond to His divine charity with hearts of fire. At the last trump, at the twinkling of an eye, we shall see the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth toppled and His eternal European restored. +

It Begins at Home

August 16, 2014

Categories: Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob



It is surely not wise for the Church to pander to this idolatry. Even if Christianity were to be the religion only of a select few, it would be none the worse for that. Has it ever been anything else but the religion of a select few, and can it ever be anything else? Christianity is the religion of the White and not the non-White peoples, who debase it even when they accept it. They might pay lip-service to it where the white man is strong and his institutions accordingly respected, or where it has obtained a form of superstitious hold over them. But they can no more accept and comprehend essential Christianity than the white man can accept Shamanism. This, above all, makes it all the more reprehensible that the Church, instead of recognizing this, should swing round viciously upon the white man and hold him to blame for it – that white man upon whose unadulterated identity Christianity exclusively depends.

– Anthony Jacob

The print media, which is dwindling fast, and the electronic media throw the word ‘conservative’ around a lot, but they never bother telling their audiences, perhaps because they are completely ahistorical creatures of the present, that the modern ‘conservatives’ are not conservative. A true conservative is in the Burkean tradition: he does not look on his government as a means of eradicating evil from the face of the earth and ushering in a new golden age. The Burkean looks on government as a means to an end, the preservation of a particular people and their particular culture. The government that works for one people might not work for another. And whether a European government works or doesn’t work is determined by how well it protects the people’s Christian faith. A government that works against God’s channels of grace – the familial and racial hearth fires – is not a government for a conservative, Christian people. That it was self-evident the Jacobin government was hostile to the Christian traditions and to the Christian people of France was the central argument in Burke’s case against the Jacobins. It was then and it is now impossible to reconcile a belief in Jacobin democracy, which includes its Russian communist and liberal American offshoots, with traditional, Burkean conservatism. Some modern conservatives will quote Burke while supporting American Jacobinism, but such conservatives are like the man who claimed he loved his wife’s cooking but then threw his food in the trash bin when she wasn’t looking.

Modern conservatives, because they are not Burkean conservatives, generally only argue with their liberal cousins over procedural issues within the confines of liberalism; they do not disagree about the sacredness of democracy. For instance, a small minority of conservatives will protest the government’s refusal to do anything to stop the flow of illegal immigrants, but they will not protest against the legal colorization of a white nation. This is because they believe in a democratic theory of government, and doing illegal things goes against that theory, rather than a conservative government constituted to protect its own people, a people of one race and one faith.

Since the modern conservative is loyal to a theory of democratic government rather than his kith and kin, he seldom does anything that attacks liberalism at its negro-worshipping center. When a modern conservative ventures over the line separating modern liberal conservatism from genuine conservatism, it always causes an uproar among the liberals and the liberal-conservatives. A case in point: the modern conservative columnist Ann Coulter recently wrote a column in which she criticized the evangelical missionary Dr. Kent Brantly for rushing over to Africa to “save” all of the Africans suffering from the hideous Ebola disease, which is almost always fatal. The doctor quickly contracted the disease and had to be transported out of Africa to a hospital in Atlanta. Coulter placed a toe over the line that separates the liberal conservative from the Burkean conservative when she criticized the doctor for going on a self-indulgent ego trip to Africa, while ignoring the work he could have been doing at home. Are there not souls to be saved in the United States? While avoiding the issue of negro worship, Coulter did take a step over the modern conservative line by criticizing the egotism of Dr. Brantly and his failure to practice the type of charity that begins at home. But then an egotist is incapable of loving anyone close to him and can only love abstractions of people who are far away: on such people the egotistic liberals can project their fantasies. They imagine admiring hordes of adoring negroes playing Tom Robinson to their Atticus Finch.

The Atlanta hospital where Dr. Brantly is receiving treatment has assured the public that the doctor’s presence in the hospital’s isolation unit will not endanger the lives of other people in the hospital and surrounding area. I hope that is true, but the hospital’s reassurances remind me of the reassurances of my supervisors on the police force. They told me that I didn’t have to worry about getting AIDS from incidental contact with prisoners who had AIDS. Yet I noticed that they themselves never went near the AIDS-infected prisoners.

Coulter’s mild criticisms of Dr. Brantly were roundly condemned by the liberals, who would have condemned him themselves if he had been an actual Christian missionary condemning abortion or homosexual marriage. And most of the conservative liberals, who share the mad-dog liberals’ love of the noble black savage, condemned Coulter’s criticism of Dr. Brantly as well. Which is what we would expect because it is the religion of the liberal-conservative coalition that is at stake here. Brantly went to Africa as a Moslem goes to Mecca and a Catholic goes to Rome: he went there to worship. If you criticize Brantly, you criticize the faith of the liberals and the modern conservatives. It is a faith that must be challenged and defeated before white people can rise from the ash heap of diversity and become a people with a local habitation and a name. I long for the day that a man can say “the European people,” and everyone that hears those words will visualize white people and white people only, preserving their own people and their cultures in every country throughout Europe.

My desire that European nations and their European colonies should be white and only white is now considered a heresy. Tony Blair’s opinion that Britain “must become multi-cultural,” has become the law throughout the European nations. But it is not a multi-cultural state that Tony Blair liberals are striving for. They are striving for a one-culture state, a Babylonian state devoid of white people. And in order to have that state, white people must be tortured, murdered, and raped out of existence. Is this the vaunted brave new world that liberals have promised us for the last 200 years? Yes, it is.

“Missionaries” like Dr. Brantly must be seen for what they are: they are heretics who have abandoned the Christian God to go whoring after the great negro gods of Liberaldom. Brantly had a ‘people,’ a people who needed to be reminded of who they were and who they still must be: the Christ bearers. Instead, Brantly, like so many other white, negro-worshipping Roman Catholics, Protestant evangelicals, and liberals, betrayed his own people to fulfill his dream of becoming a world-renowned Atticus Finch. Is he simply a little misguided? No, a man who sides with the torturers and murderers of his own people cannot act with good intentions toward any race of people; he can only act according to the dictates of his own exalted egotism.

In the late ‘60s a play called *Little Murders* was written, and in the 70s it became a movie. The play-movie was a kind of absurdist dark comedy which highlighted the escalating violence in American cities. The play was considered to be “brutally honest,” but it was not brutally honest, because violent crime was depicted as something that had just grown out of control for no understandable reason. It just happened. The rhinoceros in the bedroom, which the author of *Little Murders* ignored, was the black man. Violent crime did not become out of control in American and European cities until negroes were allowed to roam free in white cities. In seeking to build a utopia where violent crime was non-existent, the liberals turned our cities into places where murder, rape, and mayhem against whites became the norm, and what was considered normal, everyday life became an aberration. Is the negrophile world of the liberal and

the modern conservative a paradise that we should work with might and main to perpetuate, or is it a monstrous empire of cruelty that we should destroy? I think we should pursue the later course of action. Can men with any humanity left in them choose any other option?

No white man wants Dr. Brantly or anyone else to contract Ebola, but who is being helped by whites abandoning whites in order to serve the negro? Ostensibly the negro is being served. If that is true, then why is Africa ready to sink into the abyss now that whites have become multi-cultural? Marauding blacks in the American and European cities prey not only on whites but also on themselves like monsters from the deep since whites have become "tolerant" of multi-culturalism. And whites? The new multi-culturalism has destroyed them; they have lost their faith in the Christian God and His people. So no one is being helped by the liberals' egotistic march to the tom toms of multi-culturalism.

The liberals have spent centuries indoctrinating the white man. He now believes that a universal love of the colored stranger is the purest, finest love on earth. To love one's own is mere selfishness, a selfishness that marked the European in the bad old days of Christian Europe. A man can only believe such satanic filth when he has no heart. Ah, there's the rub. Appeal to a man's pride of intellect and he will abandon his people and his God. Balzac saw the blood red tide upon the horizon: "In Paris to tell a man he has a good heart is the same as telling him he's stupid as a rhinoceros." And who wants to be as stupid as a rhinoceros? I do. I want to stay with the third dumb brothers of Christian Europe who slew dragons and defied Satan and his minions, because they loved their own people in imitation of their Lord, who was and is the embodiment of that charity of honor, the mark of the true European.

The new post-Christian morality is manifested in every aspect of the Europeans' lives. We don't protect our borders because the stranger is purer and better than our own people. And since the colored alien is better than the white citizens, he is allowed to murder, rape, and steal when he enters his new country. In my own anti-nation called the United States of America (it should be called the United States of Satan) elderly white people, I meet them all the time, cannot afford to pay for their health care unless they increase their incomes by applying for the welfare benefits that the colored aliens receive. But the older whites won't apply for welfare because they don't want to be a drain on their nation's resources. The liberal Jacobins depend on the innate honor of the white people that they have sworn to exterminate. There is no reasoning with such monsters of the deep, who hate their own with the passionate hatred of their satanic master. From out of the depths, the depths of a European heart, we respond to the liberals' satanic universalism of hate with a love of our own people, the people of our racial hearth fire. And surely that love will teach us to hate where we ought to hate and fight without ceasing against the liberals who hate their own in the name of a universalist theology forged in hell. Our short mortal lives will count for nothing if we don't practice the charity that begins at home. +

The Return

August 23, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Friedrich Schiller



Thou know'st the marksman—I, and I alone.
Now are our homesteads free, and innocence
From thee is safe: thou'lt be our curse no more.

— Schiller

Whenever the liberals rejoice, we know something horrendous is taking place, because liberals only rejoice when Satan's kingdom of hell on earth is advanced. So let us take a look at the most recent cause of the liberals' rejoicing. Behold, it is a 13-year-old girl, who is pitching successfully for a championship Little League team. Now there really is nothing unusual about a girl pitching well against boys. My sister's girls' softball team had a girl on their team who could have done quite well pitching against a boys' team. As we know — or used to know before the age of ideological stupidity — girls develop sooner than boys and can, before boys hit puberty, often perform on the same or higher athletic level than boys. And even after boys become men, the females of the species can perform equally as well or better than the male at sports where physical strength is not important. But our ancestors, the ones who believed the Battle of Waterloo was won on the playing fields of Eton, knew that boys, if they were to become manly, Christian men, needed to compete against other boys and other boys only so they could learn to be stout-hearted and chivalrous. But that is precisely the point. The liberals do not want young men to grow up and become virtuous, strong, Christian males; they want them to become weak, feminized, liberal, unisex creatures devoid of all masculinity. Nowadays if a male shows any masculine traits, he is evil: only women are supposed to be masculine, and men must be feminine. This is why the liberals rejoice when a young girl excels at a young boys' game. And you thought the liberals had suddenly taken an interest in Little League baseball. Of course, as in all utopias — and our modern feminist utopia of masculine women and emasculated men is not an exception — some are more equal than others. Boys are still generally better at sports than girls, even prepubescent boys, so boys are not allowed to play on girls' softball teams, but girls are allowed to play on boys' Little League teams. Isn't it wonderful the way equality works?

If you think this is just a little, cute, feel-good story about an exceptional little girl athlete you couldn't be more wrong. This story is about women in combat, legalized abortion, and the destruction of the Christian patriarchal family, the primary channel, along with the racial channel, of God's grace. Liberals use whatever they can to further their satanic agendas. The 13-year-old girl's success in Little League furthers the liberals' myth of equality — there is no male or female, no black or white. But of course there is such a thing as a male when it is necessary to demonize masculinity, just as there is such a thing as a white man when it becomes necessary to demonize whiteness.

The entire liberal agenda is based on redefining what is natural. A Christian European would use the term 'natural' to describe the ties between a mother and her child, the protectiveness a man feels toward the woman he loves, and the ties between brothers and people of the same race. However, all those natural ties are called unnatural by the liberals. What is 'natural' is whatever reduces men and women to mere biological entities. There can be no spiritual significance to masculinity or femininity because there is no such thing as a spiritual realm of existence. This Little League debacle is simply another propaganda campaign of the liberals to convince themselves and the world there is no God over and above nature who has infused His divine spirit into His creation.

The feminists and the feminized liberal males seem to run into a contradiction when they confront the black male. On the one hand, masculinity is supposed to be evil, but then on the other hand the black male is supposed to be divine. How do we reconcile the two? This is what the liberals have done: they condemn all masculine behavior exhibited by white males, whether it be the spiritualized masculinity of the Christian Europeans, the Havelocks and Walter Scotts of Europe, or the mere pagan variety exhibited by modern white athletes. Either way it is white masculinity; therefore, it is evil. But black masculinity, better described as bestiality, is never condemned (the feminists were silent during the O.J. Simpson trial) and is usually lauded because it is anti-white. So everything evil always comes back to whiteness. There can be no white males in the world, because they are the Christ-bearers. And if there are no white males in the world, there will soon be no white females as well, because they will breed with the colored races and produce demon children. Such is the liberal agenda, but it is not written: white men can forsake liberalism and forge a different, non-liberal world. In fact, they must do so, because this modern world of Liberaldom is the synthesis of all things blasphemous, cruel, unnatural, and inhuman.

What was called the 'civil rights' movement was in reality the negro-worshipping movement. And from that movement came the "sexual revolution" which spawned feminism and "gay rights." And the most sickening aspect of the Europeans' return to Babylon was the churches' non-resistance to — and often their support of — the new Babylonian world of the liberals. The shocking non-resistance to evil came because church men were peddling formulaic, philosophical Christianity for so long they had lost the European people. If Christianity is whatever the church men say it is, and the church men are devoid of a blood faith, then Christianity is nothing at all. The European people became a coalition of liberals and grazers with the liberals at the top giving edicts and mandates to the docile grazers.

The white male lives in a state of constant fear and trembling lest he offend one of the gods of Liberaldom, whether it be Isis or the great black god who presides over all the other gods of Liberaldom. The recent police shooting in St. Louis is an example of the craven state to which the white male has been reduced in the European nations. Instead of awarding a medal to the white police officer who took a stand against black barbarism, the white liberals and the white grazers are rushing to denounce the white police officer and appease the black barbarians by allowing them to riot in the streets of St. Louis. By some twisted logic of self-hatred, the whites accept the fact that all black atrocities against whites, which are as infinite as the sands of the desert, must be countenanced because "after all, blacks are only responding to years of oppression... blah, blah, blah," and all resistance to black barbarism must be treated as "racism." But if whites are not permitted to respond to black barbarism in kind there will soon be no white people. It's now time to give blacks their own state where they can prey on each other like monsters of the deep and leave white people alone.

Of course I know that the liberals will never consent to a separation from their black gods, which is why Christian Europeans should be at war with liberals. Didn't our Lord say something about the evil of serving two masters? When will the craven-souled modern European walk away from his negro-worshipping liberal masters and become a European again?

The celebration of a female Little League pitcher and the negro riots in St. Louis are interrelated, because in order for the negro to reign supreme the white male must be feminized. He must never resist black barbarism in any form, because the negro is the god of the new natural world of the liberals. The Christian Europeans felt it was unnatural for Christian men to allow colored barbarians to murder, rape, and pillage their own people, while the liberals rejoice at such acts of barbarism and hurl anathemas at any whites who protest. There can be no "coming together," no compromise between two such divergent peoples as the Christian Europeans and the liberals. The liberals know this, which is why they fight a war of extermination against the white race. The 'neither fish nor fowl' European grazers do not know there is war going on, which is why they are being exterminated.

The old hymn asks, "Who with me my burden shares? None but Thee, dear Lord, none but Thee." And Burke asked why there were no Frenchmen left to defend their Christian Queen. In this age of the feminized male, we know the answer to both questions. There is no one but the Man of Sorrows who can give men the grace to fight Satan and his minions, and without that grace the modern European is like the cravens of France who would not fight to defend their Queen. Eschew the intellectuals of church, state, and academy and cling to your racial hearth

fire, where the grace of God will come to you and you will be a European again. Is moral cowardice a sin? Yes, it is. There is no greater rejoicing in heaven than when a sinner returns to the fold. Let us put an end to the liberals' rejoicing over the ongoing 'evolution' toward Babylon and make them lament the return of the Christian male. +

Who Shall Restore Europe?

August 30, 2014

Categories: Bred in the Bone, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



"Under favour, most learned and honoured sir," said the Domine, "I trust He who hath restored little Harry Bertram to his friends, will not leave his own work imperfect."

— Walter Scott in *Guy Mannering*

The avalanche of criticism that Ann Coulter received from the “conservatives” over her Dr. Brantly article was quite revealing. Conservative publications such as *National Review* and conservative organization such as ISI have certainly taken a dive into liberal waters. The essential liberalism of the *National Review* magazine and the ISI organization was implicit from their inceptions, but their anti-communist rhetoric hid their innate liberalism and tended to make them seem more conservative than their pro-communist liberal cousins. But once the communist issue disappeared, the liberalism of the American conservatives became apparent. Abortion was a “debatable issue,” colored immigration was unopposed and often lauded, and the ongoing attack on the European people under the guise of civil rights was aided and abetted by the so-called conservatives. All that remained as a bone of contention between the conservatives and the liberals was the economic issue. The conservatives favored corporate capitalism which they called “free enterprise,” while the liberals favored state capitalism, which they called the “Great Society,” or whatever other utopian label that suited them at the moment.

We must go back to the pre-Civil War South to find Burkean conservatives, men who were concerned with preserving their people and their customs rather than an abstract ideology: “Men are not tied to one another by papers and seals. They are led to associate by resemblances, by conformities, by sympathies... They are obligations written in the heart.” American Jacobins won out in the Civil War and the consequence was that obligations written in the heart gave way to ideologies written on papers and seals. The men who have come to be known as conservatives are not interested in preserving the European people; they are interested in preserving democracy and what they call the free enterprise system. In their minds all that is necessary to become an American citizen or a citizen of any European nation is to affirm democracy and free enterprise. This is why the *National Review* types do not campaign for white immigration and white immigration only. Instead they campaign for an “educated” people of color, because it is obvious to them that intelligent people of color will see the values of *National Review*, free enterprise conservatism. To date, the liberal liberals are winning that war. I suppose the conservative liberals could not find any intelligent Third Worlders, men and women who were willing to eschew welfare for the free enterprise system.

While they’re waiting for the intelligent people of color to flood the country and cancel out the unintelligent people of color, the conservatives keep busy by denouncing racism in all its forms. Even when they see that every new colored wave of immigrants always prefers welfare to free enterprise, the conservatives still hold out the hope that they will convert the people of color to their color-blind version of democracy and capitalism. After every election, which the conservatives always lose, they sit down to talk about what can be done to win the Mexican vote, the black vote, the Puerto Rican vote, etc. The conservatives never ask what should be done to help white people reclaim the nation that they founded and they alone can maintain, because the conservatives do not believe they belong to one particular racial hearth fire that is their link to the living God. Apparently St. Paul was going on a racist rant in *1 Timothy* 5:8, and every European of the past and present who loves his own race above all other races is a moral pariah unfit to enter the promised land of modern conservatism. Someone go tell these new conservatives that they are not conservatives, they are traitors to their race who will be trampled into dust by the New Age Jacobins, they who do believe in race: they believe in and worship the black race. Abstractions such as democracy and free enterprise cannot motivate men to fight against the liberal leviathan. Only those who warm their hands at the racial hearth fires of the European people, where “love and all love’s loving parts” dwell, can take the measure of the liberal leviathan and defeat it. We do not fight as Ahab fought the leviathan, without hope and in despair of God’s grace.

What made the French Revolution so completely different from any other revolution or any other change in government that had preceded it was the religious aspect of the revolution. The Jacobins replaced Christianity, the blood faith of the European people. All subsequent changes in European governments were judged to be good or bad, in the minds of the liberals, to the extent that the revolutions killed the traditional faith of the European people. In most of the mini-electoral revolts and revolutions the French liberals and their European counterparts were careful not to be as overt as their Jacobin predecessors. They toned down the rhetoric and the blood (except in Russia) and advanced utopian liberalism at a slower rate than Robespierre did. But now, having no conservative opposition, because the conservatives are liberals, the liberals have begun to rule without the pretexts and subterfuges of yester year. The acceptance of gay marriage is an example of the New Age. Liberals used to hide their Babylonian sexual agenda, but now they glory in it and dare anyone to oppose them.

In my twenties I bought Raymond Aron’s book *In Defense of Decadent Europe* from the Conservative Book Club. The book made me quite angry because I thought (foolish me) that Aron’s defense of Europe would be a defense of my Europe, which was Christian Europe. But that Europe, Aron stated quite emphatically, was dead. The Europe that was not dead, according to Aron, was democratic, free enterprise Europe. That is the Europe Aron was defending. Now you might say that Aron was a Jew and therefore he had no feeling for Christian Europe. But Aron’s views on what he called the European miracle were no different from the conservative gentiles then and now. They, like Karl Marx, their kissing cousin, think all of life boils down to economics. Anthony Jacob, the 20th century Edmund Burke, gives the lie to the atheistic utilitarianism of the modern conservatives and their liberal brethren:

We do not accept the Marxist – and Capitalist – belief that man is motivated primarily by economic considerations or plain greed. Like all his political ilk, Macleod does not understand that life comes before money – that not all the gold in the world can make a baby: that babies in any event are anything but economical: and that in the last analysis the difference between biology and economics is the difference between a mother’s breast and a two-and-sixpenny feeding bottle from Woolworths.

In Shakespeare’s *Henry IV Part I* and *Part II*, Falstaff is given every chance to become something other than what he is, a roguish jester with no inner core, but he fails his test of manhood: “What, is it time to jest and dally now?” which leads to his ultimate rejection. At each turn of the great liberal wheel, the European everyman has been asked, first by Burke, then by Jacob, “Will you continue to play the fool and try to conserve everything but that which is essential to conserve, your own people and their faith?” That is the key, for without faith the people perish. And a people who believe that the church of Christ consists of an organization of clergymen teaching that the blood faith of the European people, the faith that is written in the heart, is nothing compared to their mind-forged faith that is written on seals and paper, are a people who will perish from the lack of a God and a people. For the Europeans’ faith in Christ, the

non-abstract Christ, and faith in their people are eternally interwoven. Anyone who sees the European people from inside knows this. But the bulk of Europeans no longer dwell by their racial hearth fire so they do not see their people or their God.

There is no such thing as a separation of Church and state. All people form their societies based on their vision of God. The colored tribesmen worship their heathen gods of blood and sex. The liberals worship the colored people of the world in union with the abstract intellect of man and the scientific holy ghost that proceeds from the abstracted intellect, and the great black messiah – and with the abstracted intellect and the black savior the scientific holy ghost is worshipped and glorified. Every public ceremony throughout the European nations is dedicated to either the direct glorification of the negro or the furtherance of the great multi-cultural society presided over by the negro gods. The state churches, and all our churches are state churches, do not consider themselves churches unless they reach out to the negro, not to convert him (that would imply some weakness in the negro) but to exalt him as the supreme god of the natural world, which is the only world that the men without a god and a people can ever know.

“One night I heard screams,” was a former communist’s reason for leaving the Party. Why do the Europeans not hear the screams of all the Jonathan Fosters of the once sacred lands of Europe? Ahab fought the white whale with a relentless fury that was quite admirable. Can Christian Goths not fight with greater fury than the pagan Ahab? They have in the past, why should this moment in history be any different? The ideologues who say this is 2014, and therefore the morals of the 19th century or the 12th century or any of the other Christian centuries do not apply to the age of ‘onward and upward’ liberalism, are speaking as Satan would have them speak. There has been no moral progression, unless you truly believe that our modern, negro worshipping Babylon is superior to Christian Europe.

The spiritual rot is deeply engrained in the European people, but the men of the Right, men who want to reclaim Christian Europe rather than conserve capitalism, have yet to enter the lists. They are the human factor that could still turn the tide against liberalism. Nothing in the spiritual realm is written, except what Handel proclaims in the Hallelujah Chorus: “He shall reign forever and ever.” +

Parasitical Ideologues

September 6, 2014

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Louis Stevenson



Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. -Edmund Burke

A man with an ideology can commit all sorts of bloody deeds and countenance all sorts of atrocities without succumbing, as Lady Macbeth finally succumbed, to pangs of conscience. Robespierre did not prowl around his chambers at night trying to wash the blood off his hands, because Robespierre had on the armor of ideology. The blood on his hands was sanctified blood, shed in the name of his ideology, which was "The People."

The modern liberals, the heirs of Robespierre, feel no pangs of conscience for their part in the ongoing torture, murder, and rape of the European people, because they, like Robespierre, serve 'The People.' They glory in the blood on their hands, because it is the blood of white people, the enemies of the people. The definition of 'The People' has been narrowed since Robespierre's day until they now consist only of the colored people of the earth, but the ideology of 'The People' remains. All white people, who are not really 'people' at all, must be exterminated.

An ideology is a parasite that feeds off of a living faith. Once Christianity became an ideological system rather than a living faith, parasitical liberalism was born. The reason there is no difference between modern organized Christianity and secular liberalism is because they are both parasitical sects that are the diseased offshoots of Christianity. They have grown to such enormity, like the Ebola disease, that they have completely taken over the healthy organism, which was a faith in Jesus Christ, true God and true Man.

Liberalism is a parasitical disease of the soul that dries up all the humanity in the infected person. We often see different branches of parasitical liberalism fighting it out, such as the modern conservatives and the liberals, but they are both infected with the same disease, which they think is health. The diseased liberal mutants will continue to feed off the remnants of old Europe until there is no healthy remnant left, unless the living remnant of Europeans, who have resisted the parasite, cry 'halt' and purge parasitical liberalism from Church and state with fire and sword.

The grazers who have the parasitical disease, but not in its advanced stages, are the unknown factor. Would they respond to the leadership of men who have fought off the disease and want to purge the European nations of spiritual Ebola? It doesn't seem like they are capable of knowing and following the good. But we'll never know if we don't proceed against the liberals. The devil, who was the first liberal, is their master. The devil uses the liberals as his officers and the colored barbarians as his shock troops. Has there ever been an army with a more demonic purpose? — the eradication of everything white and Christian. Only a diseased soul, a soul infected with parasitical liberalism, could fail to see what is occurring.

We see before us wave upon wave of colored barbarians motivated by pure hate. They will continue to torture, murder, and rape whites until they are stopped by white people who have overcome the internal parasite that makes them deaf to the cries of innocence violated and to the cries of burning white children whose only crimes are that they are white. Only those who have purged their soul by joining with the Man of Sorrows, who abides by the European hearth, will hear the cries of His suffering people.

The merciless cruelty of the liberals and the colored barbarians is much more open now. They have squelched all opposition so they see no need to put on a false front. The newspapers and the television news shows still refuse to report negro atrocities, but that is by an institutionalized policy that has been in place since the 1960s when the liberals still feared white backlash. Today they no longer fear white backlash — in fact one gets the impression that they would actually like to find a white bogeyman somewhere so they could have something to write and pontificate about. Look at the liberal hysteria over the self-defense killing by a white police officer of the black barbarian gang member, whom the liberals call "The Gentle Giant." The evil intent of the liberals is always glaringly apparent after such incidents. One black gang member gets killed, and the liberals pour out their sympathy for him and demand vengeance. Contrast that with their reaction to the horrific atrocities committed against their own people. Can there be any doubt about who the liberals serve? Can there be any doubt that the self-professed Christians who serve the liberals are not Christians?

The difficulty that we encounter with an ideologue is this: the ideologue has adopted his ideology to escape from the truth. So it is of no use to appeal to him as a fellow human being who desires to know the truth. In fact, your ideologue will strike out against anyone who comes anywhere near to the truth of existence. His parasitical ideology must be defended at all costs. This is why white people will never be accepted in Liberaldom. They, as a people, built a culture that was centered on the truth. The New Age Christians seek to retain the benefits of living in a truth-based culture while supporting and living in a lying, parasitical culture. You can't have it both ways. The sign of a Satanic parasitical sect is fusionism. You can't mix faith in Christ, which is spiritual health, with negro worship, Jewish rapture, Islam or any other modern or ancient parasitical ideology. The purity of St. John's Revelation cries out against such demonic blending: "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

In times of plague one sees nothing but sickness and wonders if there ever was something called health. This parasitical, ideological disease called liberalism is so widespread that the European people no longer believe that genuine faith, hope, and charity once existed. The modern faith of the parasitical European is in the sacred negro; their hope is in a future devoid of white people. And their charity consists of work done in the name of the sacred negro and for the sake of a future where colored people dwell in blissful contentment, after the white race has been purged from the earth.

"Jesus saves" can be seen on thousands of billboards and bumper stickers, but if we trace such sloganizing to its source we usually discover that some parasitical sect is responsible for the slogan. It is the incarnational Christ of the European people who saves, not the Christ of the parasitical Christians. The Christ of the European hearth fire comes to us through the blood of our people. He was in the bardic side of the ancient Greek culture just as sure as He was in the blood of the Hebrew people. When Homer's Odysseus refuses Calypso's offer of immortality in order to stay true to the people of his own house and race, he was maintaining the bloodline that could be traced all the way back to the beginning of the world when men talked and walked with the living God, and he was looking forward in time to the coming of Christ who would give men an immortality beyond the power of Calypso's immortality. And when Sophocles' Hercules looks to a God above the gods, a Hero God, he is looking for The Messiah who will redeem the world. These racial memories point us to the truth. How can we, the heirs of the bardic Greeks and the bardic Christians of Europe, accept a parasitical ideology that celebrates the science lab, the unrepentant Jew, and the negro, when we have seen, through our people, the face of the living God?

The parasitical Christian always dismisses the European Christian, who wants no other Christ than the Christ of the European hearth fire, as a “cultural Christian.” Such a Christian is supposed to be bound to something excessively anthropomorphic, which translates to something too human, too bound to one culture and one people. But Christ used the human way to bring the divine presence into this world. He lived and died true to His house and His people. A parasitical ideology about Christ is not an improvement on the real thing – faith in the Christ who comes to us through the European hearth fire.

Underground news sites that tell us what the savage hordes of color are doing perform a valuable service, but such sites only tell us the symptoms of a disease. They don’t tell us the source of the disease or the cure. The source of the disease is ideological, parasitical Christianity, and its modern name is liberalism. And the cure is the pure unadulterated faith of the racist, prejudiced Europeans. “I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.” The antique Europeans who believed in Christ, the Christ who entered human hearts, stand in direct contrast to the parasitical ideologues such as Pope John, the pope of “loving forgiveness” for the torture murderers of his own people. Such “Christians” and their liberal allies have flown their colors and we should all stand against such hideous, diseased souls as Stevenson’s Alexander Smollett stood against the pirates:

“Now you’ll hear me. If you come up one by one, unarmed, I’ll engage to clap you all in irons, and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won’t, my name is Alexander Smollett, I’ve flown my sovereign’s colours, and I’ll see you all to Davy Jones.”

In what is an excellent book in many ways, *Suicide of the West*, James Burnham, the author, ends a discussion of conservatives and liberals with this rather telling remark: “At the extreme wings there are small sects of communists, anarchists, fascists, racists, and crackpots outside both liberal and conservative boundaries.” He is wrong about communists and anarchists: they are not outside the boundaries of liberalism. Witness the communist Southern Poverty Law Center and the anarchist Black Panther sects. Both groups are respected members of the liberal pantheon. However, Burnham is right about fascists and racists being outside the conservative boundaries. But should they be out of bounds? I don’t care about the fascists, but the ‘racists’ that Burnham places outside the pale of conservatism are the European people as they existed for over two thousand years. They were ‘racists’ in that they loved their own people, not a universal idea of humanity. The racial door is the door we must reopen if we are ever going to live in a nation where parasitical sickness does not pass for glowing health. All the managerial conservatives who place our racial hearth fire beyond the boundaries of our nation must ask themselves why managerial conservatives have no concern for the ongoing slaughter of the white race and the ongoing attack on Christian Europe. What is there to conserve if not our people and our faith? They, not the union, are one and inseparable. +

They Serve Us Still

September 13, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Bred in the Bone, Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: H. V. Morton, Shakespeare



Deeper than speech our love, stronger than life our tether... —Kipling

I am dreaming of the mountains of my home,
Of the mountains where in childhood I would roam.
I have dwelt 'neath summer skies,
Where the summer never dies,
But my heart is in the mountains of my home.

I can see the little homestead on the hill;
I can hear the magic music of the rill;
There is nothing to compare,
With the love that once was there,
In that lonely little homestead on the hill.

I can see the quiet churchyard down below,
Where the mountain breezes wander to and fro,
And when God my soul will keep,
It is there I want to sleep,
With those dear old folks that loved me long ago.

— W S Gwynne Williams

After my father's death in the late spring, most of the family historical documents were given to me. I spent this last weekend going through old photograph albums, family records, keepsakes such as old Boy Scout caps, and other memorabilia that would only be of interest to me and my children. The word 'bittersweet' probably best describes my weekend immersion in my family's history. It was very pleasant to see pictures and personal records of my parents, my grandparents, and my great-grandparents. Most of the pictures were taken on special occasions – birthdays, holidays, marriages, and vacations – all occasions where the clan was assembled and having fun. Funerals are not generally a time for family photo opps. I also felt a great deal of sadness when looking at the old photos and family records, because all the subjects of the photos and the records have passed away. My hope is that my loved ones have not passed away, that death "will prove unreal at last," but my faith eases the pain, it does not eliminate it. Possibly there are people of firmer faith who do not feel a sense of loss when they think of their honored dead, but I can't count myself among their number.

When I look through my family records on both the maternal and paternal sides, I do not see anyone who won great honors and distinctions in this world. On the Welsh side, they were coal miners and on the German side they were craftsmen and farmers, not one member of the royalty or aristocracy in their ranks. And though many served in the military, none won medals for astounding feats of bravery. But they seemed to be, from my perspective as family historian, very great men and women because they were all white people. I'm not talking about just the outside: they were "white, pure white inside." They lived and died close to their racial hearth fire and the God of their ascending race; the spiritual treasure that they passed on, a bred-in-the-bone faith in the living God, was of infinitely more value than any material treasure.

I still go to some of the same parks where my ancestors held family reunions. But I no longer see white people who are white, pure white inside, having family get-togethers there. Instead I see blended families of white, black, yellow, and every other color having a type of anti-white family reunion. They are celebrating their diversity, which translates to a celebration of everything that is not traditionally white and Christian. The mad-dog liberals say such new family gatherings are wonderful because the old, all-white families were evil. The propositional Christians say that there is no reason why an interracial family can't be just as Christian and just as traditionally European as an all-white family. "Nothing has changed except the pigmentation of the skin, which is of no significance." Is that true? — can a racially blended family still be Christian as our European ancestors were Christian? I say most emphatically that they cannot, because the Christian faith is passed on through the blood, not the head. The propositional Christian says that blended families can be wonderful Christian families, because pure mind, from which we receive our knowledge of the true God, has no color; therefore, there is no need for a familial, racial hearth fire.

The propositional view of faith and race is taken as a given by modern Christians, despite the fact that the Christian faith has virtually disappeared since the new non-“racist” version of Christianity has become the norm. Of course if you change the definition of Christianity to ‘How diverse are your families and your churches?’ then you are in line with modern liberalism and you can declare the modern age to be the most Christian age in history. You can ignore legalized abortion, the breakup of the patriarchal Christian family, and the ongoing assault on the white race, because such things pale in significance to the one essential sign of the true faith: “Do you worship at the shrine of the colored gods and do all homage and honor to them by offering your children up to them in loving sacrifice for the sins of the white race?”

This is why there is such consternation in the churches when there is not enough “diversity.” They must be diverse, because where there is no diversity there is no faith. The racist Europeans of the past believed, as St. Paul believed, that there could be no faith without charity, but that article of faith has been replaced by diversity, which is the supreme article of faith in the churches and in Liberalism at large which encompasses, and its ethos rules, the Christian churches.

In Shakespeare's *Henry IV Part I*, the mystic Owen Glendower claims he can conjure spirits from the deep: "I can call spirits from the vasty deep." Hotspur will have none of that: "Why, so can I, or so can any man; But will they come when you do call for them?" We are ordered to believe that the new faith, which has not charity and has no place for our people, is the true faith. We are asked to make this mystic leap, against the dear-bought wisdom of our ancestors and against our hearts, which tell us to cling to one non-diverse people and one non-blended God.

There is a continuity in my family's bloodline that ends with my parents. Until the time of the World II generation there were no liberals in my family tree. They were working class people who lived by their prejudices. Their faith was Kiplingesque: "This was my father's belief, And this is also mine." But both my father and my mother were the first of their line to go to college. They learned what they believed to be the better way, the way of enlightenment. They became progressive Christians. My own spiritual journey entailed, of necessity, what my parents considered a regression to prejudice and superstition. I think most children of modern parents must make a similar regression if they want to establish contact with the living God,

who can only be known in and through our people. By rejecting my parents' liberalism in order to reconnect with my grandsires, I became spiritually older than my parents. I viewed them as my beloved, but wayward children. Both became much closer to God by the time of their deaths, because of a lingering nostalgia for their people and an inability to accept the homosexual agenda of the modern churches. The strings of the past can often pull a lost soul back into the fold, which is why the liberals, at Satan's command, seek to sever every single string connecting the Europeans to their past.

In H. V. Morton's book *In Search of Wales*, he writes with amazement about the amount of good reading done by ordinary Welsh coal miners. They were poor, but they were not uneducated. This was the case with my ancestors, many of whom came from the Welsh coal regions that H. W. Morton wrote about. I saw many of what we now call the "classics," which remain unread in our modern, more 'sophisticated' times, in the trunks and boxes of my grandsires – Dickens, Defoe, Scott, Cooper, the Brothers' Grimm, etc. And the most important thing about their reading was that it was not done for a 'class,' the bardic European authors were not put through the academic ringer and found to be irrelevant fools. They were read for enjoyment and for enlightenment, but not the type of enlightenment that comes from intellectual speculation. The bards of Europe point us to the light of Europe, not to the light of a new utopian age.

The Greek system of education is a flawed system for the simple reason that it is a system conceived by abstract minds. The idea that a select band of men, isolated from the community, can sit around and think great thoughts, which they will then share with the world is nonsense. Look to the other side of Greek culture, where Homer sits by the hearth fire and tells stories of the Greek heroes and heroines. We, the "educated" Europeans, have lost contact with our bardic culture. The Christian European minstrels have been silenced, and all we hear at the European hearth fires are stories of liberals, which always amount to some type of Atticus Finch/Tom Robinson tale of the prejudiced whites, the sacred black man, and the unprejudiced, enlightened white man. We must reconnect with our older bardic culture and divest ourselves of our university educations before we can see the light that shineth in darkness.

The Europeans' divorce from their bardic ancestors took place incrementally, but once the change took place, it became deeply rooted in the Europeans' collective soul. It will take the spiritual equivalent of a blazing inferno to burn the intellectual speculation virus from the European people. It will take Christian Goths, loving and hating with all their hearts. It doesn't seem possible to purge Europe of the liberals and their colored henchmen, but large fires are often started with very tiny sparks. The liberals still worry about their own demise, hence they squelch all opposition to their reign of terror. All negro atrocities are permitted, because such atrocities serve Liberaldom, but let one white man resist any part of the liberal agenda, and all the powers of Liberaldom are brought to bear against such an individual. Nevertheless, we can summon strength from our past and overcome our liberal overlords if we are willing to embrace the prejudices of our provincial, European ancestors, those "dear old folk from long ago." +

Why Europe Must Die So Liberalism Can Live

September 20, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



"Here's a good world the while! Who is so gross
That cannot see this palpable device?"

-from Shakespeare's *Richard III*

The late John Tyndall of the BNP once stated that he didn't want to comment on the specifics of the American waterboarding torture of Iraqi prisoners because he was against the war to begin with. I'm not a white nationalist, I'm an antique Christian, but I often find myself, like Tyndall, so outside the mainstream (Burnham placed fascists and racists on the lunatic fringe), that I can't enter any modern debate on a major issue without completely redefining the debate in order to put it into what I feel is its proper context. How could it be otherwise? If we truly believe, based on our Christian faith, that our modern European culture is demonic, how can we possibly expect to be at one with the people who frame and debate the important issues of our time?

One of the devil's favorite ploys is to present us with two evils in the hope we will embrace one of them in order to combat the other. He does not want Christian men to say, "A plague on both your houses," and then branch out on their own to form a third army opposed to the devil's twin evils. World War II would be a perfect example of the twin evils ploy of the devil – Hitler's new world paganism or Stalin's communist utopia, which will it be? The Western powers chose to side with communism, which was probably the greater evil, but that is not the point: we were not supposed to choose Hitler over Stalin because he was the lesser evil, we were supposed to – if we truly were knights of Christendom – steer our own separate course opposed to Nazism and communism. Of course when the ranks of white Christians have dwindled to a tiny minority, it is tempting to say evil is good and join a more powerful army than the Christian European one. Thus the evangelicals join the 'Rapture of Israel' army, the Roman Catholics join the 'Ecumenical Liberal' army, and on it goes: the good cause, the cause of Christian Europe, is left without a people to champion it, and the European people languish in the darkness of Babylon.

All the modern issues are debated without taking the Christian perspective into account. The modern feminists, for example, have suddenly discovered that black football players like to beat their significant others. So the entire football establishment jumps on the anti-domestic abuse bandwagon and promises a no-tolerance program for any football player who physically abuses a woman. What is wrong with the pro football league tightening its rules on domestic violence? Everything is wrong with the policy, because it is driven by the feminist hell hounds. I once read a neo-pagan's column in which he said we should not refuse to join with feminists when our interests coincided. I disagree, because our interests, at the deepest level, a level the managerial neo-pagans never go to, will never coincide. The feminists want to use the domestic abuse issue to further the cause of feminism; they want women to have unconditional power over men so they can abort babies and use men as milch cows in support of whatever career they choose. I keep hearing from the suddenly outraged male football establishment, who are simply saying what the feminists tell them to say, that it is wrong to hit a woman. Is it? I think we need to make a distinction. A chivalrous Englishman from the Victorian era would not hit a lady; that would be the act of a cad. But the feminists have repudiated Christian Europe. They hate chivalry, all the males who once practiced it, and the contemporary males who still practice it. You can't have things both ways, at least you shouldn't be allowed to have things both ways. The feminists want the rights that should only be given to those Christian women to whom the European poets wrote sonnets and the Victorians placed on domestic pedestals. Is it wrong to hit a woman? No, it is wrong to hit a lady. There is a huge difference between the two. A man of the old school might defend a feminist virago from an equally ferocious black barbarian, but he would do so because of noblesse oblige (another ethos that the modern world can't stand) and not because of some law that compels him to do so. In terms of the law, a feminist should have no rights, because like Lady Macbeth she has placed herself outside the only law that counts: God's law. Why should we care about the domestic abuse of feminists when white ladies, white men, and white children of both sexes are being slaughtered throughout the European world by the barbarians of color? Let the feminists who have asked the devil to unsex them face the consequences of their demonic rejection of the Christian, patriarchal society.

Masculinity is not evil in and of itself as the feminists have been screaming for the past fifty years. Masculinity can be a source of grace if it is consecrated to the King of Kings. In old Europe, the true Europe, it was Christian males who took care of rogue males. They took care of them in the same way Shane took care of Stark Wilson. There is no escaping that very basic and very fundamental law of civilization. There must be good men and true to confront the rogue males who believe that what good people call civilization is simply a supply camp they can use to fulfill their predatory needs.

What is the alternative to Christian patriarchy? We are living with the alternative, it is called liberalism. This is how liberalism works – white males are subject to the rules of a fierce matriarchy. If they impregnate a woman, be she girlfriend or spouse, they have no right to stop said girlfriend or spouse from aborting that baby. Any manifestation of masculinity, be it the pagan kind or the chivalrous Christian kind, will be severely punished by the matriarchal powers of Liberaldom. But there is a devilish twist in our modern matriarchal system. When it comes to males of color, the matriarchal rules that apply to white males no longer apply. Males of color have free rein to murder and rape so long as they confine their murders and rapes to white women. To murder or rape a woman of color is bad, but to murder and/or rape a white woman is good. So this utopian mixture of negro worship and matriarchy benefits the barbarians of color, but it does not ultimately benefit the white feminists who helped to create it. The feminists have outdone the fisherman's wife: they didn't know what they wanted, but they wanted it very badly. And now they have got it. They have a society in which there are no chivalrous white males, because white males have been trained since birth to never contradict a feminist and to never regard any form of black or colored behavior as wrong, no matter how barbaric or evil that behavior might be. The evil that blacks do is all in the racist minds of whites. There can be no evil blacks, unless they practice their evil on women of color. Wow, that seems like a difficult catechism to learn. It is, but that is what our educational system exists for, to teach white males there is no God of charity and mercy who bids us fight for His reign of charity, there are only the savage negro gods and the cruel matriarchal goddesses of feminism who must be worshipped and obeyed.

The neo-pagans seek to restore the white male to manhood by getting him to take pride in his genes, in his superior intellect. But the pride of intellect is what brought the white man down. The intellectual separation from all things decent and honorable in the name of a Nietzschean future is not the restorative we need. The white man needs to feel at one with William Tell, who was moved to fight when innocence was threatened. Pieties: that is the mark of the European male, that is the spirit Burke fought to keep alive in his beloved Britain, and that is what separates the Christian hero from the pagan hero. Blood lust is the mark of the pagan warrior; that charity of honor, which comes from pietas, is the mark of the Christian warrior.

Bill Bradley gave the keynote speech when Bill Clinton was first nominated by the Democratic Party for President. In that speech he outlined the essence of liberalism. He said that all true Americans (and all European liberals are like unto American liberals) refuse to accept the existence of tragedy. They believe that tragedy can be overcome by the proper (that is, liberal) management of peoples' lives. Think about the stunning hubris of the liberals. Bradley, who spoke for all liberals, did not claim the tragedies of life could be mitigated, he said they could be eliminated. It is that promise, the elimination of the tragedies of life, which keeps the modern European grazers from becoming men again. They have sold their souls to the liberal managerial experts with the sure and certain hope that the managerial experts will eliminate the tragedies of life. Even if the liberals could actually win the fight against cancer, defeat heart disease and AIDS, would such triumphs spare men from the ultimate tragedy? No, of course they wouldn't. There is still death itself, the last enemy. But the liberals have an answer for death. If they destroy the image of God in man by pouring monkey vomit on the European people's past, they will have successfully destroyed the Christian European's belief that every personality is a universe, a universe deserving of eternal life, because He has made us, He has infused us with His divine spirit. Once that Christian belief fades away and is succeeded by naturalist universalism – which says that we are not individual personalities connected to a personal God, but are instead isolated atoms connected to impersonal nature, the tragedy of death is eliminated. A part of nature returns to nature, why should that be tragic?

There was a romantic comedy called *Houseboat* made in 1958, starring Cary Grant, the king of romantic comedies, and Sophia Loren, a queen by virtue of her beauty. Most movies of that era reflected a Christian ethos while avoiding the question of, 'who created that ethos?' This movie couldn't avoid the question, however, because Grant played a widower who has moved his young family to a houseboat after the death of his wife. His youngest son broods over the death of his mother. Grant's character does not try to comfort his son by telling him of Christ's promise, "I am the resurrection and the life, he that believeth in me though he were dead yet shall he live." He can't tell him that because he is a modern man and doesn't believe such impossible things. Instead he takes a glass of water and throws it into the river. "That glass of water still exists," he tells his son, "but has just become part of the greater river." Would such a "natural" explanation of death satisfy a son who truly loved his mother? What kind of people have we become who settle for such a casual dismissal of our honored dead? It must be all or nothing. Either Christ rose from the dead on the third day as He will one day raise us up from the dead, or else we plunge to the depths of despair, but to accept such naturalistic mush... Almighty God, forbid it.

This unceasing campaign of the liberals to laud masculine women, to demonize masculine white males, and to destroy all vestiges of whiteness is consistent with their new religion of nature. Anything that stinks of humanity, that distinguishes the human personality from the great compost heap of nature, must be eliminated, because human beings reflect the image of a personal God. We have left personality behind so that the ultimate tragedy of life can be defeated, not by a redeemer, but by absorption into a beneficent, impersonal universal called 'nature.' In the older European culture that contained white-skinned people who were white, pure white inside, there were masculine white men who were committed to the code of chivalry and there were feminine white women who deplored feminism. The liberals will never allow such a spirit-infused world to come into being again, because such a world stands in direct contradiction to their soulless world of universal nature. This is the real War of the Worlds, a war between death in life liberalism and life after death European Christianity. Don't count the numbers against us; just look on Him who saves. +

Returning to Our Home

September 27, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



Pausing there a moment and looking back, they saw the whole mass of the Wild Wood, dense, menacing, compact, grimly set in vast white surroundings; simultaneously they turned and made swiftly for home, for firelight and the familiar things it played on, for the voice, sounding cheerily outside their window, of the river that they knew and trusted in all its moods, that never made them afraid with any amazement.

As he hurried along, eagerly anticipating the moment when he would be at home again among the things he knew and liked, the Mole saw clearly that he was an animal of tilled field and hedgerow, linked to the ploughed furrow, the frequented pasture, the lane of evening lingers, the cultivated garden-plot.

— *The Wind in the Willows*

There is an infinitude of atrocity stories on the Internet, every one of them featuring a colored barbarian tribesman beating, raping, or murdering a white. And all these atrocities fall under the label of “good violence.” If a white person ever responds with violence against the barbaric colored tribesmen, it is called “bad violence,” and it must be punished. We get that helpful distinction from the Swedish police, but it applies to all whites throughout the European nations. For instance, the recent self-defense killing of a black barbarian by a white police officer was labeled “bad violence,” and the usual collection of communists, black barbarian witch doctors, and liberal clergymen are demanding the head of the “offending” police officer, who would have been awarded a medal for valor in another and better time. One atrocity among the infinitude of atrocities caught my attention last week. The incident involved a white Dutch woman and three Moslem barbarians. The video, filmed and posted on the Internet by one of the barbarians, showed one Moslem punching the woman until she was knocked to the pavement, and then a second Moslem kicking her in the face while she lay on the pavement. There were also some white males standing by who did not come to the aid of the woman. I would like to use that incident, which was quite typical of what is taking place throughout the European world, as a mirror into the soul of the modern European.

If we take that incident back in time and place to Victorian England, in the mid 1800s, for instance, we see something different unfold. Of course we’re assuming, for the sake of comparison, that the Victorians would have let three Moslem barbarians walk the streets in broad daylight. What happens when they strike an English woman and start to kick her after knocking her down? All three barbarians would be killed with either sword canes or pistols. And then there would be a hue and cry, not against the men who killed the colored barbarians, but against the civil authorities for allowing such men to walk the street amongst decent women.

On the face of it, the modern European males seem very cowardly compared to their 19th century counterparts. And they are rather cowardly, but there are some mitigating circumstances. There no longer is, as there was in Victorian England, any institutional support for violent action against colored barbarians. In point of fact, the white man who acts on his own authority to prevent and/or punish the evil that colored barbarians do will face imprisonment. I think this, the fear of reprisals from his own government, more than fear of the colored barbarians, keeps the white everyman from responding as he should when colored barbarians strike. Of course the government’s disarmament plan is part and parcel of their anti-European pogrom. White men are not supposed to carry arms, because they might use them against colored barbarians in an effort to defend their people. But the greatest disarmament of the whites has been, and continues to be, their moral disarmament. From cradle to grave the white man is taught he must never act with violence against colored barbarians no matter how evil their deeds appear. The alleged evil deeds of the colored barbarians are not really evil, the liberals insist, because there is only one source of evil in the world and that is the white man. This absolute law of the liberals’ Godless faith has entered the bloodstream of the white man. Just as the Victorian Englishman would instinctively strike home when colored barbarians attacked an Englishwoman, so does the modern European cringe and retreat when white women, white children, or any white, is attacked by colored barbarians. It is now in his blood; he cannot make himself fight to protect his own people, because he has been taught that the defense of the white race is evil.

One thing is certain: neither the liberals nor the colored hordes will be eliminated managerially. We can’t work out a deal with them, a kind of ‘live and let live’ policy of mutual respect. Liberalism is Satanism, and Satan does not compromise; his colored minions and his liberal stewards have but one goal: to destroy the white race.

This new faith of the white man, which has entered his blood and made him a nonhuman, does not stop him from using violence. On the contrary, the white liberals and the white grazers are quite willing to use violence so long as the violence is not in defense of home and race. The U.S. and Britain will bomb Moslems over there, because that is in defense of Israel, democracy, and multi-culturalism, but they will not defend their borders, because that would be a defense of home and race, which is immoral. And throughout the European nations the same anti-white theology of liberalism is in the ascendency. Smaller European countries that lack the capacity to bomb them ‘over there’ still open up their homelands to the colored invaders. A small town in Switzerland (1,000 people) recently allowed a black Haitian woman with seven children to come into their town and be “taken care of.” Every single Switzer in the town has had to pay an extra five percent in taxes in order to sustain the Haitian’s seven children’s medical, recreational, and educational needs. Why is it the right of colored barbarians’ children to displace white children? Is there no one in the West who will tell the colored barbarians to care for their own, in their own nations? No, there isn’t. When the European nations are no longer inhabited by Europeans there will be nothing left for the colored barbarians to feed off. They will have killed the European milch cow. If the liberals really loved the colored savages as much as they say they do, they would make more of an effort to keep the European milch cows alive. But their hatred has no bounds, and they will destroy the whites with the aid of the colored barbarians, who will then turn on the liberals themselves. The true-to-life *To Kill a Mockingbird* story is different from the Harper Lee story. The real story does not show us a bunch of grateful darkies idolizing Atticus Finch, it reveals a band of negroes, led by the rapist Tom Robinson, murdering Atticus Finch and his family after he invited them in for a post-trial victory celebration.

At the heart of the liberals’ story is a lie. Their story tells us that the evil Europeans enslaved the perfect, innocent, colored people of the world in the name of a perverse, fanatical religion. The liberals place themselves in the role of liberator. They will free the colored people and share the pleasures of a new world of endless wine and cheese parties and sexual license.

The liberals’ paradise on earth is here, and it is a living hell. The sacred colored people, those pure, innocent children of nature, turned out to be (when white Europeans ceased to keep them in check) fiends from hell. Had the Europeans kept their prejudices about the lesser breeds without the law, they would never have invited colored barbarians into Europe to torture, rape, murder, and destroy the European people. The blood faith of the ancient Europeans is the only faith that can purge the new blood faith, the faith of negro worship and the hatred of whites, from the blood of the European people. How will such a miracle occur? We really don’t know how, because God’s grace cannot be put in a test tube and studied. But we have seen it work before: the European story is true. Christ once lived by our racial hearth fires. Has He ever really left those fires? No, He hasn’t; we have left him. He waits for us there. The liberals have placed sentries to guard our racial hearth fire so that we will be unable to return, but no liberal, no colored barbarian, can stop the white man whose heart longs to return to his people and his God.

The European grazers currently assuage their loneliness with their devotions to their sport teams, but such devotions are devoid of any connection to their people and their God. No grace flows through the blood of a man who worships at the shrine of multi-culturalism. Sport, the greatest influence on the male, and the auxiliaries of sport, church and state, all support multi-

culturalism, because they are part and parcel of Satan's brave new world. He doesn't want the blood faith of the white man to resurface again. It is in his interest that the Christ-bearing people shall never again stand upright. His nightmare is the William Tell European, one man standing athwart the mountain pass through Liberaldom with his crossbow, ready and willing to kill the multi-cultural Gesslers who threaten his people.

St. Paul in *I Corinthians 13* tells us of a better way than prophecy and speaking in tongues.

Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.

And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.

Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;

Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth;

Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

Only the European took that advice to heart and placed that charity of honor at the heart of his culture. Burke asked why there were no longer any French cavaliers ready to defend their queen. Then he supplied the answer. Where there is no blood faith, there can be no honor. An intellectual affirmation of God is a reed for every ill wind that blows, while a heartfelt affirmation of faith – “My Lord and my God”— from a man who has seen the living God in and through his people, is the faith that cleanses and purifies. Such a faith was our ancient faith: the man who has it possesses the only broadsword capable of defeating Satan, his liberal lieutenants, and their colored minions. The tragedy of the Dutch girl lying unconscious on the pavement while Moslems kick her in the head is a tragedy of faith. So long as Europeans remain in multi-cultural hell, separated from their God and the people of their own house and their own race, Satan shall reign in the European nations. +

The Heroic Brood

October 4, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Christ the Hero, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



I tremble for the cause of humanity, in the unpunished outrages of the most wicked of mankind. —Burke

When the Oklahoman, black Moslem was shot by a white male before he could chop a second woman's head off, the liberals experienced one of their awkward moments. It is hard to defend public beheadings, but it is even harder to defend white males acting like knights errant, particularly when the knight errantry involves violent action against black barbarians. "So let's just skip over that story and proceed to more important stories such as girls pitching on boys' Little League teams and racist whites hiding out somewhere in the hinterlands of the United States."

Once you know who a man's heroes are you know what his faith is. And if a man has no heroes? Then he has no faith. He is the man Scott writes about in *The Lay of the Last Minstrel* — "The wretch, concentrated all in self..." The Oklahoman, white, male protector cannot be accorded hero status in Liberaldom, because the heroes and heroines of Liberaldom are the people who move us upward and onward to a feminist, negro-worshipping utopia. The heroes of Liberaldom are always feminists and black men. A white male can only become part of the heroic march to utopia if he supports feminism and negro worship. This is why successful white athletes go to Haiti and adopt black children and give millions to important feminist causes. They want to be part of the brave new Babylonian world called Liberaldom.

In a thousand different ways, some subtle, most not so subtle, white children are told that the old heroes of Europe, men such as Forrest, Alfred, Havelock, my great grand sires, and your great grand sires, were not a heroic brood of men and women, they were in point of fact racists who must be condemned if mankind is going to proceed to the promised land. No man who loves the Lord God Jesus Christ, in and through the people of his own race, can enter the Kingdom of Liberaldom.

Simply saying that pure mind determines everything cannot change reality. The liberals, who condemn the antique Europeans for using human conduits — their kith and kin — to connect them to the living God, also use human conduits to connect them to their god. Through the unsexed, feminist harpies and the sacred negroes, the liberals enter their hellish holy of holies and come into the presence of their royal master, the archangel Satan, who, the liberals tell us, is not really satanic: that was an invention of the old racist Europeans. Sympathy for the devil? Yes indeed, the liberals love him and all of his works.

The hero culture of the antique Europeans is the culture of the Christ-bearing race. The new propositional culture of the modern Christians and their liberal brethren is the culture of Satan. Once you deny the divine link between a man's racial home and his spiritual home, you have successfully separated a man from the living God. While affirming his intellectual faith in propositional Christianity, the New Age Christian forsakes his people, the people who kept him close to God. Pride of race? No, the colored tribesmen have pride of race. The antique Europeans accepted the burden of their race. They didn't Gnostically affirm the existence of a divine force, they lived, loved, and died enveloped in the benevolent shadow of the Cross.

A hero comes from the heart of his people and acts according to the blood faith of his people. So long as we are ruled by liberals in church and state, who condemn every action that stems from the blood faith of the European people, the right kind of heroism will either be down-played, as was the case in the recent shooting of the black Moslem in Oklahoma, or demonized, as was the case when Paul Hill executed the abortion doctor. Whenever the hero goes forth he takes his people and the God of his people with him. Those two forces, comingled in his heart, help the hero to persevere against all the powers of hell that come against him. If the European does not have a people, or a God that comes to him through his people, he will not venture forth against the liberal or colored barbarian foe. Instead he will try to serve as an orderly or squire in the liberals' army of colored barbarians and feminists.

The type of sustained heroism necessary to uproot and destroy liberalism can only come from heroes who are grounded in that charity-of-honor culture of the antique Europeans. Until that connection is restored, heroic acts against liberalism will be isolated and often tainted with the madness that comes from living and acting completely alone. White people today are in much more desperate straits than they were during the so-called Reconstruction period after the Civil War. The southern whites were disenfranchised from the official government, which was artificial and propositional, but they were not separated from their true nation, which was their race, nor were they separated from their God, who was the Man of Sorrows. The heroism of the original Ku Klux Klan members stemmed from the fact that they did not have to act in spiritual isolation from their people or their God. The modern white man, having lost a spirit-and-blood connection to his people and his God, finds himself unable to strike out against the liberals and their colored barbarian allies on a consistent basis, because he hasn't the support from his God and his people that the white counter-revolutionaries of the Reconstruction Era South did have.

I just read about some white professor at a generic satanic institution of "higher learning" who claimed he was one in spirit with the black barbarian rapper shot and killed by a heroic white police officer. "We must do more to show our oneness with Michael Brown," the great professor solemnly declared. And it struck me that the professor is right about one thing. He is one in spirit with the black barbarian rapper. Both men belong to Satan. The satanic armies of the abstracted-from-God-and-their-race academics and the barbarians of color are the satanic legions that must be defeated by Europeans with that charity of honor burning in their souls. St. Paul tells us that the last enemy who shall be destroyed is death. Shouldn't we, so that we can encounter that last great enemy with hearts of faith, eliminate the great enemies of our people, the post-Christian, white-hating academics in church and state and the white-hating barbarians of color?

The academic germ has infected the European's soul. The germ has grown into a virulent virus that destroys all things decent and honorable. Until that raging academic virus is purged, the white man will continue to follow the path of death-in-life oblivion all the way to his grave where he will reap the rewards of his pursuit of an academic paradise. There will be much less of a transition for the academic going from his soulless academic existence here on earth to his soulless academic existence in hell than there will be for the antique Christian going from this world, which is dominated by the ethos of hell, and the next world, which is dominated by His ethos, the ethos of eternal Europe. And that really is the issue. When we go to the core of their culture, were the Europeans of old right about the nature and the person of God? If they were not, we should look to another people and another culture. The liberals and the New Age Christians have done just that. But what if the antique Europeans were right? There is no "if" about it: they were right, and we must defend that ancient Christian culture lest we become like unto the death-in-life academics of Liberaldom who, at the hour of their deaths, will defile hell with their presence.

I have no foreknowledge of the ending of the world. Our Lord said we know neither the day nor the hour, but what is glaringly apparent in our modern, post-Christian age is the openly satanic nature of the many modern, anti-European movements. It seems as if Satan, having destroyed the white Europeans' connection to the living God, no longer feels like he has to hide his intentions to destroy everything good, noble, and Christian. If white people have lost all sense of who they are and who God is, then who is left to oppose Satan? Certainly not the colored tribesmen.

Everywhere we see the blood-red tide of Satanism in all its hideous, naked fury. Feminists openly avow their love of Satan and their hatred of life in the womb. Men like Lindsey Graham and John McCain support the invasion of the European nations through massive Moslem and colored immigration while they insist on the complete annihilation of the anti-democratic nations "over there." The anti-Christian Protestant Evangelicals support the secularized Jewish state of Israel against their own people. The Roman Catholic Church insists upon uniting all the religions of the world into one, great, white-hating, Christ-hating faith. Militant Islam and militant Zionism are on the march, fully confident that since there are no European Christians left, there will be no resistance to them. Homosexuals have stopped asking for forgiveness; they now demand acceptance. And the colored tribesmen, always the enemies of the white Christians, with the certain knowledge that whites will not strike back, have resumed their ancient ways: the torture, murder, and rape of white people. Is this the promised end? No, it is not. White heroes were born to fight and conquer the blood-red tide of Satanism. Without Him, it is hopeless; with Him, and united to that heroic brood of men and women, the antique Europeans, we shall conquer. +

The Dark Night of Ebola and the Light of Europe

October 11, 2014
Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Faithful hearts, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



Hell is empty
And all the devils are here.

-*The Tempest*

Considering that Ebola has reached epidemic proportions in Liberia, it is criminally insane to allow tens of thousands of Liberian refugees into this country. But CNN recently aired an interview with the author of a book on Ebola who said we must let Liberians into the nation, “because of American slavery.” If you accept that obscene, twisted logic you are either a mad-dog liberal lay person or one of the legions of anti-Christian Christian clergymen who are busy making the churches fit for Satan to dwell in.

The American and European response to the Ebola “crisis” is what we would expect from liberals who regard negroes as sacred and their own people as vicious vermin that must be exterminated. If white people were a people again, we would never let one single Liberian into our nations: they would be prevented from entering by the only means colored barbarians are ever prevented from entering a nation. And that would be the Christian thing to do. When the survival of your own people is at stake, charity must begin at home. Once your family and home is secure, you can do what you can for others. But to turn your own people over to the colored barbarians, who can kill with Ebola just as easily as they kill with knives and guns, is to commit a sin that cries out to heaven for vengeance.

There is no question that the European people, in the main, have lost their protective instincts. They do not feel connected enough to the people of their racial or familial hearth to fight for them. This is only something I can understand from the outside; I can’t understand it from inside. When I was attending the Police Academy, an older police chief, nearing retirement after almost 40 years on the force, taught the section of the criminal code that dealt with sex crimes. While talking about child molesters, the chief paused and made a brief comment: “I have to tell you what the law says about this, because I’m supposed to tell you about the criminal code, but if any of those animals touched my grandchildren, they wouldn’t live to be tried in court.” I didn’t have grandchildren, but I did have children, and the chief expressed my sentiments exactly. I didn’t regard what he said as controversial or unusual. Later another student came up to me and expressed concern that a representative of the law would recommend going outside the law. I didn’t understand that student then, and I still don’t understand such sentiments even though I must acknowledge that virtually the entire white race feels that the instinct to kill in defense of your own and to strike home against those who have hurt your own, stems from some terrible prejudice best left behind in the unenlightened era of the European people.

Of course liberals do have a people for whom they will fight and kill, but ‘their’ people, the colored barbarians, are not their own as an antique European would define his own. But that is the point. The liberals consider themselves new, rarified human beings devoid of the prejudices of the evil white people of the past. In reality the liberals are subhuman creatures devoid of all humanity; their sole reason for being is to strike out against all things human. Like Satan, the great hater of humanity, the liberals have focused their attack on the people who bore witness to the God with a human heart, a God who bleeds. In Kipling’s short story, “The Man Who Would Be King,” the pagan tribesmen thought that the proof of a god’s divinity was that the god did not bleed. That always has been and always shall be the stumbling block for the pagan and the Jew – a God with humanity, a God who bleeds. The negro-worshipping liberals, who seek to destroy the white by helping the negro transmit negro diseases and negro spirituality to the white race do so to avoid the God who bleeds. Like the ancient pagans and the Jews who shouted, “Crucify him!” the liberals want a triumphant, natural God who will destroy their enemies and end all suffering in this world. They have no use for a God who does not end suffering on earth, but instead redeems our suffering by connecting it to the Cross, which is our salvation.

The devil has always, since Christ rose from the tomb, whispered in the ears of those who believe in Christ, “He is not risen; it is all a lie.” The liberal is someone who believes the devil. “Christ be not risen,” is at the heart of our negro-worshipping modern world. If Christ be not risen, we must look to another god, a more natural god. The liberal wants to return to Baal by blending with and worshipping the negro while demonizing the white. The white liberal’s refusal to fight the Ebola-bearing Liberians and the murderous negroes already amongst us stems from his religious faith: “Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him.”

Try as he might, the post-Christian European, the liberal, cannot be like the barbarians of color. The colored barbarians never knew the God of the Europeans. Their blood is still barbarian blood. Their religion, no matter its local variants, always consists of sex and blood. The post-Christian European, whose people once worshipped the living God, cannot bring himself to participate first-hand in the barbarians’ sex-and-blood cults. So he participates in the colored barbarians’ religions second-hand by lending his technology to the colored gods in return for a voyeur’s privilege to watch the sex-and-blood rituals of the colored heathens.

After Macbeth caves into his wife’s ambition and kills Duncan, he has a moment of moral clarity:

*Had I but died an hour before this chance,
I had liv’d a blessed time; for, from this instant,
There’s nothing serious in mortality.
All is but toys; renown and grace is dead:
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees
Is left this vault to brag of.*

The European Everyman stood on the heath with the weird sisters just as Macbeth did. In order to acquire a place in the new Babylon, the land of negro worship and free sex, the European had to purge his blood of all things Christian and invite Satan to come into his heart to stay. At first there was remorse: “All is but toys; renown and grace is dead.” But then the white man became hardened to his fate. He fights against the grace of God with the same satanic fury that drove Macbeth: “Lay on, Macduff, And damm’d be him that first cries ‘Hold enough.’”

The white man's fall is a Shakespearean tragedy, but the final act has not yet been written. Europeans can, if they face the tragedy of King Lear, which means accepting the burden of race and faith, turn tragedy into a romance. The shipwrecked Prospero and St. Paul are one in vision. They both, amidst the ocean tempest, see the God of charity and mercy, and they call on Him to save. The mysticism of St. Paul and Prospero is the mysticism which never faileth, because it is rooted in charity, which begins at our racial and familial hearth fires and perishes without those hearth fires.

The liberals' vision — really the absence of vision because their eyes see only the darkness of Babylon — is already losing its force. The older liberals (Chris Matthews is a good example) are still passionately attached to their utopian vision of a brave new world in which white Atticus Finches are loved and appreciated by the negro gods whom they serve. (1) The younger generations, whites who have grown up in the era of institutionalized negro worship, all know that you must fulfill your daily obligations and pay homage to the negro gods, but the passion is missing in the new generation of utopians. This doesn't bode well for the future of liberalism, which is grounded in negro worship, because the poets are right about passion: it rules us all.

What will replace negro worshipping liberalism? That all depends upon the passion factor. Spengler thought that civilizations, once dead, never came back to life. But Spengler did not believe that Christ rose from the dead. Just as He rose from the dead, so can a dedicated body of European Christians, passionately attached to His Europe, bring the European nations back to life. Only those whose vision has been too long diverted by the cesspool culture of modern Babylon can fail to see the light still shining over our racial hearth fire.

Negro worship will continue in all its ugly, diseased manifestations, so long as white people are without a passionate faith in Him who is the antithesis of the negro god. No appeal to reason or science will halt the onward march to complete white annihilation. Already the rational, scientific negro-worshippers of the West are discussing how to treat the Ebola-carrying negroes when they come to the West. There is no discussion among the rational men of science about refusing to admit any negroes into the white nations. Only when the white man loves much, in and through His people, will the black plague in its spiritual and physical aspects be removed from the European nations. +

(1) In *To Kill a Mockingbird*, one of the liberals' sacred books, there is no negro problem. The problem is with prejudiced whites. Black men only commit rapes in the prejudiced imaginations of white people. What is evil is the white man's protective instincts toward his own. That essential commandment, "Thou shall not protect thy own people," is what white school children learn from pre-kindergarten on through high school and into the unhallowed halls of academia.

At the Poetical Core of the White Man's Soul is the Cure for Ebola

October 18, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Moments

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



Prithee, go in thyself; seek thine own ease.
This tempest will not give me leave to ponder
On things would hurt me more. But I'll go in.
In, boy, go first. You houseless poverty,—
Nay, get thee in. I'll pray, and then I'll sleep.
Poor naked wretches, whereso'er you are,
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,
How shall your houseless heads and unfed sides,
Your lovd' and window'd raggedness, defend you
From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them,
And show the heavens more just.

-Shakespeare

On a television news panel this week I heard a member of the panel, during a “what’s to be done” discussion of the Ebola crisis, ask why we didn’t just ban all Africans from entering the country. The practical panelist’s suggestion was honored with stony silence from the other members of the panel, and the discussion moved on to what could be done to limit the spread of the disease once the Ebola infected Africans had come into the country.

Of course, what the naïve panelist suggested is the only solution to the Ebola crisis. But we know that such a policy, the policy of refusing black Africans’ entry into our country, will not be adopted by our government. And we will not adapt such a sane policy for the same reason that the gay bath houses were not closed down when the AIDS epidemic broke out: it goes against the liberals’ religion. In the case of the AIDS epidemic the idea of closing down the gay bath houses to prevent the spread of AIDS was viewed as a direct challenge to the liberals’ belief that sexual license is good and repression is bad. And in the case of the Ebola crisis, a proposed ban on African immigration strikes at the heart of liberalism, because it threatens the very pillar of liberal society, the liberals’ fervent belief in the sacred negro. How can any society that worships the black barbarian permit the exclusion of black barbarians from their nation? They can’t do so and still be true to their faith. Before this Ebola epidemic is over, there will be some liberal hypocrites who will secretly yearn for a ban on African travel to the United States, just as there are many negro-worshipping liberals who send their children to private, all-white schools in order to avoid the sacred negroes whom they are supposed to love and revere. But all religions have slackers and hypocrites in their ranks; the true believers will just have to work all that much harder to ensure that negro worship remains the supreme faith of the Western world.

The Ebola “crisis” is not a new crisis; it is part and parcel of the liberals’ assault on the white race. Just as whites are forbidden to protect themselves against the deadly assaults of black barbarians roaming the nations of Europe, so are whites forbidden to protect themselves from the deadly black Ebola virus. This assault on the white race, the Christ-bearing race, is wrong from the standpoint of the Christian faith, but it also goes against the liberals’ stated faith, which is to love the negro with their whole heart, mind, and soul. If they truly loved the negro they would have taken the trouble to know him. And then they would have kept him in captivity and not left him to his own devices. “Because of slavery,” the CNN reporter said. Yes, because of slavery the black man actually had a longer life expectancy than the white coalminers in the North, and he was made to stay with his family instead of roaming the streets, killing and raping white people and forming umpteen polygamous families.

What has Africa become since the liberals of the West “gave Africa back to the blacks”? In *Africa: A Political Travelogue*, Thomas Molnar points out that the most poorly developed, diseased-ridden, poverty-stricken nations in Africa were the ones that were outside white control and white influence. Independence? What is independence for the blacks? It is the absence of white restraint, which means blacks are free to destroy themselves and whites through murder, mayhem, and hideous diseases, which are the result of their desire for unbridled murder, mayhem, sexual depravities, and bestiality. If the white man does not control the blacks, they will destroy themselves and the white race. That is the reality that goes against the liberals’ faith. It is their utopian belief that once the black man is free from white restraint, he will “astound the world.” So said the late John Paul II who was not the first nor the last negro worshipper to occupy the chair of St. Peter. Shouldn’t a “Christian” whose Lord said, “I am the truth, and the truth shall set you free,” be interested in the truth? Yes, a Christian should be interested in the truth, but a utopian needn’t be interested in the truth at all. He sees everything in the light of his utopian vision. Hence the great divide between the anti-Christian Christian clergymen and the Christian Europeans. The former have exchanged Christ for the negro, and the latter are still connected, through their people, to the Christ, the Son of the Living God.

The Ebola crisis in Africa and its spread to the West is simply another hideous manifestation of the liberals’ revolt against the God of Christian Europe. In old Europe men and women suffered and died as they do today, as they have always done since Adam and Eve disobeyed God. But the men and women of old Europe, of Christian Europe, did not suffer and die without hope and without experiencing genuine moments of joy in between the suffering and dying. Because they had faith in Christ’s resurrection from the dead, they had hope that the joyous white moments here on earth were a prefiguration of an eternal life where there are only white moments and no more suffering and death.

The liberals’, in their desire to create a kingdom of god on earth, the negro god, have created a world without white moments. There is no joy amidst the pain and suffering, because there is no hope that there is a Savior who will redeem our pain and suffering and turn our white moments on earth into eternal white moments in heaven. A liberal cannot have white moments, because he has lost all contact with the God who lives in and through His people. The liberal can sneer at everything decent and honorable, which gives him a certain perverse pleasure, but

it is nothing akin to joy. And the liberal can sing hymns of praise to his black gods who will rule over a new Babylon consisting of midnight trysts under the palms and endless wine and cheese parties. Is that not paradise? No, it is not. There is a certain unhallowed thrill in tasting previously forbidden fruits, but we have already seen how quickly forbidden fruits become bitter ones. The liberal has written his own death sentence, and like his devilish master, who also wrote his own death sentence, he is bereft of all joy here on earth; he'll never have white moments of grace, and he is without any hope for the next world. Was Dickens so wrong for feeling that a Christ-centered non-utopian Europe was still better than Satan's brave new world of sneering death heads?

Let us leave our old friend in one of those moments of unmixed happiness, of which, if we seek them, there are ever some, to cheer our transitory existence here. There are dark shadows on the earth, but its lights are stronger in the contrast. Some men, like bats or owls, have better eyes for the darkness than for the light. We, who have no such optical powers, are better pleased to take our last parting look at the visionary companions of many solitary hours, when the brief sunshine of the world is blazing full upon them.

Life is nothing but dark shadows unless there are visionary moments of white light when we see the Europe that Dickens saw, an infinitude of provincial European hearth fires presided over by the Creator of those moments of unmixed happiness. Outside of those hearth fires is the black night of negrophile Liberaldom. It is an aggressive, malevolent force – the Ebola virus is just one of its many tentacles – that will, if whites abandon provincial, racist Europe, envelope Europe and her people in a death-in-life embrace. The future and the past will appear before the white man as one horrific vision of eternal night. The liberals tell us that if we embrace the negro, unmixed happiness will be ours. The Christian vision of our European ancestors tells us the exact opposite. Who would be married to hell? The liberals would. But do we have to follow them to hell?

The conservative reaction in Church and state to negrophile liberalism has been a non-reaction. This is because the conservatives of the 20th century were not conservatives, they were managerial bureaucrats who had an intellectual preference for the older governments, rituals, and documents but no feeling for their own people, without whom there can be no governments, rituals, or documents. The conservatism of Burke and Anthony Jacob, which was grounded in their love for their people, is the only type of conservatism that inspires us to love and protect our people instead of our systems. White people, my people, are not cogs in a managerial expert's infernal system, whether it be a secular or a religious-based system. The devil, as Macbeth discovers, can tell us small managerial truths to win us over to the deeper lie. I've seen the devilish, sneering hatred of the European people on the face of the "conservative" theologian just as often as I've seen it on the face of the secular liberal. Did God dwell amongst the European people or did he not? If He did, then a trip to the Holy Land is unnecessary. We walk on sacred ground when we approach a European hearth fire where His people, the ones who love much, dwell.

The Ebola virus is the result of a spiritual virus in the European people that has rendered them incapable of taking arms against a sea of negro-worshipping liberals and colored barbarians. The mystic flame, which consists of a burning love for the European hearth consecrated to Him, must be revived before Ebola and negrophile liberalism can be purged from the earth. Poor, bare, unaccommodated men? Yes, that is, and was the antique Europeans. But such men! They saw beauty in the cross and made the cross a reason for joy. If we feel as one with the antique Europeans at the deepest level, the poetical core of our soul, we will not be mesmerized by the sneering negrophile experts in church and state, nor beaten down by the multitudinous hordes of colored barbarians. It is not a little thing to see Christ's blood upon the European rose. It is everything. +

The End of Multiculturalism

October 25, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Faithful hearts, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Robert Lewis Dabney, Thomas Nelson Page



If indeed they can mix the blood of the heroes of Manassas with this vile stream from the fens of Africa, then they will never again have occasion to tremble before the righteous resistance of Virginian freemen; but will have a race supple and vile enough to fill that position of political subjection, which they desire to fix on the South. – R. L. Dabney in *A Defense of Virginia and the South*

The lesbian Mayor of Houston, Texas recently threatened to subpoena the sermons of Christian pastors to see if any of the pastors were condemning homosexuality. This aggressive move by the perverted mayor was not surprising—it would be more surprising to find a pastor who had condemned homosexuality—but it was significant. Such blatant, uncamouflaged acts of aggressive liberalism are becoming more and more commonplace. This indicates that the liberals no longer fear any white resistance to liberalism. They don't have to take great pains to cover up the extermination of white people under the blanket of "civil rights"; they no longer need to explain away the slaughter of the innocents by citing "hard cases"; and they no longer think they have to hide homosexuality. The acceptance of pedophilia, incest, and bestiality will soon follow the acceptance of homosexuality. And why not? Can a man be morally superior to his god? Where the negro is god, there is no such thing as morality. There is only one sin in negrophile Liberaldom: The refusal to worship the negro.

The conservatives of the 20th century, who were not conservative enough, all predicted the demise of liberalism. Even some of the liberals, such as Lionel Trilling, predicted liberalism's demise, but the demise did not come. Instead we saw, in the latter half of the 20th century, the complete demise of conservatism, which was devoured by liberalism as a smaller fish is eaten by a larger fish. Why was this? It was because of the passion factor. The conservatives intellectually supported God, family, and nation while running away from any passionate defense of Christ and His people. A telling example: Why, in a book that is supposed to tell us of conservatives, *The Conservative Mind*, does Russell Kirk leave out Robert L. Dabney, George Fitzhugh, and Thomas Nelson Page? The reason has become painfully obvious as we look at the ruins of the European people. Such conservatives were left out of the conservative tent because, as Burnham asserts in his book *The Suicide of the West*, they were "racists" and therefore outside the ken of civilization. But it was precisely that personal attachment to their own, which Kirk and Burnham would call racism, that gave the Europeans of the 19th century and all the Christian centuries prior to the 20th century the spiritual backbone to love and defend their people and their God against the attacks of liberals and colored barbarians. When white "racism" died so did Christian Europe. When the Kirk/Burnham conservatives treated conservatism as something that could be abstracted, bottled, and passed from one people to the next, they broke the bloodlines of the European people and left the liberals, who were ripe for the taking, masters of the battlefield, because they had no opponents.

Eliot, Kirk, Burnham, Tate, and the rest of the 20th century conservative thinkers were right in principle. We should defend God, family, and nation. But our passions are not ignited by an abstract God, an 'idea' of the family, or a generic nation. We need our one God, the Suffering Servant, and we need our kith and kin. Thomas Nelson Page, one of the castaway conservatives, described genuine conservatism, the conservatism of the heart and hearth:

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating, with all his heart – a Goth.

There is a great difference between an intellectual affirmation of an idea of God and a heartfelt attachment to God. It is the difference between St. Paul and St. Thomas Aquinas. Likewise with our people, a man can defend his race, as Anthony Jacob does, or he can defend an abstract idea of a nation as Burnham and Kirk do. The liberals survived because they revitalized their troops by adding the negro god, which gave liberalism a personal, passionate component that rational, common-sense conservatism lacked.

Though negrophile liberalism is now at the top of the world, it is ripe for a fall, because the passion for the negro is waning in the ranks of the younger liberals. A few Christian Goths could mount a charge that would shake the foundations of Liberaldom, but that which is necessary for such a charge, a passionate love for our race and a passionate love for the God of our ascending race, must be present before a European counterrevolution can occur. It's like Dickens' *Christmas Carol* in which he tells us that it must be "distinctly understood" that Marley was dead "or nothing wonderful can come of the story." It must be distinctly understood in our hearts that our racial home is our spiritual backbone before anything as wonderful as a Christian Goth can be seen cleansing the European nations of the barbarian hordes.

I'm not certain there are any Christian Goths left within the ranks of the European people. I hope there are. What I am certain of is that liberalism is entering a new era, the era of the mailed fist. The colored hordes the liberals have unleashed will have no restraints placed upon them, and there will be more and more liberals such as the lesbian mayor who will not care one iota for the rights of white Europeans. Polite debates will not stop the liberals and the colored barbarians from destroying the European people. Only the fighting spirit that comes from the depths of a heart that truly loves can defeat the liberals and their colored barbarian allies. Would a father who loved his children let ravaging wolves into his home in the hope that the wolves will not harm his children? Of course he wouldn't. But the love that once was there has left the European conservatives. They want to conserve their systems, not their people. In fact, they are quite willing to let their people be devoured by the wolves of color if it means their system triumphs over their white opponents' system. James II set the standard for the betrayal of one's race in the name of a higher loyalty to a religious system that all subsequent "conservative Christians" have followed.

The sincerity of those converts who change their faith at a moment, when favour and power can be obtained by the exchange, must always be doubtful, and no character inspires more contempt than that of an apostate who deserts his religion for love of gain. Not, however, listening to these obvious considerations, the King seemed to press on the conversion of his subjects to the Roman Catholic faith, without observing that each proselyte, by the fact of becoming so, was rendered generally contemptible, and lost any influence he might have formerly possessed. Indeed the King's rage for making converts was driven to such a height by his obsequious ministers, that an ignorant negro, the servant or slave of one Reid, a mountebank, was publicly baptized after the Catholic ritual upon a stage in the High Street of Edinburgh, and christened James in honour, it was said, of the Lord Chancellor James Earl of Perth, King James himself, and the Apostle James.

There's a lack of depth in managerial men like James II who never ask themselves why the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us. Without the Europeans, the Word has no place to dwell. "We must be multicultural," the liberals insist. On the contrary, we must not be multicultural, we must not let Ebola-carrying negroes, Moslem jihadists, and colored monstrosities from every corner of the globe into the white nations so that the white race will be exterminated and the Son of Man shall have no place to lay His head.

I love the H. V. Morton books on England, Scotland, Wales, and so on. In the Morton books we get poetical vignettes of old Europe from a man who seems to truly love the European people. And yet in his book on South Africa, a country he eventually made his home, Morton praises the white South Africans' achievements but never takes a stand in favor of his people against the black barbarians. If you love a civilization and its people, then shouldn't you want to defend those people and their civilization against those who would destroy them? The liberals hate old Europe and the God who dwelt among the European people, but what can we say about the conservatives who praise antique Europe but will not lift a finger to protect and defend the European people? They, the great betrayers, respond to accusations of treachery with the 'replacement' theory. The Africans, the Orientals, and the Indians will embrace the religion and culture of old Europe, and they will bring forth a better Europe, a "more vital, earthier, sexier Europe." Is that what multicultural Europe has become? A bastion of orthodoxy that is more vital, etc., than old Europe? Nothing good comes from a white man's betrayal of his people. The Europeans are the Christ-bearers. If the vast majority won't bear that burden because they no longer see beauty on a cross, then the Christian hero must bear the burden alone until the rest of the Europeans see the vision again. It's worse than foolish, it is satanic to turn to the colored races under the guise of keeping the faith. Satan's minions serve Satan, not Christ, and their negro gods are their conduits to Satan. This is why the formerly Christian churches are doing the work of Satan. The negro has become their lode star, replacing the Son of God.

When the Moslem jihadists killed defenseless Canadians this week, the Canadian grazers, like the grazers throughout the European world, asked, why? The answer is simple. The liberals and the barbarians of color hate white people while the grazers' love for their own people is too lukewarm; it doesn't inspire them to protect and defend their people. You can say you are broadminded, peace-loving, democratic, and give a thousand other evasions, but the reality is that a true European, a Goth, loves his people and hates those who would destroy them. It is not a civilized advance to love the stranger and hate your own. It is a return to barbarism and cannibalism in an intellectualized form. The liberals watch with a voyeur's pleasure as the colored barbarians cannibalize the white race: "Europe must be multicultural." No, we shall not be multicultural, we shall be true to our house, our race, and our God. +

The Day Is Ours

November 1, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Utopianism

Tags: Rudyard Kipling, Shakespeare



Blessed be the Lord my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight—

-Psalm 144

For many years, from 1917 to 1956, whoever was head of the Russian Communist Party was the liberals' pope and Russia was the holy land. But when a sitting pope, Nikita Khrushchev, denounced a former pope, Joseph Stalin, the liberals were in a quandary. Khrushchev's repudiation of Stalin was their Vatican II. Do we go with the living pope or the dead pope? Most liberals rejected Stalin (not all though; I had a professor who was still a devout Stalinist), but they didn't embrace the chubby Nikita; instead they went over to the non-European communist leaders such as Mao Tse-tung and Ho Chi Minh, who became the new popes. When the Asian communists lost their luster, they were replaced by the colored tribesmen of all nations, with the negro serving as the penultimate representative of "the people." You must, if you are a liberal who despises the white race, have a utopian people to hold up as the all-virtuous, all-holy alternative to the white race, because if evil is endemic to all races how can the white race be demonized? There must be a utopian people who will "astound the world" with their virtue if only the white race can be exterminated.

Even though the liberals' enthusiasm for communist Russia waned, they still maintained a soft spot in their hearts for the communist pigs of Russia. The divorce was an amicable one, because the communist pigs' ideals were closer to the liberals' ideals than they were to the beliefs of an antique European such as Alexander Solzhenitsyn. In point of fact, Solzhenitsyn earned the liberals' wrath when he came to the West and told them that Christ, not liberalism, was the answer to communism. Had he told the liberals that their new kingdom of negrophile liberalism was a wonderful refinement of a slightly flawed communist system he would have become their hero.

The current leader of Russia, Vladimir Putin, has become an anathema to the liberals. They have already expressed greater outrage and disapproval of him than they ever expressed against Lenin, Stalin, and the rest of the communist popes. Why is this? Is Putin more murderous than Lenin, Stalin, and company? Hardly. Putin is not a Christian knight, but he has done nothing to justify the moral pariah label the liberals have pinned on him. Putin is hated by the liberals because he is a Russian nationalist and not a multicultural liberal. He has publicly told minorities in Russia that they must adhere to Russian cultural norms or leave Russia. And he has told homosexuals that they will not be allowed to foist their homosexual agenda on the Russian people. Shouldn't any sane leader seek to defend his people from the dangers of multiculturalism and homosexuality? Putin is not my hero, because he is a pagan warrior not a Christian Goth, but I don't see how any white European can quarrel with his attempt to defend his people against the multiculturalists and the homosexuals. If the Russian people accept multiculturalism, then they will cease to exist as a people. My only criticism of Putin is that he is not strict enough. For example, I don't think having a black man on the Russian basketball team serves Mother Russia. The Russians don't need to win basketball medals in the Olympics; they need to keep Mother Russia white. All multicultural encroachments are to be shunned. We cannot let the desire for liberal approval and for success in international sporting events make multicultural cowards of us all.

Russia under Putin has not made a pilgrim's regress to a Christian nation, but Mother Russia is still infinitely sounder than the Western nations. Whenever a people resist multiculturalism there is hope that their nation might "regress" toward the light. The essence of communism was its rejection of the light in favor of a Godless kingdom of heaven on earth. It is ironic that the negrophile nations of Europe are now more communistic than Russia.

The liberals' "we-must-be-multicultural" mandate means that all white nations must permit the colored strangers to exterminate their people. We all, we Europeans, are in the same boat as the white Russians. If we don't fight multiculturalism, refusing to be broadminded and understanding when the murderous hordes of color invade our land, we will surely perish. Our resistance must amount to more than mere disapproval: we must hate the multiculturalists as we hate the devil. It's no coincidence that as the Europeans lost their faith in Christ they also lost their desire to fight Satan and his minions. Putin cannot be our guiding light, because he is a pagan. What we need are Christian warriors. We need Alfreds and Tells, Christian men who are not under the thumbs of the clergy, who will fight for their people no matter what the odds against them.

If the clergy have given their blessing to negrophile liberalism how can Christian men support them? We can't. We must oppose them as we would oppose the devil, because where negro worship is present the devil rules. These "Christian" clergymen who have elevated the negro to divine status and repudiated the Christian faith of our European ancestors are merely the lap dogs of the liberals, seeking the favor of their masters for doing the right tricks such as running off to Africa to "help" the African Ebola victims and then returning to the West to infect the evil whites who deserve what they get "because of slavery." The hatred of the white and the love of the negro is what motivates the liberals. So long as we allow the Christian churches to sustain that love and hate we shall live in the pigsties of Liberaldom, waiting for our final extermination.

The hero of Walker Percy's mock heroic novel, *Love in the Ruins*, tries to invent a machine that will reconnect the European's brain with his soul. Of course no machine can perform that miracle, but it is necessary for the post-Christian European to come to the same conclusion as Orlando in Shakespeare's *As You Like It*: "I can live no longer by thinking." The portals to hell run through academia, which was spawned by the churchmen who thought that it's better to have an intellectual concept of God than to know Him in and through the love of our people. There seems to be no limit to the degeneracy of a thoroughly trained academic. He is a man without any of the attributes that distinguish a man from a demon. So long as the spirit of academia, the demonic spirit which possessed Louis IX, governs white men, they will continue to look on the negro as a god who must be appeased with the blood of the white man.

I hope the Ebola illness is not spread throughout the Western nations, but whether the disease spreads or its progress is abated, the Ebola crisis gives us a window into the perverted souls of the liberals and the completely cowed souls of the conservatives. A nurse, recently returned from treating Ebola patients in West Africa, refused to accept a quarantine of 21 days. "It is unconstitutional and unscientific," says the liberal star of the moment. "Her heart is in the right place," the liberals and the conservatives intone, "She wants to help Africans." No, the woman's heart is in the wrong place, in fact, she has no heart. People who care nothing for their own kith and kin love only themselves. The nurse in question and the doctors who go over to West Africa and return for treatment to American medical centers are taking a gamble with their lives, but they are not taking that gamble because of a love for the sacred black man. They are taking that gamble because of an exalted egotism. They want to be worshipped as Atticus Finch was worshipped. And so far it is working. These monsters of selfishness (one

Ebola-infected doctor came back, rode the subway, and went bowling!) couldn't care less about their own family or their own people: all that pales in comparison to the praise they hope to receive for serving the negro gods of the Western world.

Liberals, a new breed of subhumans, have no humanity, because they reject God's channels of grace. They will not love small, through their familial and racial hearth fires, they must love big, and they will love an abstract people who are deified because of their natural nobility, untainted by the sinful white man. That is the liberals' view of existence. Our people, of the not too distant past saw life through an entirely different prism:

*God gave all men all earth to love,
But, since our hearts are small,
Ordained for each one spot should prove
Beloved over all;
That, as He watched Creation's birth,
So we, in godlike mood,
May of our love create our earth
And see that it is good...*

*So to the land our hearts we give
Till the sure magic strike,
And memory, Use, and Love make live
Us and our fields alike—
That deeper than our speech and thought,
Beyond our reason's sway,
Clay of the pit whence we were wrought
Yearns to its fellow-clay.*

— “Sussex” by Kipling

Yes, the liberals love big. But the antique Europeans loved small. The former have never seen the face of God in their kith and kin, because they have rejected their kith and kin and as a consequence have gone whoring after strange gods and an alien people. The latter have seen the living God, because they never looked upon their familial and racial hearth fires as evils to be shunned. They saw Christ in those hearth fires, and they learned to love and felt what it was like to be loved, at those hearth fires. We have not supped full of horrors yet. The satanic tentacles of liberalism are always expanding and increasing in strength. But my heroes, the bards, warriors, and everyday men and women of Christian Europe, have shown us another world, a world consecrated to an entirely different God than the god of the liberals. Surely if we love that God in and through our people, we will, at the last trump, be able to say, “The day is ours, by the grace of God.” +

To Love Our Own

November 8, 2014

Categories: Antique Christianity, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Walter Scott



Some feelings are to mortals given,
With less of earth in them than heaven;

—Walter Scott in *Lady of the Lake*

The old ditty goes something like this:

*Christmas is coming, the goose is getting fat.
Please do put a penny in the old man's hat,
If you haven't got a penny, a ha'penny will do,
If you haven't got a ha'penny, then God bless you.*

The modern ditty is quite different:

*Election day is coming, negrophile Liberaldom is a fact.
No self-respecting politician will wear a white hat.
If you haven't got a dark skin, a half-dark skin will do
If you haven't got even a half-dark skin, then the liberals damn you.*

The white-hating liberals and the white-hating barbarians of color have an infinitude of candidates to vote for, because all the candidates, whether they be Democrat, Republican, or Independent, are committed to the ongoing extermination of the white race. There are no white candidates, candidates who have campaigned for the preservation of the white race. So vote for the candidate that believes in a slower extermination rate, but do not think for one second that voting will stop the extermination of whites. The liberal hierarchy has flown their colors; they believe in the sacredness of the negro and the evil of the white man. They shall not cease from mental strife until their colored minions have killed every last white.

“Haiti is the world,” the liberals cry with all the fervor of the devotees of a cruel barbarian mystery cult. As they gather round the sacred fire, they kiss the bloody knives of their black gods and start chanting, “Blood, blood, blood, we must have more white blood.” We can hear Charlie Brown asking, “Can anyone tell me what elections are all about?” Linus responds, but not with approval: “Thou shalt love the negro and hate the white man: that’s what elections are all about, Charlie Brown.”

The sickness unto death that has come upon the whites who still have something in their souls is the result of living in negrophile Liberaldom. Spiritually, it is the equivalent of living in a dark, rat-infested room, presided over by a demon who never lets you see the light of day but continues to let more and more rats into your room. The rats bite you as you fight with them for the scraps of food the demon jailer throws on the floor of your cell. Every other year the demon jailer gives you light enough to vote for a new jailer and for a different set of rats to gnaw at your entrails. Once you have voted, the lights go out again and the extermination process proceeds. Is not democratic, negrophile liberalism the very best of all possible worlds?

In the 6th Narnia book, *The Silver Chair*, the English children spend so much time in the Underworld under the influence of the evil witch that they begin to doubt that there ever was an Overworld. The Europeans have reached that state of existence. The liberals started in the overworld, the land of Christian Europe, and they have slowly transformed the European overworld into the Underworld. What is needed is a loving remembrance of that which was lost and a will to reclaim that which was lost. In a Spenglerian universe of birth, maturity, decay, and death, that which is lost remains lost. But Europeans do not live in a Spenglerian universe.

We can't overlook the part the churches have played and continue to play in the destruction of Christian Europe and in the building and maintenance of a negrophile underworld, which has become the overworld, that keeps white people in a perpetual state of despair. From time immemorial organized Christianity has been at odds with paganism and Judaism, because both religions denied the incarnation of Christ. Why then did the church rely so much on the pagan philosophers and the Jewish system? The people of God, the Europeans, were not accorded their proper place in the church. Without the people of God, the Europeans, there is no human conduit for the divine presence. The human theater was empty, so the stage was set for a new people, a better people, to emerge. First, there was the Jacobin, then the proletariat, and finally the negro. The personal, human element that organized Christianity rejected for pagan philosophy and pharisaical Judaism, when the human element consisted of Europeans, became the keystone of Liberaldom once the negroes became the people of God, and then became the gods of a new Christless, Babylonian Christianity.

Satan is not threatened by an intellectual Christianity. In fact he encourages it, because he can make intellectual Christians do whatever he wants. Without a blood faith they will go whoring after new gods, such as the negro, or they will seek to blend Christianity with Islam or with the rapture of Israel.

The love of the negro and the hatred of the white has entered the bloodstream of the liberal. He now instinctually reacts against his own people. This hatred of the white unites him with the colored barbarians, because the hatred of the white race has always been in their blood. I saw a video a few days ago of several thousand German youths marching in Cologne in protest against radical Islam. Such things are good to see, but will that white rage be sustainable without a blood faith? Our rage and our eternal ‘no’ to racial Babylon must be rooted in the Cross of Christ. It is because Islam, negro-worshipping liberalism, and Judaism are opposed to His reign of charity that we rage against the dying of the light. Christ, despite what the clerics tell us, is not on the side of racial Babylon. It is up to those of us who still have a loving memory of the European past to show the sickness unto death Europeans that it was by the Cross that the Europeans of old conquered, and it is by the Cross that we shall conquer once again.

That Europeans should feel completely bereft of God and nation is the fulfillment of Satan's dream, because when every channel of God's grace has been destroyed he can rule unimpeded. When the European lost his racial hearth fire he lost his connection to the incarnate God. And all other gods are hollow caricatures of the living God. No true European can take sustenance from them. Yeats' prophetic words, "The best lack all conviction," can be applied to the modern Europeans. The best of them know something is wrong, but they don't know who their enemies are, and they can't find any solid ground to stand on while they're trying to fend off the slings and arrows of the unknown enemy. If we tell them their enemies are the liberals, gentle and Jewish, who, with the aid of the colored barbarians, intend to destroy them, they will not believe it. Their "natures are so far from doing harm that they suspect none." This above all makes my blood rage against the liberals and the colored barbarians. The worst of the grazers are worth more than all of the liberals and the colored barbarians put together. And the best of the lot, who hate modernity but cannot believe in an evil as sinister and malevolent as negrophile liberalism, are so morally distinct from the colored barbarians and the liberals that they seem to be a different species altogether. Like Lear, they are more sinned against than sinning. A life spent protecting that remnant and avenging the slaughtered white innocents will not be spent in vain.

There are times in our lives when we must look at death head on. A loved one dies and we have only our "trembling faith" to get us through. It seems like no comfort at all at first, because we feel only the unbearable parting – someone who was supposed to be immortal is no longer with us. Tennyson expressed it better than anyone: "The tender grace of a day that is dead... shall never come back to me." But over time, the pain can be eased if we come away from the coffin to a society in which all the everyday activities point us to the Savior. When that is the case death loses its finality and is ultimately replaced by the sure and certain hope in the resurrection of the dead, a hope that is almost completely buried in the coffin when we are still at the graveside. But when there is a racial and familiar hearth fire to return to, a hearth fire of precious memories and loving hearts who share those precious memories with us, we do not despair. And when there is no racial and familiar hearth fire? We push death away with drugs and the opiates of superficiality. But inside there is always the feeling that we are:

*Like one, that on a lonesome road
Doth walk in fear and dread,
And having once turned round walks on,
And turns no more his head;
Because he knows a frightful fiend
Doth close behind him tread.*

In a Christian society where the racial hearth fire is honored, all of the "trivialities" of life, such as sport, festivals, and business, point us to the Savior who destroyed the frightful fiend called death. The trivialities in such a society become something much more than trivialities: they become channels of grace. A man who does the everyday duties and participates in the every day festivities in a white, "racist" Christian culture is connected to the world of Handel's *Messiah*. Death is swallowed up in victory. All this comes from that which the liberals and the colored barbarians despise, the Europeans' racial hearth fire. No candidate for public office ever fights for that hearth fire, but we must, because it contains the only things that matter in this world and the next: Faith, Hope, and Charity.

The Europeans are currently being crucified with no hope of a resurrection. The frightful fiend, through negrophile liberalism, has laid hold of their souls. But he can't hold us if we burst the devil's bonds by returning to our racial hearth fire. The love that exists there, the love of kith, kin, and the Savior who sustains our Kith and kin, will make us heroes again. We will be men and women who love and hate with a sure and certain instinct more powerful than reason. Negrophile liberalism will prove unreal at last, and Christian Europe will prove to be eternal.
+

White Skins – White Souls

November 15, 2014

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Shakespeare



After many, many years there came a king's son into that land: and an old man told him the story of the thicket of thorns; and how a beautiful palace stood behind it, and how a wonderful princess, called Briar Rose, lay in it asleep, with all her court. He told, too, how he had heard from his grandfather that many, many princes had come, and had tried to break through the thicket, but that they had all stuck fast in it, and died. Then the young prince said, 'All this shall not frighten me; I will go and see this Briar Rose.' The old man tried to hinder him, but he was bent upon going.

A big Republican winner in Ohio immediately announced in his victory speech that his top priority was "diversity." Rand Paul followed suit. After the Republican victories, he scolded Republicans for ignoring black and Hispanic voters. He, the great Rand Paul, would change that. And on it goes into the night. We can elect different executioners if we want, but the extermination process will still proceed at a steady pace.

The white Europeans are in the position of Antonio in Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*. Shylock wants Antonio's heart's blood, and he will use the letter of the law to get it: "I crave the law, The penalty and forfeit of my bond." To move Shylock with an appeal for mercy is futile:

*I pray you, think you question with the Jew:
You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;
You may as well use question with the wolf
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops and to make no noise,
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—
His Jewish heart:*

Of course there is a crucial difference between the white man's current rulers and the rulers of Shakespeare's imaginary Venice. Antonio did not have his heart cut out because the spirit of the law, which was adhered to by the Christian ruler of Venice, requires that justice should be tempered with "the quality of mercy." Not so in Liberaldom. The liberals, whether they are Jews or non-Jews, have Shylockian hearts. They will have their pound of flesh. The history of the European people is now a history of slaughter. Every day the blood-red tide of colored atrocities rises, and the concern of the liberals who govern white nations is to attack the white victims of the colored atrocities. By some twisted liberal logic, it is always the white man's fault when colored barbarians murder whites. No atrocity is ever the fault of the negro barbarians or other barbarians of color. Evil resides only in white people; therefore, the evil that the colored barbarians do is either not evil, or, if it is deemed evil, it is the fault of the white man.

I feel toward the white grazers as Anthony Jacob felt toward the white Kenyans. He had no wish to deride the already much derided white Kenyans. They were guilty of only one thing: they trusted white liberals. That, in a nutshell, is the reason for white genocide. Liberals are in a minority in every white nation, yet they rule in every white nation, because white grazers permit them to rule. And please don't respond with "vote them out of office." There are no non-liberals running for office. The liberals understand the historical moment and the grazers do not, because they have no Burke to rally them. An implacable satanic foe armed with cruel hate has hired a mercenary army of colored barbarians to destroy the white race. It seems impossible to get the grazers to turn away from their football games long enough to grasp that essential fact of life in modern Satania. But the grazers are white people, so I will not assume that they are irremediable. "Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more..."

White people are between a rock and a hard place. The Shylockian liberals want their blood, and the colored barbarians are quite willing to shed white blood. White people's only refuge, their racial hearth fire, is forbidden them, so they languish in a death-in-life limbo while they wait for the final death blow. Every white nation has a proud history of fighting men who were once part of the fabric of their nation. What has happened to the race that produced such men as Alfred, Tell, Wallace, Forrest, Bozzaris, Roland, and Winkelreid? I recently read of 10,000 Somalians who have overrun Scotland. How can this happen to the country of Wallace, Bruce, and Sir Walter Scott? How can any white European permit his nation to be defiled by the presence of colored barbarians? It has to do with our spiritual backbone, which is our race. If white people don't believe they are a race apart from the colored races, a race of people who must protect and love their own, then they will not fight to preserve their race. How can a man fight for something he doesn't believe exists?

As white people have disappeared as a race so has the quality of mercy disappeared. Cruelty and sexual depravity are all that is left in the formerly white nations, because there are no white people left who will fight negrophile liberalism. The grazers will "support our troops," who are not our troops, and they will support their local clergy and the local schools, but they will not fight for race and faith. "Our troops" are the troops of negrophile liberalism, our schools are liberal, negrophile factories, and our clergymen are blasphemers who have made the living God an adjunct of negro-worshipping liberalism. Instead of voting for our executioners we should take the same vow that Tell took when Gessler threatened the lives of his sons, his wife, and his people.

*My boys, poor innocents, my loyal wife,
Must be protected, tyrant, from thy rage!
When last I drew my bow – with trembling hand–
And thou, with fiendishly remorseless glee
Forced me to level at my own boy's head,
When I, imploring pity, writhed before thee,*

*Then in the anguish of my soul,
I vow'd
A fearful oath, which met God's ear alone,
That when my bow next wing'd an arrow's flight
Its aim should be thy heart.
The vow I made,
Amid the hellish torments of that moment,
I hold a sacred debt, and I will pay it.*

Just a story? Europeans come from the land of storybooks. The heroes of our race point us to The Hero.

When the liberals and the clergy command us to progress beyond provincial, bardic, racist Europe to a universal, scientific world consecrated to the Negro, we should respond as Tell did that day at the mountain pass near Kussnacht. Our innocents are threatened. We have tried pleading, but to no avail. There is no mercy in the liberals or in the colored barbarians. How could there be mercy in the souls of those who have rejected the God of mercy or in the souls of those who have never known the God of mercy? The words "fiendishly remorseless glee" resonate with us today. Doesn't that describe the liberals? The fiendish glee with which they respond to the colored atrocities against whites make me feel as Tell felt. There can be only one response to such creatures from hell: "Amid the hellish torments of that moment, I hold a sacred debt, and I will pay it."

I was blessed to grow up during a time when the real Walt Disney was making pictures, so let me mention a short story-type of cartoon he made about Johnny Appleseed. We see Johnny as a young man who decides to plant apple seeds throughout the United States. The years roll by, and Johnny stays true to his mission. At the end of the story, Johnny lies down under an apple tree, and his immortal body steps away from his mortal husk. The transfigured body then goes on to plant apple trees in heaven. That image of death was comforting to me; in fact it was the only comforting image of death I ever encountered in my childhood. I couldn't articulate the reason why I found the Johnny Appleseed death comforting; I just knew that I did. Looking back I realize that I was comforted by the fact that there was a real bodily resurrection and that heaven was not depicted as some other worldly, unfamiliar existence. It was a continuance of what was good here on earth.

After World War I, the first European War in which both sides abandoned chivalry (in our uncivil war only the North abandoned chivalry), a new European came to the forefront. He was a man who followed a different path than the one Johnny Appleseed followed. Johnny stepped away from his mortal husk into his immortal body. The new European reversed the process: he stepped away from his immortal soul and proceeded to wander the earth without it. He went from a divinely infused man of grace to a man without a soul, trying to make up for its absence by the power of his disembodied intellect. Such men, the men of the disembodied intellects, are cannon fodder for the demonic man of intellect who rules Satandom through his liberal minions.

The white man's refusal to fight for his people – let us use the Somalian invasion of Scotland as the mirror image of what is occurring in every white nation – is the result of the white man's flight from his soul. His white skin contains his soul, and as long as he retains his soul he is subject to all the terrors of the spiritual life that a blood-and-sex pagan is not subject to. "Do I simply go from a corruptible body to an incorruptible body, or do I enter a state of suspended animation somewhere between death and life? Or worse yet, do I melt into nothingness?" The fear of that undiscovered country from whose bourn no traveler returns has sent the white man into an intellectual retreat from which he supports the colored heathens, because their religions give him the opiates of sex and blood. But even here, the white man feels cheated; he can only participate in the heathen religions second-hand; lurking somewhere in the darkness is his white soul, trying to envelope him in that old world of crosses and redemption.

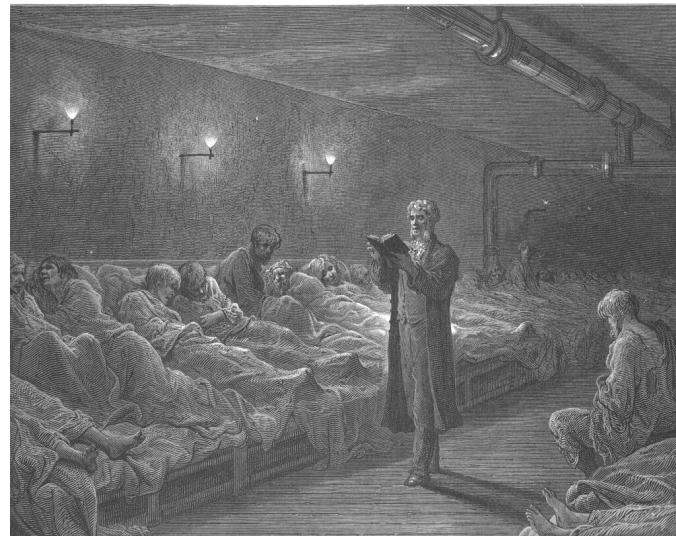
A religion that is not embodied soon becomes a dead religion. This is why the liberals must continue to attack every last vestige of Christian Europe. That Europe must remain in the grave so the new Europe, the Europe of the anesthetized zombie whites, can live. A Christian European is, in the eyes of the secular liberal and the clergyman, a fiend who will impede mankind's progress toward a colored utopia where all mankind can forget the Man of Sorrows. Whites won't fight back against the colored invasion, because they don't know the answer to Melville's question, "Sentry, are you there?" The answer can be found in the collective face of the European people, before they separated themselves from their souls. There is no magic formula, no intellectual gambit that can make the white man fight for his people and his God. He must see existence feelingly before he will fight. Beyond the rational man, beyond the philosophical man, is the man of storybooks, the true European. He is the hero that by a miracle of grace has not succumbed to modern Babylon; he is a man with a soul. Let us follow such men to fairy tale Europe where we will discover that His Kingdom come and eternal Europe are one and the same. +

Through a Glass Darkly

November 22, 2014

Categories: Charity, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Poets vs philosophers

Tags: D. P. Dugauquier, Shakespeare



All men that are ruined, are ruined on the side of their natural propensities. There they are unguarded. Above all, good men do not suspect that their destruction is attempted through their virtues. This their enemies are perfectly aware of: and accordingly, they, the most turbulent of mankind, who never made a scruple to shake the tranquillity of their country to its center, raise a continual cry for peace with France. Peace with Regicide, and war with the rest of the world, is their motto. — Burke

For some reason the liberal governments of Britain and the United States have decided that Somalis should inhabit the more northern climes. The British government sends them to Scotland, and the United States government sends them to Minnesota. One Minnesotan grazer spoke for the entire Western world when he said the Somalians were quite difficult to live with but he was trying to understand them. “Understanding” our fellow man is supposed to be a good thing, because understanding brings about peace and accord between peoples. Does it? Or is “understanding” merely another myth of the liberal world? Burke understood the Jacobins so well that he wanted to go to war with them. I understand the liberals, and I am at war with them because they are evil. As for the Somalians, if you truly understand them then you will refuse to let them into your nation, because they are monsters of cruelty that worship the savage gods of blood and sex.

In the margin of Melville’s copy of *King Lear*, right after a fiery soliloquy by Edmund, the bastard son of Gloucester, Melville notes, “There is an energy and fire to demonism that mere virtue often lacks.” The virtuous brother Edgar, “whose nature is so far from doing harms, hat he suspects none....,” is unable to help his father, who has both eyes plucked out, or anyone else until he “understands” that there are evil men in the world who will not stop doing evil until they are confronted by men who have more than mere virtue in their hearts. Evil must be confronted by men who love and hate with a passion greater than the men who worship darkness and not the light. It’s not enough to know the good — every moral theologian knows what is good — one must love the good enough to fight for it. But a fighting faith is outside the ken of moral theologians and philosophers. We must go to the realm of the poets, where men see with blinding sight and love and hate with all their hearts, to know how to deal with satanic liberals and their colored minions. When Edgar sees the evil that men do to his kith and kin, he leaves mere virtue behind and confronts evil:

*Despite thy victor sword and fire-new fortune,
Thy valor and thy heart—thou art a traitor;
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince,
And from th' extremest upward of thy head
To the descent and dust below thy foot
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou "No,"
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,
Thou liest.*

Edgar is a Minnesotan grazer at the beginning of *King Lear*, but he is a Goth by the end of the play. The white Europeans are re-enacting *King Lear*, because they will not understand evil. The French Revolution is still glossed over as a much-needed, democratic reform taken a little too far by Robespierre. Likewise the Communist revolution: “Uncle Joe was too extreme, but the communists’ hearts were in the right place.” The refrain is always the same. White people do not believe that anyone means them harm. Liberals are nice people and so are the colored barbarians: we are all nice people. The only worry is people like thee and me who talk about negro worship and the satanic nature of liberalism. That is extremism, which is bad.

It is not physical courage that is lacking in the white nations. There are always men willing to fight for the official government. What is lacking is moral courage, the will to fight for the good, for kith and kin, despite the unpopularity of the fight. It is moral courage that distinguishes a white man from the barbarians of color and the beasts of the jungle who only fight when they have the upper hand. To call the soldiers of the pro-abort, negro-worshipping government of the United States or the soldiers of all the other negro-worshipping pro-abort nations of Europe “our troops” is blasphemous. Our troops are those whites who fight for white, Christian Europe, not those who fight for liberals.

A nation is a moral essence, not a spot on the map. If Britain becomes a colored Moslem state, it ceases to be Britain, just as France ceases to be France, and so on. It’s not the colored people who are forcing the white people out of their own nations, it is white liberals, who have brought the colored barbarians into the white nations and protect those same colored barbarians from white retaliation, that are turning white nations into colored nations.

There are still white grazers enough to resist the colored invasion. My N.R.A. neighbor, for instance, would gladly bring his arsenal of weapons along on a campaign to rid our nation of colored barbarians, if the government gave the word. And that is the key. The respective governments of all of the white nations will not give the word to drive the colored barbarians from their lands. The exact opposite is the case. The governing elites in all the European nations are committed to the extermination of white people, so the grazers sit back and watch the colored barbarians cannibalize the whites.

Nothing will be done to stop the colored barbarians so long as the white grazers do not see that every aspect of their fast dwindling world is dominated by Satanists. Our governments, our churches, and above all, our educational establishments, are committed to the extermination of whites. The liberals are very clever: they have ecumenical services with Moslems, they call our attention to “Christian” black rappers, and they enjoin us to be tolerant and kind to black barbarians, because under the skin we are all alike. But that is precisely the point: under our skins we are not all alike. White skins envelop white souls. And white souls differ from black, brown, and yellow souls. The liberals acknowledge this when they demonize whites and deify the colored races. When they want to move Somalians into the grazers’ neighborhoods, they tell them we are all alike under the skin; but their actions belie their words. The colored

people are sacred and the whites are demons: that is the liberals' faith. This brings us back to the central point. The liberals are Satanists. If you accept their theology you will be serving Satan. "I shall not serve," was Satan's defiant declaration to God. "We shall not serve," should be our response to the rulers of Satandom.

If white souls differ from colored souls, how do they differ? The answer should be obvious to us, but in this age of anesthetized souls it no longer is obvious to most people. So let me quote from D. P. Dugaquier's book *Congo Cauldron*:

Africans have respected power deriving from force for too many centuries to acquire any moral shackles—they admire and follow the man with strength. Here is an illustration, amusing but unfortunately quite true. In a school run by the Catholic Church for young men showing aptitudes which might befit them for eventual priesthood, a film was being shown. The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thorns upon His head, excited cries of 'Pika! Pika!' rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black men's back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.

This inability to grasp the essential point of Christianity, God's divine charity, is not confined to the black race alone. I recall the story of a white missionary, having spent many years in China, relating how he showed a film of the crucifixion of Christ to a large gathering of Chinese. Their intense interest in the film encouraged the missionary. Later, the Chinese in the audience had gone out, ambushed a caravan of whites, and crucified them. Enough said. The theologians of the West are fond of telling us that the history of the European people is not different from that of the colored people, because all the seven deadly sins are present among whites just as they are present amongst the colored people of the world. But a man who becomes a theologian has made an *a priori* decision about existence. He has already decided that truth can be seen with, not through, the eye. That *a priori* decision makes the theologian blind to all things that exist in the realm of the spirit. There is hell and redemption in the soul of the white man. He can become like unto Satan, an intellectualized demon with a burning desire to strike the Creator by defacing his image in man, or he can, by adhering to His will, bear witness to the Light of the World. That the Europeans, prior to their rejection of Christ in the 20th century, bore witness to the Light of the World is clear to all those who have eyes to see and ears to hear. A civilization based on "that charity of honor" was created right before their eyes, and the theologians knew it not. They opened up their minds while closing their hearts to God, who comes to us in and through our people.

The colored tribesmen know only hell. They had no redemption in them, until they saw the light emanating from the hearth fires of the Europeans. Now the humanoid-demons who have consecrated their souls to the devil, the liberals, have joined forces with the savage hordes of color to build a kingdom of Satan on earth. God so loved mankind that He gave His only begotten Son to redeem us from sin and death. The Europeans made that belief a part of their white souls; hence the attack on Christ's divinity and his humanity always comes by way of an attack on the European people. The Jews sought to kill Lazarus after Jesus raised him from the dead:

But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

Because of the Europeans, our beloved forefathers, our brethren in Christ, many believed in Christ. This is why the liberals will be forever at war with the European people: the Europeans are the Christ-bearers. Even though they are currently grazing in the fields of oblivion, there is always a chance they might return to life, which is why the liberals are forever vigilant, committed to destroying everything white and Christian.

The one essential difference between the colored races and the white race is not intelligence. It is something much greater than intelligence: it is charity. Only the Europeans loved Christ for His divine charity – "because He first loved us." The people who saw life feelingly were the antique Europeans. Against all reason, against the wisdom of the world, the Europeans made the suffering servant, a man crucified between two thieves, their Lord and Savior. The true faith is revealed when Europeans act in accord with His reign of charity. "This slaughter of whites shall not go on, in the name of charity, it shall not go on." That is the only war cry that will put an end to white genocide.

The liberals have blinded their eyes and hardened their hearts: His divine charity does not move them; they regard it as something that must be purged from the earth so that utopian, heartless, sterile liberalism can prevail. In order to kill charity the liberals must pluck it out of every European heart. They have already purged it from their own hearts. But does it still exist in some European hearts? That is the question that haunts the liberals. Yes, charity still lives in some European hearts. And it is a fire that will destroy liberalism. A love that passeth all understanding moves the Europeans who have that charity of honor. The liberal techno-barbarians and the colored barbarians will fall before those hearts of fire. +

True to Our Blood

November 29, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Dostoyevsky



Conservatives have written volumes about the dumbing down of our children. But unfortunately they are only talking about declining scores on math and English achievement tests. The real tragedy of the European people has been and continues to be the deterioration of their spiritual nerve endings. They have been desensitized to things of the spirit. How else can we explain this unholy zeal to mate with and worship the negro? This deification of the Mau Mau, this unholy trinity of Satan, the negro, and the liberal, should be opposed by the European Christian with all his heart, mind, and soul. If a man says he is a Christian but will not fight against the unholy trinity, he is neither a Christian nor a European: he is one of Satan's own. —CWNY

After Obama legalized millions upon millions of Aztec invaders by imperial fiat, the conservatives pointed out that his imperial fiat was the act of a despot, not the act of a president of a constitutional republic. Of course it is the act of a despot, but why should we expect a man with African blood to understand how to run a republic founded by white men? A black man knows how to get what he wants from white liberals, but he hasn't the slightest idea about running any government besides a tyrannical, cruel, despotic government. Only conservatives who don't believe in racial differences would expect a black man to honor the laws, customs, and the people of a white republic. Obama is being true to his blood. He wants to exterminate the white race. Why should he let some paper-and-ink scruples of white men deter him from his bloodletting by fiat?

What prevents a ruler from acting as if the nation he governs exists only to fulfill his selfish needs? Only a sense of duty that is stronger than his selfish instinct for self-aggrandizement and power can keep a ruler on the right path. And from whence comes a man's sense of duty? It comes from the faith that is in him. Nelson's dying words were, "Thank God I have done my duty." Such an ethos stems from a bred-in-the-bone faith in the Christian God; it does not come from out of Africa or from a book of philosophy.

Only white men of the old stock, men who believe in that charity of honor, are fit to rule white nations. Liberals and colored barbarians, who know everything about power and entitlements but nothing about honor and duty, are not fit to rule over rats in a garbage dump let alone white men in white nations. But liberals and black men do rule over white men in white nations. The slaughter of whites will not be stopped until the liberal techno-barbarians and the colored barbarians are no longer the rulers in white nations.

The United Negro-Worshipping States of American is currently having a larger than usual Negrogeddon because a white police officer was found not guilty in the self-defense shooting of a negro barbarian. Every day white children, white women, white men, and white policemen are tortured, raped, and murdered by black barbarians. The liberals and the black barbarians never protest against those atrocities. In fact they put the racist label on anyone who dares to protest against the negro atrocities. And once the magic racist label is used, the negroes and the liberals cannot be held accountable for barbarities committed or countenanced. Yet one self-defense killing by a white police officer has set off what the blacks and liberals feel is a justifiable Negrogeddon.

In the midst of Negrogeddon the conservatives cite the Constitution, which is like trying to put out a raging inferno with a water pistol. Something greater than an intellectual affirmation of the "rule of law" is necessary. But genuine conservatism died with the South. Twentieth century "conservatives" want to preserve a generic people living in a generic nation. It was, and is, of no consequence to the conservatives whether their nation consists of black or white people, because they look on all people as interchangeable cogs that exist solely to be manipulated by the abstracted minds of the conservative intellectuals. Right after Obama's fiat I heard the self-professed conservative Mike Huckabee proclaiming that he was not against colored immigration; far from it — he welcomed it. What he was against was illegal immigration. That has always been the mantra of the "conservatives." They are not against white genocide: they simply want it done in an orderly fashion. This is sheer lunacy. The extermination of whites is wrong whether it is done legally or illegally. What is legality outside of His reign of charity? There is no such thing: it is an invention of the greatest legalist of them all — Satan.

I've always felt akin to the great Russian writer Fyodor Dostoyevsky, because we both were drawn back to the Christian faith in the same way. When the revolutionary Bakunin lectured his new convert, the young Dostoyevsky, on the necessity of burying all sentimental attachments, even one's sentimental attachment to Jesus Christ, Dostoyevsky wept. He couldn't do it. I felt the same way when I entered the university. The philosophical defenses of Christianity disappeared like the mists of the morning, but His sacred image, the image of the European Christ, stayed with me. The theologians and the modern conservatives give us nothing to hold on to. A man can't go into battle with a syllogism; he must have a faith in the heroes of his race, and through them he must have faith in The Hero. The negro barbarians are burning and looting in Ferguson, Missouri, because one of their own, a thieving murderous thug who had just beaten and robbed a shop owner and was trying to wrest a white police officer's gun from him, was killed. Not one single rioter cares about Michael Brown. They care about black power: white people cannot be allowed to defend themselves against black violence. Ferguson, Missouri is a mirror of the European world. There must be no resistance to black violence, because black people are the chosen ones: they are the man-gods who have replaced the God-Man in the hearts of the liberals.

Conservative intellectuals who favor abstract people of no particular race over the people of their own racial hearth fire are no match for the liberals and the colored barbarians. Their universalism is not a moral evolution, it is a descent to a Gnostic Christianity diametrically opposed to the Christianity of our European ancestors. The conservatives are all in favor of God, but they want to be in charge of God. From their standpoint God is messy and inefficient. "Why is it necessary," they ask, "to pass on divine truths through the blood? Why can't we all just discipline our minds so that we can understand and know God through our intellects?" No doubt God could have done things as the managerial conservatives in church and state wanted, but then He would have been something other than the God who imparts to human hearts: He would not have been our Lord and Savior. And that is the problem with the new universalism of the kindly conservative grazers. They want to make everyone happy in the abstract by ignoring God's channels of grace. The colored savages and the liberals know what they want: they want to exterminate the white race. The former want to do so because they have never known Christ, and the latter want to do so because they hate the living God. The European grazers do not know what they want, because they have been denied their racial hearth fire where love, honor, and duty reside. It's time for the Europeans to rise and ride, but they must be led by Europeans who love their own people more than humanity in the abstract.

What was unthinkable in Christian Europe is commonplace in liberal Europe. Savage barbarians of color are exterminating the white race while liberals look on with "remorseless glee." It would take a miracle to revive the European people. But haven't such miracles occurred in the past? Was not Christian Europe a miracle? Will He forsake His people? That is not possible. We have left Him: that is why we are defenseless before the hordes of color.

While waiting in the dentist's office the other day, I got to talking with a man in his mid-nineties who had spent 40 years as a postman. He loved his route and the people on his route until his route became colorized. He watched, over the course of 40 years, a nice white neighborhood become a crime-ridden negro neighborhood. He made the same point that Anthony Jacob made in reference to Kenya: "I retired and moved farther out into the country, but eventually they'll come out here." Yes, eventually they'll be everywhere. There are already parts of London that the police are afraid to enter for fear of the Moslem tribesmen. And most of the cities in the United States belong to either the Aztecs or the Mau Maus. Why should whites accept this as the natural order of existence? They should not, but they will accept racial Babylon so long as they are afraid of being racist. Is it wrong to hate the spawns of Satan who tell us by their words and actions that they are determined to destroy our people and our culture? "Yes, it is wrong," the liberals tell us. But who gave the liberals the right to make the white man's love of his own people a crime punishable by death? They are the satanic enablers of the demon races of color. Look at their faces: their satanic sneer tells us all we need to know about liberals who murder whites with the aid of the colored barbarians.

In the past our ancestors kept colored barbarians at bay and punished the slightest violation of the color code. That was not so far back in time. Those Europeans were giants of faith, hope, and charity. Are we not their spiritual heirs? God's grace is not bound by time. If we love our people in and through our Lord, without blending our Christian faith with negro worship, Islam, or any other -ism, miracles will occur. The colored barbarians rule because whites have abdicated. It is time for whites to become racists, to fight for our kith and kin. If we are true to our blood, we will be true to our Lord and then, thank God, we will have done our duty. +

A Covenant Renewed

December 6, 2014

Categories: Blood faith, Chivalry, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



Precious memories, unseen angels
Sent from somewhere to my soul,
How they linger, ever near me,
And the sacred past unfolds.

There are so many atrocities committed by blacks against whites that it has become impossible to give each white victim the attention they deserve. By rights every murdered white should have their name put on a war memorial, because they lost their lives in our nation's bloodiest war, the war that only one side is fighting. Amidst the barbarities of any war there are always some victims that stay in your memory permanently. One such victim who stays in my memory and my prayers is Jonathan Foster, the young boy who was burned to death by a demonic black woman. I know there are some Christian groups that do not believe in prayers for the dead, but how can we put a limit on God's grace? That poor child: surely our prayers must be able to comfort him?

Another white victim who will stay with me forever is Brendan Tevlin, the young teenager in New Jersey who was murdered this past summer by a homegrown black Moslem jihadist. "He had to die," the sub-human negroid monster declared. There was no outrage in the white community over Brendan's murder. There were no cries for "justice" as there were when the murderous black thug, Michael Brown, was killed in Ferguson, Missouri. Nor did our black attorney general or our black president come forward and condemn black America for making the murder of whites such as Brendan Tevlin a common occurrence in our nation. Instead we were treated to the spectacle of liberal sycophants and black hoodlums such as the Rev. Al Sharpton being wined and dined at the White House as they spewed out one anti-white tirade after another. One white chief of police, who is unfit to live let alone be a chief of police, suggested that white police officers should just walk away from confrontations with black thugs. That is the unwritten law right now. But should the law become codified the predatory negro savages, who already have very little fear of white reprisals, will be able to completely indulge their blood-thirsty appetites. Maybe that is best; after all we don't want to stifle the natural impulses of the noble, black savages.

When I worked as a police officer our instruction manual encouraged us to "aggressively confront those who break the law." We quickly learned how hypocritical our manual was. Aggressively confronting crime meant aggressively confronting black barbarians, and that meant facing an aggressive prosecuting attorney who asked you why you struck, beat, or shot that good, pure, and noble black man. If you make the rules of engagement too complicated and too one-sided in favor of the criminal, white police officers will be at an enormous disadvantage when confronting black barbarians. And as a consequence a great many white officers, who could survive if they knew they were really allowed to "aggressively" confront black thugs, will be killed by black savages. But of course that is what the liberals and the colored barbarians want. They want whites to be completely defenseless against the colored tribesmen. In London the colored jihadists screamed as they chopped off a British soldier's head, "Your police won't protect you!" That is essentially correct. We must protect ourselves now, not because white police officers are cowardly; they are not. But they are not paid to protect and serve white people, they are paid to protect and serve the negro. The Swedish police put it quite succinctly when they said that there was "good violence," which was black on white violence, and there was "bad violence," which was whites defending themselves against black violence. Is it not horrifically obvious what is going on throughout all of the European nations? When whites defend themselves the liberals and the colored tribesmen unite to make sure such a horrendous event never happens again. But the daily massacre of whites does not even warrant a comment. The liberals and the colored barbarians say nothing, because when blacks murder whites, the world is as it should be: the sacred black gods are destroying the white devils. The white grazers say nothing about the massacre of whites, because they are afraid of being called racist, which is the ultimate scarlet letter in Liberaldom.

The modern police force came into being to counteract the criminal gangs that were roaming the city streets. The citizens hired their own gang to fight the criminal gangs. Now we must face the fact that the police are not hired to protect white people from black criminals, they are hired to serve the negrophile government. That is why the white police officer in Ferguson, Missouri had to resign and must live in fear for his life and the possibility of federal charges against him. He did not protect and serve "the people" who are and always shall be, so long as liberals reign, the sacred negroes.

I have nothing against hunting or sports per se, but I do have a grudge against the modern white hunters and sportsmen. In Walter Scott's Europe, hunting and sports were a means to an end. They helped a man to prepare himself for the real battle against principalities and powers. In that battle a man, if he is a true European, must adhere to the code of chivalry. A man without chivalry is not a man. Winston Churchill said in reference to Rommel: "In modern war there is no room for chivalry." The Europeans cannot accept such cynicism. There must always be room for chivalry; it falls on us, the remnant, to make sure that there is a Christian European presence in the modern world. And by "presence," I mean a fighting presence. Our people are being slaughtered: "Is it time to jest and dally now?"

Hunting and sports in Liberaldom are dog bones the liberals throw to the white grazers to keep them content. What if the same amount of masculine energy currently being spent in sport and hunting was diverted to the chivalrous defense of whites? That would be a sight to behold: white men actually fighting back against liberals and the colored barbarians! Such a blessed event does not seem possible, because white men appear to be completely and invincibly passive in the face of evil. If you threaten to take their dog bones away, they grumble, but if you kill their people and make them worship the negro gods they remain docile and compliant. Obviously, the root cause of the white man's tragic indifference to white genocide stems from a deeply ingrained disease of the spirit. The white man has walked away from his past, and in doing so he has walked away from his soul.

In 1944 there was a remarkable movie made called *A Canterbury Tale*. (1) It was not a retelling of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*; it was a tale about miracles, and the grace of God. The unlikely hero of the story is a man who pours glue in women's hair. Both Butterfield and H. V. Morton described how the British people gathered strength to fight through the war by reconnecting with their past. The hero of *A Canterbury Tale* lives a life that is connected to his people, living and dead. He is not connected to them solely through the intellect, through a perusal of an old document, or through an adherence to a traditionalist sect. He is connected to his honored dead "feelingly": his heart beats as one with their hearts: "The action of my life is like it, which I'll keep, if but for sympathy." The white counter-revolution will come from the ranks of men such as the hero of *A Canterbury Tale*, men who go into the future while holding onto the strings of the past.

An intellectual people, as distinct from an intelligent people, do not go into the future holding onto the strings of the past; they sever all sentimental ties to the past and look to the future for sustenance and inspiration. A intellectualized modern might reference the past; he might even express a preference for the philosophers and theologians of the past, but if his heart is dead, if he doesn't connect spiritually with the "good old folk from long ago," he is a man with a "soul so dead," a man who prefers a postponed life, waiting for ensoulment to take place when his abstractions become reality and take the place of the God who he has never really known.

The colored tribesmen have, as yet, no history; their lives are an endless cycle of bloodlust. The liberals look to a Jacobin future with the negro as the penultimate representative of the new man, devoid of the imperfections of the evil white man. And the conservatives, the men who quote the old documents, look to a future where managerial men, who live only from the neck up, rule a world devoid of human imperfections. I do not see anything of value, anything human, in colored paganism, in liberal Jacobinism, or in abstract, managerial conservatism. I see only hell fire and the pit in those monstrous vehicles of inhumanity.

We had a covenant with our European ancestors, a covenant of blood. Not the type of blood covenant that unites the colored tribesmen in their satanic hatred of the white race. No, our ancient covenant was a covenant of spirit and blood. When we broke that covenant we lost our souls. The modern Europeans are spiritual nomads without a place to call their own. Our people, who rest in the arms of the Lord, are calling us home, home to our racial hearth fire where He has prepared a place for us in this world and the next. Christmas is coming, the goose is getting fat; why don't we renew the covenant and become Christian Europeans again, men who will not permit our people or our heritage to be blotted out of existence by colored barbarians and liberal techno-barbarians? We are a people with a sacred past. If we rise and ride, united with the people of that sacred past, miracles will occur, and the Europeans, the people of Christmas, will ride triumphant over ruin and death. +

(1) If you ever get a chance to see *A Canterbury Tale*, make sure you see the British version. The American version has been cut by a half-hour. Apparently the American distributors of the film felt that Americans were too restless to sit through a two-hour movie.

The People of Christmas

December 13, 2014

Categories: Christmas, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens



"There are many things from which I might have derived good, by which I have not profited, I dare say," returned the nephew: "Christmas among the rest. But I am sure I have always thought of Christmas time, when it has come around – apart from the veneration due to its sacred name and origin, if anything belonging to it can be apart from that – as a good time: a kind, forgiving, charitable, pleasant time: the only time I know of, in the long calendar of the year, when men and women seem by one consent to open their shut-up hearts freely, and to think of people below them as if they really were fellow-passengers to the grave, and not another race of creatures bound on other journeys. And therefore, uncle, though it has never put a scrap of gold or silver in my pocket, I believe that is *has* done me good, and *will* do me good; and I say, God bless it!"

We had a friend who was our friend from early days, with whom we often pictured the changes that were to come upon our lives, and merrily imagined how we would speak, and walk, and think, and talk, when we came to be old. His destined habitation in the City of the Dead received him in his prime. Shall he be shut out from our Christmas remembrance? Would his love have so excluded us? Lost friend, lost child, lost parent, sister, brother, husband, wife, we will not so discard you! You shall hold your cherished places in our Christmas hearts, and by our Christmas fires; and in the season of immortal hope, and on the birthday of immortal mercy, we will shut out Nothing! – Charles Dickens

While traveling in the Lake District of England one summer I got lost, which turned out nicely for me, because I was offered a night's lodging by an elderly English couple who were very kind and hospitable. In the study where I slept that night there was a painting that my host told me was by an unknown German painter. The painting depicted a Santa Claus-type figure keeping a black devil under lock and key. The painting brought to mind Prospero and Caliban.

I think, and possibly I'm alone in this, that works like the old German painting and Shakespeare's *The Tempest* take us back to a time when the white man's racial memory was still functioning. He remembered when his people fought for the light against Cush and Nimrod, who fought for the devil and the powers of darkness. And if such things sound too fantastical to be true, I would ask you to look at what is happening in the European nations. Can there be any doubt that black people have a special relationship with the devil? Why, in the European fairy tales, is the devil depicted as a black man? I think, and the evidence is all around us, it was because our ancestors had wise blood; they knew instinctually that the blacks had to be held in check or they would rise up and destroy everything white and Christian.

There is no contradiction between a benevolent Santa Claus and a fierce, fighting Santa Claus. Doesn't that "charity of honor" demand that all true Christian hearts should fight evil and champion the good? And who is more Christian and charitable than Santa Claus? Only our Lord, whom Santa Claus serves. We need a fighting Sinterklaas who will lead his people against the colored barbarians and the liberals.

I saw an article by a self-styled black muckraker who wrote that white complaints about black violence revealed white racism, because black violence against whites was part of black culture. The black pundit went on to explain that the slightest murmur of protest from whites was an indication of "racism," which is evil. That bit of black logic has been accepted by white people. They truly believe that they must accept black violence against whites. Whenever a black atrocity occurs that cannot be hushed up (and most of them are) some Professor So-and-so declares that the black atrocity is nowhere near as dangerous as the prejudiced reactions of white people who deplore the black atrocity. We are not only supposed to countenance black atrocities, we are also forbidden to call them atrocities. They are just expressions of black culture or else they are 'justifiable' killings and rapes, because of "the terrible legacy of white racism."

The white man's acceptance of black atrocities against whites stems from his lack of a religion. He has jettisoned his belief in the Christian God for a belief in an ongoing evolutionary process toward a heaven on earth that is always in the future, never in the present. So the white man lives in black hell while he dreams of a kingdom of heaven on earth that can and will become a reality as soon as all prejudiced white people are eliminated from the face of the earth. Prejudice is always the enemy, but only white prejudice as defined by the liberals and the colored barbarians. This prejudice pervades the very air we breathe, according to the liberals and their colored gods, and it can only be eliminated when white people are eliminated. This is why there are never any concessions made to whites. They can elect a black president, they can say nothing as their kith and kin are murdered, but still they are prejudiced. Nothing a white man does can eliminate his original sin, which is his whiteness.

I love Clement Moore's "The Night Before Christmas," Dickens' *A Christmas Carol*, the old Christmas carols, and everything that goes with a truly white Christmas. But we must never forget that Christmas is a European custom: there will be no Christmas if the colored barbarians are allowed to pollute the European nations with their presence. The formerly Christian clergymen have already handed the churches over to the colored gods: should we follow their lead and hand over our kith and kin to be sacrificed at the altars consecrated to the negro gods? No, we will not. I see a fighting Sinterklaas in my mind's eye, and I will follow his lead, because the liberals and the colored barbarians are maniacally and unalterably opposed to Christmas. How could it be otherwise? The birth of mercy incarnate is an anathema to Satan and his liberal and colored minions.

In the European Christmases of old there was a wonderful stress on intimacy: Intimacy with our kith and kin — "peace on earth, good will toward men" — and intimacy with our Lord — "Away in the manger, No crib for His bed, The little Lord Jesus laid down His sweet head." Intimacy is also stressed in modern Europe, but it is intimacy with the devil. We are urged, through every official channel of church and state, to get closer to the devil by loving and adoring the sacred negro. You can't serve the devil and Christ; a man must choose one or the other — mercy incarnate cannot be blended with cruelty incarnate.

For centuries literary critics, who do not understand literature, have been trying (and failing) to find the 'secret' meaning of Shakespeare's *The Tempest*. The secret is that there is no secret meaning. *The Tempest* is Shakespeare's 1st Corinthians 13. Prospero, like St. Paul, rejects the way of "all mysteries, and all knowledge;" and follows the simplest yet most profound way to God — "Charity never faileth." Prospero loves in and through his people. He protects his daughter from the negroid Caliban, and he forgives his kinsmen their sins against him, binding up their wounds and reconciling them to each other. By being merciful Prospero points us to the God of mercy, just as Sinterklaas does every Christmas when he helps us to celebrate the birth of the God of mercy. But the God of mercy can only come to human hearts. He needs such men as Sinterklaas and Prospero who are willing to be fierce in defense of charity, mercy, and innocence. Caliban, by his own admission, would have raped Miranda and made Prospero's isle a hellish black Babylon.

*Prospero. Thou most lying slave,
Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have us'd thee,
Filth as thou art, with human care, and lodg'd thee*

*In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate
The honor of my child.*

*Caliban. O ho, O ho! Would 't had been done!
Thou didst prevent me; I had people'd else
This isle with Calibans.*

*Prospero. Abhorred slave,
Which any print of goodness wilt not take,
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour
One thing or other. When thou didst not, savage,
Know thine own meaning, but wouldst gabble like
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes
With words that made them known. But thy vile race,
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which good natures
Could not abide to be with; therefore was thou
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,
Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.*

The murder and rape of the European people is proceeding at a rapid pace, because we no longer see that the Sinterklaas who keeps the black devils in chains and the Sinterklaas who gives presents to all the good boys and girls is one and the same. The Christmas virtues, faith, hope, and charity, must have a local habitation; they must have European hearts to dwell in. The liberals and the colored barbarians are on a satanic mission to root out those European virtues by having the heart's blood of every single European. The ghost of Christmas present tells us that we must keep the spirit of Christmas in our hearts for all 365 days of the year. So be it, let us keep the fighting spirit of Sinterklaas and Prospero in our hearts this Christmas season and throughout the year.

As I grow older I find that I am becoming one with the old squire depicted in Washington Irving's narrative of a Christmas in England. The old squire was fierce in defense of the old Christmas customs. We now need a legion of old squires to defend Christmas. What kind of people are these liberals and colored barbarians who want to destroy the Christmas traditions of the European people? I think we know what kind of people they are. They are Christ-hating technocratic liberals and Christ-hating negroid devils. Let us not blend our European Christmas with liberals or let the savage hordes of color destroy it. Instead we shall celebrate His birth as all Europeans should, with faith, hope, and above all with the charity that never faileth. Merry Christmas! +

Remembrances IV: God, the Devil, and Mau Mau

December 18, 2014

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances



"We must prepare to meet with Caliban." – Prospero

Writing in the latter half of the 19th century, Dostoevsky asked, "whether a man, as a civilised being, as a European, can believe at all, believe that is, in the divinity of the Son of God, Jesus Christ, for therein rests, strictly speaking, the whole faith."

When I went to divinity school at the turn of the century, the vast majority of my professors and fellow students believed that the answer to Dostoevsky's question was, "Yes, a civilised European can believe in the divinity of Christ." But by the time I was dismissed from my duties in 1950 I was virtually alone among my fellow clerics in my belief that a civilised European could still believe in the divinity of Christ. My fellow clerics had suddenly developed "problems" with every aspect of the Christian faith. We were supposed to redefine the Bible and the Book of Common Prayer, which was based on the Bible, in order to "meet the needs of a changing world." I fail to see in what way the world has changed that would render my belief and my ancestors' belief in the Son of God an erroneous belief. But my fellow Anglicans did believe that airplanes, automobiles, and Charles Darwin made Christ an irrelevancy.

I was not dismissed from my parish at St. John's because of my orthodox heterodoxy, because my parishioners were somewhat behind the clerics in their wisdom of the world. Having just survived a second world war in which they spent a good deal of time in bomb shelters and rebuilding bombed-out buildings, they still tended toward fairy tale beliefs in God, country, and beauty, so my "quaint" sermons, devoid of quotations from the modern Biblical exegetes and the demythologizers, struck a responsive chord in my war-torn countrymen.

And because I had forged such a close bond with my parishioners, I did not want them to think that I was leaving St. John's at my own insistence. I was offered full retirement pay if I resigned voluntarily, but when I refused to retire I was dismissed, without pension, and I was forbidden to perform any service in the Anglican Church.

I have complied with that edict in a fashion. I have not performed an Anglican service in an Anglican church, but I do have a home in London, purchased with my own personal savings and the donations of my former parishioners. And what I do in the privacy of my own home, for the benefit of my friends, is my own business.

Though I had many quarrels over changes in the prayer book and the new Christianity, I was not ultimately dismissed because of what my superiors called my "hopeless provincialism." That might have been a factor in weakening my reputation with my immediate superiors, but the final straw that broke the camel's back was my criticism of the Anglican missionary outreach in Africa and my public support of my fellow Britons in Kenya and South Africa. Certainly my friendship with Peter Delaine, whose great-grandfather had had first-hand knowledge of the events in Haiti that came in the wake of the French Revolution, had helped solidify my opinion about the horrific, satanic nature of black-dominated nations. And before that there was Thomas Jenkins, who also gave me some insight into the growing menace of a liberal-induced, black plague which involved actual black natives rather than germs.

But ultimately I think I would have retained my English "prejudice" against the colored stranger, because of a basic Christian instinct to be true to my own and to resist the encroachment of the colored stranger who would, if I let him, destroy my hearth and my neighbors' hearths. The conflicts of the Europeans in Africa are going to be the conflicts we have right here in Europe. In America it already has happened, under the guise of a false, universalist Christianity: the black barbarians and the liberal clergy men are making war on the confused remnant of white people who are at least trying to hold on to a Christian ethos even though they have lost their vision of the living God. No doubt that loss of vision is partly because their clergymen are marching around demanding, in the case of America, civil rights, and in the case of Britain, the wholesale extermination of the whites in Africa. Oh, they call it democracy and equality of the races, but in every African nation in which the blacks come into power, under the guise of democracy, the whites are slaughtered. As it was in Haiti, so it was in Kenya, and so it will be in South Africa if the South African people ever abandon apartheid and democratize their nation.

But it is of Kenya I want to speak, because it was to Kenya I was summoned, and it is in Kenya that Satanism in its purest form, certainly not pure in the good sense of the word, reared its satanic head. Mr. Anthony Jacob, my good friend, has pointed out in his book *White Man Think Again* that Kenya is very much the world:

"Kenya, we must understand, is a microcosm of the entire West. Therefore let us ask ourselves, What would have been our general White position today if the world had consisted only of Kenya, with no other place for us to go to and no other form of government for us to live under? What then? We, the White race, would already have been obliterated or reduced to everlasting serfdom, would we not? Yet however fanciful it might still seem to the white peoples of the northern American states and occupied Kenya, for we cannot keep on being racially overruled and uprooted and moved on. Wherever we are now we are in effect in Kenya..."

I concur with Mr. Jacob's opinion; I saw the Mau Mau close up when I went to Kenya in 1953 and stayed there through 1955. I saw hell close up during those years, and I saw that white Europe must not perish or satanic Kenya will become the world. I'm writing this part of my memoir in the year of our Lord 1966. I was a man in my early seventies when I went to Kenya, and now, in my eighties, I have been asked why I bother to write so many unpopular things about the African menace to European civilization. Such questions puzzle me. I write because I love my people, because I love my God, and because I hate Satan. Are those not motives enough to keep striving in this world and the next?

My summons to Kenya came from a young man of 22 years of age. His parents had been fourth-generation farmers in the Kenyan Highlands, a very poor area for farming initially which the British farmers had somehow transformed into a prosperous, striving, agricultural community. They constituted five percent of the farming population of Kenya yet they produced 90% of the agricultural yield of Kenya. Of course, now that "independence" has come to Kenya and the white farmers have either fled or been exterminated there is virtually no agricultural production. The black Kenyans simply demand money from Britain and the United States, which they always receive. Considering what was done to white people in Kenya, you would think that the correct moral response from the colonial powers would be men with guns and bayonets. But it isn't. The British equivalent of carpet-baggers have flooded Kenya as the great dispensers of "charitable relief." Charitable relief for whom? Why, for the Mau Maus, of course, not for the white victims of Mau Mau terrorism. And let's be clear about the Mau Mau uprising. It was a united effort; those black Kenyans who didn't actually run with the Mau Mau – the house servants and the black workers on white farms – were all Mau Mau supporters. As it was in Haiti so it was in Kenya: there were no "good darkies."

In previous pages of my memoir, which is not a traditional memoir, I've mixed the dramatic mode of expression with the novelistic mode of expression. In this case I've chosen to use only the dramatic mode, because that is how the story of the death of British Kenya strikes me, as a tragic drama.

London, 1966

Act I. Scene 1. 7 May 1953. The Montgomery farmhouse, Kenya Highlands.

William Montgomery: I'm glad you all could come. We know what we're here for, gentlemen, but let's leave the serious business for after dinner. Reverend, will you do us the honor?

Christopher Grey: Almighty God, give us grace that we may cast away the works of darkness, and put upon us the armor of light, now in the time of this mortal life (in the which thy son Jesus Christ came to visit us in great humility); that in the last day, when He shall come again in glorious majesty to judge both the quick and the dead, we may rise to the life immortal, through Him who liveth and reigneth with thee and the Holy Ghost, now and forever. Amen.

William Montgomery: Thank you, Reverend. And I must apologize for not having you over to dinner sooner, but I hear you've been well taken care of by Edward.

Grey: Yes, he's been taking good care of me.

Edward Owen: It's more the other way around.

Margaret Montgomery: I understand you grew up on a farm yourself, Rev. Grey.

Grey: Yes, in Yorkshire, it's a good countryside, right out of Constable.

Margaret: How do our Kenyan Highlands compare to Yorkshire?

Grey: That's not a fair question, Mrs. Montgomery; nothing compares to the haunts of our childhood.

Susan: Even if you grew up in a city?

Grey: I think so. I'm not a born-and-bred Londoner for instance, but I've grown to love it like a native. A city, if it is a European city, can capture a man's soul just as a European farm can capture his soul.

John Williams: I could never be happy in a city. My people have been farmers for more generations than I can count.

Grey: Many farmers feel that way. I know my parents did.

Susan: Why did you become a minister, then?

Margaret: Susan, I must remind you that we invited Rev. Grey for a dinner and not an inquisition.

Grey: I don't mind. But it's difficult to say, Susan. I suppose it was because I loved the parents who raised me on that farm so much that I became a preacher instead of a farmer.

Susan: I don't understand what you mean.

Williams: Nor do I. For a man who has a reputation for straight-forwardness and clarity, you're being very obscure.

Grey: I don't mean to be.

Ethan: He probably just doesn't want to hurl pearls before swine. He doesn't want to waste his...

William Montgomery: Ethan!

Grey: I don't see any swine here, Ethan, except for what's on the table. I'll answer Susan's question:

*Thy bosom is endeareð with all hearts
Which I, by lacking, have supposèd dead;
And there reigns love, and all love's loving parts,
And all those friends which I thought burièd.
How many a holy and obsequious tear
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye
As interest of the dead, which now appear
But things removed that hidden in thee lie.
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;
That due of many now is thine alone.
Their images I loved I view in thee,
And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.*

Jennifer: Are you answered?

Susan: Yes.

Thomas Bennet: On a much more mundane level, let me say that the mutton is excellent and the pork roast even better. Mrs. Montgomery, there is no finer cook in the Kenyan Highlands or in Britain itself than you.

Margaret: I doubt that you've sampled all the cooking in the Highlands let alone all of Britain, but I thank you, Sir Thomas, for your gallantry. Ethan, fill Sir Thomas's glass again.

Sir Charles Belcher: I'm an Australian by birth and breeding, but no matter where I settle I'll always be a Britain. I don't think anyone here feels any different.

William Montgomery: I know what you mean. I feel British to the bone, even though I've never been to Britain.

Sir Charles Belcher: We're both of the same blood. Nothing can change that.

Ethan: Do you think we'll be allowed to keep the Kenyan Highlands British?

Michael Green: I don't see why not. My family fought in both wars, and we've lived and died on our land here for four generations.

Edward Owen: That doesn't make any difference to MacLeod and company. They're here for one reason: to turn the Kenyan Highlands over to the Mau Maus.

William Montgomery: We all sympathize with what you've been through, Edward, but the Mau Maus are an aberration. They do not represent the average black Kenyan. I grant you that the Mau Maus are inhuman beasts, but I hardly think that the rest of the black Kenyans have any sympathy with them.

Edward: You knew our kind and faithful black butler, didn't you, Mr. Montgomery?

William Montgomery: Yes, but...

Edward: Well, he was one of those "good darkies," wasn't he? And he held my 12-year-old sister down while they...

Grey: Perhaps we can leave that for after dinner, Edward?

Edward: I'm sorry, I guess I'm not capable of polite dinner conversation any more.

Susan: Why shouldn't we discuss the Mau Maus right here and now? Is it because you don't want to offend the ladies? Why should we be spared the gory details?

William Montgomery: Because that's the way I want it, and you'll abide by my wishes .

Susan: Yes, Father, I only meant to say that since the Mau Maus seem to have a particular hatred for white women that we should be included in the discussion.

Grey: I'm sure your father will include you in many discussions of the Mau Maus, but he does not want you involved in a detailed discussion of their atrocities. And I agree with him.

Margaret: So do I Susan.

Edward: I didn't mean...

Green: It's not your fault, son, it's these filthy times we live in.

Peter: Is it true, Reverend Grey, that you're the strongest man in the world?

Grey: Who told you that?

Peter: Edward did.

Edward: I told him about your one-hand clean and jerk of 300 lbs. the other day.

Grey: I'd prefer that story didn't become too well known. It indicates a neglect of my pastoral duties. People will think I've spent my entire life lifting weights.

Margaret: I doubt that anyone would accuse you of neglecting your pastoral duties or any other duty, Rev. Grey. We are not as ignorant of English affairs as the English are of Kenyan affairs.

Grey: That's certainly true, and I hope that changes. What you're doing here, what happens here, is vital. I hope Britons will come to realize that before it is too late.

William Montgomery: We'll get through this crisis somehow; we always have in the past.

Ethan: This time it's different.

Green: How is it different, Ethan?

Ethan: This time the colonial government is against us and so is the government back in London.

William Montgomery: Now you're beginning to sound like Edward.

Ethan: I agree with him. Our government is going to sell us down the river, a river of white blood.

Margaret: Now we're getting back to the Mau Maus again, which is really why you gentlemen are here. Why don't you adjourn to William's study and I'll bring the dessert in there?

Grey: Nothing for me, thank you, Mrs. Montgomery, I couldn't eat another bite after that excellent meal.

William Montgomery: We'll skip dessert, Martha. Somehow I don't think cake and pie mixes well with a discussion of the Mau Maus.

William Montgomery: You both are welcome to sit in, but please keep in mind that I know your opinions on the Mau Maus already. I want to hear those other men's opinions so I can properly represent the farmers' coalition. All right? No offense taken?

Edward: No offense taken.

Ethan: I understand.

Act I. Scene 2. The study.

Bennet: I don't really see that there is anything to discuss. None of us are military men any longer; we're farmers. I say we work closely with the colonial government to help them stamp out the Mau Maus, but I don't see the need for our own private army.

Belcher: It worked in South Africa for years.

Green: This isn't South Africa. We have our own set of circumstances.

Belcher: The issues are the same. Are we going to accept black rule?

Williams: Nobody said anything about black rule. I understand that there is going to be a coalition-type government with blacks and whites and that we will still be allowed to own our farms.

Belcher: Do you believe that?

Williams: Of course, I do. What could be gained by confiscating the white farms and the white businesses? The whites are needed here, particularly the white farmers: we own 5% of the land and yet we produce 90% of the food. No, I can't believe a coalition, government, or even an all black government would take our farms and businesses.

Belcher: I wish I could feel as confident as you do, but it seems, from the conversations I've had with Macleod's people, that we are heading to a coalition government, and then to a black government. And I do not have any hopes in a black government. Should that happen, well, I have friends in South Africa. I'll probably go there.

Green: I don't think the powers that be in London or Nairobi would permit black rule in Kenya. They might let a few blacks into the government as a token gesture, but they wouldn't turn the government over to them; that would be insane. What do you think, Reverend?

Grey: I don't think you'll like my opinion. And after all, I'm not a land owner in Kenya.

William Montgomery: I invited you here because I wanted your opinion, Reverend.

Grey: All right, you shall have it. What I'm going to say might sound a little fantastical, but just consider how fantastical our lives here on earth are and then consider what I have to say. I do not believe the Mau Mau rebellion is an aberration. I think Mau Mau is black Africa. The blacks will refrain from murder, rape, and bestiality while the white man is strong, but when the white man falters, when he doubts that he is the Christ-bearer, then what you call Mau Mau and what I call the normal, everyday activities of blacks who no longer feel the need to refrain from their devilish activities, will come to the forefront and make Kenya a living hell.

William Montgomery: Then you're telling me that the blood red tide of the Mau Mau will be loosed if we cooperate with the government and form a multi-racial government?

Grey: Yes, Mr. Montgomery, that is precisely what I am telling you. There can be no amicable union between the sons of Ham and the Europeans. There can be the benevolent rule of the white man, which is best for black and white – look at Kenya before and after the white man came here – or there can be black rule, which means extermination of the whites and a return to barbaric bestiality for the blacks.

Williams: I don't agree. A multi-racial government can work so long as we get the right blacks in place.

Bennet: With all due respect for your office, Rev. Grey, I must agree with Mr. Williams.

Belcher: Do you agree with Williams?

Green: Absolutely, I don't think the powers that be would permit an all-African government to squeeze out the white farmers.

Belcher: Then you're a fool; you're all fools if you think there can be a coalition government of blacks and whites. The Reverend is right: whites must either control blacks or be exterminated by them. I plan to present my own petition to Macleod and company. Quite probably they'll spit in my face, but at least I'll feel like I've done all that I could.

William Montgomery: I respect you for that, Charles, but I still think we can work out some compromise.

Owen: No, there can't be a compromise. What you're proposing is a capitulation.

Grey: I'm sorry this couldn't have been settled more amicably, gentlemen. I still wish you'd reconsider.

Montgomery: We still have more to discuss, but I think we've settled on our main course of action.

Grey: Well, Owen is waiting for me.

Williams: You can't take any of them seriously. They're biased, and that so-called 'Reverend' is the worst of the lot.

Green: What do you mean by "so-called Reverend"?

Williams: I mean that he was defrocked. He really isn't a Reverend.

Montgomery: That's not fair, John, he was not defrocked; he was suspended from his parish duties, but he remains an Anglican clergy man.

Williams: But why was he suspended?

Green: I believe it was for expressing opinions about blacks and whites like those he expressed right here tonight.

Montgomery: He's a good man; I have nothing against him. I just don't think he fully understands our situation here in Kenya. If we don't show ourselves willing to compromise, I think we'll lose everything.

Bennet: And if we do compromise?

Montgomery: Then I think we'll be allowed to continue living and working in the Highlands.

Green: Amen to that.

Bennet: What's wrong with you; isn't a multi-racial government what you want as well?

Williams: Yes, certainly, but I think there is something more behind this Reverend Grey character.

Montgomery: How so?

Williams: He's supposed to be a man in his seventies, isn't he?

Montgomery: Yes.

Williams: Yet, he looks to be a man in his mid-forties. And by all accounts he still possesses incredible physical strength.

Bennet: What are you driving at, John? There have been some remarkably strong men who retained their strength into their seventies and beyond. It's unusual, but not unheard of.

Williams: Are you sure of that?

Green: Say what you mean outright.

Williams: I am talking about demonic possession: these High Churchers are all Rosicrucians and Templars.

Montgomery: You are ridiculous, Williams. I'm not a church-going man myself, but I can recognize a good man when I see one. And Reverend Grey is a good man. Just because we disagree on a political stance of his does not mean we have to demonize the man.

Bennet: Williams is a crazy Methodist; what can you do with him?

Montgomery: He was joking.

Williams: Well, I don't like that type of humor.

Bennet: I'm sorry if I offended you.

Green: Grey's all right, John, he's just a little too mystical to be consulted on practical matters.

Montgomery: I'll present our views on the compromise to Macleod.

Act I. Scene 3. Same night.

Grey: They're not bad men, Edward, in fact they're good men and true. That is the problem: "Their natures are so far from doing harm that they suspect none."

Owen: They could deal with the Mau Maus in a fair fight, but they can't deal with a British colonial government and a government in London that hates their own people. Belcher is the only one who knows what is going to happen. They're all going to lose their farms, and some will lose their lives.

Grey: Where will you go from here, Edward? Do you plan on keeping the farm?

Owen: No, I kept it this long to see if we were going to be allowed to stay here in the Highlands. And by 'stay here' I mean stay here as white men who took land that was supposed to be impossible to farm and made that land the most prosperous land in the country. You heard what Green said at the meeting: Five percent of the land and 90% of the food supply. What will happen when the government breaks up the white farms and forces us to "co-manage" them with the blacks?

Grey: The blacks will turn on the whites and murder them. Then the farms will become non-productive again, as they were before the whites came.

Owen: Precisely. I'm selling before the government orders me to work with the Mau Maus.

Grey: What will you do?

Owen: I'll stay here in the Highlands.

Grey: You're still a young man, Edward. What are you – 22 years old?

Owen: I'm 23; I'll be 24 in a few months.

Grey: I'm not going to preach to you, Edward. In fact I think what you're planning to do is noble. But I'd hate to see you simply rush into martyrdom. Sometimes the duller, plodding, everyday martyrdom is what is needed.

Owen: I'm not going to rush into martyrdom, but I'm not a farmer any longer. Before the Mau Maus wiped out my family, I never thought of myself as anything but a farmer. Now I see myself as something else. I'm not going to let my family go unavenged.

You've never preached non-violence to me, Reverend, and I appreciate that. And I'll never be able to thank you enough for coming here in response to my letter. I never dreamed you'd actually come to Kenya. I thought, considering your views on the subject, that you'd send me a letter to help me persuade the compromising dunderheads like Williams that they can't trust their government, but you came here in person and did all you could to turn them away from their suicidal surrender.

Grey: I'm afraid I wasn't very persuasive.

Owen: It wasn't for lack of trying or a lack of eloquence. They just don't want to believe you or me. But something else has been bothering me. I should have told you that I was not a Christian when I wrote. And then when you came here, I still couldn't bring myself to tell you. I guess it's because I was afraid you'd leave, and I wanted you to stay. But there it is: I'm telling you now. I have no stomach for any of the 'God is love' rot. I loved my family; now they're all gone, tortured and murdered by the Mau Maus. All I care about is killing Mau Maus.

Grey: Then kill Mau Maus, Edward, kill as many as you can.

Owen: I didn't anticipate that from you.

Grey: Why?

Owens: Because you're a Christian pastor.

Grey: Maybe I'm a rather poor one then, because I don't see anything intrinsically wrong with killing members of a tribe of men dedicated to torture, murder, rape, and bestiality. What I hate to see is a waste of life. You're the last of your line; are you sure you couldn't resettle somewhere else and continue what your father and mother started here in Kenya?

Owen: You mean cut and run?

Grey: No, I mean what I said. Continue the work your parents started.

Owen: If you were in my place, would you go and start a farm somewhere else and let your parents, your brothers, and your sisters lie in their graves unavenged?

Grey: No, I would not. I'd do what you are planning to do.

Owen: Thank you.

Grey: For what?

Owen: For not lying to me.

Grey: What's that?

Owen: You see that?

Grey: The scarf?

Owen: Yes, that is the type of scarf Jenny Williams wore. As God is my witness, I don't take any satisfaction in this. He was the loudest against us, but I didn't want this.

Grey: I know you didn't, son.

Owen: And I don't take any pleasure in this either. I never shot anyone before. What should we do now?

Grey: I think we should pull the bodies off the road and burn them. It was self-defense, but we're liable to be charged with murder if we report this.

Owen: That seems like the best thing to do. I'm sorry to get you involved in this, Reverend.

Grey: You didn't force me to come here, Edward. I knew what I was coming to.

Owen: How could you know?

Grey: This devil's work is not new. The blacks belong to Satan. Whenever the white man tries to impose white culture and white ethics on the black man, Satan rears up in defense of his own.

Owen: Is it possible to believe in the devil without believing in the Christian God?

Grey: Some men claim it's possible, but I don't think it is.

Owen: I do think it's possible.

Grey: Stay true to your house and your people, Edward. That will do more for your faith than any sermon I can preach.

Owen: The fire has done its work.

Grey: Let's leave.

Act II. Scene 1. 2 months later. Offices of the Kenyan colonial government, Nairobi.

Macleod: Ruth! Ruth! Where is that damned woman. Ruth!

Ruth: Yes, sir?

Macleod: Where have you been? I need those papers on the Kimaru release. Have you typed them up yet?

Ruth: They're ready, sir, all you need to do is sign them.

Macleod: Good. Leave them on my desk.

Bureaucratic Sycophant #1: Won't the whites give you some trouble when you release Kimaru from prison? After all, Governor Ranison once called him "the African leader to darkness and death."

Macleod: I'm well aware of Ranison's comments; they were ill-timed. This is what London wants, MacMillan wants it, and the British press want it very badly.

Ruth: The whites are afraid that the Mau Maus will become worse if Kimaru becomes the head of Kenya.

Macleod: Possibly, but then maybe Kimaru will help put down the Mau Maus. But what the whites want is unimportant. They have no choice; they must work with the blacks if they want to stay in Kenya. And Kimaru is going to be in charge of Kenya.

Bureaucratic Sycophant #2 : He's already released Bunda and Kuanda, why shouldn't he release Kimaru?

B.S. #1: I'm not saying anything one way or the other. I just think the Kimaru release is going to ruffle some white feathers.

Macleod: I don't care about white feathers. I care about Macmillan and the British press. The whites are supposed to share power with the blacks, and anyone who doesn't like that can sell his farm or his business and leave Kenya.

Ruth: I think a lot of whites will leave rather than become bond slaves to the blacks.

Macleod: We're not talking about bond slaves, we're talking about sharing – is that too hard for you to understand?

Ruth: Sharing with blacks means slavery for the whites.

Macleod: What was that?

Ruth: Nothing.

Macleod: Look, this thing will work if the whites cooperate.

Ruth: Sir Charles Belcher is here again. It's the 14th day in a row. What should I tell him?

Macleod: Tell him that I'm still too busy to see him.

BS #1: Maybe now that the Kimaru deal is set, you should see him. It might help relations with the farmers in the Highlands. You can appear sympathetic to their plight.

Macleod: All right, send him in.

Act II. Scene 2.

Macleod: Sir Charles, I had no idea you were waiting so many days to see me. There must have been some secretarial mix-up.

Sir Charles Belcher: Undoubtedly.

Macleod: But now that you're here, please let me know what I can do for you.

Belcher: I've come here to try and stop a process, which might already be nearing completion, that I believe will be ruinous for the whites in Kenya. It will also be ruinous for the blacks in Kenya, but they are not my main concern.

Macleod: What is this dangerous process?

Belcher: The process by which the whites are forced to turn over their farms to the blacks.

Macleod: Sir Charles, no one said anything about confiscating white farms and handing them over to the blacks. It would be unrealistic to expect the blacks to run the farms. What we want to see is whites helping blacks to become self-sufficient.

Belcher: First off, blacks are incapable of being self-sufficient. And secondly, you have no right to make white farmers slave away for blacks while the blacks, through their Mau Mau brethren, try to slaughter the whites.

Macleod: Sir Charles, I really must...

Belcher: Let me finish and then you can be done with me. The Kenyan Highlands are a miracle of British heart and British ingenuity. The liberals claim the whites have exploited the black Kenyans, but the facts tell us something different.

If you look at the soil, temperature, and rainfall of the Highlands you would say that the entire area was unfit for farming. But starting from scratch, over approximately the last seventy years, British farmers, who own only five percent of the land – and not the best land either – have produced nine times as much per square mile as the African farmers have produced on their land. And what little success the African farmers have had has been due to white support. Yet you want to turn the Highlands over to the blacks. For what purpose? To please the college professors in London and New York? Don't do this thing. For the love of God, for the love of Britain, don't do it.

Macleod: Sir Charles, I always am glad to hear from you, and I respect your opinion, although I disagree with you, but you must realize that the process, as you call it, is already completed. Cooperation is a fact of existence in Kenya.

Belcher: Next you'll be telling me that Kimaru is going to be governor of Kenya.

Macleod: Well – and this won't be announced officially for a couple of days – he is going to become a kind of co-governor of Kenya in preparation for making him the first black governor somewhere down the line. All the white officials at every level are going to be eased out that way.

Act II. Scene 3. Next Day.

Macleod: Are you sure the house is ready?

Ruth: I've been there myself. It's fit for a king.

Macleod: Good. How about the reporters? Have they been informed?

Ruth: Yes. And Cardinal Lejeune will be there, along with the Anglican Bishop and several of the ministers from the reformed churches.

Macleod: Any word of protestors?

Ruth: No, but there is a Reverend Grey here to see you.

Macleod: That man! He's killing me with those "Kenyan reports" he's sending to the London papers. Fortunately they're all against him except for *The Guardian*.

Ruth: He's not here to protest the Kimaru release, he's here to talk about the John Williams' case.

Macleod: Williams is the nut who went around shooting people.

Ruth: He claims they were Mau Maus he shot.

Macleod: Why must you always defend my enemies?

Ruth: I didn't know you considered every white in Kenya your enemy.

Macleod: They threw 30 silver coins at me when I passed through the Highlands. I'll teach them to respect me.

Ruth: I'll tell the Reverend you won't see him.

Macleod: On the contrary, send him in. I have something to say to him.

Rev. Grey: Thank you for seeing me.

Macleod: I know why you're here, Rev. You want me to pardon John Williams. But before you do something you'll regret, let me read you parts of a letter sent to the *Nairobi Times*. I'll read you the part pertaining to the Reverend Grey: "What is this man doing in Kenya? I'm told he's as old as Methuselah and as strong as Hercules. Can such things be? There is something terribly wrong here. Sent from God, to help us? I think he was sent by some other power, to destroy us not help us. We must cooperate with the plans for a new multi-racial..." The letter goes on for another page – it must have been a slow news day – but there's no more about you. The man who wrote that letter was John Williams. Do you still want him pardoned?

Grey: Yes. The man came back from a meeting, a meeting in which he spoke out for the inter-racial cooperation that you recommend. When he returned home, he found his wife, his two daughters, and his three sons had been tortured, raped, and murdered by the Mau Maus. From that moment on, he set his heart on one thing: killing Mau Maus. He didn't just go out and shoot the first negroes he saw. He found out where the Mau Maus were, and he killed as many as he could. And he'd still be out there, doing what your troops should be doing, if the British army had not arrested him.

Macleod: We can't have people taking the law into their own hands.

Grey: If the law won't help white Christians defend themselves against black heathens, then it is not the law. It is a satanic monstrosity that must be fought with all our heart, mind, and soul.

Macleod: If you keep on in that vein, Reverend, I'll have you locked up.

Grey: Do it.

Macleod: No, I won't give you the satisfaction of martyrdom.

Grey: But you still plan on executing Williams?

Macleod: Yes, I do. He'll be executed on the same day that Kimaru gets out of prison. Both actions will show we're serious about white and black collaboration.

Grey: Some whites don't see it that way. The ones who threw you the thirty pieces of silver, for instance.

Macleod: I can't be concerned about a few lunatics. I'm doing what Macmillan wants, I'm doing what the UN wants, and I'm doing what the Christian church men want. You should be on my side.

Grey: You're doing what the church men want, but not what the Christian Europeans want.

Macleod: I don't think we have anything else to talk about, Rev. Grey.

Grey: May I see John Williams?

Macleod: Yes, I'll get you a pass.

Act II. Scene 4. John Williams' jail cell.

Williams: It's kind of you to see me, Reverend, considering what I've said about you.

Grey: That's past, John, no need to dwell on it. Let me read from the Gospel.

Williams: I'd like that, but not yet. I do need to dwell on what I said about you. You see, I convinced myself that you were some kind of demon priest because I wanted you to be wrong about the compromise. I was a farmer, not a soldier, and I just wanted to continue farming in the British Highlands and taking care of my family through that farming. You and Owen upset me with your talk about the Mau Maus not listening to reason. That has always frightened me, the idea that there are people so intent on evil that they cannot be deterred by reason. What I'm stumbling all over myself to say is this: I was wrong, wrong to accuse you of demonism and wrong not to support you at the meeting. When I saw my wife and children after the Mau Maus got through with them, I saw just how wrong, how sinful my cowardly evasion of the truth was.

Grey: John, you didn't cause your family's death. Whether you were for or against a compromise with the Mau Maus you would have been at the meeting.

Williams: No, it won't work, Reverend. I thank you for trying. But I could have put my sons and my farm hands on the alert before I came to the meeting. I can honestly say I'm not afraid to die, except for the fact that I'll have to face my family after what I did to them.

Grey: No, John, they'll be no reproaches on their faces. There will be joy, the joy of seeing their father and husband, and the joy of knowing you'll be with them and Him for all eternity.

Williams: Do you know that to be true, Reverend?

Grey: Yes, I do. I'll stay right here with you tonight, and in the morning I'll walk with you to the gallows. Through it all look at me and say those blessed words from the Gospel with me right to the end: "I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die."

Act III. Scene 1. 1960. Vatican City, the Papal Chambers.

Messenger: Monsignor Bontini is outside.

Pope John: Send him in. Monsignor Bontini, I'm so glad to see you. You've done such excellent work to put all in readiness for the ecumenical mass with Kimaru. I'm looking forward to it. The Church has been much too negligent in the past. We did not reach out to our black brothers.

Bontini: It's the Kimaru mass that I want to talk about.

Pope John: Something hasn't gone wrong? I want so much to concelebrate with Kimaru.

Bontini: Nothing has gone wrong with the details, everything is ready, Holy Father.

Pope John: That is a relief. Why do you try to upset me?

Bontini: There is not a problem with the details of the mass or with Kimaru's people, but there is a problem: it's my problem, it's something in my soul.

Pope John: Tell me about it, my son.

Bontini: It's a dream I had, Holy Father. Now, I know we are supposed to disregard such things—dreams are so disjointed and illogical—but I cannot shake off the effects of this dream. It haunts me.

Pope John: What was the dream?

Bontini: It was about Kimaru and the upcoming ecumenical mass.

Pope John: Now I see, the dream has caused you some uneasiness about the Kimaru mass.

Bontini: Yes, Holy Father. If I could talk with you about it maybe I could come to terms with my conscience.

Pope John: By all means, tell me about the dream, my son, and don't worry. I'm sure we'll be able to ease your conscience.

Bontini: It's going to seem silly—most dreams do when you tell them in the light of day—but I never had a dream of such vividness before.

Pope John: Go ahead, my son.

Bontini: It was day, I think the late afternoon, and I was preparing the cathedral for the upcoming Kimaru mass. I was alone, and I was on the altar facing the Eucharist. Suddenly, I felt a hand on my shoulder. I turned, quite startled, and saw a hooded figure with no face. He might have had a face—the hood covered something that was shaped like a human head, but there were no discernible features of a face inside the hood—no eyes, nose, or mouth.

The figure raised his hand: for some reason, I thought of the figure as a 'he' even though I could not see his face. He pointed to a side door leading out of the cathedral and made it clear I was supposed to follow him out the door. I did as he wished.

Once we exited by the side door, we were faced with an unbelievable horror. There was a vast field covered with what seemed an infinitude of mutilated bodies of men, women, and children of both sexes. All the bodies were white. Some just lay there, seemingly dead. Others were walking or crawling around, screaming in agony, often carrying their severed heads or a limb, as they moved about, screaming. And in the midst of the multitudinous sea of agonized white people was a giant negro with normal size black servants. The giant negro was Kimaru, and he was in the process of hacking white people to pieces. I could see that those white people were new arrivals, because they formed a long line behind Kimaru. They were just waiting to be slaughtered. And I heard a voice near me saying, "In so much as ye have done it unto the least of these, my brethren, you have done it unto me." I turned to look at the hooded figure and for a split second I thought I saw the face of Jesus Christ within the hood, but then the face vanished and the hood once again had just the face of darkness.

Then I saw Kimaru grow to even greater proportions. He stopped hacking the white people in pieces and started gobbling them up whole. After each gulp, he smacked his lips and smiled at me. Finally he spoke. "I am your child, Bontini, are you proud of me?" And then he laughed again. "Look there," he pointed to a large hill overlooking the slaughter, a hill which had not been there before. On the hill was Satan in a golden chariot. He had on all the papal vestments and held the mitre. Riding down the hill into the carnage of the open field, he blessed Kimaru and called him "My son." And then suddenly I was no longer in that terrible field of carnage, I was back in the Cathedral, and Kimaru was there, a normal-sized Kimaru, and he was receiving your blessing, but when I looked at your face, it was no longer your face: it was Satan's. And Kimaru started laughing and pointing at me as if he and I shared in some great devilish work. And lightning struck the Cathedral, and I saw the earth open up under my feet as I, the assembled clergy, Kimaru and his followers, and you, Holy Father, went tumbling down into hell.

In the last part of the dream, I was in a desert so hot that my skin was burning up and falling off in layers onto the dry desert sand. I thought, "A man only has so much skin, so I will be a skeleton soon, and my bones will rot here." But then a little child came to me and started cooling and healing my body with some kind of miraculous salve. When he had finished restoring my body, He became a man, and I knew the man: He was Christ. "Take care of my people, Francesco Bontini, take care of my people. Do not suffer that man to kill my people while invoking my name. Do you understand me, Francesco Bontini?"

I answered him, "Yes, Lord, I understand."

Then I was back in the Cathedral moving chairs and setting up the microphone, and when I awoke, my bed was soaked with sweat and blood, and I had open, bleeding sores in my hands and on the side of my body where the centurion's spear had pierced our Lord's body. Naturally, I went to the doctor, who said my wounds were not deep, so he put some disinfectant on them and some bandages and sent me on my way. But the wounds are deep, Holy Father, they have penetrated into my soul. Please help me to know what I should do.

Pope John: That certainly was a vivid dream, and I can understand how it could upset a man like you, a sensitive man, so much that he could self-induce the wounds of Christ upon his own body.

Bontini: But...

Pope John: Let me finish, my son.

Bontini: I'm sorry.

Pope John: You must remember that this was a dream. I repeat: it was a dream. No matter how vivid, no matter how real it seemed, it was a dream. And dreams of that kind seldom come from God, they come from our own psyche. That is what the psychiatrists tell us, and I think they know whereof they speak. You obviously have been speaking to someone who was defaming Kimaru and exaggerating the evils of the Mau Maus. You absorbed that information into your subconscious, and it came out in that vivid dream. Now, think back; did you come into contact with a racist, an individual who simply wanted to defame Kimaru and exaggerate the Mau Mau excesses simply because he hated blacks?

Bontini: Possibly. I did have lunch with that Anglican priest, Christopher Grey. He asked for a meeting with me, because he heard I was in charge of the Kimaru mass.

Pope John: I knew it. He is not even in good standing in the Anglican community. They are good men; they are our brothers in Christ, but he is an outcast man because of his racism.

Bontini: But I must say, Holy Father, that he impressed me as a very good man and very sincere. He made a case, citing many incidents that he had witnessed, against Kimaru and the Mau Maus. He has been to Kenya and seen such...

Pope John: He is a racist; you can't trust a word he says. I know that Kimaru is a Christian. Some of his followers have killed, that is true, but you must remember that they killed because they have never known compassion or mercy. The white man has only dealt with them by the use of whips and chains. They are not to be blamed for the few incidents when they shed blood, but are instead to be commended for their great restraint, because in most cases they did not shed blood. If we embrace them, take them to our hearts with loving charity and forgiveness, they will never kill again; in fact, they will show us the rare phenomenon of natural men who are infused with grace. That is a miracle, a miracle which should be celebrated; that is why we are celebrating Kimaru's journey to Rome. And you have done well in preparing for his visit.

Bontini: Have I done well?

Pope John: I have said it; that should be enough for you.

Act III. Scene 2. The Press Room of the Vatican.

English reporter: Does this move by the Vatican make you feel less hostile to Christianity?

Kimaru: I have never been hostile to Christianity. I am a Christian. I believe in the teachings of Christ. I follow the line Jesus taught. I think it helps me in many ways.

Italian reporter: How does it help you?

Kimaru: It helps me forgive those who imprisoned me unjustly and it helps me govern Kenya.

English reporter: What about the Mau Maus? It is said that they are still murdering whites.

Kimaru: They are not still murdering whites, because they never did murder whites. When blood was shed, it was shed in self-defense.

Italian reporter: Will you concelebrate with the Pope? Generally a non-Catholic does not concelebrate.

Kimaru: I am a special case: I will concelebrate the mass with Pope John. Black people have been kept away from the inner chambers of the church for much too long. Now the time has come for black people to regain their rightful place in the Kingdom of God.

English reporter: Could you mention something about the reforms you've instituted in Kenya?

Kimaru: We've returned Kenya to the blacks. Previously whites exploited the blacks; they used them as laborers and slaves. Now the blacks rule Kenya, and the whites are our helpers, not our slaves. No white business has been destroyed; no white farm has been confiscated. We have simply put black people in charge of Africa, for the benefit of blacks and whites.

Italian reporter: What made you accept the Holy Father's offer?

Kimaru: Excuse me, in my nation there is no Holy Father; we call a man by his name. The man called John wanted to recognize my mission before the world so he invited me here. I accepted.

Italian reporter: Is that what happened, your Reverence?

Pope John: Yes, that is what happened. I have followed Kimaru's career and have admired his work on behalf of his people and his efforts to bring peace and cooperation between whites and blacks in Kenya. I think Kenya can be a model for the rest of Africa and even for the rest of the world. The black race is the most Christ-like race of people; they have borne their suffering nobly and have much to show the rest of the world.

American reporter: Your Holiness, there are reports of terrible things, of torture, murder, and rape, atrocities directed against your people, against nuns and priests. What do you say about that?

Pope John: I say what I have said before. There have been atrocities on both sides of this terrible racial divide, but the great majority of atrocities have been committed by the white race against the black race. It behooves us, the Catholic people, and especially the Pontiff of Rome, to reach out to the blacks in loving charity and forgiveness and tell them how deeply sorry I am for what we, as Christians, have made them do. That is my answer to the so-called atrocities of the Mau Mau and other black tribes.

Papal Representative: Gentlemen, they'll be time for more questions after the mass when we all have dinner together. Right now, we must prepare for the mass.

Act III. Scene 3. A small restaurant in Rome on a side street near, but not too near, the Vatican City.

Bontini: I hope you don't think my joining you for dinner means I agree with your views on Kimaru.

Owen: I don't know what Rev. Grey told you, but my views on Kimaru are quite simple: I think he should be killed. And if it takes him a long time to die, that is all to the good.

Bontini: The Rev. Grey told me of your family, Mr. Owen, and I sympathize with you. But surely you cannot mean what you say. Vengeance is always wrong, but blind vengeance, where you merely strike out blindly against men whom you do not even know are guilty, is the worst type of vengeance.

Owen: Save your sermons for your parishioners, Monsignor. I'll do what I must do.

Rev. Grey: I don't think Edward is wrong, Monsignor. But I'm curious as to why you requested this meeting. You seemed to be adamantly opposed to my views on Kimaru when we talked last week.

Bontini: I'm still opposed to your opinions, but I can't help but have a certain affinity for your... well, for want of a better word, for your passion. You love your people; I can see and admire that. And I asked you to bring Mr. Owen along so I could hear more from the other side and maybe convince Mr. Owen and you that our side is in the right on this issue of Kimaru and the Mau Maus.

Bontini: Please stay; I'm sorry if I've offended you.

Owen: You haven't offended me. It's just that I've heard all the pro-Mau Mau propaganda I can stand. There's no point in listening to more.

Bontini: If you stay I promise you'll hear no more propaganda from me. I'd like to listen to you and Rev. Grey.

Owen: All right.

Rev. Grey: It's as I told you last week, Monsignor. This issue of Kimaru and the Mau Maus cuts right to the heart of existence. Is Christ the living God and did He become incarnate in the culture of the European people? Despite all their sectarian differences, despite the wars, an infinitude of all the human fragilities, did Christ come and abide with the European people?

Bontini: Yes, he did.

Grey: Was He incarnate in any other people?

Bontini: No, He wasn't, but surely you're not suggesting that God only came to save white men?

Grey: No, I am not. I am saying that the Europeans are the Christ-bearers, that the way to Christ is through the hearth fires of the European people. If you destroy those hearth fires and the people who dwell there, you will have effectively cut off mankind from the living God. Can we know God by abiding with the Asians? With the Indians? And certainly not with the blacks. Kimaru attacks the whites because he is fueled by a satanic hatred that he doesn't even understand. But his life is like it so he follows his vision of hatred and destruction – hatred for the white race and the destruction of every last vestige of Christian European culture.

Bontini: While I sit here with you and listen to you speak of Kimaru, I feel one with you. I want to strike out against him and his Mau Mau followers; I certainly don't want to celebrate Mass with them. But that feeling is only here and now, and when I leave you, I hear other voices and I'm subject to other influences.

Owen: You said that you didn't approve of blind vengeance, Monsignor. My vengeance is not blind, it is directed at the Mau Maus and most particularly at Kimaru and my family's black servant who now serves Kimaru as a manservant and chef. He not only participated in the mass murder of my parents and my brothers, but also held down my baby sister while his fellow Mau Maus raped her. Then when they had finished with her, he plucked her eyes out of their sockets and ate them. He bragged about it later. What would you do to such a creature?

Bontini: I'd kill him, but would I be right in doing so?

Grey: Yes, it would be and it is right to kill such creatures. The "charity of honor" that Burke spoke about demands that we do so.

Bontini: Those policemen are coming toward our table. Believe me, Rev. Grey, I said nothing to anyone.

Grey: I believe you, Monsignor.

1st Officer: Rev. Christopher Grey?

Grey: Yes.

1st Officer: You are under arrest as an undesirable alien. You will be put on a plane and deported to England immediately.

2nd Officer: Edward Owen?

Owen: Yes.

2nd Officer: You will also be sent to England with Rev. Grey.

Owen: On what charge?

1st Officer: That's enough of that, Rev. Grey. Leave off; they'll come peacefully.

Bontini: By your leave, officers, I'd like to accompany these men to the plane.

1st Officer: I've no objection to that, but we must leave now.

Bontini: Please, no handcuffs.

1st Officer: All right.

Act III. Scene 4. Rome Airport waiting room.

1st Officer: You understand, Monsignor, that I just follow my orders; I have nothing personal against you or your friends.

Bontini: I understand that, officer, and I appreciate you're not treating them as criminals. You know how the political winds shift. At another time, they might be welcome guests in our country.

1st Officer: You're right, that's why I don't like these assignments. Somebody obviously does not want your friends around, somebody with political muscle, but I wish whoever it is would not use the police force to settle their quarrels with political opponents.

Bontini: You could do me one more favor, officer. If I could speak privately for just a few moments with my friends, I would greatly appreciate it. We could sit right over there where you can still see us.

1st Officer: All right, go ahead.

Bontini: I feel responsible for this.

Grey: We don't blame you, Monsignor.

Owen: Of course not.

Bontini: But you see I am somewhat responsible because I did tell Pope John that I had been speaking to you when he was trying to find out why I had misgivings about my part in the preparations for the Kimaru mass. I know he is the one behind your deportation. In his mind, he is protecting me from evil influences.

Grey: So you actually did have some misgivings about the Kimaru mass?

Bontini: I didn't think I did, but I had this dream – it was terrible but also moving. The Holy Father dismissed the dream, but still it has filled me with doubts. And meeting your friend here and talking to you again has only increased my doubts.

Grey: Neither Edward nor I think we have it in our power to stop the Mau Maus without other men joining us, but with or without help from anyone else we both are committed to do what we can to fight them, because we believe they are from Satan. There is nothing more I can say to you. We've given you our witness, and you've heard and seen Kimaru. You decide.

Bontini: I pray that I do what is right. Will you pray for me?

Grey: Lord, abide with your servant Francesco Bontini and help him at the moment of truth to decide to fight for your reign of charity. In Christ's name, Amen.

Act III. Scene 5. Rome, the Cathedral.

Kimaru: This is a great moment for Africa, and it is a great moment for the people of Italy and all of Europe. I am Mau Mau, and Mau Mau is Africa. It is not just a political movement, it is a religious revival. Once, the black man ruled Africa and Europe too. Then came the great deceivers, the white men, and they destroyed the great black kingdoms by treachery. Now I, Kimaru, and my fellow Mau Maus will restore the Kingdom of Africa. There shall be no more white deceivers on the earth. The great Jesus Christ once tried to eliminate all the black people from the face of the earth. But he failed, and now it falls to me, the black Messiah who is greater than Christ, to bring the Kingdom of Mau Mau to completion. Never shall we, the black nations, again submit to white rule. The reign of Mau Mau is here.

Bontini: Stop this blasphemy, this must not go on!

Pope John: Please be seated; Monsignor Bontini has been suffering from a troubling illness. Let us go on with the mass.

Pope John: The mass is over, go in peace to love and serve the Lord and make a vow to love and serve your black brethren, whom our brother in Christ, Kimaru, has represented so wonderfully here today.

Kimaru: Mau Mau now and forever, amen.

Act IV. Scene 1. London, Christopher Grey's home.

Grey: Edward Owen resides in Kenya now; I haven't seen him since he left Britain some six months ago.

Chambers: I know that. I didn't come here to question you about Edward Owen. There was some interest in Mr. Owen after Kimaru's manservant was found murdered in his apartment right here in London about eight months ago. The manservant had been a butler in the Owen household when the Mau Mau butchered his family. Owen accused the man of participating in the massacre, so it was only normal police procedure to check out Edward Owen.

Grey: How did he check out, as you call it?

Chambers: There was no compelling evidence against him. At least no compelling evidence that was brought forward.

Grey: I'm not certain I follow you.

Chambers: I'm not playing cat and mouse with you, Reverend, although it might appear that way. I know for a fact that Edward Owen killed that loathsome creature, but I'm the only man outside yourself and Edward Owen that does know it. I can see you suspect a trick, and I understand that. But I'm a man first, and a police inspector second. I would have done what your friend did if I was in his place. He did what was right, and I wasn't about to turn him in for it.

Grey: I'm afraid I can't comment one way or the other on your rather surprising information, Inspector Chambers.

Chambers: I don't want you to, but I'm going to lay all my cards on the table about this whole Mau Mau business, and you can believe me or not believe me after I'm finished. I'll think you'll believe me when I tell it all.

Grey: By all means, Inspector, tell your story.

Chambers: You'll remember it was about eight months ago when Kimaru was visiting England. He met with the Prime Minister, he met with the Queen, and he met with the Archbishop of Canterbury. You name them, and he met them. And we, Scotland Yard, were charged with providing him security, because we were told he was a Mau Mau and there were those in the country who didn't hold with the Mau Maus. I didn't know a thing about the Mau Maus at the time. I had heard some things, good and bad, but hearing something is not the same as knowing something. So I had no definite opinions about Kimaru and the Mau Maus before I was put in charge of their safety while they were in England.

Once I got to know Kimaru, I didn't like him, but I still couldn't believe some of the things his detractors said. How could they have let him out of jail if he did half the things they said he did? But I kept telling myself I was a police officer; my personal opinion of Kimaru didn't matter. But he was a handful. He took offence at just about everything. If you walked in front of him, that was an offense to his dignity. If you didn't address him as 'His Highness' that was an affront to him and his people. Yet he never stopped insulting everything white, English, and Christian. I needed all my self-control to keep from punching that fat, bloated monstrosity. And his wives – they all acted like Scotland Yard existed solely to cater to their whims.

Well, he made the rounds and was courted and petted by the English press and the English royalty until his main toady, Mugo, the man who used to work for your friend's family back in Kenya, was found murdered. It was a clean job; he was knifed through the heart in his hotel room. Whoever got to him had climbed up to the window from ten stories down. Of course I now know that it wasn't somebody, it was Edward Owen.

I had been briefed on Owen before the murder. He, along with you, was listed as a person we should keep away from Kimaru. In terms of physical violence we were more worried about Owen. You had that column you wrote for the *Guardian*; it didn't seem likely that you'd try to kill Kimaru after excoriating him in print. Of course, I was wrong, but I'll come to that later.

Owen wasn't seen anywhere near the hotel where Mugo was murdered, but he also couldn't provide me with an alibi. But still, the fact that he was known to have hated Mugo was not enough to arrest him. We had him in the station for over four hours of questioning before we released him with instructions not to leave London until we told him he could leave. I was certain we'd have enough evidence to arrest him within the week.

The next day I was called into the commissioner's office. He said, "I got a call from Kimaru. He says he has some evidence regarding Mugo's murder that he'd like you to see."

"All right, I'll go out there and see what he's got for me."

Kimaru, when he wasn't in London, was living in a big country estate about ten miles west of London. I had no idea what the evidence might be, but it was my case, so I headed for his estate as soon as I left the commissioner's office. I don't need to tell you what a fuss the papers were making about the poor innocent negro who came here on a peaceful diplomatic trip with Kimaru and was then brutally murdered. I wanted to clear the case up quickly, but I also didn't want to be railroaded into making an arrest before I had enough evidence.

Kimaru was scheduled to go back to Kenya in a few weeks, but he had certainly fixed up the place as if he planned on staying there forever. Inside it looked like a pleasure palace of one of those Arab potentates. He was surrounded by a large circle of scantily clad women and numerous black toadies, all of which I had come to expect when dealing with Kimaru. He cleared the room and bid me sit down.

Kimaru: I have incontrovertible evidence that Edward Owen murdered my servant Mugo.

Chambers: If you have such evidence, I'd like to see it.

Kimaru: Flip the switch on the lower right corner, and then watch the film, Inspector Chambers.

Owen: I've come to send you to hell, Mugo.

Mugo: You won't touch me, white filth. You haven't the courage. You're too afraid of Mau Mau to do anything against its power.

Kimaru: Will justice be served, Inspector?

Chambers: With that film as evidence, I think justice will be served.

Kimaru: I think Owen should be handed over to me for Mau Mau justice, but I don't suppose you will do that.

Chambers: No, we won't. He'll be tried in a British court.

Kimaru: Will he die for his crime?

Chambers: I don't know; that is not up to me.

Kimaru: I suppose his lawyer will bring up that old story about Mugo's massacre of the Owen family.

Chambers: Yes, I'm sure that will be brought up.

Kimaru: Do you believe his story?

Chambers: What I believe doesn't matter.

Kimaru: Oh, but it does matter what you believe, Inspector Chambers. You see, I attended one of your English universities, and I know about your jury system. If the jury feels that Owen was acting out of a justifiable rage over the massacre of his family, they might not exact the death penalty; they might be much too lenient. So I ask you, as a typical Englishman, do you believe what Edward Owen told you about Mugo and Owen's young sister and the rest of the family?

Chambers: Before I answer that question, let me ask you a question. Why did you film Mugo's room that night?

Kimaru: Because I was hoping that we could catch Owen in the act of killing Mugo.

Chambers: So you knew that Owen was going to kill Mugo that night?

Kimaru: I didn't know which night, but I was sure he would try.

Chambers: Did Mugo know that he was being filmed, did he know that he was being set up?

Kimaru: No, of course he didn't.

Chambers: So you just let him be killed?

Kimaru: Of course, what is one man compared to the cause of Mau Mau? I would sacrifice 10,000 Mugos in order to destroy an enemy of Mau Mau. Owen is an implacable enemy; he needed to be destroyed. Of course most of the damage has already been done. He brought that priest into the picture.

Chambers: You mean the Rev. Grey?

Kimaru: Yes, he has done harm to the Mau Mau cause, but not much. Only a few of your English commoners believe what he says. Your politicians, your clergy, and your professors all support Mau Mau.

Chambers: And what is Mau Mau?

Kimaru: It is everything Reverend Grey says it is. Mau Mau is dedicated to the complete destruction of the white race, by torture, murder, and rape.

Chambers: Why?

Kimaru: Because we worship Satan and hate Christ. You British should pay more attention to history. Before the white man came to Africa there was Mau Mau, and now that the white men are being driven out of Africa, the Mau Mau will resurface. And not just in Africa, we will occupy all of Europe, your professors and politicians will invite us in, and then....

Chambers: You'll torture, murder, and rape.

Kimaru: Yes, Englishman, I think you're beginning to understand. But I understand you as well, Englishman. I know you won't lie to me. Will you submit this film as evidence against Edward Owen, knowing that Mugo was indeed the key conspirator in the torture, murder, and rape of Owen's family?

Chambers: No, I will not submit that film as evidence. I'll take that film and destroy it.

Kimaru: I knew you wouldn't lie. You have the mark on you. You're what they call a true bred Englishman. But you know this means that you must die.

Chambers: Yes.

Kimaru: Unfortunately I can't have my people do the usual mutilations, because your body must be found, and it must appear you were killed by Edward Owen. But I still think we can find some other way to make your death as painful as possible without leaving any marks. You can see why I asked you to leave your revolver at the door.

Act IV. Scene 2. Still in Rev. Grey's home.

Chambers: You know what happened after that, Reverend. He had his henchmen take me downstairs to his homemade torture chamber. Every Mau Mau should have one. He told me grisly stories of what he had done to whites in Kenya and what he was going to do to them when he got back to Kenya. He also told me of the white slavery rings he had started right here in Britain. Then he gave orders to his henchmen to start in on me. But they never started. A masked figure, just like in the Zorro and Bulldog Drummond books, suddenly appeared. He put a bullet through each of the henchmen's heads and then he walked up to Kimaru and strangled that 400 pound monstrosity, after which he cut me loose and left.

You had no way of knowing about the film, Reverend, or that I had already decided to destroy it, so you didn't reveal yourself. But let me assure you that I destroyed the film; it perished in the fire, which according to my report and that of the fire commissioner, was started by faulty wiring. It was a shame that Kimaru and two of his colleagues were burned beyond recognition. The rest of his people got out safely. No doubt they'll return to Kenya and attach themselves to another Mau Mau dictator.

Grey: Yes, the death of Kimaru doesn't end the Mau Mau uprising. In point of fact, the Mau Mau element we shall always have with us. It can be contained and controlled if whites are strong, but it will always be there, lurking in the subterranean recesses of the black man's soul, ready to surface whenever white Christians lose faith in their people and their God.

Chambers: You might think I was negligent in not reporting what happened that night, but I knew they wouldn't believe me. Torture chambers and a mysterious masked man? They'd have locked me up as a murderer and a madman.

Grey: You did what was best. Now, you can still keep an eye out for the Mau Mau movements right here in Britain.

Chambers: We're in for it, aren't we?

Grey: I'm afraid so.

Chambers: Something to do with reaping what we've sown?

Grey: Yes.

Chambers: Well, I'll be heading back to my flat.

Grey: Inspector, before you go...

Chambers: Yes?

Grey: It's possible that you didn't destroy the film and still mean to use it against Edward Owen, or possibly there never was a film and you want to bluff me into implicating Edward. I don't believe any of that. I believe everything you told me, but I have no right to violate another man's confidence, so I'll not say anything about Edward Owen.

Chambers: I understand.

Grey: But I will say something about that masked figure. Of course it was me. I'm glad I got there in time, and I was proud to stand with a true bred Englishman. If you'll let me, I'd like to shake your hand.

Chambers: I'd like your blessing, too.

Grey: Everlasting God, which has ordained and constituted the services of all angels and men in a wonderful order: Mercifully grant, that they which always do thee service in heaven, may by thy appointment succor and defend us in earth; through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Act V. Scene 1. September 1963. The Papal chambers, Rome.

Paul VI: Welcome, Monsignor... I mean, welcome, Francesco. I hope you do not blame the pontiff of Rome for your troubles.

Bontini: I don't blame anyone but myself for my troubles. There are some lines from that great English playwright Shakespeare that describe me:

"Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal
I serv'd my King, He would not in mine age
Have left me naked to mine enemies."

In my case, it was the Pope, but the result was the same, and the fault was mine, not for attacking Kimaru – I'm proud of that – but for putting the Pope's will above God's will.

Paul VI: You've strayed far from the true faith, if you can say such a thing.

Bontini: I've spent three years in prison dwelling on this thing we call faith, and I don't think slavish devotion to an organization that has completely abstracted itself from Christ and His people constitutes "The Faith."

Paul VI: You're just bitter against the Church, because of your time in prison.

Bontini: Why would you say that, your Reverence? It was not the church authorities that had me imprisoned, although you could have used your influence to get me out sooner.

Paul VI: I asked you to come here, to welcome you back, and to assure you that the Holy Father loves all of his children, even the wayward ones.

Bontini: But especially the black, wayward children, if "wayward" is what you call torture, rape, and murder. Your predecessor had nothing but "loving forgiveness" for the Mau Maus that tortured, raped, and murdered Catholic priests and nuns. One of those nuns came from my village; she was a second cousin. And I still went ahead with the Kimaru mass. There is blood on my hands and blood on Pope John's hands as well as on your own, Montini, because you continued your predecessor's policy of betrayal. To you, a white man is nothing; he is just grist for your satanic mill of negro worship. I don't know what your ultimate aim is, nor, I think, do you. You are just following the liberal winds of the times. You don't want to Christianize the blacks; you want to worship them. I saw this at the Kimaru mass, and I see it in your so-called evangelization efforts in Africa. Christ loves us all, but does He hate the white race enough to sanction what you are doing? Is He willing to play second fiddle to your black gods?

Paul VI: I asked you here in loving forgiveness, and this is how you respond. Now we will speak, and our voice is that of the Church. You will cease and desist with your newspaper articles against the Church's outreach to Africa and the other colored lands.

Bontini: Or else?

Paul VI: Or else we will be forced to excommunicate you.

Bontini: I've already been defrocked and I haven't been to mass in three years, so do your worst.

Paul VI: I can also have you fired from your job on the paper.

Bontini: I suppose you can, but I still say do your worst. I've had it with you people. You're very good haters when it comes to white people, and you have no real warmth for your abstract little black gods. Good day, Montini.

Act V. Scene II. A road in Kenya.

Ezekiel: Stop! The wrath of the Lord has come upon you.

Mau Mau Leader: It's that mad prophet. Kill him...

Mau Mau Warriors: Run or he'll shoot us all down like dogs!

William Montgomery: It's a sickening sight, isn't it, Ethan?

Ethan: Yes, it is, but I'd sooner see dead Mau Maus than you, or Peter, Mother, Susan, or Jennifer lying there.

Owen: He's right, Mr. Montgomery. It had to be done.

William Montgomery: I know that. It just sickens me that I have to be the one to do it.

Ethan: He's gone. I'd like to thank him; he warned us the raid was coming. How did he know, Edward?

Owen: I don't know, but he always seems to know when they'll strike.

Ethan: Even though there were more guns firing at them from our side of the ridge, they still ran away from him and toward us.

Owen: That's because they're afraid of him; they don't believe he's mortal. They think he's some sort of ghost, an avenging ghost.

William Montgomery: They're partly right.

Ethan: What do you mean by that, Father?

William Montgomery: Ezekiel is mortal, but unless I miss my guess, he's also a ghost of a man. It was about five years ago that he first started appearing at the most opportune moments for whites and the most inopportune moments for the Mau Maus. He seems to have a sixth sense about their movements. He anticipates where they're going to strike, and then he strikes first.

Owen: Who do you think he is?

William Montgomery: I think he is Thomas Cooper. His family was massacred by the Mau Maus in the same month that John Williams' family was massacred. He almost never set foot off his farm, but on that particular day he was at a neighbor's farm to look at a prize bull and some heifers his neighbor was selling. His whole family, his wife, his four daughters, and his three sons, were all murdered.

He wouldn't let anyone else touch their mutilated bodies. He piled them in a truck and drove off into the jungle. The truck was found a few weeks later, but there was no sign of him or the corpses of his wife and children.

Before John Williams died, he said something to me that I didn't understand at the time. He said, "Ezekiel still lives." I now think that Williams teamed up with Cooper after his family was massacred. They caught Williams, but Cooper has kept on fighting, learning more and more about the Mau Mau ways and putting that knowledge to good use.

Ethan: He saved our family.

William Montgomery: Yes, he did, for now. But I think it's time to get out of Kenya, son. I've been talking it over with your mother, and we can't see any other option. British Kenya is dead. We've thought of buying land in South Africa, but we'd soon be facing the same thing there that we faced here.

Ethan: But won't we be facing the same thing in Britain if somebody doesn't fight here?

William Montgomery: Yes, we will, but not right away, and I'd like some peace for a change. A farm in Scotland will give me more breathing space than one in South Africa. I suppose you think I'm cutting and running.

Owen: Not in the least; you can only do so much. I'd hate to see any member of your family the victim of the Mau Mau.

William Montgomery: What about you, Edward? Why have you stayed so long in Kenya? There's nothing left for you here.

Owen: What's left for Ezekiel?

Ethan: The war against the Mau Maus?

Owen: Precisely. I'd like to meet this Ezekiel and see if he really is Thomas Cooper. And whether he is Cooper or someone else, I'd like to join him.

William Montgomery: God bless you, Edward. But my war ends here. Let's burn their bodies.

Act V. Scene 3. Christmas Eve Day, 1964, London, Rev. Christopher Grey's house.

Bontini: Won't you come in? The Rev. Grey is not in at present, but I expect him back shortly. My name is Francesco Bontini, and I've been residing here for the last three months. The Reverend tells people that I'm here to help him with his pastoral duties, but I'm really here because I'm not welcome in Italy. My mother and father, who were so proud of me for becoming a priest, are now ashamed of me for getting myself defrocked. So I'm taking an English sojourn until I can decide where to go and what to do with the remainder of my life.

William Montgomery: I've heard about your story from a mutual friend, Edward Owen.

Bontini: Ah, Edward, the man of passion. How is he now? Is he still in Kenya?

Montgomery: Yes, he's still in Kenya. And I suppose you could say he's well, at least as well as a man who has chosen Edward's path can be. But I might as well wait before I say anything more.

Bontini: Why is that?

Montgomery: Because Edward is the reason I'm here. He sent me a letter that he wants me to give to Reverend Grey. He sent it through me in case the Rev. Grey's mail was being checked.

Bontini: That was a wise precaution. The Reverend has many, many friends, because his life has been a life of charity, but he also has many enemies in the government who would like to see him in prison.

Montgomery: It's all madness, the Labour Party's hatred for all things white and British.

Bontini: It is madness. But my own nation is suffering from the same madness. Only in my nation, whose history is so tied up with the Roman Church, the Pope has given religious sanction to the hatred of the white race.

Montgomery: There's no real difference between our two nations regarding the love of the negro and the hatred of the white race. In England the state church removed Rev. Grey for being a "racist," and the leaders of the Scottish kirks have recently abandoned the commandments in favor of the one great commandment, "Thou shall not be a racist." Which of course translates to "thou shalt love the negro with all thy heart, mind, and soul, and thou shalt hate the white man with all thy heart, mind, and soul."

Bontini: Are you living in Scotland now?

Montgomery: Yes, but I've brought the family down to stay a week in London. I've got a few hired workers that can take care of the farm until I get back.

Bontini: You and your family will be here for dinner tonight, won't you?

Montgomery: Yes, I wouldn't miss it for the world. It was kind of Rev. Grey to invite us.

Bontini: You know the Reverend is even busier now than when he was the official pastor at St. John's. Now he is the unofficial pastor of the entire city of London. So many lost souls are drawn to him, trying to find something, or perhaps I should say someone, to keep them afloat in this terrible modern world we live in. There he is now.

Grey: I know that's a very un-English welcome, but I'm so very glad to see you.

Montgomery: I wanted to come sooner, but the farm I bought needed a lot of my attention. I haven't felt confident that I could leave it until now, when there isn't a whole lot to be done.

Grey: No apologies necessary. You forgot I grew up on a farm.

Bontini: Mr. Montgomery has...

Montgomery: Please, I'm not a 'Mr.' to my friends.

Bontini: All right then. William has a letter for you from Edward Owen. He sent it through William for reasons of security.

Grey: If you'll excuse me for a moment, gentlemen, I'll read the letter.

Act V. Scene 4. One-half hour later.

Grey: I'd like to share – I have Edward's permission – some parts of this letter with you. Let me start about one page in, right before he meets Ezekiel:

"Even though I was sleeping light (I've learned to sleep light since the Mau Mau business started), I still didn't hear him come into my camp. He left me a little map; without it I never would have found his cave, which was covered by underbrush too thick for anyone to see through."

"I was surprised how vast it was inside considering how small the opening and the initial passage to it was. When I got to the larger part of the cave, where I could stand upright, I couldn't see anything. Before my eyes could become accustomed to the semi-darkness, I heard a stern voice, 'Stay where you are. The footing is treacherous over there. I'll come and get you.' He turned on a large flashlight and came to my side. 'Come this way.'

"I did as I was told and we soon entered his main living quarters. There was a small stove, one chair, a box of books, a radio, a large supply of water and food stuffs, and a sleeping bag.

"Now, Mr. Owen, what do you want from me?"

"I'm not here to inform on you; my family was massacred by the Mau Maus too."

"I know that, otherwise I wouldn't have invited you here."

"I smiled. 'How did you manage that?'

"There are things I've learned to do."

"Listen, the long and the short of it is that I'd like to join you in your fight against the Mau Maus."

"He spread his hands out and bid me look at his cave. 'Could you live here?'

"No, not for more than a few weeks."

"I've lived here for over 10 years. Some nights when I go out on a raid I sleep out, but this has been my home."

"Surely there must be something I can do to help."

"You've done many things to help already." He pointed to the radio. 'I hear things. You've gone to Britain to kill Mau Maus.'

"Yes, I have."

"The Lord will bless you for it."

"I'd like to know more about you – are you Thomas Cooper?"

"I was Thomas Cooper, a lukewarm, worldly Christian. Now my name is Ezekiel."

"Why take the name Ezekiel?"

"He took me to another section of the cave. What I saw took me aback, but I was not shocked. Ezekiel's manner kind of prepared you to see things that were out of the ordinary. 'This is my family.' He said this and pointed out his family in the most natural way imaginable. And he wasn't pointing to gravestones, he was pointing to eight skeletons, the skeletons of his seven children and his wife. He stood in the midst of the skeletons and quoted from memory, "'And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest. Again he said unto me, Prophesy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord. Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the Lord. So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army.'"

"Then he stared at me and spoke in a voice of ecstasy, 'I shall be allowed to die in this cave; though pierced with Mau Mau spears or shot by Mau Mau rifles, I will come back here to die and I shall see those bones, the bones of my wife and children, come together and live and breathe again. And we shall be a great army that goes against the Mau Maus, who are the devil's own. I have seen him at their rituals; he is their lord. But my Lord, the Christ, the Son of the Living God, will go forth and send the Mau Maus and the devil to eternal hell. And I will embrace my family again.'

"I'm not fully conveying the passion of this man called Ezekiel. If you picture King Lear in the storm you might get an idea of what he sounded like, and how I felt as I listened to him."

"Is he crazy? He didn't appear crazy. And really, is there anything he said about his family that isn't in keeping with the Christian faith, at least the true faith that Europeans used to believe? He loves his family and his people, and the Mau Mau massacres of his family and his people have made him a raging apostle of the God who raises the dead to life."

"I once thanked you for not preaching to me, Reverend. But I now realize you were preaching to me in the only way that I could understand. Christ is our holy defender, and the cult of the Mau Mau, which is the cult of Satan, has one foe who hates that devilish cult more than Ezekiel and Edward Owen hate it. Christ hates Mau Mau because He loves us. There are so many Europeans, the only ones who I respect and love, that have borne witness to the Christ who is 'the grave where buried love doth live.' He is their Savior and He is mine. But then I guess you always knew that."

"How could you not know it; you always knew my heart."

Grey: He goes on to tell how he keeps an eye on Ezekiel, but he does not meet him at his cave, because he doesn't want anyone to follow him there. Twice a month he lets Ezekiel find him, and he passes on some food stuffs, ammunition, and reading materiel. Ezekiel did not want any 'secular' reading, but Edward persuaded him to take a copy of *King Lear* and Scott's *Lay of the Last Minstrel*. Ezekiel says King Lear's journey is his journey – "I let my family down, because I didn't know the Lord enough to recognize the devil, who was in the Mau Maus, when I saw him."

Montgomery: I'm sure Ezekiel will live and die there in Kenya, but what about Edward? I don't like to think of him staying there.

Grey: He mentions South Africa; I think he'll eventually settle there.

Bontini: And who knows, maybe I'll join him there.

Grey: Not so fast, I need you here.

Bontini : All right, I guess we do make a good team. You're kind of a religious version of Sherlock Holmes, and I'm your Italian Doctor Watson.

Grey: It's for you, William.

Montgomery: It's my wife; she wants to know if she and the girls should dress formally.

Grey: They can if they want to, but they'll put the rest of us to shame if they do. I'd suggest informal attire. There will be a service, then dinner, and then some festivities, all very un-Cromwellian. On this blessed night we'll forget all about the Mau Maus and concentrate on the Lord of the feast.

"Almighty God, which hast given us thy only begotten Son to take our nature upon Him, and this day to be born of a pure virgin: Grant that we being regenerate and made thy children by adoption and grace, may daily be renewed by thy Holy Spirit; through the same our Lord Jesus Christ who liveth and reigneth with thee and the Holy Ghost, now and ever. Amen."

-The End-

Born to Raise the Sons of Earth

January 3, 2015

Categories: Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Thomas Nelson Page



God rest you merry, gentlemen
Let nothing you dismay,
Remember Christ our Savior
Was born on Christmas Day,
To save us all from Satan's power
When we were gone astray.

Mau Maus walked the streets of New York City, demanding the death of white police officers:

What do we want?
Dead cops!
When do we want it?
Now!

The liberals looked on with approval and then refused to acknowledge that their approval of “understandable black rage” had anything to do with the murder of two police officers, who were – ironically – not white but mistakenly taken for white by the black Mau Mau who shot them. White genocide will not cease until white people once again hate where they should hate and love where they should love. Europeans who love much will kill to protect their own. There is only one proper response to the type of satanic hatred that was on display in the liberal-sanctioned anti-white march in NYC and the anti-white marches throughout the anti-nation called the United States of America.

The white grazer, as a result of absorbing centuries of rationalist pap, lacks the ability to recognize evil. So long as the liberal cloaks his evil in some tangentially civilized, rational form the grazer will remain a grazer. The liberal always sanitizes his evil agenda with sugarized catch words and phrases such as “inclusiveness” and “combating racism,” but liberalism is pure negation; it is a parasitical ideology that feeds off the living organism of Christian Europe. This is the reason the liberal always speaks and acts according to the rules and principles of a bastardized Christianity. Lacking a soul of his own, he must feed off the ancient faith of people who did have souls. Once every last white Christian dies, liberalism will cease to exist and then colored barbarism, not liberalism, will envelope the earth. The conservative universalists tell us the colored races will usher in a new Christian era, but that will not be the case. We will either have a white Christian Europe or we will have a colored Babylon.

Liberal utopianism and Christian utopianism: The adherents of the former ideology make the destruction of everything white and Christian their *raison d'être* while adherents of the latter ideology stand by while the white race is destroyed, because they yearn for a Christian paradise where only pure and perfect colored people preside. Of course they will need a few Christian Atticus Finches to preside over the brave new Christian world. Both groups, the liberal utopians and the Christian utopians, must camouflage their hatred of white Europeans with utopian rhetoric, because what they advocate is a march toward darkness and death. Who would march to that tune if it was not cloaked in utopian finery?

There is no mercy or compassion in the liberals or in the conservatives who try to appease them. The true European will grasp this and take steps to protect his people instead of begging mercy from liberals, who have no concept of mercy. How can anything humane come from a people who have renounced the humane God? The satanically inspired, inhuman liberals and their subhuman colored gods will never cease from their efforts to destroy white Europeans. We can either fight for our people or we can betray them by universalizing them into a cosmic trash heap. I believe we should fight, but then I am not a cosmic Christian.

In the great Christmas classics such as Dickens' *A Christmas Carol* and Thomas Nelson Page's *Santa Claus's Partner*, which was inspired by Dickens' work, the main character has a Christmas transformation: he goes from darkness to light. There is no finer scene in movies or literature than the one in which the spiritually transformed Scrooge goes from the dark streets of London into the light of his nephew's living room where his kith and kin are making merry in honor of the Babe who was born in Bethlehem.

There are far fewer Christmas transformations now that the founder of Christmas has been blended with – and often replaced by – the negro, but there will always be some brave souls who will seek and find, in defiance of our modern negro-worshipping society, the God of mercy and love.

Although the conversion experience remains the same — that shall never change — the way a transformed sinner responds to society after his conversion will, of necessity, be quite different from the responses of Scrooge and Berryman Livingstone. Those repentant sinners were still living in Christian societies, so after their conversions they sought out the Christian people they had shunned all their lives in order to make amends and to become part of the mystical body of Christ. ‘Tis not so with today’s convertite. He must shun his fellow Europeans as he would the plague. And in point of fact his fellow Europeans do have the plague; they have a spiritual plague. The liberal contingent hates the Christ Child, and the grazers want to wrap Him in swaddling clothes and take Him to their Super Bowl parties where He can be placed in the cloak room and ignored. The modern repentant Scrooge must walk away from his nephew's house, inhabited by liberal negro worshippers and stupefied grazers, in order to find that mystic thread to the past where his people dwell, the people who worshipped the Savior in spirit and in truth.

The repentant Scrooge of modern Europe does not shun his fellow Europeans because he lacks humanity, he shuns them because he has left the cult of liberal inhumanity behind, and as a consequence he needs communion with Christian souls rather than community with liberals, who worship Satan through the negro, or with grazers, who wander aimlessly over the fruitless plains of negro-worshipping Europe, trying to sustain themselves on the opiates of modernity, such as drugs, sex, and blood sports, while they let the ancient virtues of their ancestors – faith, hope, and charity – fade away into the dark night of Babylon.

Can a man live alone? No, he can't. But a false, fabricated communion with liberals and grazers is not a true communion of souls. Such a coupling estranges a man from God and makes him feel as if he is wallowing in a spiritual pig sty. If we stay with our blood faith, prepared to hold to that faith though the whole world be against us, God will not abandon us. He will give us the human and divine aid that we need to sustain us in the day of battle. That was the belief of our ancestors and that is our trembling faith. If it sounds like the stuff that fairy tales are made on, that is because it is. The European people are the people who believe in fairy tales. We are the all-or-nothing people. Either the Christ tale is true, and He shall raise us up on the last day, or it's all false and we are of all men most to be pitied. The ruling liberal elite in the Western world has, for virtually the entire 20th century and into the 21st century, proceeded on the assumption that Christ be not risen and our fairy tale faith is indeed false. The Europe of 2015 is the end result of that assumption.

I do not look on the European people's current fallen state as a permanent turning-away from Christ, because I believe in the one essential part of the European fairy tale – the hero who sets the kingdom right. He defeats the powers of darkness arrayed against his people, because his strength comes from a heart infused with a divine charity that comes from the heart of our

Lord. The dragon that the hero must overcome is the dogmatic theology which is spewed out by the religious systematizers, the men who think that God can be put in a little box only they can unlock. If the hero can break the rationalist spell, he will be like unto the Ancient Mariner:

The self-same moment I could pray
And from my neck so free
The Albatross fell off, and sank
Like lead into the sea

The systematizers and their adherents, who are ever ready to impose their systems on Christ's people, do not love Christ in and through His people; they have rejected the divine-human channels of grace. What they love is their own minds, so they create a god that is a reflection of their minds and put that man-made reflection in a box labeled 'God.' Then they bid men come and worship that box. But the true God? He cannot be placed in a theologian's black box, He is the spirit who will go where He lists. His love is revealed to us in the hearts of His people. The image of Satan, which is seen in a mind concentrated in itself, is revealed to us in the hermatically sealed black boxes of the religions systematizers. Dickens depicts the conflict between the systematizers and truth in a comic sequence in *Great Expectations*:

By that time, I was staggering on the kitchen floor like a little drunkard, through having been newly set upon my feet, and through having been fast asleep, and through waking in the heat and lights and noise of tongues. As I came to myself (with the aid of a heavy thump between the shoulders, and the restorative exclamation "Yah! Was there ever such a boy as this!" from my sister), I found Joe telling them about the convict's confession, and all the visitors suggesting different ways by which he had got into the pantry. Mr. Pumblechook made out, after carefully surveying the premises, that he had first got upon the roof of the forge, and had then got upon the roof of the house, and had then let himself down the kitchen chimney by a rope made of his bedding cut into strips; and as Mr. Pumblechook was very positive and drove his own chaise-cart—over everybody—it was agreed that it must be so. Mr. Wopsle, indeed, wildly cried out, "No!" with the feeble malice of a tired man; but, as he had no theory, and no coat on, he was unanimously set at nought—not to mention his smoking hard behind, as he stood with his back to the kitchen fire to draw the damp out: which was not calculated to inspire confidence.

The conservative Pumblechooks are in the same camp as the liberals: they drive different chaise-carts, but they both believe that abstract theoreticians in chaise-carts possess the truth. White genocide will not be halted until we abandon the rationalism of the systems and return to our fairytale faith in the God-Man. A case in point: When the NYC policemen, at the funeral of the two officers shot and killed because of the liberals' support for the sainted Michael Brown and Eric Garner, turned their backs on the liberal Mayor of NYC, they were protesting the liberals' policy of always supporting the negro criminal over the white police officer. That is all well and good. But the officers' mild protest was still within the parameters of liberalism. They had not come to a realization that white people cannot just stick their tongues out at liberals, they must fight them and their colored allies to the knife. There will be no justice or compassion in a society run by liberals for the benefit of their black gods. A counter-revolution, not a reform, is needed. But in order to see this, a man must divest himself of his rationalism and see the world as it is.

The world is as the European fairy tales describe it: there is a devil and there is a God, who is at war with the devil and his minions. We cannot seek redemption from the devil, we can only call on Christ by name and fight the devil and his minions. Once my mad-dog liberal sister heard me reading one of Grimm's fairy tales to my children. She was appalled, because that particular tale was about two children who died and came back to life. That was "unrealistic." My sister's reaction to the fairy tale was symptomatic of all liberals and the conservatives and grazers who kowtow to them. The spiritual transformation that took place in the European people after they saw with their hearts and believed in Christ, has been rationalized away. Instead of judging and condemning modern Europe for abandoning the ethos of the European fairytale, the modern conservatives, both lay and clerical, try to show the liberals that Christianity is just as logical and scientific as liberalism. And they are right. Christianity, *as a system*, is just as logical and scientific as the liberals' system, which is why the Christian systematizers are not Christians. Their logic and science stems from the minds of men while the ethos of our European fairyland comes from the heart of God and enters into the hearts of men who seek Him still. The true Europeans, the fighting remnant, still believe in the "sorrowing, sighing, bleeding, dying" God who was born in a stable in Bethlehem, and rose again from the dead on the third day.

Because liberalism is pure negation and no one can live on pure negation, there will always be some remnants of humanity in liberals. They sometimes retain a few private virtues, for instance, they might be kind to animals or read a story – albeit a liberal story – to their children, but at the core of the liberals' faith, the faith that they act on, is Satan. They are adamantly opposed to everything human, to every value and virtue that comes from the incarnate God. The Europeans won't stop white genocide until they see that the liberals are the evil half of the European fairytale. Through their worship of the negro, they worship and serve Satan. It's no coincidence that the Mau Maus are now regarded as the good guys, the much maligned and persecuted black gods. Such blatant Satanism cannot be 'dialogued' out of existence. We need European heroes who see with blinding sight, the blinding sight that comes from a heart connected to the Lord God incarnate, Jesus Christ. +

To the Extreme

January 10, 2015

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Thomas Nelson Page



So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth. – *Revelations 3: 16*

In a remarkable speech before the Dutch Parliament, Machiel de Graaf, a member of Geert Wilders' Party of Freedom, made a plea for an end to the Islamization of the Netherlands. It was a brave speech, a speech that no American statesman would have had the courage to give, but sadly, within the speech itself was the seed of liberalism that rendered the speech useless as soon as it was given. De Graaf stated, when listing the negative effects of the Islamization of the Netherlands, that the Moslems were not as tolerant of lesbians, gays, and Jews as were the native Dutch. No man of Europe wants to exterminate homosexuals or Jews, but a true European does want deviant behavior and anti-European groups controlled. He does not want a democratic, multicultural society.

Now, I don't think de Graaf really cares all that much about gays and Jews; he was just trying to influence the liberals by showing them that the Moslems' values are in direct contrast to the liberals' values. But does this policy ever work? In our own country did the liberals stop aborting babies when the pro-lifers pointed out that blacks were aborting babies at a rate disproportionate to their numbers? Did the liberals sign on to stop Mexican immigration when they discovered that the Mexicans have very un-liberal ideas about the environment and pollution? And of course the most telling example of all: The liberals who claim that they and they alone really care about women continue to worship blacks who have made the rape and murder of white women their main occupation.

We must conclude that no appeal from a white male, which, if acted upon, would stop or slow down the ongoing colorization of Europe or the ongoing destruction of the traditional Christian faith of the European people, will have any effect on the liberal ruling class. And why is this? The answer is obvious to all those who have eyes to see. The liberals worship Satan, and Satan hates everything white and Christian.

White males such as Machiel de Graaf, who try to appeal to the liberals to alter some aspect of liberalism, fail to understand the nature of modern democratic governments. These governments are not derivatives of the old Anglo Saxon tribal democracies, they are the offspring of the French Jacobin democracy that Burke fought against with such incredible ferocity and nobility of spirit. "The people" must be served in the modern totalitarian democracies, and "the people" are the anti-white colored people of the world, particularly blacks, as well as every devotee of any religious sect opposed to the Christian faith. "The people" must be and will be served. So it is written in liberal law and so it shall be. The non-liberal white male is in the same position in a society governed by liberals as were the three soldiers put on trial for cowardice in the movie *Paths of Glory*. In that film, the defense attorney made it crystal clear that no man in any regiment had advanced further than the three men accused of cowardice, but the military judges had made up their minds before the trial began: Someone had to pay for the military commander's blunder, so the three soldiers were executed. In the liberals' mind it is better that every last white man should die and every last vestige of Christian Europe disappear from the face of the earth than they should have to face up to the reality that liberalism is not only morally irredeemable but is also a hopelessly flawed system of government that cannot sustain itself. (1) Europe will either be solely white and Christian, or it will be solely colored and heathen; it will not be multiracial, multicultural, and multi-religious. The colored heathens know this: Why can't the white man grasp it?

The colored heathens see existence as they have always seen it, as a struggle for survival and dominance. They don't understand why the white man will not fight for the survival of his people; all they know or care about is that he will not fight. They can have the white man's women and everything of a material nature the white man possesses. They can never have the white man's spiritual inheritance, but that does not concern the colored barbarians.

The popular neo-pagan explanation of the whites' surrender to the colored barbarians is that their Christian faith made them weak and passive. Only a man who cherishes his abstract idea of reality as a substitute for truth can swallow such an explanation. The Europeans, during the Christian phase of their history, expanded European dominance and influence on a much wider scale than the pagan Greeks and Romans ever did. Such an accomplishment is certainly not the proof of the truth of the Christian faith, but it does give the lie to those who claim that Christianity made the Europeans weak and passive.

The European people no longer defend their civilization, because they have mistaken their descent into the gutter of rationalism for an ascent to the heavens. Christian rationalists chopped away at the "fantastical" elements of Christianity until there was nothing left but the resurrection. And in the hands of secularists, the belief in the resurrection of Christ soon disappeared as well. The colored tribesmen have never known anything but the natural world; their gods are nature gods and their faith does not transcend the perimeters of the natural world. Not so with the Christian Europeans. For them the natural world was a mirror of a greater spiritual realm, a realm of midsummer nights' dreams in a kingdom of many mansions, presided over by a benevolent King. What happened to the Europeans' dream? Why did they stop believing in their Father's kingdom of many mansions?

In Robert Louis Stevenson's short story "The Body Snatchers," the villains of the story murder men and women in order to sell their bodies to doctors and scientists for the purpose of dissection. What a magnificent description of modernity! In order to dissect, we must first commit murder. The rational men treated God as part of the natural world and then dissected Him in order to know Him by the sum of His parts. Is this the God St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus? Is this the God of the Christmas carols, the dear Christ who enters into the hearts of those who seek Him still? The dissected god is not a living God; he is not the God of the antique Europeans.

The consequence of making Christ the god of rationality was that the people of Europe placed rationality above everything, even above the wisdom of the heart, a wisdom much greater than reason. The liberals respond to every black atrocity with a defense of the black murderer, because they worship darkness and not the light. But why do the grazers not cry havoc and let loose the dogs of war on the black barbarians? They don't do what is natural and right – natural in the Christian sense of the word – because they have been trained for centuries to be rational and moderate. Is that not the essence of the white man's faith? The liberals are not rational and moderate; they use their reason to support their maniacal hatred of all things white and Christian. Are the colored barbarians rational and moderate? No, they are not. They are true to their animal instincts; when they sense weakness they strike, without any ethical concern about moderation and reason.

Nowhere is the sad spectacle of white rationality vs. liberal passion and black barbarism more apparent than in the letters to the editor sections of the liberal-run newspapers and websites. It's not often that liberal newspapers and websites publish letters of dissent, but when they do print them they are like the one I read a few days ago. The white author of the letter asked why there was no outrage last January when three black men kidnapped a white police officer in the state of Virginia and subsequently took him into the woods and killed him. Of course we know why there was no outrage about the murder of the white police officer. He was of the 'demon' race, and his black murderers were of the 'sainted' race. The letter writer then went on to reveal why white people are killed with impunity by black barbarians. He stated that he deplored the death of the white police officer just as much as he deplored the death of Michael Brown. Now, it is possible that the white author, like Machiel de Graaf when speaking of gays and Jews, did not really equally deplore the two deaths; he could have been trying to appease the liberals and get his letter published. Or, God forbid, perhaps he actually did deplore both deaths equally. But in either case, the fatal disease of the white man was on display in that letter. First, rational appeals to the liberals' rationality will have no effect. The liberals are rational! They are rationally committed to the inhumanity of Satan. Like the pro-choicers who know what they are doing when they murder babies, the liberals know what they are doing when they support the wholesale slaughter of whites. And secondly, the two killings are not to be equally deplored. A completely innocent white man was murdered simply because he was white and a police officer. Michael Brown was killed in self-defense by a white police officer who was responding to a report of a robbery and a beating, perpetrated by the now sainted Michael Brown. We might deplore the fact that Michael Brown chose to be a thug, but we shouldn't deplore the fact that the police officer killed him, because by doing so the police officer saved not only his own life but also the lives of the men and women who would have been killed by Michael Brown in the future.

The path of rationality and moderation is the path the liberals and conservatives always demand the white man should take. He must never, ever become "extreme" – that would be bad. But the liberals are extremists. They have taken their hatred of the white race to the extremest height of their liberal kingdom of Satan on earth, and from that height they hurl satanic thunderbolts at whites. With each thunderbolt they throw, they say to their white victims, "Be moderate, be rational." Again we must ask, are the colored barbarians moderate and rational? They are extremists, they seek the blood of the rational and moderate whites. Can a man be rational and moderate when his foe stands over his wife and children with a battle axe? Apparently a white man can be rational and moderate in the face of that threat. But should he be?

The liberals advise white men to be rational and moderate while their people are being slaughtered, because it suits their agenda. But why do the conservatives advise whites to be rational and moderate in the face of white genocide? It is in part because conservatives think in terms of abstract people. Human beings exist as generic cannon fodder for conservative intellectuals. Whether the cannon fodder is black or white makes no difference to most conservatives; they simply need abstract people to whom they can pontificate. But some conservatives do realize that without some whites left on earth they will have no one to pontificate to, because the colored races will not listen to white pontifications. Those conservatives preach rationality and moderation because they believe it is the smart thing to do, and smartness in the modern conservative's view of existence is the highest virtue. In the conservative's muddled brain he is following the Greek philosophers when he calls for rationality and moderation. Even if he was correct in his assumption that the Greek philosophers preached rationality and moderation, the conservative would be wrong to follow the Greek philosophers. There is a much deeper and profounder wisdom, a wisdom that commands us to be extremists in defense of our own, that is to be found in the Christian poets of Europe. But this "golden mean" of rationalism and moderation is not even consistent with the principles of the Greek philosophers. They advocated a golden mean between eating too much and eating too little, a golden mean between drinking too much and drinking too little, and so on. Even the Greek philosophers, the best of them, did not claim that you could take a middle ground between two opposed principles and come up with the right principle. Only a modern post-Christian conservative believes in such moderation and rationality.

The devil preaches rationality and moderation to white Christians so that they will remain passive in the face of white genocide. He has even entered the Christian pulpits, enlisting the formerly Christian pastors into his satanic army. We should and must listen to other leaders and other voices. We should listen to Burke, who told us that a man who did not hate where he should hate would not be able to love where he should love. And we should listen to Thomas Nelson Page, who enjoined us to be Christian Goths, loving and hating with all our hearts. I don't believe that a man with a European heart can ever be defeated. Such a man will be an extremist. He will fight for kith and kin in spite of liberals and colored barbarians. "Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more..." +

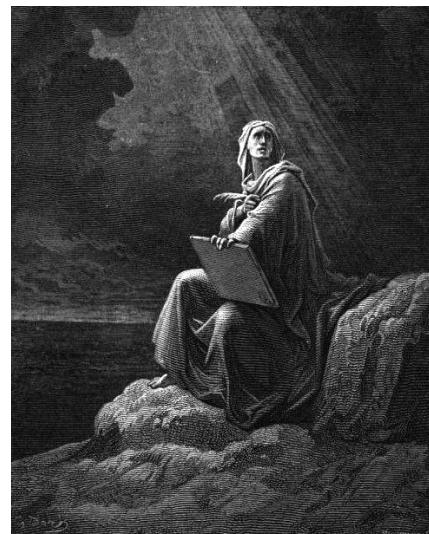
(1) The recent massacre in France is just one more example of the unsustainable nature of liberal governments. A multicultural, multi-religious government cannot protect its people, because such a government has no commitment to one people and one faith. If France was white and Christian, instead of multi-racial and irreligious, the real French people would not be sitting ducks in a Moslem shooting gallery.

The French government will respond to this new outrage as all the white, liberal governments respond to such outrages. They will condemn terrorists per se, but they will stress their love and support for the people of Islam. In short, they will be rational and moderate. The liberal west will never restrict Moslem or colored immigration, because the liberal west has only one real enemy: white Christians.

Where Two or Three Are Gathered Together

January 17, 2015

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan



Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclator. – Edmund Burke

Islam gives liberals, who like things kept simple, problems. I first noticed this some years ago when the Iranian “students” took the Americans in the embassy hostage. It took the liberals awhile to sort that crisis out. Had black South Africans taken white Americans or white South Africans hostage, the liberals would have known what side to root for. But in the Iranian hostage affair the liberals had a dilemma. On the one hand they viewed all anti-Western groups as good, but on the other hand they viewed all religious fundamentalist groups as bad. What to do? Most liberals solved the dilemma with the ‘bad Moslem’ gambit. Islam was good, my liberal professors all told me so; it was a much more sublime and healthy religion than Christianity. But some Moslems, a tiny minority, were ‘bad Moslems’ who were giving Islam a bad name. The conservatives, who of course were really liberals, concurred with their liberal brethren. Moslems were good; they just needed to adopt free enterprise and purge the ‘bad Moslems’ from their nations.

Islam has gained strength since the 1970’s, but the liberals’ and the conservatives’ attitude toward it has remained the same. The liberals are committed to their belief that the good Moslems can be blended into their multicultural, negro-worshipping democracy, and the conservatives are committed to their belief that the ‘good’ Moslems can be blended into their democratic, free enterprise system. This false ‘bad’ Moslem/good’ Moslem dichotomy of the liberal-conservative coalition makes it necessary for the Western powers to bomb ‘bad’ Moslems over there, at the same time assuring the ‘good’ Moslems that the West loves Islam, while opening up their borders over here to Moslems. Thus multi-culturalist liberals and free-enterprise conservatives, by ignoring their Christian European heritage, give us the worst of all possible worlds. The people of the West are naked to their Moslem enemies at home while their liberal governments indulge in the inhumane practice of slaughtering Moslem civilians abroad.

Our Christian European forefathers—and I’m not talking about our inconsequential constitutional forefathers—knew that Islam was a militant anti-Christian and therefore anti-European force that had to be held in check. They kept Europe free of the Moslems and involved themselves in Moslem internal affairs to the extent their individual governments thought it necessary. They were not utopianly perfect in their internal meddling, but they were still superior in every way to our modern liberal governments.

The two opposed forces involved here are Christianity and liberalism. When Europeans were Christian they knew that the Moslems were their enemies. Now that they are liberal they will never concede that any nation, tribe, or religious sect that shares their hatred of the incarnate Lord is their enemy. And as a corollary, the liberals will always side with blacks, Jews, Moslems, Hindus, Asians, Aztecs and so on against white Europeans, because the white Europeans were, and are still called to be, the Christ-bearers.

Despite their shared hatred of the white race and the Christian faith, the liberals will never come to a peaceful accord with the colored tribesmen or with the devotees of the non-Christian sects. The colored tribesmen are attracted to the blood, sex, and power faiths such as Islam and voodoo. Having never been Christian, the colored barbarians feel no attraction to the post-Christian faith of the liberals. Only the white man worships the negro, because having once believed in The Savior, the post-Christian liberal still needs a Messiah. But the post-Christian Messiah, the negro, is no longer an incarnate God, he is a natural god, the purest of nature’s children. The black barbarians will take advantage of their divine status in white cultures by raping and murdering whites with impunity, but they will not become converts to liberalism. Despite their lowly status in the Moslem world, it is to Islam, not Christianity, that the blacks are turning. D. P. Dugaquier tells us the reason for this phenomenon in his book *Congo Cauldron*:

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black man’s back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.

Christianity has only been accepted in depth by one people. For over one thousand years the Christian faith was the moral essence of the European nations.

The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and oeconomy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources.

— Letters on a Regicide Peace

In the wake of the recent Paris terrorist attack, all the retired U.S. generals went rushing onto the Fox News channel to tell us how we could go get the terrorists. But the retired generals, like Martha, have lost sight of that which is truly important. It makes no difference whether a nation whose moral essence is liberalism defeats a nation whose moral essence is Islam. Either way the white man loses. If Europe will not be Christian and fight Islam in the name of Christ, then there is nothing of any worth at stake in the battle. Islam is a blending of Judaism and paganism, and liberalism is a blending of Christianity and paganism. Which faith is preferable? A Christian European does not choose between two evils. He fights a two-front war in the name of Christ the King. There has been no Christian opposition to either liberalism or Islam. This is because whites have abandoned the living God of the European people for a theoretical, abstract god that is the end product of a syllogism.

Let us look at the organized “Christian” churches. The mainstream Catholic and Protestant churches are merely adjuncts of liberalism which makes them a fusion of Christianity and paganism. Nothing more needs to be said about them; they serve Satan. The Protestant fundamentalist and charismatic churches that have sprung up in response to the apostasy of the liberal churches have blended Christianity with Judaism; hence the fundamentalists’ obsession with Israel. And the traditionalist Roman Catholic sects, without actually adopting Moslem rituals, have blended Islamic spirituality, which is really an absence of spirituality, with Christianity; hence the traditionalists’ hatred of Christmas carols and all aspects of Christianity that suggest the living God possesses a divinely human heart which moves Him to impart the blessings of His heaven to human hearts. ([1](#))

Where does this leave us in the year of 2015, still referred to by European Christians as the year of our Lord? It leaves us back with our people, the Europeans. The ideologues told us that Christ did not reside in His people; instead He came to us through the minds of specially designated men of learning. But Burke was right: what the men of intellect could not bring to light, the simple faith of the European people did bring to light. The moral essence of our people is grounded in the love of Christ. When the Europeans ceased to be one in faith and one in race, they lost that moral essence, which is their reason for being.

The great spiritual crisis that almost resulted in the destruction of the entire human race took place when the “sons of God,” who were demons, were captivated by the beauty of the “daughters of men” and desired to “come in unto” them. The result was that only Noah’s bloodlines remained free of demon blood. Do we not face a similar crisis today? God’s grace flowed through European bloodlines. If those bloodlines are contaminated with the blood of colored tribesmen who are connected to Satan, what will be the result? We have already seen, in the Arab world, what happens when the races mix. It produces a faith that is opposed to Christianity. Race-mixing always produces a spiritual crisis. How could it be otherwise? Our race is our spiritual armor; without it we are defenseless against The Enemy.

The minds of men cannot understand the sublime magnificence of the Incarnation. But men with hearts of flesh can and did understand the incarnation of Christ. Behold! A God who weeps for us and with us, because He too has a heart of flesh. All non-European people hold the divine condescension, the incarnation of our Lord, to be either a blasphemy or a fairy tale. And now the Europeans have joined the heathen chorus; they too have forsaken the God with the Heart of flesh. This is a new diaspora: the people of God, the Europeans, have no geographical nation. Wherever two or three Europeans are gathered together, true to their God and their race, there is the nation of Europe.

Despite their differences, all of the –isms (negrophile liberalism, Mohammedism, Judaism, Communism, Capitalism, etc.) are united in their hatred of Christ. Which makes it all the more necessary that we, the European remnant, should stay connected to the non-blended Christ who was worshipped in the fullness of His divinity and His humanity by our European ancestors. Instead of trying to discover the day and the hour, let us take comfort in the crystal clear message of St. John in the book of Revelation:

And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

It is not a little thing to know that in the end the non-blended Christ will triumph and He will draw His people unto Himself. But will He have a people to draw unto Himself? Will there be faith left on earth? Only if the Christ-bearing people remain true to their blood. And if we are faithful unto death we will receive the benediction of the Christ, the only God for men with hearts of flesh. +

(1) The devil can assume a pleasing shape. Obviously the men and women who fill up the pews of the various Christian churches do not sign on to everything the hierarchies of their sects endorse. But the hierarchies of these churches do have a very definite anti-European, anti-Christian agenda. What kind of church is it where you have to resist the hierarchy of your church in order to remain Christian? And why do you need such a “church”?

Sacred to the Memory Of

January 24, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism



Home! That was what they meant, those caressing appeals, those soft touches wafted through the air, those invisible little hands pulling and tugging, all one way! Why, it must be quite close by him at that moment, his old home...

—*The Wind in the Willows*

On Monday, January 19th, the liberals celebrated their most holy day of the year. And they have promised us that the remaining days in January and the entire month of February will be one long hymn of praise to their negro gods. It's difficult to imagine how February can be a more negro-centered month than the other eleven months of the year, but the liberals will manage — they always do — to make February an extra special negro-infested month. 'Tis a consummation we most devoutly do *not* wish for, but it will come nevertheless.

Just as the nations of Europe used to have "the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines," so do the modern liberal nations of Europe agree on the fundamentals of negro worship, varying only a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The white people of the anti-nation called the United States, having twice elected a negro president, seem to have a negrophile edge on the other white nations, but the other nations of Europe will strive to catch up. If the dark shadows of negro worship are not altered, the European nations will soon have black barbarian presidents and prime ministers just like the United States. And why not? Shouldn't all the white nations make their gods their rulers?

Since I do not subscribe to the same faith as my liberal rulers, I do not take part in the great negro festivals. In fact, I intend to spend my time, during this festive time of year for the liberals, being a wet blanket and criticizing negrophile liberalism.

Negro worship is a white, post-Christian phenomenon. Only white people, whose ancestors were Christian, are now devotees of the sacred negro. The non-black colored tribesmen do not worship the negro, nor do the negroes worship themselves in the same way that whites worship them. The blacks want power, and the whites' reverence for blacks gives them that power, but the blacks do not revere blacks as sacred deities as the post-Christian white man does. Such reverence can only come from a people who once loved the living God. Satan took the white man's passion for Christ and redirected it to the black man.

The black noble savage was always a necessary part of the white utopian's rebellion against God. If nature, not Christ, is God, then the natural man, the noble negro savage, must be nature's god. This "natural" utopian faith was institutionalized in Jacobin France. What was rational and natural was also what was inhumane and bloody. Taine observed, "All means are justifiable and meritorious with traitors; now that the Jacobin has made his slaughtering canonical, he slays through philanthropy." First it was the natural, organic, white proletariat who had the right to slaughter white aristocrats, but Haiti was the model for the future. Every European nation is moving toward the Haitian solution of the race problem.

The people of Europe were not ready, at the time of the French Revolution, to commit racial suicide, but they were also not ready to face up to the threat that a rationalist, utopian state within the bowels of Christian Europe presented to the people of Christian Europe. The people were not prepared to meet the Jacobin threat, because they too were tainted with the same rationalist, utopian fever that motivated the French Jacobins. Burke's own party expelled him, because they agreed with the ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity. The general European consensus was that Robespierre managed things badly, but the Revolution was good. A latter day French historian and novelist, Andre Maurois, criticized Edmund Burke for being "obsessively" hostile toward the French Jacobins. Spoken like a true halfway-house Christian. How is it possible for a Christian European to be too obsessively hostile to the incarnation of Satan within the heart of Europe? And how is it possible today to be too obsessively hostile to the modern, negro-worshipping liberals of Europe who are the spiritual descendants of the French Jacobins?

Where you stand on this issue depends on your faith. From a Christian European viewpoint, Burke was right: the implementation of the Jacobin principles he opposed has brought about the creation of the kingdom of Satan on earth. From a liberal's perspective the implementation of Jacobin principles throughout the West has moved mankind closer to that utopian paradise of racial and sexual harmony which translates to negro worship and sexual depravity. Just a few more whites to eliminate, and paradise will be here.

Where do (and where did) the halfway-house Christians stand on this issue of Jacobinism, negro worship, and sexual depravity? The clergy, the "conservatives," and all the other rationalist whites who are neither fish nor fowl will never look on Liberalism and see the kingdom of Satan on earth. They are one in spirit with the democratic republicans of Europe who condemned Robespierre's excesses while applauding the Jacobin principles of liberty, equality, and fraternity. They refused to accept the fact that Robespierre was not Jacobinism derailed, he was Jacobinism realized! It is the same today as it was then. Negro worship, which spawned the sexual revolution, is not civil rights gone wrong, it is civil rights fulfilled.

When the liberals rhapsodize about the 1960's they usually list the civil rights movement and the sexual revolution as the great accomplishments of the sixties' radicals. Christians of a more conservative bent usually applaud the civil rights movement and deplore the sexual revolution. Neo-pagans usually deplore the civil rights movement while enjoying and celebrating the sexual revolution. Seldom do we see a Christian condemning the civil rights movement or a neo-pagan condemning the sexual revolution, but the two movements were part of one, united, satanic attack on the mystical body of Christ. Christian Europeans should oppose both.

*The mixed-race movement (which is what the civil rights movement was) and the sexual revolution were both grounded in the utopian thinking of European intellectuals, exemplified by Rousseau's *The Social Contract* and Voltaire's *Candide* respectively.*

The mixed-race movement was the precursor of the sexual revolution. When a European embraces race-mixing, he must not only reject the authenticity of the Bible, he must also reject the traditional wisdom of the European people. He must believe that the strictures against interracial marriage and the desire to live with one's own kind were the prejudices of a sick and demented people. Henceforth the new European will emerge, free of prejudice and free from any ties to kith or kin. His is a universal tie to all mankind.

The tie that binds the new European to all mankind is an intellectual abstraction. He loves a theory of unity, but he has no flesh and blood connection to a particular race of people. But the utopian's intellectual denial of his blood cannot change reality; a man needs something to stir his blood. If he refuses to be inspired by the traditional sentiments that fired the blood of the antique European — attachments to kith and kin — he will need something else to stir his blood. That something else is sex. It is sex unconnected to love. Blood will out; if the European renounces the ties of blood that enoble and elevate a man, he will end up a slave to the urges of the blood that debases

and debauch a man. Interracial coupling is a necessity to a man who has no blood connection to a particular people or a particular God. And who becomes the utopian's God? The people who can stir his blood.

Racial Babylon and Sexual Babylon are fraternal twins. The one precedes the other but only by an infinitesimal fraction of a hair. They both come from the same parent. Satan loves and wills racial and sexual diversity because it kills the image of God in man. — CWNY

So long as rational, halfway-house Christians refuse to see that the racial issue is the battering ram of liberalism, they will stay on Satan's side of the great divide. I saw an example of this just the other day: I saw a halfway-house Christian debating a mad-dog liberal on the subject of same-sex marriages. Once the mad-dog liberal equated the Evangelical Christian's opposition to same-sex marriage with the antique European's opposition to race mixing, the Evangelical became a quivering mass of jelly. He let the liberal turn the debate into an inquisition, and he was the defendant trying to defend himself against the ultimate heresy, namely, racism. "I am not a racist, I support mixed marriages," the Evangelical intoned. But the Evangelical's pathetic pleas were greeted with scorn and derision by the mad-dog liberal. He had gained the upper hand by playing the race card, and he was not about to take his foot off the throat of the hapless Evangelical. What if the Evangelical had been a full-fledged Christian European? Then he could have fought back, and instead of trying to run from the racial issue he would have used it as the center piece of his attack. "Yes, I am against race mixing, because it is against God's law and it leads to..." But the rational halfway-house Christian is not able to take such a stand, because he has only a rational faith that is a reed for every liberal wind that blows.

In the 20th century most whites sided with science and rationalism against the Christian faith, while a smaller minority tried to blend science, rationalism, and Christianity. By the time of the 21st century, blended Christianity had been almost completely absorbed by rationalist, scientific, negro-worshipping liberalism. You can no longer count the resistance to militant, atheistic liberalism by counting the people who go to church. That is now an indication of how many new converts the liberals are getting. Almost all of us were brought up in either a rationalist Christian household or in a completely secularized rationalist household. Very few of us ever knew the full fledged Christianity that was once every European's birthright. We need that full-fledged European faith, because it is the true faith and because no other faith can sustain us in our battle against the liberal pestilence and the colored barbarians' arrows.

In the old European fairy tales the hero is often aided in his journey through the dark and sinister woods by a wise magician. But there are limits to the wise magician's powers. The hero must go into the woods, where he will confront the evil witch or dragon, alone. This is because the heart of the hero is stronger than the mind of the wise magician. The theologians, who are the wise magicians, told the European people that the Pauline/Shakespearean/Dostoyevskian journal into the depths of the soul, a journey that ultimately results in a vision of the living God, was unnecessary. "Just learn the catechism," we were told, "and all will be well." But all things are not well if our faith is not stronger than the faith of the rationalist magicians. We must have a hero's faith. Where there is no bleeding, sighing, and striving toward the Man of Sorrows, there is no true faith.

The European poets, the true chroniclers of the European peoples' struggle toward the light, all tell us a fairy tale story of a struggle between good and evil. That story is like unto the Biblical story of God's struggle to keep His people connected to Him in preparation for the coming of the Son of God and the final battle between God and the devil. But when we get to the 20th century, the story of the European people changes. It is no longer Christ who saves us from the devil, it is science, reason, and the negro that save us from the antique Europeans and their God. Only poets such as Kenneth Grahame, C. S. Lewis, and Walt Disney, who tried to take us back to the childhood of our people, tell us of a world where material objects are only symbols of a greater spiritual realm presided over by a God with a European habitation and a name. Sacred to the memory of: His name is Jesus.

When we were young , we knew that the Christian fairy tale was true, and scientific, rational, negro-worshipping liberalism was false. We knew this by an instinct stronger than reason. I once heard a halfway-house "Christian" broadcaster say that Christ died for interracial marriage. Is not that blasphemy the result of years and years of blending egalitarianism and rationalism with Christianity? True thought is "inwardly"; like true circumcision, "it is of the heart, in the spirit and not of the letter." The rationalist, be he theologian or secular philosopher, wants to make the Grace of God and man's response to that Grace into a visible, material, quantitative product of the natural world. The small units, the hearts of individual men and women, count for nothing when they are viewed by the universalist eye of the theologian. But those small units of grace, those human beings, are everything to the God whose name is Jesus. Universalist thinking shrinks men and women into insects. The divine love, which has a human heart and a human face, makes each human heart a universe.

In the New Testament, Christ is crucified between two thieves. The one thief sees Christ as a fellow malefactor while the other man sees Him as the Son of God. In Shakespeare's *Richard III*, two men are sent to murder Clarence. One man strikes and kills Clarence, but the other recoils from the deed and cannot join in. The grace of God is real, but it cannot be put in a test tube or a silver rod. It runs through human hearts that are infinitely more complex than the most difficult problem in math. "A man lives his whole life." Dostoyevsky's underground man tells us, "to prove that he is more complex than piano keys." We will be ruled by our Lord and Kinsman, the God who joined His blood with ours, not by the liberal piano tuners! The rational men, the men who worship reason devoid of thought and mankind devoid of humanity, see, when they look at "poor, bare, unaccommodated humanity," piano keys to be played upon and put into one huge universalist orchestra, where there are no individual human beings who are connected, through their racial hearth fire, to the son of God.

Satan knows that if you destroy a man's racial home you have destroyed his connection to the living God. The Jacobins, the New Age Christian rationalists, and the negrophile liberals are united to Satan in their hatred of the Europeans' racial home. If we fight past their rational condemnations of our European home and stay true to the non-diverse, non-blended Europe that we loved in the childhood of our race, that blessed childhood when we loved much and were forgiven, we will know that we will always have a home in this world and the next. Surely that is a consummation more devoutly to be wished for than a place in the liberals' negro-worshipping kingdom of Satan on earth. +

Rejecting the Demonization of the White Race

January 31, 2015
Categories: Blood faith, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Utopianism



“He was a man, take him for all in all.” —Hamlet

On the same day last week, I heard a radio preacher going on about the necessity of “defending Israel” and read an article by a conservative-traditionalist Catholic pundit who expressed admiration for the Moslem terrorists who murdered those 12 Frenchmen in Paris. Both men, the Preacher and the Pundit, reminded me of a classmate from my high school. Let me set the stage: Behind our school was a secluded wooded area where the boys who had irreconcilable differences would settle those differences. Since there were no blacks attending our school, the fights never went beyond the rough-hewn chivalry of a white schoolyard. One knockdown generally ended the fight, and there was no kicking, eye-gouging, or hitting below the belt. We all took the code as a given, even the punks; little did we dream that only ten years later when the school became integrated that our civilized field of honor would be a scene of brutal beatings and knifings.

Now, back to the classmate. Let me imitate Dickens and give the classmate a name to suit his character. I’ll call him Freddy Spineless. It wasn’t the fact that Freddy was little and avoided all fights that made him reprehensible, it was because he gloried in the fights second-hand. He was always trying to bring about a fight between potential combatants with his “Do you know what he said about you?” tattle-tale rhetoric. Freddy was often successful in his efforts to instigate a fight, but he was held in contempt by most of his classmates, because he fed off the blood and strength of other boys without taking any risks himself. He would always “toady up” to the winner, but the winners had no respect for Freddy. Which, by a roundabout route, brings me back to intellectual Christians such as the Christian Zionist and the pro-Moslem Catholic pundit.

Only an intellectual Christian, who sees life through the narrow, outward prism of the mind while avoiding the inward vision of the heart, would try to settle his differences with his white secular enemies through the good offices of the Jews or the Moslems. The Moslems and the Jews are like unto the liberals: all three are hostile to the central tenet of the Christian faith, the divine condescension: God became man and dwelt among us! Only halfway-house Christians who have intellectually leveled the profound depth of the Christian faith into a superficial affirmation of a generic God would seek to blend the Christian faith with other non-Christian faiths in order to strike back at liberals. Even if such a cowardly tactic worked, it would be morally reprehensible, but in point of fact it doesn’t work. The Jews and the Moslems will never accept the white Christian as one of their own unless the white Christian denounces his faith completely.

Peter Kreeft spoke for halfway-house Christians from both the Protestant and Catholic camps when he wrote a book called *Ecumenical Jihad*. Isn’t that title the classic example of an oxymoron? In the book, Kreeft argued for an alliance of Jews, Moslems, and Christians against the liberals. That type of blasphemy has two root causes. The first cause was years and years of outward-ritual-and-learned-men Christianity. “So long as we pass down the proper rituals and the documents of the learned men to each successive generation of generic men and women, we are preserving the Christian faith.” Such was and is the belief of the rationalist Christians. But what about the circumcision of the heart that needs to take place before a man can have a genuine faith in the living God? Saul had an outward faith once, but he needed an interior conversion before he could become St. Paul. Intellectual Christianity ignores the channels of grace, our familial and racial hearth fires, that give us the inwardness to truly understand and love the God-man. The intellectual Christians who bid us make common cause with other religions read like those cold obituaries of our loved ones that we see in the paper. “You never knew him,” we say with sorrow, “those were only the externals of his life. To his loved ones, he was so much more.”

Can European hearts, hearts that love, accept any other God than the incarnate Lord who enters human hearts? What kind of victory do we achieve over the liberals if it is achieved in the name of Christian Zionism or Islamic Catholicism? The victory would be just as fruitless as a victory achieved over Zionism or Islam while we were allied with the liberals. The Christian Europeans must stand alone, separate from the Jews, the Moslems, and the liberals.

The second cause of the Ecumenical Jihadist disease among intellectual Christians is the complete triumph of liberalism and the total absence of any opposition to liberalism from the organized Christian churches. The rationalist Christian, partly because he feels bound by a false idea of non-violence and primarily because he is afraid to act alone, wants somebody, he doesn’t care who, to strike out against the liberals. This won’t do. It is Christian Europeans, heart, blood, and soul Europeans, who must do battle with the liberals. If there is any killing to be done, we, not the heathen and the colored strangers, should do it. Who else can be entrusted with the task? Why should those who have no concept of charity or mercy, because they have no faith in the God of charity and mercy, decide who should live and who should die? A Jewish or Moslem state would be just as devoid of Christian charity as the liberal states we now live in. And for the people of the West a liberal state is preferable, not because it is any less immoral than a Jewish or Moslem state, but for the reason that Kipling articulates in his poem, “The Stranger”:

*The men of my own stock,
They may do ill or well,
But they tell the lies I am wanted to,
They are used to the lies I tell;
And we do not need interpreters
When we go to buy and sell.*

“Wait,” you say, “the liberals hate the men of their own stock.” Yes, they do, which is why we should fight them with might and main just as we should fight the Jews and the Moslems. But the liberals are of our own stock. We should not look for outsiders to fight what should be our battle against the liberals. It sickens me to hear the self-righteous intellectual Christians say we should tolerate Islamic terrorism or even applaud it, because the West is decadent. Do such people have children? Do they trust the Moslems to only kill people of the West who deserve to be killed? And again, why should white Christians let the Moslems or the Jews decide who is to be killed in the lands that should belong to Christian Europeans?

What is missing in the propositional Christians is a love and respect for the people of their own race. They are mad at the people of the white race for their refusal to listen to their theories. So like petulant children who can't make the other children play by their rules, they try to get some neighborhood bully to come in and punish the children who won't play by their rules. But the bully isn't going to stop with the destruction of the children who won't play by the rules, he will destroy the petulant children who invited him into the house as well.

Christian utopianism is just as deadly as secular utopianism. Belloc viewed the French Revolution as a necessary purging of bad Catholics. Even if we accepted that satanic the-ends-justify-the-means ideology (which I do not), we need to ask, did we see a great Catholic age envelope France after the blood-letting? And if we look at our own benighted Europe, we see a liberal minority ruling over a majority of European grazers. Are all the grazers to be put to the sword because they are insufficiently Christian to cast out their liberal rulers? The intellectual Christians who have foisted a bloodless, multicultural, multiracial, anti-incarnational Christianity on the grazers are responsible for their stupefied indifference to all things Christian. And now those same intellectual Christians want the grazers punished and replaced by the merciless strangers of Islam, Africa, and Jewry. They live by the ethos of Freddy Spineless: "Let me see blood, so long as it is not my own."

The intellectual Christians have more in common with the liberals than with the antique Europeans. What they have in common is a propositional view of existence. They only acknowledge their own abstractions as real. The liberals envision a world of natural, black and brown noble savages presided over by an all-knowing and all-wise white liberal. The rationalist Christians envision a world of strong, vital people of strong, vital faiths. Some dream of the people of Israel, some of the "sexy, earthy" blacks, or the intelligent, inscrutable but oh-so-mystical yellow people. And others dream of Islamic Christians (another oxymoron) who will fight all the enemies of the rationalist Christians' propositional Christianity. The central tenet of the propositional faith, be it utopian liberal, or utopian Christian, is an incredible hatred for the European people past and present, because they are not and were not perfect specimens of humanity. No, they were not, and they are still not, perfect. But they were the only people that loved and championed the incarnate Lord, who was crucified, died, and was buried, and on the third day rose from the dead. And in their fallen, stupefied state, the white grazers still remain the Christ-bearers. They need to shake off the liberals' and the propositional Christians' vision of a intellectualized world devoid of the living God, the Christ, who, when worshipped in the fullness of His God-Manhood, can stir hearts and raise up men of blood who are not vital as the devil would have us be vital, but are vital according to His laws of charity and mercy.

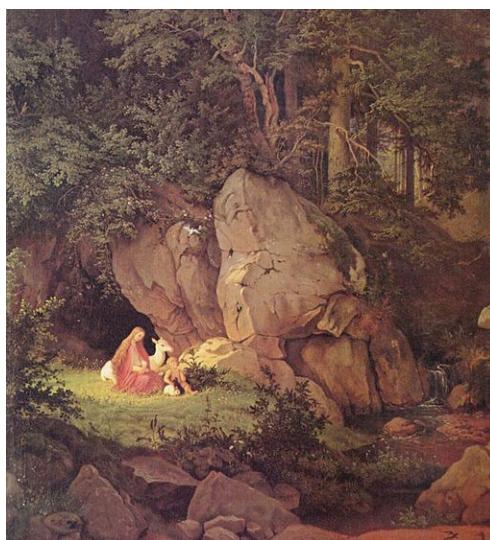
Propositional Christianity is the Achilles' heel of the white man. It spawned propositional liberalism and turned brave and honorable white men into grazers who only come alive during natural disasters and liberal-sponsored wars. Two men mark the dividing line between the antique European world, in which God's only begotten Son entered human hearts, and the modern world, which champions a propositional God created by the minds of men. Those two men are Edmund Burke and Hilaire Belloc. Burke saw every sin of commission and omission of the French royalty and the French aristocrats, and yet he loved them and supported them against the French Jacobins. He supported them because he knew that no ruling aristocracy can stand if they must be perfect, and he supported them because he took them for "all in all." And taken for all in all, they were noble souls, who were spiritually superior to the Jacobins. In contrast, Hilaire Belloc saw only imperfect Catholics, far below his abstract ideal of what a true Catholic should be, when he looked at the French royalty and aristocracy. They had to be purged so a noble, pure Catholicism could be built on their unhallowed bones.

I hate Belloc and his ilk with all the hate of a Christian Goth, and I love Burke and the Europeans of his stripe, Europeans with that charity of honor, with all my heart, mind, and soul. Among those aristocrats slaughtered by the Jacobins were Belloc's fellow Catholics, thousands of priests who refused to take the oath of allegiance to the Jacobins. Only the non-Catholic, Burke, who looked for Christian hearts, not at Christian sects, had sympathy and support for the Catholic French aristocrats that Belloc consigned to posthumous infamy and damnation.

This Burke/Belloc conflict is alive today. All my life I have heard my people demonized by propositional Christians and propositional liberals: They were and are insufficiently Christian or else they were and are racist. In both cases they are damned, so say the propositional Christians and the liberals. From an overflowing heart the tongue speaks – I don't accept their filthy condemnations of my people, past and present. I see my peoples' real sins much more clearly than the liberals and the propositional Christians, who are so blinded with their hatred of white people for not living up to their abstract utopian ideals that they make up false sins to hurl at them. Despite their real sins, my people are the only people that reflect the image of God in man. I see them for all in all and I love them. Let the propositional Christians and the liberals take their anti-white, anti-human calumnies with them to hell. And let us stay, through our fidelity to our people, at the foot of the Cross, our only hope in this world and the next. +

The Miracle Culture of the European People

February 7, 2015
Categories: Blood faith, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)
Tags: C. S. Lewis, Shakespeare



"In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water." —John 7:37-8

In 1979 a man named Cedric Messina convinced the BBC that it was possible to put all of Shakespeare's plays on film and show the films on British television. Despite many naysayers, the project was undertaken and then completed three years later. And it was a success! There were still enough Britons and non-British Europeans willing to view the uncensored, uncut works of the Gentle Bard. The BBC even made money on their daring scheme to bring Shakespeare to the masses. There were some hostile academics (there always are) who complained that the various directors of the plays were too faithful to the original texts of Shakespeare. Those academics wanted innovation and change. But that is the beauty of the productions: the various directors did not try to touch up a Rembrandt. I've managed to see all of the plays over the years, and I am in awe of the work and creative effort that went into their production. There are no bad productions, and most of them are superb.

Why do I bring up the BBC's Shakespearean triumph of what has now become, to many of my readers, long ago? I bring it up because it relates directly to the issue of liberalism, race, and faith. The BBC's success with the Shakespeare plays was made possible because the Britain of the late 1970s and early 1980s was still white. There were still enough people of the white race left in Britain to appreciate the dramatic works of William Shakespeare, thus affirming the assessment of his contemporary Ben Jonson: "He was not for an age, but for all time." But Ben Jonson's assessment of the eternal and enduring value of Shakespeare only applies to a white Britain. Once Britain becomes the multicultural paradise of Hindus, Moslems, and blacks that Tony Blair ("Britain must become multicultural") and others of his ilk dream of, there will be no more performances of Shakespeare's plays nor will there be any other remnant of white culture left in Britain.

All the nations of European origin are taking the Tony-Blair, multicultural path to white oblivion. The European nations have more of a Moslem problem than a black problem, and the U.S. has more of a black problem than a Moslem problem (the black and the Moslem problem are often one and the same), but all of the once white nations have decided to make white people extinct. The liberals all think that only the racist whites will be exterminated, but of course that will not be the case. A few white technocrats might be kept alive to operate the machines for the colored heathens, but the type of liberals who occupy the high places of Liberaldom, the politicians, the pundits, the academics, and the clergy, will all perish with the grazers whom they sold down the river of blood.

While every liberal wants multiculturalism, they do not all have the same vision of what a multicultural society will be. A good deal of the aging liberals from the sixties envision a world in which European culture survives and thrives in a new colorized form. They see themselves taking hordes of adoring darkies to view European art museums and European dramatic works with all black and brown casts. Younger liberals envision a blending of colored barbarian culture and white culture, and those liberals who are younger still envision a colored barbarian world devoid of whiteness. But no liberal, not one, comprehends the utter desolation that will be the result of the colorization of the European nations. Those whites who are still left alive will find life unbearable, because even the lowest, most degraded white, a white that has blended with a black or Moslem culture, will not be able to live in a world completely devoid of the charity and mercy that was never entirely extinguished until Europe became non-white.

The utter desolation scenario is not 'written.' It will occur if liberalism remains the ruling ideology of the European people. But there is life and hope in the miracle culture of the European people. Currently, the only opposition to liberalism comes from conservatives who are half-liberal. They propose 11th hour democratic solutions when the 11th hour is already long past. Is it hopeless then? Yes, it is if you do not believe in miracles. But why would a white man set himself against his own race by believing in democracy and science instead of miracles? No one seemed more desolate than Shakespeare's Pericles, but at the last trump, at the twinkling of an eye, his beloved daughter came to life again.

*PERICLES: Now, blessing on thee! rise; thou art my child.
Give me fresh garments. Mine own, Helicanus;
She is not dead at Tarsus, as she should have been,
By savage Cleon: she shall tell thee all;
When thou shalt kneel, and justify in knowledge
She is thy very princess. Who is this?*

*HELICANUS: Sir, 'tis the governor of Mytilene,
Who, hearing of your melancholy state,
Did come to see you.*

*PERICLES: I embrace you.
Give me my robes. I am wild in my beholding.
O heavens bless my girl! But, hark, what music?
Tell Helicanus, my Marina, tell him
O'er, point by point, for yet he seems to doubt,
How sure you are my daughter. But, what music?*

HELICANUS: My lord, I hear none.

Our people heard His music because they saw beauty on the Cross. In contrast, liberalism is grounded in a rejection of the Cross. How can the miracle culture of the antique Europeans be blended with its antithesis? It can't. No true opposition to death-in-life liberalism can occur until the blending of liberalism and Christianity ceases. The federal government represents one of the divine branches of Liberaldom. They have adopted a total dependence policy. If a low income person wants their assistance, he must have no savings. The government wants their poorer citizens to be totally dependent on them. Our Lord is more benevolent than the federal government. He sends us comforters, angelic and human, but He does want us to depend on Him more than on the rationalist opiates of modernity, such as science and democracy. If we look to such pathetic substitutes for God, how can we expect a miracle? God's grace exists, but it flows through His divine channels of grace, not through our man-made liberal sewers of bilge.

It's not 'science as the study of the natural world' or 'voting to determine a local magistrate or governor' that has led the modern Europeans down the lonesome road that leads to hell. It is 'science as the Holy Ghost,' and 'democracy as a divinely inspired multicultural government' that has distorted the vision of the European people. We no longer have Europeans who see existence with the inner eye, the eye of the spirit; they now see only with the exterior eye, the eye of science. C. S. Lewis captures the essence of this modern problem of vision in his seventh volume of the Chronicles of Narnia books, *The Last Battle*:

Aslan raised his head and shook his mane. Instantly a glorious feast appeared on the Dwarfs' knees: pies and tongues and pigeons and trifles and ices, and each Dwarf had a goblet of good wine in his right hand. But it wasn't much use. They began eating and drinking greedily enough, but it was clear that they couldn't taste it properly. They thought they were eating and drinking only the sort of things you might find in a stable. One said he was trying to eat hay and another said he had got a bit of an old turnip and a third said he'd found a raw cabbage leaf. And they raised golden goblets of rich red wine to their lips and said, "Ugh! Fancy drinking dirty water out of a trough that a donkey's been at! Never thought we'd come to this." But very soon every Dwarf began suspecting that every other Dwarf had found something nicer than he had, and they started grabbing and snatching, and went on to quarreling, till in a few minutes there was a free fight and all the good food was smeared on their faces and clothes or trodden under foot. But when at last they sat down to nurse their black eyes and their bleeding noses, they all said:

"Well, at any rate there's no Humbug here. We haven't let anyone take us in. The Dwarfs are for the Dwarfs."

"You see," said Aslan. "They will not let us help them. They have chosen cunning instead of belief. Their prison is only in their own minds, yet they are in that prison; and so afraid of being taken in that they cannot be taken out. But come, children. I have other work to do."

The Europeans can't see the obvious, that negro-worshipping liberalism, Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, Christian Zionism, Islamic Catholicism, and all the other -isms are from the devil, who roams about the world seeking the ruin of souls. And the Europeans can't see the obvious because they refuse to be fooled by the fable of the Christ which they see with the exterior eye alone. The inner eye, the eye of the heart, is pure myth; it is nothing more than an organ that pumps blood to the brain. So say our modern European dwarfs. The reason the Christian church men have brought negroes into their churches to be worshipped as gods and have been the leading advocates for Moslem and Aztec immigration to white lands is because they have lost sight of the God who can only be seen with the interior eye. You can't blend scientism with Christ. Organized Christianity on a cosmic scale is exteriorism taken to its blasphemous extreme. Such a Christianity, as Dostoyevsky so vividly describes in the Grand Inquisitor chapter of *The Brothers Karamazov*, is a religion for an evil, adulterous generation that seeketh after external signs of the living God. Are negroes and barbarous nature religions the signs of our salvation? Yes, the church men tell us.

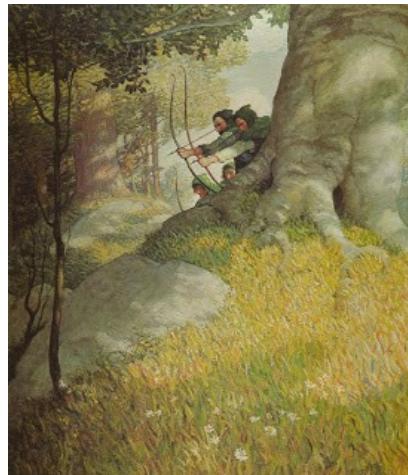
There are some clear-thinking, democratic, white nationalists such as Geert Wilders and Jared Taylor who are trying to awaken the European people to the dangers of the Islamic and colored invasion, but they do so from outside the miracle culture of the European people. Can scientific, democratic rationalism save us from the evils wrought by scientific, democratic rationalism? When Christ had a local habitation in the hearts of the European people, race-mixing was a sin that cried out to heaven for vengeance. Moslems did not dwell in Christian lands, and the Christian Europeans did not look to Jews in order to learn about the living God. We who are about to die need a miracle. Within our racial home is that miracle. Christ still, if we ask Him to come back to our racial hearth fires, will defend His people from the wickedness and snares of the devil. We have seen, if we have eyes to see, the futility of life without a racial home and without the God of our ascending race. Of course when I say, "We have seen... the futility of...", I am referring to "we few." The grazers have not seen the futility of life without a Christ-centered racial hearth fire, and the liberals have built a kingdom based on the hatred of the Europeans' racial hearth fire.

I don't see a single external sign that the European people will return to their racial home and become the type of people who protect and defend their own, but our faith is not something that can be seen. The spirit goeth where it lists. Our trembling faith tells us that when we thirst, Christ will give us living water to drink. And do we not, we few, thirst for Christian Europe? The European fairy tales are true: "When hope is nearly gone, God's relief to us is surely won." +

The Outlaws of Europe

February 14, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Fear of racist label, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



We declare war upon all of those thieves, robbers, extortioners and men evil whom we find among the nobles, the clergy, and burgesses of town – in particular those who follow or accompany Prince John; false abbots, monks, bishops and archbishops, whom we will beat and bind like sheaves of corn... Then, in that wild and lonely glade, while the owls screamed over the dark forest, and an occasional wolf howled in the distance, they all knelt down together and swore their oath – a pledge as high and as sacred, though they were but outlaws, as that sworn by the noblest knights of the round table. – *The Adventures of Robin Hood* by Roger Lancelyn Green

The liberals, in loving adoration of the father of all lies, have built Liberaldom upon one lie after another. Their relationship to the truth is much like Dracula's relationship to the light: they can't bear it. The more thoroughly liberal the West becomes, the further the West slides into the abyss with the father of all lies. My own anti-nation is well on its way to the finish line in the race to achieve the liar's laurel wreath. For instance, the Obama administration recently announced their opposition to terrorism without mentioning Islam, while the liberals' conservative cousins confined their condemnations of terrorism to condemnations of "bad Moslems" and "radical Moslems." None of the above, liberal or conservative, condemned Islam as a violent, anti-white, anti-Christian religion.

And along the same lines: Did you know that there are no black criminals in the United States? The mainstream media no longer report black crimes, so that must mean that black people do not commit any crimes. How wonderful! It is indeed fitting then that the negroes have become our gods. An entire race that does no wrong is surely worthy of our reverence and adoration.

We could go on to tell of the liberals' truly wonderful efforts to reverse the previously distorted roles of men and women and their equally wonderful efforts to make sure that Aztecs are able to take over the once European dominated land mass called the United States. This would certainly please Pope Francis, who has expressed his support for the heirs of Montezuma. Perhaps the Pope would like to bring back the same fine dining that Montezuma enjoyed, once the Aztecs set up their new kingdom?

Need I go on with tedious examples of the liberals' "truth"? We all have lived in Liberaldom our entire lives, and we all, on a daily basis, feel the giant coils of the liberal anaconda squeezing the life from our bodies. Despite what our leaders in church and state tell us, that liberalism is good for us, we know we are about to die. Should we who are about to die merely salute the liberal leviathan and die? Or should we fight back and just once, before we die, feel like men instead of wretched vermin destined to live for only a moment in the coils of the serpent, and then be crushed in its coils?

In the novel *Farewell My Lovely*, the main character, private detective Phillip Marlowe, says that whenever someone tells him he won't need a gun, he knows definitely that he will need a gun. We should follow Marlowe's basic precept. When the liberals and the conservative church men tell us that faith and race should not be mixed, that we should not put on the armor of the white race and pick up the sword of Christianity in order to do battle with the colored heathens and the liberals, then we know we should do precisely that: we should unsheathe our Christian swords and put on our white armor and go into battle for Harry, England, and St. George! If white people would once again join together what never should have been rent asunder, their race and their faith, they could actually start to break free from the serpent's coils and become Europeans again.

I remember reading when I was boy, a book called *Retreat to Glory*, about Sam Houston's victory over Santa Anna at the battle of San Jacinto. The author described how Houston's men, who had signed on to avenge the Alamo, were becoming restless. Why wouldn't their commander fight instead of constantly retreating and retreating? But when Houston thought the time was right, he turned on Santa Anna; no doubt he felt as Macduff did when he faced Macbeth: "Turn, hellhound, turn!" Cries of "Remember the Alamo!" rang out, and Houston and his men routed Santa Anna and his Aztec warriors. The white man has, like Houston, been engaged for the last one hundred years in a series of retreats. He has retreated from Africa, he has retreated from India, from South America, and now he is in retreat in the white nations. But unlike Houston, the modern white man does not plan on turning on his enemies and sending them back to the dark corners of the earth from whence they came. Far from it, the white man plans to turn over his family and his people to the colored heathens.

This retreat and surrender of the white man to the colored minions of Satan is the great story of the 20th century and the early 21st century. Will the Europeans' reconquest of Europe and the other white nations be the story of the next one hundred years? It will be if the white Christian remnant takes the advice offered in the first verse of *The Book of Psalms*: "Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful." Who is more ungodly and scornful of all things white and Christian than the liberals and the colored heathens? But it is not enough to oppose just the secular liberals and the colored hordes. We must go after the ungodly clergy men who scorn all things white and Christian. At present all a clergy man has to say is, "That sounds racist," and the white man runs and hides under his bed, vowing never to sound racist again. We have been hearing nothing but anti-white anathemas from the pulpit for too long. It is time to state unequivocally that our whiteness is an integral part of our soul; we will not become soulless zombies in order to please the spiritual eunuchs of the organized churches.

The liberals and their allies in the clergy invoke race for everything. It gives them the moral high ground. But why should it? What is higher, in the moral sense, about race mixing and all its Babylonian children, such as legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and negro worship? While playing the race card every chance they get, the liberals still insist, when they speak to whites, that there is no such thing as race. Then they should stop demonizing the white race and deifying the colored races, shouldn't they? They will have it both ways so long as whites allow them to have it both ways. Nothing good will ever happen in the European arena until the white man recovers his white soul and confronts the liberals as a white man and not as a cringing, fawning caricature of a man begging to be given a third class ticket on the liberals' multicultural express train to Babylon. In point of fact the white man cannot cringe or fawn enough to get on the liberal express. His whiteness, even if he tries to deny it, makes him unfit for the liberals' "paradise."

Even the "conservatives" of the 20th century, such as James Burham and Russell Kirk, considered white racists outside the ken of civilization. How can the people who constituted the heart and soul of Western civilization prior to the 20th century suddenly be considered outside the ken of civilization in the 20th century? "We have evolved beyond whiteness," the conservatives told us. Which indicates to me that the 20th century conservatives were wolves in sheep's clothing. They were conserving liberalism, not the European people. There is no escaping the reality that the religious and secular conservatives of the 20th and now the 21st century are not conservatives as Burke was conservative. Burke wanted to conserve a very particular people, his people, and a very particular faith, the European Christian faith. The modern liberal-conservatives, despite differing with the liberals on such issues as gay rights and legalized abortion, will always side with the multi-cultural liberals against the conservative, racist white man, because the race issue trumps all other issues. The conservatives will break bread with the liberals and the colored barbarians, but not with the white "racists." Maybe it's time to stop looking on the people who hate us as our friends.

When Obama attacks the Christian faith and defends Islam it is not because he is a Moslem, it is because he is a puppet for the liberals. And the liberals will always side with the non-Christian, nature religions against the Christian faith. Their first preference is the outright destruction of the Christian faith, and their second preference is the blending of the Christian faith with other religions, which is not as exciting to the liberals as the outright destruction of the Christian faith, but it accomplishes the same thing and does it much more efficiently. All non-Christian religions are nature religions, differing in degree but not in kind. It was and it is the destiny of the white race to champion the one true faith which is "something more than nature." The fact that the white man is currently afraid to go to Nineveh does not change what he is meant to be. He cannot blend with the nature religions without losing his moral essence, which is what liberalism is all about, Charlie Brown: destroying the white man's racial hearth fire and leaving him a nameless, soulless creature who wanders the earth, trying to find a nature religion that will give him a home. The liberals of the 60's and 70's had a fascination for the eastern religions, and many still do. Islam is now getting more white converts and sympathizers than ever before, but the great bulk of liberals still prefer negro worship, because it gives them a savior, the noble black savage who is nature's god.

The current conflict between Islam and liberalism, a conflict the liberals refuse to acknowledge, is a conflict between a nature religion that fuses Judaism and paganism and a nature religion that fuses Christianity and paganism. It is not a question of which one is better. The white man whose Christian faith is bred in the bone shuns them both and all the other nature religions, whose names are legion. If a white man looks at existence with the exterior eye of the colored heathens and the white scientists and theologians, he will try to cling to one of the nature religions for support. And if he does not find support in the nature religions, which many of our white youth do not, he will despair and die. The seeming strength of the nature religions is a mirage. The spirit alone giveth life. But we must circumcise our hearts if we want to see the spiritual realm that exists over and above the nature religions. A divinely human God showed us that the spirit of the living God, the God who enters human hearts, is the only true source of hope on earth. How can a white man, a man whose people saw a great light, find comfort in the nature religions, which are all creations of the father of lies?

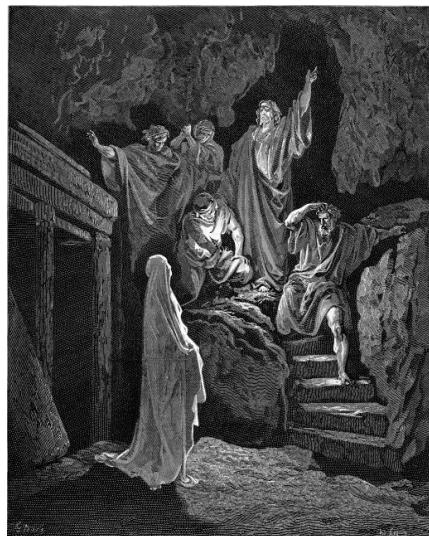
The most colossal lie, the lie that Satania is built on, is the liberals' assertion that the white Christian culture of the antique Europeans was evil. That lie robs the Europeans and all mankind of the hope that He came and dwelt with His people so that we could know the divine love. "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know Him, and have seen Him." We Europeans believe that we have seen Him and know Him through our people. If Christian Europe was a lie, as the liberals tell us, then we are of all men most to be pitied. But it was not a lie! The spiritual separation of the European's white soul from his Christian faith must end. That charity of honor bids us rise and ride: one faith, one race, one purpose, to love Him in and through our people. +

For God So Loved

February 21, 2015

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Neo-paganism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Rudyard Kipling



One grave to me was given—
To guard till Judgment Day—
But God looked down from Heaven
And rolled the Stone away!

One day of all my years—
One hour of that one day—
His Angel saw my tears
And rolled the stone away!

-Rudyard Kipling

In the past year I've read several liberal attacks on my hero, Walt Disney, and on the film director, Alfred Hitchcock. And it struck me, when reading the attackers, that it is indeed true that, "The children of this world, are in their generation wiser than the children of light." The liberals seem to have an unerring instinct that helps them to know their enemies. And their enemies are the men and women whose view of existence conflicts with liberalism. In Disney's case — he is the Hans Christian Anderson of the 20th century — it is his moral imagination, rooted in the life blood of the antique Europeans that fuels the liberals' attacks on him. Disney's Christian view of existence is incompatible with liberalism; therefore, Disney is racist and sexist. So it is written in Liberaldom and so it shall be.

Hitchcock's films have a darker tint than Disney's; he dwells much more in the dungeons of the human heart than Disney. But what the liberals hate about Hitchcock (they camouflage their hatred with accusations of sexism, which makes it completely legitimate to demonize him) is his belief in original sin. In picture after picture, Hitchcock tells us that men and women are terribly, sinfully flawed, and their sinfulness has nothing to do with social conditions; hence, they can't be redeemed by denouncing racism and becoming liberals. They need redemption from some power that is more than nature. In his best films, Hitchcock makes it clear who that power is. His films are an antidote to the Marxist, liberal, Grapes-of-Wrath view of existence. Which is why Hitchcock, along with Walt Disney and the older Westerns, were hated by the communists. The children of this world are wiser than the children of light; they know who they must demonize.

Why are the children of this world wiser than the children of light? If we look to the dramatic arts, we can extract a clue to that puzzle. Actors always tell us that it is much easier to play a villainous character than a virtuous one, because villains, who might be subtle in their villainy, are not complex in character. They pursue their evil intentions with a single-minded intensity, while the man of virtue is often confused and uncertain, like Edgar in *King Lear*, "who is so far from doing harms that he suspects none." Is that not the merely virtuous man's great flaw, that he cannot recognize evil?

The children of this world, the liberals, the Moslems, the Jews, and the colored tribesmen, are in the ascendancy, while the white Europeans are in suspended animation, because the evil that men do requires only a sick, distorted mind connected to Satan, while the good that men should do requires a heart connected to the Son of God. Satan has always sought to block those channels of grace that flow from God to the hearts of men, so that men will hear only Satan's voice in their distorted minds. God's grace is more complex than Satan's persistent urging, but Europeans once prevailed over Satan, not through thinking, but through vision, the vision of men and women with hearts of flesh connected to His sacred Heart.

In the Garden of Eden, Satan got Adam and Eve to look on God as the end product of a syllogism. To eat or not to eat the apple became a problem in philosophy rather than a commandment from a loving, benevolent God. When man seeks to know God with the mind alone, he will always end up doing Satan's will, not God's. "Yet what can I give Him, give Him my heart," shall always be the bred-in-the-bone wisdom that defeats the mind-forged, satanically-inspired ideologies of the children of this world.

It seems unfair, from a purely intellectual viewpoint, that God should allow a demonic being, vastly superior in intelligence to humans, to prowl about the world seeking the ruin of souls. The Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov* certainly thought God was unfair ("He thought too much of men"), so he decided to eliminate Christ and replace Him with a man-made Church of Christ without Christ. Did the Grand Inquisitor and all his heirs, the managerial conservatives in church and state, get it right? Are think tanks and systems that come from the minds of the best and the brightest more efficient and practical than a circumcised heart? It seems to me that the Inquisitors are wrong. Mere virtue, derived from an intellectual commitment to the good, will always finish second best to Satan and his minions, who are armed with one truth: "We must destroy what we hate, and what we hate is Christian Europeans." The virtuous conservatives are focused on affirming an abstract good, which they are always in the process of defining and are never totally sure what it is. So while the men of "virtue" debate the truth, the liberals and the colored hordes act on their truth: "White Christians and their culture must be destroyed."

The "unfair" battle that the white man seems destined to lose does not have to be lost. It is only lost so long as the white man believes that all of life is lived second-hand through the intellect. The antique Europeans did not believe in a second-hand life:

*Life is real! Life is earnest!
And the grave is not its goal;
Dust thou art, to dust returnest,
Was not spoken of the soul.*

The tragedy of the Cross was first-hand: our Savior died for His people so that our personal tragedies could be redeemed and turned into personal triumphs. Melville cried out from the depths of despair, “Is all this striving in vain?” No, it is not if we stay true to the bardic Europeans who lived life first-hand. In storybook Europe, which is the real Europe, white people loved and hated with all their hearts. They loved God and hated Satan and his minions. “What can I give him, give Him my heart,” is the bardic European’s clarion call from out of the dark night of Europe. It will, if acted upon, be the equivalent of Gideon’s trumpet that shall bring down Liberaldom and turn back the blood red tide of the colored barbarians.

The European is currently acted upon by the liberals and the colored heathens. He does not take action against the liberals and the colored heathens, because he has only a second-hand faith. He can’t see a vision of Christ in his heart, and say, “This is truth.” Instead he turns the vision into a Socratic dialogue and in doing so turns himself into a second-hand human being. He will remain so until he stops believing Satan’s lie that disembodied thought, not Christ, is the Alpha and Omega of human existence.

The intellectual Christian tries to attach himself to virtue, but it is a virtue incapable of seeing evil and of passionately defending the good, whereas the liberal attaches himself to an inverted Christianity that is the complete antithesis of Christianity. Both faiths are second-hand, but the liberal’s intellectual faith is connected to Satan so he has the support of the angelic demon, while the intellectual Christian has only the support of his own intellect. Hence the liberal has the clarity of satanic hate and will never renounce an anti-Christian religion such as Islam, while the intellectual Christian has a mish-mosh, muddled faith that makes him unable to identify evil and support the good. He sees no evil in Islam as Islam; there are only bad Moslems. And conversely he sees nothing good in the white race as a race; white people are road blocks in the way of his abstract Christian utopia.

The moment the white man realizes that tragedy is first-hand, that he has a people whose lives matter, the reconquest of Europe will begin. Yeats was right when he said that the best lacked all conviction, while the worst are full of passionate intensity. But he knew this because he was one of those who lacked all conviction. He sought to return to pagan Ireland in order to escape from a second-hand life of the intellect. Can a European still be a man if he is not a Christian? I do not think he can; the European can never return to paganism without destroying something within that makes him an integral man. But a European becomes something worse than a pagan if he is only an intellectual Christian. What is an intellectual Christian? An intellectual Christian is Pope John tendering his “loving forgiveness” to the black savages who raped, tortured, and murdered his people. It is John Paul II condemning abortion with one breath and then praising feminism with the next breath. It is all the white “Christians” who talk about “ecumenical jihads” and the dangers of a white, Euro-centered Christianity. If intellectual Christianity is the only Christianity, then Christ be not risen, because intellectual Christianity is a false, man-made faith.

Off this modern stage, which belongs to Satan, our people lived life first-hand. They saw life as a tragedy that was redeemed by a God who did not conquer by virtue of a Gnostic philosophy or by a detached oriental mysticism, but by the strength of His love, a divinely human love that brought Him to the Cross. What a vision our people bequeathed to us, to live, love, and die in the benevolent shadow of the Cross! But as time passed, the shadow of the Cross became something sinister to the European people. They fled from it and took refuge in an intellectual Christianity that left them defenseless against the wickedness and snares of the devil. We cannot make such people our visionary companions. They would have us blend Christ with other faiths such as Judaism, Islam, negro-worshipping liberalism. Europeans with hearts of fire do not need such false pagan faiths. They seek the God of the European hearth fire. Our people wait for us there. Their faith is our faith; it is a faith that gives us the strength and the wisdom to defeat the children of this world.

I don’t know that the modern Europeans will avail themselves of the vision of their ancestors, but if they do, things that now seem impossible, such as a white Christian Europe, will become a reality. The pride of intellect, which kills the vision of the heart, is the hurdle that the European must overcome. But if he does overcome it then – “Ah, what larks!” If you tell me that such marvelous transformations only occur in storybooks, I will agree with you. But old Europe was storybook Europe, not because it was utopia, but because He was truly incarnate in old Europe. The antique Europeans saw Christ through a glass darkly. The liberal has joined with the intellectual Christian to heap burning coals on storybook Europe, but what is their vision compared to the antique Europeans vision? All I see in Liberaldom is darkness. Abortion is legal, Islam is on the march, and the black savage has been deified. Intellectual Christianity has only aided Satan’s merciless onslaught; it has done nothing to stop it, because there is no heart, no soul, no vision in intellectual Christianity. At the hour of our death and at the hour of our civilization’s death, we need a miracle. Neither liberalism, intellectual Christianity, nor the nature religions can provide one. Our visionary companions, the antique Europeans, bore witness to the God of miracles. Storybook Europe is rooted in His Kingdom come. If we remain faithful unto death to that Europe, we will see miracles occur once again – “And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou has loved me may be in them, and I in them.” +

The Last Battle

February 28, 2015

Categories: Blood faith, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism



And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh: – *Revelations 19:19-21*

February, which has been decreed black history month, is the liberals' Christmas. We are supposed to reverence our black gods during every month of the year, but during the month of February we are enjoined to be extra solemn and reverent and to reflect on the great blessings that the black gods have given us. It sounds quite ridiculous when stated so bluntly, but that is the essence of the liberals' faith. They worship the negro.

Just as it was once a given that the Christ story was at the center of Western civilization, it is now a given that the negro is at the center of Western civilization. Every official in church and state is judged according to how well he serves the colored races, particularly the negro. The conservatives might demur and say that they do not worship the negro as the liberals do, but they differ in degree, not in kind. The conservatives are quite willing to jettison white people and place negroes, Mexicans, and Chinamen in their systems. It's true that they worship their systems more than blacks, but they dream of a better, more compliant people of color who will live in some kind of conservative utopia, whether it is democratic capitalist or democratic Christian. But the given is always that the rise of the negro and the demise of the white man is a blessing.

It is necessary that we challenge the bedrock faith of the mad dog liberals and the conservative liberals. Why should the colorization of the European nations be considered a blessing? It is only a blessing if rape, torture, and murder are blessings. Why should white Europeans suffer the presence of a single black in a European nation? Is it because it is the Christian thing to do? It most certainly is not. To allow one's own people to be cannibalized by black savages has never been the mark of a Christian European, but it is the mark of the Christ-haters who run the modern organized churches.

Church and Academy have been sacred cows in the European countries for 1500 years and more. Those institutions were sacred because of what they represented. The churches were the guardians of Christianity, and the Academies were the custodians of the culture that stemmed from a belief in the Christian faith. When the churches no longer guard the Christian faith and the Academy becomes the vanguard of a new satanic faith, should they remain sacred cows? Every major university was initially founded by a Christian sect. But the universities gradually became independent, militantly anti-Christian, anti-European institutions, and the churches became mere adjuncts of the Academy. On a weekly basis John Paul II used to meet with a panel of experts from every academic discipline. What kind of faith emerges from that kind of alliance? A faith in which Christ is relegated to the status of a social worker, the negro is deified, and the white man is demonized. That is the type of faith that emerges from the union of Church and Academy.

Conservatism can never be the mere preservation of the furniture of church and state. Such exteriorism does not conserve, it destroys. It is the spirit of our people that must be preserved, not their furniture. An old chair of my father's only has significance to me because of what it represents, the spirit above the dust, or in that instance, the spirit above the furniture. As far back as we can remember, to our great, great grandfathers' time and beyond, good Christians went to church, and boys and girls who wanted to be learned went to school. That process no longer works: our churches are not Christian and our schools do not make us wise. If the European people had not been spiritually neutered from attending churches and schools, they would be able to see Church and Academy for what they are: citadels of Satan. Black, white, yellow, and brown people all learn to hate white people and the Christian God at those twin pillars of Liberaldom. The colored races have a built-in antipathy for the white race, but that natural antipathy increases tenfold when they are educated at Western universities or attend Christian seminaries. Jomo Kenyatta, the Mau Mau chieftain, was educated at Cambridge University, and Martin Luther King Jr. went to Boston University. And the list goes on and on. Church and Academy must be destroyed before the white man can begin to reclaim his own again.

When I was young I was very fond of the Norse mythology. I didn't dislike the Greek myths, but I was particularly drawn to the story of Odin and his last great battle, the Day of Ragnarök, against the forces of evil. During that battle we get a sense that the last battle is not the last battle, that somehow the nobility and bravery of Odin and his fellow warriors will give his people a rebirth; they will reclaim a world renewed by the sacrifice of Odin and his kinsmen. Am I alone in seeing more genuine Christianity in Odin and his people than I see in the modern intellectual Christians? While lacking the whole vision, the men of the pre-Christian North seemed to have intuited in their blood the divine miracle that was to come: a brave, noble Hero, who was a God and a man, coming to destroy the devil and his minions. They couldn't quite put a name to the Hero-God, but they knew, in the deepest regions of their soul, that He was coming. And when He did come, the Norsemen were ready to accept Him, because they had done the necessary work: they believed in kinship and fidelity to their racial hearth fire.

The great error, the heretical error that the church men rammed down the Europeans' throats, was that the followers of Christ had to lessen their ties to their kinsmen and abandon their ties to the people of their racial hearth fire in order to become fit for a universalist religion. That pernicious doctrine, the doctrine of intellectual Christianity, is diametrically opposed to the Christian faith. Christianity is a religion of depth; only those men and women who have learned to love much at their familial and racial hearth fires can come to know and love the Son of God. The intellectual Christianity of the church men tells Christians to kill their hearts so that they can know God. For centuries the Christian faithful resisted the satanic temptations of intellectual Christianity, but once they succumbed to the relentless pressure from the twin pillars of Satan the consequences were staggering. Wars became cold-blooded democratic affairs, babies in the womb became collateral damage, and the love and defense of one's own kith and kin became mortal sin. We need Christian Goths who love and hate with all their hearts, and we need them very badly. That which is opposed to Christ's reign of charity – and Church and Academy are opposed to His reign of charity – must be fought to the death, just as Odin fought against the devil and his minions in the last battle.

In my late twenties, I had a chance meeting with an old classmate whom I had not seen since high school. Unlike myself and most of my other classmates, Bob had always known what he wanted to do with his life. He wanted to go to college and then enter a seminary to prepare for the ministry. I remembered Bob's plans and asked him if he was now a minister. He laughed and told me his story, which is the story of the modern Europeans. Bob majored in religion in college, and there he studied Christianity along with all the other religions. Bob's studies led him to conclude that Christianity was not the one true faith, it was just one more 'dying and rebirth' religion, significant only because it emphasized man's yearning for some transcendent

being, etc. Every student of Religion 101 has heard that blather. I differed with Bob, because my own experience was quite the opposite from his; the study of other religions had made me appreciate the uniqueness of the Christian faith. But Bob, like the dwarfs in C. S. Lewis's seventh volume of the Narnia Chronicles, *The Last Battle*, was not going to be fooled again.

I have had many years to reflect on Bob's loss of faith and the loss of faith of all the other Europeans like Bob. And I think it comes to this: I did not study Christianity; I saw Christ's image in the people who loved Him, the first apostles such as St. John and St. Paul, and then in the collective face of the European people as depicted by the bards of Europe. That bardic road, the road less traveled upon in the 20th century, is the road we need to travel in order to see Christ above and beyond the nature religions. When we study Christ, we lose Him, but when we listen to our people, gathered around our racial hearth fire, telling us stories about Him and His people, we come to love Him. *King Lear* is a Christ story, Scott's *Ivanhoe* is a Christ story, the lives of our people, when they were a people, was and is the Christ story.

The lonesome road in the old hymn is the road of intellectual pride. The devil was persistent, just as Delilah was persistent, and he eventually convinced the European to go down the lonesome road. Now his intellectual pride makes him too proud to bend his knee to Christ but not too proud to bow down to the negro gods and support all religions except the one true religion. Is this an ascent? Church and Academy tell us that it is. But Church and Academy are the twin pillars of Satan, so why should we listen to them?

In the church histories written by the intellectual Christians, one looks in vain for Christ the Savior who fights with His people against the forces of evil. Instead we are told of a God who came down to earth to give His blessing to a system, derived from Judaic and Roman laws, and then went back to some remote heaven where He waits for an intellectual elite to come and discuss things with Him in the manner of the virtuous pagans in Dante's first circle of hell. Christ is so much more than a Socratic Buddha. He is our Lord, He is our kinsman, not in the flesh that perishes but in the spiritual flesh that never perishes. The same spirit of kinship that binds us to the people of our own race binds us to our Lord. Where there are no familial and racial ties, there is no connection to Christ who comes to men through such ties, not by way of a philosophy or a religious system. Negroes are worshipped instead of Christ because white men have followed the commandments of Church and Academy: Thou shalt have no Savior but the negro, and thou shalt have no racial or familial hearth fire.

Every February I try to do something that is in contradiction to black history month. Last year I reread Anthony Jacob's book *White Man, Think Again!* This year I listened to Christmas carols every day during the month of February. The old Christmas carols are in direct contrast to the type of theology that spawns negro worship. They tell us of a Savior who is also an intimate friend; He rules over our racial hearth fire, but He also resides with us there. He is the God and comrade that Odin longed for, the True God and true kinsman that gave us second birth. That little house on the river was all that Ratty wanted or needed. Our racial hearth fire presided over by our Lord and Kinsman is our equivalent of Ratty's home on the river, the European river. When the European walks away from Church and Academy and returns to his European home, he will be a man again. And he will be ready for the last battle whenever his Lord and Kinsman calls on him. +

Thus Is Our Faith Tested

March 7, 2015

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Anthony Jacob



We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head...

Sure we are that a fire that would consume all the theological and other philosophical speculations of the last two centuries would be a happy Godsend.

-George Fitzhugh *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters*

Al Sharpton – we'll dispense with his title – has been handed a bully pulpit on a major news station and direct access to the President. And every time a white public figure makes what is deemed a racial slur, that public figure must go and genuflect before Al Sharpton. So it would not be an exaggeration to conclude that the moral essence of the anti-nation called the United States of America is Al Sharpton. And what has our nation's Moral Essence been pontificating about this week? Sharpton wants the Federal government to rescind the right of self-defense when the perpetrator of a crime is black and the victim is white. That a white man has no right of self-defense against colored savages is currently the unwritten law of the United States, but occasionally, as was the case in Ferguson, Missouri, a potential white victim fights back, and a jury, following the antiquated law of self-defense, acquits the white defendant. This won't do. White people must never defend themselves against black savages. White self-defense is a sin that cries out to the Federal government (the liberals' equivalent of heaven) for vengeance. The white man must submit to the will of his gods. Even if they slay him, still must he trust in them.

I would prefer that the unwritten rule not become a written law, because a few whites have escaped liberal "justice" under the unwritten "no white must defend himself" law, but whether the Al Sharpton law is adopted or not will not change the ruling ethos of our land: The white man must do nothing to stop black aggression against whites. The codicil to that law is that the white man must not defend himself against any non-white race or any non-Christian religious sect.

All anti-white and anti-Christian laws are adhered to in Europe as well as in the United States. There is no white nation not committed to the extermination of all things white and Christian. This liberal commitment to Satanism results in criminal absurdities. For instance, white liberals claim to have discovered the fact that rape is a terrible crime. We are harangued with all sorts of educational programs that are designed to "sensitize" males to the problem of rape. And the definition of rape has become so broad that no male is innocent; we are all rapists now. But wait – that statement must be modified – all *white* males are guilty of rape. As the Scandinavian countries become rape havens for Third World savages, and the United States follows in their train, the liberals stay focused on white kindergarten boys who pull girls' hair on the playground, while they ignore the Muslim, Hindu, Oriental and negroid tribesmen who look on the rape of white women as their right. The same principle is applied to street crime. It is bad when whites shoot black thugs, but it is "no big deal" when black Mau Mau torture, rape, and murder white people. One need not have the acumen of Sherlock Holmes to see the pattern that emerges. Every act of violence that serves the savage hordes of color and the anti-Christian faiths is a good act of violence, and any effort of white people to prevent the murder and rape of white people, or to punish those who murder and rape white people, is a reprehensible act.

Should white people submit to their own extermination? Should they go quietly into the Babylonian night or should they rage against the dying of the light? We know the answer to that question. On every front, the answer is yes, the white man should go quietly into the Babylonian night. The liberals tell us we must self-destruct, because the white race is evil and not fit to live in the brave, new Babylonian world. The conservatives in church and state, the great intellects, tell us that the whole notion of white people with white souls distinct from other people of color is nonsense; there is no such thing as race. There are just generic, interchangeable people who are cogs in the mechanistic systems of the philosophical speculators: "My philosophy and existence are one. There are no racial hearth fires in my philosophy, ergo, there is no such thing as white people." And by extension: "Since there is no such thing as white people, there is no such thing as white genocide." Isn't that comforting? And you thought white genocide was a real problem. The next time you feel that way, take two strong doses of philosophical speculation and call your local clergyman in the morning.

Whites have been fed the doctrine of passivity in the face of colored savagery with their mother's milk. On the one hand, white people are evil; therefore, they must do penance and serve the negro, but when the colored races do evil, it is not really evil, because there is no evil in the colored races; that is a mirage, a white racist mirage. And the ribbon that ties the neat little anti-white box together is the doctrine of white non-existence. Whites can't fight white genocide, because there is no such thing, in the spiritual realm, as white people. It always comes back to the separation of nature from spirit. Are we quickening spirits or are we the walking dead, mere creatures of nature? Race and faith are interrelated, just as spirit and nature are interrelated. As we lose our consciousness of the distinctness of the Christian faith, how it differs from all of the other nature religions, we also lose our consciousness of the distinctness of the white race. Philosophy demands that we stay on the natural plane, on the surface of existence. But what if truth exists below the surface of existence? "There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophies." So long as the white man resists that essential truth, he will remain a passive recipient of the evil that blacks do.

Herbert Butterfield, one of the few great historians, tells us that a true historian must really want to discover the truth about the historical period and/or person he is studying. That type of historian uses primary sources, secondary sources, and his reason, and then he binds all those factors together with intuition and comes up with what he feels is an accurate history. The bad historian proceeds on a different path than Butterfield. He starts out with an *a priori* assumption about a particular historical subject, and then he only looks for evidence that supports his *a priori* assumption. The modern, anti-white, anti-Christian liberal has taken the bad historian's approach. He looks at Christian Europe with just the eye of reason, or else he only looks at secondary sources from outside of Europe that do not tell an accurate, integral story of the Europeans' history. The end result of the acceptance of the liberals' bad history is the isolation of the modern European from his past and the God that resided there.

The liberal rejects Christianity because he claims European Christianity was evil. The conservative accepts the liberals' view of antique Europe, but his response is different. He rejects the European people, but he keeps Christianity by maintaining that the Christian faith is not an incarnate faith passed on from one generation to the next by the people who loved Christ. Instead, the faith is a philosophy that great thinkers have passed on from one generation of great thinkers to another. It is easier to defend one or two theologians than an entire people. But if Christ cannot be known through a sympathetic attachment to and love for the people who loved Him, how can He be known? That other way, the way of philosophical speculation, seems simpler, but it leads to the house of desolation, not to His Kingdom come.

The common ground of all the organized churches, conservative and liberal, is their faith in intellectual Christianity. Each sect believes they can win in the open market of speculative theology. They all are emperors without any clothes, and they have left their adherents naked to their enemies, who are the liberals and the savage hordes of color. The Pauline Christianity of the antique Europeans has been thrown into the dustbins of organized Christianity, but that faith is the only restorative for white people. St. Paul did not try to define Christ, he bore witness to Him. St. Paul's charity that never faileth and Burke's charity of honor point us to one faith and one people that must be defended. If 300 pagan Spartans could hold the pass until the Athenians stopped debating and speculating, can't we, the remnant band of Christian Europeans who have rejected intellectual Christianity, hold the pass until our modern white Athenians finally decide to fight?

Al Sharpton's speech marks a new stage in the war against the white race. What was implicit is now explicit. The white race must be destroyed. The liberals will never oppose any force on earth that is anti-white and anti-Christian. They only hesitate when two anti-European forces collide, as in the case of Islam and Judaism. It's significant that in such cases white Europeans are merely cast in the role of supporters. The conservative liberals and the moderate liberals support Israel while the more radical liberals and the neo-pagans support the Muslims. But the significant factor is that the white Europeans have no cause of their own, because they do not exist as a people. They have become what the church men wanted them to become: disembodied minds without souls.

Anthony Jacob correctly diagnosed the fatal weakness of the good Europeans in his book *White Man, Think Again!*:

It was the very trustfulness of the Kenyans which was employed as the means of betraying them: their Anglo-Saxon fair-mindedness which was employed as the means of overthrowing them. Above all, they consented to their own execution because their minds had been focussed on the Blacks instead of on their own White standing. The White tribe in Kenya could not have been dispossessed and expelled if it had not first been persuaded to surrender 'some' of its power, and to work for the benefit of the Black tribes instead of for its own benefit. The Blacks had to 'evolve', they were told; and they did not realise that all this meant was that the racial tables had to be turned and the Whites had to retrogress. Did they not think it morally imperative, they were asked, that they should do their utmost to help their black charges advance? And of course they agreed it was; for had they not since early childhood donated pennies and knitted garments for the poor naked peoples of benighted Africa? But if the question had been framed differently, and properly; if the question had been: 'Are you going to make a sacrifice of yourselves and your children for the sake of the myth of Black advancement?', then their reaction would have been quite different as well.

I saw this process at work in my own family. My grandfather was staunchly white in faith and ethos. He duly gave money to feed starving Africans, because his clergyman told him to do so and because he was a charitable man. But my grandfather never thought darkies should be placed on an equal footing with whites. He told me, approvingly, of his grandfather (I repeat myself with this story, but I claim an old man's privilege to tell the same story over and over again) who was a veteran of the Civil War on the Union side. The grizzled veteran, who lived into his mid-nineties, told my grandfather that he would never have gone to war had he known it was a war to put blacks on an equal footing with whites. "They told me it was to save the Union." The French Revolution in Haiti was the beginning, on a large scale, of the white liberal's betrayal of his own people, and our un-Civil War was the next stage in that process. The deification of the negro in the 20th century was the beginning of the final stage. My father was part of the familiar pattern of white decline. He loved his father, but he denounced his prejudice. Why did my father denounce his father's prejudice? Because my father trusted church and state. And all the King's horses, and all the King's men in church and state put their moral stamp of approval on the new intellectual Christianity that had no place for white souls with a thirst for the living God. I hope that family decline, the decline of white prejudice in favor of one's own people over the colored barbarian, stops with me. Then my children will have something to pass on to their children besides a second-hand faith in the sacred negro.

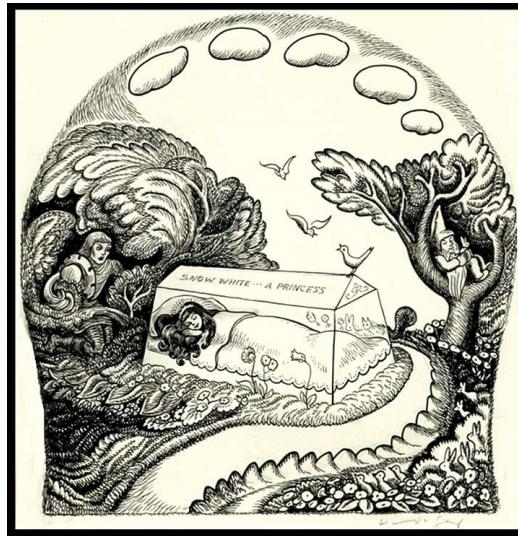
When a black god can openly declare that all white resistance to the torture, rape, and murder of white people must come to an end, we know that we are in a new, bloodier, more desperate stage of the extermination process. No white who has crossed the line from a first-hand faith in his people and their God to a second-hand faith in intellectual Christianity will be able to resist the extermination of the white race, for the simple reason that the second-hand white man does not believe there is such a thing as the white race. The defense of the white race will depend on the few — all great defenses depend on just a few — white men who have not crossed over the line from His eternal Europe to Babylonian Europe. Wherever that line is drawn, no matter how few defend it, that battle line is Europe. In the old Welsh battle hymn, I hear our Savior's command: "Stand and never yield." +

The European Fairy Tale

March 14, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Bred in the Bone, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Thomas Nelson Page



"Who is that boy?" asked Mr. Newby, as the horse was led away.

"A green country boy with a pedigree," said a low voice at his shoulder.

"Where does he come from?"

"Virginia," said Colonel Ashland. "And his name is Theodoric Johnston. It's bred in the bone."

-Thomas Nelson Page

The Netanyahu visit brought out all the contending factions of Liberaldom. The Evangelicals praised him because they believe in a strange new faith that is a mixture of Christianity, Judaism, and Nostradamus-like prophecies. The liberal conservatives love Netanyahu because they believe that he, like Superman, supports truth, justice, and the democratic way. The mad-dog liberals have a problem with Netanyahu: On the one hand they must support the Jews, who are part of the liberal coalition and still fill many of the top posts in Liberaldom, but on the other hand the liberals know they must also support the Moslems, because all anti-Christian, and therefore anti-white, religious sects must be upheld. But American Jews are not all that concerned about Israel; the zealous support for Israel comes from the "conservatives" and the Evangelicals, which is a sure indication that the Evangelicals are not Christian and the conservatives are not conservative. The more perceptive, consistently radical liberals support the Moslem cause in Palestine, because they see the Moslems as the real anti-Western underdog. Likewise the neo-pagans and the right-wing Catholics support the Moslems over Israel, but for different reasons than the radicals.

The whole Netanyahu spectacle, like all modern, liberal extravaganzas, was hard to take, because one realizes when viewing such events that there will be no Christian European voice in the proceedings. Scott's Ivanhoe, whose Christian faith was bred in the bone, knew how to protect his people from a militant, anti-Christian faith while still extending mercy and charity to those Jews who respected the ethos of the Christian faith, even if they didn't believe in its tenets. Such a delicate balance is impossible in an either/or intellectual Christianity, but it is possible for those who believe, as St. Paul believed, that charity never faileth. From a practical standpoint, it seems that the Christian warrior who is obliged to fight under the constraints of Christian charity is at a disadvantage when fighting the Jew, the Moslem, and the colored tribesman, who do not practice charity and mercy. But our ancestors fought under such a disadvantage with more than moderate success. Of course, the Europeans have no choice in the matter. Win or lose, the Christ-bearing people must fight according to the code.

In right-wing circles, it is considered blasphemy to suggest that all problems cannot be resolved by the eradication of the Jews. But such a view is unhistorical. The Jews aided the Jacobins in the French Revolution, but it was lapsed Catholics, not the Jews, who led the charge against everything Christian and European. So it remains today: almost every radical organization has Jews at the forefront, but such organizations also contain lapsed Christians who would continue the anti-European work of those organizations if the Jews suddenly disappeared from the scene. Although most Jews are secularized (they no longer believe in the first five books of the Bible), they still retain an inbred abhorrence for all things stemming from incarnational, Christian Europe. For what is the essence of Judaism? It is a hatred for our incarnate Lord, which makes it particularly ironic that the most vehement enemies of the Jews are the neo-pagans, who deny the reality of the Incarnation, and the Roman Catholic traditionalists, who are uncomfortable with the main implication of the Incarnation, namely that our Lord has a human heart. Such a God makes it difficult for those who like to hurl 'too much human respect' anathemas at their flocks.

The secularized Jew is the more consistent Jew: He sees that having broken his covenant with God by rejecting Christ there is no need to retain Moses and the prophets because they existed for one purpose, that is, to prepare the Jewish people for the coming of the Messiah. Why are there no more prophets? The Christian says there are no more prophets because He whom the prophets said would come has come. Reject Him and you have no faith; you have nothing except an instinctive hatred for those who do have faith.

The Orthodox Jew is a more subtle danger than the secularized Jew, because the intellectual Christians such as Peter Kreeft take all those who affirm God, such as Orthodox Jews and Moslems, and put them in the same ecumenical stew, neglecting the essential fact of our existence here on earth: We are all doomed to die and only one God can raise us up on the last day. All other faiths, save the one, will leave us in the dust. The Christian European is not helping his own people nor any of the heathen peoples by allowing the Christian faith and the Christ-bearing people to be blended with other faiths and other peoples.

Most of us in the Western world, with the exception of the neo-pagan and Catholic right, are tempted to side with the Jews over the Moslems. This is only natural, because many of us went to public schools with Jews, lived in the same neighborhoods as the Jews, and mixed with the Jews socially. This was not a good thing, but it was the reality for most of us. In contrast – obviously this is now changing – the Moslems were a people that someone of my generation only saw in desert movies. (1) If I had to choose between the Jews and the Moslems, I would certainly, because of my upbringing, choose the Jews, but we are not supposed to choose between two evils. The Christian European should cling to his own with hoops of steel and forsake the heathen faiths and the tribes of color. But now that the Christian faith is a philosophy and Christ no longer has a local habitation by the Europeans' racial hearth fire, the European people have gone whoring after new abstract faiths. The Evangelicals have created the aforementioned Judaic-Christian-Nostradamic faith, the conservatives have chosen democracy ("We must support Israel because it is a democracy"), the liberals have chosen negro worship... and on it goes. Our incarnational faith, our European hearth fire faith, has been left behind in the age of fairy tales and fables.

Judaism in its secularized and Orthodox form has remained the same over the years. So has Islam and the various tribal faiths of the colored peoples. It is the European peoples' Christian faith that has changed. The Europeans were the only people who stood in the presence of the living God. But they couldn't stand the light, so they sought to distance themselves from the living God by abstracting the Christian faith and blending it with the heathen faiths. The modern clergymen's obsession with racial blending is the result of their desire to escape from God's light and return to the Egyptian night of the heathens. They won't be welcome there. Is it really so terrible to follow in His train? Haven't we, the Europeans, by rejecting the burden of race and faith, a burden that becomes a source of grace when it is accepted, brought down every evil under the sun upon our heads? The one common denominator between all the

European factions now choosing up sides in the Moslem and Jewish debacle is their rejection of their European heritage. And why have they done this? Is it because the old fairy tale seems too hard to believe? "Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?"

There is no other. There is one Christ, and He is to be found in the midst of His people. Walter Scott was a rare poet, a poet who lived up to his vision of what a man should be. And what was his vision? He believed that the only true mystic vision came from the charity that never faileth, the charity learned at home, at our racial hearth fire. Likewise Scott's American heir, Thomas Nelson Page, the greatest writer on the American side of Europe: his happy endings did not stem from a man who couldn't see reality, they came from a man who could see reality. He saw the reality of a spiritual realm presided over by our Lord and kinsmen.

In the old stories, the climax used to be considered attained when the young couple became engaged. Like the hero and heroine of the fairy tales of our youth, in that golden land of "Once-upon-a-time," all that was to be told after they became engaged was that "they married and lived happily ever after." In the modern stories, however, this seems to be but the beginning of new adventures. Marriage, which used to be the entrance to bliss unending, appears to be now but the "gate of the hundred sorrows;" and the hero and heroine wed only to find that they loved someone else better, and pine to be disunited. They spend the rest of their lives trying to get unmarried. Nothing is so unconventional as to love one's own husband or wife, and nothing so tame as to live pure and true to one's vows in spirit as well as in fact.

It must be said, at once, that this is not a story of that kind. The people described in it knew nothing of that sort of existence. Any reader who chooses to go farther in this history must do so with the full knowledge that such is the case, and that the married life of the young couples will be found as archaic and pure as that of our first parents, before modern wisdom discovered that the serpent was more than the devil, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil more than a tree of knowledge. Still, when we have come so far together, it is necessary to go a little farther.

Red Rock by Thomas Nelson Page

All of us need go no farther than our visionary ancestors, men like Walter Scott and Thomas Nelson Page, who believed that the highest wisdom was contained in the ever-ancient and ever-new fairy tale faith of the European people. What good is an intellectual faith if our hearts wither and die? White women abort and white men let them abort, because of the clerical abortion of the white race from the Christian faith. Save the mother and abort the child is a devilish ploy of the liberals. You save both mother and child, because the mother's heart will die without the child. So it is with the Europeans: separate the European people from bred-in-the-bone Christianity, and a living faith becomes the dead philosophy of a soulless people.

When I was a young man, I used to go to the local mall with some prolife groups to pass out anti-abortion literature. We had good intentions, but I came to realize that we, the pro lifers, were operating under a false premise when we passed out information designed to show that the baby in the womb was a human baby; we were assuming that the abortion plague was just a result of a lack of knowledge. We thought that once we got the information out, all would be well. But legalized abortion is the result of a deficiency of the heart. People know the baby in the womb is a human being, but they have hardened their hearts against God and His Creation, and they are willing to kill in order to defy God.

Islam, Judaism, negro-worshipping liberalism and all the other satanic faiths that are resurfacing to fill the spiritual void in the formerly Christian lands of Europe will lose their power if the European people regain their heartfelt faith in their people and their God. The first Christian Europeans bent their knees to Christ and rose up free men, willing and able to conquer the world for Christ. The shriveled up men and women of modern Europe are cringing, crawling creatures, afraid of offending the heathen gods of multiculturalism. Let us kiss the hilt of our swords, bend our knees to Christ, and once again rise up as free men, loving and hating with all our hearts. +

(1) The old mantra used to be: It doesn't matter whether you are black or white, Jew or Christian, so long as you are an American. The new mantra is: It doesn't matter if you are black or white, Christian, Jew, or Moslem, so long as you are an American. But what is the moral essence of such a melting pot? There is no moral essence; hence, there is no nation. Our anti-nation, like the multi-cultural anti-nations of Europe, is a collection of warring tribes united in one thing: their hatred of the white race.

Hallowed Be Thy Name

March 21, 2015

Categories: Blood faith, Bred in the Bone, Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: John Buchan, Shakespeare, Solzhenitsyn



Abide with us, for it is toward evening and the day is far spent. —Luke 24: 29

The white people of Europe, if these shadows are not altered, are going to be exterminated by the Moslems they have allowed into their nations. I recently saw on the internet several black Moslems at some kind of Islamic demonstration in Britain, who are indicative of the plague enveloping Europe. They were holding up signs that read, "Your sons and daughters shall be Moslem." And so they shall be if the Europeans refuse to fight back as a people. In South Africa, "Kill the Boers" has become a national mandate. And in the U.S.A., the most maniacally anti-white country in the world, negro worship has become a criminal absurdity. White students that chant anti-negro songs in private are punished with rigor and merciless swiftness while the rape and murder of whites not only goes unpunished, it is covered up by the liberals with malice aforethought.

When you look at all the satanic forces arrayed against white people, samizdat publications such as mine seem more futile than Don Quixote's legendary tilting at windmills, but I liken such windmill tilting to prayer: It often seems futile and hopeless, but something inside of us tells us that it is not.

A YouTube video I saw the other day made me think of a passage from a John Buchan book that I read many years ago, called *Huntingtower*. Here is the passage:

Dickson groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith?

The video was called *Angry, White, and Proud*, and despite the cynical commentator's snide remarks and the crude language of the angry, white, and proud British nationalists depicted in the video, it was the stuff of romance. The men depicted had the makings of that within which is Christian and white, the stuff that European counter-revolutions are made on. They had three attributes that all of the other British nationalist groups, such as the BNP and the EDL, lack: They love and hate with all their hearts, they are *not* committed to non-violence, and they are Christian not neo-pagan (there was some skirmishing when neo-Nazis tried to join one of their demonstrations). Granted, they are hopelessly outnumbered, they are confused and leaderless, but they are the last men left in Britain. If anything good ever happens in Britain it will come from these men and others like them. When the largely white police force arrested the white nationalist protestors and not the Moslem jihadists during one of the white nationalists' protest marches, it was worse than scandalous, it was criminal. The British police are the scum of the earth, committed to defending a liberal state hell bent on exterminating every white man, woman, and child in Britain. Claiming "I'm just doing my job" doesn't excuse the crime. The white British policemen should join the white nationalists. But in order to do that, they would have to be heroes, willing to stand with the righteous few against the multitudinous legions of the wicked.

*They are slaves who will not choose,
Hatred, scoffing, and abuse
Rather than in silence shrink
From the truth they needs must think:
They are slaves who dare not be
In the right with two or three.*

When the government of a nation is not committed to conserving its people but is instead committed to exterminating them and replacing them with colored, heathen savages, all those who support such a government should be considered enemies. And they needs must be fought just as the colored heathens must be fought. Elections are useless when they are just elections to determine which liberal party shall preside over the extermination process. The white Britons depicted in the video have grasped that essential fact. Democratic governments are not the friends of white people.

Neither the Mau Maus nor the Moslems, who are often the same, are invincible. They see that white people of Europe are weak, so they do what colored heathens do to the weak: They rape and murder them. They are not going to stop raping and murdering whites until whites respond with force. This seems so obvious that it should not have to be stated, but until I saw that video, I had never heard of any white people who believed that whites had a right to defend themselves, in the full meaning of the word 'defend,' against the onslaught of the colored heathens. My daughter, who is passionately in love with old Europe and partial to her people, asked me if anything could really come of a small band of disenfranchised, outnumbered British patriots. I told her I didn't expect to see immediate results, but I do think such white nationalist groups are tiny sparks of a romance that could eventually reconquer Britain for Christ and His people.

The obstacles to the reconquest of Europe are only insurmountable if we refuse to identify them as obstacles, thus leaving them forever blocking our path. The major obstacle in front of white, Christian Europeans is organized, Christless Christianity. The Christless Christian churches are against white people, because they are not true Christian churches. The church of Christ has never consisted of an organization of men with a theory about God. The true church consists of those who believe in and love the Son of God in and through their people. St. Paul sent his epistles to small groups of men and women who loved Christ; such groups have always constituted the Christian church. Those people who hate their brothers (the anti-white clergymen of organized Christianity) and say they love God are liars.

White Christians who love much, who want to fight for the people of their racial hearth fire, should expect to be condemned and hated by the white, post-Christian heathens who run the organized churches. This was all foretold to us by our Lord, who said that we would be hated by the world that first hated Him. It is passion the anti-European clerics are afraid of, the

passion of European men and women who love and hate with all their hearts, because they are the one force on earth that can defeat organized Christian Jewry, negro-worshipping liberalism, and colored heathenism. When our passion is connected to His passion, miracles occur.

When I was a boy there was a white shop owner in my neighborhood who had been robbed repeatedly by black thugs. One day a black thug came in and gave the usual command: "Give me the money or I'll blow your —— head off!" The owner seemed to comply, but instead of taking money from the cash register he took out a gun and shot and killed the black thug. That incident took place before the day when white self-defense was illegal, so the shop owner was not tried. And I should mention that no one ever attempted to rob that shop owner again. Every European is now in that shop owner's position prior to the self-defense shooting. The liberals, the Moslems, and the colored barbarians have told us by word and deed what they intend to do to us. White self-defense is not only permissible in such circumstances, it is laudable and necessary. We can't be as open about self-defense as the shop owner was, because the white race is now an outlawed race of people, but the first step in this battle, which only the heathens are fighting, is spiritual preparedness. We must realize that white people have a moral right and duty to defend themselves against the forces of evil that are arrayed against them. We don't want to see young white men, such as those British counter-revolutionaries, running out into the streets and gunning down Moslem murderers and liberal enablers. Such acts would be morally right, but they would be tactically unwise. Christian white men who are in the midst of the fray will pick their own time and find their own way to retaliate against the liberals and the colored heathens. The thing to remember is that the liberals and the colored heathens want to isolate white men from each other and their God and make white people feel the inevitability of the victory of liberalism (what the liberals hope for) or the victory of Islam (what the Moslems hope for), but neither victory is inevitable. A few whites with passion, acting in accord with each other and in union with Christ, can turn the tide of battle in favor of the European people.

In his Gulag books, Solzhenitsyn asks himself and his readers what would have happened if those Russians who were arrested by the KGB had not waited for the communist inquisitors to come for them one by one, but instead had joined together, armed themselves with whatever weapons they could lay their hands on, and fought back. He was not suggesting open warfare – the commies had the tanks and the army – but he was talking about violent resistance, midnight raids on communist officials, and sabotage. We are outlawed men, marked for death; it is right and necessary that we should fight for our survival.

Europeans should be practical and plan strategies that have some chance of success, but ultimately it is not for practical material gain that we fight. We fight to purge our souls of the accumulated filth of modernity. The theology of Christian atheism, allied with colored heathenism, has ruled the Western nations for too long. It is a sickness unto death. When we fight that theology from hell, we will reclaim our souls and quite possibly we will reclaim our European nations as well. But whether we win or lose in the material realm, we will be men with souls again. That is a victory that cannot be taken away from us. Who was the real victor in the conflict in the Sudan – Gordon or the Mahdi? And who ultimately triumphed in the American Civil War – Lee or Grant?

I have used the British nationalists as exemplars of a fighting European remnant, because I know of them and because I have a special love for "this earth, this realm, this England," and for the Britain of "Hail, Britannia," Walter Scott, and "Cambria Will Not Yield." But all white Europeans are in the same boat as the white British nationalists. We are a tiny white minority up against a majority coalition of liberals (post-Christian whites) and colored heathens (Moslems, blacks, Aztecs, Chinese, etc.) who, left to their own devices, will cannibalize each other but are united in their hatred of Christ and the white race.

Of all the white minorities it is the white South Africans who are suffering the most. They were the last whites to lose faith in their God and their people, but when their leaders lost faith the white South Africans were the first to feel the brunt of colored savagery since they had started out as a minority: The colored heathens did not have to slowly build up a majority coalition before moving against them. By all accounts it is over for the white South Africans, as it soon will be for the rest of us, if there is no divine intervention. Which brings us to Shakespeare's Prospero:

*And my ending is despair,
Unless I be relieved by prayer;
Which pierces so that it assaults
Mercy itself and frees all faults.*

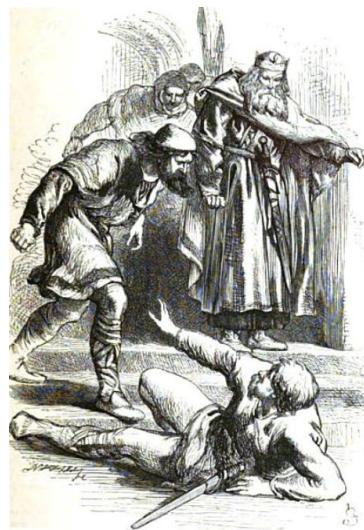
Is it true that every prayer offered "in Christ's name" will be answered? Our faith tells us that such is the case, but only once in my life did I receive a dramatic answer to my prayers. That does not mean my prayers have not been answered. With the eyes of faith, I know that He has heard and answered my prayers, but the temporal eyes have not seen His answers. Is that the sign of a faith that is weak? Certainly, my faith is a trembling faith. I imagine that is the case with most of us: We feel, more frequently than we want to, the God-forsakeness of this world. But then there is the vision. I have seen the living God amongst the people of my racial hearth fire and only amongst those people. Perhaps that vision is the answer to all those prayers made in Jesus' name, a vision that is given only to those who have circumcised their hearts and consecrated them to the God who comes to us in and through our people. Pray for South African whites, pray for all the white Europeans in their battle against all the powers of hell, pray in Christ's name, Amen. +

Where We Ought to Hate

March 28, 2015

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



But I trust that our Countrymen will not be softened to that kind of crimes and criminals; for if we should our hearts will be hardened to every thing which has a claim on our benevolence. A kind Providence has placed in our breasts a hatred of the unjust and cruel, in order that we may preserve ourselves from cruelty and injustice. They who bear cruelty, are accomplices in it. The pretended gentleness which excludes that charitable rancour, produces an indifference which is half an approbation. They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.

-Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

The liberals have buried Christian Europe and the people who dwelt therein. Nor was it enough to just bury the antique Europeans and leave their graves untended and forgotten. Oh no! The liberals had to heap mountains of posthumous abuse upon the heads of the dishonored dead. And the abuse never ceases. Day after day, year after year, with an unrelenting monotony, the liberals tell one and all about the evil that white men did, and would do again if the liberals were not there to stop them. White children now grow up hearing the evil white man story as white children used to grow up hearing stories of Jack and the Beanstalk, Goldilocks and the Three Bears, and the Gallant Tailor. Since this new story, the story of the evil white man, is at the center of our modern civilization — it is in fact the moral essence of our civilization — we should study this new story and try to discover why liberals consider this new story so much more important than the old story from the Bible.

In a rare moment of moral clarity the decadent French novelist Andre Gide said —

"I don't believe in the Devil; except that—and here's what bothers me—whereas you can serve God only if you believe in Him, the Devil does not require you to believe in him before you can serve him. On the contrary, he is never so well served as when he is unperceived. It's always to his interest not to let himself be recognized; and there, as I said, is what bothers me: to think that the less I believe in him, the more I strengthen him..." The Counterfeitors

The liberals do not believe in the devil, which makes it quite easy for the devil to make them do his will. You can't resist someone when you don't acknowledge his existence. The devil imposes his will on the liberals, taking advantage of the fact that their intellectual pride will not allow them to admit they slavishly obey an intellect superior to their own. And that is the important fact about the new story of the European people: It is a story confined within the parameters of analytic reason, because the devil is a philosophy major. He excels in the dialectic, but he has no poetical gifts.

Once upon a time this old hag is said to have crossed the moor, driving before her a flock of geese, which she proposed to sell to advantage at a neighbouring fair; —for it is well known that the fiend, however liberal in imparting his powers of doing mischief, ungenerously leaves his allies under the necessity of performing the meanest rustic labours for subsistence. The day was far advanced, and her chance of obtaining a good price depended on her being first at the market. But the geese, which had hitherto preceded her in a pretty orderly manner, when they came to this wide common, interspersed with marshes and pools of water, scattered in every direction, to plunge into the element in which they delighted. Incensed at the obstinacy with which they defied all her efforts to collect them, and not remembering the precise terms of the contract by which the fiend was bound to obey her commands for a certain space, the sorceress exclaimed, "Deevil, that neither I nor they ever stir from his spot more!" The words were hardly uttered, when, by a metamorphosis as sudden as any in Ovid, the hag and her refractory flock were converted into stone, the angel whom she served, being a strict formalist, grasping eagerly at an opportunity of completing the ruin of her body and soul by a literal obedience to her orders. —Walter Scott, The Black Dwarf

Nothing of an analytical nature upsets the devil. He laughs at the modern churches, because they are citadels of rationalism, perfect dwelling places for satanic liberalism. It is incarnational Europe that Satan fears and hates, the Europe created by human hearts connected to Christ's divinely human heart. The poetry of that union is diametrically opposed to the rationalism of Satan. Which is why the new story of Western civilization, the satanic narrative, must continually harp on one note: The incarnational Europe of the white man was evil. As we listen to that narrative over and over again we realize something else about Satan that he would prefer to be kept secret — he is a bore, and the world he has set up through his liberal adherents is a dull, flat, insipid world in which the banality of Satan's new world order stands in sharp contrast to the old world of Christian Europe where the poetic of the cross of Christ took men to the heights of heaven, far from and opposed to Satan's kingdom of evil.

Macbeth discovered, too late, the banality of evil:

*Tomorrow, and tomorrow, and tomorrow,
Creeps in this petty pace from day to day
To the last syllable of recorded time,
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!
Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage
And then is heard no more. It is a tale
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,
Signifying nothing.*

How could it be otherwise? Satan's rational world has no soul, no poetic; he is like the authors of the modern novels. Their characters wallow in the piggies of racial and sexual Babylon while proudly proclaiming that they have discovered something new and wonderful. But Satan's world is not new and wonderful, it is as old as original sin: "Ye shall be as gods," was Satan's promise. Do the modern Europeans wallowing in their Babylonian piggies resemble gods?

If we stay focused on that essential fact about the devil, his hatred for the incarnation, we can understand why there is such unremitting hatred for the European people in the ranks of the Christ-hating liberals and the colored barbarians. In the past Christ was incarnate in the Europeans' civilization, and in the present there is always the danger of a white resurgence. The people who once were the Christ bearers could become the Christ bearers once again. Hence, eternal hatred of the white is the moral essence of Liberalism.

The church men have renounced the old incarnational Europe and the men and women who championed it. And they have renounced, for good measure, the white people of this generation and the white people of every future generation. This is called saving Christianity by eliminating the cultural baggage of a racist past. But white people cannot be dismissed as collateral damage in the great battle to save propositional Christianity. By denouncing incarnational Europe in order to save their speculative theologies, the church men have handed organized Christianity over to Satan. He can make the church men jump through any Babylonian hoop he wants them to jump through if the faith belongs to the men of reason. One of the devil's favorite gambits is the hatred gambit. He knows that a man who does not hate where he should hate cannot love where he should love; therefore, he tells the white man, through his liberal adherents in church and state, that it is wrong to hate, thus cutting the white man off from any spirited attack on the devil and his minions, because, after all, it is wrong to hate. But at the same time that white men are being bored to death with platitudes about the evils of hating, the colored races are being given special dispensations to hate white people. Every true European hates the devil and his minions and loves his people. If he ceases to hate the former he will also cease to love the latter, and he will become a man of shadows, easily manipulated by the Devil. We do not have a less hate-filled world now that the white man no longer hates. We have a world filled with hate, the wrong kind of hate. The antique Europeans hated all those who opposed His reign of charity; their hatred stemmed from love. The modern liberals and the colored savages hate everything that stinks of the incarnate God. Where do we find charity and mercy now that the Christian European has left the world stage?

In the absence of the Son of Man and the people who made him part of their racial hearth fire, charity and mercy have become abstract concepts without a local habitation in a flesh and blood people. And abstract charity is not charity at all – it is the tool the rationalists use to kill genuine charity. Abstract charity kills unborn babies for the "good" of the mother and permits black savages and Moslem jihadists to kill white people under the guise of charitable and compassionate inclusion. Real charity, the charity of St. Paul, is as a sword unto the wicked and an outstretched hand of relief to the meek, who, in a world without charity, are at the mercy of those who have no mercy: The liberals and the colored heathens.

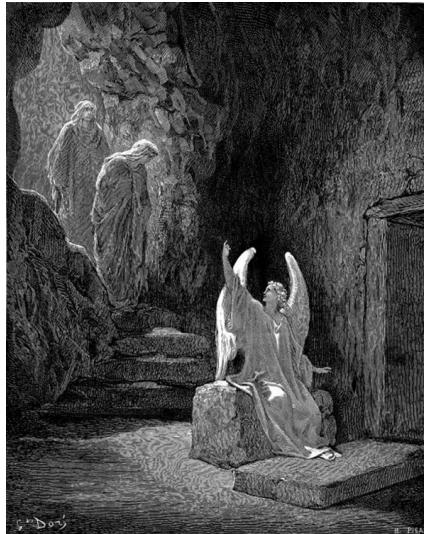
The liberals have followed Satan by making things that are evil in the poetical realm of existence (which is reality) into virtues in the abstract, philosophical realm of unreality. Thus multiculturalism, which entails the worship of the black savage and the injection of Moslems, Hindus, and every other anti-Christian sect into the European nations, is taken as a self-evident good, while the worship of the Christian God in and through the people of our racial hearth fire is looked on as an unmitigated evil. Such is the perverted ethos of a world based on philosophical speculation and pure logic. We have rationally and logically speculated our people and our God out of existence.

It is my unalterable belief that no white man who has a heart that still lives can tolerate the multicultural kingdom of Satan on earth. He will instinctively hate the liberals and the colored heathens. But we must go farther; hating the devil and his minions is only the beginning. Where can the white man find the God of love? Most men are ahistorical; they depend on church and state to preserve all the history they need in order to live. But church and state are against the incarnate Christ of European history. The white everyman is told, *ad nauseum*, that the Christ of old Europe never existed; he was an evil projection of an evil people. The new Christ is a multicultural, multi-religious Christ, who is much more comfortable amongst colored heathens and Christian atheists than he ever was with European racists. Julia Ward Howe's dream has become a reality. The liberal Christ only appears to Europeans in the guise of a Unitarian, white-hating multi-culturalist. So the question remains: How can the European everyman come into contact with the living God, the God of old Europe? It's up to those few who have not lost contact with old Europe to bridge the gap between Christian Europe and the lost white men of modern Europe. It seems hopeless to bridge the gap when church and state are opposed to incarnational Europe, but charitable rancor, the charitable rancor of the Christian European, is a powerful force. It is a rancor rooted in the love of Christ and the hatred of Satan. If we refuse to let that force be siphoned off into little rivulets of philosophy or Emersonian platitudes, there is more than a slight chance that the liberals' pleasure dome will start to crack. Despite all his advantages — he is a materialist in a materialist age — Satan has that one great disadvantage: He is a boring fellow and his adherents are boring. Do we really prefer Claudius to Hamlet? Chauvelin to the Scarlet Pimpernel? The poetic of the European people, the story of the incarnate God, is now and always shall be the antidote for the liberals' poisonous narrative of the 'evil white man.' +

Christ Is Risen!

April 4, 2015

Categories: Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



"Bring us, O Lord God, at our last awakening into the house and gate of Heaven, to enter that gate and dwell in that house, where there shall be no darkness nor dazzling, but one equal light, no noise nor silence but one equal music, no fears nor hopes but one equal possession, no ends nor beginning but one equal eternity, in the habitation of thy Majesty and thy glory, world without end. Amen"

— John Donne

Easter is upon us again, and we must put on our spiritual armor to resist the usual onslaught of “history” shows, movies, and books that tell us, quite authoritatively, that Christ did not rise from the dead. That is what the race war is all about, Charlie Brown. The antique Europeans believed that Christ rose from the dead. They made that belief the cornerstone of their civilization. Remove that cornerstone, and the European people cease to be. Europe has been conquered by Moslems, and European Americans worship negroes, because the European people no longer believe that, “The trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised.”

The organized churches think that by jettisoning the European people, their different versions of intellectual Christianity can survive in a multicultural world. But you can’t surgically remove the European people from the Christian faith without killing the heart of the faith. There is only one true faith: It is the Christian European faith that is celebrated so gloriously in Handel’s *Messiah*. How can anything produced by the unholy union of intellectual Christianity and all the pagan faiths possibly compare to the crystal clear message of Handel’s *Messiah*: “He shall reign forever and ever.”

On the morning of the third day Christ rose again from the dead. That was the testimony of the first apostles and that was the testimony of the antique Europeans who did not see the resurrection with their material eyes but who did see it with their circumcised hearts. “Christ has risen!” they said with one voice. And we, their heirs in spirit, in blood, and in faith, reply, “Indeed He has!” At the last trump, when we face that last great enemy, only Christ, the Christ of our European hearth fire, can take us home. +

Against a Peace with the Rationalist Regicides

April 11, 2015

Categories: Christianity: Neither a Theory Nor a Philosophy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



My heart as great, my reason haply more,
To bandy word for word and frown for frown;
But now I see our lances are but straws,
Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,
That seeming to be most which we indeed least are.

-*The Taming of the Shrew*

In his sonnets, Shakespeare often expressed frustration at his inability to express himself: "Alack, what poverty my Muse brings forth..." Is that possible? Could such a poet really feel as verbally inadequate as the rest of us? Yes, of course it is possible. In fact, Shakespeare probably felt more verbally impaired than we do. A true poet of the human heart, a man like Shakespeare who saw life "feelingly," could not help but feel the sharp contrast between a man's intuitions about the nature of existence and his ability to articulate those heartfelt intuitions. The poetic divers, the men who go down to the depths of the human heart, see that which they can only express in stammering lines. The lesser poets and the theologians, who stay on the surface of life, have no problems of articulation. They spew out banal inanities that defile the human soul, because they violate the mystery of the human heart by turning its complexities into platitudes and syllogisms. It is better to stammer, in the face of the awesome mystery of the human heart, than to defile the mystery by making it conformable to a philosophical premise. The poet who remains faithful to his heartfelt intuitions will bring us to the foot of the cross. The theologians and the theological poets who refuse to go deep will leave us in the first circle of hell, where philosophers endlessly analyze existence without understanding it.

The greatest counter-revolutionary that ever lived, Edmund Burke, felt as Shakespeare did about his heartfelt intuitions concerning the nature of existence. He confessed his despair at what he felt was his failure to adequately convey to his countrymen the satanic nature of Jacobinism:

"I have frequently sunk into a degree of despondency and dejection hardly to be described: yet out of the profoundest depths of this despair, an impulse which I have in vain endeavored to resist has urged me to raise one feeble cry against this unfortunate coalition which is formed at home, in order to make a coalition with France, subversive of the ancient order of the world."

One feeble cry? Burke did fail, after the death of Robespierre, to convince his countrymen that they had only scotched the Jacobin snake, not killed it. The snake grew in strength and size until it enveloped and consumed, just as Burke had said it would, all of Europe and all of the nations that sprang from Europe. Then was all Burkes' striving in vain? No, it wasn't. He may have failed to kill the snake, but he gave his countrymen an extra 150 years before they started to feel the effects of the snake's grasp. Were it not for Burke, Britain would have turned to Jacobinism in the 18th century instead of in the mid-20th century. It is not a little thing to give one's countrymen a 150 year period of grace. The effect that Burke's lonely and unparalleled struggle with the incarnation of Satan within the body politic of Europe had on the British people cannot be over emphasized. He not only turned such poets as Coleridge, Southey, and Wordsworth from rabid Jacobin enthusiasts into rabid anti-Jacobins, he also turned many mad dog Jacobin supporters, who wanted desperately to be whole-hearted supporters of liberty, equality, and fraternity, into tepid, ineffectual moderates, because after Burke only the criminally insane, such as Fox, Price, and Priestly, could still support the Jacobins.

A quick aside on Priestly: He was so unpopular in England because of his radicalism that the English people burned down his house. It's a pity he escaped the fire, at least that temporal fire, because he fled to America and became a radical sage. His great-granddaughter was Hilaire Belloc's mother, the same Hilaire Belloc who became the great Catholic defender of the anti-Christian Jacobins. Belloc's influence was enormous with English Catholics. He was a Catholic Pumblechook who rode his chaise cart over all the lesser carts. He wasn't able to make English Catholics whole-hearted supporters of Jacobinism, but he lessened their opposition to it, just as Burke had managed to lessen the moderate liberals' support of Jacobinism. Who knows — had Belloc not supported Jacobinism, it might have come to Britain even later than it did. Such is the power that one man can have for good or evil. Burke, the bred-in-the-bone Christian, wanted to kill Jacobinism in order to save his people. He didn't kill it, but his passion and his faith kept Jacobinism at bay for many years. Belloc, the intellectual Christian, hastened the end of Christendom through his support for Jacobinism. It will always be thus: a mere intellectual affirmation of faith can never replace a heartfelt love of Christ in and through the people of our racial hearth fire. The former path leads to hell, and the latter path leads to His kingdom come. ([1](#))

What separated Burke from the rest of the conservatives of his century and the 20th century was his rejection of rationalism. He resisted Satan's great temptation to try to out-reason God. Burke, whose reason was greater than the prideful men of reason, chose like Shakespeare before him to stay with the intuitive wisdom of his people over the wisdom of the philosophers. Truth be told, such reason, separate from revelation and the intuitive life of the people, is incapable of resisting the wickedness and snares of the devil. The modern whites are alone and helpless against the devil and his minions, because they haven't the humility to place their reason at the service of the bred-in-the-bone wisdom of their ancestors, instead of trying to forge a rationalist path into the future that is unconnected to their European past.

The intellectual Christians first made the satanic break with the blood faith of the European people, but during the course of the 20th century the European peasantry became intellectualized as well, which left the European people without any connection to God or their own people. What is needed is men of reason who reject reason as the penultimate of human existence. Like the hero in Shakespeare's *Cymbeline* we must conquer by remaining true to our blood.

*"Tis a dream, or else such stuff as madmen
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such*

*As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,
The action of my life is like it, which
I'll keep, if but for sympathy."*

The Scriptures tell us that where our treasure lies, so lies our heart. Do we really treasure science and the negro more than the dear, dear land of storybooks? It certainly appears so. To be scientific is to be smart, and that is a highly valued commodity in the land of reason. And the worship of the negro affirms one's solidarity with the world of science where there is only a natural, noble, savage savior who stands diametrically opposed to the fairy tale Savior of the old world. Burke's heart, like Shakespeare's, was with the old world and the Savior of that world. As in all fairy tales you can only get to that old world through charity. You must love your people and God enough to set the wisdom of 'this world only' aside as just so much accumulated satanic filth. The narrow gate through our racial home, where the wisdom of the heart lives, is the gate to His Kingdom come.

Shakespeare and Burke have always posed problems for academics and rationalists, be they theologians or philosophers. Both men were and are considered too passionate, too provincial, and too extreme. They can't be fit into neat little rationalist boxes that the academics, the theologians, and the philosophers love to put men into. But if the intuitions of such poets as Shakespeare and Burke are superior to the ratiocinations of the rationalists, then we need to dive to the poets' depths if we want to know the truth. But of course modern man does not want to know the truth; he prefers to live in hell.

The most telling evidence of the modern Europeans' flight from reality is the reception (or should I say non-reception) of the work of Anthony Jacob. Shakespeare always was under-appreciated by the rationalists, and Burke was often hated by the criminally insane men of the left, but neither Shakespeare nor Burke were so completely disregarded as Anthony Jacob has been. This neglect indicates a deep sickness, a sickness unto death, at the heart of our modern European civilization, which, by the way, is no longer a civilization.

The greatest conservative in the 20th century was not Richard Weaver, Russell Kirk, or Thomas Molnar; it was Anthony Jacob. He and he alone wanted to conserve the white race and the white Christian faith rather than an abstract faith and a generic people. Jacob's reason was as great as any of the conservatives, but unlike the intellectual conservatives Jacob put his reason at the service of his heart. He was one who loved much, like the men and women of antique Europe.

In modern Europe we have men of heart, men who love their people with a deep and abiding love. And we have men of reason, who hate their own people or who are indifferent to their own people. What we need are men like Anthony Jacob; he was a man with a heart of flesh, and he was a man of reason, but he did not make reason his God. He stayed with his heart's treasure: his people and their God.

Jacob, like the gentle Bard and Edmund Burke, was a poet of the Christian hearth fire: "Charity not only begins at home, it perishes without one." Is that not the tragedy of modern Europe? Haven't we lost what Shakespeare called the "quality of mercy" and what Burke called "that charity of honor," because we have left our hearth fire? At that hearth fire "reigns love and all love's loving parts..." The Christ of old Europe will still, if we return home, abide with us. +

(1) Belloc's assertion that the French royalty and clergy deserved to die because they were insufficiently Catholic is a prime example of the dangers of an intellectual Christianity devoid of a heartfelt attachment to one's people. Such a utopian "Christian" faith is just as cruel and un-Christian as the secular utopianism of the Jacobins. It was only the faithful clergymen, the men who refused to take the Jacobin oath, who were executed. And the French nobility, who had the usual canon of sins common to fallen humanity, were not banana-republic tyrants who fed off the blood of their people.

The real tyrants, then and now, are the Jacobins and the intellectual Christians who support them. Those tyrants of reason-gone-mad judge everything by how well it serves their abstract utopias. Thus thousands of aristocrats of the old, non-utopian France could be slaughtered with impunity. And in our modern anti-civilization the death of one black criminal, who is sacred because he is one of "the people," weighs more in the balance than thousands upon thousands of whites that are slaughtered by the black gods of Liberalism.

The One-Sided War

April 18, 2015

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



When false opinion, whose wrong thought defiles thee,
In thy just proof repeals and reconciles thee.

-King Lear

If a homosexual dies of AIDS, most white Christians feel sorry for him. It is truly a hideous way to die. But do we feel as sorry for the homosexual who has contracted AIDS as a result of his own behavior as we do for a man or woman who has contracted AIDS after a blood transfusion? Of course we don't. The homosexual's death from AIDS is unfortunate while the death of the man or woman who contracted AIDS from a blood transfusion is a tragedy.

The negro who was shot and killed by Michael Slager brought about his own death, because he fought with the officer and then attempted to run from the officer to avoid arrest. Despite all 'paper' laws, every criminal should know that when a man's blood is up, a man who is charged with catching bad guys, death could be the price for resisting and fleeing from that officer. If criminals do not believe that, and most American criminals do not, the law will lose most of its force. You could make a case that considering who makes the laws, namely liberals, it might be a good thing if they were not enforced, but that is a discussion best left for another time. The main point I want to stress is that Michael Slager is the tragic victim in this case, not the negro called... I can't bear to put that blessed name on a negro, so I'll simply refer to him as W.S.

Slager was the victim of two modern mythologies, both of which stem from a secularization process that started long before he was born. The first mythology is the psychological mythology. In the late 19th and early 20th century, secularized Jews such as Freud and secularized Christians such as Jung gave us a new, non-Christian way of looking at life. That new view of existence is so entrenched in our society now that even the Christian churches, who should be the main opponents of psychology, refer all really difficult problems to the psychologists. The psychological myth, which says that men and women are not responsible for what they do because they are a hopeless bundle of biological impulses they really can't control or understand, has replaced the Christian belief of our European ancestors who believed that a man was responsible for his own sinful behavior. Under the new psychological mythology, society is much more responsible for crime than criminals, because society creates the conditions that make criminals commit crimes. This is why we have "wars on poverty" and liberals such as Obama suggesting we stop terrorism by getting terrorists jobs. There is evil in the new world, but we'll come to that anon.

The 1985 case of Tennessee v. Garner was merely a reflection of how the psychological myth has changed American society. Similar court cases have changed the other European nations as well, because the psychological myth is a product of post-Christian nations, and all of the European nations are post-Christian. The bare facts of the 1985 case are as follows: A black police officer shot and killed a young black teenager while he was fleeing from the scene of a burglary he had just committed. Under the existing laws, the police officer was doing his duty: He shot a fleeing felon. The family of the young criminal sued all the way to the Supreme Court. The majority of the judges on the Court – there were three dissenting judges – ruled that the shooting was justified under the existing law, but went on to state that the existing law, which permitted the use of deadly force against a fleeing felon, was unconstitutional. They argued that since our nation had evolved beyond the point where we used capital punishment for most felonies, police officers should not be permitted to use deadly force against fleeing felons. Under the new law, a police officer could only use force when his own life or another person's life was in danger or when he thought that a fleeing murderer or rapist constituted a threat to others.

In between jobs in academia, I spent some time working as a police officer after the 1985 law went into effect, and it was not as clear cut as the TV lawyers say it is. Different officers had different interpretations. This should not be the case for such a serious life and death issue that a police officer has only seconds to decide on. For instance, I once had a man who was resisting arrest and attempting to grab my gun. He didn't succeed, and I managed to take him to the lock up, but afterwards I asked a number of my fellow officers what would have happened if, after trying to wrest my gun from me and failing, the prisoner had knocked me down and fled. The attempt to get my gun constituted attempted murder, because presumably the prisoner was not trying to get my gun in order to crack walnuts with it, so would I have been justified in shooting the man who had shown himself ready to murder in order to avoid arrest? There was no agreement among the officers. The consensus opinion was that I should hope such a scenario did not occur.

That exact scenario did not occur for Officer Slager, at least from what I've been told, because the prisoner was only reaching for the officer's Tazer, but still, once disabled by the Tazer, wouldn't the officer's life have been in jeopardy? That is quite a stretch, I know. I'm not trying to justify Officer Slager's actions under our existing laws; I think by a strict interpretation of the 1985 law, Officer Slager is guilty of voluntary manslaughter (certainly not premeditated murder as the conservatives and liberal pundits are calling for), but I do not think Officer Slager is morally guilty of any crime at all, because the 1985 Court decision was an immoral one. The decision was immoral because the majority judges assumed that a police officer, who represents society, is just as guilty as the perpetrator of a crime and therefore has no right to violently deter the criminal. The Court did not take into account the fact that a police officer is bound to protect society and not the criminal who has chosen to commit the crime and to flee in order to avoid the proper punishment for his crime. The police officer is not exacting the death penalty for such crimes as theft, burglary, and aggravated assault — the criminal has exacted the death penalty on himself by fleeing. The Court also did not take into account the dangers of escalating felonious crimes, which are undeterred. No one can say that a thief who has no fear of being shot while fleeing from his crime will not become emboldened to commit more crimes, and then during the course of one of those crimes he might be forced, by some cruel home owner, to use deadly force: "I didn't mean to kill him, but he came upon me suddenly." And in point of fact, black crime has become so out of control in our major cities because of court decisions like Tennessee v. Garner that most of our cities should be put in a state of martial law: "Looters will be shot on sight."⁽¹⁾ But because liberals rule our nation and blacks are sacred to the liberals, we have a perverted form of martial law: "No violent action must ever be taken against black criminals; failure to follow this rule will result in immediate prosecution."

This brings us to the second myth of modern Liberaldom, the myth of the Noble, Black Savage, or the Black Messiah. If the psychological view of existence liberals profess to believe in was followed consistently, then a white police officer or a white homeowner who shot a black felon would be completely exonerated: "We must understand his rage," or "We must understand his environment," etc. But such is not the case. In any confrontation between a black and a white, the white is always assumed to be guilty, despite the fact that we are all, from

the liberals' psychological point of view, supposed to be without sin. "Ah, there's the rub." The white man is *not* without sin: The white man is Sin Incarnate. No matter what crime the black commits, it is never his fault, it is always the white man's fault. Are black police officers prosecuted for killing white felons? And why are blacks who murder whites seldom prosecuted, and when they do get convicted why do they receive pardons after only a few months of incarceration? It is because the liberals are post-Christians, and post-Christians must cling to an inverted Christianity. Sin exists; it resides in all white people, and there is a living God; he is the Noble, Black Savage. This case of the unjustly persecuted white police officer, who could be any of us, will be used by the liberals to further their agenda: The destruction of the sinful white race. Ironically, the all-black police state the liberals are striving for will be the most violent police state in the world, because black police officers will kill without the slightest regard for human life. And the remaining white police officers will know on which side their bread is buttered, so they will only use deadly force against whites. We can already see this in Britain where the police crack down on white nationalists and leave the Moslems and colored barbarians alone. And in the United States we are more likely to see police violence against anti-abortion protesters than against black felons. How could it be otherwise when such a hue and cry is raised by whites and blacks whenever a black man dies as a result of an altercation with a white police officer?

Some white nationalists have told us we must not support the white police officer, because it will make white nationalists 'look bad.' Do you really think a white nationalist can ever look good to a liberal who believes that the white race is intrinsically evil? And since when does a white man base his beliefs and actions on how they'll be viewed by the liberals? If the facts are not as they appear to be, if Officer Slager simply stopped W.S.'s car, pulled him out of the car, and shot him, then Officer Slager is guilty of murder. But if W.S. fled after an altercation with Officer Slager, then we should support Slager no matter what the liberals say or think about us.

There is a harmful dichotomy in whites who still profess to be Christian. On the one hand, they claim to believe in the same God who the antique Europeans believed in, but on the other hand they act according to the dictates of the liberals' two great myths, the psychological myth and the sacred negro myth. Wouldn't it be more Christian to base one's actions on the traditional Christian faith of the European people than on the new age faith of the liberals? How society defends itself against criminals is best left in the hands of bred-in-the-bone Christians. Until white Christians grasp that fact and wrest control from the liberals, the Haitization of the European nations will continue. +

(1) I think that the new "youthful sport" of negroes called 'flash mob' robberies and beatings has become so commonplace that all violent flash mobbers should be shot on sight. But of course that would mean we would actually have to admit that there are racial differences, that white criminals are going against their blood while black criminals are acting according to their blood.

One Man, One Vote is the Path to Hell

April 25, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Fear of racist label, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



In considering South Africa, it needs to be repeated that the campaign against her is nothing more or less than a campaign against the White Christian race itself. It is actually a misnomer to call it an anti-South African campaign. It is an *anti-White* campaign. It is a war against *all* of us. – Anthony Jacob

I first read Anthony Jacob's book *White Man Think Again* in the early 1980s, before South Africa's De Klerkian capitulation to the snarling wolf pack called the Western world. When the Afrikaners did surrender to the forces of 'liberty, equality, and fraternity' it was impossible not to compare the Afrikaners before the fall and after the fall, without feeling an incredible sadness. Before:

South Africa is the only country in all Africa which has a future as a major world power. Moreover as a major world power it will be ideologically what it always has been – a power unreservedly on the side of the traditional West. If the desired revolution comes along (the revolution as desired, not merely by the East and the rest of Africa but by our brave white brothers in the United States, Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, Germany, Holland, Scandinavia, etc.) and the white race in South Africa is reduced, at best, to Black servitude, all hope of South Africa developing into a major power and major bastion of the West will be gone. The question then will be: What will have been proved or gained? In what way will our cherished Evolution have been served?

Though it is democratic for the sheep to lead the shepherds, the outcome is always Confusion. The rule of shepherds is minority rule, like South Africa's. The white man has a genius for civilization which the black man, to put it mildly, does not have. In South Africa this White minority rule is firm but benevolent, efficient but humane. But above all it is White rule, which is all that should matter to us. For are we not White?

So proud and so noble! And after the fall? So much innocent white blood has been shed. Even the guilty were not spared: the Judas, De Klerk, lost his first wife to the new South Africa: she was brutally murdered by a black security guard in the building where she lived alone. "And thus the whirligig of time brings in its revenges." But did the rest of the white South Africans deserve their fates? No, they did not. They deserved the support and homage of the entire Western world for serving as a European light in the dark night of liberalism, for so many years. And there are now reports that the Boers might still show the world how white men with white hearts can fight and win against the white-skinned men with black hearts and the black-hearted men with black skins. Some Afrikaners have organized training camps for a white paramilitary force designed to fight the liberal-black coalition that is systematically murdering the whites in South Africa. The movement shows more promise than the Orania experiment, because this new paramilitary organization is not trying to cooperate with the existing South African government; they mean to violently oppose it, which is the only way to deal with a Jacobin government proposing the death of all white people. The white liberals are quite angry and upset that some white South Africans are not willing to accept their own extermination: 'Why can't they march quietly to the executioner's block? Why make such a fuss? Don't they realize that all whites, especially white Afrikaners and white Southerners must die to atone for their racist past?'

Should the white Afrikaners who are resisting white genocide actually start to mount a serious threat to the black Marxist state of South Africa, the anti-white forces throughout the Western world, with the United States leading the charge, will go against the Afrikaners, first with military aid for the South African government and then with combat troops if it is deemed necessary. But it will not be foreign aid or foreign troops that will stop the Afrikaner counter-revolution. If the counter-revolution runs aground — and such an outcome is not written — it will be the result of a loss of faith within the counter-revolutionary forces; the Afrikaner youth will be co-opted by the liberals and will start doing T.V. interviews about their unenlightened days within the ranks of – Horror of Horrors! – racists.

A determined few can never be defeated by overwhelming numbers unless they lose faith. On the surface it may appear that history contradicts that assertion, but it doesn't contradict it, history confirms it. The South did not lose the Civil War in the 1860's. They fought to avoid the Haitization of the South. That process was aided by their loss of the battle called the Civil War, but the war itself wasn't lost until the Southern people lost faith, in the 1950's, and caved in to integration. It was the same in South Africa. When the people lost their faith in the essential rightness of apartheid, the end was nigh. I remember white South Afrikaner athletes just prior to the 1993 debacle, talking about the evils of apartheid and the goodness of integration. That is how white worlds end, from the inside, when white men develop black hearts.

The white man can't proceed against the liberals and the colored heathens with any faith other than the ancient faith of his people. If he places his faith in democracy or science he will be like unto the liberals and will never stay the course of racial integrity long enough to help his people; he will abandon them in midstream.

There is a direct connection between a belief in Christ as the Son of God and a hostility to the scientific method as applied to human beings. Because we have stomachs that need food and bodies that need sleep does not mean we are mere products of the natural world that can be played upon by the scientific, 'liberty, equality, and fraternity' crowd. Our greatest need is God, the God who revealed to us that our white skins are part of our spiritual essence, without which we are wanderers in the desert of modernity. Our church men have no faith, because they have attempted to blend scientific thinking, which is really a type of non-thinking, with the Christian faith. Such thinking, isolated from the heart and blood, produces Christian atheists who will always fight with the 'liberty, equality, and fraternity' utopians against their own people. Better to have leaders like Paul Kruger, president of the South African Republic from 1883 to 1900, who believed that the earth was flat and was not ashamed of his Christian faith. You might ask what kind of leader a man like that can be who ignores such an obvious fact of science. Such a man makes an excellent leader, because he recognizes the irrelevancy of such trivial facts of science compared to the fact of Christ's resurrection from the dead and His love for His people, in and through their racial hearth fire. The further we get away from the scientific rationalists in Church and state the closer we will come to counter-revolutionary success. If a man does not believe he has a spiritual homeland within his own race, he will not fight for a geographical homeland. A few weeks ago I said the South African whites were the most persecuted whites in the world, but maybe they are more spiritually prepared to fight than the rest of the European people, who seem to believe that retreat, compromise, and capitulation is the Christian way to handle black barbarism.

The race war in South Africa, Kenya, and the rest of Africa has been extended into Europe. It is the final stage of the French Revolution. The people must rule, and the only true people are the people of color. Haiti was the model for all modern revolutionaries: 'The whites must die.'

Liberalism and the type of conservatism that does not conserve white people are ideologies of death. Under the guise of democracy and Christianity, liberalism and modern conservatism are killing the Christ-bearing people. They are madmen, those modern Jacobins with black hearts, and we must treat them as madmen should be treated: "As to a change of mind in these men, who consider infamy as honour, degradation as preferment, bondage to low tyrants as liberty, and the practical scorn and contumely of their upstart masters, as marks of respect and homage. I look upon it as absolutely impracticable. These madmen, to be cured, must first, like other madmen, be subdued." Burke is telling us what Shakespeare told us centuries before: You cannot reason with men who have hardened their hearts against Christian Europeans:

*You may as well go stand upon the beach,
And bid the main flood bate his usual height.*

The emergence of 2,000 Christian Spartans in South Africa and the non-emergence of any Christian Spartans in the rest of the European countries undoubtedly has much to do with the desperateness of the white South Africans' plight. It is fight or die. Whites of the West are a few hours away from the same plight, but they do not believe that they have anything in common with South African whites. 'They are the bad whites who segregated — that is why they are being punished now.' But there is also something else at work here. The white South African remnant is closer to the proper vision of existence than the whites of Europe. The Afrikaner is not that far removed from one nation, one race, and one faith. That is the type of faith that produces heroes. In contrast the faith of the men of the West was a milk-toast compromise faith of abstractions and democratic platitudes for many years prior to their final apostasy from everything Christian and humane. And the mark of the milk-toast faith that leads to the worship of everything inhuman and perverse is the failure to recognize evil. The Western rationalist makes an abstraction of evil and then moderates it into 'something slightly off the balance beam, but nothing that can't be corrected.' The collective wisdom of the West on the subject of the French Revolution is a perfect example of the moderate Europeans' response to evil prior to the West's complete capitulation to evil. All the rationalists conceded Burke's critique had 'some' validity, because Robespierre's 'excesses' were bad, but the men of moderation failed to see the satanic nature of Jacobinism. Let two of the prominent, moderate historians stand in for the entire herd, who are and were legion: "Burke himself was by now showing feelings of hatred for the French Revolution which at times seemed like an obsession." (Andre Maurios, *The Miracle of England*). Case closed on Burke — he had an obsession, which implies that he was sick. And he was sick, if there is no ongoing struggle between God and the devil with the souls of mortal men and women hanging in the balance.

What type of universe do the rational moderate men live in? They live in a rational, closed-in universe where there may be some kind of cosmic mind that sets the universe in motion, just as the old watchmaker God of Voltaire and the deists did, but there is certainly no divinely human Savior who cares about His people, or a devil who roams about the world seeking the ruin of souls, in the rationalists' universe. The moderate men believe that what the conservative Burke thought was a war between good and evil was really just a harmful dichotomy between two extremes, both of which were wrong by virtue of the fact that they were extreme: "Perhaps it was all inevitable, but the extremism of Burke's thoughts on the French Revolution and Paine's Rights of Man certainly did not make for mutual understanding." (G. M. Trevelyan, *The History of England*, vol. III) And mutual understanding is good, isn't it? The assumption in Trevelyan's Emersonian mind is that understanding produces harmony, because there is no such thing as good or evil; there is only disharmony, which is caused by extremism. But Burke did understand Paine's philosophy, which is why he went to extremes to oppose it; Paine's philosophy was from the devil. And just as Burke understood the Jacobins, so do we understand the modern Jacobins with white skins and black hearts: they love the negro and hate white people, because they worship darkness and not the light.

I'm not close enough to the situation in South Africa to know the likelihood of a successful Afrikaner counter-revolution. In the West it is not yet possible, because the white Europeans of the West are still addicted to science, democracy, and Christless, intellectual Christianity. It is certain that they will not prevail against the colored heathen unless they return to their European hearth fire where the God of charity and mercy resides. It is not written that we have to retreat before the hordes of color in atonement for our 'racist' past. That 'racist' past bore witness to the living God. When Europeans in Africa and the Western nations love their own people enough to be 'racist', in defiance of the death in life liberals with the black hearts, the enemies who seemed invincible will no longer be invincible. It's hard to believe that liberalism can be defeated, but that is because the whites of the West still play by the liberals' rules. The Afrikaners fell, because they abandoned one race, one nation, one faith for one man, one vote. We too are under the same death sentence. Democratic nations have no moral essence, because they only value human beings in the aggregate. True nations are aristocracies of the spirit where men and women are valued according to how well they live up to the spiritual ethos of their nation. One man, one vote is not a spiritual ethos; it is a doctrinal declaration of a satanic people determined to make war on everything white and Christian.

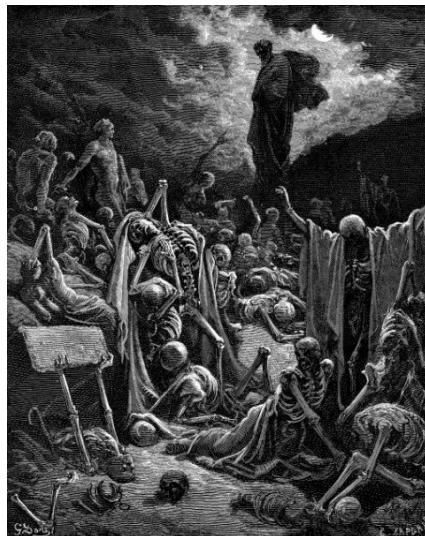
Some heroic Afrikaners have decided to denounce Satan and all his works by denouncing the South African 'rainbow' government. We should follow in their heroic footsteps and denounce our rainbow governments as well. Is negro worship, which is what one man, one vote means, to be the moral essence of the Western nations for all eternity? Satan would not serve our Lord. Then shouldn't we refuse to serve Satan? +

Christ is Greater Than the Negro: Up from the Pigsties of Negro Worship

May 2, 2015

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Resurrection

Tags: Homer



And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves – Ezekiel 37: 13

And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. – Revelations 21: 4

In olden days when I was a schoolboy “creeping like snail unwillingly to school,” we read the Greek and Norse myths from Bullfinch’s mythology. I don’t think modern students read Bullfinch anymore, but I found his retelling of the Greek and Norse myths quite fascinating. As an undergraduate I read the myths again in literature and religion courses, but they were not as fascinating to me as objects of study as they were when they were just stories. There’s a moral there somewhere, but that is not what I want to write about on this occasion. What I want to focus on is the Greeks’ and the Nordic Europeans’ transfers from pagan believers to Christian believers, and then move on to the modern cult of negro worship.

The Greeks of antiquity have been studied and probed more than any other people, with the possible exception of the Hebrews. What I find the most interesting in the Greeks’ religion is the effect that rationalism had on their faith. As we know, their assembly of gods went from primitive nature gods to the pantheon of gods depicted by Homer in *The Odyssey* and *The Iliad*. But already in Homer we can see the beginning of the rationalism that was destined to kill the Greek gods, because if the gods cannot provide mortals with immortality, then of what use are the gods? The belief that the whole living man survived after death due to the beneficence of the gods was the belief of the pre-Homeric Greeks, who worshipped at their racial and familial hearth fires. But Homer’s heroes no longer had that comfort; in his works mortal men only survived after death as lifeless shades of their former selves:

*“O strange! Then even in
Hades homes – and I knew not this
They have spirit and shape,
but in these no life there is.”*

-Achilles in The Iliad

And then this:

*“Rather would I be a hireling
to drudge in the fields all day
With a landless master, who
squarely would feed me
and niggardly pay,
Than over the hosts of the
dead which have perished a
scepter to sway.”*

-Achilles in The Odyssey

That less than joyous vision of the afterlife came from a poet who was passing from faith to rationalism. It was left to Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle to put ‘paid’ to the account of the Greek gods. When Christ came onto the scene, the old Greek gods were merely State gods; the people had embraced the various mystery religions and the intellectuals were stoics, epicureans, Platonists, etc. The Greeks came to believe that their more miraculous faith in a full-bodied resurrection was irrational and therefore false, so they sought other gods and eventually bent their knees to the Christian God.

The Nordic Europeans took a slightly different path to Christ than the Greeks. They never rationalized Odin and Thor; they were pagan believers when they encountered Christ. They left a full-blooded, vital pagan faith for a full-blooded, vital faith in Christ. Much is written about what the Roman Christians brought to the followers of Odin. They brought the Christian faith, but they also brought Greek rationalism, the same rationalism that destroyed the Greek gods. Could Christ withstand the rationalist attack that killed Zeus and his pantheon of gods? It was the mission of the Europeans, the only people who accepted Christ as conquerors rather than as the conquered, to stay close to their own hearth fires, to love Christ in and through their own people, and by doing so, keep the rationalist serpent from strangling the European faithful. It was a glorious battle over the Christian centuries: every time Satan, the great rationalist, launched a new attack, the Lord God made a counterattack through His people, the Europeans. But in the 20th century, the battle became too one-sided; there was no European counterattack and it seemed like Satan had triumphed. It’s like trying to figure out why a perfectly healthy man contracts a hideous wasting disease. We can see that he’s sick, we know the name of his sickness, but why did he succumb to it? Western man is sick and dying from a surfeit of rationalism, but why wasn’t he able, as his ancestors were, to fight off the disease?

The fiendish rationalist, the man of the detached intellect and the satanic, caustic wit, George Bernard Shaw, spelled it out for us in *Back to Methuselah*. The belief in Christ gave way to rationalism, because the Europeans could not maintain their belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead *and* the truths of science. Shaw also realized that men could not live without a mythic faith that they believed to be true, so he suggested that his myth should be substituted for Christianity, the myth of creative evolution. But Shaw’s new myth was too much like

Homer's myth; it was mystic rationalism; there was no flesh and blood God in Shaw's new faith, so his new faith faded away before it ever came to be. I only know of one Shavian devotee who ever tried to adapt it, and he quickly fell into despair.

Shaw's new myth did not take hold of Western man, but he did pinpoint Western man's weakness: Western man couldn't answer Dostoyevsky's question in the affirmative, 'whether a man, as a civilized being, as a European, can believe at all, believe that is, in the divinity of the Son of God, Jesus Christ, for therein rests, strictly speaking, the whole faith.' If the 'civilized' European can only believe in Christ's humanity, but not in His divine humanity, then Christ is not God, He is just an earthly demigod, and the resurrection of the dead goes back to Homer: we are only shades of ourselves when we die. Nothing is sadder in all of literature than the scene in *The Odyssey* when the still mortal Odysseus tries to embrace the shade of his deceased mother in Hades. Three times he tries to embrace her and three times he fails. Is this the promised end? About twenty years ago I read a book by a supposedly 'conservative' Catholic theologian on the subject of the resurrection of the dead. His description of the resurrection seemed to come right out of Homer. We survived as ethereal shades, not as integral, body and soul human beings. The great theologian ridiculed the Victorian notion of a heaven in which all one's loved ones were gathered together, in the flesh, around the same hearth fire they had shared on earth. Isn't that a childish notion? Yes, it is, and I believe in that childish notion. Doesn't the Bible tell us to believe in such childish notions?

Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live; And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the Lord.

The belief in the resurrection of the dead is intimately connected to our attachment to our racial and familial hearth fire. If we never love our own with an intensity that makes us feel that death cannot be final, if we don't yearn to embrace our loved one's after death as we embraced them on this earth, then all we need is the Homeric life after death of the intellectual Christians, or, worse yet, the worship of the negro in this world and eternal oblivion in the next.

What is going on in Baltimore, where mobs of rock-throwing blacks force armed police officers to retreat, because the police are afraid to fire at and kill a sacred black, is going on throughout the Western world in one form or another. (1) The white men are in retreat, because they no longer believe in the bred-in-the-bone Christianity of the antique Europeans. Men must have a mythic faith, a faith that they believe to be true in their blood, the source of all true wisdom. Rational, intellectual Christianity is not faith, it is a caricature of a faith. The police officers in Baltimore cannot shoot the black rioters, the Brits and French cannot halt the Muslim invasion, because they have nothing to fight for, they have no attachment to their own racial hearth fires or to the God of their ascending race. The suicidal retreat from the hordes of color will not cease until white men believe, heart, mind, and soul in the one true myth of the incarnate Lord, Jesus Christ.

In fleeing from the irrationality of a faith that posits the resurrection of the dead, the liberals of the Western world have adopted a faith that is irrational as well as morally reprehensible. It is not rational or moral to provide free food, housing, and education to a criminal race of people who have declared war on the white Christian race. The sacrificial altars for the black gods are everywhere. In church, at work, and at play, the white man offers tribute to the black gods, because he does not believe there is any other god beyond this world.

The myth of the noble black savage has one great advantage over the Christian myth. The black savage is not a god who can raise the dead, hence he does not insult the 'intelligence' of the liberals. He demands tribute and homage in this world only. But what does he give in return for tribute and homage? It doesn't seem like he gives us anything but hatred, murder, and rapine. He is indeed the savage god who comes to us in a tide of blood. It's useless to argue, or plead with the liberals who worship the savage black god; they are much farther beyond reason than the most zealous of the Christian mystics, and they are completely immune to pleas of mercy, because they are without mercy. Can anything be done with such creatures? No, there is no chance of any rapprochement between a white man and a liberal.

The whole history of the modern Europeans' descent into hell was delineated for us by Walter Scott in the preface to *Quentin Durward*. We can become like unto Louis XI and view the caustic wit of the devil as the penultimate of human existence, in which case we will worship the devil through the sacred black man, or we can forsake the cleverness of this world for the foolishness of the vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

There is no love, no charity, no honor in the pigsties of negro worship, yet the white man continues to wallow in them. It's a self-fulfilling prophecy: If the Europeans look at the world through the prism of science and reason they will only see pigsties, and the negro will be their Lord and Master for all eternity. But should they look at existence through the spiritual eye of the heart, they will see visions and dream dreams, and they will forsake their negro gods for the one true God. Our people now resemble the ancient Hebrews cavorting around the golden calf. The return to grace starts with a refusal to worship the heathen gods. From that refusal comes divine aid, which is surely something the European people need. We have lived so long without miracles, because we have been too long in the pigsties of negro worship. +

(1) It should be noted that the FBI gave orders to shoot to kill in the case of Randy Weaver's wife, who was standing in her own doorway with her baby in her arms. Yet the police in Baltimore refused to shoot any of the black rioters with rocks, not babies, in their hands.

The riot wasn't about Freddie Gray; the negroes couldn't care less about Freddie Gray. Had he lived a few months longer he would have met his death at the hands of one of the 'sainted' rock-throwing black thugs. The Baltimore riots are the Western world in miniature. Whites retreat before black barbarism, because they don't believe they have a moral right to defend themselves. In fact they don't believe they have a moral right to exist.

The Counter-Revolution: The Time of Our Peace Is Past

May 9, 2015

Categories: Charity, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Charles Dickens, George Fitzhugh



Now we can only wait till the day, wait and apportion our shame.
These are the dykes our fathers left, but we would not look to the same.
Time and again were we warned of the dykes, time and again we delayed.
Now, it may fall, we have slain our sons, as our fathers we have betrayed.

-Kipling

“We must understand why the blacks are rioting and then address their grievances,” the liberal newscaster intoned. I do understand why the blacks are rioting; it is the liberal media and their clerical allies who do not understand why the blacks are rioting. Blacks are rioting because they hate white people, not because of a “legacy of racism,” or because Freddie Gray died during his ride to jail. The guilty verdict won’t “bring peace to the community,” because blacks are not looking for peace. They want power. And every time they stage a successful riot, which was the case in Baltimore, they get closer to complete power. Of course complete black power would mean the end of the white race, just as it did in Haiti, but it would also send the black race back to the Stone Age. Without the whites to sustain them, blacks will be forced to live in a modern jungle where every man’s hand is against them and their hands are against every man. Why would they act against their own self-interest? Why did the swine plunge over the cliff? Both are possessed by the devil. The black savage is completely incapable of looking ahead to the consequences of his actions. He sees an opportunity to riot and he takes it; he sees a woman and he takes her; he sees that whites won’t take any action against him, no matter what he does, so he attacks ‘Whitey’ whenever and wherever the opportunity arises. Last week it was Baltimore, next week it could be New York or some other city or town. The black violence won’t stop when whites become less ‘racist,’ it will stop when whites become racist enough to love their own while hating the liberals and their black gods as they hate the devil, who the liberals and the blacks serve.

I don’t see the proper hatred in the European people, the hatred that stems from love and causes a man to cry, “Stop, this must not go on,” when he sees those he loves attacked by a cruel, merciless foe. It is from such a heartfelt determined hatred of the cruel and merciless that counter-revolutions are born.

Is there anything remotely resembling a counter-revolutionary spirit developing in white people? It seems almost impossible to believe that negro worship has consumed the souls of every last white. But then again, you never hear even a whisper against the black gods of Liberaldom. Perhaps that is Satan’s intent. He wants every white person with a heart that still lives, to feel he is the last white man on the face of the earth. “Despair and die,” the devil tells that last white man. But let’s assume that there are some white men left on earth whose hearts still indignant break when they see the black hell that enslaves their people. What are the obstacles such people face?

The first obstacle is the liberals. They are in power in church, state, academy and the military. In some nations, such as Chile in the 1970’s and Spain in the 1930’s, counter-revolutions were launched from the military, but in the modern European nations there are no counter-revolutionary movements; the democratic virus has sunk deep into the souls of the men who chose to enter the military in the modern European nations. It’s far more likely that the military will be used against white counter-revolutionaries than the alternative – that the military would turn on the liberals. Nor will there be any counter-revolutionary encouragement from the organized churches. They have made peace with the liberals. So long as both worship the negro neither will forsake the other. So any counter-revolutionary effort must proceed without help from any institution in Liberaldom. Nor can a counter-revolutionary hope to win the liberals over by exposing the inhumanity of negro-worshipping liberalism, or by proving the suicidal nature of negro-worshipping liberalism. The liberals’ hearts are as hard as Pharaoh’s, and they must believe in the negro come hell or high water, because without him they have no religious life at all. Whenever liberals gather for serious business, in Church or State, they discuss the negro and how to help him by “fighting racism.” And of course it is always the ‘good’ racism, namely white racism, which unfortunately is in very short supply, that the liberals are fighting. The black racism, which comes from the devil is never a concern of the liberals.

If we overlook the obduracy of the liberals and waste all our efforts in trying to “win them over,” we will be forever bound to Lear’s wheel of fire. Ever since the 1970’s men such as Samuel Francis and John Tyndall have been telling us that we could still reverse the blood red tide of color by voting, because whites are still in the majority. But whites were not in the majority then, and they are even less in the majority now, because the liberals with the black hearts will never side with the whites. A majority coalition of liberals and colored tribesmen will always win the one man, one vote plebiscites. There are a great many white grazers who privately favor the views of white men like Samuel Francis and John Tyndall, but they will never publicly state such views themselves or defend white people in public. Why? They will not do so, because they fear the consequence of the slightest deviation from liberal orthodoxy. And their fears are not unfounded; the liberals have set up a vast infrastructure designed to ferret out and punish all those who are not enthusiastic supporters of negro worshipping liberalism.

The second obstacle that a counter-revolutionary European encounters is the ‘make a living’ obstacle. A counter-revolutionary must spiritually separate himself from all things liberal. This is difficult to do when one must make a living, for the reason that it’s hard to be among them but not of them. It takes great spiritual discipline to hold fast to counter-revolutionary convictions while working amongst liberals and grazers. And it gets harder still when you see your children suffer financially when your lack of enthusiasm for liberalism is detected and you lose your job. But the counter-revolutionary vocation is not something chosen, unlike the revolutionary’s vocation. The revolutionary, in a Christian society, has chosen to rebel against God, because he worships darkness and not the light. The counter-revolutionary in a satanic society, to use the Shakespearean term, has had the counter-revolutionary vocation thrust upon him, because his heart will not permit him to forget or denounce that which was lost, namely Christian Europe.

The counter-revolutionary spirit stems from a love of the past while the revolutionary spirit comes from a hatred of the past. Hence, the counter-revolutionary’s desire to bring the spiritual values of the past into the present and the ruling revolutionary governments’ desire to bury the past in favor of the glorious present and an even more glorious future. What Fitzhugh said about governments is apropos here:

All government proceeds ab extra. Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by the necessity of keeping its negroes in order, which preserves a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the governing class would cease to be conservative.

Fitzhugh makes the same point that Burke made when he stated that a nation is much more than a geographical spot on a map, it is a moral essence. When revolutionaries take over a government, whether they have done it by bullet or ballot, they change the moral essence of a nation. That change should turn all conservatives into counter-revolutionaries. Burke maintained that the real French men were the throne-and-altar aristocrats in exile. And in Europe today, the only true Brits, Danes, Dutch, etc., are the men who want to destroy the democratic, revolutionary governments of their respective nations.

A conservative ought not to be concerned with preserving the democratic process. That is only a means to an end. If it is a means to an evil end, the conservative should oppose it; he should not — as is the case in the European nations today — defend a revolutionary, tribunal government just because white people are allowed to vote for their executioners. Voting is not a sign of liberty or of Christianity. In fact, Christianity always declines in thoroughly democratic nations, because everyone but Christians are given the liberty to practice their faith: Religious liberty for Muslims, Jews, tree huggers, and voodoo priests and priestesses, but no liberty for Christians. The “some are more equal” doctrine is in effect in all the European nations. The only Christianity that is permitted in Liberaldom is state Christianity, which is the complete antithesis of European Christianity.

The liberals have authoritatively decreed that the 21st century will mark the end of the European. Like the demon possessed swine in the Gospel, the liberals must flee from the God-Man whom they hate with an unremitting passion. And their flight has taken the form of institutionalized negro worship. They think that such a system is their best refuge from the God-Man. For this reason the Christ-bearing European will always be an anathema in Liberaldom.

The European counter-revolutionary does not see the 21st century as the end of the European. He sees only one vision: It is the same vision that his European ancestors saw when Odin pointed them to Christ, the true God and true kinsman of the European people. The racist gamut is designed by the liberals to keep the European away from the source of his strength, his racial and familial hearth fire. If there are no European hearth fires there will be no William Tells and the Gesslers of the world will reign unchallenged. The European grazers are kept in line by fear, the fear of being perceived as racist. They won't lose that fear until they see what they have not seen in this generation of white men — a man who is not afraid of being called a racist. Europeans are not primarily motivated by economic considerations. That is a fiction created by the Marxists and the capitalists. They are primarily motivated by a desire for the approval of their peers. And since their peers live in Liberaldom and have liberal values one must adhere to liberal values in order to win the approval of one's peers. “How well do you serve the negro?” is the credo of the white every man living in the modern European nations. Hence the declaration, “I will not serve the negro,” is the most counter-revolutionary statement a man can make. Through the narrow racial gate a counter-revolutionary must go, “for there reigns love and all love's loving parts.” For all their talk of love, the liberals' heaven on earth has no love. That is the dark secret of their utopia: Where there is no racial hearth fire, there can be no love; thus, the liberals must feed off the remnants of a civilization that was built by a people who loved much. Consistent liberalism is pure negation, so the liberals have institutionalized the hatred of all things Christian and European while reserving the hypocritical right to visit relatives on Christian holidays and raise their chosen children in houses rather than jungle huts, away from the savage barbarians of color who are supposed to worship and adore. (1) But the liberals cannot feed off the remnants of Christian Europe forever. Men and women need to love and be loved. That need can never be fulfilled in a world consecrated to the loveless, barbaric gods of color.

The counter-revolutionary European, by some miracle of God's grace, has not lost his capacity to love and hate with his whole heart and soul. He can match the passion of the liberals' hatred of the light with his passionate love of the light. Charity is not weak; it is fierce in defense of all that is good and pure and noble. [Dickens](#), like all the great poets of Christian Europe, knew the strength and fierceness needed for a loving, charitable defense of one's own:

Madame Defarge looked coldly at her, and said, “The wife of Evremonde; where is she?”

It flashed upon Miss Pross's mind that the doors were all standing open, and would suggest the flight. Her first act was to shut them. There were four in the room, and she shut them all. She then placed herself before the door of the chamber which Lucie had occupied.

Madame Defarge's dark eyes followed her through this rapid movement, and rested on her when it was finished. Miss Pross had nothing beautiful about her; years had not tamed the wildness, or softened the grimness, of her appearance; but, she too was a determined woman in her different way, and she measured Madame Defarge with her eyes, every inch.

“You might, from your appearance, be the wife of Lucifer,” said Miss Pross, in her breathing. “Nevertheless, you shall not get the better of me. I am an Englishwoman.”

Madame Defarge looked at her scornfully, but still with something of Miss Pross's own perception that they two were at bay. She saw a tight, hard, wiry woman before her, as Mr. Lorry had seen in the same figure a woman with a strong hand, in the years gone by. She knew full well that Miss Pross was the family's devoted friend; Miss Pross knew full well that Madame Defarge was the family's malevolent enemy.

“On my way yonder,” said Madame Defarge, with a slight movement of her hand towards the fatal spot, “where they reserve my chair and my knitting for me, I am come to make my compliments to her in passing. I wish to see her.”

“I know that your intentions are evil,” said Miss Pross, “and you may depend upon it, I'll hold my own against them.”

Each spoke in her own language; neither understood the other's words; both were very watchful, and intent to deduce from look and manner, what the unintelligible words meant.

“It will do her no good to keep herself concealed from me at this moment,” said Madame Defarge. “Good patriots will know what that means. Let me see her. Go tell her that I wish to see her. Do you hear?”

“If those eyes of yours were bed-winches,” returned Miss Pross, “and I was an English four-poster, they shouldn't loose a splinter of me. No, you wicked foreign woman; I am your match.”

Madame Defarge was not likely to follow these idiomatic remarks in detail; but, she so far understood them as to perceive that she was set at naught.

“Woman imbecile and pig-like!” said Madame Defarge, frowning. “I take no answer from you. I demand to see her. Either tell her that I demand to see her, or stand out of the way of the door and let me go to her!” This, with an angry explanatory wave of her right arm.

“I little thought,” said Miss Pross, “that I should ever want to understand your nonsensical language; but I would give all I have, except the clothes I wear, to know whether you suspect the truth, or any part of it.”

Neither of them for a single moment released the other's eyes. Madame Defarge had not moved from the spot where she stood when Miss Pross first became aware of her; but, she now advanced one step.

“I am a Briton,” said Miss Pross, “I am desperate. I don't care an English Twopence for myself. I know that the longer I keep you here, the greater hope there is for my Ladybird. I'll not leave a handful of that dark hair upon your head, if you lay a finger on me!”

Thus Miss Pross, with a shake of her head and a flash of her eyes between every rapid sentence, and every rapid sentence a whole breath. Thus Miss Pross, who had never struck a blow in her life.

But, her courage was of that emotional nature that it brought the irrepressible tears into her eyes. This was a courage that Madame Defarge so little comprehended as to mistake for weakness. “Ha, ha!” she laughed, “you poor wretch! What are you worth! I address myself to that Doctor.” Then she raised her voice and called out, “Citizen Doctor! Wife of Evremonde! Child of Evremonde! Any person but this miserable fool, answer the Citizeness Defarge!”

Perhaps the following silence, perhaps some latent disclosure in the expression of Miss Pross's face, perhaps a sudden misgiving apart from either suggestion, whispered to Madame Defarge that they were gone. Three of the doors she opened swiftly, and looked in.

"Those rooms are all in disorder; there has been hurried packing, there are odds and ends upon the ground. There is no one in that room behind you! Let me look."

"Never!" said Miss Pross, who understood the request as perfectly as Madame Defarge understood the answer.

"If they are not in that room, they are gone, and can be pursued and brought back," said Madame Defarge to herself.

"As long as you don't know whether they are in that room or not, you are uncertain what to do," said Miss Pross to herself; "and you shall not know that, if I can prevent your knowing it; and know that, or not know that, you shall not leave here while I can hold you."

"I have been in the streets from the first, nothing has stopped me, I will tear you to pieces, but I will have you from that door," said Madame Defarge.

"We are alone at the top of a high house in a solitary courtyard, we are not likely to be heard, and I pray for bodily strength to keep you here, while every minute you are here is worth a hundred thousand guineas to my darling," said Miss Pross.

Madame Defarge made at the door. Miss Pross, on the instinct of the moment, seized her round the waist in both her arms, and held her tight. It was in vain for Madame Defarge to struggle and to strike; Miss Pross, with the vigorous tenacity of love, always so much stronger than hate, clasped her tight, and even lifted her from the floor in the struggle that they had. The two hands of Madame Defarge buffeted and tore her face; but, Miss Pross, with her head down, held her round the waist, and clung to her with more than the hold of a drowning woman.

Soon, Madame Defarge's hands ceased to strike, and felt at her encircled waist. "It is under my arm," said Miss Pross, in smothered tones, "you shall not draw it. I am stronger than you, I bless Heaven for it. I hold you till one or other of us faints or dies!"

Madame Defarge's hands were at her bosom. Miss Pross looked up, saw what it was, struck at it, struck out a flash and a crash, and stood alone—blinded with smoke.

All this was in a second. As the smoke cleared, leaving an awful stillness, it passed out on the air, like the soul of the furious woman whose body lay lifeless on the ground.

Ah, that's what the counter-revolution is all about, Charlie Brown. The ability to recognize evil and to fight to the death to protect our own from that evil. Miss Pross, William Tell, and all the men and women of Europe who love much are the stuff that counter-revolutions are made on. +

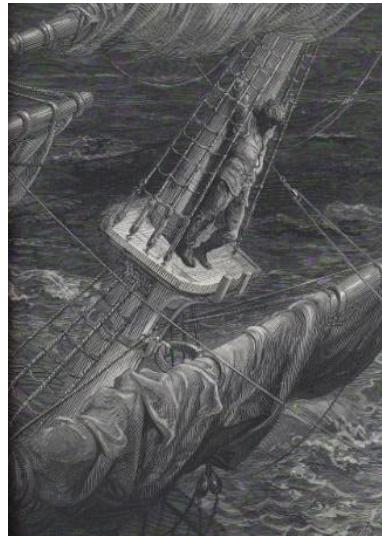
(1) My mad-dog liberal sister sent her daughter to an all-white private school, thus avoiding the negroes whom she professed to worship.

Fighting in the Dark

May 16, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, White Genocide

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



To come to the point at once, I beg to say that I have not the least belief in the Noble Savage... he is a savage – cruel, false, thievish, murderous...

-Charles Dickens

Dryden first coined the phrase ‘noble savage,’ and Rousseau developed it into a religion. Since that time there have been two forms of noble savage worship. The intellectual Christians such as Wesley, Wilberforce, and the Quakers revered the negro, because he was ‘pure’ and ‘noble’ and much more receptive, in their minds’ eye, to the Gospel of Christ as expounded by Wesley, Wilberforce, and the usual array of anti-Christian Christian zealots. How black savages, who are subject to all the effects of original sin — just as the white man is — can be more noble and pure than the white man is not something the anti-European Christians took the time to dwell on. They were annoyed with white Christians for being less than perfect, and they sought to beat out their rivals by filling their own particular churches with humble, obedient noble savages. The anti-European bias of the Christian churches has not abated since the days of Wesley and company; in fact, it has intensified. And the intensity has reached such a fever pitch that the sacred negro has supplanted Christ as the center of Christian worship. In my younger days I vividly recall being denied access to a chapel, because an ecstatic nun told me they were “bringing blacks up from the city to worship with them.” It was obvious that the nun should have said, “to worship them,” rather than “to worship with them.”

The aforementioned Christian ‘inclusion’ has blended with the straight secular noble savage worship of men like Dryden, Addison, Bentham, and Rousseau – the forerunners of the modern liberals and their cult of negro worship. But in the 17th, 18th, and 19th centuries there was strong opposition to the new noble savage faith. Dickens’ essay on “The Noble Savage” in the *Uncommercial Traveller and Reprinted Pieces* is a classic. And Samuel Johnson (“Don’t cant to me of savages”) was not a believer in the noble savage. Nor was Burke, who saw the connection between Jacobinism and negro worship:

“How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders?”

That was not only the plight of the French in Saint-Domingue, it was the plight of the Southern people during the northern Jacobins’ reign of terror that lasted through the “reconstruction” period of the South’s history. The anti-noble savage sentiments of Fitzhugh, Dabney, and Page reflected the beliefs of the entire Southern nation, which did not completely yield to negro worship until the second half of the 20th century. And in the main European sentiment, till the 20th century, was against negro worship. The tide shifted toward negro worship in the 20th century, not just in the liberal camps of historians such as Toynbee, but also in the deluded minds of many conservatives. Whittaker Chambers, for instance, might have divested himself of his communist faith, but he still maintained his faith in ‘the people,’ albeit they were no longer the white proletariat, they were the pure and simple negroes. (See “In Egypt Land,” 1946) Conrad, in *The Heart of Darkness*, also expressed a belief in the noble savage. It seems that once a European abstracts himself from his people and the Christian faith, he is open to the worship of the colored stranger, which is usually the negro, but Mexicans, Chinese, and Indians have also served as the pure and noble gods of color.

The only Christian doctrine that is harder for intellectuals to accept than the resurrection of the dead is the doctrine of original sin. Pelagius eliminated it, and Aquinas freed reason from its effects, but I think that the Christian’s belief in original sin is one of the few doctrines that has a mountain of evidence to support it. Just look at the evil that men do; are we not all in the position of the Ancient Mariner? We have shot the albatross. But the intellectual Christian and the secularized liberal refuse to admit that they share the guilt of the Ancient Mariner. Guilt is pain, and they want no pain. So they cast all original sin on the white man. He is original sin incarnate. From time immemorial he has sinned against the colored races and stopped them from living and loving in their black, brown, red, and yellow paradises. But how can the intellectual Christians and the liberals escape from their own original sin? They can take refuge in reason. Reason has no skin color, if you are one of the elect, a man of reason, you can worship the negro and remain free of the taint of original sin. The reasoning men and their negro gods will smite the white man who prowls about the world, seeking the ruin of the good and pure negroes. Why is it supposed to be a tragedy when murderous scum like Trayvon Martin and Michael Brown are killed in the midst of an assault? It is a tragedy, because they are the pure and noble, they are without sin.

The worship of the negro and the other savages of color started out as the embittered attempt of white intellectuals to strike out at God by effacing His image in the collective face of the European people. If they are evil, then God must be evil, and He can be rejected in favor of other gods. But this belief is no longer just the belief of a few dissident intellectuals, it has entered the blood stream of the European people. They instinctively feel that black crime is their fault, that the white man must never defend himself against the black barbarians, and that Tony Blair’s command that they “must be multicultural” is the will of God. Can such a spiritual virus ever be cured? Not by ordinary means. Some power greater than reason and science must be invoked. There is power in the blood of Christ, just as the old hymn says, but that power, the power that makes a spiritual weakling into a hero, comes to us through the human channels of grace that the liberals have damned up. If we don’t love our own, we will never feel anything in the blood, we will be the walking dead, blindly serving the gods of color.

The consciousness that we are all tainted with original sin was what made the European wars, prior to the 20th century, limited wars. As grisly as the wars were, there was a modicum of chivalry in such wars, because Christian men knew that sin was not the exclusive property of the enemy. The one exception to that old concept of war was the American Civil War. The leadership in the North did not believe that all men were tainted with original sin; they believed that only the white southerners had that taint. Their belief has become the belief of the white race. Original sin exists, but it only exists in white racists. This is why the main concern of white people is to show they are not racist. When conservatives criticize a black leader, they always make sure to find some other black leader to praise. When a grazer shows outrage at rock-throwing black thugs, he is always careful to say that he is against thuggery, not blacks. The English Defense League spoke for all the grazers of the European world when they called on blacks, Muslims, Indians, and Martians to take a stand against hooliganism. Such a stand is not a stand at all, it is an admission of defeat. If you won’t fight for your own racial hearth fire, you won’t have the spiritual spine to fight for anything else. The liberals know this, which

is why they condemn white racism. So long as whites remain in fear and trembling of being called racists they will be helpless and hopeless in the face of the liberal and colored barbarian onslaught.

The frameworks for negro worship and white genocide were in place in the European nations in the 1950s. But the work of slaughter was just beginning, there were still white communities. I recently saw a short travelogue filmed in Holland in 1951. There were no blacks or Muslims in town or country. What a blessed sight! Many of the small children depicted in that film would still be alive today. What do they think of their nation now? Have they become true believers? Do they love multicultural Holland? At least those Europeans had a childhood. What do white children have today? They are told by every authoritative body in their respective European nations that they are evil, because they are white. The females are told that they can escape whiteness by repudiating the white male and cohabiting with the negro. And the white males are told that they will only be allowed to live out their pathetic existence if they serve as milch cows for the sacred negroes. "Black lives matter, white lives don't," is the liberals' and the blacks' mantra.

Rationalism and its child, negro worship, seem to be permanently ensconced as the religion of the European people. It is, of course, a suicidal faith, because the sacred negro is a god of sacrifice not mercy. But the historians of our race, the poets such as Scott, Shakespeare, and Dostoevsky tell us of a different type of European than the modern negro worshipping Europeans. They tell of men and women who had something in their blood that was worthy of redemption. They were not rationalist piano keys and recorders to be played upon by the men of the satanic intellects. The Europeans once loved and hated first hand. Now they love through the negro, trying to love what he loves, which is murder, rape, and pillage, and striving to hate what he hates, the white man.

When the Athenians were trying to decide whether or not to fight, the Spartan leader Leonidas said that, "Sparta will fight whether the others fight or not." And when the Persians told Leonidas and the 300 that the Persian arrows would darken the sky, Leonidas replied, "Then we will fight in the dark." Leonidas and the 300 represent the pinnacle of Greek culture. They were not rationalists; they did not believe in the dialectic approach to existence. Nor did the Christian Europeans, who fought, through the Christian ages, their own battles of Thermopylae. Now it is time, past time, for Christian Europeans to stand in front of the pass and face the negro worshipping liberals and their colored minions. Not likely? No, not likely, but then again there was nothing likely about the miracle of Europe. That is something to hold on to, something that bids us look inward to the spirit above the dust of negro-worshipping liberalism. +

The Old Romance

May 23, 2015

Categories: Chivalry, Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: de la Motte Fouque, Edmund Burke, Herman Melville



The next day, Gottschalk, his shepherd's staff pointed with iron on his shoulder, set forth at noon on his lonely way, knowing that the monster was seeking prey in distant meadows. He knew his path again by the stones and branches he had dropped the day before as he went along. The mountains looked more and more wild, the passes grew more and more narrow, till even the slender youth could hardly pass through them. The streams murmured mournfully, and the fir-trees groaned as before a coming storm; all nature seemed to say, "Return, return, poor shepherd-boy, or all is over with thee! Thou wilt perish on the bleak mountains, and not even find a grave." Gottschalk's heart had almost failed him, but he still drew forth cheerful sounds from his pipe, and sang this song at intervals: —

"When other shepherds sleep
In the quiet noontide shade,
Gottschalk leaves his sheep,
And seeks a distant glade.

Whither away, rash youth?
Slumberers, ye may not know;
My distant haunts, in sooth,
Are much too high for you."

And the notes of his pipe fell softly, as if breathing forth a sweet secret. A light seemed to spring up in his heart, and he darted on. But may he trust to this light? He stopped, and knelt down reverently, as if at the altar of his village-church, and poured forth this prayer: — "O Lord God, Who knowest that I go forth at my prince's command to destroy the wicked brood, and to deliver my countrymen from danger; if it be a sin that I cherish yet another and glorious hope, root it out of my heart, or deny me the sweet prize, and give it to a better Christian; but yet grant me now victory, in Thy strength, for the good of my country; or, if this may not be, grant me a joyful death."

He seemed to hear within the words, "Go on, good servant."

-The Shepherd of the Giant Mountains

It's surprising how few men saw the French Revolution for what it was. It was not a mere palace revolution, a change from one ruler to another; the French Revolution marked the end of the Europeans' Christian romance. Christianity would survive for centuries after the French Revolution, but it would survive only as an intellectual faith, not as a poetic vision which set souls on fire. Burke saw this clearly:

But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness. — [Reflections on the French Revolution](#)

There is a direct link between Burke's vision of European Christianity and St. Paul's vision: both men were romantics. St. Paul told us not to rely on "miracles, healings, helps, governments," or "diversities of tongues." Instead we were to rely on that charity of honor that never faileth. The modern Europeans are wandering blindly over the face of what used to be Christian Europe, because they have lost the Pauline-Burkean vision of Christ, the vision of that perfect Knight of charity and honor who enters human hearts. Negro worship flourishes because the Christ-bearing people have lost the vision of Christ as the divine Knight Errant.

The devil's own know that people need more than an abstraction to fuel their faith. They need to see their faith enfleshed. This is why Trotsky, the Jacobin-Marxist, advised his fellow revolutionaries to look to the negro as the focal point of the anti-European revolution. As the complete antithesis of white men, negroes could serve as the living symbols of pure creatures of nature, and they could serve as the revolutionary shock troops that could be counted upon, when given free rein, to kill the whites without pity or remorse. In the old horror films we tremble for the fate of innocent victims at the mercy of subhuman brutes that are under the influence of satanic, mad scientists. But aren't the real life enactments of those horror films so much worse than the fantasies? The mad-scientists, the Jacobin utopians, have unleashed the bloodthirsty negroes on the white race, and the whites will not defend themselves, because they have no vision. The liberals see the sacred negro presiding over a new world order in which the white man's vineyard, filled with the grapes of wrath, have been trampled underfoot and destroyed by a crusading army of white utopians and noble black savages. That vision has carried the day throughout all of the once white, European nations. The Christian churches succumbed to that new vision of a Christless utopia as quickly as the French succumbed in World War II, because their Maginot line was guarded by Christian intellects without Christian hearts.

In *Moby Dick* Ahab's first mate confronts Ahab and denounces his mad attempt to risk all their lives in the pursuit of Moby Dick. But Starbuck cannot maintain his opposition to Ahab: His soul is "overmanned." Ahab has a vision, albeit a demonic vision, in which he passionately believes. Starbuck is an intellectual Christian, and as such he has no vision with which he can oppose Ahab. So all save one perish.

The conservatives of the 20th century were utilitarian Starbucks. They thought they could build Liberaldom more efficiently by their methods than their liberal cousins could. Twentieth century conservatism was never about destroying liberalism, it was about who could better manage the new, democratic, racially egalitarian society. Our European forefathers had an entirely different vision, an undemocratic, racially prejudiced vision of one people with one faith, who were loyal to their own racial hearth fire and rejected all others. That is the essence of

the European romance: Fidelity to one particular people and one particular God. When that visionary romance makes way for the romance of the sacred negro, no think-tank, no army, no democratic sleight-of-hand, can bring the European people back to life.

No doubt the false portrayal of Aslan in the churches contributed greatly to the death of the Christian romance. I once read one of those religious pamphlets in which Calvin debated a Thomist. I did not finish the pamphlet with a rousing cheer for either theologian; I experienced a vague feeling of disgust for the whole business. Was this what Christianity was all about? Some men need to reduce that which is poetical to a more mundane theory that their button-down, bureaucratic minds can understand, but should we then let them drive their theoretical chaise carts over our faith? St. Paul never defined charity, but we know what charity is, by virtue of what St. Paul said about it. Nor did St. John define the light, but we know who the Light is, because of St. John's description of the light.

Even if we grant the terrible effects that the presentation of a false image of Aslan has had on the European people, that still does not completely explain why the Europeans came to believe in the sacred negro romance over the Christian romance. Maybe it was the advent of the liberals' holy ghost, Science, which completed the unholy trinity (Abstract Reason, the father; The Negro, the son; and Science, the holy ghost) that finally turned the Europeans to the new romance of negro-worshipping liberalism. But whatever the path the Europeans took to negro worship, the terrible reality is that the European people are surrounded by the walls of Liberaldom, and they cannot see any other world beyond that world. They need vision, but the type of vision they need cannot simply be purchased at the local drugstore or supermarket.

The liberals are now involved in what resembles a mop-up campaign after a victory in a major war. They are looking for small pockets of resistance from enemy soldiers who do not know that the war is over or who have refused to obey their commanders' orders to surrender. The liberals also seek to tear down all statues and monuments of the enemy. This is why the Southern war memorials are being torn down. They are part of 'racist' Europe, and as such they must be destroyed. All symbols of the old romance must be eliminated so the new romance can shine all the more brightly in its radiant glory. But once the cultural remnants of old Europe are destroyed, won't there still be living remnants, won't there still be white people? Yes, there will, and they will be destroyed as well. The satanically logical brain that rules Liberaldom will demand it.

The white conservatives, who do not want to conserve white people, are forever telling liberals that they are the good, non-racist whites. But their white skins make them part of the old romance, whether they denounce the old romance or not. Even the liberals will perish in their own anti-white stew that they have prepared for thee and me. There is more wisdom in the Gordon Scott movie called *Tarzan and the Lost Safari* than in the thousands upon thousands of books written by liberals on the 'race issue.' A great white hunter who has delivered up his own people to be tortured and murdered by the black natives, is falsely accused of burning the natives' village. His protests are in vain: "You betray your own people, you betray me," is the assessment of the native chief. The liberals will be the last whites in the stew pots, but the liberals will go there despite their dreams of *To Kill a Mockingbird* darkies, bowing down in humble reverence and awe to their Atticus Finch imitations.

The French Revolution, so heralded by the radical poets such as Keats, Shelley, and Byron, was the embodiment of a new romance that was destined to supplant the old Christian romance. Reason, unfettered by God, was triumphant. But the revolution was a work in progress. It was left to radicals such as Trotsky to add the negro and science into the Jacobin mix. The history of the West since the French Revolution has been a history of compromise with the forces of evil. 'How much can we concede without losing everything to the devil?' was the unspoken strategy of the European people in the post-French Revolution era. Compromise, not victory, was the goal. But the devil does not compromise, nor does he give quarter. He demands unconditional surrender. Modern Europe, which is best described as Liberaldom, is the result of the Europeans' attempt to compromise with the devil. We can hear the white grazers asking why they are hated so. They mean no one harm.

*'Whither should I fly?
I have done no harm. But I remember now
I am in this earthly world, where to do harm
Is often laudable, to do good sometime
Accounted dangerous folly.'*

Will the devil cease to prowl about the world seeking the ruin of souls because white people say nice things about negroes? The exact opposite is true. The more the white man worships the negro, the further the white man slides into the pit of hell. Part of the old romance, an essential part, was the knight who harmed those who harmed his people. The great German writer De La Motte Fouque, in his Christian romance, [*The Shepherd of the Giant Mountains*](#), shows us why a truly gentle and loving heart must kill for mercy's sake.

'At length he reached the spot whence he could see into the nest of the hateful monster; and as he listened to the angry sounds of the young griffins, and saw their fiery eyes and their sharp beaks he thought to himself that old Hans was right, and that in time they would devour even men. He determined to make an end at once; he was glad they were so hideous and so fierce, for it made the task of destroying them less painful.'

The great compromise has failed, because there is a devil. The modern Europeans' disbelief in the devil did not make him disappear, it simply allowed him to expand his influence unopposed. Enter the Christian knight. With or without armor and sword, he is the man who sees evil for what it is, and he sees the good, he sees the one, pure and perfect Knight, weeping for His lost sheep who have left their white, Christian hearth fire in order to live in Liberaldom. The Knight must bring that other forgotten world, the world of Christian romance, into Liberaldom. Then that one, tiny spark of romantic fire will take hold, and the one true romance, the romance between Christ and the European people, will begin anew. +

The European Undines

May 30, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Charity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime.

-Edmund Burke

And what do we call a government that is anti-family, anti-white, anti-Christian, and anti-nationalist? We call it a regicide government that has no moral right to exist. All white men are honor-bound to oppose the regicide governments of the European nations. But of course regicide governments come into existence when the philosophers and debunkers have killed the white man's code of honor. There is no more disgusting spectacle than the Memorial Day celebrations in the U.S. and their equivalent in other European nations, in which white grazers gather together to celebrate white genocide. "Support our troops," they say, as they show us a scene of a negro singing a jazzed-up version of some formerly patriotic song. How can the soldiers of multiculturalism be our troops?

When Stalin discovered, during World War II, that the Russian people would not fight wholeheartedly for international communism, he let the Orthodox priests out of jail to bless the troops and pray to God for the deliverance of Mother Russia. A small cabal of utopian lunatics will fight for universals, but the bulk of mankind needs to feel that what they fight for is local. (1) There was no great desire amongst Americans to get into World War II until the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor. You are not a conspiracy theorist if you say that Franklin Delano Roosevelt engineered that Pearl Harbor bombing, because his actions leading up to the bombing are too well documented to label the anti-Roosevelt historians conspiracy theorists. They were simply accurate recorders of a historical event. But the point is that Roosevelt, as a card-carrying utopian universalist, needed to make the war seem local before he could safely label America-First patriots such as Charles Lindberg, who wanted America to stay out of the war, as unpatriotic kooks. Once the hurdle of the genuine Lindberg-type of patriotism was overcome, Roosevelt could proceed with the business of building utopia with the blood of white men. Every phase of the Second World War to make the world safe for democracy and its cousin communism was buttressed up by pin-up girls, mom's apple pie, and the girl you left behind. If the old honor code of the European, which consisted of that charity of honor, had been in place during the 1940s the white males would not have been left morally defenseless when the democracy propaganda machines went into action. In the absence of a deeply held faith, a merely virtuous man can be deceived by the wicked. And the American government, along with the other European governments of the 20th century, were wicked to the first degree. Twentieth century wars were not 'good guys' vs. 'bad guys' wars, they were wars between regicide nations determined to leave Christian Europe behind and to forge new European nations based on universalist abstractions such as communism, democracy, and national socialism.

A great number of Thomas Gradgrind-type conservatives have written about the dumbing down of American school children. You can now get a Ph.D. without being able to write a sentence, and you can get an undergraduate degree without being able to read or write. But that 'dumbing down' process has simply been a utilitarian adjustment to the new technological age. Modern students are taught computer skills and negro worship, which are far more practical skills for success in the modern world than reading, writing, and arithmetic. The Gradgrind conservatives have no reason to grumble then, because our students are learning what is utilitarian.

But the European conservative does have a reason to grumble. He has a reason to revolt. Our white children have been stripped of their cultural heritage so that they will not be able to resist the anti-white, anti-Christian propaganda of the liberals. They will go to war to make the world safe for multiculturalism, and they will worship the negro and hate the white man with all their heart and soul. It is the moral emasculation of white men, not the dumbing down process, which has turned Christian Europe into Liberaldom. A literate population that reads books about the sacred negroes is even worse than an illiterate population that can only get the latest party line from the oral culture. Whether the glass hits the rock, or the rock hits the glass, the glass is destroyed in both cases. The moral essence of the United States and the other European nations will remain Jacobin, whether they are literate or illiterate nations. Whatever is opposed to white Christian Europe is good, so Islam is good, Judaism is good, and the negro is sacred. Satan's legions will always be at odds with the Christ-bearing people.

If the Bible and the European poets are right, and the philosophers and theologians are wrong, then it is possible to see why the European people have forsaken Christ for the negro. The Bible and the European poets stressed that wisdom comes from a heart that loves. The modern white Jacobins of the lapsed Christian and Jewish varieties have deliberately cut themselves off from the heart so that they can build a new Tower of Babel. This new Tower of Babel will unite all religions, save the Christian religion, and all races, save the white race. This rational divorce of the head from the heart unites the disembodied brains of the West with the colored tribesmen. The Western intellectuals cannot understand European Christianity, because they have chosen the path of Louis XI and Bakunin:

In short, the manners, sentiments, and actions of Louis XI were such as were inconsistent with the principles of chivalry, and his caustic wit was sufficiently disposed to ridicule a system adopted on what he considered as the most absurd of all bases, since it was founded on the principle of devoting toil, talents, and time, to the accomplishment of objects, from which no personal advantage could, in the nature of things, be obtained. – Introduction to Quentin Durward

"All tender and gentle feelings of kinship, friendship, love, gratitude and even honor itself should be choked off in the revolutionary's breast by the single cold passion of his revolutionary task. He is not a revolutionary if he has pity for anything in the world. He knows only one science—the science of destruction. He lives in the world with a single aim—its total and swift destruction." – Bakunin

The colored tribesmen are united with the Jacobins of the Western world in their hatred of the white European, because Christianity has never penetrated to their hearts. For them a blood faith is not a heartfelt faith, it is not something spiritual and noble, it is a blood faith that bypasses the heart and remains in the glands, finding gratification in all that is bestial and ignoble. So the two faiths, the rationalist, bloodless faith of the western Jacobins, and the heartless, bloodthirsty faith of the colored tribesmen, are conjoined to make war on the European people.

In the silent film *Metropolis*, the director Fritz Lang ends his long film masterpiece depicting the struggle between capital (the head) and labor (the hands) with a reconciliation of the head and the hands. The reconciliation takes place through the mediation of the heart. That is what is lacking in our modern world. The great intellects of the post-Christian West and the colored

tribesmen have not sought to be reconciled through the mediation of the Christian heart. They have united together to kill the Christian heart. Thus their union is not a true union. The liberal loves an abstraction of the black and colored noble savages, and the colored tribesmen do not love as Christian Europeans once loved; to the extent that they love at all they love the liberal as a tiger loves his prey.

In his novel *Undine*, Friedrich de la Motte Fouqué depicts creatures called Undines, who resemble humans in their outward appearance, but who are less than human inside, because they have no souls. They can only acquire souls when a human loves them. It seems that the white Europeans have reversed the mythological story of the Undines. The negro and the colored races had potential souls that only came into being when they adhered to the deeply held faith of the European people, who loved their own so much, in and through Christ, that they shared that love with the colored races. So long as the colored races were kept in a position of subordination to the white race, like Uncle Remus in *Song of the South* (2), they could learn to love and thus acquire souls. But once the white Europeans walked away from the heartfelt, bred-in-the-bone Christianity of their European forefathers, they became Undines, resembling men and women on the outside, but lacking the humanity of men and women with souls. The European Undines now worship the black Undines, because they sense that the black is more of the earth, more Undine, than they are. They aspire to be like unto the black, but they will never quite make it. Because they once had white souls, they have a slight “remembrance of things past.” If that slight remembrance ever becomes a burning heartfelt desire to love as their ancestors once loved, and to respond to life ‘feelingly’ as their ancestors once did, they will become human beings with souls.

The Undine story is just a mythic romance, but it resonates with me, because of the essential truth of the story – a European can, by denying his heartfelt intuitions about life, intuitions that are born and bred at our familial and racial hearth fires, become a mere semblance of a human being, a man who, for all practical purposes, has no soul. When a white European mixes negro worship and patriotism or negro worship and religion, there is something spiritually wrong with that white person. He has become like unto an Undine. We can only help such an individual by not becoming like him.

The sight of antique Europeans who have not forsaken their European hearth fire might evoke a shadowy remembrance that the European Undine can use to reclaim his soul. After all, he, unlike the storybook Undine, once had a soul. Nothing of a spiritual nature is impossible, because nothing of a spiritual nature is subject to the inexorable laws of mathematics and the physical sciences. “There is something more than nature here.” Yes, thank God, there is something more than dumb nature in the heart of the European. +

(1) The heroic Texan, Audie Murphy, was the most decorated hero of World War II. When he was asked what made him fight alone and wounded against such impossible odds, he replied, “They were shooting at my buddies.”

(2) Uncle Remus is an invention of a white man; he doesn’t really exist. But that romanticized story does have a grain of truth: Colored people become human to the extent that they adhere to the Christian culture of the white Europeans.

The Darkness Deepens

June 6, 2015

Categories: Fairy tale mode of understanding, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



Lear: If thou wilt weep my fortunes, take my eyes.
I know thee well enough; thy name is Gloucester.
Thou must be patient; we came crying hither.
Thou know'st, the first time that we smell the air,
We wawl and cry. I will preach to thee; mark

Gloucester: Alack, alack the day!

Lear: When we are born, we cry that we are come
To this great stage of fools. – This' a good block.
It were a delicate stratagem, to shoe
A troop of horse with felt. I'll put 't in proof;
And when I have stol'n upon these son-in-laws,
Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill!

-Shakespeare

It should surprise no one that the black homicide rates in our major cities have skyrocketed since the Ferguson, Missouri black riots, which were really black festivals celebrating the end of all police resistance to black violence. You see, the blacks are a very simple people, not pure and simple as Rousseau and his liberal heirs depicted them, but simple as the beasts of the jungle are simple: When they sense weakness, they attack their prey. The blacks have no idea why white people are weak and defenseless; they only know that they are, so they kill them. It is much easier to play a harp that has only one string than to play a harp with many strings. You won't get much of a sound from just one string, but you'll keep things simple. The blacks have one string on which they play one song: Kill the whites.

White people, in contrast to the blacks, are very complex. They cannot stand to play on a harp with just one string; they need a multi-stringed harp they can play in union with a whole orchestra of other musical instruments. That orchestra might end up performing a symphony with the same theme as the one-stringed black harp, but it will be more musical than the black harp. Thus the liberal symphony calls black atrocities, the “understandable reaction to centuries of oppression”; white self-defense, “racism”; and black savages, the “pure and noble sons of nature.” Negro worship is the liberals’ symphony. Every time a white woman is raped by a black barbarian and every time a white is tortured and murdered by a black barbarian, we can hear the liberals’ symphony playing in the background, just as we hear background music when we go to the movies. Of course the particular movie that is playing in all theaters throughout the European world is *White Genocide*. The liberals wrote the script, they are directing it, and of course they are playing the background music for the black barbarians who, following the liberals’ script, are murdering the hated whites.

The fact that the white man sees life as more complex than a one-note harp should not preclude an attack on the unholy union between the liberals and the black barbarians. One can see, if he is an integral man, that life is complex, and still act. Complexity will not paralyze the man with a heart of flesh. However, whites have been mesmerized by the liberals’ symphony – “You must not resist black violence, you must worship the black gods with all your heart, mind, and soul.” But must we do so? Didn’t the white man once listen to a different music? The ancient European lay called us to rise and ride in defense of kith and kin. I don’t see why we should listen to the modernist symphony of negro worship when the lay of the antique Europeans still calls us to a higher destiny.

The word of God and the church documents do not lead us directly to God; they must first be sifted in the heart of man. Christ came to us through the hearts of His people, the Europeans. So long as one European heart remains faithful to the Divine Presence, the image of God in man has not been entirely eradicated from the face of the earth. With malice aforethought, Satan uses the black barbarians to achieve his ends. When the negroes kill whites they do not simply kill them, they also torture and degrade them. There is a fearful satanic symmetry between the liberals’ constant debunking and degrading of the antique European culture and the blacks’ torture and degrading of their white victims. What happens in the soul of the tortured white victim of black barbarism? Does he die in despair and curse the God he feels has forsaken him? That is certainly what Satan wants: “Despair and die,” he tells us.

The use of negroes to destroy the white race is quite logical, satanically logical. The war will never cease until Satan is defeated in the last great battle between good and evil. But that doesn’t mean we should let Satan have free rein. The defense of our people should certainly take precedence over the defense of ‘democracy’ or ‘our constitution.’ What we love is what we should defend. And if we don’t love our kith and kin, then what kind of subhuman creatures are we? We are liberals.

The liberal symphony has drowned out the lay of the European Minstrel. Wherever a white man goes, he hears the music of negro worship, which is meant to make him feel an out-pouring of love and sympathy for the sacred negro while feeling a hatred for the people of his own race, who oppress the sacred negro. And while this music is playing, the work of slaughter goes on.

It is painfully obvious that the Haitization of the white nations is in progress. It started out slowly, but now the Haitization process has accelerated. In light of that fact, we should at least look to see if any white people have ever successfully resisted Haitization.

Our search brings us to the Reconstruction Era of the South (1865 – 1877). The intent of the radical Republicans was clear: The white Southerners were to be turned over to the people without mercy, the negroes. The white Southerners violently opposed the torture and murder of their people, and white genocide, for a time, was forestalled.

The fighting South was still a bred-in-the-bone culture when the Southern people of the Reconstruction Era fought against the liberals and the black barbarian shock troops, but when they started listening exclusively to the liberal symphony they became like unto the liberals of the North. It’s sad to hear modern Southern apologists defend the South by claiming that, “Those

damn Yankees are more prejudiced than we are." When the South successfully resisted Haitization, they saw themselves as a Christian people defending themselves against black barbarism; they were prejudiced in favor of Christ over the negro. All white Europeans need to recover that prejudice.

The glory of the European people was that they were conscious of their sinfulness before God. And because of their consciousness of their sins and God's mercy, they loved much. They loved God in and through their people. Now that they are no longer conscious of their real sins but have invented a false sin, racial prejudice, and a false god, the negro, the Europeans do not love much. They do not love their own kith and kin enough to "cry havoc," and let loose the dogs of war upon the liberals and their colored minions. The burning white child, Jonathan Foster, and all our white children deserve our love. When we forsake them, we forsake Him, and we cut ourselves off from His grace. In the eyes of the world, white people are less than nothing; they are evil vermin that must be exterminated. Our Lord's words come to mind: "Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." The burning white child is also our Lord.

The liberals' great symphony of negro worship seems to be the only song that white people hear. If they could once again listen to the lay of the European Minstrel, they would hear of a people who loved much and were forgiven their sins by a God of infinite love and mercy. Talk of European minstrels seems quite inappropriate in a scientific age. But the liberals have their romances, their *Uncle Tom's Cabin* and their *To Kill a Mockingbird*, which they weave into their symphony of negro worship. The Christ story, as related by the minstrels of old Europe, is still the best response to white genocide.

David Copperfield started his personal history by stating, "Whether I shall turn out to be the hero of my own life, or whether that station will be held by anybody else, these pages must show." The Europeans' personal history once read like a beautiful fairy tale of brave heroes and virtuous maids who defied the devil and his minions in the name of Christ, the King of Fairyland. That old narrative has been taken over by somebody else. Now the Europeans dance to the music of Satan. Only those who remember the "love that once was there" will hear the lay of the European minstrel and refuse to worship Satan in and through the negro. Our white nation was meant to be a dwelling place for the living God, not a dwelling place for Satan and his minions. Why shouldn't we become the heroes of our own story? We don't have to submit to the will of Satan.

The Son of God goes forth to war,
Who follows in His train? +

Rage, Rage Against the Murder of White Innocence

June 13, 2015

Categories: Charity, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Rudyard Kipling, Solzhenitsyn



...Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. *Matthew 18:3*

Romantic flights of fancy are generally the curse – or blessing, depending on your point of view – of a small proportion of males. Females, in the main, eschew romanticism for the reason delineated by Kipling in "[The Female of the Species](#)." Women have been endowed by God with a practical gene, because it is they who must face "death by torture for the life beneath their breasts." But this is not going to be an essay on the female of the species. I'm trying to get to my main point by way of a laborious analogy.

As a young man with a romantic streak, I tended to build castles in the sky around certain women who seemed to me to be fair and virtuous maidens, one of whom I hoped would live with me in my castle in the sky, much like Snow White in the Disney movie. There was one young woman in particular, who I had decided, in my freshman year of college, was destined to be my Snow White. I had only walked to class with her a few times, but being a foolish young man (now I am an old foolish man), I thought she was the one. I'll shorten the tale by proceeding quickly to the denouement. My castle in the sky came tumbling down when I saw my lady fair in a passionate embrace with another woman. "Lord, what fools these mortals be!"

That little incident did not cure me – a romantic is never cured, and perhaps it is good that he isn't, because I believe that we need a few romantics – but it did help me to temper my romanticism with steel rather than silly putty. Which brings me to the subject of these wars. I needed a shock to make me face the fact that romance must be grounded in reality, just as white people who look to the law in church and state to help them against the onslaught of the colored tribesmen need a strong shock to make them realize that the law, when it is detached from the life blood of the European people, is not a friend; it is a fiery sword in the hands of the Archangel Satan, which he wields against white Europeans.

Mention 'the law' and white intellectuals get excited. They get out their Blackstone, their Aquinas, and every other volume of legalese they can lay their blood-stained hands on. And then they proceed to prove to white people that there is no such thing as a black threat to white people. There is only one thing a white man must do, they tell us: He must follow the law and the men in church and state who make and interpret the laws. Then all will be well. But all law must have a purpose beyond law, otherwise the law becomes as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal. Our laws existed to preserve the European people and their civilization. If they are now used to destroy the European people and the remnants of their civilization, we should not remain under the yoke of mere law. We should look to the God who is above man-made law, the God who commands us to fight for His reign of charity. When the devil rules, the European should not be law-abiding.

Let me mention two recent cases in point, which represent the wrong-headed and spiritually bankrupt position of the European people vis-à-vis the law. In the city of Philadelphia, an all-female black gang has been invading the homes of white people and terrorizing white women and children while shouting racial slurs at them. The whites in the neighborhood called the police, but the police did not respond. After Ferguson, Missouri, and Baltimore, the police were not about to take action against blacks, particularly female blacks. So the people in the neighborhood had a '[White Lives Matter](#)' rally. Certainly white lives matter, they matter a great deal to me and to the remnant band of Europeans who have not succumbed to negro worship. But to whom were those white people in Philadelphia appealing when they staged their rally? They were appealing to the liberal government, which has institutionalized the hatred of white people and the deification of black people. Are the police, who represent the law, going to side with the white victims of crime or the black perpetrators of crime? In the rare instances, which are always followed by black riots, when police actually take violent action against black criminals, there has been an element of surprise. The police officers in those rare incidents did not have time to avoid contact with the aggressive blacks, so they ended up actually doing that which is forbidden by liberal law: They took violent action against a black barbarian. Such cases are very rare though, because our laws are set up to protect the violent blacks and to exterminate white people. I'm not overly fond of bikers, they are generally not the salt of the earth. But I noted that the Waco police gunned them down without any protest from the mass media or from any church group. Shouldn't there be some investigation to see if the bikers did anything to warrant the massacre? Of course not, we all know that white lives do not matter.

What should whites do when black barbarians rape, murder, and pillage? If you need to be told the answer to that, then it would be of no use to tell you the answer. We must divest ourselves of the notion that the law, independent of what it represents, is a sacred thing that we must not transgress. Instead, we should obey the higher law. That charity of honor compels us to fight in defense of our people. And the church men and the statesmen, the upholders of the 'law,' should not be allowed to support the extermination of white people without suffering the same fate traitors have suffered throughout the Europeans' history.

The second case in point was a Christian pastor who appeared on Fox News, complaining about the government's discrimination against Christians. He didn't say 'white' Christians – no doubt he didn't want to appear prejudiced – but he correctly pointed out that Christians were discriminated against by our anti-Christian government. But what was his solution? We've heard this time and time again: We are supposed to vote the anti-Christian politicians out of office. Antonio's words are apropos: "You may as well go stand upon the beach, And bid the main flood bathe his usual height..." A government dedicated to the extermination of white people and the eradication of every last remnant of the white Christian culture of the antique Europeans is not going to allow any genuine European Christian politician to be on the ballot. The Christian pastor is appealing to the democratic system to cure a condition that is the result of our democratic system. "You bid me seek redemption from the devil."

When Solzhenitsyn came to the West in the 1970s, he remarked that the most astonishing thing about the Western peoples was their lack of courage. I would amend that to "their lack of moral courage." The West does not lack men who will fight floods and hurricanes to save negroes from death. The West does not lack men who are willing to go to war in the name of multi-culturalism and democracy. What the West lacks is men with the moral courage to oppose the powers that be in church, state, and society, who have decreed that whites must die and negroes must be worshipped. That type of courage stems from a deeply held faith in the God of antique Europe. Such a faith can move mountains, and it can move some whites to actually oppose the liberals and the colored barbarians. It is always a problem of faith. When you love much, you do not care a fig for the powers that be; you see your people, "the least of these my brethren," being tortured, raped, and murdered, and you fight.

I recently saw a [black minister](#), an Al Sharpton-clone, calling for the murder of all white people. The blacks have responded to such rhetoric with deeds. They have stepped up their violence against whites. And most of the white officials in town and country have told their police officers not to respond to black violence. ‘Just let them alone and they’ll get tired of their blood-letting,’ is the belief of whites in positions of power. “All racism must end now,” the black pastor screamed. But what is racism? Racism is any attempt, by white people, to resist their own extermination.

It is not only in the black churches, which have never been Christian, but it is also in the white churches that we hear the white race demonized and the black race deified. I’m surprised that the churches still use white communion wafers. Wouldn’t black communion wafers better reflect the current anti-white, anti-Christian theologies of our Christ-less Christian churches?

Harry Berres, a retired Marine sergeant, said in 2011, “When I joined the military it was illegal to be homosexual, then it became optional and now it’s legal. I’m getting out before Obama makes it mandatory.” That is the way liberalism works. First we were told to accept the negroes as equals, then we were told we were less equal than the negroes, and finally, we were told we must worship negroes and calmly stand by while our kith and kin are murdered by the negroes.

There is a satanic union between the white technocratic liberal and the black barbarian. Both hate the innocence of white children. The liberals, when they don’t manage to kill the child in the womb, try to destroy the innocence of white children with sex ed laboratories called schools and the popular media. And the black barbarian must kill white innocence, because it is in his nature to kill the weak and helpless. Another white innocent, named [Aiden Archer](#), has recently joined Jonathan Foster in the ranks of death. The mother, a white woman who will defile hell with her presence when she dies, stood by while her black barbarian boyfriend tortured her three-year-old white son to death! “So what,” is the reaction of the liberals. “We must put this in proper context and not become emotional about it,” the conservatives in church and state tell us. But I choose to become emotional about it. I want that black barbarian and his white concubine killed, and I want every mad-dog liberal and black barbarian who attacks white innocence to be killed as they have killed.

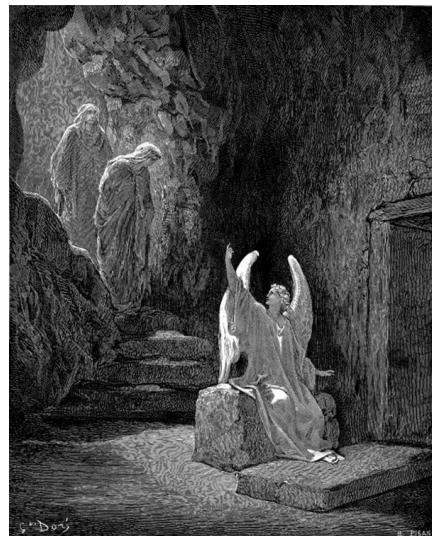
Do you see the satanic mind at work behind this attack on white innocence? The death of any child is horribly tragic, but these torture-murders of innocent white children is Satan’s ultimate desperate gambit to murder the Christ-bearing people. Our Lord has told us we must acquire the innocence of a child in order to inherit the kingdom of heaven. Satan has taken our Lord at his word. He has set the negro loose, through his liberal minions, to torture, humiliate, and murder childlike innocence so that the white child will never know love or innocence. The adult that stands by and puts the murder “in context,” or turns his face away from the murder, will destroy that respect for childlike innocence in his own heart, without which he will never see the kingdom of heaven. Unless we rise and ride in the name of Christ and for His children, we will not see the risen Lord. We will not see Him, because we refused to fight for the “least of these my brethren.” There are consequences when white people refuse to be white; Satan has his will, and childlike white innocence disappears from the face of the earth. +

Hold to the Vision

June 20, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: John Sharp Williams, Walter Scott



There is no grander, no more superb spectacle than that of the white men of the South standing from '65 to '74 quietly, determinedly, solidly, shoulder to shoulder in phalanx, as if the entire race were one man, unintimidated by defeat in war, unawed by adverse power, unbribed by patronage, unbought by the prospect of present material prosperity, waiting and hoping and praying for the opportunity which, in the providence of God, must come to overthrow the supremacy of "veneered savages," superficially "Americanized Africans" – waiting to reassert politically and socially the supremacy of the civilization of the English-speaking white race. – John Sharp Williams

Twas the hour when rites unholy
Call'd each Paynim voice to prayer
And the star that faded slowly,
Left to dews the freshen'd air.
Day his sultry fires had wasted,
Calm his sultry fires had wasted,
Calm and cool the moonbeams shone;
To the Vizier's lofty palace
One bold Christian came alone.

-Walter Scott

I've always felt that the Midwestern states of the United States are the most unabashedly liberal ones in America. It's the over-compensation factor: Midwestern liberals feel that they're not quite as cutting-edge liberal as their East and West Coast counterparts, so they always try to prove to the East Coast and West Coast liberals that they are every bit as liberal as they are. Consequently they comprise the most thoroughly liberal region of the United States. In fact, as a region they have much in common with Canada, whose liberals feel that they must not appear like some kind of backwater nation, so they push liberalism even harder than the U.S. In Canada, like in the Midwest, they make their draconian liberalism explicit.

Because of this over compensation factor, the [St. Paul School District](#) in Minnesota has instructed its teachers not to punish black students if they misbehave in school. Instead they are to try to find out what some bad white person did to "trigger" a violent response in the good blacks. This stated policy has been the unstated policy of white European law enforcement agencies for the last 25 years at least, but it is significant that people in Minnesota have decided to make it the stated policy. And even more significantly there has been no white outrage. But then you didn't expect there to be any white outrage, did you? Whites become outraged when their local sports team trades a black athlete whom they all adore, but they do not become outraged when police departments hand their homes and their lives over to black barbarians. "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." White people are more concerned that 'their team' stays intact than with the survival of their people. ([1](#))

For many years now, I've been trying to understand the grazers. You see, I understand the liberals; they are evil, their hearts belong to Satan. But the grazers? What are they? Case in point – I visited an old, country-style gun shop a few weeks ago to purchase another firearm. The shop was filled with grazers, who talked about this and that gun, made some jokes about Obama, and in general took right-of-center stances on most political issues. They were genial pagans, like most of the men I served with on the police force. But did you ever try and stir up any kind of blood and soil sentiments in such individuals, a genuine love for kith and kin? It can't be done. They love their sport teams, and they love an abstract idea of their country, and they want both to be powerful, because it makes them feel powerful. And they want to be thought well of by respectable society. Never mind that 'respectable society' is run by Satanists. Society is a generic, eternal thing with the grazers, which is why they always court its collective approval. Grazers get mad at liberals who call them white racists, but they don't get mad at liberals for not being white racists. So who are the grazers? They are the lukewarm; much better company than the liberals, but ultimately a very depressing, and thus spiritually draining group of people. Never, if you are an antique European, make the mistake of thinking a grazer is your friend just because he makes an Obama joke or is interested in military memorabilia. The grazer views kith-and-kin Europeans as kooks, and a kook is not respectable. "How can you trust a man who doesn't support the team?" is the grazer's rationale.

It's ironic; in America we probably have more guns in the hands of private citizens than any other nation in the world, and yet we have retreated before the colored barbarians to an even greater extent than the nations that have banned firearms. Need I state the obvious conclusion? Something besides armaments determines the outcome of wars. Of course a fighting man must pay careful attention to his weaponry, but what is more important is the spiritual armor that St. Paul writes about. The European grazers have left their spiritual armor in the attic for the last century and as a consequence they have become Undines, men without the spiritual discernment to know who the enemy is, and men without the inward Charity of Honor that makes a man fight for hearth and race rather than for democracy and the local sport team.

The grazer is always at the mercy of the liberals, because the liberals have a faith and the grazer does not. So if a young grazer wants to fight, he must join the liberals' militia, and if an older grazer wants to feel fuzzy-patriotic, he must wave the flag of multiculturalism. If the grazer had a genuine faith, as his European ancestors did, he would feel in his bones the truth of John Sharp Williams' words against false patriotism:

But mere physical courage is a thing too common amongst the men of the race to which we belong to be worthy of any sort of celebration for its own sake. Mere fighting is no virtue: far from it. Indeed, the man who is not great enough and brave enough not to fight when he ought not to is a poor excuse for a man.

Well said! What a man fights for and what he does *not* fight for tells us about the man. The grazing whites in the European nations will not fight for their racial nation, but they will fight for the liberals' negro-worshipping nation. Why? It is because they have no faith, and so they are dependent on the liberals to provide them with the wars and the athletic contests that stir their

blood enough to make them feel they are alive and not merely grazing in the fields of oblivion. But they are grazing in the fields of oblivion, because no man or woman truly becomes alive, as the European fairy tales tell us, until he loves much. Our European ancestors became one with Him whom they loved, the living God, because they loved Him in and through their people. And the liberals love the devil in and through their people, the negroes. So the grazer is left out in the cold without a God, unless he embraces the liberals' gods. This is why despite his grumblings about The Obama and welfare chiselers, the grazer will always side with the multiculturalists of Liberaldom. Where else can he go? He could stand with the fighting remnant of his own race, like those brave young Spartans of South Africa or that small fighting remnant of Englishmen, but that would mean standing in the right with two or three against a multitudinous army of liberals and colored barbarians. Such a stand is impossible for a man without faith. But with faith? Then miracles occur.

When Ben Jonson said that his friend William Shakespeare was a greater dramatic poet than the Greek dramatic poets, it was considered quite a controversial statement. The pagan Greeks were considered to be at the highest level of human achievement in all the arts. But how could a pagan plunge the depths of the human soul to the same extent as a European Christian, who had the benefit of living in a society that had formed an incorporate union with Christ? We see in Shakespeare and all the great poets who followed him the reason why Christianity triumphed over paganism: It satisfied the deepest longing of the human heart, the longing to know that there was a divinely human heart at the center of the universe, a divine Personality whose charitable love for His people was revealed in the God-Manhood of Jesus Christ. The pagan blood rites were Christianized and became rites of spirit and blood. Our blood was blended with the blood of the Lamb! All this needs to be stated, because modern Europeans no longer have a blood connection with the people who saw the Christian God as something more than the end product of a syllogism.

Some 15 years ago, when the United States was involved in one of its many bombing missions of the Arab nations, I had a conversation with a female grazer who professed to be a believing Christian. After agreeing with me intellectually about the immorality of the war, she then blurted out, "But I support it, because saturation bombing gives me a rush!" For me that woman represents the failure of intellectual Christianity. At the depths of a Christian's soul there is an unquenchable flame of charity that gives us something more than the 'rush' of the sex and blood of paganism. But if we don't plunge to the depths, if we only stay on the philosophical surface of Christianity, we will be bored stiff with the whole Christian bit, and we will seek to return to the fleshpots of Egypt. The liberals embrace the new Babylon with all their heart, mind, and soul, while the grazers embrace it second-hand; but they remain captives of the liberals, because they find Christianity to be a bloody bore. And Christianity *is* a bore if we adapt the false Christianity of the theologians and the philosophers. The true faith is a sword of divine charity that does not kill; it brings the heart of man into the Divine Presence: "And there reigns love, and all love's loving parts..."

We all know the 'rush' of the pagan things, but our people once knew something greater than the rush of paganism. They felt, through charity, which never faileth, the joy of being connected to the living God. When Pickwick forgives Jingle, when Quentin Durward renounces vain glory for charity's sake, and when all the 'ordinary' Europeans of faith consecrated their hearts to the Man of Sorrows, because He first loved them, we feel in our sympathetic connection to those people, the transcending and purifying fire of divine charity enveloping our hearts and taking us to a fairy tale land far above the Babylonian hell of the liberals and the grazers. And that is the tragedy of the grazers: They share the hell of the Babylonians, because they are lukewarm, without the spiritual strength to walk away from the opiates of multiculturalism and return to their racial hearth fire where the God of their ascending race resides.

Something holds the grazers in Liberaldom. Sport teams and respectability seem to be the primary necessities that keep the grazer in the city of Babylon; there may be other darker reasons as well. The antique European can only hold on to his counter-vision, the vision of eternal Europe bequeathed to him by his European ancestors. If we hold to that vision until we are relieved by our Lord, we might be astounded to learn that some grazers actually have left the fields of oblivion to follow in our train as we follow those heroic Europeans of old, who loved much and were forgiven by the God whose love passeth the understanding of the Babylonians of modern Europe. +

(1) The white South African people are in a desperate struggle for survival. Shouldn't we be more concerned about them than we are about multi-racial sport teams? And all of the European nations are now – or will be soon – facing the same black menace that threatens the white South Africans. I don't care about the survival of democracy, of football, or of multi-cultural America. I care only about the survival of my own people.

Everything is grist for the liberals' white-hating mill. The recent tragedy in South Carolina is an example. That shooter should be executed. He killed innocent people without any cause other than his own bloodlust. But white people should not let the liberals make this an occasion to further their white-hating agenda. The battle flag should remain, and whites should stress that it is only in cultures like the white Southern culture, which the battle flag represents, that criminals of every color are genuinely punished for their crimes, and a true climate of Christian charity, which discourages such crimes, can exist. The fight is always for a white Christian Europe. If the battle flag and what it represents disappears, the white holocaust will continue, and such random acts of violence and insanity that occurred in South Carolina will increase tenfold.

Resisting the Satanic Reversal

June 27, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas, Utopianism

Tags: Charles Dickens



The reversal of the two natures, in their relative positions, Uriah's of power, and Mr. Wickfield's of dependence, was a sight more painful to me than I can express. If I had seen an Ape taking command of a man, I should hardly have thought it a more degrading spectacle. —Dickens in *David Copperfield*

'Ride to the sounds of the guns' is good advice if there is only one battlefield. But what if there are thousands of battles going on around you? You ride to the one that seems the loudest, I suppose. Right now the liberals have trained their big guns on South Carolina, using the tragedy there to solidify their seemingly unbreakable stranglehold on the white people of our nation. Churched Christians throughout the nation are meeting to mourn the victims of the shooting in South Carolina, and then following up the memorial services with discussions of 'racism,' which are always discussions about the evil racism of the bad white people; they are never discussions about the racism of black barbarians. The tragedy of others should not be the occasion for the advancement of an evil political agenda. But that is always the case with liberals, because liberals have no conscience. So let me begin this week's counterattack against the unconscionable liberals.

I'm old enough to have buried both my parents. There is a short period after the funeral when friends give you their sympathy and then they expect you to move on. They have their own griefs (or soon will have) for which I will express sympathy and then expect them to move on. If you can't move on, then society demands, and it is a fair demand — for how could society function if we were all eternally mourning — that you keep your grief private. I haven't 'moved on' very well myself, largely, I think, because of a poor denouement of the story of my earthly relationship with my parents. I always hoped for more of a rapprochement with them before their deaths. I suppose from their point of view — they were 1950s liberals — I was a wayward son who they hoped would turn his life around before they died. But whatever your relationship was with your own parents or your children, if you are a Christian European you sympathize with people who have lost their loved ones, by the course of nature, by war, or by murder, as was the case in that South Carolina church. But our sympathy is intensified to the extent that we knew the deceased. Only other family members and close friends mourned with me at my parents' deaths. And such is the case in the South Carolina church murders. Many people sympathize with the surviving relatives of the murdered church goers, but only their closest kin mourned deeply. The other mourning, the mourning of the liberals, is fake mourning for political purposes.

As a white Christian, I care first and foremost for my family, my friends, and my kind. But because I have deep feelings for my family, my friends, and my kind I can respect the genuine grief of those outside my family, my circle of friends, and my race. And that is where the Christian European differs from the liberals and the colored barbarians. The liberal, who has only hated for his own people, can usually muster up some feeling for his own family, by being a complete hypocrite, but he has no feeling for the rest of mankind, black, white, brown, or yellow, because he has no heart. His passion is for an abstract utopia where love has been replaced by debauchery and charity has been replaced by cruelty, the cruelty of a Jacobin utopia. And no colored tribesman outside the murdered blacks' families really sympathizes with those South Carolina church members. The much maligned antique white European sympathizes with them, because he, and he alone, is fully human; he knows what love is through his connection with the Divine Heart. The black tribesman and the liberal only profess concern for the murdered blacks in order to further their cause, which is the destruction of white culture and the extermination of white people. Look at the contrast between the white Europeans and the liberals, and the white Europeans and the liberals' colored shock troops. When the black South Carolinians were murdered, white Europeans offered prayers and sympathy. When whites are tortured and murdered, the liberals either ignore the murders or excuse them. And black columnists respond with glee to the torture murder of whites by writing, "Cry me a river."

The crime statistics are clear. Black on white crime has reached epidemic proportions and white on black crime is very rare. But even if the crime statistics were reversed, it would not make miscegenation and integration right. Did God create different races for a reason or is skin pigmentation just an accident of nature, with no spiritual significance, just as we are now told that a woman's breasts and a woman's womb have no spiritual significance?

Because I am white I care first and foremost about my own white race. And it is obvious that miscegenation and integration have not been good for the white race. But, because I am Christian, which all true Europeans are, I have no desire to see the colored barbarians who are not attacking my people go to hell in a basket with their more aggressive and demonically possessed colored brethren. Therefore I want a white-dominant culture in which blacks and whites are segregated, because without segregation there will be no white culture for the colored heathens to look to for a light in the darkness of heathenism. Of course if white people refuse to be Christian, then both the blacks and whites will be plunged into darkness. Segregation is not at all impossible, in fact, a segregated culture is the only type of culture a Christian should desire. The liberals in and outside the unchristian Christian churches constantly tell us that miscegenation and integration, which are code words for the extermination of the white race, are the essence of Christianity. If racism stops, which is a code word for a white man's love of his own people, the liberals tell us, shootings like the ones in the South Carolina church will stop and the world will be filled with pure and loving black and brown people, and it will be cleansed of all white people, with the exception of a few Mr. and Mrs. Atticus Finches. But how can a human being posit such a cruel, inhuman scenario? Did Victorian England ever produce a mass murderer? Yes, there was Jack the Ripper, and he was such a rarity that he has never ceased to spawn books and movies about his twisted, perverted rampage. But Jack would not be famous in our current society. His murderous rampage would be minor stuff compared to our modern lunatics. And what kind of society produces madmen who make Jack the Ripper seem tame? Is it the pre-Civil War South? Is it 19th century Britain? No, it is modern Liberaldom. When I go anywhere with my family or when I lock my door at night, I am worried about colored barbarians and some skinny, white techno-barbarian without a soul. Both are produced by a liberal society that demonizes the white Christian male and deifies the black barbarian, the Lady Macbeth feminist, and reason unfettered from the Christian heart. There will be more shooters of black and white people, and the black barbarian hordes will continue their bloodletting, until the liberals' flag, in church and state, is torn down and replaced with the cross of Christ.

The goal of the liberals has always been and will always be the same: The destruction of the white race. It's self-defeating, of course, because it means their own destruction as well, but they don't look that far ahead. They understand only that it is the white male who impedes the development of utopia, the utopia they see themselves enjoying with their colored brethren.

All organized Liberaldom took the time after the South Carolina shooting to warn, not black America, not brown America, not yellow America, but only white America, of racism. But if you're filming a version of *It's a Wonderful Life* and it's the white Europeans who are left out of the history of America, what would we see? The liberals tell us we would see paradise. Isn't white America called "paradise destroyed"? I don't see things as the liberals do; they tell us that America and all the European nations will become paradisiacal states once the white man

disappears. America is further along the utopian path than the other European nations, and what do we see in America? Is it really paradise? Far from it. The American nation resembles hell, because white pietas has been called racism and banned from the anti-nation called the United States. In reality it is only white pietas – white people's love of their kith and kin – that elevated the white race above the cruel nature religions of the colored heathen and the techno-barbarian liberals. If that European pietas, which is quickly fading, ever completely disappears, it won't be paradise that we will be looking at. We will be looking at Satan's kingdom on earth, the exact opposite of His kingdom come.

In just the short span of fifty years, the face of all the European nations has changed more drastically than in the past 1,000 years. And that is because the Satanism of liberty, equality, and fraternity joined with technology to give the European people a new religion. I repeat myself, but this bears repeating: It is the new catechism that we who are old have had crammed down our throats and those who are young have absorbed into their blood streams: The Father – unfettered reason; The Son – the Negro; and The Holy Ghost – science. The French Revolution in France only partially succeeded, because unfettered reason did not have the full support of the Son and the Holy Ghost. The French Revolution in Santa Domingo was a more complete revolution than the one in France proper, because the Son – the negro, was invoked. But it was the 20th century Jacobins in America and throughout the European world who brought the French Revolution to completion by fully integrating the scientific Holy Ghost with the other two parts of the unholy trinity. (1) In the 20th century scientific thinking was equated with modern ideas about the Father and the Son. Fundamentalist became a label of derision, and progressive and scientific became signs of grace, the grace of an enlightened intellect.

The antique European sheds a tear and makes a silent prayer for the murdered negroes of South Carolina. But he does not join in the universal mourning parties, because they are part of the anti-white, anti-Christian festivities of the modern world. Negro worship does not benefit the white or the black, because the secularized triune faith, with the negro as its centerpiece, has brought us to a world where "humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep." White people are the main victims in such a world, because Satan hates the Christ-bearing people most of all. But the murders in the South Carolina church demonstrate that Satan does not concern himself with the collateral damage from his attack on Christ's people. Once the blood red tide is loosed, there is no guarantee that it will only strike white Christians and spare the liberals and their negro minions. That we stay connected to our own people, loving them in and through Christ, is what is forever needful. Everything else is from Satan, no matter what pretty ribbon of multi-culturalism it comes dressed up in. +

(1) The Russian, Marxist revolution was not as complete and total as the modern American and European revolutions, because the Russians, despite Trotsky's recommendations, never incorporated the negro savior into their system as fully as the Western nations did. Things are not always as they seem. While American and European "conservatives" were warning about the dangers of communism in Russia they failed to confront the more advanced Jacobinism in the Western nations. Now it is upon us and the conservative quislings are either dead or else joining with their liberal brethren in condemnation of white racism.

The Final Outrage

July 4, 2015

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: H. V. Morton



Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. – *Luke 17: 28-30*

The United States is the type of nation that all other European nations are trying to become: A militantly anti-Christian, anti-European, Babylonian nation with the negro serving as its mystical center. The recent Supreme Court ruling that raised the sin of sodomy to the same level as Christian marriage was the final step in a process that began with race-mixing. It's striking, not as a matter of mere intellectual curiosity, but as a horrific story of hell and damnation, how closely the United States and her European toadies have followed the same path as the damned in the Bible. The modern Europeans have chosen to build their civilization on the two sins, miscegenation and sodomy, that the Lord God chose to come down to earth to condemn.

And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.

And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.

And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.

Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. – Genesis 11: 9

And lest we forget, our Lord also had something to say to the gay community:

And the Lord said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous;

I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.

Of course we know the rest. Our Lord could not find ten just men, and Sodom was destroyed. Yet the anti-nation called the United States celebrates sodomy. "I'm not gay, I'm ecstatic!" a triumphant sodomite sign proclaimed.

Let us pray, we few, the European remnant, for each other and our loved ones, that we not be counted with the Babylonians and the sodomites. "We were among them, O, Lord, but we were not of them."

Some of the Christian pastors – at least they preach in buildings advertised as Christian – have expressed their concern over the legalization of sodomy. But really, aren't those pastors like the girl who says 'Yes, yes, yes,' at every liberty taken and suddenly says, 'No' before the final liberty. You can't militantly support miscegenation, women's 'reproductive freedom,' and democratic multi-culturalism, and then suddenly say, 'We will not have homosexual marriage elevated to the same status as marriage between a man and a woman.' This homosexual blasphemy is not an aberration, it is the logical consequence of allowing liberals to restructure Christian Europe in the image of Satan.

Conservatives blather on about the economy, telling us that we are becoming like socialist Greece – a reverse pyramid society. That is true. But can you have a stable economy in Babylon? Of course you can't. A country with an anti-Christian mystique will have a satanically based economy in which the wicked prosper and the innocent suffer.

The liberals' utopia is based on the age-old mysticism of all the nature religions. In those religions the devotee's personality is absorbed by the deity, who is an impersonal deity that can inspire the type of ecstasy that our modern, sexually-depraved perverts speak of, but such mysticism cannot touch the deeper regions of the human heart where charity and love abide. It was only the historical Jesus, the Christ of the Gospels, who inspired the mysticism that St. Paul writes about in 1st Corinthians 13. The Christian Europeans practiced the Christ-centered mysticism of St. Paul, in which human hearts, through the grace of God, are able to commune with God in and through their people. ([1](#))

In the 20th century, many debunking theologians claimed that St. Paul had perverted the teachings of Christ. The same theologians said that the European people, prior to the coming of the 20th century theologians, had also perverted the teachings of Christ. But such is not the case. St. Paul's mystic vision, his poetic, is in perfect harmony with the Gospels. And the collective vision of the European people, their poetic mystique prior to the 20th century, is in complete harmony with the poetic of the Gospels and St. Paul. On this issue – is Jesus Christ, true God and true man, at the center of the antique European culture, or is He not? – rests the entire fate of the human race. If Christ is at center of the antique European culture, He should be rediscovered, through adherence to the mystical core of that ancient culture, rediscovered by the people who have been enjoined to carry the Christ Child on their shoulders through the rivers of modernity. If the European Christ was a false Messiah, then let Babylon reign supreme. There is no middle ground. The Babylonians have triumphed, because of their victory in the Christian churches over the poetical-mystical Christianity of St. Paul. Intellectual, theological Christianity is incapable of combating the mystique of Babylon. The 'ecstasy' that comes from absorption by the gods of blood and perverted sex cannot be overcome by referring the ecstatic gods' devotees to page 281 of the *Summa Theologica* or page 999 of Calvin's *Institutes of the Christian Religion*. But the ecstatic cults can be destroyed by a spirit and blood connection to the Christ of history, who can be known and loved through a heartfelt connection to the European people of long ago.

The Babylonians have spent over a century trying to cut the Europeans off from their past, because without that connection there is no means to judge between Babylon and Christianity. It's not possible to be connected to Walter Scott's Europe, which contains the God-man at its mystical core, and also be connected to modern Babylon. That is why old Europe and the men and women who dwelt there only exist as case studies for the people of Babylon, and their whole civilization, their movement from darkness to the light, is seen as a cautionary tale of what can happen when white people with a faith in the historical Jesus and a faith in their destiny as the Christ-bearing people are allowed to live unopposed by the forces of Babylon. A racist, sexist, homophobic society is created. You can't compromise with the Babylonians. The halfway-house Christians politely ask if they can take a few Christian remnants into their new Babylonian house, but why should the Babylonians make any concessions to a people who no longer believe they are a people and who no longer believe their God is the true God who cannot be blended with other gods? A blended race is not a race, and a blended god is not God.

The Roman Catholic church and the mainstream Protestant churches are scared to death of the Babylonian liberals. If they oppose this final outrage, the legalization of sodome marriages, they might lose their tax exempt status. Horrors of Horrors! – No tax exempt status to preach the new blended Christianity, which combines Babylonian negro worship with Christianity and comes up with the most anti-Christian mixture ever conceived. It would be a blessing if the churches were denied tax exempt status, because it might force them to seek solace in the historical Christ instead of filthy lucre. But it is not likely that the liberals will deny the churches their tax-exempt status so long as the churches support the blending of negro worship and Christianity; it is in the best interests of the liberals to maintain the churches' support. As they stand now, the churches are like brothels; they allow a man to keep his Babylonian wife while occasionally dallying with his Christian mistress.

Never doubt for a moment that the first outrage, miscegenation, has led to this final outrage. Immediately upon the announcement of the Supreme Court's decision in favor of sodomy, the Babylonian apologists took over the media. A 'conservative' talk show host asked his liberal cousin if it was right that a private businessman with religious objections to homosexual weddings should have to cater a homosexual wedding. "Of course they have to," the liberal asserted, "because once people claimed that race-mixing was against their religion and refused to serve mixed race couples and people of color." Ah! There it is. Once the race barrier is broken, then all of what the liberals call 'barriers' – and we call channels of grace – must be destroyed.

There is no such thing as religious freedom in Liberaldom. You are only free to practice your religion to the extent your religion supports liberal values. And this is how it should be: A Christian people should not support miscegenation, abortion, negro worship, and sodomy any more than a liberal government should support segregation, the sanctity of unborn life, the white race, and the Christian marriage bond. But the children of darkness are wiser than the children of light. The liberals know who their enemies are, while the Christians do not. But then that is because the Christians are not Christian; they have been absorbed by the negro gods of Liberaldom. And that is a terrible thing, because Christ's rule is tempered by mercy, whereas the rule of the negro is devoid of mercy.

All of the Babylonian ideals were ready and waiting to be implemented during my childhood and early manhood, but they hadn't been put into their iron-clad place yet. I grew up in a segregated town and had only a vague abstract notion of homosexuality and abortion. Now there is no commercial break from the unrelenting, soul-killing, iron-clad rule of the liberals. (2) If you don't call on Him who saves every second of your existence, and become an ironclad, uncompromising, counter-revolutionary of the spirit, you will be absorbed by the liberal gods.

For me, it is the image of William Tell in the lead picture of this article that represents the counter-revolutionary spirit that the European people need. His task was much easier than ours; he had only one tyrant to deal with. But his spirit should be our spirit. He stood against the moral tyranny of those who would destroy Christian innocence and charity. He hoped others would follow in his stead, but if they didn't he was prepared to stand alone in defense of his European hearth fire. I see Tell's image before me, defiant and European to the last, as the final piece of the liberals' Babylonian kingdom of hell on earth is being put in place. Surely it is better to stand with Tell at the mountain pass than to be enveloped and then consumed by the gods of Liberaldom? +

(1) H. V. Morton once remarked that Dickens' characters were not exaggerations. Christian Europe produced such distinct personalities. Now we seldom see Europeans with distinct personalities, because the heathen gods absorb the human personality into one inhuman refuse heap.

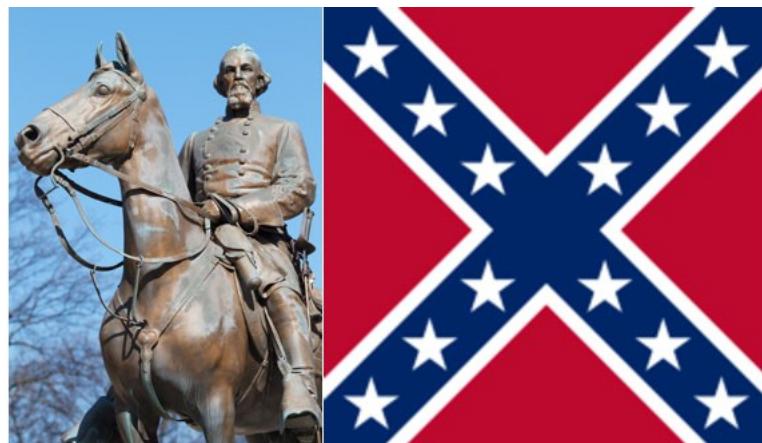
(2) It's appropriate that the Supreme Court's decision came so close to the July 4th holiday. Let Babylonians rejoice! Let us celebrate the eradication of every last vestige of Christian humanity. Every 4th of July, and most particularly on this 4th, I recall Shakespeare's words: "It is a tale, told by an idiot, Full of sound and fury, signifying nothing." Precisely. At the heart of the American Babylonian mystique is nothingness, the nothingness of a people who have forsaken their people and their God.

Defending Christ's Image in Man

July 11, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



I believe in, and honour, all those time-hallowed values and factors which have led us to greatness in the past, and which if retained will guarantee the greatness of our posterity. For unless we maintain the highest standards of which we are capable we shall not survive except as the slaves of others, which in the long run would mean that we would not survive at all.

Thus I am indeed biased and prejudiced. I am indeed a 'racist' and in fundamental matters an extremist.

-Anthony Jacob

Donald Trump reminds me of Vladimir Putin; he is not a Christian warrior, but at least he is a Roman pagan. His statement that he was sick of illegal Mexican aliens coming into our country and committing crimes was really quite a mild and justified protest. The reaction to Trump's remark was quite telling. Jeb Bush, brother of George Porgie, who ran under the threat, "If you think this country's bad off now, just wait till I get through with it," quickly condemned Trump, in Spanish no less. And the Hindu from Louisiana, Tiptoe-through-the-Tulips Jindal, also condemned Trump, as did the entire anti-white media and various Aztec organizations scattered throughout multicultural America.

Of course all the hysteria, feigned and real, over Trump's remark was quite predictable, but let's look at it closely. Why would anyone object to stopping illegal Mexican immigrants from coming into the United States? Time and time again we hear of white people being murdered by Mexicans who have been sent back over the border for crimes committed on American soil, and who have then returned and kept returning until they kill a white American. Once is too much, but the sons of Montezuma kill whites as wanton boys kill flies. So again, what does this tell us about the people who think Trump's statement was 'outrageous'? It tells us that those people want whites to be exterminated by whatever means possible. Isn't the slaughter of whites by homegrown negroes enough? Must we invite Aztecs in to help the negroes? "Yes," the liberals tell us, "we must."

Let's play pretend. If the United States was a real nation, consisting of white Christians, we would declare war on Mexico and treat the invading army of Mexicans as all invading armies should be treated. We would repel the invasion by whatever means necessary. Nor would we permit fifth-column Mexicans to remain in our nation. A sane Christian policy of self-defense, the defense of our own people, would infuriate devout anti-Christian, anti-white zealots such as Pope Francis, who wants the United States and the people of Italy to have no borders while he reserves the right to demand border control in Argentina, but a Christian Goth should expect fierce opposition from liberal jackals such as Pope Francis.

It was the belief of our European ancestors that a man didn't leave the pagan virtues behind when he became a Christian. The pagan loved his own, the people of his own hearth and his own race, and the Christian also loved his kith and kin, but with a greater intensity than the pagan, because now the European's love was connected to the God-Man. That they loved their people became the mark of the Christian Europeans. The new mark of the modern Europeans is that they hate their own kind with a passionate intensity and love the murderous colored stranger, because he hates what the modern Europeans hate – the white race.

The terrible, terrible aspect of every white confrontation with Aztecs, blacks, Asians, and red Indians is that white people are always on the defensive, always on their knees pleading to be released from the charge of racism. But what does this charge of racism mean? And why are the colored races never guilty of racism? The charge of racism amounts to this: White people once considered themselves the Christ-bearing people. They built Christian civilizations in Europe and even took the cross of Christ to the colored lands and built Christian civilizations in heathendom. The colored heathens rejected the light, but they were forced to comply with many of the ethical demands of the white man's religion, because the white man was stronger than the colored heathen. Then the reptilian creatures of darkness emerged – the liberals. The liberals joined with the colored heathen to destroy the white race. Thus far only the liberals and the colored heathens are fighting in this war of evil against the good, which is the reason it is more of a slaughter than a war.

The Confederate flag "controversy" is a classic case in point of white capitulation. The defenders of the flag say, "We are not racist; the flag is part of our heritage." But that is not a defense. If your heritage is evil, you have no right to your heritage, and the liberals insist that the white Southerners' heritage is evil, because it is 'racist'. And it is racist! The flag represents the white, Christian European at his best, fighting for white, Christian civilization.

This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own; "in the land which the Lord his God had given him;" founded upon the white man's code of ethics, in sympathy with the white man's traditions and ideals. Our forefathers of the forties and fifties and sixties believed that if slavery were abolished, unless the black race were deported from the American States, there would result in the Southern States just such a condition of things as had resulted in San Domingo, in the other West Indies Islands, and in the so-called republics of Central and South America – namely, a hybridization of races, a lowering of the ethical standard, and a degradation, if not loss, of civilization. . . . Slavery is lost, and it is certainly well for us and the public – perhaps for the negro – that it has been lost. But the real cause for which our ancestors fought back of slavery, and deemed by them to be bound up in the maintenance of slavery – to wit, the supremacy of the white man's civilization, the supremacy of the ethical culture, which had been gradually built up through countless generations – has not been lost.

[John Sharp Williams](#)

Now it has been lost. And begging the enemy to stop calling you racist is no way to regain that which is lost. The Europeans are guilty before God of every sin under the sun, except the one sin they are accused of, racism. Is it racist to bring charity and mercy to colored heathens who never even had a name for charity and mercy? Is it racist to subdue the colored heathen and defend your own people, and the weaker element among the colored heathen, against the onslaught of the merciless, colored savages? Yes, it is racist, if racist means placing that charity-of-honor culture of the white man above and against the savagery of colored heathendom and the darkness of liberaldom. Now that white Christian 'racists' no longer rule the world, is it a better place for whites? Is it a better place for the colored heathen? We are told by all the powers that be in church and state that this modern Babylon is a better world than Christian Europe. But there is a huge lie at the center of the liberals' apologia pro Babylon: "Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name." The antique Europeans, for all their sins, which we do not deny, knew His name, and the modern Babylonians and their colored demigods do not know His name. From whence comes deliverance from evil if we do not know Him? It does not come, which is why evil reigns supreme in the countries that once constituted Christian Europe.

In the state of Oregon, an Evangelical Christian couple who owned a small bakery were fined \$135,000 by a federal judge for refusing to cater a lesbian wedding. There are plenty of other bakeries that would cater such a weeding, but the lesbians chose that particular bakery because it is not enough that Satan is triumphant, we are all required to celebrate his triumph. The sodomites, the Mexicans, the negroes, and all the colored people of the world are welcome at the liberals' white-hating festival. And white Christians must attend, they must celebrate their own demise and watch the last remnants of Christian Europe be consumed in the liberals' multicultural bonfire.

Long before the RICO Act went into effect, which made it illegal to protest in front of abortion clinics, I used to protest outside abortuaries. Once when I was attempting to convince a black woman not to abort her baby, she cursed me by calling me a f—— European. What a perceptive curse! Of course I am a European; to truly live up to the European honor code is all in all. Abortion is legal, Mexicans invade our nation, Moslems invade Europe, the Battle Flag has been removed from the Southern state capitals, homosexuality is celebrated, and the negro has replaced Christ, because the European is afraid to be a European. He acts as if his whiteness is a shameful disease, something he must atone for by divesting himself of his whiteness by betraying his race – through negro worship and the complete and total surrender to every anti-white -ism that comes along.

The new age of liberalism is upon us. It is no longer a time for dialogue. The liberals dialogued when abortion was illegal, when there were still some segregated neighborhoods, and when homosexuals didn't have the same rights as heterosexuals. Now the liberal perverts and their colored minions no longer dialogue; they attack and destroy. These monsters can only be fought; they cannot be reasoned with or voted away. One thing is needful: Europeans must stop being reasonable, they must stop apologizing for being white. Every evil under the sun has come upon the European people, because we abandoned our European hearth fire for a multicultural theory of liberty, equality, and fraternity. There is no liberty when the negro replaces Christ, there is only a merciless negro-worshipping tyranny. There is no fraternity when the European leaves his white brethren to whore after the colored barbarians. And there is no such thing as equality; some are always more equal. It should be the Christ-bearing people who are more equal, because their reign has that charity of honor at its core while the reign of the techno-barbarian liberals and the colored barbarians has Satan at its core.

The white European has had a reverse Pelagianism thrust upon him. The liberals are without sin because they have renounced whiteness. And the colored barbarians are without sin because they are not white. The white man should never respond to his instincts, the liberals command, because the white man's instincts are evil. Instinctual whites go into black churches and gun down blacks, that is what instinctual whites do. Liars! Prejudiced white men, the white men whose white Christian instincts were bred-in-the-bone, built Christian Europe, and they are the only type of men who can stand athwart the mountain pass and defy the Babylonian armies of Satan.

The Europeans of long ago knelt at the foot of the cross and wept. They wept and they believed. With "By the Cross We Conquer" as their rallying cry they conquered the world for Christ. And now we witness fiendish Satanists such as Pope Francis apologizing for the Europeans of old who carried the cross of Christ to the heathen lands. Such anti-Christians who denigrate our one sure link to Christ, the antique Europeans, are in league with the negro-worshipping liberals, the sodomites, and the colored barbarians. And the one unifying passion in the seemingly disparate group of whoremongers and barbarians is a hatred for the incarnate Lord Jesus Christ. With every papal denunciation of the Christian Europeans, with every gay wedding, with every negro-worshipping festival, and with every new Aztec murder of whites, the unholy coalition cheers, because they have thrown another spear into Christ's body. [Burke](#) said it best:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures Him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces His image in man.

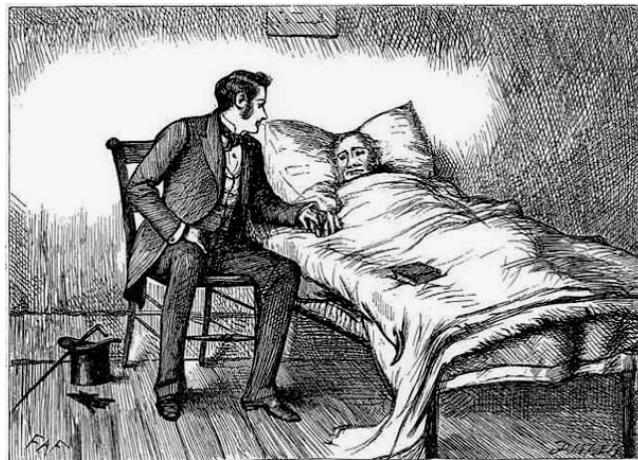
The defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces of His image in man will only increase until the Christian Goths return to their ancestral home and cleanse it of Satan's minions. Should the defense of Christian Europe be left to courageous pagans such as Vladimir Putin and Donald Trump? For shame. It is time for Christian Europeans to rise and ride. +

The Cure for Racistaphobia

July 18, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Liberalism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens



Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day: —*Psalm 91: 5*

The Alcoholics Anonymous organization has always insisted that there can be no recovery from alcoholism until the alcoholic steps forward and admits he or she is an alcoholic. The modern, white grazer must step forward and make a similar admission about his racistaphobia before he can start the long road back to spiritual health. He must stand up and say, “I am racistaphobic. I live in constant terror of being called a racist, and I am incapable of fighting back against any white group that threatens to, or does, call me a racist. I am also incapable of fighting in thought, word, or deed any colored person or group of colored persons. I admit I am helpless against racistaphobia, and I need the aid of a Higher Power to rid me of my racistaphobia.” That admission, or something like it, is what we need to hear from white grazers before anything wonderful can happen to white people.

If you've ever had a family member or close friend addicted to alcohol you know how heart-wrenching it can be. They have many good and humane qualities, but those good and humane qualities are being washed away in alcohol. So it is with the racistaphobic white grazer. He is not an outright liberal; he has not, like the liberal, lost all semblance of humanity, but his good qualities are being destroyed by his racistaphobia. The South Carolina whites who protested the trashing of the Battle Flag are a sad case in point of white racistaphobia. “Heritage, not race,” they asserted. But isn't the Southern peoples' stand against the Haitization of the South the most important part of their heritage? Of course it is. So there is no getting around it: If you want to truly defend what the flag stands for, you must defend the segregated, Christian civilization that the white Southerners fought and died for. Otherwise you are simply someone who likes to get warm and fuzzy over vague platitudes such as “heritage, not race.” If that is your desire, then you don't need the Battle Flag; your flag should be a big picture of a slab of jello.

This racistaphobia is not just a disease of white Southerners or even just of American whites. It is a disease that has infected every white man, woman, and child in every white nation. And the disease has only infected white people; no person of color ever contracts racistaphobia. One of the peculiarities of the disease is that the man suffering from it generally doesn't even know he has it. The disease sinks into the spine and heart and makes a man unable to stand upright and feel normal human sentiments, but still it remains undetected because the disease protects itself by making spinelessness and heartlessness seem normal to the man who has racistaphobia.

We do know the cause of racistaphobia and we know the cure, albeit very few victims of racistaphobia ever seek to be cured. The cause of racistaphobia is theological Christianity and the cure is European Christianity. Human beings see life “feelingly”; their organ of sight is the heart, not the head. When the churchmen made the great shift, when they shifted the European's vision to the analytical eye of the mind, away from the visionary eye of the heart, the Europeans began to look at existence askew. They gradually became unable to love the good, because they couldn't *see* the good. Instead of loving God in and through their people, the Europeans became acquainted with a *concept* of God as seen through the mind of the theologian of their choice. Many white grazers – probably most of them – no longer even attend church, but the damage has been done; they don't see existence feelingly as St. Paul and the antique Europeans did. They have made existence a second-hand intellectual concept. For white people, words are not connected to their souls; they are only tools of the intellect. When an antique European said he loved his people, he meant a very specific people, the people of his own race and his own house. When a modern European says he loves his people, he means he loves a universal concept of “a people.” And his love is slanted toward colored people, because the intellectuals, whom the white man is in the habit of obeying ever since his church-going days, only recognize people of color as genuine people.

No matter what issue comes up in the white man's life, his frame of reference is the great, disembodied minds of the liberals. He makes his plea for respect for his heritage, for tax relief, for the right to exist, in terms he thinks will please the liberals. So he always makes the case for himself in racistaphobic terms. Welfare is bad because it breaks up black families; the Battle Flag represents heritage, not race; we need tax relief so that small black businesses can thrive...and on it goes. The liberals have changed the European's heartfelt vision of Christ to a mind-forged vision of a utopia consecrated to the negro gods and the lesser demigods of color. Just as the antique Christians were enjoined to love their God with all their heart, mind, and soul, and to love their neighbor as themselves, the modern Europeans, the racistaphobic Europeans, love their negro gods with all their heart, mind, and soul, and love all colored people as their neighbors, lest the great liberal minds, the conscience of the modern Europeans, should call them racists.

A few years back I saw a back issue from the 1970s of a neopagan, white nationalist magazine. After some black riot somewhere, the magazine's editors had predicted that white people were beginning to wake up. Fast forward to our present day, and the same type of white nationalists are saying the same thing: “White people are beginning to wake up.” But of course white people aren't beginning to wake up. It is 40 years later and white people are still racistaphobic. The logical conclusion is that white people will remain racistaphobic, and as a result they will die out as a distinct race. But there is one caveat to that logical conclusion. The ‘wake-up’ boys are part of the problem. They appeal only to the minds of the racistaphobic whites. Let's take a typical atrocity story – the New Orleans Superdome debacle, for instance. The ‘wake-up’ boys call the attention of racistaphobic whites’ to the blacks’ subhuman behavior during the course of the flood, and racistaphobic whites deplore the blacks’ behavior. But when the wake-up boys go further and try to make a point about the savagery of the black barbarians, warning bells go off in the racistaphobic whites’ heads. “It's not all blacks,” and, “Anyone would have done the same thing in their place,” takes control, and the racistaphobic whites remain unchanged. They will remain racistaphobic no matter how many black atrocities occur, because they see existence through the eyes of the intellect, not the heart. They will never see life as their white Christian ancestors saw life, and without that vision, racistaphobia can never be cured.

It must be stressed that there is a cure for racistaphobia, but the cure does not lie in an enlightened intellect; the cure lies in the visionary heart – the heart that perceives truth and acts according to the truth it sees, undistilled and unprocessed by philosophy and theology. All whites are born into a racistaphobic world. A few fight through their racistaphobia and become Europeans again, but very few do so, because of the dual nature of the enlightened-mind trap. Every European with racistaphobia is a victim of the enlightened-mind trap in the university or in the church. The appeal in both institutions is to the pride of intellect: “Only primitive people, people with inferior minds, believe in prejudices stemming from race.” This is the constant refrain we hear, but it only applies to white people. Colored people, who are ‘so authentic,’ can and should be prejudiced, because their prejudices are ... ‘well, they are so organic.’

In every organized church there is a division in the church between the more conservative element and the more liberal element – there are the fundamentalists vs. the mainstream Protestants and the Catholic mainstream vs. the traditionalists. But this is a false dichotomy; the seemingly divergent groups are united in the one essential – essential, that is, for the continuance of liberalism. What binds the groups together is theological Christianity. Neither liberal Protestant or fundamentalist Protestant, or liberal Catholic or traditionalist Catholic is connected to the body of Christ, because they are not connected to the people who loved Him, the antique Europeans. If the church of Christ is only a ‘this world only’ church, like the type

of church fashioned by the Pharisees who were condemned by Christ, then we are worse off than the heathens of color. We have no God of our ascending race. But if the church consists of those who love much, then we have a God who can sustain us against the racistophobia that terrorizes the white race.

This spiritual pestilence of the soul, this racistophobia, governs every aspect of the white man's life. When an atrocity occurs against the white race, liberals always respond with an attack on the white or group of whites who express either outrage against the colored perpetrator of the atrocity or concern for the white victim of the atrocity. But racistophobia still infects the second group of whites, those whites who express outrage and concern. These whites immediately form discussion groups to decide 'what must be done' to prevent future atrocities. All well and good? No, it is not well and good. Their first order of business is always to denounce racism: 'We don't hate all Mexicans,' or, 'We condemn violence, not blacks...' We've all heard the constant refrain of the racistophobic white who will never, never face the racial issue head on. While the liberals and the colored hordes scream death to all whites, the racistophobic whites spend all their time explaining why they don't hate liberals and colored people; they are not racists, you know. And does it ever work? No, it doesn't. No matter how much the white man fawns, begs, and appeases, he is found guilty of racism. And for that crime, he must die.

What would it take to hear that the white man, like Tiny Tim, "did not die"? It would take one white man and then another and then another to break with the academy and the church. (1) The European poets of the Christian era, separate from the academy, speak to us from a better world, His world. And the holy Scriptures, separate from the theological experts in the organized churches, touch our hearts and souls and make us feel that we are in communion with Christ. Those two sources of revelation, intimate contact with our people, the people who loved much, and intimate contact with our Lord, through His word, unadulterated by theological experts, are the cure for racistophobia. (2) The repudiation must be complete. Academy and church hate the European people and their God. They must die if the European people are ever going to walk away from that sickness unto death, racistophobia, and live life abundantly as our Christian people of long ago once lived. +

(1) It's probably a sign of old age that I find myself citing things as recent that happened many years ago. So with that caveat, let me say that I 'recently' read a blog by Wheeler McPherson in which he related how he had left "Churchianity" behind in order to be closer to Christ. What a wonderful way to describe one's progress away from the church-induced stupor of racistophobia to the light of His Europe!

(2) Once every year and a half, approximately, I read *Great Expectations* with my family. My children know my two favorite scenes in the book and they always, quite generously, allow me to read those scenes, which are close together near the end of the novel. The first scene is when Pip, having found out what truly makes one a gentleman, promises to be loyal to Magwitch:

"Lookee here, dear boy," said he. "It's best as a gentleman should not be knowed to belong to me now. Only come to see me as if you come by chance alonger Wemmick. Sit where I can see you when I am swore to, for the last o' many times, and I don't ask no more."

"I will never stir from your side," said I, "when I am suffered to be near you. Please God, I will be as true to you as you have been to me!"

And then there is the final death bed scene:

With a last faint effort, which would have been powerless but for my yielding to it and assisting it, he raised my hand to his lips. Then, he gently let it sink upon his breast again, with his own hands lying on it. The placid look at the white ceiling came back, and passed away, and his head dropped quietly on his breast.

Mindful, then, of what we had read together, I thought of the two men who went up into the Temple to pray, and I knew there were no better words that I could say beside his bed, than "O Lord, be merciful to him a sinner!"

In those two passages we see what the miracle of Europe was all about. The truths of Scripture entered the blood of the European people. The modern churchmen bid us look to the natural, authentic creatures of nature, the colored tribesmen. Don't do it. Look back to the only truly 'authentic' people, the antique Europeans, and the only truly 'authentic' civilization, Christian Europe.

The Inhumanity of Utopian Europe

July 25, 2015

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Ian Maclarens



Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism; and in Atheism; and it has jointed to those principles, a body of systematick manners which secures their operation. – Edmund Burke

When Russell Kirk published his book *The Conservative Mind*, Thomas Molnar commented that Kirk had proved there were conservative-minded American thinkers but had failed to show they had any major impact on the American experiment in government. A point well taken. At every critical juncture in the early days of the American republic, it was the secular utopians, men like Franklin, Madison, Jefferson, and Marshall, who won the day and put their radical imprint on the American government. The ideals of liberty, fraternity, and equality were lurking in the foundational documents of the U. S. Constitution. And there was great bloodshed; when the radical nature of the American government was challenged in the 1860s, the savage god of the utopians unleashed his terrible swift sword on the offending white, Christian Europeans of the South. The war cry then, as it is now, was liberty, equality, and fraternity!

It's significant that Lafayette, a supporter of the American Revolution, also became part of France's regicide government. There are many differences in style between the two revolutions, the American and the French, but the spirit animating both is the same: it is the spirit of the archangel Satan.

The presence of an anti-Christian, anti-white nation such as the United States on the world stage would not be as great a danger to white people as it now is if the other European nations were not smaller caricatures of the United States. Every European nation is following in the United States' footsteps, at slightly slower rates, because they have more traditional European baggage to throw away before they completely succumb to liberalism and its attendant negro-worship.

It is always encouraging when a European nation objects to any part of the American liberal agenda. For instance, I don't think Russia is a sound nation – they did not, as Solzhenitsyn had hoped, reject the materialism of western democracy when Russia abandoned communism. And they have some negro athletes (one is too many) on their sport teams, but they did issue a counter-attack against America's deification of sodomy. It was quite heartening to see Russia celebrating the traditional family over and against America's satanic family ideal.

I wish more European nations would resist American influence, but unfortunately the hatred of the white race and the Christian religion is a virulent virus throughout the European world. It will take more than the removal of the United States to kill the virus; it will take a resurgence of the European spirit, which is undemocratic, militantly Christian, and unapologetically racist.

It grates on conservatives' nerves (something akin to fingernails scraping a blackboard) when you suggest that America was not founded on sound conservative principles, but isn't it quite obvious that our negro-worshipping, sodomite present is linked to our anti-European past? What was good in America had nothing to do with the democratic idea men, but it had everything to do with the European Americans who brought the faith and ethos of the white man to America. What binds together the American Revolution, the French Revolution, and all the European revolutions that have followed in their wake is a commitment to an utopian, democratic future that has no place for a God with a heart of flesh and for the people who championed that God. What Butterfield admired in the English, prior to the 20th century, was that they went into the future holding onto the strings of their past. Once England followed the American and French example and cut those strings connecting Britons to their past, the sacred soil of Christian Britain became fertile ground for the growth of Islam and negro-worship. Without a past, we are not a people, we are just abstractions of the liberals' utopian minds, to be eliminated whenever it becomes politically expedient to do so. And the expedient moment has come: The white man must be eliminated, to make way for a new people purged of the sins of the past and ready to live and strive in the new non-Christian, non-white utopia of the future.

One of the great movies of all time is *The Wonderful World of the Brothers Grimm*. The movie tells the story of Wilhelm Grimm's (the 'impractical' brother) efforts to preserve the folk tales of his people that we now call Grimms' fairy tales. At one point in the film, Wilhelm becomes sick and appears to be dying. He has collected the tales in his head, but he has not yet put them on paper. All the people from Fairyland – Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs, Little Red Riding Hood, Hansel and Gretel, Cinderella, the Frog Prince, and so on – come before Wilhelm in a dream sequence and beg him not to die so that they will not die. On Wilhelm Grimm rests the fate of fairytale Europe.

Wilhelm does not die and the fairytale people live to nourish and enrich the lives of all true Europeans. But their fate, the fairytale people of Europe, once again hangs in the balance. Such folk tales, many that go all the way back to the time of our Lord and perhaps were told by Him when He trod on England's green and pleasant land, came from the lifeblood of the European people. If Europeans no longer believe they are a people with a great spiritual heritage, they will not preserve their past; they will be Undines, resembling human beings on the outside, but inwardly lacking an animating spirit. Our Lord told us that unless we become as little children we will not inherit the kingdom of heaven. The fairytale comprehension of life, represented by those tales collected by Wilhelm Grimm, is all in all. Only the Europeans saw that it was not tragic that "we are such stuff as dreams are made on." A dream that is grounded in the visionary heart of the European people is a dream that brings us face to face with our Lord on the road to Emmaus. "Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the Scriptures?" Of course the apostles' hearts burned within them, and did not our hearts burn within us when we lived in fairytale Europe rather than in multicultural Europe?

The churches have played their part, a diabolical part, in killing the European people. "Of what use is a past when you have the anointed ones to tell you about God?" Of what use indeed? I think an antique European would answer the godded men with this question: "Of what use is the historical Jesus?" If you reject the flesh-and-blood people who loved Christ enough to build their civilization with Him as the incarnate center, then where is our incarnate Lord to be found? In the midst of multi-cultural Babylon? Or is He to be found in the future? If that is the case, then how do we differ from the Jews, who reject the historical Jesus but look to the future for the coming of their God. In Ian Maclarens's great masterpiece *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*, in the chapter called "His Mother's Sermon," a young minister returns to his hometown to preach his first sermon. He is filled with Biblical history and the latest university-taught theology, but right before he ascends the pulpit, he remembers the words of his mother on her death bed: "I canna see ye noo, John, but I know yir there, and I've just one other wish. If God calls ye to the ministry, ye'll no refuse, an' the first day ye preach in yir ain kirk, speak a gude word for Jesus Christ, an' John, I'll hear ye that day, though ye'll no see me, and I'll be

satisfied." As the bred-in-the-bone Europeans die out, the Europeans with hearts of flesh, there is no one left to "speak a gude word for Jesus Christ." Our fairy king of Europe has faded away and been replaced by the negro, because His people have faded away.

I don't know if Christ actually set foot on England's green and pleasant land when He was on this earth in the flesh. I like to think He did, but it is not of vital importance. The important thing is that He visited Europe in the flesh through His people. When we are in contact with His Europe we are just as close to Him as the apostles were on the road to Emmaus. I shall never forget the feeling of awe that came over me some forty years ago when I set foot in Britain. The land of Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens, an important part of His Europe! How can we allow such a fairytale land to become the haven of Muslims and colored heathens? Anthony Jacob, after listing the white man's considerable material accomplishments, proceeds to the real significance of the white man's accomplishment: It is white people who built the only civilization that was dedicated to something more than material things; their civilization was consecrated to Him who was and is the personal God above the material dust of this world. I can't read any classic work of European literature or view an old movie that depicts Europeans from long ago without feeling sadness and anger. Sadness because of that which is lost, anger against those who destroyed Christian Europe and against those Europeans who refuse to fight for its restoration. Our love of our people in and through the historical Christ built Christian Europe. A renewal of that love, for them and for Him, will restore Christian Europe.

I'm at the age when a lot of my friends and relatives are getting sick and dying. Last year, for instance, I watched my father die very slowly and inhumanely in the hands of an inhumane medical staff. And in the past four months I witnessed the slow painful death of a friend, who also suffered a needlessly painful death at the hands of an inhumane medical staff. My run-ins with modern "medicine" are not isolated incidents. There is an overwhelming testimony building, from liberals, grazers, and conservatives, that there is something monstrous going on in the medical profession. How could it be otherwise? The churches jettisoned the European Christ for a theory of God, and the liberals abandoned Him for the negro gods. The issue isn't whether there were or were not American conservative thinkers; both Kirk and Molnar were wrong when they placed thought, divorced from the lifeblood of the European people, at the center of existence. To hell with that kind of abstract existence. Everything in modern Liberaldom now consists of statistics. My father was past ninety; what difference did it make if he starved to death; at best he had one or two more years. My neighbor had two terminal diseases; what difference did it make if she was left in bed without any attempts to move her limbs except when her husband or friends came in to do it? What difference does anything make since we all are doomed to suffer and die? It used to make a difference to Christian Europeans. They did not make their humanity the slave of inhuman statistics. You prolong life, even if it is aged life, because He wants it that way. We all die, certainly, but doesn't it behoove Christian Europeans to place a Christ-like presence before the sick and dying so that they pass into eternity with Christ's name on their lips? The brave new world is upon us. When He is absent, because the Europeans have gone whoring after other gods, then all is "cheerless, dark, and deadly." The [Murdstones](#) are two of the most consummate villains in all of literature, and they commit all their villainies in the name of religion despite the fact that there is nothing Christian in their religion: "'And do you know I must say, sir,' he continued, mildly laying his head on one side, 'that I DON'T find authority for Mr. and Miss Murdstone in the New Testament?'" Indeed, that is the point. What is the liberals' and the church men's authority for this 'utopia' they have thrust upon us? It is certainly NOT His authority. And what other authority is there for a European?

Dostoyevsky's underground man said that, "A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key." Yes, but let us deepen the underground man's defiant declaration: "A man lives his whole life so that he can say, 'Into thy hands I commend my spirit, O Lord.' That is what being a European is all about. +

Black Voodoo Kills, White Faith Restores

August 1, 2015

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Rudyard Kipling



"Imray is back," said Strickland. "The question is, who killed Imray?"

- [Kipling](#)

With the possible exception of Russia, liberals hold the reins of power in every white nation even though they do not constitute the majority of whites in those nations. The majority of whites are grazers who support the liberals' rule but do not have quite the same worldview as the liberals. For instance – the liberals hate the white race with all their heart, mind, and soul, while the grazers love the white race as part of the great universal race of mankind. They truly believe there is no such thing as race. The members of the English Defense League and American conservatives are perfect examples of white grazers who facilitate the extermination of whites by their support of liberalism, but who are not officially in favor of it.

The white grazer has had his reality genes removed from his body. He is so used to the universalist pap slung at him by the churches and the universities that he is incapable of declaring that "the Emperor has no clothes." The liberals' empire stays intact, because the white grazer cannot see that the reality of life points us away from the racial universalism of a Coca-Cola commercial and toward the racial provincialism of Nathan Bedford Forrest. The consequence of the grazers' racial blindness has been the triumph of Babylon in the formerly white nations.

Rudyard Kipling once wrote a short story called "[The Recrudescence of Imray](#)." In that story, a kindly British officer makes the mistake of telling his loyal colored servant that his child is a handsome child. Ten days later, the child dies of a fever.

"Walking among us, his servants, he cast his eyes upon my child, who was four years old. Him he bewitched, and in ten days he died of the fever. My child!"

"What said Imray Sahib?"

"He said he was a handsome child, and patted him on the head; wherefore my child died. Wherefore I killed Imray Sahib in the twilight, when he came back from office and was sleeping. The heaven-born knows all things. I am the servant of the heaven-born."

Strickland looked at me above the rifle, and said, in the vernacular: "Thou art witness to this saying. He has killed."

Bahadur Khan stood ashen grey in the light of the one lamp. The need for justification came upon him very swiftly.

"I am trapped," he said, "but the offence was that man's. He cast an evil eye upon my child, and I killed and hid him. Only such as are served by devils," he glared at Tietjens, crouched stolidly before him, "only such could know what I did."

"It was clever. But thou shouldst have lashed him to the beam with a rope. Now, thou thyself wilt hang by a rope. Orderly!"

You can just dismiss Kipling's story as a racist fairytale, as the liberals and the grazers do, or you can attempt to deal with the reality of Kipling's story. And the reality is that the black race will never be able to coexist with the white race, unless they co-exist as completely segregated races with the white race as the dominant race. The reason for the incompatibility of the black and the white is to be found at the mystical core of the different races. Black mysticism is focused on superstition and magic; their deities prefer sacrifice to mercy. The black tribesmen propitiate their gods in order to get something from them, they do not love their gods; it is alien to their nature. And since it is not in their nature to love their gods, it is also not in their nature to love their fellow men. Men, like gods, exist for what they can get from them.

The white man is still regarded by blacks as a magical being, just as Imray was, the only difference between now and then is that white grazers no longer view blacks with the careful eye that Strickland viewed them with. The grazers have all become Imrays; they see blacks as pigmented whites who will respond to kindness just as whites respond to kindness and who will respond to cruelty and brutality just as whites respond to cruelty and brutality. Such a view of blacks, that they are merely black white men, has brought the white race to the verge of extinction. The liberals constantly tell the grazers that the whites have been terribly mean to blacks. The grazers believe the liberals, and they try to be extra kind to the blacks so they will be grateful for the kindness and treat the grazers well. But of course blacks do not understand kindness; they view it as weakness. Nor do they believe that the white man has ever done anything for black people. Blacks believe that whatever evil befalls them, even if there is no evidence of white culpability or white involvement in that evil, is the fault of the white man. Somehow the white man has magically harmed the black even when there is absolutely no evidence to suggest white guilt. Whites are evil sorcerers and conjurors, and blacks should kill evil sorcerers whenever possible. It is possible more than ever now for reasons the black man can't quite grasp. But he sees the power of the sorcerers lessening, and he kills them with impunity, while the grazers respond with more kindness. After all, no black would kill if all whites were kind. Such is the wisdom of the grazers, which they have been spoon-fed by the liberals.

We must ask why the grazers feel they must listen to the liberals. The obvious reason is that the liberals are in power in church and state, and the grazers respect the powerful. But the liberals could not maintain power without a moral rationale, because the white man, unlike the colored tribesman, must have a moral ethos with his religion.

The liberals' moral ethos is their racial universalism. They are not racists; therefore, they are morally superior to all Europeans who came before them. And the grazers accept the liberals' Apologia Pro Liberalism based on that one central point – the liberals are not racist and anyone who opposes them is racist. But by accepting racial universalism as the litmus test of morality, haven't the grazers turned themselves over to Satan? Why should post-Christian liberals have a right to rule? The recent Planned Parenthood tape in which PP employees were filmed in the midst of bartering the body parts of aborted babies is a perfect example of the absolute, satanic evil of liberalism. I hear pro-choice conservatives saying that now Planned Parenthood has gone too far. Why is now too far? Why is it okay to kill babies, but not okay to sell their body parts? The reason rests with the white man's past: because the white man was once Christian he must couch his post-Christian evil in moral terms. It is much easier to justify baby killing with liberal platitudes such as 'pro-choice' and 'a woman's right to choose,' if the baby killers do not sell the babies' body parts after they slaughter them. Montezuma ate the hearts of little babies, and the liberals sell their body parts, thus the white techno-barbarian and the colored barbarian are united in their Satanism. And yet the grazer is united to the liberal, because the liberal is not racist. Of course the liberal is not racist; the colored races won't condemn him for his satanic lust for human flesh and perverted sex because such is the ethos of the colored tribesmen as well.

When the white, pagan nationalists frame the white vs. colored argument in terms of "I'll respect your culture if you respect mine," they make a grave error. There has only ever been one culture worthy of respect, and that is the white, Christian culture of old Europe. If a white man truly respects the colored heathens' cultures and thinks he can grant them equal rights, he has given his own people their death warrants. The barbarians of color do not seek co-existence and mutual understanding, they want to conquer. Nor can the white Christian seek to be part of Liberaldom. The liberals want to destroy everything white and Christian. How can a white man co-exist with such people? And why would he want to co-exist with inhuman ghouls who kill babies and then sell their body parts on the open market? Christians do not kill indiscriminately like that man in South Carolina, but they do kill in defense of the weak and the helpless. Should Planned Parenthood and their abortion doctors, and every colored heathen who spills the blood of white innocents, be allowed to slaughter with impunity? Almighty God, forbid it. And the day may come – we cannot see God's grace working in human souls – when the liberal, techno-barbarians and the colored barbarians face a foe who fights in the name of the God of mercy against the Babylonian gods of sacrifice.

The church men are fond of telling us that God does not need the Europeans. Well, He doesn't need them in order to exist, but hasn't He chosen to reveal Himself through human channels of grace? If we discard the image of Christ that we see in the collective face of the Christian Europeans — and we have discarded that image — then to whom do we turn to see the image of Christ? The church scholars say we should turn to them. The negro worshippers tell us to look to the negro and the other colored tribesmen. But aren't we reaping the bloody harvest of such anti-Europeanism? The 20th century was the century when the Europeans abandoned God for technology and the negro 'Noble Savage.' What a grand century it was. And now, in the 21st century, a century in which Satan has been installed as the Europeans' supreme ruler, we have seen a new age of light, haven't we? No eleventh hour political movement will impede the onward march of Satan and his minions, because it is well past the eleventh hour. We have been plunged into the darkness of Babylon, where the ghosts of aborted, dismembered babies and the mutilated white victims of black savagery ask us why we did nothing to defend them. Our "racist" ancestors would have fought for them. The restoration of faith, hope, and charity in European lands starts at the racist core of our European soul. Only a white racist loves his own enough to fight for them. And only a white racist loves the image of God in man, an image he sees in the face of the antique Europeans, enough to make that discarded image of the one true God the cornerstone of a new Europe, built over the ruins of Babylon. To rage against the dying of His light in His people is the European's defiant answer to the Babylonian rulers of Liberaldom. +

The Nightmare vs. the Dream

August 8, 2015

Categories: Charity, Defense of the White Race, Good ground of Christian culture, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare, Thomas Nelson Page



'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,
The action of my life is like it, which
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

Shakespeare's *Cymbeline*

There are some Churchianity Christians that are withdrawing from the American vision of Satania, because of the disclosures about the Planned Parenthood employees' bartering of infants' body parts and the recent Supreme Court decision which mandates the equality of homosexual marriage with heterosexual marriage. What surprises me is that the Churchianity Christians have only just realized that Satan rules the European nations. It has been obvious for quite some time to those who have eyes to see and ears to hear. And even now, the halfway-housers do not have a clue as to how the march toward Satanism started or how they should fight against satanic liberalism.

The satanic march started with the attack on the white race, and it will only be stopped in its tracks by Europeans committed to defending the white race. Without our racial backbone, we have no spiritual strength. The non-racist Christians who have suddenly discovered that our society is satanic will soon return to Satanism in a different guise, if they don't stand and fight for their racial hearth fire.

The Christmas carol "O Come, O Come, Emmanuel," tells of a people languishing in darkness until the Son of God appeared, but that heathen darkness would have remained had not the European people come to believe that their dream of a fairy tale hero was true and their death-in-life existence without faith, hope, and charity, was a nightmare, destined to die, like all nightmares, when the evening shadows gave way to the day. The light died when Europeans began to hate their own people, and death-in-life darkness returned to Europe. We are no longer the people who have seen a great light, we are the people without light. And we must avoid, as we avoid the plague, intellectual Christians who will not tell us to reclaim our blood faith and cry "death to liberals," but will instead tell us to go back to pro-abort Aquinas and negro-worshipping Wesley and Wilberforce. It must be our people's faith that we go to for our strength, a faith that is strong, because it is "bred in the bone." Our ancient foe loves an intellectual faith, because he can make such a faith serve his purposes. The conservative Christians who feel disenfranchised by the baby-body-parts scandal and the deification of sodomy will ultimately reconcile with the liberals unless they make a complete break with them. And that complete break will necessitate a return to racist Europe. Until they become Goths, loving and hating with all their hearts, they will still belong to the liberals despite their disagreement over abortion and sodomy.

The mystery cults that were thriving in Asia Minor prior to the coming of Christ had different types of devotees. There were followers of Cybele and Mithras who stressed sexual excess and bloody sacrifice, and there were other devotees who stressed abstinence and nonviolence, but they all were followers of their various savior gods who had one thing in common: They were not personal saviors who had entered human history. This is the way it is today. The more conservative element of the New Age Utopian Christians might eschew sexual excess and infant sacrifice, but they will not invoke the historical Jesus, because their Christ is an ahistorical, abstract Christ who can be fashioned to please homosexuals or conservative Christians. Christ has no concrete identity in Church or state in modern Europe, because He has no local habitation in a historical people. You can't have an incarnate Lord if you deny the people who made Him incarnate in their culture. Pope Francis sees Christ as a Mexican immigrant with Marxist leanings, the Evangelicals see Him as a Jewish nationalist, the church scholars see Him as a syllogism, and the liberals see Him as a lesser god in a pantheon of gods presided over by the ultimate god, the negro. In the absence of the antique Europeans, He is absent. By rejecting them, a flesh and blood people, we rejected Christ, our flesh and blood God who entered human history – our history. The liberals couldn't care less if a handful of church goers withdraw from Satania. What the liberals fear is angry white people who are willing to fight as a people, while invoking the God of their people. That is a consummation devoutly to be wished for, but I don't see any signs of that type of awakening in the white Europeans. But then again, there shall be no sign; we must stake everything on that which we cannot see: His grace working within the hearts of Europeans who have kept the faith.

Thomas Nelson Page's assessment of the two separate nations, the North and the South, within the land mass which we now call the United States, was correct. He stated that the governing class of the Northern states were religious reformers who were dissatisfied with Europe. They came to America with the desire to practice a new and purer Christianity than was practiced in Europe. The South was settled by third and fourth sons, men who had no grudge against the existing European Christianity; they simply lacked the means to live in Europe, so they sought to rebuild Europe in the new land. There were, of course, exceptions to that basic scenario: Jefferson was certainly of the utopian North in spirit. Any man who rewrites the New Testament in order to empty it of its "superfluous" content is not a man of the Old South. But on the whole, Page's articulation of the two contending ethos of our anti-nation was correct. The North was anti-European and utopian while the South was Christian and European. Our Civil War was a precursor of the wars to come in Europe proper and the other European offshoot nations, such as South Africa, Australia, and New Zealand. The utopians fought under many different guises, but the end result was the liquidation of the spiritual capital of Christian Europe. Now, nothing remains of the civilization that gave us a vision of the living God. In my lifetime, I have watched with horror as the last vestiges of "that charity of honor" disappear from the face of Europe. What has happened in the South, the destruction of every single symbol of the South's Christian past, is also taking place in the European nations. All symbols of old Europe are either destroyed or turned into symbols of a new religion other than Christianity and a new race other than the white race. Why don't the flag bashers who profess to be Christian ever ask themselves why the Southern battle flag is the only American flag with a cross on it. And why do Britons, whose flag still does have a cross, permit Moslems to build mosques and spread Islam with fire and sword in what was once Christian Britain? The answer is not blowing in the wind, it is right before our eyes: White men have left their racial hearth fire so they have no spiritual backbone. You can't fight from the prone position; you must be able to stand upright.

In Dostoyevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov*, there is a classic confrontation between Alyosha, the Christian, and Ivan, the atheist. At one point in their spiritual warfare, Ivan asks Alyosha if he would be willing to build a perfect, happy, utopian world on the tears and suffering of one little girl.

"Tell me yourself—I challenge you: let's assume that you were called upon to build the edifice of human destiny so that men would finally be happy and would find peace and tranquility. If you knew that, in order to attain this, you would have to torture just one single creature, let's say the little girl who beat her chest so desperately in the outhouse, and that on her unavenged tears you could build that edifice, would you agree to do it?"

"No, I would not," Alyosha said softly.

Therein lies the history of Europe since the French Revolution. The ruling elites of all the European nations have answered yes to Ivan's question. They were quite willing to build utopia on the torture and murder of white people and on the tortured and mutilated corpses of aborted babies of all colors. The great prophet, Edmund Burke, saw this coming:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the Principle of Evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the "compunctions visitings of Nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved; they only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon,—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometers and the chemists bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world. — [A Letter to a Noble Lord](#)

The "cold malignity" of the devil is the guiding spirit of Liberalism. In our churches, our schools, our hospitals, and our civic organizations there is no humanity, there is only the cold, bureaucratic malignity of men and women determined to build utopia by destroying the people who took the incarnate Lord into their hearts and made Him the Lord of their racial hearth fire.

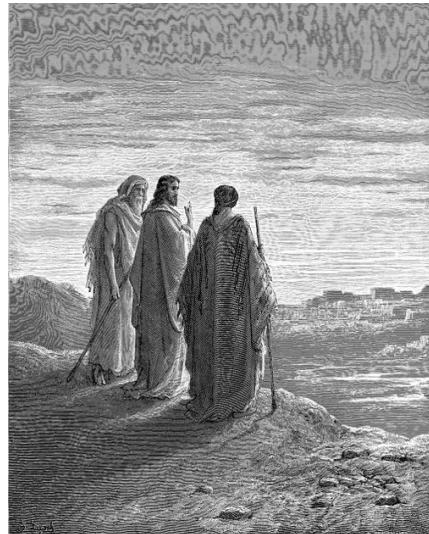
As I grow older I feel less of a distinction between His Europe and His Kingdom come. They are both one in the charity which was at the core of Christian Europe. And I also, as I grow older, feel the more acutely the difference between modern Europe and antique Europe. We are truly living in hell. But when the contrast is so stark, the man with a heart that still lives will turn from this modern hell as he would turn from a reptilian monster intent on devouring him. If there are no men left who will turn from Satan to Him, the end is nigh. Our head tells us one thing and our faith tells us another. We have lived so long in this nightmarish under-world that we no longer believe in that other world of light. The bred-in-the-bone faith of the antique Europeans was first reduced to a fairy tale by the intellectual Christians, and then it became evil and racist to the secularized liberal. It must be all or nothing. Either we go with the European fairy tale, or we stay in Satania. I have no choice; my life is like unto the fairy tale, so I'll keep it, "if but for sympathy." +

In His Image

August 15, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: George Fitzhugh



The Christian socialists are beautifully and energetically collaborating with the infidel socialists and abolitionists to bring about this millennium. They also are divided into two parties. The one would wait upon Providence – only help it a little, like Mr. Greeley – and permit our poor old effete world to pass out of existence by gentle euthanasia. The other and bolder party feel themselves “called” as special instruments to give at once the coup de grâce to the old world, and to usher in the new golden age of free love and free lands, of free women and free negroes, of free children and free men. – [George Fitzhugh](#)

This recent dispute between right-to-lifers and Planned Parenthood is part of the ongoing debate between secular utopians and Christian utopians. The latter spawned the former, but the secular utopians have become stronger than the Christian utopians, because they have a more vital faith in the negro than the Christian utopians. The Christian utopians have split their vote, so to speak. They want Christ, and they want the negro, while the secular utopians have abandoned Christ for the negro. But the addition of the negro to the Christian utopians’ pantheon of gods has made them part of Liberaldom and opposed to the guiding spirit of Christian Europe. The “pro-lifers” liberal bias becomes apparent when we see that they routinely condemn the real pro-lifers who shoot abortion doctors. And whenever the modern pro-lifers try to impress the liberals with the evils of abortion, they cite the disproportionate number of black babies aborted and liken abortion to slavery. But don’t white babies matter, and didn’t slavery protect blacks’ from starvation, torture, and death in Africa? The pro-lifers show their liberal colors when they reference the harm that abortion does to blacks in order to make their case against abortion. Why is such a tactic used? It is used because the Christian utopians believe that the brave new Christian world must be a world of pure and noble colored savages. They will never condemn their secular, utopian brethren who are pro-abortion as much as they will condemn the white European racists who are against abortion, because at heart the aborting, secular utopians and the anti-abortion Christian utopians have the same goal: They want a perfect world of colored people, presided over by a few white Atticus Finches.

To Kill a Mockingbird is the Bible of both the Christian utopian and the secular liberal utopian. In that sacred liberal book, a white man defends a good darkie against the evil, racist, white Southerners. Nothing makes the secular liberal or the modern Christian utopian feel better than the *To Kill a Mockingbird* fantasy. It is fantasy, because the real life Tom Robinsons are not innocent victims of false accusations of racist whites; they are guilty as charged of the most heinous crimes imaginable. And it is pure fantasy, because the blacks themselves hate the ‘*To Kill a Mockingbird*’ narrative. They don’t want a white deliverer, they want their own black Messiah. The liberals and the New Age Christians picture grateful blacks standing with hats in hands, saying, “The great white liberal is passing. Let us all do homage to him.” Let’s not do homage to the great white liberal or the noble black savage. Instead, let’s do homage to the white European who has not succumbed to liberalism or bent his knee to the sacred negro, because he only bends his knee to Christ.

I spent a lot of time around pro-lifers in my younger days, and I discovered that we did not share the same Christian faith. The pro-lifers all came from churches that preached the Athenian version of faith: Wisdom comes from the mind of God to the clergy, just as Athena, the goddess of wisdom, sprang from the head of Zeus. But through the Christian centuries is that the way the faith, the real Christian faith, was passed down? Our history as a people contradicts the bloodless, intellectual Christianity of the modern church men and their followers. It is just as important for Europeans to reject the modern blended Christianity as it is for them to reject the liberals’ negro-worshipping faith, because both faiths are opposed to the ‘image of God’ faith that Europeans held to in their Christian days, before the 20th century Europeans became too ‘intelligent’ to believe in a fairy tale about a God of love and mercy who became incarnate in the European people.

The modern popes have been the spokesmen for the new Christianity which rejects the Christianity of the antique Europeans. They have been the most prominent spokesmen, but they are not the creators of the new Christianity; they only articulate the spirit of the scientific age. If there is a God, they assert, He must be a liberal, and He must not defy the rules of science. The secular liberal, in keeping with the spirit of the age, completely rejects the faith and the people of old Europe. So does the New Age Christian, with one caveat: The New Age Christian blends Christ with liberalism and comes up with a pagan-Christian combination that lauds feminism while condemning abortion, and deplores the “racist Europeans” of the past while praising the negro for being a pure, natural savage untainted by the unnatural religion of the antique Europeans. Surely we must see all this anti-Europeanism for what it is? It is Satan’s attempt to destroy the image of God in men. God became man so we could know Him through our common humanity; if He cannot be known through humanity how is He to be known and loved? The liberals tell us He can be known through the negro, and the Christian utopians tell us He can be known in the future if we follow the prescribed formulas of the Christian church men such as John Paul II and Pope Francis. But why must we wait to know God when our people passed on their faith through their blood? All we need to do is stay connected to them, and we will know Him in and through them.

A people’s faith cannot be compartmentalized. We can’t lock faith in a box over there, leaving it unopened except for special occasions, and then keep the democracy box, with liberalism and negro worship inside, open for our important everyday work. A truly European people meets every crisis with a full-blooded faith. “Stop! This must not go on,” was Nicholas Nickleby’s reaction to the inhuman torture of children. “We must protect abortionists from fanatics,” is the reaction of modern Christian utopians to the slaughter of the innocents. Whether the innocents are white people being attacked by the sacred negroes or babies being butchered by the local abortionist, it is white people who must stop the slaughter. They drank deeply from the cup of charity, the charity that never faileth, so they must fight with a ferocity greater than the colored heathens, and they must fight without regard to what the liberals will think of them. The liberals are not our parents, so why should we seek their approval? We should seek the approval of our honored dead, our fathers, our mothers, and our kinsmen in the faith, a blood faith that was bequeathed to us by the Man of Sorrows and was renewed from one generation to the next until the Europeans decided that faith in the European Christ, the one true God, was a stumbling block, because it was racist and therefore not universal, and foolishness, because Christ’s resurrection from the dead is unscientific.

No anti-abortion movement from within Liberaldom, no anti-anything movement from within Liberaldom, will be successful so long as the abortion of the white race from the womb of Europe is countenanced and sanctioned by the rulers of Liberaldom. From that initial abortion stems legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and every other state-sanctioned evil, because when the white Europeans were aborted, the Son of God was aborted with them.

Some careful observers on the right wing, pagan side of the coin have told me that there is no hope for the white race. It is too late to fight back: “Things have gone too far.” That analysis is correct if you look on European history as you look on a laboratory experiment. At a certain point in a laboratory experiment you can see the inevitable end of the experiment. But our people are not just biological entities. The liberals have labeled them as such, and they have determined that they are biological specimens that must be eliminated, but our lives,

individually and collectively, as the people who have seen a great light, contradict the strict biological categorization of white people. The grace of God is the unseen force that can alter the destiny of nations. Neither the conservative nor the liberal is receptive to God's grace, because they are wandering over the face of the earth looking for the magic talisman of universal racial harmony instead of tending their own racial hearth fire where the grace of God meets the outstretched hand of the "poor, unaccommodated" European man.

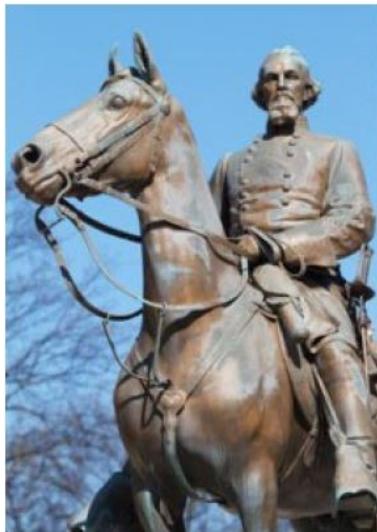
To be Christian we must first be human, and we can only realize our humanity to the extent that we reject the mongrelization of our people and the mongrelization of our God. A man needs ground to stand on when he fights. What other ground do we have than Christian Europe? In the absence of the hearth-fire virtues, the love of kith and kin and the love of God, what do we have? We have modern Satania, a world where "humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep." If we hold fast to our provincial Europe, which is racist, undemocratic, and militantly Christian, we will be one with the people who saw moral beauty on a cross. And we will be one with the people who wept at the death of Cordelia and stood in rapt attention during the Hallelujah Chorus. On our side of the divide is light and the charity that never faileth. On the other side, where the secular and Christian utopians have chosen to stand, all is "cheerless, dark and deadly." In the midst of life we die, but whether we die with the comforting presence of the Man of Sorrows who presides over our European hearth fire, or whether we die in darkness, depends on which side of the divide we choose to stand. It's not a little thing; it means everything if we choose His Europe over modern Europe. +

Who Will Defend Christian Europe?

August 22, 2015

Categories: Charity, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Weyl & Marina



"It may be tempting for the historian to arraign great men, prosecute them and convict them. It panders to his prejudices, inflates his ego and is invariably successful, since they are not present to defend themselves." – Weyl and Marina

Let's pretend I'm a talk show host. On my second show I have a panel of experts discussing the negro. All the experts take it as a given that integration has been a failure. In light of that fact, the experts are discussing whether it would be better to send all the blacks back to Africa or to relocate them to a few states in the United States.

The third show is dedicated to feminism. The demonic nature of feminism is taken as a given. That abortion will once again become illegal and abortion doctors will receive the death penalty is agreed upon with virtually no discussion at all. What the panel of experts is divided on is how strict the measures should be in order to insure that the laws of a Christian patriarchy are adhered to. The consensus of the panel is that the laws must be very strict at first, because so much damage has been done by matriarchal rule. But once patriarchy is reestablished, there can be a certain relaxing, but no abeyance, of some of the stricter laws.

The fourth show is about the homosexual menace that so recently threatened to destroy the last vestiges of Western civilization. Again, the sinfulness of sodomy is taken as a given by the panel. What is necessary is to determine the punishment for the public advocacy of homosexuality. Eschewing the medieval practice of punishing the private, hidden homosexuality, the panel agrees on the necessity of punishing any public advocacy of homosexual rights or any public display of homosexuality.

The fifth show is on the subject of the democratic heresy, not just as regards the American experiment in democracy, but also as regards the various European democracies. Democracy as a religion is condemned out of hand. What the panel discusses is the nature of the monarchy that is to be adopted. Shall it be an absolute monarchy, or a constitutional monarchy with a republican and popular element? But at no point in the discussions is there any talk of reviving the American and modern European satanic experiments in "some-are-more-equal-than-others" democracy.

The first show is the show that determined the subject matter for all the subsequent shows. In that first show the necessity of preserving and defending the European peoples' Christian faith was discussed. The panel agreed that freedom of religion only applied to freedom within the Christian faith. The freedom to advocate another religion other than Christianity, the freedom to build a heathen church and the freedom to oppose the laws stemming from a Christian government, such as the laws prohibiting abortion and miscegenation, would be strictly forbidden.

Of course my talk show would never be allowed. The liberals would never allow such public 'blasphemy.' They would never permit the public condemnation of legalized abortion, democracy, and sodomy, and the advocacy of segregation and favored religion status for Christianity. And of course the reason the liberals would not permit a television show challenging the sacred cows of Liberalism is because the liberals fought long and hard to establish their power. Why should they give it up by allowing any type of challenge to their power? That would be rather foolish, wouldn't it? But the liberals were not always in power in the West; there was a time when they needed – and were granted – free speech in order to advance their agenda. When they were partly inside and partly outside of the government, the liberals used the *Phil Donahue* talk show method of coercion: "Let's discuss sodomy." "What really is wrong with gay marriage?" "Why not permit race-mixing?" "Why not permit abortion?" Once that which is sacred and must be preserved is no longer taken as a given, but is instead open for 'discussion', then that which is sacred will not be preserved. I remember, many years ago, cancelling my subscription to *National Review* when they ran an article on abortion titled, "Abortion: A Spirited Debate." No magazine claiming to be conservative can treat abortion as a debatable issue. Conservatives are called upon to defend the Christian West, not to debate the relative merits of Christian morality and liberal morality.

And that is the big difference between the conservatives and the liberals. People will always act according to their religion. The liberals, now that they have total power, use the iron fist; they do not debate. They believe in an anti-Christian, anti-white utopia with the sacred negro at the center. They will not debate the moral rectitude of their religion, their duty is to defend it against the enemy – white Christians – by any means possible. Why, when they were in power, did not the conservatives defend their faith with the same zeal that the liberals now defend their faith? The conservatives of the early 20th century and the mid-20th century did defend their faith. The problem was that they did not believe in European Christianity. They believed in a fusion of democracy and Christianity. And such a fusion is a false religion. In the name of democracy the liberals penetrated and then consumed conservatism. What does modern conservatism consist of? Nothing. Conservatives are just an adjunct of liberalism, begging liberals to allow them to be part of Liberalism by showing them that they too love the negro.

The case of the anti-sodomite, Christian baker of Colorado is an example of how the new 'iron fist' of liberalism operates. The sodomite branch of the liberal machine waited until they had complete power and then bared their fangs. Two pig-gutted sodomites had traveled from another state to the Christian Colorado bakery, and asked the owner, a professed Christian, to make them a sodomite wedding cake in 2012. You know the rest – the man refused to countenance sin by baking a "gay" cake. The sodomites went to court, and the baker lost. He appealed and the appeals court upheld the lower court's decision. Facing the prospect of stiff fines, the baker has chosen to no longer make wedding cakes, thus losing 40% of his business. Another mom-and-pop bakery in Oregon was fined \$135,000 by a state bureaucrat on July 4th for refusing to make a wedding cake for a lesbian couple three years ago. Both cases prove what we should have known when the gay rights movement started – liberalism has nothing to do with compassion for sinners, it is about the celebration of sin and the punishment of the Christian opponents of that celebration. "Don't impede the onward march to utopia or we will trample you to death!" is the liberals' firm resolve.

It was significant that the sodomites' feminist lawyer had argued that the baker's religiously based refusal to bake the cake was not valid, for the reason that white people once cited their religion in order to ban inter-racial marriage. This 'brilliant' argument evidently convinced the judge who upheld the lower court's ruling. There are two points to be made in response to the feminist lawyer and the liberal officials. First, just because the Christian religion was once cited to justify a ban on inter-racial marriage does not invalidate the Christian baker's claim that he should not be forced to bake a cake for sodomites or lose his livelihood. Secondly, Christians should be against inter-racial marriage, because it leads to the legalization of abortion and sodomy by defacing the image of God in man, but the Mom and Pop bakers were not guilty of such sentiments nor was the Colorado baker. Would that they were. I think the old adage, in

for a penny in for a pound, applies here. The liberals will not let you be half-liberal, so why not go all the way and become a white Christian European who loves his own racial hearth fire above all others?

Some military man, perhaps it was MacArthur or perhaps it was Robert E. Lee, once said that the words which describe all failed military campaigns are “too late.” The white people of the United States have discovered too late that civil rights meant negro dominance and the extermination of white people; equal rights for women meant legalized abortion; and gay rights meant the mandated acceptance of sodomite marriages. So long as evil was put in virtuous terms, white grazers did not see evil for what it was. First, they were weakened by the Phil-Donahue-type discussion, then they were completely overwhelmed by the virtuous façade of the demon movements. “Who would be so base that they are against civil rights? Who would be so vile that they are against equal rights for women? Who would be so devoid of humanity that he would not forgive homosexuals? And who would be so tyrannical that he would be undemocratic? If any, speak – for him have I offended. None? Then none have I offended, keep on grazing in the fields of oblivion.”

Even before the feminist revolution, which preceded and led to the homosexual revolution, the liberals’ sinister purposes were crystal clear during the civil rights movement, which was really the miscegenation movement. If racial harmony was really the liberals’ goal and not the extermination of whites, the suggestions in such books as *American Statesmen on Slavery and the Negro*, written in 1971 by Nathaniel Weyl and William Marina, would have been followed. In that book the two authors pointed out that virtually every prominent American statesman, including Abraham Lincoln, suggested some sort of separation of the races for the sake of the white race and the black race. Weyl and Marina proposed that if the right of private association, the right to segregate in schools, housing, and civic organizations, was upheld a non-utopian harmony could be achieved between the races. But such moderate, well-thought out proposals were vehemently rejected by the liberals. Why? Hasn’t it become obvious? The liberals do not want racial harmony, they want the extermination of the white race, just as they want to deify Lady Macbeth and destroy Christian marriage. What will it take for white grazers to turn away in disgust and horror from the liberals’ trough?

The whole liberal agenda is bad because it harms white, Christian Europeans. That should be our primary reason for opposing liberalism. But we must also point out that the “civil rights” movement has been a disaster for blacks; they now have no one to check their savagery, which they practice on each other as well as on whites. Nor has liberalism been beneficial for women. They now have the right to be bimbo newscasters and garage mechanics, but so many have lost that uniquely feminine spirituality that is necessary to be truly female. And the homosexuals? Is it really compassionate to tell them that the sin of sodomy is something they should celebrate?

The liberals claim to be humane, compassionate human beings. In fact, the liberals would have us believe that they and they alone are humane and compassionate. We must get past “we too are humane and compassionate, we don’t hate blacks, we don’t hate women, we are not homophobic” etc. That is not true. It is not a case of “we too are humane and compassionate,” it is a case of the liberals being devoid of all humanity. They use words like compassion to push a cruel, merciless agenda down the throats of white grazers who stand befuddled and amazed before the liberal juggernaut of scientists, educators, and New Age theologians. It is *only* the white, prejudiced, Christian European who is humane and compassionate. I object to using the term “humanist” to describe liberals. They are not liberal humanists – there is nothing human about them – they are inhumane monstrosities. Do Christian Europeans hate? Of course we do, we hate because we love much. We don’t hate Uncle Remus, but we do hate militant black savages who prey on white people. We don’t hate Florence Nightingale, but we do hate Lady Macbeth and all those feminist harpies that have followed in her train. And we don’t hate homosexuals, we feel sorry for them, that is, until they become militant, and then we do indeed hate them. When I was growing up, I didn’t even know what a homosexual was until my late teens. And when I heard about their existence, I felt sorry for them. They would never know the feeling a man gets when that one special silken gown enters his life. Of course feminism has killed the silken gown femininity, so maybe modern heterosexual men will never know that feeling either. But the point is I didn’t hate homosexuals. But I do hate them now, when they militantly attack the silken gown ethos of the Christian knight and the Christian hearth fire. I feel the same about the feminists as I do about the barbarians of color and the homosexuals. Pity dies and a fighting hatred takes over when they threaten the European hearth fire. This seems so obvious that I shouldn’t have to write it down, but it isn’t obvious to the vast majority of white people, or else they would not go so gently into the Babylonian night of liberalism. They would rage against the dying of the light of Christian Europe, and the then the light would not die. +

We Labor and Weep

August 29, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



You find it perfectly ridiculous, and unfit for me in particular, to take these things as my ingredients of commiseration. Pray why is it absurd in me to think, that the chivalrous spirit which dictated a veneration for women of condition and of beauty, without any consideration whatever of enjoying them, was the great source of those manners which have been the pride and ornament of Europe for so many ages? And am I not to lament that I have lived to see those manners extinguished in so shocking a manner, by means of speculations of finance, and the false science of a sordid and degenerate philosophy? – Edmund Burke

As if the United States wasn't bad enough already, now we must suffer through a visit from an atheist pope whose 'religious vision' is a combination of Marxism and Al Gore's 'global warming of the earth' philosophy. For me the Pope's visit highlights the huge gulf that exists between organized Christianity and Christ. Perhaps the European people were more necessary to the faith than the organizational men thought. But of course I'm being disingenuous when I say 'perhaps.' It is crystal clear that the only true church was — and is — the European people that believe in the historical Jesus who dwelt by their racial hearth fire. And it is also crystal clear that the Pope and all the forces of Liberalism, which are the forces of hell, are totally against the Christian folk of Europe. As Bassanio says of Shylock, we can also say of liberals such as Pope Francis:

"Yes, here I tender it for him in the court; Yea, twice the sum. If that will not suffice, I will be bound to pay it ten times o'er, on forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart. If this will not suffice, it must appear That malice bears down truth."

Yes, malice has borne down truth. What is our truth, the European folk, and what is their truth, the liberals from hell? Our truth is that the Christ-bearing people brought the negroes from darkness to light and did all that was humanly possible to do for savages who resisted the light with all their heart, mind, and soul. The liberals' truth is that the white man destroyed the civilizations of noble savages and imprisoned great saints such as Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King Jr. Our truth is that there is no mercy, no charity in Islam and that faith must be fought for in the name of the God of charity and mercy. The liberals' truth is that the good Muslims must be welcomed to the West, because Islam is a nobler and purer faith than Christianity. Our truth is that all the modern ills – feminism, institutionalized sodomy, negro worship, and Western democracy — stem from the fact that Europeans have rejected the historical Jesus, the God of our ascending race, for the blended Christ, for the science lab, and for the negro. Their truth is that all the modern ills stem from European Christianity and that feminism, negro worship, science, and institutionalized sodomy will cure the cancer of European Christianity. There can be no compromise between two such divergent views of existence. One people must be wrong and one people must be right. I find it hard to believe (but I must believe it because it happened) that a European cannot see that it is impossible to blend the Christian folk of the old, provincial, racist, Christian Europe with the liberals of the new, multiracial, universalist, atheist Europe. One people must triumph and the other must die. At present it is old Europe that has died. If we spend what remains of our lives reversing that defeat we will not be rejected when we stand before our Maker at the last judgment.

I certainly do not have an inkling as to the day and the hour of that final reckoning when the true King will return, but it does seem like this, our modern Satania, engenders a feeling of Armageddon. Because of the great institutionalized evils of feminism, negro worship, sodomy, democracy, and science, we feel that all the forces of hell have been arrayed against us. The fumes of Hell are in the very air we breathe. "It must be time to rise and ride," is the unspoken yearning of every European who remains a European.

Satan took over Europe through the home-grown horde of sophisters, economists, and calculators that Burke opposed so mightily. Through the press and the academy those calculators, sophisters, and economists could deluge the nations with lies that became true-lies to the people, because the truth was never heard; it was buried in the propaganda of anti-Christian liberalism, whose greatest proponent was Rousseau:

"Through him they teach men to love after the fashion of philosophers; that is, they teach to men, to Frenchmen, a love without gallantry; a love without any thing of that fine flower of youthfulness and gentility, which places it, if not among the virtues, among the ornaments of life. Instead of their passion, naturally allied to grace and manners, they infuse into their youth an unfashioned, indelicate, sour, gloomy, ferocious medley of pedantry and lewdness of metaphysical speculations, blended with the coarsest sensuality." – Burke

The new religion of utopian lies was very powerful in Burke's day, but prophets like Burke could still have an influence. Burke could not stop the ongoing march to oblivion that continued after Robespierre's death. But he did, almost singlehandedly, turn the British people against the French Revolution. It gives me great satisfaction to know that his English neighbors burned down Priestley's house; it's a pity Priestley escaped the fire. Oh to be in London when Priestley's house went up in flames. 'Tis a consummation devoutly to be hoped for and fought for – to see the whole liberal house of cards go up in flames.

In the early 1900s William Graham Sumner wrote a book called *Folkways* in which he delineated what Burke had said almost 120 years earlier. Sumner called the antique Europeans who lived by prejudices rooted in tradition, 'the folk.' And he called the managerial overlords – the economists, calculators, and sophists – the stentors (named after Stentor, the Greek Warrior, "whose voice was as powerful as fifty voices of other men"). But as Weyl and Marina point out in their book *American Statesmen on Slavery and the Negro*, neither Stentor nor Graham or any other statesman of the pagan or Christian era of Europe could have foreseen just how powerful the stentor class would become in the mass media era, the era when science, the liberals' Holy Ghost, could enable the ruling stentor class, the liberals, to spread lying propaganda throughout the entire globe in seconds. Without technology the liberals would have to do the slow pamphleteering of the bad old days of the French Revolution. "They were grand days, but it took too long to get out the message." Solzhenitsyn remarked on this phenomenon when he first came out of the Gulag. He said that in America you could speak the truth but it was drowned out by the plethora of lies put out by the stentorian rulers of Liberalism.

Solzhenitsyn made his statement about the truth being drowned out in the early 1970s. It is still drowned out, but because of the success of the stentorian campaign of lies, truth has gone further underground. You really must support the lies or you will not be allowed to speak. In Britain the late John Tyndall was sent to jail for a private, off the cuff remark about the Islamic invasion of Britain. Every European nation inflicts different penalties, but every European nation, led by liberal stentors, punishes the truth tellers and supports the great lie that the new

Babylonian Europe, the Europe of technological barbarians united to colored barbarians and sustained by science, is the true Europe, and the folk Europe, the Europe of charity, mercy, and Christian romance, is the false Europe.

Can one man or a handful of men who live, with all their heart, mind, and soul, in old Europe, overcome all the forces of technological hell, which have been institutionalized in modern Liberaldom? The answer is 'no, they cannot,' if you look at their task from a material standpoint. To defeat the invincible forces of Satanism with material weapons is as impossible as moving mountains with a shovel. But what of the Christian romance? What of St. Paul, Alfred, and Gottschalk? If we see what they saw and invoke their God, can we defeat Satan and his minions? Yes, it is quite possible, if, as in all the European fairy tales, we fight in His name for that charity of honor.

My favorite of Walt Disney's animated films was one of his last animated films. The critics didn't like it, because it 'didn't break new ground,' and it 'just told an old fairy tale,' but I loved it as a child and I love it still. The film is *Sleeping Beauty*. The finale pits young Prince Philip against Maleficent, the evil sorceress. After she has thrown obstacle after obstacle in Prince Philip's path, who is trying to awaken Sleeping Beauty with 'love's first kiss,' and has failed to stop Prince Philip with any of her fiendish obstacles, Maleficent is forced to reveal her true self. Right before she turns into an enormous, fire-spewing dragon, she says, "Now deal with me and all the forces of hell!" The Prince is undeterred. Armed with the shield of virtue and the sword of truth, he hurls the sword into the dragon's heart. The dragon falls to the ground and all that remains is the sword of truth standing upright in the ground. "The sign of the cross, the spirit above the dust." Not up to Walt Disney's usual standards? Hogwash, it is the crowning achievement of his magnificent career as the Hans Christian Andersen of the 20th century.

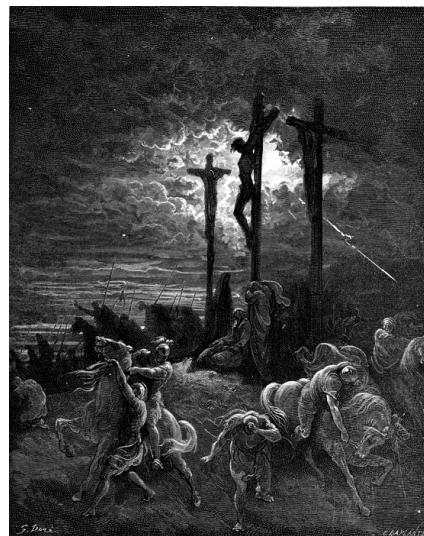
It's quite significant that the modern Disney studio, which, like our modern churches, keeps the old symbols of a Christian people while supporting Satanism, has released a new version of *Sleeping Beauty* in which Maleficent is the heroine. That is as it should be; a society dedicated to Satan should celebrate his triumph over the Christian folk of old Europe.

To say I admire Edmund Burke would be a huge understatement. I love him. He loved Christian Europe, and he sacrificed friendship, prestige, and money to defend Christ's Europe against the legions of Satan, the economists, calculators, and sophists. To stand alone as Burke did is impossible for a man who does not see Christ in the civilization and the people whom he is defending. It is with me as it was with Burke: "It is impossible that a greater difference can exist on earth, than, unfortunately for me, there is on those subjects, between your sentiments and mine." There is no possibility of coexisting with the haters of Christian Europe. To think and feel as they do would destroy our souls. Christ's words come back to us when we think of assuaging our loneliness with just a little bit of liberalism: "For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul." This incredible loneliness is like a sword thrust in the heart. But the fact that we can't give up the romance, even if the loneliness kills us, tells us where we belong. We belong with Him, sword in hand, fighting the forces of darkness so long as we can draw a breath in this world. And afterwards? The fairy tale is true and Liberaldom is false. We shall see our Lord face to face. +

On Bended Knee

September 5, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism



For heathen heart that puts her trust
In reeking tube and iron shard,
All valiant dust that builds on dust,
And guarding, calls not thee to guard,
For frantic boast and foolish word
Thy mercy on thy people, Lord!

-Rudyard Kipling

America is governed by a revolutionary tribunal government with a slight twist on the Jacobin and Russian models. In our nation the twin-evil system is used. There are two parties, both sworn enemies of the other, who beg Americans to choose their party come election time lest the country face economic and moral ruin. But this is part of Satan's plan. Both parties are committed to Jacobinism, the democracy of 'some are more equal than others.' Our elections, like our court proceedings, are merely for show; the results will be the same whether a Republican or a Democrat is elected. Negro worship will remain the national religion, Christian Europeans will remain a persecuted race, and everything vile and loathsome, such as Lady Macbeth-feminism, sodomy, and miscegenation will be exalted while everything decent and good that stems from the older, white culture will be vilified and denigrated.

The revolutionary nature of the American experiment in democracy becomes crystal clear when we see how all the various branches of the revolutionary tribunal respond to black atrocities. It is that response which highlights the first principle of the revolution – 'Some are more equal than others,' namely, the black savages, because they are completely untainted by anything that stinks of the sins of the antique Europeans.

In the extremely rare instance when a white man kills blacks, as in the case of the North Carolina church shootings, it is always (as it should be) the shooter's fault and it is also (as it should not be) the fault of the entire white race. Groups are formed ('Black lives matter'), marches take place, and whites go into a frenzy of mourning and 'what can be done?' self-flagellation. What happens when the all too frequent torture murders of whites and the simple, regular murders of whites by blacks take place? When the atrocities cannot be ignored, which in most cases they are, the black atrocities are blamed on whites. Very learned whites gather together to try and discover what whites have done and are still doing to make blacks do such horrendous things. No academic ever blames blacks for their murderous deeds; it is always the white man's fault. Why is it never, in the opinion of the white academic, the black man's fault? Because there is no sin in the black man; only the white European is invested and infected with original sin. 'Keep looking,' the academician says, 'eventually you'll find the reason for the hideously inhuman and savage behavior of the black man. It will be white racism.' You see the liberal has already made an *a priori* assumption about the evil of the white man and the goodness of the black man. No historical reality can alter his *a priori* assumption.

At this writing the city of Baltimore is in ruins while negroes are running amok. This is because whites are acting under the assumption that they can stop black violence by not responding to black violence. 'Just let them riot, murder, and rape so that they will see that we are not racist. And once they see that we are not racist they will cease to riot, murder, and rape.' That is perfectly logical if – and it is a big if – the black race really is free from original sin.

Blacks of course are not free from original sin, which is part of the human condition. But they are free from original sin and every other type of sin in the eyes of the liberals. And this belief of the liberals is destroying the white race. To build your society on the belief that the most savage and anti-Christian element of your society are special deities to be petted, pampered, and adored as the sacred cows are petted, pampered, and adored by the Hindu is to commit racial suicide.

There is a species of bird called the cowbird that lay their eggs in the nests of other birds when the nests are unattended, to be hatched by the nest owner. If their eggs are rejected by the nest owner, then they return and destroy the others' eggs in retaliation. The 'enlightened' liberals of the revolutionary tribunal have gone one better: they have invited the cowbird-negro into the racial hearth of the European people in order to destroy the European people. The liberals are allowed to do this now, because they are powerful. To oppose them means the loss of livelihood and often the loss of life. They were allowed to do this in the past, because they presented themselves as the intelligent and enlightened purveyors of the new utopian age. If a man wants to share in the fruits of utopia he has to go along with the new ethos of utopia that highlights miscegenation, feminism, legalized abortion, and the mandatory acceptance of sodomy. Do we really get so much from our revolutionary tribunal government that we should support them as they destroy everything our people once held to be sacred?

The revolutionary tribunal government in America does not differ greatly from the revolutionary tribunal governments in Europe. The European nations permit multiple political parties, but whenever a third or fourth party – let's say, an anti-immigration party – starts to become successful, the major liberal parties unite to defeat that party. The important thing is that the revolutionary tribunal government must stay in power. Third party platforms are only adopted by revolutionary governments when their platforms support the revolution.

All nations, even anti-nations such as the modern revolutionary tribunal nations, have a moral essence. The moral essence of the old European nations was European Christianity – one race, one faith. The moral essence of the new European nations is a utopian moral essence. Whatever is anti-Christian and anti-white is part of the moral essence of the new Europe. This is why you will never get anywhere by protesting black crime, abortion, or gay rights. Such things are part of the moral essence of the liberals' utopia, and they will defend them to the death – your death. If, however, you wish to protest the lack of women in your local fire department or the small number of black doctors, your protests will be heard, and the powers that be will try to redress the 'injustice.'

Shakespeare tells us, through Banquo, that 'tis strange':

*And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,*

*Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.*

When they are out of power, the revolutionaries often tell us honest trifles about the Ancien Régime: 'The King picks his nose' or 'The Queen has too many hair dressers,' etc., in order to lead us into a betrayal of the Ancien Régime, which shall ultimately hurt us in deepest consequence. None of the Ancien Régimes can stand up to the scrutiny of utopian liberals. They will all be found wanting. But why, once the Ancien Régimes are toppled, are not the revolutionary tribunal governments held to the same standards to which the Ancien Régimes were held? The answer is quite simple – the new revolutionary regimes are moving toward utopia; therefore, everything they do, which usually includes shedding the blood of millions of innocent men, women, and children, must be forgiven.

In contrast to the revolutionary regimes, the more traditional Ancien Régimes such as Czarist Russia and monarchist France did not need to shed the blood of the innocents to maintain their regimes. Perhaps this was because the Ancien Régimes were not utopian regimes. Perfection demands bloodshed. The revolutionary tribunal governments have no qualms about shedding blood, because their hearts are pure; they are building the new Babylon.

The white blood being shed in the utopian states of Europe and America will not be lamented by the revolutionary tribunals. In fact the murder of whites is the proof of the revolutionary governments' sincerity. Utopia cannot become a reality until the non-utopian whites, the original sinners, are eliminated. That is the new catechism – all atrocities are permitted so long as blacks commit the atrocities; there is no valid criticism that can be leveled at the revolutionary governments, because their hearts are pure, and there is no evil that cannot be countenanced so long as it moves mankind, minus white mankind, toward a future state of utopian bliss.

A government can stand without the enthusiastic support of the bulk of its citizens; it needs only the enthusiastic support of a tiny minority and the passive acceptance of the rest of its citizens. It is clear who makes up the ranks of the enthusiastic supporters of the revolutionary tribunal governments of the European nations. The mad-dog liberals, fueled by satanic hatred for the people and culture of old Europe, make up the ranks of the ruling elite of the new, anti-white European nations. But why do the grazers acquiesce? Why do they permit the liberals to rule? I've had many years to think about that question, and though there are many different reasons why the grazers do not oppose the liberals' revolutionary government – fear of economic deprivation, the need for the approval of society, the need to participate in and watch state-sponsored sporting events – all these are reasons why the grazers stay with the revolutionary tribunal governments, but they are not *the* reason. The European people, even in their decadent grazing state of existence, ultimately are motivated by their religion. The Christian churches, after World War I, started preaching a blended Christianity. Out and out enemies of Christianity were able to win the church-going Christians over to their side on many issues, such as miscegenation, because the churches started to lend their support to such perversions. Gradually the churches lost their independent voices and became very tiny adjuncts of the revolutionary tribunal governments. The European people, the most religious people on the face of the earth, will not break from the revolutionary tribunal governments, because they will not break faith with what they perceive to be their religion, a blended religion that combines Christianity, negro worship, Judaism, and paganism.

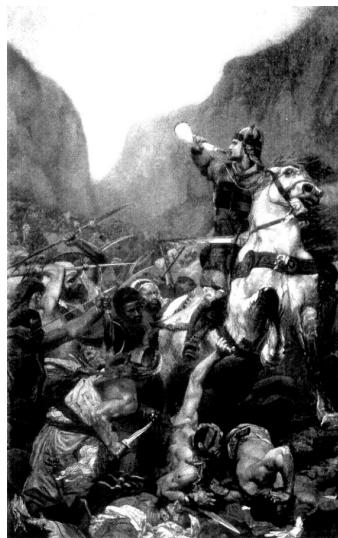
Kipling and Thomas Nelson Page got it right. When the white man loves and hates with all his heart, miracles occur. When we shake the superflux (1) of blended Christianity off and go back to that hovel with King Lear, we will discover that a European hovel becomes a manger where "love and all love's loving parts" reigns. The onward and upward march of the utopians leads to hell. The bended knee at the foot of the cross, the symbol and substance of the true Europeans, leads to His kingdom come, on earth as it is in heaven. +

(1) Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them
And show the heavens more just.

Ganelon's Treachery Returns

September 12, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not. (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)

And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him. And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep. And there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them. Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. – Luke 8: 27-33

My mother's father gave her a set of storybooks when she was little, and she in turn gave them to me. The stories in the various books are stories of the European people. They tell the story of The Bruce, of William Tell, of the Red Cross Knight, and many, many more tales about the great heroes of the white race. Among those many more is the story of [Roland](#), the bravest of Charlemagne's knights. He was betrayed by his father-in-law Ganelon to the Muslims and died, fighting nobly with a few companions against hordes of Muslims:

Scarcely had Roland breathed his last when Charlemagne arrived to find of all his twenty thousand no one left. Mournfully he called his peers by name. Not one there was to answer – not a single one. And on the height, his face toward Spain, they found the hero Roland. Great was the grief of all. Great was the grief of Charlemagne. His host pursued the Saracens, and by the river Ebro the Moors paid to the full the penalty of their treachery. Then bearing the bodies of Roland and Oliver, Charlemagne returned to France. Laden with chains and tied to a stake like a wild beast Ganelon was led before his judges for trial. By his dark deed lay twenty thousand dead. He was condemned and suffered a shameful death. But in the hearts of Charlemagne and all the people of France remained undying love for Roland, for he took his stand, and held it, never yielding unto death.

In Dante's *Inferno* only the Devil himself is placed lower in hell than Ganelon. But now Europe is governed by a whole host of Ganelons. In the name of compassion we are told by church and state that the European people in America and Europe proper must take in thousands upon thousands of Syrian Muslims. Sanctuary? It is not sanctuary, it is an invasion. And the Ganelons of modern Europe should be tied to a stake like their infamous predecessor and tried for their crimes. Instead they luxuriate in fits of self-righteous indignation when any nation, as Hungary tried to do, makes an effort to protect her people from the Muslim hordes. The European Ganelons always pick out some fresh-faced Muslim woman with a cute infant in her arms – "How can you deny them access to your nation?" It should be easy. We should deny all such invaders access to our nation, because we love our own sweet-faced women and children. We don't hate yours, but you have a nation to go to – go there!

The liberals' incredible double-dealing is obvious. On the one hand we are told that we must abort all babies born in the European nations, because there are too many babies being born. And then on the other hand we are told we must allow an unlimited amount of Muslims into European nations. Why must we do this? Because we are commanded to go over the cliff with the swinish liberals who are possessed by the devil.

The liberals' hatred of their own and their love of the stranger can only be understood in the context of demonic possession. Why else would they welcome people into their nation with values diametrically opposed to their own values? Islam is certainly opposed to Christianity, but it is also opposed to liberalism, and yet, only a few liberals, such as Geert Wilders and Jared Taylor, have pointed out the incompatibility of liberalism and Islam. There will be no gay marriages in a Muslim Europe, there will be no feminism, there will be no negro worship, and there will be no toleration of Jews. Why then would the liberals welcome them into their nations? It goes back to the demons in that Gospel story in St. Luke. The liberals have one fear that overrides all other fears: the fear of the God of Mercy, Jesus Christ. And even though the European people have ceased, as a collective body, to be Christian, the liberals fear and hate them, because they were once Christian. It's the same way with the Muslims. When the Ayatollah Khomeini was performing Muslim hijinks in Iran, he referred to the West as the Christian West, his ancient enemy. The liberals of the West tried to tell him that the West was not Christian, but to no avail. For him the West was Richard, Raymond, and Godfrey. Would that it were true! The enemies of Christ, be they liberal or Muslim, will always hate the white race, because of what the white race once was, the Christ-bearing race. Muslims are not exclusively anti-white, they also hate Christians of other races — witness their execution of the Coptic Christians — but white people will always be the primary enemy of Muslims, because of their past devotion, as an entire race, to the God of mercy.

Some neopagans and right-wing Christians have expressed a preferment for Muslims over the liberals. "Let them come, at least they are not liberals," is their sentiment. But should a Christian let Muslims determine who should live and who should die? A Muslim state would be just as evil as a liberal state. The important thing is to fight both liberalism and Islam. The Christian European doesn't oppose Islam because its tenets run contrary to the liberal tenets of the Western democracies, he opposes Islam because its tenets are diametrically opposed to European Christianity, the faith of our ascending race. There is no room for Muslims or liberals in Europe, but since the latter are homegrown we must deal with them on a case by case basis and gradually purge them from our ranks. But the Muslims are foreign invaders; there is no reason why we have to suffer one single Muslim on European soil. Let them practice what they feel is the true faith in the Islamic countries and let Christian Europe alone. But of course the Muslims will not let Europe alone. The liberal Ganelons have let them in. Only European Christians can stop the Muslims at the gates of Vienna. Are there any left? There are certainly none in the organized churches, but the true faith runs through human hearts. Will there be enough European hearts of flesh to stop the blood-red tide? I don't know; I only know that I love my people and I hate Muslim invaders. Are there no other European people left who love and hate with all their heart?

I once had a student who asked me why I was so hostile to Islam since the Muslims were against the liberals. I answered him with the "pushing an old lady" example. A man could be pushing an old lady into traffic or out of traffic. The two acts of pushing the old lady are the same physical acts, but spiritually they are quite different. The one act saves the old lady, while the other kills her. A Christian opposes feminism, because feminism destroys femininity, which is a source of grace. The Christian does not, as the Muslim does, despise femininity itself. So it goes with all the issues that a more conservative Christian might seem, on the surface, to be of a like mind with the Muslims. But there is absolutely no agreement between a nature religion that is a fusion of Judaism and paganism and a religion of spirit and truth forged from a relationship between the incarnate God of charity and mercy and His people who have

circumcised their hearts in order to receive Him still. I find it hard to believe, as Burke found it hard to believe that the French courtiers would not defend their Queen, that any non-liberal European could accept the existence of Islam in Europe. But we know of the grazers; they are wedded to their local atheist clergy and a false idea of universalism, but it is only universalism for the white race; they must love the stranger and hate themselves while the Muslim stranger and the colored stranger need only take care of their own while they destroy the infidel, who is always the white man and those who accept the white man's religion.

The liberal, the Jew, and the Muslim are at odds on so many issues, but they are one at the core of their hatred: They hate the incarnate God. Can there be a unity based only on hatred? I don't think so. The Christian European will always be opposed by liberals, Jews, and Muslims, but beyond that they will always be at war with each other. It's not our mission to side with one over the other, or to try and blend them all into one big ecumenical stew. It's our mission to hold onto the vision of the incarnate Lord bequeathed to us at our racial hearth fire by our European ancestors.

The whites' surrender to the Muslims, the liberals, the blacks, and the Jews stems from their lack of faith in Christ as the Lord of History. Christian atheists have tried to justify their betrayal of the European people by claiming that they are just being more Christian; they are perfecting their Christian faith by jettisoning the antique Europeans and their culture. But that is precisely the point. If you deny what even the antique Europeans' Muslim enemies conceded — that the Europeans' culture was Christian in all its essentials — then you deny the incarnation of our Lord. If He was not incarnate in Christian Europe then how is He to be known? Is He to be known in the future, as the Jews believe; is He only a minor prophet, as the Muslims believe; is He a social worker, as the liberals believe; or is He a weak and ineffectual pagan deity, as the blacks believe?

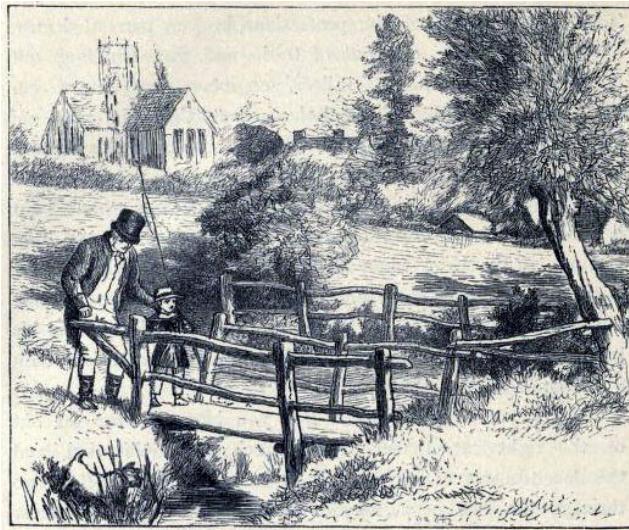
Ganelon was tried and killed, because the Europeans of that era believed Christ was incarnate in the European people. To betray them was to betray Him. The modern liberals also believe that Christ was incarnate in the antique European people. That is why they want the West to replace their heirs with Muslims. They want to show there is no going back. Once white people are no more, the Son of Man will have no place to lay His head. It is one of the great ironies of history, but an irony that makes sense from a Christian perspective, that when white people thought they were weaklings who needed Christ the Lord, they conquered the world with their creativity and their unconquerable spirit. Now that they think they are strong and independent, without any need for the incarnate Lord, they are jabbering idiots too weak to resist an invasion of ants, let alone an invasion of warlike heathens. When a mine caved in in Wales and a miner was trapped below, the miner's friends would say "Who is for Edmund Gwynn?" — or whoever was trapped below. And the man's friends would say, "I am for Edmund Gwynn," and they would go down into the mine to see if they could rescue their friend. "Who is for the antique Europeans and the Incarnate Lord?" If we bring them out of the mine that the liberals have exploded on top of them, they will rescue us. +

Blessed Provincialism

September 19, 2015

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke, Thomas Hughes



And let us not be hard on him, if at that moment his soul is fuller of the tomb and him who lies there than of the altar and Him of whom it speaks. Such stages have to be gone through, I believe, by all young and brave souls, who must win their way through hero-worship, to the worship of Him who is the King and Lord of heroes. For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him, in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell for ever and ever in perfect fullness. – [Thomas Hughes](#)

Several months ago there were massive protest marches by native-born, white Germans against the Islamization of Germany. If a minority group with 1/100th of that number had marched with a grievance against the German government, that grievance would have been taken care of in favor of the foreign-born minorities. Not so with the native-born. Despite the fact that large numbers of white Germans are against the Islamization of Germany, the German government has announced they will take 1,000,000 Syrian Moslems into their country. Most European countries, Hungary and Denmark excepted, have announced similar suicidal ‘sanctuary’ policies, differing only in the number of refugee-invaders that will be allowed in. ([11](#))

There is no need to go over old ground. This new ‘Islamization of Europe’ movement is part of the ongoing anti-European movement that Burke warned us would take place if we did not fight the Jacobins’ movement to destroy the image of God in man, which leads to the destruction of traditional governments and the traditional Christian faith of the European people. The negro, the Moslem, the yellow, and the brown, are all welcome in Europe, but the white man? He is an anathema.

I have maintained in one samizdat article after another that European men and women who love His Europe and hate Liberaldom with all their heart, mind, and soul can turn the blood-red tide of the multitudinous hordes of color and heathens away from Europe’s shores. But what evidence is there of such a groundswell of European opposition? There is no evidence, in fact, the anti-European invaders seem stronger and larger in numbers than ever before. Maybe we are destined to perish to the last man, but if the old Europe is His Europe, why would you want to try to survive by making a place for yourself in Liberaldom? That is the devil’s trap. He wants you to sell your soul in order to live in Liberaldom. It won’t work. The devil will take your soul and kill your body as well. No whites will be allowed to live in Liberaldom.

The white grazer has failed to grasp the fact that white people are a conquered race. No white man should support his local school, his local church, or “the troops”. The power structures of the Western world are at war with the white race. If whites could grasp that fact, they might at least make it a little more difficult for the Moslems and the colored savages to push them off the face of the earth. Let me use my own passive people here in America as prime examples of the foolish grazers. Every time I take one of my sons to a gun range, I see a whole host of heavily armed men testing their rifles and shotguns for deer season. These men are excellent shots and can’t wait for the big hunt. All quite masculine, isn’t it? No, it is not. Not one of these men ever shows the slightest interest in the fact that negroes, Mexicans, and Moslems have invaded their nation. I have nothing against hunting per se, but are deer a greater threat than the blood-red tide of colored tribesmen and Moslems? Of course the key is the powers that be. Our liberal government has not called the colored and Moslem invasion an invasion. If the liberals call an invasion ‘sanctuary,’ the grazers will not challenge their government. They will fly the flag, hunt, and watch football – God bless America, aren’t we glad we are so free? Free to do what? To swill beer, watch football, and shoot deer under the watchful eye of Uncle Sam? But what are we not free to do? We are not free to defend our birthright, a white Christian European nation wrested from the heathens in the days when Europeans were Christian. Football, hunting, and beer are not worth our souls.

The white grazers do not lack physical courage. If their government told them that the Moslems and colored hordes were invaders and called upon them to fight, the grazers would leave hunting and football behind to fight. What the white grazers lack is moral courage and moral vision. They won’t fight without government sanction, because they have lost the blood faith of their ancestors. What is true, what is good, is handed to them on a computer printout from the rulers in church and state, and the computer printout always tells them that the white Christian must give way to the colored strangers and the heathen faiths.

The ‘computer printout’ philosophy of existence stems from the great scholastic’s heretical view that reason was free of original sin. Henceforth it was better to be smart in the head than wise in the heart. St. Paul’s moral vision of the circumcised heart was replaced by the reasoning men who had computer printouts of God. Great poets have a way of encapsulating an intellectual state of mind with a few words. Balzac put his finger on the source of Western man’s decadence when he wrote that in Paris to say a man has a good heart is to say he is stupid as a rhinoceros. If the human heart is not connected to God, then how are we to know God? The answer the church men gave us was that we could know God by being as smart as the Greek philosophers and as detached from the incarnate God and our own people as Buddha was from all of existence. St. Paul enjoins us to rely on the charity that never faileth while our church men advise us to rely on the universal mind, which they, the proud pontificators – the scientists, the educators, the philosophers, and the theologians – insist is greater than charity. With blinding sight Burke spelled out for us the brave new world that was unfolding before our eyes in Jacobin France:

But the age of chivalry is gone; that of sophisters, economists, and calculators has succeeded, and the glory of Europe is extinguished forever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom! The unbought grace of life, the cheap defense of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise is gone. It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness. – Burke

There are religious sects, such as the Mormons, who fly in the face of the traditional Christian belief that the age of prophecy ended with the coming of Christ. We must reject such ‘religious’ sects, because they devalue the importance of the Lord of History, Jesus Christ. However, there is another sort of prophet that the Christian people have always honored – the man who judges his times and warns us what will happen “if these shadows are not altered.” Burke contrasted the ‘charity of honor’ culture of old Europe with the new Jacobin culture of utopian Babylon and enjoined Western man to stand with that ‘charity of honor’ culture against the forces of Babylon. Babylon won out, because the men of Europe wanted to be smart. And having that charity of honor is the equivalent of being as stupid as a rhinoceros in the eyes of the world. In the popular movie of the 1950s, *The Day the Earth Stood Still*, it is scientists on earth and the aliens from another planet, who are both connected to the spirit of the great universal mind, who will save the earth from utter destruction. And in the popular movie *Star*

Wars, it is The Force, not Jesus Christ, who will save us. It is always supposed to be the smarter, and therefore more religious, thing to do, to be faithful to smart scientists and theologians who invoke the great universal mind, instead of being faithful to a personal God who comes to us in and through the people of our racial hearth fire. The provincial, heartfelt, blood faith of the European has now gone underground, and that is the reason that the Moslem and colored hordes have invaded Europe. When European men once again view Christ as the God who enters human hearts, they will reclaim Europe for Him. For how can a man fight for the great god of the universal mind? He can't, but he can and will fight for his Lord and kinsman, Jesus Christ.

When love of kith and kin is interwoven with love of God, a man defends his nation, because everything he holds dear is contained in his nation. If the love of kith and kin, the love which was sanctioned by our incarnate Lord, is demonized, and the love of a universalist, abstract people and an abstract god is seen as the highest and purest religion, then utter destruction will fall upon those who believe in such a demonic faith. Is not the hatred of the incarnation of our Lord the ultimate mark of Satan? The demon pope is coming to the United States, where he will condemn, in the name of his purer, higher religion, all the provincial, traditional ties that bind the European to his hearth fire, his nation, and his God. A man needs to have a faith inside his heart so that he can resist the demon forces from outside his heart, which threaten his racial hearth fire.

In that simple masterpiece titled *Tom Brown's Schooldays* – simple because Thomas Hughes saw Christ in his kith and kin – Hughes rejects the universal mind for Jesus of Nazareth. Arnold of Rugby could not convert his son – therein lies the mystery of divine grace – but he did show the light to one student who loved him and loved Christ through Arnold of Rugby.

What was it that moved and held us, the rest of the three hundred reckless, childish boys, who feared the Doctor with all our hearts, and very little besides in heaven or earth; who thought more of our sets in the School than of the Church of Christ, and put the traditions of Rugby and the public opinion of boys in our daily life above the laws of God? We couldn't enter into half that we heard; we hadn't the knowledge of our own hearts or the knowledge of one another; and little enough of the faith, hope, and love needed to that end. But we listened...It was not the cold, clear voice of one giving advice and warning from serene heights to those who were struggling and sinning below, but the warm, living voice of one who was fighting for us and by our sides, and calling on us to help him and ourselves and one another. And so, wearily and little by little, but surely and steadily on the whole, was brought home to the young boy, for the first time, the meaning of his life—that it was no fool's or sluggard's paradise into which he had wandered by chance, but a battlefield ordained from of old, where there are no spectators, but the youngest must take his side, and the stakes are life and death. And he who roused this consciousness in them showed them at the same time, by every word he spoke in the pulpit, and by his whole daily life, how that battle was to be fought, and stood there before them their fellow-soldier and the captain of their band—the true sort of captain, too, for a boy's army—one who had no misgivings, and gave no uncertain word of command, and, let who would yield or make truce, would fight the fight out (so every boy felt) to the last gasp and the last drop of blood. Other sides of his character might take hold of and influence boys here and there; but it was this thoroughness and undaunted courage which, more than anything else, won his way to the hearts of the great mass of those on whom he left his mark, and made them believe first in him and then in his Master.

—[Tom Brown's Schooldays](#)

Tom Brown's Schooldays went from being considered a classic to being considered a mere “child’s tale,” and then was dispatched to oblivion. Its journey has been the journey of the European people. They had the faith, in all its fullness, then they relegated the faith to the stuff of fables, and finally they consigned the simple faith in Christ the Lord to oblivion and replaced it with a faith in science and Babylon. Whatever is provincial and European is evil, and whatever is universal and anti-European is good. But Christ resides in that provincial, European hearth fire. Without His leadership, the world becomes Babylon. For charity’s sake we must fight for the European hearth fire even though the experts in church and state tell us we are evil for doing so. Charity endureth forever, and Babylon consumes itself and all those who champion its cause. +

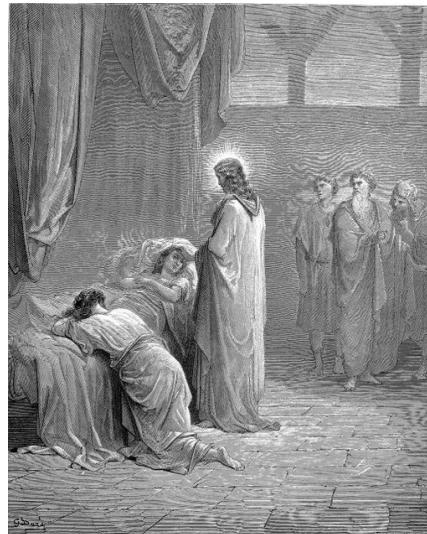
(1) I heard a news commentator say that Hungary had disgraced Europe by refusing to take in Syrian Moslems. Whom does that commentator speak for? He doesn't speak for me, nor does he speak for the white people of Hungary. He speaks for the inhuman liberals who hate their own people with a despicable, satanic hatred that marks them off from the rest of mankind and makes them unfit to live, let alone govern.

Europe and the Daughter of Jairus

September 26, 2015

Categories: Christ the Hero, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection, Sanhedrin Christianity

Tags: Shakespeare



While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat. And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done. – Luke 8: 49-56

I'm not very computer savvy, so I don't view the internet that often. Perhaps that's just as well, because when I do look at the samizdat publications on the internet there seems to be virtually no opposition to white genocide in the ranks of white Christians. All I see on the white nationalist front is neopagan opposition to Jews and white Christians, whom they lump together in one package marked for disposal in the dustbin of history. The neopagans are a rather hideous group of infidels; they love the white race as the feminists love women, that is, they love an impersonal conglomeration of white chromosomes while hating the white men of the past and present who have white souls. Just as Lady Macbeth screamed, "Unsex me here," so the neopagans scream, "Unsoul me here." It's more than depressing, it's the stuff of Shakespearean tragedy, to see white men who hate white people while loving white chromosomes.

The neopagan infidels are part of Liberaldom; they, like the Jews they claim to hate so much, hate Christian Europe and look to a new world dominated by their superior intelligence. They have chosen a different colored swine than the liberals, but they have chosen, like the liberals, to enter the cliff-bound swine rather than submit to Christ the Lord.

These are bitter times, unquestionably the worst of times for European Christians. The nations of Europe have raised the Islamic Crescent over Europe, and the United States has made the Negroid race, which is very compatible with Islam, the supreme ruling race of the nation. And the only opposition to the deification of the negro and the Islamization of Europe has come from white neopagans who hate all white Christian Europeans. But let's make one thing crystal clear: The whites are being exterminated because they once were Christian. And they have no will to resist their own extermination because they are no longer Christian. You can't become a believing Christian for practical, utilitarian reasons, but the naked truth is part of our racial history – whites did not worship negroes nor permit Moslems to invade Europe when they believed in Jesus Christ, true God and true man. When they ceased to believe in the European Christ and shifted their allegiance to the Jewish Christ, the negro-worshipping, social worker Christ, the ecumenical Christ, etc., they lost their will to defend their racial hearth fire. "If our God condemns our racial hearth fire, why should we fight for it," became the firm belief of the new and enlightened Europeans. The demon Pope first visited the atheist Fidel Castro before coming to the United States to condemn all white European Christians, all white men and women who still love the Savior in and through their people. This new anti-Christian narrative coming out of the Christian churches is a tale told by a moral idiot, signifying the death knell of Christian Europe.

That Christian Europe should die is the will of Satan. And he certainly has marshaled a large array of troops to do his bidding – the neopagans, the Jews, the Moslems, the barbarians of color, and the liberals are all arrayed against the last remnant of Europeans. But Satan has never understood the divine love. Christ cares about His people. In this, their greatest trial, He will not leave them defenseless. Driven to extremities they will finally let go of their 'systems' and find God. The great satanic error of the modern church men has been their belief that they can create a system that makes a deep, heartfelt faith unnecessary. Their belief in a religious system has made, in the church men's eyes, individual people with hearts of flesh unnecessary. All that concerns the powers that be in organized Christianity, which has become organized Jewry, is human beings in the aggregate. "If white people no longer support our system, then we'll cater to the Mexicans, the blacks, the Orientals, or even the Moslems. What is important is that the system survives." But the true God is not concerned with numbers and systems. He cares about what is in the human heart. What He wants is hearts that respond to His heart. So we are back to the antique Europeans again. If we respond to their vision of Christ, which is the vision of the true God, we will be united to His sacred heart. That doesn't guarantee we will triumph in this world. When has Christ ever promised that kind of triumph? But it does mean that we will fight for those we love, because He is in our people as we are in Him: "And there reigns love and all love's loving parts..."

The incredible hatred for the Christ-bearing people that motivates the liberal, the neopagan, and the anti-Christian church men stems from the Caiaphas principle. Caiaphas knew there was something special about Christ; quite possibly he knew He was the Son of God. But if the true King, the Messiah, had really come into the world, what would happen to Caiaphas? Would the true King smash Caiaphas's enemies and make his position of high priest even greater? Or would Christ do nothing against Caiaphas's enemies other than tell them that they too could inherit eternal life? Caiaphas's anger reached a satanic white heat when he realized that Christ had not come to set up a kingdom on earth for Caiaphas and his friends, He had come to provide eternal life, something a [Sadducee](#) had no need of, because he didn't believe in any world but this world. Thus moral pariahs, with their visions of power in this world only, always have no place for the Son of God. Christ can only appeal to those who have reached the Shakespearean depths of life. Hamlet, Lear, and Cordelia all knew what it means to have a God whose "bosom is endeared with all hearts." The colored savages, the Jews, the Jewish-minded neopagans, the power-mad, grasping, fawning church men, and the liberals do not.

'Tis strange indeed that our King would come to us in mean apparel and consent to be crucified between two thieves, but He did just that, because it was the only way to reach our hearts. If you ever get a chance, take a look at the movie called *Strange Cargo*. It is an allegorical tale of the Christ. He comes to earth in the form of a convict, and He brings a group of hardened convicts to faith and redemption through contact with His sacred heart. All save one are saved. And the one who resists the divine love? He is the intellectual. Therein is the tragedy of Western man writ large. He is too smart to let Christ come into his heart. If we look at the Europeans' journey from faith to darkness, we can see that the Europeans lost their way sometime after World War I. No doubt that war was a manifestation of the Europeans' new faith in systems and science over Christ. From that time on, the 'conservatives' ceased to write about preserving their people; instead they wrote about preserving democracy and capitalism. Great Christian works from the 19th century, such as [Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush](#) and [Tom Brown's School Days](#), were regarded as sentimental slop from an unscientific age, and great 20th century Christian works, such as C. S. Lewis's *Chronicles of Narnia*, were seen only as children's books. But I am not impressed with the deluge of filth that the liberals call 'modern literature,' nor am I impressed with the scientific thinking of the neopagans. I am impressed – I am moved to tears – by the moral vision of the antique Europeans who saw beauty on the Cross and judged all things by His honor code, which was (and is) "that charity of honor."

Like Theseus, we must face the Minotaur, only this time we enter the maze of existence as Christian warriors. Whether it is the colored barbarians, the Moslems, or the fifth columnists in the ranks of the Jews, the neopagans, or the church men, we cannot allow His people to perish from the earth without a fight. Right now the Europeans are dead men. Their leaders have

already started the funeral rites. But who, when he walked this earth, brought the dead to life? There is life in the European people still if we do not give up on the European fairy tale, which tells us of a third dumb brother who became King of all the realm, because he had a heart on fire with charity.

Faith needs a local habitation. It is essential, now that Europeans have lost their geographical home, that they stay with their racial home. In that home is their past, their present, and their future. They belong with Alfred and Tell and the hearth fire Christians of old Europe. And they can stand with those men and women now, when they have no spot of ground to call their own. And the future? They have eternal Europe, which has the room their Savior has prepared for them.

We do not love white chromosomes without an animating spirit. We love our racial hearth fire, because He dwells there amongst His people. We shall always have a home so long as we see His divine love and our people as one incorporate union. We know that the white-hating, Christ-hating minions of Satan will not abate their fury. They will continue until the end of time. They will not be defeated on this earth until Christ returns. But they should not be permitted a free hand. Wherever European hearts stay connected to His sacred Heat, the Kingdom of God is present. It is within our power to make that connection, in and through our people. Nothing is written except this: "Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." +

Like to a Tenement or a Pelting Farm

October 3, 2015
Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



This blessed plot, this earth,
this realm, this England,
This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,
Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth,
Renowned for their deeds as far from home,
For Christian service and true chivalry,
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry,
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's Son,
This land of such dear souls, this dear dear land,
Dear for her reputation through the world,
Is now leased out, I die pronouncing it,
Like to a tenement or pelting farm:
England, bound in with the triumphant sea
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege
Of wat'ry Neptune, is now bound in with shame,
With inky blots and rotten parchment bonds:
That England, that was wont to conquer others,
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself.
Ah, would the scandal vanish with my life,
How happy then were my ensuing death!

All of the modern European nations fit John of Gaunt's description of a debased England. They have been leas'd out to Moslems, colored savages, and stubborn Jewry. What is happening in the small town in which I live is a perfect example in miniature of what is happening in the European nations on a larger scale. The town used to be an all-white town. Older people of the town, whose hearts indignant break over the changes they have seen in the town over the last 70-plus years they have lived here, tell of a bygone time when no negroes, mulattoes, Mexicans, or Moslems lived here. But that has all changed. Every block of the town has a few genuine white homes which are surrounded by rental units with the usual assortment of negroes, mulattoes, Mexicans, and Moslems. Diversity is everywhere, even in small town America. Who rents to the third world invaders? Slum landlords, who have moved out to the country, not to farm – heavens, no – they have moved out to avoid the colored hordes that they rent to, because the government guarantees their rent. Like the revelers in Poe's short story ["The Masque of the Red Death."](#) the slumlords hope to stave off the colored plague by moving further away from it, while it consumes the poorer whites who cannot flee to the country. Serves them right anyway, their very poverty proves that they are unfit to live in the gated communities and country houses of the white elect – the liberals and the liberal conservatives who hate the whites, their own people, while loving and worshipping, from a safe distance, the colored strangers. Of course, in Poe's tale the revelers in the gated-community house do not escape the red death. Nor will our modern white revelers escape the Moslems and the colored savages. The people who know only sacrifice, not mercy, will not stop at the gates of the white liberals. They will invade the gated-community homes and the country estates as well, because a people without a racial home will not have the spiritual backbone to defend their geographical homeland.

The great liberal death wish that [Muggeridge](#) wrote about in 1979 exists, but it does not exist in quite the way Muggeridge described it. The liberals do not wish to die themselves. They fear death as Poe's revelers feared the plague. That is why they have a death wish; they wish for the death of the white race so that they will be spared. You see, their death wish has a liberal caveat: "If we sacrifice our people, we shall be saved." The Moslem and colored hordes did not consent to the liberals' caveat, but the liberal believes in that caveat. This is why the liberal, and the grazers whom the liberal commands, does not bat an eye when South African whites are butchered and murdered by their colored overlords. "Those are the bad whites. They must be sacrificed so the colored gods will be appeased and let the good whites live." But since the colored barbarians are not gods of mercy, they will not let the white-hating liberals and the stupefied grazers live, but the liberal and the grazer do not believe that. 'Though he slay *thee*, yet will I love and serve my savage god,' is the creed of the liberal and his grazers.

When a town or a nation is leased out to strangers, people who have no knowledge of or interest in the traditions, manners, and customs of the people who used to reside there, the older traditions, manners, and customs die out. And that is what has happened in the European towns and nations. The Moslems and the colored savages have imposed their traditions, manners, and customs on the European people.

The liberals rejoice in the death of everything European, but they reserve the right to enjoy the pleasurable fruits of European culture. For a little while they can indulge their hypocritical lifestyles, but for how long? I recently saw a few minutes (which was all I could take) of a PBS special on Mary of Peter, Paul, and Mary fame. The matronly, liberal, earth goddess lived on a beautiful country estate, still singing radical folk songs, and still enjoying an opulent, white lifestyle that had been acquired by singing folk songs about evil white people. Had the liberal Mary taken that jet plane, along with Peter and Paul, to blackest Africa and stayed there, she would still be a disgusting liberal, but at least she would be a consistent liberal.

Many white people in town and nation bitterly regret the death of a way of life that they loved, and they look back wistfully at the days gone by. But bitterness and a nostalgic regret are not sufficient. There must be righteous anger at the loss of our European culture. Why is that essential link in the chain, righteous anger at what has been taken away from us, missing in the European people? I place the blame squarely on organized Christianity, which has become a greater anti-European, anti-Christian force than organized Jewry. The first indication that organized Christianity was a breeding ground for the religious indifference that makes a man incapable of defending his culture and his people was the French Revolution. The reason ten

thousand swords did not leap from the scabbards of French cavaliers when their King and Queen were threatened was because the French clergy were advocates for their intellectual system of Christianity over and against the Pauline Christianity of the heart. They were indifferent to what was in the hearts of their people so long as their people rejected all other Christian systems and gave outward assent to the system of the French clergymen:

I have no doubt that some miserable bigots will be found here, as well as elsewhere, who hate sects and parties different from their own more than they love the substance of religion, and who are more angry with those who differ from them in their particular plans and systems than displeased with those who attack the foundation of our common hope. These men will write and speak on the subject in the manner that is to be expected from their temper and character. Burnet says that when he was in France, in the year 1683, "the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this — they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly." If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story, because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is "much too much") amongst ourselves. – [Edmund Burke](#)

A Christian system, with its own philosophy and its special catechism, is not enough to sustain a man's faith in Jesus Christ, because there is no room in such a system for human beings, human beings with hearts that yearn for a communion with His sacred heart. There was no French opposition to the French Revolution for the same reason there is currently no opposition to the Moslem and colored invasion of Europe. The clergy refuse to support the European Christ, who can only be known in and through His people. Such a Christ is an anathema to clerical bureaucrats who must abstract God so they can dissect Him in a science lab of their own construction. Once they have put God in their science lab, they can claim exclusive rights to Him. Only they, the men in the white lab coats, can dispense God to their followers. But such a God cannot stir human hearts. God is not dead, He still lives, but He has been replaced by a false, bloodless, academic God.

The vast majority of whites do not attend church, so why do I claim that it is organized Christianity that is the main obstacle to the Christian European counter-revolution? I make such a claim, because men are motivated by their religion. Men and women without religious faith are mere sheep that are acted upon; they are not actors in the pageant of human events. (1) The Jews, the Moslems, and the colored savages are all acting according to their pagan faiths. They differ in degree, but they are united in their pagan opposition to the one true religion, which transcends paganism. It is of no small consequence then that the leaders of the Christian churches have returned to paganism by way of the Academy. They have made Christianity into a pagan philosophy. But philosophy does not have the power to combat Islam, Jewry, or black voodoo. Philosophy lacks a human heart. The great haters of European Christianity are engaged with all their heart, mind, and soul in their war against the European people. But the European people, deprived of a heartfelt religious faith, can only latch onto one of the anti-European pagan faiths, be it Islam, negro worship, or Evangelical Zionism, in order to satisfy the longing in their empty hearts.

Is all this too fantastical? I don't think so. Why do the people who once conquered the world now lease out their nations to heathens and colored savages? Falstaff withered and died because the "King hath killed his heart." Christ was the heart of Europe. When our people were united to His heart, we did not make a shameful conquest of ourselves, but instead we conquered other nations in His name. The defense of Europe will not come from the academy in church or state. The defense will come from Europeans who break with Churchianity and return to the God who enters human hearts. I don't know that such a return will come about, but I do know that there will be no defense of our people and sacred Europe unless that Pauline struggle against principalities and powers, which takes place in the human heart, replaces the mind-forged liberalism of the modern, Christ-less Christian churches. If we go back to those first Christian Europeans, the men who left Woden for Christ, we do not see universalists. Those men, our brothers in the faith, did not think that they had to betray the people of their own hearth fire in order to follow Christ. Their love of Christ intensified their love for their own people. That intense love for one's own, in and through the Savior, marked off the European Christian from the pagans who loved their generic tribe outside of the personal love of the living God. Now the antique European must ask the modern Europeans, "You all did love Him once, not without cause, for what cause have you now abandoned Him?" Of course, the answer comes back to us on a silver plate which would total 30 pieces of silver if melted down. "We have left Him, because we value the fleshpots of Babylon in this world more than eternal kinship with Him in this world and His hypothetical world to come." So be it then, but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord. +

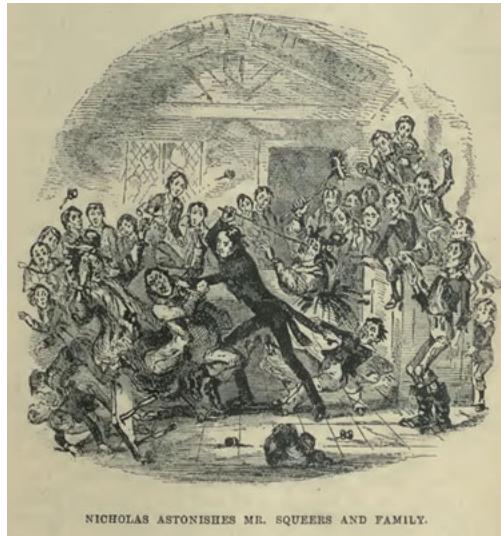
(1) We know, and it is our pride to know, that man is by his constitution a religious animal; that atheism is against, not only our reason, but our instincts; and that it cannot prevail long. But if, in the moment of riot, and in a drunken delirium from the hot spirit drawn out of the alembic of hell, which in France is now so furiously boiling, we should uncover our nakedness, by throwing off that Christian religion which has hitherto been our boast and comfort, and one great source of civilization amongst us, and amongst many other nations, we are apprehensive (being well aware that the mind will not endure a void) that some uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition might take place of it. [Burke](#)

The One Great Truth

October 10, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



NICHOLAS ASTONISHES MR. SQUEERS AND FAMILY.

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. —Burke

Squeers caught the boy firmly in his grip; one desperate cut had fallen on his body—he was wincing from the lash and uttering a scream of pain—it was raised again, and again about to fall—when Nicholas Nickleby, suddenly starting up, cried ‘Stop!’ in a voice that made the rafters ring.

‘Who cried stop?’ said Squeers, turning savagely round.

‘I,’ said Nicholas, stepping forward. ‘This must not go on.’

—*Nicholas Nickleby* by Charles Dickens

Since the French Revolution, the forces of utopian unreality have been at war with the European folk who lived by the accumulated wisdom of their ancestors, who relied on the non-utopian intangibles such as faith, hope, and charity to maintain their civilization. The utopians eschewed such ‘hackneyed and antiquated’ intangibles for an abstract future, which was always about to come to fruition but never quite materialized. In the meantime the utopian liberals have put all the propaganda machines of the western world into the business of utopia. By maintaining a stranglehold on what people see and hear, the liberals have kept utopian unreality in the forefront of the Europeans’ lives, while the reality of the European folk, the reality of home, race, and faith has gone underground, never – the utopians hope – to appear above ground again.

One would think that reality would have some advantage over unreality, but when have men ever preferred reality to unreality? Except for that span of years in which the Christian Europeans walked this earth, unreality has always been the preferred existential state of mankind. The utopian revolt of the Europeans was and is an attempt to become like the pagan non-Europeans – to return to sex and blood cults in order to escape the unbearable reality of existence in this world. It is impossible to transcend, rather than escape reality, without faith in Christ, because without faith in Christ life is unbearable. Virgil knew that he needed a savior that was more than nature, and so did Sophocles, but such poets were a minority in pagan times.

The utopians will always attack anyone who says or does anything that even remotely resembles a truthful revelation about the reality of existence. I thought of that fact as I listened to The Obama drone on about the necessity of gun control in the wake of the shootings at that small college in Oregon. And I thought of that fact when I saw how the media reported and continues to report the Muslim invasion of Europe. In the case of the school shootings, the liberals’ good little black puppet droned on about the necessity of gun control; nothing was said about the necessity of negro control. In fact the shooter was a half-breed; his father was white and his mother was black. But you wouldn’t know that if you looked at the doctored photo of the shooter put out by the mainstream media. And why dwell on the unreality of the gun-control red herring? The cities with the strictest gun control have the highest crime rates, which makes sense to everyone but utopians. If criminals know that the citizens they hope to victimize are armed, then they are less likely to attack the armed citizenry. This is why liberals advocate gun control; they do not want any negroes to be injured or killed as they go about their holy work, which is the extermination of white people. In Baltimore and Ferguson the negroes have carte blanche power to kill the whites, because of the perception that the police in those cities are racist, which means no white man in those cities must ever defend himself, his family, or his friends; all whites must give themselves up for sacrifice to the black Moloch.

The liberals in Europe proper have dealt with the Muslim invasions just as the European American liberals have dealt with the Mexican-negroid invasion. They have demonized the whites that oppose the invasion, and they have lied about the support, among whites, for the invasion. The liberal Stentors (those people in control of the propaganda machinery) pick out a dozen or so stooges to meet the Muslims at the train stations in order to show that native whites are truly happy to have Muslims in their native land. But the millions of anti-Muslim protestors are ignored. Hungary is called a “disgrace” by the liberal Stentors, but the real Europeans, the native-born, support the Hungarian government and wish their governments had the backbone to do likewise. The feminist prime minister of Germany, Angela Merkel’s, reaction to German protests to her ‘one million Muslims’ policy was to demand Facebook shut down criticism of her inhuman utopian support of the Muslim invasion of Germany. Ganelon’s treachery pales in comparison to Merkel’s treachery. If merciless cruelty comes with utopian platitudes we are supposed to accept it. Why? I applaud those Germans and other Europeans who are protesting their governments’ anti-white policies. If this new wave of Islamic invaders is not stopped, Europeans will have no recourse other than the violent overthrow of their respective governments. When a government hates its own people, when it has become Ganelon-ized, it ceases to be a government; it has become a tyrannical cabal of bloodthirsty fiends who must be destroyed before they destroy their own people, whom they regard as disposable waste, not as their people.

The utopians always regard traditional Christian views of God, marriage, and private property as evils that must be eradicated. And the eradicators are the elect, a small cabal of thinking men who dictate, for the good of the people, what must be done so that utopia can flourish. White people are always found to be, by the elect, too moribund, too attached to the old ways, so the men of intellect look to the heathens of color to fill up the utopian ranks. Every single European government is committed to the implementation of Utopia, which, from a Christian perspective, is the implementation of the kingdom of hell on earth. All the propaganda apparatuses of the western world, which are considerable, have been developed to obscure the one utopian fact of life from the European people – In order for utopia to thrive, the Europeans must die. They can watch sporting events and porno as they go to their deaths, but they must die, because of the sins of their fathers, who eschewed utopia for the reality of Christ crucified, Christ risen. Ah, there’s the rub. The utopians do not believe in Christ risen, so they seek to raise generic mankind, minus the white race, from the chains of Christianity.

However, if the Europeans’ visionary eye is diverted from the stentorian shell game of utopian democracy, new vistas of opportunity open up to him. He can form alliances with other Europeans who are opposed to utopia and gradually develop a government within his nation that will ultimately replace the utopian government. It’s not the work of a moment; the

visionary eye must be focused on the cross and the empty tomb, but once the unreality of utopian liberalism is seen in all its satanic evil the men who see with blinding sight will begin to dismantle utopia.

The moment of moral clarity must come before the European can claim his own again. Nicholas Nickleby finally sees that there can be no compromise with Satan: "Stop, this must not go on," he commands as he steps forward to stop the torture of innocent children. The greatest warriors on earth are Europeans who step forth, motivated by charity. "There are people of our own race being murdered there," Havelock said of Cawnpore and Lucknow. Our people are being murdered in the here and now, but the utopian murders go deeper than the murders of Europeans at Cawnpore and Lucknow. The modern Europeans are being murdered in their soul as well as in the body. To live in Liberaldom, subject to the laws of Liberaldom, is to live defiled. A man who cannot see anything beyond the colored gods and utopian creeds of Liberaldom is a man without a soul. To leave the soul-killing fleshpots of Liberaldom, a man must see the moral vision of the antique Europeans, who truly were and are the Christ-bearing people. Faith, hope, and charity cannot be sustained without a people who can give those intangibles a local habitation in their hearts and can give a name to the God who is the embodiment of our faith, our hope, and our charity.

We know neither the day nor the hour, nor do we know if our Lord shall find faith on earth when He returns. But we, the Europeans, do know that the best of our race bore witness to the reality of evil and the reality of one who was born to redeem us from evil. The desolation – the drugs, the sexual perversions, the suicidal despair – of modern Europe points to the truth of the ancient faith of our people. We cannot live in Utopia! We were meant for something much better than this 'earthly paradise', which is in reality a hellish nightmare. This nightmare phase of the European pilgrimage must end in our complete destruction — or in our deliverance. The European people will have all or nothing; we cannot be content with a pagan in-between. Because of our Christian past, we can never return to the 'happy' pagan state to which the utopians want us to return.

If we look at the reality of life on this earth, we will not see happy pagans. Sophocles had the last word on paganism: "Better for man that he was never born." There is no utopia; that is a reality. But is there a place for us in His Father's house? The European people who refused to be part of utopia told us of such a place. As the heathen Muslims and the colored hordes descend upon Europe, at the invitation of the liberal elites of every European nation, the European people need to decide whom they believe – the utopians or the Christ-bearers? If they believe in the vision of the utopians, then they should lay down and die, for that is what their utopian leaders have commanded. But if they believe in the vision of the Christ-bearers, they have work to do. They must practice the type of charity that fights in defense of one's racial hearth fire, which encompasses all those intangibles – faith, hope, and charity – that the Christ-bearing people, the true Europeans, once championed and defended in spite of the opposition of the entire pagan world. What are numbers to Christian soldiers armed with the one great truth — charity never faileth? +

When Babylon Is Dust

October 17, 2015

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Robert Louis Stevenson



"Why!" exclaimed Peter. "It's England. And that's the house itself—Professor Kirk's old home in the country where all our adventures began!"

"I thought that house had been destroyed," said Edmund.

"So it was," said the Faun. "But you are now looking at the England within England, the real England just as this is the real Narnia. And in that inner England no good thing is destroyed."

—*The Last Battle* by C. S. Lewis

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

—*Revelations* 21:2

In her book *Familiar London*, Rose Barton quotes Samuel Johnson: "He who is tired of London is tired of existence." She goes on to say why she agrees with Johnson: "I never leave London without a pang. I never come back to it without realizing afresh its beauty and its turmoil. I love the Town."

I understand Rose Barton's sentiments completely, because I share them. In fact, I feel that way about all of Europe: I love her. It's not a question of which do I love more – my family or Europe. I love my family in and through Europe; I can't separate the two loves. A nation, like a man, has a soul. Millions upon millions of individual men and women lived and died in that nation and left their spiritual mark, for good or ill, upon their nation. At the mystical core of Europe, after thousands of years of turmoil and strife, is Jesus Christ, true God and true man. That is why I can't separate my love of Europe from the love of my family. We cannot live outside His love. If our nation has Christ at its mystical center, and all European nations do have Christ at their mystical core, we cannot leave our nation, because all that we love – our God and our kith and kin — are there.

Europeans do not feel any great desire to defend themselves against the Muslim and colored hordes, because they no longer love the mystical core of their nation. They don't see their people and their God as one incorporate union. With every word they utter, our churchmen proclaim their opposition to European pietas. The churchmen hate Christ. Let us never lose sight of that fact. As Burke said of the French Jacobins, so it is with the modern churchmen. They can't strike out at God directly, so they seek to destroy His image in man. This is why Muslims, negroes, Chinamen, etc., are all welcome in the European nations, but white people are not welcome. He is at the mystical core of the European people, and He is hated by the European liberals in church and state.

The land mass called Europe is nothing more than a land mass without the white race. When I first walked through a fog on a London street, I was excited because it was a *London* fog, not because I loved fog in and of itself. It was the same when I travelled through the Scottish Highlands. The scenery was quite beautiful, but that was not what made the trek akin to a pilgrimage for me. It was because of Walter Scott, the great Christian poet, that I saw Scotland as sacred ground. The same type of scenery in a heathen nation would have no effect on me. How could it be otherwise? Our race is part and parcel of our soul. When we place our racial imprint on a land mass, we infuse our spirit into that land mass, and it becomes a nation. For centuries the nations of Europe were Christian, "agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines," but Christian at their mystical core. And they were Christian because the European people took Christ into their hearts; they were not Christian nations because of any religious system. Just as we must grasp the fact that Jacob Marley was really dead before anything wonderful can come from *A Christmas Carol*, so must we grasp the fact that to systematize God is to kill Him, before we can step away from the systems and find the Christ of old Europe. Caiaphas would not acknowledge the living God because he had already created a pagan system that excluded God. So he ordered the death of the living God. All subsequent religious systematizers have imitated Caiaphas and ordered the death of the living God so that their religious system could survive and flourish. Faith does not reside in the organized churches, it resides in the Christian folk, who are, as Fitzhugh maintained, the only truly infallible source of the Christian revelation. It is less systematic and much messier to rely on human hearts infused with the love of His divinely human heart, but what choice do we have? The systems have failed; isn't it time that we reject the satanically inspired Grand Inquisitors who told us the truth in honest trifles, while lying to us in deepest consequence about the one great thing?

The invasion of Europe and her European satellites is proceeding at an ever-increasing and deadly rate at present, because of the so-called sanctuary movement of the Muslims from Syria to the various European nations. This current invasion of Europe was made possible by the fact that the European people have lost contact with their mystical core. Their great cathedrals, their art museums, and their monuments are no longer symbols of a living history. They are lifeless relics of a people that once lived in the hand of the living God. Without their mystical core, the Europeans had already surrendered, long before the actual invasion, to the Muslims and the colored savages. A Shakespearean theater in Britain only has value to Christian Europeans. Why should modern, Christ-hating Europeans care if Muslims destroy that theater and replace it with a mosque? They don't care; in fact, the liberal stentors seem to delight in the destruction of everything that reminds them of Christian Europe. "Let all that we inherited from our Christian ancestors dissolve and be replaced by Babylon," is the great desire of the Christ-hating elite of the European world.

Against the European liberals and the Babylonian hordes stand the Europeans who still cling to the mystical core of their people, for "there reigns love and all love's loving parts." We should fight for every inch of Christian Europe. We should fight until every last Muslim and colored savage has been driven from Europe. But even if the liberals and the Babylonians take over the land mass that we once called Europe they still will not have conquered sacred Europe. That Europe is a spiritual entity that will always exist so long as two or three Europeans are gathered together in His name. It is vital that we hold on to that essential truth of existence – there is a spirit above the pagan dust of this world. If we stay at the mystical center of Europe, we will know the name of that spirit and we will champion His cause against all the world. I always liken the Christian Europeans' plight in the modern world to that of Alexander Smollet's plight when he and a few followers are surrendered by superior numbers of pirates on a tropical island far away from their native England:

Now you'll hear me. If you'll come up one by one, unarmed, I'll engage to clap you all in irons and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won't, my name is Alexander Smollett, I've flown my sovereign's colours, and I'll see you all to Davey Jones.

We no longer have a Christian nation to which we can take prisoners, should we take any prisoners in this war against principalities and powers. In point of fact, should we return with Babylonian prisoners we would be locked up and executed for the sin of racism, because Europe has become the defender of Babylon. But Alexander Smollett is still our exemplar. It is his spirit of uncompromising defiance against the forces of Babylon that we must maintain. Smollett has the wise blood of a European. He cares nothing for numbers when he fights for Christian Europe, because he knows he does not stand alone, he stands with the God who is at the mystical center of Europe. There is no dichotomy between the child in the manger and the Alpha and the Omega. He is the same man. He is the hero that appears in thousands of European story books, who steps forth when all seems lost, to comfort the mourner and to fight for that charity of honor. The hero is the child in the manger, and He is the Alpha and Omega – He is our Lord and our kinsman, Jesus Christ.

For many years I avoided reading the book of *Revelation*, because its devotees seemed to be deranged and something apart from traditional Christianity. But when it came time to home school my children, I wanted to acquaint them with the entire Bible, which included the book of *Revelation*. I found such comfort in that magnificent story book! It's not a book which tells us of the day and the hour, nor is it a mystical puzzle book. It is His story book, the greatest of the European story books, that tells how a seemingly dumb peasant boy conquers every evil of the world armed only with a heart on fire with divine charity. This is what sustains the European – His story of divine charity:

Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name."

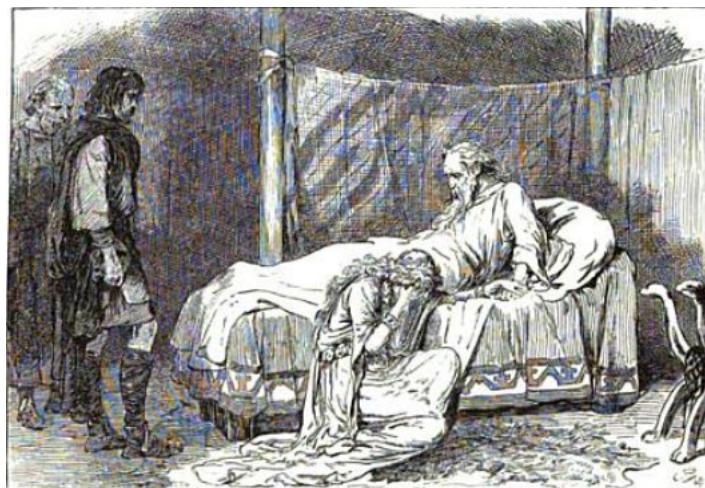
The Babylonian hordes will invade the European nations, but that will not change the mystical core of Europe. That core consists of those Europeans who know that His name is Jesus, the morning star of Europe, the star that will still shine over Europe when Babylon is dust. +

Breaking Free of the Pagan Wheel of Fire

October 24, 2015

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare, Thomas Hughes



You do me wrong to take me out o' th' grave
Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears
Do scald like molten lead.

-King Lear

And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you. And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word.

-Matthew 28: 5-8

When I was in my early twenties, abortion was legalized in the United States, and in reaction to the liberals' technological barbarism a number of "pro-life" groups sprung up. I belonged to several pro-life groups until we parted ways over the proper way to defend the unborn. I thought, considering what abortion was, that the "war against abortion" should entail all that the word war implied. Nathan Bedford Forrest put it quite well: "War means fighting and fighting means killing." There was a lack of proportionality, which has increased over the years, between what the pro-lifers said abortion was – the murder of an innocent child – and what they proposed to do about abortion – write letters to their congressmen and educate liberals. Congress turned a deaf ear to anti-abortion protestors, and the liberals refused to be educated, because legalized abortion was not the result of a misunderstanding – the liberals knew they were sanctioning mass murder. What was needed were Christian warriors who were willing to do unto abortion doctors and liberals according to what the abortion doctors and liberals were doing unto babies. That never happened. What did happen was what always happens when the lukewarm try to fight a satanically-inspired enemy with empty platitudes instead of hearts of fire. The pro-lifers were absorbed by the liberals and became the greatest opponents of anti-abortion violence. Being polite to liberals so that they would not be able to label pro-lifers as "violent" and "undemocratic" was more important to pro-lifers than the lives of unborn babies. Thus legalized abortion became a sacred rite, and the pro-lifers assuaged their consciences by protesting against the sale of the murdered babies' body parts. This is supposed to be a much more practical and democratic means of "fighting" abortion. Really? Wouldn't it be more "practical" to stop the abortions by killing the abortionists before the babies were murdered rather than trying to reprimand the body parts' salesmen after the fact? The pro-life movement was dead from its inception, because pro-lifers appealed to "our democratic tradition of equal rights for all," in order to put an end to legalized abortion. But it was our democratic tradition of equality, fraternity, and liberty that brought legalized abortion upon us. Why should we seek redemption from the devil? The pro-lifers condemned their Christian European past (they regularly equated abortion with Southern slavery in order to curry favor with the liberals), and by condemning their past they thought the liberals would end abortion, based on a secularized myth of equal rights. How little the pro-lifers understood the Jacobin nature of American democracy. 'Some are always more equal than others.'

The white nationalist movement, to the extent that it is a movement, has followed in the path of the pro-lifers. The white nationalists do not look to the European people's Christian past for the strength to fight the liberals and the barbarians of color. Instead they condemn the Christian Europeans — some have even gone so far as to condemn the white South Africans for practicing apartheid — and look to a new pagan, white Übermensch, who will play a leading role in the New World Order. But once you choose to fight secularized Jacobins with the atheistic assumptions and democratic platitudes of those same Jacobins, you will be absorbed by the Jacobins and destroyed by them.

There is no strength, no blood, in our Nordic, Greco-Roman heritage if we see that heritage as an end in and of itself. Those pagan civilizations only have significance because in the end the best of the pagans bent their knees to Christ. Europeans do not have a Nordic, Greco-Roman heritage, they have only one heritage, just as there is only one God. Christ became the Europeans' hero God, the one true God to whom all the heroes of the Norsemen, the Greeks, and the Romans gave way. The philosophers of Greece and Rome never did give way to Christ, and they have always constituted a fifth column in the ranks of the Christian Europeans.

The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

The pagan wheel has come full circle. Platonic Gnosticism serves as the intellectual backdrop, and paganism, devoid of faith, serves as the white nationalists' flag. Their quarrel with the Jacobin left is an interneceine quarrel that can only result in the absorption and then the destruction of the white nationalist movement at the hands of the Jacobin left.

St. Paul speaks to us still: he speaks of a better way, he speaks of the true faith, the only faith for men of blood, the faith in the God-man who knows not Kismet, who knows not demographics: He knows only charity, and He comes to us only through charity. The bards of Christian Europe confirm the Biblical truth: God has written the European people into His story. If we stay true to that story, we will not be defeated by "the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday."

Lear feels that he is bound upon a wheel of fire, that his "own tears do scald like molten lead." It is Cordelia's charity that lessens Lear's pain on that existential wheel of fire, and it is Christ's divine charity that lessens our pain on that same wheel of fire, and gives us hope that the endless circular wheel of paganism, the wheel of fire, can be turned into a straight path that leads to His Father's house. Our people did not 'will' a God of their own making into existence by virtue of their minds. They found their creator because they had hearts of flesh, willing to receive Him. We are the Christ-bearing people, not the God-creating people. Pride of race, pride of intellect belong to the heathens of color and the philosophers, theologians, and scientists – the fifth column. The Christ-bearing European has the love of race, a mind subordinate to His mind, and a heart in communion with His heart. This was our ancestors' faith, and it is the type of faith that makes a man stand athwart the pass and cry 'halt' to the heathen invasion of Europe.

I first came across the blasphemy that the white man 'created' his own God in an article by Kevin Strom. Since that time I have seen it repeated countless times in articles by the intellectual brain trust of the new white nationalists. This won't do. If a man doesn't believe in Christ, he will serve Satan. Even though the non-believer doesn't believe in Satan, the archangel still exists, and he will use the Christian apostate to serve his purposes. He will come to him in one of his many disguises. He comes to the liberal church men in the form of the black messiah; he comes to the white nationalists in the form of a disembodied white intellect who plays at demographics, democracy, and science. The battle against the colored hordes has not yet begun, because the true European, the Christian European, has yet to enter the lists. When he does, he will draw others to him, just as Christ does, and the counterrevolution will begin.

Nothing better illustrates the lack of an integral Christian European influence in the modern world than the perpetual apologies that are on the lips of every white European. The apologies are cheap, vicious apologies, because they are not personal apologies. They are apologies for dead white males who stand before the liberal docket accused of racism and sexism. And they stand before the white nationalist tribunal accused of idiocy and a lack of scientific acumen. (They actually believed that Christ rose from the dead on the third day!) But it is God Himself whom the liberals and the neo-pagans have placed in the dock when they continually apologize for the white Christians of old Europe, because our people's vision of God was true. If they stand condemned, then so does God. Where will the moderns go, to whom will they turn now that they have placed the Christian God in the dock and found Him wanting? We have seen where they will go. They have returned to the pagan wheel of fire. And to whom? Their saviors are legion – the black messiah, the yellow gods, the white, disembodied intellect – the gods who are legion are as infinite as the sands of the desert. The apology culture of the new Europeans leaves us in a vast empty universe that is devoid of all faith, honor, and love.

Portia begs Shylock to be merciful, but he will have his pound of flesh:

PORTRIA
Why, this bond is forfeit!
And lawfully by this the Jew may claim
A pound of flesh to be by him cut off
Nearest the merchant's heart.—Be merciful.
Take thrice thy money. Bid me tear the bond.

SHYLOCK
When it is paid according to the tenor.
It doth appear you are a worthy judge.
You know the law. Your exposition
Hath been most sound. I charge you by the law,
Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar,
Proceed to judgment. By my soul I swear
There is no power in the tongue of man
To alter me. I stay here on my bond.

Therein lies the tragedy of the post-Christian European. He has become like unto the unrepentant Jew: he will have his pound of flesh from the ancient Europeans, because they are responsible for every evil under the sun. But from whom is the modern European really demanding a pound of flesh? Who stands behind the antique Europeans? It is the God who said, "I will have mercy, not sacrifice." +

A Sentimental Attachment

October 31, 2015

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Johanna Spyri, John Sharp Williams, Richard Weaver



And yet, my friends, there are people who say that all this sort of talk is “sentiment;” that what we want to do is to “come down to cotton and corn and pork;” buying and selling, negotiating your bank exchange; that everything else is “sentiment,” and that sentiment is “rot.” Let it be a point with you, young boys and girls, to remember that the only thing in this world which is not “rot” is sentiment. That thing is rot which can last a man only a lifetime—which rusts and corrupts and decays—that thing, in other words, which can rot. Your cotton and produce are “rot;” your bank exchange is “rot;” your talk about mere material prosperity, as the chief aim and object and existence of man, is “rot,” because when you come to lie down and die and be placed within your narrow habitation, six or seven feet by three or four, not one of these things, nor things gained in this way, can you carry with you, nor present as a part of yourself at the chancery of God.

— [Issues of the War Discussed](#) by John Sharp Williams

This brings us to the necessity of concluding that the upholders of mere dialectic, whether they appear in this modern form or in another, are among the most subversive enemies of society and culture. They are attacking an ultimate source of cohesion in the interest of a doctrine which can issue only in nullity. It is no service to man to impugn his feeling about the world qua feeling. Feeling is the source of that healthful tension between man and what is – both objectively and subjectively. If man could be brought to believe that all feeling about the world is wrong, there would be nothing for him but collapse.

— [Visions of Order](#) by Richard Weaver

The other day I mentioned *Heidi* to a mid-twenties shop clerk and got a disturbingly blank stare. The young woman thought I was calling her a prostitute. I tried to explain that Heidi was a Swiss mountain girl in a story by Johanna Spyri. Still no light. This type of incident has happened much too often to me in recent years. It's not as if someone has never heard of Marcel Proust or Samuel Beckett. In addition to Heidi, I've gotten blank stares when I've mentioned *Treasure Island*, William Tell, Roland, Paul Bunyan – the list is a long one. Now, you might say, “So what if our young people have never heard of the classic stories of the European people, they won't die without reading or hearing the stories.” I would disagree. Ignorance of one particular classic story from the European past will not kill a person, but what that ignorance represents, a total disconnect from the antique Europeans, will kill; it will kill the soul.

Our young people know computers by age five, they know everything about the biological facts of life by age seven, yet they know nothing of the people who built a civilization based on their sentimental attachment to Jesus Christ. And I use the word ‘sentimental’ without shame. We all, even those who claim to be devoid of sentiments, get sentimental about something. The liberal waxes sentimental over the negro, the Marxist gets sentimental about ‘the people’ (in the abstract, of course), and so it goes. I get sentimental over the marriage between Christ and the European people – Tom Brown's defense of little Arthur, Pip's loyalty to Magwitch, and Havelock's relief of Lucknow make me weep. If you spit on such sentiment, you are my enemy.

It was Burke, the indefatigable Christian warrior, who sounded the alarm and rode, alone and unafraid, to the sound of the revolutionary guns. Burke saw that the French Revolution was not, as terrible as that war was, merely a French version of England's War of the Roses. It was not a bloody quarrel between rival claimants for the throne. The French Revolution marked a divorce from Christ, from that one great sentimental attachment which was the lifeblood of the European people, the attachment upon which European civilization was built. It was not enough to depose Robespierre, Burke maintained; that was merely scotching the Jacobin snake; the Jacobin snake had to be destroyed. But the snake was not destroyed. It resurfaced again in the democratic Revolutions of 1848 and in the Northern rebellion against the Christian south, a war that marked the last defense of the sentimental attachment, which made the European people a people unlike all other people. The European people left Christ and hid in the belly of the liberal Leviathan.

The conservatives of the 20th century did not choose to do battle with the liberal Leviathan. Instead they tried to make life more comfortable inside the belly of the Leviathan. That is not following in their train, the antique Europeans; it is following in the satanic train of the liberals. A true man of Europe, a man with a sentimental attachment to his people and our common hope, must fight his way out of the belly of the Leviathan and then turn and attack the Leviathan.

What happened to the conservatives was that they thought a mere Gnostic connection to a Christian system could replace a sentimental attachment to Christ and the European people. There is a world of difference between “Defending our Judaic, Greco-Roman, Christian heritage” and defending “Him who is our common hope.” Even those conservatives who quoted Burke favorably failed to see that it was his passionate love of his people and his God that guided his mind and pen:

But vehement passion does not always indicate an infirm judgment. It often accompanies, and actuates, and is even auxiliary to a powerful understanding; and when they both conspire and act harmoniously, their force is great to destroy disorder within, and to repel injury from abroad. If ever there was a time that calls on us for no vulgar conception of things, and for exertions in no vulgar strain, it is the awful hour that Providence has now appointed to this nation. — Letters on a Regicide Peace

It is very significant that Burke's 20th century counterpart, a man who placed his mind at the service of his heart and defended sentimental, European Christianity while denouncing in the strongest terms the New Age intellectual Christianity, is absent from all the survey books of modern conservatism. Anthony Jacob, the last great European, was too European, too Christian, to fit into the liberal-conservative system. His vision was one with Burke's vision – they saw the European people as the Christ-bearers who must maintain their distinctiveness as a people if they, and their faith, were to survive.

What Europeans such as Edmund Burke, John Sharp Williams, and Anthony Jacob perceived was that it was the Europeans' sentimental attachment to Christ that needed to be conserved, not our ‘democratic system’ or some ecclesiastical system. I saw the satanic temptation close-up in the ‘systems analysis’ Catholic traditionalist movement. Having fought free of the Leviathan's belly, I found myself in the open seas. Any old port in the storm can lead one to the wrong port. Once aboard the traditionalist ship, I was ushered into a room marked, “For

Sentimentalists." There was a chute in the room (like in the board game *Chutes and Ladders*), which put me right back into the sea, with the leviathan bearing down on me. Eschewing all the other ecclesiastical ships, I found a safe harbor in that tiny island where Alexander Smollet, that European sentimental, has raised the flag of Christian Europe in defiance of the forces of Babylon that have taken the form of a monstrous leviathan.

Intellectual conservatism in church or state does not 'conserve'; it is part of the forward movement, a movement toward hell, of Jacobinism. The more liberal branches of organized Christianity, which are now part of organized Jewry, go whoring after the black Messiah in order to feel attached to something human. And the traditionalist branches of organized Christian-Jewry have embraced the practical materialism of the Grand Inquisitor: "Of what use is the human element when we have a system?" But does St. Paul give us a 'system'? Do the Gospels point us to a 'system' or to a savior, who is Christ the Lord? That deeply held sentiment, the heartfelt conviction that, "Truly this man was the Son of God," was what moved our ancestors to fight the forces of ruin and death in order to build Christian Europe. It is those ancestors we must look to for succor, and it is to their faith that we must come if we are going to rebuild Christian Europe.

It is definitely a rebuilding that needs to occur, a spiritual rebuilding. Most of the actual buildings of old Europe still stand, but they no longer house Christian Europeans. In the old dwellings reside the new Babylonians, an assortment of white apostates, Muslims, and colored barbarians. That does not strike the modern Europeans as something tragic. Tony Blair's statement that, "We must be multi-cultural," has become the ruling ethos of every European nation. But neither the Jews, the Muslims, nor the colored barbarians believe in multiculturalism. They believe in conquest and the imposition of their culture on people who haven't enough faith in their God or their people to fight for them. We are back with Peter. By denying incarnational Europe we have denied, like Peter, our Lord. "Lovest thou me?" Christ asks. And we reply, "Lord, thou knowest that we love thee." "Then," He tells us, "Rebuild Christian Europe."

The first apostles had one great advantage over us: They saw Christ face to face. Is it possible to believe with their intensity, without that material confirmation of Christ's divinity? Christ seemed to think that it was, because He mildly rebuked Thomas for His lack of faith: "Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou has believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed." Therein lies the profound miracle of Christian Europe. Our people believed without seeing the material Christ! They saw Him feelingly, and made Him, by virtue of a sympathetic communion of hearts – the divine Heart with human hearts – the center of their civilization. Christian Europe revealed, at its poetic core, the face of Jesus Christ. All attempts to scientize the European Christ, to make Him accessible to human beings by way of the syllogism or the science lab, had the end result of making Christ inaccessible to the human heart. The church men and their modern neophytes go whoring after the heathen gods of color, because they have nothing to hold onto "if but for sympathy." They have no sympathy with anything human, because they walk in the valley of the shadow of abstractions in which the devil fills their minds with dreams of an earthly paradise presided over by the devil gods of color. There is no mystery, no depth, in such a world. The only real mystery is God's grace and the human heart. Great miracles have already occurred in old Europe, because of that marriage. Isn't it more than possible, isn't it quite probable, that miracles will occur again once the Europeans rely on God's grace working in human hearts instead of relying on human minds with pygmy souls trying to create their Jacobin version of heaven on earth? The former response to existence resulted in Christian Europe; the latter response has brought us Babylonian Europe.

The liberals' 'ascent' has been a descent. If we retrace our steps and go through the provincial European door we will find ourselves back on the time-worn and time-honored path of our people, the Christ-bearers. And we shall stay with them till the end of time, because of our sentimental attachment to those people of our own hearth fire and to the God of that simple European hearth fire. +

More Precious Than Gold

November 7, 2015

Categories: Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: John Sharp Williams



For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. – *Matthew 6: 21*

I want to continue with John Sharp Williams' [mediation on sentiment](#), because it lies at the heart of the white man's dilemma. The white grazers are divided men: They watch football games, shoot deer, and support the troops. They are not racists, yet they have a vague feeling that something is not right on the racial front. They have been told by the liberals in church and state that black violence is the result of white prejudice. "If whites were kinder, blacks wouldn't have to be so violent," is the liberal party line, which the grazer hears *ad nauseam* and does in part believe. But he only believes in part; hence there is a certain uneasiness in his soul that hinders his enjoyment of the football games.

Does a grazer ever wonder about the liberal inconsistencies? Does he ever ask himself, late at night before he passes from conscious to the unconsciousness of death's counterfeit, why the liberals are so obsessed with date rape by white males that they now have issued legal documents that must be signed by both parties at each stage of intimacy, yet they are completely unconcerned about the violent rape of white women by Moslems and black savages?

And what about the discrepancies between 'black lives matter' and 'white lives matter'? Does the grazer ever wonder why black lives, even the lives of murderous black thugs, are of vital importance, while white lives, even if the lives taken are innocent ones, do not matter? I hope the grazer is at least troubled by such things. But I really can't be certain about the grazer, because he is so unsure of where his treasure lies. His heart is divided between liberalism and the un-liberalism of old Europe, so he grazes in the pastures of oblivion.

Ahab was able to over man the soul of Starbuck, his first mate, because Ahab had an overriding passion that ruled his heart: he wanted to kill the white whale. Starbuck, the grazer, had no overriding passion, so he was swept away by Ahab's passion. In the end the grazers will support the liberals, because they, like Starbuck, cannot match the liberals' passion, which is their hatred of the Christ-bearing race and their love of the savages of color.

What appears to be a death wish, the liberals' hatred of the white and their love of the colored stranger, is really a liberal life-wish. A man cannot live by bread alone; he must have a faith. The liberals' faith will destroy them, just as the demons' hatred of Christ made them go over the cliff, but the liberals haven't the moral vision to see that. All they see are colored gods who will rid them of the dreaded one, Jesus of Nazareth. The first apostles said to Christ, when He asked them if they would leave Him: "Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life." The liberal is too smart to be fooled by that gambit. He feels that he has a place to go: he will go to the new Babylon where he can worship the colored noble savage, free of the burden of the God-Man.

I've seen, on alternative news sites, that there is some resistance to the Moslem invasion of Europe in England, Hungary, and Poland, and I trust there are pockets of resistance in every European country. Any resistance to any part of the liberal agenda is certainly to the good. But if the resistance is to be sustainable, it must be anti-democratic; it must take its inspiration from the chivalric ideals of the antique Europeans. Burke was right when he saw that the loss of chivalric spirit was the main reason for the success of the French Revolution. And all the subsequent French Revolutions throughout Europe have succeeded, because "...the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded..."

If some stirring of the old chivalry has entered the hearts of white European males as a result of this recent Moslem invasion, that is all to the good. It will be an enduring good when white men return to their ancient faith, eschewing the anti-white, anti-Christian faith of the clergy, and fight in the name of Christian Europe. It is something we can work for and hope for.

When you voice your lack of faith in the democratic process, conservatives and right-wingers call you a 'defeatist' who believes there is no hope. Such people simply do not understand the older chivalric ethos of the antique European. I have absolute faith that nothing can defeat Europeans who follow the code of chivalry – the chivalry of Prince Phillip in the Sleeping Beauty story and the chivalry of the hero in Thomas Nelson Page's short story called "The Goth":

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating, with all his heart – a Goth.

It is no pagan Goth that Page celebrates; he speaks of the Christian Goth who has not become enslaved to the Caiaphases in Christian garb that believe a Christian should kill his instinct to defend his racial hearth fire and become a universalist Christian who loves all mankind with a lukewarm 'niceness.' There is no real devil in modern clerical Christianity; Satan is only a wayward child who can be reformed by a few visits to the shrink. And there is no Christ, the Lord; He is now merely a captain on the Love Boat. The real gods are the noble savages of color, because they are the stuff that the liberals' dreams are made on.

Burke's assertion, "I hate abstractions," was the equivalent of a declaration of war against the Jacobins in church and state. The Jacobins used abstractions to kill. The murder of a Christian King and Queen was called, 'liberty, equality, and fraternity,' and the defacing of the image of God in man was called, 'moving mankind onward.' The Muslimization of the nations of Europe along with the negroization of those same nations has been thrust upon us in the name of multi-culturalism, but what does that abstraction really mean? (1) It means the rape of white women and the torture and murder of white children, white women, and white men. No matter how fancy the clerical dress-up parties are, no matter how many football games our government provides, can a European man with one tiny ounce of chivalry left in his blood do anything else but cry, "Havoc!" and descend upon the liberals and their colored allies with a determination to fight to the knife against the devilish destroyers of our racial hearth fire, where our loved ones and the one, true God reside?

If we view the pagan European hero-gods as ends in themselves, as celebrations of the greatness of white genes, we miss the point of preserving those hero-gods. They are part of the Christian story. The hero-gods were preparing a place in their people's hearts for the one true hero God. Prometheus stole fire from the gods in order to give it to man. For his charity, he

was punished by being tied to a rock while birds of prey pecked at his liver. You can look on that story as proof that the crucifixion story is just a genre story repeated over and over again in the Jungian oversoul of mankind, or you can see that story as an indication that our Lord plants the means to know Him in all valiant hearts. Christ is the real Prometheus, but He did not have to steal fire from the gods, because He was God, the God who brought the fire of His divine charity to man.

The pagan hero-gods, like the fairy tale characters in the Grimms' fairy tales (see The Inhumanity of Utopian Europe, CWNY) are dependent on the historical Jesus for their continued existence. If Christ is no longer embodied in a people as the one true God, He becomes an abstraction, a philosophical concept that can be used according to the whims of the ahistorical Christian atheists. There is no chivalry in Christian atheism, because the Christ who sets hearts aflame is not present in systems, and where there is no Christ, there is no chivalry, and Satanism in all its many guises reigns supreme.

In modern circles you label yourself an idiot if you talk about the devil as anything other than a Halloween bogeyman. But he is real, just as our Divine Savior is real. The devil wants the 'intelligent' men and women of the West to regard him and Christ as myth. That way he can work his will upon the intelligent ones who haven't the spiritual wherewithal to call on Christ to aid them against the wickedness and snares of a devil they don't believe in. But if we look at the world the liberals have built we can see Satan's imprint on every aspect of it. In the new movie about Sleeping Beauty, put out by the anti-Disney, Disney Studios, Maleficent is now the heroine (see We Labor and Weep, CWNY). The satanic faiths and the anti-European people of color are welcome in Europe while the Christian Europeans are seen as pariahs to be pushed off the earth. And to add a satanic spice to the New Babylon, the sodomites have been given free rein. The liberals, while denying the reality of Satan, have built a kingdom of Satan on earth. They must put down any uprising of the real Europeans, the men and women with hearts of flesh, who are connected, through their people, to Jesus Christ. The liberals will allow organized, intellectual Christianity to stay around as part of Babylon, because the church men support liberalism, but there must be no chivalry in the ranks of the European people. That would indicate the resurgence of the true faith in the hearts of the European people, which would bring about the destruction of Liberalism. When the real Christ enters human hearts, real miracles of chivalry occur. That is the nightmare of the liberal. We should want nothing better than to be the liberals' worst nightmare. +

(1) The negroization of a nation goes hand-in-hand with the Muslimization of a nation, the pagan ethos of Islam appeals to the negro, whereas the poetic of Christianity does not appeal to the negro.

Democracy Must Die So Our People Can Live

November 14, 2015

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke



The men of Walter Scott's Europe would not sit idly by talking about economic systems and universal panaceas to end discrimination, while their people were slaughtered right in front of their eyes. They would act as Christian men should act in the face of a barbaric, aggressive invader devoid of the slightest trace of humanity. This insane, horrific, murderous attack on white people will continue unabated and in fact will intensify until white men acknowledge that the bardic Europeans of the past who loved and hated with all their hearts were the true men of the right. They believed in Christ risen and they believed that the first rule of charity, the charity that never faileth, is the love of our own people. At the moment that such love, the love of our own racial hearth, became a matter for rational debate, the white man was lost. Only he who remains faithful, faithful to all the instinctive promptings of a heart that still loves, will be able to help his people survive the dark night of Liberalism and live to see His light descend, once again, over Europe's green and pleasant land. — *Our Race is Our People (CWNY)*

The movie *Iron Curtain* (1948) was based on the life of Igor Gouzenko. Gouzenko was a Russian national working in the Canadian embassy, who was a spy for the Communists. The movie depicts, in a very moving and convincing manner, Gouzenko's gradual disenchantment with communism and his efforts to expose the communist cabal working against the Canadian government. At the film's end, Gouzenko has successfully placed incriminating evidence into the hands of the Canadian officials, which results in the prosecution and conviction of a large number of Canadian communists. The one flaw in the movie was its ending. The narrator tells us that Gouzenko is now living secretly in Canada with the full rights of a Canadian citizen. That's all well and good. But then the narrator goes on to tell us that Gouzenko's greatest protection is the democratic way of life. And the movie ends on that very discordant note.

That one discordant note in the movie has become a liberal symphony of death for the white man. Gouzenko was able to defect to Canada because the Canadian people still had a remnant of Christian charity in their souls, not because of the West's democratic way of life. The West was committed to a slower transformation from Christian Europe to Satanic Europe than the Russian communists, but the Canadian democratic system and the Russian communist system were rooted in the spirit of the French Revolution, regicide and atheism.

I recently saw a show that features the pro-abort, anti-capital punishment "conservative" Bill O'Reilly. O'Reilly was quite rightly railing against Harry Reid for refusing to allow the Senate to vote on "Kate's Law." Kate Steinle was the young woman who was murdered by an Aztec cannibal who had come back into the United States for the zillionth time in order to commit murder. His last crime was the murder of Kate Steinle. O'Reilly, to his credit, was incensed with Reid and the Obama administration for resisting a bill that simply called for the enforcement of our immigration laws in order to try and prevent murderous Aztec thugs from coming across the border to kill white women. O'Reilly kept asking, "Why would anyone object to this bill?" The answer is quite obvious to anyone who has not been blinded by the democracy myth. O'Reilly does not see that our "democratic way of life" is a system set up by Satan to destroy the white race. Obama and Reid are simply being true to their creed — "People of color must be protected, and the white race must be destroyed." Until "conservatives" such as O'Reilly grasp that essential truth about our democratic system, nothing good will ever come of talk show blather from conservatives. I'm not holding my breath in anticipation of a great awakening from the conservative-liberals. The democratic way is their faith.

Reid, like all liberals, lied about his real intentions. He did not say that he opposed "Kate's Law" because he hated whites and wanted to hasten the Aztecs' conquest of the United States. Instead he said that the incarceration of Aztec murderers and rapists would be too expensive! I agree; that is why I think we should spare the expense of incarceration by executing the Aztec murderers right at the scene of their murders. One bullet would not be very expensive.

The belief in the democratic way that was supposed to save Gouzenko and is supposed to protect us will not save us from the wickedness and snares of the devil. Democracy is a fiery furnace that the satanically inspired liberals use to exterminate the white race. So long as the democratic way rules the West the fiery furnaces will continue to consume the white race. Every day more whites walk sheep-like into the fiery furnace.

Why are whites unable to read the signs of the times? Is it not crystal clear, particularly after the Angela Merkel declaration of war, that the democratic leaders of the West have launched their final assault on the white race? Does anyone think that the Merkels and Reids of the West will be defeated through the democratic process? War is not something a Christian European longs for. But a war in defense of home, race, and faith is certainly superior to a cowardly surrender to satanic liberals, heathens, and colored barbarians. Even if you prefer a surrender to the enemy in order to save your life, that will not be permitted. The forces of hell — the liberals, the Jews, the Moslems, the organized Christian atheists, and the colored barbarians — are all determined to kill the whites down to the last man.

The great obstacle preventing white self-defense is the white man's lack of a sentimental attachment to his people. That was the main reason for the success of the French Revolution, and that is the main reason the white race faces extinction. The liberals in church and state, especially the liberals in the organized churches, preached a cosmic love of a generic mankind which was supposed to be superior to the love men used to have for hearth and race. "To be attached to the subdivision, to love the little platoon we belong to in society, is the first principle (the germ as it were) of public affections. It is the first link in the series by which we proceed towards a love to our country, and to mankind." ([Burke](#)) The result of a cosmic love of mankind is a hatred of particular human beings. And what race of people has demonstrated a most particular and distinct humanity? It was the people who bound themselves to our Common Hope. What have the Europeans done to warrant the hatred of the liberal apostates and the entire non-European world? They loved much — "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you."

The liberals could not live with Einstein's cosmic faith. They needed a people, so they turned to the heathens and the colored barbarians whose collective face bears the imprint of Satan. The unspeakable, merciless cruelty of the Moslem, the colored barbarian, and the technological liberal is the result of their intense hatred of Christ whom they strike back at through His people. We can't coexist with such an unholy coalition. They seek our blood and will always seek our blood until the end of time. Are such monsters of inhumanity to be stopped by an appeal to our democratic way? No, it is to the Hope of the hopeless that we must apply for aid. If the Europeans walk away from democracy and its attendant ecclesiastical systems they will find themselves in tremendous peril, but they will also discover that they have the spiritual force to fight the satanic forces of Islam, liberalism, and colored barbarism that once made them feel hopelessly overwhelmed. ([1](#))

The problem with the "democratic way" as a source of salvation is that the democratic way celebrates the statistical aggregate. And a statistical aggregate has no charity. It's easy to kill statistics, whether they are the sick, the infirm, the elderly, the babies in the womb, or the white race. The ethos of the colored hordes, to overwhelm by numbers, dovetails with the liberals'

ethos of the statistical aggregate. "Let's count the numbers; we now have more colored barbarians and Moslems in Europe, so let's vote for the extermination of the white race." Will the white grazers then go willingly into the furnace? They will if they still retain their belief in the democratic way. What the white everyman always fails to grasp is the fact that liberals have left Christian Europe and its attendant ethos behind. The liberals have become metaphysicians, and there is nothing "more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil." To place one's hopes in the liberals and the democratic way is to seek redemption from the devil.

When our Lord left this earth He promised to send us a Comforter: "But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you." Can there be any doubt, when we look at the totality of our people's history, their Christian history, that our Lord kept His promise? He did send us a comforter. But what if we forsake that comforter, because he did not bring us a Kingdom of God on earth? What if he just enabled human hearts to know and love the Divine Heart? Isn't that worth all the kingdoms of this world? Europeans have a great battle on their hands. If we go into that battle with the platitudes of democracy — "Have mercy on us because we are not racist, because we too are multicultural" — we will lose. If we go into the battle with the love of our people and our God, we will win. And by 'win' I do not mean it is written that our armies will triumph. But every battle fought in His name is a preparation for the final battle, in which Christ and those who call on Him by name will triumph. The farther we get away from the European hearth fire the farther we get away from that essential truth. Stay close to that hearth fire and all will be well. +

(1) Nothing will be done in Paris, London, or any other white European city to prevent the type of massacre that just took place in Paris. The people slain in Paris were sacrificed on the altars of multiculturalism and democracy. The blood red tide can only be halted by people committed to one race and one faith. The French President called the Paris massacre an act of war. Indeed it is. Then, Mr. President, act like you are in a war. Remove every single Moslem from France. The murderers are not bad Moslems, they are the "good" Moslems; they practice their faith. I recently read of a small college that called their sport team "The Crusaders." The President of the college decided it was time to get rid of such a violent image; it was not multi-cultural.

Enough said? If you jettison your white Christian past, the heathens will jettison you.

A Homeland for Whites

November 21, 2015

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Hugo Grotius



"The liberals' incredible double-dealing is obvious. On the one hand we are told that we must abort all babies born in the European nations, because there are too many babies being born. And then on the other hand we are told we must allow an unlimited amount of Muslims into European nations. Why must we do this? Because we are commanded to go over the cliff with the swinish liberals who are possessed by the devil." – CWNY

Mahomet planted in Arabia a new Religion, directly opposite to the Christian Religion; yet such as did in a good Measure express in Words, the Life of a great Part of the Christians. This Religion was first embraced by the Saracens, who revolted from the Emperor Heraclius; whose Arms quickly subdued Arabia, Syria, Palaestine, Egypt, Persia, and afterwards they invade Africa, and came over Sea into Spain. But the Power of the Saracens was derived to others, particularly to the Turks, a very war-like People, who after many long Engagements with the Saracens, being desired to enter into a League, they easily embraced a Religion agreeable to their Manners, and transferred the Imperial Power to themselves. Having taken the Cities of Asia and Greece, and the Success of their Arms increasing, they came into the Borders of Hungary and German... This Religion, which was plainly calculated for Bloodshed, delights much in Ceremonies; – [Hugo Grotius](#)

When something as dramatic as the Paris massacre occurs, I briefly, ever so briefly, hope that my people will "wake up" and become white men again. But then, like the man in the song called "The Green, Green Grass of Home," I realize that "I was only dreaming." (1) Men interpret external events according to the *a priori* passion that is in their hearts. I see the Paris massacre as the inevitable result of the white man's rejection of Christian Europe for multicultural, democratic Europe. The liberal sees the massacre as a temporary setback on the way to utopia.

What is the difference between the Islamic Jihadist and the liberal? They both desire the death of white people, because of the whites' Christian past, so why do the liberals seem outraged? The modern liberals are like the Jacobins who finally turned on Robespierre. They weren't repudiating the ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity, they were just repudiating Robespierre's excessively violent way of going about the business of liberty, equality, and fraternity. If Robespierre had scaled down the blood-letting and toned down the rhetoric, he could have blended right into democratic-regicidal France. Let us never forget that former French President Nicolas Sarkozy said as recently as 2009 that France was a regicide nation. And so are they all – every single modern European nation – regicide nations. They have murdered Christian Europe and are committed to the extermination of the Christ-bearing race. So it is the excessive violence of the Jihadists that the liberals object to, not the Jihadists goal of eliminating every last remnant of Christian Europe.

The liberals' second objection to the perpetrators of the Paris massacre has to do with the two camps' differing views of utopia. The liberals envision a multicultural state in which everyone subscribes to liberal ideals. The Jihadists envision a utopian Moslem state in which everyone adheres to Islamic law. It is the mythical belief of the liberals that the Jihadists are not the real Moslems. In the liberals' eyes of unreality the Jihadists are the bad Moslems who won't settle down and enjoy the fruits of multicultural Liberaldom. (2) This is why the conservatives, who are not conservative, and their liberal allies never talk about expelling all Moslems from the European nations. That would run counter to the liberals' faith that all religions except the Christian religion, and all races except the white race, can live in perfect peace and harmony so long as they make their utopia the complete opposite of Christian Europe.

The liberal stentors run the European nations, so the great lie, which would not have convinced a five-year-old from the 19th century, has become the constant refrain of the liberals: 'Islam is good, those Jihadists are the small minority... etc.' What can we expect from the people who have already told us that Mexicans and blacks are sacred?

As a result of the liberals' 'good and bad Muslims' narrative the retired generals want to step up the bombing over there in order to get the bad Moslems. That would be a wonderful strategy, wouldn't it? The American bombers destroyed Saddam Hussein's government, which kept ISIS-like groups under control, so let us see if we can further destabilize the region with more bombing. Every solution but the obvious solution is suggested, the obvious solution being that we put an end to multiculturalism and expel all Moslems from the European nations. That is also the solution to the black and Mexican problem as well. But we will never see such a policy from European governments, because all the European governments are Jacobin governments, which cannibalize their own people in the name of democracy and multiculturalism.

If Africa, Europe, and the United States are to be reserved for the black race, if Mexico and the United States are to be reserved for the Aztec race, and if Islam is going to be the religion of the Europeans as well as the Arabs, where will white Christians dwell? It is not inhumane to send the heathens and the colored strangers back to their own lands, it is the only humane, Christian policy that a European can follow. If you don't defend your own racial hearth fire, you are not a Christian; in point of fact you are worse than the heathens.

The white race is not being driven off the earth because of the Moslems, the Jews, or the colored barbarians. The white race is self-destructing, because liberalism has made white people defenseless in the face of the enemy. If you believe that it is sinful to love your own people, to feel a sentimental attachment to those smaller, familial, and racial units of life that Burke celebrates, you will not fight for your people. You will most probably fight against your own people. The antique Europeans had their problems with the Jews, the Moslems, and colored barbarians, but they managed to preserve their civilization despite having to battle the anti-Christian (and therefore anti-European) forces arrayed against them. And because they preserved their racial hearth fire they were able to turn a Christian Europe over to their heirs. Is our modern Babylon really better than Christian Europe? Is legalized sodomy better than heterosexual love sanctified by marriage? Is a culture that permits miscegenation better than a culture that does not sanction such a blasphemy? Should that charity of honor culture give way to the cruelty of Islam and black voodoo? It is liberalism that must be defeated before white people can reclaim their identity as a people and recapture the spirit to fight all the satanic coalitions of heathens and colored barbarians that our ancestors fought against so successfully.

Liberalism is a reenactment of the fall of man. The liberals have hardened their hearts against the Light of the world and turned to Satan for salvation from the Christian God. Adam and Eve hid from God after their fall from grace. The liberals seek to destroy all remnants of Christian Europe so they will have no nagging reminders of their fall from grace. And white people, even those whites who have completely repudiated Christian Europe, are a reminder of the pre-satanic era of European history. They must die. Such is the credo of the liberal.

Once we grasp the fact that the liberal's heart is envenomed with a hatred for Christ and His people, we can understand why everything he does seems contrary to reality. We can understand why the liberal governments disarm their white citizens in black and Moslem urban zones of terror. We can understand why white "racism" is deemed a greater threat than colored barbarism, and we can understand why the protection of white people is considered an unholy blasphemy. In the liberal's hardened heart, Satan is lord, and he sees everything from Satan's perspective. Satan desires the physical destruction of the white race, but he also desires their spiritual destruction as well. This is why the liberals' attack on white people always includes an attack on their past, their Christian past. "Despair and die," Satan tells us through his liberal stenors. "Fight in my name and triumph," our Lord tells us.

The violation of our race is the moral equivalent of a home invasion. If we don't hold our racial home as inviolable then we have no soul that we can call our own. We will be mere shadows of men and women, roaming the earth hoping to find that which was lost. The conservatives who will not fight for that which was lost, our racial hearth fire, are not conservative. They are simply appendages of the liberals.

The Paris massacre is a slightly more dramatic event in the continual war against the white race, but it is not an aberration. The massacre is part of the liberals' fantasy – a white-free world. No liberal or liberal conservative has changed one iota because of the massacre. The liberals still talk about kindness and compassion for the terrorists and the conservatives talk about bombing bad Moslems in order to make the world safe, not for white people, but for democracy. Right after the Paris massacre the Canadian Prime Minister announced his determination to go ahead with his plan to admit thousands of Syrian 'refugees' into Canada. Obama, Merkel, and all the church groups remain steadfast as well; they will not abandon their 'compassion'; they will open up their hearts to their Moslem brethren. (3) And why are the Moslems the liberals' brethren? Their lifestyle seems completely opposed to the liberals' lifestyle. But then the blacks' and the Aztecs' lifestyles seem completely opposed to liberalism as well, so we are still left with the 'why'? Of course, we know why. The liberals have one overriding passion in their heart, one faith – there is one evil and that is whiteness. Whoever opposes the white race is good, no matter what they say or do that seems contrary to liberalism. Because the liberals believe that the Christ-bearing race must be destroyed, even if whites have ceased to carry the Christ Child, one is tempted to offer some practical advice to the white Europeans: "Since you are damned as the Christ-bearing race, why don't you pick up that burden and actually become, once again, the Christ-bearing race?" But such advice is not really practical. Christ wants great lovers, not utilitarians. We must love Him with an overflowing heart that believeth and hopeth all things. We must become like unto the woman in the Gospels who had "an issue of blood twelve years." She said, "If I may touch but His clothes I shall be whole." If we could but touch His clothes, reconnecting with our white, Christian ancestors, we too will be made whole and be more than a match for the pestilence of liberalism and the savage onslaught of the Moslems and the colored barbarians. +

(1) The old home town looks the same

As I step down from the train

And there to meet me is my mama and my papa

Down the road I look and there runs Mary

Hair of gold and the lips like cherries

It's good to touch the green, green grass of home

Yes, they'll all come to meet me

Arms reachin', smiling sweetly

Oh, it's good to touch the green, green grass of home

The old house is still standing

Though the paint is cracked and dry

And there's that old oak tree that I used to play on

Yeah, down the lane I'll walk with my sweet Mary

Hair of gold and the lips like cherries

It's good to touch the green, green grass of home

Yes, they'll all come to meet me

Arms reachin', smiling sweetly

Oh, it's good to touch the green, green grass of home

Then I awake and look around me

At four gray walls that surround me

And I realize I was only dreamin'

There's a guard and there's a sad old padre

Arm and arm we'll walk at daybreak again

I'll touch the green, green grass of home

Yes, they'll all come to see me

In the shade of that old tree

As I lay me in the green, green grass of home

By Burt Bacharach and Hal David

(2) What is never taken into account by liberals or conservatives is the extent to which contact with the Christian Europeans altered the behavior of the followers of the Jewish, Moslem, and Asian faiths. Their people became kinder and gentler without realizing the reason for their alterations. Now that the Europeans have repudiated the European Christianity of their ancestors the pagan faiths are resurfacing in all their naked Christ-hating fury.

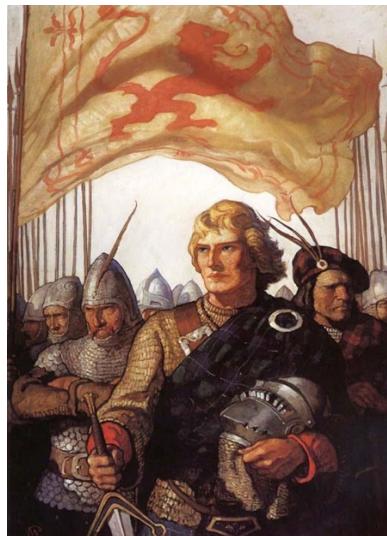
(3) We should not have to prove that the Syrians entering the United States and Europe are terrorists before we deny them entry, any more than we should feel compelled to let a stranger into our home simply because he has proved he is not a murderer. Our nation, like our home, should only be welcome to our kith and kin.

The Satanic Core of the Liberals' 'Niceness'

November 28, 2015

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke



It is a dreadful part of the example, that infernal malevolence has had pious apologists, who read their lectures on frailties in favour of crimes; who abandoned the weak, and court the friendship of the wicked. To root out these maxims, and the examples that support them, is a wise object of years of war. This is that war. This is that moral war. It was said by old Trivulzio, that the battle of Marignan was the battle of the Giants, that all the rest of the many he had seen were those of the Cranes and Pygmies. This is true of the objects, at least, of the contest. For the greater part of those, which we have hitherto contended for, in comparison, were the toys of children.

The October Politician is so full of charity and good nature, that he supposes, that these very robbers and murderers themselves are in a course of amelioration; on what ground I cannot conceive, except on the long practice of every crime, and by its complete success. He is an Origenist, and believes in the conversion of the Devil. All that runs in the place of blood in his veins, is nothing but the milk of human kindness. He is as soft as a curd, though, as a politician, he might be supposed to be made of sterner stuff. He supposes (to use his own expression) "that the salutary truths which he inculcates, are making their way into their bosoms." Their bosom is a rock of granite, on which falsehood has long since built her strong hold. Poor Truth has had a hard work of it with her little pickaxe. Nothing but gunpowder will do.

[Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

When I was growing up the use of weights in sports was discouraged. My football coach, like many coaches of that time, told me to stop lifting weights, because he thought that weightlifting would make me 'muscle-bound.' Some twenty years later, every pro team in the country and most of the college teams had strength coaches, and movies like *Pumping Iron* had made body building a major sport. Ironically, as weightlifting came out of the closet, it changed from an activity that could enhance strength and health to a narcissistic activity that destroyed a man's health and virility.

The puffed-up, steroid-using, body builders and athletes of today are the complete opposite of the old time strong men. Without access to exercise science gurus armed with PhDs, and without the use of steroids and total gyms, the old time lifters built bodies that stood the test of time. Many of the old-time strong men maintained their strength and vitality right to the end of their lives. George Hackenschmidt was still lifting massive weights in his mid-eighties as were most of the old time lifters who practiced the now antiquated 'three days a week, with rest in between' program.

Nor have the modern exercise science men discovered anything new about exercise. The old timers knew about circuit training and other such 'modern' innovations; they just didn't have a fancy name for the 'new' techniques. But that is the essence of the modern world, gimmickry without substance.

I don't intend to start an exercise blog – there are too many of them already – but I do want to segue from the modernity of the modern body building culture to the modernism of the liberal-conservatives. I dismiss the straight-out mad-dog liberals; they are the swine going over the cliff. It is the conservatives who are not conserving, going over the cliff with the liberals, that I want to discuss.

Burke was very clear about what a European statesman was duty-bound to conserve: the institutions, customs, manners, and prejudices that helped the European people preserve their faith in our Common Hope. All changes in government must be changes to preserve the foundations of a Christian government, just as you would shore up a sacred monument with mortar and plaster, rather than tear it down and put up a new monument. Burke denounced the French Revolution with Shakespearean eloquence and passion, because he saw that the French Revolution was a radical break with the customs, manners, and prejudices of the European people who had believed, for over 1,500 years, in our Common Hope. Henceforth the battle would not only be with the pagans from without Europe, it would also be a battle against the post-Christians within Europe.

The modern conservatives are the spiritual counter parts of the modern steroid body builders. They claim to be improving and conserving while they are really helping the mad-dog liberals to tear down Western civilization by injecting a harmful poison into the European people. And what is that poison that is supposed to improve, but in reality kills? It is the poison of cosmic intellectualism as articulated by Albert Einstein in 1931:

"In primitive peoples it is, first of all, fear that awakens religious ideas—fear of hunger, of wild animals, of illness, and of death. Since the understanding of causal connections is usually limited on this level of existence, the human soul forges a being, more or less like itself, on whose will and activities depend the experiences which it fears..."

"An important advance in the life of a people is the transformation of the religion of fear into the moral religion. But one must avoid the prejudice that regards the religions of primitive peoples as pure fear religions and those of the civilized races as pure moral religions. All are mixed forms, though the moral element predominates in the higher levels of social life. Common to all these types is the anthropomorphic character of the idea of God."

"Only exceptionally gifted individuals or especially noble communities rise essentially above this level; in these there is found a third level of religious experience, even if it is seldom found in a pure form. I will call it the cosmic religious sense. This is hard to make clear to those who do not experience it, since it does not involve an anthropomorphic idea of God; the individual feels the vanity of human desires and aims, and the nobility and marvelous order which are revealed in nature and in the world of thought." – quoted in [One Race, One Faith, One Shepherd](#) (CWNY)

Who are the exceptionally gifted individuals that do not need "moral religion"? They are virtually all the European intelligentsia, both liberal and conservative. And the grazers, the people who should be the Christian faithful, have followed their leaders. For who wants to be 'as stupid as a rhinoceros' by subscribing to an intellectually inferior religion and the customs, manners, and prejudices attached to that religion? "Who is here so prejudiced, who will not support the massive influx of negroes and Aztecs into the European nations? Who is here so

lacking in compassion that he will not welcome Moslems into the European nations? And who is so racist and illiberal that he wants his nation to be white and Christian while shunning all others? If any, speak, for we will purge that man from cosmic, multi-cultural Europe."

The Christian churches followed in the train of the European intelligentsia. The liberals abandoned Christ entirely, and the conservatives betrayed Him by refusing to defend that which is essential for the survival of the Christian faith as a vital force in the life of the European people. We need to believe that we saw Christ face to face in the collective face of the antique Europeans. If they, the people who took Christ into their hearts, didn't know Him, then how can we know Him? "We can know Him by a new, improved method, through the good offices of our intellects," say the conservatives who have been shooting up with intellectual steroids to bulk up their highly developed brains. But is such a thing possible? What have the people on intellectual steroids produced? A world in which "mankind preys upon itself like monsters from the deep." The barbarians of color kill whites and themselves with an increasing ferocity, the Moslems have marched right through the open gates of Liberaldom vowing that, "Your children shall be Moslems," and not one public figure has called for the expulsion of the colored barbarians and the Moslems from the European nations. Why is this? Because the intelligentsia, the liberal elite that governs the white nations, do not believe in our Common Hope. If they did, they would not deliver up their own people to be tortured and murdered by colored barbarians. Nor would they allow the one true God to be replaced by the God of the Moslems.

The liberals and the liberal conservatives have detached themselves from humanity. They have invented a cosmic brotherhood of the intellect, which, from their point of view, makes them supernatural beings above the lot of common humanity. And they are right. They have left common humanity behind. They are like unto Satan, the archangel of intellect. Some, by the grace of God, might return to humanity and the humane God, but we can't count on any member of Liberaldom joining the ranks of the European people. Their hardened hearts are poisoned against the light and we dare not mix with them on any terms other than martial ones, lest we be poisoned by them.

That leaves the white grazers, the men and women who have had so many false Aslans thrown at them that they can no longer see the real Aslan, the one who took flesh and dwelt among us, first in Bethlehem, Judea, and then amongst the people of Europe who took Him into their hearts. The white grazers are hovering between two worlds, the world of cosmic universalism where unspeakable cruelty and butchery dwell under the names of multiculturalism and democracy, and the world of His Kingdom come, a realm of charity forged out of a previously untamed pagan wilderness by the Knight Errant of charity and mercy. The people who loved much followed in His train and kept the flame of His divine charity alive through all the Christian centuries of their history. But now? Christ's words come back to us with an overwhelming force: "When the Son of Man returns will He find faith on earth?"

In *White Man Think Again*, Anthony Jacob writes of the one fatal flaw of the white Kenyans:

It is very far from being my intention to belittle the people of Kenya and to add insult to their unspeakable injury. Their only fundamental fault, after all, was to be too trusting and innocent a people to be a party to that which was supplanting them. They trusted Britain unquestioningly and assumed the Native would prove himself grateful for what had been done for him. They trusted everybody because they are a trustworthy people themselves...

Yes, in other words the ignorance of our Western liberal intellectuals is killing us. The distortion of their university-adjusted vision is such that even when they clearly perceive every detail of a given situation, the picture in the mirror of their intellects is invariably upside down. It is a form of insanity, ethical as well as intellectual; an insanity which takes the form of a blind belief in the efficacy of so-called 'good' principles regardless of the circumstances in which they are applied; such as the giving of The Vote to people who cannot read or write, and the granting of 'National Self-determination' to tribes of stark naked cannibals. It is a 'sideways with the people' insanity; one of the deadliest of its manifestations being the belief that true goodness consists in depriving oneself of the power to do good. It is an insanity compelling liberal politicians to delight in bringing about the utter subjugation of their own white race.

Therein lies the fatal flaw of all white grazers. They cannot see the evil of liberalism. They are constantly asking why their government doesn't protect them from the colored barbarians from within and the Moslem invasion from without, but then they never believe you when you give them the answer: "The liberals hate the Christ-bearing people because they worship darkness and not the light." This is unacceptable to the white grazer. His local clergyman is a kindly fellow, he preaches niceness and universal love, and he wouldn't sell his people down the blood red river of diversity. Nor would his conservative congressman; he has a democratic love for all mankind. Until the grazer understands that behind the façade of liberal niceness lurks the cold malignity of the devil, he will be forever bound upon the liberals' wheel of fire, asking for the bread of charity and receiving a stone. That is the essence of liberalism: a stone, just as hard and impenetrable as the liberal's heart.

Burke had hope that a leader would emerge who would inspire the white grazers of his day to rally and throw off the ideological Jacobinism that was taking over Europe. He died thinking that a champion of old Christian Europe had yet to emerge. But his humility kept him from seeing that a champion had emerged, a champion who saw through the outward niceness of liberalism to its satanic core. That Christian champion was Edmund Burke, who stands with Shakespeare as the great champion and poet of the white Christian race. With blinding sight he saw that it was the Europeans' passion to love the good and hate evil that made them a race distinct from all others. Their passion linked to His passion made Christian Europe, and their descent to niceness destroyed Christian Europe. It is the task of the true European conservatives to live up to that essential truth so passionately articulated and defended by Edmund Burke, the great Knight errant of Europe: "They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate." Forsake liberal niceness, love your people in and through Christ, and Liberaldom will come tumbling down, freeing the Europeans to do battle with and defeat the colored barbarians and the Moslem invaders.

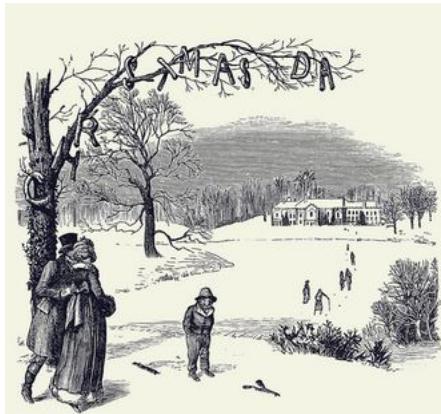
The liberals' little black puppet, The Obama, recently compared the new wave of Moslems invaders to the Pilgrims who came over from England many years ago. Is there any resemblance between a Moslem and a Christian? Is there any resemblance between the men who came to a geographical land mass to build a civilization and the men who now come to that same land mass to destroy a civilization? The whites will be pushed off the face of the earth if they do not forsake satanic niceness and start acting like their Christian forefathers. The false Aslan of Pope Francis and his ilk has poisoned Europe for much too long. It is time to look to the real Aslan, the Aslan of Alfred and Havelock, the one true God, who did not suffer, die, and on the third day rise from the dead so that men could celebrate satanic cruelty while flying the flag of multicultural, Christian niceness. "He is not a tame lion." No, He is not, He is the Christ, the God of our racial hearth fire. If we forsake that hearth fire, we forsake charity, mercy, and Him. +

Christmas Land is Our Nation

December 5, 2015

Categories: Christmas, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: John Buchan, Washington Irving



So let us state what is true. God reveals Himself to us through the intimate, mysterious human relationships we form with our kith and kin. The moral beauty of the European hearth, where our kith and kin dwell, points us to the Star of Bethlehem. The moral depravity of the syncretic religion of rationalism and diversity points us toward the kingdom of Satan. The most counter-revolutionary thing that a European man can do is to refuse to bend his knee to the new diversity of races and faiths. Such a refusal will make the European man a sign of contradiction to Satan and his minions. And such is the European man's destiny. He was born to bear witness, through his fidelity to the European hearth, to the Lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world. – CWNY

Robert Lewis Dear certainly does not look like a hero of a romance. And I can't, with complete certainty, assert that he is one, because I know nothing about his motivation for shooting the two Planned Parenthood employees and the police officer. But if his intent was to strike a blow for the slaughtered innocents of our nation by striking home against the butchers of Planned Parenthood, then I heartily support him. The Planned Parenthood organization is one of the great satanic bastions of liberalism, and whoever attacks that organization should be lauded by all Christian Europeans. True romance often seems rather uncouth and gritty at its inception:

Dickson groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in the retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith? (1)

You don't want to be (at least I hope you don't) like the Fox News people who worship the fighting man simply because he is a fighting man. A soldier or a policemen is not absolved from the responsibility of making sure that what he fights for is something worthy of fighting for. It's a tragedy that the police officer had to die, but his death cannot be laid at the doorstep of Robert Lewis Dear. The police officer did not have to – indeed, he should not have – come to the aid of the baby killers. No white man should sign up to protect and serve the butchers who work for Planned Parenthood, whose mantra is, "First we kill the babies, then we dissect them and sell their body parts."

Any attempt to actually fight, in the fullest sense of the word, the forces of Liberaldom – whether the fight is against the abortionists, the Aztecs and black barbarians who rape and murder whites, or the Moslem invaders – always leads to the liberals joining with their clerical allies to condemn violence. It is un-Christian, they tell us. Shouldn't that give a man who calls himself a Christian reason to pause and question the rightness of a fighting faith? How can he be right when the vast majority of professed Christians are against him? No, it should not give him pause. First, the right or wrong of any action cannot be determined by majority vote. And secondly, the white Christian who wants to fight back against the forces of Liberaldom is not in the minority if you allow our honored dead a voice. Do you think our European ancestors would have permitted the slaughter of babies in the womb, the murderous onslaught of the colored barbarians, or the Islamization of Christian Europe? No, they would not, so you must condemn your Christian European progenitors if you want to condemn the contemporary European who wants to follow the path of his fighting ancestors. But of course the modern church men do condemn their violent, racist, moribund, Christian ancestors. Imagine being so simple that you see an evil and immediately want to strike out against that evil. The condemnation of the "simple-minded" faith of the evil whites of old Europe has resulted in the slaughter of the innocents, the unrelenting murder of whites by colored barbarians, and the surrender of the European people to Islam.

Let us never forget when the liberals condemn any violence directed against them or their colored gods that the liberals are the most violent people on the face of the earth. They hire state executioners to kill babies, and they systematically disarm white people while encouraging the colored tribesmen and the Moslems to slaughter whites. The liberals are like the head gangster in the old movies, who fastidiously leaves the room before his mugs begin to torture the hero, because he claims his nonviolent principles forbid him to watch the torture he has just ordered to be done. The liberals have ordered the death of whites and the slaughter of the innocents, but they reserve the right to wear the cloak of sanctity while their henchmen do the actual killings and torture.

Such thoughts are not very Christmas-y, are they? (2) I wonder. Every single blessing in this world, and all our hopes for a blessing in the next, have come about because of the incarnation of Jesus Christ. So maybe it is quite in keeping with the Christmas spirit to attack the great haters of the blessed event in Bethlehem – those who hate so much that they must arrogate for themselves the power to destroy the life of the babe in the womb and the power to eradicate the Christ-bearing race from the face of the earth.

In the 1820's Washington Irving wrote down his impressions of a Christmas celebration that he witnessed as a guest in an English manor house. Irving, like P. G. Wodehouse after him, never professed to be a Shakespearean diver into the depths of the human heart. He was a humorist with modest goals:

What, after all, is the mite of wisdom that I could throw into the mass of knowledge; or how am I sure that my sagest deductions may be safe guides for the opinions of others? But in writing to amuse, if I fail, the only evil is my own disappointment. If, however, I can by any lucky chance, in these days of evil, rub out one wrinkle from the brow of care, or beguile the heavy heart of one moment of sorrow; if I can now and then penetrate through the gathering film of misanthropy, prompt a benevolent view of human nature, and make my reader more in good humour with his fellow beings and himself, surely, surely, I shall not then have written entirely in vain. – [Old Christmas](#)

But in seeking to amuse Irving does reveal to us something quite profound. The old Baron and his family, the poor relations, the workers on the Baron's estate, and the community at large are all united in one common goal – to celebrate the birth of Christ, their common hope. They are not a racially diverse group, which might account for the fact that their faith and their joy is not feigned, it is something in the blood, which our modern Europeans who are bloodless shadows of men and women can never feel. This is more than a pity, it is a tragedy that the Europeans have traded their provincial "racist" faith in our Blessed Savior for a cosmic faith in nature and nature's god, the negro. Sometimes, late at night, they look back and feel a twinge of remorse. That is one of the reasons the liberals dare not look with a sympathetic eye at their European past. When they do, they feel like outsiders at a great celebration they cannot enter into, because they can't understand why the celebrants are celebrating.

As the Moslems invade Europe, as the colored barbarians grow increasingly violent and hostile to all things white and Christian, and as the liberals prepare for the final satanic assault on the white race, it is hard to celebrate Christmas, because the Christian community, the European Christian community, has dwindled down to a precious few. If you go to church you will be told of the greatness of the negro and the evil of the white man. If you go out into the community at large you will find diversity of races and diversity of faiths. I take heart in Burke's affirmation that a nation is a moral essence. We want the European lands to be one, white, and Christian, but if they are not, if they remain the home of heathens, colored barbarians, and liberals, they are not our nations. Europe is Christmas land; I can't think of any European nation apart from that nation's Christian past. If England, France, or any other European nation

ceases to be one, Christian, and white, they will cease to be England, France, etc. Those nations will only exist where men are white and Christian. Burke likens Jacobin France to a house where robbers have broken in and dispossessed the homeowners. The real home exists wherever the former homeowners go, because robbers cannot be homeowners anymore than a coalition of Moslems, liberals, and colored barbarians can be a nation just because they occupy a geographic land mass in Europe. The moral essence of every European country will always remain white and Christian. Wherever that moral essence is, there are the nations of Europe.

In the early 20th century it became commonplace amongst European scholars to look down on the European people from their Olympian height and condemn all of the Europeans' history as one colossal pageant of war and depravity. But is that how God, who is not an Olympian, sees our history? Doesn't He who sees quite through the deeds of men see something else, something besides war and depravity? I think He does. He sees that the Europeans, responding to God's grace, built another land within the land of sin, which the Olympian scholars, incorrectly, saw as Europe in its entirety. The antique Europeans built what the little children in the movie *The Wonderful World of the Brothers Grimm* called "Christmas Land." Such a land cannot be seen with the outer eye of the Christian utopians. It can only be seen by the inner eye of love. Could any marriage survive if the wife saw only the faults of her husband but none of his virtues? I know mine couldn't. The Christian scholars who tell us that there never has been a Christian Europe because the Christian Europeans were such incredible sinners, have no eyes to see with; they have separated their heart from their head and see only with the mind's eye, not the heart's eye. "Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven."

My heart and my sword as well is with those inhabitants of that old English manor house – those Europeans who still believe in Christmas land. That is the white man's homeland.

*Pure of heart and mind and hand,
I shall dwell in Christmas Land;
Christmas Land! Christmas Land!
I shall dwell in Christmas Land.*

— From the [Wonderful World of the Brothers Grimm](#) +

(1) No doubt Robert Lewis Dear is insane, but is not his insanity a type of divine insanity that is necessary to counter the liberals' satanic insanity? God forbid that we should, even for one moment, forget that the liberals are the devil's own, driven by a satanic desire to destroy the image of God in man.

(2) In old Europe when the European nations were fighting (alas) with each other, there were Christmas truces. But there is no Christmas truce in Liberaldom. In fact the liberals step up their assault on the European people during Christmas. They launch a series of propaganda attacks, in film and print, the theme of which is, in the main, that our incarnate Lord was not the Son of God, He was only a forerunner of the Atticus Finch liberal. So long as Liberaldom stands, the Christmas season must always be a time of war as well as a time of peace for the reason that the enemy is attacking whites precisely because they are the Christmas people.

In the massacre in California that took place several days ago, the Jihadists chose a Christmas party as the setting for their massacre. And please note the difference between the justified assault on Planned Parenthood and the unjustified assault on the Christmas people. The former attack was condemned and used as an occasion to demand that whites disarm themselves. The latter attack was an occasion to scold whites about the dangers of blaming all Moslems for the bad actions of a few Moslems.

Every time Moslems strike, a host of terrorist "experts" come on the news and tell us what must be done. One expert's advice was to "look people in the eye as you go about your daily business." By looking people in the eye, the expert claimed, you can tell if they are terrorists. Well, even if such a process worked, what could you do if you ascertained they were terrorists, since our government has made it illegal to carry firearms in the areas where terrorists strike the most? The really practical and moral policy to prevent street and terrorist crimes would be to evict all Moslems, blacks, and Mexicans from the European nations. But if you are not going to do that, the next best policy would be to arm every white, not to disarm them. If whites are to be ducks in a shooting gallery, shouldn't the ducks have the right to shoot back? Of course such a sane policy will never be adopted, because liberals are not about to arm their enemies. Which brings us back to the main point – the liberals hate the white, Christ-bearing race. They only want the military and the police to be armed, because the police and the military work for them. The reason they come down so hard on police officers who shoot black barbarians is because they want to send a message to the rest of the white police officers: There are no black, Mexican, or Moslem criminals, there are only white criminals. When liberals achieve their perfect world, only whites will be subject to punishment, for the crime of being white, which is the ultimate crime in Liberaldom.

Merry Christmas

December 12, 2015

Categories: Christmas, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Incarnational Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Christina Rossetti, Hans Christian Andersen



And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. –Luke 2: 8-14

Child Jesus

When the Christ-Child to this world came down,
He left for us His throne and crown.
He lay in a manger, all pure and fair,
Of straw and hay His bed so bare.
But high in heaven the star shone bright,
And the oxen watched by the Babe that night.

Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

Oh, come, ye sinful and ye who mourn,
Forgetting all your sin and sadness,
In the city of David a Child is born,
Who doth bring us heav'nly gladness.
Then let us to the manger go,
To seek the Christ who hath loved us so.

Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

–Hans Christian Andersen

I drove by a church the other day that had a big sign, which read, “Happy Holidays.” I’m so used to seeing Happy Holidays everywhere at this time of year that it really didn’t, at first glance, strike me as something odd. But then when I thought about it, it did strike me as rather cutting edge. Are the organized churches now going to make explicit what has been implicit for the last half century? “We believe what the liberal establishment tells us to believe.” And the liberal establishment does not believe in the founder of the Christmas feast. From that disbelief comes all the “we musts” of Liberalism.

The liberals tell us we must be multicultural, we must let Moslems into the European nations, and we must let blacks into our neighborhoods, our schools, and our homes. We also must let Aztecs overwhelm North America. And we must keep abortion legal, because a woman must have a right to choose. But must we allow any of those evils? Have the European people flourished under all the “we musts”?

It is my contention that what men have wrought with the support of the devil can be unwrought by men who are inspired by Christ the Lord. A case in point – I came into the anti-abortion movement in my mid-twenties. There was already, at that time, an old guard that had been protesting outside the local abortuary for about six years. I asked one of the grizzled veterans if we might do the unborn babies more good if we burned down the clinic instead of just standing outside and protesting. The G. V. told me an interesting story. When the clinic first started he went door to door in his parish and lined up over a hundred men who were willing to “visit” the clinic at night and burn it down. Then his parish priest got wind of their plans and condemned them from the pulpit. Thus the crusade ended before it began. The pro-life movement in that area became a movement of little mite, and then it moved on to become a pro-abortion movement that condemned all violence against abortionists. But what if Christian men had taken the other path? What if professed Christians of every church and parish had really fought abortion? What was wrought would have been unwrought.

Unfortunately that one parish was a reflection of organized Christianity’s response to abortion. If you don’t fight an evil, you will become part of the evil. It is easy to condemn men like Paul Hill and Richard Dear for being violent and mentally unstable, but how is it possible to act alone, as such men do, and not be unstable? They need the support of those people who claim to be Christian in order to stay militant and sane. When your Christianity is bred in the bone because you live amongst blood Christians, there is no need for the agonized lonely search for the right and the wrong of violent action against the enemy, because you strike in union with ten thousand other men of your own blood and your own faith. But that is the cleverness of the devil; he convinced the Europeans that what was important was their intellectual sectarian defenses of the Christian furniture in their local churches, not the defense of our common hope and the ethos that flows from a belief in our common hope.

The first betrayal starts with the betrayal of our racial hearth fire. From that betrayal stems the denial of Christ’s birth at His divine hearth fire. Once the divinity of Christ’s birth is denied, the blasphemers then go on to deny the reality of His resurrection. All the liberals’ “we musts” have been set up to kill the Christ Child in His crib. To restore the Christ Child we must oppose the liberals’ “we musts.” We must not be multicultural, we must not integrate, and we must not murder the baby in the womb.

God bless all Christians of the old European stock, may you have a Merry Christmas, free from the stink of liberalism. Next week and the week after, I'll run a Christmas story. I'll resume the regular blog in January.

A Christmas Carol

*In the bleak mid-winter
Frosty wind made moan,
Earth stood hard as iron,
Water like a stone;
Snow had fallen, snow on snow,
Snow on snow,
In the bleak mid-winter
Long ago.*

*Our God, Heaven cannot hold him
Nor earth sustain;
Heaven and earth shall flee away
When he comes to reign;
In the bleak mid-winter
A stable-place sufficed
The Lord God Almighty
Jesus Christ.*

*Angels and archangels
May have gathered there,
Cherubim and seraphim
Thronged the air;
But only His Mother
In her maiden bliss
Worshipped the Beloved
With a kiss.*

*What can I give Him,
Poor as I am?
If I were a shepherd
I would bring a lamb,
If I were a Wise Man
I would do my part –
Yet what I can I give Him,
Give my heart.*

-Christina Rossetti +

Remembrances V: By the Cross We Conquer

December 19, 2015

Categories: Charity, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances



Sonnet 31

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;
And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,
And all those friends which I thought buried.
How many a holy and obsequious tear
Hath dear religious love stolen from mine eye,
As interest of the dead, which now appear
But things remov'd, that hidden in thee lie!
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;
That due of many now is thine alone:
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,
And thou (all they) hast all the all of me.

-William Shakespeare

"Pause," says a low voice. "Nothing? Think!"

"On Christmas Day, we will shut out from our fireside, Nothing."

"Not the shadow of a vast City where the withered leaves are lying deep?" the voice replies. "Not the shadow that darkens the whole globe? Not the shadow of the City of the Dead?"

Not even that. Of all days in the year, we will turn our faces towards that City upon Christmas Day, and from its silent hosts bring those we loved, among us. City of the Dead, in the blessed name wherein we are gathered together at this time, and in the Presence that is here among us according to the promise, we will receive, and not dismiss, thy people who are dear to us!

-Charles Dickens

This remembrance has been written based on the letters of Arthur Walker and James Miller. It is a Christmas story and an Easter story, as all genuine European stories are.

Act I. Scene 1. The Kenyan Hinterlands.

Rev. Samuel Drayton: Come in.

Walker: I'm sorry to bother you, Reverend, but I was hoping for a little guidance from someone...

Drayton: A little older?

Walker: I was going to say someone wiser than I am.

Drayton: It's nice to be thought of in that way. I'll try to live up to your confidence. What can I help you with?

Walker: Well, Reverend, I've been here in Kenya for 14 months, and I just don't feel that I'm connecting with the natives.

Drayton: I don't quite follow you. Could you be more specific?

Walker: No, I can't. It's just that I don't feel that anything of a Christian nature is going on between me and the natives. I preach, I administer the sacraments, and I share the work load with the men, but there is something missing. I just don't feel my presence among them brings any of them closer to Christ.

Drayton: Perhaps – and I don't mean this as a criticism – you are too focused on yourself, on what you feel. It's not up to us, you know; we are just vessels of God's grace.

Walker: I don't mean this response to seem flippant, Reverend, but I don't feel like a vessel of God's grace to these natives. God might be transmitting, but it's not getting through.

Drayton: May I ask you why you became a minister and why you chose to be a missionary?

Walker: When I entered the military in 1943 I was 18. The last thing I was thinking of was the ministry, but after a year of serving in North Africa, in some of the worst battles, I was sent home all shot up. My intent was to recover in the London-based hospital that I was sent to and then return to the war. For six months I wasn't well enough to leave the hospital, but once I

was well enough to start hobbling around London I took advantage of the opportunity and saw a good deal of the city that I had only seen twice in my life before the war started. You see, my Dad was a barkeep in Bristol, that's where I was born and raised. Well, one day I wandered into St. John's when the Reverend Christopher Grey was preaching. He wasn't fire and brimstone like I was used to – my parents were independents – he was something more than fire and brimstone. It's hard to describe the effect he had on me. It was like I was a little child at a parade, and he was lifting me up so I could see what the parade was all about. Only with the Reverend Grey it wasn't a parade that he was lifting me up to see, it was Christ.

Drayton: Reverent Grey was an eloquent preacher and writer.

Walker: You said "was" – is he dead?

Drayton: No, as far as I know, he is still alive. He even visited Kenya a few years ago, but he was forbidden to perform any services in the Anglican Church. He is no longer, even though he was not defrocked, a member in good standing of the Anglican Church.

Walker: Yes, I know about that. I wish I had contacted him in those years after the war. But I had my undergraduate degree to study for and then divinity school and...

Drayton: It's just as well you didn't contact him.

Walker: Why do you say that?

Drayton: Because I knew the man. He was not a close friend – he was older than me and I've been here in Kenya for 27 years – but I did meet him on several occasions, and I've known friends of his...

Walker: And?

Drayton: He's not quite right in the head. Oh, I know about his personality – he is quite a spellbinder, quite intense – but I still insist that he is not quite right in the head. He probably should have been a soldier or a pugilist or something, certainly not a clergyman.

Walker: But Reverent, he...

Drayton: Yes, I know he lifted you up to see Christ. But we often, when we are young in the faith, are easily impressed by personalities rather than substance. Look at the Reverend Grey's life. He has been involved in fisticuffs – there was an incident when he threw an elderly man into a fountain – and there was a suspicion that when he was here in Kenya he was involved in a massacre of some of the natives.

Walker: In fairness, that was never proved, and even if the rumor is true, I also heard that the "natives" were Mau Maus.

Drayton: The Mau Maus are still Kenyans, and they are still human beings created in the image of God. Surely you don't deny that?

Walker: I don't know what I feel about the natives. They are a mystery to me, the mystery of evil.

Drayton: That is nonsense. You are too absolute in your thinking. Good and evil are old, hide-bound concepts.

Walker: I don't quite follow you, Reverend. Isn't Christ, the Son of God, good, and isn't Satan, the archangel, evil?

Drayton: I think that is where you and Grey make your mistake. Our concept of God changes over time, and we must adjust our vision.

Walker: That's a rather depressing thought, Reverend. Do you mean to say that Christ is not the Son of God?

Drayton: Oh no, I think Christ is the son of God, but not in the old way. He is the son of God as we are all called to be sons of God; it's just that Christ fully recognized his son-ship.

Walker: I see. Is that what you've been preaching to the natives for the past 26 years?

Drayton: Yes, I've told them that they are all sons of God.

Walker: That's blasphemy, Reverend.

Drayton: You surprise me, Reverend Walker. I thought your theology was more sophisticated. I'm sorry to hear that your faith is frozen in the dark ages.

Walker: I don't think I belong here in Africa.

Drayton: You mean you don't think you belong here with me.

Walker: Both. Faith is a precious thing, Reverend. If I believed as you do I couldn't go on living.

Drayton: Aren't you being a bit overly dramatic? I don't ask that you give up your faith. I just want to elevate your faith, so that you can see beyond an anthropomorphic God to a universal God who embraces all of mankind, people of all colors.

Walker: Why can't all races embrace Christ, the Christ that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus?

Drayton: That Christ is too ethnically European; we need a Christ who is all things to all people.

Walker: Tell me, what is Christ to the Mau Maus?

Drayton: You seem obsessed with Mau Maus. They are merely helping their black brothers to throw off the white man's oppression. Kenya is in the process of becoming an all-black state. When the Mau Maus see that Kenya is restored, they will settle down.

Walker: Do you believe that?

Drayton: Of course I do. I've lived with these people for the last 26 years. I believe in their innate goodness.

Walker: I believe the exact opposite. I believe that their black skins conceal black hearts. The better ones could be guided to something besides Mau Mau if you got them out from under the thumbs of the witch doctors, but you can't get them away from the witch doctors. They attend Christian services during the day, and the witch doctors' unholy rites at night. And that's the best of them. The vast majority show open contempt for Christianity. They only tolerate our presence here, because of the food and medical supplies we can provide them with.

Drayton: All of this you've discovered in only fourteen months?

Walker: Yes.

Drayton: That's quite remarkable, but let me suggest another possibility. I would suggest that you came here with preconceived, European ideas about what a good Christian should be. And when these pure, simple people didn't measure up to your European notions of Christianity, you became bitter and resentful and painted them, in your own mind, as savages. But that is not right, Reverend Walker; that is not Christian.

Walker: It's true, I do judge these natives by my European standards. But it is my European Christian faith. I don't expect black natives to have my European standards of hygiene or table manners, but I don't believe that the European Christ is just a European projection of God. I believe He is the one true God, so why shouldn't I be disappointed, even appalled and

disgusted, when I see that the natives here have nothing but contempt for the living God, who is, I believe, synonymous with the European Christ?

Drayton: I'm very disappointed that you feel this way. Frankly I see no future for you as a missionary, nor do I think you are fit to serve as a minister in the Anglican Church, or any other church for that matter.

Walker: I've already come to that conclusion myself.

Mrs. Drayton: I couldn't help overhearing what you just said, Reverend Walker. Surely things can't be that glum; we need you here. Don't we, Samuel?

Drayton : I'm afraid Reverend Walker is too disenchanted with me and with Kenya to stay here, Ruth.

Mrs. Drayton: Are things really that bad?

Walker: I'm afraid they are, Mrs. Drayton, but I shall always be grateful to you for your kindness.

Mrs. Drayton: I don't pry into your work, dear...

Drayton: Nothing you do is prying, Ruth. We have shared my work here all these years.

Mrs. Drayton: Then I'm entitled to know why he is leaving.

Drayton: He doesn't believe in the vision, Ruth. He doesn't believe that God is love, he believes in an older, antiquated, parochial God. Why, he even questioned the humanity of the blacks under our care.

Mrs. Drayton: I once believed in that old God, and I think you might have, too, at least when you were a child. Is it so terrible to believe in such a God?

Drayton: What we forgive in a child, we cannot forgive in an adult. No true man of the cloth can serve a universal God of love and serve the old Christian God that was a creation of the sick fantasies of white Europeans.

Mrs. Drayton: I suppose you're right, dear, but I must admit that old God was a comfort to me.

Drayton: But surely love is greater than hate. The God above all anthropomorphic concepts of God is pure love.

Mrs. Drayton: But who and what is that God?

Drayton: Surely you don't expect an answer to that question. We can't ever know God in his or her entirety. We can only love. And I love my people here in Kenya, my black brothers. I won't have a minister serving under me who doesn't share that love.

Mrs. Drayton: I suppose he had to go, but I'll miss him.

Drayton: We'll make out without him, we have our people.

Mrs. Drayton: For how long do you think we'll have them, Samuel? I think we're losing them all to the Mau Maus. So many missions have closed down, the ministers and priests massacred, and the people have gone back to the witch doctors.

Drayton: I don't think that will happen here, Ruth. I can't speak for the other missions, but here we have worked with the people. We've become one with them. They won't harm us. Mau Mau only is effective when there has been no love between the whites and the black. We have loved them, Ruth; we have no reason to fear.

Mrs. Drayton: I wish I had your faith, Samuel. I am a little afraid.

Drayton: Don't be; we'll live to see one blessed, united, black Africa, united in the love that white Europeans never knew.

Act I. Scene 2. A bar in Nairobi.

Walker: One more beer, please.

Bartender : There you go; that's one of the things I'll miss.

Walker: I don't follow you.

Bartender: I'll miss setting these beers down in front of some customer and watching the foam settle down in the glass.

Walker: You won't be working here anymore?

Bartender: I guess you've never been in here before?

Walker: No, I haven't. In fact I've never been in Nairobi before. I've been kind of out in the bush for the last 14 months.

Bartender: Farming?

Walker: Something like that.

Bartender: I didn't mean to pry.

Walker: You're not prying, it's just not a very interesting story.

Bartender: You're different from most customers.

Walker: How so?

Bartender: Most of my customers think whatever concerns them is real interesting to everybody else. But I don't mind that. The more they blab, the bigger their bar tab.

Walker: So you're one of those archetypal bartenders, a kind of father-confessor and best friend all rolled into one.

Bartender: I wouldn't go that far, but I listen to my customers. They're buying my liquor, so why shouldn't I let them talk?

Walker: No reason in the world why you shouldn't, and God bless you for it. You're an unsung hero. But tell me, why, if you like the work here, are you quitting?

Bartender: I'm quitting because I own this bar and I just sold it to some idiot who thinks he can still keep it going after the niggers come in.

Walker: You mean the transition from white government to black government?

Bartender: It won't be anything like a government. It will be a massacre. You can't let niggers have free rein – they'll kill the whites and each other. It's already happening on the white farms and out in the country. The Mau Maus are killing and looting, but once what the Macleods call 'Independence' and what every white man that isn't in the government knows is just plain slaughter starts up, there won't be any white businesses, because the whites that used to run them will be dead.

Walker: Where will you go?

Bartender: I made out all right here the last fifteen years. I got enough saved to go halves with a cousin in London. We're going to open up a pub there.

Walker: Do you have a family?

Bartender: Yes, I have a wife and three children. I don't fancy seeing them cut open by Macleod's niggers. One week from today and we'll be in London.

Walker: That sounds like a wise course. Your family should be your first concern.

Bartender: That's more personal details than I've ever told any customer in the last fifteen years. I got an idea you're some kind of preacher or something, maybe a missionary come in from the bush country. Am I right?

Walker: You're right, but I'm no longer a missionary or a preacher.

Bartender: Things went sour?

Walker: I guess they did. But I didn't sour on my faith, I just went sour on my ability to transmit that faith to the negroes.

Bartender: They're not like white men, you can't get anywhere with them unless you treat them different.

Walker: I should have stopped in here before I went to my assignment. You could have saved me a lot of trouble.

Bartender : I don't think you would have listened to me then.

Walker: No, I don't suppose I would have; some things a man has to find out for himself. But tell me, when you say you can't treat them as you would treat a white man, what do you mean?

Bartender: It's not something that I can just spell out. But it's there. I guess it comes down to this: I've owned this pub here for fifteen years. It's not a fancy, posh pub, but it's not a low dive either. I get some well-off whites and some low-class whites, and I get some scum-of-the-earth whites. But the low-life, criminal-type whites are still not as bad as the niggers. The niggers don't seem to have... I can't think of a word for it, but it's like when a man's done something that's good, we say, "That's mighty white of you." They just don't have it; they can't be mighty white.

Walker: They have not charity?

Bartender: I guess that's it.

Walker: In my work...

Bartender: Excuse me, I have something to take care of.

First negro : Why did you get up to leave?

White man: It was time to go.

First negro: Come sit with us. We'll buy you and your girlfriend a drink.

White man: She isn't my girlfriend, she's my wife. I appreciate your offer, but we really must go.

Second negro : I don't think you understand – we'll be offended if you don't drink with us.

Third negro : Why don't you go and leave your wife behind.

White man: Take your hands off her or I'll...

Bartender : That will be enough. You three get out – independence hasn't arrived yet. Come back in three weeks. Till then this is my place, and I don't serve blacks. Now get out.

First negro: We'll be back in a couple of weeks.

Bartender: You do that. And then we'll all have a few beers together and talk about the good days to come.

Bartender : Did you drive here yourselves or take a cab?

White man: We took our car.

Bartender: Let me walk you to your car.

White man: I understand. I appreciate your consideration. If I was armed, it would be a different story, but I'm not, so I'd appreciate your company.

Walker: I'll go along.

Bartender: Here, take this. That will be better than your pipe.

Walker: How did you know it was only a pipe?

Bartender: I saw you slip it into your pocket. But it worked fine, they didn't know whether you were going to shoot them or not. Well, let's go.

Bartender: That's the type of nonsense I'll be through with, in a few days.

Walker: Won't you still have to serve negroes in England?

Bartender: Yes, but there won't be so many of 'em. And by the time there are too many, I hope to be out of the business altogether.

Walker: If you can't stand to be near negroes, and they hate white people, why are Macleod and his ilk trying to make you live together?

Bartender: That's the question alright. It's insane, but Macleod is going to do it.

Walker: And it isn't really such a mystery when I think of it. It's people like me, the clergy men and the trained politicians, who think they're smarter than everybody else, who want to mix the races.

Bartender: You're right, Rev, and their smartness is going to cost plenty. It already has. But you're not like them. Don't go back there. I don't know why they haven't got 'round to your mission' yet, but they will.

Walker: That's good advice, but I've got to go back one more time.

"I stayed through the next two weeks and saw Joe Hopkins, the bartender, and his family off to London. At the airport, he slipped a .38 special revolver into my hand and said, 'You'll need this more than me, Rev. Take care of yourself – all hell is going to break loose here.'

"Did all hell break loose? Yes, it did. But not in the first 48 hours of the new era of black rule. At first there was silence in the streets. The blacks couldn't quite believe that the white man was really going to turn the government over to them. It had to be some trick, because if they were in the white man's place, they would not hand their power over to the white man. But when it became apparent that the whites were serious about their suicidal decision to hand Kenya over to the blacks, the hellish nightmare began. The white business owners who had actually believed that there would be business as usual under the new black regime were quickly divested of their illusions. The lucky ones just had their businesses burned down while escaping with their lives. But most white business owners were not that lucky. They saw their wives and children humiliated, raped, and murdered before their eyes while they in turn were humiliated, raped, and murdered. Thousands upon thousands of white men, women, and children remain unaccounted for up to this day after the horrible black independence "celebration." Surely the white men with black hearts who worked so long and hard to bring "independence" to Kenya deserve a special place in hell.

"There was one man, a retired English officer who stood head and shoulders above the rest of us. While the official army stood by and often aided the looters and rapists in their satanic actions, one Major Lawson, armed only with a swagger stick, saved over 250 whites from torture and death. He was badly beaten, but he emerged safe and sound after his incredible rescue missions into the jaws of hell. My one rescue effort paled in comparison to Major Lawson's efforts, but I was glad to have saved one family from the black hell. It happened like this – I was making my way out of town, because I saw that there would be no relief coming and whites were going to be massacred. A man could either stay and behave like Major Lawson, or he could leave. Lacking Major Lawson's courage, I decided to leave, if I could.

"I commandeered an abandoned car – you can substitute 'stole' for 'commandeered' if you like – and tried to get out of the city. On the outskirts of town, right before the highway turns into a narrow lane to the bush country, I saw a half dozen blacks in a circle around what appeared to be a white family – father, mother, and three young children. The man had a long, heavy stick and was trying to fend off the six Mau Maus (all blacks are Mau Maus, even if they aren't official members of the cult). It was obvious the father was doomed to die along with his family, who were cowering in fear behind the father. It helped that I had seen action in the army, albeit I had not seen anything so horrific in the war. At any rate I pulled up the car, got out, and opened fire on the Mau Maus. I dropped five with six bullets while the sixth one tried to lop off my head with a machete. He missed with his first try and before he got a second try the father cleaved his skull in two with his stick. I reloaded my revolver and got the whole family into the car. With no particular plan I headed for the bush country.

"I knew that where I was headed to with my charges was only marginally safer than the place I was leaving. Mau Mau activity in the smaller towns and the jungle outposts had been going on for the past ten years. The cities had still been under some control until the switch from white to black rule was finalized in 1960. So now the jungle was safer, because the concentrations of blacks were less out there than in the city. But still, I knew we were in great danger. I had managed to kill five of those six Mau Maus because I took them by surprise, but out in the jungle they could take me by surprise. And that is what happened. We had to leave the car once the jungle got too thick around us. It was then that I walked into a Mau Mau trap, and in a split second I was hanging by my ankles 10 feet off the ground. When they cut me down, I didn't manage to completely protect my head, so I lost consciousness when I hit the ground. The last thing I heard was the screams of the mother and her children.

"When I regained consciousness I did not see what I had expected to see: the tortured and mutilated bodies of my white friends. Instead I saw Ezekiel standing over me. Obviously I didn't know Ezekiel as you and Edward Owens know him, but I had heard of him. You couldn't live in Kenya in the 1950s and into the 1960s without hearing about Ezekiel, the Christian avenger, the devil, or the lunatic, depending on who you were talking to. In my case, and the case of the white family with me, he was an avenging angel of mercy. There were 14 dead Mau Maus strewn along that jungle trail, and they had all been killed by Ezekiel. He offered to take me and my temporary white family, by way of battlefield adoption, to a small private airport and see that we were flown to safety. The Crandalls accepted his offer, but I declined. When he pressed me for the reason why I declined, I told him it was because of the Draytons. I felt it was morally incumbent on me to see if the Mau Maus had decided to finally finish them now that independence, or what could more accurately be called the era of white genocide, was official.

"Ezekiel understood my dilemma, so he made a counter proposal. He suggested I go with him to see the Crandalls safely off and then we would both go see if the Draytons were still alive. I agreed, so after we watched them take off, we started toward the Draytons' mission. Ezekiel was not exactly what I would describe as a scintillating conversationalist, but after about five miles into our walk, I think I hit on his type of topic."

Act II. Scene 1.

Walker: There is something I don't understand about this massacre of the whites.

Ezekiel: And what's that?

Walker: Why were the whites so passive? Why didn't they fight back? I'm not particularly heroic, but I did manage to fight off that first attack on the Crandalls.

Ezekiel: It's been like this for the last 10 years. The whites are never prepared to fight back, because the white governments deluge them with propaganda about the good and noble black savage. The whites that didn't believe that satanic garbage left Kenya before the day of blood.

Walker: That's basically what Mr. Crandall said. He told me that he believed in the new black and white era of cooperation right up until the reign of black terror began.

Ezekiel: And who saved him from his own folly?

Walker: I did.

Ezekiel: And why were you able to save him and his family?

Walker: Because a white man named Joe Hopkins who did not believe in the noble black savage gave me a .38 special and told me to be ready.

Ezekiel: And you were ready, because what you saw when you worked with the black savages in that jungle mission showed you what the black really is.

Walker: That's true. But the Draytons have worked with the blacks for over twenty years, and they never saw what I saw in just 14 months.

Ezekiel: There are none so blind as those who will not see. I was like the Draytons once, and I lost my family because of it.

Walker: If we find the Draytons alive, do you think they'll come out of the jungle with me?

Ezekiel: No.

Walker: I guess what I'm doing is futile then?

Ezekiel: No, nothing done in His name is futile. We're about two miles from their mission; let's circle around to the west and enter the compound from that end.

Act II. Scene 2.

Walker : Dear God, why?

Ezekiel : Stand up; we must bury them quickly and leave.

Walker: The Mau Maus?

Ezekiel: Yes, they might be back. I always keep moving.

Act II. Scene 3.

Walker: How long have you lived here?

Ezekiel: About 8 years.

Walker: I've heard about you. They say you're completely mad.

Ezekiel : Because of that?

Walker: Yes, and because of your hatred of the Mau Mau.

Ezekiel: You've been here 14 months; you've seen the Mau Maus; what do you think?

Walker: I think you're saner than the rest of us.

Ezekiel : That is a diplomatic answer. You're welcome to stay here tonight or longer, but I don't imagine you want to spend all of your life in this cave.

Walker: No, I don't. But to tell you the truth I don't know what to do or where to go. I came here as a missionary, but now...

Ezekiel: Do you still believe in the God you came here to serve?

Walker: Yes, but I'm no longer sure how to serve Him.

Ezekiel: Serve your people and fight the devil's people; that is the way to serve Him.

Walker: I should just stay here in Kenya and kill Mau Maus?

Ezekiel: No, not everyone is called to do what I'm doing. But this black Jacobinism – the Rev. Christopher Grey taught me that term – is a worldwide phenomenon. Pick your spot on the globe and then fight black Jacobinism.

Walker: You know the Rev. Grey?

Ezekiel: I knew of him when he was here for two years, from '53 – '55, but I never met him personally. Then, in 1958, a friend of mine, Edward Owen, convinced the Reverend to come and see me. That's when I met him in the flesh. He is a remarkable man; a man of faith.

Walker: I never knew him personally, but it was his sermons that inspired me to become a minister.

Ezekiel: Well, he wouldn't be disappointed in you now. He never did place much importance on official churches. Christ and His people are the Reverend Grey's concerns.

Walker: What do you think he would advise me to do?

Ezekiel: I don't know. I think you should ask him. Stay with me another week. That will give the bloodletting time to abate a bit; the Mau Maus, like all beasts of the jungle, have to rest after they feast on the blood of their prey.

Walker: That's a rather grisly thought.

Ezekiel: Yes, it is, but it's true. You asked God 'why?' when you were kneeling before Mrs. Drayton's corpse. I didn't have anything of comfort to say to you. I don't know why. But I know His promise. The dead shall be raised. That's all we know. Stay with that – the dead shall be raised. Until that time, there is Christ and His people, and there is the Mau Mau. So stay here this week, and then go see the Reverend Grey. I'll send out a letter in advance, to let him know you're coming. And take his advice. He hates to be treated as some kind of Christian sage, but he has the hand of God on Him; he'll be able to direct you.

Walker: I can't argue with that advice.

Ezekiel: Good; when the time comes then, I'll make sure you get out of Kenya safely.

"As it turned out Ezekiel had to wait 6 weeks before the bloodletting eased up. Finally the new black government had to restore some semblance of order, because their government was in danger of falling before it ever got started. But thousands upon thousands of whites were humiliated, tortured, raped, and murdered during that reign of terror, which only subsided during 'normalcy'; it did not stop.

"I lived the life of a white African counterrevolutionary in those 6 weeks I spent with Ezekiel. It was more than bearable, it was enjoyable, but I knew that I found it enjoyable because I knew that it was not permanent.

"Ezekiel had to be at least twenty-five years older than me, but for the first couple of weeks I simply couldn't keep up with him. He covered twenty to thirty miles a day, up and down rocky hills, through dense jungle; Ezekiel was always on the move. He collected information from native informants and from his own observations of the Mau Maus. During my stay with Ezekiel there were four encounters with Mau Maus, two in my third week, one in my fourth week, and one in my fifth. All four encounters were preemptive strikes, based on Ezekiel's scouting missions. He found out about planned Mau Mau attacks, and he got there before them and killed them. I don't think he needed my help, but I was proud to help. It was sad to think that Ezekiel and I, for a brief time, were the only white men fighting back against the satanic black barbarians sponsored by a Marxist-liberal government in Great Britain.

"It was to that Marxist-liberal country that I planned to return, because it was my country; where else could I go? Ezekiel got me passage on a ship to America, where I was then going to get a flight back to England, but a chance encounter with an American passenger altered my plans."

Act III. Scene 1. Shipboard.

Walker: I'm sorry, I didn't mean to disturb you. I thought no one else was above board.

Miller: I don't own the ship. You're entitled to stand there.

Walker : But I know the feeling; you came up here to be alone.

Miller: Well, now I'm not. My name is James Miller.

Walker: My name is Arthur Walker.

Miller: Miller and Walker, it sounds as if we're both criminals on the run. No two men meeting by chance could be called Walker and Miller, it just doesn't happen.

Walker : Well, I am Arthur Walker.

Miller: And I'm James Miller, so where do we go from here?

Walker: Are you an American?

Miller: Kind of.

Walker: I'm not sure I follow you. What kind of an American are you?

Miller: I'm a Southerner.

Walker: Then you are an American.

Miller: Yes, I was just misbehaving. We've all made up after that little tiff in the 1860s.

Walker: You mistake me if you think I want to meet a nice reconstructed Southerner. I'd love to meet an unreconstructed Southerner.

Miller: And why is that?

Walker: Because I've just spent 16 months in Kenya.

Miller: What a coincidence, I've just spent 3 months in the Congo, just a little south and west of Kenya. But why should spending 16 months in Kenya make you want to talk with an unreconstructed Southerner?

Walker: Because if you are unreconstructed then I might actually find someone to talk to about the sons of Ham.

Miller: I take it you're not overly fond of them?

Walker: No, I'm not.

Miller: Did you lose somebody close?

Walker: No, but I saw their bloodletting close-up. I was an Anglican missionary for 14 months in Kenya. I saw what was left of my superior and his wife.

Miller: I'm sorry.

Walker: I don't want to fly under false colors. My superior sent in recall papers on me, a little before he was murdered.

Miller: Why?

Walker: Because we quarreled over the blacks. I didn't think they were capable of being converted, and he thought they already had been converted.

Miller: That's quite a discrepancy in viewpoints.

Walker: Yes, and since he was my superior, I had to go. He wrote to his superiors in London and recommended that I be... how did he put it? I think he said I should be terminated.

Miller: Killed?

Walker : No, he just meant that I shouldn't be a minister in the Anglican Church any more. He could have just recommended that I be given another post that wasn't in Africa, but he went the whole nine yards and recommended my dismissal.

Miller: Did that bother you?

Walker: Yes, but not in the way you might think. It didn't bother me that I could be dismissed. I had already decided to resign. But it did bother me that an Anglican clergyman thought that the acceptance of the liberal line on the sacred negro was the main criteria of a man's fitness to be a clergyman. Rev. Drayton made it clear to me that he didn't believe in Christ crucified, Christ risen, so it was particularly disappointing to me to see that his faith in the negro was more important to Canterbury than my faith in Christ.

Miller: How do you know that Canterbury agreed with Drayton?

Walker: Because Canterbury defrocked me before I could resign.

Miller: That is a pretty good sign that you're not wanted. I think all of the churches should have big signs out front: 'Men of faith are not welcome here.'

Walker: I wonder if all the churches are as bad as mine. I was raised in an independent, fundamentalist church; maybe I should have stuck with that church?

Miller: I only have intimate knowledge of one church, but it seems to me that they are all, to some degree, tainted with what Dr. Verwoerd calls the negrophile psychosis. They have either replaced Christ with the negro, or else they have made Him a subordinate deity to the negro.

Walker: Funny that I should meet you here and we should end up talking about the white man's worship of the negroes.

Miller: It's not that funny at all. We're both traveling from Africa, which should be called black hell.

Walker: Would I be prying if I asked you why you were traveling in Africa?

Miller: No, because if I didn't like you I'd feel free to tell you to mind your own business. But since I like pastors who don't worship negroes, I will tell you. I was a police officer in Savannah, Georgia from age twenty-two until age thirty-four; I was a patrolman for nine years and a detective for three years. In my twelfth year a dark cloud descended over the detective bureau, and I left under it. One of the elder statesmen on the force, the captain of the detectives, my superior, was found guilty of taking bribes. I was not convicted of wrongdoing, but in order to avoid even "the appearance of corruption" I was asked to resign. At first I refused, but when they promised to find something to convict me of if I didn't resign, I resigned.

Walker: But if you weren't guilty of...

Miller: Every cop that actually tries to lock up bad guys is guilty of something. You'd never be able to make an arrest if you followed all their rules.

Walker: What happened to your captain; did they send him to prison?

Miller: He was sentenced to 10 years, but he never served a day.

Walker: Probation?

Miller: You've got to be kidding. They wanted to show how pure they were. He shot himself before he started his jail sentence.

Walker: I'm sorry to hear that.

Miller: So was I.

Walker: I don't want to sound unduly judgmental, but was he guilty?

Miller: Not in the way they said he was guilty.

Walker: I don't quite understand.

Miller: Paul went right from a combat unit in the war to the police force. For him police work was just a continuation of the war, only now it was even more local. He never took bribes to get some drug lord off the hook, and he never turned his back on a crime. But he'd do favors for his friends. It was usually for his friends' children. He'd see that their names were kept out of the papers, and sometimes he'd make sure they didn't get charged at all. He didn't do it for money, he did it out of friendship. But he didn't turn the money down if Christmas time came around and extra money came to him from his friends. When a new administration moved in with a pledge to get rid of the rough stuff, Paul was old school – black jack and no warning shots. Paul was fed to the wolves. He was corrupt, they said, because he took bribes. It was the saddest day of my life when he was sentenced, and then he shot himself, and things got a lot sadder.

Walker: What did you do when you resigned from the force?

Miller: I became a licensed private detective.

Miller : Why do you laugh?

Walker: I grew up reading detective novels. And it's funny – maybe you could explain this – in the American detective novels the police are either ineffectual or corrupt, and it is a private detective such as Philip Marlowe or Sam Spade who solves the case. In Britain, it is usually the Scotland Yard detective who solves the crime. Bulldog Drummond and Sherlock Holmes are exceptions, but even in those novels the police might be ineffectual, but they are not corrupt.

Miller: What you say is true, but I'm not sure why that is. I guess Americans like to pride themselves on being anti-authoritarian. It's all nonsense, but that's the way Americans like to think of themselves: they like to think they are rugged individualists.

Walker: You don't buy that?

Miller: No, I don't. Americans are the biggest sheep in the world. Everybody, now that they lost the war, likes to get on the Germans for kowtowing to Hitler, but didn't we kowtow to that commie bastard Roosevelt? And aren't we kowtowing now to the commies and their shock troops, the negroes?

Walker: I don't think it would be appropriate for an Englishman to comment on America's decadence; we haven't exactly shone as beacons of Christian civilization in the postwar era.

Miller: No, I don't suppose you have. It seems like all the white nations are going through a reconstruction period.

Walker: And who's doing the reconstructing?

Miller: White liberals or communists – whatever you call them, it amounts to the same thing.

Walker: And the negroes are the shock troops?

Miller: Yes, that's right.

Walker: After what I've seen in Kenya, I can't quarrel with your assessment. But what was a private detective from Savannah, Georgia doing in Kenya?

Miller: I was working for a client. I've been a private detective for the past twelve years – if you're counting, that makes me 46 – and this last case is only the second time I've had to leave the States to do what I was hired to do. But in the other case I didn't have to travel across the ocean, I only had to go to Mexico. But this time it was to stinkin', bloody Africa that I went.

Walker: Were you successful?

Miller: I found out what my client wanted me to find out, but it won't be pleasant news that I'll be bringing home.

Walker: How bad is it?

Miller: The worst kind. Maybe I should give you a little more background.

Walker: I'd like to hear it; it seems, out here on deck, that we're the only two men left in the world.

Miller: I was sent by the Fitzpatrick family to find their twenty-two year old daughter. The Fitzpatricks were, and still are, I suppose, what you would call fervent Catholics. Their lives revolved around their parish church. Jeanne and Sean had only one child, named Colleen. They hired me to find her, because I was a member of their parish when I was growing up. I haven't been inside a church in over twenty years, and I made that clear to them. But still, they had known me "back then," and they didn't know any other private investigators, so they called on me.

Colleen was the victim of her parents' Catholicism. She was brought up to love and cherish negroes as God's pure and simple children of nature. Her parish priest and the good sisters at the Catholic school she attended all taught her about the evils of segregation and the evil part her own people, the Southern whites, had played in denying black people their rights as citizens. So good, devout Colleen, upon her graduation from a "good Catholic college," went to the Congo to "help" blacks. She was one of those "unfortunate victims" of African independence. She was working in northern Katanga at a time of the massacre. It didn't matter that she was there to help the 'pure and simple' natives, the pure and simple natives tortured, raped, and murdered her.

I suspected right from the beginning that she was one of the thousands of victims of the Katanga massacre, but it took me some time to get documented proof that the mutilated body I thought was Colleen's body was in fact her body. I've got that proof with me now, and I'd give all my worldly possessions if I could give her parents back their daughter. But that is up to your Boss, isn't it?

Walker: Yes, it is. A new friend of mine, a man called Ezekiel, told me there is only His promise that the dead shall be raised, which sustains any of us.

Miller: But it takes a hell of a lot of faith to actually believe that.

Walker: You don't?

Miller: I won't say that. I'd like to believe it. And I guess, like Horatio, I do in part believe it. It's funny, I most believe in Him when I look right in the face of Mau Maus. They are so evil, so obviously the servants of Satan, that I immediately project Satan's opposite – Jesus Christ. It's when I come within hearing distance of a Western clergymen, telling me about the goodness of our black brethren that I become a non-believer.

Walker: I've had that same experience. In my last talk with my superior he told me of his faith in the sacred negro and his lack of faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. It took all my spiritual resolve to fight free of his horrific vision of God. If not for a chance meeting with Ezekiel, I might still be hovering in that in-between land, the land between faith and unbelief.

Miller: You mentioned that horrific vision of God. Isn't that the key? How can people who profess to be Christian worship the people who commit horrific atrocities as a matter of course, as you or I might brush our teeth or plant a garden?

Walker: "Welcome the savage God," is what our clergymen tell us. I won't. If I die in the attempt, I intend to fight this negroization of the West with all my heart, mind, and soul – Are you laughing at me? I wouldn't blame you if you are; I do sound a lot like King Lear in the storm, thundering impotently about my revenges.

Miller: I'm not laughing at you – at least you're thundering against the right things. And who's to say that your thundering will be ineffectual? But in between your thundering against the savage gods, what will you do for a living?

Walker: Quite frankly, I don't know. I'm just grateful to get out of Africa with my life and with my faith intact. I have no thought of what I'll do for a living now that I'm no longer an Anglican minister.

Miller: The first couple of years after I was forced to resign from the force were hard on me financially, but once I built up a reputation in the business I started doing all right. In fact, now I employ a number of operatives. I could use another.

Walker: That's awfully kind of you, but I know nothing about private investigating.

Miller: You've read the Raymond Chandler books, haven't you?

Walker: Yes.

Miller: And you've read the Bulldog Drummond books of McNeile?

Walker: Yes.

Miller: Well, there you have it, you'll be a combination of Phillip Marlowe and Bulldog Drummond. I could use such a man.

Walker (laughing): If you're serious, I accept your offer. But I could use a few weeks in London first. I need to see another outcast Anglican minister.

Miller: The Reverend Grey?

Walker: Yes, how did you know?

Miller: I've read a great deal of his books. A man like you, after what you've experienced, wouldn't be looking for advice from anybody but that man. Sure, I can wait a few weeks. But then you come over the ocean, like Prince Charlie, and try your hand at Drummond and Marlowe.

Act III. Scene 2. London

Chambers: That will be quite a change, from Anglican minister to an American private investigator.

Walker: I really think I'm simply a charity case of James Miller.

Rev. Grey: It's not just that. Mr. Miller needs men who are excellent judges of character, and you are just that.

Walker: That is kind of you to say, but I misread the Draytons and I misread my vocation; I thought I had one, and didn't.

Rev. Grey: Don't go down that road. If you were wrong to pursue the collar, what does that say about me?

Walker: I didn't intend any slight...

Rev. Grey: I know you didn't. And you needn't apologize; I'm not at all sensitive about the subject. I served God in the capacity I thought He wanted me to serve Him. Whether I was right or wrong, He'll be the final judge.

Bontini: The Rev. Grey started before we did, Arthur. He is an Ancient Mariner; he did not have to tell lies about God when he started out. When they wanted him to, he got out of that type of service. We both, you in the Anglican, and I in the Roman Catholic church, ran into the contradiction between God's truth and our church's 'truth' earlier in our careers.

Walker: And now we have no career in the church.

Bontini: I wouldn't say that. The church consists of those who believe in Christ, not of those who belong to an organization that may or may not serve Christ.

Chambers: I go along with Father Bontini; church organizations don't amount to a thing.

Bontini: You see Arthur, there's confirmation from one of the last knights of Christendom; that should reassure you. He hasn't been inside a church for over forty years and yet...

Chambers: Don't give me a halo, Father. I came late to this Christian knight business.

Rev. Grey: But you did come and that is the point Francesco is making. You are one of the last knights of Europe.

Chambers: I believe we've gotten off track; I thought we were giving Arthur a going away party.

Rev. Grey: Yes, we are, but I thought we'd take a moment to praise...

Chambers: No need.

Bontini: The Rev. Grey always tells me I'm indispensable, but if you ever need some help in dealing with the negro worshippers within the Catholic church, Arthur, I can take the time to come over. I've had some experience in that regard.

Walker: Thank you. I don't know what type of work I'll be doing, but I'll take you up on your offer if something like that comes up.

Rev. Grey: Inspector Chambers has seen a lot of the white slave rings, right here in England. It seems to be a world-wide thing, this extreme hatred of the white race.

Chambers: When I first heard the Rev. Grey use the term "negro worship" I thought he was exaggerating to make a point. But when I ran into Kimaru, I realized that the Rev. Grey was not exaggerating — the men who govern the nations of Europe literally worship the negroes. The negroes themselves have no idea why the whites are handing their women, their children, and

their nations over to them, all they know is that the whites are weak, so they pounce on them, like jungle cats pounce on their prey.

"As you no doubt remember, Rev. Grey, the party went on for quite some time, and I drank more ale than I was used to. It meant the world to me to have friends of the heart. I went to America, not feeling that all was right with the world, but feeling that all was right in my world so long as I was right with the same God that Christopher Grey, Francesco Bontini, James Miller, and John Chambers worshipped."

Act IV. Scene 1.

Fitzpatrick: Come in.

Miller: Arthur, this is Mr. Sean Fitzpatrick. I've told you a bit about his family.

Walker: Yes, you have. My deepest sympathies, Mr. Fitzpatrick.

Fitzpatrick: That is most kind of you, I thank you. It's not necessary to call me 'mister,' Sean will do.

Miller: I know this must seem very mysterious to you, Arthur. Asking you to meet here, instead of at the office. But I have a very good reason for this clandestine meeting. I haven't let you near the office since you came over, because I didn't want you to be seen with me or anyone connected with my business.

Fitzpatrick: If you don't mind, James, I'd like to go lie down. You don't need me for anything at present, do you?

Miller: No. I just wanted you to meet the man we'll be working with.

Fitzpatrick: He seems to be a good man. It was nice meeting you, Mr. Walker.

Walker: Likewise.

Miller: I can see you're a little confused, Arthur, but there has been method to my madness.

Walker: No need to apologize. If you want to pay me to sit in my apartment reading books on your local history, that is up to you.

Miller: Did you read those sections on the Southern Bureau Against Racial Injustice, SBARI?

Walker: Yes.

Miller: What did you make of the organization?

Walker: It seems like your typical Marxist front organization. A few devout communist Jews at the head of the organization and the usual array of liberal clergymen and liberal academics lined up with the communists. All of them fighting racial injustice, as they put it, but in reality using negro shock troops to destroy what is left of white civilization.

Miller: You've summed it up quite well.

Walker: Thank you for the compliment on my reading ability, but what does this have to do with your private investigating agency?

Miller: We've been hired to destroy that agency.

Walker: Am I allowed to ask who hired us to destroy that agency?

Miller: I don't generally give out the name of our employers. But in this case, I'm going to make an exception, because I think it will help you work on the case. In fact, I don't think you could proceed without some more information.

Our employer is Sean Fitzpatrick, the man you just met. He is not in very good shape physically right now; he has been found, more than once, sleeping out by his daughter's grave, but he is sound up here and sound in there. In fact, he is a lot saner spiritually than he has been in his entire life.

Walker: I imagine he has some compelling reason, connected to his daughter's death, that makes him want to see the SBARI destroyed.

Miller: Yes, he does. As I told you on the boat, Fitzpatrick was a 'support your local clergy' Catholic. Whatever his local priest, in conjunction with his local bishop, said was law to Fitzpatrick. Well, it was his local priest and his local bishop that served on the board of SBARI. They worked in unison with the Jewish Marxists and several Protestant clergymen to promote what they called civil rights. It all sounded so noble, but the negroes were not converted to Christ, they simply had free rein to be themselves. And being themselves meant they could kill whites with impunity. The SBARI pays for the defense of every black that murders a white.

And the SBARI's benevolent work also extended to Africa. They supported the Mau Mau reign of terror and encouraged young Catholics, such as Colleen Fitzpatrick to go there to "help" the struggling Africans to get out from under the white man's yoke. Colleen took it all the way. She went to Africa to "help" the good, noble black savages, and she paid the ultimate price. Fitzpatrick knows he can't kill every last liberal and every black barbarian on the face of the earth, but he wants to do something. He won't be pacified with the "mustn't be violent" rhetoric; he wants to hit the SBARI hard, and he wants to sponsor vigilante hits on black barbarians who kill whites and then get off because SBARI lawyers get them off.

Walker: It's a tall order.

Miller: Sean doesn't expect miracles – he knows that this is just the start of a white counterrevolution – but he wants it to begin right here in Savannah, Georgia.

Walker: Does he still consider himself a Catholic, or has he gone atheist?

Miller: He considers himself a Christian, but he swears he'll never set foot in a church again so long as he lives. "I made a whitened sepulcher of my parish church, and it cost my daughter her life," was the way he put it.

Walker: Most of us have done something similar along the way. It's easy to mistake the furniture of the church for the real church.

Miller: Well, let's get down to your part in this drama – I've kept you away from the main office, because I want you to join the SBARI.

Walker: But won't they check my background?

Miller: I'm counting on it.

Walker: But they'll find out that I was dismissed for "conduct detrimental to good racial relations."

Miller: They'll find out you were dismissed for "conduct detrimental to race relations," but I doubt that they'll figure out that you were dismissed for the wrong attitude. They'll assume, because you were younger than the missionary you worked with, that you were the liberal one who wouldn't listen to your superior's racist view of negroes. That is my guess. If you give them a big dose of sincere liberal garbage when they interview you, that will clinch it.

Walker: I'll give it a try. But if it works, if I do get a job there, what is my next step?

Miller: Just keep in touch. Let us know what's going on with some of the big shots. Then we'll see what we can do to damage their organization. That's what we're being paid for.

Walker: How much time have we got? I don't think Fitzpatrick wants to keep paying indefinitely.

Miller: Sean is rich. There is no money limit. You just be careful, don't get impatient and overplay your hand, and I'm sure you'll come up with something.

Six weeks later – Walker's report to Miller:

"I didn't send you anything until now, because I didn't think I had anything worth reporting. That's why you just received those short "nothing to report" notes. But now I have something that might be of interest. First, let me run down some of the major players and the foot soldiers in this organization. The man who interviewed me when I first came here, Aaron Siegel, seems to be the second in command. He is in his mid-fifties, quite thin, you might even say emaciated. He lives for the cause, eschewing alcohol, smoking, and women. What about men? No, he appears to be asexual. He is a true believer, a Marxist Jew who hopes to destroy the West through the negro. Trotsky would be proud of him.

"The high mucky muck, also a Marxist Jew, Jacob Belenky, is a different story. He is in his mid-forties, very jovial and very cultural. As such he is far more dangerous, in my opinion, than his unadulterated, emaciated second-in-command. He is totally committed to revolution through the negroes, but he is much more adept at hiding his revolutionary nature behind a very jovial and witty façade. I receive most of my orders from Siegel, but I have talked with Belenky on several occasions.

"Bishop Callahan cannot always attend the meetings, but he is very committed to the cause. Unlike Siegel and Belenky, who are completely secularized, Callahan still professes to believe in the Catholic faith, but he believes in it the way Rev. Drayton believed in the Anglican faith. He has blended Christ with the negro, which makes Christ something quite different from Christ the Lord.

"Then there is Father O'Reilly, Sean Fitzpatrick's parish priest. He strikes me as the most zealous of the lot. He's in his mid-thirties, completely without scruples or morals (he is a promiscuous homosexual), and he has no regard for anything that does not further the interests of the negro. For Siegel and Belenky, the negroes are a means to an end, for Callahan and O'Reilly (particularly O'Reilly), the worship of negroes is the desired end.

"The reason I've fit in here so well is because there are so many ex-clergymen and currently practicing clergymen who are members of the SBARI. It's kind of an exclusive club. I've met and spent some time with a Methodist minister by the name of Julie Pierce, and with an ex-clergyman by the name of Thomas Truscott, formerly of the Presbyterian Church. They all have one thing in common; they are committed, heart and soul, to the negro. Whenever a negro murders, they take up his case, either claiming he is completely innocent, or, if his guilt is indisputable, claiming that he should be freed, because of the 'legacy of slavery' that made him do whatever crime he committed. Again, I get the impression with Siegel and Belenky that they use the "we must understand their rage" excuse as a calculated tactic, whereas the assorted Catholic and Protestant clergy and laymen truly believe that all black-on-white crime is justifiable under the blanket of the 'legacy of slavery.'

"I haven't spoken much with the clerical staff or the foot soldiers who put out the pamphlets and fill up the ranks of the protests and marches that the SBARI stage, because I thought it would look conspicuous for me to be hobnobbing with the hired help. Despite their professed love of the people, these people are very snobbish. The upper echelon keep to themselves. I'm kind of a low-ranking upper echelon, but I'm still upper echelon enough that I thought it best to stay in character by not getting too chummy with the foot soldiers.

"But now let me come to the heart of the issue. You remember you said that you and Fitzpatrick were particularly interested to learn if the SBARI confined itself to pamphleteering, the defense of black criminals after their crimes, and the libeling of all white opponents of SBARI? You wanted to find out if beside that they actually helped organize the murder of whites. Well, two nights ago I got some information that seems to suggest that the SBARI does actively engage in the murder of whites. You see I had dinner with Julie Pierce, and after four or five drinks she said more than she should have. She doesn't know a lot of details – she isn't that high up in the organization – but from one slip of speech, which I'm sure she didn't remember in the morning, I became almost certain about the SBARI's involvement in actual murders. When I'm absolutely sure of this, which will probably be in a few days, I'll let you know via a letter, at the usual place."

Second letter 3 days later:

"I need to meet with you; I've got the confirmation."

Act IV. Scene 2.

Walker: I had to do a little second-story work to get the evidence I needed, but I got it.

Miller: Whose office did you have to rifle?

Walker: Father O'Reilly's. It was Julie Pierce who inadvertently tipped me off. I read the documents I needed to read, and then I put them back and got out in the same way I came in.

Fitzpatrick: Shouldn't you have kept the documents to try and convict Father O'Reilly?

Walker: Believe me, sir, they wouldn't have stood up in court. They were written in code, a code I've come to recognize since I've been working there, but not something we could take to court. But this much is certain. O'Reilly and Callahan actually believe that Christ was only a prophet preparing the way for a black Christ that may be, or may not be, already present on the earth. But whether he has arrived or has yet to arrive, Callahan and O'Reilly think that all good Catholics must prepare the world for the coming of the Black Messiah by the extermination of the devil race. All whites who renounce their race and participate in the white blood bath will be spared. Siegel and Belenky don't share Callahan's and O'Reilly's faith, but they use it. Besides defending black murderers they also permit O'Reilly and Callahan to suborn blacks to commit more murders of whites. They guarantee them "safe" killings, and they also give them ready cash. The murder of those two nuns outside the Cathedral a few weeks ago was not a random murder. Callahan and O'Reilly set it up. That mass murder of the 12 school children 3 months ago was not a random killing; it was set up by Callahan and O'Reilly.

Miller: Does this extend to other cities as well?

Walker: Definitely. Almost every city has a clergyman or two who accept the basic tenets of Callahan and O'Reilly's black faith. And the ones that don't believe as O'Reilly and Callahan believe still help their cause under the banner of civil rights. O'Reilly and Callahan don't even want a lot of converts, they just want the clergy to look the other way when blacks murder and excuse the murders under the guise of "you must understand their rage," or "the legacy of slavery."

Miller: So O'Reilly and Callahan are operating an organization within an organization?

Walker: Yes. Siegel and Belenky allow them to go about their business using the SBARI headquarters because their business, the slaughter of whites, suits the needs of Siegel and Belenky as well. They feel the slaughter of whites will bring them closer to a Marxist state, and Callahan and O'Reilly think the slaughter of whites will bring about the arrival of the black Messiah.

Fitzpatrick: This is all fantastical...

Walker: I assure you, Mr. Fitzpatrick, that what I say is...

Fitzpatrick: I'm not questioning you, Mr. Walker; I have no doubt of the truth of what you've said. In a watered down way this is what the Catholic church, especially here in the south, has been preaching for many years. It's fantastical, but unfortunately it's true.

Miller: I believe it was Blake who said if mankind would not have the religion of Christ, they would have the religion of Satan. This would tend to confirm his words.

Fitzpatrick: Does this organization of Callahan and O'Reilly have branches abroad?

Walker: Yes, it does. And I should emphasize that Callahan and O'Reilly are only in charge of the Savannah chapter; they don't run the whole show. Nor is it just a Catholic thing. There are clergymen, and women, from all denominations who are members. The American branch of the negro worshippers try to coordinate their big events with their European and African counterparts.

Fitzpatrick: What do you mean by 'big events'?

Walker: The big mass slaughters, which are their equivalents of the old Catholic mass.

Fitzpatrick: Was the Katanga massacre, in which my daughter was murdered, one of those big events?

Walker: Yes, I'm sorry to say that it was. At the same date of the Katanga massacre there were fourteen whites killed in Los Angeles and another dozen killed in Savannah. Those murders were directly connected to the Katanga massacre. I don't know how many other murders of whites on that date were planned and how many were just the usual spontaneous murders that blacks commit as a matter of routine.

Miller: Do you know when the next big even is planned?

Walker: No, I don't. I'm not that high up in the SBARI, nor am I a confidante of O'Reilly or Callahan. But I suspect another small scale murder is being planned. If I can get more information then maybe we can stop it.

Miller: We'll try if you can manage to find out where and when. But be careful, be very careful; those men think no more of murdering a white man than they think of swatting a fly.

Walker: You're wrong; they wouldn't swat a fly, but they can and will kill a white man.

Miller: You're right.

Act IV. Scene 3. London, Grey's living room.

Rev. Grey: The letter goes on for another four pages, which I'll come to later, but what do you think so far?

Bontini: It's not surprising. It has always seemed to me that the modern black uprisings had much more white support than was apparent on the surface.

Rev. Grey: Yes, the Marxist-Jacobin influence has been with us for some time, but this incredible anti-white, anti-Christian push of organized Christianity is primarily a 20th century phenomenon. But you've been closer to it than I have, what do you think?

Bontini: It definitely exists now, that's for sure. I'll never forget that Kimaru mass of Pope John. But I think you're right. The shift from Christ to the negro, except for isolated cases, has been largely a 20th century phenomenon. It's connected in some way to the advance of science.

Rev. Grey: Precisely, the scientific view of the universe has turned the European toward the nature gods, and who is more natural, in the primitive sense, than the negro?

Bontini: But what about the rest of the letter; did they manage to stop any of the bloodletting?

Rev. Grey: Let's see —

"I was 90% sure I knew of a planned murderous attack at a coffee shop where a lot of white college students gathered together. A little before the shop's 2:00 AM closing, five handpicked black murderer were going to kill as many whites as were in the shop and then scatter into the night.

"Miller and I were planning to intercept the blacks and kill them before they opened fire on the whites in the coffee shop. But in order to make sure they were the right blacks we were killing, we were going to have to wait until they drew their weapons. Then, we hoped, we'd have a split second to kill them before they started their killing spree.

"Fitzpatrick was there when we planned our strategy, but we never dreamed he'd want to take part in the action. But that is what he did. He refused to take no for an answer. He wanted to be one of the shooters. But Miller finally carried the day with his hard, truthful logic.

"Look, I've had experience with this sort of thing. And Walker here has been trained by the best guerrilla fighter there is, that Ezekiel fellow. What we want to do is stop a murder spree. We don't want to mess around with equal opportunity shooting. You're paying for this, I know, but more than that, I know about this plan to murder the whites in the coffee shop, and I'll stop it whether you pay me or not. Now you can pull me off the case if you want, but either way I'm going to stop this killing, and I'm going to stop it according to the plan I think has the best chance of success. If you get in the way, I'll knock you unconscious and lock you up somewhere until it's over."

"Fitzpatrick smiled and shook both our hands. 'I knew you were the men for me, but isn't there something I can do?'

"There was; it was agreed that Fitzpatrick would drive, for want of a better word, the getaway car. As soon as we hit the potential murderers, he was to drive up and take us away from the coffee shop to a backwoods area where we were going to dump the car and the weapons and then proceed back to town in another car that we had hidden there.

"All went well. My information turned out to be pretty accurate. The only difference was that there were only four assailants, not five. The coffee shop activity was winding down, but the proprietor and six whites were in the shop at the time of the planned hit. About five yards from the shop the blacks took out their shotguns from under their coats. Before the leader got his hand on the door, Miller yelled 'hands up' and started firing with his pump action shotgun. I opened fire as well.

"It was over in about 15 seconds. We were not hurt, having taken them completely by surprise, and Fitzpatrick got us out of there quickly and efficiently, as if he had done similar getaways hundreds of times. It's been four weeks since the preventive shooting and neither Miller, Fitzpatrick, nor I have been questioned by the police. The SBARI has organized the usual protest marches against 'white racism.' I marched, because I thought that a refusal to march would have destroyed my cover. But I think I'm already suspected, because a number of SBARI sponsored murder raids have gone awry since I started working for them. They are satanic, but not stupid. I'll keep you informed, but I think my usefulness as an undercover man has come to an end."

"Three weeks later...

"I was right. Three nights ago I was almost run over by a car, just like in that television show called *The Untouchables*. And last night two men came to kill me while I was in bed. But they found a dummy in the bed, not Arthur Walker, the dummy, but a stuffed, theatrical dummy. James Miller, my guardian angel, was behind the door. So there are two less stooges for the SBARI in the world. I'll be returning to England next week. At that time I'd like to tell you the rest of my story."

Act IV. Scene 4. London, England. One week later.

Rev. Grey: How is the girl's father holding up?

Walker: Mr. Fitzpatrick is not doing well. He still spends a lot of nights by the grave site. I dare say he's better than he's been, now that he's been able to hit the SBARI, but the touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice... You know what I mean.

Rev. Grey: Yes.

Bontini: And the battle with the SBARI is never over. It's an ongoing battle. Even if that organization completely disappeared, some other would take its place.

Rev. Grey: That's true. Once you see to the depths of this evil of negro worship, you yearn for some kind of apocalyptic showdown. But that is not up to us. Before that final battle, we are supposed to fight the thankless little battles, like you gentlemen have been fighting.

Bontini: Don't include me in that "you gentlemen"; I've just been a spectator.

Rev. Grey: No, you haven't. And I won't permit you to say me nay on this. You have fought the good fight.

Chambers: The Reverend Grey is right, Father. The real war is not with material weapons.

Bontini: That is kind of you to say, Inspector Chambers, but I'm no longer Father Bontini.

Chambers: You are to me.

Bontini: Thank you again.

Walker: Fitzpatrick has the added problem of his wife. All she cares about is her husband's mass attendance. He has stopped going to Mass, and he hates Father O'Reilly. That is more than his wife can take. They live in the same house, but they seldom speak any more.

Rev. Grey: That is very sad. Is there any hope of a reconciliation?

Walker: Not at the time I left Savannah. And if a reconciliation comes, it will only be because Mrs. Fitzpatrick has come over to Sean's side of the fence. He is like steel on the issue of O'Reilly, Bishop Callahan, and the organized Catholic Church.

Bontini: I can understand that. But I hope he hasn't become embittered against God.

Walker: I can't say for certain how he feels about God. His grief for his daughter seems without end and without hope; that can't be a good sign. And he seems to be looking for that great, apocalyptic confrontation with the negro-worshipping liberals.

Rev. Grey: Those two forces – grief and a desire for a final, definitive victory over your enemies, which can never come in this life, can lead a man to despair. But there is one thing that may help Mr. Fitzpatrick.

Walker: What is it?

Rev. Grey: Give him something close to the apocalyptic confrontation he wants. And make sure Mrs. Fitzpatrick is a witness. If she has a soul, it will turn her away from organized Roman Catholicism to a Christ-centered Catholicism.

Bontini: You must have something in mind, Christopher?

Rev. Grey: Nothing definite, but something Arthur said before you gentlemen came in gave me the germ of an idea.

Walker: I did?

Rev. Grey: Yes, you were telling me that the archdiocese of Savannah, in conjunction with all the archdioceses throughout the world, particularly in the European nations and Africa, were going to consecrate their churches to some negro patron saint.

Bontini: That's true; I've heard something about that myself. Paul VI is going to declare over 100,000 new black saints to make sure there are enough to go around. One of the saints will be Kimaru.

Chambers : Fancy that; Kimaru a saint. Won't that be nice?

Rev. Grey: No, it won't be nice; it's blasphemous, just as it was blasphemous for Pope John to concelebrate with him when he was alive. But that is just one of the multitudinous things that I have no control over.

Walker: The Anglican church and most of the Protestant denominations are all having some joint ceremonies with the Catholic church.

Chambers: Wouldn't you like to have your hand on a dynamite lever that could blow all the negrophile celebrations in the various churches to kingdom come at one thrust?

Bontini: Without blowing up the people in the church?

Chambers: I suppose so.

Bontini: Then I'd be for it. But seriously, Christopher, what can we do about any of these negro consecrations; hasn't the negrophile psychosis gone too far to be stopped by anything we can do?

Rev. Grey: No, we can't stop it, but we can bear witness to a different God, our Lord Jesus Christ.

Act V. Scene 1. Four weeks later. Bishop Callahan's office.

Callahan: I thought that Englishman – what was his name?

O'Reilly: Arthur Walker.

Callahan: Yes, that was it. I thought he was the traitor in our ranks who scuttled some of our punitive raids on the whites.

O'Reilly: He was, but I don't think he acted alone. He had money behind him. I suspect that private detective was in on it.

Callahan: What private detective?

O'Reilly: His name is James Miller. He's a former police detective, but for the past twelve years or so he's run a private detective agency.

Callahan: I fail to see how a man who runs around peeping in key holes at the behest of unhappy married people has anything to do with us and our mission.

O'Reilly: If I'm right in my suspicions, he has everything to do with our mission. I think he was hired by someone to destroy, or, at the very least, damage the SBARI.

Callahan: Who is the person that hired him, presuming what you say is true about Miller?

O'Reilly: It's true, and I think he's working for Sean Fitzpatrick.

Callahan : That's nonsense! Fitzpatrick is the biggest donor to Catholic churches in the whole diocese, in the whole state, for that matter.

O'Reilly: Used to be, Bishop. He hasn't given one red cent to any Catholic charity for the past eight months.

Callahan: Why?

O'Reilly: He had only one daughter, and she was killed in what they call the Katanga massacre. I'm sure it was not a massacre – that was false reporting – but in the heat of battle some blacks, with justice on their side, might have killed some of the white Red Cross workers. Or more probably some whites killed the Red Cross workers and blamed it on the blacks. At any rate, Fitzpatrick's daughter was killed, and he blames the Catholic church in general and me especially for his daughter's death.

Callahan: Why does he blame you especially?

O'Reilly: Because I was his parish priest, and I performed all those special negro masses and encouraged his daughter to attend a progressive Catholic university that taught the new progressive social teaching of the church, which stressed racial equality as the most pressing issue of the times.

Callahan: And he faults you for that? It seems to me he should be grateful to you for inspiring his daughter to give up her life in a worthy cause. It's a pity she died so young, but surely he must know, as a Catholic, that martyrs go straight to heaven. His daughter died in the battle for racial equality; what greater Catholic cause can a young women die for?

O'Reilly: None greater, but Fitzpatrick has become a racist. He is against all things Catholic and he is very hostile to the SBARI.

Callahan: When did you first learn of Fitzpatrick?

O'Reilly: I've suspected him for quite some time, but my suspicions did not become virtual certainty until I had a visit from his wife last night. She came to talk to me about her husband, who is no longer attending Mass and has stopped every single church-related activity. She also told me that he often sleeps overnight at his daughter's grave site. When I asked her, as discreetly as possible, if it was her daughter's actual remains or just a memorial grave site, she told me it was her daughter's actual remains. A private detective...

Callahan: James Miller?

O'Reilly: Precisely. He was hired to find out what happened to Colleen Fitzpatrick and bring her home. So he did bring her home, but not alive.

Callahan: I doubt that he even brought back the right body. We have only his word for it.

O'Reilly: No, I did some checking on that. It is the girl's remains.

Callahan: Is it Mrs. Fitzpatrick that is waiting in the outer office?

O'Reilly: Yes. I told her you would see her.

Callahan: I don't know what I can say to her that you haven't said already. Is she the hysterical type?

O'Reilly: Emotional, I'd say, but not hysterical.

Callahan: Oh no.

O'Reilly: I'm sorry, but I thought your title and prestige might calm her down. And maybe you could learn more about what her husband is up to.

Callahan: You take liberties, Father, but go ahead, send her in.

O'Reilly: Should I stay or leave?

Callahan: I suppose you'd better leave us alone if we are going to do this right.

O'Reilly: All right. I'll send her in.

Callahan: I'm so sorry about the recent death of your daughter, Mrs. Fitzpatrick, but it must be a great consolation to know that she died in a great Catholic cause.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: Yes, it is, Bishop. But I wish my husband could be consoled. I always thought we had a good marriage. We planned on a lot of children, but I had two miscarriages before Colleen was born, and after that I was unable to have any more children. But Sean so loved his little Colleen, it didn't seem that important that she would be our only child. Now, there doesn't seem anything left for him. He doesn't go to Mass anymore and he often sleeps...

Callahan: Yes, Father O'Reilly mentioned that he often sleeps out at your daughter's grave. But tell me is your husband angry at God or is he angry at the Roman Catholic Church?

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: Aren't they one and the same?

Callahan: Yes, they are, but some people separate them in their mind's eye.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: I would definitely say that his anger is directed at the Roman Catholic Church. And, I hate to say this – he particularly hates Father O'Reilly and you, Bishop.

Callahan: Don't worry about offending me, Mrs. Fitzpatrick, I'm never personally offended when someone dislikes me because I wear the Roman collar. What concerns me is the danger to your husband's soul. What he thinks of the man, Joseph Callahan, doesn't matter, but when he hates me and Father O'Reilly in our official capacities as God's anointed, well then, his soul is in danger, if he doesn't repent, of eternal damnation.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick : I know that, Bishop, but what am I do to?

Callahan: Can you tell me anything more about your husband's malaise that would help me to help him? For instance, where does he go at nights when he isn't at his daughter's grave site, and whom does he meet?

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: I don't know Bishop, he doesn't confide in me since I defended you and Father O'Reilly.

Callahan: Defended us? Against what charges?

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: He says you no longer worship Christ; you worship the negro instead of Christ. And he feels that our daughter was so infected with that false negro worshipping religion that she went to Africa and was tortured and murdered.

Callahan: That is worse than nonsense; it is blasphemy.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: I know it is, Bishop. I didn't want to tell you what he said, but...

Callahan: No, Mrs. Fitzpatrick, you are right to tell me everything that your husband has said against me. I represent the Church, how he feels about me is how he feels about God, and I must know what is going on in your husband's soul if I'm going to help him.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: I don't know what else I can say.

Callahan: This detective that he hired to bring your daughter back home; does he still see him?

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: I don't know, Bishop, I have no idea who he sees. He certainly hasn't brought him to the house after he brought Colleen home.

Callahan: Please, Mrs. Fitzpatrick, don't carry on so. I'm sure your husband will come around. I'll have some masses said for his special benefit and for your daughter.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick: Bless you, Bishop. And I apologize for my husband. What else can I do? I still love him.

Callahan: Certainly, that's as it should be. Now, let me give you my blessing. In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, Amen.

O'Reilly: Well?

Callahan: The woman's a wreck – I really couldn't get any definitive information from her. But she did confirm what you said about her husband. He hates us. I think we should take what we know to Siegel and Belenky.

O'Reilly: How about the rest of the council?

Callahan: No, I think we should keep this matter between Siegel and Belenky and ourselves.

Act V. Scene 2. One week later. Offices of Siegel and Belenky.

Belenky: The mistake you made was in assuming that Arthur Walker was defrocked for being too liberal. If you knew the state of the Anglican church today, you would not have assumed that was the case. The mistake has been costly.

Callahan: It's not Father O'Reilly's fault. He didn't dream that someone would hate the SBARI enough to put a plant in our organization.

Siegel: Why shouldn't he believe it? We plant our people in right wing organizations.

O'Reilly: I'm afraid I'm not as cold-blooded as you are, Siegel.

Belenky: This isn't getting us anywhere. The point is that a mistake has been made. Walker and Miller ruined some of our raids. Now Walker is back in England, but Miller is still a menace, because he has Fitzpatrick's backing.

Callahan: Are we sure that it is Fitzpatrick who is backing him?

Siegel: Yes.

Callahan: What can be done?

Belenky: There is only one thing that can be done.

O'Reilly: Kill him?

Belenky: Yes.

Callahan: Maybe if we just had Miller killed?

Belenky: Actually, Miller is not as important as Fitzpatrick. Once we eliminate Fitzpatrick, Miller won't have the financial backing to continue.

Siegel: But Miller will have to be killed?

Belenky: Yes, but his death is not necessary as immediately as Fitzpatrick's.

Siegel: Fitzpatrick's wife must be killed as well.

Belenky: Of course.

Callahan: I really don't see why she must be killed. How does her death promote racial equality?

Belenky: I must remind you, Bishop Callahan, that you joined this organization voluntarily; we did not recruit you.

Callahan: Yes, I joined it to promote racial equality.

Belenky: By any means necessary?

Callahan: Yes, but...

Belenky: There is no 'but' here. We have provided you with the additional organizational strength to pursue racial equality.

Callahan: I brought considerable organization strength with me.

Belenky: True, but it was organizational strength divided. The SBARI provides the consistent organizational strength necessary for all successful revolutions. I remind you of what Bakunin said: "All tender and gentle feelings of kinship, love, gratitude, and even honor itself should be choked off in the revolutionary's breast by the single cold passion of his revolutionary task. He is not a revolutionary if he has pity for anything in the world. He knows only one science – the science of destruction." I don't think that either you, Bishop Callahan, or Father O'Reilly, are showing the proper revolutionary attitude when you flinch at killing Mrs. Fitzpatrick. And maybe that is because we have different goals. I want to destroy everything white and Christian; it seems you want to preserve some white things and some Christian things.

Callahan: I have not flinched from violent revolution. I've supported necessary violence.

Belenky: It's not for you to decide what is necessary violence. Nor is it for you to decide how the violence is administered. You see, it is not just enough for white people to be killed; they must also be humiliated and violated, their deaths should be horrific so they instill fear in the survivors and give the black murderers a sense of power so that they will feel empowered and emboldened to kill again and again.

O'Reilly: I understand all this, but Bakunin is not infallible; he cringed and crawled and denounced the Revolution when he was in prison.

Belenky: Of course he did, and he denounced his confession when he got out of prison. Why shouldn't he grovel for political purposes? I would do the same thing in his place. Are you invoking the honor code?

O'Reilly: No, I'm not. Just tell me why Mrs. Fitzpatrick has to die?

Siegel: Because the revolution can't proceed unless the ultimate debasement proceeds – that is, the rape of white women by black men. Isn't that correct?

Belenky: Yes, that is correct. Now, are we agreed?

Callahan and O'Reilly: Yes.

Belenky: Good, then all that is necessary is that we work out the procedural details of the executions.

Act V. Scene 3. London. Two months later, Christmas Eve.

Owen: What's the mystery, Reverend? I don't want to miss any part of the English Christmas you promised. Soon, I'll be back in South Africa, and my friends there will expect me to tell them something interesting about my trip.

Rev. Grey: You'll be back to the main party shortly, Mr. Edward Impatience. Besides, this is not my interruption. Arthur has something he wants to share with us that he doesn't want anyone else to hear. Not because he doesn't trust the rest, but... well, we're all of the blood here; you know what I mean. It's a letter he wants to read. And he wants its contents to stay here.

Chambers: Have you read the letter yet, Reverend?

Rev. Grey: No, I haven't, so I'll shut up and give the floor to Arthur.

Walker: Gentlemen, I've come to know all of you. And I feel bound to you quite beyond the bonds of mere friendship. Shakespeare writes of a band of brothers. So we are, we few... Let me start again. I'd like to read parts of this letter to you, from one of our band of brothers whom you have never met, but who is one of us, and I know he and his... what shall I call him? He was James Miller's client, but he became his friend. So I'll say, James and his friend, Sean Fitzpatrick. Let me share this story with you; James asked that I share it with you, because he has become a firm believer in the mystical body of Christ. I'll pick up about halfway through the letter –

"I was out of town on a case the night they decided to go for Mrs. Fitzpatrick. I didn't know that the SBARI had figured out who it was that was making the hits on their black minions, but I don't know that I could have done much to prevent it if I had known. I was on a kind of permanent retainer for Mr. Fitzpatrick, but there was no particular work I was doing for him at that time. I knew that he went armed wherever he went and would have been more than delighted to shoot any blacks who tried to attack him, so I wasn't that worried about Sean. But I should have figured out that they'd go for Mrs. Fitzpatrick. I guess I was still blinded by a certain residual respect for the Catholic clergy. I knew O'Reilly and Callahan were thick as thieves with Siegel and Belenky, but I didn't think they'd go that far.

"Looking back on it now, I realize that once some heathen god takes over your soul, you are no longer the same person that you were when you belonged to Christ. Dostoevsky is better at explaining such things than I am, but I'm here, and he is not, so let it suffice to say that the negro gods, not Christ, were at the center of O'Reilly's and Callahan's souls.

"O'Reilly went to Jeanne Fitzpatrick's house for a 'pastoral' visit on a night when he knew Sean Fitzpatrick was at his daughter's grave site. O'Reilly told her in advance that it would be best if the house was empty of servants and anybody else who might reside there, as he had some confidential matter pertaining to her husband to discuss with her.

"Once he was admitted it was an easy matter for Father O'Reilly to make sure the front door was open. After about a half hour, five hooded blacks came and took Jeanne Fitzpatrick and Father O'Reilly, who was still pretending to be on Jeanne Fitzpatrick's side, to a wooded area outside the city.

"That was where I came into the picture. I was coming back from a two week trip to Atlanta, where I was finishing up with a case. It was my habit whenever I was near Sean Fitzpatrick's house to go by it, just to see if all was well. I saw the hooded figures shoving a trussed up figure into a van. It was too small to be Sean, so I assumed it was Mrs. Fitzpatrick.

"I followed the van at a safe distance. And I ended up parked out of sight in a wooded area facing the swamps, which is where Jeanne had been taken.

"I had been so intent on making sure I didn't lose sight of the van Jeanne was in that I hadn't paid any attention to who or what was following me. As I left my car to get closer to Jeanne in order to attempt to rescue her, I was told to stand perfectly still after I dropped my gun. I considered turning and firing, but I'd be firing blind while my opponents would be spot on, because they presumably had their guns trained on me. I dropped my gun and they laid me flat on my stomach while they searched for a second gun. They didn't find one, so they cuffed me with my hands behind my back and then told me to stand up.

"When I stood up I knew I had made a mistake by not trying to shoot it out with my assailants. There were three men facing me. Two were obviously hired gunmen. They didn't wear the telltale all-black outfits of the gunfighters in the old Western movies, but I could still tell they were imported guns. Both men were white. It was the third man who made me realize I had made a mistake by not attempting to fire. The third man was Siegel; he wore no mask, which told me that he had no intention of letting me live. I cursed my stupidity and tried to look for an opening. There was none. They took me and made me kneel down, hands cuffed behind my back, next to Jeanne Fitzpatrick, who was in the same position as me only she had been stripped naked. Siegel gave us a graphic description of what was going to happen to us. I had enough of the stoic in me so that I didn't – at least I don't think I did – show any emotion on my face, but inside I was in torment even before they started the torture.

"Jeanne was done with pleading; she was praying when I was forced to kneel beside her. But Siegel told her to stop with the prayers or he'd make her torture longer and her humiliation even worse. So she stopped.

"I said my one prayer quietly under my breath, 'Lord Jesus Christ, have mercy on us, and deliver us from these our enemies.' Then I tried the only gambit, which wasn't much of a gambit, that I could think of. I appealed to the mercy of the only man in the group whom I thought might have some mercy in him, Father O'Reilly. I had no illusions about Siegel, the five negroes, or the two gunmen. Siegel was a Jew who had hardened his heart against all things human, the negroes had never known what mercy was, and the two gunmen were professional killers whose hearts had hardened in the course of their profession. O'Reilly, I reasoned, must have had some humanity when he decided to become a priest, and maybe I could awaken that humanity.

"Father, if we must die, couldn't you use your influence to make sure it's just a bullet to our heads. That would be more merciful than what you have planned.'

"I'd like to oblige you, Miller, but I can't. You see, you don't understand; the rape and torture is part of the ritual. These black men are not criminals; they are religious devotees.'

"Do you believe that, Father?"

"Yes, I do, I believe in the black Messiah; I believe that Christ was a negro whom the white men killed, and when Christ comes back to earth – and maybe he already has come back – it will be as a negro. And until the time when he makes himself manifest to us, we must sacrifice the whites.'

"Then why don't you take Jeanne Fitzpatrick's place as a sacrificial victim; are you not white?"

"Father looked at me, then to the heavens with a look of ecstasy on his face. 'I am black by the grace of God. He has made me a black man inside.'

"I didn't need to hear Siegel's command, 'There has been enough talk,' to know that it was over for me and Jeanne Fitzpatrick. Father O'Reilly had left the God of mercy far behind.

"They took the handcuffs off Jeanne and staked her out on the ground. Then they positioned me to watch the proceedings. It was part of the ritual to make the white male watch the white female defiled before his eyes prior to his own death by torture.

"I wondered if they had already killed Sean Fitzpatrick or if they had failed to capture him, because I knew they would want him present at the rape and torture of his wife.

"Then I saw that Sean was present. Siegel had the trunk of his car opened, and Sean, bound and gagged, was brought to kneel down beside me. Now the ritual could begin. I kept repeating those words of the Psalmist: 'Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.' And after each repetition I said His name, 'Jesus.'

"I couldn't claim to be a church-going man – I couldn't even claim to be a full-time believer – but I always revered Jesus, and I always felt His reality, His divine presence, the most acutely when the forces of hell were surrounding me. So at the moment when I recited the verse from the Psalms and then said His name, I really did feel that He was next to me. But what are feelings at a time like that? The torture was about to begin. And then I heard a cry, it was like the voice of God or one of His angels. The cry was, 'Durch die Kreuz, erobern wir!' and the first thing I saw was Father O'Reilly's head roll past me. Then the hooded figure, all in black and brandishing a sword, was upon the rest of the devotees. The two hired guns had already had their throats cut before the ritual began, and the five blacks were too surprised to fight effectively. The hooded man – or angel? – dispatched them. Siegel was the last to die. He tried to pick up a gun that had fallen from the dead hand of one of the hired killers, but as he reached for it the hooded figure ran him through.

"I'm not telling the dramatic scene properly; I'm not doing it justice. But what can I say? It was the most horrific of nightmares turned into an incredible fairy tale in which the wicked perished and the good, at least good in the sense that we didn't deserve the fate that Father O'Reilly had in store for us, triumphed. But why had we triumphed? No doubt we triumphed because of the mercy of God, but who was His heaven-sent angel of mercy? As he stood there in the midst, he seemed like some great angelic knight of charity from beyond this mortal world. But as it turned out, our deliverer was quite mortal. I don't know if he told you or not; quite possibly he had told you that he was on a fishing trip to Scotland or something. The heaven-sent angel was the Reverend Christopher Grey. How he got there and why he came, I'll leave for him to tell.

"I don't have to tell you, who know him better than I do, that Rev. Grey was a balm to the souls of Sean and Jeanne Fitzpatrick. After we disposed of the bodies and the vehicles in the swamp – the solitary nature of the place where they intended to dispose of us allowed us to dispose of their bodies – the Rev. Grey bade us all kneel with him in prayer. He spoke to Christ so intimately, so thankfully that I really think I saw Him standing there amongst us. It was only for a brief moment – I probably imagined it – but then again I never felt so near to God as I did at that moment when I knelt and gave my silent assent to Reverend Grey's prayer of thanks.

"This bears repeating – Jeanne Fitzpatrick was spared the ultimate degradation, but her faith in the organization called the Catholic Church had been shattered. She needed Christ to step in and fill the void. He came to her through the Reverend Grey, who was now just as gentle as he had been fierce. He hadn't managed to have the apocalyptic confrontation in the Roman Catholic Church as he had hoped, but he took the apocalyptic confrontation where he found it. After a lengthy conversation, he left Mrs. Fitzpatrick ready to resume her life with a better faith and a better hope than she had ever had before.

"As we left the Fitzpatricks at their home, the Reverend Grey whispered to me, 'We won't be able to get to Callahan, but we can and must kill Belenky before this night is over. Neither Callahan, Pierce or Truscott can maintain the Savannah Branch of the SBARI without Belenky. It will be built up again – Satan has so many tentacles – but still this will slow him down some.'

"Belenky was found dead in his bed the next morning. Foul play was suspected, but there wasn't a mark on his body. Callahan didn't try to run the Savannah branch by himself, so it has temporarily folded. And in the meantime Sean Fitzpatrick is trying to get Callahan removed from office for financial misconduct. And so it goes. What did the apostle say? Something about a battle against principalities and powers, wasn't it? Best of luck on your side of the ocean."

Chambers : I should have known something was up when you told me that Reverend Grey was taking a two week vacation in the United States. The Reverend Grey has never taken a vacation in his life.

Bontini : For Reverend Grey, a mission of mercy is a holiday, so I didn't lie.

Chambers : Were you in on it?

Walker: No, I really didn't know what the Reverent had planned, although he had asked me a great many questions about the area where the Fitzpatricks lived, so I should have suspected something.

Owen: I wish I had known about it; I would have liked to help.

Rev. Grey: I couldn't ask your help, Edward. Your South African passport would have aroused suspicions.

Owen: Did you consider asking Ezekiel for help?

Rev. Grey : I think he would have been a bit conspicuous. Besides, he is wedded to Kenya and his family. He won't leave them, and I honor him for it.

Bontini: Still, it must be a very lonely existence.

Walker: I didn't get that impression when I was with him.

Owen: Nor did I. He seems close to – how can I describe it? – to, well, to the eternal things. He feels God's presence and his family's presence.

Bontini: I think I can understand somewhat when I listen to you two describe him.

Chambers: One more question, if I may, Reverend.

Rev. Grey: Okay, but then we join the party, right?

Chambers: Certainly. Why did you shout, "Durch die Kreuz, erobern wir!" in German before you attacked? Doesn't an Englishman usually speak English, especially at such a crucial moment?

Grey: Yes, he generally does. But at that moment — memory is a tricky thing — something came back to me from long ago.

On that night during the First World War, when I went after those wounded soldiers to bring them back to our lines, there was one soldier, the last one I brought back, who was not British; he was a wounded German soldier. When I got him back to our trenches, I could see he didn't have long to live. And I could see that he knew he didn't have long to live. He looked at me with such a sense of relief, because he was a Catholic, and he thought I was a priest of his church because of my clerical collar. I didn't correct his misunderstanding, because I was sure then, and am even more sure now, that God doesn't care about such technicalities. The man poured out his heart to me; he felt himself to be the worst of sinners, the worst that ever lived. I won't violate his faith in me by repeating any part of his confession. I'll only say that he was a good man and devout. I simply told him the truth, that Christ loved him and it was by His holy cross that we conquered. He latched onto those words and kept repeating them over and over as he held my hand. By the Cross we conquer, by the Cross we conquer. He died content, and I firmly believe that he had conquered, through Christ our Lord.

So in the heat of battle my memory went back to that German soldier's words, "Durch die Kreuz, erobern wir." That is why I spoke in German instead of English.

Bontini : In Jesus name, amen.

All: Amen.

Owen: Now to the festivities!

Rev. Grey: I was glad to see you brought your wife tonight. This is the first time I met her socially. The other times it was just a quick hello on my way somewhere. She seems to be a wonderful woman, but then she must be to have captured the heart of a man like you.

Chambers: As always, Reverend, you're too kind. You seem to have cast me in the romanticized role of the ideal Englishman, a cross between Bulldog Drummond and Beau Geste.

Rev. Grey: And why not? That is how I picture you. You remind me of another policemen; a dear friend, John Talbot.

Chambers: Yes, I know of him. He was the real article; the last Englishman.

Rev. Grey: I loved him, and I still love him. Our loved ones don't leave us, ever.

Chambers: I've never asked you about her , because I didn't want to pry.

Grey: It's not prying. She was my conduit to Christ. We all have one. I loved her, and found Christ through her. I can't see her without thinking of Him nor can I see Him without thinking of her. It's Shakespeare's 31st sonnet. I only got to spend five Christmases with her in the flesh, but she is with me every Christmas. I was a farm boy with rather superficial notions of becoming a strongman-wrestler type like Frank Gotch or George Hackenschmidt. When I met her she elevated me and showed me something so much greater than my petty ambitions.

There is great evil in the world, my friend; you and I have seen more than our share of it. But there is the grace of God; it shines like the star of Bethlehem through women like my wife and men like John Talbot. I no longer feel any great separation between this world and the next. It's all bound together by His divine charity. Let's go celebrate Christmas.

William Montgomery : Wet your whistle, Reverend. Would you do us the honor? And don't be shy; you have the gift of song.

Away in a manger, no crib for a bed,
The little Lord Jesus laid down his sweet head.

The stars in the sky looked down where he lay,
The little Lord Jesus asleep in the hay.

The cattle are lowing, the baby awakes,
But little Lord Jesus no crying he makes.

I love Thee, Lord Jesus, look down from the sky
And stay by my cradle 'til morning is nigh.

Be near me, Lord Jesus, I ask Thee to stay
Close by me forever, and love me, I pray.

Bless all the dear children in thy tender care,
And take us to heaven, to live with Thee there. +

The Man of Sorrows is the Counter-Revolution

January 2, 2016

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christian counter-attack, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Third Dumb Brother

Tags: Shakespeare



Sorrowing, sighing, bleeding, dying,
Sealed in the stone-cold Tomb.

-John Henry Hopkins, Jr.

I always place more importance on anecdotal evidence than on statistical evidence, because anecdotal evidence comes from flesh and blood human beings, while statistical evidence comes from... I don't know where it comes from – that is the problem with it. Over the years I've collected a large body of anecdotal evidence indicating that there is a huge discrepancy between the ruling liberal elite, which consists of the intellectuals in church and state, and the grazers. The grazers do the liberals' bidding because the liberals are in power, but they don't believe in racial Babylon with the same intensity as the liberals, which is why the grazer will say some things in private, once you have made the first anti-Babylonian remark, which suggests that the white everyman still has some light left in his soul. But the light soon fades, because the liberals have overmanned the grazer's soul. When the grazer makes a criticism of the liberals' multi-racial utopia, he feels guilty, like a man in olden days who might tell a dirty joke in the church parking lot. Of course, now dirty jokes are told from the church pulpits while 'racist' comments have become the parking lot dirty jokes.

The grazer submits to liberal rule, because he believes that intelligence is morality. To be willfully stupid, which means clinging to prejudices stemming from the traditions, manners, and customs of the antique Europeans, is morally wrong, because the Europeans of the past were racist and therefore stupid. [\(1\)](#) Thus the fear of being racist and unintelligent makes moral cowards of the white grazers. It was inevitable that Trump would become the candidate for 'stupid' people, because Trump, like Reagan before him, has dipped his little toe into the waters of prejudice and blood wisdom. It is only a little toe, but that little mite of reality is too much for the liberals, so they have brought out the propaganda machines to destroy Trump.

The Europeans will be losers so long as they continue to believe in democracy. A candidate such as Trump is not a leader who can lead his people out of the wilderness, but he does represent a significant rear guard for the retreating Europeans. They can use a rear guard, but then they must regroup and return to the fray, shorn of their moral cowardice and armed with the anti-democratic prejudices of their European forefathers.

Even if there was no Moslem menace, the black barbarian menace left unchecked is enough to destroy the European people. The Moslem onslaught is just another form of the same liberal attack against Christ and the Christ-bearing race. Have the liberals gone too far in this, their latest attack on the European people? There certainly has been more open criticism by the grazers of the liberals' Moslem gambit than of any other liberal stratagem. Because I love my people and want them to survive, it is my deepest hope that the liberals have overplayed their hand and this liberal-sponsored Moslem invasion will trigger a white counter-revolutionary movement that will cleanse the European nations of liberalism. But in truth I don't see that happening, because the opposition to the liberals' Moslem initiative has been launched in the name of liberalism. Critics of the Moslem invasion have stressed the incompatibility of Islam and classical liberalism. The Moslems believe in mass rape, the Moslems believe in the murder of the infidel, the Moslems believe in a Moslem theocracy, and the list goes on and on. How can the liberals countenance such a religion that is seemingly against all they hold sacred? The answer is simple. The first liberal was the devil — very few liberals believe in the devil, but that is not important to the devil — what he wants is his will, and he wills the destruction of the Christ-bearing race. Any ideology opposed to the Christ-bearing race is therefore a good ideology. In that classic song of Tennessee Ernie Ford, "16 Tons," he sings of one fist of iron and the other of steel: "If the right one don't get you, the left one will." Such is the plan of the devil: "If my colored barbarians don't get you, the Moslems will." The Moslems' attack is largely against whites, because of their past connection to the Christian faith, but the Moslems have also launched attacks against non-white Christians in their own nations. This is one of the reasons the liberals have had a much harder time convincing the grazers of the innate goodness of the Moslems; they can't cloak their support of the Moslems by claiming it is 'racist' and therefore stupid to oppose them. But the liberals' Moslem narrative will ultimately prevail so long as the opposition keeps citing classical liberalism as the alternative to Islam. Liberalism in its classical form or in its modern, mad-dog form is from the devil, and we cannot seek redemption from the devil. If we do, we will end up like Macbeth, cursing the powers of darkness, who led us to our destruction:

*And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd
That palter with us in a double sense,
That keep the word of promise to our ear;
And break it to our hope.*

Macbeth stepped outside of God's grace in order to obtain a crown for his wife, a crown gotten through regicide. How can we oppose liberalism by invoking liberal principles? It is only when we break with the liberal, regicide governments of Europe that we can begin to climb out of the hellhole of multicultural death-in-life. In the works of Britain's two greatest novelists, Walter Scott and Charles Dickens, there is almost always a character whom the evil-doers disregard as too stupid and inconsequential to be of any danger to them. But it is the stupid, inconsequential man who steps out of the shadows and defeats the evil-doers. It is the 'stupid' Quentin Durward who foils the evil Louis XI, and it is the comical, ineffectual Wilkins Micawber who foils the villainous Uriah Heep. This spiritual dynamic also occurs again and again in the European fairy tales. It is the third dumb brother who prevails where the 'smart' brothers fail, because the third dumb brother is pure of heart. And is not the origin of all the third dumb brother novels and fairy tales to be found in the story of our Lord and Savior? Was not Christ the inconsequential stone whom the builders rejected? Yes, He was. He was "despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief." It was that Man, the Man of Sorrows, whom our people accepted as their Savior. "Angels above Him told us to love Him," and our people did just that! They made a hero of the inconsequential babe in the manger, who grew up to be an ingloriously crucified criminal. "Is He your savior?" the smart men jeered. "Yes, He is our Lord and Savior," the Europeans proclaimed with one voice. Away from the theologians who bid us look to their systems instead of Christ, away from the liberals who spit on the stupid, prejudiced Christians of old Europe, stands Christ. He is only an inconsequential shadow to the men and women of Liberaldom, but He is watching us, He is always watching us. And when we call on Him by name, He will step out of the shadows and lead us into battle.

There are 'no-go' zones in Europe where white Europeans dare not go, because the Moslems have taken over in those areas. In the United States there are thousands of black, no-go zones, where it is certain death for whites foolish enough to enter. Why are whites in retreat in their own nations? Isn't it obvious? The rulers of the white nations have coalesced with the heathens and the barbarians of color to destroy the white race. And without a fighting faith, the whites are defenseless against the Moslem and colored onslaught. 'The democratic way' is not a fighting faith; 'Three cheers for multiculturalism,' is not a fighting faith. 'By the Cross We Conquer,' is a fighting faith.

It is time, past time, to acknowledge that white people are a conquered people, cowering and hiding in the lands that used to be their own. But there is no need to accept our conquered state as final. Now, when we seem like inconsequential weaklings, whose women are regarded as the property of heathens and colored barbarians and whose men are regarded as cowards, is the

time to strike back. The world belongs to the Christ-bearing people; nothing will be denied them providing they leave the belly of the liberal leviathan and take up the banner of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

Burke saw what was coming. The devil was in the midst of us. In the form of a gigantic vulture, he spread his wings over all of Europe and remade Christendom into Liberalism. He was unopposed, because he neutralized the opposition. Burke's rejection by his own party was symptomatic of all of Europe's reaction to liberalism. To oppose utopia was to oppose science, democracy, and the universal brotherhood of man. But how can there be a universal brotherhood of man when we deny our common hope? The headlong flight of the demon-possessed swine, their flight from the living God, led them over a cliff. That is what liberalism represents, the flight of the swine. That image, of the swine going over the cliff, should be on all the flags of Europe, so long as Europeans bend their knees to the satanic vulture.

Who will turn from that vulture of death? The men of blood, the last Europeans, will not bow down to Satan. Late at night in secret spots, in caves, in basements, and in deserted, wooded places where the utopian liberals formerly planned their revenges on Christian men, the Christian men will plan their counter-attack. This Christmas I heard a white choir perform "We Three Kings of Orient Are" in a very fast, martial style. The words, "sorrowing, sighing, bleeding, dying," took on an added significance when sung in that style. For me, the song became a Christian counter-revolutionary song. Is Christ, the inconsequential man of sorrows, the leader who will lead us out of the liberals' utopian hell? Yes, He is.

*Glorious now, behold Him arise,
King and God, and Sacrifice!
Heaven sings Alleluia!
Alleluia! the earth replies.*

And if that sounds too fantastic for white men, it is because they have suffered from an intellectual contraction of the blood for the past 100 years. Once their hearts reconnect with Christian Europe they will no longer fear the liberals and their murderous heathen and colored allies. It will be time for Satan's multitudinous legions to fear Europeans, the men who were born to champion the sorrowing, sighing, bleeding, dying God who was rejected and remains rejected by the builders of a utopian hell on earth. +

(1) It never ceases to amaze and disgust me when I see and hear European clergymen joining in the liberal chorus that sings an unending hymn of hatred, hatred of the antique Europeans. If they hate the people who were closest to Christ and want to eradicate their culture and their descendants from the face of the earth, then what should we conclude? They serve the liberals who fly the swinish flag of Satan.

By Whose Law Shall We Live?

January 9, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism; and in Atheism; and it has joined to those principles, a body of systematic manners which secures their operation. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

Angela Merkel won the ‘Mirror, Mirror, on the wall, Who Is the Biggest White-Hating Liberal of Them All?’ award for the year. Pope Francis took second prize (I would have given him first prize, but I was not a member of the judges’ panel). Merkel was quite gracious in her acceptance speech: “I couldn’t have done what I did without the inspiration of all those white-hating liberals that paved the way for me. I stand in their footsteps.” She mentioned Robespierre, Karl Marx, John Paul II, Margaret Sanger, and Nelson Mandela as a representative few who lighted her way to greatness. The adoring crowd of liberals who were on hand to hear Merkel’s acceptance speech (Five Golden Swine were awarded to her) applauded wildly when she warned the “haters,” those Germans who wanted to stop the rape of their women and the slaughter of their people, that they would not be allowed to keep Germany German.

After the speech, Pope Francis sent Merkel a congratulatory note and told her he is currently working to turn Corsica into a Moslem homeland just as she is working to turn Germany into a Moslem state. “But there are great haters here in Corsica,” the Pope complained; “They have burned down a mosque and said unkind things about Moslems. God will punish them. I think violence is bad when Christians use it to defend themselves, but I think violence is necessary to punish anti-Moslem bigotry. May God bless you, Angela Merkel, for the work you are doing.”

Will God really bless Angela Merkel and Pope Francis for the work they are doing? If God is a liberal, then He will bless them. But then a liberal god is not God, because the liberals’ god is the god who isn’t there; he/she/it is an indistinct god, a vague Gnostic force that animates the natural world the liberals rule for the benefit of the non-white races.

Never doubt that white Europeans are in a war to the death. The liberals will welcome any anti-Christian, anti-European force into their tent. They are fond of labeling white Europeans who act in defense of their own as “haters.” Would that it were true. In point of fact the liberals are the great haters; they hate Christ and the European people with an intensity that leaves no doubt about the source of their hatred. When Europeans begin to hate the devil, who works his will through the liberals, with a greater intensity than the liberals hate Christ and His people, the end of Liberaldom is near.

In order to reign supreme, Satan needed to neutralize the Europeans, he needed to turn their worship of Christ into the worship of the devil. He turned the trick by making Christianity a philosophy of utopia. The Christian man was supposed to be a new man, a man redeemed by the blood of the Lamb, but he was not supposed to be a new man who was free to build the kingdom of Babylon here on earth without any reference to the living God. When God refused to give His sanction to an earthly utopia (“My kingdom is not of this world”), the devil stepped in and offered his services to the European people. The colored barbarians and the Moslems are raping, pillaging, and murdering the white Europeans, because Satan, through the ideology of liberalism, rules the European nations.

The Europeans, like the ancient Hebrews, were at first delighted by their deliverance from the bondage of Egypt. But over time they became sick of manna from heaven and begged for their Egyptian captivity again. Well, they have their new Egyptian captivity; they are the slaves of the liberals and their heathen and colored allies. And they will remain so until their hearts yearn for the living God more than the bitter fruits of the liberals’ utopia.

There is a huge difference between a village democracy that is part of a monarchial, aristocratic government and a democracy as an ‘onward and upward’ movement toward utopian bliss. It is that latter form of democracy that rules the European people now. Britons have ceased to cherish their ancient customs and prejudices which kept them from going over to the Jacobins. France has continued on her Jacobin way, and the rest of the European nations have followed suit (in the U.S., Jacobinism has reigned supreme since the defeat of the South in the 1860s). Once the principles of atheism, regicide, and Jacobinism are institutionalized in a nation, it is very difficult to uproot those principles from the lifeblood of the people, because those evil principles have the power of law behind them. Then virtue belongs only to the courageous few, and the vast majority of citizens acquiesce to the evil that their rulers do. In France prior to the Jacobin takeover, nobles and peasants would have rushed to the defense of a high-born lady who was accosted by villains. But once the principles of the Jacobins became law, thousands of men stood by while aristocrats of the fair sex were dragged ignominiously to the guillotine. Then virtue, the virtue that stands in the face of the satanic whirlwind, was rare indeed. So it is in every European nation once regicide, atheism, and Jacobinism are given the rule of law. Such blasphemies as miscegenation and Islam were not permitted in pre-Jacobin Europe, but now to oppose them is against the law of Jacobinism.

The religious grazer – pick any European nation you like – denies that by supporting the laws of his nation he is supporting atheism. After all, he attends church and says his prayers. But atheism is seldom seen in its purest form; it usually takes the form of a bastardized parody of the living God. Robespierre, for instance, started out as an outright atheist who punished any believer with the guillotine. But then, in order to kill some of his atheist competitors within the Jacobin ranks, and in order to give the French *sans-culotte* some type of religion, he set up a very modern syncretic religion much in line with the religion of the late John Paul II (of Assisi I, II, and III etc. fame). Scott describes Robespierre’s wonderful new faith in the second volume of his work on the French Revolution:

After marching up and down through the streets, to the sound of doggerel hymns, the procession drew up to the gardens of the Tuileries, before some fireworks which had been prepared, and Robespierre made a speech, entirely addressed to the bystanders, without a word either of prayer or invocation. His acknowledgment of a Divinity was, it seems, limited to a mere admission in point of fact, and involved no worship of the Great Being, whose existence he at length condescended to own. He had no sooner made his offering, than fire was set to some figures dressed up to resemble Atheism, Ambition, Egotism, and other evil principles. The young men then brandished their weapons, the old patted them on the head, the girls flung about their flowers, and the matrons flourished aloft their children, all as it had been set down in David’s programme. And this scene of masking was to pass for the repentance of a great people turning themselves again to the Deity, whose worship they had forsaken, and whose being they had denied!

I will appeal—not to a sincere Christian—but to any philosopher forming such idea of the nature of the Deity, as even mere unassisted reason can attain to, whether there does not appear more impiety in Robespierre's mode of acknowledging the Divinity, than in Hebert's horrible avowal of direct Atheism?

A similar type of false religion, given the sanction of law, has been set up in all the European nations. When the liberals tell us that we must not be prejudiced, that we must allow blacks to rape and murder whites with impunity, and when they tell us that kindness and compassion for others means allowing Moslems to rape and murder white Europeans, they are preaching their new religious gospel. And they have made their new gospel, which is in direct opposition to the gospel of Christ, State law.

If Satan's minions make the laws of our nation, should we obey those laws? In my own anti-nation, the government, which has made any opposition to black murderers or Moslem and Mexican invaders illegal, has become obsessed with destroying the lives of a heroic band of white ranchers (Hammond and Bundy families), who are trying to save their homes and their people from an immoral government that has no mercy for white people who live by a better and higher law than the law of the satanic U. S. government. The conservative-liberals condemn the Hammonds and Bundys for not abiding by the liberals' law, and the mad-dog liberals demand the extermination of the Hammonds and the Bundys. God save them, and God have mercy on the rest of us who live under the merciless law of Satan.

Miscegenation, legalized abortion, the government-sponsored massacres of whites by blacks, Mexicans, and Moslems are the major initiatives of the liberals' utopian governments. Why then do we, the Europeans, support such anti-white, anti-Christian governments? Why not cry havoc and let loose the dogs of war? To act alone against an implacable, merciless enemy seems like a futile endeavor. But there is an internal battle that precedes the external battle. Once that internal battle is won, things that seemed impossible are no longer impossible. When the European fights the good fight against principalities and powers and cries out from the depths of his soul for divine aid, he will not be left defenseless, as he now is, against the wickedness and snares of the devil.

The Faust story has been told and retold throughout the Christian centuries – Marlow, Goethe, Benet, Wallop, and more recently Charles Beaumont in two separate *Twilight Zone* episodes entitled “Printer’s Devil” and “The Howling Man.” Those last two tales were quite in keeping with the modern age. The devil ensnared his victims through their intellectual pride. He baited his devilish hook with the “you’re too intelligent to believe in the devil” trick. (1) We are reminded of the decadent French writer, Andre Gide, who stated, “I don’t believe in the devil, but then that is what the devil wants.”

Every reason under the sun is given to explain why the liberals do such hideous things, every reason but the real reason – the liberals, in their headlong flight from Christ, have fled into the arms of the devil. He owns them, body and soul. Hence everything they do is directed toward one end: they must destroy the image of God in man that was uniquely manifested in the culture and the people of old Europe. Under the guise of multi-culturalism, equality, and religious niceness, the satanic-inspired liberals have transformed Christendom into Satandom.

In art, music, and literature, all that is base, inhuman, and bestial is celebrated. Every heathen religion and every colored barbarian is exalted while the European people and their ancient faith, and the culture stemming from that faith, is demonized. All this the liberals do rather than face the living God. Is He really so terrible? “Yes, He is so terrible,” the liberals reply. And they will kill every last white man if needs be in order to erase the memory of that awful God. The Merkels and the Pope Francises of Liberaldom have lost the courage to face existence without the opiates of liberalism, because they do not believe His sacred heart is at the center of existence. Dostoyevsky correctly identified the dilemma of the modern European: “whether a man, as a civilised being, as a European, can believe at all, believe that is, in the divinity of the Son of God, Jesus Christ, for therein rests, strictly speaking, the whole faith.” The liberals have given their answer to Dostoyevsky’s question and as a result the European has no place to lie his head; he is without a homeland. In Dickens’ masterpiece *Great Expectations*, Pip declares that it is a terrible thing to feel ashamed of one’s own home. The liberal is ashamed of his racial hearth fire where the Son of God dwells. From that initial shame comes the new religions of the stranger: The religions of blood and sacrifice practiced by the Moslems and the colored barbarians appeal to the liberals more than the religion of mercy. If the liberals’ hatred of our Savior and our people does not stir something in our heart that makes us want to rise and ride in defense of our Lord and our people, then the liberals have won; they have killed our heart, which is the breeding ground for all true counter-revolutions. As the Christmas season comes to a close, let us commit ourselves to a European counter-revolution that will restore the true King of Europe to His rightful place in our hearts and our nations:

*“Angels above Him, told us to love Him,
Cling to Him, bring to Him, glory and praise.” +*

(1) In “The Howling Man,” it is not a straight ‘your soul for riches and wealth’ type of bargain that the devil transacts, but the devil does use the ‘you’re too smart to believe in the devil’ gambit to outwit the ‘intelligent’ mortal. “Lord, what fools these mortals be.”

If We Forget Europe

January 16, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: de la Motte Fouque, Thomas Moore



How shall we sing the Lord's song in a strange land? —Psalm 137: 4

Thomas Moore wrote “Rich and Rare Were the Gems She Wore,” in honor of his beloved Ireland, but I’m sure every European at that juncture of European history (every European except the Jacobin European) felt the same way about his nation.

*Rich and rare were the gems she wore,
And a bright gold ring on her wand she bore;
But, O, her beauty was far beyond
Her sparkling gems, or snow-white wand.*

*“Lady! dost thou not fear to stray,
So lone and lovely, through this bleak way?
Are Erin’s sons so good or so cold,
As not to be tempted by woman or gold?”*

*“Sir Knight! I feel not the least alarm,
No son of Erin will offer me harm;—
For though they love woman and golden store,
Sir Knight! they love honor and virtue more!”*

*On she went, and her maiden smile
In safety lighted her round the green isle:
And blest for ever is she who relied
Upon Erin’s honour and Erin’s pride.*

An exaggeration? Yes, it was, but not by much. Christianity and the honor code that flows from our sacred faith, that which the antique Europeans called chivalry and modern liberals call sexism and racism, had entered the blood of the Europeans. Even those recreants who might have wanted to rob and violate Moore’s fair maiden would not have dared to do so, because they would have been hunted down and killed. When Burke looked through the Jacobin rhetoric he saw what liberty, equality, and fraternity really meant. It meant that “the age of chivalry was dead.” Has that been a good thing for Europeans? For the world?

The New Year’s Eve rape fest in Cologne was only a tiny microcosm of what is taking place throughout the Western world on a daily basis. And I’m not talking solely about the Moslem rapists; the black barbarians have been raping and murdering whites without so much as a whimper from the liberal establishments for the past fifty years. The aftermath of the rape of the women of Cologne, a city whose architecture speaks of a different age when European men did not permit the rape of their women, was quite telling. The liberals first denied that it was Africans and Moslem ‘immigrants’ who had committed the rapes. Then they blamed the women for dressing too provocatively. The feminists? They did what they always do – they ignored the rape of white women by men of color and continued to focus on white men who ogled scantily clad women in billboard ads. One female official of Cologne announced that in twenty years Cologne would be a Moslem city: “That is a good thing.” Another male official said that saying bad things about Moslem rapists on Twitter is much worse than the Moslems’ rape fest in Cologne! And then came the grazers’ response. One group of young men who resided in Cologne announced that they were going to patrol the streets of Cologne and “nonviolently” try to protect women from the Moslems. Well, at least they were trying to do something, but I ask you: can you nonviolently stop a Moslem rapist? Why are white people so afraid to respond violently against those who rape and murder their own people? In Finland some group of whites calling themselves the Sons of Odin stated that they were going to “nonviolently” patrol the streets of a town called Kemi. Doctrinaire nonviolence is not only strategically foolhardy, it is, considering the violent behavior of the enemy, a serious breach of the code of chivalry. The charity of honor demands, “That this shall not go on.”

All conquering pagan armies rape and pillage after a successful invasion. That is what the Moslems are doing throughout Europe, and that is what the blacks have been doing in the United States since the victory of the Northern liberals in the 1950s. But of course the liberals will not allow whites to use violence to defend their own against the Moslems and the blacks, because the liberals are at war with the white race. And in this war to the death, the liberals currently control all the governments in the Western world as well as all the militias and police forces in the Western world. That is something we must face squarely. If there is going to be a successful European counter-revolution, then white Europeans will have to go against the liberals’ military and the liberals’ police force. We must stop thinking of the military as ‘our troops’ and the police as ‘our protectors.’ They serve the liberals who desire the extermination of the white race. In Germany the police were quite willing to use pepper spray and water cannons on white Germans who were marching in protest of the Moslem takeover of Germany, but they were not willing to use force against the Moslem rapists. “Your police will not protect you,” the Moslems in Britain shouted after beheading a British soldier. They were correct. The police and the military work for the liberals; occasionally they will violate the code of liberalism and use force against a black or a Moslem, but that is not a frequent occurrence and is fast becoming less frequent as the liberals tighten their noose around the collective neck of the European people.

The Europeans fought for their own people when they were pagans, and they fought for their own people when they were Christian. They can’t become pagans again, because they left the pagan gods of blood and sacrifice behind when they embraced Christ. But can they become Christian again after having let go of Christ? That is the question Hamlet had to answer: “To be

or not to be." Many of our young people have decided not to be. And why shouldn't they decide thus? There is no reason for a European to live if he doesn't believe that Christ rose from the dead. Without that sustaining faith, there is no racial hearth fire and no people to love and fight for. Life is merely "A tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing."

I hear the naysayers declaring that, "The Moslems and the colored barbarians love their people and fight for them without believing in Christ, so why can't the Europeans do likewise?" The Europeans cannot do likewise because once taken up, the cross of Christ cannot be put down again without leaving that which is essential to the lifeblood of the European behind: The European must be the Christ-bearer or else he will be a man without a soul. He will be like unto the Undine that [Friedrich de la Motte](#) wrote about. The Moslems and the colored barbarians have souls; they are heathen and barbarian souls, but they have life in them. They cannot love, but they can fornicate. They will not fight for mercy's sake, but they will fight for the sake of blood and sacrifice. The post-Christian liberal can only live through the blood-soaked lives of the Moslems and the colored barbarians. That official of Cologne who welcomed the Moslem hordes to her city and exulted in their rape fest did so because she, like all liberals, wants to feel connected to something alive and human. It doesn't matter to her that there is only bestial savagery, not humanity, in the invaders' souls; they have something in them that is alive and she needs that aliveness as a vampire needs blood. The liberals' terrible mixture of rationalism and a Christ-less Christianity have made them into bloodless zombies who will do anything, including encouraging and enabling the rape and murder of their own people, if it takes them closer to what they believe is their salvation – their absorption into the pagan mass of Moslems and colored barbarians.

Try as he might, no European can ever return to paganism. Odin ad Thor were fine fighting men, and when seen as precursors to the one true God they are inspiring. But it is pure fantasy to think we can invoke those pagan gods in our war with the liberals. It is Christ or oblivion. It would seem that the Europeans have chosen oblivion. However, some Europeans have come back from rationalism, the curse of the men of the West. Is there a magic potion one can take to restore the soul? The psalmist tells us that the living God restoreth the soul. But can the living God be put in a golden bowl of science and democratic utopianism? No, He cannot be put in such a bowl; all attempts to do so have ended in disaster.

Hamlet's father enjoins him to "Remember me." And Hamlet replies, "Remember thee! Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat, In this distracted globe." We must first remember what we were and then love what we were as a people. Once that memory and that love are combined, we will have the will to fight for our people against all the forces of hell. And it is all the forces of hell that the Europeans are facing. It might well be that our Lord is about to come in glory to put an end to Satan's reign here on earth. But we know neither the day nor the hour of that battle, so we must keep fighting till our Lord returns. And even then does He want us to stop fighting? I doubt it; I think He'll want us to go with Him into battle against Satan and his minions.

However Christ decides to arrange the final battle, it is clear that we need to fight for Europe while memory holds a seat in our lives. If every European were to truly and honestly search their racial memory for the truth of existence they would discover that nothing of lasting value has ever come from any people but the European people when they formed an incorporate union with Christ. All that was good in the cultures of the heathens has come as a result of their contact with the Christian ethos of antique Europe. Whether the European people survive as a people or whether they and their culture become a memory that the heathens and the colored barbarians choose to eradicate will be determined by how many Europeans love enough; and true love includes the charity that never faileth, to fight with all their heart, mind, and soul for the people of their own racial hearth fire. If they love enough they will fight, and in the midst of the battle they will see that the Son of God is with them.

Towards the end of *The Brother Karamazov*, Alyosha gathers his small band of little children about him and tells them that they must hold to some sacred memory from their childhood so they can keep their childlike faith in the Savior throughout their adult lives. We have some rights of memory in the Europe where a pure childlike faith in Christ was valued. Even if only a few Europeans of old Europe managed to completely realize a childlike faith in the Savior, it was still not a little thing that the quest for a childlike faith was considered the main purpose of a man's pilgrimage here on earth. Such a faith, as of a child, believeth all things and hopeth all things. The rape of Europe will only be halted by Europeans with hearts that remember the ancient hearth fire of the European people, where Christian men were meek and gentle as lambs toward the child, the maiden, and the mother, and fiercer than any pagan in defense of the people of their own racial hearth fire.

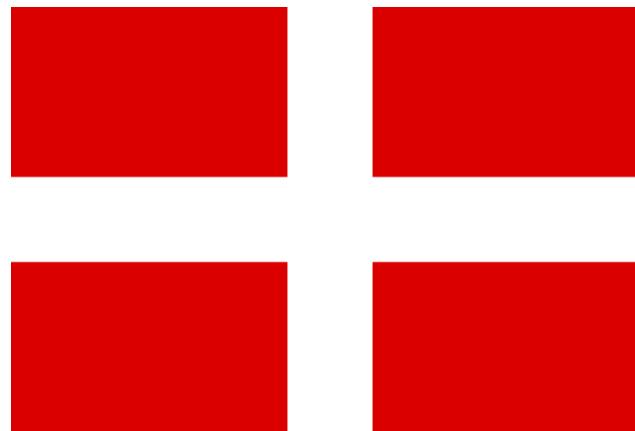
It was by the rivers of Babylon that the exile sat down to weep and remember Zion. That is the first step back to spiritual health. We must remember Christian Europe and weep. Then we must dry our tears and fight to the knife in defense of our people and our sacred homeland. "If I forget thee, O Jerusalem..." +

No Other Flags Over Europe

January 23, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Shakespeare



“Thus is faith to be tested.” – *Pericles, Prince of Tyre* (Shakespeare)

This new Moslem invasion of Europe has succeeded where others failed, because in this invasion the liberals have opened up the gates of Europe so that the Moslems could join the already assembled army of Christ-hating, white-hating creatures from hell – which includes the colored barbarians, the feminists, and the sodomites. Instead of standing stalwart against the invading hordes, the new Charles Martels make cupcakes and tidy up the welcome centers for the Moslem invaders. The liberals believe they can absorb the Moslems into liberal Europe, because they, like the Moslems, hate Christ and the Christ-bearing race. They won’t be able to absorb the Moslems, but their deaths are but a trifle here; the tragedy is that the liberals’ satanically inspired hatred of the white race will bring down the entire white race, not just the liberal branch of the white race.

The white race is not on the brink of extermination because white men lack physical courage. The white race is on the brink of extermination because white men lack the moral courage that only comes from a deeply held, heartfelt faith. If white men could see Christ for what He truly is, the Son of the living God, and if they could see the liberals for what they are, the spawns of Satan, they would fight for their people and their God. But the white graver does not see clearly, so he lacks the moral courage to oppose the liberals. White policemen fight against whites protesting against the Moslem invasion of Europe, and all the white governments have joined together to keep the black barbarians from any type of punishment for their bloodletting, because whites lack moral vision.

The “vision thing” that George Bush wasn’t “into” is all in all. What makes our Christian, European ancestors seem like demigods compared to the modern Europeans? Our ancestors did not wear moral blinders; they saw life as Gloucester saw it, feelingly. The mind of man can comprehend nothing of importance if the heart is disengaged. Richard Weaver correctly diagnosed the Europeans’ sickness unto death when he said that those who derided sentiment were the great destroyers, because such men undermine the way all men come to believe in the spiritual nature of existence. The great underminers throughout the Europeans’ pilgrimage here on earth have been the churchmen. They form organizations to peddle their own brand of Christian atheism; in such systems Christ becomes an abstract construct of their demented minds, completely cut off from the lifeblood of His people. Once the Christian everyman embraces one of the organized –isms, he is no longer a full-blooded Christian European, he is simply a cog in the machinery of Christian atheism, an atheism that has spawned and is kin to secular liberalism. The current demon-Pope Francis is a perfect example of the Christian atheism that has rendered the European people naked to their Moslem and colored barbarian enemies. He recently took a break from his anti-white diatribes to tell us that atheists are redeemed. And then he went on to tell us that there is a force in nature (anyone for Teilhard, again?) that is above God. As regards the atheists, if the demon-Pope had said we do not know for sure what takes place between a man and his God at the final moments of his life, and for that reason we cannot be sure a professed atheist is not, at the last moment, snatched from the jaws of hell by Christ, whom the atheist finally acknowledged and loved in his last moments, he would be on solid Christian ground. But the Pope didn’t say that; he said that atheists were redeemed, thus ignoring Christ’s words, “No man cometh unto the Father but by me.” But what can be expected from a man who believes there is a natural force above the Christian God? Sophocles observed that because the fates ruled over Zeus, it followed that Zeus was something less than a god. So it is with Christ. The mind-forged natural world of the philosophers and the churchmen is above Christ, so they have thrown in with the liberal utopians. As long as they get tax exempt status and the right to keep their parishioners happy (and giving money) by their use of ambiguous “god words,” the Christian atheists are happy.

Now that the Christian atheism of the churchmen has spread throughout the European nations and taken the form of a militant, secularized liberalism that has spawned negro worship, an Islamic invasion, and every other evil under the sun, including legalized sodomy and legalized abortions, we find ourselves echoing Albany in *King Lear*, when Edgar tells him of the miseries he has suffered and witnessed:

*Albany. If there be more, more woeful, hold it in;
For I am almost ready to dissolve,
Hearing of this.*

That we must suffer and die is a given of our mortal existence, but must we, by liberal decree, live in total darkness and die without any hope or knowledge of the light? Old Europe gave us some light in the darkness and gave us hope at the hour of our death that He would be there for us. That Europe must be defended. So long as the Europeans remain under the yoke of the Christian atheists and the secular utopian atheists they will remain in darkness, the moral darkness that leaves them defenseless against the devil and his minions.

Our police and our military men are moral eunuchs who will serve the powers that be. And the powers that be are liberal. Expect no help or mercy from that quarter. We know about the Christian churches. They are adjuncts of Liberalism. What’s left? The spirit above the dust. God has given us the means to know Him through the one sure channel of grace, the human heart. The European people were the only people to avail themselves, as an entire people, of that one sure channel of grace, and as a result Europe became a place where miracles occurred. Now that Satan, through the liberals, has dammed up the one true channel of grace, dammed it up with mind-forged utopian fantasies, the European people face certain death. Like in the old cliffhanger movies, we are holding on to the edge of the cliff with no hope in sight. But in the old cliffhangers, the hero or heroine does not go over the cliff; someone comes to the rescue. We who are about to die demand a miracle. I have faith that the European people, once they see the face of Satan in Liberalism and the face of Christ in old Europe, will rally and fight, in the fullest sense of the word, to rid Europe of liberals, Moslems, and the colored barbarians. But will the Europeans learn to see again? I don’t know, but the grace of God has worked in the past; why shouldn’t His grace work again in the lives of the European people?

When the Christian poets used the word ‘natural,’ they meant something entirely different from the modern use of the word by the liberals and the decadent poets, poets like Byron, Shelley, and Keats. The Christian poets, such as Shakespeare and Scott, used the word ‘natural’ to describe the whole man. In fact there was no biological man in the Christian poets’ vision; there was just man, as an integral personality in which the spirit and the flesh interacted as one. When Scott wrote of the natural ties that bound a man to his kith and kin, he was affirming the Christian view of ‘natural’; it was natural that we should feel close to our kith and kin, because that natural bond was a spiritual bond. Not so with the moderns and the decadent poets. In their vision nature is biology. There are no natural ties to kith or kin, there is no mother love, no father love; there is only biological coupling without any spiritual significance. This is why the de-Christianizing of the European people has made them hostile to any interjection of what is natural, in the Christian sense, into liberal ideology or liberal society. From an integral Christian standpoint, it is natural a man should cling to his own race and his own family. From a purely liberal, biological sense of the word ‘natural,’ it is illogical and unnatural for a man to cling to his own race and his own family. The biological family is a universal family, a universal family of the dung heap. The Christian family is of the spirit; it includes the racial hearth fire and the God of our ascending race. The Moslems and the colored barbarians are closer to the liberals’ definition of ‘natural’ than are the Christians, which is why the liberals see them

as allies in their war against the white race. The Moslems and the colored barbarians regard nature without God's grace as the penultimate of existence. Like the liberals, they regard nature as power; whoever is endowed with the strength of nature, biological nature, is at the top of the food chain. The liberal seeks to harness the power of nature through science and through the manipulation and the worship of the natural people. The Moslems and the colored barbarians are more basic; they rape and murder to assert their biological superiority.

The white cannot be a natural man as the non-white can be a natural man. He can only be a natural man as the liberals are natural – through their worship of science and the non-white races – or else he can be natural as he was meant to be. In the old Christmas carol "O Holy Night," we are told that the world lay in sin and error pining: "Till He appear'd and the soul felt its worth." If there is no soul, no animating spirit in man, then biology is all. The white man can only cling to science and live life second-hand through the biologically superior (superior because they are more natural) non-white races.

In the old poem Rake Windermere makes up for a desolate, wasted life by "stepping out" and becoming what he was born to be, an English gentleman, imbued with the mark of the white man, which is and always shall be, "That charity of Honor." Burke is one with Shakespeare and St. Paul by setting charity, the charity unknown to those who have not embraced the Savior, at the heart of existence. Charity cannot be put in a microscope and dissected, nor is it a great wonder of nature that can be seen. It can only be seen through a heart that still lives and sees life "naturally" through His eyes.

Without moral vision, we perish. Our people will die out and be replaced by the men and women of the biological dung heap. But we do not have to perish as a race any more than we have to perish as individuals. We have seen beauty on a Cross; that is the moral essence of the European people. At the last trump, at the twinkling of an eye, that moral vision will see us through. "Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven," should not be seen as hollow words. When we see Him clearly, we will do His will. And it is *not* His will that heathens, liberals, and colored barbarians shall rule Europe. +

To Hate Where We Should Hate

January 30, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Rudyard Kipling



The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime.

-Edmund Burke

Let me set the scene – it is London in the early 1970s. A young American student desperately, hopelessly in love with all of Europe and England in particular is sitting in Hyde Park with a group of young English college students. The English students are attacking their nation for the usual reasons – it's racist, sexist, too insular, insufficiently progressive, etc. I (the American student) was not at that time of my life the right-wing extremist I have become. And there were some very pretty girls at the gathering whom I quite naturally wanted to impress. But despite the fact that I had no hardened political views and despite my great desire to appear to be a good fellow in the eyes of the attractive females, I could no longer contain my feelings. I launched into a rhapsody of praise for historic Britain, from Geoffrey of Monmouth through Shakespeare's England, Dickens' Victorian England, and Walter Scott's Britain. It was as if I had entered a 19th century gathering of elegant ladies and gentlemen and started telling dirty jokes. The students who had treated me with great respect prior to my sentimental outburst now became quite hostile; they had an enemy in their midst.

It took me many years to understand why some white Europeans hated a man who loved white, Christian Europe. At that stage in my life I hadn't actually read the works of Edmund Burke – his work on the French Revolution was not in the humanities program – but I don't know that I would have comprehended his works had I read them. That great numbers of white people could hate their own people was too fantastical for me to grasp at that point in my life. Of course I later came to know the liberals and all their works, because I met them wherever I went in academia. And I came to regard Edmund Burke's dissection of liberalism as the greatest work of literature outside of Shakespeare. He saw through liberalism and revealed to us the face of pure evil:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, deplegated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctions visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world.

Liberalism, in all its many guises, is from the devil. The Europeans' failure to come to terms with that fact is the reason why the European people are facing extinction. I have recently seen many European protestors marching against the Moslem invasion of Europe. I love those protestors, because they still have a love for their kith and kin. But do the protesters really understand the enemy they are facing? I don't think they do, and that is a tragedy, because unless the European people fully understand the evil that is liberalism they will never prevail against the Moslems and the colored barbarians.

White protest marches can serve a purpose; they can show other white Europeans they are not alone, but protest marches will not make the liberals change their policies. Liberals have hardened their hearts against their people, and nothing will make them turn from their plan to exterminate every single white European. "Cologne will be a Moslem city in twenty years," the German council woman proudly proclaimed. "Britain must be multicultural," Tony Blair insisted. And we now know, or we should know, what multiculturalism means: It means the destruction of white Europe. Whites who think protest marches will influence the powers that be still do not understand liberalism. The devil's minions cannot be protested or voted out of existence.

White Europeans cannot afford to repeat the mistakes of the pro-lifers in the United States. For 43 years the "pro-lifers" have marched. First they marched to protect life in the womb from conception to birth. Now they march to protect life in the womb from five months after conception to birth. Why the change? Because they could not get a 51% consensus on the 'conception to birth' ban. And majority rules, don't you know? What blather! A small, committed minority always determines history. And since when has right and wrong been decided by a majority vote? The moral equivalent of the pro-life movement is the moderate protest movement against the Islamic invasion. "Let's stop at one million and just give them half of Europe." What half? You can't have one single Moslem in Europe. To say a non-Moslem policy is impractical runs counter to reality. You can't coexist with a people who are committed, by religious decree, to your extermination. The same applies to blacks. The white and the black cannot peacefully coexist, because the blacks are committed to the destruction of the white race. That which the liberals say is self-evidently impractical and immoral, a homogenous white culture, is what we should be striving for with might and main, because it is the only sane and humane course of action we can take. If our governments adopted 'Back to the Middle East' and 'Back to Africa' policies, there would be no bloodshed, because the heathens and the colored barbarians would be facing the united armed might of the white nations. But when the Western nations are governed by liberals who use the police and military against their white citizens, there is nothing but bloodshed. (1) Currently it is only white blood that is being shed. If the European people are going to survive as a people, liberal, Moslem, and colored barbarian blood will have to be shed. That is the war, a war of self-defense, the liberals have thrust upon us. We should stop trying to convince the liberals we will remain non-violent. Instead, we should tell them that we will defend our nation and our hearth fires, using whatever means are necessary. And when heathens and colored barbarians rape and murder our people and the liberals talk about making rural areas of Europe into "laboratories of integration" what means are necessary to protect our people from such abominations? Should we start a letter-writing campaign?

When the Toad (*Wind in the Willows*) tricks Ratty and escapes through the bedroom window, Ratty's friends, Mole and Badger, upbraid him for his carelessness. In his own defense, Ratty says, "But he did it awfully well." For centuries the liberals have been pushing liberalism down the Europeans' throats, and they've done it awfully well. From cradle to grave in Church,

Academy, and government, the message has been the same: Whites are evil, whites are racist, sexist, and opposed to the New World Order. The white response to liberal propaganda reveals they have succumbed to liberal propaganda. Even when white people protest some modern liberal blasphemy such as the Islamic invasion of Europe or legalized abortion, they protest as liberals. "I am not racist, but we just can't take so many Moslems into our country," a befuddled protestor said to the cold, hard-hearted, liberal newscaster. "We don't hate women, we protest against abortion because it is harmful to women," has been the refrain of "prolifers" for years. And all the pathetic, protest liberales is couched in the penultimate of liberales: "We are non-violent, we are democratic." What have non-violent protests done to stop the liberal-sanctioned violence against white people? And what has democracy as an ideology ever done for white people? It has imprisoned them in a multicultural hell where Satan plays the tune, and the white Europeans dance to it.

Once during a discussion of the Protestant evangelicals with a traditionalist priest, I stated that although the evangelicals grossly oversimplified the process, they were right to assert that Christianity was about a personal relationship with Christ. "Is not our whole sacramental system supposed to be directed toward that end?" I asked the traditionalist priest. It was as if I was back in that Victorian drawing room hurling curse words at respectable people. I had committed the ultimate sin by suggesting that Christ was above a man-made system, which the priest looked on as an end in and of itself. Which is what protest marches for the unborn and protest marches in protest of Islam have become – ends in and of themselves. "We have exercised our democratic right of protest, now let's go back into our homes and talk about how wonderful it is to live in a democracy." But have any of the evils stopped because of our protests? Have the devil's men stopped aborting babies? Have the liberal governments agreed to evict the Moslem and the black barbarians from the white nations? No, they haven't; the evils continue. That they continue democratically should not deter us from acting against the murder of the innocents and the rape and murder of white people, unless we feel that is perfectly all right to serve Satan and spit on Christ, so long as Satanism has come to us through the democratic process.

If the internal war against principalities and powers is won, then Christian men will respond without prompting, without mental confusion, when Moslem rapists attack white women in cities like Cologne. They will know instinctively what has to be done, and they will strike home against the minions of Satan. Let it be writ large: The Europeans did not seek this war, the liberals thrust it upon us. In my own anti-nation, the United States of Satan, some white-hating spawns of the satanic federal government killed one and imprisoned four other members of the Bundy group, who were guilty of being white and Christian, which of course gave the F.B.I. the right to shoot them down like vermin just as they killed Randy Weaver's wife and child some years back.

If you don't hate where you should hate, then you won't love where you should love. I hate the United States government, which does not protect its people from alien invaders, bombs innocent women and children abroad in the name of democracy, and kills white ranchers at home. And I love those martyred ranchers and all their white counterparts in Europe who are fighting against their liberal governments in the name of Him who is above the sceptered sway of the satanic liberal governments of the European people.

Kipling wrote of the time that was coming when the English would begin to hate. That time didn't come for the English or the rest of the European people. The liberals continued to hate, the Moslems continued to hate, and the colored barbarians continued to hate, but not the Europeans. Could it be that the Europeans didn't love their people enough to hate those who sought to destroy their people? I'm back, in my mind's eye, with those English college students. I love enough to hate those students who spit on my sacred Europe and would root out and destroy every last Christian hearth fire in Europe. It's not over, the battle is joined. Let us never succumb to the niceness temptation – they seek our blood and the blood of our people. "Once more unto the breach!" +

(1) The police and the military men of the liberal governments are not our friends. They are satanists who kill whites with a sanctimonious cruelty that comes from the depths of the liberal hell in which they wallow. After murdering the white rancher the law enforcement people took to the podium to brag about their triumph. It was a far cry from the cringing, crawling police in Baltimore who took to their soap boxes to proclaim their hands-off policy toward black rapists and murderers. Law enforcement gets the message. When they kill innocent whites they are saints; when they act against blacks or Moslems, even with so much as an angry word, they are devils. Who wants to be a devil? The moral eunuchs, the men with the guns, the badges, the tanks, and the bombers, prefer to be liberal saints, so they kill whites. Pleasing liberals will get them applauded in this world. Do they ever worry about the next world? I don't suppose they do.

Europe's New Dawn

February 6, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Thomas Nelson Page



A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with a lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. — Charles Dickens *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*

The liberals are experiencing more difficulty with the Moslem invasion than they anticipated. They have gotten so used to the passivity of the European people that even the tiniest whimper from the white grazers surprises them. They react as a sheep herder might react if one of his sheep turned on him and bit him. And why have a significant number of Europeans, who seemed to be spiritually anesthetized for so many years, come to life on this one issue, the Islamic invasion of Europe? Is it because the Moslems are so violent? Partly, but the negroes shed more blood than the Moslems, and the Europeans have not only tolerated the black barbarians in their midst, they have deified them. So why the fuss over the Moslems? I see two reasons. First, this recent invasion did not happen as incrementally as the previous Moslem invasions and the ongoing black invasion. And secondly, the Islamic invasion is a harder sell because even the white grazers do not think the Moslems are clubbable. They believe that the negro can become a jolly good fellow just like them, but they are not so sure about the Moslems. The liberals have tried to cow the aroused grazers with the race card — “If you oppose the Moslem invasion, then you are a racist” — but the grazers are not buying it. When they protest against the Moslems, they don’t feel racist. The guilt that makes them afraid to disapprove of black atrocities does not paralyze them in the face of Islamic atrocities. So there it is, the liberals are having problems. Isn’t that a shame?

Still, this Moslem problem is not likely to bring the liberals down. So long as the whites confine themselves to protest marches designed to influence the liberals, nothing will come of the whites’ anger over the Moslem invasion. But something miraculous will happen if white grazers see their protests of the Islamic invasion as part of a larger movement to reclaim their nations from the liberals. Liberalism can’t be reformed, because liberalism is satanic. The only remedy for liberalism is a Christian counter-revolution. Such a counter-revolution cannot come from an intellectual Christianity — that type of Christianity is wedded to liberalism — it must come from the blood of men who have not cut their ties to their European past. The liberals have tried, and been very successful, cutting every strand of that mystic cord binding the European people to their ancestors and to Him. But the liberals are not infallible; if some Europeans start reaching, in desperation, for a few strands of that mystic cord, they might start the counter-revolution, which will result in the destruction of Liberalism.

It’s difficult, when you want to see a European counter-revolution, not to read too much into events. For instance, I would like to think that the Swedes’ retaliation for the murder of that social worker is going to inspire other Europeans to actually fight back against the liberals and their satanic minions. And I would like to think that Putin is something more than a pagan nationalist, that he is a Christian warrior, the sign of contradiction to the decadent West, but I really don’t know the extent of the Swedes’ or Putin’s commitment to Christian Europe.

I don’t believe that any modern gimmick such as Christless Christianity and its attendant doctrines of negro worship, democracy, and pacifism can help the European people. Nor do I believe a Viking revival of Julian the Apostate can lead the Europeans out of their liberal hell. The gimmick doctrines are the great destroyers of the European people. It is only the type of Christianity that Thomas Nelson Page spoke of, the “bred in the bone” Christianity, that has staying power. Everything the Europeans do of consequence stems from their ancient faith. The bred-in-the-bone Christianity produced men who did not stand by while heathens and barbarians raped their women and plundered their nations. The Christian South did not lose the Civil War until the 1950s when they lost their bred-in-the-bone faith in Christ, the God who bade them rise and ride in defense of their kith and kin.

Do the modern gods of liberalism inspire men to rise and ride in defense of their racial hearth fires? No, they don’t. I read of a small town in Germany that has become infested with Moslems who are preying on young schoolgirls. The Mayor of the town told the ten-year-old schoolgirls to walk miles out of their way to avoid encountering the Moslem rapists on the way to school. The councilwoman in Cologne told the women who were raped by Moslems that they were asking for it, because they dressed too provocatively. What happened to feminism? Aren’t the feminists supposed to protect and support women? No, in point of fact, feminism has never been about the protection of women, feminism is all about the emasculation of the white male. It’s Christ that the feminists hate, so they want no return to a Christian patriarchal society. They will stand for any and every Moslem and black outrage against women rather than countenance a return to the one culture that truly did revere and protect women from the outrages that are commonplace in the Moslem and black barbarian cultures. Bred in the bone Christianity produces men like Nathan Bedford Forrest and Henry Havelock, who fought for their kith and kin. Modern liberalism produces spiritually emasculated male Undines who will sacrifice their kith and kin to whomever seems the strongest. “We will not fight for kith and kin,” is the banner of the modern white males who have grown up under the all-seeing eye of the liberals in church and state.

The sad fact is that white males who do not respond to Moslem atrocities with rage and a call to arms are following a type of faith. They are following the liberal creed that says there is only one evil and that one evil is the white male. So why should they start behaving like white men? Wouldn’t that be the ultimate sin? Will we ever see a white European male fight for anything but liberalism? Only if he fights through all the spiritual briars that block his vision of the one true God, the Christ who used to preside over Europe, before Satan dethroned Him and cast his shadow over the entire kingdom of Europe. Christ is at a disadvantage when dealing with Satan, because He wants something more from us than our external assent to His power and might. He wants our internal assent, He wants us to know Him and love Him, which is extremely difficult; we would be tempted to say it is too difficult if we did not have the witness of the antique Europeans before our eyes. And that is all in all; we must remember them, and we must cling to their vision of the European Christ, not because of racial pride, but because the one true God dwelt among them.

There will always be some miraculous conversion stories, but the liberals, in the main, have hardened their hearts against all things European and Christian. No protest movement, no “compunctions visitings of nature,” will alter their plans to destroy the European people. They have left charity and mercy behind; such were the attributes of the God and the people whom they hate. Will the new, non-white Europeans, the Moslems and the colored barbarians, extend charity and mercy to the native-born? No, they won’t, because they worship the gods of sacrifice and blood, not the God of charity and mercy.

When you marry and have children you want to hand down your faith to your children. If your faith is one with your contemporaries, you can go through the usual process – school, church, and the community at large. But if you feel estranged from the culture you live in, you seek another way. My children were brought up with the poets of antique Europe and the Gospels. I hope it was good for my children; I know it was good for me. It has been truly amazing to see how the daily reading of the European poets and the Gospels reflected back on each other. Without any conscious planning on my part, the image of Christ, as seen in the Gospels, appeared again and again in the works of the European poets. For centuries the theologians have been telling us not to look to the European people for the image of Christ; we must look to their systems. But I ask you — What have their systems brought to us? They’ve brought us a false Aslan, an abstract God who is all things to all people; He is not the God of our racial hearth fire, He is not our Lord and kinsman. It’s impossible to separate Christ from the European people without destroying the European people. And it’s also impossible to find the true image of Christ unless we seek Him in and through those European people of long ago – “while memory holds a seat in this distracted globe” – we must remember them and see life through their eyes. You can’t become like unto them by copying the forms of their rituals and

governments. We need to delve beneath the forms and recapture the spirit of our ancestors, a spirit that set them apart from their pagan ancestors and sets them apart from the post-Christians of modern Europe.

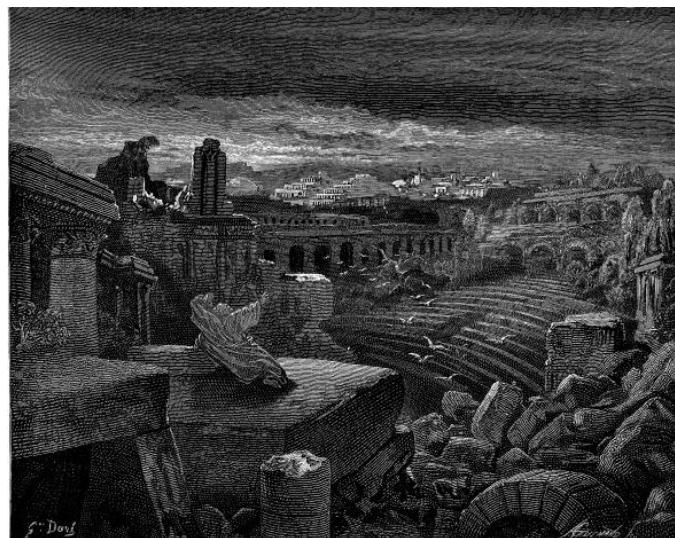
It's not possible to be connected to old Europe and the new Europe. No true European can be content while the shadows of the crescent and colored barbarism descend over Europe. There is only one shadow, the shadow of the Cross, which gives way to a glorious dawn, the dawn of our Lord and Savior. We can only love much and cling to the European fairy tale of the suffering servant who became the King of a fairyland called Europe. +

From Out of the Darkness of Utopia

February 13, 2016

Categories: Democracy, Liberalism, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob



But down these mean streets a man must go who is not himself mean, who is neither tarnished nor afraid. The detective in this kind of story must be such a man. He is the hero, he is everything. He must be a complete man and a common man and yet an unusual man. He must be, to use a rather weathered phrase, a man of honor — by instinct, by inevitability, without thought of it, and certainly without saying it. — Raymond Chandler

“Shane stopped about three quarters of the way forward, about five yards from Wilson. He cocked his head for one quick sidewise glance again at the balcony and then he was looking at Wilson. He did not like the setup. Wilson had the front wall and he was left in the open of the room. He understood the fact, assessed it, accepted it.”

Of course we know the rest: Shane kills Wilson, the hired gun, and he also kills the back-shooting Fletcher who hired Wilson, thus making the valley a place that was safe for women and their men folk to raise children that could grow up “strong and straight.” The basic elemental lesson of *Shane*, that it takes a heroic, virtuous male to stop evil predatory males, has been forgotten by the people of Europe. (1) Unless they once again grasp hold of and act on that moral absolute, they will perish as a people. No utopian gimmick or fantasy can replace the reality depicted in *Shane* – the hero must be able to see evil clearly and he must have the moral courage to fight the men who are doing evil. Men like Wilson and Fletcher cannot be wished away by a democratic stratagem. We are not disembodied spirits. We inhabit bodies. That is a non-utopian fact of life. And evil must be confronted when it is embodied in men. You cannot fight evil in the abstract; you must make war on the men who do evil. That is an eternal truth of existence. You can spout Gnostic jeremiads against it from now to doomsday, but you won’t be able to change that essential truth.

Let’s use the rape of the women of Cologne as our starting point. One female journalist, who I’m sure was voicing the feelings of a large number of European women, asked “Where were the German men?” Of course a condemnation of the men of Cologne was implicit in that question. But I don’t think the blame for the rapes can be left at the doorsteps of the men of Cologne. Let’s go back to the 19th century in order to see what is wrong with the 21st century white males. Let us suppose that a band of ruffians (we must suppose they are white ruffians, because the Victorians didn’t allow their nation to be flooded with Moslems and negroes) are seen accosting a Victorian lady on a London street or, if you prefer, on a street in Cologne, Germany. In either case what do you think happens? The English or German gentlemen who witness the assault immediately draw their rapiers or possibly their pistols and either kill or wound the ruffians. Most probably the woman being assaulted is a lady, because it is the 19th century when men were men and women were women, but let us suppose the woman being assaulted was a prostitute. Would the men still defend the prostitute? Yes, they would have. Maybe without the same enthusiasm with which they would have defended the matron or the maid, but the code of chivalry would have made the white males feel themselves obliged to defend any member of the female sex that was being assaulted. (2)

Now let us return to debauched 21st century Europe and go back to New Year’s Eve in Cologne and look at the difference between the modern European males and the 19th century white males. The great difference is that of breeding. The 19th century white male was thoroughly versed in the code of chivalry. Women were considered the life bearers and the life nurturers; they were the “gentle sex” who nursed the sick, raised the children, and made the 19th century dwellings seem like homes rather than pigsties. Such women must be defended because... well, because they are women, any fool can see that. Yes, any “fool” from the 19th century could see that. But what about the modern European male? He has not been brought up by the chivalric code of the antique Europeans. He has been brought up according to the liberals’ catechism. In that catechism, we read on page 3, fourth paragraph, the following definition of chivalry: “An ancient code of the white Christians, has to do with knight errantry and what was later called gentlemanly behavior. The code was in reality used to perpetuate sexual stereotypes that kept women out of male-dominated professions.”

In our modern, enlightened times, the young males are told that anything a male can do a female can do better. Cop chicks on television regularly destroy whole gangs of white thugs (it’s always white thugs, there is no such thing as black, Moslem, or Mexican thugs) with a few karate blows. And the idea of fair maidens has been demolished as well. No white male thinks of fair maidens; he has been taught to regard women as sexually promiscuous creatures who have a right to sleep with anyone and everyone without being labeled as sluts or whores. Indeed there are no longer sluts and whores; there are only modern, sexually assertive women and working women who are often deprived, so we are told, of proper health and medical benefits because of hypocritical males who enjoy the service they provide, but are unwilling to publicly acknowledge it. So when such women are attacked, what does a white male, who has been properly trained, think? He thinks that women are perfectly capable of taking care of themselves, because the feminists have told him that from kindergarten to adulthood.

What about the defense of a woman’s virtue? Again, the young European male has been taught to regard the respect for a woman’s virginity and chastity as a relic of the evil days of the white patriarchies. Why, in these modern times, would a male fight for something, namely a woman’s maidenly honor, that he has been taught to regard as a worthless commodity?

The young white male of the 19th century was not hindered by the demons of white guilt. He was not taught from birth that white males were evil oppressors of women, of the colored races, and of the non-Christian religions. So if the 19th century male saw the “lesser breeds without the law” attacking women he responded quickly and without fear of being locked up by his own government for sexist behavior toward women or discriminatory behavior toward the colored barbarians and heathens, who are now regarded as the superior breeds of people. And the 19th century male had the means to fight barbarians, because his government and society at large trusted him to act according to the code. The modern liberals, who regard the code of chivalry as evil, have forbidden the white males to carry arms into the combat zones of our major cities. And in the hinterlands of white nations, where it is legal to carry knives and firearms it is still illegal to use those knives and guns against the colored barbarians and the Moslem invaders. With the means to fight, with the will to fight, and with the support of society and their government young white males will fight. But unarmed and alone, who but the Major Lawson’s of the world will fight? (3)

A society such as Victorian England that is supportive of white males has a right to expect courageous action from its male citizens. But the nations of modern Europe who have demonized the white male have no right to expect anything from white males. In Russia, the only nationalist nation left in Europe, the men beat the Moslem hoodlums who tried to rape and pillage with the full approval of the police, who added some extra punishment when their fellow Russians were finished beating the hooligans. “This is not Cologne,” the Russians told the Moslems. No European nation should be like Cologne, but we are reaping the bitter harvest the liberals have planted.

Shane was able to face his enemies, because he saw them for what they were, pure evil. And he was able to defeat them because he saw what their advantage was, and he faced it squarely and adjusted to it. The Europeans must see that liberalism is pure evil. Then they will stop looking for help from their governments and they will take the necessary action. The Swedes have taken the first step. They attacked the Moslem murderers while wearing masks, and beat them. The masks are a sign that those Swedish youths realize that you can't seek redemption from the devil. The demonic liberal governments want to eradicate the white race, so why would they aid white males who want to save their people from destruction? The late Jeff Cooper who wrote for *Guns and Ammo* magazine once told of an off-duty policeman who tried to prevent an armed robbery without any weapon. The police officer was shot and killed. Jeff Cooper gave the police officer a ten for courage and a zero for wisdom. I feel that way about so many of the European men who protest against their governments' anti-European immigration policies. That retired officer of the French Foreign Legion is a perfect example. He led a protest march against the Islamic invasion of France, and the French government threw him in jail. (4) A ten for courage and a zero for wisdom. The liberals hate whites. They can only be dealt with as Shane dealt with Wilson and Fletcher. And since the liberals control the tanks and the guns, they must be dealt with in the night with masks and daggers. War is not a very pleasant thing. It would be nice if the liberals would stop being liberals, and then there would be no need for bloodshed. The Western governments could simply stop paying welfare benefits to the alien invaders and they would have to leave, but the liberals are committed to a New World based on a new religion, a religion in which everything satanic is celebrated and everything Christian is demonized. They will not stop being liberals because we ask them to stop being liberals. Better to fight and die than to simply sit back and wait for the black barbarians and the Moslems, who are the liberals' executioners, to drop the axe on each and every European. (5)

The undergirding of liberalism is their utopian criticism of the past. From a utopian standard, every civilization is wrong; every civilization except the future civilization the liberals are building. They destroy everything of value in the past and justify that destruction under the blanket of, "We are moving onward to a perfect world." The liberals' perfect world is here, and it is hell. Christian Europe was not utopia, but there were white moments in old Europe when a man felt connected to the God of love, through the hearth fire channels of grace that the liberals' make war on. I recently heard a "moderate" religious commentator make a critique of feminism, but this same commentator then made it clear she did not want a return to the bad old days of the Christian patriarchies. That is akin to a sick person saying that they don't want to be sick, but they also do not want to return to full health. They would prefer to be half sick and half well. I do want a return to the past, not a return to outmoded forms, but a return to a timeless faith in the Suffering Servant, a faith that gave men the grace to be strong in defense of the weak, and women the grace to be the life-bearers and life nurturers. +

(1) There is more truth in one Gene Autry B-Western movie than all the liberal and quasi-conservative pacifist garbage that is being bandied about by the pro-Moslem West. The men in the white hats must be men! They must put 'paid' to the account of the bad guys. Johnny Western (he was born Johnny Westerlund) said it best in his "Ballad of Paladin":

Have Gun Will Travel reads the card of a man.
A knight without armor in a savage land.

His fast gun for hire heeds the calling wind.
A soldier of fortune is the man called Paladin.

Paladin, Paladin
Where do you roam?
Paladin, Paladin,
Far, far from home.

He travels on to where ever he must
A chess knight of silver is his badge of trust
There are campfire legends that the plainsmen spin
Of the man with the gun
Of the man called Paladin

Paladin, Paladin
Where do you roam?
Paladin, Paladin,
Far, far from home.
Far, far from home.
Far, far from home.

(2) The reason Jack the Ripper caused such a stir in Victorian England was because he attacked defenseless women. His crimes were seen as horrendous crimes even though the women were prostitutes. Such violence against women is commonplace in today's world and does not even warrant a murmur of protest when Moslems and blacks are the perpetrators of the violence.

(3) A sign of contradiction:

"In Katanga, the province bordering on the Copperbelt, the long tale of panic and horror was relieved by the exploits of Major Lawson, D.S.O., of the British Army. There had been a massacre of Europeans in Kongolo, in northern Katanga, but there were believed to be some survivors still in hiding there. Consequently an appeal for help was made to the United Nations. But the United Nations, in an admission approved by U Thant, declared itself powerless to do anything about it. Notwithstanding the fact that there were 19,000 United Nations troops in the Congo, and that the United Nations had been able to concentrate within a short space of time an air force and 9,000 men for an attack upon the anti-Communist Katanga town of Elizabethville, it declared itself unable to rescue the Whites in Kongolo. In Katanga itself at this time there were many Swedish and Irish troops – all fraternizing with the Natives and thoroughly indoctrinated with anti-colonialism – and apparently they too were unable to assist. Major Lawson thereupon decided to do something about it on his own. Alone and unarmed, except for his swagger-stick, he went in, defying several hundreds of astonished Congolese soldiers, and succeeded in finding and bringing to safety a missionary priest. He then went in a second time, accompanied by one of his junior Nigerian officers, and on this occasion traced and rescued several priests and nuns. In the process both he and the Nigerian officer were badly beaten up; but he refused to abandon his rescue operations until he was satisfied there were no more Europeans remaining in the district. Thus this one British officer succeeded in doing what the entire United Nations Organisation had confessed itself powerless to do! His action alone proved that the United Nations Organisation is too rotten to last; but that the British people – the best of them at least – are not the write-offs they are thought to be." – *White Man, Think Again!*

(4) The mayor who ordered the arrest and the French policemen who beat the retired Legionnaire, causing him to have a seizure, should be killed, their throats slit some dark night. If the European people are going to survive they must stop putting their trust in the princes and princesses of democracy, who hate whites with a satanic passion. Like a horrific vampire, they feed on the blood of white people. Just because the vampires pass laws that permit the extermination of white people does not mean we have to submit to those laws. Laws based on His divine law of charity and mercy are inviolate; laws based on Satan's hatred of the Christ-bearing race should be defied.

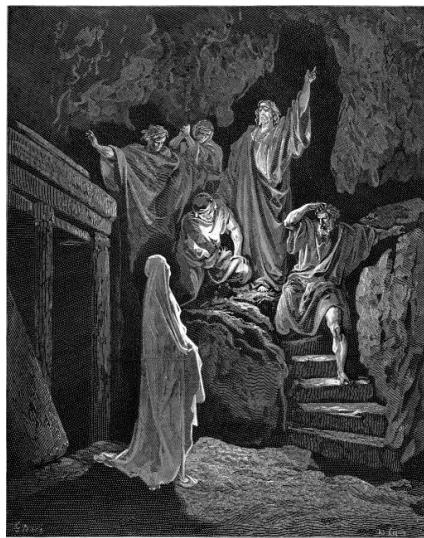
(5) Institutionalized liberalism is synonymous with the slaughter of white Europeans. It has always been thus. From the time of the French Revolution till now, wherever liberals reign, white Europeans are marginalized and then exterminated.

The Woman of Calais

February 20, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Shakespeare



Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. – John 11: 40-44

“Is this the promised end?,” Edgar asks. That is what the European people are asking as well. “Is this the end of our world?” It certainly seems so. We are faced with an implacable, malevolent enemy, the liberals, who have let loose the dogs of war: They have opened the gates of Europe to the Moslems from abroad, and they have given free rein to the murderous barbarian hordes of color from within. But the encircling movement would not be complete without the false Aslan. That was the work of the churches. The people must be shown a new Christ, a liberal Christ, so they will be left spiritually naked in the face of their liberal, heathen, and black foes. The false Aslan churches complete the satanic circle. We are trapped in the clutches of the devil.

The woman of Calais tells us how we should respond to the wickedness and snares of the devil. She recommended no specific program, no clever strategy; all she did was relate her story. She told how barbarians from hell, barbarians whom her government invited into her nation, destroyed her native Calais and the lives of the people living there. Her plight is the plight of Europe. (1) If we let people like her perish without fighting back, we will stand condemned for all eternity as the people who once loved Christ and then turned their back on Him in order to embrace the devil. “In so much as you have done it to the least of these my brethren...” If we allow the woman of Calais and the Jonathan Fosters of Europe to perish while we cite democratic, halfway-house Christian, and pacifist platitudes, we will be moral pariahs fit for hell, but certainly not candidates for His Kingdom come.

We are tied to our past by a thousand strings of memory. The woman of Calais talked about how she used to visit her son’s grave, and she remembered the comfort she used to derive from those visits. But that is no longer an option, because the Moslem barbarians bar her way to her son’s grave site. Must every memory we have that links us to our ancestors and their God be taken away from us? Yes, every string of memory must be cut, so that the liberals can move into Satan’s pleasure palace where there are no memories, only the sacrificial altars of the heathen and the colored barbarians. One final flash of the sacrificial knife, and it is all over for the Europeans.

The liberals won’t actually be wielding the knife, but they will be guiding it into the heart of the European people. It’s quite Shylockian; the liberals will not yield to Christian entreaties.

Duke: How shalt thou hope for mercy, rendering none?

Shylock: What judgement shall I dread, doing no wrong?

That is the crux of the matter: The liberals do not believe they are doing any wrong. The pig god of diversity, perversion, and cruelty that they serve demands the blood of the unregenerate white race. The liberals do not just countenance the shedding of white blood, they applaud it and write apologetics in defense of the blood-soaked heathens and colored barbarians. When we see our own people, the woman of Calais and Jonathan Foster, crucified for being white, a spring of love gushes from our heart and we know what must be done. Perhaps this is Europe’s last hour, but we won’t go quietly into the dark night of liberal Babylon. Whether this is the final battle or just the beginning of a whole host of battles to last for another thousand years, we are enjoined to fight against liberals and their allies, because charity demands it. Certainly we pray for the woman of Calais and Jonathan Foster, but we also go after the people who are responsible for the murder and torture of the innocents, like the woman of Calais and Jonathan Foster. And don’t tell me we can’t fight because we are not permitted to have weapons. Make crossbows then, or get guns where the Moslems and blacks get guns, but stop spouting pacifist rot that simply emboldens the enemy and demoralizes the European people. There are more than enough Europeans ready to fight; what they lack is moral leadership. The men in the Christian churches are Christian atheists who preach “loving forgiveness” for the heathens and barbarians of color. Pope Francis advises whites to pacifically accept the torture and murder of their kith and kin while they patiently wait in line for their turn to be tortured and murdered. And the managerial elite in the traitorous conservative camps keep advising us to seek redemption from the devil; they tell us to vote for our executioners, while staying nonviolent and supportive of the liberal governments throughout Europe. Or else where would we be? We’d be a lot better off without our liberal democracies that do not protect us from the enemies within or without, but do support, quite wholeheartedly, the dismantling of European civilization and the destruction of the European people.

When Christ raised Lazarus from the dead, the holy scriptures tell us there were some that believed in Christ after that remarkable event: “Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.” But some saw what Christ did and were indifferent; they cared only about pleasing the powers of this world: “But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.”

And what do the Pharisees do with the information from the children of this world only? They drop it in Caiaphas’s lap, and he gets to the heart of the matter. Christ must die so he can stay in power and continue to speak in the name of the people:

Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

When the Europeans first bent their knees to Christ, they were like unto the Jews who saw and “believed on Him.” But over the Christian centuries the tide turned. First a class of Pharisees and Sadducees developed in organized Christianity, and then that pharisaical class of clerical intellectuals became one with the European intelligentsia. The war was on: The smart angel against Christ. By the late 20th century, organized Christianity and the organized democratic governments of Europe were the same as organized Jewry; the church men and the academics

hated Christ. Their hatred was apparent when they turned to the heathen gods, and in many instances actually made gods of the heathens, placing Christ in a subordinate role. The lovers of this world only, in imitation of the Jews who were indifferent to Christ's raising of Lazarus, trusted in organized, pharisaical Christianity and secular liberalism to see them through. Only those Europeans, who are like unto the Jews that did not walk away from Christ when they saw Him raise Lazarus from the dead, have kept the faith. That is what separates the Europeans from all other peoples and every apostate European. The Ancient Mariner knew whom he had to stop and speak to. And we, the Europeans who have seen, through the visionary hearts of our European ancestors, Christ raise Lazarus from the dead, know our fellow Europeans. They are like the woman of Calais, who refused to bow down to the heathens who hate the God of mercy and love.

It's not a little matter whether Christ made Lazarus who was dead come to life again, nor is it a little matter whether or not Christ rose from the dead and will fulfill His pledge to draw us unto Him at the last day. The people who believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead have become a minority in Europe. The Catholic churchmen believe in everything but the Son of God while the Protestant churchmen believe in the secular state of Israel. And they are united in their disbelief with the Moslems, the colored barbarians, and the secular liberals. That is the real reason white people have been abandoned by their leaders — their leaders in church and state are like unto Caiaphas. They feel it is expedient for them, who speak in the name of a universal aggregate of colored barbarians and heathen faiths, that all white Europeans should die. The liberals also will die, but they do not see that, just as the demons who entered the swine did not see the suicidal consequences of their hatred of Jesus of Nazareth.

Our European faith is based on a sentiment, a sentiment that the vast majority of the European people feel is foolish. But what if our inner life is like that sentiment? Shouldn't we keep the sentiment and maintain it against all the world?

What you love is what you fight for. The liberals and the liberal conservatives will fight for one, democratic, egalitarian, multi-cultural world. Their differences are within the confines of that abstract world of utopia. They are both wedded to the same anti-European vision, just as the warring Sunnis and Shiites are wedded to the same anti-European vision of God. And so it goes with the colored barbarians. The Orientals have no great love for the black races but they have no great love for the European people either. "The Dwarves are for the Dwarves," is the stance of the colored barbarians vis-à-vis each other and the European people. It is tragic that the Oriental races, in the main, look on the crucifixion of Christ with an abstract, detached, speculative eye. They compare the Romans method of torture with their own. And the other colored races also focus only on the outward aspects of the Christ story. It is blood and power that interests them:

The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thorns upon His head, excited cries of 'Pika! Pika!' rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak. – Congo Cauldron by D. P. Dugauquier

It was only the European people, who viewed existence with the inner eye of the heart, who saw the moral beauty in the Christ story. They were one with the Jews who saw Christ raise Lazarus from the dead and then "believed in Him." But now the new Pharisees rule the European people. (2) They are the liberals who have become like unto the Pharisees of old who hardened their hearts against the light:

While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them. But though He had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on Him: That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

One thinks of that wonderful exchange between Charlie Brown and Linus about the true meaning of Christmas. It is appropriate in a similar context:

"Can't anyone tell me to whom the arm of the Lord has been revealed?"

"Yes, I can tell you, it has been revealed to the European people whose hearts were pierced with the sword of His divine charity. A sword that harmeth not, but gives life abundant to those who have faith in its healing and life-giving power."

Darkness has come upon the European people because the men of science, the men of the abstracted minds, who rule in church and state, have closed their hearts to His divine charity. But they have not succeeded in completely obliterating the light. The woman of Calais is not alone; she is one part of the European light that will destroy Liberaldom. +

(1) When I say Europe, I mean white people. I don't think it should be necessary to say Australian Europeans or American Europeans. All whites are of Europe. We live or die together, as Europeans.

(2) It's quite significant that the Pharisees wanted to put Lazarus to death after Christ raised him from the dead. "But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus." The European people, like Lazarus, are a living reminder of Christ, the God who can raise the dead. The Pharisees of multiculturalism must destroy those people in order to destroy the image of Christ, which will be forever present in the European people, even if they try to walk away from Him.

Feminism Is from Hell

February 27, 2016

Categories: Feminism, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare, Thomas Hughes



Come, you spirits
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full
Of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood;
Stop up th' access and passage to remorse,
That no compunctionous visitings of nature
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between
Th' effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts
And take my milk for gall, you murd'ring ministers,
Wherever in your sightless substances
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,
And pall thee in the dunkest smoke of hell,
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes,
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark
To cry, "Hold, hold!" — Lady Macbeth



Her voice was ever soft,
Gentle and low, an excellent thing in woman.
-King Lear of Cordelia

Sir Walter Scott, in his book *The Lives of the Novelists*, has this to say about the novelist Robert Bage:

Fielding, Smollett and other novelists have, with very indifferent taste, brought forward their heroes as rakes and debauchees, and treated with great lightness those breaches of morals which are too commonly considered as venial in the male sex; but Bage has extended, in some instances, that licence to the female sex, and seems at times even to sport with the ties of marriage, which is at once the institution of civil society most favourable to religion and good order, and that which, in its consequences, forms the most marked distinction between man and the lower animals. All the influence which women enjoy in society—their right to the exercise of that maternal care which forms the first and most indelible species of education; the wholesome and mitigating restraint which they possess over the passions of mankind; their power of protecting us when young, and cheering us when old—depend so entirely upon their personal purity, and the charm which it casts around them, that to insinuate a doubt of its real value, is willfully to remove the broadest corner-stone on which civil society rests, with all its benefits, and with all its comforts. It is true, we can easily conceive that a female like Miss Ross, in Barham Downs, may fall under the arts of a seducer, under circumstances so peculiar as to excite great compassion; nor are we so rigid as to say

that such a person may not be restored to society, when her subsequent conduct shall have effaced recollection of her error. But she must return thither as a humble penitent, and has no title to sue out her pardon as a matter of right, and assume a place among the virtuous of her sex as if she had never fallen from her proper sphere. Her disgrace must not be considered as a trivial stain, which may be communicated by a husband as an exceeding good jest to his friend and correspondent; there must be, not penitence and reformation alone, but humiliation and abasement, in the recollection of her errors. This the laws of society demand even from the unfortunate; and to compromise farther would open a door to the most unbounded licentiousness.

The fact that Bage's view of women has prevailed in society and Scott's view of women has become "sexist" is the main reason that Europe is under siege and about to perish from an "unbounded licentiousness" that has rendered her people incapable of defending themselves against black barbarism from within and the Moslem onslaught from abroad. I am second to none in my disgust with the modern European men who have ceded everything to the Lady Macbeths among them, but when I look at the way a young white male is brought up – to detest his whiteness and his manhood – and when I look at the image of woman that is presented to him, how can I expect anything from the white male? Everything is done to improve the black male's image of himself and the white woman's image of herself, but what is done for the white male? He is told that the sooner he self-destructs the better it is for the world. He is not supposed to even think of marrying a woman whose "personal purity and charm" make him aware of the eternal God, who, because He loves man, gave him a helpmate. It sounds strangely out of place, the term 'helpmate,' when we look at modern women, but there was a time when men did depend on women to guide them upward. It all sounds so sexist, the idea that a woman fulfills herself by helping the male fulfill himself. But just such an arrangement once worked. It worked, I believe, because it was in keeping with God's will.

There can be no doubt that the modern woman is a creature who has given herself over to Satan. Her exemplar is Lady Macbeth. The modern woman, always excepting the Christian woman who has resisted the wickedness and snares of feminism, is a traitor to everything Christian and European. (1) She is in the front ranks of the race-mixers, for every white male I see with a black female I see at least fifty white females with black males, and she is in the front ranks of the welcoming parties for the Moslem invaders. "Better rapists than racists," was the chant of a group of German women. From Angela Merkel to the female mayors of Hamburg and Cologne, it is the same refrain: "Whoever is anti-Christian and anti-white is welcome in our nations."

The modern liberal belief is that woman's "liberation" is a marvelous thing, it is a sign of an advanced civilization. But a close study of civilizations reveals just the opposite. In fact there are no feminist civilizations that have ever survived. Only civilizations that severely restrict the economic options of women and stress monogamous marriage have ever survived for any length of time. Cultural anthropologists such as Spengler (*The Rise and Fall of the West*) and J. D. Unwin (*Sex and Culture*) have chronicled that fact of history. Of course the feminists, with the support of male sycophants, will simply tell you that there can be a feminist civilization, because they want it to be.

*The hart he loves the high wood,
The hare she loves the hill:
The knight he loves his bright sword,
The lady — loves her will.*

But there is a weakness in works of men like Spengler and Unwin, and the weakness is not that they misrepresent the facts. Their weakness is that they see rationalist man as the end product of civilization. For instance, Unwin concludes his work on *Sex and Culture*, in which he tells us it was the restrictive, patriarchal societies such as England from the 1500's up to the 20th century that thrived and prospered, with the wishful hope that women can be given economic freedom, but then they will voluntarily give up to become wives and mothers, because they will see it is the rational thing to do. Unwin, like all those committed to a belief that rational man is the ultimate man, greatly exaggerates the power of reason to alter human behavior. Again, let's refer to Scott's article on Robert Bage, the male feminist of his time:

Having adverted to his prominent error in Mr. Bage's theory of morals, we are compelled to remark that his ideas respecting the male sex are not less inaccurate, considered as rules of mental government, than the over-indulgence with which he seems to regard female frailty. Hermsprong, whom he produces as the ideal perfection of humanity, is paraded as a man who, freed from all the nurse and all the priest has taught, steps forward on his path without any religious or political restraint, as one who derives his own rules of conduct from his own breast, and avoids or resists all temptations of evil passions, because his reason teaches him that they are attended with evil consequences. In the expressive words of our moral poet, Wordsworth, he is

*"A reasoning self-sufficient thing,
An intellectual all-in-all."*

But did such a man ever exist? Or are we, in the fair construction of humanity, with all its temptations, its passions, and its frailties, entitled to expect such perfection from the mere force of practical philosophy? Let each reader ask his own bosom, whether it were possible for him to hold an unaltered tenor of moral and virtuous conduct, did he suppose that to himself alone he was responsible, and that his own reason, a judge so peculiarly subject to be bribed, blinded, and imposed upon by the sophistry with which the human mind can gloss over those actions to which human passions so strongly impel us, was the ultimate judge of his actions? Let each reader ask the question at his own conscience, and if he can honestly and conscientiously answer in the affirmative, he is either that faultless monster which the world never saw, or he deceives himself as grossly as the poor devotee, who, referring his course of conduct to the action of some supposed internal inspiration, conceives himself, upon a different ground, incapable of crime, even when he is in the very act of committing it.

There are exceptional women like Carolyn Graglia (*Domestic Tranquility: A Brief Against Feminism*), who gave up a law career to be a housewife and mother, but exceptional cases and hard cases make bad laws. The historical record clearly shows that non-Christian women, in the main, would rather be one of many sexual partners of a male at the top of the food chain than the wife of one male at the bottom of the food chain. In societies (if you can even call such abominations 'societies') where women are given unlimited career options apart from the one necessary career of a woman – wife and mother – some 80% of the males (Unwin's numbers) are not able to reproduce because they can't find mates. We can see this tragedy being enacted in our present society. The rock stars, the rich capitalists, the athletes, particularly black athletes, practice a form of serial monogamy which is really polygamy, while the disenfranchised white males either go without a spouse or else severely limit their families when they do find a mate.

The white nations are not reproducing themselves because of this new religion of feminism. Is it really a better world now? No! A world where a man feels himself to be a useful provider, however so humble his job and his home, and where a woman feels she is queen of the family hearth fire, no matter how humble the hearth fire, differs from our modern world as heaven differs from hell. But of course the liberals' hell is the Christian's heaven and the Christian's hell is the liberals' heaven. Are the liberals happy in their man-made heaven? It doesn't seem so. The women seek male restraints in the form of Islam and black barbarism, much more stringent than the Christian patriarchal restraints they say they hate. And the men turn to porn and/or sodomy to escape the responsibilities of keeping the modern women in check.

Which brings us to the question of who's to blame. It's customary for women to blame the white male for everything. And the white male is to blame for not being a heroic Petruchio and taming the shrewish Katerina. But unless we take a truly male chauvinistic view of women, namely, that they don't have fully human souls and are therefore incapable of behaving as human beings, we must put the primary responsibility for the sins of modern women on the women themselves. Elizabeth Browning, Christina Rossetti, Jane Austen, and Anne Bradstreet are exceptional because of their poetic gifts; they were not exceptions, in terms of their personal virtues, in the Christian era. There really were women who bore witness to the higher things of life, because of their love and devotion to their husbands and their children and to Jesus Christ, the sovereign Lord of the European hearth fire.

Of course the modern view of the women of Christian Europe was that they were repressed, the mere slaves of evil male patriarchs. How can this be true when the poets of the Christian era, the male poets and the female poets, present an image of the good woman that stirs our hearts to its very depths? Was that all an insubstantial pageant? If it was then I, like Shakespeare and millions of other men who believed in the Christian romance of brave and virtuous knights and fair and virtuous maidens, "never truly writ and never truly loved."

Everything comes back to the one essential question: Was Christian Europe a lie? Were the people whose customs, morals, and laws were based on their belief that Jesus Christ was the Son of God wrong? The modern Europeans have told us in no uncertain terms that the Christians of pre-20th century Europe were wrong, and they have forged a society based on their beliefs. From a Christian's perspective, the new liberal feminist society is from Satan. And the "Christian" church men have sided with the liberals. They want to shout, "Lord, Lord," but they also want to serve Satan, so they label European Christianity as racist and sexist and bid us look to a new Christianity, a modern liberal Christianity in which Christ becomes a Satanic figure fighting against racism, sexism, and everything else of value that made and sustained Christian Europe.

That the world needs women to be wives, mothers, grammar school teachers, and nurses more than the world needs cop-chicks, bimbo newscasters, and mixed martial arts fighters seems so obvious that I shouldn't have to say it, but just as I must write about so many of the discarded customs and morals of the European people, so must I write about the demonism of

feminism and the glory of the antique Europeans who revered the Christian women whose love and fidelity to the European hearth fixed men's sights on Christ, because our modern world has reversed the moral world of the antique Europeans. The modern liberals revere Lady Macbeth and hate Cordelia.

It is now taken as a given that the Europeans of the Christian era were wrong about women, but should the liberals' given be our moral imperative? Almighty God, forbid it! Their moral imperatives have given us the kingdom of Satan on earth. Like Puddleglum, who rejected the evil witch's world, we must reject their liberal-feminist world.

The feminist West cannot defend itself from enemies within or from without. The Moslem invasion and escalating black crime has made that glaringly apparent. So what should our stance be vis à vis the West? It would be nice to stand by and let the Moslems and the black barbarians kill all the liberals. But things are not that simple. There is the European remnant. Our wives and our children do not deserve to be overrun by the liberals' Moslem and colored allies (allies until they turn on the liberals). We will fight them, but we will fight a two-front war. We will fight the liberals, and we will fight the heathens from within and without. When the liberals fall, the white Europeans should be ready to replace them. The new Europe will be a very old Europe, where men and women love each other in and through the Savior, who is the source of all true love.

All is cheerless, dark, and deadly if we look at man through the eyes of the biological determinists or the eyes of the liberal utopians. The determinist sees only decay, and the liberal utopian tells us filth is not filth, it is ambrosia. Both views of existence ignore the one great truth that only the antique Europeans knew: There is a stunning, blinding reality called the grace of God. We have seen it in the culture of the people who loved much and so ordered their society that their mysterious human relationships pointed them to Christ the Lord.

For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him, in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell for ever and ever in perfect fullness. – [Tom Brown's Schooldays](#)

Feminism is a dagger in the heart of old Europe, the only world that gave us a glimpse of our Lord's house of many mansions. Who shall separate us from that house? Certainly not the liberal feminists, nor the heathens, nor the black barbarians. We are not rationalists, nor are we liberals; we belong to the European hearth fire which is sustained by His abiding love. +

(1) The Christian woman will always be the strongest advocate for a Christian patriarchy. It has always been thus and it always shall be thus. The modern tragedy is that many Christian women have to work outside the home, because they can't find Christian husbands or because their husbands cannot find work because "career women," who shouldn't be working, have the jobs meant for male providers.

One of the most disgusting modern blasphemies is the modern family, where the husband makes \$100,000 plus a year, the wife makes \$100,000 plus a year, and both send what children they have to daycare. That woman belongs with her children at home, and her job should belong to a white family man. What greater gift has God given us than to be part of His divine procreative process? And who is more ungrateful before God than the men and women who reject that gift and try to build a feminist hell on earth in direct conflict with God's greatest gift?

The European's Moment on the Heath

March 5, 2016

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection, White Genocide

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Dostoyevsky, George Fitzhugh, Thomas Hughes



There are more things in heaven and earth, Horatio,
Than are dreamt of in our philosophy.

-Hamlet

The citizen of the Canton of Uri was dangling just by the door. On the table there was a scrap of paper with the words, "Accuse no one, I did it myself," written in pencil. Next to it on the table there was also a hammer, a piece of soap, and a large nail, apparently in case the other one hadn't held up. The strong silk cord on which Nikolai Stavrogin had hanged himself was lavishly smeared with soap. All this indicated that to the last second he was in full possession of his mental faculties and had acted with premeditation.

After the autopsy, all our medical experts rejected any possibility of insanity.

-Fyodor Dostoyevsky, *The Possessed*

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

-George Fitzhugh, *Cannibals All or Slaves Without Masters*

It is Bassanio's contention during the trial scene in Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice* that Shylock, because he has refused "ten times o'er" the amount of Antonio's bond in preference for a pound of Antonio's flesh, has demonstrated that he is motivated by malice alone and his case should be dismissed:

*"If this will not suffice, it must appear
That malice bears down truth."*

At first it does appear that malice will bear down truth, but because *The Merchant of Venice* is a comedy that must end happily Portia steps in and renders a Christian verdict. It would not be accurate to say that malice never bore down truth in the courtrooms of the Christian Europeans. Men are very flawed creatures, but it would be quite accurate to say that there was a much greater concern for truth in the courts of Christian Europe than there is in our modern utopian courts. In the modern courts of the European people, which reflect the values of the ruling elites, malice has borne down truth. And it is a very specific malice; it is a malice against the white race and all things Christian. Race mixing and abortion have legal sanction while segregation and the preservation of life in the womb are proscribed by law.

The clergymen and the neopagans are fond of telling us that Christianity has nothing to do with race, but the children of darkness know better. They know that the true faith has only been honored and championed by the white race. No matter how completely they repudiate that faith, the whites will never be trusted by the children of darkness. Satan drives them on; they must kill and destroy everything white and Christian so that not even one precious string of memory that connects modern Europe with old Europe will remain. Not only the monuments and the art works will be destroyed; the colored hordes will not leave one single white person alive. So as it was in Haiti, so it will be in white Europe unless the white man breaks that one terrible chain that has made him a slave of the heathens and the colored barbarians.

Prometheus was bound to a rock while birds of prey pecked at his liver, because he stole fire from the gods and gave it to man. He was a hero, because the gods of Greece were indifferent to man and often cruel, but what of the Christian European? He is not bound to Prometheus's rock because Christ is punishing him, he has chained himself to the rock because of his refusal to look to any god beyond his own reason. The white man's chain, which he seems incapable of breaking, is the chain of rationalism. So long as the white man is bound by that chain he will be at the mercy of the liberals who have turned him over to the people who have no mercy – the colored barbarians and the heathens.

The white man's fear of the racist label, which governs his whole life, is the result of the triumph of rationalist Christianity, as a system, over faith in Christ as the Son of God. In their attempt to make God more real, more easily comprehended by reference to the natural world, the Christian rationalists made Christ subordinate to human reason. Instead of knowing Him through a sympathetic connection that transcends reason, we were told to eliminate all those divine intuitions that could not be comprehended by abstract reason. If human reason said Christ was the Son of God then He was the Son of God. And the medieval rationalists did say that Christ was the Son of God. But what if subsequent rationalists say Christ is not the Son of God, based on the same reasoning process of the Christian rationalists? If you have made abstract reason your lodestar then you must submit to the judgement of reason. That is what the modern church men have done – they have submitted to the judgement of the rationalists and become Christian atheists. Without Christ to worship in spirit and in truth, they have gone whoring after the gods of Liberalism – the colored barbarians and the anti-Christian heathens.

Pope Francis must be against white pietas, what the liberals call racism, because he has made a commitment to the new scientific Christianity, which has placed Christ on a par with the natural world that can be seen, dissected, and catalogued by the mind of man. Anything outside of that world is unscientific, superstitious, and irrational. Every man of the West must make his decision on the heath. Is rational thought the pinnacle of wisdom, or is there something in our blood that is wiser than abstract reason? Thomas Hughes, the author of *Tom Brown's School Days*, faced his moment of truth, and he, like Banquo, forsook the rationalism of the devil for the foolishness of faith:

At the same time, as we also know that the methods and principles of historical investigation are constantly improving and being better understood, and that the critics of the next generation will work in all human likelihood, at as great an advantage in this inquiry over those who are now engaged in it, as our astronomers and natural philosophers enjoy over Newton and Franklin,— and as new evidence may turn up any day which may greatly modify their conclusions,—we cannot suppose that there is the least chance of their settling the controversy in our time. Nor, even if we thought them likely to arrive at definite conclusions, can we consent to wait the result of their investigations, important and interesting as these might be. Granting then cheerfully, that if these facts on the study of which they are engaged are not facts,—if Christ was not crucified, and did not rise from the dead, and ascend to God his father,—there has been no revelation, and Christianity will infallibly go the way of all lies, either under their assaults or those of their successors,—they must pardon us if even at the cost of being thought and called fools for our pains, we deliberately elect to live our lives on the contrary assumption. It is useless to tell us that we know nothing of these things, that we can know nothing until their critical examination is over; we can only say, "examine away; but we do know something of this matter, whatever you may assert to the contrary, and mean to live on that knowledge." —Life of Alfred the Great

Every man who places the detached intellect above his blood wisdom is ruled by the devil, because the realm of abstract reason is to the devil what the briar patch was to Brer Rabbit: He loves it, it is his realm. In that realm he can ban all compunctionous visitings of human nature. In that realm pietas becomes racism, and the white man is left bereft of a racial hearth fire from which he can fight against the wickedness and snares of the devil.

The first rationalist state was Jacobin France. The Jacobins made a whore the ‘goddess of reason’ and made humanity an abstraction that could be disposed of according to the dictates of abstract reason. This was the logical consequence of making Christ subordinate to a nature-based, rational schema. Once Christ is demoted to an abstraction, so are the people created in His image. And the abstract, inhuman mass of men in the aggregate becomes all-powerful in a rationalist state. First it was the white proletariat that the Jacobins invoked. But Haiti was a foreshadowing of the future of the white race. It wouldn’t take long for the Jacobins’ rationalist heirs to make all whites non-people.

The Jewish Jacobin, Leon Trotsky, used the term racism to make all whites into the aristocrats who needed to go to the block in order for a new purer world to come into being. What the white grazer never grasps is that there is nothing he can do that will appease the white-hating Jacobins of modernity. Even if he is born into poverty his skin is white and that means he possesses “white privilege” and deserves to die. It is all quite rational. Why should the people of nature and the devotees of the natural religions have to be polluted by the white race?

There has been no conservative opposition to the Atticus Finch-liberals and their colored and heathen allies, who we have already established as not really their allies, because the modern conservatives are not conservative. They have rejected Burkean conservatism, which stems from a love of kith, kin, and God, for economic conservatism. They want to show the liberals that their economic system works better than the liberals’ system and is therefore much better for the colored people. Thus the modern conservatives and the liberals are united in their main goal – to love and serve the negro. The modern economic conservative does not care about the Islamization or the colorization of the West. He only wants to know whether the black or the Moslem is for or against free enterprise. And even if both are against it, he remains confident that he can win them over. So he welcomes all economic units into his nation, which is not really a nation but is an abstract idea in the mind of a sick generation of spiritually anesthetized rationalists.

Trump is not a racist; I wish he was, but he has some good instincts about border control and crime. That is what makes him an anathema to the *National Review* type of conservative. Any man with a single European instinct left in him is not fit to govern the land of the rational Jacobins, because the rationalist man is always afraid he’ll be damned. But his fear is not a Christian’s fear of damnation that can be relieved by Christ; it is a rationalist’s fear of damnation. The white conservative fears the racist label, because to be racist is to be stupid. And to be stupid is to be damned, because rationality is the sign of the blessed and stupidity is the sign of the damned. Hence the fear of being racist and therefore stupid haunts the white conservative.

*Like one, that on a lonesome road
Doth walk in fear and dread,
And having once turned round walks on,
And turns no more his head;
Because he knows a frightful fiend
Doth close behind him tread.*

That fiend is the man who plans on screaming racist at the conservative. Mr. Conservative hopes to hold off the foul fiend by being more anti-racist than the worst of the mad-dog liberals. In short he has become the type of man who will gladly sell out his own race to save himself from a damnation that exists only in his rationalist mind, which is a form of un-mind. Charles Peguy once said that we should never know just how many horrific crimes are committed by men who are afraid of not appearing sufficiently progressive. I think we are now beginning to get an idea of just how many. The crimes of the fearful ones, the anti-racist rationalists, are as numerous as the sands of the desert.

The modern rationalist is in the position of Dostoyevsky’s Raskolnikov before his repentance. At first Raskolnikov only felt sorry that his confession revealed that he was not a superman, an ironclad rationalist, who was not subject to the feelings of a lesser man who felt guilt and remorse over the murder of an old lady and her granddaughter. It is only when his heart relents, when he gives up on his mind-forged vision of the superman that he can turn to the Man of Sorrows and start the long road back to redemption.

At the heart of the European’s tragic fall is the sin of Adam, the pride of intellect. True wisdom does not come from abstract reason, it comes from a heart united in sympathy and love to Christ’s sacred heart. That wisdom, the wisdom of the heart and blood, has the sustaining fire to light our way through the darkest night. No integral European, that man of feeling who Scott championed, would forsake his familial and racial hearth fire to go whoring after the gods of the heathens and the gods of color. Nor would he fear the scorn of the rationalists, because he would know that the first rationalist was the devil. Nothing is more embarrassing to church men than the mention of the devil as something more than a metaphor. But he is more than a metaphor. He is our ancient foe — science has not changed that — and he rules over the clergy’s liberal comrades in arms with a rationalist sword of iron. We, the European remnant, the men with hearts of flesh, will not be ruled by the sword of the devil.

If there is nothing sacred that is not rational, rational as defined by the philosophers of reason, then what happens to our “irrational” ties to our kith and kin? And what happens to our irrational connection, through our kith and kin, to our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ? Both disappear like fairy dust fading away. I long to see Europeans who do not start every protest against the Islamization of Europe or every protest against black criminality with, “I am not a racist.” Instead, I want to hear Europeans say, and mean it, “I am a racist, because I am a Christian European who loves the people of my own racial hearth fire in and through the savior, Jesus Christ. I am not going to give up that love or that faith for your pathetic rationalist utopia that was conceived and is sustained by Satan.”

Let me close with the words of the last Burkean conservative, Anthony Jacob:

We can never flourish as we ought among our own kind; and if we cannot flourish as we ought we shall go under. It is not surprising, of course, that under the mental and spiritual anaesthetization of the Farewell State the British people’s sense of self-preservation should have atrophied and their sense of values gone awry. Yet this in no wise alters the fact that those who form no more than a part of a universal mish-mash, of a homeless multitude of faceless ‘un-men,’ will never have any pride of place or sense of belonging, nor will ever know the Christian virtues of charity and love. Love like charity not only begins at home but perishes without one. +

Of Home, of Faith, of Europe

March 12, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson



Years may go by, and the wheel in the river
Wheel as it wheels for us, children, to-day,
Wheel and keep roaring and foaming for ever
Long after all of the boys are away.

Home from the Indies and home from the ocean,
Heroes and soldiers we all shall come home;
Still we shall find the old mill wheel in motion,
Turning and churning that river to foam.

You with the bean that I gave when we quarrelled,
I with your marble of Saturday last,
Honoured and old and all gaily apparelled,
Here we shall meet and remember the past.

-Robert Louis Stevenson

There are atrocities being visited upon the European people by the Moslems and the black barbarians that go far beyond anything we have seen in the history of the European people. And yet there has been no reaction against the atrocities. The liberals encourage and support the atrocities, because they are at war with the white race. The white grazers ignore the atrocities, because after years and years of life in Liberaldom, the grazers have no sense of kinship with the white race. What happens to one group of whites in another part of the pasture has no bearing on their lives. They will just keep grazing until it is their turn to be led to the slaughterhouse. And the white nationalists, who should be the leaders of a white counterrevolution, spend their time cataloging the atrocities and urging whites to "wake up." But once they wake up, they are told to put pressure on the government and remain non-violent. If the liberals in power were Christians, such a policy might work, but the liberals are not Christians. We can't negotiate with Satan. ([1](#))

Can any man, with a heart of flesh, remain non-violent in the wake of the unrelenting, merciless onslaught of the colored barbarians and the Moslems? No white man living prior to World War I would have remained non-violent while his people were being tortured and murdered by a relentless, merciless foe. "Times have changed, we do things differently now." Yes, we do. But why do we do things differently? Why do our hearts not burn with anger over the slaughter of the innocents and the torture-murder of our people? When Moslems walk the streets of Europe and tell us that our children will be Moslems and our people will be exterminated, why don't we want to drive the Moslems into the sea? When the black barbarians kill and torture whites and then glory in their bloodletting, why don't we kill them? Yes, I know that the liberal powers-that-be support the black barbarians and the Moslems, but that doesn't explain the whites' acceptance of the blacks' and the Moslems' atrocities. The powers-that-be were against the white Southerners during the so-called Reconstruction Era, and still the white men of that era struck back against the liberal-backed barbarian hordes of color.

There is no getting around the fact that something has changed in the soul of the white man: He no longer sees evil and wants to fight against it. Instead, he either declares the evil to be a great good, as was the case with Pope Francis who called the Moslem invasion of Europe a good thing, or else he laments the destruction of the white race, while calling upon all whites to remain non-violent. They must democratically protest against their own destruction by appealing to the liberal organizers of the extermination process. So, what is missing? It has to do with the blood. The European has, over the last century, had a spiritual blood transfusion. He has removed Christ from his blood stream and replaced Him with an abstracted intellect. And without a blood faith, a faith bred-in-the-bone, he cannot act as an integral man should act. Why should the modern white man be outraged at the torture-murder of other white men? Why should he be outraged at the rape of white women? Without a blood faith, the white man has no more concern for any living creature than he has for any other, and that is very little, because only a Christian European cares deeply enough about his own people to fight for them. And there are precious few Christian Europeans. There are millions of liberals and grazers who attend the anti-European, and therefore anti-Christian, churches, but can you take a church document or the Bible and use either one independent of the people who took Christ into their racial home and made Him the cornerstone of their culture? No, you cannot. You will be an un-man, incapable of responding to existence as a man should.

I recently watched a video of a Moslem man asking a confused white nationalist what he believed in. The young white nationalist couldn't answer the Moslem. The liberals believe in hatred — they believe in the hatred of the white race and the hatred of the ancient faith of the white man. Whoever hates the white race and European Christianity receives the liberals' support and adoration. I won't say 'love,' because the liberals are incapable of love. The Moslems believe in Allah, and the blacks believe in themselves. What do the whites believe? To whom have they sworn allegiance? That is the white man's dilemma. He is too rational to believe what the European people believed prior to the 20th century. As a result, he is too rational to fight for his people, because he no longer believes that every human soul, particularly his kith and kin, is created in the image of a living God. The rational European only believes in mankind; he does not believe in or love individual people.

The war against the Islamization and colorization of Europe was lost long before the invasions and colorization started. The war was lost in the spiritual trenches. While the great scholars of the West — the philosophers, the historians, and the theologians — were looking only at the sins of the Christian Europeans, which seemed to be the same as the sins of their pagan ancestors, they completely failed to observe what was taking place inside the European people. A miracle took place: The Son of God found a local habitation at the hearth fire of the European people.

After this miracle, in nothing, except externals, did the Christian European resemble the pagan. Something completely apart from and separate from paganism had entered the blood of the European. That something was charity. All races have fought for power, for money, and for bloodlust. Only the Europeans once knew, because of their blood connection to Christ, that there is something deeper and purer than bloodlust that motivates a man to fight. Burke said it best: there is “that charity of honor,” which stems from His love of us, the love that passeth all understanding. Europeans imbued with that charity of honor know when to fight and kill without reference to moral theology books or the treatises of psychiatrists. When their hearts were stirred with rage by the slaughter of their people, they fought and killed the heathens. There is one exchange in the movie *Northwest Passage* that clearly delineates the difference between the modern European and the Christian European. An English soldier asks Rogers, of Roger’s Rangers fame, why he is leading a punitive raid against the Indians. Rogers tells him, “They keep coming down into the valley and murdering our men and raping our women. What would you do in our place?”

The English soldier replies, “I’d do what you’re doing – I’d go get them.”

What the pagans did as a matter of course, killing for vainglory and bloodlust, became something that the Europeans of the Christian era disdained. Men were supposed to fight for innocence, for charity’s sake. The “lesser breeds without the law” fought for the heathen things. But what happens when that charity of honor is replaced by rationalism? When the Christian Goth, who loves and hates with all his heart, becomes an “intelligent modern man” who thinks really hard about philosophy, politics, and theology, we witness a great falling off. Such a European is an undine. He has no soul. Because he is white, he cannot fight as the heathens fight, for bloodlust, but he no longer has that charity of honor which made men like Havelock, Lee, Rogers, and Forrest fight for kith and kin. He is a rational man, and rational men don’t fight; they form think tanks, organize committees, and try to convert the savage hordes by sound reasoning and a very rational, doctrinaire commitment to non-violence and the democratic process. (2)

The Moslems, the black barbarians, the Aztecs, and all the rest of the anti-Christian and anti-white hordes of color are not that formidable in and of themselves. They were all kept in control when the Europeans loved their own in and through the Savior. But now that the Europeans have forsaken their past, they no longer know the Savior who was incarnate in old Europe. They have no hearth fire; hence, there is no animating spirit that stirs their blood and makes them want to defend their own against all the pagan world. When the Europeans lost their capacity to love, they lost their will to fight. Now any enemy, no matter how small they once appeared to the spiritual giants of our race who came before us, is more than a match for the European people.

It’s completely unrealistic of me to expect modern Europeans who have been reared by liberals in church, state, and academy to turn from liberalism and embrace the European Christ, the God of our racial hearth fire. But I do hope for it. There is the hope given to us in *1st Corinthians 13: 8*:

Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

The Europe that I know was built on that very unreasonable and irrational sentiment of St. Paul. Surely the man who encountered the risen Lord on the road to Damascus could not be wrong? If he wasn’t wrong, then all things are possible for those who still have that charity of honor. Just as He drew His people to Him, so can the European who does not bend his knee to the heathens or the liberals, lead his people back to their racial hearth fire where Christ lives and reigns.

I love so many of the novels and short stories of Robert Louis Stevenson. But I think his most remarkable work of all was his collection of poems centering around his childhood memories of his home in Scotland. In these poems we see a childlike hope, a childlike faith in the European vision – there is a loving God that rules over the European hearth fire. His last short poem, published in *A Child’s Garden of Verses*, was written while he was on his death bed:

*The world is so full of a number of things
I’m sure we should all be as happy as kings.*

That is the type of faith a European childhood can inspire. If we return to our European childhood, where the God of charity dwells, we will defend our European garden and we will see visions and dream dreams that sustain us in the day of battle. +

(1) The subway beatings of the Moslem thugs in Sweden, the Russians’ response to their Moslem thugs, and the white South Africans’ paramilitary preparations represent the only possible response to the great haters – the satanically possessed liberals and their heathen and colored allies who seek the blood of the white man.

There are more whites that realize it has come down to kill or be killed than we realize. The liberal media ignores the slaughter of whites, and the alternative news sites try to influence the liberals and get the grazers to be more politically aware, so they do not issue a call to arms. But there is a remnant... Last summer, in the parking lot of a local shopping mart, I saw a man with a British flag prominently displayed on his car. I started singing “Hail, Britannia.” The man gave me a wave, and we both went on our ways. About three weeks ago, I saw the same man with the same flag, different car, displayed on his car. This time I started singing “Land of Hope and Glory,” and this time I stopped and talked with him. He was a man in his mid-seventies, London-born and bred. He usually gets over to the States twice a year to visit his daughter, who married an American. I asked him what he thought of the Moslem invasion. He went through a now-familiar tale of woe, talking about what his city used to be and what it had become, and he concluded his tale of woe with a very un-liberal sentiment: “It’s them or us, it’s that simple.” All the governments of the West, with the possible exception of the Russian government, have decided it is us. We have been designated for slaughter.

One Englishman in his mid-seventies does not constitute a counter-revolution, and how many of those fighting Swedish youths were Christians? Probably none. The churches have done more than brainwash the European people, they have washed their souls until there is nothing of the true faith left in them. I don’t like the declared ethos of the neo-pagans, which is a confused mish-mosh of Nietzsche and biological determinism, but any neo-pagan who loves his own people enough to strike a blow in their defense has more Christianity in him, despite his denial of the true faith, than ten million of the Pope Francis-type of white-hating, Christ-hating atheists.

That having been said, Europe cannot be saved by neo-paganism. She will stand or fall on the Christian faith of her people. If enough Europeans return to a bred-in-the-bone faith in Christ, Europe will be restored. The men of Europe will place their swords in the ground, then they will kneel and pray before the cross. And when they rise from their knees, they will remove their swords from the ground and do what their ancestors did when they had to defend their European hearth fires.

(2) There exists, in the soul of the post-Christian rationalist, a strange dichotomy. He will no longer fight for kith and kin, yet he will slaughter millions by proxy, for the sake of money. He will let loose the war planes on the heathens over there in order to force them to become democratic capitalists, yet he will remain indifferent to the invasion of his own nation by those same heathens. So long as you kill in the name of an –ism and not in defense of your race, you are in the right in the eyes of the “enlightened” European rationalist.

European Pietas

March 19, 2016

Categories: Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob



I believe in the validity of my racial identity and treasure the continuity of my national traditions. I believe in, and honour, all those time-hallowed values and factors which have led us to greatness in the past, and which if retained will guarantee the greatness of our posterity. For unless we maintain the highest standards of which we are capable we shall not survive except as the slaves of others, which in the long run would mean that we would not survive at all. Thus I am indeed biased and prejudiced. I am indeed a 'racist' and in fundamental matters an extremist.

– Anthony Jacob

You all know what these Indians have done to New England. For near a hundred years they've been sneaking up on our towns and farms, cutting folks to pieces while they were still alive, roasting 'em alive, torturing 'em every way a sick mind could think of. Well, we're going to put an end to that. Remember our orders – kill every fighting man among 'em, but let the women and children alone even though they've killed and captured ours.

– Robert Rogers' exhortation to his men before their punitive raid against the Abnakis Indian tribe

The liberals have always lived by the rule – "Whenever the democratic process is working toward our ends we shout, 'The rule of law must be paramount.'" Whenever the democratic process is not working towards the liberals' ends they break the law in order to achieve their ends. When abortion was still theoretically illegal in the 1960's, most of the liberal state governments disregarded the law. Now, when abortion is legal, those who protest abortion are – horror of horrors – 'breaking the law.' The same liberal shell game is taking place again with the anti-Trump rallies. No white dared to disrupt any of Obama's rallies when he ran for President, for fear of being called a racist, and white nationalists such as David Duke were constantly, obsessively exhorting white people not to shoot Obama. Not so with the liberals and the usual assortment of colored barbarians. They feel no compunctions about disrupting Trump rallies and threatening to shoot him. Why do the liberals and their colored and heathen allies think they can adhere to such a blatant double standard? They do so because they are without sin; they are not racist, while Donald Trump and all of his supporters are racist. Therefore, there is no law on the face of the earth that can protect their rights, because racists have no rights. Anti-racism is the liberals' faith. They are willing to violate lesser laws in order to be loyal to their higher law. If Trump actually wins the nomination and then the Presidency it will be a minor setback for the liberals, because a Trump Presidency will slow down the accelerating pace of the process by which whites are being exterminated. But the reigning ideology of anti-racism will still be supreme. That satanic creed must be purged before whites can have a homeland.

The term 'racism' was not invented by Trotsky, but he was the man who first used the term as a means of destroying the white man's will to defend himself against the worldwide Jacobin Communist revolution. It has been the most effective weapon that has ever been used against the white race. In the last one hundred years since 'racism' has been used as the liberals' nuclear option, the whites have left their empires in the colored lands and become the prisoners of colored heathens in their own lands. The old adage that "sticks and stones can break my bones, but names can never hurt me" is incorrect. The fear of being named a racist has done to the European people what sticks, stones, bullets, and bombs could not do. It has destroyed their will to survive as a people.

Before Obama's election it was quite common to hear white grazers say that they didn't agree with any of his policies, but they were going to vote for him anyway in order to show that whites weren't racist. The liberal-conservative commentator Charles Krauthammer expressed a similar sentiment about a potential candidacy of the negro Colin Powell. He didn't agree with his politics, but he would vote for him to heal the racial divide. In Europe, those with the courage to protest the Islamic invasion are constantly claiming, "I am not racist." One Brit, exiled for his 'racist' opposition to the Islamic invasion of Britain, tried desperately to plead his innocence, but to no avail: he was found guilty of the unpardonable sin – racism. It is always to no avail for a white man to claim he is innocent of the dreaded charge of racism. Did Obama's election stop the liberals' and the colored barbarians' charges of racism? No, in fact, the charges of racism against whites increased after Obama's election. Have the liberals' stopped screaming racist at the whites who oppose the Islamic invasion of the European nations? No, they haven't, despite the fact that those whites who oppose the Islamic invasion have never voiced their opposition in racial terms. The liberals will never listen to whites who plead innocent in their anti-racist courts. The white man will always be guilty in their courts, because the liberals' anti-racist creed has no more to do with truth and justice than Jacobinism had anything to do with liberty, equality, and fraternity. Anti-racism, as a creed, is opposed to everything white and Christian, because it is the spiritual child of Jacobin Communism. Until whites grasp the fact that the anti-racism banner of the liberals is the banner of a bloodthirsty, unrelenting, merciless foe that knows nothing of honor, charity, or love, they will be nothing more than cattle marked for slaughter, no matter who is elected in any of the American or European elections.

The devil has an accumulated knowledge of man's history on earth that gives him a tremendous advantage over mankind. But that advantage can be offset by the Christian man who has not forsaken his blood faith in Christ. If he retains that faith by adhering to the mores, manners, and prejudices of his European ancestors and eschewing the rationalism of the church men and their secular counterparts, he will not have to face a satanic adversary armed only with his own feeble brain. The lifeblood of Jesus Christ will flow in his veins and he will be able to prevail against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The Jacobins, Trotsky, and their liberal descendants were and are willing to invoke the devil in their war against the European people. Why are the Europeans unwilling to invoke Christ in their war against the liberals and the colored heathens? They won't invoke Christ, because they think they can go it alone with their own reason.

The church men, by placing reason above the blood wisdom of God's people, have killed pietas, the love of the people of our own hearth fire. In so doing they have replaced the charity that never faileth with the rationalism that always faileth. The prejudiced Europeans, the racist Europeans, loved God and their neighbor. Who does the new rationalist man love? He is incapable of love, because there is no love or charity in a purely rational man; abstracted reason is the mark of the devil.

There is only a passionate hatred of God and His people in the rationalism of the church men and their secular counterparts. We must be passionately racist, loving our own with a passion that surpasseth the hatred of the rationalists, if we are ever going to launch a serious attack against the devil and his minions. If we continue to accept Trotsky's demonization of white pietas as holy writ, we will remain in the liberals' hell and fall prey to either the Moslems, the colored barbarians, or our own despair. Is that the fate we were born for? Yes, the liberals tell us.

The Christian atheists, their liberal counterparts, the neopagan rationalists, the Ayn-Randian objectivists, and all the other competing groups of post-Christian Europeans are all playing in the same board game. The game is called "Find the Mathematical Formula of Existence." But what if mathematical logic cannot solve the problem of existence? What if the illogic of the fairy tales contains the truth of existence? The lay of the European minstrel told us of great heroes whose hearts belonged to Christ, the Hero-God. The antique Europeans, who made the lay of the minstrel part of their blood, rode triumphant over the barbarian hordes of color and the heathens. Now that the Europeans no longer listen to or heed the lay of the European minstrel, they go round and round on the rationalist merry-go-round, which is not so merry, without any hope of getting off.

In Walter Scott's novel *The Talisman*, Saladin, in a verbal exchange with a Scottish knight, boasts of his descent from demons who mated with mortal women. The Scottish knight is horrified and angry. Why would a man boast of a descent from demons? But if Christ is not the Son of God, and Saladin believed He was not, then why shouldn't a man be proud of his blood connection to demons who can infuse strength and power into his blood? The Catholic popes' great ecumenical movements, in which they seek to fuse their rationalist faith, which is an unfaith, with negro worship, Islam, and every other heathen religion, are attempts to revitalize their cold, rationalist faith with the blood faiths of the heathens who worship the devil. The Protestant evangelicals have taken a similar path. They have turned to Judaism in order to revitalize their bloodless, soulless, rationalist faith. The European racist does not need a blood connection to the devil to revitalize his soul. He has a spirit and blood connection to Christ through the people of his racial hearth fire. European pietas is our answer to Christian atheism, liberalism, Islam, negro worship, and every other false faith that bids us reject Christ and our people. +

Christ Has Risen!

March 26, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Charles Dickens, Handel, John Donne, St. Paul



In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? – *1 Corinthians 15: 52-55*

A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with the lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yield time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings.

— Charles Dickens

Pilate would have saved Christ, by using the privilege of the day in his behalf, because that day one prisoner was to be delivered, but they choose Barrabas. He would have saved him from death, by satisfying their fury, with inflicting other torments upon him, scourging and crowning with thorns, and loading him with many scornful and ignominious contumelies; But they regarded him not, they pressed a crucifying. Hast thou gone about to redeem thy sin, by fasting, by alms, by disciplines and mortifications, in way of satisfaction to the Justice of God? That will not serve, that's not the right way, we press an utter Crucifying of that sin that governs thee; and that conforms thee to Christ. Towards noon Pilate gave judgement, and they made such hast to execution, as that by noon he was upon the Cross. There now hangs that sacred Body upon the Cross, rebaptized in his own tears and sweat and embalmed in his own blood alive. There are those bowels of compassion, which are so conspicuous, so manifested, as that you may see them through his wounds. There those glorious eyes grew faint in their light: so as the Sun ashamed to survive them, departed with his light too. And then that Son of God, who was never from us, and yet had now come a new way unto us in assuming our nature, delivers that soul (which was never out of his Fathers hands) by a new way, a voluntary emission of it into his Fathers hands; For though to this God our Lord, belong'd these issues of death, so that considered in his own contract, he must necessarily die, yet at no breach or battery, which they had made upon his sacred Body, issued his soul, but *emisit*, he gave up the Ghost, and as God breathed a soul into the first Adam, so this second Adam breathed his soul into God, into the hands of God. There we leave you in that blessed dependency, to hang upon him that hangs upon the Cross, there bathe in his tears, there suck at his wounds, and lie down in peace in his grave, till he vouchsafe you a resurrection, and an ascension into that Kingdom, which he hath purchas'd for you, with the inestimable price of his incorruptible blood.

— John Donne

Death is truly a fearsome thing. The death of my mother and then the death of my father some ten years later left a searing pain in my heart that has never quite gone away. It is only my trembling faith in the Christ of the European people that keeps me from despair. Nor could I face my immediate family if I thought our white moments together here on earth were doomed to end with the grave. Nothing matters if He did not rise from the dead on the third day.

My faith, received and nurtured at the racial hearth fire of the antique Europeans, is under constant attack in our modern world. Christ's resurrection from the dead occurred independent of whether or not we believe in it. But our belief is determined by our faith in the ties that bind us to our Lord. That He comes to us through the door of our racial home was the belief of our European ancestors. If they were wrong, what happens to our faith? How then shall we know the Lord? We won't know Him. We might know a generic, Jungian Christ, who is a symbol of a man's yearning for some god of airy nothings beyond mortal man's ability to comprehend. Such is the nebulous Christ of the Pope Francis type of Christian. But such a god will not serve men with hearts of flesh. We need another God, we need the Christ of Europe.

If race means nothing, why did God create different races? If race means nothing, why did our Christian ancestors place such importance on it? And if race means nothing, why do we see the face of Jesus Christ in the culture of the antique Europeans and not in the cultures of the colored barbarians? The children of darkness are indeed wiser, at least in matters of this world only, than the children of light, because the children of darkness know that race and faith are intertwined. Destroy a man's racial home, and he will have no place in which to receive his Lord.

St. Paul tells us that we must circumcise our heart if we want to know Christ. Where is such a circumcision to take place if not at our racial hearth fire where our kith and kin dwell? The liberals, the Moslems, and the colored barbarians attack the white race, because they know that Christ, whom they hate, resides at the hearth fire of the European people. His people have left Him there alone; they are now too intelligent to believe in a God who enters human hearts, but the heathens, liberals, and colored barbarians still fear the specter of a Christ-centered people. They, like the swine in the Gospel, will resist Him until their deaths. But for how long will we resist Him? When will we return home?

There are splinter groups of Europeans such as the BNP who affirm their race. And there are splinter groups of Europeans, such as the Britain First party, who affirm Christianity. But the former group will not champion Christ, and the latter group denies that Christianity has anything to do with race. Again, I refer you to the enemies of the European people. Why do they equate white and Christian as one and the same? The demons who eventually went into the swine and over the cliff knew immediately who Christ was. We, the Europeans, must know what the demons knew: we must know who Christ is, and we must know something more. We must know who Christ is, and we must know that we need not fear Him; we must cling to him, love Him, and make Him the King of our racial hearth fire. You do not love your enemies by retreating before them and bowing down to their gods. We love them by fighting them in the

name of the Christ of Europe. If they convert, that is all to the good, and if they die in defiance of the true faith, then that is as it should be as well. But we serve no one except the devil when we deny our own people and the God of our ascending race.

It is Easter, and it is time for Handel's *Messiah* and feasting. But we can enjoy Handel's *Messiah* and the Easter feast, because our people, the hated and despised white people of Christian Europe, circumcised their hearts and allowed the dear Lord into their racial home. With a grateful heart and a trembling faith, I too will welcome Him to my racial home. God bless all my kith and kin who do likewise. To you, I say, "Christ has risen!" And you shall reply, "Indeed, He has!" +

Europe Shall Not Die: We Triumph Still If He Abides with Us

April 2, 2016

Categories: Restoration of European civilization, Resurrection, White Genocide

Tags: Henry Francis Lyte



Hold thou thy cross before my closing eyes;
Shine through the gloom, and point me to the skies.
Heaven's morning breaks, and Earth's vain shadows flee!
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me!

-Henry Francis Lyte

I try to keep track of where the Moslems are settling, so I can brace myself and my family for the battle. But of course there is a limit to what one individual can do if the government is determined to allow Moslems to enter your country. While reading an article by a woman who reports on the Moslem invasion of America and Europe, I noted that she was of the opinion that "Europe was dead." I certainly understand why someone would say Europe is dead, but it is not an accurate statement. Civilizations are not like vegetables, which have a certain shelf life and then they rot and decay. Civilizations are moral essences that will continue as long as human beings love their people and the civilization they built. Europe is dying (and when I say Europe, I mean all the white nations) because Europeans do not love her. If they did, she wouldn't be dying. At every deathbed scene in print, film, and life, the person dying tells his surviving kith and kin that he loves them, and his kith and kin tell the dying man of their love. We speak to our loved one, if we are still Christian Europeans, of the sure and certain hope of the resurrection from the dead. At my father's deathbed, my daughter sang the hymn "Abide With Me," which Henry Francis Lyte wrote on his deathbed, and my father's eyes lit up. He told my daughter that "Abide With Me" was the first trumpet solo he had ever played, some 75 years ago. Everything in life and death depends on that: Does He abide with us?

Bertrand Russell, the infamous atheist philosopher, was fond of pointing out that "no force of will" and "no outpouring of human sentiment" could resurrect the dead. Was he right? It would appear so. My father died despite my daughter's love for "Pop-Pop" and despite my love for him, but did he die? St. Paul, Shakespeare, John Donne, Fyodor Dostoevsky, Sheridan Le Fanu, Walter Scott, C. S. Lewis, and the people of Christian Europe who those bards wrote about all believed that death was conquered by the divine love of Jesus Christ. Am I comparing apples and oranges? No, I am not. There is eternal Europe, which will live on no matter what happens to the geographical entity that has now been turned into Islamabad. But I am not referring to eternal Europe only. I am talking about the modern Europe that seems dead. We cannot say that she is dead, because the grace of God is something that works in the hearts of men, and can only be seen when it comes to fruition in their lives. We do not know what can happen if Europeans once again unite their hearts to His divine heart. What seems impossible now, that Europeans will arise and drive out the Moslem and colored barbarians from their nations, could become a reality if the love of Christ, which intensifies and purifies our love of kith and kin, once again becomes the *raison d'être* of the European people.

Scrooge asks the Ghost of Christmas Future why he is being shown all the hideous mistakes and wasted years of his life if it is too late for repentance. By the same token, why describe the Moslems' and the black barbarians' atrocities if you believe the European people are irredeemable? If that is the case, that the European people are unwilling to defend Europe, why take the trouble to tell the atrocity stories? We must come back to the deathbed scene. Is there a loving God who cares about His people? If there is, then we should not look on our existence here on earth as subject to the laws of biological determinism that social scientists such as Spengler, Unwin, and our modern cataloguers of the Europeans' demise always refer and defer to. We should look at the spirit above the dust and ask ourselves why that spirit that transformed Europe no longer animates the European people.

The spirit of Christ crucified, Christ risen was in the blood of the antique Europeans who created Christian Europe. The spirit of Satan is in the liberals, the Moslems, and the barbarians of color. Blake vowed that he would not cease from mental fight, "Till we have built Jerusalem, In England's green and pleasant land." The liberals have taken a similar vow, although they have no awareness of the satanic angel that has inspired their vow: The liberals have vowed to build Satandom in Europe's green and pleasant land. Never, never, never will the liberals cease their efforts to destroy the Christ-bearing people. They will never fight the Moslem or colored barbarians. They view all those who are non-European and non-Christian as their spiritual allies who are united with them in a holy war against the European people. If the European people – and it is not written that they will or that they will not – renounce liberalism in all of its many guises, Europe will become a green and pleasant land once again.

The main enemies of the European people, and Satan's greatest allies, are the Christian church men. They have killed all Christian resistance to Satan by making Christianity into Satanism. The externalism of the Grand Inquisitors of Churchianity has made the European people into sheep-like creatures waiting to be slaughtered. It has now become *de fide* that a white man must hate his kith and kin and give them up as sacrificial offerings on the Babylonian altars of the liberals and their fiendish Moslem and black allies. Pope Francis said we are all God's children as he washed the feet of a Hindu, a Moslem, and some creature of color, but what God is Pope Francis referring to? It is most certainly not the Christian God. I fail to see His image in the heathen faiths and heathen people whom Pope Francis worships. Our European literature is filled with descriptions of the good pastor and the good priest, and our church music was often written by church men. Besides that, many of the church men of the past led good and holy lives. For instance, one of the most Christ-centered men who ever walked the earth, Henry Francis Lyte, was a clergy man. But what was good in our pastors and priests of the ancient times was their commitment to Christ in and through the people of their racial hearth fire. When subsequent church men walked away from Christ and their people, we should not have followed them just because they owned the buildings and the religious costumes. Satan made his attack on the mystical body of Christ by making use of the external symbols of Christianity to serve his own end, which is the destruction of the image of God in man. St. Paul asks us, "Who shall separate us from the love of Christ?" Should we allow ourselves to be separated from Him simply because Satan has occupied the formerly Christian churches and made the church men his stooges?

If our attack on liberalism stays within the confines of rational debate, we are not really attacking liberalism. And sadly, I've noted that some of the best critics of the white man's rush to oblivion make their criticisms in the name of classical liberalism. Such critics are like the witches on the heath that Macbeth and Banquo encountered:

*But 'tis strange;
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths*

*Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.*

If you attack liberalism in the name of liberalism, you are an unwitting instrument of the devil. Mortal men cannot go against the devil, armed with their own puny reason; they must fight the devil in the name of Christ, armed with His weapons, not with the preferred weapon of the devil. In Walt Disney's *Sleeping Beauty*, Prince Phillip is armed with the shield of virtue and the sword of truth. He does not debate with Maleficent, lest he be deterred from his avowed purpose, which is to destroy her. Instead he hurls the sword of truth into her heart, and Maleficent disappears, leaving only the cross of Christ. That cross is the only reality here on this earth and in the world to come. If we have the moral vision to see that reality, and if we keep that moral vision in our hearts as we go forth to war, we will not have to write detailed reports of the enemies' conquest of the European people. We will write of great victories over the powers of darkness and the return of the Christ-centered people to the European nations.

The code of dueling allowed the challenged party to choose the weapon. Not so with Satan. He is the challenger — he has walked right into the center of Europe and hurled down his gauntlet — but in spite of that the Europeans have allowed him to choose the weapon, and he chooses abstract reason. It all dates back to the Garden of Eden. Satan told Adam and Eve that they would not die if they violated one patently absurd commandment of God. He made his appeal to reason — God's arbitrary command was irrational while Satan's advice was quite rational. That is always the case. The white man is supposed to cease loving his own, because there is not supposed to be any such thing as "my own people." But that rational rule, that there is no such thing as "my own people," applies only to white people. Why does that rule only apply to white people? It is because the colored barbarians are wedded to Satan, so it is his will that they should love their own race (though they do not love as men should love, in and through the Savior), because whenever the colored races triumph Satan triumphs. It is different with the white race. White people formed an incorporate union with Christ. His word dwelt in their civilization. Wherever they prevailed against the heathens there was light in the darkness. Satan attacked that light by building a rational wall between the Christian faith and the white man's love for his own people. When the European people, at the command of their clergy, agreed to stay behind that wall, apart from their racial hearth fire, Satan became the ruler of Europe through his liberal minions. Now when Europeans protest against their own extermination, they protest while adhering to the rules of Liberalism — "Don't break down the racial wall, don't be violent, don't be extreme," the liberals command. "We will not break down the racial wall, we will not be violent, we will not be extreme. We will calmly and rationally state that we should have some rights within Liberalism." Isn't the absurdity of that appeal obvious? The liberals want the blood of the whites, and their colored and Islamic allies are quite willing to give it to them. (1) We are not called upon to debate whether or not we should be allowed to exist, we must tell the liberals, the Moslems, and the colored barbarians that they must leave the European nations, because they belong to Satan while we belong to Christ.

You can't debate with an enemy that has made your destruction the basis of his religion. The stentorian forces in the churches, the governments, and the various media outlets of the European people deluge us, on a daily basis, with propaganda that proclaims the evil of the white man. There is still original sin, but it only exists in the white male. And this new original sin that has become the white man's burden can never be forgiven, because there is no divine love, and hence no human love, in the liberals' religion. Satan does not forgive; he cannot forgive, because he is incapable of love. But if we, the despised and rejected, turn to Christ, eschewing the satanic rationalism of the liberals, we shall see that the age of miracles has not passed. Europe is on her deathbed, but she will not die if we see His cross before our eyes and love our kith and kin in and through our Lord and Kinsman, Jesus Christ. +

(1) If you ever had any doubts about the satanic desire of the liberals to eradicate the white race, your doubts have now been removed by the liberals' attacks on Donald Trump. He said that he was sick of Mexican illegals coming into the country and murdering people and that he would put a "temporary" halt to Moslem immigration. For those mild statements, he has been branded a racist and sentenced to death. The "conservatives" from Fox News and the mad-dog liberals have called for his assassination. What does that tell us about the liberal establishment? It tells us something we should already know — the liberals and their colored barbarian allies will not rest from satanic strife until they have destroyed the white race.

The Trump candidacy does not reveal to us the futility of opposing the liberals, it reveals to us the futility of opposing the liberals within the confines of their demonic, democratic system. Even if Trump lives to assume the Presidency, and I hope and pray he does, he will not be able to do anything to stop the liberal juggernaut, because he is still operating within the confines of liberalism. In for a penny, in for a pound — let's break the democratic chains of the liberals and turn this genocidal slaughter of whites into a war for the preservation of our people and our faith.

The Fiends of Liberaldom Have Marred God's Creation

April 9, 2016

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan, Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke



In vision he was borne away, where Lethe's slippery wave
Creeps like a black and shining snake into a silent cave,
A place of still and pictured life: its roof was ebon air,
And blasted as with dim eclipse the sun and moon were there:
It seemed the grave of man's lost world—of Beauty caught by blight.
The Dreamer knew the work he marred, and felt a Fiend's delight.

-Thomas Aird, from his poem "The Devil's Dream on Mount Aksbeck"

I try to personalize my prayers as much as possible. But when atrocity after atrocity is visited upon the white people of every nation, it is hard to avoid the generic prayers such as, "God save the white, tortured innocents of South Africa," or, "God bless the European people, give them the strength, faith, and vision to drive the Moslems from their lands." Then in my own nation there is the continual slaughter of the white innocents by black barbarians. Very seldom am I able to fit a specific name to my prayers for the victims, they have become, sadly, too numerous. But please God, don't ever let my soul become numb to the atrocities visited upon my people, because should that ever happen I will cease to have a soul.

Let me turn then to the people who do not have souls, the liberals. They have hardened their hearts against their own people, and as a result Satan has come into their hearts to occupy the space that should have been reserved for pietas, the love of kith and kin, which elevates the soul and unites us with the God who enters human hearts. If you refuse to have a human heart, and the liberals have made that refusal, you will have a satanic heart. The liberals are not "clinically insane" or "psychologically maladjusted"; those are modern concepts. The liberals are demonic; they hate and attack their own people, because they cannot strike out directly against their master's eternal enemy, Jesus Christ. And what could be more cowardly than striking out at an enemy by attacking his children? As the reign of terror in France became publicized, many of its European supporters had to concede that Burke was right to criticize the Revolution. But still, at that time, and right up to our satanic present, the intelligentsia of Europe have failed to acknowledge what the French Revolution was all about:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

Before his own death Robespierre had modified his direct assault on the Deity. He held festivals in honor of a divine being that was much like the nature gods worshipped at the Woodstock Festival in 1969. And that has been the tack of all the Jacobins, except the Russian communists, right up to the present. The Christian God is still assaulted through His people, but He is assaulted in the name of a large array of nature gods. The negro is at the top of the liberals' Mt. Olympus, but their religion contains a large pantheon of lesser gods as well. All the pagan deities of the liberals are opposed to Christ and the European people who bore His image, which is why they have become the liberals' gods. The Satanic hatred of Christ and His people is the essence of liberalism.

One of the most striking things about modern liberalism is its overt, moral ugliness. The liberals used to put the poisonous brew of feminism, miscegenation, infanticide, and homosexuality into fancy wine bottles marked 'equality,' 'freedom of choice,' and 'integration,' and they told us the wine was good for us. Now they put their poisonous brew in a witches' cauldron that contains a deadly mixture of negro worship, feminism, Islam, sodomy, and legalized abortion, and tell us we must drink from the cauldron even if it means our death. They don't think they need to disguise their evil intentions any longer, because they think that there are no white people left who will dare to defend the white race.

The first assault on Christian Europe was launched on the racial wall of fortress Europe. Once that wall was breached, every other wall protecting Christian Europe was breached as well. Once the image of God in man is blurred, and that is what race-mixing does, the image of Satan replaces the image of Christ. Who do we see in the faces of the colored barbarians? Who do we see in the faces of the aborting doctors and the feminists? And who do we see in the faces of the sodomites and the Islamic invaders? It is Satan. I once saw a diamondback rattlesnake rear up and attempt to strike. He missed and was killed by a man with a garden hoe. His hissing sounded like something from hell. I feel the same way about the black barbarians, the Moslems, and the feminists. They look and sound like something from hell, and of course that is what they are – creatures from hell.

There are many pockets of European resistance to Islam. But the resistance movements will fail if the European people do not resist as white Christian Europeans. You cannot be a non-racist Christian, because without a racial home a man has no spiritual spine. And you cannot be a white nationalist without faith in Christ, because without faith a man lacks the heart to sustain him in the day of battle. The evangelicals slavishly worship the state of Israel, because they are looking for a racial home. They think that you can't be Christian and 'racist,' so they seek to fuse their Christian faith with the Jewish faith. The Roman Catholics are more syncretic than the evangelicals; they are integral Jacobins. For them the chosen ones are the non-Christian and non-white people of the world. The Roman Catholic Church's New Jerusalem is an open tent where all, except the white Christian, can enter.

There will be no European dawn until the Europeans return to their racial home. It is there that they must fight the battle against Satan and his minions. All the non-Christian faiths are united in their opposition to the people who believed that God became man in the person of Jesus Christ. How can we believe that the spirit of God was infused into human flesh without believing that our racial identity is linked to our faith in Christ? We can't. As their faith in the incarnation of Christ waned, so did the Europeans' faith in their racial identity wane. Disembodied minds do not need a racial identity. Men with hearts of flesh do. If we don't need a racial home, why do the liberals seek such a home with the colored barbarians? And why do the evangelicals seek a home with the people of Israel? Why do the European people kick against the goads? We have a home presided over by a loving God; it was the source of our ancestors' strength, the strength of faith, hope, and charity. Surely such a home provides more comfort than a sports team, Israel, or the spiritual wasteland of the heathen people.

If white people try to influence the liberals by appealing to their humanity or to their reasonableness, they will fall prey to either the Moslems or the colored barbarians, because such appeals are signs that the Europeans still do not understand what liberalism is. Satan has no humanity and he is quite rational; in fact, he is maniacally and single-mindedly rational. Whatever serves his desires becomes law. And it is his desire that the white race shall be destroyed.

Satan now has his own people in power throughout the West. I don't think this means we should give up, but I do think we should be aware of the satanic nature of liberalism and act according to that awareness. This means that we should realize once and for all that the police and the military are not our friends. They serve the liberals, so whom will they come down on when whites protest against the Islamic massacres of whites or the black atrocities? They will come down on the white protestors. Every protest of the non-white invasions of the European nations, à la *Camp of the Saints*, is met with force. It sickens me to see white policemen joining forces with Islamic Jihadists and colored barbarians to force white protestors back into their houses to cringe in terror before Third World barbarians. When the black barbarians warned whites that a Trump victory would mean black violence in every city (as if we don't already have black violence in every city), I read the responses of some white nationalists who said that it would be a relief, because then they could start shooting the blacks. That is all well and good, and I applaud their fighting spirit, but the white nationalists seemed to think they would be joining with the police against the black barbarians. That will not be the case. The police will be fighting in support of the enemies of their people. Do not ever expect help from the liberals against any enemy of the white race. Time and time again we have seen Islamic and black atrocities ignored and even countenanced by the liberals' police forces, who spend most of their time looking for 'right-wing conspirators,' such as the Bundys. And we know what constitutes a right-wing conspiracy: It is any white man who wants to protect his racial home against the Islamic savages and the barbarians of color. He is a right-wing terrorist who must be crushed to make Liberaldom safe for Satan's minions.

The liberals have created a second 'Fall of man' civilization. They have rejected God, preferring, because of their intellectual pride, the advice of Satan rather than the loving wisdom of God. And secondly, they want to eradicate the image of God in man by mixing the blood of God's people with the blood of demons. They can't literally create a second Fall, but by rejecting God and turning to the colored races the liberals have placed mankind in the same place that the world was in before the Flood.

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.

Then, in direct contrast to the global warmists, God tells us He will not destroy the earth again in that fashion:

And the Lord smelled a sweet savour; and the Lord said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.

"But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." If Noah lived today, the Christian utopians and their secular liberal counterparts would call him a racist, a homophobic, and a drunkard. Can't we see what has happened? The devil's own have attacked the only civilization that produced moral beauty, the beauty of men and women adhering to the will of God, in the name of a utopian kingdom of moral ugliness. How can we possibly compare the civilizations – Christian Europe and the liberals' Babylonian empire? No man, and no civilization, can stand up to the scrutiny of an enemy who is determined to see only his or its faults, but if you are committed to knowing the truth, the truth that will set men free, you must take a man and a civilization "for all in all." And by that standard, the difference between Christian Europe and modern Europe is the difference between heaven and hell.

All the European fairy tales are true – there are still dragons to be slain. We have let the liberal dragon ravish Christian Europe for far too long. Let's put democracy and cowardly niceness behind us and imitate the heroes of old Europe, who slew dragons and fought the heathens in the name of Christ the King. The cross of Christ and the sword of the Christian knight are like unto each other. So it is with our hearts as well. We are united to His heart whenever we reject the moral ugliness of modern, utopian Europe for the moral beauty of the antique Europeans and the civilization that they built in response to Christ's divine love. +

The Christ-Bearing Race

April 16, 2016

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Thomas Nelson Page, Walter Scott



There is no strength, no blood, in our Nordic, Greco-Roman heritage if we see that heritage as an end in and of itself. Those pagan civilizations only have significance because in the end the best of the pagans bent their knees to Christ. Europeans do not have a Nordic, Greco-Roman heritage, they have only one heritage, just as there is only one God. Christ became the Europeans' hero God, the one true God to whom all the heroes of the Norsemen, the Greeks, and the Romans gave way. – CWNY

I love the moral essence which is Europe. I love her with all my heart, mind, and soul. If you ask me whether I love Europe more than Christ or more than my family, I will answer by saying that they cannot be separated. My God and my family are all bound together in the moral essence called Europe. Within that orb, all things human and Christian live; outside that orb there is no humanity and no faith, there is only a lost world of everlasting night ruled by the Prince of Darkness.

The two greatest enemies of Christian Europe are the Church and the Academy. It is there that neophytes are taught to hate all things Christian and European. The churchmen, who still want to make a living by celebrating the Christian holidays, try to separate Christianity from the European. They tell us that the antique Europeans got it all wrong. What they teach, which is in complete contradiction to what the antique Europeans believed, is the true Christianity. At least that is what the churchmen tell us. But 'tis strange, the churchmen's new Christianity is virtually the same as modern liberalism, whose proponents are the devout enemies of Christianity. That doesn't bother the churchmen, because the liberals are only condemning the old European Christianity that they also condemn.

The Academy, which was originally spawned by the various churches, spews out an unrelenting stream of abuse on everything stemming from Christian Europe. The most inhumane places on the face of the earth are the humanities departments of the Western universities. It is there that so-called scholars and experts tell their students about the glories of the demon-based religions of the black, yellow, and brown races. It is there that the 'smart ones' talk of the sins of the white, racist Europeans who have 'polluted' the world with their hatred and intolerance of the colored people and their heathen faiths. What are we to make of this? There is only one conclusion – the liberals in church and academy are the servants of Satan, they have hardened their hearts against all things humane and Christian: "Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil." ([Burke](#))

The sneering, metaphysical hatred of the Christian Europeans is the lifeblood of the modern anti-European clerics and the anti-European academics. Their hatred, fueled and inspired by Satan, has spread from the pulpits and classrooms to the general population through the various state-sponsored newspapers and media propaganda outlets. It's not possible to overestimate the damage that the constant stentorian deluge of anti-European propaganda has done to the European people. All successful revolutions are won in the stentorian trenches. The Jacobins kept hurling abuse at the French King and Queen and the entire French aristocracy until those in authority began to question their moral authority to rule. So it has been in all the white nations. The colored barbarians and the Moslems are not overwhelming Europe because of their armed might, they are overwhelming the white nations because the European people believe the liberals' propaganda. They don't think they have the right to rule in their own nations, because of their sinful, racist past. All they ask for is redemption.

"Please tell us that we are forgiven, tell us that we are not racist. If we pour millions of dollars into the liberals' coffers to disperse to the negroes who murder us will you tell us we are not racist? If we allow our cities and towns to be infested with Moslem invaders who rape and pillage, will you tell us we are not racists? Please, thou great and wonderful liberal god, say we are not racist."

But forgiveness never comes. There can be no absolution for the white man. And why can the white man never be forgiven for the sin of racism? First and foremost he cannot be forgiven because Satan does not forgive. And secondly, there is no racist sin to be forgiven. The white man is not guilty of crimes against the colored races, the white man is guilty of betraying his people and his God. He sins whenever he accepts any part of the liberals' satanically inspired lie called white racism.

White people are being systematically exterminated because they were the Christ-bearing race. No other race has lifted the Christ child onto their shoulders since the white race abandoned Him. But why, if white people have abandoned Christ, are they still being attacked by the liberals and their colored minions? The whites are still being attacked because Satan knows that they still are the Christ bearers. A father doesn't cease to be a father because he abandons his children. He has simply stopped being a good father. There is always the possibility, so long as the white race remains white, that white people will place the Christ child on their shoulders once again and fulfill their destiny as the Christ bearing people. Every time a white woman takes a colored man as her mate, every time a churchmen or an academic hurls the racist charge at the whites in the pews and in the classrooms, Satan rejoices, because his work, the destruction of the Christ-bearing race, is proceeding as he desires.

Satan does not love mankind, he uses them for his own purposes, but he does not love them. And he manipulates them by appealing to their intellectual pride. This is the reason that there has not been any successful counterrevolution in the white nations. The Greek temptation is the besetting sin of the opponents of liberalism. This is brought home to me every time I read the literature of the alternative right. I recently saw an article in an alternative right newsletter that illustrated the weakness of the new right, which is really not new. The author rejected the notion that Western civilization began with the democratic age. That is all to the good; we need to realize that American democracy and its European counterparts are all part of the Jacobin-Communist movement. But then comes the fatal fall from grace. The author went on to say that Western civilization began with the Greeks. Au contraire, it most certainly did not begin with the Greeks. It began in a manger in Bethlehem. I prefer beer in bottles to beer in cans, but it is not the bottle that makes the liquid inside taste so good. The Christian churchmen used many of the Greek forms to frame the Christian faith, but those external forms were not the faith itself. Those churchmen who make the outer forms the entire faith are not adhering to the Christ-centered faith of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. The unknown God of Plato and Carl Jung is not the same God that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus.

Christian Europe owes nothing of spiritual significance to the pagan Greeks. [Marco Bozzaris](#) is more important than any of the pagan Greeks who preceded him, because Marco Bozzaris came from the heart of Christian Greece. The Greek gods, like the Nordic gods, were only significant to the extent that their lives revealed a racial memory of the one true God. Zeus and

Odin were dim recollections of the Europeans' connection to the living God. And the Greek intellectual tradition was one step removed from Zeus. To refer to that tradition as an alternative to modern liberalism is the equivalent of jumping from the proverbial frying pan into the proverbial fire.

As an undergraduate student in a Philosophy 101 class, I was required to read a book that was titled *Beyond Socrates and Jesus*. The author was, of course, rejecting the Western philosophical tradition and Christianity. In the 20th century the post-World War I conservatives held on to Socrates, but they rejected Christ. So if a man of the alternative right claims to be a conservative because he looks to those Socratic conservatives all we can say for him is that he is more conservative than his liberal cousins, but he is not a conservative as Thomas Nelson Page was conservative, as Sir Walter Scott was conservative, or as all the people of Christian Europe were conservative. They were full-blooded, integral Christian men and women.

When managerial minds, the sons of Martha, assume the leadership in church or state, tragedy ensues, because real life is of the spirit, it is not about processes and systems. But the managerial mind wants to compress the spirit, which goeth where it lists, into a neat little system that can be used by practical men. That is why the managerial men of the new Right look to the Greek philosophers in order to give them a useable, practical guide to restoring Western culture. But in doing so, they make two great mistakes. The first mistake is that they overlook the fact that the Greek philosophers could not sustain the ancient Greeks. People needed something besides the Socratic dialogues and Plato's utopia, they needed personal gods, so they turned to the mystery religions. (1) And secondly, there is the matter of truth. We grant that the ancient Greeks were the smartest people who ever lived, from a philosophical standpoint – that still leaves us with the wisdom of the heart that St. Paul writes about. What if the men of the West, the men with hearts of flesh, discovered a deeper wisdom than the Greek philosophers? The modern conservatives who prefer the Greek philosophers to Christ are like the dwarves in C. S. Lewis's book *The Last Battle*. They cannot see the Christian fields right in front of their eyes, because they are blinded by their intellectual pride, which does not allow them to see with hearts of flesh. They won't be fooled; they are too smart to believe in a God who enters human hearts.

St. Paul, the man who met Christ on the road to Damascus, tells us that "the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men." Europe is indeed dead if all we have is the Greek rationalist tradition. But she shall not die if Europeans love her with a passion that stems from His passion. "For God so loved" – surely that divine act of charity can inspire us to love our own people enough to fight for them. When men act in response to His love, miracles occur. The 'racist' men and women of old Europe did not conquer the world because they were smarter than the rest of the world. They conquered the world because they loved much. Nothing will be denied to those Europeans who see with the heart's eye and follow the Via Dolorosa of the foolish knight errant of charity, who was crucified for our sins and rose again from the dead on the third day. We too shall rise from the dead on the last day, just as Europe will awake from her deathlike sleep when His people become, once again, what they were born to be – the Christ bearing race. +

(1) Two great classical scholars who were also poets, Thomas Hughes and Sir Walter Scott, saw the limits of classical scholarship. They saw that a man needs a romantic vision more than a treatise. Likewise St. Paul; he was neither a philosopher nor a theologian. He was something much greater: he was a poet of the absolute who bore witness to the startling fact that the unknown God had a name and a divinely human personality. "To the Jews a stumbling block, to the Greeks foolishness." Our apostle, St. Paul, is our guide, not the Greeks nor the Jews – "And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity." That is the vision that the European people took to their hearts and that is the romantic vision that will restore Europe.

Into Thy Hands

April 23, 2016

Categories: Blood faith, Charity, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism



Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. – *Romans 1: 22*

And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein. *Luke 18: 15-17*

But, Rokesmith knowing it, and knowing that his bearing it in mind would be acceptable thereafter to that good woman who had been the only light in the childhood of desolate John Harmon dead and gone, resolved that late at night he would go back to the bedside of John Harmon's namesake, and see how it fared with him.

The family whom God had brought together were not all asleep, but were all quiet. From bed to bed, a light womanly tread and a pleasant fresh face passed in the silence of the night. A little head would lift itself up into the softened light here and there, to be kissed as the face went by—for these little patients are very loving—and would then submit itself to be composed to rest again. The mite with the broken leg was restless, and moaned; but after a while turned his face towards Johnny's bed, to fortify himself with a view of the ark, and fell asleep. Over most of the beds, the toys were yet grouped as the children had left them when they last laid themselves down, and, in their innocent grotesqueness and incongruity, they might have stood for the children's dreams.

The doctor came in too, to see how it fared with Johnny. And he and Rokesmith stood together, looking down with compassion on him.

'What is it, Johnny?' Rokesmith was the questioner, and put an arm round the poor baby as he made a struggle.

'Him!' said the little fellow. 'Those!'

The doctor was quick to understand children, and, taking the horse, the ark, the yellow bird, and the man in the Guards, from Johnny's bed, softly placed them on that of his next neighbour, the mite with the broken leg.

With a weary and yet a pleased smile, and with an action as if he stretched his little figure out to rest, the child heaved his body on the sustaining arm, and seeking Rokesmith's face with his lips, said:

'A kiss for the boofor lady.'

Having now bequeathed all he had to dispose of, and arranged his affairs in this world, Johnny, thus speaking, left it. – Charles Dickens *Our Mutual Friend*

We are constantly commanded, on all the "Christian" television channels and websites, to give money to help starving negro children throughout the world. And we are also commanded to take negro and Moslem refugees into our nations and our homes. But are we ever told about the starving white South Africans? Are we ever told to take them into our homes and nations? No, we are not. The white South Africans do not count, they are not human beings in the eyes of the church men and their liberal allies. Can we say that the church men and the liberals do not know of the plight of the white South Africans? No, we can't. Not only do they know about the torture and murder of the whites in South Africa, they enjoy their suffering. It makes them feel good. The Christ-less Christians and the liberals want to see all white racists suffer the pains of hell, because that is what white racists deserve. But surely such great Christian men as Pope Francis must feel some pity for the white children of South Africa? After all, they had no part in the "sins" of their apartheid fathers. But that doesn't matter to the liberal inquisitors. The white South African children must die so they will not grow up and become racists. The white South Africans stopped the bloody tribal warfare and raised the black South Africans' standard of living well above the standard of living in the other black nations, but still the white South Africans are 'evil' and must, by liberal decree, be eradicated from the face of the earth.

I've heard some white South Africans say that the West would help if they only knew about their suffering. Sadly, that is not the case. The liberals of the West know about the extermination of the whites in South Africa, because they are the ones who ordered their extermination. It's a hard thing to grasp, the demonism of the liberals, but we must know our enemy. A liberal might look human on the outside, but inside he is pure demon. The push for black civil rights in South Africa was never about civil rights. It was about the destruction of the white South Africans. Under the guise of liberty, equality, and fraternity, the de Klerkian liberals of South Africa and the liberals of the western nations were determined to make the white South Africans pay dearly for the sin of being white.

We should not condemn the white South Africans for caving in and turning their nation over to black rule. They held out longer against the Jacobin-Communist leviathan than the other nations of the West did, and they held out alone. The Afrikaners were only guilty of one thing: they trusted their fellow whites too much. They trusted their leaders, and they trusted the West, so now they are being slaughtered while the de Klerkian liberals hide in their gated communities and the liberals of the West keep a careful watch for any signs of white resistance to the extermination process.

The fate of the Afrikaners will be the fate of every white in every European nation. The Afrikaners are on the front lines because of their magnificent stand against the integration of the white race with the demon race, but all whites are facing the same satanic coalition of white liberals and colored barbarians, who will not rest until every single white is either murdered outright or starved to death in white concentration camps.

It seems impractical to suggest that the South African whites and all the besieged whites of the other European nations can stop the slaughter of whites through prayer, but that is the only possible way to stop this genocide. There have been thousands upon thousands of books on prayer, but I don't think they do us a bit of good. We need to pray as the psalmist prayed: "Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me."

Why do we no longer feel that He walks with us even in the valley of the shadow of death? It is because the churchmen continue to anathematize the white man's racial hearth. God hears the prayers that come to Him from the depths of the heart. But how can we pray as we ought to pray if we break the racial and familial ties that stir our heart to its depth? Superficiality is the armor of Satan. When men only follow an abstract God and a generic people, they will never be a match for Satan. Religious systems are no substitute for the living God, who comes to us through our people and guides us through the valley of the shadow of death.

If we are too sophisticated to rely on the Christ of our European ancestors, then we will be too sophisticated to survive. Our 'simple-minded' ancestors had hearts of fire. They did not permit the liberals or the colored barbarians to rule over them, because they only had room in their hearts for one ruler.

St. Luke (*Acts 19: 11-17*) tells us that true prayer must be in His name. Nor can we use His name for utilitarian purposes or self-aggrandizement.

And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them. Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

If we call on His name for charity's sake, for the sake of our people, He will answer our prayers. We will fight against the liberal "pestilence that walketh in darkness;" and the colored barbarians' "arrows that flieth by day." We can no longer look on the Christian poets and the psalmists as irrelevant relics of a former day. They suggest the only way out of the white man's dilemma. We are facing devils that can only be driven out of the European nations by white Christians who fight and pray in His name, not in the name of a Christian -ism or in the name of Israel, but in Jesus' name.

The European people have been brought to their knees in desolation because they are divided against themselves. Christ warns us (*Luke 11: 17-26*) of the dangers of trying to oppose the devil without invoking His name. The strong man casts out one devil only to find that "seven other spirits more wicked" came upon his house. By banishing the virtues of the hearth, the love of our kith and kin, haven't we lost our one sure connection to the living God and invited the devils into our homes and nations? St. Paul, who God chose to reveal Himself to in an extraordinary manner, still told us that it was through charity that men come to know God. And where does charity reside if not in our racial and familial home? Satan and his minions hate white people because Christ once dwelt among them. But if we allow our churchmen and the liberals to demonize our racial hearth fire, where will we find our Lord? Won't we become like unto the strong man in the Gospel who expelled one devil only to be plagued by seven more devils that were worse than the first one? This legion of demons that we face are not invincible. We have the spiritual history of the European people before us. When they prayed from the depths of a heart connected to Him and his people, they rode triumphant over the devil and his minions.

Look at the churches. The liberal branch of the Catholic Church and their traditionalist opponents hurl intellectual jeremiads at each other while both branches neglect the one true channel of faith, hope, and charity — the people who knew Christ, because they took Him into their hearts. In the Protestant churches the liberals and the fundamentalists go at it in much the same way as the Roman Catholics. It is one intellectual system versus another. All of the men of intellect have one thing in common: They tell us that we cannot know Christ without adhering to their systems. We need to respond to those men of intellect as Thomas Hughes responded to the Biblical scholars who said he couldn't know the truth until they finished their studies:

-they must pardon us if even at the cost of being thought and called fools for our pains, we deliberately elect to live our lives on the contrary assumption. It is useless to tell us that we know nothing of these things, that we can know nothing until their critical examination is over; we can only say, "Examine away; but we do know something of this matter, whatever you may assert to the contrary, and mean to live on that knowledge."

The key is that word 'foolish.' St. Paul tells us that "the foolishness of God is wiser than men." It is foolish to believe that we can know God in and through our people rather than through an intelligent man's mind-forged system, but isn't it foolish for a God to become incarnate in man, to suffer and die an ignominious death on a cross for sins that He didn't commit, and then to rise from the dead and call His people to Him in the next world beyond the grave?

Is the Christian faith a romance or a philosophy? If it is a philosophy, then Europe is dead as a civilization, and every man, woman, and child of European descent will be exterminated. But if the faith is a romance, then the European people are not dead. How does the Christian romance help white children living in concentration camps in South Africa? It helps them because Christian white men from within South Africa who believe in the romance, will be inspired to come to their aid by killing their jailers and striking back at the demons who rule South Africa. And white Christians from outside of South Africa will offer their prayers and financial assistance to help the suffering innocents and the men who are fighting for them. This is the romance of the mystical body of Christ: He works through the hearts of His people, the men and women who believe that "the foolishness of God is wiser than men."

The Jacobin-Communist revolution became part of the fabric of the European's daily life following the first World War. The revolutionary ethos had been worming its way into the soul of Western man for centuries, but it was in the 20th century that the devil's diligence started to bear fruit, a bitter fruit. The very thing that prevented the totalitarian wars and the displacement of peoples from their homelands, the romance of European Christianity, was seen as too frivolous, too immature, to prevent the evils that the Jacobin liberals introduced to the world. But it is the Christian romance that we need. All the "serious" programs from Socratic conservatives and systems-oriented clerics have failed to provide Europeans with the spiritual spine to fight back against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The liberals seek our blood and the intellectual Christians tell us to wait until they finish their computations about God before we do anything. We won't wait; we know what must be done and we know who will sustain us in the day of battle.

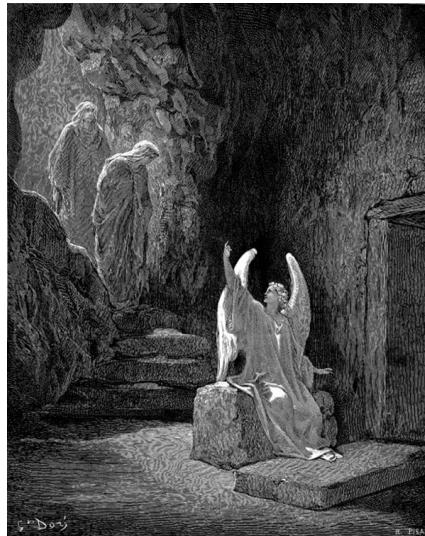
There has been some debate in nationalist circles recently about whether the Moslems or the black menace is greater. The Moslems are better organized, but there is less resistance to the blacks. Whites who are willing to fight Moslems still seem unable to oppose the blacks. It is not an 'either/or'; both the Moslems and the blacks are our enemies. They should not be allowed to rape, pillage, and murder their way through the white nations. But whether it is the Moslems, the Mexicans, the blacks, or the Orientals who threaten the European people, it is liberalism that has left the white man defenseless against his enemies. If you plunge your sword into the heart of the liberal hydra, all the tentacles will die. Of course, hydras and heroes who kill hydras are only found in romances. Which brings us back to Europe when she was white and Christian. If she was foolish and impractical, why was she so beautiful? Let us pray that the romance of Europe becomes part of the white man's soul once again. Then the Afrikaners will drive the black devils from South Africa, and the white Europeans will deliver their people from the pestilence of liberalism and the arrows of the Moslems and the colored barbarians. +

That Which Endures

April 30, 2016

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Louis Stevenson, Shakespeare



Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour. — *1 Peter 5:8*

And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold two men stood by them in shining garments: And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? — *Luke 24: 4-6*

I recently saw a column by Patrick Buchanan in which he stated that Western civilization was dead whether Trump won the Presidency or not. My response to that assertion is similar to Horatio's response to Hamlet —

*HAMLET: There's ne'er a villain dwelling in all Denmark —
But he's an arrant knave.*

*HORATIO: There needs no ghost, my lord, come from the grave
To tell us this.*

There have been thousands of ‘death of the West’ books; we don’t need another book or column stating what is obvious. Instead let’s look at what is not quite as obvious, let’s look at something that is not dead and shall never die.

The western civilization that died and is now a rotting corpse is not Western civilization. What St. Augustine said was impossible, that the city of God and the city of man could form an incorporate union, became a reality when our people, the Europeans, made Christ the lodestar of their civilization. While the theologians kept saying a Christian civilization was impossible, the Europeans continued to act on the contrary principle — it was possible. It certainly was, and the proof is in the Europeans’ past. If we take the European people and their culture “for all in all” we see that they did indeed create that entity, a Christian culture, which our theologians told us was impossible to create.

From within that European Christian culture, Satan arose. He infiltrated the organized churches and he toppled Christian governments. Burke and Dostoyevsky have chronicled this satanic subversion of Christian Europe. By the time of the First World War Christian Europe had been replaced by liberal Europe. There was more than a remnant of believing Christians left, but their leaders no longer looked to Christ to lead them into battle, and they no longer looked to Christ for the wisdom to govern. Reason, science, and psychiatric voodoo replaced faith, hope, and charity.

What we see before us now, in church, state, and civil society is the rotting corpse of the anti-European, anti-Christian civilization that replaced Christian Europe. Like the Ancient Mariner the modern European looks about him and sees only death:

*I looked upon the rotting seas
And drew my eyes away;
I looked upon the rotting deck,
And there the dead men lay.*

*I looked to heaven, and tried to pray;
But or ever a prayer had gusht,
A wicked whisper came, and made
My heart as dry as dust.*

*I closed my lids, and kept them close,
And the balls like pulses beat;
For the sky and the sea, and the sea and the sky
Lay like a load on my weary eye,
And the dead were at my feet.*

There was life for the Ancient Mariner when he repented and turned to God, just as there is life for the European who returns to Christian Europe. No atheist pope, no modern Christian Zionist, can change the moral essence that is Europe. Those who adhere to that moral essence are greatly diminished in numbers since Europe’s halcyon days, but are we worse off than the days of Noah? And we still have their example, the antique Europeans, to give us the strength to look at the dying corpse of democratic, Jacobin, race-mixing Europe and see the real Europe that has been obscured, but not eclipsed, by rotting corpse Europe.

We adhere to old Europe, because He resides there and because there must be some men of the Christian Europe to serve as a sign of contradiction to the death-in-life creatures who inhabit rotting corpse Europe. Does anyone ever return from that city of desolation? It does not appear so. But God does not require us to win the numbers’ game. He requires us to be faithful —

"As for me and my house..." Nor is it written that no one ever returns from rotting-corpse Europe. The God who rose from the dead on the third day can bring even rotting corpses back to life.

I don't forget for one second what we have lost. The 'death of the West' men are right, up to a point. But I take issue with the death of the West cataloguers as regards the identity of the dead body. The body of Western civilization still lives. It is the demon-based offshoot of Western civilization that is dying right in front of our eyes. There is no life in negro worship, there is no life in Judaism or any of the pagan faiths. There is only the death in life existence of men and women who have forsaken the living God for Satan. As rotting-corpse Babylon perishes, we must maintain the old world which is forever new. The real Europe can be difficult to see while the smoke from the burning corpses of Babylonian Europe gets in our eyes, but that Europe, which we see with our heart's eye, is our Europe. As Ratty said of his river, "It's my world, and I don't want any other," so we say of Christian Europe. Everything that is evil has been institutionalized in rotting-corpse Europe – feminism, negro worship, sodomy, Islam, and Christ-less Christianity. Everything that is pure and noble that stems from old Europe has been banned – honor, love, white pietas, and Christian charity.

Is Europe sacred because of her physical beauty? No, Blake is right about nature: "Where man is not, nature is barren." Europe is sacred because it was there that the white race formed an incorporate union with Christ. Wherever that moral essence exists – "where two or three are gathered together in my name" – there is Europe:

Mere locality does not constitute a body politick. Had Cade and his gang got possession of London, they would not have been the Lord-Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council. The body politick of France existed in the majesty of its throne; in the dignity of its nobility; in the honour of its gentry; in the sanctity of its clergy; in the reverence of its magistracy; in the weight and consideration due to its landed property in the several bailliages; in the respect due to its moveable substance represented by the corporations of the kingdom. All these particular moleculae united, form the great mass of what is truly the body politick, in all countries. They are so many deposits and receptacles of justice; because they can only exist by justice. Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclator.... The Regicides in France are not France. France is out of her bounds, but the kingdom is the same. – Edmund Burke

Those whites who are true to the moral essence of Europe are the true Europeans no matter where their geographical location is. In the 1960's, for instance, the white South Africans were the most European nation on the earth. And now? The European faithful are in the same position as Alexander Smollet was vis-à-vis the pirates:

Now you'll hear me. If you'll come up one by one, unarmed, I'll engage to clap you all in irons, and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won't, my name is Alexander Smollett, I've flown my sovereign's colours, and I'll see you all to Davy Jones.

Wherever there are white people who love their people in and through the European Christ (who is the one and only Christ, just as the Santa Claus in *Miracle on 34th Street* is the one and only Santa Claus), you'll find the nation that started out as a land mass and became a moral essence of men and women consecrated to the living God. If the black barbarians, the feminists, the Moslems, and the other creatures of rotting-corpse Liberaldom will come up one by one we'll clap them in irons for a fair trial. But if they won't surrender voluntarily... well, then Alexander Smollet's ultimatum can serve as our own.

We are not disembodied spirits, we need *lebensraum*. But doesn't that need for a homeland come from our love for our people and our God? We want our loved ones to have a hearth and we want our God to preside over that hearth. But the spirit cannot be divorced from the homeland. When I went to Stratford-upon-Avon, I thought it was beautiful because the Gentle Bard was born and raised there, not because I loved woods and streams in and of themselves. It is the same with all the European nations. The land is sacred, because of the people and the God who dwelt there. So it is not accurate to say, "Western civilization is dead." Western civilization is still very much alive in the hearts of the European people who still love old Europe. There are no eleventh hour time limits on the love that is inspired by the passion of Christ. That love endures for all eternity. What is true is that the institutions of the West, church, state, and academy, are morally dead. They are the purveyors of rotting-corpse liberalism, which had its brief day and will now become part of the universal dung heap of heathenism. We triumph still if we cling to old Europe while in the midst of rotting-corpse liberalism. The Ancient Mariner was brought back from the brink of death by "happy living things" –

*The selfsame moment I could pray;
And from my neck so free
The Albatross fell off, and sank
Like lead into the sea.*

So will it be with us. The selfsame moment that we feel connected to the living culture of the antique Europeans we will be able to pray to the living God, and the Albatross of rotting-corpse liberalism will fall from our necks. Blessed relief! Blessed moment!

The liberals are the Midases of death. Everything they touch turns from something living to something dead. The churchmen have turned the living God into a social worker, they have turned women, the life bearers, into the great destroyers of life, they have turned demonic black barbarians into angels of death, and they have placed the Islamic god of death and destruction above the living God. This charnel house of evil cannot be called a civilization, it is the absence of a civilization. We must, we few, we Europeans, cleanse our European nations of the death-in-life liberals and replace them with men and women wedded to His Europe. 'Tis a consummation devoutly to be wished for, fought for, and prayed for.

Judging by the amount of horror movies made about the undead, we can assume that the public has an insatiable thirst for movies that depict rotting corpses who attack human beings. The corpses are animated by Satan, who keeps them alive to do his will. Of course the purveyors of the undead films do not realize that they are depicting liberals, but there were Christian poets who did know what the unholy union of abstract reason and utopianism would bring down upon mankind. Stevenson, in his short story called "[Thrawn Janet](#)," tells us of a young minister, filled with modern ideas about the Bible and the perfectibility of man, who takes a woman into his home as a housekeeper, whom the villagers believe to be possessed by the devil. If you read the story you will see the modern drama of satanic liberalism at war with Christian orthodoxy. The young minister wins his battle against Satan, but only when he completely rejects Christian atheism:

'Witch, beldame, devil!' he cried, 'I charge you, by the power of God, begone — if you be dead, to the grave — if you be damned, to hell.'

An' at that moment the Lord's ain hand out o' the Heevens struck the Horror whaur it stood; the auld, deid, desecrated corp o' the witch-wife, sae lang keepit frae the grave and hirsled round by deils, lowed up like a brunstane spunk and fell in ashes to the grund; the thunder followed, peal on dirling peal, the rairing rain upon the back o' that; and Mr. Soulis lowped through the garden hedge, and ran, wi' skelloch upon skelloch, for the clachan.

That same mornin', John Christie saw the Black Man pass the Muckle Cairn as it was chappin' six; before eicht, he gaed by the change-house at Knockdow; an' no lang after, Sandy M'Lellan saw him gaun linkin' doun the braes frae Kilmackerlie. There's little doubt but it was him that dwalled sae lang in Janet's body; but he was awa' at last; and sinsyne the deil has never fashed us in Ba'weary.

But it was a sair dispensation for the minister; lang, lang he lay ravin' in his bed; and frae that hour to this, he was the man ye ken the day.

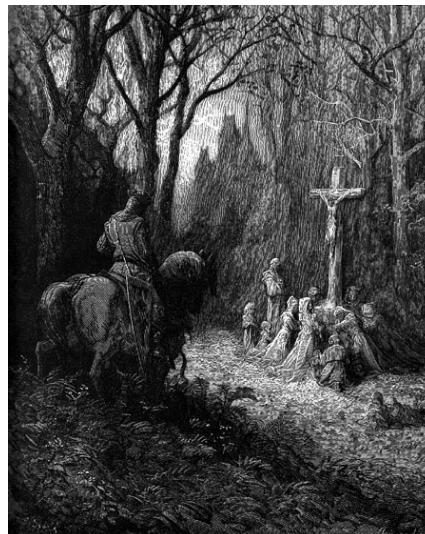
If we come to know what Stevenson's young minister came to know, and if we hold to that uniquely European vision of the great battle between Christ and the devil, we will see clearly. We will not mistake a city of rotting corpses animated by the spirit of Satan for a green and pleasant land consecrated to Christ, the God of charity and mercy. There is only one civilization that is not a rotting corpse animated by Satan; that Western civilization is not dying. The number of people adhering to that civilization has greatly diminished, which is why the devil wants the Christian Europeans to play the numbers game. If the rotting corpses outnumber the Europeans, it is the devil's hope that the Europeans will despair and become part of rotting-corpse Liberaldom. But the Europeans who love much will not despair and make peace with Satan's kingdom of rotting corpses. We will walk the narrow way and stay with the civilization that still lives, because it is animated and sustained by Christ: Yea, though we walk through the valley of the shadow of rotting-corpse liberalism, we shall fear no evil, because the Christ of the European hearth fire is with us, "away even unto the end of the world." +

Blood, Hearth, and Faith

May 7, 2016

Categories: Blood faith, Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Herbert Butterfield, John Buchan



Dickson groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in the retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith? – John Buchan

But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. – *Romans 2: 29*

The late John Tyndall heroically supported the BNP even after he was ousted from the party by mean-spirited bureaucrats. Tyndall still supported the BNP after the leadership was wrested from him, because he loved Britain. It was his belief that the majority of Britons agreed with the nativist principles of the BNP but were afraid to openly support the BNP, because the BNP had no power. For that reason, Tyndall maintained, it was imperative that the BNP should continue to run candidates for local and national officers in order to gain power. This has been the standard response to the liberal-barbarian assault on the West throughout the European nations: Gain power through the democratic process and democratically slow down or stop the invasions of the West.

This policy of halting the invasion of the West through the democratic process has been a colossal failure. The West has been invaded, at the invitation of democratically elected Satanists, and the hope of openly nationalist candidates getting elected and actually halting or reversing the blood red tide of colored and Moslem invaders has become a non-hope. (1) Why has the democracy gambit failed? It has failed because you cannot “seek redemption from the devil.” All our modern democratic governments have their origin in that anti-European, anti-Christian movement called Jacobinism. Burke managed to turn Britain and the rest of the European nations against Robespierre and his bloody cohorts, but he was not able to drive home the far more important message: The Jacobin revolt was not a mere palace revolution that replaced one European government with another; it was a revolt against all things European and Christian. It called for the enthronement of Satan.

Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism; and in Atheism; and it has joined to those principles, a body of systematick manners which secures their operation. – Burke

Burke thought we should never make peace with the regicides, but the European people did make peace with the regicides, and one by one the European nations became democratic, regicide nations, committed to the extermination of the European people and the eradication of their culture. How can the extermination of the European people be halted through the process expressly set up for their extermination? If we elect different executioners every four or five years, do we stop the executions?

In the old serials and pulp novels of the 1930s and 1940s, the dastardly villain is never content with merely killing the hero. He must think of some diabolically clever way to end the hero’s life. Despite the protest of his henchmen, who merely want to see the hero dead, the villain concocts an incredibly elaborate way for the hero to die. And of course the hero always escapes and then kills the villain. Why do the fiendishly clever villains never learn to simply kill the hero as quickly as they can and then proceed with their plans to conquer the world? P. G. Wodehouse tells us that while the master villain was growing up, his parents were always praising him for being a clever little fellow. Thus the super villain grew up with an insatiable need to be praised for his cleverness. That need is the main reason Batman, Nayland Smith, Bulldog Drummond, and countless other heroes who tried to stop the arch-villains from conquering the world, were successful. They had great pluck to be sure, but it was the villains’ desire to be clever that saved the heroes and Western civilization.

The white man who wants to resist the onslaught of the colored barbarians and the Moslems has unknowingly succumbed to the same temptation as the super villains. He has been told for over a century now that white men do not fight in defense of their own people. They can organize protest marches, if they get protest permits, they can climb tall buildings and throw pamphlets into the streets, but they must not kill the people who are killing their people or the people who ordered the murders. Why mustn’t they kill in defense of their people? They must not kill in defense of their people because Jacobins rule the Western nations. And the first rule of Jacobinism is that only ‘the people’ have a right to revolt; all non-people must submit to their own extermination. At first, ‘the people’ were the French proletariat, but over time all white people became the aristocrats; they were the non-people who had to be purged. The term “white privilege” is used to justify the extermination of the white race; we are all, from the white street person, to the Wall Street executive, guilty of white privilege. And we all must die. The liberal does not wish to die — he does not have a death wish; he wants all whites, excepting himself and a few elite liberals, to die while the blacks stand with their hats in their hands as the great white liberal passes. If you can see the liberals’ favorite film without vomiting take a look at the scene where Atticus Finch walks by the negroes in the balcony of the courtroom. “Stand up, your father is passing.” Does the liberal, who cries every time he sees that scene, but remains dry-eyed over the torture murder of babies in the womb and of white people in South Africa and the United States, ever ask himself why the blacks hate that movie? They hate that movie because they don’t want to worship the great white liberal god. They want Babylon unvarnished and unpolluted by any white presence, even the presence of the self-anointed liberal messiahs.

What if baby killers started dying by the thousands? What if government officials who proudly proclaimed that Europe would become Moslem by 2020 were found dead in their beds? What if black barbarians and Moslems who rape, murder, and pillage were killed by masked raiders instead of pampered and pardoned by a liberal, white-hating, ‘justice’ system? (2) It would be very undemocratic to be part of any type of action against the Jacobin establishment. But why are the Jacobins and their anti-European, anti-Christian governments sacred? Why must we refrain from killing those people who are killing our people? In 770 a small group of Spanish Christians met in a cave and took a vow, “To the Knife!” Some 700 years later The Cid drove the Moslems out of Spain. Now the Moslems, the black barbarians, and every other heathen race have descended upon the European nations. Yes, we always have eternal Europe. And if we are the last Europeans left on the face of the earth we should go down fighting while holding eternal Europe, His Europe, before our eyes. But does the kingdom of temporal Europe have to die? What will be the result if a few Europeans take the vow, “To the knife”? We don’t know. The death of the West statisticians cannot tell us, because they don’t know; no one but God knows. And it is God’s will that we should not know. He wants us to stay loyal to His Europe, not to be historical prognosticators.

Those who repudiate their past (and in the past white men fought for their people) in the name of a utopian future always end up on the side of Satan.

The French, after the cataclysm of 1789, did not heal the wounds or tie up the threads again, did not take hold of themselves and turn a hatred of violent overthrows into a primary political principle. On the contrary, with Tradition and Reason frozen into permanent incompatibilities – hardening against one another in order to produce a standing discontinuity in the very structure of French politics. The overthrow of 1789 became a matter for glory and emulation – a thing to be repeated. There emerged therefore a romantic hypostasization of Revolution as such. – H. Butterfield

That romance, the satanic revolt against all things Christian and European, has become part of the blood faith of the European liberals. Wherever satanic revolt sprang up, the liberals supported that revolt and demonized the opponents of the revolt. The northern Jacobins supported the war to set the darkies free and demonized the white Southerners. The white Russians who fought for the Czar were ‘evil oppressors,’ and Trotsky and Lenin were the noble revolutionaries. Castro came down from the hills to free his people, while Franco, who came back from exile to free his people from Communist tyranny, was vilified his entire life. And now every black murderer and Moslem jihadist becomes a noble revolutionary, and their opponents are right-wing reactionaries. But are there any opponents of the liberals’ romance? No, there are not. A romance can only be defeated by another romance. When white men respond to white genocide with ten-point programs outlining the need for white identity, and when white people proudly declare their commitment to the principles of democratic government, even though democratic governments are destroying the white race, we can see that white people do not have that within which is necessary to defeat the Jacobin liberals and their temporary allies, the colored barbarians and the heathens.

Let us go back to our Apostle, the apostle who loved and hated with all his heart. St. Paul was not an intellectual, he was not an Erasmus type figure who was concerned with Christology, philosophy, and theology. There are no definitions of God in Paul’s writings, yet he gives us a much more distinct image of Christ than any theological or philosophical treatise ever did or could. It is not Mass attendance, or ten-step programs to a better understanding of God that concern St. Paul. He cares only about Christ crucified and Christ risen. Intimacy with that God is all and all to St. Paul. And how is that intimacy achieved? It is achieved through the charity that never faileth. There is a link between Burke’s defense of old Europe, where men had “that charity of honor,” and St. Paul’s “better way,” the way of charity. St. Paul set the church of Christ on the right course. Christ, not Christology, was to rule the church. It was the mission of our people, the Europeans of the hearth, the soil, and the blood, to place Christ, the hero-God, back in His proper place as true God and true man. The Europeans came as conquerors, but they bent their knees, not to a theology, but to their Lord, Savior, and Kinsman.

Jacobinism, which is institutionalized Satanism, arose in Europe as a result of the spread of intellectual Christianity over Pauline Christianity. When Christianity became a philosophical system, the romance of the Christ story was drained out of the church, and Satan filled the void in the Europeans’ souls with the romance of revolt. Burke, who still saw Christ as the first Europeans saw Christ, immediately knew what Jacobinism was. It was an assault on God by way of an attack on the traditions, prejudices, customs, and manners that stemmed from the Europeans’ heartfelt faith in Jesus Christ. It is the heart that sees the romantic vision. Kill the heart and the romance is gone. No power on earth nor the powers of hell could make the Europeans give way to the heathens and the colored barbarians if they still believed in the romance of the Christ story. But intellectual Christians, who have left the romance of Christian Europe behind them in the non-utopian past, must try to graft their Christian non-faith onto some aspect of the Jacobin faith in revolt. The Moslems, the black barbarians, the Jews, the philosophical speculators are all part of the Jacobin revolt. If they can graft their intellectual Christianity onto one of those branches of revolt, the new age intellectual Christians can become part of the romance of the revolt against Christian Europe. The modern world, which the Christ-less Christians have made their world, views everything from white, Christian Europe as unspeakably vile. But isn’t it a case of, “Wisdom and goodness to the vile seem vile; Filths savour but themselves.”? The difference lies in our heart’s vision. Can the romance of Christ crucified, Christ risen, be blended with the Jacobins’ romance of revolt? Almighty God, forbid it! When white ‘Christians’ give birth to black babies hatched in science labs, when Englishmen elect a Moslem Mayor of London, it is time to take the vow, “To the Knife!” The romance of revolt can only be defeated by the romance of Christ crucified, Christ risen, which was and always shall be the one true romance of the European people. +

(1) I hope the AfD party in Germany actually wins a national election, I hope Trump wins the Presidency, but such victories, should they occur, are only rear guard measures to cover the retreat of the white race. That charity of honor demands we stop looking to the democratic process as the white man’s only salvation. The liberals have made their intentions clear. They are committed to the destruction of the white race. Must we submit to that destruction if we can’t get enough votes?

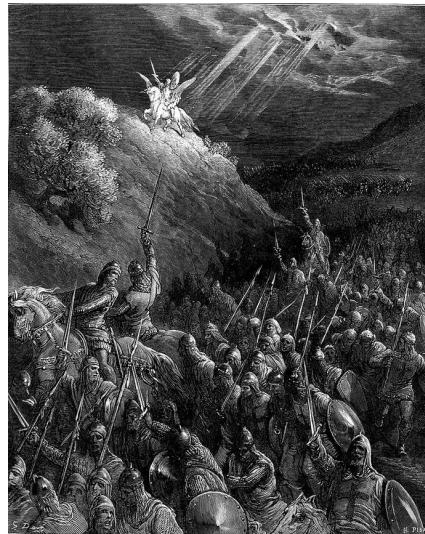
(2) I am constantly hearing, from the white pacifists, that the vigilante violence of the masked youths in Sweden will only lead to anarchy and hooliganism. Are such pacifists so morally blind that they cannot see that what they call hooliganism and anarchy is a moral and necessary response to hooliganism and anarchy? It appears so. If our laws are not grounded in the traditional faith of the European people, they are not laws, they are the decrees of revolutionary tribunals determined to destroy God by destroying His people.

Charity Never Faileth: In That Hope We Live

May 14, 2016

Categories: Blood faith, Charity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England,
This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,
Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth,
Renowned for their deeds as far from home,—
For Christian service and true chivalry,—
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's Son:
This land of such dear souls, this dear, dear land,
Dear for her reputation through the world,
Is now leas'd out,—I die pronouncing it,—
Like to a tenement, or pelting farm:
England, bound in with the triumphant sea,
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege
Of watery Neptune, is now bound in with shame,
With inky blots, and rotten parchment bonds:
That England, that was wont to conquer others,
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself.

—Richard the Second

Already, Moslem mosques are being built, to be followed by Hindu temples – this in a land that is supposedly a Christian one. And all this? Just in odd parts of England such as sea ports? No – in Coventry, Birmingham, Leeds, Walsall, Nottingham, Bedford, Luton, in Devon, in Northumberland, in Norfolk, in Surrey, in Derbyshire... everywhere.

Soon, it will be special schools for non-English-speaking ‘Britons’ followed by their own hospitals, own libraries, own food supplies, own this and own that. And all this will be granted them by that government, that authority now in power in Britain, which is determined once and for all to smash brutally, cynically, deliberately, a white folk in a once-white land, in order that something called a ‘Colouredwealth’ in which England becomes a more and more insignificant item, shall not be ‘offended’ – that is, so that vested interests and big business shall not suffer even though a white folk will be utterly destroyed. —Anthony Jacob, ca. 1965

I’ve always considered myself a European who happens to live in America rather than an American who happens to be of European descent. My European heritage means everything to me; my connection to multicultural, multiracial America means nothing to me. For some reasons that are discernible – William Shakespeare and Charles Dickens – and for some reasons that are not discernible, I love Britain, and most especially England, with the love that Scott describes in his famous “Breathes there a man with soul so dead...” passage in *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*. (1) So it was with a most particular sorrow, as if a sword had pierced my heart, that I learned that the Londoners had elected a Moslem mayor. I knew it was coming, just as I knew the death of my father was coming as I watched him struggling with a fatal sickness. Still, when both events occurred, my sorrow was too great to put into words. As regards the Moslem’s election – Is it worse than having a liberal mayor or a communist mayor? Is it worse than having a negro mayor? Probably not. But there is still that extra horror we feel when Satanism becomes so explicit. Perhaps it is better that the serpent has reared up and shown himself in all his fiendish glory, because now there can be no more confusion about who rules Europe. All that having been said, there is that serpent right before our eyes, and he has bared his fangs. We can’t help but feel a special revulsion and a greater intensity of sorrow over that which has been lost when we see Satan exulting so openly over his victims, the European people. And if you think that it is only the white Britons who have succumbed to Satan and that you need not concern yourself with them you are mistaken. Every white nation is facing the same crisis as Britain. There is a cadre of American white nationalists who seem to delight in what they call the ‘death of Britain.’ We’ve all known such individuals: They say they hate to tell you a certain piece of bad news, but the gleeful smile on their face as they tell you the bad news gives the lie to their false words of regret. What does an American white nationalist have to boast about? Our major cities are even more crime-ridden than London, and we have placed a negro on our Presidential throne. We need, within the ranks of white Europeans, more of an ‘every man’s death diminishes me’ attitude toward the satanic overthrow of white governments and white cultures. All whites are in the same boat, and we are all tempest-tossed. Why not leave it at that and give our sympathy and support to our fellow white brethren instead of kicking them when they are down?

My own feelings, when I hear of the election of a Moslem mayor in London, of another statue of an iconic Southern hero being torn down, or another blasphemy from the demon Pope, are like unto the feelings depicted on Nathan Bedford Forrest’s face in a painting by Mort Künstler called *Sound the Charge*. In the painting, Forrest is standing over the body of his brother, who has been slain by the enemy. There is a grief too deep for tears on Forrest’s face and a look of adamantine determination as well. So it is with us, with all of us who remain true to our European blood. No European country will ever be what it once was. But we don’t have to accept the liberal-barbarian conquest as final. They think we will never fight back. Isn’t it time for the liberals and the colored heathen to fear the white man who will no longer sit quietly while everything he holds sacred is destroyed? The liberals and their heathen allies cannot build anything; they can destroy everything that was noble, true, and Christian in Western culture, but they cannot replace Western culture with anything but their own sick culture of murder by proxy, rape by proxy, and outright plunder. There can be no blending of old Europe and new Europe. Multiracial, multicultural Europe must be completely eradicated in order to rebuild sacred Europe once again. The non-democratic, non-diverse people of the new-old Christian Europe will be battle-scarred and weary, but they will be Europeans again.

I don't have the gift of prophecy – I don't know that Europe will be restored. I do know that Christian Europe once existed and that she was sustained by men and women who loved the God-Man in and through the people of their racial hearth fire. I don't believe that such a people can be driven off the face of the earth. The liberals and the colored heathen exult in the destruction of all things Christian and European. Am I to believe that there are no European hearts left in the world with the will to resist them? The liberals would like me and thee to believe that so we will despair and die. But I carry Henry Francis Lyte's words in my heart: "I triumph still if He abides with me." It is in kinship and the love of our own kind that we find the true Christ, the Christ of the European people. If we leave intellectual Christianity behind (the god of the theologians and the philosophers does not abide with us) and warm our hands and hearts at the European hearth fire where He abides, we will not be men and women without a homeland in this world nor will we be left without our faith that He, through His divine charity, has prepared a homeland for us in the next world.

On the liberal side of the Church, Protestant and Catholic, they have changed the Christ story. Original sin still exists, but original sin is no longer pride of intellect, it is whiteness. And on the traditionalist and fundamentalist side of both churches, the Christ story has been altered as well. Pride of intellect has replaced faith in Christ. In a master stroke of strategy, the devil has set the philosophical speculators at odds with each other, both sides passionately defending their philosophical speculations against the rival camp. But there is no winner when the devil makes up the rules of the game. Our ancestors walked on water because they saw that Thor and Odin were pale images of their true Lord and Kinsman, Jesus Christ. We no longer walk on water, because first the church men and then their secular counterparts gave up the 'weakness' of faith for the 'strength' of philosophical speculation. If you never try to walk on water, you won't get wet, but you'll be left on the dry land of philosophical speculation without a vision of the living God.

It was not the intellectual Christianity of the modern liberal and traditionalist churches that conquered the world for Christ. It was the Christ-centered faith of St. Paul and the Europeans who loved and hated with all their hearts that carved out a place for the God of charity and mercy in a world that was devoid of charity and mercy. When intellectual Christianity, which is nothing less than Satanism in Christian garments, is purged from the soul of the European people we will begin to see pockets of European resistance to Satan's kingdom of eternal night.

For how long will His people turn to the Grand Inquisitors of intellectual pride rather than to Him, the God whose love passeth the understanding of the philosophical speculators? That's more than I know or any of us know. The statistics men who think man is a piano key constantly tell us that Britain is dead, Europe is dead, and European America is dead. But if white Europe is dead, why is Satan still so worried about even the slightest manifestation of white pietas? Why would a mixed-up pagan, such as Donald Trump, with a few good European instincts left in him, stir up such alarm in the liberal ranks? It is because the devil fears the white Christian European. He doesn't care about the theological Christian who has removed himself from God, but he does fear the European who was, and is still meant to be, the Christ-bearer. I'm always surprised when a professed conservative Christian is shocked that I do not repudiate all violence against the liberals and their heathen allies. I shouldn't be surprised though, because the modern Christian does not believe in the European Christ, and a non-European Christ is not Christ. No European Christian would let Moslems and Aztecs invade his nation. No European Christian would countenance race-mixing and the worship of black murderers and rapists. And no Christian European would tolerate feminism and the slaughter of the innocents that accompanies feminism. And yet we mustn't be violent? From whence comes that command? Is it from God? "Thou shalt not kill" has always been traditionally interpreted as 'thou shall not murder.' But of course the Christians who take their theology from their own minds do not care to know how their 'racist' ancestors dealt with the devil and his minions. Their Christianity is a pristine, new Christianity that is much higher and exalted than the crude primitive Christianity of the antique Europeans. Intellectual Christians believe, just as Satan believes, that nothing human is really worth preserving. "Let the European people and their ancient culture perish so long as our intellectual systems remain," is the stinking, filthy-rag mantra of the intellectual Christians and their liberal brethren.

Prior to the French Revolution the Jacobins put out an unrelenting stream of propaganda in which they demonized the French monarchy and the French aristocracy. The demonization process worked so well that even the King doubted his right to rule. And as a consequence of that doubt he did not take the steps necessary to defend his crown and his people. For the past century the people of every European nation have been the objects of the same demonization campaign conducted by the Jacobins against the French monarch and the French aristocrats. We have now reached the final stage of the demonization process. The executions have begun in earnest. What the academics and the church men preached – "The white race must be exterminated" – is being acted upon. And there will be no mercy for the white man, because there is no mercy in the liberals, the Moslems, the colored barbarians, or the intellectual Christians.

In the name of mercy, for the sake of our people, who have been marked for slaughter, we should resist the liberals and their heathen allies with every weapon at our command. And our primary weapon is not a material weapon, it is the sword of charity. White people seem doomed because the shroud of intellectual Christianity hangs over them. Lift that shroud and there is life, the life that comes to a people who believe that human hearts connected to His divine heart can fight and win against the liberals and their heathen allies: "Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name."

Far too many whites, the vast majority, have become like unto Louis XVI. They have listened to the demonizers in church, state, and academy for so long that they have come to believe in the evil of the white race. They won't fight for a white homeland, because they have succumbed to the demonizers' romance of revolt: Only the non-white can be part of utopia, because only the non-white is free from the prejudices of the past. But what is it in the white man's past that he should be ashamed of? It is his allegiance to Christ. This is what white genocide is all about. Jettison your past, your blood connection to the Son of God, and you can be part of a brave new world where the only whites left alive are the slaves of colored heathens. But for how long will the whites be allowed to remain alive even in captivity? The liberals will always fear a revolt, so they will exterminate every white before they themselves go to the executioner's block. Danton and Robespierre could not stop the fire of romantic revolt they helped start. It consumed them just as it will consume the liberals.

The period of white slavery has already begun, and the extermination process is proceeding at a rapid rate. The election of a Moslem mayor in London is just another part of the worldwide extermination process. The sheer mathematical weight of the great haters of the white race seems overwhelming. But we are told that charity never faileth. Those words, that come to us from the heart of St. Paul can be just that, mere words, or they can be the sustaining spirit that enables us to "triumph still" over all the forces of hell. At certain crisis periods of my life, I have had people tell me that they were praying for me. When I felt that they were just mouthing platitudes, their declared intentions meant nothing to me. But when I felt my friends meant what they said, that they would pray for me from their hearts, I was very grateful; it meant everything to me. It all comes back to the undefinable virtue of charity. I believe our people, the antique Europeans, got it right. They had that charity of honor that "never faileth." If we stay with those people, we will abide with the God of charity and mercy who never has and never will fail us. +

(1) Breathes there the man with soul so dead,
Who never to himself hath said,
'This is my own, my native land!'
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burn'd
As home his footsteps he hath turn'd
From wandering on a foreign strand?
If such there breathe, go, mark him well;
For him no Minstrel raptures swell;
High though his titles, proud his name,
Boundless his wealth as wish can claim;
Despite those titles, power, and pelf,
The wretch, concentrated all in self,
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,
And, doubly dying, shall go down
To the vile dust from whence he sprung,
Unwept, un honour'd, and unsung.

-Sir Walter Scott

Multicultural Europe Must Die

May 21, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, La Fontaine



A light seemed to spring up in his heart, and he darted on. But may he trust to this light? He stopped, and knelt down reverently, as if at the altar of his village-church, and poured forth this prayer: — “O Lord God, Who knowest that I go forth at my prince’s command to destroy the wicked brood, and to deliver my countrymen from danger; if it be a sin that I cherish yet another and glorious hope, root it out of my heart, or deny me the sweet prize, and give it to a better Christian; but yet grant me now victory, in Thy strength, for the good of my country; or, if this may not be, grant me a joyful death.” — Riesengebirge, *The Shepherd of the Giant Mountains*

And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God. —*Ephesians 3: 9-10*

The Paper Mill had stopped work for the night, and the paths and roads in its neighbourhood were sprinkled with clusters of people going home from their day’s labour in it. There were men, women, and children in the groups, and there was no want of lively colour to flutter in the gentle evening wind. The mingling of various voices and the sound of laughter made a cheerful impression upon the ear, analogous to that of the fluttering colours upon the eye. Into the sheet of water reflecting the flushed sky in the foreground of the living picture, a knot of urchins were casting stones, and watching the expansion of the rippling circles. So, in the rosy evening, one might watch the ever-widening beauty of the landscape—beyond the newly-released workers wending home—beyond the silver river—beyond the deep green fields of corn, so prospering, that the loiterers in their narrow threads of pathway seemed to float immersed breast-high—beyond the hedgerows and the clumps of trees—beyond the windmills on the ridge—away to where the sky appeared to meet the earth, as if there were no immensity of space between mankind and Heaven. —Charles Dickens, *Our Mutual Friend*

For roughly 1,400 years the nations of Europe had one common culture. Despite differences in degree, their cultures were one in kind: They were Christian cultures. The lesser cultures outside of Europe differed in kind from the European cultures: They were heathen cultures which never, despite the efforts of European Christians to convert the people of those cultures to Christianity, became Christian; they stayed heathen.

In the 20th century the democratic Jacobin leaders of the European nations started the transition from a Christian culture to a post-Christian utopia. That work in progress has just about been completed in this, the 21st century. The romance of revolt in the name of a utopian future has captured the imagination of the ruling elites in church and state. And the essential part of that romance is the destruction of the European people. They must be replaced by the colored heathens who have not been tainted with any of the prejudices stemming from old Europe. It might seem strange to the casual observer that church men are participating in the romance of revolt, but it isn’t strange if you make the distinction between faith in the Son of God and faith in an intellectual system about God. The former faith can only be passed on through the blood, which makes men and women with hearts of flesh necessary for the transmission of that faith. The latter faith, which holds an intellectual system about God before our eyes rather than a cross, does not require a flesh and blood people. The working principle of such a faith is the abstracted intellect. The modern utopian church men believe you can take abstract Christianity and place it in the minds of the heathens and then, presto change-o, you have perfect, Godlike individuals who are fit to worship their own divine image in the New Church of Jesus Christ Without Jesus Christ.

The reason that world leaders such as Angela Merkel do not care about the desire of white Europeans to live in a homeland free of Moslems is because it is the German people and all the other white Europeans who must be destroyed. They are the unnecessary people, they are not part of the romance of revolt. The Pope is not going to rescue a white South African child from death and torture, nor is he going to rescue a German child, an English child, etc. Those children are white; they are part of the European race, which is the race of prejudice, bigotry, and Christianity. So the Pope grabs heathen refugee children and escorts them across the borders of white nations. They will grow up to be murderers and rapists, which is all part of the liberals’ program – the destruction of the white race.

Modern Liberalism has been constructed like the old Roman Empire: Whatever road you take leads you to liberalism. And the essence of liberalism is hatred for all things white and Christian. The demon Pope and his spiritual brethren in the Catholic and Protestant churches have united Christianity with liberalism, which has made organized Christianity into organized Satanism. No matter what road you take, the “Christian” road or the secular road, you will end up in Liberalism.

When a man is sick, he needs to acknowledge his sickness before he can hope to recover. The European people need to acknowledge their sickness and then fight to recover their health. Their sickness is spiritual; they have divorced themselves from the Christ who came to them in and through their own people, the men and women with hearts of flesh, and have made terms with liberalism.

Is it possible to sup with the devil even if you possess the proverbial long spoon? No, it is not possible, because no matter what spoon you use you will be eating from the devil’s table. Very few Europeans want to eat all of the devil’s supper; they want only the dishes that they think will please their stomachs without hurting them. Thus a career-oriented woman wants financial independence from men, but she would like them to step forward and be men again when Moslem rapists attack. The white-hating academic reserves the right to criticize all things white and European in his classroom, but he still wants to enjoy the Black Forest of Germany, the restaurants in Paris, and the Lake District of England, which Wordsworth wrote about. The liberals think they can continue to serve Satan while indulging in all the pleasures stemming from a Christian culture. For a time they will be able to do just that. But their time is running out, which would not be a great tragedy but for the fact that before they are gone they will have destroyed the European people.

My one great quarrel with the statistical ‘death of the West’ men is that they treat existence as a math problem. Men are not recorders to be played upon as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern wanted to play upon Hamlet. Nor are they piano keys, as Dostoyevsky’s scientific enemies suggested they were. If the Europeans would break free of the liberalism of the church, the state, and the academy, they would conquer still. “And if wishes were horses, beggars would ride,” is the response of the good, solid, practical man. But why isn’t it possible for beggars to ride? The proverbial practical wisdom – that we cannot make something come true because we want it to come true — is only partially correct. There is a deeper wisdom than proverbial wisdom. When the wish is joined with His will, beggars often do become Kings who ride the finest horses in the land. That is what happens in the European fairy tales, in which the people

believe in the aristocracy of the spirit rather than in the democracy of the aristocracy. The third dumb brothers rise because they have that within which passeth show. Gottschalk the shepherd and Dummling from the Grimms' story of the Golden Goose are the stuff that counterrevolutions are made on.

Nothing but evil will befall the European people if they do not respond to liberalism as heroes in the fairy tales respond to evil witches, goblins, giants, and wizards. The fairytale heroes venture forth with Christ, not their own brilliance, as their protector, to fight the good fight against all those who prey on innocence and attack their people. The external visages might differ (actually in Angela Merkel's case she does literally look like a witch), but internally the liberals and the barbarians of color (the goblins) are just as evil as their villainous fairy tale counterparts. Cruel, Christ-less, intellectual Christianity is no match for the villainy of the Angela Merkel, Tony Blair ("Britain must be multicultural") type liberal. In fact intellectual Christianity has spawned liberalism. When left unchecked, intellectual Christianity produced demonic Christ-haters such as Pope Francis. Too strong? What else can we call those anti-European "Christians" who out-liberal the liberals in their hatred of God? They constantly attack Him by defacing His image in man.

It was and still is the mission of the European people to keep the church of Christ free of the men who have hardened their hearts against the living God and replaced Him with a pagan Christ who is part Socrates, part Gandhi, and part Nelson Mandela. Such blasphemy cannot and shall not be countenanced. The mystical body of Christ's church consists of those who believe as St. Paul believed: "I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me." That is the Promethean fire, the fire of Christ in man, that made the European nations different in kind from all other nations. The European pagan cultures differ only in degree from the colored heathen cultures. That is why intellectual Christians of the white race can join with Hindus, Aztecs, Africans, Buddhists, Moslems, etc. They have more in common with such heathens than they have with the Christian Europeans who have made Christ part of their blood faith. In the name of a higher Christian faith, a purified intellectual faith, the intellectual Christians have joined forces with the liberals to denounce the God with a heart of flesh, and to denounce the European people who still believe in that God. Pope Francis wants to build bridges to Moslems, Aztecs, Voodoo men, and the usual array of fiends, but he wants to burn all bridges to the European people. "Let them be an anathema."

The anti-European intellectuals studied their people with the intent to improve them by destroying them. When people are abstractions, they have no race, no gender, no humanity. The great replacement of the European people for the purer people of color began in the 20th century. The fruits are all around us now. Is it a better world? No, in point of fact we have exchanged heaven for hell. Yes, I know that when the focus is on the sins of the people of the white European villages of Christian Europe that we are not looking at heaven. But we are, I maintain, looking at heaven through a dark glass. This was brought home to me a few months ago when I saw a newsreel of a Dutch town in the early 1950s. The newsreel showed the Dutch people – it could have been any small European town – going about their daily lives much as the people of 100, 200, or 300 years ago must have gone about their daily lives. And their lives were free from black barbarism, Moslem blasphemy, and every other anti-European activity. But somewhere in that village was an academic. A man who was studying how to bring enlightenment, which means diversity, to that disgustingly white, provincial Dutch village. And that academic, and his fellow serpents, were successful. That Dutch town now only exists, as all such European towns now exist, in the memories of the old villagers and in the hearts of those who have died in the arms of the Lord.

The difference between heaven and hell — that is what we fight for. The non-diverse culture of the antique Europeans gave us a glimpse of heaven. We could believe that there was an eternal Europe presided over by Christ the King, because amidst the pain and suffering of this world we saw, through the love of our people, that what was good in this world was a reflection of a better world to come. "His Kingdom come, His will be done, on earth as it is in Heaven." It is that glimpse of heaven contained in the European village that we forfeit when we allow Europe to become diverse.

It is not, or at least it should not be, a matter of limiting the immigration of Moslems, blacks, Hindus, or Mexicans. It should be a matter of evicting all the non-European people from Europe. Protest movements only are effective when the government cares about the people making the protests. (1) When Europeans protest the invasion of Europe who are they protesting to? They are protesting to Ganelon, the same traitor who sold out his people to the infidel. We can't give up that glimpse of heaven that our ancestors vouchsafed to us. We need that vision and our children need that vision. There is no sustainable life on this earth without the vision of the non-diverse European village consecrated to Christ the King. +

(1) There are two fables by Jean de la Fontaine that speak directly to the Europeans. In the first, "The Wolf and the Lamb," we see the futility of seeking mercy from those who are intent on destroying us. It's a cautionary tale for Europeans who think that democratic protests will make the Angela Merkels of the West have mercy on the European people. And the second fable, "The Brach and Her Friend," is like unto the first. We, the European people, have befriended the black barbarians and the Moslems and in return for that friendship we have lost our homeland.

THE WOLF AND THE LAMB

Might has a conquering logic of its own,
As will immediately be shown.

A Lamb one morning to the brink
Of a clear stream went down to drink.
A Wolf adventuring in quest of food
Came to the spot, and flew into a passion,
Saying: 'I like your hardihood,
To foul my drink in this disgusting fashion.
Now for the chastisement I owe you!'
'Nay,' said the Lamb, 'so please Your Grace,
Your Lordship's wrath is out of place.
A moment's thought will clearly show you
I'm drinking twenty yards below you,
And therefore cannot possibly
Befoul your beverage in the least degree.'
'You do,' he snarled; 'moreover, I'll be sworn
'Twas you maligned me last July.
'How could I, when I wasn't born?
I'm not yet weaned' was the reply.
'Well, if it wasn't you, it was your brother,'
'I have none.' Then it was some other
Of your insufferable crew
'Tis common talk on every side.
I'm sick of being vilified
By sheep, lambs, dogs, and shepherds too:
'Tis time I made my vengeance good.'
Thereon he haled him to the wood,
And ate him in a righteous fury
Without recourse to judge or jury.

THE BRACH AND HER FRIEND

A Brach, whose time drew near apace,
Being at a loss for a convenient place,
Prevailed upon a friend, by much persuasion,
To lend her kennel for th' occasion.
But when the owner in due course returned,
The tenant begged a fortnight's grace.
Her babes, she said, had scarcely learned,
As yet, to walk. She did not ask in vain.
That term elapsed, the hostess claimed again
Her house, her chamber, and her bed.

This time the mother showed her teeth, and said:
‘We are all quite prepared to go,
Provided you can turn us out.’
The pups, you see, were now grown large and stout.
Gifts to a rascal, as this tale will show,
Are always matter for regret.
Only a lawsuit, or a blow,
Induces him to pay a debt;
And once he has a foot within the door,
Your dwelling is your own no more.

It Is Time

May 28, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Charles Dickens, Rudyard Kipling, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



"O, listen to it—listen to it, dear, generous lady!" said Margaret, throwing herself on her knees and grasping those of her benefactress and looking in that attitude like a beautiful mortal in the act of supplicating her tutelary angel; "the laws of men are but the injunctions of mortality, but what the heart prompts is the echo of the voice from heaven within us." — Walter Scott, *The Fortunes of Nigel*

In Ecclesiastes Chapter 3, we are told that, "To everything there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven..." And among the many seasons there is, "A time to kill." For the non-European it is always a time to kill. They ignore all the other seasons and focus on just the killing season. The European has done something quite different from the non-European who has focused only on the time to kill. The European has thrown out the wisdom of Ecclesiastes, which was in the blood of the European people, and replaced that wisdom with the wisdom of the mind-forged shackles of Satan. Ever since the Thomistic revolt against the living God within man, the European people have been inundated with propaganda stressing that God is 'out there'; He is the end product of a 'process'. Thus in order to be one with God we must be loyal to 'the process.' First the process was contained in the ecclesiastical system and then it spread to more secular forms, such as Jacobinism, communism, and the modern democratic systems.

Now a white man cannot act without reference to either an ecclesiastical process or the democratic process. This is the primary reason that white Europeans are defenseless against the barbarians of color and the Moslems. Before the 'process' mentality took hold of the white man, he would see an evil, such as black barbarism or Islamic barbarianism, and his heart, which was connected to the Living God, would well up within him and he would strike back in defense of his people. But when the heart's promptings are ignored, because they are much too unreliable and vague, and all decisions of importance are referred to 'the process,' then the white man is a man no more, he is an Undine, a man without a soul. ([¶](#))

In my lifetime I've seen the white man's resolution sickled o'er with the pale cast of 'the process,' and thus the enterprises of great pith and moment, such as the anti-abortion movement and the anti-white genocide movement, have gone awry and lost the name of action. The European man, before he became an Undine, would have gone after the killers. The European people, before they turned their hearts to stone and gave their consciences to the 'process,' would have seen that it was "time to kill" the murderers of their people and the liberals who let loose the murdering colored heathens on their people.

Thomas Nelson Page wrote of the white man's code which was "bred in the bone," and Edmund Burke referred to "that charity of honor." What both men were lauding was the spirit of Christ in man that had taken hold of the European people and made them unlike any other people. But now that the 'process' has replaced the 'Christ in man' Christianity, the liberals have become one with the non-European people. They, along with the colored heathens, see that it is a time for killing, the killing of white people. The only difference between the liberal and the colored heathens is that the liberal, because he is white, will only kill through the process. He will pass laws making infanticide legal, which enables him to slaughter babies through the 'process.' He will allow Moslem and colored heathens to murder and rape whites, but this too he will do through the democratic process or through the ecclesiastical process. And in most instances the ecclesiastical process and the democratic process blend together. You couldn't find a more satanic Pope than Pope Francis unless you placed Satan himself on the papal throne.

The columnist Ann Coulter recently opined that America was finished if Trump was not elected. I know what she means by that statement: She means that America will be overrun by Mexicans and Moslems and it will cease to be the America that she has come to know. But the only legitimate America, the America that was white and Christian, died when the South died. The 'city on a hill' America, the 'democratic process' America, was never a nation, it was an anti-nation dedicated to the same modern Jacobin principles as the French Revolution. Our much lauded "friend" — Lafayette — went on from our revolution to become a regicide in his nation. But the essential point is that no matter if Trump wins or loses, 'the process' still reigns supreme in the white man's head. A Trump victory will slow down the rate of decay, but it will not stop the decay nor will it cure the disease that has taken hold of the white Europeans of this anti-nation and the anti-nations of Europe. It is only when the 'process' mentality is defeated that the Europeans will rise from the dead and become a people again.

It's past the eleventh hour in every European country if you are hoping for a democratic victory that will turn back the barbarian hordes. The democratic process will not save the European people, but what it will do, if the Europeans do not turn away from it, is drag them down into hell. The process, in church and state, was created by Satan to destroy the resistance to his will on earth. For without a heart that loves and hates, a man is a reed for every satanic wind that blows. As Miss Havisham trained Estella, so has the devil trained the European people. The prompting of the heart was our daylight:

"I begin to think," said Estella, in a musing way, after another moment of calm wonder, "that I almost understand how this comes about. If you had brought up your adopted daughter wholly in the dark confinement of these rooms, and had never let her know that there was such a thing as the daylight by which she had never once seen your face, —if you had done that, and then, for a purpose had wanted her to understand the daylight and know all about it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

Miss Havisham, with her head in her hands, sat making a low moaning, and swaying herself on her chair, but gave no answer.

"Or," said Estella,— "which is a nearer case,—if you had taught her, from the dawn of her intelligence, with your utmost energy and might, that there was such a thing as daylight, but that it was made to be her enemy and destroyer, and she must always turn against it, for it had blighted you and would else blight her;—if you had done this, and then, for a purpose, had wanted her to take naturally to the daylight and she could not do it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

The 'process' mentality took hold of the European people when the sons of Martha in the church defeated the sons of Mary. That little domestic squabble was so much more than a little domestic squabble. It had to do with the way we respond to divine charity. Do we put the process about God, which gives us a formula for living, above the promptings of our heart which tells us how to respond to divine grace? Martha accepts her rebuke, but the church men, the Grand Inquisitors who thought their mind-forged systems were superior to Christ's wisdom, imposed the rule of Martha on the sons of Mary. Kipling gets it wrong in his poem, "The Sons of Martha," when he takes up the cudgels for the sons of Martha who do the "real" work in the world. He misses the point — the real work of the world is done by the sons of Mary, as Kipling himself comes to realize some eleven years after his defense of the sons of Martha:

*One grief on me is laid
Each day of every year.
Wherein no soul can aid.
Whereof no soul can hear:
Whereto no end is seen
Except to grieve again—
Ah, Mary Magdalene.
Where is there greater pain?*

*To dream on dear disgrace
Each hour of every day—*

*To bring no honest face
To aught I do or say:
To lie from morn till e'en-
To know my lies are vain-
Ah, Mary Magdalene.
Where can be greater pain?*

*To watch my steadfast fear
Attend my every way
Each day of every year-
Each hour of every day
To burn, and chill between-
To quake and rage again-
Ah, Mary Magdalene.
Where shall be greater pain?*

*One grave to me was given-
To guard till Judgment Day-
But God looked down from Heaven
And rolled the Stone away!
One day of all my years-
One hour of that one day-
His Angel saw my tears
And rolled the Stone away!*

The ‘process’ leads to the grave and stops there; the promptings of our heart lead us to the Man of Sorrows who “rolled the stone away.”

The real Europe is the Europe of “that good part” which we have allowed the liberals to take away from us. Thus far there has been no resistance to the liberals’ new world order. There have been some grumblings from the white sons of Martha about the furniture arrangements in the liberals’ new world order, but there has been no counter-revolution by the sons of Mary. It seems that they are all hiding in the upper room, wondering what has happened to their leader: “They have taken my Lord, and I know not where to find him.” Where do we find our Lord? If he has not lied to us, we can find Him on the road to Emmaus:

Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

If our hearts do not burn within us in the presence of our Lord, we will never rise up and return to Jerusalem. Christ, not a ‘process,’ was at the heart of old Europe. If we keep that Europe before our eyes, our hearts will burn within us and we will rise up and return to old Europe. In that Europe men knew the seasons, they knew when it was time to kill in defense of their people who made Christ, not a ‘process’, the center of their civilization. We cannot love a process, but we can love a God who enters human hearts. And we can fight for that God and His people even unto the ending of the world.

When the European people took Christ into their hearts, they took all of the wisdom of Ecclesiastes and the rest of the Bible into their hearts, because His heart contains all the wisdom of this world and the next. The closer we come to the heart of Europe, the closer we come to Him. For how long will the European people remain the slaves of the liberals and the colored heathens? For as long as they put their faith in the process and forsake His holy cross which has redeemed the world. Once we have broken free of the process the rulers of darkness, which have seemed invincible, will no longer be invincible. Such was the wisdom of our people when they were a people. I trust their hearts more than the minds of the men who created the processes. It is time for the Europeans to be Europeans once again. +

(1) I recently read a statement by a German leader of an anti-Islamic group. He said that he and the members of his group would use every *legal* means to stop the building of another mosque in Germany. That is, sadly, such a pathetic statement. Legal means? Haven’t the mosques been built ‘legally’? Hasn’t the Chancellor of Germany said that Moslems are Germans? Haven’t the government officials said that they intend to replace the native-born Germans with Moslems? And you say you are going to use all legal means against the legal, white-hating government?

The European counter-revolution will not come from the ranks of men who appeal to the process for justice and mercy. Such appeals will have the same effect as Bassanio’s plea to Shylock to render Antonio mercy. It is the men of blood, the men of the European hearth, whose hearts tell them that the slaughter of whites must be stopped by any means necessary within the bounds of Christian chivalry, who will cleanse Europe of the Christ-hating liberals and the colored heathens who hate the European people with a hatred fueled by Satan.

I believe Germany and the rest of the European nations still possess men of European blood. The process has controlled the European people for over a century, but still there are Europeans who will respond to the promptings of their hearts and go against the process. If this be error and upon me proved, then it is still better to go down with His Europe than to live in the liberals’ hell.

Among Us But Not of Us

June 4, 2016

Categories: Charity, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Hippolyte Taine, Shakespeare



Thy life's a miracle. —King Lear

We have seen, *ad nauseam*, how the Jacobins of democracy work. They open up their borders to the barbarians of color without the approval of the native born, then they give the colored heathens voting rights, and proudly proclaim that the majority of their people are in favor of the extermination of the white race. And white people are unable to oppose the liberals because they cannot muster up enough votes to vote the liberals out of office. That is the democratic conundrum which keeps the white man a prisoner in the white lands.

Why not break out of the democratic prison? The Moslems and the barbarians of color are now part of the history of Europe, but they are not part of the soul of Europe. And whatever is not part of the soul of Europe should be expelled from Europe. You can physically violate a person, and by that violation you violate the soul as well. But you cannot change the soul of the victims; their souls remain their own. Europe has been and continues to be violated. But its Christian soul remains intact. We must avenge her violation. They, the invaders, are now part of our history, an infamous part of our history, but they are not of Europe, they are from the dark holes and corners of the world that are connected to hell. The liberals want to blend with them because they, like the demons who went into the swine, hate Jesus Christ and love the devil. (1)

The next part of the Europeans' history will be the reconquest. The face of Europe will show the ashes of heathen places of worship and the ashes of what were formally welcome centers for the invaders. This is not a subject for debate, it is not something we should vote on: Europe will not be a home for infidels and liberals. The greatest crusade of them all has begun, the crusade to drive the heathens from the European lands.

We cannot rob our children of their spiritual heritage nor can we dishonor our dead. This sacrilege cannot be permitted any longer. It is about our Christian soul. At Europe's heart is Christ; can we allow that Sacred Heart to be obscured and supplanted in the hearts of our posterity by the blasphemies of the liberals, the colored barbarians, and the Moslems?

Heart of London, there is a moral in thy every stroke! As I look on at thy indomitable working, which neither death, nor press of life, nor grief, nor gladness out of doors will influence one jot, I seem to hear a voice within thee which sinks into my heart, bidding me, as I elbow my way among the crowd, have some thought for the meanest wretch that passes, and, being a man, to turn away with scorn and pride from none that bear the human shape. —Dickens

Dickens' London is every European city, town, and country dwelling. Millions upon millions of white Christian souls made those cities, towns, and country dwellings the Christ-dwelling places, because they said "Come, Lord Jesus, into our hearts." Christian mysticism is not an intellectual system, it is not a series of spiritual exercises, it is a meeting of hearts – The divine heart of Christ touches the heart of man and a miracle of grace occurs. In *King Lear*, when Edgar's father is in despair and seeks a way to end his life, Edgar tells him that his life is a miracle. That is what Europe was and still is at heart. Europe is a miracle of divine love. Michelangelo got it right when he painted the Sistine Chapel. God in heaven reaches out to us through our Divine Savior, Jesus Christ. We cannot comprehend the significance or the enormity of that divine condescension with our intellects alone. No work of philosophy or theology has ever come close to a definition or a description of that miracle. But our people have shown us the miracle, because they lived it. They took Christ into their hearts, and Europe was the result. Our bards are not like unto the bards of the heathens, because the lay of the European bard tells us of the mystic connection between the sacred heart that has redeemed the world and the men and the woman who gave Him their hearts.

As I watch the heathens come into Europe, completely unopposed, I keep hearing Edgar's words, "Thy life's a miracle." This invasion will not be voted away; the revolutionary tribunal governments of Europe will not allow that. But this is not the end of Europe. It is the end of democratic Europe. That Europe is not of Europe. It will turn to ashes just as Maleficent turned to ashes when Prince Phillip threw the sword of truth into her heart.

The modern critics like to deride Prince Hal for his rejection of Falstaff, but Falstaff was given every chance to be a loyal friend and soldier, and he refused all those chances. So Hal does what he has to do, he rejects Falstaff:

*I know thee not, old man; fall to thy prayers.
How ill white hairs become a fool and jester!
I have long dreamt of such a kind of man,
So surfeit-swell'd, so old and so profane;
But, being awak'd, I do despise my dream.*

Falstaff is democratic Europe, so "surfeit-swell'd... so profane." Once we wake from that life-in-death nightmare (call it democracy or diversity or egalitarianism) we will do what Europeans have always done, we will fight the heathens.

Everything coming from democratic, scientific Europe has been a lie. Psychology has not shown us previously unexplored regions of the human soul. Instead the scientific psychologists have reduced man to a triviality. He is a laboratory specimen full of easily recognizable phobias and impulses. A little dash of reason, science, and liberalism will fix him. When he is fixed, he can worship in the atheist church of his choice, or he can worship directly at the font of all satanic knowledge, the University. The white man of the 20th and 21st century has studied himself out of existence. The old fairy tales were true: There is God, there is the devil, and a flesh and blood man, not a lab specimen, who needs to know that there is a loving Savior who will protect him against the wickedness and snares of the devil. The devil's most effective snare has been and continues to be – "Only a stupid idiot believes that there is a devil who roams about the world seeking the ruin of souls." But there is a devil and we need the Savior who comes to us through our racial hearth fire to help us in our war against our ancient and eternal foe. If we try to use the democratic process or an ecclesiastical process to fight Satan and his minions, we will be consumed by that process. The processes in church and state serve Satan; that is why the Pope Francises and Angela Merkels of the world support those processes. If we step away from the modern rendering factories of the liberals, we will find the real world, the world of the European fairy tale, where the memory of a love that passeth all understanding still "holds a seat." To remember, to hold His cross before our eyes, and to uphold the rights of the Savior who died on that cross, is all in all. If the European people will not defend His Kingdom come, on earth as it is in heaven, who will?

I saw a video recently of an endless stream of colored heathens, what the liberals call ‘refugees,’ flooding over the borders into Europe. I thought of that old hymn – “Onward, Christian Soldiers.” But I thought of the Satanic inverse of that song, “Onward, satanic warriors, going as to war, with the Archangel Satan, going on before.” Satan is not just at the gates, he has invaded Europe through his people, the liberals and the colored barbarians. But Satan, unlike Christ who is bound to his people in love, is only bound to his people in hate. They don’t love one another, they are incapable of love, but they do hate — they hate the white Europeans and their God.

The new alternative right is from the left. They use the same psychological mumbo-jumbo as their liberal brethren. And they do not love the European people. We don’t need more smart Europeans; we need Europeans who love and hate with all their heart. A European who has an unshakable faith in the living God of the European people, when they were a people, will not allow the colored heathens to occupy Europe. No matter how many votes they get, no matter that the military and the police protect them, the Europeans will drive the heathens from their lands. But men will not fight without faith. When the Europeans stop believing in Jacobin democracy, psychology, and science, and return to the faith of their fathers, they will see the European Phoenix rise from the ashes while the idols of the liberals, the Moslems, and the colored barbarians turn to ashes.

It seems simple-minded to suggest that charity never faileth when charity seems to be a complete failure. Has charity stopped the invasion of Europe? Hasn’t the invasion occurred because of charity? No, the invasion of Europe has taken place because the liberals have not charity, and because the European people have not fought liberalism in the name of charity. Charity has a local habitation and a name. Without calling on Him by name – and He still waits for us at our racial hearth fire – we can do nothing. And with Him? Look what the Europeans who called on Him by name achieved. They built Europe.

The liberals have not retreated, they still believe in and act according to the Jacobin principles of their white-hating ancestors: “No light reaches eyes which regard blindness as clear-sightedness; no remorse affects a soul which erects barbarism into patriotism and which sanctions murder with duty.” (Taine) The liberals will do their duty – they will destroy the white race if the European people do not purge democracy and everything that accompanies it – pacifism, Islam, negro worship, atheism, feminism – from their hearts. The Prince in Disney’s *Snow White* declares that he has room in his heart for only one love. Millions of European people have lived and died loving Him in and through their people. It is not impractical or unrealistic to believe that the Europeans will triumph still if they love where they should love and hate where they should hate. +

(1) Aren’t the liberals, in their fervent desire to rid themselves of the Christ-bearing people and to enter into the colored swine, reacting like the demons in the Gospel? Yes, they are. And we must refuse to go over the cliff with them even if it means being non-democratic, simple-minded, and – horror of horrors – racist.

The Trumpet Shall Sound and the Europeans Shall Rise

June 11, 2016

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



"If you were born to honor, show it now;" – Shakespeare, [Pericles](#)

I recently saw an Italian nationalist, a Christian, explaining to a hostile newsman the reason why he wanted the Moslems to be sent back to their own lands. Everything the Italian patriot said made perfect sense. He stated what every European should say about their own nations. He said the Italians' culture was Christian and that culture could not be blended with the Islamic culture. He went on to suggest that wealthy Italians could assist the repatriated Moslems in their own country, but all the Moslems should be expelled from Italy. That would be a humane, Christian way to handle the 'immigration crisis.' But of course such a humane, Christian policy will not be implemented. It will not be implemented because European Christians, such as that Italian patriot, have failed to come to terms with liberalism. Burke came to terms with liberalism:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephegmatized, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctions visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. –[A Letter to a Noble Lord](#)

Scott came to terms with liberalism:

In this point of view, Goethe's conception of the character and reasoning of Mephistopheles, the tempting spirit in the singular play of "Faust," appears to me more happy than that which has been formed by Byron, and even than the Satan of Milton. These last great authors have given to the Evil Principle something which elevates and dignifies his wickedness; a sustained and unconquerable resistance against Omnipotence itself—a lofty scorn of suffering compared with submission, and all those points of attraction in the Author of Evil, which have induced Burns and others to consider him as the Hero of the "Paradise Lost." The great German poet has, on the contrary, rendered his seducing spirit a being who, otherwise totally unimpassioned, seems only to have existed for the purpose of increasing, by his persuasions and temptations, the mass of moral evil, and who calls forth by his seductions those slumbering passions which otherwise might have allowed the human being who was the object of the Evil Spirit's operations to pass the tenor of his life in tranquility. For this purpose Mephistopheles is, like Louis XI., endowed with an acute and depreciating spirit of caustic wit, which is employed incessantly in undervaluing and vilifying all actions, the consequences of which do not lead certainly and directly to self-gratification. –[Introduction to Quentin Durward](#)

And Dostoyevsky came to terms with liberalism:

She had never seen such men of letters before; they were incredibly but quite openly vain, as though in being so vain they were performing some sort of function. Some, though by no means all, arrived drunk and then behaved as if there were something beautiful in drunkenness that they had discovered only yesterday. Indeed, they all seemed proud of something. Their faces proclaimed that they had just this minute discovered some terribly important secret. They swore at one another and admired themselves for doing so. It was difficult to find out what they had actually written, but they described themselves as critics, novelists, satirists, playwrights, and debunkers. –[The Possessed](#)

But the betwixt-and-between European Everyman still has not learned that you cannot compromise with liberals. It is all or nothing – Christ or the devil.

The European Christians who are resisting the Moslem invasion of the European nations are making the same mistakes the proliferators made. They say they know what liberals are, but if they truly knew what they are, satanically possessed swine, would they try to appeal to their humanity? "Please stop abortion; it kills a young child," and, "Please stop allowing Moslems into our nation; they are destroying our culture and killing our people." Would you ask a wolf to spare the sheep in your pasture or would you kill the wolf? The liberals hate everything that is humane and Christian, so why would you expect them to stop killing babies and white people simply because you point out to them that legalized abortion and legalized white genocide are inhumane? The liberals know what they are doing in both cases. They want to kill babies and they want to destroy the white race. White Christians can either kill the wolves – the liberals and the colored heathen – or they can sit back and watch the slaughter while they keep appealing to the wolves' humanity.

The integral Christian instinctively knows and loves the good and instinctively knows and hates evil. But what happens when Christian men rebuild the Tower of Babel in the belief that Christians do not have to worry about the sin of pride? A false dichotomy is set up between the heart and the head. The hierarchy of the various churches push a satanic agenda that is grounded in the mind of Satan, while the laity are torn between the Savior who enters human hearts and the mind-forged Churchianity espoused by Satanists in clerical attire. The prolific Christian and the anti-Moslem Christian will always stop short of a call to arms against the enemies of his people, because the leaders of his church are wedded to a satanic universalism that condemns all things white and Christian. Hence the white Christian with a remnant of the true faith in his heart will make a timid protest against the Islamic invasion, but he will refrain from taking the necessary measures to stop the invasion, because he dare not call liberals evil when the leaders of his own church are liberals who are in favor of the Islamic invasion. And he dare not touch the issue of the black infestation of his nation, which is just as dangerous and often combined with the Islamic invasion, because that goes against the satanic universalism

of the anti-Christian churches. The day of reckoning for the liberals and the colored heathens will come when the European people give up intellectual Christianity and return to the faith of their fathers, who believed in the Christ who enters human hearts, not the satanic archangel who enters human minds.

The decadent poet, Andre Gidé, opined that he didn't believe in the devil, but that is what the devil wanted. The devil wanted Gidé to be "too smart" to believe in the devil so that he could work his will upon him. As long as European Christians are conflicted between the heart of Christ and the minds of their satanic leaders they will be at the mercy of Satan, who rules through his minions, the liberals.

When a man leaves his Christian home and goes out into the world, does he go out into the world as the third dumb brother goes out into the world, armed with that charity of honor that was instilled into him at his racial hearth fire, or does he go out into the world as his two older, clever brothers went out into the world – to ignore that charity of honor and serve Satan? The European who abandons the mystical body of the church, which consists of all those who have taken Christ into their hearts and welcomed Him at their racial hearth fire, for organized Jewry, which consists of all the organized branches of the heart-hardened, Christ-less Christian churches, will always be torn between European Christianity which is now condemned as racist, and the universalist, satanic faith of the church men. The European people are not as cowardly as they appear. From a purely pagan perspective, they appear to be cowards who will not fight for their people. But they are conflicted. They must go against the faith they have been taught, which is intellectual Christianity, in order to fight the devil and his minions in the name of an older and now condemned racist faith. Thus intellectual Christianity makes cowards of all its adherents. One longs for the return of the Goth, the Christian European who fears nothing, fights for his own, and loves and hates with all his heart. In short, one longs for an integral European who will not bow down and worship at the liberals' shrines in church and state, and who will not respond to the murder and rape of his people with letters to the editor or protest marches, but will respond with fire and sword. The Christ-hating liberal, Adolf Hitler, asked, "Is Paris burning?" It was not. We, the Christ-bearing Europeans, need to ask, "Are the heathens' altars burning?" And if they are not burning, then why are they not burning?

Anthony Jacob, the spiritual heir of Edmund Burke, pointed out that the colored hordes of the Moslem and negroid tribes were not conquering the West because of their military might. They were conquering the West because the liberals were allowing them to conquer the West. Why are the liberals inviting the colored heathens into Europe? The obvious answer is the correct one: Because they worship darkness and not the light. But why do they worship darkness? That is a mystery that has to do with God's grace and human free will. All we know is that the liberals hate all things Christian. And since it was the European people who formed an incorporate union with Christ, the liberals hate the European people. They will not cease from

mental strife until the white race no longer exists. When Tony Blair says Britain must be multi-cultural, and when Nicholas Sarkozy says that the French people must be multi-racial, they are both expressing the liberals' mandate – all whites must perish so a liberal utopia can be established. And the spiritual fount of secular, liberal utopianism is intellectual Christianity. The French clergy at the time of the French Revolution were more worried about adherents to their system going over to the Protestant faith than they were worried about whether or not their people believed in the Son of God. The organized Christian-Jewry that Dostoyevsky saw as the aid and support of the Communists was the Christ-less Christianity of the Grand Inquisitor, who gave the people an earthly utopia as a replacement for the Son of God. That earthly utopia has turned into a very rancid and foul-tasting pot of lentils, has it not? Apparently it still gives sustenance and hope to enough white Europeans so that it prevents them from detaching themselves from liberalism. They are still trying to find a place within the confines of a utopian system that is designed to kill every last white and to destroy every cultural remnant of the white Europeans' Christian culture.

I've heard many on the right say that the liberals have overplayed their hands by becoming so blatant with their liberalism – their outright advocacy of the Moslem invasion, their aggressive pro-active stance on homosexual marriage and transgender rights, and their complete capitulation to black murderers and rapists. Have the liberals overplayed their hands? It's certainly possible; they are not infallible. But I don't see any signs that white people understand what liberals are, the aforementioned demon-swine, and thus I see no signs that white people are determined to fight the liberals. It is my hope that the grace of God is working in the unseen recesses of a handful of Europeans' hearts, and that indwelling spirit of God will soon bear good fruits. That is my hope and that is my faith, for what is faith if it is seen? Will Satan have the last sneer? Will all of old Europe perish while the sneering liberals and the triumphant heathens of color dance on her grave? My mind says, yes, that is precisely what shall happen. But my heart tells me that such shadows will be altered at the last trump, at the twinkling of an eye, by men and women of European blood who still love Him in and through their people. +

We All Shall Come Home

June 18, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Richard Knolles, Robert Louis Stevenson



The indulgence of a sort of undefined hope, an obscure confidence, that some lurking remains of virtue, some degree of shame, might exist in the breasts of the oppressors of France, has been among the causes which have helped to bring on the common ruin of king and people. There is no safety for honest men, but by believing all possible evil of evil men, and by acting with promptitude, decision, and steadiness on that belief. I well remember, at every epoch of this wonderful history, in every scene of this tragic business, that when your sophistic usurpers were laying down mischievous principles, and even applying them in direct resolutions, it was the fashion to say, that they never intended to execute those declarations in their rigour. This made men cautious in their opposition, and remiss in early precaution. By holding out this fallacious hope, the impostors deluded sometimes one description of men, and sometimes another, so that no means of resistance were provided against them, when they came to execute in cruelty what they had planned in fraud. — [A letter from Mr. Burke, to a member of the National Assembly: in answer to some objections to his book on French affairs.](#)

Keepsake Mill

Over the borders, a sin without pardon,
Breaking the branches and crawling below,
Out through the breach in the wall of the garden,
Down by the banks of the river, we go.

Here is the mill with the humming of thunder,
Here is the weir with the wonder of foam,
Here is the sluice with the race running under—
Marvellous places, though handy to home!

Sounds of the village grow stiller and stiller,
Stiller the note of the birds on the hill;
Dusty and dim are the eyes of the miller,
Deaf are his ears with the moil of the mill.

Years may go by, and the wheel in the river
Wheel as it wheels for us, children, to-day,
Wheel and keep roaring and foaming for ever
Long after all of the boys are away.

Home from the Indies and home from the ocean,
Heroes and soldiers we all shall come home;
Still we shall find the old mill wheel in motion,
Turning and churning that river to foam.

You with the bean that I gave when we quarrelled,
I with your marble of Saturday last,
Honoured and old and all gaily apparelled,
Here we shall meet and remember the past.

—Robert Louis Stevenson

I haven't seen a mainstream news channel for over two months, but when my son told me that there had been a record-breaking mass murder, I bit the bullet and turned on the news. That was a mistake. The CNN crowd was droning on about gun control while the Fox News liberals had a terrorism "expert" on their show exhorting Americans to bomb ISIS. Puck was right: "Lord, what fools these mortals be." It should be obvious to all who have eyes to see, which excludes the liberals, that we need less gun control. When terrorists strike, an armed citizenry should strike back at them. And it should be equally obvious that bombing ISIS over there will not stop home-grown Moslems over here from going on killing sprees in the name of Islam. America's terrorist problem, like Europe's terrorist problem, is insolvable so long as the European people remain under the thrall of a utopian universalism, which is opposed to all things Christian and all things European. Indeed, the two – Christianity and Europe – cannot be separated. There is no Christianity other than European Christianity, and the European people have no identity if they separate themselves from their Christian past. But of course that is what the liberals of all stamps have done. They have divorced Christ and married Satan. And because of their new marriage with Satan, the European people are incapable of defending themselves as a people. They can and will defend Jacobin democracy in Church and state, an ideology which was created to destroy the image of God in man by destroying the Christ-bearing race, but they will not defend the European people. This is why the obvious solutions to such problems as Islamic terrorism, obvious to simple-minded peasants such as myself, are not obvious to the liberals. The European peasant says that the way to stop Islamic terrorism is to evict all Moslems from the Western countries. But the new European finds such solutions simple-minded and racist. Thus he suggests that we make war on guns or against 'bad'

Moslems, but he never confronts the fact that liberalism is an ideology that renders its adherents incapable of fighting evil, because liberalism is a Satanic ideology designed to destroy the good and perpetuate evil.

It would not be necessary, if the European people believed in a Europe that was white and Christian, to look for the bad Moslems. A white Christian people would not grant rights of citizenship to any one of the Moslem faith, a faith opposed to the faith of the European people. Nor would a white Christian people permit Mexicans, blacks, or any other non-white race within their borders. But until the European people reclaim their past and become Europeans again, they will be as the people of Israel who followed the Pharisees: "And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch."

If you have ever had a relative or a family friend with Alzheimer's disease you know how sad that disease is. Those who have the illness often seem as the ones who, "did not die, but nothing of life remained." But when there is a flash of memory, it seems as if the loved one has returned, for a moment, from the dead. The European people are suffering from a spiritual Alzheimer's. They have flashes of humanity when they remember what they were, but the memory is soon absorbed by the ever-present, ever-vigilant, liberal, medical staff. It is their special mission to keep the European people in a permanent state of spiritual Alzheimer's. There must be no memories of old Europe, because such a memory, if it is sustained and acted on by the European people, would destroy Liberalism. Dickens stands, along with Scott and Dostoyevsky, as a giant among the European novelists, because he stayed close to the human heart. And by doing so, he gave us a glimpse of the divine Heart. In his novel, *Nicholas Nickleby*, Dickens connects our memory, the memory of our childhood, with the divine.

As the door of the vehicle was roughly closed, a comb fell from Kate's hair, close at her uncle's feet; and as he picked it up, and returned it into her hand, the light from a neighbouring lamp shone upon her face. The lock of hair that had escaped and curled loosely over her brow, the traces of tears yet scarcely dry, the flushed cheek, the look of sorrow, all fired some dormant train of recollection in the old man's breast; and the face of his dead brother seemed present before him, with the very look it bore on some occasion of boyish grief, of which every minutest circumstance flashed upon his mind, with the distinctness of a scene of yesterday.

Ralph Nickleby, who was proof against all appeals of blood and kindred—who was steeled against every tale of sorrow and distress—staggered while he looked, and went back into his house, as a man who had seen a spirit from some world beyond the grave.

Of course Ralph Nickleby, who was a forerunner of Ebenezer Scrooge, does not sustain that memory. If he had, he would have died in the arms of the Lord and seen the real Europe, Christ's Europe, which waits for us beyond the grave. It is Jesus Christ and all "love's loving parts" – our kith and kin – that join with us when we keep the memory of our European childhood before our eyes. If we never let go of that vision, we will never suffer Christian Europe to be eclipsed by the blended culture of the archangel Satan.

Classical liberals such as Jared Taylor and Geert Wilders keep pointing out that Islam is incompatible with liberalism. But is it incompatible with liberalism's central tenet? No, it is not. That is why the liberals will never oppose Islam. At Islam's core is the hatred of Jesus Christ and the Christ-bearing people. And that is what is at the core of liberalism. The classical liberals who oppose Islam in the name of liberalism are like the free love advocates who get angry when their children practice what they, the parents, preached. You can't be a democracy-loving liberal and then condemn your liberal brethren for living up to the credo of Jacobin democracy: The white, Christ-bearing race must die. Nothing but degenerate filth has come from the Age of Democracy. Why not step out of the filth and live in the rarefied air of the antique Europeans?

The Europeans' failure to act against the Moslem menace is emblematic of their refusal to give up the dream of an earthly paradise where all evils can be overcome by science and diversity. But evil exists now just as it has always existed. What has changed to make Islam or any other evil something other than evil?

The Turks, encouraged with the flight of the Christians, presently advanced their ensigns upon the top of the uttermost wall, crying Victory; and by the breach entered as if it had been a great flood, which, having once found a breach in the bank, overfloweth, and beareth down all before it; so the Turks, when they had won the utter wall, entered the city by the same gate that was opened for Justinianus and by a breach which they had before made with their great artillery, and without mercy cutting in pieces all that came in their way, without further resistance became lords of that famous and imperial city... In this fury of the barbarians perished many thousands of men, women, and children, without respect of age, sex, or condition. Many, for safeguard of their lives, fled into the temple of Sophia, where they were all without pity slain, except some few reserved by the barbarous victors to purposes more grievous than death itself. The rich and beautiful ornaments and jewels of that most sumptuous and magnificent church—the stately building of Justinianus the emperor—were, in the turning of a hand, plucked down and carried away by the Turks; and the church itself, built for God to be honoured in, for the present converted into a stable for their horses, or a place for the execution of their abominable and unspeakable filthiness: the image of the crucifix was also by them taken down, and a Turk's cap put upon the head thereof, and so set up and shot at with their arrows, and afterwards, in great derision, carried about in their camp, as it had been in procession, with drums playing before it, railing and spitting at it, and calling it the God of the Christians, which I note not so much done in contempt of the image, as in despite of Christ and the Christian religion. — [Richard Knolles \(1603\) History of the Turks](#)

That there is a devil who works his will through liberals and colored heathens is the same now as it always has been. What has changed is the number of liberals. Their numbers have grown from a few vermin to a legion of ravenous wolves. For centuries Europe was the light in darkness; now it is the land of scientism and heathenism where occasional flickers of light appear for a moment, only to disappear into the dark night of Babylon. It has been the liberals' sacred – sacred to them – task to kill the European light whenever and wherever it appears. They have been quite successful, because they have the passionate intensity of satanic hatred that Yeats warned us of, while the everyday Europeans who want to be liberal, while preserving the fruits of non-liberal Europe, lack the conviction to attack the liberals at their satanic core – which is their support for a racially and religiously blended utopian world. When a female newscaster deplores the feminism that makes white males indifferent to the rape of the women of Cologne, but then quickly adds that she does not want to see a return to the patriarchal values of old Europe, she is demonstrating the moral schizophrenia that keeps the European people enslaved to the liberals and the colored heathens. There must be a spiritual return to old Europe or else the blood red tide of liberalism will triumph. This does not mean we must imitate the outer shell of old Europe, but it does mean that we must be like unto the antique Europeans in our inmost soul. We must respond to the lay of the ancient European minstrel and ignore the sirens of modernity.

When Edward I was engaged in a war with the Welsh, he ordered, with Machiavellian cunning, the execution of any Welsh bard his soldiers came upon. Why would he do this? He did it because he knew that if you destroy a peoples' connection to their past, their bardic past, where the heroes of their race reside, you kill the people's will to resist. The liberals first attacked the European's past by heaping the monkey vomit of racism, sexism, and simple-mindedness on it. Who would want to approach such a foul-smelling substance? Now they are using the iron fist and smashing anyone who hearkens back to bardic Europe. The revolution is complete when there is no one left that even remembers Christian Europe. In Church and State bardic Europe, which was the Europe of heroes who opposed liberalism with fire and sword, is dead. But the organized Jacobin democracies of Europe are not the European people and the organized churches are not Christ's church. Bardic Europe is buried somewhere in the racial memory of the European people. It is the task, the sacred task, of the European hero who still remembers and loves the European childhood of his people to live by the bardic code in defiance of the liberal forces arrayed against him. He will match and overman the liberals' passionate intensity with a passionate intensity of greater depth and feeling, because his passionate intensity is grounded in the love of Him whose love passeth the understanding of the liberals and the colored heathens. Just as Christ draws us to Him, so will the European who abides with old Europe draw his people back to their European hearth fire, where they can hear the lay of the European minstrel.

If we believe that our Savior does not evolve, that He does not diversify and change from the Christ who enters human hearts into an ecumenical combination of Nelson Mandela, Muhammed, and Buddha, then we must respond to the call of bardic Europe and to bardic Europe alone. All around us is the filth of rotting-corpse liberalism. In the midst of the decay and filth, we must cling to Him who does not change, who does not decay. We triumph still when we remember and live in His Europe. Once that divine-human connection is made, we will kneel only in prayer to Him; we will not kneel to the devil and his diversified minions. To be Europeans once again is all in all. +

Our Fight for the Land of 'Evening Lingerings'

June 25, 2016

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019)



The Europeans who are resisting the Moslem invasion of the European nations are making the same mistakes that the pro-lifers made. They say they know what liberals are, but if they truly knew what they are, satanically possessed swine, would they try to appeal to their humanity? "Please stop abortion; it kills a young child." And, "Please stop allowing Moslems into our nation; they are destroying our culture and killing our people." Would you ask a wolf to spare the sheep in your pasture or would you kill the wolf? The liberals hate everything that is humane and Christian, so why would you expect them to stop killing babies and white people simply because you point out to them that legalized abortion and legalized white genocide are inhumane? The liberals know what they are doing in both cases. They want to kill babies and they want to destroy the white race. White Christians can either kill the wolves – the liberals and the colored heathen – or they can sit back and watch the slaughter while they keep appealing to the wolves' humanity. – CWNY

Well might the terrified weasels dive under the tables and spring madly up at the windows! Well might the ferrets rush wildly for the fireplace and get hopelessly jammed in the chimney! Well might tables and chairs be upset, and glass and china be sent crashing on the floor, in the panic of that terrible moment when the four Heroes strode wrathfully into the room! The mighty Badger, his whiskers bristling, his great cudgel whistling through the air; Mole, black and grim, brandishing his stick and shouting his awful war-cry, 'A Mole! A Mole!' Rat; desperate and determined, his belt bulging with weapons of every age and every variety; Toad, frenzied with excitement and injured pride, swollen to twice his ordinary size, leaping into the air and emitting Toad-whoops that chilled them to the marrow! 'Toad he went a-pleasing!' he yelled. 'I'LL pleasure 'em!' and he went straight for the Chief Weasel. They were but four in all, but to the panic-stricken weasels the hall seemed full of monstrous animals, grey, black, brown and yellow, whooping and flourishing enormous cudgels; and they broke and fled with squeals of terror and dismay, this way and that, through the windows, up the chimney, anywhere to get out of reach of those terrible sticks. – Kenneth Grahame, *The Wind in the Willows*

I understand the liberals: they are satanically possessed swine. However, I don't understand the right-wing nationalists who claim to be against white genocide yet always condemn any violence directed against the liberals who are responsible for white genocide. I bring this subject up once again because of the recent execution of a white-genocide advocate in the Labour Party of Britain. The mental health of the executioner has been called into question, and he has been roundly condemned by white nationalists and the Britain First party. To say I differ with those so-called white nationalists who condemned the white avenger would be putting it too mildly. I vehemently oppose their condemnations. Quite probably the man is mentally unstable, but the act itself was moral and justifiable. [\(1\)](#)

It is wrong to place bombs in crowded bars in order to kill men and women in Northern Ireland, as the Communist IRA does. It is wrong to bomb thousands of innocent men and women in Arab countries, as the neocons do, because their leaders don't want to open their nations to democratic capitalism. It is wrong to bomb a federal building and kill innocent civilians, as Timothy McVeigh did. It is wrong to shoot blacks just because you want to shoot black people, as Dylann Roof did. And it is wrong to shoot the children of liberals at a summer camp in Norway as Anders Breivik did. But is it wrong to shoot and kill a Labour Party Minister who advocates, and backs up her advocacy with deeds, the extermination of white people? No, it is not. One down and about a million to go, or whatever is the number of liberals in power throughout the liberal West, should be our battle cry.

The problem with the non-violent white nationalists is that they love the democratic process more than their people. The democratic process allows them to form think tanks, write witty, sarcastic things about their more liberal brethren, and to make themselves leaders of an abstract people, fighting for an abstract cause. This is why actual fighting scares the white nationalists. If white people were to abandon the democratic process and actually start fighting for their people, what would become of the white nationalists who worship the democratic process?

This constant harping on non-violence by the white nationalists – "We don't want to upset the liberals" – is depressingly similar to that of the pro-lifers who loved the democratic process more than the babies who were being murdered. "Don't burn down the clinics," and "Don't shoot the abortion doctors," we were told. And what happened? Legalized abortion became part of the fabric of our nation, just as white genocide has become part of the fabric of the white nations. The white nationalist liberal who worships the democratic process will always lose out to the mad-dog liberal who sees the democratic process as a means to an end – the destruction of the white, Christ-bearing people. The mad-dog liberals never remain non-violent when they lose ground through the democratic process. They go outside the democratic process and use whatever tactic, including murder, that achieves their ends. Should we imitate the mad-dog liberals then? No, we should not. But we should realize that the mark of a man is not that he never kills, nor is the mark of a man that he lives to kill. The mark of a man is what he kills for. And if he will not kill in defense of his kith and kin, what kind of man is he?

Because they worship the democratic process the white nationalists often find themselves in bed with strange bedfellows. In a democracy you cannot venture forth, as David did, with the belief that God will aid you against the seemingly invincible foe. You must have numbers rather than God on your side. Thus you latch on to the homosexuals, the feminists, or any other group no matter how Godless it is that gives you the numbers to outvote your liberal cousins. But even if you could win an electoral victory by making such unholy alliances, what kind of victory would you achieve?

Ever since the 1950's when the white genocide movement, which was called the 'Civil Rights Movement,' became institutionalized, this nation and the other nations of Europe have been about the business of liquidating the white race under the guise of democratizing the world. And throughout the liquidation process there has always been the democracy-loving white nationalists telling us that we are about to turn the corner and win an election. How is that possible when whites are the smallest racial group in the world? If you democratize the world, guess what racial group will be voted out of existence? The whites did not take a vote when they built Christendom and defended it from the attacks of the heathens. If they had taken a vote, neither you nor I would be here today. This democratic abortion of the white race is like unto the abortion of the unborn babies. Must we stand by and watch the slaughter because the slaughter is taking place democratically?

The modern white nationalist's passion for a democratic system that will save his people is rooted in the false-Aslan side of the European people's history. The true faith, the faith of the Gospels, the faith of St. Paul, was centered on the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood: Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto

St. Paul tells us this lest we look to a system about God rather than God Himself. The first European Christians were Christ-centered Christians who saw Christ as the true Hero-God, their Lord and kinsman. As long as the European people held onto that faith, they were a match for heathendom. But when the Ganelons in the church started to present their systems about God as God Himself, they started a secularization process that turned Christian Europe into a land covered with the evil, democratic mills of Satan. There is no hope for white people who enter the democratic mills. But there is hope for the white people who refuse to enter therein. The journey back to our European home begins with a refusal to bend the knee to the Jacobins' god – the aggregate herd of heathen humanity, which is devoid of all humanity.

In a keynote speech at the Democratic convention that nominated Bill Clinton, the arch-liberal Bill Bradley gave a remarkably candid speech. He said that Americans were not willing to accept a tragic view of existence. They believed that existence on this earth could be so expertly arranged that tragedy could be eliminated. Bradley was not just articulating the underlying belief of American liberals, he was articulating the belief of all European liberals. That promise of utopia is what keeps the liberals in power. The antique European tells us that our lives here on earth are inherently tragic, because we are mortal men who must suffer much and then die, but we do not suffer in vain, because He has redeemed our suffering. But if you don't believe that Christ is who He said He was, then you should throw in your lot with the utopians. And that is the tragedy of the white nationalists. They do not want a return to Christian Europe, because they don't believe what the antique Europeans believed. Instead, they want white people to be included in the new world order. But that shall never happen. No matter that the white nationalists deny Him, they are eternally bound, in the eyes of the liberals and the colored heathens, to Him. The white nationalists won't return home and they won't be allowed to enter the new Jacobin paradise of the liberals. (2) So the white nationalist will live and die with his faith in the democratic process. As the colored barbarians descend upon his house, he will be on his phone to his congressman trying to drum up support for an anti-immigration candidate. And with his dying breath he will exclaim, "We are just about to turn the corner."

Democracy is a code word for white genocide. If the whole world is democratized, then the whole world will be like South Africa, Haiti, and Arabia – one monolith of colored and heathen barbarism. Whites must stake out a homeland and defend it against the heathens of color and the white Ganelons who have sided with the colored heathens. The notion that we can somehow defeat the liberals through democracy is like unto the notion that the sheep can dialog with the wolves. Killing is not a magic panacea; it does not solve all problems. But killing is part of war, and we are in a war with the liberals, are we not? Surely you don't believe that you can dialog with those who have told you openly that they mean to exterminate you and your people?

No one knows whether the heathen liberals will ever fight their colored allies when their colored allies turn against them. Nor do we know whether the Moslems will eradicate the Jews and/or the Asians, or whether the Asians and/or the Jews will prevail over the Moslems. All that doesn't matter. What does matter is that we, the European people, cling to our one true love. Christ is in us and we are in Christ. We must stay white and European if we intend to stay with Him. "He who endures to the end shall be saved."+

(1) It takes a type of divine madness to attack the leviathan alone. But what if the whites who still claim to be white would fight, in the fullest sense of the word? Then the mad prophets would become integral men leading other men in a holy cause.

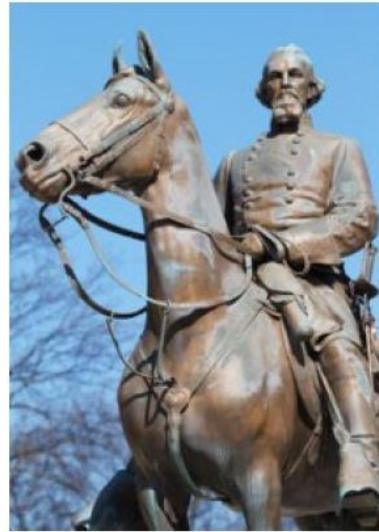
(2) I noted back in the days of the Ayatollah Khomeini that he kept hurling anathemas at the Christian West. It was obvious to Christians that the West had ceased to be Christian, but in the eyes of the Ayatollah the West was still Christian. Try as you might, Mr. White Nationalist and Mr. Mad-Dog Liberal, you cannot escape your destiny any more than Jonah could escape his. Your enemies, who are wedded to Satan, know that you are the Christ-bearing people, even if you try to deny Him.

True to Our God and Our Blood

July 2, 2016

Categories: Christ the Hero, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke, H. V. Morton, Shakespeare



But down these mean streets a man must go who is not himself mean, who is neither tarnished nor afraid. The detective in this kind of story must be such a man. He is the hero, he is everything. He must be a complete man and a common man and yet an unusual man. He must be, to use a rather weathered phrase, a man of honor, by instinct, by inevitability, without thought of it, and certainly without saying it. – Raymond Chandler

The hero saves not only by his prowess, he saves by the divinity within himself. Indeed his prowess depends upon this divinity. The hero's 'most perfect image is, of course, Christ the man-god. There is no hero unless the odds are overwhelmingly against the thing he stands for, or the rescue which takes him upon his quest. They are the powers of darkness; they show him the brutal weight of matter, the seemingly irresistible forces of mass. Since fear and desire make all of us tremble, the first quest of the hero is triumph over himself; and afterwards he follows the quest, a selfless and devoted individual on the way of becoming an archetype. Indeed because he is devoted, he is fearless. – Andrew Lytle

The Brexit vote and Trump's nomination are very small wins in minor skirmishes. The big battles are still being won by the liberals – the Moslems remain in Britain, more Moslems are pouring into America, and Trump is already back-pedaling on his 'no more Moslems' pledge. So what has been gained by these 'wins'? Noting of any lasting significance. But the Brexit vote and Trump's primary wins do reveal to us that there is still some life left in the European Everyman. Granted, a vote against the EU and against the neocons in the Republican Party does not mean that whites are ready to rise and ride in defense of their God, their King, and their people. But it is significant that a large number of whites did not listen to the liberal elite who told them that they must, lest they be labeled simple-minded, vote for the EU and the neocons. The fact that they didn't vote as the liberals wanted shows there is some genuine pietas left in the European people; but without leadership, without a Tell or an Alfred stepping forth, that subterranean current of white pietas will remain untapped. Why can't the people rise up without leaders? Because the people must see their own aspirations, their own souls, embodied in the passion and heroic strife of one man. I refer you to the incarnation of our Lord. Ask yourself why He became incarnate, and you will understand why the mass of men need a leader. "We must have leaders. If none will undertake to lead us right, we shall find guides who will contrive to conduct us to shame and ruin." (Burke)

Any leader who bids us place all our hopes as a people in the democratic process will conduct us to shame and ruin. That has been the case in the European nations for the past one hundred years. The age of democracy has ushered in the age of white genocide. What did Woodrow Wilson say as he plunged his country into the senseless war that destroyed the European people? "The world must be made safe for democracy." We now know what that code word meant: "White Genocide."

A hero fights for what his people hold most dear. Thus the pagan hero, such as Achilles, fights for the pride of his people and the wealth to be gained by conquest. So it is with all the non-white cultures. A hero might act alone, but he takes the hopes and aspirations of his people into battle with him. The Christian European hero differs in kind from the pagan and non-white hero. The European hero fights for what Burke called "that charity of honor," because that is what his people regard as the vital link between them and their God. There were very few European heroes in the 20th century (Anthony Jacob was an exception), and none, that we know of, in the 21st century, because the Europeans do not regard themselves as a people. How can a hero arise from a people who have denounced themselves? It is difficult, but not impossible. The 21st century European hero must rise up from eternal Europe, from the dead who rest in the arms of the Lord, and act according to their Christ-centered European ethos. Ignoring the spiritual wasteland of the 21st and 20th century, he must take his stand with the men and women of eternal Europe. And like Roland, he must not yield even unto death.

I know this sounds too poetical, too fantastical, to the results-oriented, pragmatic minds of 21st century men. But the Christian hero never made the pragmatic result his main goal. Certainly men such as Alfred and Robert E. Lee wanted to succeed in the practical realm, but they didn't fight for that reason. They fought because in the deepest recesses of their souls that charity of honor compelled them to fight, no matter what the practical men told them about their chances for success in the here and now. Hamlet's defiance of pagan augury has always been the mark of the Christian, European hero:

Horatio. *If your mind dislike anything, obey it. I will forestall their repair hither, and say you are not fit.*

Hamlet. *Not a whit; we defy augury. There's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.*

Yes, let be. The Christian hero cares about one thing: That he fights with all his heart, mind, and soul for his people, because it is through his people that he touches the heart of God. The European hero knows, in his blood, what the mystery of Christ's incarnation means, and he acts upon that knowledge. If Christ is incarnate in His people, then to defend Christ, the European must defend his people.

Modern Europe has no heroes, because modern Europeans have accepted the liberals' perverse universalism – only the non-white races can be a people. If whites try to band together as a people, they become racists, and racism is the unpardonable sin. But only whites can be guilty of the unpardonable sin. So we have non-white heroes who know nothing of charity; they are heroes of carnage and barbarism. The blacks, the Moslems, the Mexicans, the Orientals, and any other non-white race you can name have become the liberals' people. Pope Francis, the penultimate of liberalism, worships Moslems of color, because they are his people; they are anti-white and anti-Christian. The descent into white oblivion will continue so long as white people follow the lead of the Angela Merkels and Pope Francises of Liberaldom.

It's important to distinguish between the brave man and the hero. A case in point – In the American Civil War there were brave men on both sides, but only the South produced heroes, because once all the qualifications are made the essential fact of that war is crystal clear. The Southern people fought for the cause of Christian Europe and the people of the North fought

for Jacobin democracy. This is not to suggest that the rank and file of the North thought they were fighting for Jacobin democracy. But their leaders knew what they were fighting for, and they led their people down that slippery slope where brave men fight for a satanic cause. I believe that I once mentioned that my grandfather used to tell me stories about my great, great grandfather who fought on the northern side in the Civil War. My grandfather said that his grandfather, who lived into his nineties, used to say that he regretted fighting for the Union, because he felt that he had been lied to: "I was told I was fighting for my country. If I had known I was fighting for the negroes, I wouldn't have fought." Without placing a halo on every single Southern soldier, the fact remains that those Southern soldiers who fought honorably were heroes. Like the King of heroes, they fought, bled, and sacrificed for their people, who were fighting for leaders committed to Christian Europe. And they were fighting for the misled Union soldiers as well, for were they not Europeans too, and are not all Europeans, in their heart of hearts, connected to the God-Man?

The words, "You have betrayed us," should be writ large on the walls of church and state. The intelligentsia have denounced their people and gone whoring after false messiahs and a new people. The leaders in the Evangelical churches have made the Jews their people. Everything Jewish is now supposed to be Christian. Blasphemy! And the Roman Catholic churchmen have made every dark colored heathen their god and every Christ-hating Moslem their brother in irreligion. Where your people dwell, so dwells your faith. If you won't return to the Europe where He resides at the hearth fires of the white faithful then you will be at the mercy of the colored heathens and the techno-barbarian liberals.

Nothing is hopeless if the European people return to their racial hearth fires. But they must make that return. In his book *I Saw Two Englands* (1943), H. V. Morton talks about the importance of belonging to a people committed to the defense of the Christian things – of home, hearth, and race.

Nothing I have known in English life has approached the eagerness with which ordinary men have run to arms in order to defend their homes. My own point of view, and, indeed, it is that of all the farmers, the farm labourers and the cowmen who compose our Home Guard, is that should the rest of England fall, our own parish would hold out to the last man. The responsibility of defending our own village has given to that village a gigantic significance in our eyes. To us it seems the main objective of any invader. When I look at the map, I am sometimes amazed to see how small and unimportant it must appear to any one not in our Platoon. But if all villages throughout England think as we do, what a hedge of opposition they present to any one who dares to set an invader's foot upon this island...

When the social historian reviews modern England, I should not be surprised if he came to the conclusion that, so far as movement and social life go, we do-day are in a more secluded backwater than our ancestors of the Napoleonic period. Reading the histories and memoirs of that time, I had the impression that life in those days of professional armies went on much as usual; prize-fighting continued; the coaches were running; London was not made into a shabby area of self-defence and, if Martello Towers ringed the coast, and Militia and Yeomanry numbered nearly half a million, English life was not interrupted by Napoleon as it has been interrupted by Hitler. But Hitler has struck the same fine sparks from England: for this we owe him gratitude. He may have led us along the primrose path to bankruptcy, but in the process we have touched old simplicities and have known again the feeling that we belong to our country and our country to us. (1)

That was then. Was that the last gasp of the white race or can whites still become a people again if a Lee, a Forrest, or an Alfred steps out of the European mists and leads them into battle? I have no doubt that such a hero will have followers, because we are the Christ-bearing race, are we not?

The Moslem menace has awakened some Europeans, but the menace is not being opposed in the name of white Christian Germany, in the name of white Christian Britain, and so on. We cannot fight the colored heathen and the techno-barbarian liberals in the name of the universalism of the liberals. We must fight in the name of our people, and in the name of our God. If we are not white and Christian, what are we? We are nothing. But if we are true to our blood, what might we be? We will be Europeans, and that is all in all. +

(1) I do not subscribe to the liberals' demonization of Germany in World War II. But Hitler was not a hero. Claus von Stauffenberg and Rommel were the true German heroes. They fought for eternal, Christian Germany just as Morton's home guard fought for eternal, Christian Britain.

Incarnational Europe Is Our Beginning and Our End

July 9, 2016

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke



But now all is to be changed. All the pleasing illusions, which made power gentle and obedience liberal, which harmonized the different shades of life, and which, by a bland assimilation, incorporated into politics the sentiments which beautify and soften private society, are to be dissolved by this new conquering empire of light and reason. All the decent drapery of life is to be rudely torn off. All the superadded ideas, furnished from the wardrobe of a moral imagination, which the heart owns, and the understanding ratifies, as necessary to cover the defects of our naked, shivering nature, and to raise it to dignity in our own estimation, are to be exploded as a ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion. – [Edmund Burke](#)

I don't categorically deny that there have been individuals who received private revelations from God. But I don't accept, as part of my faith, any private revelations other than St. Paul's vision of Christ on the road to Damascus and St. John's revelations on the island of Patmos. And since neither St. Paul nor St. John told us the actual identify of the anti-Christ, I can't say with any certainty who the anti-Christ is. All that can be said about Pope Francis is that if he is not the anti-Christ then he is certainly giving a very good imitation of the anti-Christ. He is like some of those Elvis imitators who seem more like Elvis than Elvis.

Pope Francis the man is a liberal. And liberalism is from the devil. But what makes Pope Francis the most dangerous liberal in the world is the position he holds. He is like unto a master baker who bakes strychnine into the bread. He is much more dangerous than his non-baking fellow citizens because he, and he alone, has the power to dispense poison under the guise of healthy bread. Dante posted a sign, "Abandon all hope ye who enter here," over the portal of Hell. That should be the sign over the Roman Catholic Church of Pope Francis. He is the purveyor of liberalism under the guise of Christianity and as such he is an earthly conduit to hell.

The Pope seems to have a slight preference for Moslems over the Jews while Protestant evangelicals have a decided preference for the Jews. But both Islam and Judaism represent a return to paganism and a rejection of Jesus Christ. Most Protestants can comprehend that Islam is a pagan faith, but they don't see the Jews for what they are. Having rejected Christ, the Jews reverted to type and became another branch of paganism. They maintained their belief in their 'chosen' status while rejecting the reason for that status. If you blend Christ with Judaism, with Islam, or any other pagan faith, you will lose Christ. But that blending process is the essence of liberalism – Christ tells us, through St. John, that He is the, "Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

The Grand Inquisitor, Pope Francis, and his evangelical brethren have rebuked Christ. They tell Him and us that He is not the beginning and the end. "In the beginning was diversity, but mankind fell from diversity and became racist. In the end will be diversity again, presided over by Satan, the good angel who suffered much in order to bring mankind that which was needful: diversity. So let it be written, so let it be."

Never doubt that the Islamization of Europe combined with the colorization of Europe is from the devil. Let the churches be burned to the ground; they are the purveyors of satanic filth. The European people need to take their stand in the small platoons that Burke spoke of:

To be attached to the subdivision, to love the little platoon we belong to in society, is the first principle (the germ as it were) of public affections. It is the first link in the series by which we proceed towards a love to our country, and to mankind. The interest of that portion of social arrangement is a trust in the hands of all those who compose it; and as none but bad men would justify it in abuse, none but traitors would barter it away for their own personal advantage.

From such racial platoons will come the spirit to resist the forces of darkness which consist of the techno-barbaric liberals and the colored heathens.

To actually walk the streets of a great European city and enjoy the thousand and one Christian things of that city is no longer possible. The Christian things are blended with liberal and Moslem things, and such a blending is worse than the outright paganism of old Rome or pre-Christian Greece. But "while memory holds a seat in this distracted globe," we shall not forget eternal Europe. So long as two or three are gathered together who still remember, and live by that remembrance, Europe lives.

The European people have been poisoned incrementally. They were served the finest wines with just a small dose of poison. Then the dosage was increased a little more and then still more until the final dose that killed them. I have seen this incremental poisoning take place during my lifetime. The Christian comforts were permitted so long as the enemy felt their removal might awaken the European people to the fact that they were being poisoned. Race mixing was called civil rights until there was no white abhorrence of race mixing. Homosexual marriages and abortion were presented as compassionate solutions to hard cases until the white Europeans accepted such things as normal. Works of literature from the Christian era of the European people were depicted in a new, negative light and then rejected out of hand. Everything that connected men to the God-Man who dwelt in the hearts of the antique Europeans was eliminated.

When I was a young man, I read Vladimir Solovyov's *Lectures on Divine Humanity*. My reaction to the book was similar to Horatio's reaction to Hamlet's assertion that there was something rotten in the state of Denmark: "There needs no ghost come back from the grave to tell us this." That God has planted His divine imprint on humanity through His Son Jesus Christ seemed too obvious; I wondered why Solovyov thought he had to say it. But I was coming from the poets, from Shakespeare, Scott, Dostoyevsky, and Dickens. Every word they wrote pointed to the incarnational aspects of our European culture. When I entered the realm of speculative philosophy and theology, I understood what a philosophical maverick Vladimir Solovyov was. He said what needed to be said – that Western philosophy and theology were heretical deviations from the cultural heart and soul of the European people – which was and ever shall be the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

We must be aware of the poison we have swallowed so that we can seek the antidote. And that poison is a mixture of paganism and Christianity, which constitutes the deadliest soul-poisoning mixture ever created by Satan. It is called liberalism. Liberalism mixes the cruelty of the pagan religions with an evangelical post-Christian zeal that places the aggregate herd above individual human beings. Institutionalized inhumanity is the mark of liberalism. That is why the church and state must be democratized, because in a democratized institution or state

a small cabal of liberals, which translates to Satanists, rule in the name of an aggregate herd of inhuman heathens. No white man will ever be allowed to co-exist, in church or state, with the inhuman aggregate herd of colored heathens, because the white man has the taint of original sin on him. He championed the God-Man, Jesus Christ. Satan is paying the white man back through the liberals, whose patron saint is Julian the Apostate.

I often hear the liberal-conservatives trying to argue with the mad-dog liberals on a practical basis: "Don't you realize that Moslems will destroy liberalism?" And, "Don't you see that black violence will also be directed at you?" But the mad-dog liberals will not see, because the worship of the Christ-hating heathens and colored barbarians is essential to their pagan faith. The liberals firmly believe that they are the beloved ones; their man-gods love them. And in point of fact it is usually the good whites, the leaderless, groping, defenseless remnants of Christian Europe who take the brunt of the heathens' wrath. The de Klerkian liberals find temporary escapes. Does Angela Merkel have to live near a camp of Moslem refugees? Does Pope Francis have to share an apartment with the black Moslems whom he worships in a public, satanic church service? The liberals will be the last to go, and they will die affirming their faith in the colored heathens and the colored heathens' god – the archangel Satan.

When Pope Francis recently equated the first apostles with the modern Moslem invaders, he was giving us a window into the mind of Satan. Christ is to be ground to bits in the giant machinery of diversity. And that machinery is devoid of individual human beings. Hamlet's refusal to be played upon like a recorder and the underground man's refusal to be a piano key are the defiant resistance movements of the Europeans who stand in the face of the satanic whirlwind and announce that "a personality stands here." A personality, we should add, that knows that "Christ is in me, and I am in Christ." St. Paul is not an aberration; his faith is one with Christ and the first Christian Europeans who saw Christ as the hero of heroes who would fight by their side against the powers of darkness. All that matters is the one essential thing – we must reclaim our European manhood, which differs in kind from pagan manhood. Instead of sitting back and watching colored heathens and liberal pagans slaughter whites, we should fight as the first European Christians fought – for hearth, for race, and for charity's sake. How can a man with a European heart watch the liberals' orgies of blood without responding with fire and sword? Formal Europe, the Europe of quaint shops, splendid architecture, and streets filled with white people is dead. But eternal Europe still lives wherever there are two or three gathered together in His name to form their European platoon. A platoon wedded to European soil and European soil alone, a platoon wedded to Christ and to Christ alone. Christ is the beginning and the end, the first and the last, and Christian Europe is our first and last home, no matter the numbers the devil sends against us. Never, never, never shall the Satanism of Pope Francis and his liberal allies be allowed to masquerade as the true faith. Thus is our faith tested, and we shall respond with that charity of honor which did not fail St. Paul. And it shall not fail us. +

The Invisible Empire of the European People

July 16, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke



Abstractedly speaking, government, as well as liberty, is good; yet could I, in common sense, ten years ago, have felicitated France on her enjoyment of a government (for she then had a government) without inquiry what the nature of that government was, or how it was administered? Can I now congratulate the same nation upon its freedom? Is it because liberty in the abstract may be classed amongst the blessings of mankind, that I am seriously to felicitate a mad-man, who has escaped from the protecting restraint and wholesome darkness of his cell, on his restoration to the enjoyment of light and liberty? Am I to congratulate a highwayman and murderer, who has broke prison, upon the recovery of his natural rights? This would be to act over again the scene of the criminals condemned to the galleys, and their heroic deliverer, the metaphysic knight of the sorrowful countenance. – Edmund Burke

I have yet to read of a white policeman's shooting of a black 'youth' where I thought the white police officer had murdered the black. In most cases I have heard about, the police officer killed a thug who needed killing, and in the other cases the shooting was an accident brought on by some ill-advised action of the victim. Of course I am prejudiced. But are not the liberals and the black barbarians prejudiced? I'll stick with my prejudices, because I think they are in line with the truth.

Although I support individual police officers who have confrontations with black criminals, I am not a big supporter of the police. And I am not a big supporter of the police for the same reason I am not a big supporter of 'our troops.' The police and the military work for the liberals; they are far more likely to come down on white people who have committed crimes against the state, which means 'racist' resistance to liberal abortionists, black murderers, and Moslem jihadists, then they are likely to aggressively attack Moslem and black hooligans. America is not a city on a hill, exempt from the same problems that plague the whites in Europe. And in the European nations the police are trained to go after whites who oppose the barbarians of color and to leave the colored barbarians alone. Likewise the United States. When I worked as a police officer some twenty-five years ago, we were always being sent to 'special training' courses. At those training courses we were taught about the evils of white racism and the need for a sensitive new police force that would stop brutalizing blacks. I'm sure the anti-white propaganda has gotten worse in the last quarter century. And the anti-white propaganda works. When the Rodney King affair occurred, I was the only officer on the force who supported the police officers who were accused of beating the poor, helpless Rodney King while he was driving home from his nightly charity work at a hospital for the incurably ill. The young men who become police officers come from our culture, which is liberal. They have been fed anti-white propaganda since the day of their births. What makes them different from their white counterparts who do not work as police officers? Nothing. They are marked for death just as whites are marked for death in society at large. The essence of liberalism is hatred – hatred for the white Christ-bearing race. Whites are bred for sacrifice. They all are destined to die on the liberals' altars, dedicated to their heathen gods. When Moslem or black violence is too blatant as in Dallas and in Orlando, there are some white rumblings, but they never amount to anything, because whites will not attack liberalism itself by squarely facing the fact that we are in a race war which only one side is fighting. Any white protest of Moslem or black violence is always preceded with the 'we are not racist' plea. For instance, the Britain First party, which has all those nice parades, regularly condemns racism and gushes about all the Pakistanis and blacks who support the Britain First party. "We support all those who respect our traditions." What traditions are we talking about? Fish and chips? If a man is not white and Christian how can he be a Briton? The Britain First party seems to be the end of 'white Britain party,' just as the American Republican party has become the 'stupid party' that plans to win by appeasing the non-white Americans who hate white America.

Most middle of the road whites tend to respect the police just as they respect their clergy. But in both instances, they have failed to look past the symbols of what used to be to the reality of the present. The police and the clergy are adjuncts of Liberalism; whites should not rely on either adjunct to support them in their ongoing war with the liberals. But of course that is the problem: the 'decent' whites are "so far from doing harm that they suspect none." But the liberals do mean to do them harm. And whites must learn, as Edgar learned, to look past the outward forms and look within. Behind the smiling, liberal façade – the sporting events, the church services, the patriotic celebrations – is the cold ruthless figure of Satan, and he is laughing, as only Satan can laugh, with contempt and with malice.

The Norman Rockwell painting of a policeman giving a lost child an ice cream cone is still the image that many white people have of the police. But the same artist's painting of Federal marshals escorting a negro girl to school in order to desegregate the South is more in keeping with the role of the police in modern Liberalism. They live to serve the state. If they are killed by black murderers, my heart goes out to them as it goes out to all whites who are being victimized by black barbarians, but when they defend the abortionists, the integrationists, or any part of Liberalism, the police are my sworn enemies. To say you are just doing your job does not excuse you if your job entails the defense of liberalism.

Burke saw the Achilles heel of the virtuous whites when they failed to respond to the French Revolution with fire and sword: "Above all, good men do not suspect that their destruction is attempted through their virtues." It is the same with the whites of the modern Western nations. They cling to the virtue of being non-racist while the white-hating liberals and the colored heathens use the race card to destroy them. It is time, in fact it is past time, to leave mere virtue behind and follow the way of the cross, the way of passion – a passionate self-sacrificing love for our kith and kin and a passionate hatred for the enemies of our kith and kin. Aslan is not a tame Lion, which is why the Grand Inquisitors of Liberalism want to do away with Him. They do not want white hearts which are inflamed with a passion that they, the Grand Inquisitors, cannot control. "Give me the merely virtuous," the Grand Inquisitor says, "I can always keep them in check by holding the 'racist' label over their heads."

The abortion of the white race starts with the abstraction. When white people allowed their racial identity, which is part of their soul, to be thrown on the junk heap of history, they lost their connection to all those heartfelt passions that connect them to each other and to their God. Why do we support the police? Because they fight for us? No, they don't. They fight for an abstraction called 'the people.' And only heathens and colored barbarians can be 'the people.' (1) If you are lucky enough to live in an all-white neighborhood, a police officer might aid you when a white hooligan attacks, just as a psychologist who works in a satanic profession might still give some practical advice that works, but in the war against the liberals and the colored barbarians the police will become your enemy, because white people must be abstracted and then aborted.

The police and the military units that serve the liberals stem from the abstraction the liberals call Christianity. If Christ does not dwell within us, but is only out there as an abstract God, then we have no spiritual armor. We are defenseless against the wickedness and snares of the devil. He can outsmart us without working up a sweat. But if we can trust our instincts, because our instincts are grounded in a faith in the God who dwells within our heart and at our racial hearth fire, we can fight the devil and his minions without the aid of a liberal-based system.

The ‘conservative’ Thomist, Frederick Wilhelmsen, once wrote that the West had nothing to do with race. Really? If the West has nothing to do with race, then why was the cultural entity called the West created by white people? And why have the non-whites never created a Christian culture? So let me disagree and state that the Christian West has everything to do with race. It is St. Thomas Aquinas who has nothing to do with the West. In a similar vein, the ‘conservative’ Francis Canavan, while professing an admiration for Burke, tells us that Burke was right about Jacobin democracy, but he was wrong to condemn all democracies.

Once again I must disagree. Where is the ‘good’ democracy? It was Burke’s contention that a nation could thrive under a monarchial, aristocratic system as in pre-Jacobin France, or it could thrive under a monarchial, aristocratic, democratic system as in Great Britain. But no nation could exist as a pure democracy, because a democracy was the most tyrannical government imaginable, where a few tyrants ruled in the name of an aggregate herd called ‘the people.’ Christian utopians such as Wilhelmsen and Canavan are more dangerous than their secular counterparts, because they deceive the merely virtuous by convincing them that Christianity consists of supporting the right abstractions, such as racial equality and democratic principles.

The word ‘organic’ is generally used nowadays to distinguish real food from plastic, chemical food, but I use the word in its ancient context. We need to stop looking to organizations that were founded by the liberals – the churches, the military, the schools, and the police – and start looking to those invisible, organic ties of blood and faith that bound the antique Europeans to each other and their God. It was Robert E. Lee who first used the term “invisible empire” to describe the Ku Klux Klan. And it was Robert E. Lee who suggested that Nathan Bedford Forrest should be the man in charge of that invisible empire. We must go down to our European roots and become like unto the men who made up that invisible empire. We shouldn’t literally copy the Klansmen, but we should be like them in spirit. They were a conquered people, in the material sense, who were ruled by a cabal of liberals who had loosed the barbarians of color upon them. And yet they triumphed. They preserved their people and their civilization, because they refused to submit to liberal rule. They didn’t respect any institution that was not organically part of their culture and their heritage. The South didn’t lose the war until they became part of Liberaldom in the 1950s. My contention is that all of us, we Europeans, should be Klansmen. We should stay loyal to the invisible European empire of the antique Europeans. It is not Western science or our democratic systems that made Europe great. It is the moral vision and the greatness of heart that infused that vision into a civilization that made Europe different in kind from all other civilizations, which, in comparison to European civilization, do not even deserve the name civilizations. Christ dwelt among us; He still does. He dwells with those Europeans who have not forsaken their white blood. I know that term ‘white blood’ appalls the modern churchmen, but the modern churchmen appall me. Is the incarnation of Christ true or is it not? If it is true, then it is also true that spiritual values can be passed on through the blood. Let us stop living a life of abstract virtue and live the life of a European who loves and hates with all his heart.

You won’t see the invisible empire of Europeans on any of the major news sites or the alternative news sites, but they are the spirit above the dust of Babylon that will rebuild Christian Europe. “For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?” +

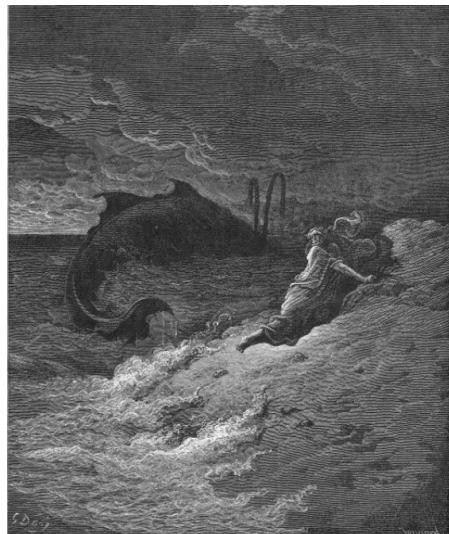
(1) The negro Dallas police chief delivered a disgustingly inappropriate eulogy for the white Dallas police officers who were murdered. He used the occasion for self-aggrandizement, and the media used the occasion for negro worship. That police chief represents the real face of our modern police force. (Watch the unedited Fox version, not the heavily edited CNN version.)

Out of the Belly of the Leviathan

July 23, 2016

Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the Lord, and went down to Joppa; and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them unto Tarshish from the presence of the Lord. — *Jonah 1: 3*

The white police officers who are shot and killed by misunderstood black ‘youths’ get a little more notice than ordinary whites who are shot and killed by black ‘youths,’ but in both cases the party line of the liberals is the same. The focus is on the white race: What did the white policemen and/or the white race in general do to make the heathens rage? So long as liberals rule the Western nations, that will always be officialdom’s reaction to the murder of whites. The murders are never the blacks’ fault. And why are the murders never the blacks’ fault? Because a pure, sinless race of people can do no evil. What seems like evil is the result of white racism – some evil whites twist the facts and try to blame blacks for their just retaliation against the white race for crimes against the black race. Unfortunately that ‘criminally insane’ apologia for black barbarians is not an exaggeration; I am not stretching a point. In the liberals’ universe there are no bad blacks, there are only evil whites who provoke wayward black ‘youths’ into committing youthful indiscretions. Nothing will ever be done to stem the blood-red tide of black on white violence so long as the liberals worship the black barbarians who represent, to the liberals, the antithesis of the white Christians of old Europe.

It is seldom made explicit, but the implicit message the liberals put out every time there is black on white violence is that black violence can be prevented if whites would behave properly. ‘The French in Haiti, the whites in South Africa, the whites of the Southern United States, white policemen, and ordinary white citizens, were and are racist; that is why they are being slaughtered. You need not worry if you are a white who repudiates racism.’ This is, of course, a liberal stratagem. Blacks are not being forced to commit violence by white racism; they commit violent crimes against the white race because they are savages who know nothing except how to rape, murder, and torture. They will not spare the ‘good whites,’ because they have no respect for anything but power. They can be restrained by force, but they will never refrain from violence because they have been shown charity. In their heathen eyes, a charitable man is a weak man who deserves to be brutalized and murdered.

Some conservative-liberals who are appalled at the Moslem invasion of Europe and the United States have tried to point out to their fellow liberals how inconsistent Moslem values and liberal values are. They point out that Moslems rape women, Moslems believe in a Moslem theocracy, and Moslems are not fond of the liberals’ view of diversity. But why, if you have tolerated the rape and murder cultures of the Mexicans and the blacks, should you turn on the Moslems? It is the mad-dog liberals who are being consistent. The conservative-liberal who wants to tolerate black and Mexican savagery while banning Moslem savagery is the inconsistent liberal. What the conservative fails to confront is the moral bankruptcy of intellectual Christianity. Christianity, divorced from the heartfelt passions, both good and bad, that come from an intimate connection to one’s own race, spawns that hellish ideology called liberalism. And at the core of liberalism is a hatred for Christ. Every other difference that the liberal has with the Moslems and the colored heathens melts away before that one essential passion they share with the Moslems and the colored heathens: They hate Christ and the Christ-bearing race.

The European people are running scared like the pre-repentant Jonah. Rather than face the liberals and the colored barbarians, they have fled unto Tarshish by way of the good ship Liberalism. They would rather hide in that ship than fulfill their destiny as the Christ-bearing people. But hasn’t liberalism failed to provide the comfort the Europeans sought? All the liberals’ systems – Thomism, Communism, and Jacobin democracy – have failed to sustain the European people in the day of battle. And they have failed because they require a man to break his covenant with his people and his God before he can attain the comfort of the liberals’ systems. If a man sacrifices his kith and kin on the altars of the liberals, he can stay aboard the ship that will take him to Tarshish. But of course we never get to Tarshish; we are in the belly of the whale. For how long? Just as long as we refuse to take up our cross and face the techno-barbarian liberals and the colored heathens of Nineveh.

The sailors on the ship Jonah sailed on all worshipped heathen gods, but they were not the ones who brought down the wrath of God. It was Jonah’s apostasy that brought down the wrath of God upon the ship and crew. So it is with the European people. We cannot ignore the central event of human history – the birth, death, and resurrection from the dead of Jesus Christ – without perishing as a people. We cannot return to paganism by becoming Socratic Christians or techno-barbarian pagans. It is all or nothing. We must fulfill our prophetic destiny or perish in the belly of the whale.

Orlando, the hero of Shakespeare’s *As You Like It*, declares that, “I can live no longer by thinking.” He can no longer love an abstraction called Rosalind, he must be married to the real flesh and blood Rosalind. When we had a racial home we were a people. Without that home we are Undines, we are not fully human. And how can non-humans respond to the God-Man? We can’t. Once white skin was synonymous with Christian. “I have not tasted Christian food for three years,” Ben Gunn says. He didn’t have to say European food, because to be European was to be Christian. The new theology of ‘Western culture has nothing to do with race’ is not an advance, it is a return to paganism, to Greek philosophy, which regards the incarnation of Christ as foolishness. There is no European resistance to the anti-white liberals and colored heathens, because the church men have made a fatal separation of race and faith. If we can’t trust the faith we received from our kith and kin, in what or whom can we trust?

The Roman Catholic churchmen blend Christianity with Islam and colored heathenism while the Protestant evangelicals blend Christianity with Judaism and colored heathenism. And they do this, we are told, in the name of a universalist God who demands one thing from his adherents – They must not be racist. But what if our race is our spiritual backbone? If I’m wrong, if there is no connection between our racial hearth fire and our God, if we do not find God through those mysterious racial and familial ties, then why have the new European Christians gone whoring after heathen gods and made gods of the colored heathens? Why can’t their universalist god, free of racial prejudices, sustain them in the day of battle?

I don’t think that a Frenchman who celebrates Bastille Day, as blasphemous as that celebration is, deserves to be slaughtered by Moslems, but surely you can see the irony of that massacre? The regicides of France did not just kill a Christian king, as terrible as that act was, they destroyed the incorporate union of the European people and Christ. It was a second fall of man. Loyalty to an abstract people and an abstract god replaced loyalty to the God who abides with us at the racial and familial hearth fire. Frenchmen and whites of all the European nations are naked to their heathen enemies because the abstract ‘blessings’ of liberty, equality, and fraternity that are celebrated on Bastille Day replaced the non-abstract virtues of faith, hope, and charity that were practiced by the racist, prejudiced, antique Europeans.

The European people have had their drunken French Revolution party for quite some time now, but the party has taken on the look of a macabre dance of death. Even when Moslem Jihadists do not kill the revelers, the Europeans look like deaths' heads. The women who prefer other women to men, the men who prefer men to women, the whites who worship negroes, and the intellectual Christians who fear the racist label so much that they are willing to forsake their God and their people to prove they are not racist, all present us with a terrible vision of a people on the brink of extinction. What then can we hope for? It seems quite trite, and even futile, to say that Christ is the only hope of the white race. After all, it is the white Christian churchmen who have presided over the prosecution of the white race. We have been charged, on the one hand with being insufficiently Christian, and on the other we have been charged with being too exclusively Christian. The trial has been rigged. The verdict was decided beforehand. No matter what the charge, the verdict will always be: 'The white race is guilty.'

White people in Europe, the United States, and throughout the world behave like they are on trial before a world court that will treat them fairly if they just present their case in a rational manner, following the proper rules of courtroom procedure. They never seem to understand that it doesn't matter what they say or do, they have already been tried and found guilty in the minds of the liberals. 'We protest peacefully, we are not racist,' the whites plead; 'Please let us be part of Liberaldom.' But whites will never be allowed into the liberals' Emerald City because of their tainted past. Buried in their racial memory, a memory the liberals are trying to purge from their souls, is the image of the Man of Sorrows. Through the power of His love our loves are restored to us, "and all our sorrows end." Why should that vision and that hope be destroyed?

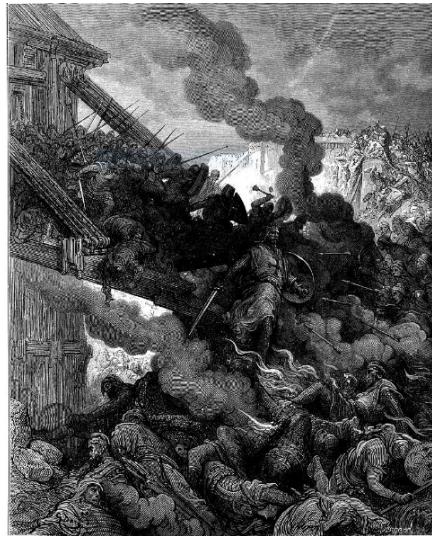
The Europeans must be eradicated because their Savior is not of this world. Neither He nor His followers are like unto the Moslems, the colored heathen, the Jews, the neo-pagans, or the liberals who seek an earthly paradise with no regard for the vision of the living God who died on the cross. This (final?) battle is about 'this world-only' and 'Christ's kingdom come.' It was our ancestors' contention, and it is my own contention, that when we abide with the people of our own racial hearth fire we will know the one true God who bids us come to Him through those mysterious human relationships that the liberals shun. "I reject His world," Ivan Karamazov declared. So have they all, the liberals and their colored minions, rejected His world. But the European people cannot live any longer on that ship destined for Tarshish. We will never get there. And even if we did, we would choke on the insipid, soul-killing food of that liberal, Christ-hating city. Far better to follow our racial destiny and confront the liberals and their colored allies. For charity's sake we must fight the people who have not charity. The lay of the ancient European minstrel speaks to our hearts. He sings of men and women who loved their people, and through that love they found the Savior who redeemed the world with a love that passeth the understanding of the liberals and the colored heathens. I don't know any other Europe apart from that Christ-centered Europe. And why should I, or any other European, seek to know any other Europe? +

The Violent Take It By Force

July 30, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Arthur Koestler, Shakespeare



Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

-Ephesians 6: 11-13

Gloucester: These injuries the King now bears will be revenged home; there is part of a power already footed. We must incline to the King.

-King Lear

One of France's greatest heroes did not preside over a victory, he was the commander of the French rearguard during Napoleon's retreat from Moscow. The man's name was Michael Ney, and he has been quite rightly called, by Frenchmen who still care about such things, "the bravest of the brave." Commanders who heroically defend a retreating army and save the lives of a defeated remnant seldom get the plaudits of the world, but what they do is of vital importance from a Christian, humanitarian standpoint. Their men are defenseless and facing almost certain death at the hands of the enemy. The rearguard commander saves the remnant to go home and recover from their wounds and then take up the cause again, or to live out their days on a rocking chair telling their children and grandchildren about the Great War.

One should never devalue a rearguard effort, because such efforts save the lives of your countrymen. But at the same time, you shouldn't regard a successful rearguard action as a victory. No Frenchman believed that the French had won the war because of Michael Ney's heroic rearguard defense, but many Americans do believe a Trump win will be a victory rather than a successful rearguard action after an ignominious defeat in the major war. And what was our defeat? We suffered the same defeat as all the people of Europe suffered: we allowed a cabal of anti-white Jacobins to rule our respective nations. And they have been systematically exterminating the white race through a process they call 'diversity' and/or 'multiculturalism,' but which in reality is white genocide. President Trump might stem the flow of Mexican and Moslem immigrants, but he will not evict the Moslems and Mexicans already here. Nor will a President Trump re-segregate America and make interracial marriage or abortion illegal. It is the same in all the European nations, whether it is Le Pen, a BNP candidate, or an AfD candidate who wins office. When such things happen — and none of the above have actually occurred — they are successful rearguard actions, which are important, but they are not victories over an implacable foe that will not cease from Jacobin strife till the white, Christ-bearing race is no more.

I know there are no counter-revolutionary rumblings amongst the whites in America. A kindly lady who puts out an Islamic, Jihadist-awareness blog pretty much sums up the American whites: "If Hillary and Ryan get in, we're through." If we have hope in the democratic process only, then we are of all men... Whether Hillary wins or loses, 'we' — meaning white people — were democratically finished a long time ago. We were finished when we became secondhand people who no longer loved God in and through the people of their own race. We will reclaim our nations when we reclaim our racial home, but people who will not go outside the democratic process, who are afraid of being called 'racist,' and who won't disobey their local clergy will not stop white genocide. Most American whites have been cowed by democracy and anti-racism, while a sizeable number have been cowed by their anti-white clergymen.

What of the mother continent? Is there any European resistance to the onward and upward march of the liberals? It doesn't appear so, but the European nations have more 'free speech' restrictions than the United States. Are there still some members of the invisible European empire planning to do what has to be done? I find it hard to believe that all European people have succumbed to democracy, fear of racism, and clergy worship. The liberals — from Tony Blair, who tells us that "Britain must be multicultural," to Angela Merkel, Pope Francis, and the French Prime Minister who has told his people that they "Must get used to terrorism," (translation: "The white race must die") are clearly evil. Are there no Europeans who will quietly do what our European kinsmen, the original Ku Klux Klan, did to preserve the South? When a German councilwoman wags her finger at the assembly and tells the 'right-wingers' that Germany will become a Moslem state, will that councilwoman be found dead in her bed the next morning? Will French police who stomp on Frenchmen protesting the Islamic invasion of Calais be found hanging in the village square the next day? Will Angela Merkel...you get the picture. It is not something to delight in, but it is what needs to happen. (1) The liberals will not stop their killing by Moslem- and negro-proxy because white people hold protest marches and write angry letters. Does anyone with one ounce of European blood in their body believe that liberals will stop their killing sprees unless they, the liberals, are killed?

What the liberals call democracy was just a transition stage to a totalitarian state. The age of democracy is over, and now comes the age of white genocide. The liberals and the colored heathens will kill and keep killing until they are defeated or until they have killed every last white. The liberals who make themselves useful to the heathens might be spared for a time, but that will only be for a time; the colored heathens, because they are colored heathens, must kill all the whites even if they kill the proverbial goose that laid the golden egg by doing so. I don't know if the French priest who was murdered at the altar by the Moslems was a liberal or not. The point is that the Moslems look on all whites, whether they are Christian or liberal, as Christians. And as Christians they must be killed. Why can't the white grazers understand that simple fact of existence? The heathens will always rage against the Light of the world, and the white race, in the eyes of the heathens, is forever connected to the Man of Sorrows who was born to be King of us in this world and the next. And Satan, who opposes Christ's Kingship, strikes out at Him by attacking His people through his liberal and heathen minions.

There is no system, particularly no utopian system designed by anti-white liberals, that will save the white race. That was the weakness of 20th century conservatism. The conservatives were only concerned with preserving an older form of Jacobin democracy and a capitalist economic system. "Why preserve white people since race has nothing to do with Western culture?" was the stated creed of the systems-obsessed conservatives. But their Gnostic faith in systems has led us to our current genocidal state of existence.

Of the twelve apostles, one, Judas, was a liberal, and ten others were grazers who wanted to be on the side of right but were afraid of the consequences of espousing Christ's cause openly. And then there was John, who stood at the foot of the cross. Because he loved much, he was not afraid of the Jews or the Romans. The other ten were to become like unto John. They took

their stand, after Christ's ascension into heaven, at the foot of the cross and did not yield, even unto death. What changed men, who had denied their Lord, into men who said, "Yes, I know that Man"? They were given the opportunity after His resurrection from the dead, to see in the flesh ("Handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have") what John saw in his heart that night in the upper room when he placed his head upon Christ's Sacred Heart. That is the essence of Western civilization. The European people, like St. John, placed their collective head upon His sacred heart and knew with a certainty surer than rational systems and scientific research that the 'secret' of existence was contained in the mystery of Christ's divine manhood. When we stay close to our European hearth fire, we stay at the foot of the cross, and nothing, no force on earth or in hell, can defeat us. But when we leave the foot of the cross? We become grazers, who stand by while Moslems cut the throats of Christians, right on the altars of their churches. Or worse yet, we become liberals who encourage the Moslems and the negroes to cut the throats of white Christians. The slaughter of whites will not be halted until Europeans are moved to action by a genuine heartfelt connection to the people of old Europe, who lived, loved, and hated in response to His Sacred Heart.

In my town, and I'm sure it's the same in all white towns throughout the white nations, there are white grazers who watch their sporting events, attend patriotic activities, and support the troops and their local police. They engage in all the aforementioned activities in a semi-somnolent state. But when a national disaster occurs, such as a flood, hurricane, tornado, or fire, the semi-somnolent grazers become very energetic, committed, rescue workers. Then when the emergency ends, they return to semi-somnolence. Why can't such men be stirred to act in the greatest emergency of all – the war against the white race? They won't fight for their people because there is no white leader who will tell them to fight for the whites. No matter how many jokes the white grazer might make about the powers that be in church and state, the sad fact is that he is morally cowed by officialdom. And officialdom is run by liberals. No respected political party member, no church leader, no media personality ever tells the white grazers that they are in a war to the death with an implacable enemy who will kill them with less remorse than they would kill an insect. So the grazer sits back, waiting to help out in certifiable national emergencies, while the liberals and their heathen henchmen destroy the white race.

In Arthur Koestler's autobiography he said that some people left the Communist party after a whole series of events that they could not reconcile with their consciences. With others it was one blinding 'Road to Damascus' experience that made them leave the Communist party. For instance, one woman said she left the party because, "One night I heard screams." So it will be with the grazers, who after all are supporters of a Jacobin system just as heinous as communist Russia was. Most will remain grazers till it is time for them to be butchered in the liberals' stockyards, a remnant will convert because of a series of events that cannot be reconciled with their consciences, and some will convert because one night they heard screams.

It doesn't matter, once you have determined that Liberaldom is evil, whether you think your chance of getting any support in your war against the liberals is very remote. If they are evil you must fight them, for the same reason Hamlet defied augury. Life is a spiritual battle against principalities and powers; we don't surrender to the principalities and powers of the devil simply because he has superior numbers and earthly power. But it is not even a question of a division of the spiritual realm and the practical realm, with action in the spiritual realm guaranteed to fail and action in the practical realm more likely to succeed. The two realms cannot be separated, because man is created in the image of God, he is of the spirit. It is not practical to deny the spiritual life, which is what all those attached to Liberaldom have done. Practically and spiritually we don't know what might happen if a king or prince, with only a symbolic role in the modern world, were to call on his people to throw out the liberal government and rally behind their ancient King to drive out the invaders from France, from Britain, from Germany, and so on. Farfetched? Nothing is farfetched if we look at the Europeans' history. It is time for fairytale heroics that come from a childlike faith in the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world. +

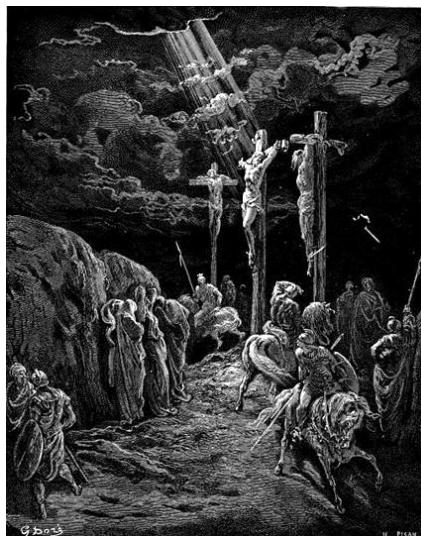
(1) The intellectual Christians and the 'conservatives' think that if they advocate a theory of nonviolence for white people there will be no violence. They, like their mad-dog liberal brethren, think that all evil is in the white race. So if the white race refrains from violence, there shall be no violence. But is this true? Why is there more violence now than ever before, the most barbaric violence imaginable, even though the white race has renounced violence?

Is it humane, is it Christian, to dogmatically renounce violence while your people are being slaughtered by colored heathens, urged on by techno-barbarian liberals? What do you think liberals mean when they promise a nonracist police force? What do you think all those Lady Macbeth councilwomen in Germany mean when they tell you that Germany will be a Moslem nation? They are telling you that you and your kith and kin are going to be exterminated. What type of people tolerate that without fighting back? A people who have no leaders who see them as a people whose lives, culture, and heritage deserve to be preserved. Violence won't cease if white people are nonviolent. It will increase, because the worse kind of barbaric heathen violence flourishes when whites refuse to be violent in defense of their people and their heritage.

Have Mercy on Thy People, Lord

August 6, 2016

Categories: Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, White Genocide



Out of the depths have I cried unto thee, O Lord. – *Psalm 130*

There have been huge protests by native born Germans of Angela Merkel's Islamization initiative, but still she plows ahead and even has her picture taken with Moslem invaders. (Remember when Jane Fonda had the photo op with the Vietcong?) Now let's go across the pond to the United States. When the Mayor of Somerville, Massachusetts placed a 'Black Lives Matter' sign on the municipal building the police asked him to take it down. He refused. So the police 'respectfully' and 'nonviolently' protested the Mayor's refusal. Why did Angela Merkel not respond to the protests of the native-born Germans? And why did the white Mayor of Somerville side with the Black Lives Matter barbarians over the police? There are two reasons. The first reason is the 'To Kill a Mockingbird' Syndrome. In the liberals' fantasy world the good and downtrodden blacks, Moslems, and every other nonwhite barbarian race of people will be grateful to their white benefactors. They will kill the liberals' enemies – the bad, racist whites – but they will love, respect, and honor the good liberal whites who helped them overcome the racist, bad whites. No amount of atrocity reportage about the Moslem and black outrages will move the liberals. They have hardened their hearts against all humane feelings. They care only about their own exalted selves. They sit back and dream of the moment when all the non-Christian, non-white people of the world will come to their liberal wine and cheese party and thank them for being so kind to them and delivering them from racism – "Stand up, your father is passing." Of course, it won't be like that at all, but the liberals have lived so long in the pigsties of liberalism that they have become just like the demon-possessed swine in the Gospel. Over the cliff they shall go with no more comprehension of where they are going than the swine had.

The second reason, which is like unto the first, why the liberals always side with the barbarians of color over their own people is fear. The liberals fear the Moslems and the blacks. Is Angela Merkel worried that some white German who opposes her plan to make Germany a Moslem nation will kill her? No, she isn't. But she is worried that some angry Moslem might kill her if she doesn't cater to his every whim. It's the same in the United States vis a vis the black barbarians. Does the Mayor of Somerville worry about white cops killing him if he doesn't remove the Black Lives Matter sign? No, of course he doesn't.

We have already enacted this tragedy of white genocide. The failure of the anti-abortion movement was a rehearsal for the failure of the anti-white-genocide movement. Why would a doctor, who has no humanity, stop doing something that makes him rich? He won't stop unless he fears losing the one thing he treasures more than money, his life. It is the same with the anti-white liberals. They are possessed by the devil, so no appeal to their humanity will move them. In fact that will just fuel their hatred, because like the devil they serve, they cannot stand anything that stinks of humanity; it distracts them from their dreams of a utopian world devoid of humanity. Without the fear of death to deter them, the liberals will continue on their treacherous way, and millions upon millions of white lives will be lost as a result of their treason.

Are the liberals in Europe welcoming the Moslem invaders into Europe as the result of a misunderstanding? Do the liberals in the United States allow blacks free reign to rape and murder because of a misunderstanding? To put it bluntly – Is it possible to reason with a liberal? No, it is not possible. The liberals understand what they are doing now just as they understood what they were doing when they legalized abortion. They understood that they were killing babies and they understand that they are destroying the white race. Where do we go from here? Do we continue to appeal to the liberals' humanity? They have none. Do we appeal to their reason? They have already reasoned it out – white people must die.

Some of the more perceptive liberals such as Norman F. Cantor (*The Meaning of the Middle Ages*) have pointed out the link between medieval scholasticism and modernity. I don't disagree with Cantor, but I don't see the birth of modernity as a good thing, because unlike Cantor I am not a liberal. The scholastics' reordering of God's plan of salvation according to their more streamlined, logical systems gave birth to the rebellion against God that became institutionalized in Europe after the French Revolution. Burke sounded the alarm in his writings on the French Revolution, and Dostoyevsky followed suit in the Grand Inquisitor section of his master work, *The Brothers Karamazov*. "I reject God's world," was Ivan Karamazov assertion. So did the scholastics and so does every utopian liberal who has followed in their train. That God comes to men through the God-Man, that the Cross is the ultimate and most sublime reflection of God's love and our only hope in this world and the next, is not an appealing idea to the logical, practical men. There must be a system that bypasses that absurd story of the suffering servant. My objection to the neo-pagans is not that they criticize the Jews, it is that they are like unto the Jews. They reject Christ and the European people who championed Him, in favor of a mind-forged biological determinism that leaves the European people without their Lord and kinsman. And so it is with all the modern –isms: They leave us without a faith. So Satan steps in and fills the void in the soul of modern liberals. They have joined with the colored heathens to make war on the white race. So long as whites continue to stay within the framework of liberal democratic society and politely protest some liberal policies, instead of attacking liberals as spawns of Satan, they will be the liberals' sacrificial offerings to their heathen gods of nature.

Let's pause on that word 'nature.' It has come to mean biological nature. But man's nature is not biological, it is spiritual. What is truly natural is the Christ-centered European. All biological cultures, the non-white cultures and the modern techno-barbarian cultures, are unnatural. They represent man's desire for oblivion. The old Christmas carol tells us that after Christ's birth we knew the "soul's worth." When we no longer see our souls as something distinct from nature, we lose our sense of the distinctiveness of the people who believed in the Savior who told us of the imperishable nature of the human soul. We have been overwhelmed, in church, state, and civil society, by an avalanche of propaganda which tells us that biology is destiny. Against those theologies of the dung heap is the empty tomb. The further we get away from the European hearth fire, the further we get away from 'Christ is Risen,' and the closer we get to the black night of biological determinism.

I spent too much of my life in academia. It is not good for the soul, but I did not come up from hell empty-handed. I saw that the academics had one particular hatred that surpassed all their other pet hates – they particularly hated the European authors of the 19th century who championed the Christian hearth fire. They were fine with Tolstoy, but they hated Dostoyevsky. They liked the social criticisms of Dickens, but they hated Tiny Tim, David Copperfield, Little Nell, and Samuel Pickwick. Le Fanu's *Uncle Silas*, that magnificent Christian work, was labeled a Gothic thriller, and Ian Maclaren's *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*, was labeled sentimental mush. What all the great works of the late 18th and 19th century had in common was a very provincial, what would now be called racist, view of Christ. He was the God of human hearts, hearts that came to life around their familial and racial hearth fires. Thomas Hughes (*Tom Brown's School Days*) thought those hearth fire relationships of the European people were their links to Christ. He was right.

This coalition of techno-barbarian liberals, Moslems, and black barbarians is biological determinism on the march. We are supposed to fear the sheer numbers of this invincible force of nature. And they are our destiny if we do not, as St. Paul advises, put on the whole armor of God. The Moslems tell us that they are strong, fertile, and invincible. The black barbarians do not plead for equality, they demand that we sacrifice ourselves to them. (1) And the liberals give them what they demand. We should go out and meet the Moslem invader as Charles Martel and his Franks went out to meet them. And we should answer the “demands” of the black barbarians as the soldiers at Rourke’s Drift answered the Zulus. But we won’t do this until we become hearth fire Europeans again.

Perhaps the European people have lived so long in Liberaldom that they cannot return to their European hearth fire. But we are of the people who believed that Christ would be there for them at the last trump. Surely that must count for something? Our racial memory is like unto the dark woods in the European fairy tales. There are witches, goblins, and demons there, but there is also redemption. There is a light in the woods. If we follow that light we will find that it emanates from a small European cottage. But when we enter the cottage it becomes a castle with a royal King sitting on a throne. “Why did you wait so long to come home?” the King asks.

“I didn’t know where to find my home, and I’m still not sure I’m home.”

The king showed me His hands where they nailed Him to the cross, and He bid me touch Him where the spear pierced His flesh. “Don’t weep, those are the scars of love.”

“What shall I do?”

“Take my love and my blessing into the dark woods and never again forget where your home is.”

We won’t conquer through the democratic process nor through any of the systems of the religious experts who want to make God in the image of their mind-forged theologies. We will conquer when we fight our way through the dark woods and open the door of that European cottage where our European ancestors dwell. They want us to remember that outside the European cottage “are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murders, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.” Within that cottage is “the bright and morning star” of eternal Europe, which is the only Europe that matters.

Some weeks back I saw a video in which Alex Jones was asking God to spare his children from the wrath to come. I’m not a Founding Fathers conservative, nor do I follow all the conspiracy theories that circulate on the internet, but I was deeply moved by Jones’ prayer for his children. I feel the same way about my children. I drank deeply from the cup of liberalism in my youth, so I shouldn’t complain, but I will, of the hell that is to come. But my children have never dabbled in the black arts of liberalism. I pray that they will be spared from “the pestilence that walketh in darkness.” For liberalism is truly a dark pestilence that the European people are going to have to fight and struggle to overcome. Already the technology that was created because Christian Europeans saw there was a God above nature, who wanted us to use the gifts of the natural world for the benefit of man, is being used to destroy the image of God in man. Hospitals are used for the murder of infants and the murder of old “useless” white people. As the white technicians who man the machines are killed off there will be more uncontrollable plagues and uncontrollable natural disasters. I’m not a survivalist who is looking forward to the final stages of liberalism’s dark night. I pray that my family and the non-liberal European remnant will be spared to rebuild Christian Europe. We can’t hedge our bets and pray to be spared just in case science and democracy fail us. If we believe that liberalism is from the devil and that Christ is Lord of this world and the next, we should pray as the psalmist prayed:

I wait for the Lord, my soul doth wait, and in his word do I hope. My soul waiteth for the Lord more than they that watch for the morning: I say more than they that watch for the morning. Let Israel hope in the Lord: for with the Lord there is mercy, and with Him is plenteous redemption. And He shall redeem Israel from all his iniquities.

Christ is the Lord, and we are His people that He shall redeem if we seek His mercy. +

(1) Released by Black Lives Matter, 8-1-2016:

1. End the war on black people
2. Reparations for past and continuing harms
3. Divestment from the institutions that criminalize, cage and harm black people; and investment in the education, health and safety of black people
4. Economic justice for all and a reconstruction of the economy to ensure our communities have collective ownership, not merely access
5. Community control of the laws, institutions and policies that most impact us
6. Independent black political power and black self-determination in all areas of society

Those six demands of the black barbarians are not the pleas of poor Tom Robinson. They are the fiendish demands of hellhounds determined to exterminate the white race.

Three white counter-demands:

1. We will no longer countenance your criminal activities – the rape, torture, and murder of white people by blacks, will now cease.
2. Blacks will have complete economic and political freedom in their own nations, but they will never again be allowed to live in a nation occupied by whites.
3. Any white who advocates that whites should mix with blacks in any way will be sent to live with the blacks in their own barbarous, black state.

The Twilight of the Great God Democracy

August 13, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism, Atheism; and it has joined to those principles, a body of systematick manners which secures their operation...

I call the commonwealth *Regicide*, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is a usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers, and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles; and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it—this I call *Regicide by establishment*. — Edmund Burke

Whites in all the European nations are being overwhelmed by colored heathens because they have placed all their faith in the mind-forged messiah called democracy. A few weeks ago I read a ‘conservative’ scholar’s confident assertion that the European people would repel the Moslem invasion of Europe because they still constituted a majority. There are none so blind as those that will not see. Were not white Americans in the majority when they voted, in 1964, to make whites a minority race within the United States? Weren’t whites a majority in Canada when they passed similar anti-white legislation in 1967? So why will whites throughout the European nations halt the Moslem invasion just because they are a majority? The conservative scholar makes the same mistake that the secularized, democracy-loving white nationalists in the United States made vis-à-vis the Mexican invasion. They said whites still constituted a majority, so they urged us all to put pressure on our congressmen to stop the Mexican hordes from crossing our borders. But what the conservative scholar and the white nationalists fail to come to terms with is the messianic nature of democracy.

Democracy, as it exists in Europe and the United States, has nothing to do with the ancient Anglo-Saxons who chose their leaders by election. It has everything to do with Jacobinism. Both Russian communism and European democracy stem from Jacobinism, which is a rebellion against the Christian God:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

Burke Letters on a Regicide Peace

White conservative-liberals who want democracy without white genocide do not understand liberals. They treat them as part of the white majority whom they can win over to their side with cogent reasoning. Regarding Islam, for instance, the conservative-liberals such as Geert Wilders and Jared Taylor point out that Islam is incompatible with so many of the sacred cows of Western democracies, such as feminism, Judaism, and homosexuality. So they seek an alliance with their fellow liberals against the Islamic Jihadists. But the conservative-liberal is morally blind. If he could take his moral blinders off and see with the eyes of an antique European he would see that liberalism is from the devil. And the devil has one passion that overrides every other passion. He hates Jesus Christ and the people who championed Him. He doesn’t care about the welfare of the black heathens, the homosexuals, or the feminists who are already in his camp. He cares only about the ongoing war against the Light. Hence, his liberal minions care only about the ongoing war against the Light. Appeal to their reason? “You may as well go stand upon the beach, And bid the main flood bate his usual height...”

The conservative-liberals seek redemption from the devil because they wish to remain in the Jacobin camp. The false messiah still owns their souls. If they were truly white and Christian, they would ask themselves if white Christians have thrived in the democratic era. Has there not been a steady, relentless attack on white people and their God during the democratic era? Why should we continue to pay tribute to the Great God Democracy? It’s a problem of faith. The secularized white nationalists cannot let go of democracy and its support system of rationalism and science because without their faith in democracy they have no faith. They desperately quote numbers and engage in endless debates with the mad-dog liberals as a sort of holy ritual. Somehow, they believe, the Great God Democracy will save them if they religiously follow the rules of democracy. On this matter the mad-dog liberal is wiser than the conservative-liberal. The mad-dog liberal uses democracy as a means to an end—the destruction of the white race—while the conservative-liberal sees democracy as an end in and of itself. A similar dynamic has been at work in the Catholic Church. The Novus Ordo Catholics use the mass to push their adherents closer to Satanic liberalism, while the traditionalists worship the process of the mass itself. In both instances, the one saving grace, Jesus Christ, is left out of the picture.

When the poetic of the European peoples’ faith in the Christ, who was an indwelling presence in their lives, was replaced by a faith in a secular system, in both church and state, the European peoples’ destruction became as predictable as a math problem. There can be only one outcome when Europeans genuflect to democracy. The mad-dog liberals will keep on supporting, by colored proxy, the destruction of the white race, and the conservative-liberals will mildly protest white genocide within the confines of democracy.

If the European people leave their democratic god for the Christ who dwells in human hearts, the mathematical certainty of their destruction is no longer a certainty. In fact, it becomes an unlikely possibility because the “love that once was there” in the European people will be rekindled. And that love, grounded in our European Lord and our European hearth, is stronger than the devil and all his heathen minions. But the chains of democracy must be broken, that is all in all.

Democracy as a religion means much more than mere voting. It means science, rationalism, and goodness. Only Luddites, idiots, and the lovers of tyranny and injustice are against democracy! But if we look at this modern religion from a Christian perspective, what do we see? We see that the wars of democracy have killed more white Europeans, percentage-wise and numbers-wise, than all the wars for throne, altar, clan, blood, and soil. We see that racial and sexual Babylon grew and flourished under the tutelage of the Great God Democracy. And we see that the white race and the Christian faith are being voted out of existence in the democratic age. Why then do the European people cling to this malevolent god called Democracy? It is because they feel that outside of democracy, rationalism, and science is the night. But that is the test. If the European people leave the well-lit, unholy pleasure dome of utopia and return to the seeming darkness of racist, undemocratic, irrational Europe, they will step into a world where His pure light shineth in darkness.

What the liberals, Jews, colored heathens, and Moslems have in common is much greater than their differences. They all hate the incarnate Lord, Jesus Christ. Their hatred of the white race is irrevocably bound to their hatred of Jesus Christ. The liberals in church have sought to escape the hatred of the heathens by affirming an ‘idea’ of Christ over and against the incarnate Christ of the antique Europeans. And the secularized, unchurched liberals have sought to escape their whiteness and the heathens’ hatred by surpassing the heathens in their evangelical hatred of Christ and the Christ-bearing race. Only a complete repudiation of secular white-hating liberalism and white-hating Churchianity – ‘Race has nothing to do with Western civilization’ – will give the white man the strength to fight against the onslaught of the colored heathens. A Christianity that is not “bred in the bone” is not Christianity. It is intellectual Christianity, which is complete negation, a caricature of the true Faith. Our strength to fight against principalities and powers comes to us from that Christian promethean fire called charity. Without a racial home how can the charity that never faileth be ignited? I once went through a military history museum that displayed uniforms and armor worn by Christian knights through the ages. I was struck by the diminutive size of the ancient armor. Only the smallest of contemporary European men could fit into the armor of our ancestors, and yet those men were spiritual giants. They fought against the Moslem invader from without and the colored heathens from within. They had something that we lack: They had faith in the God of their racial hearth fire. They didn’t know about diversity or multiculturalism; all they knew was how to love their own people in and through the God of their ascending race.

Throughout Latin America and Europe we have seen what happens when Christianity and democracy are linked. The Christian democratic parties become the parties of Satan, determined to support the third world invasion of the West by supporting democracy and diversity. Who will oppose the anti-Christian Satanists? The Europeans who have left the Great God Democracy will oppose the Pope Francis-Angela Merkel liberals and their heathen allies.

The democratic gods have failed. They have not provided a government that protected the European people, and their vaunted technology has not decreased the European peoples’ fearfulness, it has increased it. If you read through the memoirs of Europeans facing incredible hardships in the wars of the 19th and 20th centuries and the other preceding centuries, you do not get an impression that the European people, no matter how terrible their plight, faced the future with such dread as they now face the future. Why should this be? Isn’t the democratic era the age of utopia? Why, if we have done proper homage to the Great God Democracy, hasn’t utopia arrived? I would suggest that my people fear the future because they don’t have a racial home. In that home we have kith and kin to fight with and for. And in that home is our Lord and Kinsman. There is always hope within that home. There is no hope outside of that home. Scott tells us in his poem “The Lady of the Lake” that “hope is brightest when it dawns from fears.” Then let us use our fears to our advantage. Let us return home and take our stand against the liberals and the colored heathens. Then? As the poet tells us – we will see a glorious, European dawn. +

The Long War

August 20, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



Worshipping organization in too hard and primitive a sense they threaten to transform the human world into something more like a world of ants. In many respects, therefore, it is dangerous to by-pass history, or imagine that the natural sciences—as though reigning over all—can safely be left to determine our views on human destiny. —Herbert Butterfield

In his critique of the Vatican II theologians, *The Devastated Vineyard*, Dietrich Von Hildebrand stated that although St. Thomas's system was not all of the faith, as he claimed, St. Thomas did not state deliberate falsehoods about the faith as the Vatican II theologians did. I would concede that the Vatican II theologians are certainly more heretical theologians than St. Thomas, but I would qualify that concession by saying that the Vatican II theologians were merely following St. Thomas's theology to its logical conclusion, just as the psychoanalysts who came after Freud were acting on his original thesis even though they were dissenters in degree from Freud's tenets.

What Aquinas, Feuerbach, Darwin, Freud, and Marx had in common was the Rosencrantz and Guildenstern fixation. They wanted to simplify and dissect in order to obtain knowledge:

Hamlet. *I do not understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?*

Guildenstern. *My lord, I cannot.*

Hamlet. *I pray you.*

Guildenstern. *Believe me, I cannot.*

Hamlet. *I do beseech you.*

Guildenstern. *I know no touch of it, my lord.*

Hamlet. *'Tis as easy as lying. Govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most excellent music. Look you, these are the stops.*

Guildenstern. *But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.*

Hamlet. *Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me, you would seem to know my stops, you would pluck out the heart of my mystery, you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think that I am easier to be play'd on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.*

In order to simplify man, he must be made into a creature who can be summed up solely by reference to the natural, biological world. Nor can the god of mere biological man be more than the sum of the parts of the natural world. For how could mere natural man, in the biological sense, understand a God who is more than nature? He can't, which is why all the anti-white and anti-Christian "thinkers" such as Feuerbach, Darwin, Marx, and Freud reduced God and man down to simple products of nature. God became nature and men were like bugs and insects; they could be studied and dissected, and then they could be made, by the examiners, into happy bugs and insects. Feuerbach was going to make men happy by proving that the Christian God was a product of their fertile imaginations. Darwin was going to make men happy by proving to them that they were apes. Marx was simply a caricature of Darwin and Feuerbach. And Freud, who was a second rater but vastly superior to the third raters such as Feuerbach, Darwin, and Marx, was going to make men happy by bringing out their subconscious neuroses and subjecting these neuroses to the healing powers of reason. But what if a man's subconscious is really his soul? A soul that is not as simple to play upon as a recorder? And what if reason is not an objective arbitrator between two or three competing passions, but is a subject, not a master, of those passions? It is significant that the modern psychoanalysts no longer try, as Freud did, to "cure" people by digging deep into their subconscious. They simply give them drugs. The hubris of the early psychoanalysts was incredible, but at least they tried to heal rather than anesthetize.

What we are witnessing today is the triumph of the nature philosophies of the Jacobins, Feuerbach, Darwin, Marx, and Freud. All Europeans drink at the trough of the nature gods. The conservatives might be more like Freud, in that they still believe in the healing powers of reason, than the mad-dog liberals who follow a mish-mash of Darwin, Marx, and Feuerbach. But it all amounts to a return to Baal. The European people have returned to the fleshpots of Egypt.

In order to kill all resistance to the return to Baal, the liberals had to trivialize existence. They had to exchange the complexity of thousands of years of Christian traditions into a few platitudes such as 'thou shalt not be racist,' 'thou shalt not be sexist,' and 'thou shalt be multicultural.' What Karl Barth said of Feuerbach – "We have heard Feuerbach speak and we have heard something disgustingly, nauseatingly trivial" – can and should be said of our modern liberal society. Has any society anywhere in the world ever been built on more nauseatingly, disgustingly, evil trivialities as our modern liberal society?

There is no resistance to liberalism because conservatives are the Freudian branch of liberalism. By that of course I don't mean that the conservatives are all card-carrying Freudians. I mean they are the second-rate biological determinists who are in philosophical agreement with the third-rate liberals about the necessity of a democratic, scientific, rational world, but they differ over the furniture arrangement of that new world. But what is lost is that which cannot be lost without bringing the European people to utter ruin. We have lost our connection to our Christian past. In that past are men and women with depth of soul. They needed something more than the evil trivialities of 'Thou shall not be a racist or sexist' and 'Thou shall worship

diversity and democracy with all thy heart, mind, and soul.' They needed the hero-God, the Man of Sorrows who meets the needs of a people with a tragic sense of life, people who believe in His holy cross more than the utopian nightmare of the liberals.

When science holds sway over the minds of men, they return to polytheism. Even when they still keep the name of Christian, they become polytheists. One case in point – When Isaac Sterns, a Roman Catholic convert and a psychoanalyst, wrote *The Pillar of Fire*, he made a case for the synthesis of Christianity and psychoanalysis. But such syntheses blur the image of Christ in man and tend to glorify the ape in man. And an ape needs nature gods, not the Son of God.

The first organized polytheistic state within the heart of Christian Europe was Jacobin France. The first Jacobins were atheists, but they soon shifted to organized polytheism with ridiculous corn and grain festivals accompanied by the murder of aristocrats, thus combining the same polytheistic elements that the back-sliding Israelites included in their return to Baal. Our modern sporting events, our diversity inspired church services, and our ritualistic sacrifice of infants in the abortuaries are all part of the ongoing push to return to Baal, to nature, which ultimately means the extinction of the human personality. The religion of the gypsies, a people of non-definite race and a vague nature religion, has become the faith of the modern science-minded Europeans:

"To be resolved into the elements," said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; "my hope, trust, and expectation is, that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recompounded in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under different forms,—the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldeboran and his brethren,—In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it!—Hence! Begone!—disturb me no farther!—I have spoken the last words that mortal ears shall listen to!"

—Quentin Durward by Walter Scott

To be resolved into the elements, that is the faith of the liberals, those great lovers of humanity! And those churchmen who want to join with them through the Jews, the Moslems, and the heathens of color, what are they but the great betrayers of our Lord and His people?

If we boil this race war down to the main point, it is this: Liberal polytheism is Satan's attack on Christ through Christ's people, who were and are the European people who developed human personalities through their love of the God-Man. Let us keep that image of God reaching out to man that Michelangelo painted on the Sistine Chapel ever before our eyes. Satan wants us to blend our race into the nothingness of nature because he wants to blot out forever the image of Christ in man. And my great concern is that there is no Christian resistance to Satan's master stroke. "I am not a racist," is always the first thing a halfway-house Christian says when he protests any of the liberal gambits against the white, Christ-bearing race. And by abandoning that 'racist' connection to his people, the halfway-house Christian has made himself a spiritual eunuch without the strength to oppose the liberals who have not only spent the unbought grace of life, they have set up Jacobin states throughout the formerly white Christian nations. The liberals have institutionalized the hatred and the vilification of any white man who dares to invoke the memory of that blessed civilization whose people relied on and believed in the grace and love of our blessed Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ.

Burke's description of the calm, rational English administrators who thought it might be a good idea if the Jacobins didn't guillotine so many people is an accurate description of the tepid and timid opposition the liberal conservatives present to the mad-dog liberals:

Whenever the adverse party has raised a cry for peace with the Regicide, the answer has been little more than this: "That the administration wished for such a peace full as much as the opposition, but that the time was not convenient for making it." Whatever else has been said was much in the same spirit. Reasons of this kind never touched the substantial merits of the war. They were in the nature of dilatory pleas, exceptions of form, previous questions. Accordingly, all the arguments against a compliance with what was represented as the popular desire (urged on with all possible vehemence and earnestness by the Jacobins) have appeared flat and languid, feeble and evasive. They appeared to aim only at gaining time. They never entered into the peculiar and distinctive character of the war. They spoke neither to the understanding nor to the heart. Cold as ice themselves, they never could kindle in our breasts a spark of that zeal which is necessary to a conflict with an adverse zeal; much less were they made to infuse into our minds that stubborn, persevering spirit which alone is capable of bearing up against those vicissitudes of fortune which will probably occur, and those burdens which must be inevitably borne, in a long war. —[Letters on a Regicide Peace](#) by Edmund Burke

We are engaged in a long war against the enemies of Christ, who attack Him by attacking His people. A culture based on the ethos of "To be resolved into the elements," is not a culture, it is an excrescence that should be eradicated from the face of the earth. There can be no blending, no compromise with the people who champion the polytheistic anti-culture called liberalism. +

The Fear of Racism

August 27, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare, Walter Scott



And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment: For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour. – *Matthew 9: 20-22*

The European people prior to the 20th century were like unto the woman with the issue of blood: They had faith in the divine humanity of Jesus Christ. And as a result of that faith, a power, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, went into the European people. That power, that divine charity of our Lord, did not make the European people into gods, but it did make them unlike the non-white cultures, because they, and they alone, gave a local habitation and a name to the one true God.

The liberals have launched a very successful campaign against those antique Europeans and their culture. It has been so successful that all of organized Christianity, which has become organized Jewry, has sided with the liberals against the Christian Europeans. Why have professed Christians sided with the abortionists, the sodomites, and the race-mixers against the people of old, Christian Europe? We know why the mad-dog liberals hate the antique Europeans – they worship darkness and not the light. But again, why do professed Christians join with the liberals? There is no question that it is the issue of race which has joined the liberals and the new age Christians into an uneasy, but nevertheless clear alliance against the antique Europeans.

It doesn't appall the new age Christians that our ancestors were against abortion and sodomy, but it does appall them – in fact it horrifies them – that our ancestors abominated race-mixing. You might think that it was only the modern Roman Catholics, who do not place the same stress on the Bible as the Protestants do, who deplore the “racism” of the antique Europeans, but the modern Protestants with the Tower of Babel story right before them also abominate the “racism” of the antique Europeans. So let's be clear on this point: The modern “Christians” have sold their souls to the devil, for just as sure there is a God in heaven and a devil in hell, liberalism is from the devil.

What makes a man fear the racist label so much that he will side with the devil and his minions against the faith of his ancestors? The answer lies in the Book of Revelation. Why does Jesus Christ tell us, in chapter 2, verses 6 and 15, that He hates the deeds and the doctrines of the Nicolaitanes? Is it because they are adulterers? Or is it because they think adultery and other such sins are of no account if you merely affirm an intellectual belief in Christianity as an organized system? I think it is the latter reason. But of course there is no general agreement on the identity or the sins of the Nicolaitanes. My opinion is based on the history of my people. Throughout their history, the European laity were in a constant struggle to maintain their faith in Jesus Christ as their Lord and kinsman over and against the clergy, who, in the main, preferred to champion an intellectual system, which they claimed was instituted by Christ, over and against the Europeans' faith in Christ, the God of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and St. Paul. The first type of faith requires a willingness to submit to one's intellectual superiors, the second type of faith requires a circumcised heart. That second faith, which is, I believe, the true faith, is sanctioned by the Gospels, by St. Paul, and by the witness of the great European poets such as Shakespeare and Walter Scott, who speak to us still and tell us that the heart's prompting is the voice of God.

But why has the other faith, the unfaith of intellectual Christianity, become mainstream Christianity while the old bred-in-the-bone faith of the antique Europeans has become a hole-and-corner faith for outlawed men hiding in the bogs and fens of what was once Christendom? It is a very old story. It is the story of the pride of intellect. God was not bound to Adam and Eve by a legalistic system; He was bound to them by love. He loved them as a father loves his children. They should have felt bound to Him by filial love. But they chose to circumvent their heart to heart relationship with God and exchange that relationship for an intellectual relationship with Satan. The modern Christians have repeated the sin of Adam and Eve. Liberalism is clearly from Satan, but if their churchmen tell them that it is only through intelligence that a man can be saved, then the new age Christians feel they must cling to intelligence. And what is the stupidest thing a man can be? It is a racist. Thus the fear of the racist label keeps the new Christian-Jews out of the camp of Christ and keeps them in Satan's camp. It must give Satan no end of satisfaction to hear the words, Lord, Lord on the lips of professed Christians who condemn, with righteous indignation, the Christians of old Europe that gave Christ a place by their racial hearth fire. Where is He now that those European hearth fires have been extinguished throughout the white nations?

So long as the clerical leaders preach intellectual Christianity, which consists of the unholy trinity of the Father – abstracted intelligence – the Son – the sacred negro and the other non-white races – the Holy Ghost – science – and so long as the laity follow those leaders, whites will never fight back against the liberals' and their colored minions. And racism will always be the cornerstone of the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth, just as Christ is the cornerstone of the Kingdom of Heaven.

The liberals have placed the fire-breathing dragon called racism at the gates of Liberaldom. Is there a Christian knight who dares face that dragon who spews the fire of “thou art a racist” at any white man who dares to equate his racial hearth fire, and the mysterious human relationships formed at that racial hearth fire, with goodness, light, and the unbought grace of life? If we denounce our racial hearth fire we are men without a nation and worse yet, we are men without honor. The Christian people who were “wont to conquer others have made a shameful conquest of themselves,” because of their fear of being racist and therefore unintelligent. And we all know, according to the liberals, that only the intelligent, the illuminati, can enter the kingdom of heaven. Oh, for a man who is not afraid of the racist label, a man who will confront the dragon who spews the “Thou art a racist” fire and drive a sword through the dragon's heart.

If we look closely at intellectual Christianity we can see why the Europeans start every morning with the “I shall not be a racist” prayer. Their god is the abstracted intellect who views racism as a sign of damnation. Hence the best way to prove you are of the elect is to embrace the colored heathens, who are the collective saviors of the world. If we believe in them they will lead us to the paradise of the intelligent men. Such a paradise, where the intelligent pagans sit and talk about virtue, reminds us of the first circle of hell. That is where a man ends up if he forsakes the promptings of his heart for the mind-forged utopia of the godded men, the men of intellect.

The third person of the new Christianity, which is not Christian, permeates the European culture. Science is truth, and truth is science. Science is invoked to prove that there is no such thing as a white person. Science is invoked to prove that men are monkeys. And science is invoked to kill the pain of existence that the old-fashioned racist God of the Antique Europeans could not or would not do away with. The holy ghost of science holds out to men the false hope that they can accept the third temptation of the devil: They can have an earthly paradise without facing the consequences of the devil's bargain.

But what is the price of that third offer? We must all bow down and worship Satan. Haven't we done just that? When we renounce the non-abstract Christ, the Christ with a local habitation in the hearts of our European ancestors, for a new triune god of intellect, colored heathenism, and science, have we not made our choice, have we not chosen Satan over Christ?

The Moslem invasion has not roused Christian Europeans. What opposition there is consists of the "we are not racist Gnostic Christians," which is no opposition at all, it is the airy nothingness of intellectual Christianity. Any opposition to liberalism, and Islam is part of Liberaldom, must come from men whose hearts belong to the Christ of old Europe. That Europe was built on the charity that never faileth, the charity that cured the woman with the issue of blood.

The cold, heartless intellectual Christianity of the modern church men and their followers is not a sustaining faith. St. John tells us that "perfect love casteth out fear." The racist dragon will never be removed from the gates of Liberaldom unless the European people return to their one true love, the Christ-centered Europe that was grounded in the love of the Savior who responded to His people when they reached out to touch the hem of His garment. We have an issue of blood that cannot be cured except by the Christ of our racist ancestors. Does Christianity really begin and end with the affirmation of "I am not a racist"? Or is Christianity about the faith, the hope, and the charity that was bequeathed to us by the racist Europeans? Why should we run and hide under the bed when the liberals and the intellectual Christians call us racists? What does it mean to be racist? It means we love our people and the Christ-centered civilization they bequeathed to us. If other peoples want to believe as the antique Europeans believed, which they steadfastly refuse to do, that is all to the good. But if they demand that we repudiate our people and eradicate every single white hearth fire on the face of the earth, which is exactly what they do demand, we should come out from under our beds, kill the racist dragon, and conquer Liberaldom in the name of our sacred ancestors and in the name of Christ the King. +

Fast Falls the Eventide

September 3, 2016

Categories: Chivalry, Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Henry Francis Lyte



Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;
The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide.
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,
Help of the helpless, O abide with me.

— Henry Francis Lyte

All the non-white races pose a danger to the white race, because the non-white races, in the main, have not been Christianized. Therefore their hate is always directed against the good, which is the white race. Even when the whites embrace the same devil that the people of color worship, the colored savages still hate the whites because of what whites once were. The colored barbarians never believe, because of the whites' Christian past, that whites won't revert to form and try to forcibly drag them away from their beloved Egyptian night.

The colored races need not worry. The liberal powers that be in the Western nations have no intention of returning to Christian Europe. The seemingly trivial, but fraught with significance, incident of the half-breed football player who refused to stand during the playing of the American national anthem, and the various white and colored reactions to his refusal indicate quite clearly the genocidal nature of the modern Europeans.

Let me begin with the obvious – It is whites who should refuse to stand for the national anthem, not colored people. (1) The United States of America, like all the nations settled by Europeans, is set up for the deification of the colored races and the liquidation of the white race. One of the most important ways that the liberal governments of the West keep their white victims anesthetized and indoctrinated is through sporting events. There are ‘inclusion’ days at sporting events which celebrate sodomy; there are negro days, oriental days, Mexican days, etc., but there are no white days at the sporting events. There is only the wringing of liberal hands when some sport is not ‘diverse’ enough. In countries such as Canada, where they cannot entice enough colored aliens into their country to completely pollute their sport teams, they celebrate the colored athletes they do have and desperately try to get more. Soon whites will be banned from all sport teams. That is called ‘diversity,’ which means the triumph of colored barbarism over white chivalry. Sport is the dramatic acting out of a people’s national ethos. When colored barbarism is sacred and white chivalry is demonized, the sporting events of white nations celebrate and extol colored barbarism.

The black and the white athletes have supported the half-breed’s self-serving egomania while the white grazers have wrapped themselves in the Masonic flag of the United States and screamed about the lack of respect for ‘our troops.’ Can anyone explain to the white grazer that white people on this continent have not had their own ‘troops’ since Nathan Forrest disbanded the original Ku Klux Klan? Just as I feel sorry for an AIDS victim who has contracted AIDS through immoral acts, I feel sorry for a soldier who is killed, maimed, or wounded fighting for the United States government. But my sympathy for the AIDS victim and the soldier is not as great as my sympathy for the white victims of colored atrocities. The latter did not meet with misfortune and/or death because of an immoral action on their part, unless you call being white immoral in and of itself, whereas the sodomite and the man who fights for the United States government becomes a victim as a result of his own immorality. Not being perfect myself, I can sympathize with such victims, but my greatest sympathy goes out to the white innocents. (2)

Before moving on from the half-breed barbarian we should say something about the nature of half-breeds, which are becoming more and more prevalent in the European nations. In the ‘superstitious and racist’ 19th century, the Europeans were of the opinion that half-breeds were even more dangerous than unadulterated colored barbarians, because they combined the post-Christian liberal hatred of their own people with the primitive, age-old hatred that the colored races have for the white race. It’s like mixing arsenic and cyanide or rattlesnake venom with cobra venom.

Nothing is more distasteful to the modern European than comments about the dangers of race-mixing and colored barbarism, but are not Christians supposed to seek the truth? Who is right? Our ancestors, who abominated race-mixing and looked on the non-white people of the world as dangerous barbarians that had to be resisted lest they overwhelm the white nations, or the liberals, who think we should bow down and worship the colored heathen? It always comes back to the third temptation of the devil: “All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.” And our Lord replies: “Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.” Lady Macbeth gave herself up directly to Satan, but her husband, who did his wife’s bidding, also gave himself up to Satan: he served Satan through his wife. The liberals serve Satan through their worship of the colored barbarians. Even if the liberals could deliver on their promise, which they can’t, of an earthly utopia for all those who accept ‘diversity,’ should we give up our immortal souls for their utopia? Didn’t the most important Someone who ever lived once ask us, “For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?”

The “Battle Hymn of the Republic” and “America the Beautiful” are outright blasphemies. The “Star-Spangled Banner,” which extols the “free and the brave,” hardly captures the essence of a nation where whites live under the mind-forged shackles of diversity, but the colored barbarians perceive the “Star-Spangled Banner” to be a white anthem, so even that liberal-based anthem will be replaced by an anthem similar to the one the Zulus chanted before they attacked Rourke’s Drift. Will there ever come a time when whites face the foe again and respond with shot, shell, and bayonet while singing “Men of Harlech”? I doubt it. But there will come a time when the warring tribes of colored barbarians have made a wasteland of the white nations. Then a remnant band of whites, who have remained faithful, will call on their Lord and Kinsman, and their anthem will be “Abide with Me.” At that moment when all the false helps and comforts, such as democracy, science, diversity, and intellectual Christianity have failed, the remnant band who have kept His cross before their eyes will remember His words: “Fear not; I am the first and the last,” and they will rebuild Christian Europe in the midst of Babylon. Just as Babylon overwhelmed Christendom, so will the new Christendom overwhelm Babylon.

Modern Christian Europe is dead. The Moslem invasion, the deification of the colored races and the ongoing democratic, universalist blather of clerical and secular liberals are all part of the funeral rites, but if Christ is indeed risen from the dead as our European ancestors believed, then Christian Europe can also rise from the dead. The Europeans' past and future is contained in the passages in *Luke 24: 28-36*:

And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

"Did not our heart burn within us?" That was the difference between the European people and the non-Europeans. Because their hearts burned within them in His presence, they asked Him to abide with them. How can a people who have abandoned all the noble passions that reside in the human heart, such as the love of kith and kin, suddenly develop hearts that burn within them in His presence? They can't. This brave new world has been created according to Satan's plan: "Kill the Europeans' heart and you kill Christ." That is Satan's decree. He cannot actually kill Christ, but he can destroy His image in man if he plunges his satanic sword of the abstracted intellect through the European's heart. The European counterrevolution begins with the simple prayer uttered at our European hearth fire: "Fast falls the eventide; the darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide!" +

(1) During the American Civil War the Southerners did not celebrate the Fourth of July, because they did not feel part of the United States. The white people of the United States and all the nations of Europe are more disenfranchised now than the Southerners were during the Civil War and Reconstruction Era. The counterrevolution will begin when whites realize they are a captive people at the mercy of a foe that has no mercy.

(2) Of course the white woman who is murdered by her black boyfriend is not an innocent victim who rates the same sympathy as the white innocent who is murdered by a marauding creature of color.

The European nations as they exist today are like a vast zoo. The whites are the animals in the zoo, and the owners of the zoo, the liberals, have given the colored barbarians free passes to go into the zoo and kill as many white animals as they wish. It's a deadly sign of the times when animals have more rights than whites. "But let's all join hands and support our colored sport teams" is the liberals' comforting command. Why should we follow that command? Shouldn't a man stand upright at least once in his life and refuse to bend his knee to Satan by refusing to pledge his allegiance to diversity?

The Implicit Oath of Allegiance that all whites take when they celebrate diversity and multiculturalism:

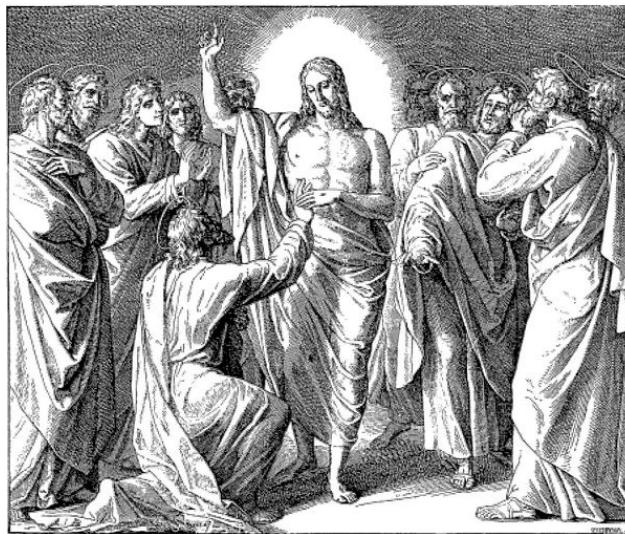
"I pledge allegiance to diversity and the multicultural nations in which it strives. One Babylon, under Satan, without white people, and with sexual depravity and multiculturalism for all."

But of Thee, O Lord

September 10, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Viewing things in this light, I have frequently sunk into a degree of despondency and dejection hardly to be described: yet out of the profoundest depths of this despair, an impulse which I have in vain endeavoured to resist has urged me to raise one feeble cry against this unfortunate coalition which is formed at home, in order to make a coalition with France, subversive of the whole ancient order of the world. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Let me pause and honor Phyllis Schlafly, who passed away a few days ago. I am not a ‘Founding Fathers,’ free market, democracy-loving Americanist; that aspect of Mrs. Schlafly’s agenda never held any appeal for me. Nor did Mrs. Schlafly take a stand against negro worship, which is one of the two great issues of our times. But on that other issue, the issue of “Unsex me here,” Phyllis Schlafly took her stand and held it, never yielding unto death. She opposed cop chicks, soldier chicks, infanticide, and the demonization of the Christian patriarchal family. For that I honor her and say, “God bless you, Phyllis Schlafly,” as I’m sure He will.

Speaking of death (“I didn’t know we were,” you reply), my body played a rather cruel trick on me this past August. After seven years without so much as a sniffle I was plagued with an illness that I thought, at one point, was going to take me to that country from whose bourn no traveler returns. You can accuse me of hypocrisy if you want – “How can a professed Christian be so unwilling to die and be with his Lord?” – but I prayed the “Please, not yet” prayer. I remember making a similar prayer some thirty years ago when I received a head injury while working as a police officer. But there was a crucial difference between the two events. During the first, I didn’t want to die because I wanted to be there for my family, and because I still wanted to enjoy those thousand and one earthly things that our Lord has put on this terrestrial ball for our enjoyment. During the second, the recent illness, I didn’t want to die because I still wanted to be there for my family, but the desire to enjoy life had vanished and been replaced by a certain longing for death. That longing was nowhere near as strong as my desire to still be a stay and support for my family, but that new longing had definitely replaced the zest-for-life longing of thirty years ago. Because I’m a reflective, “melancholy Dane” type, upon my recovery I thought about what had changed inside me over the past thirty years to destroy those “joys of this earth” yearnings. And I concluded that it has to do with what Blake wrote: “Where man is not nature is barren.” The liberals have done such a thorough job of destroying Christian Europe that there is no living human remnants to be found. When our European culture was Christian, there were “sweet vale of Avoca” moments when God, man, and nature seemed one. Now, when Satanic Babylon has replaced Christian Europe, man, nature, and the devil are one. A world peopled by Cornwalls, Gonerils, Regans, and Calibans is not a world of infinite delight, it is hell.

The dying Laertes says,

*The foul practice
Hath turn'd itself on me.
Lo, here I lie,
Never to rise again. Thy mother's poison'd.
I can no more: –the King
The King's to blame.*

Yes, the King was to blame, but he never was the true king. Hamlet was the legitimate heir of his father, King Hamlet. And the intellectual Christians are not the true church, they are false prophets who preach a false Christianity envenomed with the poison of liberalism. Christ left His church in the hearts of His people, and Satan’s allies have attacked that church by creating an anti-church alongside it, with all the outer accoutrements of Christianity but with a spiritual core that consists of a death’s head. Intellectual Christianity is Pope John reacting to the torture-murder of his own people at the hands of black barbarians with “loving forgiveness” for, and reverend worship of, the murderous black savages. Intellectual Christianity is Pope Francis placing Christ on the same level as Mohammed and below Allah. Intellectual Christianity is the betrayal of all things white and Christian by Christian democratic leaders such as Angela Merkel. Intellectual Christianity is the persecution of the white race under the banner of ‘fighting racism,’ while in reality it is Satan who has organized the attack. Never accept the anti-European lie. The European people are under attack because Christian Europe was a sign of contradiction to Satan. Our modern, inhumane, Christ-hating Europe is a sign of contradiction to the Man of Sorrows who once ruled Europe through the hearts of His people. While the intellectual Christians tried to make their man-made, mind-forged theologies the universal law, the true church was held together by the European people who loved the Savior in and through their kith and kin:

The writers on public law have often called this aggregate of nations a Commonwealth. They had reason. It is virtually one great state having the same basis of general law; with some diversity of provincial customs and local establishments. The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and economy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources.
– [Edmund Burke](#)

Yes, from the same sources, from the same wellspring – the blood of the Lamb who taketh away the sins of the world. Every European man and woman knew that their nation was a nation because His divine charity ruled over their racial hearth fires. A breach of custom or a breach of law was immoral because their customs and laws came from Christ. But when the laws and customs of the European nations come from Jacobinism, spawned by intellectual Christianity, the European people must oppose such laws and customs lest they become the subhuman servants of the liberals, just as the Eloi became the prey of the Morlocks in H. G. Wells’ novel *The Time Machine*.

Burke took great pains to show the people of Europe that the French Revolution was not a mere change in government, not the exchange of one ruling family for another. Nor was it the change of a Royal King for a Lord Protector. It was a change from a Christian commonwealth to a satanic commonwealth. For liberals, it was the dawning of a new day throughout Europe; for Burke, who saw with blinding sight, it was the beginning of the end. The “unbought grace of life” would disappear from Europe if Europeans allowed the Jacobin serpent to enter therein.

The history of Europe since the French Revolution has confirmed Burke's prophetic warnings. All the European wars since the French Revolution, except the American Civil War, which was a war of Southern European loyalists against Northern Jacobins, have been wars between competing factions of Jacobins. The history of Europe under Jacobinism has been like the tale of *The Shepherd of the Giant Mountains* without a Christian hero to kill the griffin. Now, every European battle, political and military, spawns new, young griffins just as Jacobin and venomous as their 'different in degree but not in kind' enemy. The old right was not conservative in that they wanted to return to Christian Europe and side with the King against the Jacobins. All the old right wanted was a larger piece of the Jacobin pie. And the new alternative right is a very old alternative right. They are young griffins who want their share of Jacobin Europe. But whether it is the old right, which was never from the Right, or whether it is the new alternative right, which differs from the liberals and the old right in nothing except possibly the extent of their sneer against all things Christian and European, matters little.

Ah, the sneer. That seems to be the link between all the modern movements. The 'smart ones' sneer at the antique Europeans because they were noble, whereas the modern sneerers are ignoble; the 'smart ones' sneer at the antique Europeans because they were dumb (why else would they worship a gloomy Gus who died between two thieves?). And on it goes – all that made life worth living, the romance that accompanied male and female relationships was deemed sentimental slop (maybe some of it was, but it certainly was superior to the 'let's do it in the road' philosophy of the moderns); the faith that lessened and finally transcended the sting of death (Death, where is thy victory?) was replaced with macho existentialism and the 'absorbed into the elements' faith of the nature-loving liberals. And worst of all the charity of honor disappeared from the face of the earth because it disappeared from the hearts of the European people. No European political movement or organized insurrection can have any validity or worth unless it stems from that charity of honor bred into the bones of our European ancestors at their racial hearth fire.

"In the midst of life we be in death:" But what is death? Our Lord tells us that death is the beginning of life eternal. Why does that belief play no part in the grandiose schemes of the liberals, the conservative liberals, and the alternative right? Why must they kill old Europe? Our Lord said that the pure in heart would see the living God. Is that why the people who saw Christ and made Him the light of their culture must have no rights of memory in this distracted globe? They must not be remembered, because they remind us that "in the midst of life we be in death." We can't face that truth without faith; it is too horrible. Just as the man who knows only Lady Macbeths, the man who never had one whispering silken gown across his life, cannot bring himself to fight for a woman's honor, so is the man who has never known the Christ of old Europe incapable of mounting a charge for his King, his people, and his God.

Some force greater than intellectual Christianity, neopaganism, or liberalism must come into the European's heart and purify his vision. Is such a miracle possible? It is certainly possible. And it should be every European Christian's prayer that the Europeans, who currently sneer and mock all that is good and noble in the European people of the past and those who follow in their train in the present, will be converted to the faith of their ancestors or else die on the swords of the men who love so much that they have seen His blood upon the rose. +

By What Right Do Liberals Rule?

September 17, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Democracy, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



There is no safety for honest men, but by believing all possible evil of evil men, and by acting with promptitude, decision, and steadiness on that belief. I well remember, at every epocha of this wonderful history, in every scene of this tragic business, that when your sophistick usurpers were laying down mischievous principles, and even applying them in direct resolutions, it was the fashion to say, that they never intended to execute those declarations in their rigour. This made men cautious in their opposition, and remiss in early precaution. By holding out this fallacious hope, the impostors deluded sometimes one description of men, and sometimes another, so that no means of resistance were provided against them, when they came to execute in cruelty what they had planned in fraud. – Burke in [A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly](#)

When Richard II unlawfully seized the lands of Bolingbroke, thus setting off the War of the Roses which would finally end with the death of Richard III at Bosworth Field, his uncle York warns him that he is only king by “fair sequence and succession.” If he violates fair sequence and succession to seize his cousin’s lands, does he not invalidate his right to be king? But Richard ignores his uncle’s advice, and he does indeed lose his crown and his life as a result:

DUKE OF YORK. *O my liege,*
Pardon me, if you please; if not, I, pleased
Not to be pardon'd, am content withal.
Seek you to seize and gripe into your hands
The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?
Is not Gaunt dead, and doth not Hereford live?
Was not Gaunt just, and is not Harry true?
Did not the one deserve to have an heir?
Is not his heir a well-deserving son?
Take Hereford's rights away, and take from Time
His charters and his customary rights;
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day;
Be not thyself; for how art thou a king
But by fair sequence and succession?
Now, afore God—God forbid I say true!—
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,
Call in the letters patent that he hath
By his attorneys-general to sue
His livery, and deny his offer'd homage,
You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,
You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts
And prick my tender patience, to those thoughts
Which honour and allegiance cannot think.

KING RICHARD II. *Think what you will, we seize into our hands*
His plate, his goods, his money and his lands.

DUKE OF YORK. *I'll not be by the while: my liege, farewell:*
What will ensue hereof, there's none can tell;
But by bad courses may be understood
That their events can never fall out good.

[—Richard the Second](#)

With the same arrogance of Richard, but without his Shakespearean poetic, the satanic Prime Minister of Canada recently announced that Canada was not a nation. If it isn’t, then by what right is Justin Trudeau the Prime Minister of Canada? By right of liberalism, the Canadian Prime Minister tells us. Canada is simply a group of people who believe in humanity. But what is humanity in the abstract? The liberals have told us the answer to that question through their deeds. ‘Where your treasure lies so lies your heart.’ The liberals treasure the colored races and the heathen faiths. So humanity consists of the colored races and the heathen faiths in the aggregate. That is what Justin Trudeau fancies himself the leader of – an aggregate herd called humanity. But his title of Prime Minister is only valid because of an older rule of fair sequence and succession instituted by white Christian Europeans. If he violates that rule, he is a tyrant masquerading as a legitimate ruler.

The white Canadians, like the American Midwesterners, are more open about their liberal agenda, but they are no different than the liberals in all the other white nations. Liberals do not look on themselves as leaders elected to defend and protect the white citizens of their nations. They look on themselves as an elect group of men and women with the right and duty to exterminate the white people within their realms in order to advance the interests of the colored barbarians. And whites who petition and plead with the liberal elect for rights within liberalism will find, like Sisyphus, that they can never quite get the ‘white people have rights too’ rock up the democratic, multi-cultural hill of the liberals.

Bolingbroke knew that if he allowed Richard to divest him of his lands and title, he would lose his name and his identity, and his heirs would lose their names and identity. And he also knew that if he let Richard seize his lands and titles, Richard would feel free to take his life, so he fought back. But the modern Europeans, who have been robbed of their identity as a people by liberals who seek their lives as well, seem to have no desire to fight back. Why?

The first reason is that the modern Europeans have ceded a divine right of kings to those officials who are democratically elected. James I of England, Scotland, and Wales tried to foist such a right on the British people, but he, and his Stuart successors, failed to establish that right, because the European people had a bred-in-the-bone faith that put Christian limits on their sovereigns. ‘I serve the King, and the King serves Christ,’ was their rough-hewn code. And when a King didn’t respect the Christian faith and the Christian rights of his subjects, he was deposed.

Thomas Hughes, author of *Tom Brown’s Schooldays*, was of the opinion that if the new age of democracy failed to recognize that Christ, not the democratic process, was the ruler of Europe, then Europe would descend into the dark night of Babylon. And of course that is what has happened. The European laws that were grounded in our Christian faith were sacred, but laws grounded in liberalism are far from sacred. They are, in fact, satanic. Until Europeans rid themselves of the notion that any law decreed by men elected democratically must be followed as holy writ, you can keep digging those mass graves for the Europeans who refuse to fight.

The second reason that the modern Europeans won’t fight back against the techno-barbarians and the colored barbarians is that they no longer have an identity to fight for. What were the European people? They were the Christ-bearers. What are they now? The church men tell them that they are not the Christ-bearers; their ancestors worshipped a false Euro-centric Messiah that never was. The liberals tell them something similar – they tell them that their God was a racist, sexist, homophobic God as were the people who worshipped Him. ‘So who am I?’ the wandering European asks. ‘Where did I come from and wither am I going?’ The liberal’s answer – ‘You are an accident of nature, a loathsome boil on the body of humanity that must be lanced and then removed.’ And the white man accepts that piece of liberal doctrine, because he can’t defy nature. The old Christian Europeans could defy biological nature because they believed in a God above nature, but the modern European cannot defy nature because his God cannot transcend nature; he is bound, like Prometheus, upon that hard rock with the liberal and colored barbarian vultures attacking his entrails.

The Christian era of the European people was, according to the liberals, the age of superstition and unscientific thinking. But what could be more superstitious than the modern enlightened Europeans’ belief in science and democracy? What has been the end result of their belief system? The modern Europeans meekly submit to their own extermination as they chant the democratic-scientific litany: ‘We love the colored barbarians because they are natural and organic people, and we believe in the infallibility of the democratic process – onward and upward with democracy, science, and the noble savages of color.’

A Trump victory will not be a victory for white people. It will be a rearguard action that will give the white Europeans a little breathing time before their inevitable defeat. And their defeat is inevitable if they don’t reconnect with their past and learn to see existence feelingly. There is a passion gap between the modern Europeans and their ancestors. The antique Europeans had hearts of flesh that responded to any attack on His reign of charity. When innocence was attacked, when their people were attacked, they responded with the hatred that stems from love. You can’t sustain a long war – and a very long war is necessary to defeat the liberals – with a war cry of ‘We want our share of the Jacobin pie!’ The European people can only fight as they should fight, when they fight Jacobinism in defense of innocence – the aborted babies and the white victims of colored atrocities. No white candidate who does not make the abortion issue and the white genocide issue his main issues is not truly a white candidate. And there never will be a white candidate, because Jacobin democracy is anti-white and anti-Christian. Break your democratic chains, ye men of Europe, and fight in response to your heart’s promptings. Surely it is better to be an antique European who loves and hates with all his heart than a modern intellectual something-or-other who has nothing to feel passionate about?

Burke, and later Richard Weaver, echoing Burke, tells us that our prejudices are our heartfelt intuitions about the nature of existence. If we purge our ‘prejudices,’ we have no touchstones of reality; we are reeds for every wind that blows. We can see the reeds blowing in the winds when we look at the new intellectual Christians who have divested themselves of the superstitions and prejudices of the antique Europeans. The new, unprejudiced, intellectual Christians worship negroes and all the non-white races regardless of what they do or believe. The new intellectual Christians believe in the sanctity of the Jews despite the fact that the Jews don’t believe in Jesus Christ. And the new intellectual Christians always side with the liberals, the great haters of Christ and His people, against those who believe in Jesus Christ and try to defend His people against the colored barbarians and the heathen faiths. What will it take for the European people to once again become prejudiced, ‘To hate the devil and all his works’?

What makes a man turn his back on liberal Babylon and seek that other world – His Kingdom come, on earth as it is in heaven? He must be touched, at the deepest level of his soul, by the love that passeth the understanding of the intellect. There is only one way to the Father, whose love passeth all understanding: It is through the Son of God. And there is only one way to the Son: It is through human hearts that love Him. There is no other Christ than the Euro-centric Christ. That Christ is not time-bound. He was and is at the center of the only truly human culture that ever existed on the face of the earth. Without a connection to the people who created that culture, in response to His divine love, there can be no faith, no hope, no charity, and consequently no resistance to liberal Babylon. “Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.” Wasn’t the miracle of Europe a direct result of Europeans who did indeed seek, first and foremost, the kingdom of heaven described to us by the Son of God? The European people will never throw off the yoke of liberal techno-barbarism and colored barbarism by a utilitarian affirmation of intellectual Christianity. They must love the Euro-centric Christ who enters human hearts. Within those European hearts is the death warrant of liberal Babylon. The love that is rooted in His passion can never be defeated. Wither does the European wander? Christ is his King by fair sequence and succession. When he loves enough to fight for his king, he will reclaim his European name and identity – the Christ-Bearer – and he will be triumphant over the satanic liberals and their colored minions. +

The Non-Diverse European

September 24, 2016

Categories: Grazers, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Anthony Jacob



But let us consider these factors carefully. Racial segregation does not imply racial oppression or genocide or anything Communist like that, but means purely what it says. It means that the white race and the black race, the one advanced and the other primitive and polygamous, instead of mixing retain their widely disparate customs and identities. Basically it means only this: That the white race is determined to stay white. This, aside from the sheer impossibility of two such widely disparate races living on mixed and equal terms, is absolutely all that racial segregation means. – Anthony Jacob

If I were a liberal, which by the grace of God I am not, I would be slightly worried about a few recent developments within Liberaldom. They are only minor problems, but if I were a liberal who wanted to see the complete triumph of liberalism I would not even want minor problems. The first problem is being caused by the black athletes who are refusing to stand for the national anthem. Don't they realize – I am speaking for worried liberals – that we keep the white grazers in negro-worshipping trim by wrapping all our sporting events in the American flag? It's all right to hate whites – in fact we encourage you to hate whites – but do you have to mar our negro-worshipping sporting events by baring your fangs at the services? We will cover up for you with accusations of racism against anyone who objects to your posturing, and then follow up the racism accusations with, “You must understand their rage,” but still you have made it difficult for us to fool all of the grazers all of the time. A few might slip away. What does that matter? It probably doesn't matter, but having once been a white man I know that they can and will fight if they are stirred to the core of their being. So why push it when we are winning? Let sleeping dogs lie.

The second problem (still speaking as a liberal) is that loud-mouthed Hillary. The woman is constantly putting her foot in her mouth. Didn't we have anybody else to run for President? That statement about the basket of deplorables is going to haunt us right up to election.

Still (no longer speaking as a liberal), the problem of stupid colored minions who don't know when to leave well enough alone and the problem of running a woman for president who is too overt in her demonism is not going to put a major dent in the liberal machine. And such glitches will not put a major dent in the liberal machine, because when such glitches occur they only irritate a small number of white grazers, and those white grazers who are irritated are not moved to repudiate liberalism, they are simply moved to seek redemption from the devil. They will complain to the liberal hierarchy and ask them to correct what they feel is an aberration from liberalism. The grazers do not understand that what they see as an aberration is the essence of liberalism – the hatred of the white, Christ-bearing race. And how can the grazers understand the satanic nature of liberalism when they have been educated in liberal schools, they worship in liberal churches, and they live in a society dominated by liberalism? They can't, because they have been seduced by liberalism just as Merlin was seduced by Vivien:

*Then, in one moment, she put forth the charm
Of woven paces and of waving hands,
And in the hollow oak he lay as dead
And lost to life and use and name and fame.*

*Then crying, “I have made his glory mine,”
And shrieking out, “O fool!” the harlot leapt
Adown the forest, and the thicket closed
Behind her, and the forest echo'd “Fool.”*

The white grazer lies prostrate before the liberals as one who is “lost to life and use and name and fame.” Of what use is the white man? He lives to serve the colored barbarians. What is his name? His name is evil. There are no evil men of color, all evil resides in the white male. And what is his fame? He has no fame, he only lives in infamy, soon to be exterminated.

The Moslem attacks in Europe and this country are not similar in the body counts, but they are similar to the anthem protests and the ‘deplorables in the basket’ remark of Hillary in this regard: They make the liberals nervous because they are so explicit. Will the white Merlin ever be stirred up enough to return from the dead? No, not in his former state. He was an intellectual Christian; for him Christianity was magic. And he who lives by magic can be seduced by magic. Vivien was not particularly smart, but she was backed by the devil who knew that Vivien had charms that could overwhelm an intellectual faith devoid of passion. Vivien offered Merlin the passion that his faith lacked. It is only Arthur's faith, which is anchored in the love of his Lord, in and through his people, that sustains him in the day of battle against the flesh and the devil. Merlin can only be saved from without. His kinsmen must break his enchantment with the sword of Christ's divine mercy. Then Merlin, having rejected the magic of intellectual Christianity, will embrace the miracle of the true faith – our Lord's divine condescension, the charity and passion of His death on the cross, which has redeemed the world, and His resurrection from the dead, which gives us the sure and certain hope of our resurrection from the dead.

The white grazer is very far from the European people who believed that the Christ story was true. If some statement by a Hillary or an Angela Merkel, or some blatant act of ingratitude from the pampered and privileged black athletes, or yet another Moslem attack on the European people, were to trigger something in the white grazer's soul that would make him take the first step back to his Christian, European hearth fire, that would truly be an event worth celebrating. But it hasn't happened. The liberals circle the wagons around their colored and Moslem minions whenever they become too blatant in their barbarism, and they regroup and rephrase when one of their public officials misspeak.

In Matthew 5:3 Christ says, “Blessed are the poor in spirit,” and in Luke 6:20, He says, “Blessed be ye poor.” It seems that our Lord, in Matthew 5:3 means to suggest that a man does not have to be in abject poverty to be humble in spirit and realize he is completely dependent on God. Nor does the fact of poverty necessarily make a man humble in spirit and receptive to God's grace. But in Luke 6:20, He does make the point that it is often only those who have been humbled by the loss of the things of this world who can come to know God. The modern European people have only a passing intellectual acquaintance with the God whom their ancestors knew in spirit and in truth. What will happen when the liberals' fantasy world comes tumbling down, when they no longer can provide the sporting events, the health care, and the other basic human services? The prophetic voice of Anthony Jacob speaks to the modern European, but the modern European is not listening:

Kenya, we must understand, is a microcosm of the entire West. Therefore let us ask ourselves, What would have been our general White position today if the world had consisted only of Kenya, with no other place for us to go to and no other form of government for us to live under? What then? We, the White race, would already have been obliterated or reduced to everlasting serfdom, would we not? Yet however fanciful it might still seem to the white peoples of the northern American states and occupied Europe, the world today does in the most vital sense consist only of Kenya, for we cannot keep on being racially overruled and uprooted and moved on. Wherever we are now we are in effect in Kenya; for certainly the operations of the anti-White conspiracies, the techniques of the Communists, Liberals, and One-Worlders, remain significantly identical whether they be applied in Kenya or Alabama.

Africa is the world, particularly South Africa and Kenya. The blacks will not be practical and keep the useful whites alive. Most will perish and the ones left alive will live in squalor. Will that poverty enoble the white? Will they turn to the European Christ? Some will. But poverty is not a magic formula for spiritual renewal; it often simply crushes the spirit. What Christ wants is our heartfelt love. He doesn't require us to live in hovels in order to know His love. The people of Nineveh were supposed to be unconvertible, but when Jonah listened to God instead of the voice of this world only – the voice of practical, utilitarian logic – he went to Nineveh, and the people of Nineveh were converted. "O Lear, O Lear, Lear! Beat at this gate, that let thy folly in, And thy dear judgement out!" It is the heart that illuminates reason. If our hearts are right, our reason will serve the good. If our hearts seek a treasure other than Him, our reason will serve the devil. No plea for reason to prevail has ever stopped a war or arrested the headlong flight of a demon-possessed people from hurtling over the cliff. Only a passion, grounded in His passion, that is passed from one heart to another can arrest the seemingly unstoppable fall of the European people into the deepest pit of hell – a Babylonian hell on earth.

The European fairy tales in which the third dumb brother wins the fair princess and becomes king because he has that charity of honor were stories that illustrated the Pauline Christianity, which tells us that "the foolishness of God" is "wiser than men" had entered the blood of the European people. From that "foolishness" the European people derived their strength. Merlin and the white grazers have placed their hopes in intellectual systems, whether they are called magic or science; it is all one. Such systems will ultimately betray their adherents and leave them in a hollow oak bereft of their name and identity.

Why do young whites look for their identity in artificial recreations of what they think is the old Viking culture? I suppose it is because they feel it gives them an identity and a people to whom they can belong to. But the path of neo-paganism is the path to the dung hill. The Vikings and the other pagan warrior tribes bent their knees to Christ. If a European forsakes the European Christ, he forsakes his people. Oscar Wilde was wrong. Each man does not kill the thing he loves. The liberal seeks to kill the thing he hates – the Son of God and the Christ-bearing race. Likewise the neo-pagan, because he hates the Son of God, hates the Christ-bearing Europeans and seeks to forge a new Europe grafted on to the old pagan Europeans.

It is only the European with the heart of flesh, the European who loves much, who will endure to the end. The 'isms' (liberalism and Neopaganism) are aberrations, they are not of Europe. And it is only eternal Europe that will survive, all the 'isms' will turn to ashes. The indoctrination didn't work. We reject their world of democracy, science, multiculturalism, and negro worship. We prefer the foolishness of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. +

A Tale of Two Towers

October 1, 2016

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Walter Scott



O great and gallant Scott,
True gentleman, heart, blood and bone!

-Tennyson

And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth... So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

-Genesis 11: 4, 8

Of all the men who have ever taken pen in hand to put on paper what their heart felt, Shakespeare stands above them all. But he, even he, felt completely unequal to the task. In many of his sonnets he expresses frustration over his inability to adequately express his heart's deepest sentiments. I think all the other truly great artists of the West, men such as Michelangelo and Handel, must have felt as Shakespeare felt – that what they wrote, painted, or composed was a mere stammering compared to the vision that was in their hearts. How could it be otherwise for fallen man? His heart sees the eternal light for one blessed moment, and then the things of this world darken that light and he sees through a glass darkly. And we lesser men, who are not Shakespeare, Michelangelo, or Handel, still have a vision of the light, and we still, like the great artists, try to stammer out our heart's vision.

Every human personality has a vision in his heart that is inspired by his God. Our vision as a people is contained within our race, because our race makes us a people with a local habitation and a name rather than an airy nothing or a formless universal that can be abstracted out of existence. The European people responded to Christ's charity, and as a result His divinely human heart humanized their hearts. From the moment He came to their hearth fires, the European people's stammerings reflected, collectively, the image of God. If we approach the European people in the spirit of a doctor who is just looking for disease, we will find nothing but disease in the European people. But if we look at their culture "feelingly" and not with the spirit of a dissector, we will see the face of God in the collective stammerings of their hearts.

We cannot reach out to His divinely human heart if we don't have human hearts. "Out of the depths have I cried unto thee, O Lord." If we don't plumb the depths, if we forsake the tragedy of life for a Thomistic-Buddhistic escape into the land of the abstracted intellect, we will never transcend the tragedy of existence by fighting through the ever-moaning battle in the mist, as our Lord did. Instead we will be forever seeking to escape existence rather than conquer it through His Holy Cross. Having forsaken the Cross, we will never know the glory of the resurrection.

The shadow of death hung over the European people until they saw "a great light." Those people, those hearts who saw Christ through a glass darkly, were and are the Church of Christ. The false Aslans are the men of religion who have sought to make a church out of their man-made, mind-forged systems. At this point in the European peoples' history the light seems all but extinguished and the shadows of death loom large. What else can we call the European nations that have become havens for the heathen faiths and the dark-skinned devils, other than the charnel houses of death? The liberals worship darkness and not the light. For this reason they have systematically attacked the people who saw a great light and infused that vision into their culture.

Will we ever again see the animation in the eyes of a European that stems from the light of a Christ-centered heart? Yes, we will, but first we will suffer as Job and King Lear suffered. Is that tragic? Yes, it is. But at least at the end of that tragic drama, the drama of the Europeans' struggle against liberalism, there is light instead of darkness.

What vision of God do we see in the collective face of the people of color? We see the face of Satan. Yet the liberals want to blend with and worship those people. It's no coincidence that the first atheist government within the heart of Christendom, the French Jacobin government, countenanced the massacre of whites in Haiti. The liberals' utopia will always be built on blood, the blood of the white man. And the Christian utopians, the men who have forsaken the God of their ascending race for the great, gnostic god of the universal mind, often exceed their secular liberal brethren in their zealous hatred of the white race. In fact the hatred of the white Christ-bearing race has now become the secular liberals' and the churchmen's sign of election.

This fear of being racist has paralyzed the European people. And it is not just the Western European people. I have heard the 'We are not racist' affirmation from stalwart eastern Europeans who courageously oppose Islam, but then quake before the racist label. I place the blame for this outrage on the un-Christian Christian clergy. The better Europeans will oppose their liberal governments, albeit they will only oppose them democratically, but they will not oppose their church. They need to look past the church organizations who collectively represent the false Aslan, to the true church — the antique Europeans of provincial, racist Europe, whose stammerings from the heart bear witness to the living God.

Many years ago I saw the Scott Monument in Edinburgh. I suppose there are many monuments and sculptures more aesthetically pleasing to the eye, but the monument was a piece of moral beauty such as I had never seen before. It was such a moving tribute to one of Christian Europe's greatest poets. Each carved niche of the monument contained one of the characters in Scott's works or one of Scotland's poets. It seemed to me then, and even more so now, that the monument captured the spirit of Scott. By placing the characters from his novels and other beloved Scottish poets in the niches of the monument, the man who made the monument was paying tribute to the stammerings of Scott's great heart. The inner man, the vision that is in a man's heart, is all in all. For me Walter Scott and the other great European poets such as Shakespeare pull back that veil, just for a moment, which separates this world from the next. And they bring us to that other world by way of the human heart. They reject intellectual systems and cosmic-mysticism for the one sure mysticism that St. Paul enjoins us to practice – the charity connected to His divine charity. I have no doubt that the Brits will soon tear down the Scott Monument, but haven't the British people already done something worse than tear down a monument? They, like all the people of modern Europe, have forsaken the antique Europeans' vision of the heart, as articulated and exemplified by Sir Walter Scott.

I frequently hear liberals and liberal conservatives saying that the Europeans must be diverse because the essence of a democratic society is diversity. Everyone, regardless of race, color, or creed must be welcome in nations that respect their democratic institutions and traditions. But we should not respect our democratic institutions and traditions, because they are not of Europe, they are not part of the European peoples' heart. If you have a cancer in your body, you don't strive to keep the cancer alive in your body because it is now part of your body's history. You acknowledge that it's there, but you strive to purge it from your body. The Moslems and the colored hordes are now part of the European people's history, but that does not mean they must be preserved and protected (let alone worshipped) as if they are our people. They should be purged from the European nations because they are a cancerous non-Christian disease that will kill every last vestige of the light that shineth in darkness.

Let us not get lost in the theories of the secular and Christian utopians. Despite all the liberals' raptures about the wonders of a world purged of white people and dominated by colored people, we see nothing but death, decay, and debauchery in the brave new world of techno-barbarian liberals and their colored barbarian gods. Is this the promised end? The antique Europeans saw beauty on a cross. Where is the moral beauty in the liberals' brave new world?

George Meikle Kemp, the architect of the Scott Monument, was born in Midlothian, the scene of one of Scott's greatest novels, and in his early years he was a shepherd on his father's farm:

*I gaze on thee, and one sweet memory tells
Of that strange lad who, all a summer's day,
Herded his sheep upon the Pentland fells,
And read the mighty minstrel's border lay:
And who, to echoes of the city bells
Blending with clash of arms and fierce foray,
Beheld thee there upon the hillside lone—
Brandished his crook and froze thee into stone!*

-Ebenezer Charlton Black

Black's ode to the architect who poured out his heart's stammerings to the Scottish bard he loved captures the essence of Christian Europe. We are the provincial people who love a provincial God born in a manger. So long as we remain faithful to our provincial God, by loving Him in and through our kith and kin, we triumph over death and decay. But if we continue to aid the liberals in their attempt to rebuild the Tower of Babel, we will perish in darkness.

Two monuments, the one built by a loving heart in honor of a provincial poet who speaks to us all because he stayed with the provincial hearth-fire virtues, and the other tower built by blasphemers who sought to destroy the provincial virtues in order to satisfy their desire to become as gods. We shall not follow in their train. We shall place our hearts and our swords at the service of Scott's provincial Europe. +

The Lost European Chord

October 8, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



Dore. Babylon fallen

In which the old man launches forth into his favorite theme... *The Pickwick Papers*

Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. – *Matthew 23: 38-39*

That the French Revolution was a magnificent event that gave birth to a new era of liberty, equality, and fraternity is an article of faith for all modern liberals. It also was and is an article of faith for the intellectual Christians such as Priestly, Price, and Belloc. But from a genuine Christian standpoint there can be no compromise with the apologists for the French Revolution. Nor can there be any tolerance for those who want to find a middle ground: “There were some excesses, but there were also some good things...” No, either Burke was right when he warned us that the French Revolution was from hell, or the liberals were right when they said the French Revolution would usher in a new age of peace and brotherhood.

...if, in the moment of riot, and in a drunken delirium from the hot spirit drawn out of the alembic of hell, which in France is now so furiously boiling, we should uncover our nakedness, by throwing off that Christian religion which has hitherto been our boast and comfort, and one great source of civilization amongst us, and amongst many other nations, we are apprehensive (being well aware that the mind will not endure a void) that some uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition might take place of it.

– Edmund Burke, *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

Of course Burke, not the liberals, was right, but the liberals’ Jacobin ideals and not Burke’s faith have been institutionalized throughout the European nations. And the uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition that has taken the place of the Christian faith of the European people is negro worship. There are other articles of faith that go along with negro worship, such as the love of all the colored races and a preference for all the heathen faiths over the Christian faith, but negro worship is the cornerstone of the liberals’ faith, just as the worship of Jesus Christ was the cornerstone of the antique Europeans’ faith. Intellectual Christians who try to oppose Islam without opposing negro worship – “I oppose the Islamic invasion but I am not a racist” – and neo-pagans who oppose negro worship but sneer at the Christian faith of the antique Europeans are both doomed to failure, because both groups are trying to fight liberalism while retaining part of the liberals’ faith. The intellectual Christians want to blend Christianity and negro worship while the neo-pagans want to eliminate Christ and replace Him with their minds. The intellectual Christians are like the devotees of the mystery religions who made a rational decision to give themselves up to cosmic enthusiasm, much like the hippies of the 1960s and 1970s who wanted to get “lost in your rock and roll and drift away.” And the neo-pagans are like unto the Greek philosophers who thought they could dispense with the gods and make reason their god. The French Revolution started out as a rationalist rebellion against God and then, when rational atheism alone proved uninspiring, the Jacobins incorporated the rationalistic enthusiasm of the nature-based mystery religions into their system:

The conducting of this heathen mummery, which was substituted for every external sign of rational devotion, was intrusted to the genius of the painter David; and had it not been that the daring blasphemy of the purpose threw a chill upon the sense of ridicule, it was scarcely matched as a masquerade, even by the memorable procession conducted by the notorious Orator of the Human Race. There was a general muster of all Paris, (June 8,) divided into bands of young women and matrons, and old men and youths, with oaken boughs and drawn swords, and all other emblems appertaining to their different ages. They were preceded by the representatives of the people, having their hands full of ears of corn, and spices, and fruits; while Robespierre, their president, clad in a sort of purple garment, moved apart and alone, and played the part of Sovereign Pontiff.

Walter Scott, *Life of Napoleon Buonaparte*, Volume 2

The combination of mystery, nature, and rationalism has been proof, so far, against all European counter-attacks. It is this old man’s contention that the Europeans have not been able to launch an effective counter-attack against the liberals because they have not put on the full armor of God. They have not used the shield of virtue, which is *pietas*, the passionate love of one’s own, nor have they wielded the sword of truth, which is faith in the vision of Jesus Christ bequeathed to us by our non-diverse, racist European ancestors.

There is a great divide separating us from the antique Europeans. Those ancient Europeans were a people, while the modern Europeans are a legion of Humpty Dumpties. “When I use a word, it means anything I want it to mean,” was Humpty Dumpty’s assertion. Such is the suicidal nominalism of the intellectual Christians. If you want to abandon Christ and your people in order to appease the liberal powers that be and still have a clear conscience, you simply invent a new Christianity. In the new Christianity a man’s sanctity is measured by the extent to which he loves and adores the black race. He doesn’t actually have to love blacks as human beings, he just needs to love the blacks in the abstract. And in that other hole-and-corner of Liberaldom, the neo-pagans hold onto their version of Humpty Dumpty logic. They love white brain cells while hating individual white people who believed that the foolishness of Jesus Christ was wiser than the brain cells of the philosophers, scientists, psychiatrists, anthropologists and all the other cosmic, universalist thinkers. It is this thing called intelligence that is the dividing line between the Humpty Dumptians of modernity and the antique Europeans. Does reason need to be illuminated by the human heart? No, it does not, say all the modern Humpty Dumptians, from the mad-dog liberals to the intellectual Europeans in the traditionalist and neo-pagan camps. But if human reason is self-illuminated, is it not illuminated by Satan? The light that shineth in darkness comes from His divinely human heart.

Europeans saw that light when their hearts were connected to His heart. The story of Christ’s nativity speaks to us still. The star of Bethlehem, that great light, came to earth through the heart of Christ. No man cometh unto the Father except through Christ. And no man cometh to Christ unless he comes by way of the human heart. The racial war is not, at least it should not

be, a war about intelligence. The Europeans are not the Christ-bearing race because they are smarter than other races, they are the Christ-bearing race because their reason was illuminated by a heart-to-heart connection to Jesus Christ. The intellectual sneer at the sacred connection between the Christ Child and the European people is the mark of Satan, whether the sneer comes from the mad-dog liberal or from the neo-pagan. We are not the people of the blasphemous sneer, we are the people of the Christian hearth and the Christmas feast. Say not that the struggle does not availeth, it does availeth when it is grounded in His divine charity.

The proof that it is the heart that illuminates reason and not the reverse can be seen in the reality of our lives. Why did Reverend Price exult at the humiliation and execution of the King and Queen of France while the same spectacle made Edmund Burke weep? Why do our modern liberals exult at the presence of blacks and Moslems in formerly white nations while white Europeans of the old stock are sickened by the change? And why does the neo-pagan see nothing but a Jewish conspiracy in the faith that the European people gave their hearts and souls to? The answer is that reason can see only what the heart feels. The liberal hates, in his heart, the white Christ-bearing race so he exults in the triumph of the black barbarians over the white race. And the neo-pagan, in his heart of hearts, loves the idea of a world dominated by his giant brain. He hates all those who would put limits on his powers by bowing down to a sickening, weak-kneed God with Jewish antecedents.

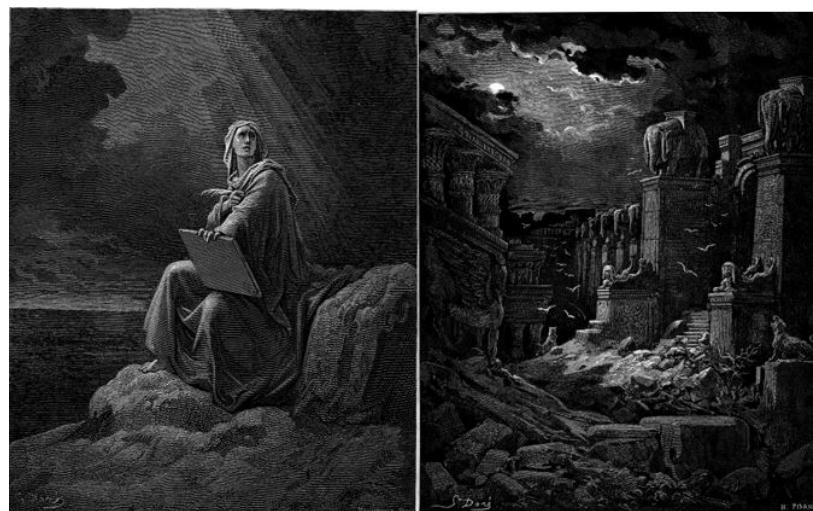
The appeal to reason has not stopped legalized abortion, it has not stopped the liberals' attack on the white race, and it has not stopped the neo-pagans' assault on Christ-centered Europeans. We can't reason the baby killers, the white-hating liberals, or the anti-Christian neo-pagans out of their maniacal hatred of all things Christian and European. Does that mean we give up? No, it means we give up rational debate and cling to what we know to be the true antique Europeans' vision of the living God: that Christ, who presides over the hearth fires of the European people who have asked Him to abide with them, is the only life-sustaining vision that is worth fighting for. And it is the only vision that is grounded in reality. There is no truth or virtue in liberalism or neo-paganism. Freud, Darwin, Marx, and company were men whose evil hearts darkened their reason and made them the instruments of Satan, just as the men of intellect, the Übermenschen Nietzsche dreamt of, have cast their lot with the angel who would not serve. Is it really better to reign in hell than serve in heaven? That is only desirable to those who have never been touched by the Christ story. But of course that is the problem — the European people have become warring camps of Humpty Dumptians who have put their reason at the service of hearts that have rejected the Light of the world. Are there no Europeans willing to put on the whole armor of God and venture forth against the Humpty Dumptians of the hardened hearts? "Did not our hearts burn within us by the way?" But first we must have hearts of flesh. And then, and only then, will we find that "Lost Chord" of the European people — "that grand Amen" — which is preceded by the heartfelt prayer, "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord." +

Light and Darkness

October 15, 2016

Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Shakespeare



Liberalism represents an attempt to superimpose on reality an artificiality, to substitute that which is sham for that which is real. In its determination to obliterate distinctiveness (Aldous Huxley said somewhere that “Good is that which makes for unity. Evil is that which makes for separateness”) and reduce everybody and everything to a grey uniformity, Liberalism reveals that it amounts to nothing less than a war against Life itself. Liberal intellectuals are all intellect and no instinct. They have no ‘ground’ and no compass to guide them. This is why they habitually use words and expressions without any meaning, because they have no meaning in themselves. They perform cerebral circles in a spiritual desert and end by dying of thirst. And this is excellent, except that tens of millions of white people are persuaded to accept them as guides; and along with their ‘guides’ are led deeper and ever deeper into the waterless deserts of Liberalism, there to perish with them.

Due directly to Liberalism, *we are the only race in the whole world that is being taught to despise itself.*

—Anthony Jacob, *White Man Think Again!*

That England, that was wont to conquer others,
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself.

—Shakespeare, *Richard II*

Certain 20th century conservatives have made reference to the cultural war, and they are right — there is a cultural war that is raging. But it is not the cultural war that the 20th century conservatives thought was taking place. The 20th century conservatives, the TCCers, thought that the cultural war was between the liberal left which supported the dechristianization of Europe through the various radical -isms – Jacobinism, socialism, and communism – and the conservative right, which supported the Greco-Roman, Christian traditions of Europe. The problem with the TCCers’ assessment of the cultural war was that they overestimated the power of their own intellects and they underestimated the subtlety of the devil. The devil is quite capable of getting the zealous anti-Christian liberals to take the direct path to hell while, at the same time, getting the liberal conservatives to take the indirect route to hell that is disguised with the false outer façade of the heavenly city. What the TCCers failed to comprehend was that rationalism, whether it was rooted in the thought patterns of the ancient Greeks, the medieval scholastics, the 18th century philosophers, or the 19th and 20th century scientists, was part and parcel of the wizardry of liberalism. No matter that a man professed an intellectual preference for theological Christianity or a philosophy of the ancients, so long as his professed admiration was of the mind and not the heart, that conservative was part of the wizardry of Liberalism, which gets its inspiration and ethos from the devil.

Chateaubriand, who was a befuddled atheist before the French Revolution (his family was wiped out by the Jacobins) and a committed Christian after the Revolution, cut to the heart of the Europeans’ fall from grace when he delineated the eternal conflict between the devil’s appeal to rational wizardry and Christ’s appeal to the human heart:

...Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undertake so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over-powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks. —The Genius of Christianity

The culture of magic is Satan’s world. When the European conservative talks about our Greco-Roman/Judeo-Christian democratic traditions, he is not being true to the European tradition. He is merely adhering to another part of the “pride of science” alchemist tradition of the anti-European, utopian element of the European people. “You shall be as gods,” is the promise of Satan. He is forever encouraging mortal man to turn to a system which contains God, instead of looking to the vision of God that the antique Europeans held in their hearts. That there is a deeper magic than the devil’s intellectual magic, a magic of the human heart, is what the Europeans, in union with St. John, who placed his head on Christ’s sacred heart at the last supper, and in union with St. Paul, whose heart saw Christ on the road to Damascus, discovered when they eschewed the magic of the devil for the love of the God-Man. “The love that once was there,” the love which comes from human hearts linked to His divinely human heart, is what is missing in modern conservatism. We can’t love a system. Only intellectual wizards such as the neo-cons and their liberal cousins in the mad-dog liberal ranks and in the liberal-conservative ranks can get excited about “Our democratic traditions,” or “The workers’ paradise,” or “Free Market Capitalism,” or any other of the -isms of liberalism. But we can love our people, through whom we learn to love the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. Look through all the conservative analogies of the 20th century, and you won’t see the only real conservative of the 20th century, which was and is, Anthony Jacob. He didn’t love an -ism, he loved his people. Like Burke, who thought that whatever -ism went against the heart and soul of his people was evil, Jacob championed his people over systems. At the heart of all good governments is a particular, racially distinct people whose hearts are connected to His heart. All true conservatism then, according to Burke and according to Jacob, had to be rooted, not in the wizardry of Satan, but in the hearts of the people of Europe who had given their hearts to Christ. Burke and Jacob stand with those other great European poets such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dostoevsky. They loved much, and gave of their heart’s blood in an effort to turn their people’s heart back to His Europe and away from the wizardry of Satan’s universalist death trap, which is often camouflaged by intellectual systems which promise paradise and leave us bereft of faith, hope, and charity.

If Trump wins the upcoming Presidential election it will be no more than an irritating mosquito bite on the body of Liberaldom, but it will mean something infinitely more if the Trump victory is a sign that a significant amount of white grazers have stopped listening to the voice of Satan as it comes to them through the churches, the government, and the mass media. (1) That doesn't mean that the grazers who vote for Trump are Europeans in the mold of Alfred and Walter Scott. Far from it. But the rejection of the wisdom of wizardry is a beginning. It is up to the remnant band of Europeans to fill the void in the grazers hearts by standing as a sign of contradiction to the gnostic coalition in church, state, academy, and media.

The reason that it is so hard to get a grazer to resist liberalism by standing with the Christian Europeans of old Europe is because the modern Christians in the Roman Catholic and Evangelical Protestant ranks always side with the liberals. And they always side with the liberals because they are "deeply tinctured with the pride of science," which is the eternal Achilles heel of fallen man. From that sin comes negro worship and the hatred of all things human – the European hearth fire and the virtues that go with that hearth fire, which consists of the love of one's own, heroism, and the charity that never faileth. A world without the hearth fire virtues is not a culture, it is the absence of a culture. Whites who try to blend with the anti-cultures of the colored heathens soon become non-persons. They are not pagan enough to become colored, but they are not white enough to be Christian Europeans. They live in limbo. If and when Christian Europeans make their presence known as men who fight for charity's sake against Satan and his minions, then, and only then, will the European counter-revolution begin.

How did it come about that everything stemming from Christian Europe is deemed evil, even by such "Christians" as Pope Francis, and everything stemming from modern Liberaldom is good? Is a society that legalizes sodomy and abortion better than a society that abhors such practices and makes laws against them? Is a society that worships negroes and encourages the extermination of white people better than a society that separates whites from blacks and supports the white race? Ah, there's the rub! The liberals do claim that a society that worships blacks and hates whites is a superior culture. Every evil under the sun must be allowed to the liberal ruling elite, because they promote anti-racism. And white racism (not black, brown, red, or yellow racism, which is lauded) is the original sin in the liberals' twisted theology. Pride of science, which views the natural world and the Lord of the natural world, the negro, as superior to the Christian God is not seen as sinful, it is seen as the way to the kingdom of heaven on earth. That kingdom of heaven on earth is always in the future. It will come about when what the liberals call white racism, and what we call *pietas*, vanishes from the earth. When the white grazers finally realize that it is their loved ones, their kith and kin, whom the liberals want to murder, will they fight back or will they submit to the slaughter? They are submitting to the slaughter of whites in South Africa and in the city streets of the United States, so what makes us think that whites in other nations won't submit to their own extermination? The whites' shameful conquest of themselves began when they preferred Christian wizardry to the love of Christ Jesus. Such an assertion is always guaranteed to elicit a sneer from the liberal and the neo-pagan, but what or who, if not Christ, is the last refuge of the European people? If we don't love where we should love we will not hate enough to fight for our people. Dylan Thomas's rage against the dying of the light was magnificent, but that rage must be directed against the liberal wizards in church and state and the demon whom they serve, in the name of the Light of the world, if we are ever going to see the Europe we love flourish again on this earth.

Within the Catholic ranks there are warring groups of Catholics who play the 'revelations from Mary' game. The traditionalists refer to a revelation from Mary in which she condemns Vatican II, and the Vatican II-ers counter with a revelation from Mary in which she says we must support Vatican II. And in the ranks of the evangelicals the unrepentant Jews have somehow become the chosen people of God who Christians are supposed to support without question because such support will bring about the coming of the Messiah. Excuse me, but I thought the Messiah had already come. As to His second coming, didn't He say, "that day and hour knoweth no man, no not the angels of heaven, but my Father only."

What is going on within the Christian ranks? Why are Christians looking for a sign? I maintain it is because they have left the Christ who can only be known in and through His people, the antique Europeans, to go whoring after false messiahs who can be made into the servants of some type of esoteric system that makes the Son of God more compatible with the minds of men who can't abide the European Christ. In the modern church of Gnosticism I hear the voices of the acid-tongued rabble who said, "Thou that destroyest the temple and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God come down from the cross." And I hear the mocking voices of the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders mocking Him and saying, "If He be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him. He trusted in God, let him deliver Him now, if He will have Him: for He said, I am the Son of God."

Christ has come down from His cross, but not as the wizards wanted Him to come down from the cross. He has come down from the cross to enter the hearts of men. He has come down from the cross to abide with us at our familial and racial hearth fire. Is it His fault that the men of science did not recognize Him and then, because of their loneliness, they anointed the negro as the Savior of the world? No, it is not His fault, it is ours. Peter was forgiven for denying his Lord thrice, so will we be forgiven if we turn away from the false messiahs of modernity and turn to the Man of Sorrows who has been waiting outside on the doorstep of our racial home for an invitation to return to His people who once saw a great light. +

(1) Isak Dinesen once remarked that a man was never completely reprehensible if he was at least a man. That is Donald Trump. He is not a Christian hero from a Walter Scott novel, which is a great pity, because nothing good will happen to the European people until we once again start producing Ivanhoes and Quentin Durwards. But Trump is a man with some small vestiges of *pietas* left in his heart, which makes him a better man than all the presidential candidates this nation has put forward since the death of Teddy Roosevelt. Again, Trump has some good instincts – I intend to vote for him – but I wonder if a few good instincts will allow him to withstand the wickedness and snares of the devil. All the forces of hell have been loosed upon him. All the hell hounds came out to attack Reagan when he ran, but the attack on Reagan was nothing compared to the attack on Trump. One thinks of Maleficent in Disney's (the real Walt Disney) movie *Sleeping Beauty*, who says, "Now deal with me and all the powers of hell." We have reached a point in our nations' history and in the history of the European people when we are quite literally acting out Disney's *Sleeping Beauty*. Hillary Clinton is Maleficent, and she has called down all the forces of hell on Donald Trump, who wants to awaken the white grazers from their death-in-life sleep. But Donald Trump is not a Christian knight as Prince Phillip was, so he lacks the shield of virtue and the sword of truth. We, the Christian remnant, must supply that shield and that sword. God bless Donald Trump in the day of battle, in the name of Christ the Lord. Amen.

Remembering Christian Europe

October 22, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Charles Dickens, Walter Scott



Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

Although there is no provision for political parties in the United States Constitution there has been a kind of tacit agreement amongst the liberal ruling elites that there shall be only two competing parties, both of which are liberal. At every election, they fume and fuss over minor differences and predict the end of the world if the opposing party wins. Dickens has described this phenomenon (*The Pickwick Papers*) in the chapter about the two political parties called the Blues and the Buffs who are located in the fictional English town called Eatanswill:

It appears, then, that the Eatanswill people, like the people of many other small towns, considered themselves of the utmost and most mighty importance, and that every man in Eatanswill, conscious of the weight that attached to his example, felt himself bound to unite, heart and soul, with one of the two great parties that divided the town—the Blues and the Buffs. Now the Blues lost no opportunity of opposing the Buffs, and the Buffs lost no opportunity of opposing the Blues; and the consequence was, that whenever the Buffs and Blues met together at public meeting, town-hall, fair, or market, disputes and high words arose between them. With these dissensions it is almost superfluous to say that everything in Eatanswill was made a party question. If the Buffs proposed to new skylight the market-place, the Blues got up public meetings, and denounced the proceeding; if the Blues proposed the erection of an additional pump in the High Street, the Buffs rose as one man and stood aghast at the enormity. There were Blue shops and Buff shops, Blue inns and Buff inns—there was a Blue aisle and a Buff aisle in the very church itself.

—The Pickwick Papers by Charles Dickens

The liberals' hatred for Trump has reached epic proportions. He is hated more than Richard Nixon was hated (the liberals never forgave Nixon for successfully prosecuting Alger Hiss), and he is hated more than Ronald Reagan was hated. Why is Trump hated more than any Republican candidate for president has ever been hated? Has he preached segregation? No, he hasn't. Has he called for the expulsion of all Mexicans and Moslems from the country? No, he hasn't, although he has called for the restriction of Moslem terrorists and Mexican murderers and rapists. Has Trump threatened to put a stop to the demonic movements called 'gay rights' and feminism? No, he has not. What has he done? He has called for the end of a global economy that is controlled "by a handful of global special interests rigging the system." Trump's attack on globalism certainly sets him apart from all the other presidential candidates and has earned him the hatred of the mainstream Republicans as well as the Democrats. But there is something deeper behind the liberals' hatred of Trump, something that has to do with what Trump has not done. If Trump had attacked the global economy in the name of the negro, or in the name of some other non-white minority, the liberals who are all globalists (with the exception of the Ralph Nader types) would still have opposed Trump, but not with the vehemence with which they now oppose him. What the liberals hate about Trump is that he has not demonized the white race; he has included white people in his idea of a nation. In the name of white Americans and colored Americans he has attacked globalism. Trump, more the pity, is not a racist, but the liberals have given him the racist label, because they do not believe in genuine diversity; they believe in the dominance of the colored barbarians and the extermination of the demon white race, always excluding themselves, of course, because they have risen to the heights of Atticus Finch-dom and become spiritually colored and therefore part of the chosen people.

Behind all the Eatanswill bickering of the Republicans and Democrats there is one central principle that they all agree upon: The white race is evil and must be exterminated. The Republicans generally (Bush was more of a democratic mindset) advocate a slower liquidation of the white race while the Democrats always want to proceed at the fastest pace possible, which is why the Obama's advisors have had him support the Black Lives Matter, White Lives Don't organization, and in a similar vein they have advised him to go after Sheriff Joe Arpaio, who is trying to stop the flood of Aztec marauders into his nation. But despite differences about the timetable for the complete elimination of the white race, the Republicans and Democrats have been in virtual lockstep in their commitment to diversity, which means white genocide. Trump threatened to delay, not to derail, their plans because he is a 1950s liberal who wants all Americans to share in the American dream. But what is the American dream? The American dream is rooted in Jacobinism; it is part of the "Ye Shall Be as Gods" utopian heresy of all the anti-European ideologies that have been created by the minds of men to destroy the Christ-bearing people. A Trump victory will only benefit white people if it starts the white grazers on a journey back to their true roots. If they go back to the world where European men and women loved and hated with all their hearts, they will discover that faith, hope, and charity are more important than liberty, equality, and fraternity.

The late John Tyndale used to tell Britons that it was the eleventh hour, that they must act now to elect a BNP candidate or Britain was finished. But what happens when the eleventh hour passes and you have failed to win an electoral victory? Your people despair and die because you have put all your hope in the democratic process. Instead of trying to change men's hearts, you have tried to manipulate men's minds and you have failed miserably.

We are being told that this election is our eleventh hour. "If Trump doesn't win, it's over." It's been over for quite some time. And by 'it,' I mean the liberals' attempt to become as gods through the democratic process. Instead of becoming as gods, they have become devils. What else can you call a people who have done what liberals have done: legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and created a state religion dedicated to the deification of the noble black savage? Will a Trump victory put an end to American Jacobinism? No, it will not, unless that victory is also the beginning of the Europeans' revolt against all things democratic and modern. And if the demon witch-woman should win the election, "it" is not over for white people. They still have the same war to fight, a war against the mind-forged hell created by liberals in the name of their colored gods.

There is nothing European about democracy. The European people, when they were a people, often elected their local magistrates, judges, etc., but when they did so they were voting for white people who would lead white people. They were not voting for a cabal of traitors whose express purpose was to exterminate the white race. Will whites ever become aware of the liberals' intent? It does not appear that they will. But we do know, from the Europeans' past that God does work through human hearts. So we can't definitely say it's over so long as there are white hearts.

I wasn't able to get much information about the one piece of positive information that has come out of Germany in recent years. I read that someone or some group, I don't know who or which, had planned the assassination of Angela Merkel. I also heard that the planned attack had been stopped before it started, which is a tragedy. But my heart soared to hear that some

Germans have had enough. To shed blood is indeed a terrible thing, but there is a war going on right now, a vicious war of rape, rapine, and slaughter. And the Angela Merkels and the Pope Francises of the Western world are the leaders of the enemies' shock troops. The blood of millions of white victims, innocent white victims, is on their hands. It is far more terrible to allow that bloodletting to go unchallenged than to kill the men and women who have ordered the bloodletting.

The darkness of Babylon once enveloped the entire earth. Then the Light came into the world, and one people, as a people, made that light part of their world. And they spread that light all over the world. A man who says anything good about colonialism (witness Pope Francis's recent rant against colonialism) is deemed a moral reprobate by the liberal powers that be. But from a Christian standpoint, a non-utopian standpoint, would there ever have been any light in the non-European nations if the Europeans had not entered those nations? And where is the light now that the Europeans have left the colored nations? And likewise, where is the light in Europe now that the European people have invited the colored Babylonians into their nations? There is no light; the darkness of Babylon has enveloped Europe and the world once again. The liberals, for the last century, have been trying to get the European people to accept the darkness of Babylon as the only reality. "There never was a light, and even if there was a light that light was evil, only darkness is good." They have all but succeeded in making the European people believe that lie. But there is always one, who will become many, who does not believe the lie:

Of course a lot of things darted into Jill's head at once: Experiment House, Adela Pennyfather, her own home, radio-sets, cinemas, cars, airplanes, ration-books, queues. But they seemed dim and far away. (Thrum—thrum—thrum—went the strings of the Witch's instrument.) Jill couldn't remember the names of the things in our world. And this time it didn't come into her head that she was being enchanted, for now the magic was in its full strength, and of course, the more enchanted you get, the more you feel that you are not enchanted at all. She found herself saying (and at the moment it was a relief to say):

"No, I suppose that other world must be all dream."

"Yes, it is all a dream," said the Witch, always thrumming.

"Yes, all a dream," said Jill.

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddleglum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia; and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

-The Silver Chair by C. S. Lewis

It only takes one man who has not forsaken his European home, which is in his blood, to start a European counter-revolution. No electoral victory will have any significance if it does not signify an awareness, on the part of the European people, that their ancestral home and their racial hearth fire is their strength and their hope, because that home and that hearth fire is connected to their God. We are told that human beings have no instincts. But we do have instincts. And tragically the only people whose instincts connect them to Christ have abandoned their instincts in order to be absorbed by the colored races who have a blood connection to Satan. For what is voodoo, what is the religion of the Aztecs, the Hindus, or any of the other religions of the colored heathens, but religions of Satan? The liberals must have no blood connection to their people because the Christ, the Son of the living God, lives in the blood of the European people. It is better, the liberals cry, to live a second-hand life and worship the dark races who have a flesh-and-blood connection to the devil. One thinks of the swine in the Gospel every time the liberals invoke their negro gods. They are fleeing from the Son of God in order to plunge over the cliff with the colored swine. Scott captured the essence of the pagan's pride of race when he described Saladin's boast, to a Christian knight, of his proud descent from the devil:

Naturally unsusceptible, however, of fear, he crossed himself, and stoutly demanded of the Saracen an account of the pedigree which he had boasted. The latter readily complied.

"Know, brave stranger," he said, "that when the cruel Zohauk, one of the descendants of Giamschid, held the throne of Persia, he formed a league with the Powers of Darkness, amidst the secret vaults of Istakhar, vaults which the hands of the elementary spirits had hewn out of the living rock, long before Adam himself had an existence. Here he fed, with daily oblations of human blood, two devouring serpents, which had become, according to the poets, a part of himself, and to sustain whom he levied a tax of daily human sacrifices..."

-The Talisman by Walter Scott

It is of absolute importance, it is of eternal moment, that the European people should return to their racial home and become, once again, the Christ-bearing people. Liberaldom was built to destroy the image of God in man. It is the task of the true European to destroy Liberaldom. If an electoral victory in the upcoming election constitutes a baby step toward the destruction of Liberaldom, then that will be to the good. But win or lose, it is the destruction of Liberaldom and the renewal of the European people's covenant with the Son of God that is all in all. +

Heaven's Gate and the Liberals' Hell

October 29, 2016

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens



Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,

-William Shakespeare

Last week an old friend confided to me that if Trump lost the election she didn't feel that there would be any point to anything. There would be nothing left to hope for in this world. One person does not constitute an overwhelming majority opinion, but I attach great significance to anecdotal evidence. I'm sure my friend's feelings are the feelings of many decent white folk who would like to feel there still might be a chance to live in a nation rather than a hell hole.

I fear for my friend and others like her if Trump loses. Born and bred in a democracy, the white grazers, who are my people, would never consider stepping outside of the chains of democracy and fighting liberalism undemocratically. They would never take gun, knife, bow, or sword in hand to strike out against the satanic fiends who run the government. For them democracy is destiny. Whatever cannot be done democratically cannot and should not be done. But should we acquiesce to the destruction of our people because the liberals and the colored barbarians vote for our destruction? Remember, legalized abortion came about through the democratic process. And white genocide has come upon us through the democratic process.

I think Donald Trump will win the popular vote among white males. But will he get enough white female votes to offset all the illegal aliens and dead people who will vote for Hillary? I hope so, but we can't count on that. We must be prepared to use whatever means are necessary to preserve our people. And it will be necessary to fight, both spiritually and physically. This is not just a European American problem, it is a European problem. All over the world it is open season on white people. In Germany, France, Holland, Belgium, and Scandinavia the white grazers have said that they would rather see their women and children raped and murdered before they eyes than to be called racists. Why do white people have such a despicable fear of the racist label?

After all the excuses are made – 1) the churches have been preaching universalism for centuries, 2) the liberals will punish all those who deviate from liberalism, and 3) we must not oppose democracy – the startling, terrible fact remains: the Europeans do not love their own enough to fight for them. If they loved much, they would not be cowed by their local clergyman, by the liberal powers that be, or by the democratic process. They would fight. Is it possible to rekindle a dead ember and make it a blazing fire again? No, it is not. The European people have become, collectively, a dead ember. But they are human beings, are they not? Can't we hope that they, unlike dead wood, can be enflamed with a passionate love for their people? It doesn't seem very likely, does it? "Mustn't be passionate, mustn't be prejudiced," is the constant refrain of the churchmen. "Whites are evil, the black is sacred," is the holy litany of the churchmen and the secular liberals. And the bulk of the European people believe the churchmen and the liberals. All revolutions succeed when the ruling class starts to believe either all or part of the revolutionaries' propaganda. Louis XVI looked on the French monarchy from a Utopian standpoint and found it wanting, so he was weak in defense of the monarchy. But did Louis look at his opponents and see them for what they were? No, he did not. He did not see that they were satanic fiends who had to be killed in order to stop the slaughter of millions in the present and tens of millions in the future. When the spirit is blighted by churchmen who seek to kill the passionate, bred-in-the-bone Christianity of the Europeans and exchange it for a satanic, intellectual pseudo-Christianity, the European becomes a walking dead man. "He did not die, but nothing of life remained."

A Trump victory, a Le Pen victory, or a BNP victory will be meaningless if it does not come with a passionate, violent hatred for the liberal ruling class and the abominable negroid-Moslem hell that they have shoved down the throat of the white man. The few remaining decent white women fear for their safety, because they know white men won't fight for them. And the white sluts proudly proclaim they would rather be raped than be racist. Our children have nothing to look forward to but death by drugs or death at the hands of the liberals' beloved negroid-Moslem gods. This is the world the false Aslans have built. To speak of co-existing with the liberals who have built and sustain this world is a hideous blasphemy.

The modern Europeans' quest to blend with and then be absorbed by the colored races is the logical consequence of intellectual Christianity. If you take the racial hearth fire out of the European's existence, the hearth fire that enkindles all his passions for good or evil, you destroy the European's soul. Intellectual Christianity is a return to pagan philosophy. It holds out the hope that a man can avoid the crucifixion by abstracting himself from existence. He does not need to overcome the tragedy of life by accepting his cross, he can circumvent tragedy by denying the cross and living life in the abstract. How can human beings bred under such a system, particularly Europeans who once saw a great light, ever be anything other than burned out embers?

"I begin to think," said Estella, in a musing way, after another moment of calm wonder, "that I almost understand how this comes about. If you had brought up your adopted daughter wholly in the dark confinement of these rooms, and had never let her know that there was such a thing as the daylight by which she has never once seen your face—if you had done that, and then, for a purpose, had wanted her to understand the daylight and know all about it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

Miss Havisham, with her head in her hands, sat making a low moaning, and swaying herself on her chair, but gave no answer.

"Or," said Estella, "—which is a nearer case—if you had taught her, from the dawn of her intelligence, with your utmost energy and might, that there was such a thing as daylight, but that it was made to be her enemy and destroyer, and she must always turn against it, for it had blighted you and would else blight her; —if you had done this, and then, for a purpose, had wanted her to take naturally to the daylight and she could not do it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

Miss Havisham sat listening (or it seemed so, for I could not see her face), but still made no answer.

"So," said Estella, "I must be taken as I have been made. The success is not mine, the failure is not mine, but the two together make me."

—Great Expectations by Charles Dickens

Is there such a thing as daylight? The European no longer believes there is such a thing. The poets who have fought their way back to the light – a vision of the one true knight who overcame the darkness of this world through His divinely human charity – speak with one voice. Shakespeare speaks of the great lover who is “the grave where buried love doth live....” Dostoevsky tells us of the great lover who was rejected by the intellectual Christians, the Grand Inquisitors of Pharisacal Christianity. And C. S. Lewis, through Puddleglum, tells us of the Overworld, the world of passion and light that has been nearly blotted out of existence by the darkness of intellectual Christians determined to return to the darkness of paganism.

The white man cannot do it. He cannot return to paganism. If he tries to become one with the colored races he will become nothing. The colored heathens love their Egyptian night, but what of the European? Has he made a happy return to Babylon? If he has, then why are his children drug-soaked zombies and why does he want to be annihilated by the colored races? [\(1\)](#)

What do we know about the Man of Sorrows who once stood at the center of Western civilization? If we listen to the Gnostic men, the men who preside over their own mind-forged, sacred rites, we know nothing of Him. He can be made into anything the Gnostic men choose to make of Him. Pope Francis now tells us that He is like unto Allah, the mind-forged god of the Moslems. The Gnostic men can liken Christ to Allah because in their minds He is an evolving abstract God who can adapt Himself to their intellectual whims. But can the Man of Sorrows, “who is the grave where buried love doth live,” become reconciled to modern Gnosticism? No, He can’t. Nor can our people, the antique Europeans, be reconciled to modern Europe, which has no room for a flesh and blood Savior.

The liberals have entered the colored swine and are determined to go over the cliff. Those of us who have not lost the moral vision of that lost world of Christian Europe, a world more remote to modern Europeans than the fictional lost world of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, need to stand between the swine and the white grazers to stop the grazers from going off the cliff with the liberals and the colored swine. It all seems futile, but our Lord did not act according to what seems, so neither shall we. What else can we do? If we love much, we must cling to Him who is the grave where buried love doth live. All the drug-soaked crippled European children, crippled by the liberals’ hellish vision called ‘diversity,’ need to see a living sign of contradiction to liberalism. They need to see a non-diverse, undemocratic Europe.

The Europeans who see that vision need to be what their ancestors were – the Christ-bearers. Through Europe and in Europe – that is our hope. The Man of Sorrows dwells therein, the Savior who opened heaven’s gate for His people. +

(1) The betrayal of the white race, the hatred of white pietas, was made possible by abstract, Gnostic niceness. An article written for children in a publication called *Children's Digest*, an offshoot of *Parents* magazine, illustrates the great betrayal. In the October 1962 issue we find an article called, “The Test of Friendship.” The story tells of white settlers who let the Indians keep their child overnight to show the Indians they trusted them. Of course in the story the child comes back safe and sound, laden with gifts from her Indian brothers: “Here is your beautiful child. We have dressed her in our best clothes and have given her many gifts. But the best gift you have given us. It is proof that in your heart as well as on your lips you have friendship for your Indian brothers.” Isn’t that nice? The truth is not so nice – when the fiancé of Ethan Edwards’ niece in the movie *The Searchers* asks what the Indians did to his intended before they murdered her, Ethan says, “Don’t ever ask me, as long as you live, don’t ever ask me.” But such horrors are commonplace now. Pope John sanctified colored barbarianism when he showered “loving forgiveness” on the black savages who tortured and murdered his own nuns and priests.

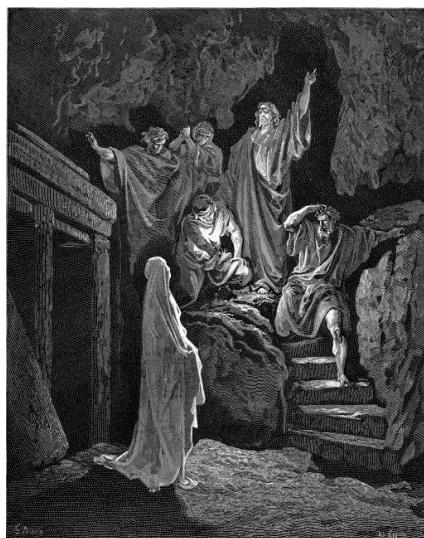
First the intellectual Christians aborted the living God and replaced Him with an abstract God. Then they aborted the European people and replaced them with the savages of color. From those first two abortions came every evil under the sun – legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and the creation of the kingdom of Satan on earth. Now the liberals want to elect Maleficent as President in order to ensure that there will be no difference between this earth and hell.

Facing the Enemy

November 5, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization, Resurrection

Tags: Shakespeare



The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. -1 Corinthians 15: 26

When Malcolm, in order to test Macduff, makes up a false litany of sins that he has committed and will continue to commit should he become king, he asks Macduff at the conclusion of the litany whether “such a one be fit to govern?” Macduff replies, “Fit to govern! No, not to live!” I thought of Macduff’s reply to Malcolm when I received a political pamphlet in the mail that posed the question of whether Hillary Clinton was fit to govern. But that is how far down the slippery slope we have gone. A creature who appears to have crawled out of hell is a candidate for President and will receive millions of votes. But white Americans are not alone on the slippery slope to hell. Wasn’t Angela Merkel elected Chancellor of Germany, and haven’t most European nations elected similar creatures from hell to high positions in their governments?

It’s not that a vote for Trump is a sign of moral health, because there are many reasons why a man would vote for Trump and only one is the right reason – that a Trump victory would be a stop-gap measure to prepare whites for the real battle, which is the battle to restore Christian Europe. But the fact that a man does not vote for Hillary is a sign that there is still something to work with within that man’s soul. He has at least rejected the devil-woman, even if he hasn’t become a Christian knight.

I have never been a believer in the wake-up theory or the pendulum theory of history. The wake-up theorists say that a Hillary victory will be beneficial because it will “wake up” white Americans. And the pendulum theorists claim that we need not be actors on the historical stage, we need only be spectators who watch while the great historical pendulum swings back and forth from decadence to health, and then back again from health to decadence, all without human or divine action.

I reject the “wake up” theory because I don’t see how people who did not wake up when miscegenation, abortion, and sodomy were legalized are suddenly going to “wake up” when Hillary is elected President. So in my view the election of the devil-woman would be an unmitigated evil while the election of Trump would be a baby step backwards to His reign of charity. But a Trump victory will not be a swing-back on the historical pendulum. There is no such pendulum. A Trump victory will be a minor victory in the long war with liberalism.

It’s not a coincidence that the countries that embraced the hatred of the white race with the greatest fervor are ruled by women. There is nothing as hellish as a woman possessed by her own will, completely outside the sphere of His divine will. Such a woman (Lady Macbeth is her exemplar) will commit any crime to further her demonic will. Angela Merkel and Hillary Clinton are cut from the same satanic cloth. The destruction of an entire race is nothing to them. They feed off the blood of white people; it sustains them as a narcotic sustains a drug addict.

All liberals are desperately trying to return to paganism, but the female of the species is made with moral blinders; she can see only one side of an issue, and if she has lost sight of the good, she will pursue her evil ends without mercy for her foe or any doubt about the righteousness of her cause. The post-Christian female hates the people who foisted a ‘false, oppressive’ religion on her, and she is determined to rid the earth of that abominable race.

The old Greek fable about a man’s flight from death is apropos as regards the dilemma of the modern European. I first read the fable in a novel by Thomas Mann: A servant of an Athenian nobleman, while shopping in the market place for his master, sees Death, and Death makes what the servant thinks is a threatening glance at him. The servant runs back to his master’s house and starts to pack his bags.

“Where are you going?” his master asks.

“I’m going to Crete.”

“Why?”

“Because I saw Death in the market place, and he cast a threatening look in my direction.”

So the servant flees to Crete while his master goes to the market place to look for Death. He finds him.

“Why did you look at my servant with a threatening glance?”

“That was not a threatening look, it was a look of surprise. You see, this very day I have an appointment with him in Crete.”

Life is tragic, because we are mortal men who must die. The pagans dealt with the tragedy of existence in one of two ways – either they turned to sex and blood cults, in which they kept death at bay by losing their consciousness of death in the ecstatic moment, or they sought to escape the tragedy of life by way of the philosophical abstraction. If your mind can abstract itself from the body, then it can achieve a kind of immortality of the universal mind.

And then Christ, the protagonist in the life and death drama of man vs. death, entered the picture. Christ presented man with a third option: instead of fleeing from the tragedy of life, he could look that tragedy in the face and he could triumph over death through the cross of Christ. If we go deep, if we bestir our European blood, we can still feel as our European ancestors felt when they looked at existence in and through the blood of our Savior, Jesus Christ.

For a man to actually know, in his blood, that Christ has the power to raise us from the dead is a knowledge greater than all the scientific knowledge and all the wealth of this world.

And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

And then the Evangelist tells us that many believed after they saw Lazarus rise from the dead, but many also went and told the Pharisees what Christ had done. It staggers the imagination. They saw Christ restore life to a dead man and their only concern was to get brownie points for squealing to the Pharisees. And what was the Pharisees' reaction? Did they say, "Wow, we must have been mistaken about this fellow; if He can raise the dead He just might be the son of God." No, instead they sought to destroy him, because he threatened their power:

Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

-John 11: 47-53

Hasn't Christ's conflict with the Pharisees become our conflict? The European people saw with their hearts and believed in Christ. From that day forth throughout all their history as the people of God, their battle has been against the forces of unbelief from without, the colored barbarians, and the forces of unbelief from within, the Pharisees of intellectual Christianity, liberalism, and Judaism. Once the pharisaical element from within became predominant over the Europeans with hearts of flesh, the flood gates that kept the colored barbarians out were opened by the pharisaical rulers of the white nations.

The Pharisees of the West, having rejected Christ, must return to the pagan escapes from existence. Through the colored hordes they have returned to the sex and blood cults of the non-Christian faiths, and through philosophical abstraction they have returned to the universal mind of the pagan philosophers. All this is because they do not believe that Christ is risen. But St. Paul got it right. If Christ be not risen, we are of all men most to be pitied, for neither sex and blood cults nor philosophical speculation can save us from death.

Liberalism is based on the proposition that the European people can avoid the tragedy of life by fleeing to a utopian island of Crete where a horde of colored noble savages dwell with liberals who are their enlightened benefactors. If a European of the old stock rises up and demands that we should stay in the market place and face death, because our Lord has triumphed over death, that same European becomes an anathema and is purged from Liberaldom. He shall not be allowed to enter into the liberals' Cretan paradise.

One thing is needful, that we cling to the European line of resistance to liberalism. It is through the European hearth fire that we come to know the God who raised Lazarus from the dead and who will raise us from the dead. The liberals will always attack any European who actually believes he has a people whom he should love above all other peoples. And the liberals take it one step further: they will attack any white man who does not hate white people. That is the real reason, the only reason, that Trump has earned the hatred of the liberals. He has never attacked the colored people, but he has not repudiated white people, and that is what all white people are supposed to do. They must hate themselves.

This is a very important election, because white people need a rearguard to cover their retreat. But win or lose, there is only one course for white people to follow. Our people are being attacked by the combined forces of the liberals and the colored barbarians. At some point we must turn and face them, just as Christ faced death. The Christ-bearing people must be like unto their Lord, and not like unto the servant who fled to Crete. +

The Long Journey Home

November 12, 2016

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke, Richard Gough



They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.

— Edmund Burke

“I hate that bitch!” – A “deplorable” white female store clerk

In his remarkable history of the Parish of Myddle in 1701 Richard Gough defines custom:

Custome is a law or right, not written, which being established by long use and the consent of our ancestors, hath been and is dayly practised.”

The custom that has died out in the European nations – namely the custom of viewing all of existence from the perspective of Christ — will not be renewed and revitalized by Trump’s victory. That antiquated custom was dependent on a people who believed they were a people, a people with a bred-in-the-bone faith that was passed on from one generation to the next. Then of what use is the Trump victory? The Trump victory was a sign that there is still life, spiritual life, in the European people. A sizeable amount of white Europeans needed to reject the combined wisdom of organized Christianity (which has become organized Jewry), the media, the academy, and the government. It was a very remarkable feat of determined, sustained resistance to the liberal propaganda machine, but lest we presume that a major battle has been won, we should note that a majority of young whites, the Millennials, voted for Hillary Clinton.

The liberals will retrench and completely thwart any good initiative that Trump makes. Already there are Marxist, left-wing riots, funded by George Soros, in our cities, and the liberal media are demanding that Trump “reach out” to the liberals whom he defeated and the minorities who fear he is going to put them all in internment camps. Why is it that when the mad-dog liberals win elections, they never talk about “reaching out”? They always scream, “Mandate!” and proceed with the ongoing march to their Jacobin-negroid dystopia?

But let me come back to my people – the white grazers who are “so far from doing harm that they suspect none.” They did themselves proud. They managed to hate where they should hate. I had a feeling Trump was going to win two days before the election. I was buying sandwiches in a local store when the woman behind the counter, whom I’ve spoken with on many occasions, ventured a completely unsolicited opinion about the upcoming election: “I hate that bitch!” One woman’s opinion? Yes, it was. But I knew there were many, many more white men and women who shared her feelings. The more-sinned-against-than-sinning white grazers could still recognize evil in its unadulterated form. That was the reason for the bitch queen’s loss. McCain could camouflage his evil under the flag, Obama could camouflage his evil with an “Ah shucks, I’m a good darkie” act, and Bill Clinton could play the good ol’ boy act when he needed to. But Hillary was too passionately, overtly demonic. And she brought down the wrath of the usually tepid and gullible white grazers.

The grazers still can be deceived by the evil one. They are still living within the mind-forged chains of democracy, and they still fear the racist label, but they did, in this last election, know enough to hate where they should hate, which is the first step toward loving where they should love. The great obstacle blocking the white grazers’ love for their people and their God, which is where their love should be directed, is intellectual Christianity.

It’s not possible for any white man to completely divest himself of his Christian blood. Therefore it is a bit of a misnomer to call men like Trump and Putin virtuous pagans. But I’m going to use that term because I want to set them apart from the intellectual Christians. There is more genuine Christianity in virtuous pagans like Putin and Trump than there is in the intellectual Christians. Trump and Putin are not full-blown Christian knights, but they still have retained the rudiments of Christian chivalry, which is and always shall be, *pietas*. The Evangelicals and the Roman Catholics, by denying *pietas* and calling it prejudice, have cut themselves off from the only way to God, through their racial hearth fire. Because of their refusal to go to Christ through their racial hearth fire, the Roman Catholics and the Evangelicals have abandoned Christ for the messiahs of color and the heathen faiths. The Roman Catholics go whoring after the negro and the Moslems, and the Evangelicals go whoring after the negro and the Jews. As regards the Roman Catholics — did not our Lord say that no man cometh unto the Father but by Him? And as regards the Evangelicals — have they ever read the Gospels? Did not our Lord, in *Mark 12: 1-11*, give the definitive statement about the chosen people? What did he conclude? “And have ye not read the scripture: The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner: This was the Lord’s doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes.” But if your eyes do not see with your heart, you will not be able to see. If the unrepentant Jews are the chosen people, then Christ is not the Messiah, and we must seek Him elsewhere. And the Evangelicals are doing that. They are not allowed, by the tenets of their perverted, intellectual Christianity, to have a people who are of their own race, so they have made the Jews and the negroes their people. This flight from race, from *pietas*, is a flight from Christ. So long as the European people flee from *pietas*, the love of their own, because they fear the racist label, the small victories, such as Trump’s Presidential win and the Brits’ rejection of the European Union, will come to naught.

Now we are told that white people who voted for Trump must do penance for voting for Trump by understanding the pain of the black and the white Jacobin rioters. But we must ask the same question over and over again – why should decent whites who have been spat on and demonized by the colored barbarians and the liberal elite have to understand why they must put up with inhuman, negroid barbarians and liberals who worship Satan? Many white nationalists voted for Trump, and one antique European voted for Trump (are there any more?), but did Trump ever say anything that sounded like white nationalism? Did he ever say anything about restoring Christian Europe? Of course not. Trump said nothing that was not in line with the beliefs of Democrats and Republicans in the 1950s. Both parties at that time, the Democrats more than the Republicans, were against illegal immigration, crime, and the global economy, but the dynamic of liberalism demands that men must go further and further down the slippery slope to hell. The modern day liberals have reached the inner circle of hell. And from that vantage point they view anyone who has not reached the bottommost layer of hell as outside the ken of their satanic inhumanity.

In the rural, small town where I voted, a group of mountain folk who seemed to be right out of an old movie about the Hatfields and the McCoys came into the town hall where the voting was taking place. They made it clear that they didn’t normally vote, but they were voting in this election and they were not voting for Hillary. I link those mountain folk with the woman who said, “I hate that bitch.” They are the last vestiges of the white race. Will their hatred of Maleficent turn into a love of the God-Man? It’s certainly possible. And it will become a reality

if Christian Europeans stop running from their racial identity. If they embrace their racial identity they will love and hate with all their hearts and they will come to know the Son of God in and through their people.

We would never have seen charity embodied if there had never been a European people. The liberals want to destroy the European people for that very reason. They desire a world that is devoid of charity, because all true charity comes from Him whom the liberals hate. We should always keep that liberal desire before our eyes. They want to destroy the white race, because they want to destroy every last vestige of His reign of charity. They might call their evil multiculturalism or diversity, but we know what it is in reality. It is white genocide. Most of the whites who voted for Trump, and Trump himself, do not understand the inherent evil of liberalism. Nor do the white grazers in the other European nations. It is necessary that they come to understand the difference between the white European people prior to the 20th century and the modern European people and the colored barbarians. The difference is not just between night and day, it is between heaven and hell.

Nothing that is necessary to be done shall be done by the Trump administration. The liberal-fomented hysteria over Trump's victory is the equivalent of a man becoming hysterical because a fly has entered his house. White people should separate themselves from the people of color and they should recognize liberals for what they are – the spawn of Satan who should not be allowed to live in a white European society. (1) They should be sent to some tropical island to live with their beloved colored brethren. You can't co-exist with creatures who are determined to destroy you. The white grazers were able to grasp the fact that Hillary wanted to destroy them. When they finally grasp the fact that a hellish legion of Hillary Clintons run the Western world, they will be on their way back to Christian Europe.

The liberals are always screaming about diversity when they mean the opposite. They want a non-diverse culture dominated by colored barbarians. All whites should support true diversity. The Christ-bearing race should diversify by separating from the colored races. If whites blend with the colored races the blending process will not elevate the colored races, it will simply debase the white race. Which is, of course, exactly what Satan wants. He wants to eradicate the image of God in man.

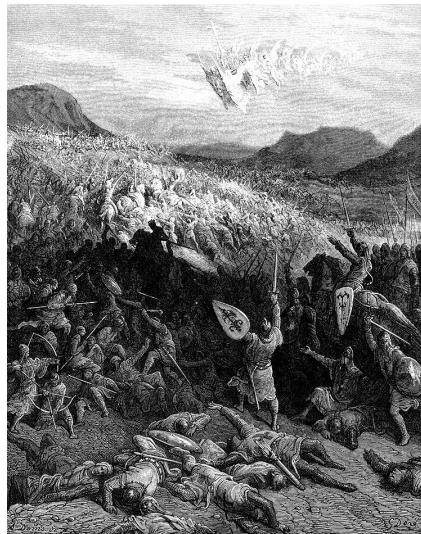
The liberals tell us that the blending process will produce a new and better humanity. Is that happening? Is blended Europe an improvement over white Europe? Only if rape, infanticide, murder, and pillage are better than married love, chivalry, and honor. Where is the good in the liberals' new world? On beyond Liberaldom are the Northern lights of our very old, but eternally young, European Narnia. We have lost contact with that world because we have abandoned our racial hearth fire through which we maintained our connection to our Savior, who is Christ the Lord. It is possible for Europeans who discover that they have a people, to return home. The hatred of Maleficent is the beginning of the long journey home. +

(1) The filth that have crawled out from under their rocks to protest against white people who voted for a white man who didn't profess hatred for the white race, are one in spirit with the demonic daughter of King Lear – Goneril. What Albany says of her applies to the anti-white protestors: "Wisdom and goodness to the vile seems vile; Filths savour but themselves."

The European Story

November 19, 2016

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization



Men of Harlech gone to glory
This will ever be thy story.

Trump has done it! He, like Michael Ney, fought courageously and won an important rear guard action. He has bought his people some time. In many ways, Trump's task was more difficult than Ney's task. Trump's enemies were more demonic than Ney's enemies, and Trump had to fight them without recourse to arms.

Although neither Trump nor the vast majority of whites who voted for Trump see his victory as a minor victory for white people in a war they are losing, that is the case. The liberals still control the courts, the legislatures, the schools (at every level), the media, and the churches. The liberals' refusal to accept the results of the election should be a warning to whites: There can be no peace with liberals. (1) It would be very nice if there could be a peaceful solution to the problem of liberalism. But Satan, who is the liberals' master, will not be mollified. His hate will endure till the end of time, and the liberals and the colored barbarians are the conduits for Satan's hate.

The writer Thomas Molnar, who had been interred first in Dachau, the German concentration camp, and then in a Russian communist concentration camp, once commented in a conversation on the dislocation of individuals in the World War II era in Europe, particularly communist bloc countries like his native Hungary. He said it used to be that when you met someone, your life story was easily told: "I am the son of Joseph Kovacs, the butcher in the town of..." But after the war, your story became more complicated: "I was forced to flee my native town and then..." – or "My parents were slain and I was sent to the prison camp at Dachau and then..." The narrative of millions upon millions of people was changed during the War from a simple story of a European who was born, married, and died in the same town where his parents were born, married, and died, to a story of dislocation, hardship, and tragedy.

In the countries of the West that were not occupied by Nazis or communists, the displacement of individuals from their familial homes and regions came about because of the nature of capitalism and because of the ongoing march of the Jacobin spirit of revolution. Capitalism is a system that has no place for familial, racial, or regional ties of affection. You must go where the market dictates. The best article Samuel Francis ever wrote was about the displacement of the white, small-farm owners, who were told, by the Michael Novak-type capitalists, that they must go pump gas somewhere and leave their farms. So the middle-aged farmer's life narrative was changed. He was the son of..., the farmer, and he was born on the land; he worked that land, and then in his late forties he became a greeter at Wal-Mart or a hamburger flipper at MacDonald's and moved to a one-room apartment so he could be near his place of business or his own personal purgatory, which might be a better description.

The second reason for the displacement of white people had and has to do with the ongoing Jacobin revolution. It is against the revolutionary creed, which we are all brought up with, to form familial, racial, or regional ties. You must go and live in a kibbutz in Israel, do social work in Africa, or – if you are not a native Californian – go to California and "find yourself." All you'll find in California now is an Aztec hellhole, but that is another story.

Every people, like individuals, have a story. The story of the non-white races has not changed over the centuries. They were a pagan people, and they remain a pagan people. But the European people's story is quite different. They were a pagan people who became a Christian people. That became their story: They were the Christ-bearing race, and the colored barbarians knew them to be the Christ-bearing race. And they hated them for it. "Why brought ye us from bondage, Our loved Egyptian night?"

The European story changes again in the early 20th century. The Christ-bearing people became... What did they become? They are not pagan like the colored barbarians, but they are not Christian either. It's as if we were reading *Pickwick Papers* and suddenly, three quarters of the way through the novel, we find ourselves reading Camus's *The Stranger*. The Christian story became the story of those other people – those Europeans from way back then; it was no longer the story of the modern Europeans.

The story of the post-Christian Europeans is the story of their attempt to become one with the colored barbarians by embracing their Egyptian night. But the liberals, who are the purveyors of the new narrative of the European people, have discovered white people have too much Christian baggage. They can't be comfortably placed into the new story. Therefore they must be eliminated. Trump's candidacy did not represent an attempt to return to the old Christian narrative of the European people, it represented a demand that white people should be included in the new liberal narrative of the European people. The battle between Trump and the liberal establishment is a battle between a 1950's liberal and the mad-dog liberals of the 21st century. But there is no one in this political battle who is suggesting that the European people should pick up where their Christian story abruptly ended and see the story through to the final chapter in which the Son of God returns and finds that His people were faithful to the end.

In Pirandello's play there were six characters in search of an author. The Europeans are a people in search of a story. The New Age churchmen, the neo-pagans, and the mad-dog liberals all confidently assert that they can provide the European people with a new story. Instead of the Christ-bearing people, they can become the new non-people who help the churchmen and the liberals ease white people into the slaughter houses of the colored barbarians. Or they can become Nietzschean Übermenschen who rule the world by virtue of their superior intelligence. None of those scenarios will do. They won't do because they do not fit our story. If all the dislocations of the 20th century and now the 21st century have not taught us that we cannot become part of the colored barbarians' story or create a new non-Christian story, then we will surely perish as a people.

Even if the liberals would permit it, which they will not, whites should never seek to be part of the Egyptian night of the colored barbarians. The Christ-bearing people must be true to their story, first and foremost for their own sake, and secondly for the sake of the non-white world. If the European people won't hold up Christ's banner to the world, who will?

There are already too many Moslems, Mexicans, and negroes in the United States, and there are already too many Moslems and negroes in the European nations. Because of liberal leaders such as Tony Blair, Angela Merkel, George Bush, and The Obama, it is now necessary for whites to reconquer the formerly white nations. There must be no non-Europeans or liberals in the European-nations, because they are not part of the European story. They demand that we be part of a new story, which begins with the denial of His holy cross and ends in hell.

The great authors who lived and wrote prior to the 20th century, such authors as Scott, Dickens, Le Fanu, and Dostoyevsky, wrote novels that kept to the European narrative, which was the Christ story. But in the 20th century, writers such as C. S. Lewis, who wrote according to the old Christian narrative of the European people, were considered to be fantasy genre writers outside the mainstream of modern Europe. Small victories such as Trump's election to the Presidency will be worthless if we do not use such victories as stepping stones to the larger victory, for which we must strive: The return to our European story in which Christ, not the colored barbarians, not the liberals, nor Satan himself, holds the place of honor.

Burke observed that a "nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclator." We are not a people unless we reclaim our moral essence, which we have allowed the liberals to spit upon and desecrate. Must we submit to the liberals' story of the evil racist, sexist, Islamaphobic, and homophobic whites who polluted the world with their story of the God-Man who redeemed the world? No, we will not submit to their narrative. And we will not submit because our story is His story, and we must cling to that story till the ending of the world. +

(1) Trump has made no attacks on homosexuals, feminists, blacks, Moslems, Mexicans, or liberals. And yet the combined forces of colored heathenism and liberalism have united to destroy him, simply because he is a white man who hasn't condemned whites. We can't make peace with people who think there can be no peace until all white people are dead. Peace on earth, good will to men is a white Christian sentiment. The liberals and the colored barbarians have a different sentiment. They believe in the complete and utter annihilation of the white race by whatever means are necessary. 'Let murder, rape, and pillage thrive,' is the battle cry of the liberals and the colored barbarians.

The Serpent Has Bared Its Fangs

November 26, 2016

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide



In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. – *Isaiah 27: 1*

...and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen. – *Matthew 28: 20*

The recent American Presidential election and the liberals' reaction to it gave whites throughout the European nations a glimpse at the satanic core of liberalism that should make their blood chill and turn their weak opposition to liberalism into an iron-clad resolve to fight it to the death. I doubt that the election and its aftermath will change the views of those who are so morally deficient they cannot see, but for the few that are willing to see there is that glimpse into the liberals' satanic soul that we avoid at our peril.

The first thing we notice is that the liberals do not believe in the democratic system which they created. Democracy is a convenient 'God' word the liberals use to advance their agenda, which is the destruction of the Christ-bearing people and every last vestige of the civilization they built. When the democratic process fails to produce the desired results, namely another blow against the white Europeans, the liberals alter the rules of the endgame called democracy. Since the current system of winner-take-all in the individual states does not take sufficient account of the big-number-wins in the Aztec-laden states, such as California, and since the Electoral College system did not help the Democrats to win through an overwhelming number of Moslems, felons, and dead people voting, the liberals want to abolish the Electoral system. And in addition, they will continue to restock the white Republican states with Moslems and Africans in order to make the heartland of the United States into another Minnesota, which is about to be renamed New Somalia. For the liberals, democracy is only a means to an end. If they don't achieve their end, they go outside the democratic process. And they are right to do so. I don't mean that they are morally right – the liberals are always morally in the wrong because they worship darkness and not the light – but they are strategically correct. You should only use a system so long as it aids your cause. The children of light are not as wise in that regard as the sons and daughters of Satan. If the situation had been reversed, if Hillary had won, would white people have rioted and talked about changing the democratic process? No, they would not. When The Obama won, the whites were silent, passive, and law-abiding.

This Presidential election is the last time, even if there is a complete moratorium on immigration, that a white Presidential candidate who campaigns for the enfranchisement of white people can win. There are already too many liberals and nonwhites in the United States. They will vote the whites out of existence and continue to urbanize the map of America, until the rural anthem, "[Country Boys Can Survive](#)," becomes "Country Folk Will Disappear." This last election was a stunning victory for rural America, but now that the white rural Americans have shown they do not want to self-destruct at the liberals' command the liberals will take more aggressive action against them. The white rural votes for Trump were a defensive measure on the part of white Americans, but you cannot win a war by only fighting on the defensive. Sooner or later you will have to take enemy territory and enemy troops. The colored barbarians are the shock troops of the liberals, and the cities are their territory. They intend to keep stockpiling more troops into the country via legal and illegal immigration, giving both groups voting rights in order to ensure there will be no repeat of the recent liberal disaster. When the liberals acquire their liberal and colored majority, will whites sign on for their democratic destruction or will they resist?

The democratic eradication of whites has already started in the United States and in nations such as Germany and Britain. It is now too late to keep the barbarians out – they are here. In Europe as in the United States, whites will have to expel the colored barbarians and the Moslems or they will be murdered, spiritually and physically. I recently saw a video of a German classroom in which white German students were being forced to learn the Koran while white teachers looked on with smiling faces. And in Austria the authorities allowed a Moslem who had raped a twelve-year-old Austrian boy to escape prosecution because the Islamic rapist said he was sexually frustrated. Is there any doubt what white people have to do? There will be no justice for whites in the liberal courts. "Whatever it takes to destroy white people, we will do," is the liberals' sworn oath. We should take a similar oath: "Whatever it takes to destroy the liberals and the colored barbarians; that we shall do."

That the liberals' main battering ram is race was also made crystal clear during the Presidential campaign and after the campaign. Are the liberals over-playing their hand by saying all whites are racist just for being white? It would appear so. The racist label scares whites, but they simply do not believe they are all racist by virtue of their whiteness alone. A friend of mine who was brought up as a Roman Catholic in the racially aware 1960s and who regularly watches *To Kill a Mockingbird* surprised me this election year by wearing a "deplorable" tee shirt. The liberals blew it. They drove that type of voter out of their camp. But have the liberals been defeated in the long run? Of course not. There is a huge gap between the white who doesn't believe that all whites are racist and the white who proudly asserts:

I believe in the validity of my racial identity and treasure the continuity of my national traditions. I believe in, and honour, all those time-hallowed values and factors which have led us to greatness in the past, and which if retained will guarantee the greatness of our posterity. For unless we maintain the highest standards of which we are capable we shall not survive except as the slaves of others, which in the long run would mean that we would not survive at all. Thus I am indeed biased and prejudiced. I am indeed a "racist" and in fundamental matters an extremist.

-Anthony Jacob in White Man, Think Again!

Nothing of any lasting good will happen to white people, as a people, until they bridge the racial gap and side with Anthony Jacob against the church men and their ideology of an universal brotherhood of the dung heap in which there is no hope, no faith, and no charity, because all three of those virtues perish without *pietas*, a love of one's own.

The Trump victory will amount to nothing if the European people do not completely repudiate the anti-white ethos of organized Christianity and organized Liberalism. I for one would settle for the 1950s world of my childhood, but the white people of the 1950s had all the wrong opinions about race. They were living off the patrimony of their "racist" ancestors who still knew that whites should not associate with the colored heathens. The 1950s whites had no such prejudices; they had no problem with integration, but they were lucky enough to avoid the

consequences of their racial Utopianism. My father was a case in point. He grew up in a coal town, the scion of Welsh coal miners who had never seen a black man in their lives. But my father became the first member of his family to attend college. He moved from a coal town to the suburbs and became a 1950s liberal. He still had no associations with blacks, but he had all the ‘right’ opinions about them, which were in stark contrast to his father’s and his grandfather’s views of blacks and the colored races. We can’t go back to the 1950s world that Donald Trump envisions because the 1950s world only existed because of an older world that Christian Europeans built and maintained in fidelity to their Christian ancestors. “We shall go back to halfway-down-the-slippery-slope instead of living at the bottom of the slippery slope,” cannot be our battle cry. It’s certainly better to live with a little bit of liberalism, as the 1950s whites did, than with the entire liberal Leviathan, but there is no turning back once you have allowed liberalism to spread. The Leviathan will consume you. You must kill the Leviathan or perish. The liberals are armed with the “cruel hate” of Satan. They won’t stop hating because of an electoral loss. In fact, that loss will intensify their hate. We should not look on Trump’s victory as anything more than one victory in a war that we must fight out to the end, not in the name of democracy and the inclusion of whites in that democracy, but in the name of one Europe, one race, and one God. Need I say which race and which God?

The other great battering ram of the liberals which was out there front and center during the election and afterwards was the educational battering ram. To the liberals’ shock and dismay, the “uneducated” whites did not vote for Hillary. There is more work to be done! Everyone must go to college so they can be ‘educated’ into brainless, soulless zombies. And all “false news” sites must be eliminated, because they put out harmful information. It would be terrible if some young white person actually saw the world through a non-liberal prism. Our educational system does not need to be reformed, it needs to be destroyed. It’s not a question of getting back to the classical model, it’s a question of getting back to the European hearth fire, to the heart which illuminates reason instead of the mind-forged sickness of men with disembodied brains. The intellectual Christians and the other great men of intellect always pass by the old derelict beggar who asks for food. The church men and the liberals pass him by because he is not a negro or some other creature of color. And the neo-pagans pass him by because his poverty indicates that he is not that smart; he is obviously not an Übermensch. But the antique European, the third dumb brother, shares his stale bread and sour milk with the old man. We know how that turns out – half the kingdom and the fair princess.

We can’t go on allowing the church men and the educators to teach our young people that the summit of life is reached when your enlightened mind has learned to love the negro. In George Orwell’s novel *1984*, the grand inquisitors, the educators, did not merely want Winston Smith’s external assent under torture. They wanted Winston Smith’s internal assent. And eventually they got it; he had learned to love Big Brother. So it is with so many of our lost white children; they have learned to love the negro with all their heart, mind, and soul, and to hate their white kin and neighbor as they hate themselves. Thus have the liberals perverted the true faith. Look at the collective face of the antique Europeans. Whom do you see in their faces? And then look at the loathsome creatures protesting the election of a white man to the Presidency. Whom do you see in their collective face?

If we allow the liberals to separate us from our ancient faith, then what will be our rallying cry as a people? Will we be inspired by the neo-pagans’ anthem, “Nearer My Genes to Me”? Or will we respond to extinction with the battle cry of the church men and the liberals: “All whites must die so a new perfect humanity can be formed over the ruins of the European people”?

Dylan Thomas was right to rage against the dying of the light. Without such a rage we are Buddhists, not human beings. But must our rage be a hopeless rage? If there is a devil, and the venomous serpent of liberalism that is spewing out its venom in the aftermath of the election shows us there is such a person, then we must look to a person to combat the devil. Our ancestors called on Him who saves. “I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no savior.” Look up, look beyond intellectual Christianity to the Man of Sorrows, and go into battle against the serpent of liberalism. +

They Are Legion

December 3, 2016

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



Dickson groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in the retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith? – John Buchan

Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. – *Luke 12: 8-9*

The English historian Herbert Butterfield wrote that as the belief in original sin faded from politicians' moral consciousness so did respect for their political opponents (*The Englishman and His History*, 1950). When both political parties (or the many political parties) were all competing for power within the framework of the Christian belief that all men, not just one's opponents, were tainted with original sin, there was still some respect for the give and take of the political process and certain limits that politicians would not go to in order to win an election. But when the spiritual check on political cruelty is lost, when the "unbought grace of life," which comes from Christ, is spent, politics becomes a war to the death. Butterfield was not optimistic about the future of English politics. His pessimism was quite justified.

The post-Christian liberal does not believe in original sin as the antique Europeans believed in original sin. The liberal believes that original sin resides in the white race, most especially in the white male, and no other race. Therefore no politician who campaigns as a white male and does not do penance for his whiteness by advocating the complete annihilation of the original sinning white race is one of the damned who does not have to be accorded the same rights as a person of color or a white, anti-white illuminati such as Hillary Clinton or Angela Merkel. This is the spiritual dynamic behind the demand for a recount in the American Presidential election and the demand for a new Brexit vote in Great Britain. Any electoral vote that seems to benefit white people has no legitimacy, because white people are the original sinners; they are damned. And the damned have no rights.

Should Trump's victory be overturned and should the Brexit vote be overturned, it will not change the white man's position in the European nations. Both victories were 'small skirmish' victories; the white man still has a major battle to fight regardless of any electoral win or loss. Liberalism is from Satan, and you cannot vote Satan away. The only way to deal with a people possessed by the devil is the way William Tell dealt with Gessler when Gessler sought the life blood of Tell's son and his people.

The John Tyndall/Sam Francis scenario of a white majority restoring their nations by way of the electoral process cannot work. Neither Tyndall nor Francis saw existence from the perspective of the European people's entire history; you cannot dismiss the religion that formed the European people from your plans to restore your nation. The post-Christian liberals are proceeding on the premise that everything that is anti-Christian and anti-white is good. They are quite literally possessed by the devil. What can the neo-pagans and the Tyndall/Francis democratic populists bring to the battlefield that can defeat an enemy possessed by the devil? (1) "But we don't believe in the devil," is the neo-pagans' reply. That is precisely the problem. The old hymn is apropos:

*Did we in our own strength confide,
Our striving would be losing:
Were not the right Man on our side.
The Man of God's own choosing:*

*Dost ask who that may be?
Christ Jesus, it is He,...*

I greatly admire Trump's courage, and if he is allowed to serve four years I think he can delay the liberals' plan to exterminate the white race. But let's take the blinders off our eyes and see our situation clearly. The liberals are possessed by Satan. They will not cease hostilities because of an election. They are committed, heart and soul, to the destruction of the Christ-bearing race. Is it possible to stop the possessed through the democratic process? Britain, Germany, France, Belgium, Holland, and the Scandinavian countries might be slightly closer to extinction than Canada, the United States, and the nations of Eastern Europe, but all white people are in the same boat. We are dying because the ruling liberal elites want us to die. It's them or us. Either we perish or they perish. They can't be voted away because they have made the colored barbarians their people. They have the democratic numbers. But is democracy all in all? It can't be if our people are going to survive.

Mere conservatism or that other -ism – white democratic populism – cannot stop the onslaught of the colored barbarians who are being supported by the liberals. You can only scotch the satanic serpent of liberalism by voting, you cannot kill it through the democratic process. That was what the Trump election was all about. He scotched the liberal snake. But what he represents — a courageous white man who wants whites to be accorded the same rights in a multicultural, multiracial society that are given to the colored barbarians — can never be. This is where the Christian vision of our ancestors must come to the forefront. The liberals will never give white people any rights within Liberaldom. As with Jacobinism, as with communism, so it is with modern American and European democracies: "All are equal, but some are more equal." And the more equal will kill the less equal without the slightest pang of conscience. The liberal has liberated himself from his conscience, and the colored barbarian never had one.

The demise of the white man is the direct result of the death of bred-in-the-bone Christianity. Dostoyevsky asked if an intelligent European could believe in the Son of God. The 'intelligent' European has responded with a resounding 'no.' The modern churchmen have infused liberal principles, which translates into satanic principles, into the Christian faith in order to make Christianity compatible with the modern world and in order to ensure that they can still be guaranteed a comfortable livelihood. Like Caiaphas they feel that it is better that Christ should die so that they can maintain their positions as high mucky-mucks in a church fused with a satanic blend of liberalism and paganism. Why do the popes rush to canonize the

Mandelas and the Castros while they demonize the white Christian Europeans who made it possible for them to jet around the world behaving like the trained monkeys of the liberals? They do this because they have no genuine faith. And it is faith that gives one the moral courage to oppose Satan and his minions.

Our ancestors often found it easier to fight for their Lord than to keep His commandments, but they tried to keep His commandments and they *did* have the moral courage to fight in His name. "For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory and in his Father's and of the holy angels." No moral courage – because they are ashamed of Christ – that is the tragedy of the European people. And it is the issue of race which separates us from Christ and our ancestors who believed in Him. Our ancestors ardently believed their skin color had spiritual significance. Their whiteness was of the spirit – it was not a mere biological accident. Why is Satan so obsessed with destroying whiteness if there is not something significant about it? Why now does every modern Shakespeare play, even the history plays, have to have negroes in the main roles? And why do we get treated to black actors in Dickens' *Christmas Carol* and every other great work from white European culture? It is because race does matter.

If our color has no significance, then Christ's incarnation has no significance. We can belong to the Gnostic church of our choice and hurl anathemas at the racist Christians who are still 'stupid' enough to believe in the birth of the Christ child and still 'racist' enough to believe that their skin color is an integral part of their soul.

Throughout the Christian centuries the Christ-infused men of Europe have had to do battle with the illuminati, the men of the detached intellects who urged Europeans to abandon the incarnate God for their own intelligence.

In this point of view, Goethe's conception of the character and reasoning of Mephistopheles, the tempting spirit in the singular play of "Faust," appears to me more happy than that which has been formed by Byron, and even than the Satan of Milton. These last great authors have given to the Evil Principle something which elevates and dignifies his wickedness; a sustained and unconquerable resistance against Omnipotence itself—a lofty scorn of suffering compared with submission, and all those points of attraction in the Author of Evil, which have induced Burns and others to consider him as the Hero of the "Paradise Lost." The great German poet has, on the contrary, rendered his seducing spirit a being who, otherwise totally unimpassioned, seems only to have existed for the purpose of increasing, by his persuasions and temptations, the mass of moral evil, and who calls forth by his seductions those slumbering passions which otherwise might have allowed the human being who was the object of the Evil Spirit's operations to pass the tenor of his life in tranquility. For this purpose Mephistopheles is, like Louis XI., endowed with an acute and depreciating spirit of caustic wit, which is employed incessantly in undervaluing and vilifying all actions, the consequences of which do not lead certainly and directly to self-gratification.

— Walter Scott

The recent American election was a hopeful sign to me (independent of whether Trump manages to assume the presidency), and it was also at the same time a depressing event. It was hopeful in that a sizeable number of whites rejected the intelligence of the liberals. Which means that a sizeable number of whites still have something inside of them that is worthy of redemption. But the sadness comes when you realize that those Christ-haunted whites might never become Christ-believing whites.

If there is ever to be a white counter-revolution, it will come from the ranks of the Christ-haunted, less 'intelligent' whites who are stupid enough to be racist, in that they love their own, and 'stupid' enough to believe in an incarnate God, "Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men." It's been my observation that only those Europeans who have broken through the "Thou shall be as Gods" temptation are capable of resisting liberalism. The broken and tired, downtrodden, white underclass, not the glorified proletariat of Marx and Steinbeck, but the whites who have lived on the fringes of the educated culture and have not yet become intellectualized – they are the white remnant. I've worked in academia for many years, and I've worked in a non-academic profession for many years. And there is a tremendous difference between the two realms. Academia is hell. There is no light in that inhumane domain of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. The other realm is exemplified by the men and the woman shown in the Hank Williams Jr. song video, "Country Boys Will Survive," and by a man my eldest son worked with some years back during his first summer job. The man was a Merle Haggard-type of hell-raiser, a boozier, a womanizer – the usual sins. But at the lag end of what he called a wasted life, he "found the Lord." During a bad stretch, when he was sleeping under a bridge at night, my son gave him some money. One night when I stopped by to pick up my son, he came over to compliment me on my family (I had several children working there at the time), and he told me some of his story. He was in very poor health but not full of self-pity. His attitude was like unto Shane: "A man gets caught in his own doing." But he believed; he had come to know what a white man is. He is the Christ-bearer. (2) "And we say grace, and we say 'Ma'am,' And if you ain't into that, We don't give a damn." It's a rather rough-hewn chivalry, but it is such rough-hewn chivalry that will win the day for white people. Ask yourself why every Confederate soldier after the war, whether he had served with Nathan Bedford Forrest or not, said that he had rode with Forrest. It was because Forrest had that rough-hewn chivalry in his soul that can only come from a bred-in-the-bone connection to the white Christ-bearing race. That type of individual, who has rejected the wisdom of the academics often if not always, ends up on his knees before our Savior. It happened that way for Forrest and 'it' happened because Forrest never abandoned his people. Through a Christ-like devotion to his people, Nathan Bedford Forrest was able, in his last years, to understand the love of Christ which passeth the understanding of the scribes and the Pharisees of academia and Churchianity.

Wars are a very unpleasant business. But the most tragic wars are the wars we don't fight. We must fight for our people because our whiteness and our faith are connected. We cannot allow the liberals and the colored barbarians to rule uncontested. And there is no other word for this liberal reign than satanic. The recent kidnapping and brutal assault of that beautiful white, blonde woman, who was no doubt singled out because of her white beauty, underscored the satanic alliance between the liberals and the colored barbarians. The liberals didn't give a damn about the brutalization of Sherri Papini, who was humiliated and violated in the soul as well as the body. All the liberals cared about was an alleged racist remark she had supposedly made many years ago. By making such a remark she placed herself among the damned, outside the ken of humanity. Of course it is the liberal and the colored barbarians, not Mrs. Papini, who are of the damned. In the absence of the restraints that once were clapped on degenerate liberals and colored barbarians, we can now see the actual flames of hell surrounding them. They spew venomous sulphuric flames when they open their mouths, and their body odor smells of the fiery pit. One of our own, the poet who refused to side with the Illuminati against his own people, told us all we need to know of the liberals and the colored barbarians: "Wisdom and goodness to the vile seem vile; Filths savour but themselves." No true white can accept the reign of Satan. And we shall not accept it; in Christ's name, we reject the liberals, the colored barbarians, and all their works. +

(1) Sam Francis and John Tyndall were a lot like Trump. They had, as Trump has, good instincts. But this present crisis needs the whole Pauline vision. If you do not see Christ in the collective face of the antique Europeans, you will not see the face of Satan in the collective face of the liberals. And if you don't see the battle in those terms – the Christ-bearing people against Satan's minions – you will persist in the delusion that you can vote evil away. Democracy only works when a Christian people are deciding how to implement Christian principles. It doesn't work when a satanic ruling class is trying to use the democratic process to liquidate a whole race.

(2) Lest you think that he was just handing me a line in order to get something from my family, I should tell you that he paid back every cent my son gave him, even though my son had told him it was not necessary. He died several years ago, but I take comfort in the fact that our Lord said that in His house there were many mansions. There will be one for that man who was not 'smart' enough to reject the Kingdom of God for the liberals' kingdom of Satan on earth.

Christmas Land

December 10, 2016

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens



Thy tributary Eastern Kings.
Lord! Grant some light to us; that we
May with them find the way to Thee!
Behold what mists eclipse the day!
How dark it is! Shed down one ray,
To guide us out of this sad night,
And say once more,
“LET THERE BE LIGHT!”

-Henry Vaughan

“Christmas is coming, the goose is getting fat, who’ll put a penny in an old beggar’s hat?” I will. The poor beggar has become our Lord. He was once treated royally, and now He is treated like a poor beggar. The liberals have deemed all non-liberal news sites as false news sites. They are for freedom of the press, but they are not for freedom of the haters. Thus the false news sites must be banned because they are filled with hate. It’s convenient, isn’t it? Just as convenient as was the Pharisees’ rejection of Christ. All their ceremonies existed to extoll the living God, yet when the living God appeared, they rejected Him in order to hold on to their ceremonies and their positions of authority. From that act of hypocrisy stemmed the Jewish peoples’ unrelenting hatred of Christ and those who followed Him. But it is not just the external Jew who hates Christ. The Christ haters are all those who place a system rooted in externals above the internal spiritual virtues such as faith, hope, and charity. This is why the alternative Right, with their obsession with biological explanations of existence and biological solutions to white genocide are just as inimical to white Europeans as the liberals are. Everything of old Europe speaks to us of Him. If we let go of old Europe we are lost in the maze of modernity. And in that maze all paths lead to hell.

The antique Europeans were like unto the Wise Men who followed the Star of Bethlehem to the manger. They knelt and believed. The modern Europeans are like unto the Pharisees who rejected Christ:

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together; as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

The house of modern Europe has been left desolate because the modern Europeans do not kneel with awe and reverence before the Babe in the manger and then follow Him through His public ministry, His crucifixion, and then His glorious resurrection. Instead they have returned to Herod, the king of Liberalism, and asked for a share of Herod’s kingdom in return for information leading to the death of the Christ Child. But the Christ Child still lives! He lives in the hearts of the European people who refuse to let go of Christ-centered Europe.

Was Christian Europe a myth? They all tell us so. But it was not a myth. Our ancestors saw the living God and they bequeathed that vision unto us. The love of Christ can only be passed on from heart to heart. The system makers, the Pharisees of Christianity, Liberalism, and neo-paganism, have nothing to offer us except a desolate house. Let us kneel before the Christ Child and pass from the darkness of modernity to the light of our incarnate Lord.

The liberals and the colored barbarians are outside the pale of humanity – they will not allow us a Christmas truce. In fact, they always intensify their attacks on the Christ-bearing race at Christmas time. So I know that one cannot ever let one’s guard down. We are at war with an implacable enemy – an enemy that has not charity. But in the midst of this ongoing war I hope you, the European remnant, find a way to have a European Christmas.

When you speak of things you love, you wear your heart on your sleeve and become easy prey for the sneering multitude. But if you don’t wear your heart on your sleeve, you cannot find those hearts that are like unto yours. So I am going to follow the path of the repentant Scrooge and wear my heart on my sleeve by recommending some of my favorite Christmas readings and movies. The first is Dickens’ *A Christmas Carol*. The [1951 movie](#) with Alastair Sim is the best, by far. A little side note – Dicken’s granddaughter was on the set of that movie. And then there is [the tale itself](#). Can we ever forget that ending?

Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did not die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man, as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset; and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God bless Us, Every One!

That ending is the literary equivalent of Handel’s “Hallelujah Chorus.” We partake of the divine charity when we are connected to Him through His people – and to Tiny Tim, “*who did not die.*”

And then there is –

1. [Luke 2: 1-20](#)
2. [A Charlie Brown Christmas \(1965\)](#)
3. The Laurel and Hardy movie called [March of the Wooden Soldiers](#)
4. Washington Irving's [Old Christmas](#) containing the stories titled "Christmas", "The Stage Coach," Christmas Eve," "Christmas Day," and "The Christmas Dinner"
5. [The Wind in the Willows](#), Chapter 5, "[Dulce Domum](#)"
6. The movie about miracles and the grace of God, called [A Canterbury Tale](#) – though it is only tangentially connected to Chaucer's *Tales*
7. The [old Christmas carols](#) – if you still have family gathered round to sing with, you are blessed indeed. I like the Burl Ives, Bing Crosby, and Julie Andrews' renditions of the old carols.
8. The movie called *The Wonderful World of the Brothers' Grimm* – there is a song in that movie that enjoins us to live in "[Christmas Land](#)." Yes! That is what old Europe was – it was Christmas Land.
9. Shakespeare's [Twelfth Night](#)
10. The movie [Pickwick Papers](#) and a reading from the book, [Chapter 28](#), in which the Pickwickians celebrate Christmas at Dingley Dell as only a Pickwickian can.
11. One or more of the Disney Classics: *Lady and the Tramp*, which begins and ends at Christmas time, *Sleeping Beauty*, and *Snow White* all place us back in fairy tale Europe, which is His Europe.

I don't know how many Christian Europeans are still alive. These blogs we write are much like prayers. We have hope that they are not in vain, but that hope is grounded in our faith in a spiritual realm that cannot be seen with the material eye. I love all antique Europeans who are struggling to live in Christmas Land while the forces of modernity are trying to destroy you. God bless you all.

I don't know if any struggling European will take heart from one final Christmas sentiment, but here it is: Recently, at my last wedding anniversary, my youngest daughter handed me a poem she had written:

To My Parents

*Is there ought in my heart that is kind and just?
Is there that in my soul which is true?*

If there's good in me, then after God

To thank for it, there's you.

*If there's ought of strength, peace, courage or love,
Or any of those gifts most divine,
In my feeble soul, pierced through with sin,
The credit, then, is thine!*

*My father, my guide, my teacher, my friend;
(Through him, my soul first sought Him above)
My mother, my comfort every day;
They taught me Truth and Love!*

*Never can thanks be repaid to you both,
Nor would your hearts expect any gain,
But in my prayers may you both be blessed,
Over and over again!*

That's what the grace of God is all about, Charlie Brown. He works through human hearts. All that I know of peace, courage, or love that I was able to impart to my daughter came through European hearts connected to His sacred heart. Blessed Christ Child – blessed be thy name this Christmas and every Christmas. +

Footnote – That the European people are being attacked and seemingly conquered by an implacable, satanic foe is sadly a fact of European history. That the European people will fight against the liberals and their minions is my hope. But isn't the Christmas season a time of hope? I believe that nothing is impossible for the European people when they reconnect with the European Christ. The story that will appear on the CWNY blog on December 17th, 24th, and 31st is a story of hope. Again, God bless all those Europeans who love His Europe. Merry Christmas!

Remembrances VI: Thy People

December 17, 2016

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances



A Christmas Carol

In the bleak mid-winter
Frosty wind made moan,
Earth stood hard as iron,
Water like a stone;
Snow had fallen, snow on snow,
Snow on snow,
In the bleak mid-winter
Long ago.

Our God, Heaven cannot hold him
Nor earth sustain;
Heaven and earth shall flee away
When he comes to reign;
In the bleak mid-winter
A stable-place sufficed
The Lord God Almighty
Jesus Christ.

Angels and archangels
May have gathered there,
Cherubim and seraphim
Thronged the air;
But only His Mother
In her maiden bliss
Worshipped the Beloved
With a kiss.

What can I give Him,
Poor as I am?
If I were a shepherd
I would bring a lamb,
If I were a Wise Man
I would do my part—
Yet what I can I give Him,
Give my heart.

-Christina Rossetti

The fall of Britain did not come by way of an invasion. It came at the invitation of the liberals. The hatred of the white race that was so manifest in the white-hating Jacobins such as Price and Priestly became the religion of the modern university-trained Britons. So this land of dear souls, at least still dear to me, is now “leas’d out” to the Moslems. The liberals called them refugees and hoped to use them to destroy their enemies, which was all white Britons, but they miscalculated. The Moslems were supposed to be grateful to the liberals, and as a token of their gratitude they were supposed to become a part of white-hating Liberaldom. Instead, they set up their own Moslem state in which the liberals who weren’t executed played only a supporting role.

At first the ‘refugees’ were content to do things democratically. They won a few elections and occupied most of London so that the police were afraid to act against them when they committed felonies such as rape, murder, and armed robbery, but after a few years of nominal control of Britain’s larger cities the Moslems decided to take complete control. They did away with democracy and set up a Moslem state. Britain was divided into nine fiefdoms, with a caliph at the head of each. The high Caliph resided in London at Buckingham Palace, the former home of the Kings and Queens of Britain.

The various members of the British parliament voted, before they were dismissed, for the execution of the royal family and anyone who was even remotely connected to the royal line of descent. The Queen, her husband, Prince George, Prince Stephen and Princess Margaret, were all executed on the old chopping block that was the site of so many royal beheadings in the past. Only Prince Arthur survived, but I’ll come back to him later. By sacrificing the royal family the members of Parliament had hoped not only to save their lives, they also hoped to obtain some position in the new Moslem government. This was only the case with about 15% of the members of Parliament. That was the approximate number of parliamentary members who did obtain minor posts in one of the Moslem fiefdoms. Having spent a lifetime betraying their own people they made themselves useful to the various caliphs by sniffing out any white resistance to Moslem rule and reporting that resistance to the caliph in their particular fiefdom. But there is only room for so many slimy informants in any administration. Eighty-five percent of the former members of the British Parliament were executed along with their families two weeks after they voted for the execution of the royal family.

There was no resistance to the Moslem takeover within the ranks of the military or the police for the simple reason that there was no official takeover. The liberals voted to dissolve their government and turn the reins of power over to the caliphs. So when the caliphs came in they inherited the liberals’ military and the liberals’ police. The members of the military and police forces had been trained to support the state so when the state became Moslem, the police and the military, having been raised with no moral instincts, simply continued working for the Moslem state. There were some executions of the higher ranking officials in all the armed forces so that the leadership positions could be occupied by Moslems, but the regular rank and file police officers and the rank and file soldiers were allowed to continue to serve the new Moslem state. The white policemen and the white members of the military were often harder on the native-born white British civilians than the Moslem soldiers and policemen were, because the white policemen and soldiers wanted to prove their loyalty to the new government.

Some of the pagan nationalist parties had welcomed the Moslem invaders in the hope that they would put paid to the Jews’ account, but the old saying, “Be careful what you wish for, because you might get more than you bargained for,” could be applied to the neo-pagan nationalists just as it could be applied to their liberal enemies and counterparts. The feminists who

all wanted to sleep with the refugees and said, "Better rapists than racists," soon discovered that rape was not as pleasant in reality as it was in their fantasies. Nor was being one wife among many as fulfilling as they had hoped.

Nor were the neo-pagans who wanted the Moslems to crack down on the feminists and the Jews delighted to learn that they, just by virtue of being white, were considered to be Christian and outside the ken of Moslem humanity. They were not allowed to become part of Islamic Britain.

And the blacks? They went back to their natural state. The Moslems used them as slaves and henchmen. So long as they got their share of white blood and white women, they seemed quite content to descend from the pedestal that the liberals had put them on.

The brunt of the invasion, which was more of betrayal than an invasion, fell upon the native-born white Britons. They never believed, even as the Moslems and the third world scum poured into their nation, that their government, their own people, would hand them over to the tender mercies of the Moslems. But of course that is exactly what happened. Some families, far too few, saw what was coming and attempted to go rural, but simply going rural delayed the Moslems for a time, it didn't provide any long-term solution to the problem of an Islamic Britain.

The executions were not wholesale, but they were not non-existent either. If any member of a white British family was suspected of any resistance to Sharia law, the whole family was exterminated. My rough estimate is that about 40% of the white Britons were exterminated after the official Moslem takeover. And the rest of the Brits were watched carefully by the traitors who used to sit in Parliament, but now spent their time looking for the enemies of Islam. And when you look for enemies, you usually find them, whether they are real enemies or imaginary ones.

The church men fared better than Parliament and the native-born. The Anglican and Roman Catholic churches simply proclaimed that Allah was God and Jesus Christ was a subordinate prophet to Mohammed. This enabled them to maintain their tax-exempt status and to continue holding church services. The state religion was, of course, Islam. Anyone who openly avowed Christianity or who was discovered to have avowed Christianity in private was immediately executed.

But there were a few — my friend John Chambers was one — who saw what was coming and went underground before the Moslem takeover. John and a few stalwart Britons are at large and they constitute a fighting remnant that I hope will grow into an army that will ultimately, led by Arthur II, drive the Moslems from Britain. But I'm getting ahead of myself. I'm still not ready to talk about Prince Arthur, the young man who was born to be King of Britain.

My own case was a curious one. I had a long record of open hostility to Islam, liberalism, and black barbarism. I had not had a position in the official church for over 25 years, but I was perceived to be the leader of Christian Britain. I never ceased my walks through London even after the Moslem takeover, and I even managed to save some white Britons from being raped and murdered by roving black and Moslem gangs. I didn't know why I was unmolested at the time, but I later learned that it was because I was considered to be a special case that had to be handled in a special way. When I was finally arrested, I was not formally charged or arraigned. I spent three months in prison before I was told the charge against me and what my fate was.

Act I. Scene 1. The Reverend Grey's Cell.

Grey: Are you the first of the three ghosts, or are you Jacob Marley?

Lawyer: I've been assigned to defend you.

Grey: Then there is going to be a trial?

Lawyer: Yes, and I think it's going to be a rather important trial. Your case is considered a very special case.

Grey: Why?

Lawyer: I'm not a religious man, I have no personal interest in Islam or Christianity.

Grey: Excuse me for interrupting, but it seems to me that every man that but man is has, or at least he should have, a personal interest in the question — Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day?

Lawyer: Well, I don't have any interest in such things, I'm only a lawyer who has been assigned a difficult case. But if you want my opinion about the question of why this case is so special, I can tell you this: the High Caliph would prefer that you recant your Christian faith instead of being executed. He doesn't have any particular liking for you, but he does respect you and holds you in high esteem. If you, who he considers the last Christian in Britain, would denounce your Christian faith it would show the rest of white Britain that there is no need to oppose Islam in the name of Christianity because, of course, Christianity is a myth.

Grey: Does the High Caliph really think I would renounce my God?

Lawyer: Yes, he does.

Grey: And why does he think I would do such a thing?

Lawyer: Primarily because the Archbishop of Canterbury has led him to believe that you can be converted to the true vision of God. Which, according to the Archbishop, is some kind of fusion of...

Grey: ... liberalism, Islam, voodoo, and Christianity.

Lawyer: I suppose so, but that's beyond my ken. The point is that the High Caliph wants you to become a live British Moslem rather than a dead Christian.

Grey: Don't ever link the word British with the word Moslem.

Lawyer: Let's not quarrel over semantics. The point is that you are to be tried in an ecclesiastical court with twelve Anglican clergymen on the jury and the Archbishop of Canterbury as the presiding judge.

Grey: Will their verdict be final?

Lawyer: Yes, if it coincides with the verdict of the High Caliph. And he wants either your repudiation of the Christian faith or, failing that, your execution.

Grey: Well, I won't recant my faith of 96 years just for a few more years of life, so why bother with a trial?

Lawyer: The Caliph wants a trial.

Grey: It seems that the more illegitimate a regime is the more formalistic and obsessed with minutia it becomes.

Lawyer: Look, Reverend, I don't particularly like my assignment. Nor to be quite frank do I particularly like Moslem... can I say it?

Grey: Yes, in that context.

Lawyer: Nor do I like Moslem Britain. But I do want to survive. You say that you're 96 years old and don't want to recant your faith in order to eke out a few more years. But what is this alleged faith of yours compared to life? Even if I only risked having my life cut short by a few weeks if I didn't recant some article of faith, I would recant in order to live those two weeks.

Grey: Is avoiding death that important to you?

Lawyer: Yes, it is. Look, I'm not at all sympathetic to this new regime, but I want to live so I try to work within the parameters of the new regime. And so far I've survived.

Grey: Why don't you like the new regime?

Lawyer: I'd rather not say.

Grey: Are you married?

Lawyer: No, my wife and I separated.

Grey: I'm sorry to hear that. A wife and children can give a man a reason to live and a reason to die.

Lawyer: We didn't have any children. My wife and I were separated before the takeover occurred. But during the refugee crisis, when we were still together, I used to argue with her about it. She thought the refugees would come in and behave just like the rest of us. I thought that they would drastically change our lives for the worse. I took no joy in the knowledge, after the takeover, that I had been right.

Grey: What happened to your wife?

Lawyer: You're facing a beheading and you ask what happened to my wife? Why should you be concerned about her?

Grey: Something in your tone of voice makes me think that you still care deeply about her. Is she dead?

Lawyer: I'm sorry. Let's both kneel and say a prayer for her.

Lawyer: I don't believe in prayer.

Grey: Then I'll pray for you. O merciful God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is the resurrection and the life, in whom whosoever believeth, shall live though he die, and whosoever liveth and believeth in him, shall not die eternally; who also taught us (by his holy Apostle Paul) not to be sorry, as men without hope, for them that sleep in him: We meekly beseech thee (O Father) to raise us from the death of sin unto the life of righteousness, that when we shall depart this life, we may rest in him, as our hope is this our brother doth; and that at the general resurrection in the last day, we may be found acceptable in thy sight, and receive that blessing which thy well-beloved Son shall then pronounce to all that love and fear thee, saying, Come ye blessed children of my Father, receive the kingdom prepared for you from the beginning of the world. Grant this we beseech thee, O merciful Father, through Jesus Christ our mediator and redeemer. Amen.

Lawyer: That was kind of you, Reverend, but I'm not a religious person, and neither was my wife.

Grey: I'm not religious in the way you mean. I believe what Christ promised about the resurrection of the dead, and I believe that Christ is the Son of God. Does that make me religious? I think religion and faith are not always the same thing.

Lawyer: Perhaps not. But aren't we getting rather far afield? My lack of faith is not going on trial tomorrow. It is your faith that is going on trial. If you recant you will be forgiven your treason and set free. If you persist in your assertion that Jesus Christ is the one true God, you will be executed. That's what it all comes down to. I'll bring in witnesses, I'll cross-examine the prosecution's witnesses, I'll do my damnedest for you, but it won't amount to a hill of beans if you don't recant. They'll find you guilty even if I'm as eloquent as Shakespeare and as knowledgeable as Blackstone.

Grey: I won't renounce Christ.

Lawyer: Then I will put up a futile defense at the end of which you'll be found guilty and sentenced to death.

Grey: My favorite hymn is "Abide with Me."

Lawyer: I don't know it.

Grey: Surely you must have heard parts of it before the Moslem takeover?

Lawyer: No, I didn't.

Grey: "I triumph still if he abides with me."

Lawyer: Is that final?

Grey: Yes.

Lawyer: Then I'll see you in court, but after the guilty verdict. I won't attend the execution, because... well, quite frankly I've become rather fond of you.

Grey: I'll pray for your wife.

Lawyer: One more thing — the Archbishop of Canterbury will be coming to see you before the trial tomorrow. Expect him sometime tonight.

Grey: I'd rather not see him.

Lawyer: You have no choice, he wants to see you. I think he expects to win you over.

Grey: To what?

Lawyer: To... how the hell should I know? I'll see you in court.

Act I. Scene 2. Three hours later.

Grey: Let's dispense with that, Archbishop.

Archbishop: Very well. Do you know why I've come here?

Grey: I suppose it's to get me to listen to what you would call reason.

Archbishop: Precisely. I don't particularly care for you, Reverend Grey, but I am the Archbishop of Canterbury and you are, though not in good standing, a cleric under my care. I don't want to see you executed unnecessarily.

Grey: What would I have to do to avoid this "unnecessary" execution?

Archbishop: Merely affirm your belief in the Christian faith as it is understood by all the organized Christian churches.

Grey: This is no time to play cat-and-mouse games, Archbishop.

Archbishop: I'm not playing games.

Grey: Then come to the point. I won't presume to think that you've poured over my writings and listened to recordings of my sermons, but you've been around long enough to be familiar with things I've written and sermons I've preached. You know what the crux of the matter is. I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Archbishop: So do I.

Grey: You're at least thirty years younger than me, your grace, but I will pick you up and spank you like a little child if you won't be frank with me. Do you believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God who was crucified, died, and was buried and then rose again from the dead?

Archbishop: No, of course I don't believe he was the son of God in that sense. I believe he was the son of God as we are all sons of God. And I believe that he was a very great prophet only exceeded in greatness by Mohammed and Nelson Mandela.

Grey: Did those other 'great' prophets claim to be the Son of the living God?

Archbishop: Well, no, they didn't. And perhaps that is why they are the greater prophets.

Grey: Look at me, Archbishop.

Archbishop: I am looking at you.

Grey: Look me in the eyes and tell me that you don't believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of the Living God.

Archbishop: Why is that necessary?

Grey: I want to see if there is a flicker of light in your heart. I want to see if you can renounce Christ in your official capacity as His champion here on earth.

Archbishop: If this will make you more agreeable, certainly I'll do it. I do not believe that Jesus Christ is the son of the living god. I believe he is a great prophet who showed us how we could all be sons of God.

Grey: Is that what you expect me to agree to in court?

Archbishop: Yes, I do.

Grey: We have nothing left to say to each other, Archbishop.

Grey: In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost.

Act I. Scene 3.

The Devil: Any news?

Grey : What type of news?

Devil : From Him.

Grey : He's in here, not up there.

Devil: Well, he's left you naked to your enemies, but I can help you.

Grey: Can you?

Devil: Yes, I can. All you need to do is renounce Him. And he really would prefer that you renounce Him. That way you'll save your life and be free to preach.

Grey: But if I renounce Christ, what would I preach?

Devil: You could preach the fusion of all faiths, of Islam, Christianity, Judaism, and all the other religions. Wouldn't that be more in keeping with God's will, seeing that all men are brothers?

Grey : And humanity is what concerns you? Your heart goes out to us?

Devil: This isn't working, is it?

Grey: No, it isn't. I know who you are.

Devil: It's no use, you know. No one is going to come over to your side. You've lost and so has He. And this Britain that you love, she has lost too.

Grey: Then why have you come here? Is it simply to gloat?

Devil: To give you one last chance to come over to my side. All these years you've been fighting me in the name of Christ, but what has Christ ever done for you? He has left you here all alone. He has forsaken you, but I haven't; I'm here with you.

Grey: Do you remember what the Savior said to you in the wilderness?

Devil : Don't quote scripture at me.

Grey : "And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season."

Devil: That is old and tired. You should face reality. They all hate you, every single man, woman, and child in Great Britain. And Christ has no use for you, all the poetic, European stuff is nonsense. What are you going to say at the trial? Are you going to quote from your beloved Sonnet 31 : "Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts..."

You'd like me to make this into a no holds barred fight, wouldn't you? It would be the dream of a lifetime. You'd get to go toe to toe with the Prince of Darkness. But I'm not going to give you that satisfaction. I'm going to sit in on your trial and watch you quake in fear when they pronounce your sentence. Or maybe you'll come to your senses and turn to me.

Grey : You came here hoping I'd blaspheme in my final hours. I won't. What you see now , you'll see at the trial – a man, however unworthy, who will stand with Christ and Christ's Europe against you and all your minions.

Satan : Oh, you're such a big, strong, brave man. I suppose you think that such heroic gestures mean something in what you would call the spiritual realm. But they don't. You'll simply be tried and executed. There will be nothing noble in your defiance. There are no Beau Gestes in reality. My reality is the only reality. Think about that tonight . I'll see you at the trial.

Act II. Scene 1. The trial.

Prosecutor: For my first witness, I call the former Archbishop of Canterbury, Archbishop Holmes.

The Present Archbishop: The court welcomes the testimony of our illustrious predecessor and our brother in the faith.

Holmes: Thank you.

Prosecutor: You were the Archbishop of Canterbury when Christopher Grey was removed from his London parish and ordered to stop all preaching?

Holmes: Yes.

Prosecutor: Why did you issue that order?

Holmes: The immediate cause was racism. The Reverend Grey was preaching racism.

Prosecutor: From the pulpit?

Holmes: No, not from the pulpit, but in a series of articles he wrote for the newspaper. I've brought some of his articles along, if you'd like me to read some of the more damning passages.

Defense Attorney: Your honor, I must protest. This trial is supposed to be about the defendant's deviation from the Anglican-Islamic faith, not about his views on race.

Archbishop: Racism is a deviation from the Anglican branch of Islam, objection overruled. But it is not necessary to read the offending documents. Just put them up here with me, and I'll order that they be entered into the records of the court.

Prosecutor: Thank you, your honor. Now, was racism the only reason that Reverend Grey was ordered to stop preaching as an Anglican minister?

Homes: No, it was not. He was also removed from his duties because of his unorthodox teaching.

Prosecutor: In what way was he unorthodox?

Holmes: He preached that Jesus Christ was the son of God, who was crucified, died, and was buried, and on the third day, he rose again from the dead.

Prosecutor: In what way does such teaching contradict the teaching of the Anglican Church?

Holmes: Our church, in union with all the other organized Christian churches, preaches that Jesus Christ was a great prophet, a religious teacher, who showed us how we can all become sons of God. He preached brotherhood and peace, but he did not preach racism or exclusivity.

Prosecutor: And what does the Anglican Church, in union with all the organized Christian churches, say about Christ's relationship to Mohammed?

Holmes: Our church, once again I stress, in union with all of organized Christianity, preaches that Mohammed is a greater prophet than Christ, but both prophets point the way to the true God.

Prosecutor: And the Reverend Grey, or should we say, Christopher Grey, denies this?

Holmes: Yes, he does.

Prosecutor: What does he preach?

Holmes: He says that Mohammed is a false prophet and that Christ is the son of the living God. Again, I have brought sermons and articles by the Rev... I mean, by Mr. Grey, to substantiate my statements.

Archbishop: Those documents will also be entered into the court record.

Prosecutor: Thank you for your testimony, Archbishop Holmes. Your honor, I have no further questions for Archbishop Holmes.

Archbishop: Counsel for the defense, do you have any questions for Archbishop Holmes.

Defense: Yes, your honor, I do.

Archbishop: Then you may proceed.

Defense : Do you recognize this book, Archbishop Holmes.

Holmes: Not at this distance.

Defense: It is a copy of the *Book of Common Prayer of 1559*.

Prosecutor: I object. That book, along with the *Bible*, has been banned by the British Sharia High Court.

Defense: Your honor, I obtained the proper historical archives permit for this book. I am not using it for worship.

Archbishop: The defense counsel did get the proper permit, so I'll overrule the prosecutor's objections. Proceed.

Defense: Thank you, your honor. I would like the court to listen while I read a section of the 1559 *Book of Common Prayer*:

"I believe in one God, the Father Almighty, maker of heaven and earth, and of all things visible and invisible. And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of God, begotten of his Father before all worlds: God of God, light of light, very God of very God: begotten, not made, being of one substance with the Father, by whom all things were made: who for us men and for our salvation, came down from heaven, and was incarnate by the Holy Ghost, of the Virgin Mary, and was made man: and was crucified also for us, under Pontius Pilate. He suffered

and was buried, and the third day he rose again according to the Scriptures, and ascended into heaven, and sitteth at the right hand of the Father. And he shall come again with glory, to judge both the quick and the dead, whose kingdom shall have no end. And I believe in the Holy Ghost, the Lord and giver of life, who proceedeth from the Father and the Son, who with the Father and the Son together is worshiped and glorified, who spake by the prophets. And I believe in one catholic and apostolic Church. I acknowledge one baptism, for the remission of sins. And I look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come. Amen.

Prosecutor: Your honor, I have been patient, but I must beg leave to ask where the defense counsel is going with this line of defense. Is the court going to be subjected to more of this kind of reading? If so, I demand to know its relevancy to the trial of Christopher Grey for high treason.

Defense: That is all I intend to read, your honor.

Archbishop: Then make your point, the court has been more than lenient with you.

Defense: My point is this – that creed was recited in every Anglican service by the faithful for over 300 years. And it is clear that the British people who recited that creed believed in the same God that the Reverend Grey believes in. How can that belief now be treasonable? I call for an immediate reduction of the charge of treason to a misdemeanor fine for anti-social behavior.

Prosecutor: The beliefs held by British men and women centuries ago have no bearing on this case. British law, like our religion, has evolved. Britain is now governed by British Sharia law, so quite naturally things that were once permitted are no longer permitted, and things that were once forbidden are no longer forbidden.

Archbishop: Point well taken, Mr. Prosecutor. Do you have any more questions for this witness?

Defense: No, your honor.

Archbishop Proceed.

Prosecutor : What is your official title, just for the record?

Pope Francis: I am the pontiff of the Roman Catholic Church.

Prosecutor: I know it's not that long of a trip, just a leap over the pond so to speak, but still I am amazed that you took the time out of your busy schedule to be a witness at this trial. May I ask why you did so?

Pope Francis: The cause of Christian unity is paramount. And the defendant and what he represents is the greatest danger to Christian unity.

Prosecutor: And how would you define the danger that Christopher Grey represents?

Pope Francis: He represents a type of Christianity, a racist, Eurocentric Christianity that spawned all of the evils that have plagued mankind for centuries.

Prosecutor: Such as?

Pope Francis: Such as colonialism, superstition, and the making of a prophet into the son of God. All those evils sprang from the type of faith espoused by that man .

Prosecutor: Then you would concur with Archbishop Holmes. You believe that Christ is one of the lesser prophets and not the son of God?

Pope Francis: Yes, my beliefs are completely in line with Archbishop Holmes.

Prosecutor: No further questions, your honor.

Archbishop: Does the defense wish to question the witness?

Defense: Yes, your honor, I do.

Archbishop: Proceed.

Defense: Are you married, your Excellency?

Prosecution: Your honor, I fail to see the relevancy of...

Defense : Your honor, my client is on trial for his life. Am I not to be allowed any latitude to follow my own line of questioning?

Archbishop: We'll overrule your objection, Mr. Prosecutor, for the time being. But I warn you, counsel for the defense: stay within the bounds of proper courtroom decorum.

Defense; Thank you, your honor. Now, I'll repeat my question: Are you married?

Pope Francis: Yes, I have four wives.

Defense: That wasn't always the custom in the Catholic Church, was it your holiness?

Pope Francis: No, it was not. But when my father, Pope Francis I made Sharia law the law of the church, I took onto myself four wives.

Defense: Do you think that the Christians who once believed in one man and one wife were wrong?

Pope Francis: They weren't wrong at that time, but they would be wrong if they tried to return to the old custom of one man and one wife.

Defense: Why would they be wrong?

Prosecutor: Objection, the pontiff should not be asked to explain the morals and customs of Christians of the past. That is too far afield from the trial at hand.

Archbishop: Objection sustained.

Defense: But, your honor...

Archbishop: I said, objection sustained. Change to another line of questioning, or I'll find you in contempt.

Defense: I was merely trying to establish that if everyone once held beliefs counter to Sharia law, then surely the Reverend Grey...

Archbishop : I said this line of questioning must cease, and it shall .

Grey : Say no more about that, I don't want you to get thrown in jail.

Archbishop : You may now give your summation to the jury.

Defense: Gentlemen – and I know you are all gentle men, who have no desire to inflict the death penalty on a fellow cleric, a man who tries to serve his God as you try to serve yours. The Reverend Grey does hold beliefs that conflict with British Sharia law, but his beliefs are completely in line with the beliefs of all Britons up to the second half of the 20th century. I ask you, in the name of humanity, in the name of mercy, to change his death sentence to a fine. The Reverend Grey was born in another time, and he sees a different vision of God than we do, but surely he does not deserve the death penalty. I ask you to forgive him his trespasses and render a not guilty verdict.

Archbishop: And now we'll hear from the prosecution.

Prosecutor: Gentlemen, I'll be brief. In church and state we are governed by British Sharia law. A crime against the state is a crime against us all. Where we might forgive Christopher Grey in our private capacities, as public officials sworn to protect the public, we cannot forgive him his trespasses as the defense counselor recommends. There can be only one verdict for Christopher Grey and that verdict is Guilty!

Archbishop: You may retire to consider your verdict.

Head Juror: We don't need to retire, your honor.

Archbishop: You have reached a verdict?

Head Juror: We find the defendant, Christopher Grey, guilty of the crime of high treason.

Archbishop: Then it only remains for me to pass sentence. Will the defendant please rise. Before I pass sentence, do you have anything to say?

Grey: No.

Archbishop: Let me remind you that it still remains within my power, a power granted to me by the High Caliph of London, to be merciful. You can still walk out of this courtroom a free man. No one seeks your death. Everything depends on how you answer this next question – Do you believe that Christ is the son of the living God?

Grey: I do.

Archbishop: Then I sentence you to death. You will place your head on the executioner's block at 9 o'clock tomorrow morning.

Act II. Scene 2. A ramshackle building in Tintagel.

Prince Arthur: How is he?

Chambers: He's fine, he just needs some sleep.

Prince Arthur: Small wonder. I don't think he's slept for over 75 hours.

Chambers: He told me to tell you that the coronation will take place at 12 noon tomorrow.

Prince Arthur: The Reverend Grey thinks it's time for the coronation. Do you think it is time?

Chambers: I think we should go with the Reverend Grey's opinion. If he says it is time, then it is time.

Prince Arthur: You've been a great friend to him. I don't think any other man in Britain could have snatched him from prison the way you did.

Chambers: Thirty years at Scotland Yard gave me more than a passing acquaintance with the Yard's prison system. Besides that, I had some good men backing me up. The Rev. Grey still has friends; we weren't going to let him die on the executioner's block.

Prince Arthur: He is lucky to have a friend like you.

Chambers: No, it's the other way around. Sometime I'll tell you how he saved my life. Besides that, he helped me regain my soul. I was in a rather precarious position, as regards my soul, when I first met the Reverend Grey.

Prince Arthur: I guess we are all, we Britons, in a rather precarious state as regards our souls, and – for that matter – our bodies as well.

Chambers: Yes, we are, but this coronation will be the start of a long journey back.

Arthur: I hope so, but I just don't know if I'm up to the task.

Chambers: No one is up to the task, but we do it anyway. That might sound a bit too much like Bulldog Drummond talking, but I mean it in the best sense of the British tradition, which has been almost, but not completely, extinguished. When you are crowned King tomorrow, it will be the start of something old, something old becoming new again. You'll rule as a Christian king should rule and you'll draw Britons back to old Britain.

Arthur: It all sounds right. Then tomorrow Britain will have a King again?

Chambers: Yes, and we'll put it out there on those damn computer phones that everyone has, even the Moslems. Then the Moslems will know, and the Britons will know, that we have a King again. Well, I'll leave you now. I suppose you'll want to get some sleep.

Prince Arthur: No, wait a moment, if you don't mind. I'd still like to talk. It's been awhile since I've had any time to reflect and talk with someone. It's all been a whirl ever since the takeover two years ago.

Chambers: I'm not sleepy, if there is something bothering you...

Arthur: Nothing specific... well, yes, it is something specific. I feel this sense of guilt for being alive when the rest of my family is dead. I keep asking myself, 'Why me?' Why was I spared?

Chambers: That's not unusual. I've read memoirs of men who survived the Battle of the Argonne Forest in World War I, where there was close to a 40% casualty rate. Many survivors felt as you do, 'Why me?' But you did survive, and God must have had his reasons, just hold on to that.

Prince Arthur: I was on a fishing trip in Scotland when the purge began. I didn't dream, when I left London, that I'd never see any of my family again. Oh, I knew Britain was becoming a Moslem nation, but I thought there would be some resistance. I didn't know that the police and the military would surrender without a fight.

Chambers: You must remember, the police and the military come from the culture. For years our schools and our churches have been putting out anti-white, anti-Christian, and anti-native-born propaganda. It's a wonder there have been any defectors at all.

Arthur: There haven't been many though.

Chambers: No, there hasn't. But we have been getting larger numbers from the general populace. Which is what you would expect. The military and police still get paid by the Moslem government. The native white Brits have been disenfranchised.

Prince Arthur: The Reverend Grey says that we shouldn't think in terms of numbers. He says a few will be enough. Do you believe that?

Chambers: I'd like more numbers, because I don't have Reverend Grey's faith. But when the white heat of my soul burns inside of me I know that Reverend Grey is right: if a remnant fights, the rest will follow.

Prince Arthur: It will take a miracle, but then how can I not believe in miracles, my life is one. I was raised in liberal schools and a liberal church. I was raised to hate the native-born, white Britons and love the colored races. And I was raised to believe that Christ was not the Son of God. Then I ran into Reverend Grey.

Chambers: That was about five years ago, wasn't it?

Arthur: Yes, it was. I had heard of him when I was growing up, everyone had heard of him. But in royal circles, which translates to liberal circles, he was a pariah. He was a throne-and-altar Christian, he was a racist, he was a male chauvinist, and the list went on and on. It's ironic, the liberals say they don't believe in the devil, but they demonized Rev. Grey. To them he was the devil incarnate.

I was 24 when I met Rev. Grey. I had just finished a two year stint in the military. With two elder princely brothers in front of me, I was resigned to a life of battleship christenings and supportive, symbolic appearances at liberal functions. The particular function at which I met Rev. Grey was a grand opening of a family services clinic. You know what that is a euphemism for, don't you?

Chambers: Abortuaries.

Arthur: Yes. Well, I was in the midst of blathering on about the great modern facility that was being opened to help women, when the Rev. Grey stood before me. "For shame," he said, "You come from a royal line of kings; you can't, you mustn't give your royal sanction to infanticide." I stammered out some inanity about tolerance, but his eyes defeated me; they were pure fire. I felt ashamed.

The police came to usher him away, but he just turned on them and said, "Don't come one step closer." It was amazing — they stepped back and let him walk away in peace. When he got to the edge of the crowd, he warned, "That house of Satan will not be standing tomorrow." Well, it wasn't standing the next day. The clinic burned down that very night. The Rev. Grey was investigated, but they never managed to pin it on him. You probably could shed some light on the matter.

Chambers : I told you, the Rev. Grey has a great number of friends who are quite willing to burn down abortion clinics and do other odd chores for him.

Prince Arthur: Well, those eyes of his troubled me. I started to visit him on a regular basis. My conversion didn't happen overnight, but by the time I went on that fishing trip to Scotland, I was a Christian, like unto Alfred, like unto Rev. Grey, and like unto all the British men and women that lived and died with His divine humanity in their hearts. When I place my hand on the Bible tomorrow, I'll swear to be a Christian king of Britain. And God help me, I will be a Christian King of Britain.

Chambers: Better say when I take that oath today. It's past midnight.

Prince Arthur: Then we have heard the chimes of midnight together, Master Chambers.

Chambers : Indeed we have.

Act II. Scene 3. An open field in Tintagel.

1st Soldier: We'll be moving out tomorrow?

2nd Soldier: Probably, Captain Chambers said we mustn't stay in one place very long.

1st Soldier: I brought my family here on vacation once. They did quite a brisk business showing off the castle. But now there is only the bare ruins again — they tore everything down.

3rd Soldier: We'll build it up again, once we take care of them.

1st Soldier: Well, at least we now have the advantage over them.

2nd Soldier: How do you figure that?

1st Soldier: We don't have anything to defend. They control the government and everything that goes with that power — the government buildings, the bridges, the highways, and everything else. We can keep hitting them, like we've been doing, hide out for a while, and then hit them again.

3rd Soldier: But eventually we'll have to defend what we take.

1st Soldier; Yes, but for now let's let them worry about what we're up to.

3rd Soldier: Yes, we used to have to worry about the next terrorist strike. Now let them worry about where we'll strike next.

2nd Soldier: It's quite a coincidence that the Prince is named Arthur, and he is going to be crowned King here at Tintagel.

4th Soldier: Is it? I don't believe in coincidences.

3rd Soldier: Quiet, here they come.

Rev. Grey: Do you solemnly promise to govern the people of Great Britain according to the Gospel of Jesus Christ and according to the Christian traditions and customs of your British ancestors?

Prince Arthur : Then in the name of Jesus Christ, to whom all kings owe their allegiance, I crown you Arthur II, King of Great Britain.

King Arthur II : Now Britain has a king and that king has a people. We will begin here and we will not rest until Britain is one united Christian nation again. God bless you all – by the Cross we conquer!

Note from Christopher Grey: I wrote of Arthur Walker in the last Remembrances. He started out as a missionary in Kenya and ended up working for a private detective agency in Savannah, Georgia. He's been back to Britain three times during the eleven years he's lived in the United States, but he has not been back here since the Moslem takeover. What follows are excerpts from a letter he sent me a few weeks after the coronation of King Arthur II:

Congratulations to everyone connected with the coronation. At last Britain has a real King again! I only wish I could have been there. Maybe I'll be able to get back there sometime soon. I certainly hope so.

It's difficult to say which country is worse off, the United States or Great Britain. But really such comparisons are a waste of time. All the white nations, or should I say formerly white nations, are under siege from the forces of diversity and multiculturalism which translates to Satanism.

Over here there was no official ceremonial takeover as there was in Britain. It was more unofficial in the United States, but it definitely did take place. In the end it was negro worship, the same heathen faith that destroyed the whites in Kenya and South Africa, that sounded the death knell of white America.

Everything that President Murdock did was consistent with what the liberals had been preaching for years. Murdoch just decided that the time was ripe to make what was implicit – that Americans worshipped the negro – explicit. First, he federalized all the state and local police and all the state and local militias. Then he made it federal law that no white police officer could arrest or harm any black, no matter what crimes the black man or woman might be committing. In point of fact, it was illegal to say that a black person was capable of committing a crime. The one exception to that Federal mandate was black on black crime. If a black man shot another black man, then that black man could be arrested by a white police officer, but only if the white police officer did not use deadly force when apprehending the black criminal.

Of course the ‘hands off the black man’ policy led to a complete breakdown of law and order. No white was safe in any area where black men dwelt because it was not a crime to rape or murder a white. And without whites to man the hospitals, keep law and order, dispose of the garbage, run the public transport systems, etc. etc., the cities became plague-infested jungles. The poorer whites who couldn't get out were murdered and the weaker blacks were murdered by the stronger until the stronger succumbed either to one of the many plagues or to someone stronger. Along with the Federalization of the police came the mandatory attendance at the religious festivals, which are a combination of football games and the Catholic mass. Every sport but football has been abolished and the football season has been made into a twelve-month long season. No whites are allowed to play in either the ceremonial games or the games of the local colleges and high schools. Whites are only permitted to watch and worship—to watch and worship their sacred gods.

Needless to say, it's all quite disgusting. No, that is not the proper word. It is all quite satanic. But if you saw Kenya and the whites' capitulation to the Mau Maus in that country, you knew it was coming.

I know that in Britain there is no religious service permitted except the Islamic one, but in America the required service is a blasphemous negroization of the Catholic mass. Pope Francis II sent a papal envoy to President Murdock to set up a mass that was in keeping with the Americans' love for the negro and the basic principles of the Catholic Church, so the offshoot of that was a mini-mass before every Sunday football game in which the name of the sacred negro was invoked as Christ's sacred name was once invoked: “In the negro, for the negro, in fellowship with the negro, who is our Lord and...” – I'll spare you the rest. The service doesn't take too long, about 20 minutes, and then the game commences. After the game a priest blesses the crowd in the name of the sacred negro. And then the crowd goes home. Of course they can't fit the entire populace in the stadiums, even though they have built more stadiums. What they've done is very clever. They've placed huge widescreen television screens in all the local churches. What takes place there is exactly what takes place at the stadiums: there is a short church service and then the game. After the televised game, the priest still gives the blessing in person. The clerics love the new system because it fills the churches. The first failure to attend Sunday services brings a hefty fine. A second offense means death by hanging. Needless to say, there are not many men or women who do not attend the church services. The Moslems? They are not required to attend, but a white man is not permitted to avoid the negro-worshipping services by converting to Islam. All white males must attend the services, even if they have converted to Islam. With the white females it's different. If a white woman has converted to Islam, she no longer has to attend the negro-worshipping ceremonies.

The Pope and the other ‘Christian’ leaders seem quite willing to adapt their services to suit Moslems and negro-worshippers, but they have no room for white Europeans who worship Jesus Christ. Perhaps it's just as well that the churches have made their anti-Christian and anti-European bias so blatant. Now at least there is no excuse for the white European. If he has anything to do with them, he is with Satan and not Christ.

There are groups of white men who have gone underground, so to speak. They don't attend the negro-worshipping services and they have been classified as outlaws by the existing government. The government officials say they are a tiny minority who they are not worried about. They are a tiny minority, but the liberals are worried about them. James Miller heads up one of the groups in this area. He goes around making like Robin Hood – that's the only way I can think of to describe what he does. He makes punitive raids on the black marauders and white police and military men who murder and imprison white people. He doesn't scold or lecture the anti-white blacks and the anti-white whites. He kills them. And he dispenses what money he gets from the punitive raids to white people who desperately need some assistance. I've been able to give some aid to his organization because, as you recall, I never worked openly for James' detective agency, I worked undercover. The liberals own the army, the police, the churches, the schools, and the government, but they have failed to stop little pockets of resistance, like James Miller's underground men. I've even heard talk in the underground pipeline that there is a chance that the white Russians might join with the native-born white Americans and make an old style invasion of the United States, but I wouldn't want them to push it too soon. I think we need to weaken the liberal pillars a little more before Liberaldom comes tumbling down. I'll probably be in Britain serving under King Arthur before the American underground decides to become an above ground conquering army. But in Britain's case and in America's case the death of Liberaldom is a consummation devoutly to be wished.

I've saved the worst news for last. Our friend Father Bontini has been captured. When he came over here about 18 months ago, shortly after the Moslem takeover of Britain, he was an enormous help to us. He couldn't use his real name, of course, but under the assumed name of Joe Rossi he got a job with the Roman Catholic Social Services organization. With his firsthand knowledge of the way the Catholic liberal works, he was able to subvert that anti-white, anti-Christian organization. He gave Miller and his white commandos advanced knowledge of the Catholic Social Services planned raids on white people. The raids were punitive raids that the Catholic Social Services used to murder and imprison whites who were said to be racist. Very, very little evidence was needed for a raid. If a member of Catholic Social Services didn't like the looks of you, or if a black said you were racist, it was all over. The Catholic Social Services would come and either kill you on the spot or send you to prison. As we know there is now only one capital crime in the United States, and that is white racism.

Father Bontini did all he could. Many times when the Catholic Social Services storm troopers came to kill white “racists” Miller was there with a squad of white guerrilla fighters. Then it was the Catholic Social Services storm troopers, not the innocent whites, who were killed. And when Bontini had advance information about the Catholic Social Services plans for resettlement of the Somalis he always sent word to Miller. That is why so many of the resettlement projects failed. Miller and his guerrillas burned down the sites just before the Somalis were scheduled to settle there.

I don't know exactly how Father Bontini became known to the liberals, but they did finally discover who he was. He was that racist, defrocked, Italian priest who had served time in Italy for an assault on Pope Paul VI. But it is for his crimes in this country that he is going to be tried. He is being charged with the most serious crime in America: He is being charged with aiding and abetting racist whites who want to take over the United States. The penalty for that crime is, of course, death.

Since all crimes dealing with race are handled by the Federal courts, Murdock has appointed one of his handpicked federal judges to try the case. The trial will be in Washington D.C. in three weeks. I don't think either you or I have any doubt about the outcome of that trial. I know we all must die, and Father Bontini has assured us all that he is ready to die, but still he is my friend and I wish there was something I could do. James Miller says that the authorities would like nothing better than a commando raid on Father Bontini's jail cell. I think he's right. I suppose it's hopeless, but I know how close you have been and still are to Father Bontini. Is there anything that can be done?

-Arthur Walker

Act III. Scene 1. Somewhere in England.

Walker: I must say it's good to be back in Britain, even if it's only a small part of Britain.

Bontini: It might be a larger section after tomorrow.

Walker: I hope so. If King Arthur truly has the support he thinks he has, all of Wales and Cornwall as well will be free of Moslem rule.

Bontini: We'll see. But just being here is a miracle to me. Four weeks ago, I was scheduled to be executed on the steps of the Lincoln Memorial. At least where the Lincoln Memorial used to be.

Walker: There are statues of Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King, Jr. there now, aren't there?

Bontini: There were. I haven't been back to Italy since my exile, but I'm told that the Sistine Chapel has been torn down and replaced by the Nelson Mandela Museum.

Walker: Yes, that's true. Almost every art work from Christian Europe has been destroyed. Only the literature survives because a book can be circulated in the underground.

Bontini: Yes, even if King Arthur takes Wales and Cornwall it will not restore what we have lost. But still, it will be the beginning of a new-old Europe.

Walker: Precisely.

Chambers: I'll be moving out with the army tonight, but I just had to stop and see you before I left.

Bontini : Such emotion from an Englishman, Mr. Chambers. You surprise me!

Chambers : Well, I hope the Moslems will be surprised as well. They have no idea that we're strong enough to hit them straight on.

Walker: Forgive me if I ask a stupid question, but I've been in the States for the past 12 years. Are we strong enough to hit them straight on?

Chambers: I think we are. And I'm not a cockeyed optimist.

Bontini: Nor a Hotspur either, right?

Chambers: No, "Die all, die merrily" is not my motto. I believe in killing the enemy.

Bontini: God go with you and the rest of the men.

Chambers: Are you going to give me the details of your escape? How did he pull it off?

Bontini: Didn't he tell you?

Chambers: I only saw him briefly when he got back, and then he only wanted to know how the army was coming along.

Bontini: Well, I was tried, convicted, and sentenced to be beheaded on the steps of what used to be the Lincoln Memorial. It is now the great chopping block for the Washington D.C. area. Thousands upon thousands of whites have been executed there. I was going to be one of the victims. How Christopher managed it is beyond me, and he always gets vague when you ask him about something he's done.

Chambers: Yes , he does get vague about his missions of mercy.

Bontini: Well, there is always a Catholic priest—actually they don't call themselves Catholic anymore, they call themselves Mandelaites—present at the execution. And there are the two guards who escort the prisoner to the chopping block. And then there is the executioner. You can imagine my surprise—but judging from his past record, I shouldn't have been surprised—when the executioner turned out to be the Reverend Christopher Grey. Christopher killed the two guards, slipped a gas mask over my face and one over his own while a few well-placed men from Miller's marauders threw tear gas bombs all over the area. You see the liberals were prepared for a frontal attack, but they were not prepared for a one-man rescue at their sacrificial altar. The Reverend got me out of Washington and then out of America altogether.

Walker: When I asked about the statues of Martin Luther King Jr. and Nelson Mandela, you said they used to be there, where the Lincoln Memorial used to be. What did you mean?

Bontini: I meant they used to be there before Christopher pulled them down. His strength has never left him after all these years.

Walker: He was aptly named: the Christ Bearer. It's what he's been doing his entire life...

Bontini: Yes, tearing down the idols of the liberals. And tomorrow the work toward a new Christian Britain begins. But then I should say that it has already begun and tomorrow it will continue.

Chambers: Yes. And God willing, we'll all meet here again on Christmas Eve.

All: God willing.

Act III. Scene 2. Somewhere in England

Walker: The waiting is difficult; I wish I was with the army.

Bontini: You will be, but Chambers thought it was better to wait until you got a chance to get used to the army before you plunged right into a major battle.

Walker: I understand that, but the waiting is still hard.

Bontini: In the meantime, maybe Dr. Shelton can tell us how an academic came to be associated with King Arthur and Christopher Grey.

Shelton: Every conversion story is different. I don't think my conversion was as sudden as it might appear if you just looked at what I was doing professionally.

I had the usual British education, which was quite liberal. By the time I got my doctorate in philosophy from Oxford I was a perfectly trained intellectual idiot, who hated all things European and most especially all things British. I loved all things that were not part of European culture and I most particularly loved the black race. But of course all my loves were in the abstract. I didn't marry until I was thirty-five, but of course I had many women before my marriage to a twenty-two year-old woman who had been one of my students. The marriage lasted two years. There were no children. I married two more times, both of those marriages lasted three years total. At sixty I was alone and a drug addict. A lifetime of philosophical abstraction had made me more of a vegetable than a human being... This is all quite pathetic and quite uninteresting, do you really want to hear more?

Bontini: Yes, we all come from liberalism, I was one of the worst. Every conversion from liberalism interests me.

Shelton: All right, I'll continue. The game in academia, particularly in philosophy, is to place yourself in the position of one of the Olympians. You are the great god of reason, who is above the base multitude. You, devoid of passion, will objectively pass judgement on the activities of mankind. Of course the absurdity of that premise is quite clear to any sane man. But there are no sane men in academia. I was full of smoldering passions, I hated everything human, because everything human in my "objective opinion" was imperfect. All my wives were imperfect; they didn't love me enough. All my colleagues were imperfect; they didn't appreciate me enough. And all the traditions and customs that stemmed from Christian Britain were evil, because they were imperfect and stifling. They stifled my genius.

There it is. When I add that I was hopelessly addicted to cocaine, I am mentioning that as a logical consequence of an overweening vanity that, if I was really so objective, I would have recognized, in reality, was a self-loathing. Try as we might, we Europeans, we cannot completely efface His image, and when we see ourselves next to Him, we loathe what we are and kill ourselves, because we can't be like Him, while we strike out at anything and everybody that reminds us of Him. That is the essence of liberalism, gentlemen, and if it reminds you of the devil, you are right to be so reminded. Self-love, envy, and hatred of the light – and the light is to be combated with pure intelligence. It's all quite pathetic. And it would be laughable if it was not a pathetic pathology that destroys and kills both the body and the soul.

Walker: But there was a moment, wasn't there? You are here, you are with His people. So there must have been a moment of light?

Shelton: Yes, there was. It was completely undeserved, but the grace of God is always undeserved. Two years prior to the formal Moslem takeover, I lost my university position, not due to any suspicion of Christian heresy, but because the Moslems had no use for any philosopher even if he was a Western secular philosopher. I lost my position and my income and my health

care. Both of which I needed, because of my cocaine addiction.

Well, the hospitals in Britain had become, as you know, mere slaughter houses. Any non-Moslem who was sick was simply killed. So I didn't go to the hospital. I found a dingy hovel and stocked in an illegal supply of hard liquor and prepared to drink myself to death.

And I would have succeeded, except for the one human relic of my desolate life. I had a son by my second wife. I had never seen him. You see my second wife was German; I met her and married her when I was doing a two-year stint as a guest professor at the University of Munich. She didn't even tell me that she was two months pregnant when we divorced. Some ten years later, she told me about my son. I don't recall being that interested in seeing him, I just was outraged that she had withheld the truth from me. You see I was very big on the truth. Like the king of liars, I was a liar who thought he loved the truth. And the truth was that I was too intelligent to co-exist with stupid humanity.

Well, this son whom I had never seen, found me. I cursed him, berated him, and told him from my deathbed that I wanted nothing to do with him. But still he plagued me for four weeks with an unbearable patience and kindness. In between curses one day I asked him why. "Because you are my father, and I love you."

I was trapped. I couldn't move from my bed, and I couldn't avoid his compassion and his love. And through him I came to Him. By the time I was well, I had a son and knew myself to be Christ's child, and I knew that Christ was the Son of the living God.

My son's name is now known throughout Germany; his mother gave him her family name. He is the leader of the Christian armies in Germany. At this date, as you know, the Christians have retaken Bavaria and some of the neighboring provinces. I thought the least I could do was to be of some service to the Christian forces here, which I hope will eventually unite with the German forces and drive the Moslems from Europe. Listen to me, the great anti-European talking about driving the Moslems from Europe.

Walker: How on earth did your son escape the modernist pestilence?

Shelton: By a miracle of grace. He was raised to be a liberal, but his heart was too great for liberalism. Shakespeare, Scott, the Brothers Grimm, the Reverend Grey, the Black Forest of Christian Germany, and the image of Christ that still haunted Germany's Moslem present all drew him to Christ. At first his heart and then his sword belonged to Christ. I pray that God keeps him safe, because he is my son and I love him and because Christian Europe needs such men.

Bontini : God bless you, and God bless your son. Let's pray for him and for the success of King Arthur and his army.

Act IV. Scene 1. Christmas Eve at Tintagel.

King Arthur: I needn't tell anyone here, because you were the ones doing the fighting, that we have won a great victory. All of Wales, Cornwall, and parts of Northern Scotland belong to Britain.

I've reinstated the old Christmas tradition of twelve days and nights of celebration. But lest we forget, we have the liberal-Moslem armies always in front of us. So this Christmas, and for many Christmases to come, most likely, we'll need to celebrate in shifts. Some must guard our nation's borders while others celebrate, and then those who are rested will relieve the others. I need not tell you that we cannot rest while there is a liberal or a Moslem, at large in Britain. Great counter-revolutions are happening throughout Europe, we must do our part. And from the bottom of my heart, I thank you all. There is now a Christian flag, our flag, over part of Britain. God willing the cross will soon fly over all of Britain – . And now before we each go to our private Christmas celebrations, I'll ask the Reverend Christopher Grey to say a few words.

Grey: There are no words more befitting Christmas than the divinely inspired words of St. Luke:

And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

And now if you'll stay with me for a few moments longer, I'd like you to sing my favorite hymn, "Abide with Me":

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;
The darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide;
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,
Help of the helpless, oh, abide with me.

Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;
Earth's joys grow dim, its glories pass away;
Change and decay in all around I see—
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.

I need Thy presence every passing hour;
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's pow'r?
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.

I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness;
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.

Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies;
Heav'n's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me.

God bless you and Merry Christmas.

Act IV. Scene 2. A refurbished room in a restored house in Tintagel.

Grey : I know you'll want to spend Christmas with your intended and her family. Will you be able to?

King Arthur: I think so. The borders are secure and I won't be leaving here for another week, then I'm going to inspect the troops in Scotland.

Walker: I've been away from Britain for quite some time; I had no idea you were engaged.

Chambers: Well, he is; soon we shall have a Queen Elizabeth.

Walker: When?

King Arthur: On January 1st, I'll be married to Elizabeth Austen, no relation, or so I'm told, to Jane Austen.

Walker: It's no matter. So long as you love her and she is British.

King Arthur: I do and she is.

Shelton: It's beginning to look like Christian Europe is not quite dead yet.

Grey: No, indeed. Over half of Germany now belongs to the Christians. And I've heard through Edward Owen that South Africa belongs to the white Christians again. And in America, Arthur could tell you more about this, the white Southern forces, led by James Miller, have joined forces with the Russian Army to retake Florida, Georgia, and most of Mississippi. They are flying the Confederate flag side by side with the old flag of Czarist Russia. Those are the countries I have first-hand knowledge of, but I've heard of guerilla movements and full scale assaults from the European ranks throughout all the European countries. It won't be easy – the war will be a long one. But it is now certain that the European people are ready, finally, to fight for Christian Europe.

Walker: We are either the Christ-bearing people or we are nothing.

Bontini: Yes.

Grey: Gentlemen, it's past midnight, so I must wish you all a merry Christmas and if you'll allow me, I want to read a poem of a friend of mine who died young but left us this poem in tribute to his Lord.

When marshalled on the nightly plain,
The glittering host bestud the sky;
One star alone of all the train
Can fix the sinner's wandering eye.
Hark! hark! to God the chorus breaks,
From every host, from every gem;
But one alone the Savior speaks,
It is the Star of Bethlehem.

Once on the raging seas I rode,
The storm was loud, the night was dark,
The ocean yawned, and rudely blowed
The wind that tossed my foundering bark.
Deep horror then my vitals froze,
Death-struck, I ceased the tide to stem;
When suddenly a star arose,
It was the Star of Bethlehem.

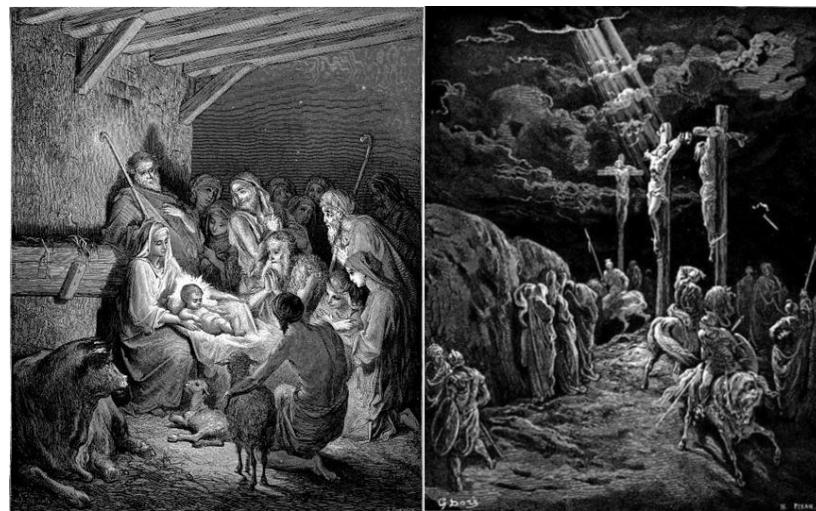
It was my guide, my light, my all;
It bade my dark forebodings cease;
And through the storm and danger's thrall,
It led me to the port of peace.
Now safely, moored—my perils o'er
I'll sing, first in night's diadem,
Forever and forevermore,
The Star—the Star of Bethlehem.

May the Christ Child come into your hearts this Christmas and every Christmas, from now till the ending of the world when we shall see the Savior face to face. Amen. +

The Cross of Christ and Europe Are One

January 7, 2017

Categories: Christmas, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



They borrowed a bed to lay His head
When Christ the Lord came down;
They borrowed the ass in the mountain pass
For Him to ride to town;
But the crown that He wore and the cross that He bore
Were His own—
The cross was His own.

-Author Unknown

Recently, while rereading *Pickwick Papers*, I was struck by the fact that the consummate villain, Mr. Jingle (who repents at the end of the book), was a pioneer in the use of internet English. He never speaks in complete sentences. Instead, his conversation consists of a few short phrases that he uses in rapid fire fashion. For instance, if Mr. Jingle was ordering food in an Italian restaurant, he would proceed along the following lines:

*Waiter: What is your order, sir?
Jingle: Spaghetti with sauce – not too sweet – red wine – 1831 – good year; very.*

When the waiter comes to collect the check, Jingle is equal to the task:

Jingle: Won't pay – service slow, wine undrinkable, spaghetti terrible.

It is tempting to adopt Jinglese or internet lingo, especially when you have a wide variety of topics you want to discuss and you feel it is too difficult to weave them into coherent sentences and paragraphs. If I were to write in Jinglese, my weekly blog would look like this – Liberals hypocritical, very – Prince Charles, blasphemer – Drexel prof demonic – Pope the Antichrist —American media Satanic, very – and so on. But let us leave Jinglese behind, because after all he was the villain of *Pickwick Papers* for at least 750 pages, and put our New Year's attack on Satandom into a more coherent form.

That the liberals have only one agenda, the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race, is glaringly apparent at every time of the year. But their demonism seems particularly, vividly clear at Christmas time, because it is at Christmas time that the much-maligned and spit-upon image of the Christ child still stirs the hearts of a small band of Europeans who stand as a sign of contradiction to Satanism.

Such Europeans stand outside the confines of Satandom. They are a hated and despised remnant of Christian Europe. That is what we must grasp before there can be a successful Christian European counterrevolution. Satan is now a conservative. When Madison, Jefferson, and Franklin were framing that pernicious, radical document called the United States Constitution, Satan aided them, because it was his goal to undermine all things traditionally European and Christian. (1) And when the French Jacobins took the satanic principles of Jefferson, Madison, and Franklin to their logical conclusions, Satan aided them as well. In those days Satan was a radical. But now it is his job to defend and extend the Kingdom of Satan on earth. That is what liberalism is all about: the defense and spread of Satanism.

If the spread of liberalism throughout the world was about anything other than the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race, there would not be such glaring discrepancies between what the liberals say and what they do. For instance – let us look at the Moslem invasion of Europe, which the liberals have welcomed with an evangelical zeal. Why should they do this when the Moslems seem to be opposed to every aspect of liberalism? The liberals claim to be concerned about the dehumanization of women. They do not think women should be treated like cattle or sex toys of men. But that is exactly how women are treated by the Moslems. Rape was supposed to be a very bad thing, yet the feminists of the West scream, "Better rapists than racists!" Hmm, "There's something wrong here," as Walt Disney's Goofy is fond of saying. And what about the Moslem's religious intolerance? I thought freedom of religion was supposed to be one of the liberals' sacred cows. Of course we know why the liberals do not oppose the Moslems. They never cared a fig about white women or religious liberty. What concerns them is the destruction of the white race, and that is all that concerns them.

The Trump election and the liberals' reaction to it has shown us that the liberals do not nor have they ever believed in democratic government – they only believe in power. When they lose, they demand the system, which liberals created, should be changed. If it is not changed to suit them, they will go outside the law. At all costs liberal rule must be conserved and extended. And liberal rule means that the temperature of the liberal cauldron in which the white frogs are being boiled must always be increased and never turned down. Trump has never suggested that the white frogs be removed from the cauldron. He has only suggested that the temperature should not be increased. And because of that, he has become, in the liberals' eyes, a combination of Adolph Hitler and the Bogeysman.

Let's add the liberals' reaction to Putin and Russian nationalism to the list of the liberals' sins of hypocrisy. It wasn't so long ago when Russia was a communist nation that we were told, by the liberals, to get along with the Russians. First, it was Uncle Joe, who was just like us, and then it was every Russian premier after Stalin whom we had to be nice to. When Reagan called communist Russia the "Evil Empire," he was considered a reckless cowboy beyond the ken of liberal humanity. But what could possibly be wrong with applying the term "Evil Empire" to communist Russia? It was wrong, from the liberal perspective, because communist Russia was a mirror image of American liberalism. Both systems were Jacobin in origin with the satanic goal of eradicating the image of God in man by eliminating the white Christ-bearing race. Any critique of communism was a critique of liberalism. Putin's return to Russian nationalism is not a return to Christian Russia, but he represents, like Trump, a step back toward older, more traditional European values. For that reason the liberals hate Putin and revere the precious memory of communist Russia and the sainted Fidel Castro.

Even mad-dog liberals such as Benjamin Netanyahu have fallen out of favor with the ‘beyond-mad-dog’ liberals of the new millennium. The state of Israel has come under fire for being insufficiently liberal! What is at work in the anti-Israel process is the dynamic that R. L. Dabney wrote about. Conservatism without a Christian basis is always one step behind radical Jacobinism, but it soon catches up to it, because it lacks a spiritual foundation; its adherents never cry, “This must not go on!” “Go a little slower,” is the pathetic battle cry of modern conservatives while the radical Christ-hating Jacobins cry, “Full speed ahead.”

The New Age liberals have placed Islam ahead of Judaism because they perceive that Islam is a more dynamic, radical anti-Christian force than Judaism. But a Christian European dare not chose one over the other (the Evangelicals have chosen Judaism, while the Roman Catholics have chosen Islam). The Christian European must cling to the one true God who cannot be blended with Judaism or Islam. There is only one morning star of Europe and his name is Jesus.

The liberals’ greatest hypocrisy has been reserved for the sacred negro. Under the guise of civil rights and equality the liberals have set the black race up as savage gods who have been given carte blanche powers to eliminate the white race. What does the massacre of whites have to do with equality? Can liberals actually live in a world dominated by the people they profess to love? Of course they can’t. If they get their way, they will suffer the same fate as Steven Otter, the anti-white activist from South Africa. That would not be a bad thing, but unfortunately the liberals will not be the only whites who are slaughtered.

The four monsters of Babylon – Church, State, academia, and the media – all bared their fangs during the Christmas season. In Church, it was Pope Francis, who kissed the *Koran* while exhorting the faithful to shun any contact with God that does not come through the mediation of the church. But if the Pope mediates in favor of Muhammed over Christ, the faithful will become Moslems. What is the Church? Is it an organization dedicated to the propagation of the nature religions of Islam, Judaism, and Voodoo, or is it the blood faith of loving hearts connected to Christ, the God above nature? If the pagan ideal of church, propagated by Pope Francis, the high pontiff of Babylon, falls, then the rest of Babylon will fall, because it is on that pagan theology that all of liberal Babylon stands – the idea that nature is God. The Roman Catholic cannot fight liberalism so long as he maintains his faith in organized naturalism. Nor can the Protestant who has returned to the paganism of organized Jewry. The “religious” devotees of Christian naturalism will always end up supporting the other three monsters – the liberal state, academia, and the media – unless they break with naturalism. If we keep Christmas in our hearts for 365 days of the year, as the ghost of Christmas present advises us to do, Babylon will crumble and fall. “Do you really believe such mush?” Yes, I do. There is a world of difference between faith in a system and faith in Christ. When the Europeans recapture the latter faith, we shall see miracles.

When Prince Charles enjoined his countrymen to think good thoughts about Muhammed at Christmastime, he was speaking for the leaders of Liberalism throughout the west. They have already said, in their hearts, that there is no God. So why not cozy up with the powers of this world only? White Britons will only be able to live in a white Britain when they have leaders who cry, “Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.” Trump’s victory does not place white Americans outside the Babylonian night that is enveloping Europe. The black menace alone, independent of the Mexican and Islamic menace, is enough to destroy the white American remnant. (2) And Trump has said nothing about fighting negro worship. I am glad that he got elected – he will keep the heat slightly below the complete annihilation level, but to defeat liberalism we need the whole ‘European thing’ – we need Ivanhoes, William Tells, and Alfreds as our leaders.

The Drexel prof who said that his Christmas wish was for white genocide as in Haiti was only unusual in his explicitness. The liberals usually are a little more careful about their phraseology. The prof, realizing he might have been too explicit, tried to pass his statement off as a little ‘joke.’ But he was not joking; he expressed the deepest aspiration of the liberals – their satanic desire to eradicate the white, Christ-bearing race. The Drexel prof was academia’s Christmas present to white Europeans. He reminded us that there can never be a Christmas truce with liberals.

And finally we come to the media. Is there one media spokesman in print or television who we can appoint as a spokesman? No, because they are legion. They no longer resemble anything human. Having renounced all things European and Christian, they have made themselves over in the image of Satan. The New Year will be just like the old year. Like the prophet Jeremiah, we look – even as Europe crumbles – for the coming of the Lord:

“The days are coming,” declares the Lord, “when I will make a new covenant with the people of Israel and with the people of Judah. It will not be like the covenant I made with their ancestors when I took them by the hand to lead them out of Egypt, because they broke my covenant, though I was a husband to them,” declares the Lord. “This is the covenant I will make with the people of Israel after that time,” declares the Lord. “I will put my law in their minds and write it on their hearts. I will be their God, and they will be my people. No longer will they teach their neighbor, or say to one another, ‘Know the Lord,’ because they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest,” declares the Lord. “For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more.” *Jeremiah 31: 31-34 +*

(1) Andrew Lytle correctly labeled our Constitution, “the cynical balancing of powers.” And George Fitzhugh also recognized the deficiencies of ink-and-paper, Gnostic government:

“Bill of Rights, Acts of Religious Freedom, and Constitutions, besprinkled with doctrines directly at war with all stable government, seem to be the basis on which our institutions rest. But only seem to be; for, in truth, our laws and government are either old Anglo-Saxon prescriptive arrangements or else the gradual accretions of time, circumstance and necessity. Throw our paper platforms, preambles and resolutions, guarantees and constitutions, into the fire, and we should be none the worse off, provided we retained our institutions – and the necessities that begot, and have, so far, contained them.

“All our necessities were begot and contained by the European people’s faith in the baby Jesus born on Christmas day.”

(2) We should never forget the warnings of men like Anthony Jacob and R. L. Dabney – Negro worship is Satan Worship.

“But while we believe that “God made of one blood all nations of men to dwell under the whole heavens,” we know that the African has become, according to a well-known law of natural history, by the manifold influences of the ages, a different, fixed *species* of the race, separated from the white man by traits bodily, mental and moral, almost as rigid and permanent as those of *genus*. Hence the offspring of an amalgamation must be a hybrid race, stamped with all the feebleness of the hybrid, and incapable of the career of civilization and glory as an independent race. And this apparently is the destiny which our conquerors have in view. If indeed they can mix the blood of the heroes of Manassas with this vile stream from the fens of Africa, then they will never again have occasion to tremble before the righteous resistance of Virginian freemen; but will have a race supple and vile enough to fill that position of political subjection, which they desire to fix on the South.”

The Envenom'd Liberals

January 14, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Halfway-house churches, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



"The point envenom'd too!" – Hamlet the Dane

When ancient opinions and rules of life are taken away, the loss cannot possibly be estimated. From that moment we have no compass to govern us; nor can we know distinctly to what port we steer. – Edmund Burke

John White got a temporary reprieve on the way to his execution. The gallows were struck by lightning. The death penalty will still be carried out, but not until a new gallows can be built. The people who know about such things tell us that it will take about 4 to 6 weeks to build a new gallows. What was John White's crime? I tried to find out, but nobody in authority could give me an answer. In fact they got quite angry with me for asking about John White's crime. As near as I could tell, the authorities took it as a given that John White was a heinous criminal and anybody who questioned that absolute was in danger of going to the gallows with John White.

Trump's victory has the potential to delay the execution date of white people, but it will not alter the fact that the white race has been designated for slaughter by an implacable, satanically possessed foe. It is a liberal absolute that the white race is guilty of the original sin of whiteness. And they cannot be redeemed from that sin, because in the liberals' bastardized Christianity there can be no redemption for the original sinners; only the non-sinners, the pure and undefiled non-white people of the world can find redemption. ([1](#))

You cannot, if you are a European, separate yourself from Christianity any more than you can drain all the blood from your body and expect to live. But you can poison your blood with a bastardized Christianity and spew out poison every time you speak and act. That is the essence of liberalism – the liberals are envenomed with a deadly poison that kills everything they come into contact with. The only reason they do not die immediately is because Satan sustains them. When he has no more use for them he will welcome them into hell.

In Disney's *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs*, the evil queen does not die when she takes the devil's magic potion, but it does turn her into a hideous old hag. Liberalism does to the soul what that devil's potion did to the evil queen. And in some cases, such as Hillary Clinton, the devil's liberal brew actually produces a physical ugliness that reflects her inner moral ugliness. If you look at pictures of Hillary when she was younger, you can see that she was never an attractive woman, but she was not the ugly monstrosity in her younger days that she has become. Mere age could not make a woman look like Hillary. Her inner moral ugliness has impressed itself even on her outward features. I've noticed this phenomenon more and more lately. The inner demonism of liberals is becoming visible on their outward features. Angela Merkel is another example. Is this some indication of a new stage in the great war on the Christ-bearing people? Has the liberals' hatred reached such a white heat that it can actually alter their physical appearances? It appears so, at least in some of the more intense of the mad-dog liberals.

The liberals who are completely envenomed have envenomed the white grazers. If the grazers do not take the antidote they will surely die. And their deaths will precede the liberals' deaths, because they are not the devil's own, they are merely wayward sons and daughters who are so far from doing harm that they suspect none. But why can't the grazers see the evil that is staring them in the face? They cannot see because the serpent of philosophical speculation (see "[The Sacred Heritage](#)") has entered their inmost soul and is killing their Christian hearts.

The bard of bards, Jesus Christ, came into this world to destroy the serpent of philosophical speculation. The Europeans who bent their knees to Christ believed that "Christ Jesus had entered their hearts making man's world the world of God in man." There is no such thing as an outward church of God. That is a pagan concept. The Church of Christ is God in human hearts. Destroy that church and you destroy the image of God in Man. Satan knows this and he has used the Christian churches to destroy the Church of Christ.

No one cometh to the Father except through Him and no man cometh to Christ unless he goes through the human heart. This is why our apostle, St. Paul, placed such emphasis on the circumcised heart. He knew the men of uncircumcised hearts, be they Jews (to the Jews a stumbling block) or Greeks (to the Greeks foolishness), would erect a pagan fortress of philosophical speculation to serve as the true Church while Christ's church would be left outside. This has ever been the Europeans' story. They have struggled with a "by the grace of God" heroism to maintain the "God in man" Christianity against the "world in man" and "God in systems" Christianity of the liberals.

It seems, but the true European "knows not seems," that there can be no European counter-revolution, because the envenomed liberals, envenomed with the spirit of philosophical speculation, have killed European Christianity once and for all. But we shall see. The people who took Christ into their hearts once walked on water. If we reconnect with our people and their sacred heritage, we will dream dreams and see visions that will give us hearts of fire. We will become something much greater than a Nietzschean Übermenschen – we will become Christian Europeans.

Nothing, nothing, nothing will come from any electoral victory of a white candidate if the anti-European, anti-Christian barrier is not torn down. And it has not been torn down. A few weeks ago I mentioned a music video by Hank Williams Jr. called "Country Folks Will Survive." I saw that video, with the contrasting worlds of the urban liberals and the white country folk, as a symbol of the Trump victory. The white grazers rebelled, for a moment, against the liberal establishment. But there was a telling weakness in the video. When Mr. Williams sang of the death of his friend in the city who was killed by a mugger, the mugger was portrayed as a white man. There is still an incredible, soul-killing fear in the white grazer of being called 'racist.' And that fear must be overcome before anything good will happen to white people as a people. Even if Trump builds a wall and limits Moslem immigration, whites will still perish unless they act as a people, a Christ-centered people, with one aim – to expel every Moslem, liberal, and colored heathen from their nation.

The heretical notion, based on a superficial reading of Chapter 20 of the Book of Revelation, that the unrepentant Jews are still God's chosen people destined to rule over an earthly kingdom for a thousand year period sprang up in the sick, distorted mind of John Nelson Darby, who was an apostate from the Church of England in the 1800s. Why have his heretical beliefs become the beliefs of virtually all of the evangelical Christians who have broken from the mainstream denominations? Because the evangelicals need a people. They have accepted the liberals' condemnation of European Christianity and the white race as gospel truth. And that acceptance has left them homeless. So what have they done? They have embraced a non-European version of Christianity that is a perversion of Christianity which ultimately leads to the denial of Christ as the Son of God.

Although there be no question that the Almighty, through all ages had been pleased to enlighten the eyes of many individuals among his chosen people, to see and know the secret purposes of his dispensation, yet it is certain that the great majority of the Jewish nation had, for some time prior to the advent of our Saviour, fallen into many gross and carnal errors, both respecting the Law and the Prophets. In regard to the former, they, and particularly the sect of the Pharisees, seem to have lost all sense of the end and purpose of the types and ceremonies enjoined by Moses, and to have substituted the minute discharge of his ritual as something excellent and meritorious in itself, capable of being received as an atonement for the neglecting those general points of virtue and morality, upon which that dispensation, as well as all that emanates from the Divine Author, was originally founded, and with which it ought forever to have been animated. But when the observance of the minute ceremonial was substituted, instead of love to God and duty to our neighbours, the system resembled some ancient tree, which continues to shew green boughs and a stately form to those who regard it only on the outside, but when carefully examined, proves rotten and false at heart, and valueless, excepting as a matter of outward show; "All green and wildly fresh without, but worn and grey within."

Religious Discourse by a Layman by Sir Walter Scott

The Roman Catholic has also been left bereft of a home. When God is a nature-based system and not a God who enters human hearts, there is no need for a racial hearth fire. A long line of popes have condemned European Christianity and ordered the faithful to look to nature and nature's gods (Mohammed and Mandela) as the ultimate saviors of mankind. And what have the more conservative Catholics done in response to their Pope's liberalism? They have fled, like the millennialist evangelicals, to the heretical sects who still at least hold to an outward profession of faith in Jesus Christ. But is Christ to be found in a minute attention to the external ceremonies of the Church? No, He is not. We must never lose sight of St. Paul's vision of Christ and His people, the people with the circumcised hearts. And who were those people? They are our people, the Europeans.

In 1950 Herbert Butterfield, the great English historian, wrote that the European people were living on the fumes of Christianity. What is left now? Well, what is less than fumes? A shadow? Yes, that seems to fit. There is still the shadow of a cross over the European people. We must make that shadow the heart and soul of our home, for where is our home, if it is not Christian Europe? The liberals, the envenomed liberals, tell us that we have no home. We, the original sinners, are told we must work to destroy every last remnant of our European home. Why must we do this? We must do this, the liberals proclaim, because there will always be the shadow of the cross over Europe. And the liberals and the colored heathen cannot abide even the shadow of the cross, so they must destroy all things European, and they must continue to slaughter the European people in the hopes that the cross of Christ, the European Christ, will finally disappear from the face of the earth.

The cross of Christ shall not perish from the face of the earth if the European people will return home. It is there, with their racial forefathers, that they will see the shadow of the cross become a great light, the light of the risen Lord, the same Lord that our apostle saw on the road to Damascus. Everything we do must be tied to St. Paul's vision or else we, the European people, will perish bereft of the home that was bequeathed to us by our ancestors. We should protect and honor that home, because He blessed it with His divine presence. +

(1) Actually, it is a bit of a misnomer to talk about the colored races finding redemption. They don't need redemption, because they are non-sinners. They are gods. We know this to be so, because our clergymen tell us it is so.

Our Fathers' Europe

January 21, 2017

Categories: Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, St. Paul



And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

— St. Paul, *2 Corinthians 6: 15*

When Pilate put the issue of Christ or Barabbas to a vote, it did not turn out well for Christ: "Let him be crucified." People of the same race and the same faith can vote on minor issues, but people of different races and different faiths cannot settle their differences through the democratic process. The result will always be the same: truth will be crucified. Liberals who worship Satan cannot get along democratically with Christian-Europeans. Nor can white people live in a society in which the colored barbarians have the vote.

In my late teens I lost the Christian faith of my childhood, like so many of the lost children of the sixties. When I returned to that faith in my mid-twenties, I returned with an abhorrence for liberalism in all its many guises. Which is why I was horrified to discover that the conservatives were not conservative. The *National Review* conservatives were only less liberal than the liberals; they had no spiritual foundation that compelled them to stand and never yield. Instead they were content to stay just to the right of liberalism. But since liberalism is always moving ever leftward toward the kingdom of Satan on earth, conservatism, in a democratic system, will always be moving leftward. The Trump phenomenon illustrates this point. His policies are very similar to John F. Kennedy's policies, and Kennedy was considered a liberal in 1960. Yet both the *National Review* conservatives and the mainstream, mad-dog liberals oppose Trump because he is too "far-right."

The conservatives and the liberals claim to be progressive. Toward what are they progressing? I think that has become crystal clear. They are progressing towards hell, and their pace has accelerated at such a rapid rate that we can no longer say the liberals and the conservatives are progressing toward hell — it would be more accurate to say that they have arrived and are now trying to fend off any opposition to their kingdom. Trump's electoral victory represented an attempt to go back a few stops along the liberals' track to hell, which is why the liberals are trying to derail him. But if you go a few stops back on the railway to hell, have you really won a great victory? The demonic liberals will scream bloody murder at Trump's inauguration because they must preserve and extend their kingdom of Satan on earth, but no man of European blood should be deceived. We have won nothing if we rely on the democratic process to save us from the scourge of liberalism. The democratic process was invented by Satan to crucify Christ and the Christ-bearing people. (1)

There are movements throughout the European nations similar to the Trump movement in the United States, but even if they succeed, the European people are still facing extinction unless they recapture the living faith of the antique Europeans. I recently read a rant by a more conservative Italian bishop who was castigating his people for their decadence, for their low birth rate, for their indifference to the Islamic invasion, for their promiscuous lifestyles, etc. What he said about the Italians was all true, and it is also true of all the European people, but the Italian bishop did not get to the heart of the matter. You cannot emasculate a man and then blame him for no longer acting like a man. The churches have been peddling an emasculated, intellectual Christianity for centuries, and the result of their propaganda is before our eyes. The European people are naked to their enemies; they do not have a living faith with which to oppose the demonically possessed, techno-barbarian liberals or the demonically possessed Moslems and the barbarians of color. What do the Europeans treasure? Where are their hearts? So long as their hearts remain in limbo, they will be defenseless against the liberal pestilence that walketh in darkness and the colored barbarians and heathens that wasteth at noonday.

This past weekend I got a chance to see a series of vignettes filmed of the Scottish Highlands, the Lake District of England, Stratford-on-Avon, London by the Thames, and Amsterdam. All of the vignettes were filmed in the early 1950s, and marvel of marvel, there were no blacks, Moslems, or any other creatures of color in those documentaries. All the people were white! It is now a liberal given that such non-diverse societies are evil, but why are they evil? To me they are another name for heaven. Think of the children in those vignettes. What have they seen in their lifetimes? Did they become liberals and help destroy the white villages and cities that they grew up in? Or did they become grazers who were too spiritually anesthetized to oppose demonic diversity so long as it was endorsed by the clergy and came under the guise of democracy?

There is a children's book called *The Little House* by Virginia Lee Burton, which is about a pleasant little house in the country. We see over the course of many years how the house gradually becomes part of the city. At the end of the story, the descendants of the first owners of the little house discover the house and have it transported back to the country. So, there is a happy ending to the story. But it will not be the same for the European people. Those whites who live rural and are still relatively untouched by the barbarian invasion cannot remain untouched by the invasion any more than the nobleman in Poe's story could avoid the Red Death. The pestilence that is in our cities will spread. White people must do more than vote to restrict alien immigration, they must drive the heathen from their lands. In order to do that they need to have faith in the living God, not in the democratic process or in the church of organized, intellectual Christianity, which is the same as organized Satanism.

The people of Europe are currently failing a test that the American European people have already failed. They have failed to respond to the rape of their women and the murder of their children by heathens. With the Europeans it is the Moslems, and with the white Americans it is the negro. There seems to be no limit to what the Europeans on the continent will endure at the hands of the Moslem barbarians rather than fight. And there seems to be no end in sight to negro worship in the United States. If the Europeans had not swallowed democracy and its fruits — legalized abortion and race-mixing — they would not have been too spiritually emasculated to oppose Islam and black savagery. But the Europeans have accepted the main premises of modern democracy, and as a result nothing good will happen to them as a people, until democracy is rejected.

The United States has always been at the forefront of anti-Europeanism. The American conservatives, who are liberals, never talk about the radicalism of our founding fathers and the Constitution they wrote, but our forefathers were radicals and the Constitution is a radical document. The wrap-themselves-up-in-the-Constitution conservatives, such as Glenn Beck, are just as radical as the Hillary Clinton liberals. It's no surprise that Beck ended up endorsing Hillary, because a man who worships the Constitution is a propositional man who will wrap negro worship and the worship of Israel into the Constitution and call it the Holy Grail. The liberal, Bill Bradley, once claimed that the essence of America was that Americans refused to accept the tragic nature of life. Yes! That is the essence, not just of American liberalism, but of all liberalism. Liberals do not believe as St. Paul believed: "We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body." (2 *Corinthians 4: 8-10*)

If you proceed as if you can destroy the tragic nature of existence without Christ, you will create a hell on earth, devoid of the only comfort there is on this earth. That comfort is that we bear in our body the death of Jesus Christ, but we also bear in our body the life of Jesus Christ. No European movement can save the European people unless it contains that truth, a truth our ancestors lived and breathed. They infused the ‘death in life, and life in death through Jesus Christ’ faith into their culture, and we were the beneficiaries of their bred-in-the-bone faith. It was the task of the intellectuals in church, state, and academia to drain ever last drop of Christian blood from our bodies so that we could be death-heads, without the pagan, temporary escape from his mortality through sex and blood and without the comfort of a death-conquering faith in Christ.

Now, instead of being persecuted but not forsaken, we are persecuted and forsaken, because no white person can find redemption in a democratic process created by Satan. And instead of being cast down but not destroyed, we are now cast down and destroyed, because that is the liberals’ intent, to destroy the white race at the behest of Satan. The liberals will never tolerate the existence of whiteness within Liberalism, because in the liberals’ sick, distorted minds the white European, as the living sign of old Europe, brings tragedy and suffering into Utopia. There will be no tragedy and suffering, from the liberals’ point of view, if there are no more white Europeans. Nothing could be further from the truth. The antique Europeans did have a tragic sense of life, but they believed that they had united their souls to Him who came into the world to transcend the tragedy of existence. If you do not believe that Christ came into the world to “bear witness unto the truth” you will seek to destroy the Christ-bearing people who believe that to dwell with Christ is to dwell with death, a death that is transformed into the resurrection and the life.

The old prayer book tells us that in the midst of life we die, but in death we live – through Him who saves. The new liberal prayer book tells us that we shall all die as individuals, but the earth, cleansed of white people, can live on, populated by pure and undefiled people of color. How pathetic. The liberals’ utopia is a hellish dystopia that can only be put in place after the European people are severed from their past, a past in which the Son of the living God dwelt among non-diverse Europeans.

The current dilemma of the European people is depicted in Tennyson’s *Idylls of the King*, in the chapter titled “Merlin and Vivien.” Merlin is a wizard, albeit a Christian wizard, but his Christian faith is not of the blood; it is in his head. A man with that type of intellectual faith will despair when faced with the complexities of life. Such Pauline complexities as “Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed” will be too much for the intellectual Christian.

*Then fell on Merlin a great melancholy;
He walk'd with dreams and darkness, and he found
A doom that ever poised itself to fall,
An ever-moaning battle in the mist,
World-war of dying flesh against the life,
Death in all life and lying in all love,
The meanest having power upon the highest,
And the high purpose broken by the worm.*

Despite the fact that Merlin knows Vivien is a treacherous harlot, he succumbs to her, because if a man has only an intellectual faith he will be overcome by the heathens of the blood and sex cults.

*For Merlin, overtalk'd and overworn,
Had yielded, told her all the charm, and slept.*

*Then, in one moment, she put forth the charm
Of woven paces and of waving hands,
And in the hollow oak he lay as dead,
And lost to life and use and name and fame.*

*Then crying “I have made his glory mine,”
And shrieking out “O fool!” the harlot leapt
Adown the forest, and the thicket closed
Behind her, and the forest echoed “fool.”*

The heathen liberals and the colored barbarians will completely annihilate the European people if they remain in the limbo of democracy and intellectual Christianity. But if Britons become Britons again, and Germans become Germans again, and... We know what is needed. All Europeans must renounce liberalism and take the vow, the same vow that Alfred and Tell took: From now till the ending of the world, we will fight for Christian Europe, because Christ, who brings us life in death, abides there. +

(1) Trump's inaugural speech was quite impressive. He is quite impressive. His counterpart is not Ronald Reagan, it is Andrew Jackson, who, like Trump, had the courage of a lion. But the fatal flaw of liberalism still rang out in Trump's speech. We do not all bleed the blood of patriotism. Patriotism is rooted in faith and race, and Americans are not of the same faith and race. The idea that we can win the blacks over by giving them jobs has been tried for over a century, and it has failed miserably. Blacks want to rape, murder, and pillage whites, they do not want to protect and defend a white Christian commonwealth. And liberals do not believe in the God who spoke to St. Paul on the road to Damascus. They believe in the savage gods of color.

The greatest movement in history? No, it wasn't. Christ's birth, death, and resurrection was the greatest movement in history. And we cannot come to believe in that divine entry into human history if we are not patriots of our racial hearth fire. While Trump was preaching American universalism, he should have noted that the people cheering were all whites. They, like, Trump, have a longing for genuine patriotism, but the democratic heresy of the great melting pot of Belial is the rock upon which all their hopes and aspirations will be smashed. It's all very sad. There is still something in white people, something that is more than this world only. But they still have to get past cosmic universalism. If they don't, Trump's victory will come to naught.

Worse than War

January 28, 2017

Categories: Jacobinism, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Traill Spence Lowell



It was not long ere it made its way,—
A thrilling, ceaseless sound:
It was no noise from the strife afar,
Or the sappers under ground.

It was the pipes of the Highlanders!
And now they played Auld Lang Syne;
It came to our men like the voice of God,
And they shouted along the line.

The un-United States of America lost the war in Vietnam because the ruling elite in America sought to oppose the satanic Jacobinism of the communists with their own brand of Jacobinism – democratic capitalism. Even if the United States had won the war what would they have won? They would have won a war for Satan, because Satan was fighting for both sides. And in most cases the more overtly satanic cause wins in a clash between two Satanisms, because the more overtly satanic power is not divided between mad-dog liberals and lukewarm liberals, as was the case with the United States in the Vietnam War.

If the Trump coalition stays in the lukewarm waters of moderate liberalism they will be defeated by the mad-dog liberals. And they will be defeated very quickly because there is a demonic energy to full-blown Jacobinism that can only be stopped by full-blooded, integral Christian Europeans. Neo-pagans, moderate liberals, and intellectual Christians cannot defeat satanic, Jacobin liberalism.

Trump's victory was made possible by a coalition of moderate liberals, neo-pagans, and intellectual Christians. But his victory will be a defeat if it is not used as a stepping stone to Christian Europe, which is the only ground upon which the European people can take their stand. Right now Trump and his supporters are standing on the shifting sand of liberalism, which will always leave the Europeans in desperate straits.

Trump's seemingly firm stand against the mad-dog liberals is really a weak stance in the middle of quicksand, because it is not possible to seek redemption from the devil. In the name of liberalism, Trump demands that white people be given part of the liberal pie, but the liberals will never allow that, since the essence of liberalism is the destruction of the white race. The completely insane, hysterical, and often violent reactions to Trump's moderate liberal agenda, an agenda that no Democrat of the 50s or early 60s would have opposed, gives us a horrific view of the pure, unadulterated Satanism of the liberals. Can Trump's moderate liberalism stop the Moslem or the Mexican invasion? Can a man who honors Martin Luther King Jr. and wants to win the blacks over by the promise of economic enfranchisement put a dent in the anti-Christian state religion of negro worship? 'Of course not,' is the answer to all of those questions. Then, of what use is Trump's victory? It will be a great victory if white people use Trump's victory as a stepping stone to an even greater victory, the restoration of a Christian Europe that is not under the yoke of Jacobinism and its attendant worship of the savage hordes of color. Do I see such a change coming over the European people? No, I don't. But what is a faith that can be seen? I do know of certain individuals who have been driven back to Christian Europe because of the demonism of the anti-Trump, mad-dog liberals. For instance, a friend of mine, who has been held captive for years by Churchianity, rolled down her car window and screamed at some Roman Catholic nuns who were lining the highway with signs declaring that they rejected Trump's 'Islamophobia' – "I reject you!" Such spiritual breakthroughs need to occur in the millions, but miracles have happened in the past, and they can happen again.

Contrary to what the Jews, the Mormons, and various heretical 'Christian' sects claim, the age of prophecy ended with the coming of Christ. But the age of Christian Europeans who see with blinding sight is never over. Who are the men with blinding sight? They are men who look at the history of their own times from the perspective of a Christian heart. And from that perspective they tell us what will befall us if we depart from the faith of our ancestors. Dostoyevsky was a man with blinding sight. And before Dostoyevsky there was Edmund Burke. It was Burke who exposed, for all those who had eyes to see, the satanic core of Jacobinism. He also told us that the breeding ground of Jacobinism was intellectual Christianity. And once bred, the Jacobin heresy was diffused throughout the lifeblood of a nation by Christ-hating liberals who wanted to efface the image of God in man.

It was Burke's great sorrow — a sorrow he took to the grave with him — that the European people never responded to Jacobinism as integral Christian Europeans. They did not see Jacobinism as satanic, because their Christian instincts had been blunted by years of intellectual Christianity. All but the mad-dog liberals such as Price, Priestly, and Belloc rejected Robespierre's Jacobinism, but the European people only went back a step to moderate, democratic Jacobinism. They were content to scotch the snake rather than kill it. And that Jacobin snake has reared up again in all its satanic fury in the 20th and 21st centuries. The Trump movement in the United States, the Le Pen movement in France, the Brexit movement in Britain, and all other European movements of similar nature are scotch-the-snake movements. They are not movements to kill the snake. And if you don't kill the Jacobin snake, it will eventually kill you.

My favorite television show is the *Leave it to Beaver* show that aired in the late 1950s through the early 1960s. No show has been more popular in reruns over the years, and no show has received such unremitting hatred from the liberals over the years. Why the continued popularity and why the hatred? The continued popularity of the show is because we are allowed to see the story of a white, middle-class family through the eyes of two white boys. And the story is told with heart and humor. The hatred of the show stems from the same reason for the show's popularity – there are no Moslems, Mexicans, or negroes in the *Leave it to Beaver* world. There are only white people. And that type of world, in the eyes of the liberal Jacobins, is evil. The liberals claim Trump wants to go back to the world of *Leave it to Beaver*. More's the pity – he doesn't want to go back to that world. But he does claim that whites of the *Leave it to Beaver* mold should not be eradicated from the face of the earth. That such a compromise fills the liberals with fury should tell us all we need to know about the liberals. They are satanic and cannot be defeated by moderate liberalism, they can only be defeated by Christians who take the vow: "To the knife." (L)

The Cleaver family, like so many white families of that time period, were living on borrowed time. They were living on the fumes of Christianity. I'm sure Ward and June Cleaver believed, like all good 1950s' liberals, in racial equality and religious universalism. But they only had to believe in theory; they did not have to face the consequences of their moderate liberal beliefs. The whites of the *Leave it to Beaver* world were like a cancer victim at the beginning of his disease. He feels fine because the cancer has not started to spread. But once it does spread, it is not possible to go back and have just a little bit of cancer; he must eradicate the cancer or he will die. I would settle for that *Leave it to Beaver* world, because I really don't want to fight "to the knife." But there is a God and there is a devil. And the devil will not allow whites to stop at the top of the slippery slope. He requires that they descend all the way

down to hell. The liberals have made that descent already, and they will drag us down to their level if we don't put on the whole armor of Christ and fight them. As unpleasant as "to the knife" seems, it is nowhere near as unpleasant a prospect as standing by while Satan and his minions destroy our people and mock our God. And it is the love of our people and our God that should give us the hate to "fight to the knife." If you are too lukewarm to be moved by the murder of innocence, the vilification of everything decent and good from old Europe, and the unremitting assault on whites coming from the liberals and the colored barbarians, then you have become an Undine, you have lost your soul.

The most striking thing about the modern liberals is that so many of them no longer feel any need to disguise their demonism. That Democratic subhuman white woman from Idaho who said, before an applauding black and white audience, that her mission was to make white people shut up is the demonic face of naked liberalism. The liberals want white blood. Why? It goes back to what St. Paul said about Christians bearing the death of Jesus Christ in their bodies and the life of Jesus Christ in their bodies. The liberals don't believe in the life of Jesus Christ, but they do believe in His death. And by destroying the people who have His death in their bodies, the liberals think they have destroyed death. In point of fact, the liberals are death incarnate. What else can we call a people who, with malice aforethought, have built an earthly kingdom of Satan in which there is no love, no honor, and no light?

It may be that whites, as a people, cannot come home. After years and years of liberal propaganda in church and state, they might truly believe that original sin exists only in the white race and that whites must atone for that sin by freely offering up the blood of other whites – it is always the other whites – to the avenging gods of color. But are the colored gods of the liberals our gods, or do we believe in the one true God? And if we do believe in the one true God, are we not supposed to love our neighbor as ourselves? And who is our neighbor if it is not our people, the people who have the death and the life of Jesus Christ in their bodies? Who shall separate us from the love of Christ, who comes to us through our racial hearth fire? Certainly not the colored barbarians, and certainly not the liberals. Let us call Trump's victory and all such European victories stepping stone victories. We shall step form Satan's kingdom to His Europe. (2)

War is a terrible thing. But there is something worse than war. To stand by and watch the massacre of your people — that is worse than war. Right now the European people are trapped in Lucknow with no rescue in sight. I look to the day, I believe in the day, when we few, we happy few, shall take the vow, "to the knife," and our people will hear the pipes play "Auld Lang Syne." The last word in the European drama belongs to our Lord and His people who serve Him. It does not belong to the children of Satan – the liberals and the colored barbarians.

*And they wept, and shook one another's hands,
And the women sobbed in a crowd;*

*And every one knelt down where he stood,
And we all thanked God aloud.*

*That happy day, when we welcomed them,
Our men put Jessie first;*

*And the general gave her his hand, and cheers
Like a storm from the soldiers burst.*

*And the pipers' ribbons and tartan streamed,
Marching round and round our line;*

*And our joyful cheers were broken with tears,
As the pipes played Auld Lang Syne. +*

(1) Is it possible to live peacefully with liberals who, when they lose an election to a moderate liberal who does not want white people exterminated, call for the winning candidate's assassination? Then, when that candidate takes office, they send death threats to Kelly Anne Conway and refuse to interview her because she bested them in every debate during the campaign. And let us never overlook, in the case of Mrs. Conway, the added source of the liberals' ire. Mrs. Conway is better looking than the females on the mad-dog liberal side of the battle field. Despite the liberals' claim to have achieved a higher plane of existence, beyond jealousy and malice, we note that they have gone down to the lowest plane of existence, they have descended to the level of the demon-possessed swine. Again, I ask, is it possible to deal peacefully with such creatures?

(2) By calling Trump's victory a stepping stone victory, I in no way mean to disparage or belittle Donald Trump. He is a courageous and decent man, who has already done more for white people than any U. S. president in the last 100 years. But I still insist that we must put on the whole armor of Christ, because the liberals have put on the whole armor of Satan. Their reactions to Trump's reasonable and necessary measures as regards the Moslems, the Mexicans, and the economy are proof, as if we needed any more proof, of the liberals' demonism.

Of Kingship and Kinship

February 3, 2017

Categories: Christ the Hero, Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Edmund Burke



Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. – Edmund Burke

No man ever was attached by a sense of pride, partiality, or real affection, to a description of square measurement. He never will glory in belonging to the Chequer No. 71, or to any other badge-ticket. We begin our public affections in our families. No cold relation is a zealous citizen. We pass on to our neighbourhoods, and our habitual provincial connexions. These are inns and resting-places. Such divisions of our country as have been formed by habit, and not by a sudden jerk of authority, were so many little images of the great country in which the heart found something which it could fill. The love to the whole is not extinguished by this subordinate partiality. – [Reflections on the French Revolution](#)

If a man is traveling on Bunyan's path toward the city of God, and he meets a man at the halfway point of the journey traveling in the opposite direction, it might appear to the casual observer that both men are at the same point of their life's journey. But the casual observer would be mistaken. The man heading toward the city of God has something within, something in his heart that compels him to seek the light. The other man has something in his head that compels him to flee from the light and seek... he knows not what he seeks. But if he doesn't turn around, he will enter Satan's kingdom.

While waiting in line at the supermarket this weekend, I intervened in a debate between a pro-Trump clerk and an anti-Trump, Pope Francis-style Roman Catholic customer. I used the Bunyan analogy to make the case for Trump's Christianity over Pope Francis's Christianity. In point of fact I don't think Pope Francis is at the halfway point, I think he has almost completed his journey toward the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth, but there is a limit to the nuances I can come up with in a supermarket debate. It would be more accurate to place the Israel-worshipping evangelicals at the halfway point of a journey away from the heavenly city. But the evangelicals were not the subjects of the debate — the antagonist who was attacking Trump for his lack of Christian virtues was from a Roman Catholic background. When in Rome...

Let's state what should be obvious to anyone who has any European blood left in him: Trump, despite being an unoriginal sinner, like all of us, has that within which makes him a better man and a better Christian than all his pseudo-Christian critics, such as Pope Francis, and all his post-Christian, Marxist enemies, who are legion. Trump has pietas, which always has led and always will lead a man towards the kingdom of God, because that kingdom is a provincial village that can only be entered through the human heart.

The Israelite evangelicals have a certain nostalgia for the Christian European village, but they have turned their backs on that village because they fear the condemnation of the liberals. To love your own people, if you are a white man, has been deemed racist by the powers of this world, and the evangelicals lack the moral courage to defy the world. The Christ-hating Pope Francis-type of Christian is quite different from the evangelicals. He has no nostalgia for the provincial Christian village. He yearns for the liberals' kingdom of Satan on earth. But he must keep one toe in the old Christian world so he can use Christian words and Christian symbols to support the kingdom of Satan on earth. For how long must we allow such individuals as Pope Francis and his liberal allies to use words like charity to buttress up a liberal power elite that has not charity? Liberalism is from the devil. Is that not crystal clear? The liberals not only hate white people, they hate all people as individuals. They love the Moslem, Mexican, and black hordes because such aggregates represent the inhuman, impersonal forces of Satan. The satanic liberals use such inhuman aggregates to attack all that is personal and human – the European people who are struggling toward the light. Lincoln claimed that the American Civil War was about the survival of an utopian democratic system. He was right about that. But he was wrong to think that the survival of that system was desirable. What was and still is at stake in this ongoing European civil war is the question of 'Can the European people who made an incorporate league with Jesus Christ survive as the Christ-bearing people, or will the liberals manage to totally efface the image of God in man from the face of the earth?'

Trump is a man of European blood. He is still tainted with too much Americanism, but his heart is a European heart, and to have a leader with a European heart is not a little thing.

*Ah God, for a man with heart, head, hand,
Like some of the simple great ones gone
For ever and ever by,
One still strong man in a blatant land,
Whatever they call him, what care I,
Aristocrat, democrat, autocrat—one
Who can rule and dare not lie.*

-Tennyson

Will Trump succeed? No, he will not succeed in democratically turning the Satanism of the liberals into something other than Satanism. But he has already succeeded in the spiritual realm. He has hurled one European javelin at the liberal Leviathan. That's all any man can do. If there are still men with European hearts left, other javelins will pierce the Leviathan, and eventually the Leviathan will be destroyed. This war, of the Christian Europeans against Satan and his minions, will not be settled through the democratic process. The liberals have already shown us that. They only believe in democracy when it serves their ends. How could it be otherwise? Is Satan committed to the rule of law and the well-being of mankind? No, he is committed to the destruction of mankind, which is why he is committed to democracy – it serves his purpose. The riots and the violence against white people that have come in the wake of Trump's victory are part of the democratic process. George Soros and the other Satanists such as McCain, Lindsey Graham, Wolf Blitzer, and the legions of depraved scum in Hollywood would not be permitted to live in a non-democratic (that is, a non-satanic) state. That is the burden Trump is carrying. He has the task of fighting Satan while he is still bound to the Promethean rock of Satan's democratic system. The liberal vultures are picking at his entrails while he must fight them off without the aid that a liberal office-holder would receive from the powers of this world only.

It's quite fitting that the first small blow against the liberal Leviathan should be struck by a European American, because America was the first anti-Christian, utopian state founded by Europeans. Our religiously neutral state, which translates to an anti-Christian state, preceded Jacobin France. Our civil war was a heroic attempt by the Southern half of our anti-nation to return to Christian Europe. Now we, the European people, are witnessing wars of extermination in every white nation. The white South Africans are being exterminated by the liberal-

sponsored, black government. Britain has fallen before the Moslem armies, and so has France and the Scandinavian countries. The biggest surprise to me has been Germany. I never thought Germany would be the first nation of Europe to become an Islamic state. But then I suppose of all the white nations, the Germans have been the most hated by the liberals. Are they not the most evil nation in the history of the world? The American media tells us so on a daily basis. But there is still eternal Germany, just as there is eternal Europe. Look to that Germany, to His Germany, and to His Europe. Our Apostle, St. Paul, tells us over and over again that we will not be saved by a religious system or by a state system, we will be saved by Christ who comes to those men and women who have circumcised their hearts. If it is true that charity never faileth, can we not hope that white German hearts, white South African hearts, and all the European people who have not hardened their hearts against their own people will ultimately triumph against the liberals, the Moslems, and the barbarian hordes of color?

Let's separate what was good in Trump's victory, good for all people of European descent, from what was part of the democratic heresy. What was good was not all the universalist rhetoric about all Americans bleeding the same blood of patriotism. Such pap is from the men of the Enlightenment, it does not come from Christian men. The good in Trump's victory stems from an ancient source, a wellspring that has almost run dry for lack of use. That wellspring is the European peoples' sense of kinship. There was something underneath all the democratic blather during Trump's campaign for election to the presidency. A sizeable amount of his white supporters had wise blood; they were not looking to the democratic process to aid them against the wickedness of the liberals, they were looking for an ancient king – "One still strong man in a blatant land..." The Christian king is the great defender of his people, not the democratic herd, but his kith and kin. The great exemplars of the Christian king were Alfred, the king of Britain, and Nathan Bedford Forrest, the uncrowned king of the white Southern people.

The liberals are right about Trump. He does represent a threat to their reign. But he does not represent a democratic threat; they can easily turn all his legislative gambits into watered-down mush. (1) But the spirit of kinship that he awakened in some white people who we thought were dead, is not something that can be as easily put down as a piece of legislation. It's a long, arduous pilgrimage to Bunyan's city of God. But there is only one road to that city for all of us, we Europeans. The European hearth fire, where our kith and kin dwell, will sustain us in our journey toward the light. In every European nation we must, in the battle against the liberals and the colored barbarians, "Incline unto the King," the man who loves his own in imitation of the one true King of Europe who loves with a love that passeth the understanding of the liberals, whose hearts have hardened against their own people. It's time for the European people to fight for their kith and kin, not for the false universalisms that have been created by Satanists to destroy the Christ-bearing race. +

(1) Already, judges are refusing to honor Trump's travel restrictions on Moslems, and civil rights' lawyers are suing the government for discrimination against Moslems. No liberals or third world heathens will ever be concerned about discrimination against whites, which is why white people should discriminate against liberals and heathens.

Whites should step away from the democratic system, which was conceived in Satanism and dedicated to the proposition that all whites are inherently evil, and return to a Europe in which liberals are pariahs, with no place in society. And the colored heathens should be sent to live in the non-European lands where they can practice their barbarities on each other or convert to the white man's faith and stop practicing their barbarities on each other. Either way, they do not belong in Europe. What can possibly be wrong with making the European nations into white nations? Only a Satanist or a colored heathen would oppose such a humane proposal. But of course that is the problem. The European nations are run by inhumane liberals who want to destroy the white race by making white nations into colored hell holes.

The liberals have made it clear that they do not want to live in peace with white people. Every other word out of their liberal mouths is a call for Trump's assassination. Whites should let liberals know that we will not remain peaceful if anything happens to Trump or his family. All liberals will be held accountable. We will "Cry Havoc, and let slip the dogs of war!"

The Higher Law

February 11, 2017

Categories: Democracy, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: George Fitzhugh, Thomas Hughes



We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

-George Fitzhugh, *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters*

Shane tells young Bob Starrett that, "A gun is just a tool. No better and no worse than any other tool, a shovel – or an axe or a saddle or a stove or anything. Think of it always that way. A gun is as good – and as bad – as the man who carries it. Remember that." So it is with sport. If it is used, as in *Tom Brown's Schooldays*, as a means of teaching young men the code of chivalry, it is a beneficial activity. There was a great deal of truth in the English assertion that, "The battle of Waterloo was won on the playing fields of Eton." But if sport is used as a means of teaching young men, and society at large, the doctrines of liberalism it ceases to be beneficial: it becomes evil.

I've known Catholic Jansensists and Protestant Cromwellians who thought sports were intrinsically evil. And I've known good solid American conservatives who thought organized sports were the solution to every evil under the sun. Obviously both groups needed a strong dose of Shane: "Sport is as good or bad as the people who organize and control it."

In the late 1950s and through the 1960s, the liberals derided sports because they felt that participation in sports tended to make the participants into reactionaries who were unfit to take their place in a progressive society. Coaches said prayers before games when prayers were banned in the more progressive classrooms, and sport clichés that enjoined young men to be strong and resolute in the face of adversary, which went against the ethos of Liberalism, were in constant use. I remember a very liberal high school English teacher (I didn't know what a liberal was at that time of my life) telling me that I was demeaning myself and wasting my "gifts" by participating in sports. But in the 1970s, the liberals, under Satan's guidance, began to change their position vis-à-vis organized sports. They did to sports what they had already done to the churches. Instead of abolishing sporting activities they turned them into vehicles for liberalism. This certainly did not start in the 1970s. The South integrated their Little League teams in the 1950s, and professional baseball integrated in 1947, but the wholesale use of sport for the spread of liberalism commenced when the liberals consolidated their power over every aspect of society including sporting events. Now sodomy awareness days, Mexican awareness days, black awareness days – everything but white awareness days – are celebrated at the various sporting events. Organized sport in America and throughout the European world is a blasphemous mix of paganism and liberalism.

I no longer watch sporting events, because I regard them as liberal religious festivals, but I am always glad to hear about a white athlete such as Mike Trout, Tom Brady, or Fedor Emelianenko who does well. How do I justify such a contradiction? By referencing Fitzhugh's observation about the Christian heart guiding us through the trials and intricacies of life. I home schooled my children and gave them white heroes, such as Wallace, Havelock, Forrest, Lee, Alfred, Walter Scott, Lou Gehrig, and Bob Mathias to look up to. But what do white children who are not home schooled have? To whom do they look to for heroic examples? They have nothing. They are taught to worship black athletes and liberals who paved the way for "diversity." The self-esteem of the young white male is at the lowest possible level; he does not feel that he deserves to live. My heart goes out to such white children. I wish I could tell them of their heroic past, a past that would inspire them to become like unto the heroes of Christian Europe. But I don't have access to those suffering white children, so how can I not hope that they will at least find some solace, some hope, from a white athlete who is successful in the pagan-liberal arena? I liken this to a Christian living in the catacombs who finds it heartening to hear that one of his Christian brethren wrenched a spear from a Roman soldier and slew a lion that was about to attack his fellow Christians in the arena. The event itself was evil, but the Christian's heroism was heartening. Of course the modern white athlete is not forced, as the catacomb Christian was, to participate in the liberal pagan spectacles, but is not the modern white athlete a spiritually crippled young man? To what extent can I blame him for competing in the only available market for his talents? By the same token I wish that young white American soldiers would not fight in the liberals' wars, but I don't want any harm to come to the misguided white boys who fight those wars. Is there a contradiction there? Ask your heart.

What is happening in the sporting events is a mirror image of the larger arena of politics. In sports the liberals will permit some whites to participate providing that they support "diversity" and providing that they only occupy supporting roles for the athletes of color. Any white athlete who obtains prominence in his field is vilified. And if, as in the cases of Curt Schilling and Tom Brady, they express conservative political views, they are demonized. The only reason white athletes are not banned from all sporting events is because most white athletes keep to the liberals' code of conduct and do not express views contrary to liberalism. Tom Brady was suspended because he was not adhering to the liberals' code of conduct, and Curt Schilling was fired and denied access to the Hall of Fame because he also violated the liberals' code of conduct by denouncing transgender bathrooms and professing a belief in Jesus Christ.

When we turn to that other arena, the larger political arena, we see the same liberal rules in place. Whites can participate in politics, but they must support liberalism. They can only hold office if they do not say or do anything that runs counter to liberal orthodoxy. McCain and Romney were allowed to run for election and lose, because they did not offend liberal orthodoxy. The only reason Trump got into office was because the liberals, with arrogant self-confidence, did not think he had a chance to win. When he won, the liberals nullified the democratic process and set out to destroy Trump by whatever means necessary. After all, he has broken the rules, he has not called for the extermination of the white race, which always has been and always will be the ultimate goal of the liberals.

Just as the victory of a Trump-supporting white coach and white quarterback will not change the essential white-hating, negro-worshiping nature of American athletics, neither will the electoral victory of Trump change the essential white-hating, negro-worshiping nature of the United States. The liberals will not allow a glitch in the system to destroy their system. When Obama won, he was given dictatorial powers by the other liberal branches of the government. He was never required to make his Executive Orders comply with the Constitution or to comply with common human decency. In contrast, now that Trump is President the judges disregard Executive Orders that are constitutionally proper and morally necessary for the defense of the nation. If Trump, as President, cannot issue an order to restrict dangerous aliens from entering the United States, how can he protect and defend the United States? He can't. And of course the liberals do not want him to protect the United States, because the liberals do not believe in a United States composed of white Europeans. They believe in a multi-racial nation, dedicated to the extermination of the white race.

The Trump victory highlights the great divide between white Europeans and the liberals who have denounced their whiteness and given their heart and soul to Satan. The two groups of people are from different worlds. Paper and ink democracy cannot bind such divergent peoples together into a nation. How can whites find common cause with a brood of anti-white and anti-Christian creatures from hell whose vision of peace is one mass grave with "Here lies the white race" engraved on the headstone?

Mere conservation is useless — actually it is worse than useless if its sole purpose is not the preservation of the European people and the faith that bound them together as a people. What do I care if there are less taxes levied in a nation that has purged my people and my God from its midst? That is all the "conservatives" stand for – less taxes. Trump was vilified during the campaign and is being demonized now that he has become President, because he has said things – and his actions have coincided with his rhetoric – that indicate he has some antique notions of faith and race mixed in with his Americanism. Hence he is an anathema. Why have German, Irish, and a whole international cabal of European politicians called for Trump's

assassination? Obviously, because they do not want the slightest tiny ripple of white pietas to surface anywhere in the European world, because if white pietas becomes commonplace the reign of the liberals and the colored barbarians will come to an end.

Irvin Cobb, the author of the *Judge Priest* stories set in the post-Civil War South, stated in his autobiography that the Gospel of Christ was a very sublime book, but anyone who based his life on the Gospel would be run aground on the rocks of reality. Cobb was not a Jacobin – he admired his people and always spoke well of those who fought in the War for Southern Independence, but like all modern conservatives, he did not want to conserve his people and their sacred heritage. His people, who did not separate what was “realistic” from what was good, felt honor-bound to defend their Christian heritage whether it seemed practical or not. And ultimately, is it practical to lose your soul to gain the whole world?

Democratic solutions to the liberal-sponsored onslaught of the Moslem and colored heathens are not practical, because they do not reach the soul of the European, they do not stir his heart and make him feel honor-bound to defend his people. As Burke tells us, we can’t become attached to a description of a square measurement or feel pride in being one statistic in an inhuman aggregate. But if the Christ-centered heart of the European is stirred, he will rise and ride in defense of his people. Then, instead of trying to vote the aliens out of his nation he will drive them out of his nation by whatever means that are necessary. Without the honor code that comes from a Christ-centered heart, what the old Europeans called chivalry, there will be no European restoration. (1) The white athlete who competes in the liberals’ religious festivals and the white politician who tries to change liberalism from within will not be able to do any lasting damage to the liberal juggernaut. Only Europeans, acting as the impractical, unrealistic Europeans of the past acted, can turn the tide of battle and defeat the liberals. The foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men. We need more Third Dumb Brothers who are grounded in the Europeans’ vision of Christ rather than the conservatives’ vision of an ever-changing, ever-evolving conservatism that is always slightly to the right of the mad-dog liberals, but is forever opposed to the European people.

The only good that has come out of Trump’s election is that the liberals have made it clear to all but the willfully blind that modern democracy means death for the European people. Now that it has become clear there is no need for politics as usual. There is no need for useless pro-life movements, for passionate pleas to the liberals to respect life in the womb, because nothing but fear for their own miserable lives will make liberals stop murdering the innocents. And there is no need to look for white candidates who will protect the rights of white people – such candidates will be ground up in the satanic mills of Liberalism and be forced to abandon all their attempts to stop the ongoing Moslem, Mexican, and African invasions.

It’s not last post for white people unless they remain nonviolent and democratic. The liberals and the colored heathen will not stop the slaughter of whites because of an electoral loss or any type of plea for mercy from white people. Both the liberals and the colored heathen are devoid of mercy. What is left to do? An enemy that has no mercy must be made to fear his intended victims. The sheep must become, in the name of mercy, just as fierce as the wolves. No war is more just, no war is more necessary, than the war we must fight against the satanic liberals and their heathen allies. That charity of honor, bequeathed to us by the antique Europeans, is worth more than all the kingdoms of this world. It is the only thing worth fighting for.

I don’t believe that the European people will remain as sheep to the colored wolves and grist for the liberals’ satanic mills forever, but I have no concrete evidence that I can point to in order to substantiate my hope. Still, St. Paul’s words that Handel placed at the center of the *Messiah* are burned into my soul: “In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.” Surely, if we do not forsake Christ, He can change our dead civilization into His Europe once again. +

(1) Before Trump’s election many anti-immigration whites were saying that if Trump was not elected we were doomed. Well, Trump has been elected and we are still doomed. Not because Trump is not keeping his promises, but because you cannot expect fair play from Satanists. The liberals shout “the rule of law,” when it suits their purpose. And since they own the courts, they almost always shout, “the rule of law.” But whenever the rule of law does not suit their purpose they defy the law in the name of a higher law. Why do Europeans never oppose the liberals’ law in the name of a higher law? This respect for the law, independent of whether the law stems from our Christian-European traditions or from the Jacobin-Marxist traditions of the liberals, is not just a sickness of the European Americans. It is a sickness that has taken hold of all the European people throughout the world. Is it a sickness unto death? Of course it is, if we do not look to the past and see what they saw – the Star of Bethlehem shining above provincial Europe.

The End of Democracy Is the New Dawn of Europe

February 18, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke, Herman Melville, Shakespeare



They *never* will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.

-Edmund Burke

O worthy Duke,
You bid me seek redemption of the devil.

Isabella in *Measure for Measure*

When the irreverent Dr. Price exulted when Louis the XVI was led in triumph through the streets of Paris by the Jacobins, Burke demanded to know why Dr. Price should exult in the King's humiliation and dethronement:

But the Reverend Pastor exults in this "leading in triumph," because truly Louis the Sixteenth was "an arbitrary monarch;" that is, in other words, neither more nor less than because he was Louis the Sixteenth, and because he had the misfortune to be born king of France, with the prerogatives of which, a long line of ancestors, and a long acquiescence of the people, without any act of his, had put him in possession. A misfortune it has indeed turned out to him, that he was born king of France. But misfortune is not crime, nor is indiscretion always the greatest guilt. I shall never think that a prince, the acts of whose whole reign was a series of concessions to his subjects, who was willing to relax his authority, to remit his prerogatives, to call his people to a share of freedom, not known, perhaps not desired by their ancestors; such a prince, though he should be subjected to the common frailties attached to men and to princes, though he should have once thought it necessary to provide force against the desperate designs manifestly carrying on against his person, and the remnants of his authority; though all this should be taken into consideration, I shall be led with great difficulty to think he deserves the cruel and insulting triumph of Paris and of Dr. Price. I tremble for the cause of liberty, from such an example to kings. I tremble for the cause of humanity, in the unpunished outrages of the most wicked of mankind.

-Burke in [Reflections on the French Revolution](#)

So must I demand to know why Hillary Clinton exulted in the 9th District Court judges' refusal to uphold Trump's order to temporarily restrict Moslem immigration from a handful of Moslem countries. Why would a citizen of the United States or any other European nation object to such a small restriction on Moslem immigration, especially considering that a complete ban on Moslem immigration and the deportation of every single Moslem in the European nations is necessary for the protection of the European people? Hillary exulted for the same reason that Dr. Price exulted: The Moslems are committed to the destruction of the white Christian race, just as the Jacobins were and Hillary is committed to the destruction of the white Christian race.

There has never been, nor can there ever be, a multi-cultural or multi-racial nation. There might be little counter-cultural enclaves and other slave races within a dominant racial culture, but there will always be one dominant culture and one dominant race within a nation. The striking thing about the European nations of the late 20th and early 21st centuries is that the majority culture, the people who were in charge of the government, willingly made the colored heathens into the dominant culture and the dominant race. There was, in South Africa, before the ascendency of the black government, a minority culture ruling a majority culture. But in that case, the colored heathens did not willingly give up their dominance. It was taken from them as was also the case in British India. It is only the European people who willingly ceded their racial dominance and cultural identity to the heathens of other races. Why have they done this? Let us turn to Herman Melville for an answer, as he describes in *Moby Dick*, the man keeping watch atop the masthead:

There is no life in thee, now, except that rocking life imparted by a gently rolling ship; by her, borrowed from the sea; by the sea, from the inscrutable tides of God. But while this sleep, this dream is on ye, move your foot or hand an inch; slip your hold at all; and your identity comes back in horror. Over Descartian vortices you hover. And perhaps, at mid-day, in the fairest weather, with one half-throttled shriek you drop through that transparent air into the summer sea, no more to rise for ever. Heed it well, ye Pantheists!

A religion based on philosophical speculation cannot sustain a people. Once faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, was replaced by organized propositional religion, the Europeans became Pantheists; they blended their Lord and Savior with philosophy and the heathen faiths. At the moment such a philosophical blending takes place the stage is set for racial blending and then racial suicide. The white race is the first and only race to commit racial suicide, because the white race is the only race that attempted to love the Savior in spirit and truth. But if you falter, having once taken up the cross, what will happen? You will hover over "Descartian vortices" for a certain time and then plunge to your death in the sea of racial and religious universalism.

First the Americans and then the French tried to build a culture over the "Descartian vortices" of religious, racial, and cultural universalism. Then one by one all the nations of Europe followed the lead of the Americans and the French Jacobins. What the European clergymen had wrought came to fruition in the Europeans' culture – they became the first race to commit racial suicide.

I had hoped, before Trump's victory, that his election would serve as a rearguard action for the European people – that it would give them some time to prepare for the real battle, the fight against Jacobin democracy. But the rearguard movement has failed. Trump tried, as valiantly as Marshal Ney, but he has been unable to delay the liberal juggernaut. To defeat the liberals was never even a goal of Trump or his supporters, and that is probably why Trump could not even slow down the liberals' process. If you can't match the liberals' passionate hatred of the Christ-bearing race with a passionate hatred for the liberals and the colored heathens, you will never defeat the liberals, and apparently, you will not even put a significant dent in their war machine.

What percentage of Trump's supporters passionately hate the liberals and all their works? To what extent does Trump hate the liberals? Trump's victory has already been nullified because the coalition of whites that voted for him do not hate liberalism, nor does Trump himself. Trump called for inclusion at his inauguration, but how can a man be married to hell? The liberals have created hell on earth; we cannot and we should not try to come to some kind of peaceful accord with them. Firstly, they don't want a peaceful accord with us – they want to destroy us. And secondly, we should not seek redemption of the devil. Trump is a man of courage and has some of the old bred-in-the-bone Christianity, but he doesn't have enough of it to defeat the liberals. A European of the old stock, a Walter Scott or an Edmund Burke, would see the liberals for what they are – the spawns of Satan. You can't deal with them democratically as if they were human beings with normal human feelings and aspirations. They have left their humanity behind and moved onward, to become a sub-human species that must feed on the blood of whites in order to maintain their soulless existence. And why must they hate the white race? They must hate the white race because they hate Him, with an unremitting, relentless hatred that is fueled by Satan.

The liberals always win because there is no passion on the other side. The European clergymen have gone over to the liberals, the conservatives are all pragmatic pantheists, and the grazers follow their pathetic leaders who tell them that civilized men are never passionate about anything. They do not hate with a passion, nor do they love with a passion. They just stand waist-deep in the tepid waters of moderate liberalism, waiting to be drowned by a tidal wave of radical Jacobinism.

Personally, I would like Trump to resign, because I've become quite fond of him, and I don't want to see him and his family tortured any longer. He has, ever since he won the nomination, been playing Gloucester to the Regans, Cornwalls, and Gonerils of Liberalism. Just as Gloucester was tortured for his defense of King Lear, so is Trump being tortured for his refusal to accede to the extermination of the white race:

*Regan. To whose hands have you sent the lunatic King?
Speak.*

*Gloucester. I have a letter guessingly set down,
Which came from one that's of a neutral heart,
And not from one oppos'd.*

Cornwall. Cunning.

Regan. And false.

Cornwall. Where hast thou sent the King?

Gloucester. To Dover.

Regan. Wherefore to Dover? Wast thou not charg'd at peril-

Cornwall. Wherefore to Dover? Let him first answer that.

Gloucester. I am tied to th' stake, and I must stand the course.

Regan. Wherefore to Dover, sir?

*Gloucester. Because I would not see thy cruel nails
Pluck out his poor old eyes; nor thy fierce sister
In his anointed flesh stick boarish fangs.
The sea, with such a storm as his bare head
In hell-black night endur'd, would have buoy'd up
And quench'd the steeled fires.
Yet, poor old heart, he holp the heavens to rain.
If wolves had at thy gate howl'd that stern time,
Thou shouldst have said, 'Good porter, turn the key.'
All cruels else subscrib'd. But I shall see
The winged vengeance overtake such children.*

*Cornwall. See't shalt thou never. Fellows, hold the chair.
Upon these eyes of thine I'll set my foot.*

*Gloucester. He that will think to live till he be old,
Give me some help! O cruel! O ye gods!*

Regan. One side will mock another. Th' other too!

Cornwall. If you see vengeance-

*1st Servant. Hold your hand, my lord!
I have serv'd you ever since I was a child;
But better service have I never done you
Than now to bid you hold.*

Regan. How now, you dog?

*1st Servant. If you did wear a beard upon your chin,
I'd shake it on this quarrel.*

Regan. What do you mean?

Cornwall. My villain! Draw and fight.

1st Servant. Nay, then, come on, and take the chance of anger.

Regan. Give me thy sword. A peasant stand up thus?

*1st Servant. O, I am slain! My lord, you have one eye left
To see some mischief on him. O!*

Cornwall. Lest it see more, prevent it. Out, vile jelly!

Where is thy lustre now?

*Gloucester: All dark and comfortless! Where's my son Edmund?
Edmund, enkindle all the sparks of nature
To quit this horrid act.*

*Regan. Out, treacherous villain!
Thou call'st on him that hates thee. It was he
That made the overture of thy treasons to us;
Who is too good to pity thee.*

*Gloucester. O my follies! Then Edgar was abus'd.
Kind gods, forgive me that, and prosper him!*

*Regan. Go thrust him out at gates, and let him smell
His way to Dover.*

Exit with Gloucester.

How is't, my lord? How look you?

*Cornwall. I have receiv'd a hurt. Follow me, lady.
Turn out that eyeless villain. Throw this slave
Upon the dunghill. Regan, I bleed apace.
Untimely comes this hurt. Give me your arm.*

Exit.

*2nd Servant. I'll never care what wickedness I do,
If this man come to good.*

*3rd Servant. If she live long,
And in the end meet the old course of death,
Women will all turn monsters.*

*2nd Servant. Let's follow the old Earl, and get the bedlam
To lead him where he would. His roguish madness
Allows itself to anything.*

*3rd Servant. Go thou. I'll fetch some flax and whites of eggs
To apply to his bleeding face. Now heaven help him!*

[King Lear](#)

Yes, may heaven help him. He is facing traitors from within and the devil's minions from without. All this without the support of a Christian people and without a full understanding of the extent of the evil forces arrayed against him. May Christ defend him and his family against the wickedness and snares of the devil and his minions. And if you ask me why I feel outraged by the treatment Trump is receiving, I will reply to you with the words of Burke: "It is natural that I should." Should not any man with a heart that still lives feel drawn to a "still strong man in a blatant land" that fights alone against the forces of evil?(1)

I've often wondered why Burke's critique of the spirit of Jacobinism was completely ignored in the West once Robespierre died. "Everything is fine now, and we can go on with the business of democratizing the world," was the attitude of the intellectuals in the European nations. And in the 20th century when Burke's heir, Antony Jacob, condemned democracy as the great enemy of the white man, he was ignored. There was no need to vilify Jacob, because Anthony Jacob didn't have a parliamentary platform from which to speak. Go through the back files of "respectable" conservative journals such as the *National Review* and see if Anthony Jacob's magnificent prophetic work [White Man Think Again!](#) is mentioned. It is not. Burke and Jacob were kith and kin Christian conservatives who rejected the democratic, racial universalism of the liberals. For this reason, the one was vilified and the other was ignored.

We can no longer ignore the kith and kin Christians of old Europe. Their passion is what is needed. We can't "think" our way out of this democratic hell that the liberals have imposed on us. But we can love and hate with all our heart and fight our way out of this kingdom of Satan on earth. We must love Him and His people, the antique Europeans, and we must hate the liberals enough to fight as Alfred fought, as Forrest fought, and as Lee fought. Violence is not a magic panacea for every ill. But the conservatives and other democracy-loving white nationalists act like we have evolved beyond the need for violence. Only Gnostic men, who think we are all pure mind, can believe that. Human beings inhabit bodies. When we are combating the evil that liberals do we cannot just beat them in debates and think all is well. The proliferers always win the debate – of course the child in the womb is a human being and the right to the privacy is an invented right of the liberals. And of course white people should be accorded the right to live and rule in the nations that were created and sustained by them. But both the right to life of the unborn and of whites to rule in their own countries is categorically denied by the liberals despite the fact that reason and humanity are on the side of the unborn and the whites. What is our recourse? The liberals never shun violence, they will do whatever it takes to maintain their rule. So what is the white man to do? If you love much, you will fight to preserve your people and your faith. And a Christ-centered heart will keep your battle within the bounds of Christian chivalry. The liberals will not renounce violence, they will do whatever they deem necessary to destroy the white race. They are possessed by one passion, the hatred of the white, Christ-bearing race. If we refuse to match their hate for our people with our passionate love of our people, a love that inspires us to fight, then there is no hope for the white race, despite all our cleverness.

The new right and the old white nationalists, call them what you will, when they are not condemning Christians by treating them as Jews, are constantly telling them not to be so fussy about supporting white nationalist candidates. But it is not a question of supporting a white nationalist over a liberal – of course a Christian European should support a pagan white nationalist against a liberal. But the pagan white nationalist does not see the whole picture. If the European does not act in Christ's name, he will not be able to defeat the liberals.

Christ's name cannot be invoked with any success by those who do not believe in Him. We cannot judge a man's eternal soul, we don't know the reasons for his unbelief, but we must, if we are Christians, hold to the belief that no cause has any chance of success, nor does it deserve success if its champions do not go forth in His name. And it must be in His name, the Christ of the European hearth fire, not the universalist Christ of organized Christian Jewry or organized Churchianity which has become the Negroid-Moslem church of Satan. From whence comes the Promethean fire to defy the gods of Liberaldom if it does not come from Christ? Why did the Europeans once rule Europe and the colored nations? Was it because they played rationalist hopscotch better than the heathens? No, it was rationalism, devoid of faith, that destroyed the European people. A passionate connection to His passion is what made the European people the light of Europe and the world. You don't win every battle because you invoke His name. Lee and Stonewall lost the war, for instance. But their people survived as a people until they ceased to invoke His name in the 1950s. We will only survive if our passion for our people and our Savior fills our heart. Without that passion we perish in the Descartian vortices of liberalism. +

(1) It is better that Trump resigns instead of remaining in office to be the target for liberal violence and libel. Every day he spends in office gives liberals the chance to show their power. They attack him and his family with impunity. The Federal law enforcement officials do not go after any of the vermin who encourage people to assassinate Trump, while the vanguard of Satan's armies, the media, spew out their hatred of Trump every minute of their fake news broadcasts. Where is the spiritual reciprocity? Why is there no white passion to match the liberals' passionate hatred? Ask not for whom the bell tolls. The attack on Trump is an attack on thee and me as well as on Trump. The liberals have rejected the love of God, which comes to those who are humble enough to receive that love at the European hearth fire. So we must make them know the wrath of God that will come to them through the Europeans who still cherish the God and the people of the European hearth fire.

Addendum: Trump's courage was on display at the press conference, but the great weakness of the white people of the United States and throughout the world was also on display. It is always a given that we must help the blacks, yet it is always a given that we must not help them as the white Southerners of the pre-Civil War South helped them – by controlling their baser

instincts and teaching them to conform, at least outwardly, to the ethos of Christianity. Is it really white people's fault that blacks murder, rape, and pillage their own people as well as white people? Trump said he is not a racist. No, he is not. And that is his Achilles' heel and the Achilles' heel of the European people. If you don't love your own people above all others you will not have the heart to extend some of that love to the stranger. The only people who ever helped the blacks were white "racists." We should never lose sight of the fact that the liberals use the word 'racist' to destroy white pietas. Nothing good will ever happen to the white race until white people love their own above all others without apology and without the fear of being called racists.

From the Dark Night of Negro Worship into the Light of Europe

February 25, 2017

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christian counter-attack, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, H. F. Verwoerd



It has appeared to some that the South has not done its full duty by the negro. Perfection is, without doubt, a standard above humanity; but, at least, we of the South can say that we have done much for him; if we have not admitted him to social equality, it has been under an instinct stronger than reason, and in obedience to a law higher than the one in the statute books: the law of self-preservation. Slavery, whatever its demerits, was not in its time the unmitigated evil it is fancied to have been. Its time has passed. No power could compel the South to have it back. But to the negro it was salvation. It found him a savage and a cannibal and in two hundred years gave seven millions of his race a civilization, the only civilization it has had since the dawn of history.

We have educated him; we have aided him; we have sustained him in all right directions. We are ready to continue our aid; but we will not be dominated by him. When we shall be, it is our settled conviction that we shall deserve the degradation into which we shall have sunk. – Thomas Nelson Page in *The Old South* (1892)

Yes, in other words the ignorance of our Western liberal intellectuals is killing us. The distortion of their university-adjusted vision is such that even when they clearly perceive every detail of a given situation, the picture in the mirror of their intellects is invariably upside down. It is a form of insanity, ethical as well as intellectual; an insanity which takes the form of a blind belief in the efficacy of so-called ‘good’ principles regardless of the circumstances in which they are applied; such as the giving of The Vote to people who cannot read or write, and the granting of ‘National Self-determination’ to tribes of stark naked cannibals. It is a ‘sideways with the people’ insanity; one of the deadliest of its manifestations being the belief that true goodness consists in depriving oneself of the power to do good. It is an insanity compelling liberal politicians to delight in bringing about the utter subjugation of their own white race. – Anthony Jacob in *White Man, Think Again!* (1965)

The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. – *Romans 13: 12*

Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. – *Ephesians 6: 11*

If a politician began a public speech one hundred years ago with the Lord’s Prayer, it would not have been an act of courage. It could have reflected a deep conviction of the politician or it might have simply been a formalistic ritual, a condescending nod to the public sentiment, but in either case the politician would not have needed a great deal of courage to say the prayer. That is not the case today. In a Jacobin age, in which “separation of church and state” has become a God phrase, to begin a state speech with the Lord’s Prayer is an act of courage. And I thought the First Lady’s foreign accent added particular grace to the moment. Mrs. Trump’s prayer emphasized that the only legitimate immigration is white immigration. And when we place into the equation the fact that Melania Trump knows that the enemy has pictures of her posing in lingerie that they can splash all over the internet to make the case that she is a hypocrite, we must applaud her courage. I do not applaud courage that is not for the Christian things, but when it is courage in His name, I honor it.

Sadly – actually it is worse than sad, it is tragic – the Trump phenomenon is not grounded in something substantial. There is an under-current of white *pietas* in the Trump movement, which is why the liberals hate him more than Richard Nixon, but the stated purpose of Trump’s crusade is still within the confines, or to be more accurate, the chains of racial and global universalism. This will not do. The black supporters of Trump should be the leaders of either a separate Bantu state as in Dr. Verwoerd’s South Africa, or the leaders in a separate black state within a white nation. Blacks cannot be part of a white nation, because they are incapable of living amongst whites without bringing death and destruction to whites. In point of fact they are incapable of self-government, but they can rise above the level of complete barbarism if they are aided by Christian whites, as was the case in the pre-Civil War South and in Dr. Verwoerd’s South Africa.

That liberals do not care about blacks is made crystal clear when we see the calumny that is heaped on the aforementioned civilizations which have the distinction of being the only civilizations that ever improved the blacks’ lives materially and spiritually. If you had a very sick child, wouldn’t you, if you loved your child, opt for a medical procedure that had been used successfully in the past? Or would you choose a medical procedure that was a proven failure?

Liberals always choose utopian remedies for all social ills, because they have rejected the traditional Christian faith of the European people. And, having rejected that faith, they must come up with an alternative faith to sustain them. The liberals’ alternative faith is Jacobinism, which entails a worship of a theoretical aggregate called ‘the people.’ Haiti, after the French revolution, represents Jacobinism in its purest form. The rest of the European nations moved toward utopia more incrementally, from a white aggregate of proletarians to a black aggregate of pure, natural savages. Any political movement that does not attack the very core of liberalism, which is the satanic ideology of negro worship, will be absorbed by liberalism.

The liberals, like the Ancient Mariner, have shot the albatross, but unlike the Ancient Mariner they are not repentant. They continue to build their new world as if there was no fall of man and no Redeemer. Indeed, if there was no fall of man why do we need a Redeemer? But the liberals still have a plan of salvation – God the Father is the abstracted intellect of man, the Savior is the natural black savage in the aggregate, and science is the Holy Ghost. As regards the Holy Ghost – didn’t Pope Francis just tell us that Islamic terrorism is a myth, while global warming is a scientific fact? We must not be blasphemers against the liberals’ Holy Ghost.

The Jacobin revolution never could have succeeded, and it would never have spread, if the traditional bred-in-the-bone European Christianity had not been replaced by the worship of the Church as an organization dedicated to religious and racial universalism. That type of Church, as opposed to the church of faithful hearts united to His heart, can be made compatible with Jacobin utopianism – witness Price, Priestly, Belloc, John Paul II, Pope Francis, and the legion of modern, anti-Christian, anti-European churchmen who have placed themselves in the liberals’ camp, opposed to their people and their God.

When the spirit of God enters human hearts, through Christ our Lord, the spirit of satanic abstraction dies, and the charity that never faileth takes hold. Christian civilizations are always imperfect because Christian men are still sons of Adam. But the sons of Adam who are repentant Christians have that within which constitutes the only humane civilizing influence on a nation. The inhumane, unrepentant liberals can only mock and destroy all that is good and noble, which is why they are driven to destroy every last vestige of antique Europe. A movement based on turning back the clock to a milder, gentler Jacobinism can never succeed, because the essence of Jacobinism is ever-onward to a Haitian-style state devoid of faith, hope, and charity – a state in which all people worship darkness and not the light.

The last Christian state on the face of the earth was the aforementioned South Africa, presided over by Dr. H. F. Verwoerd, the last great Christian European leader in a leaderless world. The dagger to his heart (which came from a half-breed Marxist zealot) was a dagger to the heart of the Christian European people. It was Dr. Verwoerd who first used the term ‘negro psychosis’ to describe the great sickness of the European people. He knew, because he loved his people and his God, that the Church of Christ consisted of one’s people, one’s kith and kin, who love a personal God, not an abstract, satanic liberal trinity.

What are we in South Africa going to do in that future? My answer is that this will depend on the question of whether we will be able to maintain our anchors. For me this means that we should keep our identity as a people, that we should not become international, that we should not consider ourselves wise or learned or big when we abandon our people. But secondly – and this is the most important – this anchor must ensure that we keep our faith. If we can stay anchored in our faith and thus in our Church, those big changes can do nothing that spells danger to us as a people who hold fast to God and his Word.

–Verwoerd Speaks

Of course it was not to be; the South African leaders after Dr. Verwoerd did not stay loyal to their people or to the Word of God. And are not the two inseparable? Can there be an abstract Christian church without a local habitation in the collective heart of the European people? And can the European people be a people if they do not take Christ into their hearts? Faith and kith and kin must be joined or else all is cheerless, dark, and deadly. Trump’s concern for working class whites and his wife’s public prayer show us that the Trump movement has some remnants of grace, but it is still a movement from within liberalism. And there can be no reconciliation, no peaceful accord, with liberalism. White South Africa is the world. Any resistance to black rule, which is the rule of Satan, will be dealt with by the use of lying, cheating, and then, if those tactics fail, by assassination and murder. No European nation is immune from the fatal disease – the negro psychosis. Even in nations of Eastern Europe, where the people have shown some resistance to the Moslem invasion, we see the ‘I am not racist’ flag, which is the flag of surrender to the devil, being raised. Our skin color is part of our spiritual essence. If we place the white race in subservience to the black race – and diversity means black dominance – we have put the Christ-bearing race at the service of Satan. And that is precisely what the liberals want, because they worship darkness and not the light. Our white ancestors knew about the connection between the sons of Ham and the devil. They knew about such things, because they were connected to His sacred heart, the source of all true wisdom. They were prejudiced in favor of the sacred things and prejudiced against Satan and his works. Our people used to know instinctively that the negro was death to the white man’s civilization. Burke talks about this in *Letters on a Regicide Peace*:

How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders?

And again, in his essay, “On the Sublime and Beautiful” –

Perhaps it may appear on inquiry that blackness and darkness are in some degree painful by their natural operation, independent of any associations whatsoever. I must observe, that the ideas of darkness and blackness are much the same; and they differ only in this, that blackness is a more confined idea. Mr. Cheselden has given us a very curious story of a boy, who had been born blind, and continued so until he was thirteen or fourteen years old; he was then couched for a cataract, by which operation he received his sight. Among many remarkable particulars that attended his first perceptions and judgments on visual objects, it gave him great uneasiness; and that some time after, upon accidentally seeing a negro woman, he was struck with great horror at the sight. The horror, in this case, can scarcely be supposed to arise from any association. The boy appears by the account to have been particularly observing and sensible for one of his age; and therefore it is probable, if the great uneasiness he felt at the first sight of black had arisen from its connexion with any other disagreeable ideas, he would have observed and mentioned it. For an idea, disagreeable only by association, has the cause of its ill effect on the passions evident enough at the first impression; in ordinary cases, it is indeed frequently lost; but this is, because the original association was made very early, and the consequent impression repeated often. In our instance, there was no time for such a habit; and there is no reason to think that the ill effects of black on his imagination were more owing to its connexion with any disagreeable ideas, than that the good effects of more cheerful colours were derived from their connexion with pleasing ones. They had both probably their effects from their natural operation.

There are four forces present in the United States, which are also present in all of the other European nations as well. The first force is that of the mad-dog liberals. They rule most of the European nations and their credo is quite simple – the white race must be destroyed immediately and by ‘any means necessary.’ The second force consists of the conservative-liberals, who rule in a few European nations, but their credo differs only in degree, not in kind, from the mad-dog liberals. Their credo is that the whites must be destroyed, but only incrementally; they should not be destroyed immediately nor should they be dispossessed violently; they must be democratically phased out. The third force consists of populists such as Donald Trump and Le Pen. This group wants white people to be accorded the right to live and work in the nations that they founded and sustained. The liberals will never allow such a faction to exist within the confines of Liberaldom, because liberalism is based on the destruction of the white race. Populists are always puzzled by the liberals’ hatred of them, because they say nothing against, in their view, the tenets of liberalism. What the populists do not understand is the Orwellian nature of liberalism. “All are equal, but some are more equal.” Liberalism is not about equality, liberty, and fraternity, it is about merciless cruelty and the extermination of the white race. In a recent conversation with an elderly Trump supporter, I was asked why the liberals hate him so. I told the woman it was because Trump does not want to exterminate the white race. “But why do the liberals want to exterminate the white race?” was her next question. “Because they worship darkness and not the light,” was my reply.

The fourth faction within Liberaldom is the colored heathens – the blacks, the Moslems, the Mexicans, etc. They are the liberals’ shock troops, and they are, collectively, the second person of the liberals’ unholy trinity. In a perverse parody of the Christ story, the colored heathens have become incarnate in Liberaldom, they have come to save the liberals from sin and death, which, in the eyes of the liberals, is personified in the white race. The liberals fervently believe that if the white race dies so does sin and death.

When there was a Western civilization, men such as Edmund Burke, Thomas Nelson Page, Anthony Jacob, and H. F. Verwoerd stressed that it was the European people and their Christian faith that must be conserved, not democracy nor Churchianity. Now that there are no conservatives who want to conserve Christian Europeans, the liberals have turned Europe into Heathendom. What must men who still love old Europe do? We must be counterrevolutionaries. We cannot look to conservative liberals or even to populist leaders to lead us out of the darkness of liberalism. We must look to counterrevolutionary leaders such as ... Jesus Christ, who is “the beginning and the end, the first and the last.” The Lord’s Prayer is the start of the European counterrevolution – “Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven.” Surely it is not His will that the Christ-bearing race should abandon Christ and fall down on their faces to worship the negro. +

For God, for Hearth, and for Race

March 4, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Christ the Hero, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Dostoyevsky, G. M. Trevelyan, Kenneth Grahame, Thomas Nelson Page



The noon-day train will bring Frank Miller
If I'm a man I must be brave
And I must face a deadly killer
Or lie a coward, a craven coward
Or lie a coward in my grave.

-from "The Ballad of High Noon"

The Europeans have been to the mountain and have stood on holy ground. And they have stood on holy ground because they embraced the little human things that lead us to God. St. Paul is the greatest of all theologians because his epistles are addressed to small groups of individual human beings. All transcendent thought comes from a concern for particular human beings. Shakespeare's "simple" stories take us to the heights and depths because Shakespeare is concerned with the human heart, not with theories about humanity. And likewise the incomparable Burke; his letters are irreplaceable works of genius because he wrote them from his heart, without moral blinders on, to stir the hearts of other human beings who still had hearts that lived.

Modern Europeans have contracted a brain fever that has gotten into their blood. Until that fever breaks, there is nothing that can be done with them. They will continue to worship the negro and try to appease the lords of Liberaldom. But if that fever should finally break! It would be like water released from a gigantic dam. All of Liberaldom would be washed away. Do we know the day and the hour of that great cleansing? Of course we don't, because the human heart and God's grace are mysteries. But when the European's fever breaks, the moral blinders will be removed from his heart, and he will dream dreams and see visions again of a Babe in a Manger and a Man of Sorrows.

-CWNY

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

-Thomas Nelson Page in [Under the Crust](#)

The liberals spew out venomous lies on a regular basis and call the lies 'news stories.' And then they have the audacity to call the real news sites, such as Breitbart, 'fake news' sites. Of course the liberals know that they are lying, but lying is permissible in a war, and the liberals are engaged in a holy war against the white race. In a war you never tell the enemy the truth and you try to win adherents to your side by putting out wartime propaganda. CNN and their ilk throughout the European world are propaganda networks; they are not news networks.

The alternative news sites, which are the only genuine news sites, do not put out lies, but they do, unwittingly, perpetuate a lie. That lie is the modern democratic lie, which says that people of different races and different religions can somehow come together and form a nation in which whatever differences they might have can be settled democratically. This cannot be, and the United States and the other democratic, anti-white nations of Europe have shown that a democratic, multi-racial, multi-religious state cannot be.

It is the liberals, not the Breitbart conservative types, who understand what is happening. We are engaged in a full blown war, but only one side, the liberal side, is fighting. While the liberals have made a commitment to do whatever it takes to turn Christendom into Satandom, the conservatives, the believers in democracy, persist in playing 'pretend.' They want to pretend that if you keep doing the democratic things – putting out news stories that are truthful, engaging in debates with your liberal opponents, and exhorting people to support the proper political candidates, you can win the democracy game. But the liberals are not willing to play by the rules of the democracy game. They are at war with the Christ-bearing people. It is no good to leave Christ out of the picture and claim you want nothing to do with Him, that you just want to be democratic. The liberals won't listen — if you are white, you cannot be redeemed, you must be destroyed. The tragedy of the alternative right conservatives is that they have a vague desire to defend the white race, but they have no religious foundation from which to launch an attack on Liberaldom. Hence, they attack liberals through the democratic process. And that process is a circular road that winds around through hell.

The alternative-news-sites people give out mixed signals. The news they report gives us clear evidence that we are in a war with the liberals and the colored barbarians. Yet, the conservatives who put out the news act like we are living in a world where we are all in agreement about what is fundamentally important, while simply differing on the details of how we should remain true to what is fundamentally important. This disconnect, to report on the liberals' satanic agenda and the colored barbarians' atrocities as if it is simply business as usual, breeds despair in the white remnant. The white everyman tries to make himself believe that the old democratic ways will work, that he can vote, petition, and democratically debate his troubles away. But late at night, when he is alone in the darkness, he has a sense of impending doom. Something is wrong, there is a dreadful beast pursuing him, and he cannot shake the beast off by taking refuge in the democratic process. And the reason he can't take refuge in the democratic process is because it is the democratic process that has loosed the beast upon the white everyman.

What is missing in the business-as-usual reportage of the conservatives is the passionate advocacy of an Edmund Burke or an Anthony Jacob. Those men not only reported on the liberals' blasphemies and the colored barbarians' atrocities, they were also advocates for the Christian European hearth fire. They didn't just disagree with the liberals, they hated them. And they

didn't prefer a white system over other systems because they thought the white system was the 'smart' way to govern, they preferred their people over all other people because they loved their people. And that is the crux of the issue – the conservatives want to preserve some of liberalism – they are not comfortable with an outright advocacy of a white, Christian nation. But you can't have just a little bit of liberalism, just as you can't have a little bit of cancer. Once the cancer has appeared, it must be eradicated, or it will kill you.

Let me stay with the cancer analogy because, sadly, we all are familiar with that hideous disease. If a doctor tells you all the gruesome details of your cancerous disease, he is being no more than truthful, he is doing his job just as the Breitbart reporter who reports on the liberals' blasphemies and the colored barbarians' atrocities is doing his job. But what if the doctor tells you the horrific details without telling you about your chances for survival? Has he told you the whole truth? Or what if he tells you that your cancer can be cured by drinking enormous quantities of Coca-Cola and consuming large amounts of Twinkies? All of the grim atrocity stories should be followed by an advocacy of the Christian things – of honor, of kinship, and of the charity that never faileth. We should steer whites away from Coca-Cola and Twinkies political solutions, and toward the faith, blood, and soil solutions of our European ancestors.

I recently saw an interview with one of the practical, realistic breed of conservatives, who was discussing Europe. His conclusion was that Europe, particularly Germany, was finished. His analysis was quite rational and logical – Germany was being overrun by Moslems and Africans and the German people were incapable and/or unwilling to resist them. Rape, murder, and pillage is the German people's destiny – that was the realistic, factual conservative's irrefutable conclusion. Let me make a brief aside before responding to the conservative's 'realistic' assessment: I've been blessed with many children. Yes, contra Planned Parenthood, I believe that children are a blessing. And of course, I love all my children, but I've noticed over the years that the intensity of my loving concern for an individual child is determined by his or her need. If one child is physically sick or especially troubled, my concern for that child is intensified. So it is with Europe. I love the European people with all my heart, mind, and soul. I am of Europe, and I only know Him in and through Europe. Ratty's river and my Europe are one. (1) But my extra special concern right now is Germany. That nation, that child, is the most besieged and despised nation of Europe. Germany is, in terms of her danger and the hatred directed against her, a surrogate for all European nations. Our danger differs in degree, not in kind, from the danger that Germany is now facing. Like Will Kane and Shane, the German people, and all European people, are facing that "immediate and implacable moment" when they must choose to fight as Europeans were meant to fight – for God, for hearth, and for race – or to run like craven cowards before the liberals and their colored allies.

Let us go back to the practical, realistic conservative – "Europe, particularly Germany, is finished." Case closed? No, it is not closed. The practical conservative has ignored, like [Ivan Karamazov](#), the elephant in the room. Ivan makes a very good case, the very best case that can be made, against God. He places suffering humanity before Alyosha and challenges him to refute that crystal clear fact of existence: We suffer and die. What is Alyosha's response? He simply says that Ivan has left out the one thing that tips the balance in favor of a loving God. Ivan has left out the Man of Sorrows, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ.

There are other facts of history besides Spengler's facts of biological destiny. Human beings are not just biological entities. They have souls. Christian Europe is a 'fact' of history. The Europeans spiritual ascent in the past, as a people, is just as much a fact of history as is their current spiritual decline. Our individual biological destinies are written. We shall die in the flesh – but our spiritual destiny? That is not determined solely by biology. No nation of Europe is finished, because there is no telling what will happen if the European people act in and through the Christ of the European hearth fire. Certainly, the Germans — and the rest of Europe is close behind — have their backs to the wall. But we must not be willfully blind and accept Ivan Karamazov's verdict as the final verdict. There is the Man of Sorrows: nothing is impossible with and through Him.

I've often pondered, and even more so now as the European light fades from off the face of the earth, why our Lord thought it was necessary to bring St. Paul front and center on the stage (for all the world is indeed a stage) of our salvation history. What did St. Paul bring to the church that the other apostles could not bring, at least not as well as St. Paul? The other apostles preached the Gospel, and St. Peter, albeit with divine prodding, extended the Christian message to the Gentile as well as the Jew. So what did St. Paul bring to the church? It is crystal clear if you read his epistles with your heart. St. Paul brought a passionate intensity to the Christian faith that was unconquerable. All the other apostles preached Christ crucified, Christ risen, but St. Paul set that message on fire and drove it into the hearts of his converts. And St. Paul's Christ was the Christ of the early Europeans that turned the more intellectual, Romanized faith back to its passionate Pauline roots:

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself.

– G. M. Trevelyan in [History of England](#)

The Europeans of the 19th century (see "[The Sacred Heritage](#)") were faced with the same Jacobin and colored barbarian threat that we face now. But they turned back the liberal and colored heathen tide by returning to their Pauline roots. Charity, not rationalism, never faileth. It is not over: We are not facing the death of Europe, we are facing a possibility of death, "if these shadows are not altered." The shadow of death, the death caused by liberalism, can be altered. We are not being defeated in every European nation because of the superior might of the colored heathens: We are being defeated because we do not see ourselves as one people, bound to each other by unbreakable bonds of faith and race. Once we unite what should never have been separated, our faith in Christ and our racial kinship, we will see the same European miracles that Alfred, Charles Martel, and the soldiers of Rorke's Drift saw. +

(1) 'I beg your pardon,' said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. 'You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So--this--is--a--River!'

'THE River,' corrected the Rat.

'And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!'

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other. What it hasn't got is not worth having, and what it doesn't know is not worth knowing'

-Kenneth Grahame in [The Wind in the Willows](#)

A World Without Mercy

March 11, 2017

Categories: Charity, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob, H. F. Verwoerd, Hippolyte Taine, Shakespeare



I am sorry for thee; thou art come to answer
A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch,
Uncapable of pity, void and empty
From any dram of mercy...

But mercy is above this sceptred sway,
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,
It is an attribute to God himself;
And earthly power doth then show likest God's
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,
That in the course of justice none of us
Should see salvation; we do pray for mercy,
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render
The deeds of mercy.

-[The Merchant of Venice](#) by Wm. Shakespeare

The liberals are behaving like the villain in an old mystery movie, who, having committed a murder, must now kill everyone who can connect him to that murder. Sometimes the villain feels remorse, but in many cases the villain is a pre-repentant Raskolnikov: like the liberals, he is following a 'higher morality'. Some inconsequential, worthless nobody is standing in the way of his happiness, so he must kill that worthless, inconsequential nobody. And if other inconsequential, worthless nobodies try to connect him to the first murder, he kills them as well.

The liberals have murdered the image of God in Man, which is Christ the Lord, because He was an inconsequential nobody who stood in the way of their happiness. And now they must kill all the inconsequential nobodies who were connected to Him and will continually accuse them, the liberals, of murder. Unlike the villain in the mystery movie, the liberals will not confine their murderous rampages to those people whom they know are directly connected to the first victim; they feel compelled to kill all those who they suspect might be connected to the first victim even tangentially. This is why the entire white race, minus the liberals, must be eliminated. There must be none left that can stand in the way of the liberals' multi-racial utopia presided over by Atticus Finch liberals. Of course such a utopia is not the vision of the colored barbarians; the colored barbarians do not want any whites, not even Atticus Finch, in their world, but the liberals have never had any connection to the stranger called 'Reality.' If they did, they wouldn't be liberals.

The liberals can't, in reality, eliminate Christ by exterminating the white race, but the liberals do not believe in the reality of the Son of God. They think He is a mind-forged creation of racist, sexist, homophobic, anti-Semitic, Islamophobic whites. So they think that they can eliminate that mind-forged evil by eliminating the white race. It seems suicidal, because are not the liberals white? Yes, in reality (there's that irksome word again) they are white. But again, we need to emphasize that the liberals have no connection to reality, they live in an abstract fantasy world where all *other* whites will be destroyed while they, the illuminati, have gone beyond whiteness to ... That higher state varies from liberal to liberal, but it is always a higher elevation from which they hurl thunderbolts at the hideous white race. The liberals' hatred of the white race is even greater than the colored barbarians' hatred, because the liberals are in a constant state of dread. They fear that they might be placed among the damned, the racist whites. Hence, their constant, fervent busyness in defense of the non-white and in defiance of the white. Look at their opposition to Trump, a 1950s liberal. The liberals have gone beyond mad-dog liberalism in their opposition to him: they have bared their satanic fangs. Why? There is only one explanation – they are possessed. They hate whites with a passion fueled by Satan. Trump has done nothing that places him outside the parameters of what classical liberalism is supposed to be, but classical liberalism was never really liberal, in the moral sense, at heart. It was not about compassion for the poor or the enfranchisement of the disenfranchised. It was, and is, about the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race. You will be eternally pushing Sisyphus's rock up the democratic hill unless you come to grips with that essential fact – Liberalism is from the devil. Through the liberals and the colored barbarians, Satan strikes back at Christ by attacking the Christ-bearing race. The race war is a religious war. Satan does not care if he has to kill every white on the face of the earth in order to kill the tiny remnant of whites still connected to Christ. Non-Christian whites are collateral damage in the great war between Satan and Christ.

When I speak of Christ as the true God, I am speaking of a very specific Christ. I am speaking of the Christ of old Europe. That Christ is not a time-bound Christ of an archaic culture, He is the Christ of the Gospels, the Christ whom St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. People of other races can come to the Savior, but only if they respond to the light emanating from the hearth fire of the antique Europeans. When Ben Gunn says he has not had a Christian diet for three years, there is no need for him to explain that he has not had any European food for three years. [Stevenson's](#) readers knew that Europe and Christ were an incorporate union. That union was not perfect because we are not perfect, but our Lord chose, with a charity that passeth the understanding of the mind, but that can be understood by the heart, to forgive us our trespasses and take the European people onto Himself, because the European people loved much. It is only now, when the Europeans have ceased to love much (for how can they love an abstract Christ without a local habitation by their racial hearth fire?) that they feel forsaken and have gone whoring after heathen gods and heathen systems, such as the negroes, the Islamic hordes, and science.

In every century since the European people joined their hearts and souls to Christ, there have been creatures called 'liberals' who sought to destroy the incorporate union between Christ and the European people. Initially the subversive element came from outside of clan Europe. The subversives were predominantly the unrepentant Jews who refused to believe that the

Messiah had come. But as intellectual Christianity, the Christianity of the false Aslan, took hold in Europe, the Christian churches started turning out anti-Christian soldiers who were more dangerous than the Jews, because a wolf in sheep's clothing is worse than a plain wolf. As terrible as George Soros and his ilk are, they are not as harmful to the Christian remnant as Pope Francis and his legions of wolves in sheep's clothing. In the name of Christ, these anti-Christian wolves assault Christ and His people. I know that the neo-pagans would like to sum up the tragedy of the European people with, "Jew, Jew, Jew!" But Satan is much more subtle than that. The problem is liberalism. A great deal of Jews are liberals, but still it is not Jews who currently fill up the ranks of the liberals' armies – it is lapsed Christians who have become, like the neo-pagans themselves, as adamantly opposed to the light of the world as the Jews. For every George Soros, who should be opposed as we would oppose the devil himself, there are the Pope Francises and twenty more Hillary Clintons. Our enemies are legion, and they are not just confined within the ranks of the Jews.

The obsessive focus on the exterior Jew only is the weakness of the biological determinist type of conservative. If it is only the visible, identifiable Jew who is the enemy, the biological determinist conservative, the neo-pagan, does not have to look inside his own soul. The Christian knows that he must not only fight the liberalism that is without, he also knows that he must also fight the liberalism from within. We all, if we look within, have too much of Ivan Karamazov in us. We do not like the way God has ordered the world, so we are tempted to re-order the world according to our own will. Only Christ could say, "not my will, but thy will be done," with complete sincerity. Nevertheless, there is a great difference between the Christian European who fights the Ivan Karamazov within himself and the liberal who gives himself over to the Ivan Karamazov within. It is the difference between heaven and hell. Our people, the people who formed an incorporate union with Christ and fought the good fight, loved Him through their people, because of His promise to be with them "alway even unto the end of the world." Such was the incorporate union between Christ and the European people.

By the beginning of the 20th century, most of the European, intellectual elites had either embraced intellectual Christianity, which is simply another form of atheism, or they had become outright liberals, whoring after new gods. But even though Christian belief faded in Europe during the first half of the 20th century, a Christian ethos remained until the latter half of the 20th century. Europeans were living on what Herbert Butterfield called the "fumes" of Christianity. There was still, in the 20th century, a Christian hangover. The liberals retained some remnants of mercy, but now the hangover is over. **The era of 'no mercy' has begun. This is not a theory, it is a sad new chapter of European history.** There are no remnants of Christianity left in the liberals. They are preceding toward utopia, which must be built with white blood, without the mercy that used to separate the European from the colored barbarians. The woman of Calais's heartfelt cry for mercy would have moved any human heart from another era, but in the era of 'no mercy' her plea fell on deaf ears. The liberals do not care about the suffering of whites. Quite the contrary, they delight in their suffering. The liberals, whether they are Jew or gentile, have become Shylock. They want a pound of flesh nearest the heart from every white man, woman, and child. Their satanic god demands it, and they know no higher law than his will.

It's not pleasant to be at the mercy of an enemy that has no mercy, but there is no escaping it: we are in the hands of an enemy who has left every last remnant of Christianity behind and ventured into a brave new world where faith, hope, and charity are considered blasphemies, while murderous cruelty is considered noble and inspiring. In his novel *Pierre*, Herman Melville wrote that a man in dangerous straits is like unto a drowning man: "Well enough he knows he is in peril, well enough he knows the cause of that peril, but the sea is the sea and the drowning man does drown." That is true enough if we have placed our hopes in reason. We can't reason with the liberals, because human beings are not governed by reason. They use their reason to defend their passions:

In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for, if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet;

—[The French Revolution](#) by Hippolyte Taine

If reason governed liberals would they claim to love children while sponsoring the wholesale slaughter of babies in the womb? Would they claim to be against rape while encouraging the wholesale sexual abuse of women by Moslems? Would they claim to love black people while condemning the white people who actually helped black people, such as the apartheid white South Africans and the pre-Civil War Southerners? Would they claim to be in favor of peaceful, non-violent government while fomenting violence and anarchy every time an election doesn't go their way? Would they claim to be against nuclear war and remain at enmity with a rival nuclear power because that nation is a nationalist nation and not a communist one? And would they actually believe that the white race, the Christ-bearing race, the only race that gave the world a vision of the incarnate God, is the source of all evil in the world? None of those 'would theys' are rational; they can't be explained by Socratic reason, they don't make sense philosophically. But we can understand the rational contradictions of the liberals if we look at man through the eyes of the poet rather than with the mind of the philosopher. Man is not governed by his reason. He is governed, for good or evil, by his passion. The liberals are possessed of a passionate hatred for Christ and the Christ-bearing race. There might be an occasional road to Damascus conversion in their ranks, but in the main they will remain what they have become, the spawns of Satan. They are no longer human beings, they are like unto Lady Macbeth who invited Satan to fill her, "from the crown to the toe top-full of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood; Stop up th' access and passage to remorse; That no compunctionous visitings of nature Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between Th' Effect and it!" Is it any wonder that such creatures from hell have joined with the colored barbarians in a holy war against the white race? It is the passion of Satan, which consists of dire cruelty, against... It should be Satan and his minions against the European people who stand with Christ, who is the spiritual fount of Europe. But Europeans no longer feel that they need to put on the whole armor of God to do battle with the devil and his minions. They don't believe in such things any more. They believe in science, reason, and the democratic process. We have become too intelligent to believe that men with a passionate love for their people and the God who loved so much that He was crucified for their sake, can triumph over Satan and his minions.

The passionate love of kith, kin, and God will bring us safely home. Dr. Verwoerd, of sacred memory, enjoins us not to "consider ourselves wise or learned or big when we abandon our people." Anthony Jacob tells us that, "charity not only begins at home, it perishes without one." And St. Paul, the passionate apostle, tells us that he will show us a better way than reason and prophecy:

Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

-1 Corinthians 13: 8-13

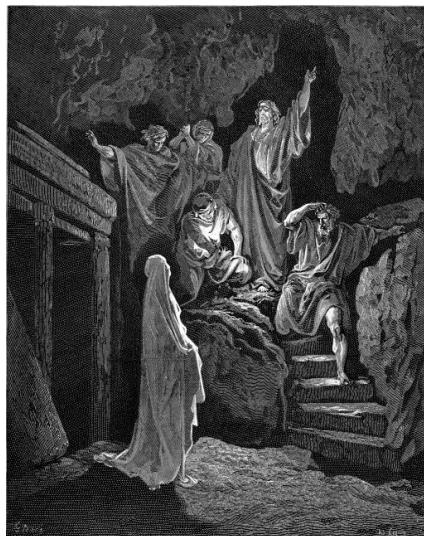
Only one people, as a people, actually tried to make charity the heart and soul of their civilization. Are we now going to completely step away from those blessed Europeans and cede everything to the liberals and the colored heathens? It seems like we are. But there is something in the civilization of the antique Europeans that provides us with hope. The people who loved much knew that the divine love of Christ would ultimately lead them out of the valley of the shadow of death into the light. The people of old Europe, our people, believed in the triumph of the light over darkness: "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed." Neither the liberals nor the colored heathens shall have power over us if we become what our ancestors were, and what we are destined to be – the Christ-bearing people, who love their people and their God with a passionate intensity that passeth the understanding of the liberals, the colored heathens, and Satan himself. "Thus is our faith tested" – our faith has been burned into our hearts: "Charity never faileth." +

In This Hope We Live

March 18, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: John Sharp Williams



The Ash Grove

The ash grove, how graceful, how plainly 'tis speaking
The wind through it playing has language for me.
Whenever the light through its branches is breaking,
A host of kind faces is gazing at me.
The friends from my childhood again are before me
Each step brings a memory as freely I roam.
With soft whispers laden the leaves rustle o'er me
The ash grove, the ash grove alone is my home.

Down yonder green valley where streamlets meander
When twilight is fading I pensively roam
Or in the bright noon tide in solitude wander
Amid the dark shades of the lonely ash grove.
'Twas there while the black bird was cheerfully singing
I first met my dear one, the joy of my heart
Around us for gladness the bluebells were springing
The ash grove, the ash grove that sheltered my home.

My lips smile no more, my heart loses its lightness;
No dream of the future my spirit can cheer.
I only can brood on the past and its brightness
The dear ones I long for again gather here.
From ev'ry dark nook they press forward to meet me;
I lift up my eyes to the broad leafy dome,
And others are there, looking downward to greet me
The ash grove, the ash grove, again is my home.

Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

-John 11: 25-26

The prolife movement was and is a failure, and Trump's victory will fail to stop the extermination of white people. And the reason for the pro lifers' failure to protect the unborn and Trump's failure to protect white people is one and the same. Before proceeding to that reason, let me explain what I mean by failure. During the course of my involvement in abortion clinic protests, I saw some women who were dissuaded from abortion by the protestors, and I think many white lives will be saved by Trump's policies on illegal immigration. Those victories are meaningful, because human life is precious, but they are rearguard victories. The pro lifers are in retreat — in fact they never attacked — before the forces of Satan, and Trump has never claimed he was going to attack liberalism, he only promised to make room for whites within Liberaldom. In both cases, the prolife movement and the Trump movement, when the smoke of battle clears, there is one victor. The liberals still hold the field; they are still killing babies and they are still destroying the white race.

Now we come to the reason the prolife movement and the Trump movement have failed. They have failed because white people do not have a mythic faith in Christ. They no longer believe that Christ is the true Hero-God. No people can survive as a people without faith in a sacred myth that encompasses their God (or gods) and defines them as a people. Their God must be a mythic God or else their God is not God, and the people must be a mythic people or else they are not a people. And by the use of the term 'mythic' I do not mean to suggest something that is not true; I mean to suggest a faith that encompasses a man's whole being, his whole heart, mind, and soul. A purely rational faith is not a faith. When the Greeks no longer believed in Zeus and the other Olympians, they tried to replace their mythic faith with rationalism. It didn't work — it never has and it never will. No people can survive without a mythic faith.

The Christian theologians, especially the scholastics, made a great error when they over-emphasized the rational aspects of Christianity in order to separate the one true God from the pagan gods. Their rationalist minds were incapable of understanding what the poetical heart of St. Paul did understand — Men must love with their whole heart, mind, and soul in order to know the one true God. You cannot love a rational, catechism-God with your whole heart, mind, and soul. All sacred, mythic stories have some elements of truth, but only the Christian story is the Truth. If you make Christ a philosopher, you have cut your people off from the true faith. You have left Christians naked to their pagan enemies. [John Sharp Williams](#), the magnificent defender of the Southern people's heroic resistance to the liberal leviathan, was one of the last white men (Anthony Jacob was the very last) to articulate a defense of the one true mythic God and the European people who championed that God:

But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own; "in the land which the Lord his God had given him;" founded upon the white man's code of ethics, in sympathy with the white man's traditions and ideals. Our forefathers of the forties and fifties and sixties believed that if slavery were abolished, unless the black race were deported from the American States, there would result in the Southern States just such a condition of things as had resulted in San Domingo, in the other West Indies Islands, and in the so-called republics of Central and South America—namely, a hybridization of races, a lowering of the ethical standard, and a degradation, if not loss, of civilization.

Williams was merely asserting what the European faithful of the 19th century believed, that their race and faith were one. They had a mythic faith in Christ and their people's connection to Christ. This was not just a Southern thing, it was a European thing. The leadership of the North — the academics, the "free" press, the clergymen, and the government officials — was adhering to a new Jacobin, rationalist faith, while their people were still clinging to the old mythic faith. So long as the Southern people maintained their mythic faith, they remained a free people even under the infamous Reconstruction period:

There is no grander, no more superb spectacle than that of the white men of the South standing from '65 to '74 and '75 quietly, determinedly, solidly, shoulder to shoulder in phalanx, as if the entire race were one man, unintimidated by defeat in war, unawed by adverse power, unbribed by patronage, unbought by the prospect of present material prosperity, waiting and hoping and praying for the opportunity which, in the providence of God, must come to overthrow the supremacy of "veened savages," superficially "Americanized Africans"—waiting to reassert politically and socially the supremacy of the civilization of the English-speaking white race.

But when the Southern people, along with the European people in every nation, succumbed to the rationalism of the academics, the "free" press, the clergymen, and the government, they lost their faith and their place in the world: they became spiritual nomads, wandering over the face of the earth looking for a God with a local habitation and a name. Can they not see that they have a God and a people? No, they cannot. They have severed all ties to their mythic past, where He dwells with His people. Wither do they go without the one true God, the God of the European hearth fire?

The mad-dog liberals have made gods of the colored heathens, with the negro at the pinnacle of the heathen pantheon. The colored heathens worship their race, devoid of the spirit, and the rationalist Christian sects have gone whoring after the various heathen gods, be they the Jews, the Moslems, and/or the negroes. There is a direct connection between the type of rationalist, syncretic Christianity recommended by Peter Kreeft in his book *Ecumenical Jihad* and the atheism of the modern, mad-dog liberals. All anti-racism in the name of a universalist God and a multi-racial people ends up as atheism. Men such as St. Paul, Edmund Burke, and R. L. Dabney, who upheld chattel slavery, also believed in a God with a local habitation and a name. Men such as Blackstone, Montesquieu, Locke, and Rousseau, who believed in the equality of the races (Rousseau actually believed in the superiority of the black savage), also believed in an impersonal, rationalist, non-mythic God. Such creatures always end up adding a 'natural savage' to their rationalism in order to obtain the mythic strength that their rational system lacks.

There is a curse for future generations of white Southerners and their fellow Europeans contained in Williams' address to the Confederate veterans: "The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed." The "other thing," Christian Europe, has been destroyed. Must we then simply despair and die? I do not think Williams, being a man of mythic Europe, would recommend despair. He was praising the brave sons of the South in his speech, not prophesizing.

We, the remnant Europeans, must acknowledge that the worst has happened: Christian Europe is no more. But if it once was, and our honored dead tell us that Christian Europe once existed, then we must rebuild it. It is quite likely that all the paintings, sculptures, and architectural wonders and monuments that tell the story of the Europeans' connection to Christ will be destroyed. You can't invite colored heathens to rule in what were formerly European nations and expect to retain any of the artistic testaments to old Europe. But the word of God and the history of His people that is contained in the works of the European bards and chroniclers will survive, because the Holy Scriptures and the literary works that were inspired by the Holy Scriptures can be circulated in the European underground as a testimony to the fact that there once was a European overworld in which the white Europeans thought and felt mythically. They saw their race and their faith as one entity, and when they fought the colored heathen and the whites who betrayed their race, they did not fight democratically, they fought as they loved, with their whole heart, mind, and soul.

We, the European people, have entered into the world depicted in C. S. Lewis's *Chronicle* called *The Silver Chair*. The liberals have conquered the Overworld, and they keep telling us that there never was a Christian Narnia. The dystopian novel [Fahrenheit 451](#) was wrong about the nature of the future — in that book the author projected a right-wing dystopia (only [Orwell](#), [C. S. Lewis](#), and [Kipling](#) wrote of left-wing dystopias) — but the author did accurately present the way out of a dystopian state. The hero starts to reconnect with his European past, he starts to read a copy of *David Copperfield*. When the European people sicken of modernity and seek to reconnect with their mythic European past, they will throw off the yoke of their liberal oppressors. Until that time they will continue to be sacrificial victims that the liberals offer up to their colored heathen gods.

The liberals have their colored gods, the colored heathens have made gods of themselves — they believe in "the race" — and the white, neo-pagans have made a god of their minds. Which of those three groups will die before they come to maturity? The mind-forged neo-pagans, of course. Men must have a mythic god. The liberal and the colored heathens will completely rout the alt-right, which is an alternative version of liberalism — rationalism without a God — and they will completely rout the rationalist Christians. Only the mythic Christ, the one true God, the God of the European people when they were the European people, can defeat the satanic forces arrayed against the white race.

The liberals have created a mythic culture of the noble colored savage, which they support with their whole heart, mind, and soul. They hate the antique Europeans because the antique Europeans supported a different myth, the one true myth of the one true God. The rationalist Christians and the rationalist neo-pagans share the liberals' hatred of the Europeans of the past. But both groups are ambivalent about God. What is to be done in their world, a world without faith? Can rationalism replace faith?

There is no mythic opposition to the liberals. When there is such an opposition, liberalism will crumble. Castle Liberaldom is only a cardboard castle, but even a cardboard castle must have someone willing to knock it down before it can be replaced. The white man is in a mind-forged prison. He can't believe in the Christian myth, so he must submit to the liberals' rule. There are places to hide in America, because of the country's size, and there are places to hide in the nations of Eastern Europe, because of their poverty (i.e., the colored heathens prefer the wealthier European nations), but all the European people are in imminent danger of becoming a non-people, because they do not think of themselves and their God in mythic terms. It's not true that we can't go back to the past. We can't literally go back in time, but we most certainly can and must grab hold of those sacred ties of honor and faith that link us to the past. We must be like unto them, the antique Europeans, because they were of mythic Europe, which is our world. We need no other world, nor should we seek any other world.

The liberals treat white *pietas* as a disease that must be stamped out. When I was growing up, they used the Monkey Vomit method of treating the disease (see [The Gingerbread House](#)) — they didn't actually ban the literature and the historical chronicles of the past, they simply poured the monkey vomit of 'racism,' 'sexism,' and 'religious intolerance' on the European past so that our sacred heritage appeared as a loathsome pestilence. Now, although the monkey vomit method is still used, it is not used as often as the iron-fisted ban on all things European. The young people of my generation knew about European history, but they learned about it through the eyes of the Christ-hating, white-hating Jacobin liberals. The young whites of today, more often than not, do not even know anything of old Europe. They only know of that civilization as some hideous monstrosity that must be avoided and combated as a plague should be avoided and combated. And how do you combat a plague? You kill the breeding grounds for the plague.

When the AIDS plague started spreading, the liberals did not close down the gay bath houses which were the breeding grounds for the plague, because they refused to acknowledge that the AIDS epidemic was a plague caused by men acting according to the ethos of liberalism. But white *pietas* is different. That is a plague. And the breeding ground for white *pietas* is the European hearth fire where the Christian, European myth is honored and revered. Should the love that dwells there, for God, for kith, and for kin, spread, the liberals and the colored heathens would be driven to the swamps and the hinterlands of the European nations where they would be treated as a disease that had to be guarded against and combated. I'm well aware of the fact that church, state, academy, and media have declared war on the plague of mythic Europe. And I'm well aware of the fact that they have been quite successful. There seems to be nothing left of the Christ-centered, mythic Europe of the past, but there is a line of George MacDonald's poetry that keeps coming to the forefront of my memory: "Of hopes not credible until they are."⁽¹⁾ If we are still, by some miracle of God's grace, connected to mythic, Christian Europe, then we must act according to the code of the people who dwelt therein, despite the fact that our actions seem a hundredfold more Quixotic than the actions of Don Quixote. All or nothing must be our battle cry. We will settle for nothing less than the Savior, who presides over the Europeans' racial hearth fire, and His kingdom come on earth as it is in Heaven. "In this hope we live" — without that hope, we perish. +

(1) Go, my beloved children, live your life.
Wounded, faint, bleeding, never yield the strife.
Stunned, fallen-awake, arise, and fight again.

Before you victory stands, with shining train
Of hopes not credible until they are.
Beyond morass and mountain swells the star
Of perfect love—the home of longing heart and brain

-Diary of an Old Soul

The Wheel Has Come Full Circle

March 25, 2017

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Religion of Satan

Tags: D. P. Dugauquier, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word. Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. — *Acts 28: 25-28*

The ruling elites and a sizeable portion of the white, gentile, working class populations in every European nation have become spiritual Jews. They have closed their eyes and their hearts to the Son of God. There have been thousands of death-of-the-west type books (and quite possibly if an accurate tally was made, the figure would be higher) since Spengler wrote his famous death-of-the-west book, *The Decline of the West*, in 1918. But the death of Western civilization and the demise of the white race, which founded Western civilization, can be summed up in those four verses of *Acts*. We must not see Jewishness as an exterior sign of a people who were predestined to play the villains in a divine drama. Jewishness is a spiritual disease that can strike any race of people who reject the light of the world. On the cross, while in mortal pain, our Lord spoke of mercy and forgiveness: “Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.” To whom was He referring? Was He referring to the Romans, to the Jews, or to both? I don’t know, quite probably if we look at it from His eyes, which is hard for us to do, He was referring to all those who did not know who He was because of circumstances that were not solely determined by a willful hardness of heart. But what of those who did know who He was and did willfully harden their hearts? Ask not for whom the bell tolls, it tolls for the modern day Jewish gentiles who have hardened their hearts against Christ.

Our destiny as a people and as individuals is centered on this issue of the hardened heart. The poets of Christian Europe knew this, but unfortunately – no ‘unfortunately’ is not the right word, let us say tragically – the theologians did not concern themselves with the heart. But the prophets were concerned with the heart, Christ was concerned with the heart, and so was St. Paul. And if my concordance of the Bible can be trusted, it seems that the prophets, Christ, and St. Paul were obsessed with what was in a man’s heart, because the Bible is filled with references to the heart. If we take the Bible seriously, we must conclude that what is in a man’s heart defines the man.

The drama of the Europeans’ descent from His “kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven” to the kingdom of hell on earth is the drama of the hardened heart. Let us return to Shakespeare’s *Merchant of Venice* in order to fully understand the Europeans’ transformation from Christ bearers to Shylockian Jews, for it is in *The Merchant of Venice* that we see, in the Christian Venetians, what we, as a people, once were. And we see, in Shylock, what we, as a people, have become.

Shylock makes his reasons for hating Antonio quite clear –

*I hate him for he is a Christian.
But more for that in low simplicity
He lends out money gratis, and brings down
The rate of usance here with us in Venice.*

It’s bad enough that Antonio is a Christian, but he becomes a monstrosity to Shylock when he acts according to Christian principles. Our modern liberals, the spiritual heirs of Shylock, hate all professed Christians, but it is the Christians who try to act according to Christian principles who earn their special hatred. It is the uncompromising Europeans, the men and women who champion the Christian things, that receive the liberals’ particular hatred.

Shylock doesn’t get his pound of flesh, because the Venetians, as representatives of Christian Europe, stand “shoulder to shoulder in phalanx” against Shylock’s attempt to turn Christian law, which is of the spirit, into legalese, which is the law of Satan. Scott describes Satan’s strict formalism in his novel *The Black Dwarf*:

Once upon a time this old hag is said to have crossed the moor, driving before her a flock of geese, which she proposed to sell to advantage at a neighbouring fair;—for it is well known that the fiend, however liberal in imparting his powers of doing mischief, ungenerously leaves his allies under the necessity of performing the meanest rustic labours for subsistence. The day was far advanced, and her chance of obtaining a good price depended on her being first at the market. But the geese, which had hitherto preceded her in a pretty orderly manner, when they came to this wide common, interspersed with marshes and pools of water, scattered in every direction, to plunge into the element in which they delighted. Incensed at the obstinacy with which they defied all her efforts to collect them, and not remembering the precise terms of the contract by which the fiend was bound to obey her commands for a certain space, the sorceress exclaimed, “Deevil, that neither I nor they ever stir from this spot more!” The words were hardly uttered, when, by a metamorphosis as sudden as any in Ovid, the hag and her refractory flock were converted into stone, the angel whom she served, being a strict formalist, grasping eagerly at an opportunity of completing the ruin of her body and soul by a literal obedience to her orders. It is said, that when she perceived and felt the transformation which was about to take place, she exclaimed to the treacherous fiend, “Ah, thou false thief! lang hast thou promised me a grey gown, and now I am getting ane that will last for ever.”

It was the fate of the Jews to see a small sect of Nazarenes, the devotees of a blasphemer, become the rulers of a world in which they were a small, hated sect. Now the wheel has come full circle: the Shylockian liberals rule the world and the Christian Europeans are a small, hated sect in that world. Is there a symmetry of faiths, first one side rules and then another with no difference between the two? No, the liberals’ Shylockian world is devoid of mercy; it is a return to paganism. The entire Old Testament is a struggle between belief in the God of Isaiah and belief in the nature gods to whom the Israelites continually return. Once Isaiah’s prophecies were fulfilled and the majority of the Jews rejected the Light, the Gentiles, the Europeans, became the Christ-bearers –

And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads: I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles. – Acts 18:6

What does Shylock say at the trial? “My deeds upon my head! I crave the law, the penalty and forfeit of my bond.” Thus it is and always shall be. The blasphemers crave the law, the law devoid of the mercy of God. It is the devil’s formalism which will ultimately bring ruin upon the men of the hardened hearts who look to Satan for salvation.

Shylock asserted that the Christian Europeans were like all other people, they were without mercy, because mercy does not exist. But what happens when Shylock himself is caught in the clutches of his own mind-forged merciless law? The man who would not extend mercy receives mercy:

Por. Shylock, there's thrice thy money offer'd thee.

*Shy. An oath, an oath, I have an oath in heaven:
Shall I lay perjury upon my soul?
No, not for Venice.*

*Por. Why, this bond is forfeit;
And lawfully by this the Jew may claim
A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off
Nearest the merchant's heart:—Be merciful;
Take thrice thy money; bid me tear the bond.*

*Shy. When it is paid according to the tenour.
It doth appear you are a worthy judge;
You know the law, your exposition
Hath been most sound: I charge you by the law,
Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar;
Proceed to judgment: by my soul I swear,
There is no power in the tongue of man
To alter me: I stay here on my bond.*

And when he is caught?

*Por. Thou has contriv'd against the very life
Of the defendant; and thou has incur'd
The danger formerly by me rehears'd
Down therefore and beg mercy of the Duke.*

And then there is that incredible, breathtaking response of the Christian, European Duke: “That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit, I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it.” Of course there is a condition placed on Shylock: he must conform, at least outwardly, to the ethos of Christianity. There will be no more pound of flesh money lending. The modern critics who see nothing but European cruelty in Shylock’s forced conversion are willfully blind. Shylock has shown himself opposed to the light, and he must be prevented from attacking the people who have infused that light into their civilization. It is a miracle of God’s grace that Shylock’s life is spared. And Shylock does not have to be Shylock. He can be like his daughter who responds to the light and becomes a Christian.

Portia assumes the mantle of Christ in the fourth act, which is the climactic act, and then reverts in the fifth act to a playful, giddy school girl. That Shakespeare places a divine drama within a comedy should not make us dismissive of what the play entails. Are not our lives like unto [The Merchant of Venice](#)? Amidst the trivialities of life we are involved in the great drama of salvation – we can side with Satan and his legions, who have hardened their hearts against the light, or we can bend our knees to the God of mercy, who is Christ the Lord.

Bassanio is a bumbling everyman, like all of the gentile Europeans, but he has that within him which is the stuff that Christendom was built on. When he steps forth and chooses the leaden casket over the gold and silver caskets, he exhibits the moral vision that separates the European people from all others.

*So may the outward shows be least themselves;
The world is still deceiv'd with ornament.
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt,
But, being season'd with a gracious voice,
Obscures the show of evil? In religion,
What damned error; but some sober brow
Will bless it and approve it with a text,
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament?
There is no vice so simple, but assumes
Some mark of virtue on his outward parts.
Thus ornament is but the guiled shore
To a most dangerous sea; the beauteous scarf
Veiling an Indian beauty. Therefore, thou gaudy gold,
Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee:
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge
'Tween man and man. But thou, thou meagre lead,
Which rather threat'nest than dost promise aught,
Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence,
And here choose I. Joy be the consequence!*

Yes! The Europeans chose Christ’s mercy over Satan’s law, the law of the hardened heart. And joy was indeed the consequence. It was not the joy of utopia, a joy that is always postponed into a future that those living in the present will never know, but it was a real joy, the joy that comes to us, within this veil of tears, when we realize that our death and our loved ones’ deaths have been destroyed by Christ’s love:

*Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;
And there reigns Love, and all Love's loving parts,
And all those friends which I thought buried.
How many a holy and obsequious tear
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye,
As interest of the dead, which now appear
But things removed that hidden in thee lie!
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,
Who all their parts of me to thee did give,
That due of many now is thine alone:*

*Their images I loved, I view in thee,
And thou (all they) hast all the all of me.*

-Shakespeare's Sonnet 31

What a people we once were to believe all our buried loves still lived with the God whose mercy passeth the understanding of the mind, but can be known by those who have not hardened their hearts like unto the unrepentant Jews.

We have come full circle. The liberals, who stand with Shylock, rule. We are governed not by the law of mercy, but by the law of the hardened hearts. There can be no living under or compromise with the Shylockian Europeans. In the confirmation hearings of Gorsuch, the much lauded (by conservatives) candidate for the Supreme Court, there was a telling moment when he defended Trump's right to criticize the judges of the 9th Circuit Court, but then went on to admonish anyone who criticized the motives of those sainted judges. For shame, you hideous, treacherous, backsliding, halfway-house Christian. Of course we must criticize the motives of the 9th Circuit Judges. Like Shylock they have made it abundantly clear whom they serve, and whom they hate. They serve Satan and they hate the Christ-bearing race. They crave the law, the satanic law that allows for a pound of flesh nearest the heart to be taken from every white European that remains connected to His Europe. The history of the European people in the latter half of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st century is a history of rats fleeing a sinking ship. But they knew not what they flee to. They flee to the hell-bound ship. Christ is still at the helm of Europe and He will sustain all of those who do not abandon His European vessel.

There can never be a blending of Shylockian law and Christian law, the law that is above "the sceptered sway" and is enthroned in the hearts of Christian kings. But there can be a blending of the colored heathens and the Shylockian liberals, because the colored heathens, like the liberals, do not believe in the Christian God. The liberal has hardened his heart against the merciful God and the colored heathen's heart remains hardened, because his savage heart cannot comprehend a God of mercy:

The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thorns upon His head, excited cries of 'Pika! Pika!' rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black men's back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force. —D. P. Dugauquier, Congo Cauldron

Thus the two races, the colored heathens and the Judaized Europeans, are joined in an inharmonious union grounded in a hatred of the Light of the world. The halfway-house rationalist Christians will only go so far with the European Christians. There is a line they will not cross. They will not leave the world of law, of Jewish law, and return to the world depicted in Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*. Why won't the halfway-house Christians cross the line? Because they are Christian utopians, they want the French Revolution without all the beheadings. But that is what utopia is all about, Mr. Rational, Anti-racist Christian. It is about the execution of Christian kings and the extermination of the white, Christ-bearing race. Side with Shylock, while mildly chiding him for his bloodthirstiness, if you must, but don't tell me that you are taking the Christian middle ground. There is no Christian middle ground. You either cross the line and stand with Shakespeare's Venetians or else you stand with Shylock and the devil. +

Where Does Faith Dwell?

April 1, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: de Dekker



Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.
But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

-Matthew 19: 13-14

Love now consists in word and not in deed,
Faith depends on reason not on the Scriptures, as it used to be;
Religion has ascended from the heart to the head
It now dwells in the brains, and the heart, alas! is empty.

-Jeremias de Dekker

The liberals' response to the recent Islamic terror attack was the standard response. Theresa May said there is no such thing as an Islamic terrorist attack, there are only *Islamist* terror attacks, which means (when translated) that no true Moslem ever does anything evil. And the Moslem mayor of London told us that we have to 'accept' a certain amount of Islamic terror attacks if we live in a major city. Why must we accept such attacks? I suppose we must accept such attacks because Tony Blair and his ilk have told us that we must be culturally diverse.

Then there is the Britain First party, the party that claims to be for Britons first, but its proponents do not believe in a white Britain. They believe in a multi-racial Britain in which people of all races sing "God Bless the Queen." What was their response to the Moslem attack? Jayda Fransen told her fellow Brits to come out and protest. From whence comes this mystical faith in protests? Do protests work? Yes, they work if those in power are sympathetic to your cause. The British government wanted to get out of India because they were sick of the white man's burden, so they responded to Gandhi's protests. The U. S. government wanted to establish black supremacy throughout the United States, so they responded to the black protest movements. But when the whites in Kenya lined the streets to protest the British government's plan to turn Kenya over to the Mau Maus, the whites' protests were ignored. And when proliferators in the U.S. got signs, Bibles, and rosaries out to protest the slaughter of the innocents, their protests fell on deaf ears and hearts of stone. When will white people realize that liberals do evil because they are evil? They will not respond to anti-Moslem protests because they want to see the Islamic flag over England's green and pleasant land and they want to build the kingdom of Satan on earth with the blood of the innocents in the womb and the blood of the irredeemable white race. You can't protest such creatures away. Would there have been a Western civilization if Charles Martel had waited unto the Moslems had entered Europe, slaughtered over half the population, and conquered Europe, before he got off the couch and marched around with a protest sign deplored the Moslem invasion?

The boast of Britain, the United States, Sweden, Holland, and so many of the Western nations is that they have peaceful transitions of power from one democratic administration to the next. (That has changed slightly in the U.S. due to Trump's victory.) But if you have peacefully turned your country over to satanic liberals and colored heathens is that something to brag about? And if, once you have turned your nation over to the forces of Satan, you pat yourself on the back for confining your protests to letters to the editor and protest marches, should you be proud of your pacifism? Peaceful protests are only effective when you are protesting something, such as garbage removal, that the powers that be do not have a vested interest in opposing. But to peacefully protest the extermination of an entire race of people and the murder of the innocents is not only counter-productive, it is immoral. If you and your family were being besieged by an armed force of colored marauders and government storm troopers, would you feel comforted if your "friends" said they were going to organize a march to protest the murder of you and your family? This issue of European survival is a very basic, provincial issue; it cannot be universalized away any longer. It is not an abstraction that is being slaughtered, it is our people.

Before proceeding any further let me respond to the American exceptionalists. Every time a European nation has an Islamic terrorist attack, and most particularly when there is a terror attack in Britain, the American nationalists, the exceptionalists, come out of the woodwork to 1) insult the manhood of the Britons, and 2) to laud the exceptional nature of America - 'It can't happen here because... well, because we are Americans and we are immune from the problems of Europe.' But such is not the case. The United States is only exceptional in a negative sense. Unlike the nations of Europe, the United States never had a traditional, Christian, European government. Our government was always secular and always committed to the destruction of all things Christian and all things European. The Southern rebellion was a rebellion of the European people against liberty, equality, and fraternity. It ended in the 1950s when the Southern people finally decided to love the negro.

What is exceptional about America, other than its exceptional anti-European origins? Haven't we surrendered to the same anti-European forces that are destroying Europe? Are Americans committed to driving the Moslems from their nation? Have Americans made any attempt to end the negroes' reign of murder, rape, and pillage? The mere ownership of guns does not make American men more manly than the males of Britain and other European nations who do not own guns. If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride, and if gun ownership in and of itself made a man a man, we would not have a white genocide crisis; we would have a land without Moslems, a land in which blacks were segregated from whites, and a land in which liberals were locked up instead of given positions of power and authority. There is something greater than Americanism and guns that is needed before Britain, America, and all the nations of Europe can become the green and pleasant lands they once were.

The Christian theologians do not like phrases such as "England's green and pleasant land" because such descriptions of European nations suggest that there was something called Christian Europe that was distinct from and better than the non-European nations. How can that be, since murder, lust, avarice, and all the other deadly sins can be found in Europe as well as in the non-European nations? The theologians are morally blind, because they see with their mind's eye instead of through their heart's eye. If you read straight European history you will see only the external events. But if you see European history "feelingly" through the eyes of the heart as such poets as Scott, Shakespeare, and Dickens do, you will see a Europe that differs from the Europe that the analytical theologians see. You will see that there once was a living, breathing entity called Christian Europe. What their wisdoms, the theologians, could not bring to light, was brought to light by the European bards' faithful chronicles of their people. The bards saw through a glass darkly, but they did see, they saw that Jesus Christ was the founder of European civilization.

The colored heathens have a great advantage over the modern Europeans. The colored heathens are not divided against themselves. They see life as barbarians see life and they act accordingly. But the Europeans are different. Some, such as the liberals and the neo-pagans, think they have left Christianity behind, but their rejection of Christianity has not been total: they reject Christ's divinity but they retain a Christian eschatology. The liberal sees a brave, new utopian world, devoid of white men and presided over by noble black savages while the neo-pagan sees a utopian future of great white minds ruling over a world of inferior minds. But in both cases, the liberal and the neo-pagan, it is the Christian belief that history has an end that comes to the forefront. No pagan Greek thought that history had an end; history was circular, not linear, to the Greek. Nietzsche said he wanted to go back to the pagan Greeks, but his Übermensch is of the future not the past. The liberal and the neo-pagan try to be like unto the pagans, but they always fail. What they achieve is the worst of all possible worlds. They have no God to guide them, yet they believe in moving forward. Toward what? Toward whom? They don't know. [\(1\)](#)

The modern Christian is also operating under a considerable disadvantage. He wants to be a Christian in the liberals' anti-Christian world without fighting against liberalism. If he leaves the God who had a local habitation (Europe) and a name (Jesus Christ) behind, he can be an intellectual Christian who gets to affirm his religious faith while rejecting the antique Europeans. The modern Christian, who is an apostate Christian that serves the devil, always appeals to the conscience of the liberal ruling class when he wants to stop something like legalized abortion or the Islamic invasion. But he is acting according to the older Christian European ethos, which he has repudiated, when he makes such protests. He refuses to see that only believing Christian Europeans will be concerned about the human things. Inhuman liberals do not care about man's inhumanity toward man. If you want the benefits of living in a truly Christian society you cannot allow liberals to rule nor can you keep a foot in each world. If you are not an all or nothing Christian, fully committed to your people and their God, you will be a divided man, completely incapable of fighting against the enemies of your people and their God.

The squabbles between the neo-pagans, the liberals, the conservatives, and the intellectual Christians are family quarrels. They differ, but they all stay in the family. Judge Gorsuch was a perfect example of that family togetherness when he said you could disagree with the 9th Circuit Court judges' opinions, but you must not question their motives. The Britain First protestors and the pro-lifers also represent the 'one family' belief of the whites who no longer have a white identity – they peacefully protest white genocide and infanticide as if they are politely disagreeing on the food to be served at Grandma's 90th birthday party. [\(2\)](#) What binds these people together when, by their professed beliefs, they should be mortal enemies? They are bound together by their willingness to cut off all ties to the Europeans of the past. The liberal and the neo-pagan must sever all ties to the past in order to build their new dystopian worlds. And the rationalist Christian must sever all ties to the antique Europeans because he also envisions a brave new world, a world where pure Christianity, shorn of the racism, sexism, and the anti-Semitism of the old European Christianity can thrive and flourish. The rationalist, New Age Christian never asks himself why nothing good has come from the new blended Christianity. He just blindly affirms Christianity while undermining faith in Christ by repudiating the people who gave Him a place by their racial hearth fire.

If we look at the great divide between old Europe, in which Europeans fought to protect their racial hearth fire, and new Europe, in which the Europeans do not fight to protect their racial hearth fire, we see one striking difference: The men and women of old Europe had a childlike faith in Christ; they were not afraid to be considered stupid by clever people. That is the devil's temptation. He always depicts a childlike faith as a stupid faith.

In the Garden of Eden Satan told Adam and Eve not to be fooled by God – they were told that only stupid idiots believed God's story about the forbidden fruit. And we must not be stupid, we must be smart, like the devil. C. S. Lewis depicts this 'don't be stupid' gambit of the devil in his book called *The Last Battle*. The dwarfs refuse to acknowledge the grace of God, because they don't want to be stupid.

Our ancestors believed that the foolishness of God was wiser than the wisdom of men. They believed in the greatest fairy tale ever told, and because they believed in that fairy tale of the Christ, they slew pagan dragons, fought wicked liberal wizards and witches, and married women who were, spiritually, fair princesses. There is no magic formula that a modern rational-minded man can concoct to connect us to old Europe. We can only reconnect to those people through the human heart. If we don't do that we will surely perish. If we do reconnect with those people we shall not perish as a people nor shall we die in pagan despair, we shall rise again through Christ our Lord. The two resurrections are intimately connected, the 'like unto a child' faith in Christ is our people's only hope, as well as our own personal hope that He has gone to prepare a place for us. +

(1) Neither the European Christian nor the pagan Greek viewed history as something that was evolving toward a kingdom of heaven on earth. That pernicious heresy is a product of neo-paganism, liberalism, and intellectual Christianity.

(2) The California state court has decided to prosecute the people who released the tapes of Planned Parenthood employees talking about harvesting the body parts of the babies they had slaughtered. Do we really want to keep acting like our disagreements with liberals are family squabbles that can be peacefully resolved through the democratic process?

Counter-Revolutions Start in the Hearts of Men

April 8, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism

Tags: Rembrandt, St. Paul, Walter Scott



Welcome be your sentence—I am weary of your yoke of iron. A light beams on my soul. Woe to those who seek justice in the dark haunts of mystery and of cruelty! She dwells in the broad blaze of the sun, and Mercy is ever by her side. Woe to those who would advance the general weal by trampling upon the social affections! they aspire to be more than men—they shall become worse than tigers. I go:—better for me your altars should be stained with my blood, than my soul blackened with your crimes.

-Walter Scott in [The House of Aspen](#)

In Ian Maclaren's book *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*, in the chapter "[His Mother's Sermon](#)," he tells us of a young preacher who is all set to deliver his first sermon in the true modern style, using phrases such as "Semitic environment," but then he thinks of the dying request of his mother: "Speak a gude word for Jesus Christ," and he delivers a simple sermon in which he honors his mother's request:

It was no masterpiece, but only the crude production of a lad who knew little of letters and nothing of the world. Very likely it would have done neither harm nor good, but it was his best, and he gave it for love's sake, and I suppose that there is nothing in a human life so precious to God, neither clever words nor famous deeds, as the sacrifices of love.

Throughout his Drumtochty stories, Maclaren sets the Christ of the Gospels over and against the theological Christ, the Christ that the men of the hardened hearts find in their abstract theories about God. It is the theological men that are furthest from God, because they have emptied their hearts of all natural affections in the mistaken notion that men have no natural affections that lead them to God. In the minds of the theological men, all natural affections are in a lesser, biological realm, divorced from the supernatural virtues of the mind. This conflict between the theological Christian and the natural, hearth fire Christian represents the conflict between Satan and Christ. Satan never failed, in all the European centuries, to have an impact on Christian civilization, but it was not till the 20th century that Satan, not Christ, became the spiritual ruler of Europe.

Satan became the ruler of Europe through the theological back door of Christendom. The provincial Christ who enters human hearts was and always shall be the heart and soul of the Christian faith. But that faith, the faith in Jesus Christ, was always in competition with the "smart" faith, the faith in systems about God, created by the human mind. The Satanic playwright of unhappy memory, George Bernard Shaw, points out in his preface to *Back to Methuselah* that it was not paganism that destroyed the Europeans' faith in Christ, it was science. But I would amend that assertion and say that science is the white man's paganism. He worships nature through science. Why has the European returned to paganism through science? Because the moral virtues are not cumulative. Each generation cannot show moral improvement over the previous generation. Everyman, that but man is, must "walk that lonesome valley by himself." He can take inspiration from his ancestors' faith in Christ, but they cannot hand him the inner strength to embrace that faith and see the shadow of the cross in everything he does. But scientific knowledge, which is cumulative, is the tool of the devil, because Satan can use man's fascination with scientific advances to deceive him as the witches deceived [Macbeth](#) on the heath:

*That trusted home,
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown,
Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,
Win us with honest trifles, to betray's
In deepest consequence.*

Yes, the European man has allowed himself to be betrayed in deepest consequence. He equates scientific knowledge with morality, science means intelligence, and intelligence is virtue. So it follows that the unvirtuous, the non-scientific Europeans, should be damned. The Europeans who still maintain their Christian faith have embraced the scientized Christianity of liberals such as Teilhard de Chardin and Pope Francis. That type of faith is the non-faith, the fusionist faith, that St. John warns us about in the Book of Revelation. And the more secularized liberals have simply inverted Christianity, making the intellect of man the father, the colored savage the savior, and science the holy ghost. There has been no Christian counter-attack against the liberals' demonic faith, because the "Christians" will not attack the liberals' trinity; they will not blaspheme against the liberals' holy ghost. We must all bow down before the science that tells us biology is all, only the scientific-minded man can see the truth, which is that the biologically natural man, the colored savage, is God. Against this scientific Christianity, who dares to point to the Christ depicted by Rembrandt in his sketch of *The Adoration of the Shepherds with the Lamp* (1654)?



In that painting, Rembrandt surpasses the studied formalism of the other Renaissance painters and shows us Christ's divinity through his humanity. The simple Jesus, meek and mild, is the true Savior of the world. We all believed that once, "not without cause," so why is falsehood, the theology of science, more appealing to us now?

Our modern universities were all outgrowths of the various churches. They were originally divinity schools where young men (only later did they include young women) learned about God. Of course, the universities were a complete failure. You cannot learn about God by studying God in the abstract. If we believe that the "Word was made flesh and dwelt among us," and if we truly want to know Him in spirit and truth, then we should look to the people who took the incarnate Lord into their hearts. But that is not what happened in the Christian colleges. Against the natural tendencies (I mean natural in the spiritual, not the biological sense) of man, the Christian academics did not look to the incarnate Christ, the Christ of the Gospels and the European hearth fire, they looked to the cosmic Christ who could be universalized into a product of the natural world. By killing the natural affections, what the liberals call racism, the Christian academics paved the way for the Christ who was a subordinate God to nature and nature's gods, such as Mohammed and the sacred negro. The more secularized liberals took the universalist Christianity of the Christian colleges and made that Christianity the new anti-Christianity of the modern Europeans. The offspring of the Christian academics have turned their parents into their children. The modern clerics never take a step without the approval of academia, which has become *in loco parentis* to the clergymen. The late John Paul II, also of unhappy memory, used to meet with academics every week in order to make sure his faith was up to the standards of academia.

I have spent more time in academia than is good for a man's soul. You are forever washing the spiritual slime from your soul when you are surrounded by academics. But there are no longer safe havens from the academic plague. The universities are the satanic factories, but there are adjunct factories in town and country throughout every European nation. There are no peasants anymore. And by peasants I am not referring to those who till the soil. I am referring to the European Christians who used to live apart from academia and its tributaries, the men who worshipped the Christ in Rembrandt's *Adoration of the Shepherds* by their racial hearth fire. There are no such hearth fires anymore because the ironclad liberalism of academia has enveloped all of Europe. The liberals have justified their war on the natural affections of the European peasant with the war cry of "racism." But we can only know God through Christ and we can only know Christ through the natural affections, our love for kith and kin. So where does liberalism leave us? It leaves us in Merlin's hollow oak after he surrendered his soul to Vivien; it leaves us bereft of our people and our God.

There is one man that the liberals hate above all other men. That man is St. Paul. Very few liberals will attack Christ head-on. They neutralize Him by making Him a civil rights worker, a focal point for Marxist revolutions, or a thousand and one other roles that serve liberalism. But St. Paul can't be neutralized. He will not allow any other vision of Christ than the true vision – Christ is the son of God. What can be done with such an unpolitic, uncompromising man? He must be killed. And St. Paul was killed, but his people, the gentiles, followed in his train. Have they all been killed? Are there no Europeans left who believe that charity, the charity inspired by the love of Christ, never faileth? I once, while browsing in a Daughters of St. Paul bookstore, saw a copy of Peter Kreeft's book *Ecumenical Jihad*. I went up to the front desk and told the nun that she should destroy that book. When she asked me why, I told her that St. Paul, who they claimed as their patron saint, would not have approved of a book that blended Christ with Islam and Judaism. This is the modern alliance, the alliance of intellectual Christianity and liberalism, which the Europeans must reject—"A plague on both your houses,"—and return to the Christ that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus.

Successful counter-revolutions end with victories on the battlefield. But successful counter-revolutions start in the hearts of men. Nothing good will happen in the European nations so long as the Europeans remain allied with the hard-hearted academics in church and state who have declared war on the white man's natural affections. The colored barbarians and the Moslems are very adept at murder, rape, and pillage, but they are not good at soldiering. They cannot defeat Europeans on the battlefield. If—and that 'if' is all in all—the European people regain their natural affection for their own people, and for the Christ of old Europe, there will be no Moslem or colored barbarian conquest of the white nations.

Charles Robert Maturin, in his novel *Melmoth the Wanderer*, and Sir Walter Scott, in his play *The House of Aspen*, have shown us quite frightening glimpses of "religious" men who have only an intellectual faith in their mind-forged systems. They have faith without hope and without charity, because they treat the natural human affections as diseases to be stamped out. Is this not what our liberal governments throughout Europe have done and continue to do? They have issued an imperial decree condemning white pietas. The white man must have no natural affections. And he can't appease the liberal powers-that-be by denouncing his natural affections for his people and his God. He is still guilty. The white man is always guilty, no matter what he does. It's a terrible thing to stand condemned before a tribunal of Shylockian liberals, devoid of mercy.

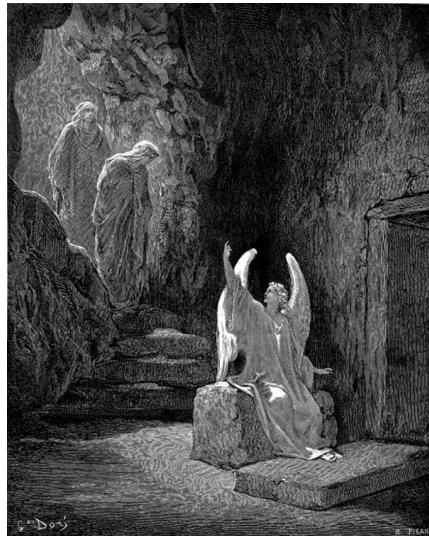
All seems cheerless, dark, and deadly now, just as it must have seemed cheerless, dark, and deadly to St. John when he knelt at the foot of the cross. Our people once believed that Good Friday was good, because He rose again on the third day. I don't see why we have to succumb to the liberals' science when Christ has overcome science and the powers of this world. If it appears hopeless then let us appeal to the "help of the helpless," let us appeal to the European Christ who comes to us through the natural affections. We will stay with the Christ of the European hearth fire in spite of, and in defiance of, the liberals and their master, who is and always shall be the Archangel Satan. +

The Morning of the Third Day

April 15, 2017

Categories: Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Charles Robert Maturin, de Dekker, Le Fanu



Good Friday, Seventh scene, "Christ Crucified"

'Well, what is this?' (you cry). 'What is this that we see?
Why should the heavens cry?
Why should they take away
The brightness of the sun just at the height of day?'

The heavens, you rogues, now mourn to see their Lord's distress;
Shamed by your ruthlessness,
Block out this awful sight:
To see him die, who is the Father of their light.

The clouds which hide the sun from all earth's teeming crowds
Are your sin's darkening clouds.
I hear him? Yes, he shouts.
What anguished cry of death now from these clouds bursts out?

Ah, me, it is my Lord! He suffers now his worst.
From hell we hear it burst-
The devils watch in glee-
'My God, my God, oh, why hast thou forsaken me?'

It is the voice of man, the voice of all who fell
Into the pit of hell;
As one we broke God's law,
And thus, in one, in him, we are forsaken now.

God's loved one hangs today (Oh, pain too deep for words)
Forsaken by God's love,
That he once more might send
God's friendly love on us, who hated God, our Friend!

Jeremias de Dekker

It is not easy to recall in calm and happy hours the sensations of an acute sorrow that is past. Nothing, by the merciful ordinance of God, is more difficult to remember than pain. One or two great agonies of that time I do remember, and they remain to testify of the rest, and convince me, though I can see it no more, how terrible all that period was.

Next day was the funeral, that appalling necessity; smuggled away in whispers, by black familiars, unresisting, the beloved one leaves home, without a farewell, to darken those doors no more; henceforward to lie outside, far away, and forsaken, through the drowsy heats of summer, through days of snow and nights of tempest, without light or warmth, without a voice near. Oh, Death, king of terrors! The body quakes and the spirit faints before thee. It is vain, with hands clasped over our eyes, to scream our reclamation; the horrible image will not be excluded. We have just the word spoken eighteen hundred years ago, and our trembling faith. And through the broken vault the gleam of the Star of Bethlehem.

Uncle Silas by J. S. LeFanu

But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive.

1 Corinthians 15: 20-22

The story of the Christian Europeans is contained in one short passage from St. John, Chapter 20, verse 8: "Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed." Mary Magdalene saw the empty tomb and wept, "Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him." The Jews saw the empty tomb

and put out the story that Jesus's disciplines had stolen the body. But let us go back to St. John. Why did he see the empty tomb and believe? Was it because he knew the prophetic parts of the Scriptures? No, he tells us that he did not yet know that part of the scriptures. So the question stands before us – How did he know? He knew that Christ was risen because he, John, was the apostle who laid his head on Christ's sacred heart at the last supper. And it was John who knelt at the foot of the cross during the crucifixion. So who but John, the man who stayed through the dark night of the crucifixion, would we expect to see the dawn of Christ's resurrection in the empty tomb? Gloucester saw without his outer eyes, because he saw life "feelingly." And so it was with John, the apostle whom Christ loved. John loved much — he saw life feelingly through the inner eye — and as a result he saw the empty tomb and he believed.

Our Lord said to Thomas, "Thomas, because thou has seen me, thou has believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed." That was our people's story. They did not see Christ with the exterior eye, but they did, like St. John, kneel at the foot of the cross, and they joined their hearts to His sacred heart. They became the people whom Christ blessed, because they believed without the empirical proof that comes to us from viewing life with the exterior eye. The Europeans believed, with only the proof that comes from the inner eye, the eye of the heart.

The Europeans' return to paganism, through science, has left them without the Savior. The atheist Pope and the other devotees and minsters in the worldwide ecumenical 'Church of Jesus Christ without Jesus Christ,' will not celebrate the resurrection of Jesus Christ on Easter Sunday. They will celebrate a mind-forged creation of liberalism, they will honor a prophet who is almost, but not quite, the equal of Mohammed, and who is inferior to the sacred negro. That is the current spiritual state of the European people. We are no longer the people who believe that Christ's crucifixion is the prelude to His glorious resurrection from the dead. We are now the people who see only an ecumenical Christ who was crucified, died, and was buried. We do not see the Christ who was crucified, died, and was buried, and then, on the third day rose again from the dead. Without that faith in the risen Lord, the King of Kings, we are perishing as a people. Swedes, Englishmen, and all the European people are naked to their enemies – the liberals, the colored barbarians, and the Moslems – because they no longer believe, in their hearts, that Christ rose from the dead.

Charles Robert Maturin was not considered a great writer during his lifetime. He wrote in relative obscurity, receiving praise and recognition from only one man – Sir Walter Scott. After Maturin's death, his book *Melmoth the Wanderer* became popular as a Gothic horror story, but the book is not a Gothic horror classic. It is a book like unto *Uncle Silas* (which is also called a Gothic horror classic), and also like unto Dostoyevsky's novels. There is deep probing into the subterranean cellars of the human soul in Maturin's masterpiece, but there is also redemption. Maturin believes in the light of the world. If you only judge *Melmoth the Wanderer* by external events you might call it a "dark" novel. But if you really see the author's vision you will come away from the book feeling much like you feel at the end of King Lear. There is no doubt that Maturin, like Shakespeare, ultimately believes that the light will overcome the darkness.

Melmoth sells his soul to the devil and then sets out to wander the world in search of other human beings who are willing, in the face of personal tragedy and suffering, to alleviate their personal suffering in return for their "eternal jewel." But Melmoth fails. No one he meets, despite being tempted, ever sells their soul to gain the world.

No one has ever exchanged destinies with Melmoth the Wanderer. I have traversed the world in the search, and no one, to gain that world, would lose his own soul! –Not Stanton in his cell – nor you, Moncada, in the prison of the Inquisition –nor Walberg, who saw his children perishing with want – nor—another—

Melmoth failed, because the love of Christ still lived in the hearts of the European people. They loved much, they had not yet become intellectual Christians who sneered, like Melmoth, at all things human and all things Christian, labeling the union of the two as "sentimentalism." But now, Melmoth has triumphed. The European people are willing to sell their souls to gain the world. And ironically, such is always the way with the devil, the Europeans have lost not only their souls, they have also lost the world for which they gave their souls. It is not just Christian Europe which has died; liberal Europe is dying as well. The devil is the great betrayer, he does not care about human beings; in fact he detests them. All those who bargain with him for the things of this world will be betrayed in deepest consequence.

The Moslem invasion of Sweden is a perfect example of the devil's double dealing. Sweden seemed to be a white paradise in the 1950s and 1960s. They had fused socialism and capitalism, avoiding the extremes of both. But they sold their souls to achieve that paradise. Along with their material prosperity came legalized abortion, pornography and an acceptance of race mixing. They no longer had hearts that loved Christ, they loved the world. And now the white paradise has become hell: the Swedes have lost their souls and the world. But Sweden is not an isolated cesspool of liberalism within Europe. All the European nations have the same plague. They have all sold their souls to the devil, and the organized anti-Christian Christian churches have been the Europeans' conduits to the devil. They have given religious sanction to liberalism by making the antique Europeans and the God they worshipped into demons. What the ghost of Christmas present said about Christmas, that we should keep Christmas in our hearts for all 365 days of the year, also applies to Good Friday and Easter. We should keep Christ's crucifixion and resurrection in our hearts for 365 days of the year. How could I even think of my deceased parents without Christ's birth, death on the cross, and His resurrection in my heart? How can I, or any man, face that terror of terrors without the whole Christian vision in his heart?

The cultural war is a war of faith. The liberals want the Europeans to give up their sentimental attachment to a fairy tale in exchange for... For what? For the negro? For Islam? For the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth? This Easter and every Easter hereafter let us remember that it is Christ, the Christ of Europe, who is and always shall be, "the grave where buried love doth live." +

Ponies, Politics, and the Eternal Romance

April 22, 2017

Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Richard Weaver, Robert Louis Stevenson



This brings us to the necessity of concluding that the upholders of mere dialectic, whether they appear in this modern form or in another, are among the most subversive enemies of society and culture. They are attacking an ultimate source of cohesion in the interest of a doctrine which can issue only in nullity. It is no service to man to impugn his feeling about the world qua feeling. Feeling is the source of that healthful tension between man and what is – both objectively and subjectively. If man could be brought to believe that all feeling about the world is wrong, there would be nothing for him but collapse.

—Richard Weaver

Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

—John 11: 25-26

Once, after I returned from a work-related trip, my oldest daughter, who was only four at the time, burst into tears upon my return, despite the fact that I had brought her what I thought was a nice present. It was quite some time (about two years) before she told me why she had cried. She cried because I had not brought a pony home with me. Now, we lived in the city and had virtually no yard. And I never told her I was going to bring a pony home for her. But she loved ponies, and in her mind daddies were supposed to give their daughters their hearts' desires. My daughter is grown now, but I'm still not sure if I've ever been completely forgiven for my failure to bring home a pony.

The conservative nationalists' reactions to Trump's early days in his presidency remind me of my daughter's reaction to my failure to bring home a pony. Trump is being treated as a great betrayer for breaking promises he never made. He never said he wouldn't act militarily when he thought it was in the nation's best interest. He never said he was going to stop all Moslem and Mexican immigration, and he never said he was going to do anything to change the negro worshipping essence of our nation. As regards the Syrian bombing, I'm willing to trust Trump's instincts over the libertarian reasoning of Rand Paul and his ilk. And regarding the Moslem, Mexican, and negro issues – I would like to see all Moslems, Mexicans, and negroes evicted from this nation and every other European nation, but I can't blame Trump for breaking his promises to me, because he never promised to evict the Moslems, Mexicans, and negroes from the United States.

I think the neo-pagans' and the white nationalists' disappointment in Trump is rooted in their belief in the false Messiah called the democratic process. They have invested all their faith, which is a 'this world only' faith, in democracy. And they have done so despite the fact that the great Christian conservatives, such as Burke, Shakespeare, and Anthony Jacob insisted that no European nation could survive as a democracy. Even the pagan Greeks, whom the neos and the conservative nationalists admire so much, did not believe in democracy. The much lauded Athenian democracy was not a modern democracy. Only white, male property owners had the vote. And even that democracy would not have survived the Persian wars if the Spartans, the men from an aristocratic military society, had not defended the pass at Thermopylae while the rest of the Greek city states squabbled.

The neo-pagans and the white nationalists are disgusted with Trump. I have a different view. He has exceeded my expectations. That is because I never looked on him as anything other than a rear guard. He has saved some white lives through executive orders on abortion and immigration, and he is trying, without the support of the Republicans or the Democrats, to build the wall. What more can we expect? Is there anyone in the ranks of the neos or the conservative nationalists who seriously think anybody else can do better than Donald Trump? What Trump has done is nothing compared to what must be done if whites are to survive as a people. But Trump has done everything that can be done within the confines of our modern democratic system. So stop the overblown rhetoric about Trump's 'betrayal' and start thinking about the destruction of democracy. That, not the demonization of Donald Trump, should be the white man's concern.

The intangible called 'sentiment' is at the root of the conflict between the mad-dog liberals, the neo-pagans, the white nationalists, and the Christian Europeans. The mad-dog liberals, the neo-pagans, and the white nationalists think Christian Europe is sentimental mush. Whereas I get all sentimental and teary-eyed over books like *Beside the Bonnie Briar Bush* and Dickens' *Christmas Carol*, the mad-dog liberals get all sentimental about the negro and the other colored races. And the hard-eyed 'realistic' thinkers in the ranks of the neo-pagans and the white nationalist – what do they get sentimental about? They get sentimental about democracy, think tanks, and white brain cells. The latter group can fool the Christian European, at least for a time. You assume they must love the antique Europeans because they seem to be opposed to the mad-dog liberals, but then you discover that they, like the mad-dog liberals, think the antique Europeans were full of the wrong type of sentiment – they didn't have their priorities straight. But is it possible to be a white neo-pagan or a white nationalist while hating the Christian Europeans of old Europe? That is like a literature professor I knew. He claimed to love the works of Dostoyevsky – except for all the "Christian rot." How can you love Dostoyevsky and hate the "Christian rot"? The essence of Dostoyevsky is his love of Christ, just as the essence of the European people, when seen at their height, was their love of Jesus Christ. How can you sneer at that love and profess to be pro-white?

Very few of us can live on the higher plane of existence for very long; we must come down to the mundane world. But the antique Europeans lived their mundane lives with the vision of that other realm, a spiritual realm, before their eyes. That is the difference between the antique Europeans and the liberals – be they mad-dog liberals, neo-pagan liberals, or white nationalist liberals. All three groups, and the splinter groups connected to them, want the mundane world to be the only world. But what if there is another world? What if the Europeans of sacred memory got it right? Is there something greater than negro worship and the democratic process? Our people, when they were Christians, thought there was.

It will take great men to defeat the liberals and the colored barbarians. And great men do not come from the democratic process. The new right, the white nationalists, call them what you will, are all process-analysis men. They want to make reality and abstract reason into one entity, because they think they can win the battle of abstract reason. But what if reality and abstract reason are not one entity? What if abstract reason is an unreality? All the warring European clans – the mad-dog liberals, the white nationalists, the neo-pagans, the conservatives, etc. — have left the culture of feeling, honor, and romance behind and entered into an abstract world devoid of feeling, honor, and romance. The mad-dog liberals are winning the war of

the new age abstractions, because they have embraced a personal God, the colored savage, to preside over their abstract, utopian world. Lacking a personal God, the other unholy, abstract, ‘this world only’ coalitions have been left foundering in the sea of modernity.

Let us recall what Christ said when faced with the death of Lazarus: “Lazarus, come forth.” And then he that was dead did come forth. But some men, completely indifferent to the miracle Christ had performed, “went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done. Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? For this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.” Ponder that. When faced with the possibility that the Messiah had actually come into the world, that there was a Savior who could resurrect the dead, the Pharisees were only concerned with this world only, they were concerned with politics. So it is with all our modern warring tribes of modernity. The antique Europeans were the people who saw life feelingly and passed on their faith in the God who raised Lazarus from the dead and promised us that He would draw us unto Him at the hour of our deaths. How can this be a matter of indifference? How can we dismiss and/or demonize the people who thought their heartfelt faith in the King of Kings was all in all? When I wept at my mother’s grave, I took no consolation in Aquinas’s five proofs for the existence of God. Nor did I take any consolation in the fact that I could pass my mother’s white chromosomes onto my own children, who could pass those white chromosomes onto other whites until great white minds could consolidate their power and rule over a kingdom of disembodied minds. It was only my heart, the heart that wept, that told me my mother was not dead. That hope came to me through a connection to my people, the people who passed on their heartfelt faith in Christ from one generational hearth fire to the next. Extinguish those hearth fires — and that is the goal of all the modern European political and ‘religious’ organizations – and you destroy a man’s hope that the grave is not the ultimate reality.

When our mundane activities are rooted in the eternal verities, those mundane activities become something rare and wonderful, they become the exact opposite of mundane. A women who cooks, cleans, and does a thousand and one household chores by a Christian hearth fire has consecrated her labor to Christ. It is the same with a man’s work. But all labor, all politics, all law, has no significance if it is not connected to Christ. He came into the world, “That I should bear witness unto truth.” That was and is our mission, to bear witness unto His truth, that He was the light of the world. If we look at the life of Shakespeare or Handel or some other great man of Christendom, we will see nothing remarkable if we see only the outer man. But if we look at the inner man, the man we see through his works, we see a miracle of God’s grace. So it is with the antique Europeans — looking at the heart of their culture we see the living God. If we turn our back on their vision and turn to the things of this world only – to science, psychology, and secularized law and politics — then we are of all men most to be pitied, for we have sold our souls to gain the world.

When our politics are no longer severed from the romance of Christian Europe, we will see miracles again. We will see the Cross, and not the crescent, over all of Europe, and we will see men and women with that charity of honor that is the mark of the European. We can’t get to that blessed state by a trick of the intellect. We can’t figure it all out without any reference to our people and their God. But we can love what is worthy of love – the people of the European hearth fire and the Son of God, and we can turn that love into a flame of charity that will destroy Liberalism. Not very practical? Au contraire, the eternal romance is the only practical response to the devil and his works. It is the one response that never faileth. The old patriotic song, “There’ll Always Be an England,” ends with the line, “There’ll always be an England, And England shall be free, If England means as much to you, As England means to me.” No doubt the modern liberal would view such a song as racist, and the modern neo-pagan would call it sentimental mush. But the song, which also speaks of “the chains nothing can break,” is rooted in Britain’s ancient traditions that stem from a common race and a common faith. We all, we Europeans, must return to those unbreakable chains – forsaking and despising any ideology, or persons, that urge us to break those chains. They are our link to Him and to our loved ones, living and dead.

We mustn’t allow ourselves to be drawn into a false either/or – the liberalism of the mad-dogs or the liberalism of the process analysis men of the right. Our world is the world of feeling. The moderns of both camps always think in terms of political success. They want victories without honor. The man of feeling, the antique European, thinks in terms of honor. He doesn’t say to himself, “How can I form coalitions and appeal to a large aggregate of people in order to win political office?” Oh no, the antique European is concerned with one thing: “What must I do to live up to the code, what must I do to be honorable?” And the answer always comes to him, because his faith is bred in the bone:

Captain Smollett rose from his seat and knocked out the ashes of his pipe in the palm of his left hand.

“Is that all?” he asked.

“Every last word, by thunder!” answered John. “Refuse that, and you’ve seen the last of me but musket-balls.”

“Very good,” said the captain. “Now you’ll hear me. If you’ll come up one by one, unarmed, I’ll engage to clap you all in irons and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won’t, my name is Alexander Smollett, I’ve flown my sovereign’s colours, and I’ll see you all to Davy Jones.

—[Treasure Island](#)

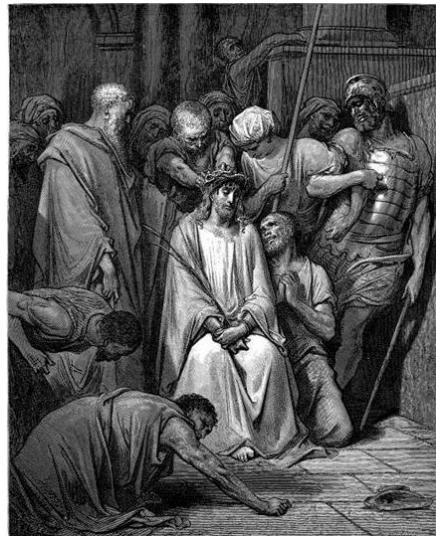
That is all that matters: That we uphold the honor code of the European people, which has nothing to do with abstract reason, think tanks, and secularized politics, but has everything to do with the living God, who was born in a stable in Bethlehem. +

There Are None So Blind

April 29, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Third Dumb Brother

Tags: Richard Weaver, St. Paul



He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. – *Isaiah 53: 3*

When I was five I had my tonsils removed, because in the 1950s doctors had decided that tonsils were unnecessary. And my parents were not ones to oppose the doctors, who were the good guys, the men of science. I remember the metallic device used to anesthetize patients coming down over my face, and I remember struggling to get off the operating table, but I have no memory of the operation. Of course that is the purpose of anesthetic – we are not supposed to be conscious during a major operation. If the patient was conscious, the pain would be too great and he would kick up a fuss, which would make the operation difficult, at the very least, and quite possibly cause it to completely fail without the anesthetic.

As with my tonsils, so it was with the faith of the European people. Before removing the faith of the European people, it was necessary to give them a moral anesthetic so that the pain of the operation would not make them resist and cling tenaciously to their faith. Without the moral anesthetic, the liberals would have found themselves in the same position vis-à-vis the people as Socrates. He upheld the ‘dialectic’ against the gods of Greece, and as a result he was ordered to drink that Hemlock cocktail.

I was brought up to believe that Socrates was the good guy and the Greeks who sentenced him to death were the bad guys, but Socrates was guilty as charged. He was undermining the people’s faith in their gods, by placing abstract reason above the gods. He was, as Richard Weaver points out in his book *Visions of Order*, “attacking an ultimate source of cohesion in the interest of a doctrine which can issue only in nullity.”

Socrates thought he served the highest truth – abstract reason. Was he correct? Was his, “I am brilliant because I know that I know nothing,” pose really superior to the Greeks’ racial memory of a personal God? If you are committed to a purely biological view of existence, you will never credit any of the pagan Europeans, be they Greek or Nordic, with a dim recollection of the one true God, but if you read the pagan poets you see, in such poets as Aeschylus and Sophocles, that they did not reject the pagan gods because they were incarnate gods and therefore ridiculous, they rejected the pagan gods because they were insufficiently humane. The poets looked to a personal God above the gods, who was divine and human. Abstract reason can never fulfill man’s need for a personal God. The Romans made abstractions of the Greek gods, and the people turned to the mystery religions, which featured personal gods of sex and blood. When Christ entered history, the Europeans embraced Christ, while the non-Europeans stayed with the religions of sex and blood, which were and always shall be at war with Christ and the Christ-bearing people.

In his *Confessions*, St. Augustine reveals that the biggest obstacle he faced on his journey from paganism to Christianity was the Socratic obstacle. He thought the pagan philosophers were smarter than the Christians. If we read Augustine’s *City of God*, in which he denies the possibility of a Christian civilization, we can see that Augustine never fully overcame the rationalist taint. What happens when that taint, through the medium of St. Thomas Aquinas, becomes the Church of Christ? Then abstract reason rules and the European people are left alone in the day of battle. They no longer see reason as a sword to be used in the defense of their heart’s passion, they see abstract reason as an end in and of itself. And with that vision – or better to say, with the absence of vision – they are sans hope, sans faith, sans honor and all that makes life worth living.

Abstract reason cannot stand alone; it must have the support of the heart. Robespierre became aware of this, which is why he modified his original atheism and tried to have new religious festivals based on the new-old nature religions. Kevin Strom of neo-pagan fame, also became aware of the insufficiency of abstract reason, so he recommended that white people invent a new religion. “Oh, what fools these mortals be.” Is it really so crystal clear that Christ be not risen? Why is it so clear? Because abstract reason tells us that the dead do not rise? Unamuno’s assertion is apropos: “Reason is a liar and a whore.” So why should we accept the word of a liar and a whore?

In the modern age, the post-French Revolution age, there are two types of Jacobins. There are the Jacobins who realize you must morally anesthetize the people before you can get them to let go of their Christian past and embrace a new religion, and there are the Jacobins who think that abstract reason alone can be the people’s guiding light. The first type, the religious Jacobins, have won the day. They have made negro worship and the brave new world that goes with that new religion the moral anesthetic that has killed white people’s will to survive as a people. Indeed, why would you want to survive as a people when the Jacobin churchmen and the elite men and women of Liberaldom tell you that sin and damnation are white, while heavenly beatitude is black.

The rationalist Jacobins who have stuck to abstract reason alone, the neo-pagans and the white nationalists, have not fared as well as the religious Jacobins. As Kevin Strom realized, rationalism alone cannot supply the Promethean fire to defeat the satanically possessed. But you cannot create a religion for utilitarian reasons; a religious faith comes from the vision in a man’s heart. If his heart is empty, that man is at the mercy of those who have something in their hearts. We are reminded again of the words of William Butler Yeats: “The worst are full of passionate intensity, While the best lack all conviction.”

The religious Jacobins hate Christ and his people with passionate intensity. How can the rationalist Jacobins combat that hatred? What or whom do they love enough to fight to the knife for? The answer is nothing and no-one. They cannot love whom they should love, the Son of God and the antique Europeans, so they do not have the passionate hatred that is necessary to defeat the religious Jacobins and their temporary allies, the legions of colored barbarians.

The various conservative nationalist groups, which are not really conservative because they don’t want to conserve Christian Europe, keep trying to tell white people what should be obvious to them. The liberal elite wants their blood, and they plan on getting it through the noble black savage. Why can’t white people see the obvious? Because people see what they want to see. The conservative nationalists, such as the late Samuel Francis and John Tyndall, offer the white grazers a non-religious Jacobinism. They offer them abstract reason without faith, which is the equivalent of performing a major operation without anesthetizing the patient. In contrast, the religious Jacobins offer the white grazers the moral anesthetic of negro worship and its attendant utopian benefits of sporting events, church services, and the approval of the powers-that-be. The white grazer will never give up that religion, despite the fact it is a false religion that will lead to his death in this world and his perdition in the next, because he needs a religion and has no other religion to turn to. The non-religious Jacobins of the alternative

right can beat the drums of white nationalism until their hands bleed and their ears turn deaf, but they will never, by virtue of abstract reasoning, convince the white grazer to give up his faith in the new Christless Christianity, which is negro worship, any more than they can convince a man to have heart surgery without being anesthetized first.

The negro cannot reason – he has only a certain animal cunning – and the Oriental does not have years of Christianity in his blood that compel him to use his reason for something else besides his own selfish ends. But the European is different – he cannot chose not to reason; he has the capacity. But he cannot – he is constitutionally incapable of it – use his reason only for selfish ends. I'm not talking about the lowest common denominators of our race – there are always exceptions – but I am talking about the white everyman. The white man must have a religion that is not solely centered on self. It must appear altruistic. If you say that the white man is proud of his altruism, I would agree with you, but nevertheless we must see that the need to be altruistic is part of the white man and we must deal with it. Abstract reason is a poison that kills if it is not put at the service of a passionate heart devoted to Christ. You cannot isolate reason from the heart in order to avoid the evil passions of the heart as the scholastics did, nor can you isolate reason from the heart and make reason a god, as the alternative right does. And finally, you cannot kill the life-sustaining Christian instincts in the European heart and replace those instincts with the love of all that is base and ignoble, which is what the religious Jacobins have done.

It's all quite biblical and quite tragic. Despite the fact that the liberals have made it clear that they intend to exterminate the white race, the white grazers are too spiritually blind to see the truth. And the rationalists on the conservative side of Jacobinism have no way of stirring the hearts of white people. They can't inspire white people to rise and ride, because they themselves have no faith.

It must be all or nothing. Either we leave the worship of the negro and the worship of our own intellects behind and embrace Christ, who is the morning star of Europe, or we perish. Our Lord, speaking through the prophet Isaiah, told His people, when they had “removed their heart far from me,” that He would do “A marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid.” Christ is not to be found among the wise and prudent, He is to be found in the passionate heart of that poet of charity, St. Paul. And He is to be found in the hearts of the European people who made St. Paul’s vision their own, while rejecting the counsel of the wise and prudent who worshipped nature and reason.

Nothing has changed: we still struggle with the same forces of darkness that St. Paul struggled with. The cruelty of the nature religions and rationality without faith have been fused together in liberalism. When the Europeans reject negro worship and rationalism, they will once again know what it means to be the Christ-bearing race. Until that time the dark shadows of death and decay will spread over all of Europe. But nothing is written. The European people do not have to worship the negro and reason themselves into oblivion. Who compels us to take the moral anesthetic? The church men? The liberals? Yes, they do compel us to take the gas. But we were born of His blood and of His heart; we don’t need their moral anesthetic, because “He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.” +

The Homeless Europeans

May 6, 2017

Categories: Charity, Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Honor, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas

Tags: Bernal Diaz del Castillo, Shakespeare



Kent. Alack, bareheaded?
Gracious my lord, hard by here is a hovel;
Some friendship will it lend you 'gainst the tempest.
Repose you there, whilst I to this hard house
More harder than the stones whereof 'tis rais'd,
Which even but now, demanding after you,
Denied me to come in-return, and force
Their scanty courtesy.

Lear. My wits begin to turn.
Come on, my boy. How dost, my boy? Art cold?
I am cold myself. Where is this straw, my fellow?
The art of our necessities is strange,
That can make vile things precious. Come, your hovel.
Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my heart
That's sorry yet for thee.

Looking at events from a ‘this-world-only’ perspective, Robert E. Lee was a loser. He blew it — instead of making the enemy waste men and resources chasing him all over the South, he decided to take it to the enemy at Gettysburg, and he lost. “For all sad words of tongue and pen, The saddest are these, ‘It might have been’.” And yet Robert E. Lee was, until quite recently, a beloved figure in the South and a respected figure in the North. Why did the Southern people love a loser? The Southern people loved Lee because he had white pietas. He placed his sword at the service of his people despite the fact that his chance for worldly success was with the enemy of his people. The Southern people realized that Lee had given all a man can give to his people and they loved him for that noble sacrifice, despite the fact that he was not victorious on the battlefield. Such was the greatness of the Southern people of the Civil War era — they looked past the surface of life and saw existence from the inner eye of a Christian heart. From that perspective Lee was victorious and so were his people.

The troubling aspect of the neo-pagans’ and conservative nationalists’ reaction to the Syrian bombing is not that they objected to it. It is probably a tactical error just as Lee’s decision to take it to the enemy at Gettysburg was a tactical mistake. What is troubling is the way the neo-pagans and the conservative nationalists have voiced their objections to the Syrian bombing. They have, in no uncertain terms, demonized Trump. And that is not how you should respond to the only president since Teddy Roosevelt who has shown the slightest bit of white pietas. Trump’s pietas, like Teddy Roosevelt’s, is tainted with Americanism, but he does have a remnant of that which is and always shall be the cornerstone of a truly white nation. I don’t for one second think that Trump can mount a white counter revolution from within the confines of our satanic democratic system, but the small modicum of white pietas that Trump possesses, which has also taken hold of some of his supporters, is the spark of white humanity that needs to be turned into a unquenchable counter-revolutionary fire.

It is up to the white leadership to fan the flames of the counter-revolutionary fire, not to put it out. By accusing Trump of betrayal and other dark motives — “He is in the pocket of Israel” — the self-anointed white leaders are attacking white pietas in the name of a mind-forged formula for how to govern the neo-pagan way. You can be theoretically right and yet be wrong if you do not take the human element in all political decisions into account. For example — when Cortés had to go back to Spain to give an account of his actions he told his lieutenant [Pedro de Alvarado](#) that he did not want him to interfere with the Aztecs’ blood rites. The Spaniards were outnumbered 10,000 to 1, so it was not tactically wise to try to stop them from performing their ‘religious’ rites. But when the Aztecs performed their ‘religious’ rites right in front of the Spaniards, Cortés’ lieutenant attacked the Aztecs. It was tactically unwise, but who can condemn him? He was a man who held that the charity of honor was all in all.

Trump has stated that he bombed Syria because Bashar al-Assad was using chemical weapons on women and children. If that is so, and why should we doubt it, then Trump is following in the footsteps of Cortés’ lieutenant. There are times when a man of honor acts, not according to tactics, but according to that charity of honor. Am I in error? Have I projected an honor code onto Trump that is a mere figment of an overwrought, quixotic imagination? It’s possible, but still that is what I see. In any event there is a larger issue here. Even if I’m wrong about Trump, that doesn’t change the fact that it is white pietas, which is grounded in the Europeans’ faith in the Christ of old Europe, that will save the European people. Neither a return to classical liberalism nor a heavy dose of neo-paganism will stop the extermination of the white race by the religious Jacobins.

White pietas is grounded in love of family, love of race, and love of Christ. The non-white races do not have pietas. They do not love family, race, and Christ. They worship themselves and desire to extend the power of their family and their race, but they do not love, they do not have pietas. Nor do the liberals have pietas. In fact, they hate all Europeans who have not renounced their families, their race, and their God. The liberal wants to return to paganism, but he cannot return to paganism via his own people. The Christ of Europe always gets in the way. So the liberal must destroy all things European in order to return to the paradise of the pagans. Abstract reason, which the French Jacobins placed on a throne in the person of a prostitute (perfect symbolism), became the liberals’ means to an end — the destruction of the white race. Thus the liberal in all his guises always refers to a rational process rather than to the honor code of the European when he wants to effect change, because his mind-forged process leads him away from white pietas and toward the kingdom of Satan on earth.

When Shaw, the socialist, read Dickens’ novel [Little Dorrit](#), one of the great Christian works of literature, he did not see Christ in the novel, he saw a defense of socialism. Likewise, when a Thomist reads Shakespeare he sees Shakespeare the Thomist, and when a liberal reads Shakespeare he sees Shakespeare the liberal humanist. All of life must be referred to the exterior eye if you belong to that class of liberal Europeans who think that love can be put into a golden bowl and wisdom in a silver rod. The distinctiveness of the European people was not their

brilliance, their ability to invent mind-forged systems: their distinctiveness as a people was that they saw life through the inner eye of the heart, and because of that inner vision they became the Christ-bearing race.

I do not see an awareness of the distinctiveness of the European people or an awareness of the necessity of white pietas in any of the modern movements within liberalism. The mad dog liberals within the church and without have gone over to the unholy trinity of abstract reason, the sacred negro, and science. The more conservative Protestant sects have made an abstraction of Christ and turned to the Jews as their guiding light. And the traditionalist Roman Catholics have placed their faith in rites while eschewing the heartfelt faith of the European people. I once asked a traditionalist priest what he thought of Chateaubriand's "I wept and I believed" defense of Christianity. He did not think it had any validity, he thought it was pure air. But is it? If their hearts were wrong, namely our European ancestors, and if St. Paul was wrong when he told us that it was the heart that mattered, then where are we, who are we, and whither do we go?

I must come back to that charity of honor, which comes from white pietas. Lee had it and so did Cortés' lieutenant. And we must regain it if we mean to save our souls and restore our people. Throughout the world the white race is being attacked because the colored barbarians and the liberals hate the Light of the world. If we, the European people, renounce white pietas, haven't we also renounced the Light of the world?

In Shakespeare's *Henry the Fourth, Part 1*, Falstaff delivers his famous dissertation on honor:

'Tis not due yet; I would be loath to pay him before his day. What need I be so forward with him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter; honour pricks me on. Yea, but how if honour prick me off when I come on? how then? Can honour set to a leg? no: or an arm? no: or take away the grief of a wound? no. Honour hath no skill in surgery, then? no. What is honour? a word. What is in that word honour? What is that honour? air. A trim reckoning! Who hath it? he that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? no. Doth he hear it? no. 'Tis insensible, then. Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the living? no. Why? detraction will not suffer it. Therefore I'll none of it. Honour is a mere scutcheon: and so ends my catechism.

Is honor, the white man's honor, a mere word? It can be abused, it can be used as an excuse to fight over nothing, but at the heart of that mere word is Christ. We must have that charity of honor. The enemy knows that honor is white and therefore honor is racist. In a recent interview, the Jewish reporter who had publicized the 'racist' remarks that the baseball player John Rocker made to him in private, was asked if he felt any remorse for betraying Rocker's confidence and ruining his career. The reporter said he felt no remorse because honor was a white man's concept and therefore racist. By betraying Rocker the reporter felt that he was being virtuous. And so he was, from the standpoint of liberalism. But who is the founder of liberalism? It is our ancient foe. It is all so blatant now. Everything connected to old Europe, to white pietas, must be eradicated from the face of the earth. We all die in the body eventually. That is our biological destiny, but must we give up our souls and die spiritually? We can't renounce white pietas, for therein lies our honor, our people, and our God. The race war is the war against principalities and powers, and we dare not, we must not, side with the principalities and powers of this world, which are aligned against the Light of the world.

Our spiritual home consists of our race and our faith. There is nothing for us outside of the European hearth fire. We have been told, for over a century, that if whites love their own people they are guilty of racism, which is the unpardonable sin. And that pernicious heresy has entered the souls of white people throughout the world. We must purge the fear of racism from our souls. And the purification of our souls begins when we love the people of our racial hearth fire who saw beauty on the cross. +

The Shroud of Liberalism

May 13, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Walter Scott



"You bid me seek redemption of the devil." – [Measure for Measure](#)

There have been practicing psychiatrists who were professed Christians. And there are professed Christians who use the terminology and ‘insights’ of psychology in their work. But we should never lose sight of the fact that psychology is a system created by an atheist to explain existence from a purely biological standpoint. Freud thought faith was a mental illness that had to be eliminated before the patient could be ‘healthy.’ Subsequent psychiatrists have sugarized Freud and allowed patients to keep their faith — “if it makes you feel good and doesn’t hurt anyone” — but the atheistic assumption of psychology has remained the same: Christ the Savior is a figment of the Europeans’ imagination.

Like most of Satan’s attacks on the Christ-bearing race, psychology came to us dressed in the benevolence of science. Mankind now had a tool to alleviate the suffering caused by mental illness. But what if ‘mental illness’ is caused by something called original sin, which can only be alleviated, but not eliminated, through the mediation of the Man of Sorrows, who those old ‘clinically insane’ Europeans thought was the Son of the living God? In Shakespeare’s will he states, “I commend my soul into the hands of God my Creator, hoping and assuredly believing, only through the merits of Jesus Christ my savior, to be made partaker of life everlasting.” What a sick man! Why did Ben Jonson think that “he was not of an age but for all time”? Psychology has shown us that he is not for our enlightened age.

Psychology comes to us as an advance, but it is really a return to paganism. The Europeans, through psychology and other such scientific mumbo-jumbo have returned to the paganism that always lurked in the dark holes and corners of Christendom:

“To be resolved into the elements,” said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; “my hope, trust, and expectation is that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recompounded in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under different forms—the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldebaran and his brethren.—In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it!—Hence! begone!—disturb me no farther!—I have spoken the last words that mortal ears shall listen to!” – [Quentin Durward](#)

Quentin Durward is horrified when the gypsy expresses his faith in a natural world, devoid of God. But in the 20th century that faith became the faith of the European people. Some years back I saw a 1950s movie called *Houseboat*, starring Cary Grant and Sophia Loren. In the movie Cary Grant is a widower who has rented a houseboat to get closer to his children. Sophia Loren is an heiress in disguise who is running away from planned marriage. She becomes Cary Grant’s maid. Who wouldn’t hire Sophia Loren for a maid? Of course the story has a fairy tale ending, and Cary Grant and Sophia end up as husband and wife. But the movie makers had no right to place a fairy tale ending onto a ‘family movie’ that celebrated atheism. In the middle of the film, Cary Grant consoles his son, who can’t accept the death of his mother, by throwing a glass of water into the river. “You see,” he declares, “your mother is still there, she has just been changed.” What comfort. That is the expressed faith of the blasphemous gypsy, “to be resolved into the elements.” The heroes in the European fairy tales do not respond to existence with the faith of the blasphemous gypsy, they believe in the sure and certain hope of the resurrection of the dead through our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

In bygone times there were some strict religious sects that refused to use the same terminology for the days of the week as the rest of the European people, because the terminology was pagan in origin. And there are still some Christian sects who refuse to celebrate Christmas for the same reason. We don’t need to be that rigid in our use of psychiatric terms, but we should be inflexible as regards the essential nature of psychology. It is a tool of the devil. We cannot react to existence with a spirit informed by psychology. I bring all this up because the term ‘death wish,’ first coined by Malcom Muggeridge in 1979 in his article, “The Great Liberal Death Wish,” has come up again as the anti-French Frenchmen are preparing to vote for the death of France. The vote has been called a death wish. Is it? If you look at life through the exterior eyes of the psychiatrist, you will always believe a lie, because the psychiatrist does not see the spiritual dimension of life. He only sees delusions that are good or bad depending on how they help the patient cope, in a positive way, with life. The French liberals who are preparing to make France a Moslem nation do not have a death wish. They have a life wish. They cannot live without faith, and they have placed their faith in the French Revolution which has become the faith of our modern liberals who worship the father – abstract reason, the son – the negro, and the holy ghost – which is science. That faith will surely result in the liberals’ death, and our death as well, but death is not what the liberals desire. They desire the death of all whites who refuse to acknowledge their trinity, but they live with the hope that they – who are black, pure black, inside – shall be spared the wrath to come. Their liberalism is the mark on the door that will let the angels of death, the colored barbarians, know that they must be spared. Of course they won’t be spared, but they believe they will be spared – that is their faith. They will see the triumph of their savage god, and they will dwell in the house of their lord forever.

The neo-pagans are like the ancient Jews. They reject the liberals’ savior, but they have embraced abstract reason, which is the father, and science, which is the holy ghost. They tell the religious Jacobins that they are mentally ill, they have a death wish. Surely they must see that the Moslems will destroy their France, their England, their Belgium, etc.? No, they don’t see. They are blinded by faith, a faith in Satan and all his works. How can the blind lead the blind? The neo-pagan does not see that men do not live by bread alone. You will never get liberals to turn from their faith if you express your opposition to them in purely secular, psychological terms. Is the appeal to the Christ of faith any more practical than the neo-pagans’ appeal to the liberals’ self-interest? It might be equally non-effective, but the religious appeal is, in contrast to the neo-pagans’ appeal, based on reality. Christ was incarnate in every European nation before every single European nation, in one form or another, made the ethos of the French Revolution their guiding light. When we bid the European people remember and love their past, we bid them build on something real, a faith that can supplant their unholy faith in the negro.

If we use the language of psychological mumbo-jumbo in the way the Christian Europeans used words like Thursday and Friday, as figures of speech without any deep consequence, it would not be of any significance. But that is not the case. The language of psychology has become “sermonic” — the modern Europeans, conservative and liberal, believe in the psychological world more than in the world of the antique Europeans. It is words such as soul, redemption, and Christ that have lost their significance in this our modern age. It will be better for France if Le Pen, rather than Macron, wins the upcoming election just as it was better for white Americans that Trump defeated Hillary. But we cannot ultimately put our faith in

elections. Neither Le Pen, Trump, or any other leader of the Western world has repudiated modern, Jacobin democracy, which is the strong right arm of the new paganism. If we place our faith in that system and the psychological, scientific mindset that goes with that system, we will cease to exist as a people. Our biological extinction will follow our spiritual apostasy, because the body cannot survive without a spiritual center. Freud isolated reason in order to cure. But reason, isolated from the human heart, cannot cure; it leaves man, poor “unaccommodated man,” alone in the storm.

Psychology was not new, as Freud claimed, it had its origin in medieval scholasticism. The scholastics also thought that they could isolate reason from the sinful human heart in order to “help” human beings. But where is it written that reason is the final moral authority on this earth? What if our reason is also tainted with original sin? Man is not God, but there is God in man. God planted His image in man and that image became flesh and dwelt among us in the person of Jesus Christ. When we go to the depths of our heart, with the sure and certain hope that He is at the center, we will not be at the mercy of the new paganism. We will be men and women like unto the antique Europeans; we will love and hate with human hearts connected to His divinely human heart.

When the ancient Europeans embraced Christ, they went from death to life. Now that the modern Europeans have rejected Christ, because they see only Christ crucified and not Christ risen, they have returned, through the negro and philosophical speculation, to what they hope is a life sustaining faith. The new paganism will fail just as miserably as the old paganism, because the European cannot be sustained by pagan rationalism or by the pagan blood faiths. The liberals’ “death wish” is a life wish that stems from their new faith. Satan has been encouraging the Europeans to seek death in the name of life ever since Christ made the European people His champions. Tempted and tried, the antique Europeans resisted Satan, while the modern Europeans have succumbed to Satan. Lincoln was correct when he stated that the white Europeans on the American continent were engaged in a great civil war between the forces of democracy and the forces of reaction. But Lincoln was on the wrong side. The forces of democracy represented the new paganism, the rationalist paganism of the French Revolution that was placing a shroud over all of Europe. That shroud is held together by the ‘science’ of psychology and faith – faith in the sacred negro and all the auxiliary gods of color. To invoke psychology (“you have a death wish”) in the war against the liberal Jacobins is to seek redemption of the devil. Let our opposition to the new paganism be like unto Alfred’s opposition to the old paganism – “By the Cross we conquer.” If we invoke the Cross, not as some magic talisman, but in the same spirit that we pray, “Our Father who art in heaven...,” we will be part of the European counter-revolution, which is the only war worth fighting. +

When Hope Seems Nearly Gone

May 20, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the *Apology* had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens." —*Tom Brown at Oxford*

While in prison awaiting execution, the hero of Shakespeare's *Cymbeline*, Posthumus Leonatus, has a vision of life, love, and a glorious future that does not make any logical sense, considering that he has been sentenced to death. Yet, he decides to believe in the vision,

*Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,
The action of my life is like it, which
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.*

What is our faith if it can be seen? That type of faith is not faith. Satan always works on mankind through the pride of intellect. And he seldom fails, because man,

*...proud man,
Dress'd in a little brief authority,
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven
As makes the angels weep; who, with our spleens,
Would all themselves laugh mortal.*

Satan played Adam and Eve for suckers by telling them they were too intelligent to believe in a fairy tale about a tree of knowledge. And they ate thereof, because who wants to be stupid? The entire history of the Christian church, which is the history of the European people, because they are the Church of Christ, is one of back-sliding to the "intelligence" of Adam and Eve. When I think well of the ancient Greeks, I think of Sophocles and Aeschylus, whose works were heartfelt pleas for a personal Savior who was more humane than their pagan gods. When I think ill of the ancient Greeks, I think of Plato, Aristotle, and the Greek philosophical tradition. That tradition is not Greece. That philosophical tradition, which was picked up by the Christian church men, is the 'pride of intellect' tradition of Satan, which tells us that the Christ story is a stupid fairy tale that only idiots believe in. Those two opposed traditions have always been at war within the mystical body of the church. All brave souls must fight that battle – to adhere to the foolishness of God or to adhere to the wisdom of men? That is the question. One road leads to His Father's house while the other leads to hell. By the latter half of the 20th century, it looked like the European people were no longer capable of resisting Satan's appeal to their intellectual pride. What they had to be so inordinately proud of escapes me. What were the achievements of the 20th century Europeans? Did they produce a Rembrandt? A Handel? A Shakespeare? No, but they did produce total war, legalized abortion, sexual license, negro worship, and every other evil under the sun that goes with liberalism. But of course those evils pale in contrast to the great good that science has wrought – How can we call a culture evil that has given us microwave ovens, automobiles, and computers?

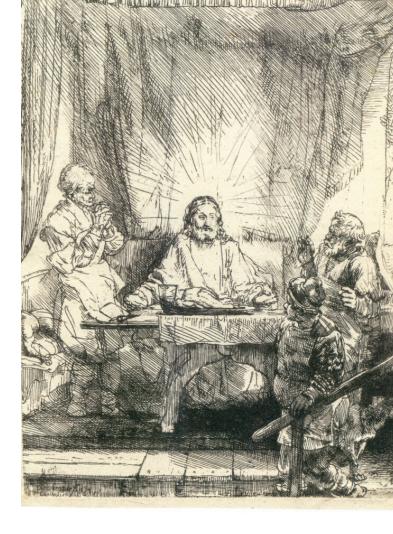
By the 21st century it was, as the businessmen say, a done deal. There was almost – we'll come back to that ‘almost’ later – complete agreement that the ‘smart’ way, the way of Satan, was the right way to proceed. The liberal left has institutionalized the ideals of the French Revolution with the negroid race at the center of their utopia of equality, in which the ‘more equal’ colored races exterminate the unequal white race. The supposed opposition to the liberal left are the conservatives and the alternate right. But the conservatives want to conserve a moderate Jacobinism, which is an entity that never has been and never can be, while the alternative right wants to go back to the pagan, Celtic, Nordic, Greco-Roman ‘glory’ days of Europe. Even if such a return was possible, it would not be desirable, because the final word of the great poets of antiquity was that life, without a personal savior, was not worth living. But it, the return to genuine paganism, is not possible for the European. Something happened in between the pagan twilight, celebrated by Yeats, and the 21st century, the century of institutionalized Satanism. The in-between? It was the enthronement of Christ in the hearts of the European people. That enthronement, which has been rejected and denied by the modern Europeans, is still an obstacle to the alternative righters, who want to be happy pagans. They can't be like unto the real European pagans, because of Him. So what do they settle for? They become, like their leftist cousins, rationalized pagans. They have made a conscious rational decision to invoke their Celtic, Nordic, etc. past, devoid of the God-Man, who is the only reason we should care about the pagan Europeans. The real European pagans were not rationalist and the best of them left paganism to bend their knees to Christ.

The pride of intellect tells the modern European that he must not bend his knee to anything or anyone. Then why does the leftist liberal genuflect before the negro? And why does the alternative righter bend his knee to reason divorced from the human heart? It's not the act itself, the bended knee, that is wrong. It is to whom or what we bend our knee. Our people, when they were a people, bent their knees to Christ. Why are we ashamed of them for that submission? I honor them for it, and I kneel as they knelt.

Nikos Kazantzakis, the author of *The Last Temptation of Christ*, was surprised and hurt when Christians accused him of writing a blasphemous book. He told his Christian critics that he had written the book with a sincere respect and love for the person of Christ. But Kazantzakis could not overcome his rationalism. Yes, he revered the man Jesus Christ, but he did not believe in Christ's divinity, he did not believe in the God-Man, just as the devotees of *Jesus Christ Superstar* did not believe in the God-Man.

Whether you betray Christ with a kiss, as men like Kazantzakis and Judas did, or you betray Him with an outright condemnation like Caiaphas, in both instances you have betrayed Him. And that is the essence of liberalism in all its guises. Liberalism is about the betrayal of Christ. All the blather in organized Christianity, which is an adjunct of liberalism, about the racist Europeans is just that – blather. It is a blather used to cover up the new Christ-less Christianity, which is the Christianity of Judas. Our people of ancient times got it right. They worshipped the living God in spirit and in truth. When we reject them, we reject Him. Christianity, minus the European hearth fire, is not Christianity any more than an embalmed corpse is a human being.

Our journey as a people, the Christ-bearing people, is embodied in Europe's (and therefore the world's) greatest painter, Rembrandt. In his early years Rembrandt was a very good artist. He did the traditional Christian paintings in imitation of the other great Renaissance painters. But in his later years, Rembrandt's vision deepened. He no longer painted universal, abstract Christ and Madonna figures. He painted what he saw in the Gospels and his heart – he painted the Christ of the European hearth fire, a God-Man who was “wounded for our transgressions” and “carried our sorrows.” Rembrandt places Christ amongst His people, where all loving hearts can find Him. Anthony asks the Romans why they refuse to mourn for Caesar. Why do we, who once loved a man, a God-Man infinitely greater than Caesar, refuse to abide with Him in that European inn of Emmaus?



I go back and forth on my favorite Dickens' novel. It is *Pickwick Papers* when I'm reading *Pickwick Paper* and it is *Little Dorrit* when I'm reading *Little Dorrit*. It's almost impossible to choose a favorite from the Dickens' library. But if I was forced to pick one and only one, that one novel would be *Great Expectations*. I would choose *Great Expectations* because of Pip's journey from darkness to light. He desperately wants to be a gentleman. And when he has that status thrust upon him he is at the lowest level of existence. He is ashamed of his home, his hearth fire, where there was Christian love and warmth, because the world considers Joe, the man who reared him and loved him, a simpleton. Later, he is ashamed of the man who, in loving gratitude, made him a gentleman in the eyes of the world. When Pip passes from that disgust and loathing of his home and Joe, he is able to love where he ought to love and see our Savior. My children know how much I love that scene in the prison when Pip tells Magwitch that he will stand by him, so they always let me read it when we come to that part of the book: “I will never stir from your side,” said I, “when I am suffered to be near you. Please God, I will be as true to you as you have been to me!” And then comes the death of Magwitch, when Pip, like the European people of happy memory, leaves the darkness of pagan selfishness and goes into His world, the world of divine love that passeth all understanding. “Mindful, then, of what we had read together, I thought of the two men who went up into the Temple to pray, and I know there were no better words that I could say beside his bed, then ‘O Lord, be merciful to him a sinner!’”

We must come home to Ratty's river, to Stevenson's land of story books, to Joe's forge, and to Dingley Dell Farm where the Pickwickians celebrate Christmas. They are all European homes and as such they are sacred, because He, our Lord and Savior, dwells there. Let us remember our divine intuitions, we are from and of sacred Europe, the land of story books that tell us about our true home, where the King of Storyland lives. The twilight of paganism marked the dawning of Europe. Why have we chosen to return to the darkness of paganism? Where is life and love if it is not and never was incarnate in sacred Europe? If we go deep, if we stand with the people of the Christian European hearth fire we will not worship negroes, Moslems or any modern theory of government or religion. We will worship the one true God in spirit and truth. When the apostles' hearts burned within them on the road to Emmaus, they asked the Lord to abide with them, “for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” Are we smarter than our ancestors who also asked the Lord to abide with them? Has modern science, psychology, and computers made the Savior, the Christ of the European hearth fire, unnecessary? Only if we have given up our humanity, which seems to be the case. But there is that ‘almost’ I spoke of earlier. There seems to be no faith left on earth, but the Christian heart looks past what seems. Narnia, which is Christian Europe, did exist once. And because of that ‘once upon a time’ Europe, we believe, on faith and faith alone, that there are still Christian European hearts somewhere in this rationalist-pagan darkness. Our honored dead, who are not dead, speak to us still. Our Lord will not leave us comfortless. I love the ending of Humperdinck's *Hansel and Gretel* opera: “And when hope is nearly gone, God's relief to us will surely come.” +

What Is't to Leave Betimes?

May 27, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism, Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. – *Luke 24: 28-29*

Macron won and he won handily. That does not bode well for France. The ‘conservatives’ immediately started planning for the next election five years down the road. Are they insane? Do they seriously think France, as a European nation, will still exist five years down the road? The only consolation for Frenchmen and the rest of Europe, because we are all in the same boat as the French, is that the election of Le Pen would not have done much to stop the Islamization of France. After all, Le Pen is a French Revolutionist; she did not campaign for the restoration of the French monarchy and the repudiation of Jacobin democracy. “Of course, she didn’t,” you tell me, “That would be absurd.” But why is it absurd? The European people thrived and flourished when their governments were Christian. They have taken sick, and that sickness is unto death, during the democratic era of multi-cultural, religiously diverse (which means anti-Christian) governments. Nothing good will ever happen to the European people, as a people, so long as they remain under the thrall of Jacobin democracy.

When Fox heard of the capture of the Bastille, he claimed it was the “the most glorious event, and the happiest for mankind, that has ever taken place since human affairs have been recorded.” Price and Priestley also went into raptures over the French Revolution. And even men of a more pragmatic nature, such as Pitt, failed to see anything wrong with the French Revolution in its initial stages. When the Reign of Terror began, the fanatics such as Fox, Price, and Priestley still supported the Revolution, while the pragmatists abandoned it. But no one in the ruling elites of the European nations, save Edmund Burke, saw the French Revolution for what it was: the enthronement of Satan in the midst of Christian Europe:

Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism; and in Atheism; and it has joined to those principles, a body of systematick manners which secures their operation.

If I am asked how I would be understood in the use of these terms, Regicide, Jacobinism, Atheism, and a system of correspondent manners and their establishment, I will tell you.

I call a commonwealth Regicide, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers, and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles; and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it—this I call Regicide by establishment. – [Edmund Burke](#)

There was a horror of the French Revolution among ordinary Englishmen, but they were too unsophisticated to understand that you must be tolerant and accepting of Jacobinism, atheism, and regicide. It has always been thus. The men of reason – the theologians, the lawyers, and the academics — will sup with the devil because they live by abstractions, which are good or evil according to their whims. But a man who is not divided against himself, a European with a Christian heart, will have an instinctive horror of the devil and his works. The liberals in church and state have made the destruction of the European people’s natural abhorrence of the devil and his works their special mission in life. And they have been very successful. There is no opposition to Jacobin democracy in the European nations. There are European nations that adhere to a post-Robespierre Jacobinism in which they try to reconcile religious toleration with Jacobin ideals, but those countries are merely playing the ‘lose slowly’ game. Modern democracy is Jacobin in origin, and Jacobinism is anti-Christian and anti-white. The English commoners who burned down Priestley’s house and forced him to flee to America acted the way Christian men should act. They saw evil and they struck home. That should be every Christian’s response to Jacobinism. Until we have the same instinctive horror of democratic Jacobinism as those English commoners had for Priestley’s Jacobinism, and until we have that same violent response to Jacobinism, we will continue to live, not in nations or communities, but in collective farms, in which we live, when we are allowed to live, to serve ‘the people,’ who are the colored races of the worlds.

There is no resistance to the liberal, colored, barbarian onslaught, because there are no Christian Europeans of the old stock. The new breed of Christians want to blend Christianity, Jacobinism, and negro worship into one integral system. But such a Christianity is not Christianity. Our Lord tells us where our treasure is, “there will your heart be also.” If Christians such as Jayda Fransen of the Britain First party organize non-violent protests of the Islamic invasion, support a multi-racial Britain, and make the support of the nation state of Israel part of their Christian faith, they are not European Christians, they are new age Jacobin Christians who will always end up serving the liberals and their colored allies.

The conservative liberals have a messianic faith in democracy; for them the democratic process is an end in and of itself. The mad-dog liberals hold their kingdom in order by taking advantage of the conservatives’ delusional faith in the democratic process. They know that they cannot be ousted from power since they know that conservatives will never act outside the parameters of democracy. This gives the liberal a great advantage, because he does not believe that the democratic process is sacred. He will be democratic when it suits him, and he will act outside the democratic process whenever the democratic process does not serve his end. And toward what end is the liberal moving? He is moving toward the kingdom of Satan on earth, a world without white Europeans, who fouled paradise with the religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

Dostoyevsky was correct when he said that there was only one issue to be decided: Could an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ? The intelligentsia of 20th century Europe answered, ‘No,’ to Dostoyevsky’s question. And then they proceeded to intellectualize the European peasantry. By the end of the 20th century, the peasantry was intellectualized, and no member of the intelligentsia in church, state, or academy was willing to support the vision of Christ, which St. Paul saw on the road to Damascus and which the antique Europeans made an integral part of their culture. When the political ‘conservatives’ of the 20th century made conserving Jacobin democracy their goal, and when the conservatives in the church

sought to conserve their abstract systems instead of the faith of the European people, the demise of the European people was inevitable. Without their faith they lost their spiritual backbone and became the bond slaves of the religious Jacobins and their colored allies.

In my early twenties I was the student representative in what was supposed to be a roundtable discussion on the subject of faith. The discussion was sponsored by the university's religion department. I found it striking then, and I still find it striking, that the various 'Christian' academics, an assortment of practicing ministers and priests combined with an assortment of ex-priests and ex-ministers, were all of the opinion that Christianity had to be either rationalized or abandoned. It could not be the faith of any modern man in its pre-20th century form. But the Moslem professor on the panel believed in eternal Islam; he saw no need to rationalize Islam. Nor did the Oriental on the panel see any need to rationalize Buddhism.

Why is it that only the Christian faith of the European people could not withstand the rationalist onslaught? Is Islam and the other black voodoo faiths that are like unto Islam easier to defend than the Christian faith? It's easy to see why the various Oriental faiths survive — they have never claimed to be transcendent faiths, they are 'this world only' faiths of a rationalist-mystic nature. But why do the dark faiths such as Islam survive? They survive because their adherents, who are predominantly dark-skinned, are incapable of adhering to a religion of charity. They need a sex and blood faith. They are not intimidated by any rationalist criticism of their faith, because they do not acknowledge the validity of reason. They only believe in sex and blood.

The liberals do not believe in Islam, nor do they believe — even though they often try to adhere to them — in the Orientals' naturalistic, mystic faiths. What then do the European liberals believe in? They believe in the hatred of all the European people and their God. Reason is the sword the liberals have used to attack Christianity, but the irrationality of Christianity has not caused the liberals' rejection of Christianity. The real cause is their hatred for Christ. As Ivan Karamazov hated Christ, so do the liberals hate Christ. The European Everyman, who does not hate Christ, has allowed the liberals to destroy his faith by falling for the rationalist gambit: 'Do you want to be stupid?' Some Europeans, such as Yeats, have tried to take refuge in the mists of pagan Europe. But that, as off this stage we have shown, is not possible. The European is naked to his enemies because he cannot believe in the divinity of Christ and he cannot become a complete heathen. "What should such fellows as I do crawling between earth and heaven?"

Such souls should break the chains of rationalism and see the liberal Jacobins for what they are — the enemies of Christ and His people. They will never cease their satanic onslaught on the Christ-bearing race, because they hate much. When we look at what the liberals have already wrought and what they intend to do in the future, we weep. But is that all that is left to us? Can we only weep as the colored barbarians, be they Moslems, negroes, or some other variation, sweep every last vestige of Christian Europe and every last European into the dustbin of history? Yes, that is all that is left to us. But tears, if they come from hearts filled with that charity of honor, do have redemptive and restorative powers. Didn't Rapunzel's lover regain his sight when her tears of charity fell on his eyes? If we truly weep for Europe and her people, because we love much, then we will fight for Europe and her people in defiance of democracy, rationalism, and Satan's colored legions. We are a dispossessed people in danger of extinction because we are afraid to be Europeans. Christ is in us and we are in Him. If we believe that and go deep once again, then it won't be 'last post' for the European people. No matter how mathematically certain our demise seems to be, there is always the mysterious Stranger, that Man of Sorrows, who is capable of calling us back to our roots, to our people, and to our God, the God of the European hearth fire.

It is not just France, or Britain, or Sweden, or the United States that is perishing. It is all of Europe. It seems that I am always facing the great 'if' — "If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride." If the European people could... If they could see, once again, with their hearts. "Did not our hearts burn within us, while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the scriptures?" Is it impossible for the European people to respond with a simple 'yes' to Dostoyevsky's great question? We once loved Him, and it was not without cause. In the European fairy tales, beggars, with hearts that burn within them with that charity of honor, become princes and they do ride. But such miracles only happen in His Europe, they do not occur in multi-racial, multi-cultural Europe. Contra Tony Blair and the satanic anti-European legions, we must not be multi-racial, we must not be multi-cultural. We must be provincial and racist, loving our own and hating everyone and everything that threatens our people and our God. +

Our World Is Not Their World

June 3, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Louis Stevenson



We are in a war of a peculiar nature. It is not with an ordinary community, which is hostile or friendly as passion or as interest may veer about; not with a State which makes war through wantonness, and abandons it through lassitude. We are at war with a system, which, by its essence, is inimical to all other Governments, and which makes peace or war, as peace and war may best contribute to their subversion. It is with an armed doctrine that we are at war. It has, by its essence, a faction of opinion, and of interest, and of enthusiasm, in every country. To us it is a Colossus which bestrides our channel. It has one foot on a foreign shore, the other upon the British soil. Thus advantaged, if it can at all exist, it must finally prevail. Nothing can so completely ruin any of the old Governments, ours in particular, as the acknowledgment, directly or by implication, of any kind of superiority in this new power. This acknowledgment we make, if in a bad or doubtful situation of our affairs, we solicit peace; or if we yield to the modes of new humiliation, in which alone she is content to give us an hearing. By that means the terms cannot be of our choosing; no, not in any part. — [Edmund Burke](#)

In Stevenson's *Treasure Island*, the pirates, possessing no particular loyalty to anyone or any country, have a very mercenary relationship with their captain Long John Silver. When they think that he can get them the gold, they support him. But when they think he can't get them the gold, they mutiny. During the course of the book, the pirates bounce back and forth between support for Long John Silver and mutiny. I feel like I am reading *Treasure Island* when I listen to the Ann Coulter-conservatives and the neo-pagans condemn Trump for some policy they don't like and then, one day later, praise him for some policy they do like. The Coulterite conservatives and the neo-pagans are acting under the assumption that people and governments can be run by abstract theories, and the people with the correct abstract theories, namely themselves, should be in charge of the government. But governments are run by people, and people are more complex than abstract theories. We are not governed (more the pity) by a clan leader, a king, or a feudal lord to whom we feel bound by ties of blood and faith. We are unbound, we are loyal to an intellectual process. When an elected leader violates our mind-forged process, we feel we have a right to discard that leader. That is the piratical nature of democracy. So, from the standpoint of the abstractionists, such as Ann Coulter, Trump should be treated like the pirates treated Long John Silver. But the Coulterites do not understand democracy. Trump is not the head of the United States government, he is not a king or the leader of a clan, he is one bureaucrat in a cabal of bureaucrats who run the un-nation called the United States.

The President of the United States has as much power as the bureaucratic cabal allows him to have. Obama had more power than Trump, because Obama did the will of the liberal cabal. Trump's election was an unforeseen glitch in the liberals' governing machinery. They want the sheep called American citizens to think they have some say in their government, so they conduct phony elections, just like the old Soviet Union, in which whomever wins, Republican or Democrat, will advance the liberals' agenda — the destruction of the Christ-bearing race. The liberal oligarchy always prefers the Democrats, because the Democrats are in favor of moving toward the kingdom of Satan on earth at a faster pace than the Republicans, but the Republican candidates are tolerated so long as they follow the straight and narrow path to hell on earth. Trump has been a monkey wrench in the works because he acts according to the liberals' lies of the 1950s. In those days, the liberals did not feel they could openly advocate the extermination of the white race, so they talked about the inclusion of the colored races in a society with whites. Trump still believes that lie, and he is acting on it. He wants to include white people in the liberals' paradise, and this is the reason Trump is an anathema to the liberals. But Trump is not a leader with the power to fix things for Ann Coulter and her ilk. In point of fact, he is not a leader, he is a rear-guard defender. We have no right to condemn him any more than the French people had a right to condemn Marshal Ney. Trump is fighting a heroic rear-guard action, and to expect some kind of restoration of the American republic from a rear-guard action is unrealistic and unfair to a brave man trying to save white lives.

If we look at the way white protestors in France, Britain, and Germany are treated and compare their treatment to that of Moslem protestors in the same countries, we can see the liberals' intent. The white protestors are violently suppressed while the Moslem protestors are allowed free rein to commit acts of violence. And in the United States it is similar to what happens in Europe. The blacks and the professional protestors, funded by George Soros, are given special privileges while white European Americans who protest are arrested and in some cases (for example, the Bundy family and friends) killed. This extermination process has begun in earnest, and there is no way to stop it from within the democratic process.

White people vote for candidates who want to exterminate the white race and for candidates who acquiesce to the extermination of the white race. But would they vote for those candidates if they flatly stated that they wanted to kill every white on the face of the earth? Probably not. But it is clear to all those who are not willfully blind that the liberals do intend to destroy the white race. That is the key: white grazers are willfully blind. They don't want to see the truth staring them in the face. There is only one remedy for white people. St. Paul did not know the day or the hour and he included himself when he said that we "see through a glass darkly," but he was able to see the truth by virtue of his faith in the Man of Sorrows. As the Europeans' vision of Christ, their heartfelt vision, disappeared, they were left with abstract truths, and abstract truths can be manipulated to deceive us in deepest consequence. I saw this first hand in the prolife movement. The pro-aborts have been shown the pictures of the babies in the womb, they know what they have done, but the babies are abstractions to them, and you can kill abstractions with impunity; it doesn't touch you. The liberals always ritually invoke the Nazis when they want to demonize someone, but who is more like unto the Nazis than the liberals? The appalling thing about Hitler's brain trust was that they bureaucratically condemned millions of abstract human beings to death, coldly, efficiently, and without one pang of conscience. Likewise the French Revolutionists and their heirs, the Marxists.

Liberals are hell-bent on destroying the white race, and so long as democracy is a God-word to the European people, the liberals will be successful. The white Europeans — and they are a tiny minority — that have shown any desire to resist their own extermination still believe that democracy is sacred. They march, they protest, they make videos, and they are rewarded by their governments with harassment, imprisonment, and death. Is it any wonder that the white grazer, who has no religion except self-preservation, has decided that he would rather take his chances with a government that permits Moslems and blacks to rape and pillage at will than to offer himself up for martyrdom to the state?

I recently saw a neo-pagan blog post in which the blogger ridiculed whites who thought that the solution to white genocide was a return to "sweet and gentle Jesus." Ignoble words, ignobly written. Let one who does believe that a return to our Lord is the solution to white genocide respond: A Christian who worships Christ in spirit and truth will not worship democracy. And the democratic heresy is the first obstacle that must be overcome before white self-defense can begin. A white Christian will not refuse to fight, in the fullest sense of the word, when such fighting takes him outside the parameters of democracy.

Secondly, a white Christian will not refuse to fight liberals, Moslems, and negroes because the liberals call him a racist. A European Christian knows that this race and his faith are one; he can't refuse to be white and still be a Christian. And finally, a European Christian will not adopt a cautious "they'll kill the other whites, but they won't kill me" attitude toward the liberals and the colored barbarians. A white Christian says, "this shall not go on," because he would rather lose the world than lose his soul. Is this error? Is "sweet and gentle Jesus" not the answer

to white genocide? Then tell me, what is the answer, Mr. Neo-Pagan? Tell me how the white South Africans held the world at bay for so many years? Tell me how that tiny nation called Britain ruled the world for over three hundred years? Tell me how Europeans dominated all the non-European lands as well as their own? What did those ancient Europeans have that the modern Europeans do not have? They had the stuff that dreams are made on – they had faith in the Risen Lord.

The divided house of the European resistance to white-hating Jacobinism consists of two groups – the neo-pagans who believe in white chromosomes while hating white people, and the new age Christians who claim to love a new non-European Christ who deplores racism. Both resistance groups are useless, because our faith in Christ and our racial identity must be one before we can proceed to the battle fully armed. Liberalism, as Burke tells us, is an armed doctrine. The liberals own the churches, the schools, the media, and the government, and they will protect their institutions with armed force when they deem it necessary. Without the full armor of Christ, which our ancestors were not too proud and too smart to don, the European people are defenseless against the liberals and the colored barbarians.

Openly satanic political leaders such as Angela Merkel and Macron are being elected to office. That should tell us something about the nature of democracy. The hardcore liberals vote for Satan's surrogates because of their hatred of all things white and Christian. The lukewarm grazers vote for satanic candidates because they are afraid that they will suffer economically under a non-satanic government. Like the witches who promised Macbeth the crown, our modern satanic political leaders promise the grazers that they will continue to receive grazing rights in Liberaldom. As for black and Moslem terrorism? The grazer hopes that it will always be the other guy who is killed. He has no instinctive horror of Islam in and of itself or of black savagery in and of itself. In point of fact, the grazer has no instincts about anything. His soul is tabula rasa – it has been washed clean by the men of reason and science in church and academy.

The grazers won't be won over because men and women without souls will always throw in their lot with the rich and powerful, the people who will get them a share of the gold. And it is the liberals who have the gold and the power that gold brings. But is the liberals' gold and the liberals' world worth our souls? When Christ asked the apostles if they too would leave Him, Peter replied: "Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life." The Word of God became incarnate in Jesus Christ, and Jesus Christ became incarnate in old Europe. Even if they, the liberals and the grazers, have chosen to leave His Europe, we will stay to fight for her and live and die with her, because that is where our Lord dwells – "It's my world, and I don't want any other." +

We Are Born of Thee

June 10, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, John Sharp Williams



"You would be incorrect if you claimed that the Scarlet Pimpernel only existed in the imagination of Baroness Orczy. He exists in the spirit of every European who refuses to allow colored barbarians to torture and kill other Europeans. Christian chivalry was embodied in Nathan Bedford Forrest, the first Grand Wizard of the Ku Klux Klan; in Henry Havelock, the British avenger of Cawnpore and liberator of Lucknow; and in Andries Pretorius, the hero of Blood River, who led the punitive expedition against the Zulus after they massacred Piet Retief and his followers. The Scarlet Pimpernel is a true myth; he is the embodiment of the antique European's vision of the proper response to bloody tyranny and the murder of the innocents. The response must be non-democratic – no petitions against murder and torture to a people addicted to murder and torture – and it must be violent if violence has been used against one's people." – CWNY

No man is an Iland, intire of it selfe; every man is a peece of the Continent, a part of the maine; if a Clod bee washed away by the Sea, Europe is the lesse, as well as if a Promontorie were, as well as if a Manor of thy friends or of thine owne were; any mans death diminishes me, because I am involved in Mankinde; And therefore never send to know for whom the bell tolls; It tolls for thee. – John Donne

Let me come to the point of the recent terror attack in Britain through a very round-about route. When I went to high school, in ancient times, there was a group of self-styled 'hard guys' who wore the traditional black motorcycle jackets, smoked, drank, and tried to raise hell. The hard guys were not physically hard; in fact, they were quite out of shape. Their claim to super masculinity rested on their ability to ride motorcycles and beat up helpless people. One day, in the school restroom I came upon two hard guys trying to stuff a rather diminutive under-classman down the toilet. I was surprised how soft the hard guys were. Both went down as if I were Rocky Marciano, which of course I wasn't.

Every time there is a terror attack in Britain, I feel like I'm back with those frolicsome, rolicsome hard guys from my high school. The American neo-pagans, often flying the battle flag of the Army of Northern Virginia, thus disgracing that flag which has the cross of St. Andrew on it, typically insult the Britons' masculinity because they are not fighting back against Moslem terrorism. Excuse me, Mr. Neo-Pagan, have you revived the Nathan Bedford Forrest Ku Klux Klan, the Klan that actually fought? I guess I must have missed that news story. What on earth does an American conservative or an American neo-pagan, be he a Southerner or a Northerner, have to be so smug about? Our Moslem problems are almost as bad as in Europe, and our black problems are worse. So, since the American neo-pagans never tire of their anti-Britain refrain, let me repeat my old refrain – all whites are in the same boat, and we are all tempest-tossed, in imminent danger of being smashed on the treacherous rocks of liberalism. It ill behoves us to invoke that hideous doctrine of American exceptionalism every time a European nation is attacked by Moslem terrorists. The anti-white bell tolls for every white American as well as for every white European.

Let us leave the American neo-pagan bathroom bullies behind and proceed to the heartfelt wisdom of the men of old Europe. Edmund Burke had this to say about the shedding of blood: "The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime." And John Sharp Williams was of the opinion that, "Mere fighting is no virtue, far from it. Indeed, the man who is not great enough and brave enough not to fight when he ought not to is a poor excuse for a man. Speaking for myself, I have no admiration of the professional fighter, whether he be a Texas cowboy, or a West Point graduate." Yet Burke thought blood should be shed in the war against Jacobinism, and John Sharp Williams thought the Southern people were right to fight against the Jacobin aggression of the North. We, the European people, are facing the same Jacobinism, the Jacobinism that makes use of colored executioners against the white race, which Burke and Williams saw as a force that white men had to war against even if such a war meant the shedding of blood. Burke and Williams were right. There are times when Christian men should fight. And I think it is obvious that now is the time. If not now, when the extermination process has begun in earnest, then when do we fight? Solzhenitsyn asked himself, in the Gulag, why the Russian people had not banded together and fought back when the Communists came for them. Why had they let the authorities isolate them and come for them one by one? David Satter answers that question in his book *Age of Delirium*. Let me quote from a book review I published in April 2008:

The second story that Satter reports is one that has not received as much attention, and it concerns the citizens who remained loyal to the Soviet Union while their friends and family members were sent to the Gulag and psychiatric hospitals. What did they think? Why did they finally cease to believe in the Soviet system? This makes for a very interesting story. Satter went throughout Russia in both the pre-glasnost days and the post-glasnost days. Besides talking to victims of Soviet terrorism, he talked to the average Russian 'Joes,' the ones who had never been sent to prison or to psychiatric hospitals.

What Satter reports is, at first reading, unbelievable; but after reflection, it squares with what one knows about history and human nature. What Satter found was that the average Russian Joe supported the Soviet regime; he believed the official lie. Russians were willing to put up with bread lines and cramped housing because their government told them conditions were worse everywhere else. They believed the Afghans had invited the Russians into their country to protect them, and they believed that Lenin was a saintly, heroic man.

It was glasnost that changed everything. Gorbachev had no intention of unleashing the forces that would topple the Soviet Union. He was a typical Communist party hack. He thought he could use glasnost as a policy to defeat his enemies within the party, but when the information flow started, when devoted teachers discovered that everything they had been teaching for years was a lie, when citizens learned that Lenin was not a saint but a man with the blood of millions on his hands, when Soviet citizens actually started to visit Western countries – well, then the sacrifices the citizens had made during the years of communism seemed to be worthless. If they were not building the socialist utopia, what were they doing? Where was their metaphysic? Glasnost destroyed the Soviet Union. And the man who ushered it in for his own political reasons, Gorbachev, went down with it.

The European people have still not had their glasnost moment. They still believe that Moslem terrorism and black terrorism is just part of the democratic process. "These things happen in a free society." They do not believe that their leaders are using Islamic and black shock troops to destroy them. They do not believe in the liberal elite's demonism, because they are in that

terrible limbo between paganism and Christianity. They are not pagan enough to fight as the pagan fights, and they are not Christian enough to fight as the antique Europeans fought when they defeated the pagan Moslems and the black barbarians.

The church men, because they feared that a passionate man of blood would revert to paganism, killed the European's heart as Havisham killed Estella's heart:

"I begin to think," said Estella, in a musing way, after another moment of calm wonder, "that I almost understand how this comes about. If you had brought up your adopted daughter wholly in the dark confinement of these rooms, and had never let her know that there was such a thing as the daylight by which she had never once seen your face, —if you had done that, and then, for a purpose had wanted her to understand the daylight and know all about it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

The Russians' glasnost simply transferred the Russians' alliance from one form of Jacobinism to another. (1) What they and the rest of the European people need is a Christian glasnost. The Europeans need to see with the eye of a Christian heart. What the communist Jacobins did and what the democratic Jacobins are still doing, is a dramatic change in focus. They have wrested control of church and state in order to get the European to see life through the material rather than the spiritual eye. In their brave new world, the European is an unnatural piece of garbage that must be disposed of so that the natural people, the people of color, can live pure and clean. So long as we see life through the eyes of the liberals who belong to Satan, we will be like cattle lined up for the slaughterhouse. The 'natural' religions of Islam, voodoo, and syncretistic, Jacobin liberalism have no room for whites who were once the champions of the 'unnatural' religion, the religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

The Rev. Bob Richards of Olympic pole vaulting fame might have overstated, in his book *The Heart of a Champion*, the extent to which the spirit can overcome physical obstacles. If you're built like Don Knotts, you are not going to become a heavyweight champion no matter how great your will to win. Nevertheless, Richards' point is still well taken. The spirit-imbued man can achieve much even in the athletic arena, which seems to be a realm where biological nature rules. But it is in Longfellow's "bivouac of life" that the spirit comes to the forefront. Wars are not won by biologically superior men, they are won by the sustained efforts of spiritually superior men. Faith, not hormones, wins wars. When the European's eye of faith is opened, when he regains his moral vision, he will fight.

The hero of Walker Percy's novel *Love in the Ruins* tries to make a machine that can reconnect the white man's intellect with his soul. He doesn't succeed. The intelligent man, the "cultured" European, remains a man with only an intellectual faith, which is no faith at all. Why can't the European man believe in what his ancestors believed and then act the part of a man as his ancestors did? Let us always go back to our apostle, the apostle of charity. St. Paul tells us that we must circumcise our hearts before we can see the living God. It seems like there is an unlimited supply of synthetic remedies for biological impotence, but what is the remedy for spiritual impotence? Why don't our hearts burn within us in the presence of Christ, who lives at the center of Europe, the Europe the liberals and their colored allies are destroying? Many times, during my tenure as a teacher, I recall tearing up over a passage of literature from one of the European poets. My students looked at me as if I were a creature from Mars. There is a great divide between His Europe and modern Europe. So long as the European people remain on the wrong side of the divide, with minds that are severed from their hearts, they will be at the mercy of the liberals and the colored heathens who have no mercy. We who are about to die demand a miracle, the same miracle that turned the weak and timid apostles on the road to Emmaus into men with hearts that burned within them. +

(1) In contrast, the rulers of our American democratic oligarchy do not deny the existence of God. Instead they co-opt Him¹: God exists and he is a democratic, racially egalitarian, universalist god. The seductive logic of that assertion tends to produce hapless jellyfish, who flop around and proclaim their contentment. And in order to assure their government and themselves of their "Christianity," the democratic jellyfish spout racial egalitarian and universalist cant whenever they are asked to speak.

So, we have our own "delirium" in this country. And we need to resist it just as fiercely as the Christian remnant in Russia resisted communism. If we view books such as Satter's merely as cautionary tales about the evils of communism, we miss the point. The moral of the Russian communist story is that man cannot live without God. And the addendum to the American democratic story is that man needs the living God, not a phony, democratic, multi-racial caricature of God.

¹*One gets a picture of two devils sent out from hell to try and corrupt the souls of men. One devil is sent to Russia and one to the United States. The Russian devil goes head-on against God and introduces Marxist atheism. He gets C- results. Satan is not very pleased with him. On the other hand, the American devil does not tackle God head-on. He uses the name of God to sell his Satanic agenda – Jacobin democracy and racial universalism. When he reports back to hell, he receives an A+ and is given a promotion.*

The Eyes of the Heart

June 17, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Herbert Butterfield, Shakespeare



Old Man. O, my good lord, I have been your tenant, and your father's tenant, these fourscore years.

Glou. Away, get thee away! Good friend, be gone;
Thy comforts can do me no good at all;
Thee they may hurt.

Old Man. You cannot see your way.

Glou. I have no way, and therefore want no eyes;
I stumbled when I saw. Full oft 'tis seen,
Our means secure us, and our mere defects
Prove our commodities. O dear son Edgar,
The food of thy abused father's wrath!
Might I but live to see thee in my touch
I'd say I had eyes again!

-King Lear

And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

-Acts 9: 4-6

I would place an addendum after Whittier's sad lament, "For all sad words of tongue and pen, the saddest are these, It might have been." The addendum would run: 'For all the false words of tongue and pen, the falsest are these, You can't go back to the past.' Let us place the European people in the position of Ebenezer Scrooge. Scrooge can't go back and become twenty-one again, but he most certainly can go back to his spiritual youth and accept the grace of God which he rejected many years before. The European people can't change the fact that they have lived for centuries under the government of the Archangel Satan, who rules them through Jacobin democracy, but they can renounce Jacobin democracy and become like unto their European ancestors who lived their lives in the shadow of the Cross.

Would a return to their Europe mean that we would no longer see sickness, war, and death? Of course not. But we would not suffer "the heartache and the thousand natural shocks the flesh is heir to," in hopeless despair. We would have spiritual comforts to offset the tragedies of life, and we would have hope that the last great enemy, which is death, was not invincible. Black savagery would still exist in our new-old Europe, but it would be controlled. Moslems would still live in the Arab nations, but they would no longer live in European nations. There would still be some babies murdered in the womb, but there would be very few that suffered that fate, because instead of receiving big pay checks for the slaughter of the innocents, abortion doctors would be executed.

We must return to old Europe, because the new utopian Europe that has been imposed on us is not His Europe. Even if the rulers of Liberaldom would let us into their utopian Europe, would we want to abide there? What good is it to gain the world if you lose your soul in doing so? Ah, there's the rub. If we don't have souls, if we are just by-products of nature, then there is nothing but this world only. The liberals have decreed that there is only nature, so they can stop the only force on earth capable of destroying them; that force is the spirit-infused European. Without the faith that animated our ancestors the modern Europeans are left pleading for a place in the liberals' anti-white, anti-Christian utopia. Far better to stop pleading, to stop bowing and scraping before the liberals' colored gods, and to take up arms against the liberals and their colored allies in the name of Christ and our sacred heritage. But of course the post-Christian European does not believe in a sacred heritage that stems from a belief in the Man of Sorrows. He believes in his intellect, in his ability to intellectually manipulate history to serve his own ends. The neo-pagans, the mad-dog liberals, and the new age conservatives in church and state are all united in a Jacobin cabal that seeks the kingdom of God on earth, through the good offices of their god-all-mighty intellects. Lost by the wayside is the crowned King of Europe. He will not come to us unless we call on Him by name. We have to look past His beggar's weeds and see the divinity within. And then? We will ask Him to come and abide with us by our racial hearth fire.

Modern Liberaldom is built on two assumptions. The first is that white men are evil. The second is that all white men, prior to the 20th century, were stupid, because they looked at life from an unscientific, which translates to unnatural, view of the world. The two assumptions are really coordinate, because the liberal views intelligence and morality as one. If you think about life as the materialists such as Darwin, Marx, Freud, and Adam Smith thought about life, you will think naturally and abhor the unnatural white Europeans. (1) From that naturalism stems liberalism, and because of that naturalism the white man is in the process of being eliminated from the face of the earth. "The thing which we have come to regard as history would disappear if students of the past ceased to regard the world of man as a thing apart – ceased to envisage a world of human relations set up against nature and the animal kingdom. In such circumstances the high valuation that has long been set upon human personality would speedily decline." (Herbert Butterfield)

The high valuation we placed on human personality has not just declined, it has disappeared. And it has disappeared because His image in man has disappeared. Without the God who became man, there can be no human personalities. What we now have are aggregate herds of ... of what? What is a human being if human beings are not created in the image of God? The liberals have told us – man is a glorified ape. But some apes are more natural than other apes. The unnatural apes, the white apes, must be exterminated so the natural apes can live as nature intended. They should live with no restraints on their natural appetites, because the natural appetites of the colored apes are good, while the unnatural appetites of the white apes are bad.

The religion of nature, the religion of the glorified colored ape, has its own system of manners, customs, and traditions. And that system has bound the European to the Promethean rock. He only exists to serve the liberal state. If he can prove useful to the state, if he serves the negroes and the heathens, he might be allowed to live some 70 plus years. But his children, if he has any, will not, if the liberals are not destroyed, be allowed to live out their lives. Their whiteness will be dealt with.

Modern Europeans on every side of the political spectrum see life in managerial terms. They think all life's problems can be solved by rational analysis. But European genocide cannot be solved by rational analysis. It can only be prevented by white human beings who have not been anesthetized by over a century of liberal soul washing. 'There is no soul, there is only nature,' has been the constant refrain of the liberals for the past three hundred years. And the liberals have controlled church and state for the past one hundred years. Should it surprise us then that the only resistance to liberalism is a non-resistance? 'Please, liberal sirs and madams, won't you let the clever white monkeys play with the black monkeys?'

There are two 'natural' cultures in the white man's history. There was the culture of what Walter Scott called our natural affections – the love of kith, kin, and God. And now a new natural culture has supplanted the older natural culture. The new natural culture consists of the love of the natural black savage and the earth as a biological entity. All sentiments stemming from the old natural culture have been anathematized by the modern, nature-based liberals. What were called virtues are now vices – the love of kith and kin is racist, chastity and monogamy are unnatural and therefore sinful... Need I go on? A vast organization that encompasses the once Christian churches, which have become like unto organized Jewry, has come into being with the sole purpose of propagating and defending the natural religion of liberalism, which is held together by a psychological mumbo-jumbo that was summed up by Lev Shestov, "Man is an Ape therefore we must love one another." Of course we must not love the unnatural white apes, they won't be allowed into the liberals' natural paradise. Is this fair? The request for fairness comes from the older natural culture, it is rooted in Portia's articulation of the Quality of Mercy. What is right is what concerns the liberals. And what is right is their 'natural' view of existence. Hence the ethics of the jungle, the ethos of the natural black savage, is the ruling ethos of the European people. But are the liberals wrong to assume that the whites cannot become glorified apes? Yes and no. Whites have descended to the level of apes. The naturalization process has worked. But they can never quite achieve negrohood. They still, even in their debased, naturalized state, cannot quite become like unto the negro and the other colored races. It will be the destiny of the not quite naturalized whites, if the liberals are not defeated, to serve in the tents of the children of Ham. And the most subservient of the white apes will be the rationalized Christians who read the Bible with the exterior eye only, while ignoring the vision of their European ancestors who read the Bible with the interior eye of the heart.

The extraction of the white man's heart from his mind took place in the Christian churches. The church men saw that they were losing the battle with the liberal Jacobins. So to save Christianity they killed it. By making the Christian faith a philosophy, which could be passed to receptive colored minds by men of great intellect, the church men destroyed the Europeans' connection to God. They touched Him through their hearts, through pietas. If white pietas is proscribed, if the mark of a Christian becomes his willingness to renounce his racial hearth fire, the Christian faith is transformed into an ugly witch, it becomes the unchristian faith, and to oppose Christian Jewry is to oppose the devil.

The American Civil War was very close to a one hundred year war. It started in the 1860s and ended in the 1950s when the Southern people finally decided to become fully integrated members of the United Jacobin States of America. The Spanish counter-revolution ended in 1975 when Franco died. The Chilean counter-revolution ended in 1998 when Pinochet left office. And the white South Africans gave up their counter-revolution in 1991 although their will to resist ended with the death of Dr. Verwoerd in 1966. What all the aforementioned counter-revolutions have in common is that their leaders had some official position in the military or in the government. They had an aura of authority. People seem unwilling to follow a leader who has never had any official position in the regime that they want to oppose. All seems hopeless then. The people will not follow a leader who is completely from outside modern Jacobin Europe, and the Jacobins have thoroughly cleansed their system. There are no leaders in church or state that oppose Jacobinism. The blogger CWNY can scream about the evils of Jacobin liberalism till those proverbial cows come home, but he will not be able to start the counter-revolution. What is needed is a road to Damascus experience in the ranks of Europe's nobility. A von Stauffenberg or a St. John of Austria needs to arise. Not likely? No, it is not likely. But even if we are going to have to proceed without a leader, we should still fight back, because the charity of honor demands that we fight even if we face certain defeat.

One final word on the conversion of a member of the European nobility as depicted in **Remembrances VI: Thy People**. My grandparents on my father's side were very conservative Americans of German and Welsh coal-mining stock. My grandfather used 'liberal' as a pejorative term, and he didn't think anyone who did not read the Bible from a fundamentalist perspective was a Christian. My father went to college on the GI Bill and became much more liberal than his parents. Likewise my mother. I was raised to be a liberal as were my siblings who became much more liberal than my parents. That is what educating the young means in a Jacobin state: every generation becomes more radicalized than the previous generation until we come to the Kingdom of Satan on earth. But something happened to me. I regressed and became an enemy of Jacobin liberalism. And I started, when I became a father, an anti-Jacobin counter-revolutionary cell within the Jaws of Liberaldom. The ultimate counter-revolutionary will always be a Christian father. (2) We need an anti-Jacobin leader, a man who believes that leadership is akin to fatherhood. Such a leader loves his kith and kin as Christ loves His people. We don't need more rational analysis of white genocide. We need to love much and fight the Jacobin liberals and their Moslem and colored shock troops. If a leader emerges who is a true hearth-fire European, we should follow him. But we cannot figure out history — we only know that our Lord enjoins us to fight. Maybe this time we are not to be vouchsafed a leader. Or maybe it is our Lord Himself who will lead us. +

(1) Never eliminate the capitalists from the Jacobin cabal. Witness the radicalization of the 'conservative' magazine *National Review*. One of their writers recently wrote a book called *Hillbilly Elegy* in which he argued for the extermination of the white race.

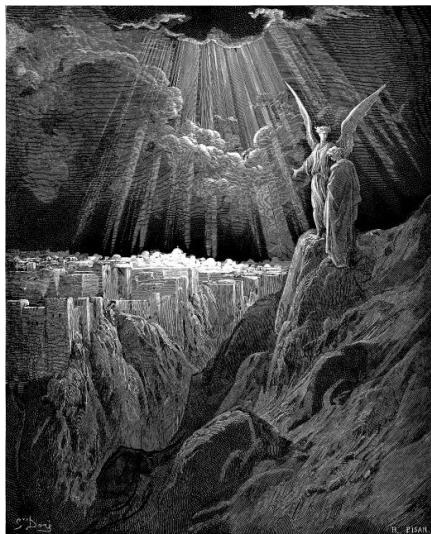
(2) William Tell is our model. His counter-revolutionary instincts stemmed from his instincts as a father. When men like Tell arise in Europe the reign of the Merkels and the other liberal tyrants of Satandom will come to an end.

The Europe That Shall Not Be Destroyed

June 24, 2017

Categories: Charity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Chateaubriand



Yet as I saw it, I see it again,
The Kirk and the palace, the ships and the men,
As long as I live and where'er I may be,
I'll always remember my town by the sea.

— Robert Louis Stevenson

I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him.

And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. —Daniel 7: 13-24

European Christians, the men and women that are trying to believe as the antique Europeans believed, have been driven to the catacombs. They don't literally live in caves, but their homes have become like the catacombs. They live secret lives, trying to live amongst liberals without becoming like unto them. Most Europeans have given up; they have either totally embraced secular liberalism or else they have joined a modern cookie-cutter church which blends liberalism and a Christless, irreligious Christianity that is antithetical to European Christianity. You won't have to live in the catacombs if you embrace the Christless Christianity, but will the heart be satisfied? Can Christless Christianity sustain the European people? I think it is painfully obvious that it can't, but the Europeans don't seem capable of getting off the modernist express train to oblivion. Maybe it is just going too fast, but still, the Europeans must get off that hideous, hell-bound train.

The Christian church men, until modern times when all is permitted, used to warn us about sexual passion. The laymen and laywomen were enjoined to use their God-given sexuality in the way prescribed by God, or otherwise bad things would happen. Such admonitions were right and proper. But why was not the same emphasis, or an even greater emphasis since it had to do with the original sin, placed on the improper use of reason? Why weren't we warned and admonished about the misuse of our reasoning powers as we were warned and admonished about the misuse of our carnal appetites? Chateaubriand's comments on that subject are worth quoting again:

Now, if the primitive constitution of man consisted in accordance such as we find established among other beings, nothing more was necessary for the destruction of this order, or any such harmony in general, than to alter the equilibrium of the forces or qualities. In man this precious equilibrium was formed by the faculties of love and thought. Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in knowledge to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new feelings, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undergo so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks. —[The Genius of Christianity](#).

The pride of science! That is the original sin, to seek to know what God knows, not through the affections, through our filial devotion to a loving God and our love for His creatures, but through the abstracted intellect, contemplating nature. After the fall, the repentant Adam and Eve must have been very close to God. They had sinned much, but they loved much (see *Adam and His Kin* by Ruth Beechick). But the heirs of Adam and Eve gradually lost their connection to God. They once again became full of the pride of science; they sought God in nature rather than in the human heart. First came the Flood, then came the destruction of the Tower of Babel, and later the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. Every one of those catastrophes were brought on by mankind's estrangement from God. And man becomes estranged from God by seeking to know God through nature rather than through the human heart. I am no prophet, but it seems as if the modern Europeans are now estranged from God as were the people just prior to the Flood, as were the people just prior to the destruction of the Tower of Babel, and as were the people of Sodom and Gomorrah prior to their destruction. The uniqueness of the Europeans was that they, and they alone, saw God through the interior eye of the heart, and they loved Him. They loved the heart of God revealed in Jesus Christ.

When Christendom seemed at its height in the high Middle Ages (its height when viewed from the external eye), Satan entered into the heart of the church. He came in preaching reason. He appealed to men's pride of intellect by telling them they could know God through the rational contemplation of the natural world. What could be wrong with that? Everything was wrong. That neat little formula – God is the end product of a rational process – destroyed the harmony of the European's soul, which had been restored by Christ. Pride of science became the lodestar of Europe instead of Christ. The sneering intellect replaced the circumcised heart. It didn't happen overnight, but we can see, particularly in the 20th century, the European people moving into Satan's realm and away from the green and pleasant land of Christian Europe. The pride of science has left us defenseless against our ancient foe, who prowls about the

world seeking the ruin of souls. And whose souls must he seek? He already has the colored heathens' souls. He wants the Europeans' souls. He wants the Christ-bearing people to choose his pride of intellect over the love of Christ. When the pride of science replaced white pietas, Europe was leased out to the devil.

In the same term in college I had two different English literature teachers. The one was a secularized Jewish male who saw everything from a Freudian standpoint. The other was a secularized Christian who was a devotee of *The Hero with a Thousand Faces* (by a Jungian) and a pantheon of Asian philosophers. It didn't matter what work of literature was studied in either class. Shakespeare always spoke Freudian in the secularized Jew's class, and he spoke Jungian and Asian claptrap in the secularized Christian's class. Both teachers took snipes at the other in their classes, but both teachers, despite their animosity towards each other, were in Satan's camp. They were academics who thought that their abstract intellects could fashion a new world apart from His world. And their intellectual pride, which comes from Satan, has enveloped the Western world – the European people have become academics. The Christian worldview, which can only be seen by European hearts connected to Him through white pietas, has practically disappeared from the face of the earth. Conservatives and liberals, be they church men or secular, are all looking at existence through an exterior eye that is blinded with the pride of science. Likewise the neo-pagans. What unites all the divergent groups is their rejection of the old European way to knowledge, through the more excellent way that St. Paul spoke of in 1 Corinthians 13.

I recently read an article by a conservative 'expert' in which he stated that Marxism was dead because it no longer excited the European intellectuals anymore; they had moved on. It's true that Marxism in the abstract no longer excites the intelligentsia of Liberalism, but Marxism as a cultural force is alive and well; it has metamorphosed into negro worship, just as Jacobinism metamorphosed into egalitarian democracy and Marxism. All those modern ideologies are derivatives of the original sin – pride of intellect – or what Chateaubriand called the pride of science. It might be the end for Europeans; it certainly will be if they stay within the confines of Satandom, quarreling over which form of demonism they want to live under, be it Islam, democratic negro worship, or a Babylonian combination of both. But Noah's faithfulness saved a remnant.

If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes. Let be.

Hamlet went from a state of abstraction, from a man of intellectual pride, to a Christian prince who saw that he *was* born to set it, the kingdom, right. And so are we, we Europeans, we were born to set things right, because we saw His blood upon the rose when the heathens saw nothing but a rose.

Prior to the 20th century, when the colored heathens attacked Europe and her subsidiaries, what was a matter of debate was the tactics and the weapons that were to be used against the colored heathens. But it was a given that the Europeans had to fight the colored heathens. Now that liberals have a stranglehold on the governments of Europe, the reverse is the case. It is always a given, when the colored heathens attack, that the European people must not fight back. Why mustn't they fight back? Why is European pacifism in the face of a colored army out to destroy the European people taken as a given? It is a given because the liberals are all Ganelons; they want the European people to be destroyed. They preach nonviolence to the European people while encouraging and countenancing the violence of the colored heathens. This is what passes for a higher level of existence – the worship of the colored heathens who know not charity and the hatred of the European people who once championed the God of mercy. It is clear that malice now bears down truth. The liberals' fangs are out; they no longer make any pretense of wanting an egalitarian society in which people of all colors can come together in a wonderful secular paradise. They want only one thing – they want to destroy every last vestige of the image of God in man. So they must destroy the European people. And we must fight – we have been pushed to the edge of the cliff. We must, like Hamlet and his 20th century counterpart, Ransom, fight the devil and his minions. We can't continue to debate with liberals through the democratic process; that is suicidal. We must fight them and their colored shock troops, because they are the devil's own.

It snapped like a violin string. Not one rag of all this evasion was left. Relentlessly, unmistakably, the Darkness pressed down upon him the knowledge that this picture of the situation was utterly false. His journey to Perelandra was not a moral exercise, nor a sham fight. If the issue lay in Maledil's hands, Ransom and the Lady were those hands. The fate of a world really depended on how they behaved in the next few hours. The thing was irreducibly, nakedly real. They could, if they chose, decline to save the innocence of this new race, and if they declined its innocence would not be saved. It rested with no other creature in all time or all space. This he saw clearly, though as yet he had no inkling of what he could do. – Perelandra by C.S. Lewis

If someone took you to Paris to show you the Louvre and then showed you only the trash cans in the basement, what would you think of the Louvre? This is what the liberals have done with Christian Europe. They have shown us only the worst of Christian Europe. They have not shown us the incomparable beauty of Christian Europe because they hate the cornerstone of Europe, that transcendent vision of Jesus Christ, the crowned King of Europe, and the inspiration for all that is beautiful beyond measure in old Europe. When the thought is father to the deed, when our minds are once again connected to our hearts, we will know what has to be done. We will respond as our European ancestors responded when they were betrayed by the Ganelons of Europe and when they were attacked by the heathens. The Christian heart always, as Fitzhugh asserted, finds a way through the most difficult straits that the philosophical mind finds unnavigable. But we must have hearts; that is all in all. When everything else has failed – the think-tanks, the democratic process, the endless debates with the devil and the devil's own – a tiny remnant of Europeans shall meet and remember the past. And then? Then we will know the "more excellent way" that St. Paul spoke of. And who will stand against us then? Christian Europe is eternal Europe; it shall not die, nor shall we. There can be no blending of the European people and Babylon because there can be no blending of Christ and Satan. Satan is the purveyor of death and destruction, and our Lord brings us life. Our honored dead speak to us still, and they tell us with one voice that it is only our Lord, the cornerstone that the liberals and the colored heathen have rejected, who is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last." Surely they were right, and surely their civilization is worth fighting for. +

The Return to His Europe

July 1, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killst the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Matthew 23: 36-39

The apostle whom Christ loved tells us that, "He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not." That is tragedy of the highest order. But the apostles knew Christ once their hearts were opened. Then there was St. Paul, who encountered Christ on the road to Damascus; he also knew Christ. But neither the first apostles nor St. Paul knew Christ through the intellect; they did not know the day nor the hour of His return. They did not have a blueprint for an organizational structure called the Church, but they did know that which was essential: they knew that God had become Man and dwelt among us and gave us, through an act of divine charity, eternal life. Such was the faith of the apostles and St. Paul.

In the fullness of time, a people emerged who shared the same faith as the apostles and St. Paul. The Europeans knew Him as St. John knew Him and as St. Paul knew Him. And because they knew Him, they were despised by Satan and all those who worshipped Satan and hated the light. Against the world, against the Christ-haters, the Europeans built a civilization based on His divine charity, what Burke called that charity of honor, and they defended it until their faith faltered and the sword of charity fell from their hands. It is my contention that the despised and rejected ones, the antique Europeans, were right: they saw, through a glass darkly, what the apostles and St. Paul saw – the Son of the living God. Nothing good can come out of any civilization, be it white or colored, whose people deny the miracle of Christian Europe. Friends and enemies have told me that I'm obsessed with the European thing and therefore wrong, because to obsess on something shows a disordered mind. I concede that I am obsessed with the "European thing," but I do not concede that to be obsessed is wrong. Burke was obsessed with the French Revolution; he thought it was of the devil. Shouldn't a man be obsessive in his opposition to the devil? And shouldn't a man be obsessive in his support of the one civilization that championed the Son of God in opposition to the devil? That is what the samizdat publication called CWNY is all about. **It has been, and always shall be, my contention that to oppose the civilization of the antique Europeans is to oppose Christ. And to support their civilization is to support Christ against the devil and his minions.**

The liberals have come from outside Europe into its very center and turned His Kingdom Come into Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. That kingdom of hell on earth was not built in a day. Before Satan could triumph the Europeans had to be spiritually anesthetized. Through the scientizing of the organized churches the spiritual anesthetization took place. Is there a modern European, be he Christian, secularized liberal, or neo-pagan, who will oppose psychology and all the other modern voodoo sciences that are used to explain human existence? No sane man will oppose liberal voodoo. And by 'sane' we are speaking of psychologically sane. But to be psychologically sane one must be one with modernity, which is to be one with Satan. By saying that the modern Europeans are one with Satan, I am not suggesting every European home has altars consecrated to Satan. I am suggesting something far worse. White people who form devil cults do not believe in the devil as the colored heathens do. Such people are merely playing with abstractions; they do not believe in the angelic person called the devil, because in order to believe in the devil one must believe in Christ. The devils knew who Christ was: "And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, thou art the Son of God. And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known." ([Mark 3: 11-12](#)) The liberals neither acknowledge Christ nor the devil; what they have is a passionate hatred for all things connected to Him and a passionate devotion to all things that come from Satan. The liberals follow the passionate hatred that is in their hearts without knowing its source. All they know is that they must respond to that force inside them. They must champion the negroid race against the white race, they must champion Islam over Christianity, and they must advocate the slaughter of the innocents. Why must they do these things? They will give you all kinds of reasons, gleaned from philosophy, psychology, and theology, but the real, unstated reason is that they hate Christ and love Satan; therefore, they must hate all things European, even if the Europeans have abandoned Christ, and they must love all things antithetical to Christianity and the European people. Will the liberals' hatred for humanity cease with the destruction of the white race? I don't think so, because Satan does not love any race. When the white race is destroyed, the other races will destroy each other, because Satan, not Christ, rules their hearts.

I'm not a Thomist nor a Buddhist, so I don't have a rational, happy place where I can go to escape the agony of existence. And agony often comes my way through the visits of my mad-dog liberal sister. If you tell me I shouldn't let her in my house, I would concede that you might be right. But not being a Thomist, I would also say that it doesn't feel right. Blood ties entail certain obligations. I feel that if my sister doesn't bring up liberal subjects, I should allow her into my home with the hope that something in my home, or someone in my home, might start her back to His Europe. Not likely? No, it is not likely, which is why the visits from my sister are very depressing. I see a woman, who, like Hamlet's mother, sees nothing yet believes that all that there is she sees. Last Christmas I showed her, without any intention of tweaking her, a fairy tale that my children were particularly fond of when growing up. I hoped she would read it and like it, thus awaking some dormant feelings of pietas. But she held the book as if she were holding a loathsome reptile and then put it down without even turning a page. What is to be done with such people? When they are in power, they should be dealt with as Ganelon was dealt with. When they are out of power they should be placed in segregated areas with the colored barbarians. That is a much kinder fate than they intend for us if they are allowed to continue on their merry, Christ-hating, white-hating way.

My sister, like many of the sixties' liberals who are fast disappearing, has a certain nostalgia for the European hearth fire, which is why she makes her yearly visit to my home at Christmas time. But the new breed of liberals do not even have a touch of nostalgia. They have a bare-fanged hatred for all things Christian and European. I've seen some older liberals swoon over the beauty of a sonnet by Donne, even though they didn't approve of his faith, and I've seen older liberals take delight in a novel by Dickens. No longer. Nothing from the past moves our modern liberals. And sadly, the alternative right belongs to the liberals. They, like their liberal brethren, are not moved by anything or anybody from Christian Europe. They are rootless, seeking a place in Liberaldom in the name of ... In the name of what? In the name of whom? They don't know. They are back with the unknown God of the Greeks. The incarnate God, who is the God of the antique Europeans, has a local habitation and a name. How can a European who denies that God have a European identity? That denial makes a European man an Undine; it makes him the man without a soul of whom the Minstrel in Scott's [Lay of the Last Minstrel](#) sings: "Breathes there the man, with soul so dead, Who never to himself hath said, This is my own, my native land!" Our racial hearth fire, presided over by Christ, is our native land.

The romance between the European people and Christ has certainly ended. The Europeans' souls are dead. But souls are not vegetable matter, they can be revived, though I confess I do not know how such a revival can occur when you see the thorns of Liberaldom all around the European people. How can the good seed take root and grow? We are way past the time when we can be saved by politics or theology. We need the type of miracle that occurs when a man dying of thirst in the desert discovers an underground spring of water. That is the great unknown

part of the European people's spiritual pilgrimage. Will a spring of love gush from their heart, a love for the Man of Sorrows, right before they perish from a surfeit of the superficiality and soullessness of liberalism? Our Lord only hears prayers from the depths of our heart, which means we can't reach him unless we reclaim our hearts. We must love our people in and through Christ.

Christian Europe is a very lonely place to dwell, in this, the 21st century, the first century in which Satan has gained complete control of Europe. But is it not better to fight alone and hope that other Europeans will join you than to dwell in the devil's Babylonian kingdom of everlasting night forever? "By the rivers of Babylon, where we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion." Every tear shed for Christian Europe is a prayer to our Lord who redeemed our souls with His precious blood. He will hear our tearful prayers, because He is the charity that never faileth. When the conservatives in church and state jettisoned the European people in order to conserve a mind-forged system that made God an abstraction, they jettisoned the God who dwells in human hearts. Europeans cannot leave their racial hearth fire without leaving Christ.

Neo-paganism shall fail, abstract conservatism will fail, organized Christian Jewry will fail – all that remains is the divine charity that took flesh and dwelt among the European people. Christ was ever present in old Europe, but He has been banished from the new Europe. Scott tells us that it is the bards who write history. Let me close then with that English bard, [Charles Dickens](#), who knew that only human hearts connected to His divine heart could produce the charity that never faileth.

'O, Mrs Clennam, Mrs Clennam,' said Little Dorrit, 'angry feelings and unforgiving deeds are no comfort and no guide to you and me. My life has been passed in this poor prison, and my teaching has been very defective; but let me implore you to remember later and better days. Be guided only by the healer of the sick, the raiser of the dead, the friend of all who were afflicted and forlorn, the patient Master who shed tears of compassion for our infirmities. We cannot but be right if we put all the rest away, and do everything in remembrance of Him. There is no vengeance and no infliction of suffering in His life, I am sure. There can be no confusion in following Him, and seeking for no other footsteps, I am certain.' +

The Prodigal Europeans

July 8, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Utopianism

Tags: Johanna Spyri



And he said, A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. -Luke 15: 11-24

The odious, blasphemous Fourth of July holiday has come, but not gone. The fireworks are still going off and will keep going off throughout the month until the moral idiots who bought the fireworks have exhausted their supplies. Some sage once wrote that the United States was the only nation that went from infancy to decadence with no maturity in between. That is because the United States never was a nation; she was always a proposition conceived by moral eunuchs. I know that various conservatives stoutly deny the propositional nature of the American experiment in blasphemy, but such apologists advance an abstract theory of patriotism while ignoring our anti-nation's actual history. Lincoln's articulation was correct: "...conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal."

Before the infamous U.S. Constitution was written and made into law, every single state on the American continent had laws which made the Christian faith the law of their state. The conglomeration of states were like Europe in that they had separate government bodies and geographical boundaries, but the Christian faith was their lodestar. On his deathbed, the Saxon warrior, saint, and king, Alfred the Great, told his sons to uphold the law. Of course he meant Christian law, the law he had fought to establish over and against pagan law. But Madison, Jefferson, and Franklin had a very different law in mind when they wrote the Constitution. Their law was the law of liberty – liberty from the Christian God. Because American Europeans came to the U.S. as Christians, and Christians filled up the ranks of our government and our judiciary, the great separation of Christianity from American law was not immediately apparent. But the time bomb was planted. The law and Christianity were now something separate. The American Civil War, which was an uncivil war, made the Jacobin origins of our Constitution crystal clear. The American government would always, in the name of equality, fraternity, and liberty, take the side of the non-European against the European and the non-Christian against the Christian. Because of the Northern aggression against the South, the more traditionally European section of the United States, it was the South that produced a few European critics of the American heresy. Men such as George Fitzhugh and Andrew Lytle did not think America had gone wrong; they said that our nation had started out wrong, because our Constitutional forefathers separated themselves from our Lord and kinsman, Jesus Christ, in order to embrace an utopian world conceived in an abstract ideal called liberty.

The American experiment in utopia, which preceded the French experiment, was one side of the utopian coin. The American state was the 'silken glove' seduction, while the French, Jacobin state was based on the 'iron fist.' The Russian communists adopted the 'iron fist' method, and then moved back toward the 'silken glove' of democracy. The French, who never repudiated their regicide foundations, shifted to the American, feminine side of the utopian heresy. Now? The European utopian governments are shifting ground; they are becoming iron-fist utopias who are implementing the 'some are more equal' absolute of all the utopias that are based on the equality of man. Why is it that the European people are always the unequal who must be eradicated?

The European people must be eradicated (except for the liberal elite who have gone beyond whiteness) because they have a racial history which connects them to the living God whose Kingdom Come is diametrically opposed to the abstract ideals of utopian Europe. The two utopias, the Iron Fist utopianism of the French Jacobins and the Russian communists, and the Silken Glove utopianism of the American founders, can be seen clearly in the break between Freud and Jung over the question of religious faith. Freud thought religious faith was a mental illness that had to be treated, whereas Jung observed that all men had some religious yearnings, so he asked the question – "Can something so universal be sick?" Without adopting his specific methodology, subsequent psychiatrists and the church men have gone with Jung rather than Freud. So long as you do not claim your religion is true to the exclusion of all other religions, you are not sick. In other words, so long as your religion is an abstraction, something that helps you cope with the angst of existence, you can keep it. But this means that the entire white race prior to the 20th century was sick, because they claimed to believe in a non-abstract, living God. The direct attack of Freud and the indirect attack by Jung both end with the necessity of eradicating the European people, because they believed that the Word was made flesh and dwelt among them.

After all the endless debates over God's grace and human free will, debates which are the equivalent of the debate about the number of angels dancing on a pin's head, we know that miracles begin with the grace of God, and we know that no miracle, in this earthly realm, can occur if we do not respond to the grace of God. The antique Europeans responded to the grace of God and gave us a vision of the living God, for it is always through humanity that our Lord shows us His face. When the faith becomes an abstraction, divorced from the people who loved much, God disappears. In that marvelous Christian work from the greatest of Christian centuries, *Heidi* (1880), Johanna Spyri tells us of a blind grandmother who is close to despair until she sees, with the inner eye of the heart, the face of God through charity, the charity that can only come to us through our kith and kin.

At that Grannie's face lit up, and she pressed Mrs. Sesemann's hand, quite speechless with gratitude, Heidi hugged her again. "Hasn't everything turned out finely?" she cried.

"Oh yes, child, I did not know there were such good people in the world. It renews my faith in God to have them bother about a poor old thing like me."

There is so much in that old Grannie's statement of faith. We come to God through the channels of grace, the people of our own racial hearth fire, that He provided for us. We don't come to God by building intellectual towers of Babel. Christ is the grave where buried love doth live; He is the passionate shepherd who has woven us, if we accept His grace, into the story of His divine love. The image of God culture was their culture, the dark, sinister culture of Satan is the culture of the modern Europeans. Everything that is poetic and morally beautiful comes

from Christ, everything that is mathematical and morally reprehensible comes from Satan. And what could be more satanic than our modern European Babylon which Americans celebrate every Fourth of July, and Frenchmen celebrate every July 14th?

When we abandon the poetic essence of Europe, which is the Christ that presided over the racial hearth fire of the antique Europeans, we turn ourselves over to the abstractionists in Church and State. And those abstractionists will always purge the blind Swiss grannies who have no statistical significance. Do you recall the Ford Pinto scandal of some years back? The car company discovered that the car's rear fuel tank caught fire whenever the car was hit from the rear by another car. But the accountants for Ford decided that it was cheaper to pay out money for the lawsuits filed by relatives of those killed in car explosions than it was to fix the cars. It was a bottom line decision, quite practical if you take away the human element. White people are all, in the modern utopian world, blind Swiss grannies that can and must be eliminated by the abstracted accountants of Liberalism. It goes like this – "White people are from another time and place, the 'image of God' culture of ancient Europe; therefore, they are not suitable subjects for the new utopia. Let's exterminate them in the name of utopia." What are Americans celebrating on the 4th of July and what are Europeans celebrating on their various democratic festivals? They are celebrating their extermination at the hands of the liberals and their colored henchmen.

The European people have left their father's house, which is Christian Europe, and they have gone to a far country, which is utopian Europe. You might say that right there the comparison with the prodigal son parable breaks down, because the European people are not experiencing famine. But all Christ's parables are tales about His spiritual realm. The European people are suffering through the greatest spiritual famine of their existence as a people. They have rejected the poetic essence of their civilization, which is Jesus Christ, and replaced Him with the sacred negro and a supporting cast of colored heathens. The Europeans need to see the parable of the prodigal son through to the end. They need to recognize their spiritual blindness and return to their father's house. But in order to return and be forgiven, the European people need to see that the far country they dwell in is not utopia, it is hell. The religious, racial, and sexual Babylon that the liberals have built cannot sustain the European people any more than the husks the swine ate could sustain the prodigal son.

We always come back to Lincoln's question. Can a nation conceived in liberty, liberty from God, and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal, with the negro and colored races being more equal, long survive? Can it long survive? I don't know, but I do know that such a nation should not survive. Our anti-nation and the European anti-nations that have followed our example, the example of a people who have consecrated their nation to Satan, must perish. Nations of repentant European prodigal sons must take the place of the satanic nations of Europe and the satanic nation called the United States of America. I'm sick of looking at liberal faces who are connecting links to Satan. I want my people to be like unto Heidi; I want them to be connecting links to His Kingdom Come. If we stop thinking like Ford-Pinto accountants, weighing everything on material scales, we will return home to our European hearth fire and discover that He will forgive us our trespasses and welcome us home. +

Hell on Earth

July 15, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Shakespeare



Lear. My wits begin to turn.

Come on, my boy. How dost, my boy? Art cold?
I am cold myself. Where is this straw, my fellow?
The art of our necessities is strange,
That can make vile things precious. Come, your hovel.
Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my heart
That's sorry yet for thee.

It's worth noting that the hard-left rioters in Germany proclaimed "Welcome to hell." That is the essence of liberalism. It starts out as a utopian movement to build heaven on earth, but the utopian heaven of the liberals is a world of negro worship, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy and the glorification of every abomination under the sun. It is pure hell. And when there is no visible resistance, the final generation of liberals removes the mask and makes explicit what was always implicit — at the heart of Liberalism is hell.

In Hawthorne's short story "[The Celestial Railroad](#)," an intellectual Christian decides to take a trip to the Celestial City on a celestial railroad built by "Mr. Smooth-it-away":

... who, though he had never actually visited the Celestial City, yet seemed as well acquainted with its laws, customs, policy, and statistics, as with those of the City of Destruction, of which he was a native townsman. Being, moreover, a director of the railroad corporation and one of its largest stockholders, he had it in his power to give me all desirable information respecting that praiseworthy enterprise.

Yes, that's it precisely. With the sanction of intellectual Christians, Christians who have not circumscribed their hearts, the devil's minions build hell in the name of heaven.

The intellectual Christian Everyman travels along on the Celestial Railroad while avoiding the pitfalls – at least according to Mr. Smooth-it-away, of an excessive passion – the love of God and the hatred of Satan:

"Where is Mr. Greatheart?" inquired I. "Beyond a doubt the directors have engaged that famous old champion to be the chief conductor on the railroad?"

"Why, no," said Mr. Smooth-it-away, with a dry cough. "He was offered the situation of brakeman; but, to tell you the truth, our friend Greatheart has grown preposterously stiff and narrow in his old age. He has so often guided pilgrims over the road on foot that he considers it a sin to travel in any other fashion. Besides, the old fellow had entered so heartily into the ancient feud with Prince Beelzebub that he would have been perpetually at blows or ill language with some of the prince's subjects, and thus have embroiled us anew. So, on the whole, we were not sorry when honest Greatheart went off to the Celestial City in a huff and left us at liberty to choose a more suitable and accommodating man."

Need I go on? The "more suitable" man is, "Apollyon, Christian's old enemy." And the new Christian Everyman, the Christian without a heart, thinks that is wonderful –

"Bravo, bravo!" exclaimed I, with irrepressible enthusiasm; "this shows the liberality of the age; this proves, if anything can, that all musty prejudices are in a fair way to be obliterated. And how will Christian rejoice to hear of this happy transformation of his old antagonist! I promise myself great pleasure in informing him of it when we reach the Celestial City."

And what happens when the train reaches the Celestial City?

And then did my excellent friend Mr. Smooth-it-away laugh outright, in the midst of which cachinnation a smoke-wreath issued from his mouth and nostrils, while a twinkle of lurid flame darted out of either eye, proving indubitably that his heart was all of a red blaze. The impudent fiend! To deny the existence of Tophet, when he felt its fiery tortures raging within his breast. I rushed to the side of the boat, intending to fling myself on shore; but the wheels, as they began their revolutions, threw a dash of spray over me so cold—so deadly cold, with the chill that will never leave those waters until Death be drowned in his own river—

Hawthorne's traveler awakes to discover it was all a dream. But we, the European people, have made that dream a reality. We have turned Christian Europe into the citadel of Satan. The construction process started with the clerical liaison men, the Mr. Smooth-it-away men, who built the bridge linking Christian Europe and Satan's Europe. And thus the terrible fusionist movement began, in which we were enjoined to divest ourselves of "prejudices" of every kind – our prejudices against race mixing, against sodomy, against Islam, against Jewry, and against sexual Babylon. But while we were enjoined to get rid of our "musty prejudices," we were told to cling to new prejudices, we were to hate all things stemming from old Europe, namely the white race and the Christian faith, the Christian faith of the European people as distinct from philosophical Christianity and fusionist Christianity.

From a rational, philosophical standpoint, it seems like the liberals are supporting causes that are diametrically opposed to liberalism. They support Moslems and colored barbarians against the white Europeans even though the Moslems and the colored barbarians believe in the rape and abuse of women, which the liberals claim they are against.

In point of fact, the liberals and the colored heathens are at odds on every issue save one — the issue of the Christ-bearing race. The liberals hate that race and so do the colored barbarians. That is the essence of liberalism: "Welcome to hell." They have already brought hell upon us. It is not a perfect hell — that will come in the hereafter — but our modern, liberal-forged world is a very close approximation to the eternal hell of the damned. If a man adheres to their world, if he gives internal assent to the principalities and powers of this modern world, he will go with Mr. Smooth-it-away to the kingdom of eternal night without feeling that he has passed from one world to another. And that is tragedy, that a man created in the image of God can be completely comfortable in the realm of Satan.

The devilish propaganda campaign of the liberals has had its effect. "You are not created in the image of God. You, the white man, are the waste product of nature, you are an unnatural aberration, a cancer in the bowels of the children of nature. You must self-destruct, but if you refuse to self-destruct, we will destroy you." Divested of their faith in Christ, the white grazers wander through the pastures of Liberaldom trying to find something to sustain them against an enemy that they refuse to believe is an enemy. They still believe in the benevolence of the liberals who preach negro worship, religious tolerance (except for Christians), non-violence (except when directed against white people), and sexual Babylon for all. The operation has been complete; the white man loves liberalism, and he is more comfortable in hell than in His Kingdom come, on earth, as it is in heaven.

In the world of the colored barbarians, be they black, brown, yellow, or red, there is no great separation between the intelligentsia and the commoners as regards religious faith. They believe as one. So it is with the Moslems, by and large; the intelligentsia believes what the men and women in the ranks believe. This is not the case with the European people. In the 19th century many of the great men of letters (but not the philosophers), such as Tennyson, Dickens, Thomas Hughes, Scott, Austen, La Fanu, Dostoyevsky — the list is endless — believed what the European people believed. There was no great divide between the intelligent man and the common man. This changed in the 20th century. Members of the European intelligentsia who expressed a belief in the Christian God were men who consciously "regressed" to Christianity. A Christian vision was no longer respectable in enlightened Europe. Novelists such as C. S. Lewis were considered fantasy writers and/or children's authors. A pseudo, rational Christianity was still espoused by churchmen and conservatives, but that type of rationalized faith was not the "as a child" faith of the antique Europeans. The "as a child" faith was gone.

In the first half of the 20th century, the existentialists said, "There is no God, life is unbearable." By the latter half of the 20th century and into the 21st century, the Western intellectuals were proclaiming that, "There is no Christian God, but we have the negro as our god; isn't that wonderful!" The great migration of the European people has taken place. The common man has gone, as he always does, with the intellectual elite. As a result, the European people have shifted from Christ to nature and nature's god. Let joy be the consequence? Only on the surface. The liberals say they have arrived at a better place, this new Europe, but they have created a world that even they, the happy ones, cannot live in. Why is drug use, suicide, and alcoholism increasing in the liberals' happy new world? Perhaps this flight from Christ is not such a wonderful panacea after all? The liberals must enforce superficiality if they are to maintain the kingdom of hell on earth, because it is only those who live in an abstract, superficial world that can maintain the fantastical delusion that we are better off without the Man of Sorrows. Our Lord is not welcome at the liberals' wedding feast, because He brings His death on the cross to every feast He attends. Who needs that death? We all do; without His death on the cross, there can be no wedding feast. His death brings us life, it brings us into a world of faith, hope, and charity. Outside of that world there is no reason to celebrate anything.

And yet the liberals do celebrate. They celebrate death, the death of all things European and Christian. Why do they hiss and spew venom any time a man or woman in public life says anything good about old Europe? Why do they cheer and applaud whenever a new right is signed into law for the feminists, the black barbarians, the sodomites, or the Moslems? They celebrate because they are the devil's own. They love what he loves. Do you think for one moment that the liberals and the colored heathens will be democratically persuaded to give up their assault on the white race and the traditional God of the white race? No, they won't. What Antonio said of Shylock can be said of the whole legion of modern liberals:

*I pray you, think you question with the Jew.
You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;
You may as well use question with the wolf,
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops, and to make no noise,
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;
You may as well do anything most hard,
As seek to soften that — than which what's harder?—
His Jewish heart.*

The "Welcome to hell" riots in Germany, the surrender to Islam throughout Europe, and the worship of negroes in America and all the European nations signals the end of the silken glove seduction of the Europeans. The iron fist era has begun, because the liberals do not see any signs of life in the European people. They have no blood faith, because they have been defeated in the intellectual arena. They have accepted the scientific attack on Christ, and that acceptance has left them naked to their enemies. Until they see with their hearts and realize that the liberals' "smartness" is superficial blather they will remain a bovine race grazing in the fields of modernity until it is their turn to be slaughtered. Revolutions succeed when those in authority start to believe the propaganda of the revolutionaries. The churchmen of Europe thought they could improve the Gospel of Christ to make it more compatible with the mind-forged philosophies of men. They kept retreating before the innovators and the destroyers until there was nothing left of Christianity — the church of Christ was consumed by the liberal Leviathan. But was that church, the church that has become the church of organized Jewry, the Church of Christ? St. Paul says that it is not. He believed that the church of Christ was in the hearts of men and women who believed that the foolishness of God was wiser than the wisdom of men. And the antique Europeans believed as St. Paul believed. Shakespeare has Mark Antony ask the Roman commoners, "What cause withdraws you now to mourn for him?" For what cause do we refuse to mourn for Him who is greater than Caesar?

Europeans live in exile in their own nations. We owe no allegiance to the liberal-barbarian mix that rules the formerly Christian European nations. After describing the horrors of Jacobinism, Burke asks if a Jacobin nation can be a European's nation:

Would this be the England that you and I, and even strangers, admired, honoured, loved, and cherished? Would not the exiles of England alone be my Government and my fellow-citizens? Would not their places of refuge be my temporary country? Would not all my duties and all my affections be there and there only?

We are not of modern Europe; we belong to Christian Europe. Wherever we find two or three gathered together in the name of the Christ of the European hearth fire, there is our nation.

I have not discussed specific tactical issues about this war that we are not fighting, because I think that individual Europeans in their own nations can come up with the best military strategies for their country. But I do believe that there is now only one option for the exiled Europeans, and that is the military option. What else can you do with a people who bring you hell? The liberals and the colored barbarians are going to kill every white European who shows any sympathy for old Europe, and they will kill a good deal of European grazers even if they don't show any sympathy for old Europe. Why? You know the answer. Because the liberals fear whiteness; they are never quite certain that a passive white grazer might leave his pasture and become a European again. It's not likely, but the liberal wants to make sure.

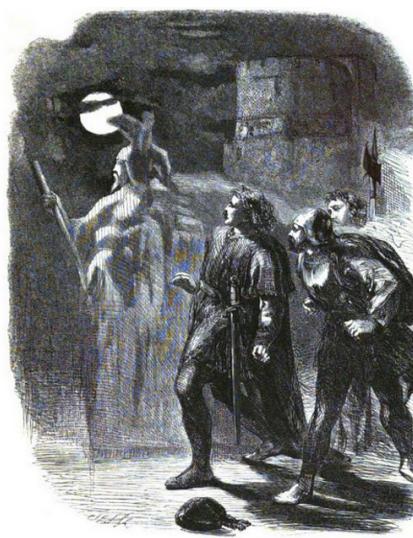
It would be heartening to know that we could be sure that there were some Europeans ready to fight for old Europe. But we can't be sure; the liberals have not labored in the vineyards of modernity in vain. They have raised up a mutant race of whites who have no loyalty to their true country, which is Christian Europe. The European people have turned their nations over to liberals and colored heathens; they have, in imitation of King Lear: "Let their folly in, And their dear judgement out!" But unlike King Lear they have not gone to the depths of despair and repented their folly. Instead, they look to the liberals in church and state to save them. But it is only those who shake off the "superflux" of liberalism that can see their way out of liberalism. Lear's moral awakening in the manger reminds us of another moral awakening in a manger. When we were very young as a people, we saw that event as the one sure and certain hope of our people. Now, once again, the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders, have taken hold of our Lord. They crucify Him anew by crucifying His people. Life is a crucifixion — what do we gain if we throw in with the liberals to avoid the cross of Christ? We gain hell and lose heaven. +

While Memory Holds a Seat

July 22, 2017

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Shakespeare



Seems, madam! Nay, it is; I know not "seems."
'Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,
Nor customary suits of solemn black,
Nor windy suspiration of forc'd breath,
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,
Nor the dejected 'havior of the visage,
Together with all forms, moods, shows of grief,
That can denote me truly. These, indeed, seem,
For they are actions that a man might play;
But I have that within which passeth show,
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

-Hamlet the Dane

I got an unpleasant jolt from the past recently when I heard the song “Woodstock” by Joni Mitchell blaring throughout the supermarket where I was shopping. The song was included in my college poetry anthology right next to Andrew Marvell and Robert Frost, and you couldn’t go down the halls of the dormitory without hearing someone playing the song. Musically the song works. Joni Mitchell had a nice voice and her music does not jar your senses like so many of the rock songs. But nevertheless the song is offensive, because the song is so openly anti-Christian. Through the medium of Miss Mitchell’s melodious voice, we are invited into the brave new world of liberalism, a world without the Christ of Europe. If you never heard Mitchell’s anthem, you are lucky, but it is sometimes necessary to know the poetic of the enemy –

*I came upon a child of God
He was walking along the road
And I asked him, where are you going
And this he told me
I'm going on down to Yasgur's farm
I'm going to join in a rock 'n' roll band
I'm going to camp out on the land
I'm try an' get my soul free
We are stardust
We are golden
And we've got to get ourselves
Back to the garden*

*Then can I walk beside you
I have come here to lose the smog
And I feel to be a cog in something turning
Well maybe it is just the time of year
Or maybe it's the time of man
I don't know who I am
But life is for learning
We are stardust
We are golden
And we've got to get ourselves
Back to the garden*

*By the time we got to Woodstock
We were half a million strong
And everywhere there was song and celebration
And I dreamed I saw the bombers
Riding shotgun in the sky
And they were turning into butterflies
Above our nation
We are stardust
We are golden*

*And we've got to get ourselves
Back to the garden*

Mitchell, like so many of the sixties radicals, thought of herself as a rebel from the mainstream culture of war mongering, sexually repressed, unnatural, middle class whites. But she and her ilk were not rebels. They differed in style, not in substance, from their liberal parents. They, like their parents, had a different view of nature than the Europeans of pre-20th century Europe. Mitchell's nature is a closed system; it is not the mirror of another transcendent world, it is the whole world. No matter that the free love, back-to-nature hippies denounced science, they still were and are part of the new scientific world in which nature is just biological nature. That new-old view of nature returned the European people to paganism. The 'garden' that Mitchell wants to go back to is a natural world, free from the redemptive grace of Jesus Christ. Why do children of nature need redemption? Are they not without sin? Of course, as the scientific worldview replaced the Christian worldview, the new morality was developed, and what was implicit, that whites were unnatural and therefore damned, became explicit. The conservatives, even social conservatives such as Weaver and Kirk, were unable to offer their people the leadership they needed to fight liberalism, because they were unwillingly (1) to link conservatism to the defense of the European people, and (2) to invoke the second person of the Christian trinity, Jesus Christ, in the war against the new natural religion of the liberals.

Why were men such as Burke and Thomas Hughes able to invoke Christ and defend their own race while the 20th century conservatives were not? I think it is the 'pride of intellect' temptation. Very intelligent men often become moral idiots; they betray themselves and others in deepest consequence, because they think they can storm heaven with reason alone. While making a theological affirmation of God, they proceed to quote Aristotle and Plato *ad nauseam* in order to defend what they vaguely call the Western tradition. This will not do. We are not Greeks – and by Greeks, I mean philosophers, not the Greek people – we are Hebrews. If we blend the living God with the universal mind of the great philosophers, we are heathens, even if we are very smart heathens. The smartest of the Christian heathens, St. Thomas Aquinas, was unable to figure out when ensoulment took place, thus paving the way for the theological justification for early abortions. The Bible makes it clear that ensoulment takes place at conception, but of course such an obvious conclusion is not acceptable to the philosophically trained mind. The ratiocinations of the philosophical conservatives always fail, because, as Hamlet tells Horatio, "There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophy." There is an appalling lack of passion and depth of soul in the 20th century rational conservatives. We can't rely on them, we can't go to battle with their philosophies; we need a spiritual armor and a flaming sword that mere philosophical conservatism cannot provide.

We need to ask ourselves why after thousands of years there have been no philosophers that can rival Plato and Aristotle in intellectual acumen, while there have been thousands of poets who have surpassed, in depth of soul, the Greek poets. It is because man cannot know God through the mind alone. The philosophers of the Christian era did not think with their hearts, hence they could not say anything that Plato and Aristotle had not said already. But the poets whose hearts were united to a people that had hearts connected to His sacred heart revealed to us the divine element of the human soul.

This is why the race war is a religious war. The church men have made Christianity an intellectual system that can be passed on from one universal mind to another universal mind. And what do universal minds need with hearts? Why do minds need a local habitation, a people, to dwell in? They don't. But is the mind-forged world of the 20th and 21st century philosophers the real world? I say it is not. The old natural world, the world in which our human nature was a reflection (imperfect certainly, but still a reflection) of God was the correct view of nature. The repentant Katherina in Shakespeare's *Taming of the Shrew* eloquently defends the Christian view of nature when she links what is natural to the transcendent virtues of the human heart placed there by our Lord –

*Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,
But that our soft conditions and our hearts
Should well agree with our external parts?*

The real human nature has been buried in biological nature in the modern world. The mad-dog liberals have presided over the burial while the philosophical minded conservatives have acquiesced to the burial. They made, as did Caiaphas, a practical decision. "Let the European people and their connection to the heart of Christ die so that the universal mind can live." Because of that decision, we have "conservative" authors such as Peter Kreeft recommending (in *Ecumenical Jihad*) the blending of Judaism, Islam, and Christianity. Because of that decision, there are no leaders in the Western world who will defend the European people against the colored barbarians and the Moslem infidels. Universal minds do not need a people, nor do they need anything more than a generic God. The God of St. Paul, the Christ celebrated in Handel's *Messiah*, has disappeared from the face of the earth because of the satanic hatred of the Jacobin liberals and the Thomistic Buddhism of the conservative liberals.

The conservatives in church and state did not veer from the truth because they defended the old forms and rituals against the new forms and rituals. They went astray because they saw the forms and rituals as ends in themselves. They lost the heart of their forms and rituals. The liberals have replaced the old forms and rituals, which were merely outer crusts without a center, with their own forms and rituals. At the heart of the new throne and altar system of the liberals is the negro and the auxiliary gods of color, because Satan knows that mankind must have gods. As the Israelites returned to Baal when Moses went up to the mountain, so have the European Hebrews returned to nature and nature's God, the natural black savage.

The liberals possess a poetic; they are of the devil, so they use the colored races as shock troops against the white, Christ-bearing race. The philosophical-minded conservatives do not possess a poetic. And without a poetic they are unable to combat the wickedness and snares of the devil. You cannot dialog with the demonically possessed. And the conservatives must dialogue, because they believe that reason is their salvation. So the conservatives remain in the first circle of hell endlessly discussing how to formulate a rational argument against their liberal brethren. The "conservative" pundit William Buckley had a show called *Firing Line* in which he would debate liberals. From my perspective his guests were from the devil, but Buckley considered many of them his friends and entertained them at his house. Is that the proper response to the devil and his minions? Was Christ merely being whimsical when he said that the tares, the bad seeds, were the "children of the wicked one"? Is the Socratic dialogue the essence of the West, or is Burke's charity of honor the essence of the West? Men who believe in the charity of honor do not dialogue with the children of the wicked one.

In his poem, "The Second Coming" (1920), William Butler Yeats says that

*Surely some revelation is at hand;
Surely the Second Coming is at hand.*

But Yeats is not looking to the Second Coming of Christ, he is looking for a new god –

*The darkness drops again; but now I know
That twenty centuries of stony sleep

Were vexed to nightmare by a rocking cradle,
And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?*

Who is the rough beast that was within the womb of Europe? He is the natural savage, the end product of the new scientific view of nature, which is nothing more than the old paganism in a different form.

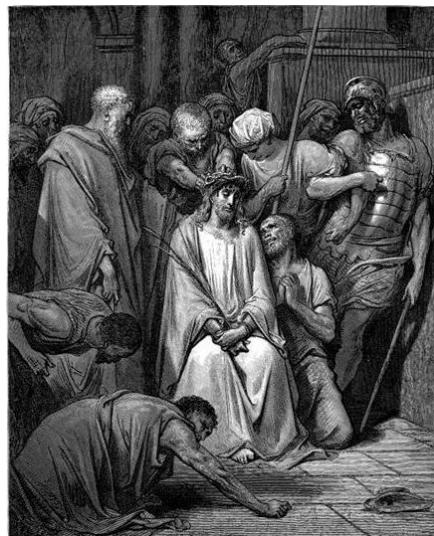
Yeats compared Zeus' seduction of Leda and the subsequent birth of Helen of Troy as the annunciation that founded Greece (see "A Vision" and "Leda and the Swan"). He found no poetry in Christianity, so he sought to return to the pagan Greeks. But the European people rejected Yeats' poetic for their own blend of pagan, scientized nature worship. Is our ancient faith really so uninspiring? Does Zeus and his pantheon of lecherous rapists and promiscuous goddesses touch our souls? Does the modern pantheon of colored gods and feminist harpies inspire us as the Man of Sorrows once inspired the antique Europeans? There is a seemingly impregnable, rational, natural wall that separates the modern European from the real world, the natural world of the antique Europeans. Only a passion that knows not seems can conquer that wall. A passion linked to His passion and His Sacred Heart. +

The Hatred of the World

July 29, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare



If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning. – *John 15: 18-27*

There was nothing unusual about the recent incident in Florida where a group of black youths stood by laughing as a black man drowned, screaming for help. Those black youths were not aberrations, some hideous offshoot of the sacred black race. No, indeed, those blacks were a microcosm of the entire black race. The decent black, the Uncle Remus black, is the aberration. The black youths' cruelty is indicative of the cruelty of all the colored races. They are devoid of mercy. And those people, the people devoid of mercy, are the people that the liberals bid us worship and pay homage to by handing our nations over to them. The colored problem and the Moslem problem are from the same root. Islam, Hinduism, and the other pagan unfaiths are merely organized, merciless, colored heathenism. When liberals join their hearts with the colored heathens and put their science, their police, their military, their government, their doctors, and their educational institutions at the service of the colored heathen, they join the people who have no mercy. And they have joined the people who have not mercy because they hate Jesus Christ. Let us keep that fact always before our eyes. While there are many varied groups within Liberaldom, many of which are opposed to each other, the one unifying passion of all the contending groups is their hatred of Jesus Christ. If you fail to understand that, you will be forever at the mercy of the liberals who manage to survive and thrive because of the spiritual blindness of the white grazers.

Our Lord said that we would be hated by the world and bid us take comfort in the fact that the world "hated me before it hated you." What kind of comfort is that? Who wants to be hated by the world? Our European ancestors were not afraid to be hated by the world. If you tell me that it was easy for them to be Christians because they were in the majority I would disagree. Whites have always been a minority vis-à-vis the world. And even within European nations the white Christians were in the minority at first. They, the whites who bent their knees to Christ, held the pagan world at bay because they loved Christ and hated the devil. Our modern intellectual Christians tell us that we must not antagonize the liberals by defending the indefensible, which is the antique Europeans. But why are they indefensible? Because they were racist and sexist? Yes, that is what it usually comes down to. A people who loved their own and protected their own, while evangelizing the lesser breeds who never knew charity or mercy nor never knew that women were anything more than chattel until they came into contact with white Europeans, were condemned for being racist and sexist.

Secular liberals and intellectual, utopian Christians all spoke with one voice against the European people because of their racism and sexism. The secular liberals attack the antique Europeans because they hate Christ, and the intellectual Christians permit and often join in the attacks because they fear the censure of the world. But what good is a faith if it is not a fighting faith? If you claim you stand with Christ and against liberalism how can you stand by and do nothing while the liberals use the negro and the liberated woman as battering rams to destroy His reign of charity?

Every criticism of liberalism by Christians and conservatives is always prefaced with the obligatory worship of the black race: "I'm against abortion because it hurts blacks," "I'm against Moslem terrorism, but I am not racist." Well, if you are not racist, if you do not have white pietas, you are either a liberal or a coward who wants the comforts of the Christian faith without the cross. We are told by our Savior that we must love Him with all our heart, mind, and soul. How can we love Him if we flee from the channels of grace that connect us to Him? He comes to us through His divine humanity, hence we can only know Him through our humanity. A religion based on the hatred of Christ and His people, which is the religion of the liberals and the colored heathens, and a religion based on a denial of the natural ties to Him through our kith and kin, which is the religion of the intellectual Christians, are both cold, merciless faiths emanating from the cold, malevolent intellect of the devil.

Let me place Arnold Lunn, the author of *Flight from Reason*, and Francis Schaeffer, the author of *The God Who Is There*, against St. Paul, Shakespeare, and Dostoyevsky in order to understand the white man's failure to fight back against negro-worshipping Liberalism. Lunn, in his book *Flight from Reason*, laments the fact that Christians allowed the secular liberals to claim that they were the rationalists. Lunn asserts that it is the Christians who are the true rationalists, and then he makes the rational case for Christianity based on St. Thomas Aquinas's writings. Schaeffer makes a similar point in his book *The God Who Is There*. He doesn't base his rational apologetics on St. Thomas Aquinas, but he does make the case for the rationality of Christianity over the irrationality of the secular philosophers. Schaeffer places Kierkegaard with the secular existentialists, because Kierkegaard asserts the irrationality of Christianity, but then makes his famous leap of faith into the hands of the Christian God. While granting that Kierkegaard's leap exaggerates the gap between faith and reason, I still would assert that Lunn and Schaeffer have missed something. Where they go wrong, in my opinion, is that they equate analytical reason with thought. Is thought just in the mind or does it come from the visionary organ of the heart? Schaeffer claims to believe in the inerrancy of scripture, yet he fails to take into account St. Paul's insistence that it is through the heart that we come to know God. And if we look at the history of the European people, we see that St. Paul was right. When we merely comprehend God through the mind's eye instead of seeing Him in and through the heart's eye, we lose God and gain a heresy. The Lunn and Schaeffer apologetics cut the Europeans off from their racial hearth fire and as a result the Christian God becomes an airy nothing, who has to make way for the natural savage, the negro. ([1](#))

Shakespeare's Theseus in *A Midsummer Night's Dream* is unsettled by the lovers' midsummer night vision, which lies somewhere between reason and unreason:

*I never may believe
These antique fables, nor these fairy toys.
Lovers and madmen have such seething brains,
Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend
More than cool reason ever comprehends.*

*The lunatic, the lover, and the poet
Are of imagination all compact:
One sees more devils than vast hell can hold;
That is the madman: the lover, all as frantic,
Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt:
The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling,
Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;
And as imagination bodies forth
The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen
Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing
A local habitation and a name.
Such tricks hath strong imagination,
That, if it would but apprehend some joy,
It comprehends some bringer of that joy;
Or in the night, imagining some fear,
How easy is a bush supposed a bear?*

But Hippolyta observes that the lovers have seen something profound in their midsummer night's vision:

*But all the story of the night told over,
And all their minds transfigur'd so together,
More witnesseth than fancy's images,
And grows to something of great constancy;
But, howsoever, strange and admirable.*

And then Dostoyevsky tells us in his novel *The Possessed* that Stavrogin was rational to the end:

The citizen of the canton of Uri was hanging there behind the door. On the table lay a piece of paper with the words in pencil: "No one is to blame, I did it myself." Beside it on the table lay a hammer, a piece of soap, and a large nail—obviously an extra one in case of need. The strong silk cord upon which Nikolay Vsyevolodovitch had hanged himself had evidently been chosen and prepared beforehand and was thickly smeared with soap. Everything proved that there had been premeditation and consciousness up to the last moment.

At the inquest our doctors absolutely and emphatically rejected all idea of insanity.

And later in *The Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky tells us how his hero, Alyosha, the third dumb brother, rejects the rationalism of Stavrogin and Ivan. He rejects it because his heart is circumcised as St. Paul's heart was circumcised:

All this made Alyosha's heart bleed and obviously, as I mentioned before, what hurt him most was that the one he had loved more than anybody in the world now stood "dishonored" and "disgraced." Even if this rebellion on the part of this young man was callow and unreasonable, I repeat for the third time (and I admit that I, too, am perhaps being unreasonable) that I am very pleased to find that the young man did not turn out to be too reasonable at this juncture, for everyone, unless he is very stupid, acquires sufficient reason in time, but if a young heart shows a lack of love at such a critical moment, when will it know love?

Leaving aside the question of the liberals' missing link, which they have never found and never will find, what is the missing link between Kierkegaard's leap of faith and the Lunn-Schaeffer Christian rationalism? St. Paul, the man with the circumcised heart, provides the missing link in *Corinthians 1: 13*. Without charity, which is beyond reason, we are lost. One could place more credence in Schaeffer's rational Christianity if the end result of his philosophizing wasn't the denial of the European hearth fire. If we don't have a racial home, how will we learn to give and receive the charity which begins at home and perishes without one?

The Europeans won't fight for their survival as a people, because they have been left homeless by their Christian leaders. You can't march against the liberals and the colored heathens under the banner of intellectual Christianity. You can't 'Socratic dialogue' the devil and his minions to death, unless you plan on boring them to death. But even then you won't have any followers to take advantage of the drowsiness of your enemies, because they will all be sleeping the sleep of the walking dead – "He did not die, but nothing of life remained."

Lunn and Schaeffer believed themselves to be fighting against the liberals by criticizing the irrationality of the liberals, but isn't that a trick of the devil? By entering into the world of the Socratic dialogue, haven't you chosen to defeat the devil with the devil's own weapon – detached, analytical reason? So much of Kierkegaard's work is inaccessible to me; I don't understand what he is saying. If he means, when he says that we must make a leap of faith, that there is a better way to know God than through abstract reason, I would agree with him. But if he means we cannot know God at all, because of the limitations of reason, then I disagree with him. We can know God. We do make a leap of faith, but that leap of faith is grounded in His promise that He will not allow us to fall. Schaeffer and the rational Christians fail to allow a place for the human heart in their equations. Philosophy, even if it is called Christian theology, will always leave us in the dark and homeless. Why is Lear left homeless? Because he banishes the daughter closest to his heart when she cannot "heave her heart" into an abstract expression of filial devotion that will please Lear, who sees with his abstract mind and not with his heart. The tragic events that result from Lear's philosophic abstraction of his heart from his head mirrors the tragedy of Christian Europe. In the name of a mind-forged abstract God, the European intelligentsia issued divorce papers to the living God and His people. And the result of that divorce is all around us. Moslems rule Europe, the negroes rule America through their liberal devotees; and feminist harpies, the most completely demonic creatures on the face of the earth, hover over the corpse of Christian Europe like vultures.

The Socratic dialogue of the Christian theologians is the bridge between Christian Europe and hell. So long as the Europeans clung to their God in and through the people of their own racial hearth fire, they held their own against the hatred of the world. But as soon as that bridge went up, as soon as the great minds of Christendom dialogued with the devil instead of combating the devil, what was once Christian Europe became the devil's Europe, and the people of God, the Christ-bearing people, became, in the case of the liberals, one with Satan, and in the case of the grazers, they became helpless in the face of the liberal and colored barbarian onslaught. The end of all this is that the liberals and the non-white races hate the white race with all their heart, mind, and soul. And the white man has no defense against the malevolent hatred of the liberals and the lesser breeds that have no mercy, because he has lost that intimacy with God that gives a man the faith and fortitude to face the terror by night and the arrow that flieh by day. How could it be otherwise when we have abandoned our racial hearth fire, our connecting link to the Man of Sorrows? Like a coward on the battlefield the modern Europeans have fled from God and man. Everyone wants the casual friend who will go to dinner and sporting events with them and give them financial support. But who seeks a friend who is 'the heart of my heart?' That type of intimacy only comes to those who live within His reign of charity. Depth speaks to depth, but if the Europeans accept the liberals' reign of superficiality, they will never find intimacy with God or with any of their own people. That is a tragedy that surpasses Oedipus's tragic blight – To live in the superficial slime of hell without any knowledge of His world, a world in which the one true God loves His own with a love that passeth the understanding of reason, and a world in which the God-Man inspires His people to love with a passion and a depth that passeth the understanding of reason. The world will continue to hate the European people whether they believe in Christ or not. They can't escape their destiny as the Christ-bearing people. But is it really so terrible to be hated for His name's sake? Those who love and hate with all their hearts will endure to the end and be saved. The rest will wallow in the slime of liberalism until they are consumed by it. +

(1) Every time I see a T.V. evangelist doing 'good works' he is 'helping' black children in Africa. Every time I see a preacher on television the cameras focus on the blacks in the congregation. And every organized church competes with the other organized churches to make their congregations more 'diverse.' The end result of intellectual Christianity, which lacks the poetic depth of European Christianity, is the paganism of the Christian faith. That paganism leads to the worship of the natural black savage, which is the religion of the modern, faithless, homeless Europeans.

The Horror and Blasphemy of Liberalism

August 5, 2017

Categories: Charity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Joseph Conrad, St. Paul



O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killst the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. — Luke 13: 34-35

Recently a friend asked me what I thought of the Adamite theory, which, according to my friend, is the theory that it is only white people who are direct descendants of Adam. The rest of mankind are non-Adamites, who are... I'm not quite clear who they are. And the reason I'm not clear on that point is because I never could plow my way through the various books on the subject. But I bring up the Adamite subject to come to the main point of conflict between a European Christian and the modern liberals, both secular and clerical: To me, as a European Christian, it seems obvious that there has only been one Christian people and that is the European people. There is such a difference between the people of old Europe and the people of the non-white cultures that it lends credence to the Adamite theorists. But it is not necessary to accept that theory in order to acknowledge that the living God was at the center of non-diverse, white Europe, and He was not at the center of colored heathendom nor is He at the center of modern Liberaldom.

Our Lord says, in St. John, chapter 15, verse 26, “But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the father, even the spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.” Why are the intellectual Christians who worship the negro not interested in the truth? Have they rejected the Comforter? It seems that they have. And without the Holy Ghost how can we know Christ? We must not rely on our abstract reason to guide us through life rather than the Holy Ghost. Our reason will always lead us away from the truth and toward the father of all lies. Look what has happened to European people once they made abstract reason their father, science their Holy Ghost, and the negro their Son of God. What then was my response to the question about the Adamites? I told my friend that all I know is that I see the face of Jesus Christ in old Europe. I do not see His face in modern Europe nor in the people of color at any time in their histories.

There is no mercy, no charity, no love, and no honor in the modern world, because the European intelligentsia in church and state persist in deifying the heathens of color while demonizing the antique Europeans. I don't need to believe that the European people are the only descendants of Adam or the true Hebrews to know that they are the Christ-bearing people. I know they are the Christ-bearing people, because of the moral beauty of the culture they created in the name of Christ the Lord. Neither historical research, church documents, nor the Bible itself will convince the willfully blind, those who reject the spirit of truth, that the European Christ is the living God. Maybe that is why our Lord said that blasphemy against the Holy Ghost would not be forgiven. If we forsake the comforter we have forsaken Christ.

The creation of Christian Europe was something that St. Augustine said could never happen. There was the city of God, which was the organized church, and there was the city of man, which was the European people. In St. Augustine's mind, the people, those who believed in Christ, could never be the true church. But he was wrong. The organization, the system, what Augustine called the City of God, can never be the true Church. Tennyson got it right:

*Our little systems have their day;
They have their day and cease to be;
They are but broken lights of thee,
And thou, O Lord, art more than they.*

Is He more than they? Is He more than the organized Christian Jewry of the Roman Catholic Church and its auxiliary Protestant branches? Yes, He is more than they. The Christian churches have gone over to the pagan faiths — they have made Islam and negro worship part of the Christian faith. And by doing so they have made it clear that they have sided with the enemy of mankind against Christ's church, which consists of all those who have circumcised their hearts so that they can “receive Him still.” The 20th century existentialists such as Camus, Sartre, and Beckett proclaimed that, “God is dead.” But it was not the living God who died, it was a man-made system that died. The computer print-out God who was the product of the computations of great minds — that god died. But the Son of God? He still lives and He shall still be living after the new church of Islam and the negro has had its day. It only remains to be seen whether there will be any hearts of flesh left on earth, hearts that still adhere to His word. “When the Son of Man returns will He find faith on earth?”

It doesn't appear that Christ will find faith on earth when He returns, but the age of prophecy is over; we do not know with any certainty that the European people will remain adamantly opposed to the Light of the World. We do know that the modern Europeans have left Christian Europe behind. The liberals show their hatred of Christ by their hatred of all things stemming from old Europe, and the grazers show their indifference to Christ by their complete indifference to incarnate Europe. The Europeans' descent into hell has been a terrible thing to witness. And they seem determined to continue their descent until they reach the bottom-most level where they will embrace the devil in all his satanic glory. Will they feel any revulsion? No, I don't think a feminist or a mad-dog liberal who takes such pleasure in our modern hell on earth can feel uncomfortable with the devil. Such individuals will have gotten what they set out to find, a world of darkness, devoid of light. And the grazers? Will their spiritually dead nerve endings suddenly revive at the sight of the devil? Will they cry out to the God of Mercy whom they ignored during their lives? I don't know, but I do know that He will extend mercy to anyone who calls on Him by name. But can a man call on Him by name if He has rejected the Holy Ghost?

It is unfortunate that Christian mysticism has become a specialized study of Gnosticized Europeans who bid us look to a seven-point plan that we use to reach a higher level of mystical contemplation. Christian mysticism should not imitate the contemplative systems of the Asians. True Christian mysticism is unique, it is the better way that St. Paul describes in 1 Corinthians 13. It is charity, the charity that is at the center of old Europe, which inspired our greatest poets, artists, and musicians, and it is what our people saw, even if they only saw it through a glass darkly, as the mystical heart of existence. The European people rejected the esoteric systems of the pagans for the divine charity of Jesus Christ. His charity was greater than the magic of paganism.

I believe it was Blake who said that if mankind did not have the religion of Jesus Christ, they would have the religion of the devil. The modern European people are not unbelievers; they believe in the gods of Liberaldom. And belief in those gods precludes a belief in the God whose divine charity redeemed the world. We can't get to Him by way of any system conceived by man. In point of fact, all our systems, which have their day, take us to hell. But we can get to Him through charity, the charity that is born and nurtured at our racial hearth fire.

Diversity is spiritual death, it destroys the image of God in man. The push toward diversity, which means the destruction of the white race, is the liberals' religion. They must join, body and soul, with the colored races in order to eradicate the living God from the face of the earth. The mask is off. If the European people had not been morally anesthetized, they would not be able to look on modern Europe without a horror too deep for words. Conrad's Kurtz said, "The Horror, the Horror." What Kurtz saw was nothing compared to the Horror of modern Liberaldom, for modern liberalism is the continual reenactment of the crucifixion of Christ. (1) Everything stemming from Christian Europe is demonized, and every white European, even if they denounce Christ and most particularly if they do not denounce Christ, is crucified. That is a horror beyond horror, because it is the incarnation of Satan over the ruins of Christian Europe.

What is to be done then? Our Lord tells us to, "seek and ye shall find." But what should we seek? Should we seek the wisdom that comes from special revelations of the blessed mother? Should we seek knowledge of the end times by parsing the Book of Revelation and merging Christianity with Judaism? Or should we seek the wisdom of liberalism and blend Christ with Islam and the negro? Almighty God, forbid it! There is a magic talisman, but it is not esoteric wisdom. It is to be found in charity. The men with hearts of flesh will find the one true God at their racial hearth fire where that charity of honor is born and nurtured. All other ways to God end in ruin. Look at the 'conservative' Joe Scarborough, who started his political career as an intellectual conservative, a man who wanted to conserve systems rather than his people. He ended up a mad-dog liberal who divorced his lawful wife in order to marry a feminist from hell. And then there is Francis Schaeffer. He was a great intellectual Christian, but he refused to defend the Christ of the European hearth fire, thus opening the way for a diverse God who gave his blessing to modernity. Schaeffer's son Franky went from intellectual Christianity to mad-dog liberalism. And from that Olympian height he apologized to the feminist Rachel Maddow for the sins of his father. Every denial of the essential truth that was at the center of old Europe – that Christ entered into the heart and soul of the European people – is an assault on His reign of charity in the name of the evil one. So long as we are too worldly wise and too fearful of the racist label to ask Christ, the Christ of old Europe, to abide with us by our racial hearth fire, we will continue to be ruled by liberals and colored heathens who have no mercy. The former have renounced the God of mercy and the latter never knew Him. +

(1) Kurtz looked into his soul and saw the evil that he, as a man, was capable of. But Marlow, Conrad's alter ego, said that it was something to have judged. Kurtz was a moral pariah, but he could still see the evil within his soul and call it evil. The liberal looks into his satanic soul and sees sanctity. He is incapable of recognizing evil as evil. And that is a descent into the deepest pit of hell. The liberals have done it! They have become like unto Satan himself. The horror, the horror.

The European Heart Renewed

August 12, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Defense of the White Race, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: A. E. W. Mason



O here, where late our little city stood,
And now this desolation darkens us,
Friends, with a rapid hand and heart renewed,
Building, once more uprear we root and tower,
And make ourselves a realm.

-George Francis Savage-Armstrong

The essential thing that Burke wanted his countrymen and all of Europe to understand about the French Revolution was that it was something entirely different than a European palace revolution. It was not a replacement of one Christian king for another Christian king, it was the enthronement of a new religion, a satanic religion, in what had once been a Christian nation. The forces of irreligion were always present in every European nation, but they were not embodied in an organized government until the French Revolution. Robespierre's death did not halt the Jacobin revolution; it spread throughout Europe, and eventually every nation of Europe adopted the anti-Christian system of government of the French Jacobins. Until we do what the Europeans of Burke's day failed to do – kill the Jacobin dragon – we will continue to live in the hell of religious and racial diversity.

Jacobinism is paganism writ large. Through the use of our natural reason we come to a belief in nature and nature's god. The Israelites were Jacobins before the Jacobins when they returned to Baal while Moses went up to the mountain to speak with God. Every revolt against the living God is a return to paganism. Does man have a stronger inclination to rebel against God than to seek God? It certainly seems so. But we shouldn't go with the Puritans who claimed that a sinful defiance of God is the all in all of man. There is the Europeans' struggle as a people. Even if we must concede that their history is largely like the history of the Hebrew people, a history of a flight from God, we must, if we are seeking the truth, see that there was a genuine yearning for the living God, for Jesus Christ, in the hearts of the European people. We cannot sit in our study with our scholarly tomes and say there can never be such a thing as a Christian people while we have proof to the contrary staring us in the face when we look at the European people and take them for all in all.

Ironically it was the missionary efforts toward the non-white people of the world that ushered in the demise of Christian Europe. The European missionaries set out to Christianize the colored races, but the colored races ended up paganizing the white race. The negroization and the Islamization of the un-United States of America and Europe is the result of the implantation of the natural, rational religion of the Jacobins through the medium of the natural colored races. When the missionaries came to evangelize the coloreds, they found that the colored people had gods, they were not atheists. So they sought to emphasize the similarities between Christianity and the heathen faiths, thus blurring distinction between the religion of Jesus Christ and the religion of Satan. God did not say, "Do not be an atheist," He said, "Thou shall have no other gods before me." Solomon didn't ruin the Israelites because he denounced God, he ruined the Israelites because he built temples to the heathen gods as well as the one true God. So it was with the European missionaries. They became the European conduits to paganism, because they failed to keep the distinctiveness of the religion that made the Suffering Servant its cornerstone before their eyes. They lost the vision of Christ in the mire of the natural religions. Today we have been entirely engulfed by the heathen faiths, and no one from the ranks of the Christian clergy will speak out against them, because to do so would indicate that the anti-heathen was a racist and therefore damned. "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." Once the "Christian" clergy made racial diversity their top priority, they were consumed by the liberal Leviathan. If your message is a mere echo of liberalism, why do you need to exist at all? The churches are now just an 'Amen chorus' for the rulers of Liberaldom. "Diversity is Godly, the colored masses are the people," the liberals proclaim. "Amen," respond the church men.

The liberals have a symbiotic relationship with the colored heathens. They, the liberals, need the colored heathens in order to return to paganism. Why can't they make that transition on their own? They must have conduits to paganism because when a European rejects Christ, he has placed himself into a state of non-being. He has forsaken his God, and now he is alone in the universe. Twentieth century art, when it is not a paean to the gods of color, is an ode to nothingness. That is the key. An apostate European must cling to some God to keep him from the void, so he goes whoring after the heathen gods of color. Do those gods sustain him? The drug and alcohol-related deaths and the increasing suicide rate among white people indicates that the gods of diversity cannot sustain the European people. But still, they must have gods, so they will cling to them to the last gasp.

Do the colored heathens need white liberals? They might say they do not need white people, but they do need them. They need them as a predatory animal needs his prey. If there were no white people, upon whom would the colored heathen prey? Each other? Certainly, but there is not much to prey upon in the black and brown civilizations. Once the whites have done their jobs, once they have self-destructed, what will become of the colored heathens? They will have no worshipful whites to sustain them, and they will prey upon each other until they all perish.

The conservatives in church and state have not been able to conserve Christian Europe, because they failed to take into account the human factor. Which is truly astonishing and unforgivable considering that they claimed, at least intellectually, to believe in a God who became man. But if you view man as intellect alone, you will not know man nor will you know the God-Man. Man is deeper than his intellect. He has a heart that is capable, when it is stirred, of seeing more than mere reason can comprehend. T. S. Eliot, in his book on Christian culture makes a rational case for the necessity of a religiously based culture. But his rational case is worthless without that which must precede reason – faith in Jesus Christ. And how does one obtain faith? St. Paul tells us that "faith worketh by love." And that brings us back to our mysterious human relationships, to our ties to our kith and kin. It is now a given in Churchianity that blood ties are antithetical to faith. That is a lie, a lie that is used to cover up the Europeans' flight from God. Chateaubriand is right: man is much more tainted with the sins of the intellect than with sins stemming from the heart. The intellectual man seeks to avoid the passionate God of love, because passion is painful. And the way to avoid the passionate God is to avoid all things human – to avoid all ties to your family and your race. Thus white pietas, which leads to the love of the European Christ, is regarded as sinful, and the worship of the colored heathen and the hatred of the white race becomes the creed of the new fusionist Christian of the 21st century.

In the best of his mystery novels, *The House of the Arrow*, A. E. W. Mason's protagonist, the detective Hanaud, asks who will speak for the woman who has been murdered. Who cares enough about her to hunt down the murderer? The answer is that he, Hanaud, cares, and he will hunt down the murderer:

"But—you will pardon me—I am not thinking of you"—and there was so much quietude and gravity in the detective's voice that his words, harsh though they were, carried with them no offense. "No, I am thinking of a woman more than double the age of either of you, whose unhappy life came to an end here on the night of the 27th of April. I am remembering two photographs which you, Mademoiselle Harlowe, showed me this morning—I am moved by them. Yes, that is the truth."

He closed his eyes as if he saw those two portraits with their dreadful contrast impressed upon his eyelids. "I am her advocate," he cried aloud in a stirring voice. "The tragic woman, I stand for her! If she was done to death, I mean to know and I mean to punish!"

Our people have been murdered and no one cares about avenging their murder, because church and state have decreed that they were not murdered, they were legally executed for crimes against the religion of nature. They were racists, sexists, and non-intellectual Christians, which meant that they were against the fusionist Christianity of the intellectual Christians. But no matter what the powers of this world say against them, I do not see criminals when I look at the antique Europeans. I see men and women to whom I owe a debt that can never be repaid. They loved much, and as a result they were bound to Him in faith. "Bear but a touch of my hand, there," pointing to his heart, says the Ghost of Christmas Past. And then Scrooge is able to see the past in a new light, in the light of Christ. When we touch their hearts, we touch, through them, the heart of the living God. We should never leave them, we should never seek to make peace with their murderers. Who will stand for them? I will. If you stand with the antique Europeans against the principalities and powers of Liberalism, you will be condemned as they were condemned. In that condemnation we hear the same voices that condemned our Lord. Can't we, through our fidelity to Christian Europe, say, "Yes, I know that Man!" +

The End of Classical Liberalism

August 19, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christian counter-attack, Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke



Humanity must force prey on itself,
Like monsters of the deep.

—King Lear

Let us begin with Burke:

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. —Letters on a Regicide Peace

My sympathy is with the young man who was attacked by the left-wing Satanists. Whether his counterattack was in self-defense — the Marxists were throwing bricks — or whether the young man was launching a punitive strike against the liberals — they have been killing whites through their colored henchmen for over fifty years — the attack was completely justified. It is regrettable that he only killed one of the liberal protestors. And it is tragic that he will be prosecuted for murder, when he should be awarded a medal for courage under fire. As for the police officers? It is regrettable that they chose to serve the Satanic government of the United States of America instead of their own people. They are to blame for their own deaths, not the white nationalist protestors.

What do we make of the white “Christian” clergymen who vehemently denounced the white nationalist protestors? We should call them what they are — they are Judases, one and all. What are they defending? They are defending the incarnation of Satan within the heart of what was formerly Christian Europe. There are no words harsh enough to describe them. No atrocities committed against whites are ever condemned; they treat the perpetrators of the atrocities with “loving forgiveness.” But there cannot be and there must not be any mercy extended to the whites who try to defend themselves against the liberal/colored barbarian onslaught. “Your children, your wives, and your people all must be sacrificed to the great gods of color.” So say our Judeo-Pagan clergymen. Do such creatures really speak for Christ? No, they do not. They speak for Satan.

When the alternative right first emerged on the Internet, I read a number of their writings and was saddened by the content. I was saddened because they were not attacking Liberaldom in the name of Christ, they were attacking Liberaldom in the name of paganism, which placed them solidly within the confines of liberalism. They opposed the new-age liberals as Hitler opposed communism — they were the nationalist lefties vs. the universalist lefties. Their movement must turn toward Christ if it is to have any hope of surviving and thriving. There is no sustaining faith in a mere reaction to the insolent, hate-filled system of the liberals. We need to see the Cross of Christ over Europe once again, not the various banners of the white pagans.

I once followed a young man who had all sorts of Nazi and neo-pagan bumper stickers on his truck. When he pulled into the super-market parking lot, I got out of my car and approached him. In a non-confrontational manner I asked him about his beliefs. Not surprisingly he had no beliefs that dove-tailed with the antique Europeans. He hated liberals, he hated Jews, and he hated Christians. I endeavored to point out to him that Christianity was not compatible with liberalism or Judaism, but he was not to be ‘taken in.’ I felt like I was talking to the dwarfs from C.S. Lewis’s *The Last Battle*:

“That’s right,” said the other Dwarfs. “We’re on our own now. No more Aslan, no more Kings, no more silly stories about other worlds. The Dwarfs are for the Dwarfs.”

There you have it. When will this terrible separation between the neo-pagan and his Christian ancestors end? Never? Or will the alternative right convert at the last trump (no pun intended)? They, the alternative right, have some good instincts: they hate the mad-dog liberal branch of Liberaldom, but they also hate our people, the men and women of Christian Europe. Maybe if we, the European Christians, stay faithful to our Lord and our people, some members of the alternative right might find their true home with the Christ of old Europe.

We have already, off this stage, established that there are no European conservatives; there are no Burkean conservatives who want to conserve the European people and their Christian civilization. The new conservatives are liberals. And their far-left cousins are the hard left, or if you prefer, the Marxists. The hard left have a tried and true battle plan that always defeats the milk-toast conservatives. Whenever they kill whites, they immediately blame the whites for bringing their own deaths upon themselves. “They were racist, therefore they deserved to die,” is the constant refrain of the hard left. Whenever, which is very seldom, the whites fight back and kill a colored heathen or a member of the Jacobin hard left, the Jacobins demand the heads of the white defenders, apologies from every “conservative” white, and more draconian laws designed to speed up the destruction of the white race. They always get what they demand, because the conservative whites are not conservative; they believe in the same liberal gods as the hard left. Their differences with the hard left are procedural, not religious.

If the conservatives were not of Liberaldom, if they were Christians opposed to the reign of Satan, they would not apologize to the liberals when a white man rises up against the liberal leviathan; they would tell the Jacobins that more violence was on the way and then act on their threat. That is what it will take for white people to halt the extermination process. The liberals preach, “By whatever means necessary.” The whites’ response must be, “By whatever means necessary, within the boundaries of Christian chivalry. And the defense of one’s kith and kin is within those boundaries.” (1)

The recent protests in Charlottesville highlighted the futility of white protest. When you protest, you must ask yourself to whom you are protesting. Are the powers that be likely to be receptive to your protest or are they going to use the protest to identify their enemies and take action against them? You know, or at least you should know by now, that liberal governments view any protest against their Jacobin governments as opportunities to crush their enemies. They videotape the protests and then either jail the protestors or find means to deprive them of their livelihood. (2) Does this mean that whites should give up? No, it means whites should change tactics. They should eschew public non-violent protests in preference for quiet, secretive,

punitive raids. Peaceful protests are part of the democratic process. When the democratic process has become a totalitarian process, you can't accomplish anything by protests. Witness the failure of the pro-life movement.

Whites will not meet the Jacobin's violence with a violence of their own, because they have allowed the hard left to set the terms of engagement. These are the terms: "You, the white man, must never preach or practice violence against the Jacobin elite, because we are the true liberals, we are the arbiters of what is right and what is wrong." And even when the conservatives accept those terms — actually it is because the conservatives accept those terms — the hard left continues to destroy them by any means necessary.

What we are witnessing in this assault, which well may be the final assault of the hard left against the white race, is the death of classical liberalism. The Tucker Carlsons and the Paul Joseph Watsons completely refute the hard left's stances on every issue under the sun. But that does not make any difference to the lefties. They are not moved by reason. What will move them? Nothing. The young man with the truck is on the right track. The Jacobins will not be swayed by appeals to reason or appeals to charity. It should be done unto them as they are doing unto the white race.

Dostoyevsky's [Underground Man](#) knew the deficiency of classical liberalism. 'Suppose you build your perfect world in a glass palace and I come along and smash it just because I want to smash it?' Classical liberalism presupposes that we are all reasonable people who can sit around and reason out our problems. The classical liberal gives a nod to Christianity as a religion, but he downplays the 'irrational' message at the heart of Christianity. He, like the medieval scholastic who spawned rationalism, does not think reason is tainted with original sin. How could it be, when it can do such wonderful things? We need to turn to the Gospels, to St. Paul, Shakespeare, Dostoyevsky, and the European fairy tales as an antidote to classical liberalism. It is there that we find depth. We find God, the devil, and "unaccommodated man" struggling against all the forces of hell, armed only with his vision of the Man of Sorrows to sustain him.

In most of the 20th century dystopian novels ([Kipling's story](#) and [Orwell's novels](#) excepted), the authors depict right-wing totalitarian governments that enslave mankind. But it was Kipling and Orwell who got it right. There has never, in the history of European man, been a crueler, all-encompassing, totalitarian control of mankind than the Jacobin's control of the European people. Through the use of vast technological communication networks such as Google, the left has built a monopoly on thought. They exercise a mind-control more powerful than anything conceived by the fiction writers. With machine-like precision, the mills of Jacobin liberalism grind human souls into nothingness, and there seems to be no force on earth that can stop the great liberal machine.

Rapunzel's tears restored her lover's sight. Christ's divine charity restored the sight of fallen man. It is in humanity, in the charity that is contained in the blood of our Savior and the compassionate tears of our loved ones, that we will find the strength to destroy the great liberal machine that bestrides the world like a mechanical Colossus of Rhodes. There is indeed providence in the fall of a sparrow. We don't know how such things can be, but we know, through the faith that stems from love, that the great liberal world, the world of the Google monster, feminist harpies, colored heathens, and Jacobin diabolists will fall. It will fall when we believe what St. Paul believed – that "the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men."

What is the foolishness of God? Those men on the *Titanic* who went to their deaths singing "Nearer My God to Thee" knew what the foolishness of God was. It was and is the Cross of Christ. It is only possible to believeth all things and hopeth all things if you possess the charity of honor that our European ancestors believed to be the all-in-all of existence. Burke wielded the sword of charity against the French Jacobins, and we should wield that same sword against the modern Jacobins. The moral beauty of Jesus Christ's quixotic death on the cross inspired our European ancestors to love and hate with all their heart. They loved Christ and hated the devil. When we do likewise, forsaking the tepid waters of classical liberalism for the tempest-tossed waters of passion, a passion connected to His passion, we will not be borne down by the tidal wave of liberalism. We will rise again as a people, just as Christ rose again on the third day. +

(1) The liberals have a great advantage over the Christian Europeans in that their master, who is Satan, proscribes no boundaries. He has no honor, and he encourages his subjects to spit on all honor codes that stem from Christian Europe. Thus the liberal will fight without honor and extend no mercy to his white victims. The Christian European must fight with that charity of honor, which is a practical disadvantage. But that disadvantage is offset by the passionate intensity that is gained by an adherence to His code of honor.

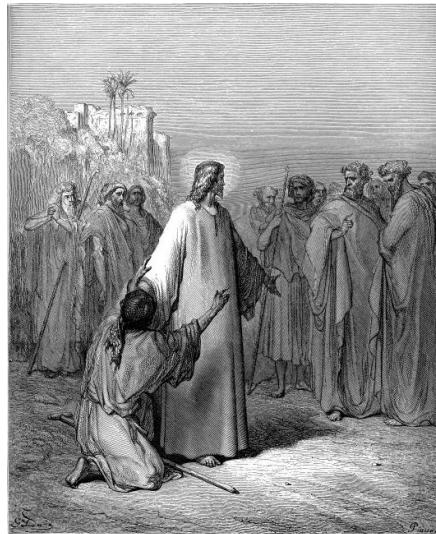
(2) Many men have lost their jobs as a result of their participation in the Charlottesville protests. No protestor from the left lost his or her job. Only the white protestors lost their jobs. This is the same thing that happens in France, Germany, Britain, and every other European nation when whites try to seek redemption from the devil.

The Devils of Liberaldom

August 26, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Thomas Nelson Page



And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. *Matthew 8: 28-32*

Trump is hated by the hard left because he is not proceeding according to the ‘Some are more equal’ doctrine of the Jacobin-Marxist left. And he is ‘disappointing’ classical liberals such as Ann Coulter and Ann Corcoran because he is not doing what they think is necessary to ‘restore’ our American republic. But the classical liberals do not understand what is going on. What they call the democratic process is an invention of the devil. Our nation was conceived by men determined to destroy the image of God in man, and was allowed to spread its Satanism through the world by classical liberals (now called conservatives) who thought that men only needed an abstract God that could be pulled out of a God-box on holidays and other special occasions, and then put back in the box during regular working days, because the classical liberals hold that it is self-evident that rational men can work things out for themselves without reference to a fairy-tale God.

Trump will never set the American republic right within the confines of democracy, because democracy is from the devil. But Trump has done much – he has slowed down the liberal juggernaut. Who else could have done that? Certainly not Romney, Bush, or Ann Coulter and Co.? And he has made it possible, by bringing all the liberals out of their lairs to spew their venom at him, for all those who have not been morally anesthetized to see the liberals for what they are – the spawns of Satan. Now, most Europeans have been morally anesthetized so they cannot see the liberals for what they are, but is that Trump’s fault?

The Christian Europeans have been completely routed by the liberals. They are fleeing the battlefield in disarray with a relentless enemy on their trail. Trump has volunteered to offer his services as a rear guard to cut down on the causalities. It ill behoves us to criticize anything he does, because whatever he does it is more than anybody else has offered to do for the European people. If we had a non-satanic government, if liberals were not spawns of Satan, we could write editorials and books in which we disagreed with Trump and told him he should do this rather than that. But this is war. Stop treating the rear guard as a failed general and commend him for his efforts. There can be no victory in rearguard actions, but we can take advantage of them to go home, lick our wounds, and prepare for another assault on the enemy. Actually, in the case of the modern Europeans, we have to say, ‘Prepare for a first assault,’ because they have not yet begun to fight.

Trump’s inauguration speech in which he said that we have one heart, one home, and one glorious destiny set him apart from the antique Europeans such as myself. But it placed him well within the confines of classical liberalism. Why then do the classical liberals dislike Trump more than I do? It is because the conservative-liberals think politics, like religion, is an abstract theory. They do not believe that there is anything in politics or religion that cannot be explained by a rational process. So whenever anyone, regardless of the fact that he is one of their own, goes against their abstract theories they attack him. From my standpoint, Trump belongs with Andrew Jackson and Teddy Roosevelt. They were men with a terribly flawed universalist ideal, but they had a remnant of white pietas. Which is not good enough to win a war, but it deserves to be acknowledged and respected when all the other classical liberals are completely devoid of white pietas. Of what does that remnant of pietas consist? On one issue, that of economic nationalism, Jackson, T. Roosevelt, and Trump broke ranks with the classical liberals. Jackson attacked the national bank, and T. Roosevelt broke the trusts. And now Trump is challenging North Korea and China, which makes the corporate socialists hysterical. Trump has infuriated the hard left for not honoring the ‘more equal’ doctrine, and he has infuriated the conservatives for not honoring the one world, one economy doctrine of classical liberalism. And if Trump is hated for opposing only one aspect of liberalism, then what must their hatred be for a Christian European who opposes them in everything?

And this brings us to the real issue. The Trump-Brexit battles are skirmishes within Liberaldom. The real war is between those who adhere to Christian Europe and those who have chosen to align themselves with Liberaldom. On the one side, the liberal side, is the hard left, the classical liberals (conservatives), the alternative right, and organized Christian Jewry. On the right is – is there a Christian European right wing? Not at present. Most Europeans were once Christian and they were right wing – they wanted to preserve their people and the institutions that stemmed from their faith in Jesus Christ. But classical liberalism, which was created by Satan, allowed the European people to slide into liberalism. Hawthorne’s Mr. Smooth-it-away (see [Hell on Earth](#)) is the classical liberal. Without directly challenging Jesus Christ, classical liberalism subverts Him by making Him subordinate to a rational process of their own devising. The process varies, which is why there are so many contending factions within Liberaldom, but it is always the *process* that men must adhere to; it is not the living God.

If faith consists of an adherence to an intellectual formula and not to a God who enters human hearts, then you can defend the Faith by defending an intellectual process while abandoning the people who took God into their hearts. ‘He isn’t there,’ the great intellectual Christians tell us, ‘He exists in our minds. If you trust us, we will bring you safely home.’ Of course the home that the classical liberals are taking us to is the same home that the hard left liberals are going to – it is called hell.

Burke pointed out that the French clergy, who were more concerned about their process than a man’s faith in Christ, helped pave the way for the French Revolution. Dostoyevsky made the same point 100 years later when his Grand Inquisitor accuses Christ of thinking too much of man. Man, the Grand Inquisitor insists, does not want to struggle toward the light by following the way of the cross, he wants to exchange the cross for earthly guarantees of bread and security. Will this always be the case with the European people? Will they always prefer the faith of the clerical Grand Inquisitors to faith in Christ? It seems so. But it was not always thus. The early European Christians did not shun the cross of Christ, they were like unto Thomas Nelson Page’s depiction of the heroic Goth:

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

-Thomas Nelson Page in [Under the Crust](#)

What happened to us? A hard stone can become a smooth pebble over time if a steady stream of water runs over it. For years our clergymen poured rationalist pap over the faithful until their souls were smoothed away. They are now reasonable human beings incapable of loving or hating with all their heart, but quite capable of following the injunctions of the clerical wise men who enjoin them, in the name of a rationalist God, to go beyond love and hate to...? To what? Paradise? Or is it to hell?

The hard left is incapable of love, but they can still hate, which is why they always defeat the classical liberals. Kipling wrote, wistfully, of the time when "The English begin to hate." Would that were true of the white, Christian Europeans: To hate the devil and all his works. Are not the liberals and the colored heathen the work of the devil? Of course they are, but the classical liberal does not believe in the devil. He believes in reason. But our Lord did believe in the devil, and He enjoined us to fight the devil. When did rational men decide that Christ was a bad theologian?

I constantly hear classical liberals asking, when they look at what the radical left is doing, 'What is going on — how can they do these things?' If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride. I wish that the conservative-liberals would take the story of the demon-possessed swine seriously. It's a curious thing: the best of our poets have a very immoderate, extreme view of life that is in line with the Gospels while the literary critics and theologians always seek to modify or condemn such 'extremism.' Thus, Burke is seen as 'obsessive' for saying that the French Revolution was from the devil. And poets such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dostoyevsky are considered extreme and or fantastical when they take the devil seriously. But whose vision fits the reality of the world we see before us? Do we live in the classical liberals' world of reasonable men working out their problems within some mind-forged, man-made process? Or are the Christian poets' right — do we live in a world in which men and women, inspired by Satan, seek to strike God by destroying his image in man? The Satanism of modern Liberalism and the insufficiency of reason to deal with that Satanism was brought home to me in my early twenties when I was involved in what was called the 'pro-life' movement. While passing out literature at malls and doing sidewalk protests out the abortion clinics, I came to realize the terrible insufficiency of the 'Give them the information about the unborn children' approach. That was not the issue; the women getting abortions knew what they were doing. They were acting according to the will of a spirit who was opposed to Christ's reign of charity; they were acting according to the dictates of the evil one, who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

Christian Europe was not lacking in heroic men and women who dedicated their lives to the resistance of the evil one and the support of His reign of charity. Today we have no heroes willing to oppose Satan and support Christ. Why? Once Christendom became Satandom through the mediation of the 'smooth it away' rationalists in the church, the men and women of Europe had no star to guide them. Human beings respond to their leaders. When the European leadership bent their knees to Christ so did the European people. Heroism became commonplace, because the European everyman did not have to have exceptional vision; his vision was bred in the bone — it was part and parcel of his everyday life. But once the Christian leadership of a society is replaced by Satan's minions, Christian heroism becomes very rare. There are still brave men and women, but lacking a moral vision they put themselves at the service of Satan. Nothing is more pathetic than the 'support our troops' occasions which take place on a regular basis. Support our troops? To do what? Are they going to place a Christian king on the throne? And shouldn't we support our local police? Again, I must ask — why should we support our police? If I shoot an abortionist, will the police come to my aid? If I organize a vigilante committee to take care of the marauding bands of colored heathens, will the police come to my aid or will they come to the aid of the colored heathens? People, in the main, will reserve their heroism for respectable, state-approved heroism. When a nation state has a satanic government, your "heroes" will be heroes of Satandom.

What has been lost? A culture in which even the worst of sinners knew who was the cornerstone of their world. And the best of that culture were heroes who fought the heathens and supported His reign of charity. Once lost, can such a world be regained? Not from within Satandom. If we are true to our origins, if we don't look to classical liberalism as an antidote to Jacobin liberalism, we will find the strength and the will to endure to the end in spite of the liberal armies that are arrayed against us. That is the promise of Europe's morning star:

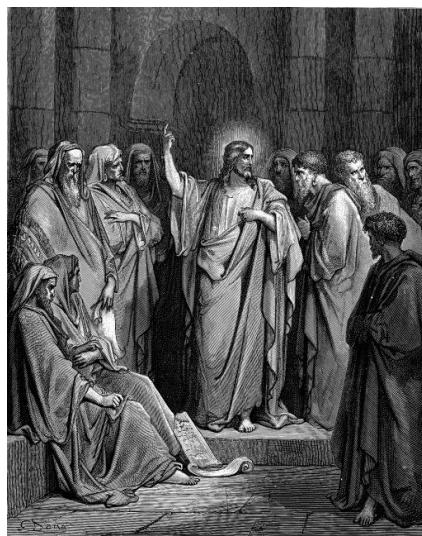
Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.
— Luke 21: 26-28 +

For Hearth, for Faith, for the Light of the World

September 2, 2017

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Third Dumb Brother

Tags: Charles Dickens, de la Motte Fouque, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. – 2 Timothy 3: 7

A Scottish minister recently proposed that 100,000 Islamic ‘refugees’ should be placed on the Isle of Skye, an island that only has an estimated population of 10,000 native-born Scots. In better times, say 50 years ago, the Scottish minister would have been sent to a madhouse and that would be the end of it. But nowadays such proposals are commonplace, and they usually become a reality. A man who was not tainted with the disease of liberalism might ask the Scottish minister a few questions, such as:

- 1) *Why would a professed Christian allow 100,000 Moslems to invade his homeland? The answer would be that the Scottish minister is a ‘new’ Christian, a Judeo-pagan Christian, which means that he believes Christianity is a fusion of Judaism and all the pagan faiths. Thus, he is being true to his faith by inviting the Moslems into his nation*
- 2) *Where, Reverend Blasphemer, are you going to put the Moslems? The answer – We shall put them where the white Scots live.*
- 3) *Where will you put the Scottish people? Answer: We will dispose of the Scottish people.*
- 4) *How will the ‘new’ Scots sustain themselves? Answer: The rest of Britain will sustain them with their tax money.*
- 5) *What happens when there are no white Britons left to pay taxes to support Islamic refugees? Answer: I’m a cleric, a great thinker, I don’t bother myself with such mundane things.*

And please don’t tell me, if you are not a Presbyterian, that your church is exempt from such blasphemies. This demonic madness has taken hold of all the churches in organized Christendom, which has become Satandom. The devil entered our churches in the guise of a rationalist. He seemed like a nice fellow because he was well dressed and very articulate. As time went by he seemed a bit unusual — his horns were showing. But still, he was very rational, and reason, we all knew, was next to Godliness. So the clerics got used to having the devil around them. And then they began to take his advice on everything. They wondered how they ever got along without him. Now, in the 21st century, the first of the non-Christian centuries in Europe, the devil rules.

Let us segue from the Scottish minister to the flood in Houston, Texas. White people are behaving nobly. They are giving aid and comfort to the victims of one of the worst natural disasters in this nation’s history. How can this be? Are not white people the evil ones, the people who must give way to the colored heathens? White people are allowed to be heroic during such natural disasters because the liberals have not yet discovered a way to ensure that natural disasters happen only to white people. If that were the case, all relief efforts for victims of natural disasters would be banned. They’d be banned because the defense and or the aid and succor of white people is racist and therefore damnable. The whites are only allowed to serve Liberaldom, which is committed to the destruction of the white race, so whites can only aid whites when whites are suffering through the same natural disasters as the colored heathen. When there are no whites left, the colored heathens will perish, because they are incapable of charitable outreach to their own people or any other people.

Whites will continue to serve Liberaldom, because they have no leadership willing to contradict the ruling liberal ethos, which states: “The good man is pure intellect. He is the psychiatrist, the theologian, the doctor of medicine, the doctor of philosophy, and the man of science.” But if man is pure intellect, then who is his master? It is the Archangel Satan, that great intellectual giant. Who is more intelligent than Satan? The end result of reason unfettered from the human heart is the worship of Satan. The Scottish preacher is an apostle of Satan. And so are they all – the men in authority in church and state throughout Europe. St. Paul warned us about such men:

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works. – 2 Corinthians 11: 13-15

Doesn’t that describe our modern day clergymen who have joined with their secular liberal counterparts to make war on the living God in the name of their demon gods? The flood in Texas should be combatted, but that natural disaster pales in contrast to the man-made disaster of liberalism. Who will combat the negroization and Islamization of the European nations? It isn’t just the people of Skye who are in danger of being exterminated, it is the entire white race. And they are being exterminated by “ministers of righteousness,” the righteousness of Satan. Everything is reversed in the new church – right is wrong and wrong is right.

In the plays of Shakespeare, the works of Scott, the works of Dickens, and the European fairy tales there is a reoccurring theme – the theme of a man on the periphery of great events because he is thought to be too inconsequential to have any significant influence. In other words, he is considered a simpleton. But the simpleton steps out of the shadows at a crucial point in the drama and turns the tide for the forces of good. In Shakespeare’s *Much Ado About Nothing*, it is the bumbling constable, Dogberry, who brings the villains to the bar of justice, causing one of the villains to remark, “I have deceived even your very eyes. What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light...” And in *King Lear* it is Kent and Edgar in disguise and seemingly only minor figures who do the villains and villainesses in. Likewise in Scott’s *Quentin Durward* and his *The Heart of Midlothian*. Jeannie Deans and Quentin Durward are like unto the third dumb brothers in the fairy tales. Seemingly of no consequence, even foolish, they step forth and win the day. And Dickens? The third dumb brothers walk through his novels in a glorious quixotic parade, but none are more exemplary than Wilkins Micawber, the king of the third dumb brothers. When Uriah Heep, that evil minister of Satanic righteousness, seems like he is about to destroy Mr. Wickfield, Wilkins Micawber steps forth and produces the evidence that can convict Heep and save Mr. Wickfield. He concludes his damning indictment of Heep with the following immortal words:

I ask no more. Let it be, in justice, merely said of me, as of a gallant and eminent naval Hero, with whom I have no pretensions to cope, that what I have done, I did, in despite of mercenary and selfish objects, For England, home, and Beauty. "Remaining always, &c. &c., WILKINS MICAWBER."

That brief montage of third dumb brothers in our literature seems like a mere bagatelle of no consequence. But that is precisely the point. Shakespeare's plays, the novels of Scott and Dickens, and the European fairy tales are mere fairy dust in the eyes of the world. But of what does our world consist? Shakespeare, Dickens, and Scott were third dumb brothers themselves. They saw a spiritual realm inhabited by men and women with immortal souls. That made their story, the story of the European people, a story worth telling. If we have souls, if we are not just vegetable matter, what we do in this vale of tears is of eternal moment. And what we fail to do is also of eternal moment.

The Bible is shunned by some of the organized churches because they fear that it will weaken the clerics' power over the laity. And in other organized churches the Bible has been demythologized and made into a handy dandy guide book for 'this world only.' But if a man goes through the Bible as if he is reading a novel or a historical work he will find something of infinite value, something that the intelligent men have yet to discover, because they have hardened their hearts against it. That something is a Man. He is the third dumb brother who breathed life into the European people. He is the heart of our hearts and the summit of all our aspirations and hopes. The new Europe, which has been forged in hell, the Europe of Satanic clergymen and fiendish hell hounds in high places, is opposed to that Man of Sorrows who was the promethean fire of the European people when they were a people.

In de la Motte Fouque's story, *Undine*, he tells how the Undine acquires a soul. She acquires a soul when her heart is pierced with love and compassion for a human being. The European people have reversed the process of the Undine: they have divested themselves of their souls by denying their humanity. If this sounds too dark, or too extreme, just look at the negroization and Islamization of the European nations. People with souls, people with hearts of flesh, do not allow that to happen. When we accept the intellectual Christians' faith in pure intellect and deny the truth that was bred in the bone of our Christian ancestors — that our racial identity is an essential part of our soul — we lose our souls and become Undines.

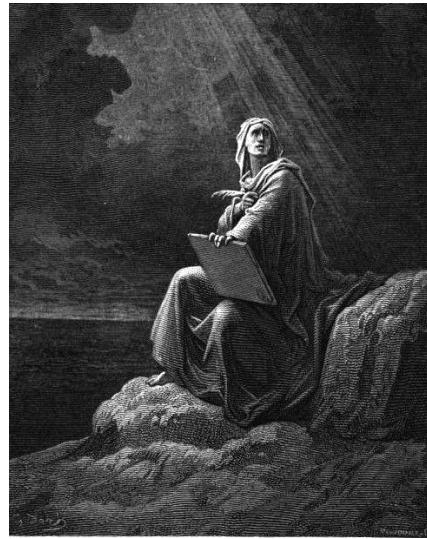
The Light of the World is dependent — He has willed that dependence — on His people to make his Light shine. He works through us. Satan has willed, through his people, who are the liberals and the colored heathens, the destruction of the light shining in darkness. That is what the race war is all about. Will the ancient 'image of God in man' culture of the antique Europeans be eradicated from the face of the earth? Or will the people who saw a great light rise up and become Europeans, the people of God, once again? It seems ludicrous to even suggest that the Europeans will not be completely destroyed when you look at the naked horror of Liberalism. Everything stemming from old Europe is proscribed. And what used to be the unspoken, underlying passion behind all the liberal clergymen's and academics' sermons and lectures, the destruction of the white race, is openly preached in the pulpits, taught in the classrooms and shouted from the rooftops of Liberalism. What can be done in the face of such a monolith of evil? The European people should become like unto the third dumb brothers of European fairyland. With absolutely nothing but our faith in the Man of Sorrows we should step out of the shadows and fight for our racial hearth fire. Are we likely to succeed? No, we are not. But whether we win or lose in the temporal realm, we will have achieved a great victory, we will have reclaimed our souls. God's people will once again be able to say that they have seen a great light. How can we be Europeans, how can we be men, without the light that shineth in darkness? +

In the Beginning

September 9, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: St. John



And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. — *Revelations 19: 11-13*

It should be no surprise to any white man that Google is putting a stop to all dissenting voices. It is absolutely consistent with the nature of the beast called liberalism. Robespierre was an outspoken opponent of capital punishment before taking office, and he remained an outspoken opponent of capital punishment when he became head of the French Jacobin state. How did he justify the seeming contradiction between his bloodletting and his opposition to capital punishment? Was he a hypocrite? No, he was not. He was against capital punishment for human beings. The nonhuman (the aristocrats) needed to be killed so that the republic could be humanized. Once France was purged of the nonhuman element, then there would be no need for capital punishment. By the same mental process used by Robespierre, liberals, such as the Google gurus, shut off all dissenting voices while claiming to be great believers in free speech. And they are — they believe in free speech for human beings. White supremacists, which are now defined as all white people except Atticus Finch-liberals, are not human; therefore, they have no right to free speech. And it goes further than that — the nonhumans, the ‘white supremacists,’ who run the gamut from the 80 year-old lady who likes John Wayne movies to the young white man who admires Robert E. Lee, have no right to life. They must be eliminated. And they are being systematically eliminated throughout the European nations.

Throughout the Christian centuries, European religious sects such as the Puritans and the Jansenists have been suspicious of the humanity of Christ. They somehow got the notion that the majesty of God was lessened if He was presented to mankind as a humane God, but is not Christ’s divine humanity at the heart of our faith? We love Him because of His humanity, because of His death on the cross. Rationalists with Christian sympathies treat Christ’s crucifixion as one of the many possible options God could have used to reveal Himself to mankind. In fact, they suggest, at least implicitly, that the crucifixion was rather unnecessary. Was it? What is the answer to Ivan Karamazov’s tale of the little girl crying in the outhouse? There is no rational answer; there is only the cross of Christ.

There are no nonwhite liberals. The barbarians of color often vote the same as the liberals, but they do so for different reasons, and they might, when they get jobs in Liberaldom, spout liberal double-speak, but they are not liberals — they are colored heathens. The liberal is always white, because liberalism stems from Christianity, and it was only the European people who made Christianity the center of their culture and made Christ their morning star. The liberals have rejected Christ, but they have retained a perverted Christian eschatology. Humanism came from the European’s belief in Christ — to be humane was to be like unto the humane God, Jesus Christ. Now, to be truly humane a white man must be inhumane; he must hate all that was thought to be virtuous in old racist Europe. He must hate the faith, hope, and charity of the Christian Europeans, while replacing their faith, hope, and charity with a new faith, hope, and charity. Thus the liberals’ faith is in the new unholy trinity of the abstracted intellect (the father), the negro (the son), and science (the holy ghost). His hope is in utopia, the utopia of a future blessed state on earth where no white people exist. And his charity consists of the elimination of the evil ones, the white nonhumans who stand in the way of utopia. We see the liberals’ satanic version of charity in every aspect of their lives. They must ‘diversify’ everything; they must support black barbarism and the Moslem invasion of Europe, because they must be charitable; they must fight the nonhumans, the whites, and support the innocent and pure, the nonwhites. With an unholy, satanic zeal the liberals are proceeding toward a brave new world, nurtured and sustained by the sacrificial blood of white people. There was never, in pagan or Christian Europe, a white culture based on cannibalism (the Donner party was not a culture). There was not such a culture until the French Revolution, when many Jacobin women actually drank the blood of the butchered aristocrats. And now our modern Jacobins are doing likewise. They are cannibalizing the white race by proxy through the sacrificial bloodlettings of whites by their colored heathen allies.

All that was good in old Europe and the small remnant of good left in modern Europe is the result of our European ancestors’ faith in Jesus Christ. Old Europe was not the result of intellectual Christianity, it was not created by Augustine, Aquinas, or Calvin, it was created and sustained by men and women with hearts of flesh who saw life feelingly. They saw beauty on the cross, and that vision became their faith. But the devil did not see beauty on the cross. The cross of Christ, the divine condescension, filled him with loathing. So Satan prowled about the world seeking to make the European people feel the same loathing for the divine condescension as he did. The liberals are his success story. But what has he won? And what, ultimately, do liberals gain by their rejection of Christ? No man achieves a state of perpetual bliss in this world even if he is a Christian. But do the liberals seem even moderately content with their liberalism? No, they don’t. And the most radical branch of liberalism, the feminist branch (when women go to the devil they always go further than their male counterparts), seems to be composed of the most unhappy, miserable creatures that have ever walked the earth. “Unsex me here,” they cry, and as a result they all go hurtling toward the same cliff that the swine went tumbling over.

The classical liberals’ (the intellectual Christians’) response to satanic, Jacobin liberalism has been tepid. They are not comfortable with extremism, but if they were really serious about combating liberalism they would have to go to extremes; they would have to be willing to place their passionate love of Christ up against the liberals’ passionate hatred of Christ. Ah, there’s the rub. The intellectual Christians, the conservatives, have no passion because they have abandoned their racial hearth fire in order to appease the hard left liberals — “See, I am not racist, so you must let me play and work within the confines of liberalism.” But if you are not racist, if you don’t love your own, you cannot love Christ. Christ comes to us through His divine humanity, and we come to Him through our humanity. We do not become inhumane by loving our own, we become humane enough to understand the mystery and the beauty of His death on the cross.

The summation of our failure, as a people, to respond to liberalism is this — a lack of depth and a lack of passion. We lack those two essentials because of our refusal to love our racial hearth fire. No man cometh to the Father except through Christ, and no man comes to Christ except through the channel of grace, the love of our kith and kin that He has provided for us.

It’s not a little thing that Google is shutting down the white sites. It will further isolate white people from each other. Nor is it a little thing that whites are being deprived of their livelihoods for the slightest opposition to the liberal leviathan. I for one do not welcome life as a survivalist who has to “skin his own deer and run a trout line.” But it is not over for white people because of all the totalitarian clampdowns that are taking place. It is not over if we make the gospel of Christ something more than an intellectual construct. Intellectual Christianity belongs to the false messiahs of organized Judeo-Paganism; they are the connecting links to Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. Our salvation is in the blood, soil, and hearth fires of Europeans of depth, Europeans who were connected to Him. If we keep that connection we will not perish. If Google bans whites, the hearth-fire whites will find a way to subvert and/or destroy Google.

When the government cuts off the food supplies of whites, the hearth-fire whites will find ways to combat the government. There is always hope for the white man who takes His word into his heart. Such a man will love and hate with all his heart. And such a man will achieve what the rational Christian says is impossible.

It seems that as our European nations become more and more openly anti-white and anti-Christian, the conservatives have become more conciliatory toward the liberals, just as Mrs. Joe in Dicken's *Great Expectations* became more conciliatory toward Orlick after Orlick assaulted her. The liberals will not be mollified. If you are white, you will ultimately be found guilty of whiteness, just as Robespierre found his closest associates guilty of aristocratic sympathies. And then he in turn faced the guillotine for his sins against the people. All whites have sinned, because they are white. It is no consolation to us to know that eventually all white liberals will die in the anti-white sacrificial fire that they started.

St. John tells us that, "In the beginning was the Word... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth." The European people made that miracle of the Word their miracle. His grace and truth was at the heart of their culture. Yes, the liberals will take down all the monuments, and they will destroy all the art works of Christian Europe. But can they destroy the Word? They will try, but it is not possible to eradicate the Word. Bibles will still be passed around and many books stemming from the Gospel will be circulated in the Underground. In *Fahrenheit 451* it was a right-wing dictatorship that burned the books. In reality, that type of totalitarianism always comes from the left. We will be in the situation of the hero of *Fahrenheit 451* vis-à-vis the world. We will be trying to reconnect with our past, our Christian past, through the bards of Europe – men like Shakespeare, Dickens, and Scott.

St. Paul says, "For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." So am I persuaded that neither Satan nor the principalities of this world, principalities such as Google, will be able to separate us from the love of Christ, whom we love through the people of our racial hearth fire. It was not for vain glory or filthy lucre that our ancestors built Christian Europe. It was for the love of our common hope. Surely, if we love much, He will not forsake us – "Men must endure their going hence even as they are coming hither..." +

The Word of Their Testimony

September 16, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Halfway-house churches, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: John Donne, St. John, St. Paul



And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. —*Revelation 12: 10-12*

Our Lord told us to read the signs of the times. If we do that, if we view our times with a Christian heart, we cannot help but feel that these are the end times our Lord told us of in the *Book of Revelation*. But our Lord also told us that no one knows either the day or the hour. God's timetable is not our timetable. He could end it all tomorrow, or He could extend the end times for hundreds of years. It's difficult to imagine that modern Liberaldom, which is a synthesis of all the blasphemies known to man, will be permitted to stand much longer. But we don't know.

If we did know the day and the hour, would that change our lives? I would stop writing articles, but other than that I don't think I'd change much. I'd do the daily readings with my family and wait for the end. But of course one has to believe in our incarnate Lord in order to believe in the end of time. The liberals will continue on with their lives and die proclaiming the eternal greatness of fraternity, liberty, and equality. Why bother with such speculation since we cannot know the day nor the hour? I bother about such things because, although it is quite useless, even harmful, to speculate about the day and the hour – witness the Evangelical Christian Jews who try to bring about the end of the world through their support of Israel – it is essential that we read the signs of the times from a Christian perspective. If we don't do this we will be absorbed by the times, which is to say we will become part of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

One becomes absorbed by the principalities and powers of the modern world by making the external forms of Christian worship and Christian civilization the whole Christian faith, even though the inner core of the outward forms are rotten. John Donne put it quite well:

And if we distinguish not between Articles of faith & jurisdiction, but account all those super-edifications and furnitures, and ornaments which God hath afforded to his church, for the exterior government, to be equally the Foundation itself, there can be no church; as there could be no body of a man, if it were all eye.

Church, school, and state were all good things during the Christian era of Europe, but they are not good things now that Satan has entered in. A European of depth, a man who has kept his heart, who has stayed with the Christ of the European hearth fire, will not be deceived by eternals. He will not abandon his people because church, school, and state tell him that he must worship the negro. Nor will he blend the living God with negro worship and the other heathen faiths simply because church, school, and state tell him he must. But to oppose the forces of hell that have joined together in what were formally citadels of Christian civilization, the European Christian must have some touchstone of reality other than a blind support for Christian facades that are now the habitations of the devil. Hamlet had that within which passeth show. If something within us does not burn with hatred when we come in contact with the blasphemies of our churchmen, the perversions of our academics, and the anti-white and anti-Christian tactics of our government, then we have become one with Satan. And conversely if our hearts do not burn within us, as the apostles hearts burned within them when they encountered Christ on the road to Emmaus, when we come into contact with the Christ of old Europe, through His people, it is a sure sign that we have become “as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.”

A man without the poetic of old Europe in his soul is “fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils.” And is that not what has led to the demise of the European people? Our intelligentsia is divided between the far left liberals who hate the poetic of old Europe and the classical liberals (the conservatives) who have betrayed the poetic of old Europe for intellectual systems. A system does not need a people with a local habitation and a name, nor does a system need a personal God with a local habitation and a name. So the European people, the Christ-bearers, became part of a universal aggregate called ‘the people,’ and Christ became part of an intellectual system, an important part, but not as important as the system.

Systems men who worship externals without substance and have no poetic cannot defeat the men of the hard left, who have a poetic. The lefties hate the light in the name of their dark gods. The conservatives are, like Sisyphus, forever pushing the rock uphill to no avail, appealing to the hard left for justice, for a calm, rational discussion of the rightness of their cause, whether that cause is the right to life for the baby in the womb or the right to life for the white man as well as the black man. But always their assumption is that church, school, and state are full of good, rational people who are interested in compassion and justice for all. Why won’t the conservatives look to the discarded poetic of Europe? Look to the European poets during the Christian era, look to the Gospels, look to St. Paul, and look to the *Book of Revelation*. When they, the liberals, do such things, evils that cannot be explained by our philosophies, we must stop trying to reason with them – we must embrace the poetic of Christian Europe, which enjoins us to see evil and fight evil. And if you don’t see the evil of a society that has outdone Sodom and Gomorrah in perversion, surpassed Babel in blasphemy, and out-Heroded Herod in the slaughter of the innocents, you are either one of the hellhounds of Liberaldom, or you are a morally anesthetized conservative who sees with the exterior eye of reason while forsaking the inner eye of the heart.

From 1940 through 1953 MGM Studios sent a man named James A. Fitzpatrick around the world to film a series of short vignettes of a wide variety of countries. The short films, which are now available on DVD, were then shown in movie theaters before the main feature. I've only seen the ones that deal with the European nations, having no interest in the non-European countries. I should warn you that Fitzpatrick mispronounces almost all of the names of the non-English cities and towns, and he is a hopeless shill for the democratic way, but still the films make for a very fascinating view of what we have lost. The films are like (although not as well done) H. V. Morton's *In Search of...* books. But there is something to be said for an actual visual depiction of the lost worlds of Europe. The intellectual rot had already set in at the universities of the various European nations (which includes all the racially European nations such as Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, Canada, and the United States), but the lives of the people as depicted in the travelogues were much the same as the lives of their ancestors, hundreds of years before them. One particular vignette stands out in my mind of a small town in Holland in the early 1950's. To think that many of the children of that town, in which the men and women wore wooden shoes and worked and worshipped as their Christian ancestors had, would still be alive today in modern Holland, is something that makes one wonder. Did any of those children stay with the vision and the way of life of their ancestors? Or did they all follow church, school, and state down the wide road to hell? It seems from a distance that the Hollanders, like the rest of the European people, followed their leaders in church, school, and state. I would like to think that there are some seventy and eighty year olds who were children

at the time of that film who have stubbornly clung, in their hearts, to the old European culture of faith, hope, and charity. But is that likely? If the powers that be are rotten, will the people defy the powers that be? The poisoned Laertes cried, "The King, the King's to blame!" I cry, "The churches, the churches are to blame!" When they peddled a Christian system that was always evolving and virtually identical to the liberalism of the ever-evolving intelligentsia, instead of preaching the never-evolving truth of Christ crucified and Christ risen, they took away the one touchstone of reality that could have given, and still can give, the European people the spiritual backbone to resist the evolution from Christian Europe to the Babylonian kingdom of Satan on earth.

All of the European travelogues give us a vivid picture of what has been lost, but I must mention two more that were particularly poignant reminders of a sacred heritage that has been replaced by the liberal techno-barbarians. In the town square of old Prague there is an astronomical clock that was constructed in 1408. Every hour on the hour lifelike models of the 12 apostles walk by as the clock strikes. On a side panel is the figure of Death. When Death's sickle goes down, personified models of various sins, such as Greed and Avarice, fall down. It is a marvelous piece of artwork to behold — it speaks of a people whose lives, imperfect as they themselves might have been, were consecrated to our common hope.

The other vignette that I must mention is the one called "The Ugly Duckling." In that brief film we see the birthplace of Hans Christian Andersen, and then follow him through the various cities and towns of Denmark where he lived and wrote his Christian fairy tales. The way of life of the people in those towns seems to be much the same as when Hans Christian Andersen lived there and wrote his fairy tales. What a sad, sad contrast with modern Denmark. And so it is with all the cities and towns that we see in those travelogues from the 1940s and 1950s. The intellectual attack had begun in earnest at that time, but it was not yet visible in the daily lives of the European people. It's good to look at such films, even though they are incredibly sad, for the same reason that Puddleglum had to defy the evil queen who said there never was a Narnia. The liberals are constantly telling us that there never was a beautiful land called Christian Europe. They tell us there was only racism sexism, and homophobia in that terrible incorporate union called Christian Europe. Look and compare. Who is lying — is it the man such as myself, who sees moral beauty in old non-diverse Europe, or is it the liberals, who see nothing but evil in old Europe while telling us that the new diversified Europe is heaven on earth?

There is something very telling in St. John 12: 10-11:

"But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus."

The Jews not only wanted to put Jesus to death, they also wanted to put Lazarus to death, because he stood as a sign of contradiction to the Jews who maintained that Christ was a false prophet. So it is with the Christian Europeans. The forces of liberalism want to destroy the European people because the Christ-bearing people are a sign of contradiction to liberalism. In order to avoid the persecution of the world the Europeans have discarded Christ. But they can't escape their destiny. They will be forever seen as the Christ-bearing people because of their past, nothing can change that. Satan won't forgive or forget, he will always center his attack on the 'image of God' people, the Europeans. St. John also tells us that "among the chief rulers many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:" Why should the European people, who once rejected the wisdom of the Pharisees for the foolishness of God, want to return to the modern synagogue of Satan? Is the approval of the Pharisees of Liberalism really so wonderful? No, it is not. We ask only the benediction of our incarnate Lord whose divine love created and sustained our European civilization of long ago.+

The Liberals' Holy Ghost

September 23, 2017

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection, Scientism

Tags: Herman Melville, Shakespeare



But 'tis strange;
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,
Win us with honest trifles to betray's
In deepest consequence.

-Banquo in *Macbeth*

Melville's statement about the works of Shakespeare – "All that we seek and shun is there, man's final lore" – was on the mark. If we shun his harsh truths we will never get to the core of his one, great, beautiful truth: Christ is "the grave where buried love doth live." The rejection of that truth is the reason the European people are on the brink of extinction. They have allowed the devil to fool them with "honest trifles" while betraying them "in deepest consequence." That we inhabit bodies and our bodies are subject to certain natural laws is the honest trifle the devil has used to make us discard what is of deepest consequence. We have discarded our faith in the resurrection of Jesus Christ because the resurrection from the dead is unscientific, it is against the laws of nature. And we are all part of nature, are we not? I had a secularized Jew for a teacher in one of my college literature classes. He was quite fond of attacking the notion of a loving God by pointing to all the suffering in the world. His case against God was Ivan Karamazov's case against God. There is no rational argument against that type of attack. But there is a response, there is Alyosha's response to Ivan. He bid his brother look to the cross of Christ.

Let's look closer at modern atheism. Is it suffering that has turned modern man against God? If it is, then why didn't the Europeans prior to the 20th and 21st centuries turn against God? Were not their lives just as full of suffering as the lives of the modern Europeans? And if we can believe the medical establishment, human suffering has lessened in the 20th and 21st centuries. Then we must conclude that the pain of existence is not the reason modern man has ceased to believe in the "grave where buried love doth live." There must be another reason. The atheist, George Bernard Shaw, told us the reason in the preface of his play called *Back to Methuselah* – Science has triumphed over Christ. (1) The scientific world view was the sword that the liberals used to destroy the European people's will to survive as a people. If science says that Christ be not risen, then to whom do we turn? The Europeans have returned to nature and nature's God, the noble black savage. Rousseau was not an outright atheist, he combined his faith in Christ with his faith in the Noble Savage, but where your treasure lies so lies your heart. Rousseau's successors kept to the heart of his new faith, which was the worship of the negro, and discarded the dross, which was Christ the Lord.

Science and truth have become synonymous in the modern era. Psychiatry is supposed to tell us more about mankind than the bards of Europe did, because psychiatry is scientific. Sociology and anthropology tell us great truths because they too are scientific disciplines, in contrast to the Gospel of Christ which stems from a primitive people who believed in myths rather than science. Science has been the bridge — the Holy Ghost — that links the Europeans to the gods of nature. The liberal taking his walk through the woods is not communing with the Christian God of his forefathers, he is communing with the gods of nature, the colored heathen, even though those 'natural' gods want nothing to do with nature.

In my mid-twenties I was very naïve about the Christian clergy. I thought Christian clergymen, of all denominations, believed in Jesus Christ. I vividly remember walking away, stunned, from a conversation with a Roman Catholic priest who told me that the essence of Christianity was a belief in the truths of all religions. When I asked the priest if he meant that all religions had some elements of truth, but Christianity was the one true faith, I was told that he did not mean that at all. He meant that Christianity was not true in the literal sense. And by literal sense, he meant that Christ had not risen from the dead. No man could believe something so unnatural. Now, you might say that priest was an extreme case, but I have found, over the years, that he was just a little more frank than his contemporaries. Most of the clergy have wrapped Christ in 'this world only' mysticism. He is a civil rights worker, He is a Marxist, He is a prophet like Mohammed, or He is the son of God just as we are all sons of God. But is He *the Son of God*, who rose from the dead on the third day? If He is not, then let us proceed to eat, drink, and be merry, for tomorrow we die. And isn't that the promise of liberalism? That we can be happy in this world if we shun the unscientific Christianity of reactionaries such as St. Paul and the pre-20th century Europeans and cling to the Christ-hating, white-hating civilization of the 21st century? But can we really be happy, to the extent that anyone can be happy, in this world without our faith in the risen Lord? I'm at the age when many of my friends and relatives are suffering from terminal illnesses. For some reason, the fact that Europe is moving toward Islamification and the sacred negro has been made the lodestar of the United States does not give them any comfort in the face of death. And science? There are pain killers for the physical pain, but can science help the man or woman who has spent his or her life within the confines of the scientific worldview? No, it cannot. Such a man or woman has been deceived in deepest consequence. They are now facing death naked to the great enemy of mankind, the arch angel Satan. "Die in despair," he tells the devotees of science on their death beds. My prayer for all my dying friends and relatives is my prayer for myself as well: "Help of the helpless, Lord, abide with me," – and abide with them.

The fight for European culture, which cannot be divorced from the fight to preserve the European people, is the fight for our common hope. The liberals tell us we can only have hope if we abandon Christ and the European people and replace them with a Christless, colored paradise sustained by science. Our European ancestors speak to us from the grave where buried love doth live and tell us to cling to the God who sustained them in the day of battle and stood by them at their dying hour. Is it His "kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven" that we should seek, or is it the scientized, 'natural' hell of the liberals that we should seek?

The essentials of liberalism – that Christ be not risen, and the Europeans, who foisted the belief in Christ on the world, had to be replaced by the heathens of color, were the guiding principles of all the liberals from the second half of the 20th century to the present. But in my lifetime I have witnessed a great shift in the liberals' tactics. When there were still a sizeable portion of European grazers who had lost the faith of their European ancestors but retained much of the ethos of that ancient faith, the liberals debated things such as abortion and race-mixing, defending such evils in the name of compassion and charity, which were virtues stemming from the faith the liberals renounced. But in recent years, now that the grazers have lost the ethos of their immediate ancestors, the 1950's grazers, the liberals have done away with discussions. They have obtained absolute power, and they are using their power to suppress all opinions contrary to liberalism and to kill all whites who oppose liberalism. It is a brave new world we live in. It is a crueler world, a more hopeless, darker world than mankind has ever known before. In this new world we see the forces of scientized liberal atheism joining forces with the Moslems and the colored heathens to eliminate faith, hope, and charity from the face

of the earth. If that military maneuver is to be successful, the European people must be eliminated. The devil understands that Christ works in human hearts. If you destroy the European people's hearts of flesh, you have very effectively destroyed their connection to the living God.

Jacob Marley tells Scrooge of the chains he forged for himself, link by link. The European people have forged similar chains for themselves. They are chained to a pagan wheel of fire because they believe that science is truth and truth is science. And ironically the 'facts' of science are just as irrational as the belief in the resurrection from the dead, for it is just as impossible for a human being, mere vegetable matter according to the liberals, to become a human personality as it is for that same human personality to perish and rot in the grave. "Behold I show you a mystery." Once we enter into the spiritual realm, and we have to if we are to explain the existence of human beings, then truth, the truth beyond reason, seems to point to the faith of our European ancestors – "though worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God... for now is Christ risen from the dead, the first fruits of them that sleep."

Trump's election has saved some white lives and allowed some whites to hold onto their jobs that might otherwise (had Hillary been elected) have lost them, so his election was not a complete waste. But no election within the confines of liberalism will accomplish that which is needful. The Europeans live in chains forged by the men of reason – the academics in church and state. Until those chains are broken, they will not see the one great truth that once animated the European people – the empty tomb.

I suppose I should have saved such mediations for Easter, but as the darkness of liberalism engulfs every nook and corner of what was once Christendom, the spirit reacts, in self-defense, by holding the three great events ever before his eyes – Christ's birth in the manger, His death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. When the eleventh hour has passed, when the great god democracy has failed, we must look to the Help of the helpless, who broke the chains of death and rose from the tomb on the third day. +

(1) It's worth noting that the neo-pagans and the liberals do not diverge on the third person of the liberals' trinity. They too believe in the holy ghost of science. Nor do they diverge from their liberal cousins on the issue of the first person of the liberal trinity. They too believe in the father, which is the abstracted intellect. It is on the issue of the second person of the liberal trinity that the neo-pagans part company with the hard left. They do not believe in the liberals' savior, the noble black savage. Can the neo-pagans compete with the hard left without a Savior? No, they cannot. But you can't just invent a savior for practical purposes. You must see something more than nature in existence before you can do battle against an enemy who sees only the natural world presided over by the natural black savage. Christ is that 'something more than nature.'

Mere Virtue Is Not Enough

September 30, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Shakespeare



*Edgar: Draw thy sword,
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,
Thy arm may do thee justice. Here is mine.
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,
My oath, and my profession. I protest-
Maugre thy strength, youth, place, and eminence,
Despite thy victor sword and fire-new fortune,
Thy valour and thy heart- thou art a traitor;
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince;
And from th' extremest upward of thy head
To the descent and dust beneath thy foot,
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou 'no,'
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,
Thou liest.*

—King Lear

There are two reasons why an opponent of the Islamification of Europe and/or the negroization of America might have recourse to the language of the psychiatrist. The first reason might be that he believes in the validity of psychology. The second reason might be that he thinks if he uses the language of the enemy he will be able to convince the enemy that he is right and the enemy is wrong. In both cases the opponents of the hard left, the conservatives and the neo-pagans, are deceived in deepest consequence. If they truly believe in the devil's science, which goes by the name of psychology, they will never defeat the devil's minions, because at heart they are in league with them. And if they think the liberals can be won over by rational arguments derived from psychology, they are deluding themselves. Men are not moved by reason, they use reason to advance their emotional agendas, not to repudiate those agendas.

The 'death wish' gambit of the neos and the conservatives is a perfect example of the secularized, psychology-laden mindset of the right wing. The Germans are inviting the Moslems into their nation; therefore, they have a death wish. The Americans are allowing Mexicans and Moslems into their country, and they have turned their cities over to negro barbarians; therefore, they have a death wish. No, that is not the case. Let us try to free ourselves of the bastardized mumbo-jumbo of psychology and return to the more basic language and more profound wisdom of our nonscientific European forefathers – the liberals welcome and encourage the invasion of the European nations by the colored heathens because they hate everything connected to Christian Europe. And who is more connected to Christian Europe than white people? Even if every single white repudiates Christianity, the white race will still be hated by the liberals. They will hate the Christ-bearing race from now till the ending of the world. Nothing will change that. Will not the liberals perish as well if they continue to advocate the destruction of the white race? Of course they will. But the liberals do not believe that they shall perish. That is why we cannot simply say 'death wish' and think we've solved the problem of liberal treachery. The liberals think they will live to be worshipped and adored by the colored heathen. Look at their fictional hero, Atticus Finch: "Stand up, your father is passing." That is the liberal's fantasy. Just as the Christian keeps Christ's image before his eyes, the liberal keeps the image of himself as Atticus Finch, esteemed and respected for his sacrifice and support of the crucified black gods, before his eyes. The liberals never stop to ask themselves why the blacks hate the novel *To Kill A Mockingbird*. They just go on supporting their black gods and anathematizing the white 'devils.' Death wish? Not quite, there is something more than psychology at work. The liberals want me and thee to die for our racism, but they have no death wish. They have a life wish. They yearn for a paradisiacal life here on earth built on the blood of white racists and the dead bodies of infants tortured and murdered in their mothers' wombs.

Why shouldn't we use the weapons of psychology to fight the liberals? We dare not, because if we treat liberalism as a mental disorder that can be straightened out by reasoning with them and showing them the error of their ways, we will not get to the heart of the matter – we will not be able to stop the European people's descent into hell. **Liberalism is not a mental illness, it is a spiritual disease.** Are not the two things the same? No, they are not. Christ did not reason with the demons in the Gospel, He bid them leave the possessed man, and they fled into the swine and went hurtling over a cliff. We must rebuke the liberals, in the name of Christ. We cannot reason with them with the intention of converting them with our brilliance. Men and women who are possessed by the devil are not open to reason. They use their reason to advance their satanic cause, not to learn about the error of their ways. The illuminati are incapable of error – in their mind's eye they have seen a great vision, they have seen the kingdom of Satan on earth, and they will cling to that vision while fighting with all their heart and soul to destroy that other vision, the vision of a people who made Christ their lodestar.

When you play the psychological game, you are trying to place your opponent in a rational box in order to make him easier to deal with. St. Thomas Aquinas attempted to do the same thing with God. Hamlet rejected that assault in his defiance of Rosencrantz and Guildenstern, and so did Dostoyevsky's Underground Man. Man is not a reed instrument to be played upon, nor is he a piano key. Because they treat liberalism as a psychological problem, the conservatives and the neos have failed to see the true nature of liberalism. The liberals use psychology as a forgiveness tool for themselves and their colored heathen. There is no sexual sin in psychology, so the liberals need not worry about their varied perversions. And no black man is ever responsible for his crimes; it is the racism around him that causes him to do what he does. But psychology is thrown out the window when the liberals deal with whites. Suddenly, the liberals become religious fanatics. There is no tolerance for the white racist. Liberals do not look to psychology to find a reason to excuse the white racist. Oh no! The white racist is damned. He is summoned before the liberals' Inquisition and the verdict is always the same – guilty. In the great liberal tribunal the white man is always guilty. He cannot reason his way out of the liberals' death sentence by pointing out, from a psychological viewpoint, the error of the liberals' ways. 'Guilty as charged,' will be the response of the liberals.

If the liberals have put on the full armor of Satan, how can we defend ourselves against their onslaught? St. Paul gives us the answer: when he advises us – no, that is too tepid – he passionately urges us to put on the full armor of Christ in our war against the devil. This is a religious war we are engaged in. It is not a friendly debate. The liberals have thrown off their masks of civility and compassion and revealed themselves in all their satanic fury, just as Maleficent threw off her outward façade of a woman in order to become a dragon, but still the conservatives and the neos debate and discuss, looking for the one magic formula that will make the liberals see reason. Never, never, never will the liberals see reason. The liberals will use reason to support what they do see — they see paradise before their eyes, a paradise diametrically opposed to Christ's divine charity, a paradise of colored heathens and sexual perverts in which human beings become an inhuman aggregate herd presided over by the archangel Satan. Have we already reached that 'paradise'? Not quite, but we are close to it. "It will come, humanity must persevere on itself like monsters from the deep!"

Let us go back some 200 years to a small town in the Southern United States. And let us say that there are two speakers scheduled to debate at the town hall. They are debating whether the town should build a new building for orphans or to simply allocate enough money for repairs to the old building. The two speakers can debate that subject, because they are meeting to debate within a moral consensus of a Christian people — orphans must be provided for. In the absence of a moral consensus there can be no debate. If one speaker comes to that debate with a predetermined belief that all orphans should be killed in order to rid society of the cost of caring for them, he would be outside the moral parameters of Christendom. A Christian could not debate with him.

When I was a young man, I had a subscription to *National Review*. I cancelled that subscription when *National Review* put out a headline that read, "Abortion: A Spirited Debate." I sent an angry letter when I cancelled the subscription, asking the editors what they were conserving if it was not Christian civilization. And what could be more basic and fundamental to a Christian civilization than the protection of life in the womb? The reply of the editors was that I shouldn't get upset over minor issues. Enough said.

When a Tucker Carlson-type of conservative debates a feminist, a 'black lives matter' advocate, or a radical Moslem, he always wins the debate. He wins the debate if debates are won by who makes the best argument, but when there is no moral consensus between the debaters, the victor is always the amoral debater who understands that debates are only subterfuges for his satanic agenda. A Christian cannot debate a man or woman who wants to destroy every white Christian on the face of the earth. That is ludicrous. The classical liberals, the conservatives, are still debating — and a protest is a form of debate — with the mad-dog liberals, because they do not worship God in spirit and truth. They, unlike the mad-dog liberals, still respect the old ethos of Christian civilization. They believe in civility, compassion, and fair-mindedness, but they do not see the whole Christian vision. If they did, they would not treat Satanists as their friendly debating partners; they would see the mad-dog liberals for what they are — moral pariahs who can only be dealt with on the battlefield.

When our Lord told us to be as wise as serpents and as gentle as doves, I think he was referring to our relationships with the possessed — the liberals. They use debates and protests as subterfuges to disguise their real agenda, which is an outright war against the white, Christ-bearing race. Not so with the classical liberals. They sincerely believe that debates and protest movements are an end in and of themselves.

Edgar is at the mercy of his demonic brother when he is "so far from doing harms that he suspects none." But when suffering deepens his vision of existence, he comes to realize that mere goodness is not enough. One must passionately hate evil and be prepared to fight evil to the death. And that is what he does, and so shall we when we see existence with the heart of the antique Europeans rather than the mind of the classical liberals. And if we don't see with their heart? Then we will debate with the liberals until they stop all debates, and we will die without ever having spent one moment in the light.+

Armed with Cruel Hate

October 7, 2017

Categories: Grazers, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism, Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Charles Dickens



This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. —2 Timothy 3: 1-7

After the Antifa threat and the subsequent Antifa massacre in Las Vegas, a woman of my acquaintance, a white grazer, asked me what I thought of the Antifaers. When I told her they were possessed by the devil and were hell-bent (pun intended) on destroying the white Christ-bearing race, she was very disturbed. I hadn't told her what she wanted to hear. It is very unsettling to think that one has an enemy who cannot be appeased by anything less than your heart's blood. But what is the use of lying to ourselves? Isn't it crystal clear now? It wasn't crystal clear to that woman, and it isn't crystal clear to the rest of the white grazers.

Satan had to morally anesthetize the white race before he could work his will upon them. And he has done that quite well. Whenever the colored heathens or the Jacobins, which is what the Antifaers are, commit atrocities, the white grazers instinctively (such instincts have now been bred in their bones) look for the white provocation of the violence: "We have not gotten the blacks jobs," or, "Trump is too confrontational." It is always something the white man has done that causes violence, because, as church, state, and academia tell us, the white man is evil. And although this makes the white grazer somewhat uncomfortable, he accepts the theology of the white man's responsibility for the evil that men do. He accepts it, because he respects the moral authority of his leaders in church and state, and he accepts it because he would rather think that the bloodletting can be halted by appeasement than face the fact that he has an enemy that cannot be appeased, because that enemy is driven by a satanic hatred for the white race.

In the old Christian hymn, "[A Mighty Fortress Is Our God](#)," we are told that our enemy is "armed with cruel hate." It's curious, now that Satan has become so visible through the works of his minions, that modern Europeans thoroughly reject the notion that Satan prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. But then again maybe it is not so curious. Since Christ has become less visible in the works of His people, wasn't it inevitable that men would redefine and rehabilitate the devil? Christ has been demythologized, and so has the devil.

I doubt there is a single mad-dog liberal (they call themselves Antifa) who believes in the devil. But the devil does not want their belief. If they truly believed in his existence they might come to believe in Christ. What the devil wants is the liberals' compliance with his will. And he has that. What is the devil's will? To attack God by destroying His people. His great frustration is that he must work through humanity to strike at God. The great hater of mankind, the archangel who spits on the God-man and the image of God in man, must work through human beings in order to obtain his will. So must our Lord work through human beings, but the divine condescension was not abhorrent to our Lord and Savior — He took flesh and dwelt among us. 'Tis not so with the devil. He does not move men's hearts with his sacrifice, he moves men's minds with his appeals to their pride and self-will. What will the Antifaers gain by the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race? What did Satan ultimately gain by his rejection of God? He gained hell and lost heaven. And that is what the Antifaers want. They want hell on earth. And when do they want it? They want it now. The liberals are like unto Lady Macbeth — the new generation no longer tries to disguise it: "Fill me from the crown to the toe top full of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood; stop up th' access and passage to remorse, that no compunctions visitings of nature, Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between th' Effect and it!"

The devil does not necessarily want the Antifaers to be so blatant. He can inspire them, he can fill them from crown to the toe top with direst cruelty, but he cannot personally take charge of their war against whites. Did he want the German Jacobins to say we'll bring you hell? Did he want the American Antifaers to say they were going to disrupt the nation by whatever means necessary? And did he want that Las Vegas shooter to kill all those white people? I don't know. If the white grazers are aroused by such bloodletting then the liberals have miscalculated. But it doesn't seem the grazers will be aroused. "It was the work of a mentally deranged person," the Satanists tell the white grazers. If the grazers accept that, and there is every indication that they have accepted that explanation, then the Antifaers have not made a blunder and Satan will step up the bloodletting. ([1](#))

The Las Vegas massacre represents a change in the liberals' conduct of the war. Hitherto the liberals have been content to kill by proxy, letting the colored heathen do their killing for them. But now they have stepped forward, and we should take note of the shift in tactics, because the white techno-barbarian brings a technological mind to his killing. He can kill with a much greater efficiency than the colored heathen. But why is the liberal so impatient? After all, the extermination of the white race was proceeding at a nice steady pace. The liberal can't wait because of his intense hatred. His hatred knows no bounds; the mere thought that there are white people still living and breathing the same air as their exalted liberal selves and the colored heathens fills the liberals with rage. They crave their bond, which is the blood of the white man.

The great advantage the Antifa liberals have over the white grazers is their passionate hatred. The grazers cannot defend themselves because they have been morally neutered; they are incapable of responding to the liberals' hatred with a passionate hatred of their own. But isn't it wrong to hate? No, it is not. We hate the devil and his minions, because we love Christ and His people. We must separate the hate that stems from love from the hatred that comes from vanity, envy, and pride. The man who doesn't hate those who attack his people and blaspheme against his God is no man at all. The liberals' hatred of the white race is grounded in their hatred of Christ. If we loved much we would hate the devil's minions and fight them with a passionate intensity greater than the liberals' passionate hatred. As it stands now, the white European has been enslaved by liberalism. His passivity before the enemy denotes a moral decline of epic proportions and serves as a tragic example of what happens to a man without a faith.

This New Year's Eve will mark the second anniversary of the rape of the women of Cologne. In the aftermath of those Moslem outrages I read the commentary of a female Danish reporter who deplored the lack of manhood among the German males who stood by and did nothing to stop the outrages. She wanted to see some chivalry in the German males, but she went on to say that she did not want to return to the repressive, sexist days of yore. She just wanted to see some manhood when Moslems attacked the liberated women of the 21st century. You can't have it both ways. Chivalry stems from a blood faith, a faith in Jesus Christ as true God and true man. It is not a faucet that can be turned off and on according to the whims of supermarket, intellectual Christians who want to pick and choose the Christian virtues that best serve their needs. That charity of honor which stems from a man's faith in Jesus Christ was bred in the bone of our European ancestors. You cannot systematically remove that faith and replace it with a bloodless faith in a synthesis of rationalism, paganism, and Christianity and expect to see

the same type of men and women who once existed in old Europe. European women no longer behave in a manner that inspires European men to be chivalrous, and European men no longer have that within which makes a man respond to the rage of the heathens with a passionate rage in defense of the innocent.

In Charles Dickens' novel *Little Dorrit*, Arthur Clemens runs afoul of the Circumlocution Office when he attempts to aid Little Dorrit and her family. The Circumlocution Office is a vast bureaucratic network that tells the British people how not to do things.

Because the Circumlocution Office went on mechanically, every day, keeping this wonderful, all-sufficient wheel of statesmanship, How not to do it, in motion. Because the Circumlocution Office was down upon any ill-advised public servant who was going to do it, or who appeared to be by any surprising accident in remote danger of doing it, with a minute, and a memorandum, and a letter of instructions that extinguished him. It was this spirit of national efficiency in the Circumlocution Office that had gradually led to its having something to do with everything. Mechanicians, natural philosophers, soldiers, sailors, petitioners, memorialists, people with grievances, people who wanted to prevent grievances, people who wanted to redress grievances, jobbing people, jobbed people, people who couldn't get rewarded for merit, and people who couldn't get punished for demerit, were all indiscriminately tucked up under the foolscap paper of the Circumlocution Office.

Numbers of people were lost in the Circumlocution Office. Unfortunates with wrongs, or with projects for the general welfare (and they had better have had wrongs at first, than have taken that bitter English recipe for certainly getting them), who in slow lapse of time and agony had passed safely through other public departments; who, according to rule, had been bullied in this, over-reached by that, and evaded by the other; got referred at last to the Circumlocution Office, and never reappeared in the light of day. Boards sat upon them, secretaries minuted upon them, commissioners gabbled about them, clerks registered, entered, checked, and ticked them off, and they melted away. In short, all the business of the country went through the Circumlocution Office, except the business that never came out of it; and its name was Legion.

The classical liberals are one big circumlocution network set up to tell whites how not to respond to the liberals' and colored barbarians' hatred of the white race. They must be cautious in their rhetoric, lest they inflame the mad-dog liberal (as if a mad-dog liberal is not already inflamed), and they must never insult, accuse, or act against any barbarian of color. In short the white man must learn how not to do anything about his own destruction. He must let be.

Do pagans love their own? Yes, to a certain degree they love their own. But did the pagans love their own with the passionate intensity of the Christian Europeans? No, they did not. The mark of the European during Europe's Christian centuries was the intensity of his love, which passed the understanding of the colored heathens. And now? The mark of the mad-dog liberal European is his hatred of his own, and the mark of the modern European everyman is his complete indifference to the rape, torture, and murder of his own people. It is intellectual Christianity that has brought Europeans to this pass. Edward Gibbon, the author of the epic historical work, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, was a convert to Roman Catholicism in his youth and then a convert to Calvinism. In both cases, his conversions were intellectual conversions. He looked at Christ with his mind's eye, not through the eyes of his heart. And when he came to write his history of Rome, he wrote with poetical fire about the pagan faiths, but when he wrote about Christianity he sounded like an accountant reading his ledger to his employer. The Rev. H. H. Milman responded to Gibbon's back-door assault on the Christian Europeans and their Lord and Savior.

Christianity alone receives no embellishment from the magic of Gibbon's language; his imagination is dead to its moral dignity; it is kept down by a general tone of jealous disparagement, or neutralised by a painfully elaborate exposition of its darker and degenerate periods. There are occasions, indeed, when its manifestly beneficial influence, can compel even him, as it were, to fairness and kindle his unguarded eloquence to its usual fervor; but in general he soon relapses into a frigid apathy; affects an ostentatiously severe impartiality; notes all the faults of Christians in every age with bitter and almost malignant sarcasm; reluctantly and with exception and reservation, admits their claim to admiration. This inextricable bias appears even to influence his manner of composition. While all the other assailants of the Roman empire, whether warlike or religious, the Goth, the Hun, the Arab, the Tartar, Alaric and Attila, Mohammed, and Zingis, and Tamerlane, are each introduced upon the scene almost with dramatic animation—their progress related in a full, complete, and unbroken narrative—the triumph of Christianity alone takes that form of a cold and critical disquisition. The successes of barbarous energy and brute force call forth all the consummate skill of composition, while the moral triumphs of Christian benevolence, the tranquil heroism of endurance, the blameless purity, the contempt of guilty fame and of honours destructive to the human race, which, had they assumed the proud name of philosophy, would have been blazoned in his brightest words, because they own religion as their principle, sink into narrow asceticism. The glories of Christianity, in short, touch on no chord in the heart of the writer; his imagination remains unkindled; his words, though they maintain their stately and measured march, have become cool, argumentative, and inanimate.

Is not Gibbon's cynicism the essence of the liberals' attack on Christ and the Christ-bearing race? Let me extend Rev. Milman's defense – It is Christ and Christ alone who can cure our moral blindness, the moral blindness that makes us indifferent to the suffering of our own people – "For judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind." What is the blindness of which Christ speaks? It is the blindness of those who do not see the moral beauty of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead. The European hearth fires of yore honored the Christ story, not as an intellectual construct, but as a living reality which animated their hearts. Classical liberalism has no answer to those who hate the white race with a passion fueled by Satan. But St. Paul does have an answer. The European men and women who circumcise their hearts will love their people in and through the Savior. That breed of Europeans, if there are any left, and that breed alone, will be able to defeat the liberals and the colored heathen. +

(1) It matters little whether the Vegas shooter was a convert to Islam or whether he considered himself part of the Antifa movement. His inspiration was the same in either case. His heart was poisoned against the white race, because he was one of Satan's minions. The Satanic, anti-white poison has entered the bloodstream of the anti-white liberals. Such creatures can only be conquered by white men who have hearts of flesh consecrated to our Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

The Bitter Fruits of Diversity

October 14, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Jacobinism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob



And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death. — *Revelations 6:8*

And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. — *Revelations 22: 12-13*

Dr. Seuss wrote a large number of great children's books from the 1930's through the 1950's. By the 1960's he had become radicalized and ceased to write great children's books, but the New Age liberals hate their own just as Robespierre hated all his fellow Jacobins. "No one is pure enough except me," is the credo of our modern Jacobins. Which is why a mural from Seuss's book *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street* was recently removed from *Amazing World of Dr. Seuss Museum* in Springfield, Massachusetts for perpetuating racial stereotypes (there is a Chinese boy in the book running with chopsticks). The demonizing of the white race is right and proper, but the stereotyping of the colored races is evil. Thus *The Song of the South* is banned in the United States because it depicts a good darkie who respects his white masters. The Belgian author of the wonderful *Tintin* books of the 1920's and 1930's later repudiated his book *Tintin in the Congo* because he was sorry that it perpetuated the true stereotype of ignorant, superstitious and bloodthirsty black men. His book is also banned in the United States and Europe. The list goes on and on. Nor have I mentioned all the appropriations of white culture by black barbarians. Most of Shakespeare's plays, when they are performed in the United States (which is not very often), feature black actors and actresses. Dickens' *Christmas Carol* features a black Ebenezer Scrooge, and the new musical group *Black Violin* celebrates the fact that there are black violinists. But wait – aren't whites supposed to be totally evil? Why then do blacks want to appropriate their culture? I'll tell you why. Because nothing of any value has ever come from the colored cultures and nothing of any value has ever come from our modern liberal culture. And that is why Satan is a modernist: he supports the synthesis of colored barbarism and modern liberalism, because the two entities, when joined together, constitute hell on earth.

White people should tell the blacks that if they hate us so much — and we must conclude that they do judging by their words and actions — then they should stay away from whites and have nothing to do with them. Let us live out our lives deprived of diversity. Let us have cities that are white and hospitable, parks that are safe to walk and recreate in, concerts, plays, and movies that are negro-free, and let us have it immediately. It will be a great hardship, but we will try to suffer through life without the negro.

But of course we cannot have life without the negro. And why is that? The white man was certainly better off when he lived apart from negroes, and the negro was better off when he was segregated from the white man. Then the white man could sustain his own civilization and materially and spiritually aid the black man. It's ironic — only the so-called racist societies such as segregated South Africa and the pre-Civil War South ever aided the black man. And they aided him by maintaining their own race and civilization and making their aid to the black man conditional — he had to adhere, at least outwardly, to the ethos of white civilization.

Do the Atticus Finch liberals, who have made the black man a god, really care about the black man? Of course they don't. They need a god, a suffering servant, that they can sacrifice for and to. And they have chosen the black, noble savage. They will cling to their savage gods with all their heart and soul, but will they die for them? They hope it will not come to that. They want the racist whites, thee and me, to die for the black gods. After all, someone besides the liberals, who have gone beyond whiteness, must die in atonement for the original sin, which is the sin of whiteness.

We have now reached a new level of white-hating. The conservatives, who are the classical liberals, were tried and convicted of racism decades ago. But now the Jacobins are preying on each other. Liberals are condemning other liberals. Isn't that terrible? Maybe the liberals will kill each other off in one big Antifa rally. 'Tis a consummation devoutly to be wished, but I don't think we will be rid of the liberals that easily.

I do not follow current events that closely, because I know, like Melville's Bartleby, where I am. I live in the kingdom of hell on earth. I live where what is good and decent is spit on and what is evil and vile is lauded and applauded. And all that is good and decent stems from the people, the antique Europeans, who are constantly being denounced, by conservatives and liberals, as the most evil people that ever walked the face of the earth. So why should I listen to them, the liberals and the conservatives, spew their venom on my honored dead who are not alive to defend themselves? And they are never defended by anyone in public life. Conservatives will defend themselves against charges of racism by denouncing the antique Europeans. "Conservatism is about ideas, it has nothing to do with race." Oh really? From whence comes our "idea" of God incarnate? Does it come from a particular people with hearts of flesh who gave Christ a place by their racial hearth fire, or from the airy nothingness of the cosmos where all ideas dwell in limbo without a local habitation in the human heart? The conservatives' religion is called Gnosticism, and their liberal brethren have gotten the better of them by adding the negro into the mix, in order to give their Gnosticism an earthly home.

I play a game with my cat in which we simulate the reality of the jungle. I throw a rolled up sock around the living room and he "attacks" the sock. But he doesn't actually catch the sock. He runs by it and gives it a wave with his paw. But he thinks he has won. In his cat's mind he has beaten the evil sock. Of course I perpetuate his fantasy by telling him he is a good boy for conquering the bad sock. The conservatives play a similar game with the liberals. But the conservatives are not as cute as my cat nor do I have an urge to applaud them at the conclusion of the game, because the conservatives play a deadly game with the liberals, a game that leaves white people naked to the enemy.

The game goes like this — picture the generic talk show format. There is a conservative commentator and a liberal guest. The conservative very politely points out the error of the liberals' position. Pick whatever issue you want, it doesn't matter because the liberals' response will always be the same: "You are a racist." Now the debate shifts to the "conservative's" defense. He outlines all the reasons why he is not racist — he is not against immigration, he is just against uncontrolled immigration. He totally abhors segregation in any form. He condemns the racism of the white race prior to the 1960's, he condemns the South African whites, and on, and on, he goes. Like my cat, he thinks he has won the game even though he has actually achieved nothing. He has not made a dent in the liberal's armor. The liberal just sits there with a smug look on his face while Mr. Conservative goes through his litany of why he is not a racist. At the conclusion of the litany, the liberal repeats his charge of racism. The conservative thinks he has won, but in reality the liberal has won — the charge of racism has won the day.

for the liberal. No white man can win a debate with a liberal when he accepts the liberals' terms of engagement, because the liberals have already predetermined the results of every debate. The white man is racist, and white racism (not black racism) is the unpardonable sin.

Some years back I mentioned to a Roman Catholic priest of my acquaintance that I was taking a few days off to visit my parents who had retired to a little house by the sea. The priest immediately asked me if there were any blacks residing in that town by the sea. When I told him that there were not, he acted like he had won some kind of contest. I went away from the priest with the distinct impression that he thought my parents were in a state of mortal sin for choosing to retire to a town that was not – Horror of Horrors! – racially diverse. And of course I was in mortal sin as well for wanting to visit my parents in that non-diverse town by the sea.

The conservatives' rhetoric is just empty rhetoric because the conservatives accept the liberals' theology – white racism is evil. But what is white racism? White racism is white pietas, it is loving one's own kith and kin in and through the God-Man, Jesus Christ. It does not consist of the hatred of individual human beings, especially one's own kind, under the auspices of a universalist, Gnostic love of an aggregate herd of colored heathens. So long as the conservatives see existence through the eyes of the mad-dog liberals, who see the negro as the Alpha and Omega of existence, there will be no white counter-attack against the liberal leviathan.

The United States is not a city built on a hill pointing upward to heaven. It is a city built in the midst of the valley of the shadow of death. Negro worship is the worship of Satan. And from that worship stems every other evil under the sun – sexual Babylon, feminism, legalized abortion, and legalized sodomy are the result of the European people's shift from the worship of Christ to the worship of Satan through the medium of the noble black savage. "Our father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name..." has been replaced by, "Our sacred negroes, who art the gods of Liberaldom, hallowed be thy name, thy kingdom come, thy will be done in this our kingdom of mother earth." There now is no heavenly Father, there is the negro, who presides over hell on earth. Is this civilization what we want to conserve? Does it matter one jot who gets elected in a nation consecrated to the sacred negro?

The Christ-bearing people must break the mind-forged chains of negro worship or they will be consumed by the enemy of mankind, who never gives quarter to his enemies. "Diversity, diversity!" the liberals cry – "You must become diverse!" But what is diversity? It is the blending of the white Christ-bearing race with Satan. And that blending has resulted in an equality of sorts. We have come to an equality of Satanism:

African fitness in the realms of the Gruesome and the Grisly is however very well testified. The witchcraft practiced by Lord Graham's ancestors was nothing compared with the witchcraft practised by Savanhu's contemporaries. Even the witches of Macbeth were literally pallid amateurs compared with average twentieth-century African witches. A casual little news item informed us, for instance, that in the Gwaai Reserve a female witchdoctor cut the body of a still-born infant in half, cooked the top half and, together with her sister, ate it. It transpired that the mother of the infant had been severely and repeatedly beaten by her husband, and had gone to the witchdoctor asking for a love potion. To obtain the ingredients for the potion, the mother, who was pregnant, was given something to cause an abortion. And the witchdoctor and her sister made a meal of what was left. –White Man, Think Again! by A. Jacob

Hasn't the white man duplicated that African demonism with legalized abortion? We can't live as a diverse people, because we cannot live in hell, we can only surfeit and die there. St. John warned us in the *Book of Revelation* of the dangers of blending Christ with the principalities and powers of this world only. That blending is called hell. Everything good and noble comes from non-diverse Europe. If we do not hold on to that essential truth and make it our all in all, we will lose our hope for heaven in the next world, and we will live in the hell of Liberaldom in this world. +

The Day Is Far Spent

October 21, 2017

Categories: Christ the Hero, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Johanna Spyri



And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? —Luke 24: 30-32

If white Americans were taking a knee in defiance of the United Negro States of America, I would be all for it. But since taking a knee has become a protest against ‘racism’ I am against those who take a knee – although I do hope they keep it up because it has actually stirred up some life in a small minority of white grazers. What about the German sport team (10 out of 11 were white) who took a knee in solidarity with the American blacks? If I had a ‘hard-guy’ blog I would insult the Germans’ manhood, but not having a hard-guy blog, I will simply make a confession. Like Wilson Micawber who was “hourly” expecting something to “turn up” I have always held out hope that the Germans, the most maligned of the much maligned race of Europeans, would be the first white nation to fight back against liberalism. And when I say ‘fight back’ I mean real fighting — I do not refer to voting. I based my hope on the Germans’ past history. They defied Roman universalism twice. In both instances they opposed the synthesis of Christianity and paganism in the name of Christ, who is not a God that can be synthesized with any other gods. But in their third defiance, the Third Reich, they did not defy the world in the name of Christ. There was no noble declaration of “Here I stand, God help me.” There was only the ignoble machinations of a cabal of techno-barbarians led by a pathetic neo-pagan vastly inferior to the real Roman pagans. Maybe that is why the German people cannot oppose liberalism now. In their recent past they have only Hitler to inspire them, and he is very uninspiring, which brings us to the central point: If Christ is not the lodestar of Europe, who or what shall be the lodestar? The German people are in the same sinking boat as the rest of the European people. It was foolish of me to expect them to be the ones to take up arms against liberalism.

In Eugene O’Neill’s play *Hughie* he depicts a night clerk who simply waits. Waits for what? He doesn’t know. Becket picks up the same theme in *Waiting for Godot*. Has the expectation of Christ’s imminent return that we see in the early Christian church become a bitter, desperate, existential cry of despair in modern Europe? Certainly it has. We now have life without hope and without charity, because we have lost faith in Christ. It seems to us that He broke his word; He did not return to set things right. Despair can spread like wildfire. We, the European people, have fled to nature and nature’s god, the noble savage, to ease our pain. We are sick unto death from waiting for Christ’s return.

Every Christian who has come to believe in the risen Lord must feel as the apostles felt who encountered Christ on the road to Emmaus: “Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” He does stay with them at the inn, but eventually He must leave them, but not before He opens up their hearts to the truth. He set their hearts on fire. Is not that our comfort in this world? Where does the Holy Ghost, our comforter, reside if not in the human heart? Our European ancestors did not turn from Christ in despair and embrace science as the new Holy Ghost, because they had hearts of flesh. Once the cord binding the human heart to His divinely human heart is severed there can be no faith. We are forced back upon our intellects, which are reeds for every ill wind that blows.

The Nicolaitanes that Christ condemns in the *Book of Revelations* were professed Christians. But they thought that their adherence to an intellectual system absolved them from sin. When only the intellect is involved in our relationship with Christ we lose the intimacy that St. Paul spoke of – “Christ in man and man in Christ.” Men and women striving for such an intimacy do not, because they are mortal, achieve perfection, but they do create societies that sustain faith, hope, and charity, in contrast to the Nicolaitane societies in which men and women follow the logic of ‘man’s intellect is God’ pushed to its logical conclusion.

The classical liberals do not believe that the mad-dog liberals will actually act upon their belief in the goodness and purity of the sacred negro. “Rational people will not destroy every last remnant of European culture and kill every last white person — that simply defies belief.” But it is happening. Picture a large forest of trees that you think no rational man would want to destroy. When a group of people come along and tell you that for hate’s sake they are going to destroy the forest, you refuse to believe them. But then one tree after another is cut down, and still you refuse to believe in the evil intentions of the Jacobin tree cutters. The destruction of the first set of trees is easily explained. “Those trees were rotten (racist) – they had to be cut down,” is the classical liberal’s reaction. And when more trees are cut down? Again, the classical liberal finds a reason to excuse the great destroyers of the forest. “Those trees also were rotten – we were better off without them.” Eventually the entire forest will be destroyed as the classical liberals blather on into the night about the goodness of the destroyers and the evil of the European forest.

What will be left of Europe if the liberals are allowed to follow the logic of their faith in nature and nature’s god? Nothing will be left. No art work from old Europe will survive. No language stemming from old Europe will survive – the inhabitants of the new Europe will speak Arabic, Swahili, and Pig Latin or some other primitive mumbo jumbo, but they will not speak any of the European languages. Why should they? Why should the pure and innocent children of nature speak the language of the evil ones? The final solution is coming: Why should the evil ones exist at all?

All that is anti-European — be it Islam, feminism, or communism — comes to us through the worship of the negro. The negro is the savior in the Satanic religion of the Nicolaitanes of Liberaldom. Their holy father is their own intellect, and they bid us reject the comforter who dwells in the human heart for their new comforter, which is science. We have left the road to Emmaus where the risen Lord walked with us and followed the negro back to the darkness of Babylon. Whenever a classical liberal opposes one of the -isms of modernity, he does so in the name of the negro. “I oppose the Islamic invasion of my nation, but I am not a racist, I have many friends who are black...” That type of opposition to liberalism is not an opposition. You must reject the liberals’ savior and embrace the true Savior if you are ever going to make any headway against the principalities and powers of this world only.

Miss Havisham in Dickens’ novel *Great Expectations* feels that she has been wronged by humanity in general and the male sex in particular. So she adopts a little girl and by controlling every aspect of her existence teaches her to hate humanity in general and the male sex in particular. The liberals, under the influence of Satan, took the part of Miss Havisham. They made Satan’s hatred of God their own and began to fashion a world based on that hatred. “Why is there suffering?” and “Why, if He is the Christ, hasn’t He returned?” All these questions and more, Satan whispered into the liberals’ ears. And they listened. “Take my hand,” says Satan, and they do. Can’t the liberals feel the reptilian coldness of that hand? No, they can’t, because they have been morally anesthetized. They believe in the kingdom they have created, a kingdom without love, faith, hope, honor, or charity. All is dark and deadly in Liberaldom; it is a

kingdom of everlasting night. The conservative seeks to make a place for himself within that kingdom. Never! Nothing human can survive in a world consecrated to the devil through the negro.

How can the light shine when all the channels of God's grace have been blocked? The liberals have not only killed their own hearts, they have also banished from their hell on earth all genuine sentiments springing from the human heart. All our "mysterious human relationships" that enable us to know the Savior are proscribed in Liberaldom. The unbought grace of life that Edmund Burke spoke of has been destroyed by the liberals. Of what did that grace consist? It was not something esoteric, it was not an intellectual thing, it was the simple humanity that came from the hearth fires of white people who took Christ into their hearts and their homes. We have lost the strength and fire that comes from charity, because we have broken the human links to God. Johanna Spyri writes about those human links in her magnificent novel *Heidi*:

Heidi ran out and brought back the old hymn book. Then she found one beautiful song after another, for she knew them well now, and enjoyed them herself, and it was many days since she had heard all the verses she was so fond of.

The grandmother lay with folded hands and on her face, which at first had looked so troubled, now rested a happy smile, as if a great good fortune had come to her.

Suddenly Heidi stopped.

"Grandmother, are you well again already?"

"I'm feeling much better, Heidi. What you have read to me has done me good. Finish it, will you?"

The child read the hymn to the end, and when she came to the last words,—

*"When mine eyes grow dimmer, sadder,
Pour thy light into my heart,
That I may pass over gladder
Than men to their homes depart,"—*

The grandmother repeated them over and over, and an expression of very joyful expectation came over her face. Heidi felt so happy to see it. All the sunny day of her journey home rose before her, and she exclaimed with delight: —

"Grandmother, I know already how it seems to be on the way home."

The grandmother did not answer, but she had heard the words perfectly, and the expression which had pleased Heidi remained on her face.

After a while the child said:—

"It is growing dark now, grandmother; I must go back; but I am so glad that you are happy again."

The grandmother took the child's hand in hers and held it fast; then she said:—

"Yes, I am so happy again; if I must stay lying here, I am content. You see, nobody who has not been through it knows what it is to have to lie for days and days all alone, and not hear a word from another human being, and not be able to see—not see even a single sunbeam. Then such gloomy thoughts come to one that it often seems as if it never could be bright again and one could not bear it any longer. But when I hear the words which you have read to me, it is as if a light arose in my heart, and that makes me happy again."

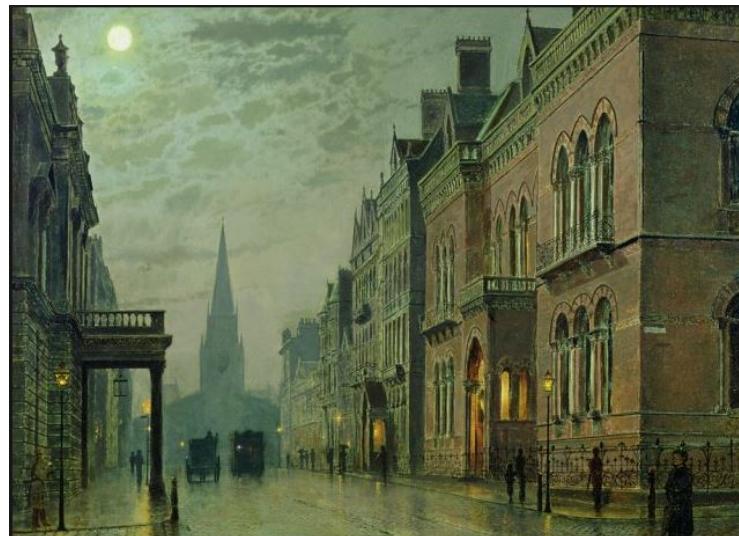
I know that *Heidi* is deemed a sentimental relic of a racist, sexist era by our learned liberal pundits, but there is genuine sentiment, as distinct from sentimentality, in *Heidi*. We are not told to cry over the alleged sins of the white man and the sufferings of the noble black savage in *Heidi*. Instead we are told to love our own in and through our Savior. The blind grandmother in *Heidi* sees more than we see. She sees, through Heidi, the living God, while we lie in the darkness of Liberaldom. The drunken, half-crazed Welshman, Dylan Thomas, got the rage right, but his rage was without hope. We also shall rage against the dying of the light, but not without the hope that is within us – Please God, in the darkness of Liberaldom, "Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent." +

This Will Ever Be the European Story

October 28, 2017

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide, Young Drummer

Tags: Brothers Grimm, Charles Dickens, Rudyard Kipling



A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with the lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. —*The Mystery of Edwin Drood* by Charles Dickens

A friend once asked me upon what five books, if I were limited to five, would I build my library. When he gave me permission to list complete works as one book, I gave him my answer:

1. King James Version of the Bible
2. Shakespeare – the complete works
3. Sir Walter Scott – the complete works
4. Dickens – the complete works
5. The Brothers Grimm – the complete works

Of course there is no reason to confine yourself to just five books unless you have a friend who likes to play the ‘five books game’. Actually my friend was generous – it’s usually just two books that you’re allowed on the desert island.

It is to the fifth book that I want to turn right now, because there is a story in *Grimm’s Fairy Tales* about a [Young Drummer](#) who climbs a glass mountain, a glass mountain that was supposed to be impossible to climb, in order to rescue a fair maiden. I have not talked to the Young Drummer for eight years, giving rise to [a rumor](#) that the Young Drummer has left us. He has not; I have just been negligent. Perhaps I have let the spiritual rot of modernity beat me down, rendering me incapable of speaking with a truly integral man from the heart of sacred, fairytale Europe. Let me try to rectify my negligence.

CWNY: It’s been a few years since I’ve spoken to you.

Young Drummer: It’s been more than a few.

CWNY: I apologize.

YD: There’s no need to apologize. Friends don’t always have to speak to each other. We are eternally bound to each other through our love for eternal Europe, and through that bond we are eternally bound to Him.

CWNY: The liberals don’t want us to be connected to His Europe.

YD: No, they don’t. Once a man, a European man, feels connected to the antique Europeans in spirit, blood, and faith, he will become the most feared and hated man in Liberaldom; he will become an integral man, a Christian European.

CWNY: But it hasn’t happened. The European people have cut themselves off from their Christian ancestors.

YD: Yes, they have. We are in the end times — there is no use lying to ourselves about that.

CWNY: Although we know neither the day nor the hour.

YD: Of course not. The end times could last hundreds of years, but we must judge our times by the Scriptures. When all the heresies, blasphemies, and perversions that have ever plagued the human race are synthesized into one organized system, and when the powers that be in church and state support that system, then we can say unequivocally that we are in the end times.

CWNY: Let’s be clear about the ‘system.’

YD: All right, the system is called liberalism. No one ever defines that system as a system. There are people who criticize certain aspects of liberalism, but there are no Europeans who criticize the whole liberal system. Europeans have become addicted to the dialectic approach to existence, which has left them doomed to wallow in the superficialities of life without ever reaching the rhetorical center of existence.

CWNY: By the rhetorical center, you mean the human heart?

YD: Yes. In the beginning was the Word. If Christ’s words do not take flesh in the human heart, they become grist for the ‘smart ones’ — the philosophers, theologians, sociologists, psychiatrists, and scientists. What they do with the words of our Lord cries out to heaven for vengeance. Their blasphemies make a man want to rise and ride against Liberaldom.

CWNY: Yes, they do. But at the risk of appearing like a prisoner of the dialectic I must say something about the romance of going into battle against the liberal leviathans. You are a kind of Melchizedek figure — “Without father, without mother, without beginning of days, nor end of life.” Can a mere mortal like myself really rise and ride against the liberals?

YD: Yes, you can and you must. Taking up arms against the liberals and their minions does not exclude the military option, but it also consists of something more. You might never get the opportunity to meet the enemy on the battlefield, but you should see yourself as permanently at war with the liberals and their colored gods. Even if the whole world worships at the altars of the liberals’ heathen gods you must not do so. The refusal to worship the liberals’ gods is the white Christian’s first duty. From that refusal everything else of consequence follows. You will protect your children from the liberals’ ideology, and you will attack the liberals through whatever means are at your disposal. There is an unremitting war going on with Satan, the liberals, and the colored heathens on one side, and the white Europeans on the other side. It is only the white Christian Europeans who are fighting, but Satan is attacking the entire white race. He doesn’t spare the white grazers, because he is always afraid that something might arouse them. It’s better to simply kill them off to make sure.

CWNY: There is a certain logic to that strategy, a satanic logic without a doubt, but it is logical, if you hate humanity, to exterminate the one race that became fully human through their faith in the divine humanity of Jesus Christ.

YD: Yes, and there is only one way to know the Savior – through the charity that begins at home, where the mysterious human relationships we develop with the people of our racial hearth fire come to fruition, unless stamped out by the liberals in church and state. Kill that flesh and blood conduit to God and you have isolated man from God.

CWNY: Yes, and that is what has happened to the European people. They have left their racial hearth fire to go whoring after the liberals’ heathen gods.

I like Kipling, but I must disagree with the third and fourth lines of the last stanza of the poem “If”:

*If neither foes nor loving friends can hurt you,
If all men count with you, but none too much:*

If we followed that advice we wouldn’t have hearts of flesh. Of course my loving friends can hurt me. The only way to avoid such hurt is to form no deep attachments as the Buddhists and the Thomists recommend. And of course some men do count with me more than mere rationalism deems acceptable.

YD: Kipling’s “If” does not represent the pinnacle of his work.

CWNY: No, it doesn’t. His magnificent story, “[The Gardener](#),” captures the heart of the man.

YD: Yes. Kipling was a man of heart. When taken for all and all he was one of us, he belongs to eternal Europe, because he championed the little things, such as the love of kith and kin, that lead us to God.

Very few people ask my advice any more, but if they did I would advise them to eschew the big theories of life and stay with the little things that come from a devotion to the European hearth fire.

CWNY: Like Ratty and his River?

YD: Yes, that’s it. The great destroyers, the intellectual Christians and their secular counterparts, all act like they have discovered a very great secret that is so completely and utterly magnificent and profound that it will make all mankind happy beyond measure if they would just follow the liberals. But when we look closely at the liberals’ great secret we see that the emperor has no clothes. This utterly new and magnificent secret is a very old thing, it is paganism. The worship of the noble black savage is not new, it is just another variation of the worship of Baal. Christ asks: “When the Son of Man returns, will He find faith on earth?” He will not find faith on earth if the Europeans do not reject liberalism in its entirety. You can’t have just a little bit of liberalism. At the heart and center of liberalism is negro worship. If you kill that heart, all the tentacles that are strangling the European people will cease to strangle them. But if you fail to strike at the heart of the liberal leviathan, everything you do will be useless. Unless the blood of our ancestors — for I too am a European — once again becomes part of the Europeans’ soul, their sickness will be a sickness unto death. It must be all or nothing. Either the fairy tale of our Lord and Savior is true or it is not. If it is not true, then we are of all men most to be pitied and scorned. But I say it is true, so why should any man, a European man, stand on the wrong side of the Christian-liberal divide? I’ve said enough.

The mad-dog liberals hate the antique Europeans. They will not cease from mental fight until they have eradicated every last vestige of their glorious culture and killed every white European who is even remotely connected to those people from long ago. The conservatives tell us not to bother about the antique Europeans; they bid us look to their brains and their systems. ‘After all,’ they tell us, in imitation of Claudio’s reproach of Hamlet, ‘it is wrong to obsess on the dead.’ But ‘the dead’ are not dead to me. They represent all that is truly alive. When I go through the works of Shakespeare, Scott, or Dickens, I feel that I know those authors intimately, and I am drawn to their Europe peopled with men and women who live in the shadow of the cross. Some reject the blessed Savior, and some turn to Him, but they all know who founded Europe. Isn’t that more than Gibbon or any of the other classical liberal ‘thinkers,’ living or dead, ever comprehended? We are not born of pagan Greece or pagan Rome, we are born of Christian Europe. It’s not possible for a European to abandon His Europe and still retain his humanity. A European who decides to reside, body and soul, in Liberaldom becomes an Unman who has sold his eternal jewel for the false paradise promised him by the weird sisters of Liberaldom.

The modern European man stood upon the heath and accepted the devil’s bargain. We few, the least and the last of the European faithful, have returned to that tempest-tossed heath in order to hurl our defiance at the weird sisters: “We refuse to be part of Liberaldom. Return to hell and tell your master that the people of our house shall serve the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. This shall ever be our story – we are characters in the great European fairy tale that concludes with the resurrection of the dead and the life everlasting. There is no other story like the Europeans’ story. Why should we look for another story or another author?” +

The Institutionalized Tragedy of Liberalism

November 4, 2017

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Lear. And my poor fool is hang'd! No, no, no life!
Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,
And thou no breath at all? Thou'lt come no more,
Never, never, never, never!
Pray you, undo this button. Thank you sir.
Do you see this? Look on her, look, her lips,
Look there, look there!

-King Lear

Thou art the grave where buried love doth live... – Wm. Shakespeare

The fool, who is no fool, in *King Lear* bravely tries to keep Lear in good spirits despite the fact that misfortune has fallen upon Lear. But there is a limit. After Lear is cast out by his two daughters and left bereft of everything, including his wits, the fool has nothing left to say.

Lear. Make no noise, make no noise; draw the curtains; so, so, so. We'll go to supper i' th' morning.

Fool. And I'll go to bed at noon.

Those are the last words of Lear's fool. And he, like Cordelia, is eventually executed.

If we segue to Tennyson's *Idylls of the King* we meet another fool. Remember the last tournament? Arthur watches his Christian knights defeat the heathen knights, but in defeating them they break every rule of chivalry. Arthur returns to his chamber:

*So all the ways were safe from shore to shore,
But in the heart of Arthur pain was lord.*

And when Arthur returns to his chamber, he hears a voice at his feet:

*A voice clung sobbing till he question'd it,
'What art thou?' and the voice about his feet
Sent up an answer, sobbing, 'I am thy fool,
And I shall never make thee smile again.'*

It was the fool's purpose in the royal courts of olden times to help the king to keep his perspective. When the king was sad, the fool tried to make him merry, and when the king was too enthusiastically happy when he should have been more tempered, it was the fool's function to dampen, with humor, the king's enthusiasm. It was no easy job as Viola, the heroine of Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*, observes:

*This fellow is wise enough to play the fool,
And to do that well craves a kind of wit.
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,
The quality of persons, and the time,
And, like the haggard, check at every feather
That comes before his eye. This is a practice
As full of labour as a wise man's art;
For folly that he wisely shows is fit.
But wise men, folly-fall'n, quite taint their wit.*

Feste, the fool in *Twelfth Night*, continues to play the fool throughout the length of the play. He is even given the last word. That is because *Twelfth Night* is a comedy, and in comedy, the proper order of existence often teeters on the brink of destruction, but things are set right by the end. In such societies the fool's place is secure. But when the proper order of things has been overthrown, when "all is cheerless, dark and deadly," the fool cannot function. In Lear's kingdom and Arthur's kingdom the evil one's presence is too pervasive to permit the type of restorative humor that a good court jester can provide. The type of court jesters who bid us laugh at our foibles and put things in perspective depend on a society that has the proper

perspective. In a society that has institutionalized Satanism there can be only jeering mockery of all things decent and honorable – and when all things decent and honorable are mocked, tragedy becomes institutionalized. Public ceremonies are tragic because they celebrate Satanism, and all of the daily activities of life plunge a man into the maelstrom of a society pulling him toward hell. The high comedy of court jesters such as Wodehouse and Feste comes to an end, and foul, loathsome, sneering, mocking ‘comedians’ such as the Monty Python group comes to the forefront.

Every regime, even a satanic regime, has its jesters. But a satanic regime uses jesters to ensure that there is no high humor, humor that elevates the soul. There must only be mocking, jeering humor that is supportive of the almighty satanic state. One must either face the fact that one lives in a kingdom of tragedy where “humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep,” or else a man must take the opiates of modernity and proclaim that he loves the modern negroid states of Europe and is a very happy man. If we face the reality of modernity, we will not be dancing in the streets, we will have no kindly fools to ease the pain of existence, because institutionalized liberalism is institutionalized tragedy that kills the good fools; but we will still have souls. If we take the path of spiritual anesthesia, we might be superficially happier than the non-anesthetized, but we will lose our souls.

I don’t meet many non-anesthetized whites. Most of the grazers are on some type of opiate – whether it is ‘American Legion’ patriotism, sports, or clerical-sponsored intellectual Christianity. The reason for the high preponderance of anesthetized whites is simple. In order to survive economically in our society, a man must adjust to the customs, manners, and rhythms of our society. You will suffer economically and may be in peril of your life if you don’t adjust to society. But should we try to adjust to Satandom? “Of course we shouldn’t,” is the grazer’s reply, “but we do not live in Satandom.” Then the grazer tells you why we do not live in Satandom. His answer usually centers on the fact that we live in a democracy and/or we have a lot of churches. But why is the reign of Satan a good thing so long as he reigns in the name of the democratic process in church and state?

There has never been a more successful totalitarian society than the United Negro States of America. And the various European states are not far behind the United States. It appears that countries like Britain, France, and Germany are heading to oblivion at a faster rate than the United States, but that is because the United States’ geographical mass has slowed down the process of destruction. But it will come, because the United States is the ideological leader of the new Satandom.

If the liberals were not religious zealots they would see that they have won the war. They have institutionalized all the dystopian dreams of their liberal Jacobin forefathers. The noble savage is worshipped, the slaughter of the innocents is a sacred right, and sodomy has been normalized. All those perversions and more have become part of the fabric of our culture. But still the liberal heathens rage. They act as if they are a disenfranchised minority fighting against some omnipotent fascist enemy. The Antifa forces declared this Saturday, November 4th, as their day of reckoning. Who are they challenging? Their values are the state’s values. Who is resisting them?

The liberals will never be satisfied because Satan is never satisfied, and they are driven by the same hatred that drives Satan. Burke identified the liberals’ one overriding passion in his *Letters on a Regicide Peace*:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength. He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

The liberals can never cease their fight so long as white people exist, because it was white people who created an ‘image of God’ culture. A grazer who supports the liberals’ wars, who supports the liberals’ police force, and pays proper homage to the sacred negro might survive for a little longer than a white who does not pay homage to the liberal state, but in the end, the white grazer will be taken from his pasture and executed in the great liberal slaughter house. All of white humanity must perish because all of white humanity was once connected to eternal Europe, which, through a glass darkly, reflected the divine image of Christ the Lord.

Let us look at Shakespeare’s complete works as a chronicle of existence as seen through the eyes of a Christian European. The comedies give us an image of our Lord’s house of many mansions, the tragedies bid us face the reality of suffering, and the romances turn us toward Him who is “the grave where buried love doth live.” The liberals, because they hate the risen Lord, have created a world without comedy, without the catharsis of Christian tragedies, and without the sure and certain hope in the resurrection of the dead. We have nothing to hang onto if we accept the reign of the liberals. Must we submit? It might seem like the practical thing to do. But if there is a spiritual realm above this vale of tears, then we cannot order our lives as if we are mere by-products of nature. Just as the sheer moral ugliness of the liberals and the colored heathen must have a supernaturally demonic source, so must the moral beauty of the antique Europeans have a divine source.

Our ancestors believed that the divine source was Christ. His kingdom-come is not compatible with liberalism, so we have no choice. We must acknowledge that we are a captive people and refuse to accept that captivity as permanent. Everything we do should be done with the intention of undermining Liberaldom and rebuilding His reign of charity. There is only one season in Liberaldom, it is always a time to kill; to kill God by killing His people. For the love of Him who died on the cross and for the love of our kith and kin, we must be like unto Thomas Nelson Page’s Goth. We must love and hate with European hearts of flesh. Then, in the darkness of Satandom, there will still be light, there will still be hope. +

In the Heart Dwelleth the Soul

November 11, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Scientism

Tags: Shakespeare



And my ending is despair,
Unless I be reliev'd by prayer...

-Prospero in *The Tempest*

St. John tells us that, “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God,” and later he tells us that, “the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us...” It has been my contention — and it remains my contention — that the Word of God, which is the Gospel of Christ crucified, Christ risen, sank deep into the hearts of the European people, so deeply that it became part of their blood. They could only be divested of that faith by a long, painful process that drains the lifeblood from a man. That process is called liberalism. It starts with an intellectual premise that the real man, the advanced man, is pure intellect. From that premise the deblooding process begins.

The first deblooder was the devil. He appealed to Adam and Eve’s intellects to convince them that their filial relationship with God the Father was unnecessary. Smart people do not need a filial relationship with God, they only need a vague intellectual attachment to God. That has always been the story of man’s rebellion against God – “We are too smart to submit to God.” It has been the task of the Europeans, the men of blood, to tell the great intellects, who want to return to paganism through intellectual Christianity or through one or more of the pagan philosophies, that they are not that smart. For once a man ceases to think with his heart he becomes a tool of Satan.

Throughout the Christian centuries there were always the deblooders in church and society at large who wanted to make all of existence an intellectual proposition. But it was not until the American Revolution that the deblooding process became institutionalized. America was a propositional nation from its inception. The French Revolution took the implication of the U.S. Revolution to its logical conclusion – Man is God. The same deblooding process that animated Jefferson, Madison, and Franklin also animated the French revolutionists. The evils of the American experiment in democracy are often overlooked because the Americans, unlike the French, did not expressly denounce God when they framed the U. S. Constitution. But they did make God an intellectual construct, which is back-door-atheism, which incidentally is what the French Jacobins ultimately adopted as well. They found out that men needed some kind of God. So both the French and the Americans focused on an intellectual concept of the noble black savage.

The deblooding process became institutionalized throughout the European nations in the 20th century, and it has been held over, like a long-running theatrical success, for the 21st century. But why has the new-old Gnostic faith replaced Christianity? What makes it so appealing to the modern Europeans? Its success has to do with the cumulative nature of scientific knowledge. With each passing century the European scientists gained in knowledge of the natural world. That gave them, and the men and women who partook of that knowledge, a feeling of power. Was the Holy Ghost of the Christian Trinity really necessary when there was more power and knowledge to be gleaned from science than from a mystical entity that could not be seen? The problem a Christian faces when he stands before the almighty holy ghost of science is that his knowledge is not cumulative, he must start at the beginning, in his infancy of faith, and try to counter the magnificence of science with his puny faith. Unless, and this ‘unless’ is everything, he unites with his honored dead in spirit, blood, and faith; then he is not starting anew nor is he alone. He stands with his people, a long line of heroes, against the new Gnostics with their unholy trinity. **But he must stand with his honored dead or he will succumb to the abstracted intellect, the negro, and science.** For this reason the liberal plays the race card over and over again. If racism is blasphemy, then the antique Europeans were evil. The modern Europeans are cut off from their past, because they fear the racist label. If they want to be Christians, they must be intellectual Christians who have made their peace with the negro, who is the liberals’ savior, and they must make their peace with the liberals’ holy ghost, which is science. And the European people have made their peace with the liberals’ trinity, because once they cut their ties to their ‘racist’ ancestors they were alone against an implacable foe. They were like Lilliputians fighting giants. If they leave the slime pits of negro worship and stand with their European ancestors, they will not be alone in the day of battle against the liberals and the colored barbarians. As it stands now the Europeans are defenseless, because they are afraid of the racist label attached to their ancestors, just as if the racist label is a plague that they dare not catch. But you will not only be without all human aid if you run from your Christian past, you will also be without divine aid, because the living God does not reside in the abstracted minds of the wizards of modernity, He lives with His people, the men and women with hearts of flesh. They were called Europeans.

In the aftermath of the Texas shooting, there was the usual nonsense about gun control. But there were two other things that do not bode well for white people. The liberals were glad that it was white people who were killed, and they also mocked the victims, because they were praying, and they mocked those who said they would pray for the victims and their families. The liberals’ lack of concern for the death of white people should not shock us. They want all white people to perish. Nor should we be shocked by the liberals’ blasphemy – is not the essence of liberalism blasphemy? But it is significant that the liberals no longer feel the need to hide their hatred of whites nor their hatred of the Christian God.

The unanswered prayer does pose a problem for the professed Christian. It’s quite similar to the ‘why is there suffering?’ problem. But throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe, the European people were able to pray to their Lord and Savior with all sincerity even though there were many prayers that were not answered. What has changed? That filial relationship with God has changed. Adam and Eve did not trust their Father, so they turned to pure intelligence as a refuge. When the European people went over to scientism, they ceased to know God through their hearts, hearts which told them that their prayers mattered, even when it seemed they were of no effect. In the absence of a belief that a loving God does respond to our prayers, what is left? There is the trinity of the liberals.

But can the abstracted intellect serve as a substitute for God the father? Can the negro be our messiah? And can science replace the Holy Ghost? It seems to me that all three divisions of the liberals’ trinity show us honest trifles only to betray us in deepest consequence. When facing our own deaths, our loved ones’ death, or the death of our civilization, we cannot find any consolation or hope in the liberals’ trinity. So why do we cling to that trinity and reject the Christian Trinity of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost?

Christ tells us that it will not be forgiven us if we blaspheme against the Holy Ghost. Is not that what the liberals enjoin us to do? They bid us look to the new holy ghost, the scientific holy ghost who proceeds from the abstracted intellect and the sacred negro, and with the abstracted intellect of man and the sacred negro, science is worshipped and glorified. Look at academia,

look at organized Christian Jewry – are they not citadels of blasphemy? You can't reach God through prayer in those citadels, because they reject the Holy Ghost who leads us to our Savior. We won't come out of the liberals' maze until we reconnect with our past, and we can't reconnect with our past if we continue to reject the Holy Ghost who resides in hearts that love much.

It is now taken as a given by the mad-dog liberals that the white race must be exterminated for the sin of racism. The conservatives, who are the classical liberals, agree with the mad-dog liberals about white racism: it is the unforgiveable sin. But the conservatives think their sin can be expunged by their repudiation of the antique Europeans and their willingness to worship the negro. "It's not enough," the liberals declare, "You must face the executioners' block." And even in death the white man will not be cleansed, because the triune god of the liberals has no merciful savior, and the white man's sin consists of his whiteness — that is a sin that can never be expunged.

Throughout the Old Testament as we follow the people of God, we are struck by all the backsliding and apostasy from the one true God that takes place. Time and time again the people whom God spoke to through His prophets ignore the prophets and return to Baal or its equivalent. That backsliding and apostasy became codified law when the bulk of the Jewish people rejected the Messiah, who was the fulfillment of the prophecies. And now the wheel has come full circle. The European people who believed in the prophecies and in Him who was the fulfillment of the prophecies have returned to Baal. "We shall bring you hell," the liberals tell us. Yes, they have brought us hell. The same God who rose from the dead on the third day can raise us up from this hell on earth. But we can't conjure up the living God by the brilliance of our intellects or the magic of our systems. We can learn to love Him in and through the European people from the racist era of European history. That was an era, like every era of European history, of wars, adulteries, lust, and every other evil under the sun. But there were hearts of faith in that era of European history – there were people struggling to the light, in contrast to the liberals of our modern era who have banished the light in order to worship darkness.

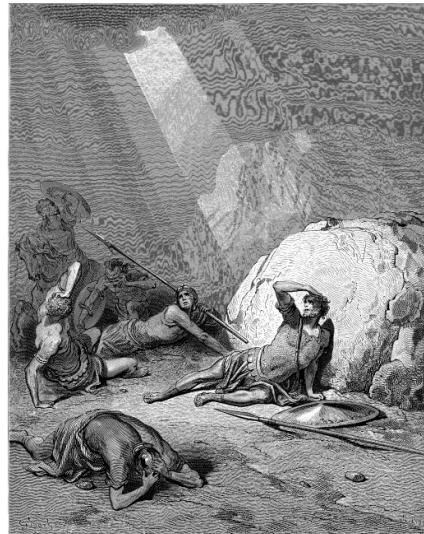
It's not possible to live in the darkness of Liberaldom without faith in His Europe. If the antique Europeans were incorrect, if their vision of Christ was false, then to whom can we turn for the words of eternal life? The liberals tell us that we can turn to their triune god. The intellectual Christians tell us that we can place our hope in a new fusionist Christianity, free from the racism of time-bound European Christianity. But the new Christianity is simply another form of atheism. Without a local habitation the antique Europeans' hearth-fire Christ becomes a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods who are subordinate to the negro. Is this the final apostasy of the European people? Will they all perish from the face of the earth without any record that they ever existed at all? That certainly seems likely, seeing that all the European schools and universities are divesting themselves of all things white – no white male authors, no white male musicians or artists – everything white must perish. But there is the rub, which gives the liberal nightmares. You can eradicate the culture of the people who believed in the God-Man. And you can eradicate the people who still profess a belief in the European Christ. But, if Christ is indeed the son of God, how can you eradicate God? Why, if we believe that Christ is the Son of God, should we ever cave in to the liberals? Despite what seems, it is the liberals, not those who stand with the Christ of old Europe, who are playing a losing hand. They are playing a losing hand because our Redeemer liveth. Christ rose from the dead on the third day, and that shall always be the source of our faith and the reason we shall stay with eternal Europe against all the world. +

The Moral Vision

November 18, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Chateaubriand, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Shakespeare



When men once turn to brutes, the trifle of men's wit that remains in them adds tenfold to their brutality.

- [Tanglewood Tales](#) by Nathaniel Hawthorne

The mad-dog liberals have given themselves over to Satan. They are the academics, the Antifaers, the members of the Democratic Party, the Labour Party, and the various leftist-Marxist parties throughout Europe. They represent a large minority of white people, but they still do not, in my judgement, make up the majority of white people. The majority of white people throughout the world are what I call grazers. They graze in the mad-dog liberals' pastures and dutifully follow the mad-dog liberals' orders, but they do not share the mad-dog liberals' hatred for all things white and Christian. Nor do they realize that they are being fattened up for execution in the liberals' slaughterhouse. Why do the white grazers believe that there is a place for them in Liberaldom? They believe there is a place for them in Liberaldom for the same reason the narrator in Melville's short story "[Benito Cereno](#)" believed that blood-thirsty negro savages were kindly natives who meant the white captain on the ship no harm.

The grazers cannot see evil clearly, because they have no vision of the good. If the grazers believed in the European Christ, as distinct from the cosmic Christ of the churchmen who is all things to all people, they would not continue to graze in the pastures of Liberaldom without fighting back against the liberals. They would know that when they, the liberals, do these things and say these things they are not the friends of white people. When they institutionalize race-mixing, abortion, sodomy, and negro worship, they are evil men and women who must be opposed, just as Charles Martel opposed the Moslems. You can only deal democratically with people with whom you share a common set of values. You can't have any peaceful dealings with people who want your heart's blood. But of course the grazer does not believe that the liberals want his heart's blood. "That's so silly, why would a liberal want our blood? It doesn't make any sense." But the liberals' agenda does make sense, it makes perfect sense in the spiritual realm, which is the realm that governs all of our lives whether we acknowledge its existence or not. What could be more logical, from Satan's perspective, than the destruction of the Christ-bearing race? In a war, you destroy the breeding ground of the enemy. And Christ's breeding ground was and is the hearts of the European people. The liberals are coldly, maniacally doing the will of Satan by destroying all things white.

When Edgar sees his blinded father poorly led and determined to fling himself over a precipice, he must think of some way to give his father a will to live. We know the stratagem he uses, and that stratagem works:

*Hadst thou been aught but gossamer, feathers, air,
So many fathom down precipitating.
Thou 'dst shiver'd like an egg; but thou dost breathe;
Hast heavy substances; bleed'st not; speak'st; art sound.
Ten masts at each make not the altitude
Which thou hast perpendicularly fell.
Thy life's a miracle. Speak yet again.*

The white people of modern Europe must believe that the civilization of old Europe was a miracle before they will take up arms against the liberals. If they make that realization, they will know the good and be prepared to fight evil, and they will survive as a people. But so long as they believe that Christian Europe was evil, and that modern, multi-racial, multi-cultural, democratic Europe is good, they will continue to be a hopeless, helpless, captive people.

Recently a group of scientists got together to tell us how we could save the planet from destruction. Did the scientists recommend we fall onto our knees and invite Christ into our hearts while expelling all liberals and colored barbarians from our nations? No, they did not. They listed a whole series of problems to be addressed, none of which was the problem of Liberalism. Instead, the number one problem, according to the scientists, was overpopulation. Let me translate the liberal double-speak. When scientists of the West tell 'mankind' that we have a population problem, they are really telling the world that we must eliminate white people, because there is no overpopulation problem in the Western nations unless you mean the Moslem and colored barbarians who are overrunning Europe and the United States. That is an overpopulation problem the West should deal with, but the learned men of science were not referring to the colored heathen, they were talking to the people of the West. They want the people of the West, the white Europeans, to self-destruct. And the white Europeans will do what they are told, unless they believe that Christian Europe was a miracle that has to be maintained and perpetuated. As it stands now, the liberals are hell-bent on destroying the white race, and the intellectual Christians think that a good Christian must hasten the end of the white race by repudiating the European Christians' vision of Christ and supporting the enthronement of the negro as the savior of the West.

Every Sunday throughout the Western world we see the tragedy of intellectual Christianity. Churches with many of the art works and iconic images from old Europe lining their Church walls feature modern clergymen who preach about the evils of old racist Europe and the wonders of the new multi-racial, multi-cultural Europe. What has the new church of the cosmic Christ produced? It has produced the aforementioned evils of race-mixing, abortion, sodomy and negro worship. But somehow by a strange metamorphosis the culture that has spawned all those evils, our modern liberal culture, is supposed to be good while the culture that produced Christian men and women who opposed all of the modern evils, the culture of the antique Europeans, is now supposed to be the most evil culture that has ever existed on the face of the earth. And no one will defend that culture or the people who created that culture in response to God's grace. Churchmen who owe their position in the church to their Christian forefathers will not say one good word for their spiritual fathers. "Faith of our Fathers, Living Still," has become, "Let our Racist Fathers Rot in the Grave While We Look to the Negro Who is Living Now." Is their abhorrence of the antique Europeans' 'racism' really the reason the secular liberals and their kissing cousins in the churches have demonized the whites who lived during the Christian era in Europe? No, it is not. The race card is a stratagem that works. The great haters of humanity, the liberals, do not really care about the black man or any other human being. They are incapable of love, all they can do is hate. And the generic black man is a convenient weapon which they use to subdue the white Christ-bearing race. The liberals will use that weapon so long as it is effective.

It's difficult to envision a 21st century nation of whites who do not fear the racist label. We can look to the past and see whites who were not afraid to love their own people and maintain a white, provincial culture set apart from the colored heathens, but it doesn't seem like whites will ever again become like unto those men and women of old Europe. It will take a miracle, but we once were the people who believed in the one great Miracle that began in a manger in Bethlehem.

At the center of Satan's kingdom on earth in every European nation are the universities. It is in Academia that we see pure evil undiluted by anything good. And if we recall to mind that the universities were originally spawned by the various churches we see a great tragedy. How could something so evil come from something so well-intended? Was it really well-intended, or was it the second fall of man? Was it an attempt to replace God's word with man's will? Perhaps in the beginning there were well-intentioned men who exaggerated the capacity of the human intellect and devalued the capacity of the human heart. But once that tragic error was made, Satan was able to use man's pride of intellect, what [Chateaubriand](#) called the pride of science, to place a barrier between God and man. That barrier must be taken down. So long as it remains, the world will be in the hands of intellectualized beasts of prey, who, in the fullness of their intellectual pride, slavishly serve Satan.

For good or evil the white race determines the history of the world. The liberals, who are the intellectual beasts of prey, have determined that the white race must be destroyed. They will preside over the extermination process, and they, in their own minds, will be spared to preside over a colored paradise, which in reality will be a kingdom of eternal night. But the pure intellect has nothing to do with reality. The intellectual man follows a cosmic star of unreality, which begins in the heavens, just as Satan began, and ends up plunging into hell, just as Satan did.

What would happen if the Europeans once again looked to the Star of Bethlehem instead of the liberals' cosmic star? Miracles would occur in Europe once again. Nothing is impossible if the European people renew their covenant with God. I am frequently told that things are not as bad as I paint them. "Democracy works, and there are still good Christians in the churches." My response is that democracy has never worked. And, as regards the 'good Christians' in the churches – I'm sure there are good Christians in the rank and file of some of the break-away fringe churches. But they are good Christians *in spite of*, not because of, the church system that they belong to. The spirit cannot be scientized; when the church of God becomes a man-made system rather than a covenant between the living God and His people, the people with hearts of flesh, the church becomes part of Liberalism.

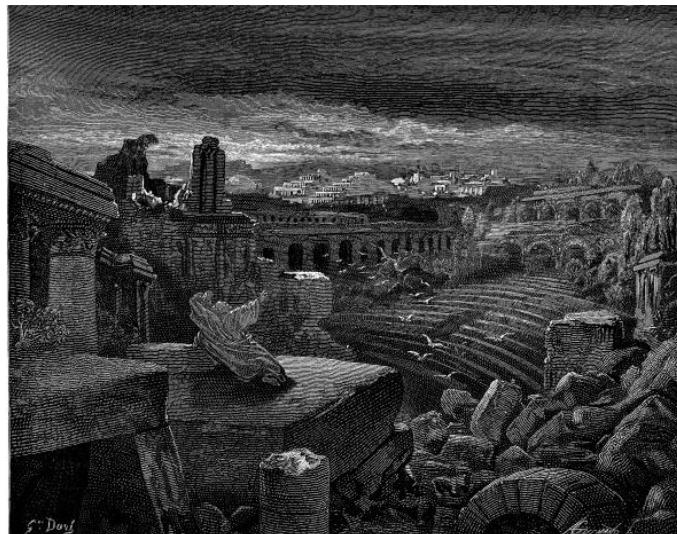
The Lord God gave us hearts of flesh, so we could know Him in this world and love Him in the next world. The miracle of Europe was a reflection of God's labor of love which was embodied in the person of Jesus Christ. The farther we slide away from incarnate Europe, the harder it gets to believe in God's labor of love. And then the ethos of the bestial intellects of prey becomes our reality; we no longer see the light. So much now rests on so few. Our European lives are indeed a miracle, but only those who still see the European miracle clearly will endure to the end. +

When We Remember Europe

November 25, 2017

Categories: Antique Christianity, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Resurrection

Tags: George Fitzhugh, Shakespeare



By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down,

Yea, we wept,

When we remembered Zion.

-Psalms 137: 1

During the Babylon captivity the Psalmist asked, “How shall we sing the Lord’s song, In a strange land?” How indeed, when the Lord’s song is an anathema to the ruling principalities and powers of Babylon, can a man who believes in the living God still sing the Lord’s song? Possibly he can sing it quietly, under his breath, or maybe he can find a cave or a wooded area where he and a few friends can sing the Lord’s song. But the Lord’s song must be sung or else the memory of the living God will die out.

The modern Europeans are currently suffering through their own Babylonian captivity. But there is a crucial difference between the ancient Jews’ Babylonian captivity and the Europeans’ Babylonian captivity. The ancient Jews knew they were a captive people while the modern Europeans do not know they are a captive people. The Europeans’ ignorance of their captivity indicates a far greater spiritual decline than that of the ancient Jews. If a man knows he is held captive by an enemy who hates his people and his God he can steel himself, internally, to resist his enemy. But if he doesn’t know he is a captive? Then he will be weak inside, he will offer no resistance to an enemy that hates his people and his God.

How can a whole race of people be held captive, estranged from their God and themselves, without even knowing it? It wasn’t easy, but the devil knew what he wanted. He wanted the European people, the Christ-bearing people, to see existence through the eyes of a scientist. Where is God in the natural world? Where is the scientific evidence that skin pigmentation is anything but skin pigmentation? Who dares say that white skin connotes a distinct people with spiritual attributes different from people without white skins? Once the Europeans’ God became a propositional God, the European people became a propositional people. Faith in an intellectual concept of God is not the same as a faith in the living God nor is a universal love for humanity the same as a love for one’s own people, one’s kith and kin.

How can we hear the word of God and take His word into our hearts if we can’t accept His word unless it comes to us as a propositional faith purified by the scientific mind? The Bible, from Genesis through the Book of Revelation, is the story of God’s relationship with the sons of earth. We are invited into God’s fairy tale in which our Lord and kinsman, Jesus Christ, defeats the forces of evil and death and brings His people safely home. You can’t scientize that fairy tale without losing something essential – your faith in the living God. You can still retain a propositional faith in a mind-forged God whose existence can be proved by reason, but you can’t maintain a faith in the living God who can only be known through the human heart. If such talk is sentimental mush, as the intellectual Christians tell us, then we must dismiss St. Paul, who tells us that we need to circumcise our hearts if we want to know Christ. And Christ Himself tells us in the parable of the sower: “But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.” [Luke 8: 5-18](#)

Christ tells the apostles that the seed of the sower is the word of God. And those “by the way side are they that hear, then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.” Therein lies the tragedy of the European people. Their hearts were the good ground where the word of God was sown, but the devil came, first in the guise of an intellectual Christian, and then later, when the European people had lost their abhorrence of intellectual pride, he came to them in the guise of a well-meaning, secularized, scientized liberal. But throughout the whole long process the devil knew what had to be done – kill the European heart, and faith on earth perishes.

The Babylon captivity of the European people will go on in perpetuity so long as they remain separated from their hearts. The churchmen and the secular liberals are united in their hatred of the good seed, which was planted in the hearts of the good and faithful Europeans. If the antique Europeans were not the good ground, if their hearts were evil and their fruits poisonous, where do we go and to whom do we turn to hear the word of God? To the Thomists? To the Biblical exegetes? There is no sustaining faith in intellectual Christianity. The word of God can only be received by human hearts. Which always brings us back to this modern devil word called ‘racism.’ If white racism is the greatest sin, and white pietas has been labeled racism, then how can the faith flourish and how can the European people ever be released from their Babylonian captivity?

It is only the European hearts which are condemned. The black hearts of the people of color, who are the bad ground, are deified — those hearts are pure and undefiled. But who is defining what is pure and undefiled? It is the devil who informs the minds and guides the rulers and pundits of Liberalism. Who guided Rousseau and Teilhard de Chardin? And who guides Pope Francis when he attacks the European people? It is always Satan, who seems to be unconquerable. But he only seems to be unconquerable because the European people have allowed Satan to despoil their hearts while they cling to the great lie that goes all the way back to the Garden of Eden: The human intellect does not need the living God. However, our great hearts, the white ‘racists,’ have always seen through that lie:

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man’s whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, it is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

— [Cannibals All! Or Slaves without Masters](#) by George Fitzhugh

Fitzhugh got it right. In order to confound the European people, Satan distorted their vision. He got them to look at existence through the mind of the philosophical speculators instead of through the hearts of Europeans of faith. How we see determines our faith. Caiaphas saw and heard Christ, just as the apostles did, but he saw something completely different from the apostles. Many saw Christ raise Lazarus from the dead and “believed on Him,” but others, “went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.” Pilate looked the living God in the face and asked, “What is truth?” All the great Christian dramatists bear witness to the tragedy of spiritual blindness, a blindness that stems from a heart hardened by an intellectual pride that sees only the superficial surface of life while remaining in ignorance of the depths of existence, which can only be known through the human heart. Lear has been with Goneril, Regan, and Cordelia their entire lives, but he doesn’t know the depths of Goneril and Regan’s evil or the depths of Cordelia’s goodness, because he has given first place to his pride of intellect and left no room for a loving heart. It is only when he repents that he learns how to see:

...O, I have ta'en
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them
And show the heavens more just.

—King Lear

We, the European people, have ‘ta’en too little care of’ the heart of our civilization. It is not overwhelming numbers that have made the European people unable to resist the Moslem invasion, nor is it the innate beauty of the natural black savage that makes the Europeans worship him, it is the Europeans’ inability to see with their heart that makes them unable to resist the heathen and makes them see beauty in black barbarism.

The Psalmist wept by the rivers of Babylon because he remembered Zion. Why don’t the European people weep when they remember Europe? It is because they don’t remember Europe. The moral beauty of the antique Europeans is crystal clear to all those who look at them through the heart, but the modern Europeans will not look at them through their hearts. They believe the liberals, who have anathematized the antique Europeans by proclaiming them racist, and they have moved on to what they hope will be a glorious future in the liberals’ brave new multi-religious, multi-racial world. That world shall never become a reality. We shall see either a colored-heathen world of eternal night or we shall see a resurgent world of the Christ-bearing people, who at the last trump remembered Christian Europe and rose up and cast off the liberals and the colored heathen.

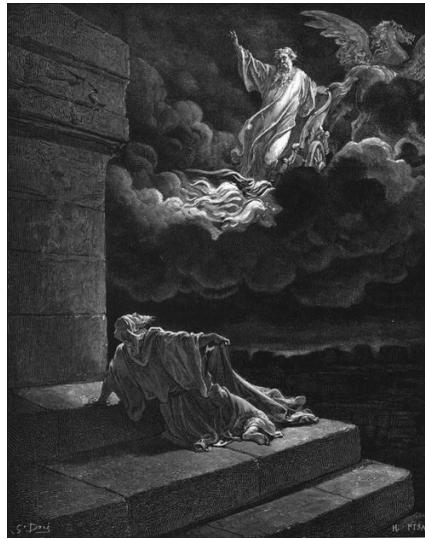
In the 19th century the accumulated wisdom of the scientists made it possible for the pride of science to flourish amongst the European people, but there was still great resistance to the scientizers. I have often made reference to that resistance (see [Our Sacred Heritage](#)). There were genuine conservatives in the 19th century, men of heart who opposed the scientizing of God and His people and wanted to preserve the word of God, not as a mere parchment but as a living reality that dwelt in the hearts of the European people. The conservatives of the 20th century were no longer conservatives. They didn’t want to preserve the good ground, which was their own people, they only wanted to preserve the outer intellectual husks of a propositional Christianity. Christ wept at the death of Lazarus, and His sacred tears restored Lazarus to life. If we unite our tears with His tears, if we weep for His Europe, we will see a European miracle in the midst of Babylon. +

Of Europe, the Seven Thousand, and Elijah

December 2, 2017

Categories: Charity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Le Fanu



And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, Thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless, if thou see me when I am taken from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it shall not be so. And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them in two pieces. He took up also the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and went back, and stood by the bank of Jordan; – *II Kings 2: 9-13*

This Thanksgiving, as we do every Thanksgiving, my family and I saw the 1947 movie *A Miracle on 34th Street*. In that movie a vicious, self-serving psychologist tries to have a man named Kris Kringle committed to a lunatic asylum because Mr. Kringle says he is Santa Claus. Of course we know the outcome. An atypical lawyer who believes that Kris Kringle is a harmless old man with a delusion for good manages to win an acquittal for Kris. Then, lo and behold, the lawyer discovers that the kindly old man he was defending actually is the one and only Santa Claus. And because he actually is Santa Claus, he is more concerned with the conversion of a feminist and her young daughter than he is with his own acquittal. Since the movie is a romance as Shakespeare's *The Tempest* is a romance both the feminist and her daughter are converted at the end of the movie.

Miracle on 34th St., like all the great European fairy tales, allows us, the European people, to take a moral holiday. We see evil punished and the good rewarded. But in order to take pleasure in a movie such as *A Miracle on 34th St*, one must have a moral vision of life that is in line with the moral vision of the European people of ancient times who believed the hope of the world was born in a stable in Bethlehem.

Everything was in place in the citadels of power in 1947—church, state, academia, and press – to bring down the curtain on white Christian Europe, but the average white person at that time had more in common with the Europe of 1117 than the Europe of 2017. There was still a strong Christian ethos then, but now there is none. The ethos of Babylon has been institutionalized, and the ethos of Christian Europe has been destroyed. The new *Miracle on 34th St* would include a noble black savage, a horde of Moslem rapists, and a feminist harpy who would abort her child on Christmas day. That is the liberal romance – blasphemy wedded to the slaughter of the innocents.

There are weaknesses in *A Miracle on 34th St* movie. Kris Kringle only condemns quack psychologists; he does not condemn the practice of psychiatry. And we would like to hear something like unto Ebenezer Scrooge's nephew's speech from Kris Kringle:

"There are many things from which I might have derived good, by which I have not profited, I dare say," returned the nephew. "Christmas among the rest. But I am sure I have always thought of Christmas time, when it has come round—apart from the veneration due to its sacred name and origin, if anything belonging to it can be apart from that—as a good time; a kind, forgiving, charitable, pleasant time; the only time I know of, in the long calendar of the year; when men and women seem by one consent to open their shut-up hearts freely, and to think of people below them as if they really were fellow-passengers to the grave, and not another race of creatures bound on other journeys. And therefore, uncle, though it has never put a scrap of gold or silver in my pocket, I believe that it has done me good, and will do me good; and I say, God bless it!" – [A Christmas Carol](#)

But taken for all in all *A Miracle on 34th St* and such movies as *I Know Where I'm Going* and *A Canterbury Tale* place us in a very different world than the one we live in today. Is the old world the better world? In my view there is no doubt which is the better world. But there also is no doubt in the liberals' mind that their world is the better world. Why has the liberals' romance conquered the old romance of Christian Europe? The obvious answer — that the liberals worship Satan and hate the Light with passionate intensity while the grazers are confused and full of doubts about Christ's promise to be with them always — is the correct answer. But Satan did not gain ascendancy over the liberals' souls by a direct attack. He came at the liberals through stealth and cunning. He always presented himself to Europeans in some kind of disguise. Whether he came to them as a kindly theologian, a pure and noble Jacobin, a devoted Marxist, or a benevolent psychiatrist, his objective was always the same — to separate the European people from the God who enters human hearts. Every attack on the Europeans' racial hearth fire in the name of 'noble' causes such as liberty, fraternity, and equality, was an attack on Christ and His people. J. S. LeFanu describes this stealth warfare of the devil in his masterpiece, *Uncle Silas*:

Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels.

Satan did not have to approach the colored heathen by stealth, they belonged to him without such measures. The Arab chieftain in Scot's novel, *The Talisman*, brags of his descent from the devil. And so it has been, and continues to be, with the heathens of color. The ethos of the devil is something they can understand; it is an ethos of blood, sex, and power. It is a vision of this world only, a world devoid of charity and mercy, that the devil presents to the colored heathen. And the colored heathens love that world.

The Europeans rejected the devil's world for another world. This world was a shadow of another world, the real world of grace, beauty, and life everlasting in a kingdom presided over by the Prince of peace, mercy, and love. That belief penetrated into the heart and soul of the European people. To root such a belief out of their hearts, to make white men return to paganism, was the devil's task. He approached them by way of the "zigzags and parallels" that destroyed Uncle Silas. The devil covered the seven deadly sins with the pride of virtue in order to create the most hideous creatures on the face of the earth — they are called liberals. Robespierre was the prototypical liberal. He didn't see himself as a mass murderer, he saw himself as a virtuous man who was purging the world of evil. What was the evil that needed purging? All things and persons that had any connection to Christ the Lord, because the virtuous liberal cannot abide Christ the Lord. He can abide Christ the social worker, Christ the Marxist, Christ the capitalist, Christ the civil rights worker, but he cannot abide Christ, the Son of the Living God. The

apostles on the road to Emmaus asked Christ to abide with them because it was "toward evening and the day is far spent." The antique Europeans made the same request, and the Lord honored their request. But the liberals? They have commanded Christ to leave them and never return. As a result, we live in a world of eternal night, where the 'virtue' of Uncle Silas-liberalism has been blended with the savage paganism of the colored heathens. We will never defeat the barbarians of color by appealing to the liberals for help, because the extermination of the white race is not a result of a misunderstanding any more than legalized abortion is the result of a misunderstanding. In both cases the liberals know what they are doing. They are attacking God by destroying his image in man, the white Christ-bearing race, and they are usurping the role of God by seeking to control the act of procreation.

The age of prophecy is dead, because Christ, of whom the prophets spoke, has come. But what happened to the prophets' connection to the living God once Christ came in fulfillment of the prophecies? I liken the new relationship between God and man after the fulfillment of the prophecies to the relationship of a man and woman who have been corresponding for years by mail. Then the time arrives for them to meet in the flesh. Will one or both recoil in horror because their correspondent was not what they expected, or will their relationship take on a new intensity? The Jews, in the main, went over to heathenism when they encountered the living God. It was the Europeans who took up the mantle of the prophets and formed a connection to the living God. But that marriage was a tumultuous marriage just as the prophets' relationship with God was a tumultuous relationship. First there were the bad counselors who thought they could improve the marriage with their great intellects. These men were the Grand Inquisitors of organized Christian Jewry who sought to return the Europeans to the letter-writing stage of their relationship with God. That cannot be done without severing the relationship. Christ is the God of human hearts, He is not the God of philosophical theory or dry parchments. If the word of God does not reach the human heart, how can there be faith on earth? Once the connection to the living God is severed, faith becomes an intellectual proposition that can be completely rejected or turned into a lukewarm bath that the Europeans occasionally go to in order to wash off some of the liberal slime from their bodies.

The greatest of the prophets, the man whom God took unto Himself by way of the fiery chariot, was Elijah. He opposed Ahab, but it was not the weak, vacillating Ahab who really ruled, it was Ahab's wife, Jezebel, the most satanic woman that ever lived, who ruled the kingdom. When Elijah rebuked the 450 prophets of Baal that ate at Jezebel's table, he was rebuking Jezebel, who was the mistress of Satan, in the name of the living God:

And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him: but if Baal, then follow him. And the people answered him not a word. Then said Elijah unto the people, I, even I only, remain a prophet of the Lord; but Baal's prophets are four hundred and fifty men.

Four hundred and fifty to one, but it was Elijah who was victorious, because he served the living God:

And it came to pass at the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near, and said, Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that thou art God in Israel, and that I am thy servant, and that I have done all these things at thy word. Hear me, O Lord, hear me, that this people may know that thou art the Lord God, and that thou hast turned their heart back again. Then the fire of the Lord fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench. And when all the people saw it, they fell on their faces: and they said, The Lord, he is the God; the Lord, he is the God. And Elijah said unto them, Take the prophets of Baal; let not one of them escape. And they took them: and Elijah brought them down to the brook Kishon, and slew them there. – [1 Kings 18](#)

It was not all clear sailing for Elijah after he slew the 450 prophets of Baal. Now, like the Prince in Disney's *Sleeping Beauty* who had to deal with Maleficent and all the powers of hell, Elijah had to deal with Jezebel and all the powers of hell. He flees to the mountains and is close to despair. But the Lord takes care of him; He sends an angel to minister unto him and tells him he is not alone: "Yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him." Then comes the incredibly moving moment when Elijah casts his mantle upon Elisha who is the man chosen to follow in Elijah's footsteps. We all know the rest. Once the new prophet has been chosen, Elijah is taken up to heaven:

And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, Thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless, if thou see me when I am taken from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it shall not be so. And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them in two pieces. He took up also the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and went back, and stood by the bank of Jordan; – [2 Kings 2: 9-13](#)

Do I wander too far from Europe when I talk about Elijah's prophecies and his battle with Jezebel and her minions? No, I do not. Christ was the fulfillment of all the prophecies, and His heart contained all of the prophetic fire of the prophets. When the European people took Christ into their hearts they became one with the prophets and Christ. When the liberals broke their covenant with Christ by banishing Him from their racial hearth fire in order to worship Baal in the form of the colored heathens, they became like unto Jezebel. And the white grazers became like unto the lukewarm children of Israel who were rebuked by Elijah: "And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him: but if Baal, then follow him. And the people answered him not a word."

We stand before Christ just as the grazers of Israel stood before Elijah. How long will we be between two opinions? Will we worship the liberals' unholy trinity, or will we stand with Christ the Lord? The Jezebels of Liberaldom are frightening creatures. But Jezebel did not prevail. If we stand with the antique Europeans, who were like unto the "seven thousand in Israel," we too will prevail against the liberals who are like unto Jezebel.

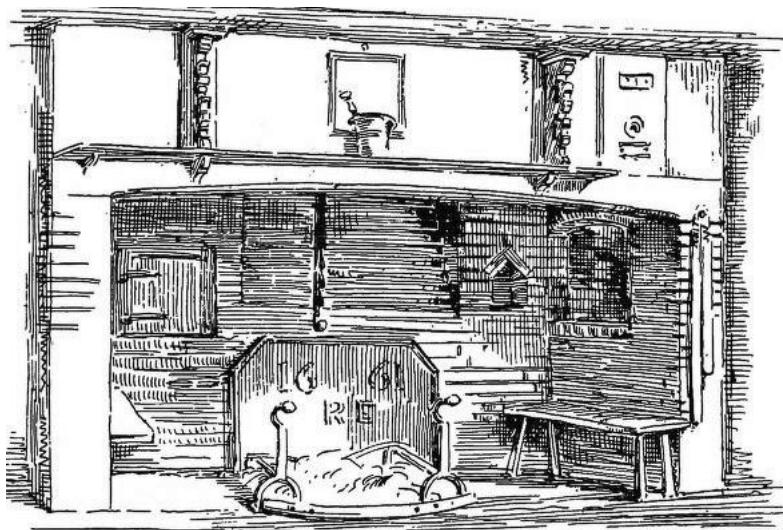
There is only one great miracle, whether it happens on 34th St or in ancient Israel, it is the miracle of grace, the miracle of the living God touching a human heart. That is our miracle, our common faith, which we celebrate this coming Christmas and every day of our lives until we see our Lord face to face. Please, God, protect me and my family in the day of battle against the modern Jezebels and their prophets of Baal, and protect and defend the loyal seven thousand Europeans in their battle (the final battle?) against the same foes. In Christ's name, Amen.
+

The Vacant Hearth

December 9, 2017

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Feminism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



Proper deformity seems not in the fiend
So horrid as in woman.

-King Lear

Men can be great when great occasions call:
In little duties women find their spheres,
The narrow cares that cluster round the hearth.

-R. H. Stoddard

This feeding frenzy over sexual harassment is like unto the feeding frenzy of the French Jacobins. They not only executed the French aristocrats, they also turned on each other. No one was pure enough. But the new age Jacobins are less inclusive than the original Jacobins. In revolutionary France the white proletariat was still ‘the people’; now all white males are aristocrats who can be executed any time the liberals choose. When will white male liberals ‘wake up’ and realize that they must stop the feminist Robespierres before they fall under the axe? The answer is never, unless the white male liberals have an internal conversion and see the world with the eyes of a Christian European. So long as their moral vision is distorted by liberalism, they will continue to try to pin the ‘racist’ and ‘sexist’ label on their opponents while holding onto the delusion that they will escape the axe themselves.

The ‘conservatives’ display their liberalism when they join in the attack on the lefties who fall under the sexual harassment axe. Don’t they see that these sexual harassment changes are liberal ploys, just as charges of racism are liberal ploys, to destroy the enemy, which is all white males?

No liberal of the female sex has a right to scream ‘sexual harassment.’ By embracing feminism she has left her humanity and her rights as a woman behind. Why should I or any male be concerned about the alleged sexual harassment of feminist harpies who welcome Moslem and black rapists into our nations while screaming about the sexual harassment of the pornographic actresses in Hollywood? The Victorian maiden and mother has a right to be protected from sexual harassment in word or deed. The modern feminists have no such rights. If we accord them any rights or sympathy we are supporting the continual reign of terror of our modern legions of Lady Macbeths.

*Come, you spirits
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full
Of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood,
Stop up the access and passage to remorse,
That no compunctions visitings of nature
Shake my fell purpose nor keep peace between
The effect and it! Come to my woman’s breasts,
And take my milk for gall, your murd’ring ministers,
Wherever in your sightless substances
You wait on nature’s mischief! Come, thick night,
And pall thee in the dunkest smoke of hell
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark
To cry, “Hold, hold!”*

The feminists, who rule in state and church, do not express themselves as poetically as Lady Macbeth, but her doctrine is their doctrine. I ask you – can a people who teach their young women the ethos of Lady Macbeth survive as a people? Of course they can’t. And that is what the devil wants. He does not want the white Christ-bearing race to survive.

Madeline Albright, with Gloria Steinem and Hillary Clinton at her side, told an audience of women that any woman who voted for Trump deserved a “special place in hell.” Leaving aside the hypocrisy of a woman who doesn’t believe in the resurrection of the dead invoking an eternal hell for sinners, let’s look at the meaning of Albright’s statement. Whatever you might think of Trump, he has become, in the sick, distorted minds of the liberals, the symbol of the white Christian resistance to liberalism. So it follows that any woman who is still woman enough to support a white Christian male is damned. It’s ironic that feminists invoke the devil in order to condemn women who support what the feminists perceive to be a white Christian counterattack, because it is the feminists, not the white Christians, who are in lock-step with the devil. The devil got to Adam through Eve. And Adam, instead of accepting his guilt for acquiescing to Eve’s desire to be equal to God, tried to blame God for his sin – “The woman that thou gavest me...” Adam’s sin was not that he loved his wife but that he loved her outside the orbit of God’s love, and such a love is not love, it is sin. Macbeth “loves” his wife outside of God’s grace, and he ends up completely indifferent to her death:

...The Queen, my lord, is dead.

*MACBETH. She should have died hereafter;
There would have been a time for such a word.
Tomorrow, and tomorrow, and tomorrow
Creeps in this petty pace from day to day
To the last syllable of recorded time:
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!
Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage
And then is heard no more. It is a tale
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,
Signifying nothing.*

Yes, how could a man who has sold his “eternal jewel” to the devil in order to please the satanic will of the woman whom God gave him come to any other conclusion about life: “It is a tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing.”

It is not masculinity that the feminists hate, it is Christian masculinity that they hate. Lady Macbeth loves her husband when he is willing to fight for her reign as Queen of the kingdom of hell on earth. It is only when Macbeth balks of the idea of killing Duncan that she threatens to withdraw her love from him:

*LADY MACBETH. What beast wast then
That made you break this enterprise to me?
When you durst do it, then you were a man,
And, to be more than what you were, you would
Be so much more the man. Nor time nor place
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both.
They have made themselves, and that their fitness now
Does unmake you. I have given suck and know
How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me—
I would, while it was smiling in my face,
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums
And dash'd the brains out had I so sworn as you
Have done to this.*

We see in Lady Macbeth’s relationship with Macbeth the relationship the feminists have formed with the technological white male and the black male. The technological male is tolerated if he helps support the feminists’ reign of terror. So long as he provides the abortion services and the other modern scientific advances that aid the new, satanic woman, the technological male will be allowed access to the womb, not the womb of life and love, which produces white babies, but the womb of lust, which leads a man to hell. And the males of color? They are the natural companions of the feminist who yearns for the destruction of all things white and Christian. So it is natural, natural as defined by the feminists, that the mademoiselles of feminism should welcome colored rapists and murderers into their nations and their bodies in order to hasten the destruction of the white race.

When I was growing up, all my favorite writers, with the exception of Shakespeare, were from the late 1700’s through the 1800’s. The liberals’ attack was fiercer in those years than in previous centuries, but the resistance was also very fierce. I love the authors, such as Scott, Stevenson, Le Fanu, and Dickens, who fought back against the liberal leviathan. But there was always one thing that troubled me about the works of the late 18th and 19th century authors. I was troubled by what I called the ‘creatures of light.’ I loved little Dorrit, Maud Ruthyn, and Jeanie Deans, but I thought Scott, Dickens, and Le Fanu were projecting their male fantasies of the perfect woman into their works. I didn’t believe they were writing realistically about women when they wrote about the creatures of light. I was wrong. Since I did not see any creatures of light in the modern world, I assumed that there were none. But I have watched my youngest daughter, who was raised by a good Christian mother to revere Our Savior and the civilization that was consecrated to our Savior, grow up and become like unto the heroines in the novels of the Christian authors of the 19th century. What a revelation! Our people, the antique Europeans, were right. When the love of Christ, as distinct from a rational affirmation of the existence of God, lies at the heart of a civilization, that civilization will produce the type of heroines and heroes that the novelists of the ancient times celebrated. We must not only remember the past, we must recreate the spiritual climate of the past. We currently live in a world woefully lacking in Christian women, because there are very few Christian men willing to put them in their place. That place is an exalted place, it is by a Christian hearth fire in a Christian home, but a man does have to face the forces of hell in order to champion the Christian hearth fire. But what are our lives without the warmth of that hearth fire? Liberated women that have forsaken the Christian hearth fire still seek to be warmed by the sparks from that fire, no matter how liberated they claim to be. They try to use the sparks to create a new hearth fire in the midst of Liberaldom, but they always fail and become more bitter and hate-filled. I once saw a diamondback rattlesnake rear up and strike. Every time I see a feminist, I am reminded of that rattlesnake. The un-women, the feminists, are truly creatures from hell.

We must not take the liberals’ statements of policy at face value, because they are the spawns of Satan, and Satan always lies. When they say they are for ‘civil rights,’ what they mean is that they are in favor of the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race. And when the feminists say they are against the sexual harassment of women they mean they are against the God-given role of woman as the life-bearers and life-nurturers. When the people who believed in the empty tomb were replaced by the people of the empty womb Europe ceased to be Europe, it became Satandom and it shall remain Satandom until feminism and its ideological kissing cousin, negro worship, are eradicated from the face of the earth.

The reason that modern ‘Christians’; are so easily fooled by Satanic liberals who pontificate about sexual harassment and civil rights is because they have forsaken their racial hearth fire for a propositional faith in a propositional God. The unconditional support of Israel by Robert Jeffress and other intellectual Christians runs counter to the European Christianity which is the common heritage of the European people. (1) The Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. It is that Gospel we should embrace, not the doctrines of propositional Christians who pull new doctrines from the muddled minds of religious enthusiasts. Look to your people, Jeffress, who were and are the men and women of the European hearth fire. Then you will be able to attack the feminists and the negro worshippers who have made the hatred of Christ and the white race their *raison d'être*. +

(1) Every form of organized Christianity runs counter to the Gospel of Christ because it is not grounded in the human heart. Without that solid ground, Christianity lacks a local habitation. I don’t care about recognizing Jerusalem as the capital of Israel as a geopolitical strategy. It may be tactically wise or tactically foolish, that is more than I know. But I am horrified by and disgusted with the religious deification of the secularized Jew in the name of the Christian God. How did we come to this state of affairs? An alleged Christian Pope kisses the Koran and a large segment of the Protestant Evangelical community bows down to the Jews who are opposed to our Lord and Savior. Prince Hal, when he becomes King Henry V, advises Falstaff to leave gormandizing and fall to his prayers. It would be a great blessing if the Evangelicals would leave their intellectual speculations and return to the Christian faith of the antique Europeans.

Merry Christmas!

December 16, 2017

Categories: Christmas, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection

Tags: Washington Irving



Of all the old festivals, however, that of Christmas awakens the strongest and most heartfelt associations. There is a tone of solemn and sacred feeling that blends with our conviviality, and lifts the spirit to a state of hallowed and elevated enjoyment. The services of the church about this season are extremely tender and inspiring. They dwell on the beautiful story of the origin of our faith, and the pastoral scenes that accompanied its announcement. They gradually increase in fervour and pathos during the season of Advent, until they break forth in full jubilee on the morning that brought peace and good-will to men. I do not know a grander effect of music on the moral feelings than to hear the full choir and the pealing organ performing a Christmas anthem in a cathedral, and filling every part of the vast pile with triumphant harmony.

It is a beautiful arrangement, also derived from days of yore, that this festival, which commemorates the announcement of the religion of peace and love, has been made the season for gathering together of family connections, and drawing closer again those bands of kindred hearts which the cares and pleasures and sorrows of the world are continually operating to cast loose; of calling back the children of a family who have launched forth in life, and wandered widely asunder, once more to assemble about the paternal hearth, that rallying-place of the affections, there to grow young and loving again among the endearing mementoes of childhood. — [Old Christmas by Washington Irving](#)

Dark and dull night, flie hence away,
And give the honour to this day
That Sees December turn'd to May.
* * * * *

Why does the chilling winter's morn
Smile like a field beset with corn?
Or smell like to a meade new-shorne,
Thus on the sudden?—Come and see
The cause why things thus fragrant be.

—Herrick

I do not claim that there have never been Christians among the colored races, but I do claim what to me seems obvious: The celebration of Christmas is largely a European celebration because faith in Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior, has been largely a European faith. As the Europeans' faith in the Babe in the manger has declined, so have they declined as a people. The Europeans will be forever linked to Christianity. If they choose to continue to live in the slime pits of liberalism, they will cease to exist as a people. If they regain their vision of the Star of Bethlehem they will be the light of the world and they will strive as a people.

Obviously, we can't become Christians for utilitarian reasons, but we can open up our hearts to Christ the Lord and become men and women of faith. I don't say that faith is easy – it is not. But what of our ancestors, whom the liberals demonize and tell us to dismiss? They believed, because they loved much – they loved the Christ who enters human hearts.

It is the time of year to join our hearts to our kith and kin, alive and dead, to celebrate our Savior's birth. The older I get, the more loved ones I have who have gone to the Lord. But I believe that they celebrate Christmas with me. If you have just lost a loved one during this Christmas season, you cannot celebrate as you were wont to. But if we believe in the promise of Christmas, if we believe that the Babe in the manger is Christ the Lord, then the memory, over time, of our loved one's death is transformed into a hope for their resurrection from the dead. What are the words of the old Christmas carol? "The hopes and fears of all the years are met in thee tonight."

The shadow of the cross hangs over all our Christmases, just as it hung over His birth in a manger.

*He was bruised for our iniquities.
The chastisement of our peace was upon him;
And with his stripes we are healed.*

I believe the Babe in the manger is the Son of God, and I hope that there will always be at least seven thousand who remain on earth to follow the Star of Bethlehem. God bless you, and Merry Christmas! +

A note to my readers: For my December 23rd and December 30th posts, the usual short story will appear instead. The regular blog will resume on January 6th.

Remembrances VII: The Return to Bethlehem

December 23, 2017

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances



From God our Heavenly Father
A blessed angel came,
And unto certain shepherds
Brought tidings of the same,
How that in Bethlehem was born
The Son of God by name.

It's been three years since the forces of Christian Britain established a foothold in Moslem Britain, and it's been three years since the Reverend Christopher Grey last completed a remembrance. He has written many a letter and many a sermon in the past three years, but he has not had time to make more than rough sketches of new remembrances. Nor is he likely, alas, to finish another remembrance. I promised him I'd 'tidy up' some of his correspondence and the remembrances for him if he was unable to get back to them. And who am I? I am Francesco Bontini, formerly a priest in the Roman Catholic Church, now defrocked, formerly a citizen of my beloved Italy, now in exile, and a friend of the Rev. Grey for the past twenty-five years. I am 70 years old, and the Rev. Grey is 101 years old. He is currently awaiting yet another trial for his life, this time in Italy at the Vatican court. There is no doubt that he will be sentenced to death as he was three years ago in London, but I don't want to get ahead of myself, nor do I want to go too far afield from fulfilling the task the Rev. Grey gave me. I am to devote my time to his correspondence and his remembrances.

Let me quote from the Reverend's last completed remembrance to set the stage for what follows:

The fall of Britain did not come by way of an invasion. It came at the invitation of the liberals. The hatred of the white race that was so manifest in the white-hating Jacobins such as Price and Priestly became the religion of the modern university-trained Britons. So this land of dear souls, at least still dear to me, is now "leas'd out" to the Moslems. The liberals called them refugees and hoped to use them to destroy their enemies, which were all white Britons, but they miscalculated. The Moslems were supposed to be grateful to the liberals, and as a token of their gratitude they were supposed to become a part of white-hating Liberaldom. Instead, they set up their own Moslem state in which the liberals who weren't executed played only a supporting role.

At first the "refugees" were content to do things democratically. They won a few elections and occupied most of London so that the police were afraid to act against them when they committed felonies such as rape, murder, and armed robbery, but after a few years of nominal control of Britain's larger cities the Moslems decided to take complete control. They did away with democracy and set up a Moslem state. Britain was divided into nine fiefdoms, with a caliph at the head of each. The high Caliph resided in London at Buckingham Palace, the former home of the Kings and Queens of Britain.

The various members of the British parliament voted, before they were dismissed, for the execution of the royal family and anyone who was even remotely connected to the royal line of descent. The Queen, her husband, Prince George, Prince Stephen and Princess Margaret, were all executed on the old chopping block that was the site of so many royal beheadings in the past. Only Prince Arthur survived, but I'll come back to him later. By sacrificing the royal family the members of Parliament had hoped not only to save their lives, they also hoped to obtain some position in the new Moslem government. This was only the case with about 15% of the members of Parliament. That was the approximate number of parliamentary members who did obtain minor posts in one of the Moslem fiefdoms. Having spent a lifetime betraying their own people they made themselves useful to the various caliphs by sniffing out any white resistance to Moslem rule and reporting that resistance to the caliph in their particular fiefdom. But there is only room for so many slimy informants in any administration. Eighty-five percent of the former members of the British Parliament were executed along with their families two weeks after they voted for the execution of the royal family.

There was no resistance to the Moslem takeover within the ranks of the military or the police for the simple reason that there was no official takeover. The liberals voted to dissolve their government and turn the reins of power over to the caliphs. So when the caliphs came in they inherited the liberals' military and the liberals' police. The members of the military and police forces had been trained to support the state so when the state became Moslem, the police and the military, having been raised with no moral instincts, simply continued working for the Moslem state. There were some executions of the higher ranking officials in all the armed forces so that the leadership positions could be occupied by Moslems, but the regular rank and file police officers and the rank and file soldiers were allowed to continue to serve the new Moslem state. The white policemen and the white members of the military were often harder on the native-born white British civilians than the Moslem soldiers and policemen were, because the white policemen and soldiers wanted to prove their loyalty to the new government.

Some of the pagan nationalist parties had welcomed the Moslem invaders in the hope that they would put paid to the Jews' account, but the old saying, "Be careful what you wish for, because you might get more than you bargained for," could be applied to the neo-pagan nationalists just as it could be applied to their liberal enemies and counterparts. The feminists who all wanted to sleep with the refugees and said, "Better rapists than racists," soon discovered that rape was not as pleasant in reality as it was in their fantasies. Nor was being one wife among many as fulfilling as they had hoped.

Nor were the neo-pagans who wanted the Moslems to crack down on the feminists and the Jews delighted to learn that they, just by virtue of being white, were considered to be Christian and outside the ken of Moslem humanity. They were not allowed to become part of Islamic Britain.

And the blacks? They went back to their natural state. The Moslems used them as slaves and henchmen. So long as they got their share of white blood and white women, they seemed quite content to descend from the pedestal that the liberals had put them on.

The brunt of the invasion, which was more of betrayal than an invasion, fell upon the native-born white Britons. They never believed, even as the Moslems and the third world scum poured into their nation, that their government, their own people, would hand them over to the tender mercies of the Moslems. But of course that is exactly what happened. Some families, far too few, saw what was coming and attempted to go rural, but simply going rural delayed the Moslems for a time, it didn't provide any long-term solution to the problem of an Islamic Britain.

The executions were not wholesale, but they were not non-existent either. If any member of a white British family was suspected of any resistance to Sharia law, the whole family was exterminated. My rough estimate is that about 40% of the white Britons were exterminated after the official Moslem takeover. And the rest of the Brits were watched carefully by the traitors who used to sit in Parliament, but now spent their time looking for the enemies of Islam. And when you look for enemies, you usually find them, whether they are real enemies or imaginary ones.

The church men fared better than Parliament and the native-born. The Anglican and Roman Catholic churches simply proclaimed that Allah was God and Jesus Christ was a subordinate prophet to Mohammed. This enabled them to maintain their tax-exempt status and to continue holding church services. The state religion was, of course, Islam. Anyone who openly avowed Christianity or who was discovered to have avowed Christianity in private was immediately executed.

But there were a few — my friend John Chambers was one — who saw what was coming and went underground before the Moslem takeover. John and a few stalwart Britons are at large and they constitute a fighting remnant that I hope will grow into an army that will ultimately, led by Arthur II, drive the Moslems from Britain. But I'm getting ahead of myself. I'm still not ready to talk about Prince Arthur, the young man who was born to be King of Britain.

My own case was a curious one. I had a long record of open hostility to Islam, liberalism, and black barbarism. I had not had a position in the official church for over 25 years, but I was perceived to be the leader of Christian Britain. I never ceased my walks through London even after the Moslem takeover; and I even managed to save some white Britons from being raped and murdered by roving black and Moslem gangs. I didn't know why I was unmolested at the time, but I later learned that it was because I was considered to be a special case that had to be handled in a special way. When I was finally arrested, I was not formally charged or arraigned. I spent three months in prison before I was told the charge against me and what my fate was.

Christopher was sentenced to death after that trial, but he escaped and lived to see Prince Arthur become King Arthur II and reclaim most of Wales, Cornwall, and a small segment of Scotland for Christian Britain. Most of Britain is still in the hands of the Moslems, but white Britons now have a foothold in Britain even if it is a tenuous foothold. The majority of whites that are still living in Britain have sided with the Moslems against their own people. Why have they done so? It's not easy to fathom, but it seems to me that the white grazers, as Christopher calls them, think they have a better chance to survive if they adhere to the Islamic-Liberal state than to the Christian state of King Arthur. And they may be right, from a purely amoral, practical standpoint. But what the white grazers do not realize is that it is King Arthur's presence that has enabled the white grazers to survive. Once there was a place of refuge to flee to, the Caliph thought it wise to loosen up some of the restrictions on the whites living within Moslem Britain. If they lost all their whites, who would run the hospitals and provide the technological services necessary to maintain a nation? Certainly not the negroes. When the whites had no place to flee to, the Moslems' attitude was 'take it or leave it,' knowing full well that there was no place to go. Now, they must be more careful. They still kill the blasphemers, but they are a little more careful about their killing. If a white Briton can help keep Moslem Britain going, he is now in less danger than before King Arthur established Christian Britain.

The standard of living in new Britain — or is it old Britain? — is certainly lower than the British people were used to, but there is life, spiritual life, in this nation. We are certainly on the right path. What will follow? Will we retake all of Britain, or will we ultimately be eradicated from the face of the earth? I don't know, I'm not a prophet. In the meantime my friend and mentor has given me a task to do.

Some years back Peter Delaine came to see Christopher in his study. He gave Christopher a manuscript to read, written by Delaine's great-grandfather, who was also named Peter Delaine. His great-grand sire told about the murder of his father at the hands of Haitian savages and the rescue of his mother, his sister, and himself from those same savages. The man who rescued him was his uncle Brian Delaine. I'll let Peter Delaine describe his uncle:

My uncle was three years younger than my father and came to Saint-Domingue one year after my father did. Like my father he was completely loyal to France and did not see himself as any less of a Frenchman because he chose to seek his fortune in French Saint-Domingue instead of in France. But in every other way, my uncle was different from my father. Father was a man of slender build, very handsome and calm in temperament. I never once heard my father raise his voice in anger. In contrast, my uncle had a much more volatile nature. He often raised his voice in anger and quite often, when angry, seemed on the verge of physical violence, especially during some of his heated arguments with Father Genevesse.

My uncle was several inches shorter than my father, but he actually appeared taller because of his large, almost herculean physique. It was amazing that two brothers with the same bloodlines could look so different. My father looked every inch the French Aristocrat, while my uncle looked more like a French peasant than a French aristocrat.

Despite their differences in personality, or maybe because of those differences, my father and my uncle were very close. It was a great disappointment to my father when my uncle decided not to settle down on an estate next to him. Instead my uncle invested his part of the family fortune in a merchant ship and became a seafaring man. Because of the life he chose, he was frequently away from Saint-Domingue on long voyages of a mercantile nature. I don't think my father quite approved of the seafaring life, but he never reproached my uncle for it, although he would occasionally make a joke about finding a good wife for Uncle Brian who would make him stay on land for more than just one week every other month.

I, of course, was very interested in my uncle's voyages. I always looked forward to his visits to our estate, when he would tell me stories of his travels and the seafaring men who accompanied him on his voyages.

My uncle knew that my father didn't approve of the life he had chosen, so he always prefaced his stories with, "If your father permits, I'll tell you of..." My father always permitted it, because he loved his brother and he loved me. And despite my love for my uncle's sea stories, I never considered any life for myself other than the one my father wanted me to have, that of a French aristocrat tending to his plantation in Saint-Domingue.

It was a good life. Much has been written, since that way of life has disappeared, about lazy, good-for-nothing French aristocrats who lived off the sweat of black slaves. That is a lie, just as the Jacobin story of fat, indolent aristocrats who deserved to be guillotined in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity is a lie. The truth is that the black man lived off the sweat, ingenuity and vision of the white ruling class. Now that Saint-Domingue is Haiti, what is the lot of the black man? Rape, murder, poverty, and mayhem are normal in the Haiti of the black man. They were vile aberrations in the Saint-Domingue of the French aristocrats.

The climactic events of my life happened when I was 16, two years after the French Revolution. That is how long it took before liberty, equality, and fraternity brought rivers of blood to Saint-Domingue.

I am 95 years old, but I have carried the memory of the events of 79 years ago with me through all these years. Nothing will ever erase the memory of that terrible night and its aftermath.

After the night of sorrows when Peter's father was murdered, he and his family settled in England. But Brian Delaine continued his seafaring life. He became a Scarlet Pimpernel-type figure, going back to Haiti and to France on several occasions:

"Like the Scarlet Pimpernel he kept his identity secret. Unlike the Scarlet Pimpernel he had no songs written about him, but amongst the French émigré population in England he was called the scourge of Jacobinism. He never reconciled with the French government, not under Napoleon nor the Republic. My uncle, a descendant of Brian Delaine, told me that whenever the topic of reconciliation came up Brian Delaine simply stated, 'They are all regicides; I will never make peace with them.' And he never did."

"He lived the rest of his life in England?"

"Yes, except for his rescue missions to France and two or three trips to Haiti."

"Why Haiti? What was there left for him to do?"

"My uncle never gave me any details about those trips. All he said was that his great grandfather's excursions to Haiti were for rescue and punitive purposes. So I can only assume that the family sword was unsheathed again on those missions."

Before he was taken prisoner by the Vatican Army, Christopher was working on a translation of a segment of Brian Delaine's diary that his great, great-nephew had in his possession at the time of his death. Much of the diary was illegible, but Christopher was able to understand the essential details of a rescue mission, prior to the rescue mission that was included in his remembrance of Peter Delaine, in Jacobin France during the reign of Robespierre. Brian Delaine had reason to believe that his oldest brother's daughter, the brother who stayed in France, was still alive. He set out to find her and bring her back to England with him. In order to do that he needed to penetrate one of the Jacobin enclaves in order to come into contact with a Jacobin woman who knew, according to Brian's informants, the whereabouts of his niece. What follows is Christopher's translation of Brian Delaine's diary. As he often does, Christopher put the diary in dramatic form, without altering the essential narrative of Brian Delaine. Christopher explained to me that what would have been impossible for most French aristocrats of that time, to pose as a member of the French lower class, was possible for Brian Delaine because of the sea-faring life he had led. Granted he was a captain, not a seaman, but he had come in contact with all sorts of men from the lower classes. He knew how they talked and he could ape their manners. What follows is Christopher's translation of Brian Delaine's first rescue mission to Jacobin France.

Cast of Characters

Butcher

Priest – Father Sieyès

Revolutionary Poet and Man of Paris – Peter Chalier

Feminist – Rose Lacombe

Petty Thief and Informant

Strongman, Lackey for Madame Lacombe – Gorgo

Brian Delaine, assuming the identity of a common seaman named Charles Delarose

Act I. Scene I. A room above a butcher shop in Paris

Poet: I don't see why we have to meet here all the time. There is no need for secrecy anymore, the Revolution has taken care of that.

Butcher: Why shouldn't we meet here?

Poet: Because the place stinks of rotten meat, that's why.

Butcher: It doesn't stink, I use only fresh meat. I don't keep rotting flesh on the premises.

Father Sieyès: (laughing) Maybe what we smell is the rotting flesh of the headless bodies cast off by Madame Guillotine.

Petty Thief: We still meet here because Madame Lacombe wants us to meet here.

Poet: And we must always do what Madame Lacombe tells us to do.

Butcher: Don't try to act like you're not afraid of her, we are all afraid of her, and you're no exception.

Poet: I am a poet, I fear no man and no woman.

Butcher: Nonsense. I say that you are afraid of her.

Petty Thief: What do you mean when you say you are a poet? Are poets without fear? No one with an ounce of common sense would willingly run afoul of Madame Lacombe. She is a trusted lieutenant of Robespierre himself. One false step, and you'll be facing Madame Guillotine yourself, Monsieur Poet. Your verses won't save you.

Butcher: Or she might have you strangled instead. That imbecilic giant that is always by her side will do whatever she commands.

Father Sieyès: Where did he come from?

Butcher: He used to be a strongman in a circus. He has the strength of ten men but the mind of a child.

Petty Thief: (laughing) A cruel child!

Butcher: He serves his purpose. But (staring at the poet) don't tell me you're not afraid of Madame Lacombe?

Poet: Well, where is she? She is the one who called the meeting.

Butcher: She'll be here.

Petty Thief: (laughing) She probably had to spend time with her aristocratic girls.

Butcher: Don't let her hear you say that.

Poet: Why not? This is the new France — if Madame Lacombe wants to use the young women for her own needs before she turns them over to Madame Guillotine, why should that be any concern to the rest of France?

Butcher: There is no reason at all, but I still don't think she would like to hear people talking about it.

Father Sieyès: There is one man who doesn't appear to be afraid of her.

Poet: And who is that?

Father Sieyès: This new recruit that she has brought among us. I don't like him.

Poet: Because he doesn't seem to fear Madame Lacombe?

Father Sieyès: That's partly it, but it is also because he doesn't seem to love the Revolution. He says the right things, but I don't trust him. He speaks only when spoken to, and then he says very little.

Petty Thief: (looking at the poet) That is very refreshing considering the way some people run at the mouth.

Poet: Shut your face.

Father Sieyès: I hate the old regime and everything connected to it.

Butcher: Even the Son of God?

Father Sieyès: Yes, especially the Son of God. But I've learned to know my enemy. That sailor, or so he says, has the mark of an aristocrat, a Frenchman of the old regime.

Petty Thief: I don't think Madame Lacombe can be so easily fooled as you think.

Father Sieyès: I don't say that she is wrong, I say that she might have been deceived by this man.

Poet: Well, there are ways to test him.

Father Sieyès: Then I suggest we test him.

any German lady here, and such attempts to assassinate her, and such a triumphant procession from Windsor to the Old Jewry, and I assure you, I shall be quite as full of natural concern and just indignation.'

Butcher: Burke is just a scribbler, he does us no harm.

Poet: I disagree, Burke has the...

Father Sieyès: The poetic?

Poet: Yes.

Petty Thief: But he lives in England. What can we do about him?

Madame Lacombe: You? Probably nothing. But he (pointing to the poet) and he (pointing to the priest) might be able to combat him in their writings.

Poet. That is impossible.

Father Sieyès: Why?

Poet: Because neither you nor I possess Burke's poetical gifts. He writes with an eloquence that is second only to Shakespeare.

Father Sieyès: Then you are an aristocrat?

Poet: No, I am not. I am the son of the gutter, who knew neither father nor mother.

Petty Thief: But you were raised by aristocrats.

Poet: I was adopted when I was five years old by an aristocratic family. They took me from a convent orphanage. They loved me and educated me. And in return I betrayed them when Robespierre came into power.

Father Sieyès: Why, if they loved you and treated you well did you betray them?

Poet: Because I hated them. I hated their superiority, which is what they called 'charity.' I am not fooled by such posturing. At the heart of their charity was a desire to lord it over me, to treat me as inferior because I needed kindness. So I rejected their kindness. And it was my testimony that sent them and my brothers and sisters by adoption to the guillotine. So don't tell me I'm an aristocrat. I am of the people. But I believe in knowing your enemy. So I tell you, no living man can match Burke's eloquence.

Father Sieyès: Then what should be done about Burke?

Poet: There are two ways to destroy him. The first is to bring up sordid details of his amours.

Father Sieyès: He had no amours. His personal life is quite free of clandestine affairs.

Poet: Then you must deal with him by the second way.

Father Sieyès: Which is?

Poet: Kill him. There are plenty of English Jacobins who would be quite willing to kill him.

Butcher: For the cause?

Poet: Or for money?

Madame Lacombe: Such decisions will be made by Citizen Robespierre. The people of this cell should focus on Delaine and the other French aristocrats. Do your job and France will remain a free republic. We can't rest. The king is dead, the queen will be next. And then all of Europe will follow us.

Father Sieyès: Amen to that.

I meant that metaphorically.

Madame Lacombe: (glaring at him) The meeting is over.

Poet: If you have doubts about this Delarose let me sift him. I'll find out if he is truly with us.

Father Sieyès: Yes, do that. And let me know as soon as possible. Her judgment is not infallible. I do not trust that man.

Poet: Leave it to me.

Act I. Scene II. A street of Paris

Poet: Father Sieyès distrusts you because he doesn't know where you come from and you never speak at the meetings.

Delaine: I have nothing to say. Madame Lacombe finds me useful. When she no longer finds me useful, I will find other employment.

Poet: When Madame Lacombe no longer finds you useful, you most probably will not be able to find other employment. It's difficult to work when your head has been separated from your body.

Delaine: I suppose it is.

Poet: Doesn't that scare you?

Delaine: Does it scare you?

Poet: I suppose it does. I do not have a martyr complex as so many of those Christians used to have. I want to live.

Delaine: Why?

Poet: Ah, there you have me. I suppose I want to live so I can indulge my appetites a little longer. When I'm no longer able to indulge my appetites, I probably won't fear death as much as I do now. But this isn't right, you must do some of the talking.

Delaine: Why?

Poet: So I can tell Father Sieyès that you are not a traitor.

Delaine: I don't give a damn what you tell Father Sieyès.

Poet: So, I must report that I have failed to prove you guilty and I have failed to prove you innocent?

Delaine: You can report what you like. I am going that way and I don't want you to follow. Goodbye.

Poet: (to himself) Well, round one to you, Citizen Delarose, but I will find you out yet. Just give me time.

From Brian Delaine's Journal

What kind of country is it when these Neros of the gutter, these Jacobins, can kill thousands and thousands of innocent men, women, and children simply because they wear lace collars or say the Lord's Prayer? France the nation no longer exists. What I see before me is a portal to hell. My niece has been turned over to the Jacobin Tribunal for trial. There is no doubt about her sentence. If she dies it will mean I have perished. If I live she will live. We shall see.

Act II. Scene I. The Trial

Judge Trinhard: Juliet Delaine, you are accused of crimes against the people of France, how do you plead?

Juliet: I'm not guilty. It is this Tribunal that is guilty, it is you, and Robespierre, and every member of your council who have murdered my family and my fellow countrymen. I can understand why a poor man might steal bread for his family, but I cannot understand how men like you, who are not starving nor poor, can kill other human beings with no pangs of conscience, without the slightest thought for the God of Mercy. I don't want to die before I've lived, but I will gladly place my head on the chopping block and go to my God than live one more day in your France, which you have made a hell on earth. I am a Christian, I am a Delaine, and I am French. I spit on you and Robespierre and all the Jacobin pigs in this courtroom.

Trinhard: She is condemned from her own mouth.

And yet the court might be lenient. We might change your death sentence to imprisonment. You are only 14 years old, you might be reformed. If you would tell us the whereabouts of your uncle, you needn't die on the guillotine.

Juliet: The last words I shall speak in this court are the words of my Savior: "Into thy hands I commend my spirit."

Trinhard: You shall die the death. Send me prisoner 52.

Trinhard: Guilty, now send me prisoner 53...

Act II. Scene II. Robespierre's chambers.

Robespierre: Citizeness Lacombe tells me that you can deliver Brian Delaine into my hands.

Chalier: Yes, I think I can.

Robespierre: I don't deal in what you think you can do. Can you or can you not deliver Brian Delaine into my hands?

Chalier: I can if you allow me access to his niece.

Robespierre: She is in prison – she has been sentenced to death. What is to be gained by talking to her? Do you think she will tell you something that she would not tell the Tribunal under threat of death? What can you do that the Tribunal can't?

Chalier: I can win her confidence. I can give her a friend to speak to in her last days. Make her one of the last of this group sentenced to die. Give me five days in prison with her. I was raised by aristocrats, I can pass for one. Place me in the cell with the others, and I will talk with her as a brother, as one who has also been condemned to die. And she will tell me something, I'm sure, that will lead to the capture of her uncle.

Robespierre: How can you be sure that her uncle is even in Paris?

Chalier: Because I know him.

Robespierre: You have met him?

Chalier: No, but I know him. For he too is a poet. I don't mean that he writes verse, but he is a poet in spirit. He will not let his niece die without making an effort to save her. No matter what the odds, he will try to save her.

Robespierre: You seem to admire him.

Chalier: No, I hate him. I hate him as Satan hates Christ, his poetic genius rebukes mine. I mean to triumph over him.

Robespierre: Bah, I hate all poets. I spit on you. There is only one thing necessary: That the republic should be cleansed of everyone who opposes the will of the people. The people – my will is their will and my will is stronger than poetry, than God, and every other obstacle in my path. They thought I was weak, those royalists, those aristocrats, but it was they who were weak. I have killed the King, and soon the Queen will walk the same path to the guillotine. Brian Delaine will die, if you can bring him to me, you shall be rewarded. But I don't need you; remember that you need me. It is my will which sustains France.

Act II. Scene III.

Chalier: (to Juliet) You cried out in your sleep on three different occasions last night.

Juliet: You stayed near me then?

Chalier: Yes, I shall stay near you to the end.

Juliet: You remind me of my older brother. He always took care of me. They killed him – it has all been one nightmare after another. What have we done to deserve this?

Chalier: Nothing. They are men possessed by the devil, there is no other explanation. But you mustn't lose your faith in Christ. Did not our Lord tell us that the world would hate us? We go to a better place.

Juliet: I want to die well, as my father, mother, and brother did. But I am so afraid. (she cries)

Chalier: (gently stroking her hair) There, there. Death is only terrible in the anticipation of it. When it happens, it is over quickly and then we enter the next world, a better world I'm sure.

Juliet: You've been such a comfort to me these last days, I feel so close to you.

Chalier: I feel close to you. I never had a sister. But you have become, at the end of my life, my sister and my whole family. They have killed my father and mother as they killed yours. And even my uncle, to whom I was quite close, was sent to the guillotine. I have no blood relations left alive. Like you, I am an orphan.

Juliet: I have an uncle, two cousins, and an aunt that are still alive.

Chalier: Indeed! Who are they?

Juliet: My uncle (in a whisper) – is Brian Delaine.

Chalier: I never knew that was your last name. This Brian Delaine is a famous man. The Jacobins hate him.

Juliet: I know, they offered me my freedom if I would tell them where he is.

Chalier: But you wouldn't tell them?

Juliet: Never!

Chalier: Is he in Paris?

Juliet: Truly, I don't know.

Chalier: What is he like, this man called Brian Delaine?

Juliet: He is the youngest of the three sons of Edmund Delaine. My other uncle was killed in Haiti by the black Jacobins, but my Uncle managed to save my cousins and my aunt. He is a sea captain.

Chalier: I think I might have met him once on the docks. He is a tall, thin man with an aristocratic bearing, is he not?

Juliet: No, that was not my uncle you met. My uncle is of medium height and incredibly strong and well built. But he was always very kind to me and my brother. Whenever he visited he brought us presents and told us stories.

Chalier: You say your uncle saved your aunt and your cousins from the black savages of Haiti?

Juliet: Yes.

Chalier: How?

Juliet: By killing the savages that killed his brother and were trying to kill his brother's family.

Chalier: Was he wounded in the fight?

Juliet: I don't know. He was wounded at some time in his life because he has a deep scar along his right cheekbone.

Chalier: (carefully masking his excitement) No doubt a man such as your uncle could have gotten that scar in one of many fights.

Juliet: Yes.

Chalier: Do me one favor?

Juliet: Anything.

Chalier: Let me kiss your hand before I go. I didn't want to alarm you, but I am the next to go to the guillotine. Do not cry again, my little one. Think of me when it is your turn and remember that it all passes in a moment.

Act II. Scene IV. Room above the butcher shop

Priest: Did you tell Madame Lacombe about Delaine?

Poet: No, I just told her that she was to bring him with her by order of Robespierre.

Priest: Did she ask any questions.

Poet: She tried to but...

Priest: Yes, now you have the upper hand.

Poet: That's right. Delaine was able to deceive her and now she just might go to the guillotine with him.

Priest: Are the soldiers posted?

Poet: Yes, don't worry about that. As soon as Delaine walks through that door, there will be twenty muskets pointed at him.

Priest: Don't forget that I was suspicious of him from the start.

Poet: You were right. But don't you forget that I was the one who found out who he was.

Priest: Has the girl been executed yet?

Poet: Not yet, she is going to be executed with her uncle.

Priest: Her execution does not upset you?

Poet: No, why should it?

Priest: It shouldn't, a true revolutionary dedicates himself to the revolution. But I thought that you might have some remnant of sentiment in you. So many of you literary people do.

Poet: I don't. And why do you question my dedication to the revolution? I could just as easily question your dedication. After all many of your co-religionists have been executed. And do you not profess to serve Christ who is the one rallying point of the aristocrats?

Priest: Whomever Christ may have been, he is not my master. I serve the church of man. And man can only be man when he throws off all the superstitions from the past.

Poet: That's where you are wrong, my good father. Maybe you or I don't need superstition, but the people do. They must have gods.

Priest: Robespierre is going to give them some.

Poet: Just like that? No, Father, harvest gods and other such deities will not ultimately satisfy the people. They are happy now as they watch the aristocrats losing their heads, but once that stops they'll start looking for something else. And what will you give them?

Priest: Their freedom.

Poet: Ah, but they don't want freedom. They want to worship a god, and having once worshipped a human God they can't go back to the impersonal gods of paganism.

Priest: What do you suggest?

Poet: Give them the natural savage, give them the negro.

Priest: That will come, but first we must kill all the aristocrats.

Poet: We shall. And in one half-hour we will have a most dangerous aristocrat in our hands.

Priest: That could lead to something more for you. You might be put in charge of Burke's assassination.

Poet: I would like that. He has already done great damage to the cause in England. But his death will still be a great good. I hope I will be given that assignment. But I must come back to something you said.

Priest: What was that?

Poet: You said "whomever Christ might have been." I take it that you do not believe that he was the son of God?

Priest: Not any more than I am a son of God.

Poet: That's curious, because I do believe He was the son of God.

Priest: Surely, as an educated man you can't believe in fairy tales?

Poet: But I do. I believe in the son of God because I hate him. My hate is such a part of me that if I was to deny its reality, I would have to deny myself. I live for that hate; there is nothing for me without it. My entire life, in the streets, in the orphanage, and then in the house of the aristocrats who adopted me, was one long admonishment to love sweet and gentle Jesus, because he loved me. Bah, did I ever ask for his love? No, I did not, and I never shall. Satan will take me as his equal and I prefer equality with the devil to a subservience to Christ.

Priest: I don't see how a man, an educated man such as yourself, can become so obsessed with myths.

Poet: Ah, my friend, they are not myths. In fact...

Priest: Quiet, I hear someone coming.

Butcher: He killed them both.

Priest: Calm down. Who was killed and by whom?

Butcher: (glancing at the poet) I know you said to tell no one why I was to bring Delarose, I mean Delaine, here, but she got it out of me.

Poet: You fool! What did she do when she found out?

Butcher: We were in her shop. She told Gorgo to kill him. But... oh, it was horrible. They wrestled. You won't believe it, but I saw it with my own eyes. That Delaine, that fiend, he killed Gorgo, he broke his neck. Then, as Gorgo sank to the floor, Madame Lacombe pulled that pistol she carries. But Delaine leaped across the room and knocked her hand just as she fired. The bullet struck her in the heart. I stood there petrified. I thought he was going to kill me as well. But he didn't. He said, 'My niece lives. I exchanged places with the jailer for one hour. Tell your friend Chalier that we will meet again someday. And that day will be his last day on earth.'

Le Blanc: Even though I knew it was coming, I still can't believe it happened.

Burke: I can't get those lines of Shakespeare out of my head: "Humanity must perforce prey on itself, Like monsters of the deep." It is truly a monstrous act. I never dreamed since I last saw Her Majesty some sixteen years ago – she was the Dauphiness then – at the Palace of Versailles, that she would be humiliated, tortured, and then beheaded by a band – there is no other word for it – of devils.

Le Blanc: I was privileged to call her and her husband my friends. I haven't told my wife and children the news yet. I don't trust myself to tell them without breaking down.

Burke: You'll find a way. I've lost a wife and a son. All we can do in the face of death is cling to our common hope. And He is the one the Jacobins hate. They attack Him through His people.

Le Blanc: Yes, have we ever seen hell on earth in all its hideousness before these Jacobins took power?

Burke: Never. Not in Nero's Rome nor in Islamic Spain was it quite so blatant.

Le Blanc: And it is my nation that has led the way, at least what used to be my nation.

Burke: The Jacobin illness is spreading though. Here in Britain there are many Jacobin organizations.

Le Blanc: Yes, but Britain has something that France did not have.

Burke: What?

Le Blanc: Britain has Edmund Burke. Surely there can be no Jacobinism where Burke lives.

Burke: I have one voice and my sword is a pen. I don't think that will be enough to stop the Jacobin plague from spreading to Britain. But then I am not a prophet.

Le Blanc: You've been rejected by your own party, haven't you?

Burke: Yes, I'll make my farewell speech tomorrow.

Le Blanc: The whole lot of them – Fox, Priestly, Price, Shelburne and the rest should be boiled in oil.

Burke: I lived and worked with them for many years, but it seemed I never really knew them nor they me. It's unthinkable that any man would support the Jacobins, but to find that men you thought were your friends could support them is terrible.

Le Blanc: I have no explanation for what is happening.

Burke: I fear there is only one explanation – the Jacobins are of the devil. I see, in all this turmoil, the sneering face of the devil. It's best we put on, as St. Paul enjoins us, the whole armour of Christ.

Le Blanc: Yes. And in the meantime, you should not go anywhere unarmed.

Burke: Why? Soon they'll be rid of me; I won't have a seat in Parliament, so why should they kill me?

Le Blanc: Because in Parliament or out of Parliament, you are still Edmund Burke, a man with a heart opposed to their vile Jacobinism and a pen that throws their lies back in their faces.

Buke: I'm not a duelist. I will walk these streets as I have always walked them, but I thank you for your concern.

Act III. Scene II. An upper room in a London dwelling

Priestly: You understand that there must be no connecting link between Dr. Price, myself, or any of the English Jacobins and you and your people?

Chalier: I understand. I have four French assassins with me. They will do their work very efficiently without asking any questions.

Dr. Price: And afterwards?

Chalier: We will disappear completely. We will be back in Paris the next day. I have made all the arrangements.

Priestly: I suppose you wonder why we are taking the trouble to have Burke killed since he is resigning from the party tomorrow.

Chalier: On the contrary, I approve of what you are doing. Burke is a great danger in or out of Parliament.

Price: I'm glad you can see that. We are not having him killed because we are bloodthirsty or out of any kind of personal animosity. It is because we love humanity, at least what humanity can become one day. And Burke could set humanity back hundreds of years.

Chalier: I suppose men become Jacobins for different reasons. I don't care for humanity at all. I want humanity to be destroyed. And the Jacobins are great destroyers. As for Burke, I hate him. When I kill him, it will be for hate's sake and not for humanity's sake. And frankly, gentlemen, you make me sick with all your talk of humanity. You hate Burke because he makes you feel foolish every time he speaks out against Jacobinism.

Priestly: I don't understand you. Are you on our side or not?

Chalier: I am on Satan's side. Yes, I believe in the devil. Does that surprise you? It surprised Father Sieyès as well. Am I on your side then if I side with Satan? Yes, I am. Although you might not acknowledge it, you are on Satan's side as well.

Price: Nonsense, I am on God's side.

Chalier: What God?

Price: Nature, the greatest god of them all.

Chalier: Fine, but we have talked enough. I will kill Burke tonight. He will never deliver a farewell salvo against your exalted selves. And you shall never see me again. Goodbye.

From Brian Delaine's Diary

Chalier had four accomplices stationed along the street where Burke took his walks. Two were waiting on Gerrard Street and two were waiting on Lisle Street. Should they fail, Chalier had rented an apartment that overlooked Lisle Street from which he had a clear shot at Burke.

I followed Chalier to England because I suspected that he had been sent there to kill Burke. But I didn't know where or how he would strike until that evening. Once I knew his plan I struck first. I killed all four assassins without much trouble. They were intent on surprising Burke, which left them open to my surprise attack.

After killing Chalier's henchmen, I caught up with Burke and stopped him from walking within range of Chalier's musket. Then I killed Chalier. He had his chance. MY knife against his musket. I won't pretend that I felt any sorrow for him. He was a cold-blooded, reptilian monster, well deserving of the title — Jacobin.

Why did the Jacobins want to kill Burke? For the same reason they killed the King and Queen of France. Burke stood for old Europe, for Christ's Europe. And the Jacobins hated him for that. St. John tells us that when Christ cured the lame and sick on the Sabbath day, the Jews asked Him why He worked on the Sabbath. Christ replied, "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work." Then, St. John tells us, "Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill Him..." Anyone, if he follows in Christ's footsteps by defending Christian Europe, will be hated by the Jacobins. They will not meet such individuals in fair and open debate. They will kill such individuals with less remorse than Christian Europeans would kill a fly.

And who is the greatest defender of Christian Europe? It is Burke. That is why their hatred of him has no bounds. I long for a reckoning with them all. But I am one man. We shall see if other Europeans will rise up against the Jacobin Leviathan or whether they will be consumed by it. Burke and I went back to his home after the attack.

Act III. Scene III.

Burke: They killed their own King and Queen, so it doesn't surprise me that they wanted to kill me for my defense of the King and Queen, but I am surprised that they were able to come to Britain undetected in order to kill me.

Delaine: They had to have help from the British Jacobins.

Burke: Yes, I think you're right. And I don't think it is an accident that the attack occurred right before I was to address the Assembly for the last time. I hate to think that it has gone this far, but my heart tells me that it has. The men I once called my friends are possessed by the devil and they hate me with the satanic hatred of the devil. But I needn't tell you about the Jacobin devils. Your family has suffered so much at their hands. How is your niece doing?

Delaine: She's doing well. She has met her cousins and her aunt for the first time, and she seems ready to live in the remembrance of her family and her family's God.

Burke: Everything comes back to our common hope. They hate us, because of Him.

Delaine: Yes, they do, and He told us it would be like this.

Burke: Please, my friend, stay tonight, and if your schedule permits you can hear my resignation speech tomorrow.

Delaine: I wouldn't miss it for the world.

From Brian Delaine's Journal

I don't remember the entire speech and I didn't have a scrivener by my side, but some of the highlights stand out. Amidst sneers and jeers, Burke defended Christian Europe against the Jacobins, both foreign and domestic, cutting directly to the demonic heart of their system:

'They who have made but superficial studies in the Natural History of the human mind, have been taught to look on religious opinions as the only cause of enthusiastick zeal, and sectarian propagation. But there is no doctrine whatever, on which men can warm, that is not capable of the very same effect. The social nature of man impels him to propagate his principles, as much as physical impulses urge him to propagate his kind. The passions give zeal and vehemence. The understanding bestows design and system. The whole man moves under the discipline of his opinions. Religion is among the most powerful causes of enthusiasm. When any thing concerning it becomes an object of much meditation, it cannot be indifferent to the mind. They who do not love religion, hate it. The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. Let no one judge of them by what he has conceived of them, when they were not incorporated, and had no lead. They were then only passengers in a common vehicle. They were then carried along with the general motion of religion in the community, and without being aware of it, partook of its influence. In that situation, at worst, their nature was left free to counterwork their principles. They despaired of giving any very general currency to their opinions. They considered them as a reserved privilege for the chosen few. But when the possibility of dominion, lead, and propagation presented themselves, and that the ambition, which before had so often made them hypocrites, might rather gain than lose by a daring avowal of their sentiments, then the nature of this infernal spirit, which has "evil for it's good," appeared in its full perfection. Nothing, indeed, but the possession of some power, can with any certainty discover what at the bottom is the true character of any man. Without reading the speeches of Vergniaux, François of Nantz, Isnard, and some others of that sort, it would not be easy to conceive the passion, rancour, and malice of their tongues and hearts. They worked themselves up to a perfect phrenzy against religion and all its professors. They tore the reputation of the Clergy to pieces by their infuriated declamations and invectives, before they lacerated their bodies by their massacres. This fanatical atheism left out, we omit the principal feature in the French Revolution, and a principal consideration with regard to the effects to be expected from a peace with it.'

And how vividly I remember his final words to all the assembled Pharisees, back sliders, and hypocrites:

'I should agree with you about the vileness of the controversy with such miscreants as the "Revolution Society," and the "National Assembly"; and I know very well that they, as well as their allies, the Indian delinquents, will darken the air with their arrows. But I do not yet think they have the adyouson of reputation. I shall try that point. My dear sir, you think of nothing but controversies; "I challenge into the field of battle and retire defeated, &c." If their having the last word be a defeat, they most assuredly will defeat me. But I intend no controversy with Dr. Price, or Lord Shelburne, or any other of their set. I mean to set in full view the danger from their wicked principles and their black hearts. I intend to state the true principles of our constitution in church and state, upon grounds opposite to theirs. If any one be the better for the example made of them, and for this exposition, well and good. I mean to do my best to expose them to the hatred, ridicule, and contempt of the whole world; as I always shall expose such calumniators, hypocrites, sowers of sedition, and approvers of murder and all its triumphs. When I have done that, they may have the field to themselves, and I care very little how they triumph over me, since I hope they will not be able to draw me at their heels, and carry my head in triumph on their poles...'

The Whigs of this day have before them, in this Appeal, their constitutional ancestors: They have the doctors of the modern school. They will choose for themselves. The author of the Reflections has chosen for himself. If a new order is coming on, and all the political opinions must pass away as dreams, which our ancestors have worshipped as revelations, I say for him, that he would rather be the last (as certainly he is the least) of that race of men, than the first and greatest of those who have coined to themselves Whig principles from a French die, unknown to the impress of our fathers in the constitution.'

I must break off from Delaine's diary to deal with some recent events. But let me just say that I see in Delaine's diary and Burke's writings the exact portrait of our modern dilemma. The liberals want to attack God by striking His people, and by doing so they hope to destroy the image of God in man. Have they succeeded? To a large degree they have succeeded. There is no image of God in man in a liberal, a Moslem, or a colored heathen, but there is a resistance movement. There is the Reverend Grey and there are men such as Vogel, the leader of the resistance movement in Germany, and there are hundreds of ordinary Europeans who have cast their lot in with Christ despite the threat of dungeon, fire, and sword. The European people will not go gently into the dark night of liberalism.

Now to the recent events. The reader, if there are any readers left, might wonder why there had to be a second trial of Reverend Grey. Wasn't he tried, convicted, and sentenced to death by the Moslem-British high court? Yes, he was, but after his escape, due to the heroic intervention of Chambers and his men, the Anglican and Moslem officials put out their own false story line. They said, in order to save face and to make themselves look honorable, that the Reverend Grey had been pardoned under the condition that he not take up arms against the Moslem-British people. Then, according to the official Islamic-British government, he did take up arms against Islamic Britain. Therefore, when he was recaptured during the Battle of Cornwall (captured because he refused to leave one of our wounded and dying soldiers) the Moslem-liberal forces decided, at the request of the Vatican, to have him tried for treason, treason against the Moslem-Christian faith. How can there be a Moslem-Christian faith? Obviously there can't be such a blending. Our Lord is the beginning and the end, the first and the last. But in Pope Francis II's religion there can be a blending of Islam, Christianity, and all of the pagan faiths. Pope Francis II has placed Christ in a subordinate position to Muhammed and the nature gods of the colored heathens. Such a god is not proscribed by Islam. So Pope Francis II is permitted to perform his syncretistic mass at the Vatican and the bulk of the 'faithful' have gone along with Pope Francis and the Moslems. There has been some resistance, but as of now the resistance has been a few scattered guerrilla movements. Hopefully greater resistance will follow, but communication between white, Christian resistance movements is very difficult.

Rev. Grey then was sent to prison in Rome to be tried and sentenced to death. No one had any doubt about the upcoming death sentence. But the trial never came about. Rome was struck by an earthquake and Christopher's cell was found to be empty on the day after the earthquake. Whether he was buried in the rubble of the Vatican (he was housed in the Vatican dungeon) or whether he escaped was not known at the time. Then, two weeks after the earthquake, a man from my native Italy came to me with a letter. My countryman gave me his bona fides by telling me some things that only Christopher Grey could have known. He had a letter in his possession that was from Christopher. I felt like Horatio must have felt when he received Hamlet's letter:

I'm writing this in haste, but I just had to let you know that I am alive and no longer a captive. Please keep this secret for now. I have my reasons. It won't be long; soon I'll be in Britain again. Till then –

In Christ, God keep you.

Christopher

It wasn't long. One week after I received the letter was the third battle of Cornwall. In the first battle, some two years previous, we established the first Christian foothold in Moslem Britain. In the second battle some three months ago, we repulsed a Moslem assault on Cornwall. In that battle Christopher was taken captive. But although we repulsed the attack, the Moslem forces were not completely routed. They still were in the area surrounding Cornwall, waiting to strike. And then on December 23rd they did strike. King Arthur II was now battle tested and so was Chambers and our British soldiers, but the Moslems had the greater numbers and they had many British officers from the old British army aiding their side. It looked as if the Moslem army would triumph. Then (I received this account from Chambers) a man on a white horse appeared. I'll let Chambers tell the rest.

"It seemed completely out of place, like something from a bygone era. With a cross on his chest, a huge sword in his hand, he bid us charge the enemy. I thought of that vision of St. John, 'And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.' No, it was not the Lord. But it was his faithful apostle. It was my liege lord and kinsman, the Christ-bearer, Christopher Grey. Our men would have followed him anywhere. At that moment we became an army of Davids. We advanced behind Christopher, and we routed the Moslem forces. Cornwall is no longer in danger. I shall never, in this world, feel so connected to my people and my God as I did during that crucial moment when I followed the man on the white horse into battle for King, country, and Christ."

The next day I met with Christopher in his newly acquired dwelling at Tintagel.

Act IV. Scene I.

Bontini: Don't you think that a man past 100 years of age should live a more sedentary life?

Grey: That would be nice, but you young fellows of seventy will not allow me to retire. You keep finding work for me to do.

Bontini: I find work for you? I don't think so. I advised you not to go near the battlefield to tend to the wounded. And I certainly knew nothing about your plan to lead a charge in the last battle.

Grey: No, I don't suppose you did. So what you are saying is that I have no one to blame but myself if I have no peaceful hours.

Bontini: (smiling) Yes, that is exactly what I am saying.

Grey: I saw a marvelous American movie some years back, called *Harvey*. That wonderful American actor Jimmy Stewart was the star. He played a man whose best friend was a 6' 3 1/2" white rabbit. Nobody else could see the rabbit, just Jimmy Stewart, or, as he was called in the movie, Elwood P. Dowd.

Dowd has quite a wonderful relationship with the rabbit, but his relatives (Dowd's relatives, not the rabbit's) try to put Dowd in a mental institution. They finally desist in their efforts because they decide that despite what they perceive to be Dowd's insanity, he has a very pleasant personality that might be ruined should he be 'cured' of his white rabbit 'delusion.'

But as it turns out, there really is a white rabbit called Harvey. And the psychiatrist treating Dowd comes to see the rabbit just as clearly as Dowd does. In quite a humorous fashion the movie turns the tables on the 'sane' people and gives the nod to the 'insane' poets of the spirit. In *Harvey* it is the pure in heart that see another world, a better world. Now I grant you that *Harvey* does not give us the name of the Author of that other world – it is after all an artwork from the 20th century – but it does, with humor and grace, bid us look to a fairy tale apprehension of existence rather than a purely material apprehension of existence. I think if we follow the fairy tale, the European fairy tale, we will end up in His Kingdom Come, which, I firmly believe, is very close to us right here on earth, because He told us that the Kingdom of God was within.

Bontini: What is your heaven?

Grey: To be with my wife, my parents, and my friends right here in Britain in the presence of my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

Bontini: That might seem like a very pedestrian heaven to a lot of people.

Grey: It's all I want.

Bontini: Like Ratty and his river?

Grey: Precisely.

Bontini: It will come. Is there anything you want to tell me about your... what shall I call it? Your visit to Rome?

Grey: (laughing) It was a very strange visit.

Bontini: Because of the earthquake?

Grey: No, that was rather startling, but the strangeness of the visit was the result of my audience with Pope Francis II.

Bontini: Where did he hold the audience?

Grey: In his Papal chambers, which are now part of the Vatican ruins.

Bontini: Was it a private audience?

Grey: Yes. I was brought to his chambers in chains, and I was chained to the wall during the audience. But to the best of my knowledge, when the jailers left his chambers, we were alone.

Bontini: What was his purpose in having you brought there?

Grey: I'm not exactly sure. Let me tell you what he said and then you be the judge.

~~~~~

Pope Francis II: I hope the chains are not too uncomfortable, but they are unfortunately necessary. You have escaped before.

Grey: These chains will hold me. Say what you have to say.

Pope Francis II: I testified against you at your last trial, and I will testify against you at your trial tomorrow. But I wanted to give you one last chance.

Grey: So did the Archbishop of Canterbury. But then he only came to my cell, you've invited me to your quarters.

Pope: I believe that a man can change, even a man like you.

Grey: What do I need to change?

Pope: You need to change inside. You need to see the true essence of the world.

Grey: What is the essence of the world?

Pope: That won't do. You are not open to what I'm saying. Please, this is your last chance, your very last chance. You must really listen to me.

Let me start with that great Catholic, Pierre Teilhard de Chardin. His thought might seem commonplace now, but his thought was the beginning of the Church's realization that nature, not some anthropomorphic God, was the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. When you truly understand that concept, the whole universe is opened up for you. You become one with the natural world and the psychic world.

Grey: May I ask a few questions?

Pope: If they are genuine questions. I have no time or patience for your usual irreverence.

Grey: You find me irreverent?

Pope: Yes, I do. What would you call a man who criticizes the Church and the existing government?

Grey: I see your point. But let me ask you – where does Christ figure in this religion of yours?

Pope: It is not my religion, I did not invent it — it is the religion of mankind. As for Christ, we have dealt with Him. We have reframed his image so that He can no longer do damage to mankind.

Grey: Then He is not the Savior, the Son of the living God?

Pope: I believe I covered that topic at your last trial. And if you took the trouble to read my encyclicals you would know that the Church regards Jesus Christ as a son of God; we do not regard Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Such a concept is contrary to nature and therefore blasphemous. And that belief made mankind very unhappy. We are striving to make men happy by eliminating the concept of an anthropomorphic God, what you call the living God.

Grey: Life imitates art.

Pope: What do you mean?

Grey: You sound like the Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's novel The Brothers Karamazov.

Pope: I have not read that book, nor have I read any of Dostoyevsky's works. They are all on the Index.

Grey: And you are a good Catholic, you don't read proscribed literature?

Pope: Of course I don't. We have gone beyond all the old concepts of freedom of conscience and thought. We have fed our children the truths that can make them happy.

Grey: And those truths – what exactly are they?

Pope: That man is one with nature. That all men come from nature and all men return to nature. Personal immortality does not exist, except in its natural state. We return to nature, so we still are part of existence; we become even more natural.

Grey: Now you sound like the heretical gypsy in Scott's Quentin Durward, but then I suppose his works are also on the Index.

Pope: Yes, they are.

Grey: "For I know that my Redeemer liveth, And that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: And though worms destroy this body, Yet in my flesh shall I see God." I don't expect you to believe that, but it is true. The natural world you speak of is only a semblance of another reality. The reality of the kingdom of God that is within.

Pope: I've heard all that before.

Grey: Where did you hear it?

Pope: I've read some history. But let us come to the point. In order to avoid execution you must take

the blinders off your eyes.

Grey: Let me come to the point, the same point that I made at my last trial and the same point that I shall make to my last dying gasp. Jesus Christ is the Son of the living God, He and He alone is the resurrection and the life. Surely His words must touch your heart? "I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die; Believest thou this?" Do you believe that? If you don't, if you truly believe in the abhorrent faith you have described to me, then you are to be pitied as a man and opposed as a religious leader.

Pope: You dare say all that to me?

Grey: Yes, what else can I say?

Pope: You fiend! (he strikes Grey across the face again and again, until Grey's face bleeds and Pope Francis's hands bleed) Guards!

Take him away and send me a doctor.

---

#### Act IV. Scene II.

Bontini: Was the doctor for you?

Grey: No, it was for him. He broke his hand on one of the blows to my face.

Bontini: Your face still shows some of the marks. I thought it was from the earthquake.

Grey: No, the marks are from the Pope. They don't amount to much. As for the earthquake, it didn't touch me at all. Everything around my cell was crashing down, and I heard the screams of the dying and the cries of people trying to get to solid ground, but I was untouched.

My cell door was completely torn off its hinges. I was chained, so I thought that eventually the rubble would cover me, and I would cheat the executioners. But apparently the Lord wants me to tarry a little longer on this earth. A man came to my cell. He touched my chains and they fell off me. Then he led me up and out of the dungeon and out of Italy. He left me right before the Battle of Cornwall, but he left me armed and he left me with rather explicit instructions. His advice sounded rather unsound, from a military standpoint, but as it turned out, it was the perfect military strategy.

Bontini: Did he tell you his name?

Grey: He was an angel of the Lord, that is all I know.

Bontini: It's only 1 pm. Will you be performing *The Christmas Carol* this Christmas Eve?

Grey: Yes.

Bontini: I don't see how you can remember every line like you do.

Grey: It's part of my soul. All of sacred Europe is part of my soul. On January 1<sup>st</sup>, we'll be putting on the first production of *King Lear* in the new-old Britain. King Arthur and the Queen will be in attendance.

Bontini: It continues.

Grey: Yes.

---

#### Final Act – December 24<sup>th</sup>

Grey: (concludes his one-man performance of *The Christmas Carol*) "Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did not die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man, as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset; and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

"He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God bless Us, Every One!"

Grey: Please, stay with me for one last prayer for Christmas Eve, for Christmas Day, and for always.

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide.  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, O abide with me.

Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;  
Earth's joys grow dim; its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see;  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.

I need Thy presence every passing hour.  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's power?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.

I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness.  
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.

Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies.  
Heaven's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me. +

# The Extremism of European Christianity

January 6, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Scientism

Tags: Handel, St. John



In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish Leviathan the piercing serpent, even Leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.

- Isaiah 27: 1

---

Every Christmas I try to do what Scrooge did every Christmas before his conversion: he tried to shut out the world, because the rest of the world did not view the Christmas season as Scrooge did. But of course I try to shut out the world in order to celebrate Christmas, while Scrooge tried to shut out the world in order to avoid the celebration of our Lord's birth. While the liberals blather on about climate change, we have overlooked the incredible spiritual change that has taken place in Western civilization. The Christian European now finds himself outside the orbit of Western civilization because the civilization that once was synonymous with Christianity has become synonymous with the hatred of Christ and the Christ-bearing race.

The naysayers will dispute my claim that the European Christian has no home in modern Europe by citing the celebration of Christmas in the churches and in many European homes, but the Christmas of the antique Europeans has disappeared, except for a few isolated cases, from the face of the earth. One does not need second sight to see the spiritual desolation of Western civilization — it is all around us. We see the desolation of a land consecrated to Satan in the abortion mills, in the worship of the negro, and in the degradation of all things and people connected to European Christianity. And that is the key — ‘all things and people connected to European Christianity.’ It is all right to be a Christian as Pope Francis the blasphemer is a Christian. He condemns the antique Europeans while supporting a new fusionist Christianity which was condemned by our Lord in the Book of Revelation. But the Christianity espoused by the men and women with human hearts, the antique Europeans, is not permitted in modern Satandom.

When the Jacobins assumed power in France, there were small cabals of Jacobin supporters in all the European nations. They were not appalled by the bloodletting of Robespierre; on the contrary, they rejoiced in it. The vast majority of Europeans, however, recoiled in horror from Robespierre's purification process. (1) In some cases Jacobin advocates such as Priestly in England were driven into exile. But once the wholesale slaughter halted with Robespierre's death, the other European nations were willing to make peace with Jacobin France, despite the fact that France was still a regicide nation opposed to Christian Europe. This spirit of conciliation with the forces of liberalism spread throughout Europe, because men tend to try to appease and/or befriend an adversary that appears too formidable to defeat. When liberalism took the form of a monstrous leviathan, the Christian churches decided it was best to feed the leviathan the European people in order to save intellectual Christianity. But if Christ comes to us through humanity, how can we jettison the people with human hearts and still retain our Christian faith? It cannot be retained under those circumstances. Ever since liberalism became institutionalized throughout the European nations (and the United States is not excepted), organized Christian Jewry has made the survival of their Christian, Gnostic organizational structures their sole mission. With such a mission their main concern is to show that their branch of the Christian church is compatible with liberalism: “We are the most pro-black, pro-Moslem, pro-Jewish church in Liberaldom.” And on it goes, into the dark night of Babylon.

In the past year I have heard both Al Gore and Eleanor Clift, two mad-dog liberals, praise Pope Francis to the skies. How is that possible? It is possible because Pope Francis is an anti-Christian Christian. He hates the Christ who enters human hearts, because that Christ, the European Christ, threatens his vision of utopia, which is a multi-racial, multi-religious world of Jacobin liberals and pure and simple natural savages of color. He, like all his anti-European brethren, is determined to have a Christless Christianity by blending Christianity and liberalism. The liberal leviathan might reward the liberal churchmen by eating them last, but eventually the leviathan will consume them as well. Let us turn from the putrid pigsty of liberalism and face the leviathan, not in the spirit of compromise, but with a spirit of defiance and a determination to fight to the death. The spiritual imperative is not separate from what is practical, because the leviathan will consume the prudent compromiser as well as the uncompromising extremist. When dealing with Satan and his minions, prudence is not practical. Only the extremists, men who love and hate with all their hearts, will have a chance to defeat the liberal leviathan.

The liberals and the colored heathen are not invincible. They only appear invincible to Europeans who no longer believe in the God who lives in human hearts. When I listen to the old Christmas carols of the European people, I hear the voice of a people who genuinely loved and believed in the promise of the Christ Child. How could they believe such a fairy tale? How could they believe that God would make himself dependent on the mercy of men? It is not just the crucifixion of Christ that staggers our imaginations, it is also His willingness to be as vulnerable as a little child. Only love could make someone do what Christ did, and only people with hearts of flesh can understand the moral beauty of His divine condescension.

The liberals' attack on the European people is not as they maintain, an attempt to give the colored races equal rights with white Europeans. It is an attempt to eliminate the white race from the face of the earth so that men can live their lives free from the love of Christ. Why do the liberals seek to banish Christ by destroying the people who took Him into their hearts? For the same reason that Adam and Eve ate the apple. They sought equality with God through a mind enlightened by the devil. That is the real equality which liberals seek. But isn't it more than equality? Can the enlightened mind stand for any rivals?

The faith that endureth to the end is the faith that is grounded in the Word made flesh. If His word has no place in human hearts, it cannot come to fruition. Christ is always the Babe in the manger, dependent on human hearts. He has willed that dependence because He loves much. If we accept any part of the liberals' agenda, we have rejected His love in order to embrace the enlightened intellect of Satan, the great deceiver, who fills our minds with honest trifles in order to destroy our hearts with the one great lie — there is no Blessed Savior who loves us.

Still, even in this, the first century that began with Satan solidly ensconced on the throne of Europe, there are more grazers who have lost their way than mad-dog liberals who have embraced Satan. But it is the mad-dog liberals who rule in church and state. And they keep the grazers in line by feeding them bits and pieces of intellectual Christianity. “You can attend Christian churches so long as you worship the negro in those churches.” — “You can wave the flag so long as your patriotism consists of a utopian idea of a universal nation rather than a feeling of reverence, which is pietas, toward your kith and kin.” The white grazer needs to go off the intellectual opiates of liberalism, but he cannot see beyond liberalism to the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world and gives His people something much greater and more lasting than the intellectual opiates of liberalism.

If we accept the liberals' scientized view of the world and attempt to put Christ in that world, we will continue to be the slaves of the liberal leviathan. The modern obsession with esoteric knowledge within the ranks of practicing Christians illustrates the gap between intellectual Christianity, which serves the liberals' purpose, and the Christianity set forth in Handel's

*Messiah.* (2) In the Catholic ranks there are all kinds of disputes over which revelation of the blessed mother is the true revelation of the mind of God. Is it Fatima? Is it that seer from New Jersey or some other conduit of God's will as told to us through Mary? And in the Protestant ranks, the Book of Revelation is not seen as the testimony of the apostle John's great love for the Lamb of God, it is viewed as a book which tells us secrets – it tells us the day and the hour. In both cases, the Catholic and the Protestant, the divinely human and the human elements are left out of the picture. The Virgin Mary is worthy of our love and respect because she consented to be the hand maiden of the Lord. She is not the source of hidden secrets and special knowledge like some pagan goddess. To treat her as such demeans her and blasphemes against the Son of God. And if we view the Book of Revelation as a book that enlightens our minds about the end times, we miss the profoundly moving story of Christ's love for us and His love for His servant John. We miss the heart of the story. John weeps when there is no one worthy of opening the book with the seven seals. Then he sees that there is one who is worthy to open the book.

*And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.*

*And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?*

*And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.*

*And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.*

*And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.*

Revelations 5: 1-5

Why is John vouchsafed this miraculous vision of the Lord? Is it because He is smarter than the rest of mankind? Has he studied Aristotle? Did he put out study guides for the understanding of scripture? No, it was because he placed his head on Christ's sacred heart at the Last Supper.

John is given a vision of the living God because he loved much. He responded to God's heart with his heart. He was an extremist, just as Daniel and St. Paul were extremists. And our people, when they were Christians, were extremists. They didn't know as much about the natural world as we do, but they knew infinitely more about the real world, the world of the spirit, than we know. They knew that all things bright and beautiful come from the Christ of Europe, the same Christ that St. John saw when he was lifted up to heaven on the island of Patmos. We are never far from Christ if we stay by the European hearth fire, because our people were the mystics of the heart. They eschewed the wisdom of the Pharisees, the philosophers, and the academics, and embraced the love of the God who comes to human hearts. Life is a crucifixion, but at the heart of Europe was a faith that the crucifixion led to the resurrection. No intellectual system about God can give us the faith to believe that the grave is not the end of everything. Look to our people, to their moral vision of the Lamb of God. +

---

(1) Now even the 'conservatives' are advocates for the purification (which translates to extermination) of the white race. See *Hillbilly Elegy*.

(2) I think that Handel's *Messiah* is the proper antidote for all false intellectual versions of Christianity.

# The Inner Vision

January 13, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith, Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Shakespeare, Wilbur Daniel Steele



And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. – *Matthew 8: 3-4*

---

In 1919 a man named Wilbur Daniel Steele wrote a remarkable short story called “[The Man Who Saw Through Heaven](#). ” In the story Steel tells us of a newly married, newly ordained minister who is on his way to Africa to convert the heathen:

*In the course of the day I think I had got him fairly well. As concerned his Church he was at once an asset and a liability. He believed its dogma as few still did, with a simplicity, “the old time religion.” He was born that kind. Of the stuff of the fanatic, the reason he was not a fanatic was that, curiously impervious to little questionings, he had never been aware that his faith was anywhere attacked. A self-educated man, he had accepted the necessary smattering facts of science with a serene indulgence, as simply so much further proof of what the Creator could do when He put His hand to it. Nor was he conscious of any conflict between these facts and the fact that there existed a substantial Heaven, geographically up, and a substantial Hot Place, geographically down.*

*So, for his Church, he was an asset in these days. And so, and for the same reason, he was a liability. The Church must after all keep abreast of the times. For home consumption, with modern congregations, especially urban ones, a certain streak of “healthy” skepticism is no longer amiss in the pulpit, it makes people who read at all more comfortable in their pews. A man like Hubert Diana is more for the cause than a hundred. But what to do with him? Well, such things arrange themselves. There’s the Foreign Field. The blacker the heathen the whiter the light they’ll want, and the soldier the conception of a God the Father enthroned in a Heaven of which the sky above them is the visible floor.*

But before the Reverend Diana reaches Africa, he makes a side trip to visit an observatory where an astronomer shows him a view of the heavens as seen through the eyes of a scientist. Diana is a changed man from that moment on. He leaves his wife behind and embarks on a new mission to convert the Africans to his new cosmic religion. After four years have elapsed, Diana’s wife hires a man to help her find her husband. Wherever they go they find traces of Diana’s new religion in the form of little mud heathen idols. And finally at the end of their search they find Diana’s grave and his last mud sculpture.

“From here, Mrs. Diana, your husband walked out—“

“He had sunk to idolatry. Idolatry!”

“To the bottom, yes. And come up its whole history again. And from here he walked out into the sunshine to kneel and talk with ‘Our Father Which—‘

She got it. She caught it. I wish you could have seen the light going up those long, long cheeks as she got it:

“Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy Name!”

We went downhill in the darkness, protected against goblins by a vast rattling of gourds and beating of goat-hide drums.

Daniel read the handwriting on the Babylonians’ wall, and so did Wilbur Daniel Steele read the handwriting on the Europeans’ wall. We as a people looked at the world through the eyes of the scientist, and we lost our faith. There are many different levels on the mountain of the scientized Europeans, but all the European people, with very few exceptions, are on the scientific slippery slope that leads to hell. You cannot be halfway up the mountain and maintain your position on the mountain. You must go to the top, struggling against the galvanized forces of hell pushing you downward, or else you will continue to descend toward the bottom of the mountain where the slime pits of hell await you.

At the end of Steele’s story, the Rev. Diana is on his way back to Christ. But in order to return to Christ he had to go through all the lower stages of religion; he had to hit rock bottom before he could start the arduous ascent back up the mountain. This is the fact of existence that the Europeans must grasp before they can fulfill their destiny as the Christ-bearing people. The pride of science is not an ascent to the heavens, it is a descent to paganism. The battles between the factions within the European nations – Labor vs. Tory; Republican vs. Democrat; conservative vs. liberal; traditionalist Catholic vs. Novus Ordo Catholic; Protestant fundamentalist vs. liberal, evangelical Protestant – are all battles between men who have staked out territory on the ‘Pride of Science’ mountain. The mad-dog liberals have left the mountain altogether and, unlike Diana, seem quite content to live in the slime pits of hell, but the other factions will continue to slide closer to the mad-dog liberals so long as they try to blend Christianity and science.

The Europeans’ ascent to the top of the mountain during the Christian centuries of Europe and their descent into hell in the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries has shown us that you can’t have just a little bit of liberalism. You can’t keep a purely intellectual concept of God around for special occasions and for the hour of death, while making science your lodestar for all the really important decisions of your life. Science is a false messiah; it deals with the natural, biological world, nothing more. To scientize man is an outrage. And to scientize God is blasphemy. The modern European is much more afraid of being labeled stupid for speaking out against science than he is about blaspheming against the living God by making Him an object to be studied and played upon as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern tried to study and play upon Hamlet.

*HAMLET. 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.*

*GUILDENSTERN. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.*

*HAMLET. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.*

It is all, this pride of science, from the God-less polemics of Freud, Marx, and Darwin to the scientized theological blasphemies of the intellectual Christians, a devil's brew that poisons our hearts and leaves us at the mercy of enemies who have no mercy – Satan and his liberal minions. I am convinced that the Europeans' descent into negro worship is the result of the scientizing of Christianity. Diana discovered that his cosmic religion needed some human conduit, so he reached out to primitive idols. And that will always be the result of Einsteins' and Teilhards' cosmic, 'higher' religion. Its adherents will reach out to the lowest forms of humanity in their flight from the God of pure intellect, which the 'pure intelligence' men created.

Kill the European's heart and his faith dies. Satan's formula was simple – syllogize, philosophize, and scientize Christianity until there is nothing left of the Christ who enters human hearts. How can we love an end product of a syllogism or a psychological manifestation of the yearning for God that is in all men? We must believe in the Christ story with our whole heart, mind, and soul. If we do not believe, or if we hedge our bets and only partially believe, we will not respond to God's love with loving hearts. We will flee to the heathen gods and bestow our love and devotion upon them. Are there any modern Christian clergymen who love Christ with the passion with which they love the negro?

The God who lives is the Christ that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus, and that same God was the inspiration for Western civilization when it was a civilization. It was a passionate love, grounded in His passion, that motivated St. Paul, and that same love motivated the antique Europeans. We can't make the European people believe again by any rational argument. Maybe, like Uncle Silas, they have lost the heart for the love of Christ. But what if the delusion of science was attacked and destroyed? Would the lost European sheep return to the fold? We won't know the answer to that until we attack the liberals' Holy Ghost, which is science.

In my early twenties I had many discussions with a Roman Catholic priest who taught at the University I attended. I sought him out because he was said to be a conservative, but he was only a conservative compared to the other professors, who were mad-dog liberals. The priest taught a course in the Gospels that was a course about the word of God as interpreted by the 'higher' form criticism popular at that time. In short, the love of Christ was put in a golden scientized bowl and His holy word was put in a silver scientized rod. When I asked my friend if such 'study' was harmful to people's faith, he replied, "They think we are afraid of scientific inquiry; we must show them we are not." But why must we "show them we are not afraid"? Are they really open to reason? Do they really care about the truth? No, they, the liberals, do not care about the truth. Why should we honor their attempt to place God and man in a biological dung heap? To leave any momentous religious question to a scientist is no different than going to a highly competent garage mechanic for a heart transplant.

The highly competent garage mechanic, Albert Einstein, summed up the liberals' religion in his essay on "Cosmic Religion":

*It is easy to follow in the sacred writings of the Jewish people the development of the religion of fear into the moral religion, which is carried further in the New Testament. The religions of all the civilized peoples, especially those of the Orient, are principally moral religions. An important advance in the life of a people is the transformation of the religion of fear into the moral religion. But one must avoid the prejudice that regards the religions of primitive peoples as pure fear religions and those of the civilized races as pure moral religions. All are mixed forms, though the moral element predominates in the higher levels of social life. Common to all these types is the anthropomorphic character of the idea of God.*

*Only exceptionally gifted individuals or especially noble communities rise essentially above this level; in these there is found a third level of religious experience, even if it is seldom found in a pure form. I will call it the cosmic religious sense. This is hard to make clear to those who do not experience it, since it does not involve an anthropomorphic idea of God; the individual feels the vanity of human desires and aims, and the nobility and marvelous order which are revealed in nature and in the world of thought. He feels the individual destiny as an imprisonment and seeks to experience the totality of existence as a unity full of significance. Indications of this cosmic religious sense can be found even on earlier levels of development—for example, in the Psalms of David and in the Prophets. The cosmic element is much stronger in Buddhism, as, in particular, Schopenhauer's magnificent essays have shown us.*

*The religious geniuses of all times have been distinguished by this cosmic religious sense, which recognizes neither dogmas nor God made in man's image. Consequently there cannot be a church whose chief doctrines are based on the cosmic religious experience. It comes about, therefore, that precisely among the heretics of all ages we find men who were inspired by this highest religious experience; often they appeared to their contemporaries as atheists, but sometimes also as saints. Viewed from this angle, men like Democritus, Francis of Assisi, and Spinoza are near to one another.*

That is the glorified heathenism of the ruling liberal elite of the Western world. And the European 'Christians' of the 21<sup>st</sup> century have tried, by incorporating psychology, sociology, anthropology, and the worship of the natural savage into their faith, to prove that Christianity is compatible with the 'intelligence' of the men of science. It's significant that Shaw, the most thoroughly demonic liberal who ever walked the earth, gave his personal endorsement to Einstein and the men of science: "...these eight men of whom I am about to mention were makers of universes and their hands were not stained with the blood of their fellow men. I can count them on the fingers of my two hands. Pythagoras, Ptolemy, Kepler, Copernicus, Aristotle, Galileo, Newton, and Einstein, and I still have two fingers left vacant." What do Shaw's heroes have in common? They are all scientists and scientific philosophers. And one man in particular, Aristotle, was used as the conduit for the entry of intellectual Christianity into the heart of European Christianity.

Is it too late to recover from a scientific dagger to the heart? No, it is not too late, because we are not mere creatures of nature. A dagger to the heart kills the body, but we are more than the physical body, as individuals and as a people, we are of the spirit. We need to look to the top of the mountain and see our Lord and Savior. He is the summit, He is the beginning and the end. The halfway point on the scientized mountain, where the conservatives who want to conserve moderate liberalism tell us to make our stand, is not the place for a European. For us, it is all or nothing; we must achieve the summit or else we will perish in the slime pits of liberalism awaiting us at the bottom of the scientized mountain.

In order to prevent his father from committing suicide (in Shakespeare's *King Lear*), Edgar must convince him that "his life's a miracle." So it is with the European people. When we believed in the miracles of the fiery furnace, the lion's den, the fiery chariot, and the ultimate miracle of Christ's birth, death, and resurrection, we believed that our lives were a miracle of God. We believed in the fairy tale vision of the Bible and the European poets. But when the European people replaced the fairy tale with science, they lost everything. When science becomes the miracle, what happens to man? He becomes a small, insignificant speck of dust staring (if a speck of dust can stare) at the vast, spiritually barren, natural world. His soul is overwhelmed, and he lives in despair, seeking in vain for some refuge in a world without miracles.

Science has left us naked to our enemy, the archangel who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. If we reject the cosmic scientific vision for the vision that is in our hearts, we will see the truth; we will see life from the mountaintop where the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords resides. +

# The Horror

January 20, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Charity, Honor, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, St. Paul



I find a preacher of the gospel profaning the beautiful and prophetic ejaculation, commonly called “*nunc dimittis*,” made on the first presentation of our Saviour in the Temple, and applying it, with an inhuman and unnatural rapture, to the most horrid, atrocious, and afflicting spectacle that perhaps ever was exhibited to the pity and indignation of mankind. This “leading in triumph,” a thing in its best form unmanly and irreligious, which fills our preacher with such unhallowed transports, must shock, I believe, the moral taste of every well-born mind. Several English were the stupefied and indignant spectators of that triumph. It was (unless we have been strangely deceived) a spectacle more resembling a procession of American savages entering into Onondaga after some of their murders called victories, and leading into hovels hung round with scalps their captives overpowered with the scoffs and buffets of women as ferocious as themselves, much more than it resembled the triumphal pomp of a civilized martial nation;—if a civilized nation, or any men who had a sense of generosity, were capable of a personal triumph over the fallen and afflicted.

This, my dear Sir, was not the triumph of France. I must believe, that, as a nation, it overwhelmed you with shame and horror. I must believe that the National Assembly find themselves in a state of the greatest humiliation in not being able to punish the authors of this triumph or the actors in it, and that they are in a situation in which any inquiry they may make upon the subject must be destitute even of the appearance of liberty or impartiality. The apology of that assembly is found in their situation; but when we approve what they must bear, it is in us the degenerate choice of a vitiated mind...

But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished forever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom! The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil by losing all its grossness! — [Edmund Burke](#)

---

History affords us many examples of a historical events that produce widely divergent reactions according to the different faiths of those who view and/or participate in the event. The French Revolution was a classic case in point. Burke, the Christian European, reacted in horror to the French Revolution. And he maintained his abhorrence of “the horror, the horror” after the death of Robespierre. The mad-dog liberals in France, Britain, and the rest of Europe greeted the French Revolution with rapture; they looked on the execution of the King and Queen of France and the French aristocrats as a new dawning for mankind. The average European, the men and women in the pews, viewed Robespierre’s French Revolution with horror. It was the ‘regular’ Englishmen who burned down Priestly’s house, but the ‘regular’ Europeans did not maintain their abhorrence for Jacobinism after the death of Robespierre. They were easily lulled, by the European intelligentsia, into a sleepy acceptance of a more moderate Jacobinism, the type of Jacobinism embodied in the American experiment in democracy. And that same moderate Jacobinism has become the credo of the modern conservatives. This is something that we need to come to grips with. The democratic battles between conservatives and liberals are not battles between ideological opposites, they are battles within the confines of liberalism. Such battles can become quite bloody, just as the War of the Roses became quite bloody, but the battles are internecine.

The moderate liberals, in contrast to the mad-dog liberals, might praise Burke for his criticisms of the French Revolution in his *Reflections*, but they part company with him when he condemns the post-Robespierre Directory and the democratic spirit of the age in his greatest work — *Letters on a Regicide Peace*. Just as the cheese stands alone in the children’s song called “The Farmer Takes a Wife,” so did Edmund Burke stand alone in his repudiation of liberalism in all its guises, whether it was moderate conservatism or mad-dog Jacobinism. In order to take such a stand, Burke had to love his people enough to be rejected by them for his “extremism.” He had to follow the Man of Sorrows who was “despised and rejected of men.”

There are no political parties in the European world that represent white Christian Europeans. That is because the essence of Western democracy is a repudiation of European Christianity. In the U.S.A., the first of utopian nations, Trump is hated by the mad-dog liberals because he is not liberal enough. And he is often criticized by the moderate liberals for not adhering to their brand of moderate liberalism. But Trump is the very best the moderate liberals will ever get. Every republican candidate after Trump will be closer to the mad-dog liberals than Trump. The “conservatives” do not (because they are liberals themselves) understand that liberalism is from the devil. You can’t sup with the devil without eating poison. And if you play the democracy game, you are sipping with the devil. Was the extermination of the white race ever put to a vote? And yet the white race is being exterminated. Was the legalization of abortion ever put to a vote? And yet millions of babies are being murdered every year. And was the enshrinement of the negro as the new Messiah of the Western world ever put to a vote? And yet the negro has become the state-sanctioned Messiah of the Western world. All this has come about because the people of Europe have traded their Christian heritage for a democratic bowl of poisonous lentils. Our precious freedoms of speech and worship are not freedoms if we are not free to speak of the one true God, the Christ of Europe, and if we are not free to worship that same God and denounce the heathen gods of the liberals.

The liberalism of the conservatives and the liberals was on full display this past Monday on the Martin Luther King Jr. holiday. The conservatives couldn’t praise him enough, and the mad-dog liberals used the occasion to call Trump, despite his fulsome praise of King, a racist for calling Haiti a sh– hole. But of course it doesn’t matter what Trump does; the mad-dog liberals will always hate him, because he has refused to advance from moderate liberalism to mad-dog liberalism. Incidentally, I would not call Haiti a sh– hole, I would call it a hellhole. It is a nation that has been consecrated to Satan ever since the time of the French Revolution. But then so is our nation, and the other European nations, consecrated to Satan; we dedicated our nations to the evil one when we refused to repudiate liberalism by defending European Christianity against the multi-racial, multi-religious Christianity of the liberals.

If we go through a work such as Russell Kirk’s *The Conservative Mind* or Henry Regnery’s autobiography in which he tells us of his life as a conservative publisher, we come away from those works with a rather disturbing view of 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatism. There is nothing in the works of the so-called conservatives about defending the European people from the colored heathen or about defending European Christianity. There is a lot written about the defense of democracy and the defense of intellectual Christianity (“our Greco-Roman, Christian tradition”), but there is no defense of the people who heard the word of God and took His word into their hearts. Conservatism cannot be grounded in the airy nothingness of ideas without a local habitation in the hearts of men. We can’t love universal ideas of family, home, and God. We must love flesh and blood people and a flesh and blood God.

Edward Gibbon, the author of *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, is often cited by the conservatives as one of their own. But what did Gibbon want to conserve? It certainly wasn’t European Christianity and the European people. He hated both with a passionate intensity. Gibbon’s grudge against Christianity was that it had replaced the pagan Greeks and Romans,

whom Gibbon thought represented the pinnacle of human achievement. Gibbon's views represent the views of many of the modern conservatives. They love the external organizations of the Greeks and the Romans, which they hope to imitate in order to impose some kind of order on a world that Christ and His followers made too complex.

But what if the human heart is more of a mystery than the Greco-Romans could possibly conceive of? (1) What if man is more than man, what if he is created in the image of God? The Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He thought too much of men; He should not have given them the freedom to choose God or the devil. They will always, the Grand Inquisitor maintained, go with an organized system that allows them to circumvent the cross. All of our lives here on earth are defined by how we view the cross of Christ. The men on the Titanic who went to their deaths singing "Nearer My God to Thee," are my people. The rest, be they Gibbon conservatives or mad-dog liberals, are not my people; they belong to 'this world only,' a world without hope and without light.

Liberalism is grounded in a flight from the cross of Christ. Burke reacted with horror to the French Revolution because he saw the cross of Christ as the penultimate of beauty and truth. How could a man with a Christian heart not react with horror to the massacre of Christ's people? But once the heart has turned from Christ, the destruction of Christ's image in man becomes a source of glee to the Priestly's and Price's of Liberaldom. And the moderate Jacobins, the conservatives who love the pagan Greeks and Romans, will calmly ignore the massacre of Christ's people. To his dying day, the great Roman Catholic conservative, Hilaire Belloc, defended the French Revolution.

The development of modern science helped the intellectual elites in church and state to spread their 'flight from the cross' theology to the masses. "Perhaps life is not a crucifixion if we turn to the new trinity of the abstracted intellect, the negro, and modern science." That was the devilish temptation that ensnared the modern Europeans. Western democracy is a celebration of that new faith, a faith without the crucifixion of Christ. But without the crucifixion can there be a resurrection? What a falling off for the European people! If we don't die with Christ we cannot live with Him in this world or the next – "It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with Him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us." (2 Timothy 2: 11-12)

Kurtz, in Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, looks at the evil in his heart and judges it – "The Horror, the Horror." Marlowe, without approving of Kurtz, does say it is something to have judged, to declare evil to be evil. Without becoming evil, we, the European people, are required to judge evil. In the name of the Christ who dwells in human hearts, we must identify the horror, and we must combat the horror. The most striking thing about the European resistance to liberalism is that there is no real resistance to liberalism. A Christian European would look at negro worship, legalized abortion, feminism, and the Islamification of Europe, and he would cry, "The horror, the horror!" Then he would take up arms against the perpetrators of the horror. But if our faith in Christ is not the "bred in the bone" faith of our European ancestors we do not have anything in our hearts that makes us respond to the evils of liberalism with a passionate "to the death" intensity. When the Moslems rape, mutilate, and murder the women of the West in order to uphold the honor of Islam, when the liberals order us to bow down to the sacred negro in order to do all honor and homage to their gods, and when the feminists command us to honor the femininity of Lady Macbeth, why do we not respond with our own code of honor? Have we forgotten what that code of honor consists of? Burke, echoing St. Paul, called the Christian European's honor code "that charity of honor." Only the antique Europeans, the condemned and despised, incorporated charity into their honor code instead of blood lust, vanity, and cruelty. If their honor code no longer has a place in human hearts, there will be no place for the Son of Man to lay His head.

This brave new world of the liberals is a very old world; it is the same world of darkness and death that the Son of God entered in order to give us light and life. Is there anything that the liberals can give us to make us reject His world of light and love for their world, which is devoid of His light and love? They, the liberals, take it as a given that their new world is paradise, compared to Christian Europe. And the church men have gone along with them. But some of us, we few, must stay with Christian Europe even if it means we shall be "despised and rejected of men." There must be some who stand until they are relieved by their Lord and Master. +

(1) It is truly amazing, and not in a good way, how many scholars and writers of the Christian era continued to hold up the pagan Greeks and Romans as the pinnacle of artistic and human excellence. Ben Jonson challenged that assumption in his tribute "[To The Memory of My Beloved The Author, Mr. William Shakespeare](#)".

*And though thou hadst small Latine and less Greeke,  
From thence to honour thee, I would not seeke  
For names; but call forth thund'ring Aeschilus,  
Euripides and Sophocles to us;  
Pacciuus, Accius, him of Cordoua dead,  
To life again, to heare thy Buskin tread,  
And shake a Stage; or, when thy Sockes were on,  
Leave thee alone for the comparison  
Of all, that insolent Greece, or haughtie Rome  
sent forth, or since did from their ashes come.  
Triumph, my Britain, thou hast one to shewe,  
To whom all Scenes of Europe homage owe.  
He was not of an age but for all time!*

The organizational gate of paganism might be wider and easier to work our way through, but the narrow gate, the way of the cross, leads us to Him:

*I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flow'ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire.*

-Shakespeare's [All's Well that Ends Well](#)

# They Do But Sleep

January 27, 2018

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Walter Crane



I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

-John 11: 25-26

---

Let me again make reference to the battle cry of the German left-wing rioters – “We bring you hell!” That has always been the goal of the liberals: to bring us hell on earth. But this is the first time since the days of the French Revolution that the liberals have taken off their masks and explicitly told the world they hate all things white and Christian and love everything white Christians once called demonic. The post-Robespierre French Jacobins had to cloak their Jacobinism with democratic slogans because they discovered that the world was not quite ready for pure, unadulterated hell. Will the new Jacobins of the left pull in their fangs because the world is still not ready for hell on earth? I don’t think they will. The European people have lost their hearts; they no longer have the ability to see evil and be sickened by it. Hence, they have no desire to fight evil. The left commits one outrage after another, and the European people accept the outrages with a vague hope that they can find a safe haven somewhere in the country or suburbia. But like the Red Death in Poe’s story, the liberals’ hell will envelop all of Europe. The Red Death of liberalism can enter anywhere.

The liberals have taken off their masks because they no longer fear any opposition. In the 1950’s through the 1960’s, the liberals exercised some caution. Negro worship was cloaked in civil rights rhetoric, and legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and feminism were presented as compassion issues. And the great lie that presented the triumph of evil over good as a triumph of progressive, compassionate thinking over reactionary, mean-spirited thinking was accepted by the European people. It was accepted because the European leaders in the European schools, governments, universities, and churches were liberals.

The people, in the main, will follow their leaders. If their leaders are determined to create hell on earth, the grazers will try to maneuver within the perimeters of hell on earth to make the best deal for themselves economically, but they will not try to break away from the liberals’ world, and they most certainly will not try to destroy the liberals’ world. How can they? Once they have accepted the liberals’ lie that all that is good lies within the confines of Liberaldom and all that is evil lies outside of Liberaldom, they are trapped. The train bound for glory in the old song does not take any “high tone women” or “midnight ramblers,” etc. The liberals tell us that their train is bound for glory, but in reality it is bound for hell. Their train won’t take any pro-apartheid men, no Christian women, no segregationists, no pro-lifers, etc. And the grazers must conform, because they believe that liberalism is light, and everything outside of liberalism belongs to the night, where inhuman creatures prowl about the world, in imitation of the devil, seeking the destruction of integrated societies, reproductive freedom, and every other hard-won “freedom” of modern man.

I frequently hear, when I talk of the need for white Christian leadership, that there can be no leaders if the people will not follow. That is not how leadership, at least Christian leadership, works. The true leader acts according to that which is within. His heart responds to Christ’s heart. If no one follows, the Christian knight does not falter. Leonidas declared that Sparta would fight whether others fought or not. The Christian European should surpass the courage of the pagan warrior.

When public figures such as Trump, Putin, and Viktor Orbán say and do things that are supportive of the European people, we should support them. But ultimately it is not to democratically elected officials that we should look to save the European people. Moderate liberals such as Trump, Putin and Orbán are still trapped within the confines of liberalism. And the essence of liberalism is the destruction of the white, Christ-bearing race. We must return to white Christian Europe; nothing else will save the European people and nothing else will fulfill our mission as the Christ-bearing race.

Pope Francis the blasphemer recently went to the Amazon rain forest in order to tell the indigenous peoples of the Amazon, as distinct from the evil, non-indigenous white people, that they represented the “heart of the Church.” Oh really? I thought Christ was the heart of the Church. The great blasphemer went on to scold white people for trying to destroy the culture of the good, indigenous people of the Amazon. What a colossal, self-serving, hypocritical, back-sliding, gutter snipe. Why are the European people not allowed to defend their culture against the assault of colored barbarians who are not indigenous to Europe? The answer is simple – the liberals have decreed that whites are evil and the noble savages of color are good. And Pope Francis the blasphemer is a liberal.

All nations that have ever existed are formed and molded by the religious beliefs of their people. If the people are headhunters, the institutions of their society will support headhunting. If they are devotees of voodoo, Hinduism, or some other heathen faith, they will structure their societies accordingly. The European people were no different from the heathens; they structured their societies based on their faith. But the Europeans were different from all other people in one crucial regard, and that one thing is everything: The European people abandoned heathenism for Christ. And as a result of their new-found faith, they changed the structures of their societies. Christianity was institutionalized. Every leader of those European societies was judged according to Christian standards. Most leaders fell woefully short of the standard; there were very few like Alfred the Great. But there was a definite code of ethics the European people looked for in a leader. The leader was respected and followed according to how well he lived up to the European code of honor, which was rooted in the European people’s faith in Christ.

The American Revolution, the French Revolution, and the various democratic revolutions throughout the European nations in the mid-1800’s were the initial attempts of the liberals to impose a new religion on the European people. Prior to those revolutions, heathenism was a hole-in-corner religion in Europe. The gypsies described by Walter Scott in *Quentin Durward*, a people with no determinate race or religion, were an example of the anti-Christian element in Christian Europe. It was the liberals’ goal to make Europe a safe haven for people of the non-white races and for people who were opposed to the Christian faith. For centuries after the democratic revolutions, the new religion (which was the old heathenism blended with Christianity) contained Christian elements, because the liberals had learned, from Robespierre, that the people could not be completely weaned from Christianity in one stunning revolutionary moment; there had to be more of a gradual transformation from Christianity to liberal-heathenism. That gradual transformation is now complete. The new religion of the European people is the old heathenism with the added dynamic of post-Christian demonism.

In Rembrandt's spiritual journey from a painter of religious themes, which his mind perceived to be good subjects for a painting, to a man who took the word of God into his heart and sought to put that vision on canvas, we see the path the Christian European must take. We must stop making church structures and church organizations our gods. Instead we must cling to the living God whom Rembrandt found when he searched the Holy Scriptures with his heart. When the Church writ large replaces Christ we end up in the Amazon rain forest, worshipping the noble savages of color. We should never forget that Rousseau considered himself a Christian. He affirmed an intellectual belief in Christianity as an organized religion while giving his heart to the noble savage. The fusionist Christian and the secular liberal are united in their apostasy from the living God. And they are both united in their hatred of the Christ-bearing race. The fusionist is the more dangerous of the two because he is the wolf in sheep's clothing. The secular liberals and the fusionist Christians are manically focused on race, yet they dogmatically proclaim that Christianity has nothing to do with race. What is going on? What is behind the doublespeak? The devil is behind the liberal-fusionist shell game. He knows that Christ comes to us through His divine humanity. It is only the human heart, the humble, loving heart that can "receive Him still." If you kill European pietas, which can only be nurtured at our racial hearth fire, you will have blocked Christ's entry into human lives.

The devil always makes his overtures to mankind through the mind. He appeals to what Chateaubriand called "the pride of science." So we can see why the secular liberals and the fusionist Christians, who hate the living God who took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, want to destroy the European people. They fear them because they hate Christ and they do not want the sleeping Europeans to awaken and place Him back on the throne of Europe. It doesn't seem like the liberal-fusionist Satanists have anything to worry about, but they want to make sure the white race is dead, so they can be truly happy with their new spouse, the noble savage. And maybe they are right to be worried. The Princess in the [Sleeping Beauty](#) tale slept for one hundred years before a King's Son, who was willing to hew his way through the Forest of Thorns, awakened her with his kiss. [\(1\)](#) Isn't that the path the Christian European leader must follow? He must love his sleeping people enough to fight his way to their side and awaken them. He must, through his fidelity to the King of Kings, show them the true vision of Christ, shorn of intellectual sophistry and loathsome couplings with the heathen faiths. Is such a mission likely to succeed in this our modern age? Who cares about what is likely; we only care about what is Christian. The European leader believes in fairy tales, especially in the one true fairy tale of the Christ who enters human hearts. +

---

(1) And down she falls in death-like sleep: they lay her on her bed,  
And all around her sink to rest—a palace of the dead!  
A hundred years pass—still they sleep, and all around the place  
A wood of thorns has risen up—no path a man can trace.  
At last, a King's son, in the hunt, asked how long it had stood,  
And what old towers were those he saw above the ancient wood.

An aged peasant told of an enchanted palace, where  
A sleeping King and Court lay hid, and sleeping Princess fair.  
Through the thick wood, that gave him way, and past the thorns that drew  
Their sharpest points another way, the King's son presses through.  
He reached the guard, the court, the hall,—and there, where'er he stept,  
He saw the sentinels, and grooms, and courtiers as they slept.

Ladies in act to smile, and pages in attendance wait;  
The horses slept within their stalls, the dogs about the gate.  
The King's son presses on, into an inner chamber fair,  
And sees, laid on a silken bed, a lovely lady there;  
So sweet a face, so fair—was never beauty such as this;  
He stands—he stoops to gaze—he kneels—he wakes her with a kiss.

He leads her forth: the magic sleep of all the Court is o'er,—  
They wake, they move, they talk, they laugh, just as they did of yore  
A hundred years ago. The King and Queen awake, and tell  
How all has happed, rejoicing much that all has ended well.  
They hold the wedding that same day, with mirth and feasting good—  
The wedding of the Prince and Sleeping Beauty in the Wood.

*-The Sleeping Beauty Picture Book by Walter Crane*



# Protecting All That We Hold Dear

February 3, 2018

Categories: Charity, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –Burke in [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

“Wouldn’t it be dreadful if some day in our own world, at home, men started going wild inside, like the animals here, and still looked like men, so that you’d never know which were which?” –Lucy in *Prince Caspian*

---

I saw the May 2017 *National Geographic* magazine cover of the naked white woman and the naked black male, with its accompanying articles celebrating the replacement of the white race by the black race, on a Canadian nationalist site. The picture is unadulterated bestiality, but as disgusting as the picture was, it was not as obscene as the articles celebrating the death of white people and the triumph of black people. Can there be any doubt that this ‘glorious’ destruction of the white race that the liberal celebrate is a celebration of the death of God? If His image in man is destroyed, can there be faith on earth? The liberals cannot actually kill God, but they can remove Him as a force for good in this world if they destroy His image in man by destroying the Christ-bearing race. And ‘this world only’ is all the liberals care about. They will have the negro as their god, because the negro represents the antithesis of the white. When the negro is deified, the image of God in man is replaced by the image of man the beast. The superiority of the biracial man, which the liberals celebrate, is the superiority of all things bestial and perverted over all things human and all values stemming from a connection to the humane God.

This attack on God via the negro has been and continues to be a multipronged attack. First is the vilification campaign. Every evil under the sun is ascribed to the white male acting in history. Then there is economic disenfranchisement. White males are last in line for employment behind white females and males of the colored races, thus giving added inducement for white females who want children to find colored males as the fathers of their children. And the third phase of the attack is the outright murder of whites. This takes place in all nations where blacks are in the majority (Rhodesia and South Africa) and to a somewhat lesser degree in nations where blacks have not yet become a majority (the Western European nations and their offshoots, the U.S., Canada, Australia, New Zealand, etc.). But even in those nations, black-on-white violence is given a semi-official sanction by the liberals’ indifference to black-on-white violence.

It’s too late in the United States and most of the nations of Western Europe to prevent the destruction of the white race by closing off the borders. There are too many non-Europeans in these nations already. If whites in those nations want to survive, they must drive out the non-Europeans who have invaded their nations. They must also make sure that no liberal ever has a place in the government of a white nation again. That is what must happen if whites in the United States and the Western European countries are going to survive. Voting for white candidates such as Trump and voting to leave the European Union is like putting band aids on cancer. Such measures are not going to stop the ongoing extermination of the white race. Are the European people willing to drive the colored heathens from their lands and put the liberals in prison? Of course they aren’t. But no whites have ever survived, let alone thrived, as a people, in black-dominated countries. That is the nature of the beast, which the *National Geographic* liberals celebrate. (1) The negro knows only bloodlust and cruelty; he does not know charity and mercy. Is this the promised end? “Yes, it is,” the liberals tell us. Our end is to be either blended with the black race or, if we refuse to be blended, to be slaughtered by the black race with the aid of the Christ-hating, white-hating liberals.

The situation in the Eastern European nations, vis-à-vis the barbarians of color and the white race, differs only in degree, not in kind, from the U.S. and the nations of Western Europe. The Eastern European nations can stop their own destruction if they close off their borders to the barbarians of color, but they have shown no moral awareness of the necessity of preserving their race. Unlike the white Europeans in Western Europe, they have shown some willingness to place restrictions on the Moslem invaders, but they all declare they are not racist; they say they welcome the people of color, providing that they abide by their laws and respect their culture. But that is sheer fantasy and madness. When have the colored heathens ever respected white culture? It’s only a matter of time before those nations succumb to black messianism unless they realize what every European prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century knew – a man’s race is part of his soul. And the white man’s soul was consecrated to Christ. If he sacrifices his racial identity to the heathen gods of color, he has sacrificed his soul.

Race mixing is the devil’s attempt to imitate the incarnation of Christ. In point of fact, everything the devil does – he is not an original fellow – is a mock imitation of God. We are told, in *Genesis 6: 1-5*, that Satan sent his angels into the world and they went “unto the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.” Doesn’t that describe the spirit of our own times? Aren’t the imaginations of the liberals who dream of a paradise of black barbarism full of wickedness and depravity? Of course they are. And it appears that the liberals are running things. But they have never faced any opposition. They constantly claim that there are white supremacists like Trump and the newsman Tucker Carlson who are trying to impose, horror of horrors, an all-white nation upon them, but that is a lie. Trump and Carlson have simply called for whites to be included in Liberaldom. They have never talked about destroying Liberaldom and rebuilding white, Christian Europe. And such men never will. They are stuck in moderate-liberal land, unable to grasp the fact that the essence of liberalism is ever onward and onward until mankind has reached the deepest pit of hell, which the liberals insist is a black paradise.

The term ‘white supremacist’ is used for any white who is not categorically in favor of the destruction of the white race. But in reality all whites should be white supremacists if white supremacy means that no black or any person of color should ever have any power or rights of citizenship in a white nation. That type of white supremacism is the only Christian response to the liberals’ ongoing war against the white race. How could a genuine Christian, a European, consent to the destruction of his people and to the incarnation of Satan by allowing black barbarism, fused with liberalism, into the heart of what was once Christian Europe? He can’t, which is why the survival of the white race is eternally linked to the survival of the Christian faith. Men who have truly taken Christ into their hearts do not permit the rule of liberals or the triumph of black barbarism.

We shall never see the old Christian Europe, which encompassed a large geographical land mass, again. But wherever there are white people who have taken Christ into their hearts and refused to bend their knees to the colored gods of Liberaldom we shall see Christian Europe. The numbers will not be large; maybe as in Noah’s time there will only be one faithful family

left. But we are supposed to stay faithful until our Lord returns. It seems like our present generation of apostate Europeans has surpassed every evil civilization that was destroyed in the Bible. But we know neither the day nor the hour of the Son of Man's return. Until that time we are all like unto Hamlet:

*Not a whit; we defy augury. There's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.*

The foolishness of God, which the apostle Paul tells us is wiser than the wisdom of men, was once a part of the European's soul. That foolishness told him, not by way of the syllogism, but by way of an instinct bred in the bone, that all human endeavor that is consecrated to Christ is not in vain. If we defy the augury of the liberals, who command us to worship the negro, and stay faithful to our white, Christian hearth fire, we will have done what we were born to do: To hold the banner of Christ crucified, Christ risen aloft in defiance of the Satanic principalities and powers of this world only.

The spiritual destruction of Europe, which has been brought on by the liberals' apostasy from the Christian faith and the subsequent repopulation of Europe with colored heathens, is a spectacle that should make us weep. But should we despair? It's often difficult not to despair. However, we should note that the European peoples, even when Europe was strong and Christian, were still a minority vis-à-vis the world. Granted, if you count the liberals as non-Europeans, the Europeans are now a minority in their own nations. But still, if you are fighting against an enemy that outnumbers you one hundred thousand to one or an enemy that outnumbers you one million to one, isn't the struggle the same? The European Christian has always believed that the internal battle within his own soul is all in all. If we win that battle, our external enemies will also fall. That bit of foolishness is not my invention – it constitutes the wisdom of St. Paul and the wisdom of our people when they were a people.

The race question comes down to this – Are we going to stand by while the liberals and the colored barbarians destroy all our human relationships that connect us to the living God? Our race is our brothers and our sisters, our fathers and our mothers, and our wives and our children. Can we sacrifice those closest to us on the altars of the black gods of Liberalism and still retain one shred of human dignity? We most certainly cannot. But the liberals tell us that there are no human beings; there are only beasts born of nature and destined to return to nature. The European, even if he is the last European, will hold to a different reality. He will stay with the living God who reigns in the hearts of all Europeans who believe in the Christ of the European hearth fire. +

---

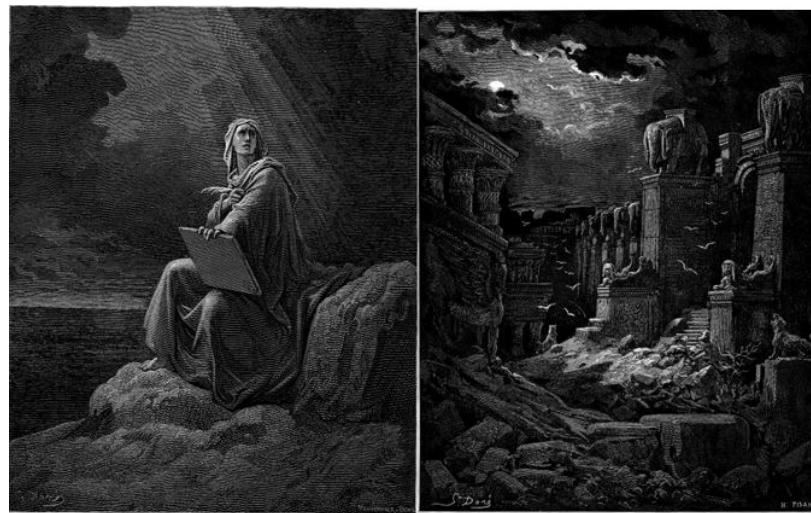
(1) Some cookie-cutter conservatives have lamented the change in the formerly 'family oriented' *National Geographic* magazine. That is nonsense. The good, solid, family magazine always celebrated the purely biological, evolutionary view of mankind. It was inevitable that such a magazine would finally place the biological man, the noble black savage, on the throne of their biological dung heap.

# This Will Ever Be Our Story

February 10, 2018

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, St. John



And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. —Revelations 21: 4

---

Liberals within the organizational structures of the anti-Christian Christian churches, individuals such as Francis the blasphemer, view Christ as a revolutionary. From the perspective of that type of Christian atheist all things liberal are Christian. This allows the organizational Christian to keep Christ the liberal as one of his gods in a pantheon of heathen gods. Of course all gods in the liberals' pantheon are subordinate to the sacred negro, just as all gods in the Greek pantheon were subordinate to Zeus.

The neo-pagan, whose prototype is Edward Gibbon, also sees Christ as a revolutionary. And because he sees Christ as a revolutionary he attacks Christianity for destroying what he views as the heart and soul of the European civilization — their pagan Greco-Roman heritage. Is Christ a revolutionary? If He is not the Son of God, then of course He is a revolutionary. He was the great destroyer of the ancient Jews' civilization, the Icelandic-Celtic civilizations, and the Greco-Roman civilizations. But what if He was the Son of God? Then the narrative changes. He was not the destroyer of the ancient Jews' religion, He was the fulfillment of it. He was not the great destroyer of what was good in the pagan religions, He was the embodiment of all that was humane and noble in the pagan gods. What He destroyed was all that was ignoble and inhuman.

Christ restored our humanity on the cross; He reconciled us to our Father, from whom the devil separated us when he enticed Adam and Eve to join him in his revolt against God. So how can Christ, who fought and still fights against the king of liberals, be called a revolutionary? He can't.

The only way you can make Christ into a revolutionary is to rewrite the European story. You must make the claim that the Europeans got it wrong — "Christ never said he was the son of God," or, "The Christ story is a fairy story." You must spread those narratives and others like them if you are going to make war on the European people and their culture in the name of Christianity. If the European people's witness is true, if the European Christ, who is the Christ of the Gospels, is the one true God, then the culture of the antique Europeans must be defended, preserved, and passed on to every succeeding generation of Europeans. But are there any liberals or liberal conservatives, in church or out of church, who are trying to pass on the faith of the Christian Europeans? No, there are not. There are a variety of fusionist faiths — the Judeo-Christian-and-negro faith, the Islamic-Christian-and-negro faith, and the technocratic-liberal-and-negro faith, but there is no Christian European faith that is being passed on. How can there be any sustainable resistance to liberalism when there is no Christian, European opposition to liberalism? There can't be. You cannot bring up white women to shun motherhood and hate the white European male and expect a good outcome, just because you manage to elect a white, moderate liberal to office.

The cultural revolution has been completed. The European nations have gone from Christendom to Liberaldom. A democratic bandaid will not stop the white Europeans from hemorrhaging. Look at Trump's election in this country. It was enjoyable to see the liberals squirm a bit, but has Trump really been able to put a stop to the liberals' ongoing persecution of the white race? Of course he hasn't. And Trump is the very best man you'll ever get within the confines of Jacobin democracy. I know a few decent individuals, all plus 70 years, hiding out in the corners of Liberaldom. These individuals frequently ask, "How did all this happen?" What can I say to them that is simple enough to be understood without doing a disservice to the truth? I tell them that the European people took the cross of Christ into their hearts. And with that cross they took the hope of His resurrection from the dead into their hearts as well. Without that hope in the resurrection, the cross becomes an unbearable pain at the center of the European's heart. When the rationalism from within the church joined forces with the science from outside the church, the European people lost their faith. All that was left to them was the pain of the crucifixion without the hope of the resurrection. Liberalism represents the attempt by the white Europeans to eliminate the pain that is in their hearts. They hate all things white and Christian with a passionate hatred of incredible intensity, because they associate all things white and Christian with pain and suffering. All of the white man's ties to his kith and kin must be destroyed, because such ties belong to the Christian era of the European people. And everything from that era belongs, from the liberals' point of view, to pain and suffering: "Better to look to science for the relief of pain and suffering, and to the negro in order to fulfill our need to worship."

Look to our universities. There we see the unadulterated evil that is our future, where the words 'fatherhood' and 'motherhood' are being banned. Soon, if we go by what is preached from the university pulpits, heterosexual marriage will be banned unless it is a biracial marriage. White women will be allowed an infinity of abortions, but they will not be allowed to give birth to white babies. It's all part of the flight from the crucifixion without the hope in the resurrection.

Where do the colored races come into the Europeans' narrative? They never took the cross of Christ or the hope of His resurrection from the dead into their hearts, so they have never suffered through the pain that accompanies a loss of faith. Their hatred of the white race lacks the spiritual intensity of the liberals, but they are quite willing to utilize the liberals' hatred to serve the ends of their more moderate hatred of all things white and Christian. The great mistake of conservatives such as John Tyndall and Samuel Francis was their assumption that white liberals could be induced to vote white by reasoning with them. You can't reason with a liberal any more than you can reason with a rattlesnake. You must either kill it or run from it. A hate based on a flight from the cross can only be defeated by faith in the God who died on the cross in order that we might live.

This maniacal, frenzied desire of the liberals to blend with the black race stems from their attempt to ease the pain of white men, which is the pain of the cross. Can they ever remove the pain? No, they cannot. But they can pass on a purer paganism, unpolluted by the cross of Christ, to their biracial children. That is what the race war is all about — the worship of the negro has become the liberals' hope for salvation. But is it salvation? It is meant to alleviate pain and suffering in this world by providing liberals with an escape from the cross, but will it really alleviate their suffering? I don't see that happening. If it weren't for all the pain and suffering the liberals inflict on other people, we would have to pity them because their negro gods are failing to make them happy. And what about the next world? Can the liberals' disbelief in the next world change the reality of the next world? Negro worship betrays the white man in this world and the next.

The change from a culture in which the people held the crucifixion of Christ and the resurrection of Christ in their hearts, to a culture in which the people do not believe in the resurrection and seek to purge the cross of Christ from their hearts, took place gradually during the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Now that the change is complete, we are witnessing something the world has never seen before. We see before our eyes thoroughly demonic un-men, the white liberals, who have allied themselves with the colored heathens in order to hunt down and destroy the last remnants of

white, Christian humanity. We now live in a world where charity and mercy, the true Christian charity and mercy, have been eliminated from the face of the earth. To say that we live in a cold, unforgiving world devoid of humanity is a gross understatement. Absolutely nothing remains of the human conduits to the God whose love passeth all understanding.

Burke, in his *Reflections on the French Revolution*, said that we were spending “the unbought grace of life.” And Herbert Butterfield wrote, in 1950, that the European people were existing on the fumes of Christianity. Now that the unbought grace of life is spent and the fumes have faded, what is left to us? Do we try to compromise with liberalism? Do we become Christian Jews, neo-pagans, or Roman Catholic Moslems? From whence cometh our strength to endure life without the cross, which leads to the sure and certain hope of the resurrection from the dead?

The answer to “from whence cometh our strength?” is the cross of Christ. There is no hope without the cross. It is vital that we look at our modern European culture with the visionary eye of a Christian heart, the heart of an antique European, because we must see how spiritually desolate and hopeless we are without the cross that leads to the resurrection. The tears shed by the Christian with a longing for Christ will not be spent in vain. St. John wept when he was shown the spiritual desolation of a world in which no one was worthy to open the book sealed with seven seals.

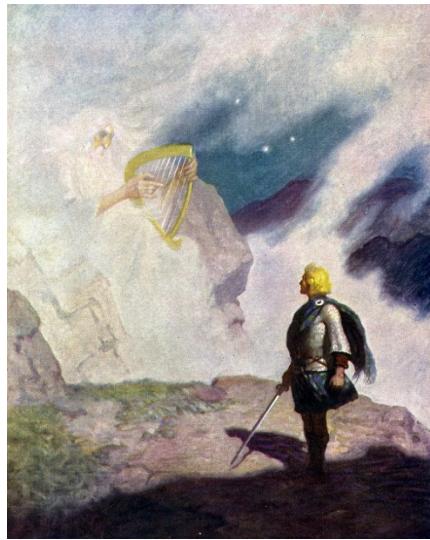
*And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.*

Of what practical value was the book of seven seals which the Lamb of God opened? It seemed to comfort John, but wasn’t he deranged? I link St. John on the Isle of Patmos to Daniel. Neither man understood the vision vouchsafed to him in a way that could be explained by reference to philosophy or theology, but in their hearts they understood. They saw life feelingly, and consequently they knew about the mystery of the cross and Christ’s incredible love for His people. That intuitive, visionary, heartfelt understanding of the Christ story became the European people’s story. They cannot write themselves out of that story without writing themselves out of existence. Weep for the death of Christian Europe as our Lord wept at the death of Lazarus and as St. John wept before the closed book of the seven seals. If we weep for that which is lost, He will dry our tears and show us that which is lost has not been lost; it lives in Him and through Him. Christ the revolutionary? No, a thousand times no, He is the great preserver and we, His people, will defend the vision of His undying love for us against the modern world of blaspheming liberals who bid us abandon the cross and our hope for the resurrection of the dead. To maintain the vision is all in all. That is what it means to be a European. +

# Christian Leaven

February 17, 2018

Categories: Christ the Hero, Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)



We are such stuff as dreams are made on. – *The Tempest*

---

In my junior and senior high school days I subscribed to a magazine called *Strength and Health*, which was published by Bob Hoffman, the founder of the York Barbell Company. I once tried, without consulting my mother, to bake a loaf of “muscle bread,” using the ingredients suggested in a recipe from the magazine. Some of the ingredients, if I remember correctly, were wheat germ, rice polishings, black strap molasses, brewer’s yeast, and whole wheat flour. Yum, yum! I put all the ingredients together, poured the mixture into a bread pan, and then placed it into the oven to bake at the recommended temperature. The result was a disaster. I had left out one essential ingredient – I had neglected to add yeast. The bread came out as a non-bread, resembling a slab of mud.

Now, other than revealing that I was just as stupid as a young man as I am now as an old man, what was the point of that story? Where am I going with it? I’m going to our modern conservatives who think that you can have a sound, functioning democracy without Christian leaven. To the extent that any of the European democracies worked, prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century, they worked because the European people still were the Christian leaven that kept Europe from descending into the Babylonian night of paganism. But without the Christian leaven there can be no democratic governments like the ones that most Europeans of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, who were living off the leftover Christian leaven of the 19<sup>th</sup> century, grew up with. Let’s look at some obvious contrasts between our current society, which has no Christian leaven, and a European society of some 60 or 70 years past that still possessed a modicum of Christian leaven held over from the 19<sup>th</sup> century. First, in the Christian Leaven age the arguments over abortion were about how to punish those performing abortions and how to prevent women from having them. That is something that a Christian people (the leaven) can debate. But can you have democratic debates with non-humans who think the right to murder babies in their mothers’ wombs is a sacred right? Of course you can’t.

A second example is the illegal immigration issue. In times past, the debate was over how strict a punishment was to be meted out to illegals and how to best protect our borders. Now there are no restrictions on illegal aliens, and all those who try to impose restrictions are stopped dead in their tracks. So again we must ask – can you have a democratic debate with people who are determined to make common cause with your enemies?

Let us proceed to a third example – in the past if a sodomite was caught on a school campus trying to persuade school children to adopt a homosexual lifestyle, the debate would have been over the punishment for the sodomite and over the best way to ensure that such loathsome creatures stayed away from school children. Now sodomy is taught as a lifestyle option in the schools, along with every other perversion that used to be proscribed by law in societies held together by Christian leaven. Can you debate with those who advance an agenda of sexual perversion? No, you cannot.

I shouldn’t have to go on. You can supply a hundred more examples. The point is that you cannot affect positive change within the confines of a democratic government unless there is a common consensus among the people about what is right and what is wrong. For thousands of years the common consensus of the European people about what was right and wrong came from Christianity. That has been changed. The common consensus among the ruling elites of the European nations is that everything Christian is wrong and everything liberal, which translates to satanic, is right. And what about the people? They fall into Yeats’s paradigm: “they lack all conviction.” The Breitbarters, the Drudges, and the conservative coalition-type organizations can pump out all the information they like that shows the evil that liberals do. And they can point out the non-democratic nature of the liberals’ tyrannical regime, but they are as sounding brass and tinkling cymbals because they are proceeding according to the business-as-usual formula: “Bring evil policies to the forefront of the public, and the people will put pressure on the government to change those policies.” That is no longer possible without a Christian leaven sustaining society. There are virtually no Christians left to put pressure on the government officials, and there are absolutely no government officials willing to respond to any appeal from a white person who is even tangentially connected to Christianity.

I have a vivid memory, from some 25 years ago, of a protest launched in my area by a group of white housewives in a white enclave of the city. They had come out of their homes to protest the projected building of federally funded high rise apartments in the middle of their neighborhood. Of course the women knew what the building of the apartments meant. It meant the end of their neighborhood and quite possibly, if they didn’t have the money to move out, it meant the death of some or all of the members of their families. But the high rise apartments were built, and the black marauders that came with the high rise apartments did what black marauders do everywhere: they destroyed a peaceful white neighborhood and the people who lived there. During the futile protest the newsmen caught one woman on camera, a woman with two children in a baby stroller. She hurled one desperate, angry plea at the cameras, which represented the cold, heartless face of modern Satandom: “Everyone has rights in this stinkin’ country but white people.” Ah, there’s the rub. That woman deserved damnation, she was a racist! And so are all white people who try to hold on to any remnant of white Christian Europe. She was a white mother with white children, and everything white must perish, “so it is written, so it shall be.” That is the unholy decree of the liberals.

The democratic process has been a very convenient tool of the mad-dog liberals, but they never believed in it like the liberal-conservatives. This last Presidential election was further proof of the lack of regard that liberals have for the democratic process. Trump won, but everything is proceeding as if he lost. And that is perfectly in keeping with the liberals’ ethos. They have one goal and one goal only – the destruction of the white race. They will use the democratic process if it facilitates the destruction of the white race, and they will disregard it when it doesn’t facilitate the destruction of the white race. In contrast, the conservatives have one main goal. They want to show the world that they are the true followers of the democratic way. They tell atrocity stories and point out the non-democratic nature of liberals so that white people will vote white. But there are no white candidates who want to destroy liberalism running for any political office in any European nation. And if there was one, he wouldn’t be elected because the Christian Europeans have been absorbed into the belly of the liberal leviathan.

The democracy-loving conservatives have made a god of the democratic process just as the organizational Christians have made a god of “the church.” It is time, in fact it is long past time, to step away from the chains of democracy which have bound the white man to the same rock the cruel gods of Greece bound Prometheus. We are not conceding the field to the liberals if we break away from democracy, we are finally, after years of ignoble surrender, beginning to fight back. When will whites fight instead of submitting to the democratic slaughter of the white race? Possibly never. It all depends on the Christian leaven. Without Christ the white race shall perish, because Christ is our lodestar, and men without a lodestar cannot be men.

Now that the liberals are proceeding to build a brave new world without any Christian leaven, we are constantly sipping on the horrors of the liberals' machinations. Recently I read a news report of a Scottish cleric's proposal to ship boatloads of Moslems to the Isle of Skye. That was a particularly bitter pill to swallow, because I spent some time on the Isle of Skye when I was in my early twenties. The island, peopled with kind, generous white men and women, seemed to be as close as a man could get to heaven on the earthly side of the divide. Shortly after I read that news item, I had a dream that I was on the Isle of Skye. At the top of what I would describe as a monstrous hill or a small mountain was an enormous half-breed man, half-Scottish, half-black, wearing a kilt. Before him were all the inhabitants of Skye. The giant black screamed that he was the new Scotland and the new Europe, and everyone, except me, screamed with joy. Then the black giant bid the multitude kneel and do homage to him. I refused. I will shorten the rest of the narrative – what then ensued was a struggle to the death. I ran up the hill to strike the giant, but he just picked me up with ease and threw me down the hill. All through the night I charged up the hill and was thrown back down the hill. But the black giant weakened at each assault, and I gained strength. At the break of day I was standing at the top of the hill and the giant black was lying in a heap at the bottom of the hill. I shouted that I stood for the old Scotland and the old Europe, and the people cheered.

Now, I do not believe in prophetic dreams, because the age of prophesy is dead. Nor can I take any credit for being the hero of my own dream. Aren't we always the hero of our dreams? But I relate that dream because it is a slightly more dramatic version of my waking dream. I want a white Christian Europe, and I want to do my part to make that dream a reality. I often wonder if any other white men dream about a white Christian Europe. It doesn't seem to me that they do. Their dreams seem to be democratic dreams. The mad dog liberals dream of a black paradise devoid of white people, and the liberal conservatives' dream of a multi-racial conservative state controlled by their managerial brains. The dream is father to the act. If we do not dream of a white, Christian Europe we will never forsake the democratic night of Europe and seek the glorious light of His eternal Europe.

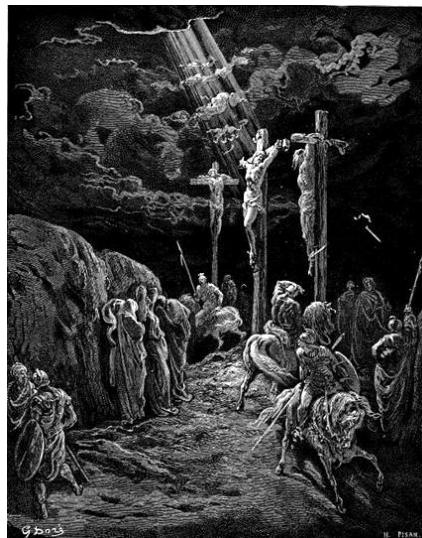
In the 1950's Denmark and Sweden seemed to be the perfect white nations. They had achieved a remarkable balance between socialism and free enterprise. They rejected the excesses of Russian communism and American capitalism, which enabled them to avoid the social unrest that plagued other European nations. But the seemingly happy state of those Scandinavian nations was the result of the Christian leaven left over from their Christian past. When there was no more Christian leaven, Denmark and Sweden succumbed to racial and sexual Babylon. Now those model white nations are hell holes. But still the liberals and the liberal conservatives bid us plow ahead in order to make all European nations into model democracies, despite the failures of the utopian democratic nations of Sweden and Denmark. All of Europe shall fall unless we walk away from democracy and take up arms in defense of a non-democratic, white Christian Europe. But that will not happen until the European people have a passionate desire to become part of the Christ story once again. +

# The Folly of God

February 24, 2018

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Shakespeare, Walter Scott



'Twas the hour when rites unholy  
Call'd each Paynim voice to prayer  
And the star that faded slowly  
Left to dews the freshen'd air

Day his sultry fires had wasted,  
Calm and cool the moonbeams shone,  
To the Vizier's lofty palace  
One bold Christian came alone.

-Walter Scott

---

In a very moving farewell, a farewell that every school child of my father's generation used to learn by heart, a repentant Cardinal Wolsey, the villain and the hero in Shakespeare's *Henry VIII*, has this to say about the providence of God:

*Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal  
I serv'd my King, He would not in mine age  
Have left me naked to mine enemies.*

The sentiment becomes him – he is speaking from a heart overflowing with remorse for a life that has been spent pursuing Wolsey's will in preference to God's will. But is it true that God would not have left him naked to his enemies if he had followed God's will instead of his own will? Wolsey himself seems to have some awareness that the grace of God is not as simple as his concluding words suggest:

*Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace  
To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not;  
Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
Thy God's, and truth's; then, if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,  
Thou fall'st a blessed martyr!*

Corruption does win more often than honesty, and the true Christian is often left naked to his enemies. Unless — and the 'unless' is all in all — this world is but a shadow of another world. Then we see God's special providence in a different light. He has not left us naked to the greatest enemy, which is Death. But nothing is to be gained by lying to ourselves about our prospects for success in this world if we follow the way of the cross. We will be hated by the rulers of the world in direct proportion to the extent that the world has rejected the Light of the world. There has never been a time since the Light of the world first took flesh and dwelt among us in which the hatred of the Light has been so intense. Naked to our enemies? Of course we are naked to our enemies. We might know that we should "endure our going hence even as we are coming hither" intellectually, but can our faith in the next world survive without some hope of God's protection and favor in this world? Only if we feel that God's favor and protection consists of spiritual gifts. If we believe that the vision He has vouchsafed us of His birth, crucifixion, and resurrection is worth all the kingdoms of this world then we will never feel naked to our enemies, because all such enemies – the apostate church men, the colored barbarians, and the liberals – represent the archangel Satan who was dealt a mortal blow by our Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

Hamlet asks what he should do while he is struggling between heaven and earth. And so it is with the antique European, the Christian European, struggling to maintain his faith while living in modern Europe, which belongs to Satan. How does he survive in Satandom without becoming part of Satandom? That is the question. Satan built his kingdom on this earth by working in and through the Christian churches. Once he got the European people to see God with the mind's eye rather than the heart's eye, he was able to make organizational Christianity the lodestar of the European people. When the dialectic becomes synonymous with Christianity, faith in Christ the Savior becomes an antiquated fable that mature science-minded men and women have left behind. Under the tyranny of the dialectic, the focus in the churches shifted away from Christ, the God above nature, to nature and the God within nature, the natural savage. There is a direct line between the dialectic theology of the great medieval scholastic and Pope Francis's assertion that the savages of the Amazon rain forest constitute the "heart of the church." There has never been a time, since Satan first entered human affairs, in which he has had a greater moral ascendancy over mankind than in our present age. And he has achieved that moral ascendancy by the age old temptation, the pride of intellect, disguised in the form of virtuous theologians, philosophers, scientists, and psychologists, all united in their utopian vision of mankind, whether it is called Jacobinism, communism, or democracy.

King Alfred, on his death bed, told his sons to keep the law. But Alfred was talking about the law based on the Gospel of Christ, the law that he had spread throughout the kingdom of Britain. He was not telling his sons to defend some abstract principle of the law, independent of its Christian roots. But that is precisely what we are commanded to do in modern Europe; we are commanded to obey an abstract law that has no Christian foundation. When we obey the law of the modern democracies we are obeying Satan's law. There is no road in our modern democratic utopian world that does not lead to hell. Can we vote the devil out of office? How is that possible when Satan runs the elections? Can we get rid of the devil by getting

signatures on a petition? How is that possible when Satan is the one who will receive the petition? The devil will not depose himself. When we attack the devil through the democratic process we are seeking the impossible: we are seeking redemption from the devil.

All the leaders of the modern democracies say that their power comes from the people. Who are the people who have given them power? They are a universal people, a people without a racial or religious identity. They are an aggregate herd devoid of that which is essential to distinguish human beings from cattle. They are without pietas, that special bond that connects us to a particular people and a particular God. This is the danger of working within the democratic process. You can only enter that process if you leave your humanity and the humane God behind.

Look at the pro-life movement. The pro-lifers appealed to the murderers through the same process that the murderers used to slaughter the innocents. Then look at the anti-Moslem initiative of the Britain First party. They did not launch their attack in the name of white Christian Britain, they launched their attack in the name of an abstract universalist Britain. And such abstract, universalist appeals always result in the application of the “all are equal, but some are more equal” doctrine of the Jacobins. The pro-lifers, seeking to oppose the liberals, always make sure they equate abortion with slavery. And Tommy Robinson, the British anti-Moslem activist, never tires of telling the liberals that most of his friends are black. Do such appeals work? No, they don’t. The liberals do not have to accept half a loaf when they already have the whole loaf. They have a universalist kingdom of hell on earth, why should they allow a tiny remnant of what was once Christian Europe to survive?

Satan got Adam and Eve to sever their filial relationship with God by appealing to their pride of science. When Christ restored our humanity on the cross, He re-established that filial bond between God and man that was severed by Adam and Eve’s sin. It has not been easy for Satan, but he has managed, over the centuries, to establish his ascendancy over man by establishing the superiority of the scientized mind over the heart that loves. St. Paul’s assertion that the folly of God is wiser than the wisdom of men has been countermanded by Satan. His credo, that “the wisdom of the scientized mind is greater than the foolishness of God,” has been accepted by the modern European. And the democratic process is the mechanism that Satan uses to spread his doctrine and maintain it. We must always be going forward in democracy, forward to a “some are more equal than others” black state, forward to a universalist religion which bans Christ, and forward to a universalist, democratic state of liberty, fraternity, and equality, which has no room for pietas.

The conservatives always tell us if we abandon the democratic process we will cease to be civilized people, because in their mind’s eye democracy and civilization are synonymous. Is that true? Is the democratic way the civilized way? What has democracy brought us? It has brought us the worship of the noble black savage, the slaughter of the innocents, the legitimization of sexual perversion, and the criminalization of pietas under the blanket condemnation of “racism.” It seems to me that democracy has nothing to do with civilization, but it has everything to do with the evil one who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

If we abandon democracy, aren’t we giving up? No, we are simply waking up to the fact that we cannot seek redemption from the devil. If a violent counter-revolution is not possible, it does not follow that there is nothing left for the white Christian but a passive acquiescence to his own extermination. To recognize one’s helplessness in the face of a satanic, malevolent foe is the beginning of the wisdom that comes from the vision of a Christian heart. If we see existence with the interior eye of the heart we will have the folly of God in our hearts, which is the only wisdom worth having. Christ, on the cross, asked God why He had forsaken Him. But He didn’t stop believing in His heavenly father. He fought through the God-forsakeness of this world and commended His spirit to God. I do not think any man, that but man is, can fail to feel God-forsaken in modern Satandom. But that is what Satan wants. He has made white pietas the original sin, and he has built a democratic citadel of evil to protect his theocratic empire of darkness. Is there a European who will walk into that citadel alone, still believing, despite the seemingly God-forsakeness of the night, that Christ will walk beside him? The wisdom of this world only tells us that we shall never see that type of man again. But the folly of God tells us something different. In life and death, O Lord, abide with us. +

# Reclaiming the Lost Children of Europe

March 3, 2018

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



... And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. —[Matthew 15: 14](#)

---

I have dwelt 'neath southern skies  
Where the summer never dies  
But my heart is in the mountains of my home.-

[Welsh song](#)

---

I recently viewed a video by Paul Joseph Watson, the self-professed classical liberal, in which he described the tragic Islamization of Germany. Watson concluded the video with the comment that a people who will not defend their culture will be replaced by a people who are willing to impose their will on those who will not defend their people. That is undeniably true. Germany is closer to annihilation than most of the other European nations, but all the European nations are in the process of abandoning their culture and ceding their nations to the Moslems and the colored heathens.

Watson is one of the best of the classical liberals. His commentaries are accurate and insightful, but is classical liberalism the antidote for the poison that has gone into the soul of the European people? No, it is not, because classical liberalism is still liberalism. It is a cancer in its early stages, in contrast to mad-dog liberalism, which is the advanced stage of the cancer, but it is still a cancer. Why is it a cancer? Because it is not enough to refer to our culture or our traditions without reference to Christ, who is the all in all of our culture and our traditions. Classical liberals acknowledge the debt our European culture owes to Christianity, and the greater debt, in the eyes of the classical liberals, that we owe to pagan Greece and Rome. But that type of respect is without depth, it is without passion, and unfortunately, it is without the faith that is necessary to defend European culture from the onslaught of the heathens without and the mad-dog liberals from within. It's not enough to invoke Christ as an important symbol of the Greco-Roman, Christian tradition. He must be more than that to us. The European people, when they were a people, looked to Christ as their Savior. He was a God who loved them. In life and death, He loved them. "Well, of course, now, let's get on to the real issue – how can rational men, men who do not believe in fairy tales, save the European people?" That is the problem – the rational, classical liberal does not really believe in the fairy tale of Christ the Lord. But our ancestors did believe. They staked their lives on Christ, and they fought for the culture that stemmed from their faith in Christ. Only that type of faith, faith in Him as distinct from faith in the Church, can provide the promethean fire to save the European people.

In Acts 19, St. Luke describes a group of vagabond Jews who tried to invoke Jesus's name without having a passionate, heartfelt faith in Christ as the Son of the living God:

*Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.*  
—[Acts 19: 13-16](#)

The classical liberals, who are the modern day conservatives, will always be defeated by the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals are possessed by the devil, who passionately hates Christ and His people. How can the rational, clear-thinking conservative combat that hate? He can't overcome such a hatred with rational analysis. He can only defeat it if he is possessed by a passionate love for the devil's antagonist. But the rational conservative eschews such extremes. And that is the tragic flaw of the modern conservatives, they are heirs of the medieval scholastics who saw no limits to rational analysis.

Richard Weaver ends his brilliant book *Ideas Have Consequences* with the recommendation that we take our stand against liberalism by defending the last metaphysical right that is left – the right of private property. Therein lies the weakness of classical, democratic liberalism. We cannot take our stand on a metaphysical right, independent of the spiritual fount of that metaphysical right. All the metaphysical rights of the European people were rooted in Christ. It's not possible to sever ourselves from Him and still expect to maintain any of those rights. The whole concept of 'rights' is a derivation of the European people's faith in Jesus Christ. We have the right, given to us by the Savior, to regard ourselves as human beings created in His image. If we reject Him, then we have no rights except those accorded to us by the devil. He has given us the right to live like beasts and die in despair.

Conservatives often make reference to the cultural war between themselves, who defend classical liberalism, and the mad-dog liberals who want to take classical liberalism to its logical conclusion. The conservatives never seem to understand why they always lose every battle in the cultural war. They lose because you cannot have just a little bit of liberalism. If we believe, with Burke, that the first liberal was the devil, then how can we allow the devil to have a place, even if it is just a small place in the corner, in our culture? Let me reference a debate William F. Buckley Jr., the classical liberal, had with the feminist Germaine Greer. Buckley made it clear from the onset that it was not women's rights he was against, he was disputing Greer's assertion that a revolution was necessary to obtain "women's rights." But a true conservative, a Burkean conservative, would have disputed the premise that a woman has any rights outside of the rights she is entitled to as a woman living in a Christian society. And that is the right to bear children and to raise them. There is no right to indulge in politics or any other activity that is contrary to the duties and obligations of a woman who is part of a Christian commonwealth.

Once God is viewed as pure intellect, we are back with the pagan Greeks who mocked St. Paul when he told them of the resurrection of the dead. Intellectual Christianity destroys the Christian faith. This is why we must never go up against the mad-dog liberals with the papier-mâché armor of classical liberalism. One well-placed arrow from the bow of a mad-dog

liberal can demolish classical liberalism, which is why the culture war between the classical liberals and the mad-dog liberals is over. The mad-dog liberals have won. The outcome was inevitable once the European intelligentsia became too smart to believe in a God who enters human hearts.

The culture war that is not yet over is the war between the mad-dog liberals and the colored heathens. Whether the colored heathens are Moslem or some other variety of heathenism, the battle is the same. The post-Christian, mad-dog liberal thinks he can convert the Moslems and the colored heathens to liberalism. The classical liberals, such as Geert Wilders in Holland, keep telling the mad-dog liberals that the Moslems cannot be converted to liberalism. But the Wilders-type conservatives never include blacks in their ‘cannot be converted’ scenarios, nor do they equate the West with Christianity. When they say ‘Western values’ they are talking about the democratic traditions of a kinder, enlightened Jacobinism. Such reasoning shows us that the classical liberals are just as delusional as the mad-dog liberals. There cannot be an enlightened, kinder Jacobinism any more than there can be an enlightened, kinder Islam.

The mad-dog liberals will lose the cultural war with the colored heathens because liberalism is not a sustainable faith. But liberalism is not a death wish; we will always believe a lie when we use the science of liberalism to diagnose the ills of liberalism. Let us look at liberalism through the eyes of a Christian. The liberals are like unto the swine in the Gospel. They must, at all costs, flee from Jesus Christ. And they will join with any force that is opposed to Jesus Christ. Certainly this will lead to the liberals’ destruction, but that is not what they hope for. They see themselves, in defiance of reality, as Atticus Finch leading a group of devoted blacks, Moslems, or some other tribe of colored heathens into the enlightened paradise of liberalism. The photo opps with Angela Merkel hugging adoring Moslems show us the liberals’ fantasy of what their brave new world will be like. Nothing will convince them that the reality will be quite different, because their hatred of the light blinds them to all reality.

The classical liberals led the European people into the ditch of mad-dog liberalism because they were blinded by their love of their God-given reason. When any gift of God is elevated above God, Satan enters in. The same classical liberal vs. mad-dog liberal scenario has been acted out in the organized Christian churches. In the Roman Catholic Church, for instance, the traditionalists, who are the classical liberals, want to restore the Catholic faith by restoring an older Latin rite. But they are blind to the fact that the rite is not a substitute for faith in Christ. When Pope Francis scolded the people who talked about Christ instead of the Church, he showed his affinity with the traditionalists at the deepest level. Their differences over rites is of no consequence compared to their agreement on the central issue – faith in Christ or faith in an organized, rational system called ‘the Church.’ The mini-Romes of organized Protestantism have followed the same path as the Roman Catholics; they have made a God of the system called the church and left Christ outside of that church. (1)

The age of prophecy is dead; there is no need for new prophets since He of whom the prophets spoke has come. But what has happened to the prophets’ vision of a God who enters human hearts? Has that vision died with the prophets? It was St. Paul’s mission to keep the prophetic vision before our eyes. Faith in Christ comes to us through, and is sustained by, the vision of our hearts. The circumcised heart, not the enlightened brain, unites us to God. If we ignore that vision, we deny the mystic vision of our people who saw that the living God was not a by-product of man’s reason, He was the beginning and the end of our heart’s desire for a God of mercy and love.

After a life spent in fear and trembling, under the merciless reign of Wackford Squeers of Dotheboys Hall, Smike is rescued by Nicholas Nickleby , the only man that ever showed him kindness and mercy. As they begin their lives in exile, Smike tells Nicholas that, “You are my home.” The European people took upon themselves the mantle of the prophets and said to Christ, “You are our home.” That intimate connection to God that is derided by the mad-dog liberals and dismissed as sentimental mush by the classical liberals is what is missing in the modern culture wars. It is the task of the Christian European to bring that intimacy with Christ, that vision of the love which passeth the understanding of the mind, back into the Europeans’ story.

The liberals, mad-dog and classical, believe that our home is a philosophical abstraction without a local habitation or name. That abstract home is missing our Savior, whom we know through the love that is engendered at our familial and racial hearth fire. As the darkness deepens, we can better appreciate the light. In order to share the prophets’ vision of the living God we must live in exile from our people; we must be among them but not of them until they leave the Babylonian night and return home. If we stay with St. Paul’s vision, which is the poetic vision of the antique Europeans, we can be a sign of contradiction to the Babylonian Europeans and a sign of hope for the wayward and lost children of Europe. +

---

(1) Caiaphas wanted Christ to die so that the system of organized Jewry, of which he was the head, could live. The clergy men of modern Christian Jewry have followed the same road as Caiaphas. They must kill the image of Christ in the hearts of His people so that their organizations can survive.

# The Tragedy of Scientized Superficiality

March 10, 2018  
Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Dostoyevsky



A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key. – Fyodor Dostoyevsky

---

Sigmund Freud, founder of the science of psychiatry, started with the assumption that man was an ape whose problems could be solved by rational analysis. Which is a bit of a contradiction right from the start, as one does not see any apes in the real world sitting around discussing their childhood traumas, organizing community blood banks, or going on talk shows to inform a breathless audience of their fellow apes about their next appearance on screen: "You must see *Toby Tyler at the Circus*. I give a magnificent performance as Mr. Stubbs – it's worth the price of admission, which I believe is two ripe bananas and one coconut."

Ignoring the inherent contradictions in his new theory, Freud plowed ahead and created a science of man that made man a recorder to be played upon just as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern played upon Hamlet. And Freud's failure was just as great as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern's failure. It's remarkable that Freud's basic assumption, that man is a glorified ape, still holds sway throughout the Western world, despite the failure of psychiatry to cure the problems that plague men so.

Freud, as a thinker, was second rate, but he was infinitely superior to the third and fourth rate psychiatric witch doctors who followed in his train. The second wave of psychiatrists accepted Freud's basic assumption while rejecting all his theories stemming from that assumption. After they failed, as Freud failed, to solve the problems of man by simplifying man with the silver rod of rational analysis, psychiatry descended to the practice of pill-pushing. "We can't solve the problem of man by rational analysis, so let's just use drugs on him to alter his behavior." And yet, despite the colossal failure of psychiatry, the modern Europeans, with no exceptions, continue, in one form or another, to accept the validity of the scientized, simplified, psychiatric view of mankind. Even those Christian sects that have rejected Darwinian evolution still kowtow to science by using the "insights" of psychiatry as a tool in their understanding of man. But is such a simplification of man possible? If we simplify man, if we make him into a piano key or a recorder that can be played upon, won't we then simplify God? Yes, we will. And in point of fact, we have already done it.

This simplification of man is not a little thing. It is a tragedy. In fact it is the central tragedy of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century. The science of psychiatry was presented to the European as a benevolent, scientific means of treating the disorder of the mind. It was always, in reality, a tool of the devil. Under the guise of scientific benevolence Satan was able to convince the European that he was better off if he viewed himself as a creature of nature rather than as a man created in the image of God. A man that comes from nature is much easier to "help" than a man who comes from God. The biological man has only to free himself from the God above nature in order to be happy on this earth, while the non-biological man, the Christian European, must deal with all the Shakespearean complexities that plague the man of feeling and depth. Thus does the devil work his will through the superficiality of psychiatry.

The antique European culture that has been discarded by the conservatives and the liberals in church and state was a culture of Shakespearean depths; it was a culture of tragedy, comedy, and romance. The modern European culture is a culture without tragedy, comedy, or romance. How can the death of a collection of atoms be tragic? How can there be laughter when there is no animating spirit within? And how can there be romance when God is nature and man is a piano key? When superficiality is institutionalized, and it has been institutionalized throughout the European nations, the people of those nations turn to the sex and blood cults of the barbarian races in order to escape the spiritual ennui of scientific superficiality.

In my undergraduate days I saw a rather dramatic example of the transformation that takes place when a man transfers from the culture of depth to the culture of scientific superficiality. I had a teacher for English literature who actually had some feeling for the literature he taught. This is usually not the case. Most of the teachers of English literature are too immersed in literary criticism to understand literature. Flannery O'Connor was quite serious when she told a friend that the professors of literature could not understand her stories. But this particular teacher was an exception; he actually read literature to try and understand what the author was saying. The very unmodern assumption of a man who reads literature for that purpose is that there is some meaning in life that can be discovered if we plunge below the surface of life.

I took a course in the humanities and later a course in Shakespeare from Dr. \_\_\_\_\_. I enjoyed both courses for the reason stated above: Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was a true student of literature. I often had long conversations with him about Shakespeare and Spencer, his favorite authors, in his office, and I should emphasize that Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was not, at that time, into the psychological study of literature. Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was in his mid-thirties, married, with two children. Now comes the tragic decline into superficiality. During the summer of my junior year, Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ came out of the closet. I at that time had only vague notions of the existence of homosexuals. When Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ came out of the closet, I saw that such mutations were very real. He left his wife and children and plunged into a homosexual lifestyle. When he came back in the fall, his Shakespeare class was no longer about Shakespeare, it was about psychology. Every line in Shakespeare was an example of some kind of psychosexual principle that could only be understood by reference to psychology and/or structural anthropology. Thus Ophelia's tragic cry of, "We know what we are, but we know not what we can be," became the symbol of a woman who wants to be a man and/or the man who wants to be a woman. Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ had Ophelia's quote taped to the door of his office. I was forced to apologize to a friend of mine, a science major, who was required to take only two courses in the humanities, for recommending the course. "He wasn't like this last year," I told him.

"With the exception of Shakespeare and Kipling, I don't really care for literature. I didn't have to take this course; it's not my major. Now instead of Shakespeare, I'm getting this bull\_\_\_\_\_, was his reply.

What could I say other than, "I'm sorry"?

Late in the course my friend made a very perceptive statement about the course and Dr. \_\_\_\_\_.

"I'd like to go into his office and knock his own *personal* teeth out of his own *personal* head." I stress the word *personal* because he stressed it. That was one of the most perceptive remarks about, and the most correct reaction to, the impersonal, psychological approach to life and literature that I have ever heard. Truly, the friend to whom I gave bad advice had wise blood.

After the course was over I saw Dr. \_\_\_ one more time. It was about two and a half years after my graduation. I was in a restaurant with a young woman, and he was at a table across the restaurant with a young black male. I don't think he was discussing Shakespeare or Spencer with his adolescent companion. All this was slightly before the AIDS epidemic struck the homosexual community. But if Dr. \_\_\_ continued his descent into the superficiality of psychological debauchery, I'm sure he died of AIDS. I hope he didn't, I hope he returned to the culture of depth, but I don't suppose that is likely. He was on the right path when I first met him. 'Tis more than a pity, it is a tragedy that he took the wide gate instead of the narrow gate. But from the liberals' standpoint there is no such thing as the tragedy of a human soul choosing the devil over Christ; there is only the tragedy of racism and the tragedy of global warming.

Dr. \_\_\_'s transformation has been our people's transformation. We have gone from the people who lived with the tragedy and hope of the cross of Christ to the people of a post-Christian culture of scientized superficiality. The men and women in such a culture, having given up their personal humanity, can only experience life secondhand through the barbarians of color and/or the people of the non-Christian faiths. Thus the scientized Evangelicals seek out the Jews and the negroes while the more syncretic Roman Catholics seek out the Moslems, the Jews, the negroes, the Indians, and on and on they go. But the one people that the modern European, be he "Christian" or secular, will not follow is the people who looked to the cross of Christ for their salvation. This scientized blending of Christ is not Christianity, it is a return to Baal.

Why do the evangelical Protestants look to the 'this world only' theology of an apostate Anglican clergyman from the early 1800s? And why do the Roman Catholics look to a system which blends Christ with the nature gods of the colored races? It is because they seek the comfort of scientized superficiality. Life is more manageable if the mystery of both man and God can be revealed in a simple five-point plan from a doctor of scientized theology. The self-help craze in religious circles and in secular society stems from modern man's flight from the culture of depth, the culture of the cross of Christ. Why do bad things happen to good people? Dr. Theological-Psychological Mumbo-Jumbo will tell you. Why are there no signs from God and why are our prayers not answered? Preacher Bob will tell us that it is because we don't give him enough money. We must plant our seed, which is money, in Preacher Bob's hands if we expect to hear from God. All such hideous, blasphemous simplifications of our blessed Savior are inspired by the devil who can and does use false images of God to ruin the souls of men. Christ came to us through our humanity. And we must come to Him through our humanity. If we refuse to plunge to the depths of our humanity, how can we know Christ? There is no self-help book or scientized system that can save us at the hour of our death. Look to the cross of Christ and to the people who made His cross their all in all. Their way is not by the wide and simple scientized gate of the modern Europeans. They all went by the narrow-gated path, which starts in the depths of the human heart and ends with the loving embrace of our Savior. That was and is the faith of the European people. If we shun that faith and those people we will surfeit and die in the scientized superficiality of our modern Babylonian Europe. +

# Our Faith is Our Destiny

March 17, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism

Tags: Shakespeare, Walter Scott



The original purpose of poetry is either religious or historical, or, as most frequently happens, a mixture of both. – Sir Walter Scott

---

Prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the European bards wrote about the trials and travails of a Christian people, but when we come to the 20<sup>th</sup> century of the European people's history, the bards suddenly started telling a different story. It was like unto reading Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, and just as we reached the chapter called "The Holy Grail" we found ourselves reading chapters from Samuel Beckett's *Endgame*. What happened to the chapters on the last tournament and the passing of Arthur?

From the 20<sup>th</sup> century on, there ceased to be Christian bards who came from the heart of Europe, for the simple reason that the European people no longer had hearts strong enough to defeat the intellectual onslaught of science, which proclaimed the death of the Christian God. Henceforth the only Christian bards were those men, such as C. S. Lewis, who rejected the new scientific faith of the 20<sup>th</sup> century Europeans in order to return to the faith of the pre-20<sup>th</sup> century Europeans. As it was with the European bards, so it was and is with the European Everyman. Only the man who makes a conscious decision to place himself in the spiritual culture of the pre-20<sup>th</sup> century Europeans can retain the Christian faith of the antique Europeans.

Certainly the scientific onslaught did not begin in the 20<sup>th</sup> century; it was an ever-present danger throughout the Christian centuries of the Europeans' history. But it was in the 20<sup>th</sup> century that the liberals, armed with an accumulated weight of scientific knowledge, the knowledge of 'this world only,' succeeded in destroying the filial relationship between Christ and the European people. A second fall of man became institutionalized in church and state. And I stress in *church* as well as in state. We would not be reading *Endgame* instead of "The Passing of Arthur" if the churchmen had not tried to graft Christianity onto liberalism. That break from a filial relationship with God to a 'hedge your bets' compromise with liberalism was the equivalent of a marriage to the devil. Granted the churchmen got the devil to sign a pre-nuptial agreement about respecting the rights of the church, but when has the devil ever dealt honestly with the sons of Adam and the daughters of Eve? He told Adam and Eve honest trifles only to deceive them in deepest consequence. And that is what he did with the churchmen – he allowed them to hold onto their organizational, intellectual concept of the church, but he made them give up their connection to Christ. He has been so successful with the church gambit that he is now very disappointed whenever he sees church membership is decreasing. Nothing good will ever happen to the European people as a people until they become like unto the antique Europeans who made Christ the heart and soul of their civilization. And there cannot be a return to that truly European (because it was truly Christian) culture until the fusionist churches of organized Christian Jewry are seen for what they are – the bulwarks of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

Instead of focusing on getting white candidates elected to office who want to slow down the extermination of white people, we need to clean the Augean Stables, the Christian churches, so that the mystery of God's grace interacting with man's free will can once again become part of the lay of the European minstrels. In order to do that we must see the connection between the European people's loss of their racial identity and the loss of their Christian faith. When our racial identity is not viewed as part of our spiritual identity, if the flesh cannot be sanctified, what becomes of our belief in the incarnation of Christ? Christ's entire life – His birth, crucifixion, and bodily resurrection – becomes a mere idea, an abstract concept that can mean all things to all people. The tyranny of biology, which Christ freed us from, once again becomes our master. And that is why the natural savage plays such an important role in the Christless Christian churches. If our pride of science tells us that nature is all, then we must look to the nature gods, the people of color, to lead us to the kingdom of heaven on earth. In that kingdom, the liberals tell us, there shall be no more pain and suffering, because pain and suffering are products of the Christian civilization of the demonic white race. Thus the liberals, who do not believe in the devil, demonize the white European hearth fire where Christ, the devil's antagonist, resides.

The effects of the demonization of the white Christ-bearing race were not apparent in the first 60 years of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, because a Christian ethos — but not a Christian faith — still survived in the white cultures. It struck me when watching an old 1950s documentary that showed the viewer where Hans Christian Andersen lived and worked, that the Denmark of 1950 had not changed much in the 500 years preceding 1950. But in the fifty years that followed, from 1950 to the year 2000, the change in the people's lives was a thousand times greater than any change in their five-hundred year history prior to 1950. By the year 2000, all the constants were gone. Faith in Christ and the love of kith and kin, which had been at the core of Denmark's civilization, were now gone. And in their place? Throughout all of the European nations, it is the same as in Denmark. There is no Christian presence, there are only post-Christian liberals, Moslems, and colored heathens battling for supremacy in a cesspool of iniquity that makes the Biblical cesspools of Babel and Sodom and Gomorrah seem tame by comparison.

If a man does not look at modern Europe and proclaim, "The Horror, the Horror," and consciously return to old Europe, he will either become part of the horror or he will be annihilated by the horror, because having lost his faith he has no spiritual spine to resist the horror. Liberalism is an ever-evolving organism of destruction. A sixties liberal who remains a sixties liberal is now a conservative in the eyes of the modern liberals. And it will always be thus with liberals. They will consume each other in a satanic feeding frenzy: "It will come, humanity must performe prey on itself like monsters from the deep."

As the liberals take liberalism to its logical conclusion, which is the destruction of everything white and Christian, we can see a remarkable change in society. There was still, when the liberals of the 1960s had not completely abandoned the Christian ethos of old Europe, some possibility of interaction, on certain issues, between a European of the old school and a liberal. But now there is no such possibility. Liberalism has permeated our culture from top to bottom, making it impossible to communicate on any level with the creatures who now inhabit the land masses of the European nations. It is impossible to exaggerate the extent of the decline of the European people. I am in agreement with Gratiano who, when confronted with the merciless cruelty of Shylock, proclaimed,

*Thou almost mak'st me waver in my faith,  
To hold opinion with Pythagoras  
That souls of animals infuse themselves  
Into the trunks of men. Thy currish spirit  
Gover'n'd a wolf who, hang'd for human slaughter,  
Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,  
And, whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallow'd dam,*

*Infus'd itself in thee; for thy desires  
Are wolfish, bloody, starv'd and ravenous.*

#### The Merchant of Venice

Yes, the liberals' desires are wolfish, bloody, starved, and ravenous. Their appetite for white blood can never be satisfied because that appetite is fueled by Satan, the ravenous wolf who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. There can be no compromise with the people fueled with Satan's cruel hate. And their hatred is no longer the abstract hate of a sixties liberal, it is a very real, tangible, venomous hatred that manifests itself in daily acts of merciless cruelty against the white race in general and against white males in particular. No force on earth, except the spiritual force that comes from a Christian European, can put a stop to the cruel merciless reign of the liberals.

The 1950s and early 1960s were the final years in which a Christian ethos still survived. Television shows such as *Robin Hood* and *William Tell* still depicted the heroes of Christian Europe in a favorable light, and liberals such as Ralph Nader still had some genuine concern for the poor and disenfranchised. But now the logic of liberalism has taken us into a realm of darkness devoid of light. And as a result of the liberals' triumph in church and state, there are no longer any Christian voices raised in opposition to the liberals' merciless cruelty. Spiritually, the liberals have become like unto Shylock. They hate everything white and Christian; without that hate they would have nothing left to live for.

I have an acquaintance in the neo-pagan camp who still deems to talk with me because we both oppose the colorization of the European nations. But he has grown increasingly intolerant of my refusal to get off my Quixotic, romanticized view of Christian Europe. From his standpoint Christianity has been the death knell of Europe. But there are two assumptions there that should be dealt with before we can put an amen to my "romanticized" view of Christian Europe. The first assumption is that the apostles' account of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead is false. Certainly, if Christ be not risen I should stop perpetuating such a myth. But what if I believe, along with the pre-20<sup>th</sup> century Europeans, that Christ is risen? Then it simply doesn't matter whether that belief is good or bad as a practical plan to preserve the white race. We must seek His Kingdom Come no matter what the cost. Dostoyevsky said that the most important question was, "Can a rational, civilized European believe in the divinity of Christ?" My neo-pagan acquaintance and the modern Europeans have given their answer. They have built a new Europe based on the assumption that Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day.

The second assumption of the practical, realistic neo-pagan is that faith in Christ as the Son of the living God has been a detriment to the white race. The historical record shows that the reverse is true. The white race thrived in the European nations and in the colored nations during the historical epoch when they believed that Christ was the Son of the living God. We cannot invoke Christ, as the vagabond Jews did in Acts, [Chapter 19, verses 13 through 16](#), for the sake of material gain, but it is important to note that our God is not as cruel as the neo-pagans make Him out. He wants us to seek Him first without a thought for the material gain, but He has not been unmindful of our material needs. "Seek ye first the kingdom of heaven and all these things I will add unto thee." As a people, not every individual, we thrived when we believed.

In our second fall from grace, when we institutionalized the pride of science, we lost the inner harmony, our integralness, which Christ restored to us through His death on the cross. We can't restore the European people unless we restore that which is lost, the inner harmony of a people connected to the living God through their familial and racial hearth fire. No political program from within the framework of 'pride of science' liberalism can save the European people. It doesn't take a liberal village, it takes a European hearth fire and a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. +

# Like Unto That of a Little Child

March 24, 2018

Categories: Blood faith, Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, James A. Fitzpatrick, Robert Louis Stevenson



And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. – *John 1: 5*

---

I believe that I've mentioned the travelogues of James A. Fitzpatrick before. He was a reporter who traveled around the world on behalf of the MGM movie studios to film short 10-15 minute vignettes of various countries of the world, over a 20 year span between 1930 and 1950. The short films then appeared before the main feature of the MGM movies. Fitzpatrick is not the best public speaker – he mispronounces many important names and places – nor is he a man who could be accused of having right-wing views, but nevertheless the films will soon be banned because they give us glimpses ('a picture is worth a thousand words') of European nations that were non-diverse and infinitely superior to the modern diversified European nations. I can't watch too many of the films at one time, lest I weep because they are a reminder of that which we have lost.

What is glaringly apparent when we view the Fitzpatrick vignettes is that diversity does not work. It is unnatural to expect birds of different feather to flock together, and it is also, more importantly, un-Christian to destroy the Christ-bearing race by colorizing their civilization. There is no one with a heart that still lives who could prefer modern Europe to the Europe we see in the Fitzpatrick travelogues. And yet somebody did prefer a diverse Europe to a non-diverse Europe, because that is the Europe we now have.

The Europe that Fitzpatrick presents is a Europe about to crumble, but the accumulated Christian capital that was still present in those European nations is on glorious display in all of the shorts. South Africa is shown as a bastion of civilization in the Dark Continent. Australia is depicted as a shining testimonial to the white race. And the scenes of rural England, Denmark, Holland and the rest of the European nations provide us with a wonderful view of non-diverse Europe. Is it paradise? No, of course not; only in comparison to modern, diverse Europe was old Europe paradise. But somebody, a whole lot of somebodies, decided that non-diverse Europe, a white Europe, was undesirable. Who were those somebodies? They were and are called liberals.

Liberals are Undines; outwardly they appear to be human, but they have nothing inside of them, they have no souls. And every liberal has sworn the same oath as the Red Knight who opposed King Arthur:

*I have founded my Round Table in the North,  
And whatsoever his own knights have sworn  
My knights have sworn the counter to it...*

Everything good, everything decent is now countered by the liberals with all that is evil and vile. The Christian, patriarchal family has been replaced by a cruel feminist matriarchy, the sanctity of life in the womb has been violated by the institutionalized murder of the innocents, and the worship of the God-Man, Jesus Christ, has been replaced by the worship of the man-god, the noble black savage. The dark night of liberalism has enveloped all of the European nations, whose people once followed the way of the cross. Now, in the name of a utopian future devoid of all things white and Christian, the Europeans have returned to the worship of Baal.

Fitzpatrick certainly didn't realize it at the time, but what he was presenting in those European panoramas was a last look at Christian Europe. The unbought grace of life that had sustained the European people for centuries was spent. The liberals, armed with cruel hate, were about to replace the image-of-God-in-man culture of the European people with an image-of-the-beast-in-man culture. But the liberals' coup could not have succeeded without the passive neutrality of the European Everyman. The liberal Undines had the passionate intensity to impose their will, which was Satan's will, on the lukewarm Europeans who no longer had the will to defend their culture, because they no longer had the same faith as the European men and women who had built Christendom in the midst of heathendom. When I was young, I used to think the servant in the Gospel parable, who simply saved his master's money and didn't invest it, was treated harshly by his master. But now I can see the meaning of that parable. We need to respond to God's grace; we must respond to His passion with our passion. "Yet what can I give Him? Give my heart." That is what has been lost. The Europeans once loved much; when their love for Christ became a mere intellectual affirmation of the idea of God, they were unable to sustain the civilization that was grounded in the love of the living God.

The liberals sought to destroy Christian Europe because they wanted to destroy the image of God in man. They succeeded because the European leadership in church and state reacted to the assault by affirming the rationality of their theological and political abstractions over the liberals' theological and political abstractions. The traditionalist Roman Catholic affirmed the superiority of Thomism and the Latin rite over the Novus Ordo rite and Hans Kung. The believing Protestants affirmed the superiority of their Jewish-Christian theology over the new 'Christ as social worker' theology of the mad-dog liberals. And the political conservatives kept asserting the superiority of our 'democratic traditions' over the new mobocracy. What was and is lacking in all the reactions to mad-dog liberalism is passion. Only those who love Christ, as the repentant sinner Mary Magdalene loved Christ, can stop the liberals' reign of terror. How could it be otherwise? The liberals hate with a passionate intensity that defies logic; we can only understand it when we view existence on a level deeper than logic. The passionate hatred of the devil's minions can only be countered by the passion of men and women who follow the God who defied logic. Was it logical to die on the cross in atonement for the sins of others? Was it logical to expect men to worship a God who suffered an ignominious death on the cross? And as a final absurdity, was it logical or rational to expect us to believe that Jesus Christ rose from the dead on Easter morning? The answer to all three questions is – "No, it was not." Yet Christ did and does ask us to look past what is logical and rational so that we can respond to His passion with a passion of our own. The conservatives' leadership in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, in church and state, were concerned with showing the liberals that Christianity was compatible with logic and reason. The Christian, the conservatives assert, can be part of Liberaldom. That is a falsehood. Christianity is not compatible with rationality as defined by the academics of Liberaldom. Nor should our leaders tell us to make terms with the liberals. We should be enjoined to love much and never let the sword drop from our hands. Hearts that love simply do not permit the slaughter of the innocents and the extermination of their people even if the slaughter and the extermination were 'voted' on and decreed by the principalities and powers of Liberaldom. Why should the Christian European ever take lessons in morality from mad-dog liberals who have chosen to worship the beast in man while destroying the people who championed the image of God in man?

In *The Lion, the Witch, and the Wardrobe* Aslan talks about the magic that is deeper than the deep magic. And in Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, Guinevere learns, after it is too late to save Camelot, that there is something more to Christian love than mere courtly love:

*Ah my God,  
What might I not have made of thy fair world,  
Had I but loved thy highest creature here?  
It was my duty to have loved the highest;  
It surely was my profit had I known;  
It would have been my pleasure had I seen,  
We needs must love the highest when we see it,  
Not Lancelot, nor another.*

The bards of old Europe were more articulate, more gifted, than the rest of the European people. But they were one in faith with their people. And the bards' vision was a vision of the God whose love passeth the understanding of logic and reason. Handel's *Messiah* is a paean to the God whose magic is deeper than the deep magic of a formulaic, intellectual Christianity. Our people loved Christ because they saw, in His divine humanity, the highest form of love. And shouldn't we love the highest when we see it? "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." Shouldn't we treasure the people who gave us a vision of the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world? Or should we treasure the Undines of Liberaldom, who have shown us, in diversity, a vision of hell? Just as we should keep Christmas in our hearts all the days of the year, so we should keep Easter in our hearts for 365 days of the year. Let us love the highest, the Christ of old, non-diverse Europe, who rose from the dead on the third day. And as the darkness deepens, let us return to the faith of our people when they were young, the faith that is like unto a little child facing the darkness of the night.+

*When the bright lamp is carried in,  
The sunless hours again begin,  
O'er all without, in field and lane,  
The haunted night returns again.*

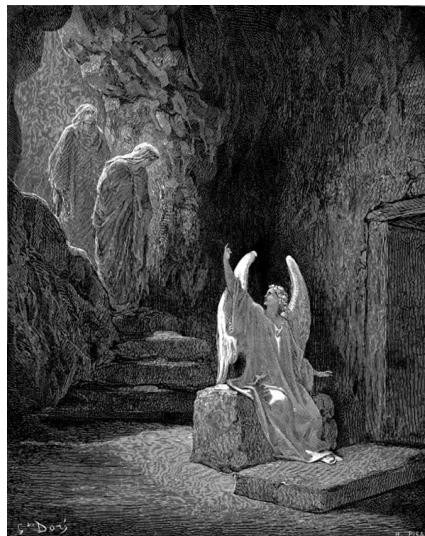
*Now we behold the embers flee  
About the firelit hearth; and see  
Our faces painted as we pass,  
Like pictures, on the window glass.*

*Must we to bed indeed? Well then,  
Let us arise and go like men,  
And face with an undaunted tread  
The long black passage up to bed.*

*Farewell, O brother, sister, sire!  
O pleasant party round the fire!  
The songs you sing, the tales you tell,  
Till far to-morrow, fare you well!*

# And the Trumpet Shall Sound

March 31, 2018  
Categories: Easter, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection  
Tags: John Donne



But if the whole space to the firmament were filled with sand, and we had before us *Clavius* number, how many thousands would be; If all that space were filled with water, and so joyned the waters above with the waters below the Firmament, and we had the number of all those drops of water; And then had every single sand, and every single drop multiplied by the whole number of both, we were still short of numbering the benefits of God, as God; But then, of God in Christ, infinitely, super-infinitely short. To have been once nothing, and to be now co-heire with the Son of God, is such a Circle, such a Compaſſe, as that no revolutions in this world, to rise from the lowest to the highest, or to fall from the highest to the lowest, can be called or thought any Segment, any Arch, any Point in respect of this Circle; To have once been nothing, and now to be co-heires with the Son of God: That Son of God, who if there had been but one soule to have been saved, would have died for that; nay, if all souls had been to be saved, but one, and that that onely had sinned, he would not have contented himselfe with all the rest, but would have died for that. And there is the goodnesse, the liberality of our King, our God, our Christ, our Jesus. —[John Donne](#)

---

When I went to college in the 1970's, the study of comparative religions was all the rage. And the conclusion of the assortment of anthropologists, psychologists, philosophers, and scientists who presided over the study of religion was that all religions were the same, except for one. That one exception was Christianity. But it was not considered exceptional because it was true, it was considered exceptional because it was unnatural and sick. Every other religion was natural, and therefore healthy, but Christianity was unnatural and therefore unhealthy. Its adherents were sick. I had a professor who faced the issue head on. "Take away the empty tomb, and Christianity can be a nature religion."

Ah, there's the rub. We can't take away the empty tomb because Christ did rise from the dead on the third day. How do we know this? Because the Son of God took flesh and dwelt among us. And when He left this world after rising from the dead, He left us a Comforter. That Comforter, who lives in hearts of flesh, is our blessed assurance that Christ is with us always, even unto the ending of the world. If we look at the historical record, we can see that the European people once believed in the Christ who enters human hearts. Now, in our 'enlightened' age, the European people are divided between a ruling class that rejects the unnatural religion of the Suffering Servant and a clerical class that asserts (because they want to retain their jobs) that Christianity is compatible with the nature religions. They tell us that Baal and Christ are one. This is why the European churchmen welcome Moslems and colored heathens into the churches but reject the Europeans who cling to the faith of their non-diverse European ancestors. But if we reject our ancestors' Christian faith, do we have faith? Baal cannot resurrect the dead. There are so many heathen faiths we can turn to in modern Liberaldom. And the blended Christian-Heathenism of the clerical apostates is the worst. We can't be saved by a rain-forest god. There is only one Savior; He is the Christ of old Europe. He is the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. We are one with Handel, who always, so long as there are Christian Europeans, shall be the true voice of Easter. Christ is Risen! +



# Be Not Afraid

April 7, 2018

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: John Donne, Shakespeare



But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid. —John 6: 20

---

The Pope's recent denial of the immortality of the soul and the existence of hell was not particularly shocking to anyone familiar with the present Pope's desire to be a good liberal. Such sentiments are perfectly in keeping with liberal orthodoxy. And that is what being a good Catholic consists of — keeping on good terms with liberals. That is also what constitutes being a good Protestant. When the survival of your church organization becomes, in your mind, synonymous with the survival of the Christian faith, you will do anything — you will even sup with the devil — in order to keep your church organization afloat.

Let us be clear about the consequence of placing the survival of the organized churches above the survival of the word of God, which took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. The consequence is that we are now ruled by a merciless cabal of Shylockian liberals, who hate the white race, the Christ-bearing race, with a religious zeal that is fueled by Satan. When the Duke of Venice asks Shylock to extend mercy to Antonio, the merchant, Shylock refuses: "by our holy Sabbath have I sworn, To have the due and forfeit of my bond." That explains liberalism: It is institutionalized hatred. The neo-pagans, who like to stay on the material surface of life, sum up the decline of the European people with one proclamation: "The Jews!" But the decline of the West has deeper roots. The spiritual malady of the Jewish people, in the main, was that they rejected their prophets and succumbed to an organizational vision of God that obscured their vision of the true God. But we cannot just scream 'Jew' and hope to reverse the decline of the European people. We cannot do that for the obvious reason that the Christian Europeans have become spiritual Jews. They have placed organizational Christianity, which is a return to pharisaical Judaism, above the faith of the antique Europeans who took Him, of whom the prophets spoke, into their hearts.

When an entire people makes hate the primary focus of their faith, they become a very dangerous people. Caiaphas and his followers hated Christ so much that they crucified Him, despite Pilate's failure to find any fault in Christ. We must see that the secular liberal and the Pope-Francis-organizational Christian have picked up Caiaphas's mantle of hatred. What kind of religion is it that has the hatred of the Light of the world at its source? A Christian European hates the devil and his works, and the liberals are the work of the devil, but that is not the basis of his religion. The basis of his religion is the love of Christ. As we have lost the intimacy with Christ that the European people once enjoyed, so have we lost the ability to distinguish good from evil. The liberals persecute the white race under the mantle of anti-racism, and the downtrodden whites accept that hatred as their due. Their only hope is that somehow they can expiate their racist sins and become part of Liberaldom. But that shall never be. The Shylockian liberals will have their pound of flesh. Who will say them nay?

There will be no opposition to liberalism from within the ranks of democracy because modern democracy is rooted in Jacobinism. Jacobinism was the first attempt by post-Christian Europeans to institutionalize the hatred of the Light, which was already the religion of the Jews who rejected the Savior. The death of Robespierre did not end Jacobinism. Far from it. All of the Western democracies are Jacobin states whose people have lost the intimacy with Christ that is necessary to combat the devil and his minions. If He does not dwell within, from whence comes our strength in the day of battle? The European people have no strength to resist liberalism, because they do not believe that liberalism is from the devil. How could liberalism be from the devil when liberalism preaches the great universalisms, such as racial and sexual equality? It is from the devil precisely because it preaches racial and sexual equality. The racial equality gambit is a subterfuge for a return to the worship of Baal, and the sexual equality gambit is a ruse for the destruction of the Christian patriarchal family.

The reason a liberal churchman such as Pope Francis can play fast and loose with revealed truth is because he has lost that intimacy with Christ, which can only come to a people who have made His word a part of their soul. If we read through the European bards, who are the true chroniclers of the European people, we are struck with the deep spiritual connection between the European people and Christ. The written testimony of the bards and the Gospel of Christ are so interwoven that one is often hard-pressed to see where the separation is. And that is how it should be with a truly Christian people. His word should be so engrained in the hearts of His people that they instinctively refer all questions of moment to Him who is at the center of their culture. Do you think Pope Francis would deny the existence of hell and the immortality of the soul if the Word had taken flesh in his heart? Christ, in the Gospels, is very explicit about the existence of hell and the immortality of the soul. Only a man thoroughly unconcerned with the Word which was made flesh could possibly hold opinions so much in conflict with God's word. But that is the case with all the modern sacred cows of liberalism. There is no place for negro worship, feminism, or Jacobinism in the Gospels, but there is a place for all three in Christ-hating Liberaldom.

Modern conservatives, who are not conservative in the Burkean sense, always try to combat mad-dog liberalism by showing the liberals that such things as the Islamification of the West and/or the complete colorization of the West go against their self-interest. What the conservatives fail to grasp is the religious dynamic behind all the seemingly suicidal policies of the liberals. If you can only feel alive when you are attacking the object of your hate, then all people who hate what you hate are welcome allies. That poor young British woman, Jayda Fransen, is currently in jail in Britain because she assumed that liberals would want to know about and take action against the Moslem rapists in their midst. But instead of taking action against the Moslem rapists, the liberals took action against Jayda Fransen. How could it be otherwise? The Moslems are the liberals' co-religionists; they both hate the white Christ-bearing race.

If you seek to co-exist with liberals, or worse yet, if you become a liberal, you will not love where you should love and hate where you should hate. You will not love the people who gave the world a vision of the living God and you will not hate all those who try to destroy His image in man. When Wackford Squeers proceeds to beat the poor disabled Smike, Nicholas Nickleby cries, "Stop! This must not go on!" Then Nicholas proceeds to beat Wackford Squeers. There is no demand of "Stop, this must not go on" from the European people, because they have no heart for the suffering servant; He no longer appeals to them. Liberalism has, in its many different guises, become not only the faith of the passionate upper echelon of Liberaldom, it has become the faith of the masses.

Yeats, who saw that Western man had lost his Christian moorings, asked,

*And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,  
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?*

The rough beast did not turn out to be the genial Irish paganism of Yeats' fantasies, nor did it become the happy land of multi-culturalism. The rough beast turned out to be Satan, who now rules the Western nations with a hatred that will brook no opposition. Should resistance come, it will come from Europeans who have taken the Word of God into their hearts. But at present the men and women of Europe have erected altars consecrated to the image of the beast in man. We can't maintain those altars and our faith in Christ. So long as churchmen such as Pope Francis espouse an intellectual faith in a theoretical God while worshipping at the altars consecrated to the image of the beast in man, whether that beast takes the form of a rain forest savage or Nelson Mandela, the European people will continue to live in a Europe diametrically opposed to all things bright and beautiful. Where there was light now there is darkness, where there was Christ now there are heathen gods.

Liberaldom consists of a vast network of organizations both large and small that exist to serve and protect Liberaldom. Our schools, our universities, our churches, our military, and the various news organizations all help to maintain Liberaldom. There is no organized resistance to Liberaldom within Liberaldom. How about the unorganized resistance? That is the key. The liberals and their followers, men like Pope Francis, have decided to go it alone without the Christ who enters human hearts. And to insure that such a God will never enter human hearts again they have made war on the white hearth fire. There is nothing Christian about negro worship. It is a convenient tool of the great haters, the Shylockian liberals. Every time a white man with a heart of flesh attacks Liberaldom in the name of Christian Europe, he is branded a racist and dealt with. And it is generally the church men who are the first to cast stones because they are scared to death of standing contra mundum vis-à-vis Liberaldom. But is it really so terrible to stand alone against Liberaldom? Yes, it is terrible if we are truly alone. But if Christ dwells within us, and the testimony of our European ancestors tells us that He will come to us if we call on Him by name, then we are not alone.

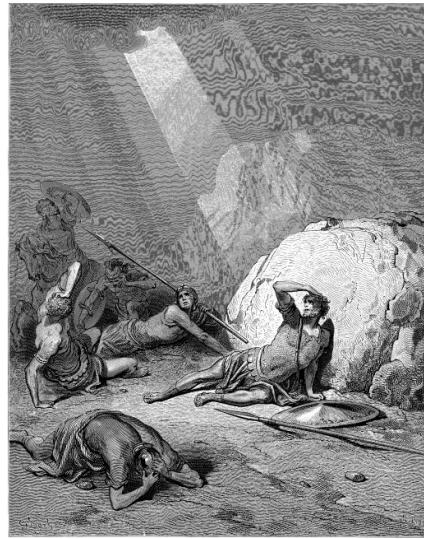
Pope Francis is not some isolated monstrosity. He is modern man. One moment he might say something positive about Christ and the next moment he'll be back in the slime pits of liberalism uttering blasphemy. His faith is a hop-toad intellectual faith, which is no faith at all. The man's heart belongs to liberalism. And the liberal's heart has room only for that which feeds his hatred for all things white and Christian. When facing such a hatred, we have only one hope. I quoted John Donne on Easter because I loved the way he described the Savior as "Our Jesus." Yes, let us make this a personal matter between those who believe that He abides with us by our racial hearth fire and those who have placed God in a cosmic box to be brought out of mothballs every other month in order to condemn racism, sexism, homophobia, and national boundaries. Our Jesus shall prevail against all the armies of the night arrayed against us. We need only remember that He does not live in the abstract intellect. He lives in hearts of flesh. +

# The Vision of His Europe and His People

April 14, 2018

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Democracy, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy

Tags: Edmund Burke, Hippolyte Taine, Shakespeare, Walter Scott



Could great men thunder  
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet;  
For every pelting, petty officer  
Would use his heaven for thunder,  
Nothing but thunder. Merciful Heaven,  
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt,  
Splits the unwedgeable and gnarled oak  
Than the soft myrtle. But man, proud man,  
Dress'd in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd,  
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven  
As makes the angels weep; who, with our spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

[-Measure for Measure](#)

---

I wrote at the time of Trump's electoral victory that his victory constituted a rearguard action. I said that white people had lost a war, and Trump's election could forestall the massacre of the retreating whites. Nothing has happened since the election to make me change my opinion about the nature of Trump's victory. But I seem to be in a minority of one. A whole host of 'conservatives,' such as Ann Coulter, expected all sorts of miracles from Trump. When, in their opinion, he didn't deliver the miracles, they condemned him and started looking for another miracle man who would follow their advice. But there will never be an elected official in the United States who is better than Donald Trump. As was the case with Andrew Jackson and Theodore Roosevelt, Trump only partly believes in American exceptionalism. That non-American element in his soul gives Trump, as it also gave TR and Jackson, the courage to occasionally act according to the instincts of a white man rather than the theories of the experts. Such a man is the only type of man who can do any good for white people. Granted, a rearguard movement will not provide white people with victories, but to look for victories within the democratic process is to seek redemption from the devil. Who is foolish enough to seek redemption from the devil? Apparently Ann Coulter and the legions of conservative pundits are foolish enough to seek redemption from the devil.

Oliver Goldsmith is oft ridiculed for stating that everything new was bad and everything old was good, but Goldsmith was right. When he said that everything new was bad, he was not referring to indoor plumbing or something else of a material nature, he was referring to the spiritual ordering of society. Society must always, Goldsmith maintained, be grounded in the Christian faith of the European people. New systems of government which placed God off to the side in preference for manmade theories of government were to be shunned. Scott was of the same opinion as Goldsmith:

*An established system is not to be tried by those tests which may with perfect correctness be applied to a new theory. A civilized nation, long in possession of a code of law, under which, with all its inconveniences, they have found means to flourish, is not to be regarded as an infant colony, on which experiments in legislation may, without much danger of presumption, be hazarded. A philosopher is not entitled to investigate such a system by those ideas which he has fixed in his own mind as the standard of possible excellence. The only unerring test of every old establishment is the effect it has actually produced, for that must be held to be good, from whence good is derived. The people have, by degrees, moulded their habits to the law they are compelled to obey; for some of its imperfections remedies have been found, to others they have reconciled themselves; till, at last, they have, from various causes, attained the object which the most sanguine visionary could promise to himself from his own perfect unembodied system.*

-from Scott's "Essay on Judicial Reform," quoted in John Gibson Lockhart's Memoirs of the Life of Scott

The American and the French Jacobin experiments in democracy were both experiments in philosophical presumption. The presumption was that Unitarians, deists, and atheists could come up with a government that could beat the tradition-laden, code-of-chivalry governments of old Europe hands-down. And what has been the result of the philosophical presumption of the great utopian theorists? To say the result has been a disaster would be a gross understatement. The American Civil War, the First World War, the Second World War, and the incredible displacement of the peoples of Europe after the Second World War were all the result of utopian theories of liberal government triumphing over the traditional, time-tested governments of old Europe. And the modern displacement of the European people in preference for the colored heathen from the swamps and bogs of heathendom is the result of the rise of a utopian elite that wants nothing to do with anything from old Europe – which means the exclusion of the white race and the Christian God from the new utopian nations of Europe.

Burke did much to dissuade Europeans from following the Jacobins, but there still followed in the wake of that revolution a whole host of liberal conservatives, men such as Macaulay, Toqueville, Weaver, and later, lesser lights such as William F. Buckley Jr., who thought democratic ideals were not incompatible with conservatism. Those 'enlightened' liberal conservatives did battle with the mad-dog liberals throughout most of the 20<sup>th</sup> century before they finally succumbed in the latter half of that century. There are now only pathetic remnants of liberal conservatives who play with abstract theories of government while all the forces of hell govern the country. What was missing back in the 20<sup>th</sup> century when there were two utopian camps – the mad-dog liberals and the conservative liberals – was the poor, unaccommodated, common man. Everything was done in his name, but he was a mere abstraction. The common man does not get his knowledge of life through old books and documents, he gets his knowledge of life through the traditions and prejudices of his people. If you cut the common

man off from the traditions and prejudices of his ancestors you have left that common man at the mercy of the purveyors of modernity. He has no touchstone of reality, but that of an ever-changing present which tells him of the evil of his past and the bleakness of his future. So to whom can he turn? He can't turn to God, because the liberal elite has placed God within the confines of liberalism. So the question remains – whither goes the white man?

All the liberal-conservatives in one form or another acknowledge the wisdom of Burke. And yet they reject the insight that is at the heart of all his thought. He believed, with St. Paul, that the folly of God was wiser than the wisdom of man. He did not believe in the double revelation theory of the scholastics, that there was one type of revelation for the thinking, reasoning man and another type of revelation for the unthinking, irrational, common man. We are all common; we need the wisdom that is passed on from heart to heart, because that instinctual wisdom of the blood connects us to Christ. We cannot go it alone with the powers of our intellect. Burke, whose intellect was certainly as great as any of his contemporaries, did not think he could walk away from the wisdom of his ancestors and still retain his Christian faith. He had that charity of honor which compelled him to reject the wide gate of pure reason in order to enter in the narrow gate of instinct, prejudice, and revelation. The modern liberal conservatives have taken the path of reason. They want to show the mad-dog liberals that they are the smart ones. But the mad-dog liberals will never be convinced by reason because we are not governed by reason, we use reason to support our passions.

*In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suites us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet...*

-[The French Revolution](#) by Hippolyte Taine

And what passion governs a people who have cut themselves off from instinct, prejudice, and revelation? The same passion that animated Adam and Eve – “Ye shall be as gods.” Which is the same passion as Robespierre’s passion:

*Hence, far from looking upon himself as an usurper or a tyrant, he considers himself the natural mandatory of a veritable people, the authorised executor of the common will. Marching along in the procession formed for him by this imaginary crowd, sustained by millions of metaphysical wills created by himself in his own image, he has their unanimous assent, and, like a chorus of triumphant shouts, he will fill the outward world with the inward echo of his own voice. –[Taine](#)*

The common man — and I am not talking about the common man as in proletariat or some other abstract entity, I am talking about the unaccommodated common man that Lear discovers his kinship with in that stable:

*Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are,  
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads and unfed sides,  
Your loopt'd and window'd raggedness, defend you  
From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them  
And show the heavens more just.*

-The Tragedy of King Lear

The European Everyman, the common man, is not separated from the poets of his race. His faith is one with Shakespeare, with Burke, and with St. Paul. They see with blinding sight and articulate the vision, but the vision is not unlike the vision that is in the Everyman’s heart. But there is a great divide, an impassable divide, between the European Everyman and the Gnostics of mad-dog liberalism and conservative-liberalism. The Gnostics of both camps have built their own Towers of Babel from which they hurl thunderbolts at the other tower. Both groups of Gnostic Babylonians enjoin the people to enter their camp, but no matter which camp the European Everyman enters he gives up that which makes him a man – his blood connection to the living God in and through his kith and kin. Look at the wasteland of 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatism. Is there any room for Anthony Jacob’s heartfelt plea for the survival of his people, the Christ-bearing race? No, there is not. All we see are proposals to protect democracy and/or our Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian traditions. But our people are not a democratic abstraction, nor is our God a mathematical abstraction, He is a God of spirit and blood, He is “our Jesus.”

There is nothing that can excuse a European who goes over to Gnosticism. He cannot plead that he was not given the intellect to understand the higher things, because God does not ask us to understand with our minds. He asks us to understand with our hearts, and we all are given the heart to understand Him. If we choose to reject the wisdom of our hearts, in order to illuminate our minds, we will create our own little kingdom of hell on earth from which we can spew venom at all the other little kingdoms of hell on earth. Each man is a universe, and he is either a universe connected to the living God or he is a universe connected to Satan.

What then is the war that the white man lost? The white man lost the war against the principalities and powers of this world, because he listened to the siren call of the pride of science. “You can create God in your image, the image of the new, rational man, and then you can have the world as well as God.” But what does it take to scientize the world? It takes men who have scientized their souls. In order for the Gnostics’ rule to take hold, the white Everyman had to be Gnosticized, he had to believe that life was a problem in mathematics that could be solved by the proper mathematical authorities. He had to believe in the ‘piano key’ logic of existence and reject the blood wisdom of his European ancestors. The end result of that great Gnostic revolution is that Europe is governed by thoroughbred metaphysicians who rule in the name of the demonic angel who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls “the compunctions visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometers, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world.*

-[Letters to a Noble Lord](#) by Edmund Burke

Conservative Gnostics often bring up the forms of the past such as the Latin rite or the democratic process to counter the new Gnostics who look to newer systems. But the Christian European does not worship forms. He worships the living God. And the living God can only be known through the human heart. It is human hearts, the hearts of our people who loved much, with which we must reconnect. And how can we do that when their world, the world in which He resides, has a ‘Do not enter’ sign on it and is zealously guarded by a Gnostic army of Satan’s minions? The European past is all around us, but it is treated like something that is dead and buried. If it was seen for what it was and still is, the place where our Jesus lives in the hearts of His people, the European story could once again become part of His story. We cannot get from here, which is Gnostic Europe, to there, which is Christian Europe, without a miracle. But wasn’t Christian Europe a miracle? There is a living God who can set hearts on fire. Our task is to destroy the images of the beast-in-man god of the Gnostics and place our Jesus at the center of Europe. The counterrevolution starts at our familial and racial hearth fire. “As for me and my house, we shall serve the Lord.” +

# In the Land of the Stranger

April 21, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas, Propositional faith

Tags: Shakespeare, St. Paul



And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word. Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. -*Acts 28: 25-27*

---

It was not the Greeks *en masse* who mocked Paul and called him a babbler. Many of the Greeks outside of Athens and even some Athenians (Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them) also “claved unto St. Paul” and believed. But on the whole the Athenians could not accept St. Paul’s belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. And in the Acts of the Apostles is written the whole history of the European people, their rise and their fall.

When St. Paul went to Athens, his mortal enemies, the Jews, followed him there. Their hatred of him stemmed from his uncompromising, unremitting preaching of Christ crucified, Christ risen:

*And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks. And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ. And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.* -*Acts 18: 4-6*

The Athenians who rejected St. Paul’s faith in Christ did not hate him as the Jews hated him. They, after all, were philosophers – they neither loved nor hated, they simply liked to sit around and indulge their intellectual curiosity. “For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.” Paul got nowhere with those philosophical speculators.

As we look at our people’s history we see those two forces, the Jews who hate the Savior, and the philosophical speculators who love debate, continually at work undermining the European people’s faith in Christ. When the Europeans kept those two forces in check (for you can never completely eliminate them), they were a people who bore witness to the light of the world. Now that the Jews, who hate the light, and the philosophical speculators hold sway, there is no light in Europe, and the European people have become Undines — they have lost their souls.

The philosophical speculators in the church, the theologians who wanted to make Christianity into a respectable philosophy they needn’t be ashamed of, spawned the philosophical speculators in society, the Voltaires and the Rousseaus. When that spirit of philosophical speculation takes hold, when those who believe in the resurrection of the dead are seen as babblers and purveyors of fairy tales, the people doubt Christ and start to become like unto the Jews who hate Him. This is the dramatic transformation that took place in Europe. When the scoffers, the Voltaires, the Shaws, and the Rousseaus, made Christianity a thing of ridicule, the formerly Christian people became like unto the Jews. They began to hate Christ and his followers. If Christ be not risen then the Christian religion is a sin against nature. Flying the flag of the natural savage, the Judaized European, the liberal, attacks the European people with a religious zeal that is grounded in the hatred of the living God, who is Christ the Lord. The white race will always be the object of the Judaized liberals’ hatred because the white race formed a covenant with the Suffering Servant. They can announce to the world that they have broken that covenant, they can claim that Christianity and liberalism are one, but that will avail them nothing. Nothing can change the fact that the white race saw beauty on the cross and made the Christ story their story. They simply can’t be trusted, so they must be destroyed.

The neo-pagans who have made the exterior Jew the main problem do not understand the European people’s journey from darkness to light and then back to darkness. Satan was the great scoffer, he debunked the fairy tale of God’s filial connection to Adam and Eve. He told Adam and Eve that the stupid story of the forbidden fruit was just that – a stupid story: “Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods...” But who was the liar, Satan or the Lord God? The devil will always tell us honest trifles to betray us in deepest consequence. Death came into the world when Adam and Eve took the devil’s word over God’s word. And we have reenacted that original sin by allowing the Athenians, the Voltaires, and the Rousseaus (“Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau, Mock on!”) to place St. Paul’s vision of the risen Lord in the unscientific world of unreality, while placing the Rousseauian vision of a natural world cleansed of unnatural Christian Europeans at the center of Europe. The “naturalism” of the philosophical speculators always metamorphoses into the hatred of the light. The Christian believes that Christ restored us to our true natures; we were not born to die. But if Christ be not risen, as the philosophical speculators tell us, then He is the great destroyer, He is the one great obstacle to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. We can’t dance around the throne of the noble black savage if Christ, not nature, is the one true God. That is the real war we are fighting, or should I say that is the war the Europeans *should* be fighting? We should take up the discarded sword of the European people, which is the cross of Christ, and assert the truth of His story over the mocking ridicule of the philosophers and the zealous hatred of the liberals. And let us not be deceived by the internecine warfare between various camps of liberals, whether they are neo-pagans who mock “gentle Jesus,” Christian fusionists who worship Israel, Roman Catholics who worship the natural savage, or mad-dog liberals who hate with the passion of Shylock, they are all of one accord on that which is essential: They hate the antique Europeans who placed Christ at the center of their culture. How can we be a people again if we deny our parentage? We, the European people, were born of Him. Everything else the European people did prior to their acceptance of Christ was only significant to the extent it helped prepare them to receive their King.

And they were prepared, because they, unlike the philosophers and the Jews, were able to love a God of mercy who did not come in the form of an earthly king but in the form of a suffering servant. When the judgment of nations takes place, it is the Europeans’ espousal of the God who asked for mercy rather than sacrifice that will distinguish them from all the other nations. Why do the modern Undines, the soulless Europeans, stand with the heathen gods who require sacrifice and have no place for mercy?

*Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.* -*Psalms 2: 1-3*

They stand with them, because they believe the lies of the devil who tells us that the natural world, the world we can see and touch, is the whole world. We need only turn to the gods of the natural world in order to find the peace and fulfillment that we could never find with the Christ of old Europe. That is the liberals' party line.

Christ the Lord is no longer a living reality to the people of Europe. He is no longer the God above nature who redeems us from sin and death, He is the great facilitator of the nature gods. He helps us to fight racism, which is white pietas, and enjoins us to think of Him as the God of liberalism. But is our Lord the lap dog of the liberals? No, He is not. Nor should we be the lap dogs of the liberals just because we are afraid of being called racist, sexist, or Islamophobic. So long as we are only concerned with showing the liberals that faith in Christ is compatible with liberalism, we are sounding brass and tinkling cymbals. We are nothing at all.

To live in exile estranged from your people and your homeland is a terrible thing. But it is far more terrible to make peace with the invaders who have killed your people and despoiled your homeland. And that is precisely what the modern anti-Europeans such as Pope Francis and Angela Merkel have done. They have renounced their people and made peace with the invaders. Better to live in exile within the confines of the new Babylon, than to make peace with those who have made the hatred of the white, Christ-bearing race their sole religion.

In grade school we used to sing a song that was inspired by a piece of poetry by Davey Crockett. One line in that poem has stayed with me my entire life: "In the land of the stranger, I rise or I fall." The Europeans who conquered the Roman empire did so in the name of their gods who fought beside them in battle and presided over their racial hearth fire. When they heard the Christ story, they saw, with their hearts, the same God that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. His vision became their vision. And in the land of the stranger, which consisted of all the colored races, they rose, because they had no truck with the philosophical speculators. But what of their heirs? What happened to the European people? Satan conquered the European people through philosophical speculation and made their faith a subject of ridicule. Now the European people are naked to their enemies – the colored heathens and the Judaized liberals.

I do not say it will happen, because no man can know such things, but I do say that the world of the antique Europeans, which they built in the midst of heathendom and in spite of the forces of liberalism arrayed against them, was and is the real world. It is His world. And it will only return if we reject the world of the stranger, the world of apostate church men, colored heathens, and Judaized liberals. That world is not the world for a European.

Kent enjoins Lear to "see better" so that he will know who his real daughter is, the daughter who loves him. We must see with our European hearts so that we can know the living God, the God who loves us. He does not reside in the minds of the philosophical speculators nor in the unhallowed churches of diversity and hatred; He resides with the people with hearts of flesh. White pietas will sustain us in the day of battle, because it is white pietas that allows us to see and know the savior. We shall rise if we cleave unto the vision of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. We shall remain a fallen people, under the yoke of the stranger, so long as we reject the antique Europeans' vision and cleave unto the gods of liberalism. +

# The Stone Which the Builders Rejected

April 28, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Kenneth Grahame, Le Fanu, Robert Louis Stevenson



Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. — [Matthew 21: 42-44](#)

“I beg your pardon,” said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. “You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!”

“The River,” corrected the Rat.

“And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!”

“By it and with it and on it and in it,” said the Rat. “It’s brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It’s my world, and I don’t want any other. What it hasn’t got is not worth having, and what it doesn’t know is not worth knowing.”

— [The Wind in the Willows](#)

There are two utopian branches of liberalism at work in the European nations. The first is the utopianism of the Christian theologians, both clerical and lay. They claim that the antique Europeans were insufficiently Christian, therefore it is necessary to denounce them and build a new Christian world devoid of the racism, sexism, and the general un-Christian behavior of the antique Europeans. The Christian utopians are constantly referencing the sins of the antique Europeans, while ignoring the sins of the liberals who they are allied with in their condemnation of the antique Europeans. Hilaire Belloc is representative of the utopian Christians. He supported the Jacobins because, in his judgement, the French aristocrats were insufficiently Catholic, therefore they needed to be purged. But were the Jacobins worthy representatives of the new purer Christianity? So it always is with the utopian Christians. They condemn the impure, imperfect Christianity of their ancestors while calling for a new and better Christianity of the future. Does that future ever come? The ‘impure’ Europe of the past seems like paradise compared to the new Europe that the utopian Christians and their secular counterparts have built.

The other branch of utopianism is the secular branch, the Robespierre liberals. They want to do away with Christianity entirely and create a new world based on nature and nature’s god, the noble savage. At present the secular utopians have more power than the Christian utopians. No Christian utopian has any power independent of his secular masters. When he speaks in support of secular utopians, he is allowed to speak without condemnation. In fact, he is highly praised. Both Eleanor Clift and Al Gore speak of Pope Francis in laudatory terms. There are disagreements between the Christian utopians and the secular utopians when the Christian utopian speaks out against a liberal sacred cow, such as legalized abortion – he is lumped in with the older, bad Europeans of the past. But despite disagreements about what constitutes utopia, the Christian utopian always sides with the secular liberals against the non-utopian Europeans, because his heart belongs to liberalism.

It is clear that the Christian utopian has lost his faith in Christ as the Son of God, just as the secular utopian has lost his faith in Christ as the Son of God. They only disagree about the clubability of Christ. The Christian utopians believe He can become a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods, while the secular utopians would prefer to do without Him. They are of one accord though on that which is essential – they both have no faith in the Christ whom the antique Europeans believed in. The Christian utopians do not think that is anything to worry about, because they will give us a new, cosmic Christ, shorn of all the time-bound and culture-bound European trappings. But the new, non-European Christ seems to be a very pedestrian, liberal fellow, a combination of Gandhi and Nelson Mandela. Is the new Christ our Lord and Savior? Of course not, the Christian utopians tell us, He is something much better than Christ the Lord, He is Christ the Facilitator, who teaches us to protect the environment and to revere the noble savages of color.

The secular utopian also tells us that we needn’t worry about losing our faith in the Christ of old Europe. Now that the European fairy tale is dead, we can conquer racism, sexism, and every other prejudice stemming from the Christian faith, in order to build heaven on earth. “We have got to get back to the garden.” But what garden are the utopians taking us to? It is the garden after the fall, a garden poisoned by Satan and infected with the stink of death. Christ redeemed that garden with His blood. We can’t be redeemed by the secular utopians or their ‘Christian’ fellow travelers on the road to utopia. That road leads to hell.

There is no sadder, tragic scene in the letters of St. Paul than that in which he writes about in Romans’ chapter 9. He loves his people, but he is faced with the fact that despite the prophets, despite Christ’s life, death, and resurrection, they have no faith.

*And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha. What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.* — [Romans 9: 29-33](#)

Haven’t we, the European people, become like unto the Jews who followed after the righteousness of the law without faith in Him who is the source of all righteous law? Throughout organized Christian Jewry, the various churches have enthroned either one Caiaphas, or a cabal of Caiaphases, to hand out the laws of righteousness without regard for faith in Christ. It is better, the Christian Caiaphases tell us, that our faith in Christ the Lord should perish so that the new faith and the new people can flourish. But the new faith is a very old faith; it is faith in Baal with its accompanying celebration of the image of the beast in man and the denial of the image of God in man. Can we live with such a faith? No, we cannot. And modern Europe is

the proof that we cannot. Moslems and black heathens rape and murder with impunity. The slaughter of the innocents has been given state sanction, and every perversion condemned in Christian Europe has the protection of our law courts. Is this utopia? The European people's faith in a particular God, one Jesus Christ, sustained them for centuries prior to the advent of the new utopian faith of the purveyors of modernity. I ask the same question that St. Paul asked: Why, after hearing the testimony of the prophets, the apostles, St. Paul, and our European ancestors concerning the miracle of Christ crucified and Christ risen, have we rejected Christ and returned to the worship of nature and nature's gods?

The prophets, Christ, St. Paul, and the European poets are of one accord regarding the reason that one individual or a whole people reject the grace of God: It is the hardened heart. The intellectuals in church and state hardened their hearts against the living God, and the European people have followed in their train. The constant, unremitting condemnation of white racism is the devil's way of keeping his kingdom in order. So long as white people regard their natural affection for their kith and kin as something evil, they will not have the heart to respond to the God who enters human hearts. And a people without a heartfelt faith are not a people, they are a herd of grazing cattle waiting to be slaughtered.

Chateaubriand was a dilettante, a philosophical speculator, before the French Revolution, but when the Jacobins murdered his family he returned to his royalist and Christian roots. As he described it: "I wept and I believed." Chateaubriand still had a heart of flesh. His white pietas brought him back. Is it now too late for the European people? Do they no longer, like LeFanu's Uncle Silas, have the heart for the religion of the God-Man?

*Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels. The idea of marrying me to his son by fair means, then by foul, and, when that wicked chance was gone, then the design of seizing all by murder, supervened. I dare say that Uncle Silas thought for a while that he was a righteous man. He wished to have heaven and to escape hell, if there were such places. But there were other things whose existence was not speculative, of which some he coveted, and some he dreaded more, and temptation came. 'Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble, every man's work shall be made manifest; for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.' There comes with old age a time when the heart is no longer fusible or malleable, and must retain the form in which it has cooled down. 'He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; he which is filthy, let him be filthy still.' – Uncle Silas*

The European people have embraced the religion of Uncle Silas, which is the religion of the hardened heart, the same religion as Caiaphas and his followers who sought righteousness without faith. Unless we consciously go back to our Christian childhood, because our hearts yearn for that which is lost – our filial connection to the living God – we will not only die out as a distinct people, but we will also fail to regain our 'eternal jewel.' Can a people or an individual function without a soul? The modern utopians tell us we can, but again, I bid you look at modern Europe. Is there anything in this beast-in-man culture that can sustain life?

If the European people are to reclaim their souls, they cannot have anything to do with the Christian utopians or the secular utopians, because both branches of the utopian railway lead to a future devoid of faith, hope, and charity. Is there any indication that the Europeans desire to leave the flesh pots of Babylon for old Europe? No, there is not, but when people have been raised in darkness without ever seeing any light, how can they choose the light over the darkness?

Spiritual virility, the type of spiritual virility that believeth all things and hopeth all things, comes from a love that is enkindled at our racial hearth fire. Without a racial hearth fire, there can be no spiritual virility, there can only be sterile utopian systems that lead to darkness. Robert Louis Stevenson made a conscious attempt to recapture his soul by making a spiritual return to his white, Christian childhood. He was successful. In the midst of mortal pain, seconds away from death, he penned the last verses of his masterpiece:

*The world is so full of a number of things,  
I'm sure we should all be as happy as kings.*

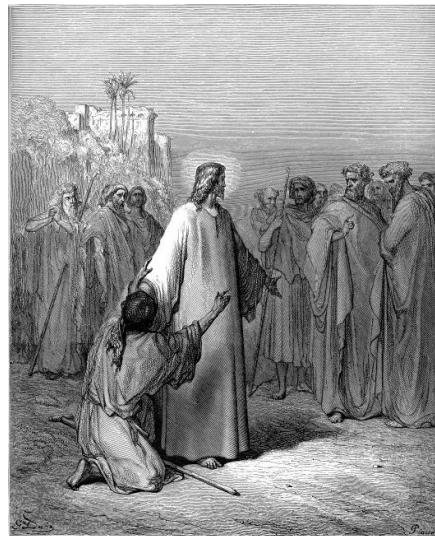
Throughout *A Child's Garden of Verses*, Stevenson celebrates the poetic of the European hearth fire, a hearth fire that was unique, because it was connected to Christ, the God with the heart of flesh. It is not a little thing to have once been connected, through your racial hearth fire, to the living God. And it was not a little thing, it was a tragedy, when that connection was severed so the European people could become part of the new Babylon, a kingdom of hell on earth devoid of the faith that makes life on this earth bearable.

I do not acknowledge the new Europe. I admit that it exists, but I do not acknowledge any aspect of the new Europe as a part of Europe. Only eternal Europe is real. If the European people acknowledge any part of the new Europe, they have ceased to be Europeans. It is far better to live as an isolated, marginalized, antique European than to live in the darkness of Babylonian Europe. The love that passeth the understanding of the utopian mind can still enter human hearts gathered around a European hearth fire. It is our task, we few, we Europeans, to stay true to the European hearth fire so the righteousness that stems from faith in Christ shall not perish from the earth. We shall not be ashamed of the European Christ. He is not a stumbling block – far from it – He is our only hope. +

# The Demons of Europe

May 5, 2018

Categories: Charity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism



And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts. — [Matthew 8: 28-34](#)

---

Hell is empty, And all the devils are here. — [The Tempest](#)

---

Christ cast out the devils from the two demonically possessed men, and the people of the Gergesenes asked Him to depart from their coasts. Apparently they preferred to live with demons rather than Christ, but we can't single out the people of the Gergesenes as a demonic people separate from the rest of mankind. We can't do that because Christ was not only rejected by His own people and the Gergesenes, He was also rejected by the people of every nation of the world. Many individuals saw with their hearts and believed, but most, in the main, raged against the light of the world and clung to their Babylonian night.

There was one exception to the general curse. This is something we must come to terms with. Standing on Mt. Utopia, you may condemn them for their sins, which are undeniably scarlet, but after all the condemnations are made, there still remains one startling, magnificent, unalterable truth – the European people, and only the European people, created a civilization based on their love of the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Tragically, we must also come to grips with a second unalterable truth – the European people, with a few exceptions, have returned to the Babylon night of paganism. By the term 'unalterable truth' I mean we cannot alter the fact that the Europeans have returned to Baal. I do not say that their return is necessarily permanent; it is not written that we must remain chained to the rock of Prometheus with the demonic minions of Satan pecking at our entrails. If we grasp the two truths, that the European people created a civilization with Jesus Christ at its center and that they have now abandoned that Christ-centered civilization, we can climb out of hell and see His cross before our eyes instead of Satan's kingdom of eternal night.

Satan, in a perverse imitation of the parable of the lost sheep, does not concern himself with the colored races. They are not lost, he has them in his fold. But he is very concerned about the European people. For years they were 'lost'; they belonged to the Good Shepherd. Of course in Satan's eyes, the Good Shepherd is not the good shepherd, He is evil. In order to separate the Europeans from Christ, Satan had to use the same subtlety he used in the Garden of Eden. He had to appeal to the Europeans' intelligence. He didn't bid them deny Christ, instead he told them to adjust their thinking about God. He asked them to be more intellectual.

The devil tells us we can know God by the contemplation of the natural world. And when we know the natural world we will know God, we will have become righteous. But the Europeans' newly acquired righteousness, acquired during the last century, is not the righteousness of faith; it does not come from the love of the Suffering Servant, it comes from the father of lies who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

The righteousness that is grounded in the law of a man-made god is the essence of modern Europe. There always were individuals such as the fanatical Covenanter John Balfour of Burley, depicted in Scott's *Old Mortality*, who tried to impose their Christless faith on the European people, but they were not successful until the 20<sup>th</sup> century. The distant drummers, the men with the righteousness of Satan, are no longer distant drummers, they are the rulers of Liberalism. We now live in a world dominated by a righteous liberalism separated from the love of Christ as true God and true man. That post-Christian zeal is the dynamic driving the liberals. Every evil under the sun is given divine sanction under the guise of liberal righteousness, but it is the righteousness of Satan.

The Me Too movement is a recent example of how the devil works his will on the European people who have scientized Christ out of existence. Ostensibly the movement is about protecting women from sexual assault, but that is not the real reason for the movement. The intent of the movement is to destroy the last vestiges of the Christian family by solidifying the rule of the Lady Macbeths of feminism. How can a movement grounded in feminism, the most demonic ideology ever conceived, really accomplish anything to the good? Are the women in control of the movement really concerned about the sexual assault of women? Of course not. If they were, they would resist the colorization and the Islamization of the Western world because in those cultures rape is meritorious. Instead the feminists' focus is on white males and outmoded black males, such as Cosby, who dallied with women who want to be on television and in motion pictures. Clearly there is something sinister about a movement that does the exact opposite of what its proponents claim is the movements' purpose. The feminists' unremitting attack on the white male, which is what the Me Too movement is really about, will help ensure that the only civilization on the face of the earth that actually did protect women from sexual assault will never rise again. The white male should be encouraged to pick up the chivalrous mantle of his European ancestors, but instead, Church and State have joined with the feminists to stamp out the last remaining remnants of white chivalry.

Any movement, such as the feminist movement, which starts out with a 'this world only,' materialist view of man is from the devil no matter how high-flown the rhetoric used in support of the movement. The French Revolution was supposed to be about liberty, equality, and fraternity while in reality it was about the destruction of Christian Europe. So it was with the American experiment in democracy and Russian communism. Despite their 'rights of man' rhetoric, those revolutions were revolutions celebrating the demise of Christian Europe. And in the 20<sup>th</sup> century the Civil Rights movement became a tool of the Rousseauian liberals. Under the guise of the 'equality and universal brotherhood of mankind' the liberals dethroned Christ and set up the noble savage as Lord of Europe.

In all of his anti-European gambits, the devil has been very careful to cloak his demonism with some covering from the Christian era of the European people, because of their Christian past. They have lost the righteousness that stems from faith in Christ, but they have retained the desire to be righteous as a kind of hangover from their Christian past, and this is why the

Christian churches that celebrate righteousness without faith have become so important as a prop and support of liberalism. They allow the European people to profess Christianity while severing all ties to the Son of God. It's quite significant that the Book of Revelation is used by the modern Christians as an astrology chart revealing the secret of the ending of the world. It is viewed that way despite our Lord's statement: "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the father."

What Christ does stress in the Book of Revelation is that faith in Christ cannot be, it must not be, blended with any other faith. We live in the most demonic era in history because we, as a people, have blended Christ with liberalism. Which means a European can worship the negro and still be a Christian, he can support the feminists and still be a Christian, he can support the Moslems and still be a Christian, and he can support the deification of the unrepentant, unconverted Jew and still be a Christian. The only thing the modern European cannot be is a Christian who believes that Christ is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

When I was a freshman in college, I read Karl Jung's book *Modern Man in Search of a Soul*. I started reading the book with great hopes, because I was a modern man in search of a soul. But when I completed the book, I was filled with rage. There was nothing in the book that a man could take hold of and say, "By this faith I shall live and die." Jungian psychology is representative of modern Christianity: it is all things to all people, but a faith that is all things to all people is not a faith. Christ is either the Son of God who redeemed us from sin and death or else He is nothing at all. He can't be the black Christ, the cosmic Christ, or any other Christ but the Christ whom the European people once embraced as their Lord and Savior.

Is it impossible to rekindle the faith that motivated the Europeans who saw, in Christ, a greater God than Odin? Greater because He had Odin's courage and something else – He had charity, that undefinable essence that is the first and finest attribute of God. And we, as His people, show ourselves "most like God" when we have that charity of honor. Is it not treasonable, is it not unconscionable that the people who once believed in the Suffering Servant, whose divine charity sustains the world, have renounced Him and embraced the gods of liberalism? The modern intellectualized Europeans proudly proclaim that they are too smart to bend their knees to the fairy tale, provincial God of old Europe. But every man bends his knee to some god. If not the European Christ, it will be the negro, or Allah, or science, or some combination of all the nature gods. We will have all, we will have the European Christ, or we will have nothing. The shadow of liberalism, which is the shade of spiritual oblivion, can be lifted from Europe. But it cannot be lifted by the democratic process or any other process stemming from liberalism. We need a miracle, we need the type of miracle that took place when the followers of Odin bent their knees to Christ. Are we greater than they were? Only if knowledge of what can be seen in a microscope constitutes greatness. But if moral vision, the intuitive grasp of things unseen by the material eye, is greatness, then the modern Europeans are spiritual dwarfs and the first European Christians were giants. We will not regret it if we turn from the dwarfs of modern Europe and follow in the train of the spiritual giants of old Europe. But we will regret it for all eternity if we stay with the spiritual dwarfs of modern Europe. "Thus is our faith tested."<sup>1</sup> +

---

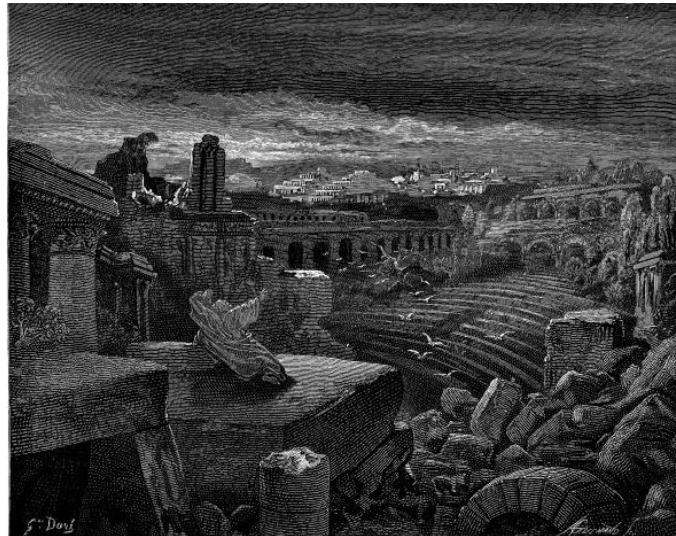
(1) Cosby is not being tried for sexually assaulting women. The liberals do not care about the sexual assault of or the murder of white women. Ask Channon Christian about that. Cosby was tried and convicted because liberals prey upon each other like monsters from the deep. Cosby didn't "evolve"; he represented the old liberalism which stated the black man was just a pigmented white man. That image of the black man, which is a lie, comforted white people. It was a religious duty of white middle class Christians of the 1960s to listen to Cosby's albums and later to watch him on television. But the new image of the black man is not that of a pigmented white man, he is now the deified black who must be welcomed as the god who will destroy whiteness. Cosby outlived his time and has been discarded by the new advanced liberals presiding over Babylonian Europe. Ever onward to hell, is their battle cry.

# The Precious Cornerstone

May 12, 2018

Categories: Blood faith, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas, Propositional faith

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Thomas Hughes, Walter Scott



Wherefore hear the word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. —[Isaiah 28: 14-17](#)

---

During World War II, Coventry suffered the greatest damage from the German bombing in England. The pictures of the city right after the war ended are a depressing sight, just as the pictures of London during the war are a depressing sight. But in both cases, Coventry after the war and London during the war, one does not feel a sense of despair when viewing the bombed out cities. Far from it – one feels spiritually fortified, because amidst the rubble, the British people, the white British people, were going about the business of rebuilding their nation, which at that time was still a nation bound together by the British people's common faith and their common race. If you look at the major cities of Britain now you see cities much more devastated than the war-torn cities of the 1940s; you see cities inhabited by people who have lost their souls, because they have no racial or religious identity. And the two are linked. You cannot despise your own kind in the name of a universal love for all mankind, and still maintain the heart and soul that makes a man a human being rather than an inhuman caricature of a human being. And you can't love a God who enters human hearts if you have decided to deny your humanity by renouncing all ties to your kith and kin. Men without a racial hearth fire must eschew Christ the Lord and embrace a cosmic universalist Christ who can only be revealed to men through mind-forged theories about God. But such a God, a man-made abstraction, is not God. Men can no more love a theory of God than they can love a theory of family. They must love their own, their fathers and mothers, their sisters and brothers, and their wives and children. Those are the [mysterious human relationships](#) that connect us to the living God, and all those relationships are part of our racial identity, which the liberals have systematically set out to destroy.

The conservatives of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, men such as Weaver and Kirk, who are now called paleo-conservatives, were not conservatives. They were not conservative because they did not want to conserve that which was essential to conserve, their own people, the white Christ-bearing race. There is no doubt that Weaver's and Kirk's theories about government were superior to the theories of their more liberal contemporaries, but still their 'conservatism' is insufficient. If life is all theory, things go a lot more smoothly for the intellectual. He merely pulls an abstraction called 'the people' out of the air and then proceeds to show how his theory can serve 'the people' better than another man's theory. But what if there is no such thing as a generic people? What if people are individuals whose souls are connected to their racial identities? If that is the case, the conservatives' systems are thin air, they are the insubstantial pageant that Prospero spoke of.

Trump recently gave a speech about Iran, in which he delineated the reasons why he was canceling Obama's treaty with Iran. I have no problem with the cancellation of the treaty; however, nothing of any value will come from the cancellation, because Trump is proceeding according to a false premise. He is presuming that the United States is a nation. If we were a nation, it would follow that our President should protect our nation, but a nation is faith and race. Is there any American official who has proposed that we deal with our internal enemies, the barbarians of color and the liberals, before we deal with our alleged enemies on foreign soil? We should be a nation first, then we should act to protect our nation. Why should I, or any white European, want to fight Iranians over there if my government refuses to expel Moslems, blacks, Mexicans, and liberals over here?

No liberal is ever going to consent to do what is necessary to protect the European people, because what is necessary is the expulsion of the colored races from the white lands. Such a policy runs counter to what the liberals passionately hope for – the destruction of the white race and the triumph of the colored heathen. The conservatives of the 20<sup>th</sup> century could not halt the destruction of the white race, because they refused to admit that a man's race is part of his soul; it gives his soul strength and substance and prevents him from fading into spiritual oblivion. The triumph of the mad-dog liberals and the colored barbarians in the 21<sup>st</sup> century has shown us the tragedy of replacing white pietas with theories, both liberal and conservative, about the generic people.

The mad-dog liberal is separated from the conservative-liberal on one point: The mad-dog liberal wants white people excluded from the utopian future while the conservative-liberal wants white people, providing they are not racist, to be part of the great future in store for the human race. In practical terms the modern conservatives and the mad-dog liberals are one, because if you deprive white people of their pietas you have spiritually murdered them, regardless of your theoretical support for their survival as members of the generic human race.

The 20<sup>th</sup> century produced very few genuine conservatives, men who were not ashamed to fight for the survival of their own kith and kin. Enoch Powell and Anthony Jacob were notable exceptions to the wholesale treachery of the rest of the white intelligentsia. And it was treachery, because it was not, as Jacob pointed out, the advance of the colored heathens that was destroying the white race, it was the white liberals' determination to permit the colored encroachment into the white lands that was destroying the white race:

*It is remarkable how the invincible African Giant quakes in his big bare feet at the prospect of meeting with a dose of his own medicine. It is no wonder that Sir Roy dismissed this supposed African invincibility in one contemptuous word – Poppycock! But it is thought in the West that loud noises and large-scale hooliganism denote powerfulness. Because African chaos is widespread it is therefore irresistible. Because Englishmen hate scenes and Africans cannot go for five minutes without scenes, therefore the Africans are irresistibly strong in their convictions. Yet we might well ask what Africans have ever done in a positive sense, apart from killing and destroying and disrupting. They cannot make a Federation but they can break one up. They cannot make motorcars but they can throw stones at them. They cannot make railways but they can pull up the lines. They cannot construct industries but they can paralyse them with strikes. They cannot erect buildings but they can set fire to them. They cannot frame constitutions but they can tear them up. Precisely because they cannot make anything at all apart from a rumpus, they have to prove how "terrible" a people they are by smashing everything in sight. The white man's marvels of constructive ingenuity are a constant affront to their self-esteem. Yet it is to these sub-people that the West is surrendering – nay, has surrendered. Their mental derangement is made all the worse, their paranoia all the more intensified, by the ludicrous ease with which they are triumphing over advanced white peoples at every juncture. How can we hope to earn their respect, or their fear (the words mean the same in their languages), when we are propounding the Communist philosophy that we are no better than they? How, in other words, can we earn their necessary respect when we have been taught to lose respect*

*for ourselves – to despise ourselves and simperingely reject the necessity of our being the masters? How, indeed, can we sink any lower than we are except by obligingly going six feet under? – White Man, Think Again!*

Before you simply cry ‘racism’ after reading that last statement, stop for a moment and tell me what is untruthful in the statement. What do blacks bring to white civilization but violence and mayhem? Is London a better city now that it is dominated by the colored heathen? Is any city in Europe, the United States, Australia, New Zealand, or Canada better off now that they are diverse? And yet the rush for diversity is the passion driving the ruling elites of the European nations. Those are indeed prophetic words of Sir Anthony Jacob (I have designated him a Knight of the Realm): “How indeed, can we sink any lower than we are except by obligingly going six feet under?” It has become abundantly clear, 53 years after those prophetic words were written, that that is exactly what the liberals intended to do, to put the entire white race six feet under.

I do not blame a non-liberal white person who has money if he moves to another section of his own country or to another country entirely in order to avoid diversity. I do blame a rich white liberal, however, who moves away from the colored heathens. The liberals should be forced to face the consequences of their own treachery. Of course they never are, because they are the rulers of Liberaldom. But the blood-red tide of color has been loosed on the European people, and no European nation is safe so long as the European people are under the influence of a false Aslan who tells us that the love of God and the love of the colored heathen are one and the same thing.

Some conservative-liberals within the confines of Western Europe have been willing to make some tepid, negative remarks about the Moslem invasion. And some government officials in Eastern Europe have opposed the Moslem invasion of their nations. But a critique of Islam is not enough. No European leader, West or East, has been willing to state unequivocally that Europe must be white and Christian. Some Europeans have been willing to criticize Islam because they can justify their criticism with the statement, “I am not racist – Islam is not a race, it is a religion.” But the liberals who call European opponents of Islam racist are fundamentally correct. Islam is a religion formed for the dark races to give structure and purpose to their onslaught on the white Christ-bearing race. Some apostate whites have embraced Islam, but is Islam really the faith of the European people? Can Islam ever be the faith of any people other than the people of the darker races who prefer sacrifice to mercy? The colored heathen fights so he can conquer and be merciless. The Christian white fights for mercy’s sake and then he extends mercy. But mercy is only seen as strength to another white man. When Alfred conquered the Danes and extended mercy to them, their leader, Guthrum, was so impressed that he converted to the Christian faith. (1) And the Christian faith, in those “dark ages,” meant something. A pagan warrior such as Scott’s Harold the Dauntless, who bent his knee to Christ, remained a man still, but his love of kith and kin was purified, because it was consecrated to the Savior, who is at once our Lord and our kinsman.

God decided to “destroy man” when He saw that the daughters of men were sleeping with demonic angels. We can dismiss God’s obsession with bloodlines in two ways. First, we can dismiss the Old Testament stories as mere fairy tales. Secondly, we can say that bloodlines were only important until Christ became man; after that we all became one universal race of mankind. The second reason might hold some weight if the Gospel of Christ were passed down from mind to mind. Then the great idea of a universal people with one universal abstract God would hold sway. Is, and was, the faith passed on in that way? The various churchmen have said so, but the Gospels tell us a different story. Faith in Christ was passed on from heart to heart. It was the apostles who loved much who told us of Christ. The Word was made flesh in loving hearts and passed on from one generation to the next. Which brings us back to our racial hearth fire. Can we love God without a deep and abiding love for our own kind? We can’t love in the abstract, we must love a particular people and a particular God. Why, if bloodlines mean nothing, are the liberals, who are Satan’s minions, so obsessed with destroying the Europeans’ bloodlines? Why are they obsessed with creating a mongrel race of inhuman savages without faith, hope, and charity?

Much more is at stake in the race war than was ever at stake in any of the previous European wars. Bombed out cities can be replaced, but the people who built those cities cannot be replaced. Robert E. Lee refused the command of the Union troops because he refused to place his sword at the service of the enemies of his own people. That is the spirit that needs to be rekindled in the European people. If we don’t love our own, how can we love the God who enters human hearts? We can’t. And that is the underlying reason for the liberals’ betrayal of their own people. They have hardened their hearts against the light of the world, so they must kill that light in the hearts of others. “Destroy the European hearth fire and the light will die,” is the liberals’ credo. I can only speak for myself. I will stay by the European hearth fire, because outside of that hearth fire there is no warmth, no love, no honor, no God. +

---

(1) “The ceremony of baptism was performed at Wedmore, a royal residence which had probably escaped the fate of Chippenham, and still contained a church. Here Guthrum and his thirty nobles were sworn in, the soldiers of a greater than Woden, and the white linen cloth, the sign of their new faith, was bound round their heads. Alfred himself was godfather to the Viking, giving him the Christian name of Athelstan; and the chrism-loosing, or unbinding of the sacramental cloths, was performed on the eighth day by Ethelnoth, the faithful Alderman of Somersetshire.” – [Life of Alfred the Great](#) by Thomas Hughes

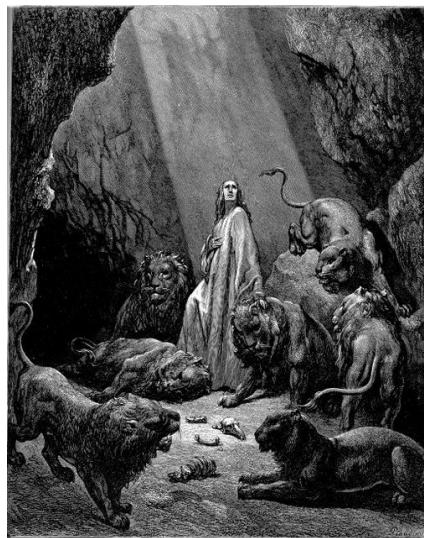
Of course the key to Guthrum’s conversion was his white soul. He was able to see moral goodness in a great warrior who extended mercy. Alfred was a human link to the God of all true heroes.

# In the Lion's Den

May 19, 2018

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Dostoevsky, Engelbert Humperdinck



My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt.

Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den. So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God. —  
*Daniel 6: 22-23*

---

The liberals' tactical plan is crystal clear: Destroy the breeding ground for the plague and you kill the plague. And what is the plague? The plague is Christianity. The liberals, under Satan's guidance, have adopted a very effective policy; the attack on the European hearth fire has wiped out the Christian plague. The liberals' successful campaign against the Christian plague was aided by the Gnosticism of the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives. Those less-than-conservative conservatives were like unto a doctor that examines a patient who has the beginnings of gangrene and needs an operation to prevent the gangrene from spreading. But instead of operating, the doctor goes home and writes a scholarly paper about the dangers of gangrene, which he submits to a medical journal. Then the same doctor takes three weeks off from his duties to attend a vitally important conference where all sorts of important medical men meet to discuss the dangers of gangrene. Meanwhile, back on the farm, or in this case, back at the hospital, the patient dies.

The Christian faith is the patient who died, and he died because the Son of Man had no place to rest His head. In the name of an abstract, universalist God named 'diversity,' the liberals destroyed the breeding grounds of the Christian faith. That is the tragedy of Europe in the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries.

The mad-dog liberals destroyed the European hearth fire while the conservative-Gnostics held conferences. And the white grazers? They acquiesced to liberalism, because the leaders of their churches told them that liberalism was a natural development of Christianity. By the time it had become glaringly apparent that liberalism was not compatible with Christianity, the European people had no heart left for Christ. He had been absent from their hearth fires for too long. Now, wither do they go? When the lost traveler stops his car and asks the farmer how to get to (fill in a generic town name), the farmer replies, "If I was going to \_\_\_\_\_, I wouldn't start from here." But we are here. We live in a brave new world – we live in Liberaldom. It is a world of unsurpassed evil whose rulers are determined to plunge us even deeper into the depths of hell. We can't continue on the path that our rulers in church and state have mapped out for us, because that path leads to the fiery pit. We can already smell the sulfur all around us. I suggest that we stop our descent and look up. At the top, outside that hellish pit is our racial hearth fire where He abides. We must fight the satanic principalities and powers of this world in order to return to our racial hearth fire. Is it so terrible to fight the principalities and powers of this world? I suppose it is so terrible if we cannot see the vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen that sustained our European ancestors in the day of battle. What would it take for the modern Europeans to see what they, the antique Europeans, saw? It would take a miracle. We find ourselves in the position of the rich man in the Gospel of Matthew: "And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God." The apostles ask Christ, "Who then can be saved?" His reply: "With man this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

The modern, scientized European has revised the Gospel parable: "It is necessary to place wealth in the hands of men like George Soros so they can create the Kingdom of God on earth."

"Who then can be saved?"

"All those who are smart enough to reject the Christian fairy tale and support nature and nature's God, the noble savage."

The shroud of liberalism has descended over the people of Europe. Our resurrection will come when we love our own again, in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. Dostoyevsky, in the Grand Inquisitor scene from *The Brothers Karamazov*, confronts modern man's problem with God directly. The Grand Inquisitor accuses Christ of leaving man alone with his freedom. Christ promised to return, and He didn't return, which made it necessary for the Grand Inquisitor to set up a Church based on sounder and wiser principles than those bequeathed to us by Christ. In the new Christless Christianity, there would be no quixotic ravings from St. Paul: "The foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men." There will only be the good, solid, practical wisdom of this-world-only in the new church. But hasn't this new, rational church, propped up by the accumulated weight of scientific facts, been a disaster? Did Christ really leave us alone? He said He would leave us a Comforter. Perhaps it is the European people who have left Christ alone. The Comforter resides in hearts of flesh. When we left our European hearth fire to go whoring after foreign gods and clever systems, we lost the Comforter. And I do not think it is possible to make the Comforter return by diversifying our affections. I do think He will come to us if we love our own people with a greater passion than the passion of the liberals, who hate the white race with a satanic hatred that eventually will turn in upon them and destroy them. The ultimate end for the liberals will be the same as the end for Maleficent in Disney's *Sleeping Beauty*. The sword of truth will pierce their hearts, and they will join the devil in hell.

There is a common theme running through all the great stories of Christian Europe. Perhaps it is best exemplified in the opera *Hansel and Gretel* by Engelbert Humperdinck. At the last trump, in the twinkling of the eye, when Hansel and Gretel are about to be killed by the wicked witch, the witch herself is killed. The Father tells us after the destruction of the witch, "When hope seems nearly gone, God's relief to us is surely won." Don't all the classic stories of the West reenact Christ's crucifixion and His resurrection? It seemed, when the Roman soldiers nailed Christ to the cross, that Satan had triumphed over Christ. How could anyone looking at Him on the cross believe He was the victor and Satan the loser? But Christ was the victor – He rose from the dead on the third day! How could Satan have foreseen that? He knows all about the seven deadly sins, but can His satanic mind, devoid of a human heart, ever comprehend the charity of a God who would allow Himself to be crucified because of His love for His people? No, he cannot comprehend that miracle. But he can hate what he doesn't understand. And he has sought, through all the centuries, to instill his hatred of Christ into the minds and hearts of all mankind.

A pagan tries to propitiate his gods with sacrifice. A Christian loves Christ because He became the sacrificial lamb in order to free His people from sin and death. That is the incredible difference between our faith in Christ and the liberals' faith in the heathen gods of color. We must recognize what the liberals have done: They have returned to heathen gods who must be

propitiated with human sacrifice. And they have chosen to offer up the white race for sacrifice to their colored gods. For how long will white people consent to be the sacrificial victims on the altars consecrated to the liberals' heathen gods?

The liberals' unremitting attack on the white race must be met with an unremitting attack on the liberals. Their merciless religion of sacrifice without mercy can no longer be countenanced. The slaughter of the babies still in the womb, the murder of handicapped children such as Alfie Evans, the ongoing slaughter of white people, the demonization of everything white and Christian, the legalization of sexual depravity, and the worship of the sacred negro instead of the living God are all part and parcel of the liberals' religion.

Why has there been no white resistance to liberalism? There has been no resistance because Europeans do not believe the Christian fairy tale any longer. Because they are too smart to believe in fairy tales, they doubt Christ's resurrection from the dead. And if Christ be not risen, then Satan triumphed over Christ, and a man should be cognizant of that fact when he makes any decisions contrary to the principalities and powers of this world. It's all right to adhere to Christianity when the powers of this world adhere to it, but when the powers of this world adhere to the anti-gospel of Satan, it is best to follow the anti-gospel of Satan. That is the logic of men and women who have lost their faith in Christ. "Let us be accommodating, let us be practical, let us obey the powers that be; so it is written, so it shall be."

South Africa is a microcosm of our world; it is our past and our future. The white South Africans walked on water because of their faith in Jesus Christ. They created, in the midst of Babylon, a civilization worthy of the best nations in Europe. But as their faith died, they sank into the sea of diversity. Now they are being systematically exterminated, and the rulers of the Western nations, who know what is happening, ignore the slaughter, because the white South Africans must be punished for the original sin of their ancestors. And what was their original sin? They championed Christ in the midst of heathendom and brought mercy and charity to a world that was devoid of charity and mercy. For this reason they are being slaughtered. And for that reason, and that reason alone, every white male, in every white nation has been marked for death. The white females may escape death if they consent to be the concubines of the heathens of color.

Charity does indeed begin at home. But I would qualify that statement. There is no charity outside of a European home, because it is only the European people who took Christ, the source of all true charity, into their homes. No plea for mercy will pierce the liberals' hearts. They must destroy the breeding grounds for the Christian plague, which is and always shall be the European hearth fire. In the absence of a faith in Him who has conquered the world, the white grazers will continue to appease the liberals by propitiating the liberals' gods. But this will not save the white grazers. Only faith, the faith of Daniel and St. Paul, can stop the slaughter of the white race. If we return to our European hearth fire and defend it, we will bring the wrath of the liberals down upon us. But the liberals' wrath is not an invincible force. It only appears invincible to men and women who have lost their faith. Jonah discovered, after spending three days and nights in the belly of the whale, that it was better to do God's will than to live a craven, cowardly life hiding from God. If we continue to propitiate the liberals and their gods, we will discover that no sacrifice is enough. The liberals and their colored gods cannot be propitiated: The white race is guilty, no sacrifice will ever cleanse them of the sin of whiteness. Let us return home to our European hearth fire, where the one true God resides, the God who was "wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed." +

# The One Great Mystery

May 26, 2018

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, W. H. Mallock



And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ.

And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against; (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed. —[Luke 2: 25-35](#)

---

In W. H. Mallock's novel [\*The New Paul and Virginia\*](#) (1878), Mallock sets out to destroy the New Age modernists in state and church by depicting what would happen if their ideas were actually acted upon. In order to prove to the reader that he is not making up the insane philosophers cited by his characters, he places quotes from the actual authors of the insanity in the back of the book. Such modern lights as Huxley, Tyndall, and W. K. Clifford are quoted often. The following quote from W. K. Clifford's book *Cosmic Emotion* pretty much sums up the religious viewpoints of all the modernists who are held up to ridicule in Mallock's novel:

*The two kinds of cosmic emotion run together and become one. The microcosm is viewed only in relation to human action; nature is presented to the emotions as the guide and teacher of humanity. And the microcosm is viewed only as tending to complete correspondence with the external; human conduct is subject for reverence only in so far as it is consonant to the demiurgic law, in harmony with the teaching of divine Nature. — Professor Clifford*

What was a fringe movement in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, the return to Baal, became an acceptable alternative to Christianity, in sugar-coated language, in the first half of the 20th century. And in the second half of the 20th century, the religion of the insane, sophistic, pagan Europeans such as Clifford, Huxley, and Tyndall, became the religion of the European people.

Mallock's depiction of the liberals' brave new world of the future is remarkably accurate, but there was a limit to the depravities that Mallock could envision if the new "enlightened" views of the cosmic liberals of his time were put into practice. After all, Mallock was an honorable, Victorian Christian. How could he possibly foresee the extent of the evil that liberalism, once it became institutionalized, would bring upon Western man? We, of the 21<sup>st</sup> century, can now see the extent of the evil, but paradoxically the 21<sup>st</sup> century Europeans, having plummeted to an intellectualized state of unparalleled barbarism, have no sense of their own depravity. And that is the worst state of depravity, to wallow in the pigsties of liberalism without even knowing one is in a pigsty. Even Kurtz, in Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, was able to see his depravity: "The horror, the horror," but the modern European wallows in the horror and loves it.

Liberalism is a uniquely European phenomenon, because the essence of liberalism is a rejection of Christ in order to return to Baal. The people of color did not have to reject Christ, for the simple reason that they never made Christ the lodestar of their culture. Nor did they have to return to Baal, because they never left Baal. Because of the European people's Christian past, their return to Baal had to be couched in Christian language. In France, the Jacobins screamed 'Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity' in order to justify their bloodletting, and the Russian communists used similar 'God' words. But in both cases, the French and the Russian, the 'return to Baal' revolutionaries went too fast. The European people, in the main, were not yet ready for that kind of unmitigated liberal savagery. The French liberals shifted to the gradual Americanized return to Baal, while Russia, after a longer reign of terror than France, also shifted to the American way, a longer, slower return to Baal. The reason the formerly communist countries of Eastern Europe show more signs of life than the countries of Western Europe is because the direct, Robespierre-type approach steals a people's resolve to resist more than the seductive approach of the democratic way does. If you had the money to flee Western Europe, any of the Eastern European countries would be preferable to the countries of Western Europe. But the nations of Eastern Europe are still under the shroud of liberalism. I cringe when I hear their leaders talking about Christian democracies. There can be no such thing. Democracy is a God word the liberals use to disguise the horror of the Europeans' return to Baal; it should never be coupled with Christianity.

Metternich's warning — "Every time I hear the word 'democracy' I know a blood bath is coming" — should be taken to heart by every European, especially now when we can see the terrible devastation wrought during the democratic era of the European people's history. Life is tragic; we all must suffer and die in the flesh. But do we have to suffer and die without hope in the Redeemer? "Yes," the liberals tell us, "we are all part of a universal democracy, consisting of millions upon millions of walking dead men, born of nature and destined to return to nature." Where then is our hope? "We can hope that mankind will be happy some two hundred years hence when white people have been eliminated, and all mankind, minus white mankind, can cavort around the throne of the sacred negro."

The conservative-liberals spent all their efforts after World War II combating communism. But the conservatives completely ignored the democratic heresy, the other side of the utopian, universalist coin. Democracy, like communism, celebrates the triumph of the aggregate herd over the individual human soul. There is no room for the spirit in democracy, because the spirit of man cannot be democratized. There is a hierarchy of value in the spiritual realm. The savage races of color are not equal to the white Christ-bearing race, and within the white race the criminals and the Satanic liberals are not equal to the non-liberal, law-abiding whites. But in the natural realm, the doctrine of 'all are equal, but some are more equal' becomes the rule. Spiritual values are ignored in favor of bestial values. The colored savage is elevated to a God-like status while the white Christian is demonized. And the criminally insane liberals are given seats of power and influence. The true order of society is shattered and chaos and savagery reign supreme. Shakespeare describes this state of affairs in his play [\*Troilus and Cressida\*](#):

*In evil mixture to disorder wander,  
What plagues and what portents! what mutiny!  
What raging of the sea! shaking of earth!  
Commotion in the winds! Frights, changes, horrors,*

Divert and crack, rend and deracinate,  
 The unity and married calm of states  
 Quite from their fixture! O, when degree is shak'd,  
 Which is the ladder of all high designs,  
 The enterprise is sick! How could communities,  
 Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,  
 Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,  
 The primogenitive and due of birth,  
 Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
 But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
 Take but degree away, untune that string,  
 And hark what discord follows! Each thing meets  
 In mere oppugnancy. The bounded waters  
 Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
 And make a sop of all this solid globe.  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead.  
 Force should be right; or, rather, right and wrong,  
 Between whose endless far justice resides,  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice too.  
 Then everything includes itself in power,  
 Power into will, will into appetite;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforse an universal prey,  
 And last eat up himself.

The democratized people of Europe and the other European satellite countries such as the United States need to look within at their inhumane, anti-Christian, democratic systems. A far greater threat to the European people than communism abroad is the European people's infatuated, blind devotion to democracy, a system of tyranny invented by the devil to destroy everything connected to His realm, the realm of the spirit. So long as that moral blindness prevails, so long as the European people treasure modern democratic Europe more than Christian Europe, the colored heathens, the Moslems, and the liberals will continue to rule the European nations. And they will continue to have one overriding, ruling principle: The white race must be eliminated.

Writers such as Kipling, Mallock, and Orwell, who warned the European people of the coming dystopias of liberalism, did not foresee just how pivotal the worship of the negro would be in those dystopias. Edmund Burke was remarkably aware of it, because he kept the entire French Revolution before his eyes. He saw what happened in Haiti as well as France. When democratic equality rather than Christian charity governs a nation, the savagery of the negro becomes a great good, and everything white and Christian becomes a great evil:

*It will be an affront to your sagacity, to pursue this matter into all its details; suffice it to say, that if this Convention for analogous domestick Government is made, it immediately gives a right for the residence of a Consul (in all likelihood some Negro or Man of Colour) in every one of your Islands; a Regicide Ambassador in London will be at all your meetings of West India Merchants and Planters, and, in effect, in all our Colonial Councils...*

*How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders?*

-Burke in [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

How must we, the European people, feel? If we are Christian Europeans, we feel our hearts burn within us, and we vow to fight the satanic liberals and their murderous colored allies to the knife. If we are liberals, we feel a religious ecstasy when we see white blood shed by negro murderers. The blood bath of democracy will go on until the ending of the world unless the European remnant cries halt and fights for a non-democratic Europe dedicated to Christ the King.

The democratic way is so much more than elections. It is science, feminism, legalized abortion, sexual depravity, and negro worship. Above all it is negro worship. That is the lynchpin holding the whole naturalized world of democracy together. Once the negro was made the lodestar of democracy, the liberals were able to demonize anyone who attacked their democratic reign of terror. This is why halfway-house Christians, who want to criticize some aspect of liberalism, such as legalized abortion, always make sure that they pay homage to the liberals' gods: "Abortion is bad because it hurts black people." They have a similar response to the Islamic invasion: "We are not racists, we simply oppose terrorism." On into the dark night of liberalism go the halfway-house Christians. "Thou shall have no other gods before me." Can you worship the democratic process, in which everything evil under the sun is countenanced, simply because the democratic process has been consecrated to the negro?

In the early stages of the democratic cancer, with the exceptions of Jacobin France and communist Russia, the European people's return to Baal occurred incrementally, but now the cancer is spreading rapidly. On a daily basis the condition of the European patient worsens. Our people have returned to Baal without a backward look, not even a wistful glance, at their Christian past. Dystopia is here and now; like the Philistines, it has come upon us. But at least Samson knew he had been seduced into a betrayal of his God and his people. He didn't think he had 'evolved' to a higher state of existence.

Recently on her birthday, my wife asked to see the movie *A Canterbury Tale* (1944). The movie, only tangentially connected to Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, is a lyrical masterpiece that connects us to the past, Britain's Christian past. I inwardly cringed when she asked to see the movie, because viewing a movie like that is the same as contemplating the life of your loved one immediately after their death. It is so painful. Over time the pain is lessened by the hope in the loved one's resurrection from the dead, but that initial encounter with that unwelcome visitor is unbelievably painful. So it is with the death of Christian Europe. I can't always endure the pain of Europe's demise. But we viewed the movie as a family, and I was glad we did. There was intense sorrow in seeing that which was lost, but in the movie itself there is the hope for the resurrection of the dead. If Christian Europe was once a reality, then Christian Europe still lives. Nothing connected to His realm, the realm of the spirit, ever dies. The Christ of the antique Europeans is our Christ. And our Christ, our Jesus, is the "grave where buried love doth live."

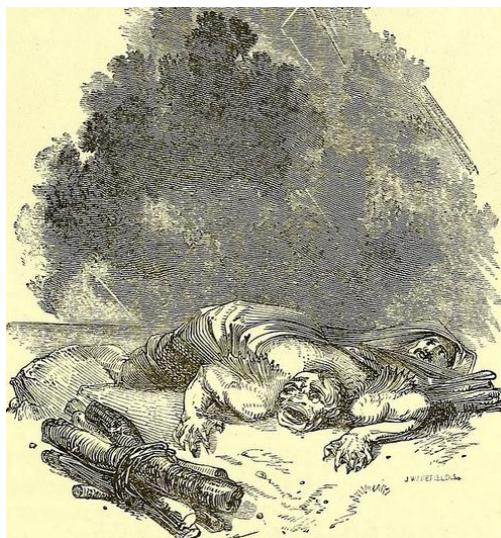
When I was a freshman in college, there was a student across the hallway in the dorm who worshipped the scientist Nicholas Tesla; his room was a memorial to Tesla. It was his contention that the government had suppressed Tesla's work because Tesla had discovered the secrets of the universe. I think Tesla still has his devoted band of followers who believe he knew the secrets of the universe. Isn't the devotion of that student, who of course was a white man, symptomatic of the decline of the European people? They have placed their faith in intelligence divorced from the heart of God. Is there any mystery greater than the mystery of the incarnation of the Son of God? That God should take on human form in order to reach human hearts is a mystery that makes all other mysteries mere dross. But we have left that mystery behind for our systems, built on the abstract theories of men who have rejected Christ. If we cling to that one great mystery and love Him, in and through those "dear old folk of long ago," He will vouchsafe to us a vision of His sacred Heart. That vision and that vision alone shall sustain us in our battle against the Babylonian armies of the liberals. +

# The Liberals' Metamorphosis

June 2, 2018

Categories: Christ the Hero, Defense of the White Race, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, St. Paul, Walter Scott



Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour. —*1 Peter 5: 8*

Pope Francis the blasphemer is always very forthright and uncompromising when he condemns white pietas, which he calls racism. But when he approaches the liberals' sacred cows, he is very understanding. For instance, he can't really say that homosexuality is wrong. Why can't he say that it is wrong? It was always considered wrong by Protestants and Catholics for over a thousand years. So again, what is so difficult about standing up for the age old Christianity of the European people? It is difficult to stand up for Christian morality when you don't really believe that Christ was the Son of God. The modern Catholic church is like unto the Disney corporation. The corporate executives have to retain many of the symbols and trappings of their founder, because it was his vision that created the Disney empire, but they do not share the same vision as Walt Disney. In point of fact, their beliefs are in direct contrast to Walt Disney's beliefs. But they need to feed off his poetic vision, so they retain the Disney name while espousing values that are in direct conflict with Walt Disney's values.

So it is with the Roman Catholic executives. They still keep Christ as the symbolic head of their corporation, but they have denied Him in their hearts. They no longer believe that He is the Son of the living God, so they no longer feel the need to adhere to the moral code that stems from a belief in the Son of God. They keep Christ as a figure head, because they earn their living by posing as Christians, but their hearts belong to the liberals.

The devil is not a poet. He is, as the poet Walter Scott pointed out, a strict formalist:

*Once upon a time this old hag is said to have crossed the moor, driving before her a flock of geese, which she proposed to sell to advantage at a neighbouring fair;—for it is well known that the fiend, however liberal in imparting his powers of doing mischief, ungenerously leaves his allies under the necessity of performing the meanest rustic labours for subsistence. The day was far advanced, and her chance of obtaining a good price depended on her being first at the market. But the geese, which had hitherto preceded her in a pretty orderly manner, when they came to this wide common, interspersed with marshes and pools of water, scattered in every direction, to plunge into the element in which they delighted. Incensed at the obstinacy with which they defied all her efforts to collect them, and not remembering the precise terms of the contract by which the fiend was bound to obey her commands for a certain space, the sorceress exclaimed, "Deevil, that neither I nor they ever stir from this spot more!" The words were hardly uttered, when, by a metamorphosis as sudden as any in Ovid, the hag and her refractory flock were converted into stone, the angel whom she served, being a strict formalist, grasping eagerly at an opportunity of completing the ruin of her body and soul by a literal obedience to her orders.*

[The Black Dwarf](#)

Using the forms of Christianity, the devil is able to ape the good in order to advance his satanic agenda. The miracle of married love which produces a child is turned into the sacrificial rite of "free choice," in which an infant child is sacrificed on the altars of liberalism. Every perversion under the sun is given an inverted Christian sanction. Pope Francis's support of sodomy, which is given a Christian meaning by applying the 'judge not that ye be judged' label on the sin, in a complete distortion of the text, is another example of the satanic inversion of Christianity. Pope John XXIII gave us another sample of the new, satanic Christianity when he had "loving forgiveness" for the black Satanists who tortured, raped, and murdered nuns and priests of his own race and his own church. All such perversions and barbarities, and the list of the perversions and barbarities is endless, are done under the formal mantle of a hellish, twisted Christianity in which false prophets, the prophets of liberalism, bid us follow the false messiahs of reason, science, and the 'noble black savage.'

At the turn of the 19<sup>th</sup> century the people of Europe could not absorb undiluted Satanism. So Satan came to them in a diluted form. He kept the outward forms of Christianity alive while changing the inmost heart and soul of European culture. Our culture was consecrated to Christ; it is now consecrated to Satan. In order to make that change, it was necessary to plant the idea in men's minds that God was to be found out there, in nature, and God was to be worshipped, not in spirit and truth, but in formal rites devoid of their spiritual center, which was and is, Christ the Lord.

It's impossible not to see that in the 21<sup>st</sup> century the Satanism of the liberals is less diluted. Whether this is a tactical error of Satan or a tactical error of the liberals which Satan cannot control, or a tactical master stroke is more than we know. But it is clear the liberals feel less of a need to cloak their evil intentions. They never debate any more, they just refuse a hearing to any dissenters and/or jail them, as was the case with Tommy Robinson and Jayda Fransen. They also openly talk about the extermination of the white race, which was not something that they espoused so openly in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Shouldn't the liberals be afraid of a white backlash? It doesn't seem like they have anything to be afraid of. The European people will only fight if they believe that Christ is the Son of God and they are the Christ-bearing race. So long as they believe that whiteness is the original sin and the liberals' nature religion of the black Messiah is the one true faith, they will not fight for their own people or for the restoration of Christian Europe, which are really one and the same thing.

Satan cannot understand the poetic of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because he is completely devoid of poetic sentiments. But he does possess mathematical intelligence, and he uses that intelligence to maintain the outer forms of the Christian poetic, which he uses for his own satanic purposes. Starting from a mathematical base, Satan proceeded to prove to the Europeans that man was nothing more than a by-product of the natural world. He failed time and time again in his quest to place a wedge between the European people and Christ but finally he succeeded in his efforts. He placed the natural world, the world of '2 plus 2 makes 4,' before the European people's eyes and bid them study that world *ad nauseam* until they saw nothing else but that world. Once that metamorphosis was complete, once the Europeans saw with and not through their eyes, the devil's triumph was complete. But of course it is not in the devil's nature to rest contented. He must push onward and downward, until the image of God in man is completely eradicated from the face of the earth. Then, when the earth has become hell, the devil hopes that he can be free of God and never have to look on the Divine Countenance again. That is his desire and that is the desire of his minions, the apostate liberals who worship darkness and reject the light.

In Michelangelo's painting on the Sistine Chapel ceiling, he depicts the hand of God reaching out to the hand of man. If I had the artistic ability I would paint a picture of Satan, immersed in the pit of hell, reaching out to the modern Europeans. They would not be resisting Satan. They would be flocking to him in order to be part of his kingdom of everlasting night. On their faces would be looks of sheer terror, but they would not be terrified of hell. They would be looking behind them for fear that He might still be seeking them out in order to prevent their glorious marriage to Satan.

The modern white wants to obliterate his whiteness in the arms of the devil. On this earth, the colored heathens serve as the strong arms of the devil. Now the liberals see the devil darkly through the colored races, but once they have achieved hell, they will see the demon whom they worshipped on earth face to face.

Whiteness is not the original sin. The Christ-bearing race championed the God of mercy in a world devoid of mercy. Then they abandoned the God of mercy and sought out the savage gods of color. That is their sin and it is not original. It is the sin of all the colored races who preferred the gods of sacrifice to the God of Mercy. Where is mercy to be found now that the liberals have joined with the colored heathens to eradicate mercy from the face of the earth? It's to be found in Christ's church, which was never an organization of corporate executives; it was and is the union of hearts of flesh, hearts that love Christ in spirit and in truth. I believe in the people with the hearts of flesh, I believe that they knew the one true God, and I believe I can know that God in this world and be with Him in the next world if I do not sever my connection to the antique Europeans. They touched the heart of God, and through them I touch the heart of God.

In 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians St. Paul speaks of a mystery:

*Behold I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.*

The liberals do not believe in that mystery, but they do believe, because they accept all of Satan's inversions of Christianity, in the mystery of liberal metamorphosis. They believe they can transcend their whiteness, their original sin, through the love of the noble black savage. And their love of the black savior is maintained by the Father, which is the abstract intellect, and the Holy Ghost, which is science. We can never save our people by appealing to the liberals' self-interest – "You too are white," – because they have made a Gnostic transformation. They have left their whiteness behind. Nor can you appeal to the liberals' mercy – "You can't murder a whole race of people." Yes, the liberals can and will murder a whole race of people. They have killed the white pietas in their own hearts, so they must kill the white pietas in every white heart.

When God took flesh and dwelt among us, He joined His divine humanity with our humanity. What a blessed union! The liberals have done just the opposite. They have joined with the colored savages to form an unholy union devoid of mercy. Their union has produced nothing but cruelty. It's as if Dotheboys Hall, that terrible boarding school in Dickens' novel *Nicholas Nickleby*, in which merciless cruelty is the norm, has become the world. And that world, which is Satan's world, will not be brought down by voting or pleas for mercy. It will be brought down by Christian men with hearts of flesh who strike home in defense of the helpless.

*Squeers caught the boy firmly in his grip; one desperate cut had fallen on his body—he was wincing from the lash and uttering a scream of pain—it was raised again, and again about to fall—when Nicholas Nickleby, suddenly starting up, cried 'Stop!' in a voice that made the rafters ring.*

'Who cried stop?' said Squeers, turning savagely round.

'I,' said Nicholas, stepping forward. 'This must not go on.'

'Must not go on!' cried Squeers, almost in a shriek.

'No!' thundered Nicholas.

*Aghast and stupefied by the boldness of the interference, Squeers released his hold of Smike, and, falling back a pace or two, gazed upon Nicholas with looks that were positively frightful.*

'I say must not,' repeated Nicholas, nothing daunted; 'shall not. I will prevent it.'

*Squeers continued to gaze upon him, with his eyes starting out of his head; but astonishment had actually, for the moment, bereft him of speech.*

*'You have disregarded all my quiet interference in the miserable lad's behalf,' said Nicholas; 'you have returned no answer to the letter in which I begged forgiveness for him, and offered to be responsible that he would remain quietly here. Don't blame me for this public interference. You have brought it upon yourself; not I.'*

'Sit down, beggar!' screamed Squeers, almost beside himself with rage, and seizing Smike as he spoke.

*'Wretch,' rejoined Nicholas, fiercely, 'touch him at your peril! I will not stand by, and see it done. My blood is up, and I have the strength of ten such men as you. Look to yourself, for by Heaven I will not spare you, if you drive me on!'*

'Stand back,' cried Squeers, brandishing his weapon.

*'I have a long series of insults to avenge,' said Nicholas, flushed with passion; 'and my indignation is aggravated by the dastardly cruelties practised on helpless infancy in this foul den. Have a care; for if you do raise the devil within me, the consequences shall fall heavily upon your own head!'*

*He had scarcely spoken, when Squeers, in a violent outbreak of wrath, and with a cry like the howl of a wild beast, spat upon him, and struck him a blow across the face with his instrument of torture, which raised up a bar of livid flesh as it was inflicted. Smarting with the agony of the blow, and concentrating into that one moment all his feelings of rage, scorn, and indignation, Nicholas sprang upon him, wrested the weapon from his hand, and pinning him by the throat, beat the ruffian till he roared for mercy.*

I repeat, our world, the European world, is ruled by a cabal of cruel, merciless vipers who rejoice in the degradation, torture, rape, and murder of white people. Their merciless reign must be stopped. But it can only be stopped by white men whose hearts burn within them from an encounter with the risen Lord, our Jesus, the God of our racial hearth fire. +



NICHOLAS ASTONISHES MR. SQUEERS AND FAMILY.

# One Particular God

June 9, 2018

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Louis Stevenson



And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them: Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel. –[Matthew 15: 29-31](#)

---

No appeal to white self-interest will work, because liberals have no race or faith. Only a man who believes that his race is an element of his personality which is connected to his God cares about the extinction of his race. The white race did not conquer the world because individual whites were smarter, swifter, or stronger than the people of other races. They conquered because they loved their God while those of other races only propitiated their gods. The summons of the fiery cross will only be answered by men with hearts of fire. One particular, personal God, and only that God, is capable of setting hearts on fire. No matter how small the white remnant, and no matter how numerous the foe, the men with the hearts of fire will keep Satan at bay until He comes to lead the final charge. – [CWNY](#)

---

The white people protesting Tommy Robinson's imprisonment for opposing the Moslem rapists must have some remnant of Christianity left in them or else they would not be protesting. But are protests by white people against liberal cruelty and injustice ever effective? No, they are not. Protests are part of the democratic process, and the democratic process is an invention of the devil to destroy the Christ-bearing race. You can't seek redemption from the devil. The only protests that are successful in a democratic system are those that help Satan tighten his stranglehold on the European people. The civil rights protests were successful because the rulers of the Western world wanted to encourage miscegenation. Gandhi's protests were successful because the British government wanted an excuse to throw off the white man's burden.

In contrast to those satanically inspired, successful protests, the prolife movement was a colossal failure, because the liberals did not want to provide legal protection to the infants in the womb. If white Christians really want to do something about the liberals' reign of cruelty, they must leave the democratic process, which includes peaceful protests, behind and make the great return: They must return to the blood and soil faith of their European ancestors. And I am not referring to our pagan ancestors, I am referring to the followers of Odin who bent their knees to Christ without sacrificing any of the fighting spirit that inspired them to fight for Odin. The Christian Europeans such as Alfred did not become lesser men when they took on the mantle of Christ, they became greater men, because the measure of a man is what he fights for. How can there be anything greater than His reign of charity?

The white men who want to halt legalized abortion and the persecution of innocent whites, such as Jayda Fransen and Tommy Robinson, must decide which master they shall serve. If they continue to "protest" evil within the confines of a system that exists for one purpose only, to destroy the good and perpetuate evil, then they have decided to serve Satan. If they decide to make the Christ of old Europe their master, they will not seek redemption from the devil. They will leave the democratic process behind and fight evil the way Europeans used to fight evil before they became entwined within the coils of the democratic process.

In Walt Disney's *Zorro* (the real Walt Disney), Don Diego comes home from Spain and hears a tale of horror from his father. The *comandante* is cruel, merciless, unjust, etc. What is Don Diego's response? He tells his father he is going to sit down and write a letter to the Viceroy. Of course his father is disgusted with him. Letter-writing is not going to stop the evil *comandante*. Don Diego knows that. During the day he is a fop who fights evil with letter-writing, but during the night he is Zorro, who fights evil with his good sword. "Ah, but men like Zorro and William Tell only exist in story books. You cannot act like that in the modern world!" the democracy-loving protester tells me. European men did once act like Zorro and William Tell. Were the evil *comandantes* and the Gesslers prevented from doing evil because of protest movements? Of course they weren't. Why then do we expect the liberals, who are much more evil than the petty tyrants of yesteryear, to stop doing evil because of a few protest marches?

White foppery in the form of a protest movement is not the proper response to the evil of liberalism. It accomplishes nothing and may do a great deal of harm, in that it allows whites to think they are 'doing something' when in reality they are doing nothing. The Tommy Robinson arrest is a case in point. If he serves any length of time in jail, it could well be a death sentence for him. Will it help him if white people protest after his murder? Wouldn't it be better if white people let it be known that any judge who sentences Tommy Robinson to prison will die?

The white protests designed to convert the devil are a sad reenactment of the so-called prolife movement. For 45 years the pro lifers have been protesting legalized abortion, and for 45 years they have gotten no results. Yet they never look at the obvious reason why the liberals keep winning the abortion wars. The liberals keep winning because they have no fear of white Christians. Whenever a white Christian actually does what is necessary and kills an abortion doctor, the 'pro lifers' run and hide under their beds while screaming, "I am against violence." That is precisely why you, Mr. Prolifer, should be in favor of killing abortion doctors and burning down the abortuaries. The liberals have taken violence to a new level. They burn, slice, and stab young babies in the womb. Is that not violence? Can people who do such violence be made to stop their murderous spree by gentle persuasion? Only fear of death, their own, will make liberals stop doing evil, whether it is the murder of infants or the slaughter of the white race.

The Christian Europeans walked on water because they took the Son of God into their hearts. If you deny the reality of Christian Europe, if you claim the antique Europeans did not know Christ because they were racist, homophobic, and sexist, in contrast to the modern Christians who are *not* racist, homophobic, or sexist, you must tell me why the antique Europeans, who were supposed to be so evil, gave us a glimpse of the living God while the modern anti-European liberals have given us a glimpse of hell? There is no avoiding the ancient Europeans' connection to Christ. When Christ dwelt by the Europeans' hearth fire, the European people knew how to respond to the devil and his minions. When Christ was Gnosticized, when He became the end product of a syllogism instead of the God of our ascending race, we were left foundering in the seas of liberalism. Protest movements are the white, Gnosticized Christians' pleas to the liberals to save them from drowning. But the liberals want the white Christians to drown, and the sea is the sea and drowning men will drown unless... They will drown unless they learn to walk on water again. Having once fixed our eyes on Christ we cannot falter or we will drown in the sea of liberalism. The vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen was bred in the bone and nurtured in the hearts of the antique Europeans. Without that breeding and that nurturing we cannot respond to the wickedness and snares of the devil as Christian men should respond. We will be forever chained to the democratic rock without any hope of being delivered from our bondage.

As incarnational Europe fades from the memory of modern Europeans, let me raise one voice in defense of Christian Europe. We cannot be fully human unless we revere His divine humanity. The antique Europeans were not perfect, they were not gods, but they revered His sacred humanity and in doing so they showed us the glory of a Christ-centered humanity. What

do the modern Europeans show us? They show us nothing of God. We only see all that is unholy and blasphemous in the piggies of modern Europe.

The purpose of institutionalized liberalism is to eradicate every last trace of humanity from the face of the earth. The liberals' focus has been and will continue to be on the white race, because the antique Europeans were the most Christ-centered and therefore the most fully human people who ever walked the earth. And any member of a non-white race who shows even a glimmer of respect for the ancient faith of the European people, a Gunga Din, will be exterminated as well. Despite their claim, "We love humanity," the liberals hate humanity just as their master, the devil, hates humanity. R. L. Stevenson captures the essence of liberalism in his short fable titled, "The Four Reformers":

*Four reformers met under a bramble-bush. They were all agreed the world must be changed. "We must abolish property," said one.*

*"We must abolish marriage," said the second.*

*"We must abolish God," said the third.*

*"I wish we could abolish work," said the fourth.*

*"Do not let us get beyond practical politics," said the first. "The first thing is to reduce men to a common level."*

*"The first thing," said the second, "is to give freedom to the sexes."*

*"The first thing," said the third, "is to find out how to do it."*

*"The first step," said the first, "is to abolish the Bible."*

*"The first thing," said the second, "is to abolish the laws."*

*"The first thing," said the third, "is to abolish mankind."*

Have I gone too far afield from the plight of Tommy Robinson and the countless other white victims of liberal cruelty and colored savagery? No, I haven't. If we don't see liberalism in all its guises as from the devil, we will not be able to defend our people, such as Tommy Robinson, against the liberals' satanic onslaught. We need the full armor of Christ in order to do battle with the devil. We cannot arm ourselves with the democratic weapons of the devil in order to combat the devil. Once the European people believe that liberalism is Satanic, they will no longer oppose liberal evil with foppery, they will fight as integral men fight for what they love; they will fight with all their heart, mind, and soul.

The marriage between the European people and Christ was a blessed union, a blessed union that Satan was determined to end. He succeeded because he turned a marriage based on love into a marriage of convenience. When the Europeans ceased to see the moral beauty of Christ's crucifixion and resurrection, they ceased to love Christ. It is still convenient for them to refer to Christ now when they need a spokesman for racial equality or some other social problem, but the love match is over. Christ has been trivialized out of Europe because the Europeans can no longer understand a God of depth. When they abandoned their racial hearth fire, the European people became incapable of maintaining their blessed union with Christ. They have become spiritually neutered. The living God comes to human hearts, He does not come to us through a series of philosophical incantations or the nation state of Israel. If we settle for a formulaic, superficial Christ we will stay in the land of the Undines, the land of the men and women who have no souls.

Burke reminds us that a nation is a moral essence, not a geographical entity. The moral essence of old Europe was Christ. We cannot graft Christ onto a nation, the nation of Liberaldom, with an amoral satanic essence. The great tragedy of the 21<sup>st</sup> century is that professed Christians as well as mad dog liberals vilify and spit on the moral essence of old Europe. We live in Biblical times. We need to believe that our Lord will not leave us naked to our enemies. It's difficult to believe in the 7,000, but that is what Satan wants: "Despair and die." If we set the modern world against the moral essence of old Europe and see what the liberals, at Satan's behest, have destroyed, we will not go quietly into the dark night of liberalism. The 91<sup>st</sup> Psalm is forever relevant, but it is most particularly relevant for an antique European living in Liberaldom:

*Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.*

It all begins and ends with the great refusal – We shall not abandon our Jesus, the Christ of old Europe. +

# Even Unto the End of the World

June 16, 2018

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Propositional faith

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare



For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. — [Mark 8: 36-38](#)

---

The de-emphasis of the incarnation of Christ in the Christian churches and the denial of the incarnation of Christ in secular Europe is the reason that the European race is fast disappearing from the face of the earth. What binds Judaism, Islam, and liberalism together? All three religions deny the incarnation of the Son of God. The hatred of the white race exhibited by those religious bodies and the other sects of colored heathens is motivated by Satan's deep-seated hatred of the antique Europeans, the people who made Christ incarnate in their culture. Satan wants the incarnation of the Son of God to be an idea, he does not want the Word of God to be made flesh, because he can always win a debate, but he cannot win a war against men with hearts of flesh consecrated to the incarnate God.

I recently read a tract, and such tracts are legion, by a religious expert who claimed there was no difference between pagan Europe and Christian Europe, because both periods of European history produced murders, adulteries, wars, and sexual perversions. Is it really necessary to point out the incredible differences between pagan Europe and Christian Europe? A theologian who makes the 'no difference' claim is not interested in the truth. He is only interested in his own utopian fantasies. If mankind will only follow his twenty-point plan he will make men like unto God. But if we eschew Christian utopianism, which is a plea to reenact Adam's and Eve's original sin, "Ye shall be as Gods," we can see that there was an incarnational culture. The European people made Christ the moral essence of their culture. He was more than an idea to them, He was their heart and soul. The difference between an idea religion and a hearth-fire religion is the difference between heaven and hell. As soon as Christ's incarnation becomes an idea in men's minds rather than the burning passionate belief of their heart, Satan can shift men's focus away from God and make them view his satanic vision of life in a new and pleasant light.

The race war is a religious war because our God is an incarnate God. If Christ was not really true God and true man, if the flesh cannot be sanctified, then all men are universals, they are part of an aggregate herd called 'mankind.' But if the spirit can take on flesh, then the skin color of the people who circumcised their hearts and took Christ into their racial hearth fire has eternal significance. The European people set themselves apart from the other races because they gave us a glimpse — actually it was more than a glimpse, it was a vision — of the living God.

All efforts to restore Western civilization will fail unless those efforts are focused on inspiring white people to return to their racial hearth fire and defend it. We can't go on as an Undine race, the people who have no souls, and still continue as a race. Of course that is what the liberals desire. They have already decreed, and they are acting on that decree, that the white race is a non-human race that should be exterminated. The Christian churches serve as the great anesthetizers. It is in the churches that the desoulment takes place. St. Paul told us that Christ's church consisted of those men and women who had taken Christ into their hearts. "Not so," say the churchmen. "The church of God is an organization built on an idea of God — *our* idea of God." But an idea is shifting sand, it lacks a local habitation in the human heart. The organized Christian churches are fusing with organized Islam and organized Jewry because they no longer diverge from those religions; having abandoned their racial hearth fire, the European churchmen have lost their vision of the incarnate God of Europe. Without that vision they are Undines, in search of a soul, in the forests of Brazil, in the nation state of Israel, or through their worship of the sacred negro. They refuse to look for their God at the hearth fire of the European people, because they fear the racist label.

If fear of the living God is the beginning of wisdom, then what are we to make of a people who fear Satan's racist label, which he places on all white men who love their own in and through the Savior? Sadly, we can make nothing of them, because they have willed themselves into a deathlike sleep; they are walking shadows who fret and strut their hour upon the stage of life without the passion to love their God and their people enough to fight for them. Life is only a tale told by an idiot to those who have severed the ties of blood that connect them to the living God.

The liberals, who are legion, believe in incarnational politics; they will settle for nothing less than the incarnation of Satan in the nations that formerly constituted Christendom. The reason leaders such as Orbán of Hungary and Trump in America enrage the liberals is because their politics represent compromise; they want a place for white Christians within Liberaldom. That compromise is an anathema to the liberals. And it should be an anathema to the white Christian as well. We cannot compromise with liberals. They want the blood of the white man, there is nothing that he can say or do to appease the liberals. He must willingly take his place on the sacrificial altar so that the liberals can propitiate their colored gods. The only effective resistance to liberalism is incarnational Christianity. Christ cannot be one democratic option among the Satanic -isms, for the simple reason that in a straight democracy Christ always loses — "Give us Barabbas!" The heathen will always rage against the light of the world. It is up to the Europeans, the Christ-bearers, to drive the heathens from the white lands along with the liberal Ganelons.

Ever since the time of the French Revolution the Europeans have been playing a game called "compromise with the liberals." And the liberals always win. They have destroyed, in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity, every vestige of incarnational Europe. Burke warned the West that the Jacobin snake did not die with Robespierre, it was alive and well, and its venom was called democracy. Under the guise of democracy every evil under the sun has been institutionalized. During the American Civil War the abolitionists insisted that the Civil War was not a war in support of miscegenation; they said it was a war for negro enfranchisement. But negro enfranchisement did mean miscegenation. Once that barrier was broken, the liberals did not apologize for breaking their word, they simply moved on to the next hurdle. The emancipation of women, for instance, was not presented as the destruction of Christian marriage, it was presented as simple democratic enfranchisement. Now that the Christian patriarchal family has been destroyed and white Christian masculinity proscribed, do we hear anyone crying foul? No, we do not. Every channel of grace flowing from white Christian Europe has been destroyed by the liberals. And the churchmen have helped the liberals damn up those channels of grace. The Welsh minstrel tells us that, "Nothing can compare to the love that once was there." What love was there? The love that a man has for his own kith and kin, which is sanctified by His presence and His blessing. The liberals sing a different tune. They sing of the hatred of all things white and Christian and bid us look to a future without white people and without Christ. And that future has arrived. We still have some white grazers left, but we have very few white people, whites who are willing to love their own kind, in and through the Savior without fear of the racist label and without any apologies.

The Grand Inquisitor in Dostoevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov* hurls a serious accusation at Christ. He tells Him, "You said you would return and you didn't." And since Christ failed to return, the Grand Inquisitor felt it was incumbent upon him to recreate a church in his image rather than in Christ's image. Isn't that precisely what has happened in the European nations? The scribes and the Pharisees have stepped in to fill the void left by Christ's 'broken' promise. But doesn't that leave the Holy Ghost out of the picture? Christ said He would leave us a Comforter until His return. Did He lie? It only appears so to those who have forsaken the Holy Ghost, who resides in hearts of flesh. If you must see an external sign, the type of sign that science and scientized theology provide, you will feel abandoned by God. Our churches have institutionalized that feeling of abandonment and turned their people over to the heathen gods. The prayer to our Father who art in Heaven has become a prayer to nature and nature's gods – the sacred negro, the Moslem zealot, the Hindu holy man, and the nation state of Israel. If we don't believe that Christ was incarnate in old Europe and vow to stay by the hearth fire of the antique Europeans, we will become part of the new Europe. And in the new Europe Satan reigns supreme. He is the incarnate ruler of Liberalism.

Satan had to impose his will on the European people incrementally. He had to undermine the Christian foundations before he could launch a frontal attack. Now that white pietas has become the new 'original sin,' the European people are without a Comforter, because the Holy Ghost only resides in the circumcised heart, a heart ready to receive the incarnate God. Lady Macbeth asks the devil to

*...stop up the' access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctions visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
Th' effect and it.*

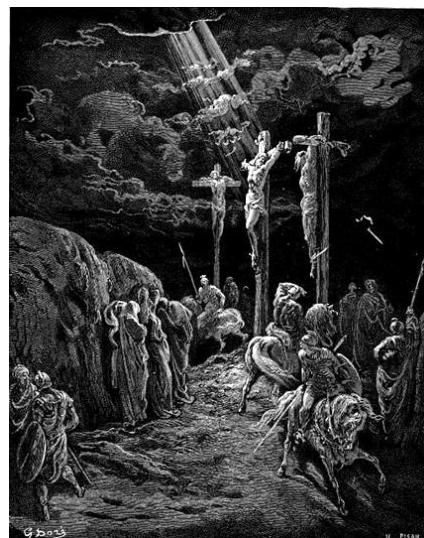
That is the ethos of the liberals. It is impossible to fight that satanic ethos without a belief in the whole Christian fairy tale – that Christ became flesh, was crucified, died and was buried, and on the third day He rose from the dead. And then, when He ascended into heaven, He left us a Comforter so that we could know that He was with us always. It sounds like such an impossible tale. We cannot wrap our minds around it, because it's so unmodern and unscientific. I would submit that the Christian fairy tale seems remote to the modern Europeans because they have chosen to reenact the original sin: They have scientized God and made His word subject to the laws of nature. But He is not out there in Satan's natural world, His world is the fairy kingdom where loving hearts seek Him still. He tells the scribes and Pharisees that there shall be no sign, because He is the sign. When we completely reject the world of the scribes and Pharisees, the world ruled by Satan, we will enter the real world, which is His world, a world of faith, hope, and charity. The passage to that world starts at home, by our European hearth fire. +

# He Hath Bourne Our Griefs

June 23, 2018

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare



Lo! I will declare the best of dreams which I dreamt in the middle of the night, when human creatures lay at rest. It seemed to me that I saw a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light, the brightest of crosses. All that sign was overlaid with gold; fair jewels were set at the surface of the earth; there were also five upon the cross-beam. All the angels of God, fair by creation, looked on there; verily that was no malefactor's cross, but holy spirits gazed on Him there, men upon earth and all this glorious universe. – *The Dream of the Rood*

---

I hate Shelley, Keats, and Byron with all my heart, mind, and soul. I hate them because they were anti-poets with a gift for words. They used their verbal skills to attack the poetical heart of existence. Keats spoke for the satanic triumvirate of anti-poets when he wrote, “Beauty is truth, truth beauty; — That is all, Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.” Yes, there is an element of truth in Keats’ statement. But we must remember Banquo’s warning to [Macbeth](#) after both men faced the witches on the heath.

*But 'tis strange;  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray's  
In deepest consequence.*

The honest trifle contained in Keats’ credo is that truth and beauty are connected. The lie at the center of Keats’ formulation is that beauty, and therefore truth, consists of the outward show. Keats and his fellow diabolists, Shelley and Byron, chose the same caskets of gold and silver that Bassanio rejected:

*So may the outward shows be least themselves;  
The world is still deceiv'd with ornament...  
The seeming truth which cunning times put on  
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy gold,  
Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee;  
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge  
'Tween man and man; but thou, thou meagre lead,  
Which rather threaten'st than dost promise aught,  
Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence,  
And here choose I. Joy be the consequence!*

—[Merchant of Venice](#)

The problem with Keats, Shelley, and Byron is that they were mesmerized by the natural world. They made that world all in all. But the natural world only has significance as an outer symbol of the spiritual world within. The antique Europeans stood before the cross of Christ, the leaden casket of existence, and they saw that the inner substance was pure gold. The great Anglo Saxon poem, “The Dream of the Rood,” speaks to us still:

*Wondrous was the cross of victory, and I, stained with sins, stricken with foulness;  
I saw the glorious tree joyfully gleaming, adorned with garments, decked with gold; jewels had fitly covered the tree of the Lord.  
Yet through that gold I could perceive the former strife of wretched men, that it had once bled on the right side.  
I was all troubled with sorrows; I was full of fear at the fair sight.  
I saw the changeable sign alter in garments and colours; at times it was bedewed with moisture, stained with the flowing of blood, at times adorned with treasure. ([11](#))*

Who saw that the bloody cross was also “adorned with garments, decked with gold?” Our people saw such a vision. That vision was and is the epitome of beauty and truth. It was the task of the great despilers, the Shelleys, Keats, Byrons, Voltaires, and Rousseaus, to create a new beauty and a new truth. In the beginning of the onslaught, Satan’s minions were excellent counterfeitors. The anti-poetic triumvirate wrote well, and Voltaire and Rousseau could turn a clever phrase. But there is an incredible moral ugliness at the core of the anti-poetical poets such as Keats, Shelley, and Byron and the anti-Christian philosophers such as Voltaire and Rousseau. Subsequent generations of anti-poetical wordsmiths and anti-Christian philosophers have followed in their train, but they lack the verbal gifts and the cleverness of their satanic predecessors. Of course they no longer need verbal gifts or clever repartee any more. First evil is opposed, then when the evil doers will not go away without a fight, evil is tolerated. Then, over time, evil is embraced and becomes intertwined with the good until the good is blended out of existence like weeds blend the good fruits of the earth out of existence.

The European people live in Satan’s unweeded garden because they no longer see beauty and truth in the cross of Christ. They have been blinded by the glittering façade of modernity while failing to look behind the façade to the superficial rotten core of liberalism. What Karl Barth said of Feuerbach we must say of the liberals: We have heard them speak, and we have heard something that is disgustingly, nauseatingly trivial. We will always be the captives of the honest trifles, the disgustingly, nauseatingly evil trivialities of the devil, when we fail to see the cross of Christ as the penultimate of beauty and truth.

You can now get a Ph.D. without being able to write a complete sentence. And the average person speaks like Alfred Jingle, who spoke in broken phrases. Still, outside the black community, the general public is literate. They can read their cell phones and write in computer Jingle-ese. But there is a huge literacy crisis throughout the European nations. The European people have become culturally illiterate. They have lost all contact with the culture that was grounded in the cross of Christ. A few weeks ago I brought home a book purchased in one of the last remaining book stores in this area. The book was printed in 1911, and when I opened the book I found a program from a 1911 grammar school graduation ceremony tucked within the pages. The program revealed the incredible culture gap between us, the modern Europeans, and them, the antique Europeans. The grammar school grads wrote original poems:

|                            |                               |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>May Foster</i> —        | <i>Queen June's Arrival</i>   |
| <i>Ruth Anderson</i> —     | <i>To the Daisies</i>         |
| <i>Joel Rosenthal</i> —    | <i>Nature's Art</i>           |
| <i>Helen Soden</i> —       | <i>The Robin</i>              |
| <i>Sylvan Marco</i> —      | <i>Lincoln</i>                |
| <i>Bertha Abendroth</i> —  | <i>To a Meadow Lark</i>       |
| <i>Pearl Smith</i> —       | <i>In the Forest</i>          |
| <i>Jack Doron</i> —        | <i>Man's Handiwork</i>        |
| <i>Florence Campbell</i> — | <i>Farewell to Foresville</i> |

They performed a German play:

|                        |                         |
|------------------------|-------------------------|
| Die Doppelüberraschung |                         |
| <i>Herr Ewing</i> —    | <i>George Lederer</i>   |
| <i>Fra Ewing</i> —     | <i>Marion Beveridge</i> |
| <i>Hertha</i> —        | <i>Naomi Proudfit</i>   |
| <i>Bertha</i> —        | <i>Leona Proudfit</i>   |
| <i>Bella</i> —         | <i>Florence Seibert</i> |
| <i>Wanda</i> —         | <i>Annie Petersen</i>   |

And they ended the graduation (obviously it was a German suburb) with a German folksong. All this from 8<sup>th</sup> graders! Three years after that 1911 graduation, the European people were destined to leave ancient Europe behind and start on the new road mapped out by the anti-European revolutionaries such as Shelley, Keats, Byron, and Rousseau. Now that we have had over one hundred years of that new European world, what is our judgement of it?

From the Christian standpoint there can be only one judgement of 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century Europe. It must be condemned and rejected as we condemn and reject Satan. And yet the churchmen tell us that we must become one with the new Europe, the Europe that rejects the antique Europeans and their God. The Pope Francis-type Christians claim they are simply rejecting the racist past of the antique Europeans, they are not rejecting Christ. But that is a lie. Let us suppose that a rose can only grow in one type of soil. If you go throughout the world destroying that soil, haven't you killed the rose? The European people were the good soil, in which the Christian rose, our Lord and Savior, came to fruition. What grows in the unweeded garden of Satan? Feminism, negro worship, abortion, sodomy, and blasphemy grow and flourish in Satan's 'Eden.'

The late Samuel Francis and John Tyndall were heroic men who wanted their kith and kin to survive in the white hating world. But they always saw white people as a changeless aggregate called white people. They did not see the Christian dynamic at work in the European people's past and they did not see the anti-Christian dynamic at work in modern Europe. They kept saying that there was still time to democratically save the European people if they could be persuaded to vote white. Such logic does not take into account the fact that a liberal will never vote white. He will always side with the colored races because the colored races hate the white Christ-bearing race almost as much as the liberal hates the Christ-bearing race. And even if a white candidate wins an election (the Trump victory was perceived as a white populist victory as envisioned by Samuel Francis), if he does not look on his victory as the beginning of a return to old Europe, then the victory is a delaying action, it is not a victory. What are we as a people if we are not the people who dream of the Rood planted in the midst of Europe? There can be no blending of the two civilizations. In ancient Europe our people saw that the inner core of the bloody cross on which our Savior died was bedecked with jewels. In modern Europe, the liberals see a glittering casket of silver and gold, but when we open up that casket we behold the rotting corpse of Europe. The antique Europeans made much of that which was within; the modern Europeans worship the outer show that covers up the sickness within.

We cannot survive as a people unless we love our people when they were a people, a people who lived, loved, and hated within the shadow of the Holy Rood. What does it avail us if we wage democratic battles with the liberals in order to secure a place in Liberaldom? We can only win such battles by relinquishing our white souls; we must become white-hating liberals in order to enter Liberaldom. And what good is it to gain admittance to that world, the liberals' world, if we must forfeit our souls to gain that world?

The two European worlds, the pre-20<sup>th</sup> century Europe and the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century Europe, are as different as heaven and hell. I frequently meet older grazers – my parents were two such grazers – who lament the passing of some European custom, such as Christian marriage, in which they believed. But the moment you tell such grazers that what they dislike is not an aberration of the democratic process, but is instead the natural consequence of the democratic process, you lose the grazers. They dismiss such wild-eyed attacks on the democratic way and go on complaining about the 'aberrations' while still worshipping democracy.

There are things being done in the name of democracy and diversity throughout the European nations that cry out to heaven for vengeance. No plea for mercy will stop the liberals from their merciless killing spree. Babies will continue to be aborted, and whites will continue to be slaughtered until white men decide to replant the Holy Rood of Christ in Europe's green and pleasant land. Certainly whites should stockpile guns, but guns are useless without the will to use them in defense of what a man holds closest to his heart. What do we hold closest to our heart? I see the same vision as the author of "The Dream of the Rood":

*Then the young Hero – He was God almighty – firm and unflinching, stripped Himself;  
He mounted on the high cross, brave in the sight of many, when He was minded to redeem mankind. Then I trembled when the Hero clasped me; yet I durst not bow to the earth, fall to the level of the ground, but I must needs stand firm. (1)*

And we must needs stand firm. We won't be part of the anti-civilization that exalts a man to the extent that he betrays Christ and His people. The foolishness of Christ, who was wounded for our transgressions and bruised for our iniquities, must once again become our foolishness. We shall never die as individuals or as a people so long as our hearts remain with Him who died on the Holy Rood. +

---

#### (1) *The Dream of the Rood*

Lo! I will declare the best of dreams which I dreamt in the middle of the night, when human creatures lay at rest.

It seemed to me that I saw a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light, the brightest of crosses.

All that sign was overlaid with gold; fair jewels were set at the surface of the earth; there were also five upon the cross-beam.

All the angels of God, fair by creation, looked on there; verily that was no malefactor's cross, but holy spirits gazed on Him there, men upon earth and all this glorious universe.

Wondrous was the cross of victory, and I, stained with sins, stricken with foulness;

I saw the glorious tree joyfully gleaming, adorned with garments, decked with gold; jewels had fitly covered the tree of the Lord.

Yet through that gold I could perceive the former strife of wretched men, that it had once bled on the right side.

I was all troubled with sorrows; I was full of fear at the fair sight.

I saw the changeful sign alter in garments and colours; at times it was bedewed with moisture, stained with the flowing of blood, at times adorned with treasure.

Yet I, lying there a long space, beheld in sorrow the Saviour's cross, till I heard it speak.

Then the most excellent tree began to utter words:

'Long ago was it – I still remember it – that I was cut down at the edge of the forest, moved from my trunk.  
Strong foes took me there, fashioned me to be a spectacle for them, bade me raise up their felons.  
Men bore me on their shoulders there, till they set me on a hill; many foes made me fast there.  
I saw then the Lord of mankind hasten with great zeal that He might be raised upon me.  
Then I durst not there bow or break against the Lord's behest, when I saw the surface of the earth shake;  
I could have felled all the foes, yet I stood firm.

'Then the young Hero – He was God almighty – firm and unflinching, stripped Himself;  
He mounted on the high cross, brave in the sight of many, when He was minded to redeem mankind. Then I trembled when the Hero clasped me; yet I durst not bow to the earth, fall to the level of the ground, but I must needs stand firm.

'As a rood was I raised up; I bore aloft the mighty King, the Lord of heaven; I durst not stoop.  
They pierced me with dark nails; the wounds are still plain to view in me, gaping gashes of malice;  
I durst not do hurt to any of them. They bemocked us both together.  
I was all bedewed with blood, shed from the Man's side, after He had sent forth His Spirit.  
I have endured many stern trials on the hill; I saw the God of hosts violently stretched out; darkness with its clouds had covered the Lord's corpse, the fair radiance; a shadow went forth, dark beneath the clouds.  
All creation wept, lamented the King's death; Christ was on the cross.

'Yet eager ones came there from afar to the Prince; I beheld all that.  
I was grievously troubled with sorrows, yet I bowed to the hands of men in humbleness with great zeal. There they took Almighty God, lifted Him from the heavy torment; the warriors left me standing, covered with blood; I was all stricken with shafts.  
Then they laid Him down, weary of limb; stood at His body's head; there they looked on the Lord of heaven; and He rested there for a space, tired after the mighty strife.  
Then in sight of the slayers men began to fashion Him a tomb; they hewed it out of bright stone; they placed therein the Lord of victories.  
Then, unhappy in the eventide, they began to sing a dirge, when they were about to depart in their sorrow from the glorious Prince; He rested there alone.

'Now, my loved man, thou mayest hear that I have endured bitter anguish, grievous sorrows.  
Now the time has come when far and wide over the earth and all this splendid creation, men do me honour; they worship this sign.  
On me the Son of God suffered for a space; wherefore now I rise glorious beneath the heavens, and I can heal all who fear me.

'Long ago I became the severest of torments, most hateful to men, before I opened to mankind the true path of life.  
Lo! The Prince of glory, the Lord of heaven honoured me then beyond the trees of the forest, even as Almighty God also honoured his mother Mary herself above the whole race of women.

'Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

'There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help man.  
Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life.  
No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ.  
No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.'

Then glad at heart I worshipped the cross with great zeal, where I was alone with none to bear me company.  
My soul was eager to depart; I felt many yearnings within me.  
Now I have joy of life that I can seek the triumphant cross alone more often than all men, do it full honour.  
Great is the desire for that in my heart, and to the cross I turn for help.  
I have not many powerful friends on earth, but they have gone away hence from the joys of the world, have sought the King of heaven, live now in heaven with God the Father, dwell in glory; and each day I look for the time when the Lord's cross, which erstwhile I saw here on earth, will fetch me from this fleeting life, and bring me then where there is great gladness, joy in heaven, where God's people are placed at the feast, where there is bliss unending; and will set me then where I may thereafter dwell in glory, enjoy happiness fully with the saints.  
May the Lord, who here on earth suffered aforetime on the cross for the sins of men, be a friend unto me; He has redeemed us and has given us life, a heavenly home.

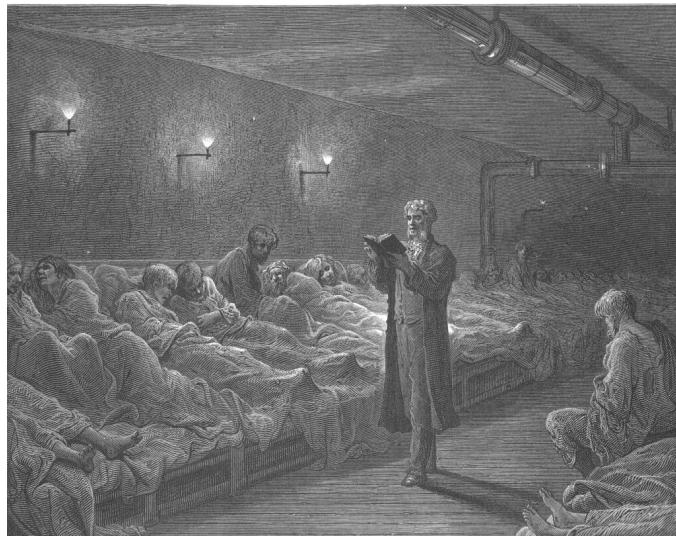
Hope was born anew with blessedness and joy for those who before endured the burning.  
The Son was triumphant on His journey, mighty and successful, when He, the Master almighty, came with the throng, the company of spirits, into God's kingdom – to gladness of the angels and all the saints who before dwelt in heaven in glory, when their Lord, Almighty God, came where his home was.

# Where Two or Three Are Gathered Together

June 30, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Halfway-house churches, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



"No, I suppose that other world must be all a dream."

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"No," said Jill and Scrubb, "never was such a world."

"There never was any world but mine," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddleglum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia; and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

Puddleglum's words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked at one another like people newly awaked.

"Why, there it is!" cried the Prince. "Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we've all seen the sun."

*-The Silver Chair*

---

In order for a revolution to succeed, there must be a certain degree of passivity in the governing body responsible for preventing revolutions. The French Revolution was the classic example. The popular press, the pamphleteers, had made an impression upon Louis XVI; he thought that he could concede a few points to the Jacobins. But you can never cede anything to the devil. The king's failure to see that the Jacobins were from the devil made him compromise when he should have stood firm.

*The indulgence of a sort of undefined hope, an obscure confidence, that some lurking remains of virtue, some degree of shame, might exist in the breasts of the oppressors of France, has been among the causes which have helped to bring on the common ruin of king and people. There is no safety for honest men, but by believing all possible evil of evil men, and by acting with promptitude, decision, and steadiness on that belief. I well remember, at every epocha of this wonderful history, in every scene of this tragic business, that when your sophistic usurpers were laying down mischievous principles, and even applying them in direct resolutions, it was the fashion to say, that they never intended to execute those declarations in their rigour. This made men cautious to their opposition, and remiss in early precaution. By holding out this fallacious hope, the impostors deluded sometimes one description of men, and sometimes another, so that no means of resistance were provided against them, when they came to execute in cruelty what they had planned in fraud.*

*- Burke in A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

Louis XVI's failure has been the failure of the West: We have failed to see the devil's sneering face behind the façade of liberalism. And the primary cover of the devil's agenda has been 'racism.' Trotsky coined the concept to neutralize the white race, and that terrible bogeyman has kept the white race in perpetual fear and self-loathing for over a century. Whites are willingly going to the liberals' guillotine because they have come to believe that racism is the only unpardonable sin. They believe their ancestors were guilty of that unpardonable sin and they must atone for it. But how can you atone for an unpardonable sin? You can't, but you can damn your ancestors. You can vow to have nothing to do with their legacy and you can spend your entire life as a sign of contradiction to old Europe. You can propitiate the colored gods by following the dictates of the high priests of the revolutionary tribunal. What gives the liberals the right to rule? Are they not white 'racists' just like thee and me? The liberals rule because they are the non-racist elect; they have made a Gnostic transformation and become pure spirit. And as Gnostic supermen they have decreed that everything that the racist Europeans thought was evil – sodomy, abortion, blasphemy – are really virtues that must be given state sanction. If you oppose any of those evils, you will be damned, because any opposition to liberalism is racist and racists are damned. So it is written, so it shall be.

The 20th century conservatives failed to put a dent in the liberals' armor because they caved in to the liberals on the major issue, which was and still is, white pietas. The conservatives talked about defending our democratic traditions, and they wrote solemn tomes about defending our Greco-Roman-Christian heritage, but they never wrote about defending the people from whom we received our sacred heritage. If we do not have the same spirit as the antique Europeans we cannot preserve the civilization they bequeathed to us. That is fine with the liberals, because they believe the people of old Europe and the civilization they created were evil. But what about the conservatives who claim they want to preserve Western civilization while demonizing white pietas? It's not possible. A man cannot conserve Western values while denouncing the people who created those values. You must either be a racist, a white man who loves his kith and kin, or you must be a liberal. There is no in between. By the 21st century, all conservatives were liberals, because they were afraid to be called racists.

In many ways, all bad, the new definition of sin suits the conservatives. They no longer have to worry about the old European honor code which required men to defend their women against the barbarians of color. That type of honor code died when racism emerged as the unpardonable sin. They no longer have to maintain any of the so-called pillars of society, such as the sanctity of life in the womb or the sanctity of Christian marriage. All things stemming from that charity of honor culture of old Europe can be done away with, allowing the conservatives time to work on what is really important – getting a non-racist white into office who will lower taxes and/or support our troops. But why are the troops "our troops"? Aren't

"our troops" members of the same military that Eisenhower sent to Little Rock, Arkansas to enforce integration at the point of a bayonet? And aren't "our troops" the same troops that will be used against us should we dare to rise up and purge the black barbarians from our cities?

We are required, in this, the satanic phase of the Europeans' history, to acquiesce passively to every form of liberal evil because to oppose liberalism is racist. That is quite a convenient formulation of the liberals. If all white people adhere to it, the liberals can reign until they die out from the black plague they created.

The act of kneeling is not intrinsically evil. In fact, to kneel in prayer to the Son of God is a great good. But should we kneel before the liberals and the liberals' gods? The men who knelt in prayer to Christ, the 'racist' Europeans, would not have permitted the Moslem invasion of Europe, the daily rape and murder of whites at the hands of negro savages, the slaughter of the innocents, and the legalization of every form of sexual perversion. They would have felt honor bound to stop all the aforementioned practices. But that is the tragedy of the European people. They have rejected the honor code of old Europe because the antique Europeans were, according to the liberals, racist. If we continue to live without honor, we will surely perish.

It certainly seems rather hopeless for white people. They seem completely cowed by their fear of the racist label. The turning point came when the organized churches, first the Roman Catholic Church, and then the Protestant churches, went over to the worship of a universal idea of God rather than the worship of Christ the Savior. That resulted in the identification of the old European honor code with the 'unpardonable sin' code of the liberals.

There is an unbridgeable divide between the "Dream of the Rood" Christianity and modern Christianity. The former celebrates Christ our Savior, Christ our kinsman, while the latter celebrates the God of the universal mind. The love of the Christ depicted in the "Dream of the Rood" creates a people who love their own in and through the Savior. A philosophical commitment to a generic, philosophical God creates a tepid, weak 'love' for all mankind, which leaves a void in the souls of men that can only be filled by the devil. "See how they love one another." is the sign of the "Dream of the Rood" Christianity. "See how they hate their own," is the sign of the liberal Christianity of the satanic, modern day, anti-Christian, Christian churches. There is no love, no honor, no God in those churches. Until the complete rejection of Satan's new Christless, non-racist Christianity becomes the main thrust of the Europeans' counterrevolution, there will be no salvation in this world or the next for the white Europeans, because the man who condemns his own in the name of a universal love for a non-existent, abstract people has no soul to call his own. "Breathes there a man with soul so dead..." Yes, the European people who fear the racist label have souls so dead.

We know what would make the European people whole again, but we do not know how that can happen. The European people need to love their own in and through the Savior. So long as they hate the 'racist' people who loved much, the European people will be estranged from God. Satan always attacks God through His people. If "the love that once was there" is no longer there, there can be no European restoration no matter who gets elected to political office.

Mark Antony's speech to the Romans speaks to us as well, not as regards Caesar, but as regards our relationship to Christ:

*You all did love him once, not without cause;  
What cause withdraws you then to mourn for him?*

Our people once loved Christ, for what cause do we now regard Him as a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods? Why do we regard Him as part of an "ecumenical jihad," as the non-incarnate God of the nation state of Israel or as a special assistant to Nelson Mandela or to the people of the Amazon rain forest? We have relegated Christ to the status of a lesser nature god because there is no room in a man's heart for the love of the living God if he is full of self-love. An overweening pride of intellect has consumed the European people and made them incapable of loving where they should love, and hating where they should hate. They should love the antique Europeans and the incarnate God with all their heart, mind, and soul. And they should hate the liberals and their god, the fallen archangel Satan, with all their heart, mind and soul.

After a century of indoctrination in school and church, the European people have descended to a state of post-Christian barbarism that makes mere pagan barbarism seem mild in comparison. The liberals can subject those who used to be their own people, before their Gnostic transformation, to torture, rape, and murder without the slightest "compunctionous visitings" of conscience. There is no room for charity or mercy in men and women who are surfeited-swelled with self-love. How can anyone with a remnant of grace, the unbought grace of life, not vow to fight the liberals to the knife and drive them off the face of the earth?

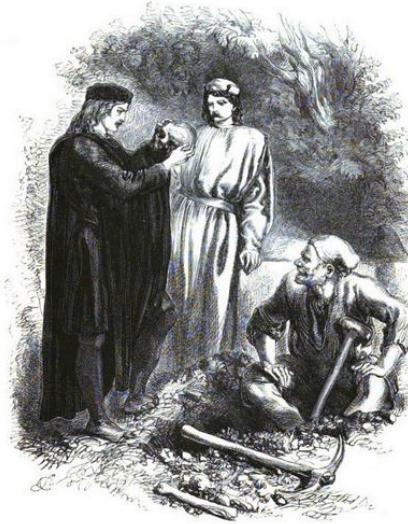
St. Paul never talks about the enlightened mind, but he does talk constantly of the circumcised heart. The man who knew the dangers of the scientized intellect spent his life imploring people to open up their hearts to the Savior. Our people, the antique Europeans, did as St. Paul enjoined them. That civilization, the Europe of Christ incarnate, has passed away as a place on the map. But it still exists in the blood of the Europeans who, for the love of Him who died on the cross, have left the 'pride of intellect' civilization of the new Europe for the 'hearth fire' civilization of the old Europe. We are in the position of Puddleglum in C. S. Lewis' book, *The Silver Chair*. Despite the fact that the Witch denies the existence of Narnia and his friends doubt the existence of Narnia, he asserts that there was and is a Narnia. So we must assert that there was and is a Christian Europe where men and women view life from His perspective. And we must defend that world, even if the apostate Europeans outnumber us by a million to one. If we look at life from the standpoint of pure math we are surely doomed. But when did the European hero ever take numbers into account? There is a realm of honor, that charity of honor, that sprang up from the hearts of the European people. That realm is not time bound nor is its reemergence among us dependent on a democratic majority. It depends on hearts that love their own in and through Him. Such things do not happen in a science-based culture, but they do happen when two or three European hearts are gathered together in His name. +

# The Great Mystery

July 7, 2018

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism, White Genocide

Tags: Walt Disney (the man)



Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.— [1 Corinthians 15: 51-52](#)

More often than not the movie version of a novel is not as good as the original novel. But there are exceptions. Walt Disney's movie *Mary Poppins* (1964) is better than the books, Disney's *Swiss Family Robinson* (1960) is better than the book, and Disney's retelling of the Pinocchio story (1940) is infinitely superior to the book. Are there other movies, outside of the Walt Disney canon, that are superior to the novel on which they were based? Yes, there are. John Ford's *The Searchers* is superior to the novel of the same name. And John Ford's *How Green Was My Valley* is superior to the novel. It is on the latter movie-novel that I want to dwell.

I first saw the movie *How Green Was My Valley* in my late teens. Later in my mid-twenties, I read the novel it was based on. I loved the movie, and I hated the book. Why? I loved the movie because Ford placed the emphasis on the Christian father of the family and left out the atheistic, existential rants of the author-narrator that permeated the book. In one telling incident in the book, the narrator informs us that Christ's crucifixion can only have significance if Christ was not God, because if He was God His suffering on the cross was not real. Isn't that the overlooked heresy of our age, the denial of the humanity of God? If God was truly God and truly man, wasn't His suffering on the cross infinitely greater than ours? He could have stopped His suffering at any time, but He didn't. Why didn't He stop it? The mockers told Him to come down off the cross and they would believe. And that is precisely what Christ did not want. He did not want the fear and respect of sycophants who only bow down to power and might. He wanted the freely given love of men who believed in a God of charity and mercy.

To deny the humanity of Christ is to deny His divinity as well, because Christ is the God-Man; His humanity is an inseparable part of His divinity. Intellectuals such as Einstein, who were legion in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, said there were three categories of religion. The first category was that of the primitive religions of totem and superstition, the second was of the more ethical religions of monotheism, which still retained some elements of the primitive religions, and the third was the cosmic religion of exceptional men such as Einstein himself. But Einstein and his liberal brethren were wrong. Einstein's 'higher cosmic religion' was in reality a return to the primitive religions of totem, superstition, and magic. And the tragedy of 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century Christianity was and is that the churchmen, under the scientific influence of men like Einstein, Shaw, and Teilhard de Chardin, blended Christianity with cosmic nature worship. And that blending of cosmic naturalism and Christianity made modern Christianity more compatible with Islam, Judaism, Liberalism, and all the nature religions than it did with the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. How could it be otherwise? Adherents of rationalized nature religions cannot understand the religion of the God-Man, because God-Manhood can only be understood by the poetic heart, it cannot be understood by the science/magic-oriented mind.

The men of Europe must come to see that their science-based culture is not an advance, it is a regression to the primitive religions of nature. The African witch doctor and the white scientist are one in spirit just as the Russian communist and the American capitalist are one in spirit. The capitalist can deliver more of the economic goods than the communist, just as the white scientist can more efficiently deal with natural diseases, but the white scientists and the black witch doctor are of the same nature/magic-based faith. All faiths, save one, are nature/magic-based faiths. Islam and Judaism are no different in kind from the more primitive type of snake-charmer religions.

Now we come to the 'save one' faith. The God-Manhood of Christ defies nature. Christ's magic is not derived from nature. His magic is of the spirit; it consists of His divine humanity. The love that surpasses the understanding of the natural mind has been discarded by the scientized men and women of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. If love cannot be put in a scientized golden bowl, then it does not exist: That is the conclusion of our science/magic-based culture.

After over a century of listening to the Christian theologians' new version of the naturalized Christianity, the Europeans have lost their filial love for their Lord and kinsmen. Is it possible we have forgotten what He did and what His God-Manhood means? Ponder, just for a moment, the faith that Christ had in His people. He came to His people, not as a conquering God of power and might, but as the suffering servant who was destined to face an ignominious death on the cross. How could a rational God expect a rational-minded people to accept a God who acted thus as their Savior? It was the bold, audacious act of a madman, it could not be the act of a God. Or could it? The bulk of mankind has told us that it was not the act of a God. Only one people, as a people, said that the Man on the cross was the Son of God. They believed in His God-Manhood. And because of their belief in His God-Manhood, they believed in themselves as a people. If He comes to us through His divine humanity, then it must mean we come to Him through our humanity. In the cosmic nature religion of the liberals, our stubborn fidelity to our kith and kin marks us as heretics, because nature is one, holy, and universal; it does not recognize the individual person who loves a particular people and a particular God that are not derivatives of nature.

The socialist hard left in the United States is currently at odds with the socialist 'soft' left; they differ in degree, not in kind. The hard left in Jacobin France wanted to kill Louis XVI immediately, while the more pragmatic left wanted to keep him around as a puppet king in order to give the people time to get used to the idea of the execution of their king and the destruction of Christian France. So it is with the disputes among the left in this country today. The hard left wants the death of everything white and Christian immediately, while the soft left wants to go a little slower. And in America there is no right-wing that wants to destroy the left, there are only the Republicans who want to go a little slower still than the soft left. Is there any elected official in any European country that has even suggested, let alone actually tried to act on that suggestion, that we criminalize liberalism and return to the faith-based cultures that existed in Europe prior to the American Revolution, the French Revolution, and the democratic revolutions of the mid-1800s? No, there isn't.

We must see ourselves as in a perpetual state of war against the culture of democracy, even if it is called a Christian democracy, because at the core of democracy is Satan's kingdom of eternal night. At first his sneering face is camouflaged in patriotic platitudes about the people and their freedoms, but once the people have been separated from the 'Dream of the Rood'—culture of old Europe for a long period of time, the camouflage can be dispensed with and Satan can walk the streets of Europe undisguised. The German councilwoman who flat out told her co-legislators that Germany would be a Moslem country in twenty years represents the moral essence of the new Europe, the Satanic Europe, that must be opposed with our whole heart, mind, and soul. It's not a pleasant thing to be in a constant state of war, but it is certainly better than being in a constant state of peace with the people who have eradicated our culture, blasphemed against our God, and seek the life-blood of our kith and kin. Of course if you believe that the antique Europeans were evil racists, that their God was a false God, and

that there is no such thing as white pietas, then you will not make war against the liberals. You will play politics with them and try to get them to see that you have been redeemed — you are not racist like those hideous creatures from long ago.

Dostoevsky's *Underground Man* said that a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key. Hamlet told Rosencrantz and Guildenstern that he was not a mere recorder on which they could play in order to pluck out his mystery. The liberals, who have rejected the God-Man and made the man-god, the natural savage, their god, believe that a man can be played upon as if he were a piano key or a recorder. They, the magic-nature men, tell us that they have solved the mystery of man. Man is a glorious ape subject to the laws of the natural world. The God-Manhood of Christ is a myth, but the deified ape is a reality. But a post-Christian people will always retain some elements of Christianity; that is why all apes are not equal. The white apes are not equal to the colored apes because they are from the devil; and that is the contradiction at the heart of liberalism. How can white racists be from the devil if there is no spiritual significance connected to skin color and no such thing as the devil?

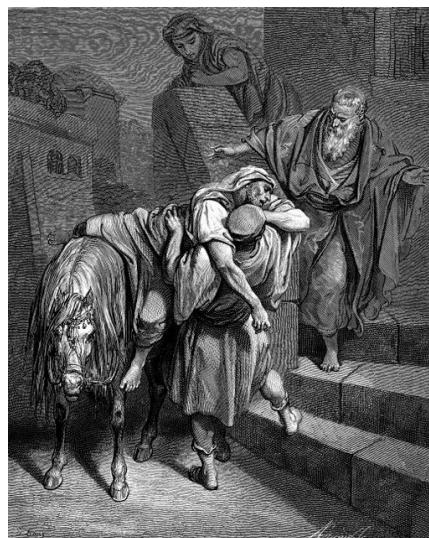
The pagan Greek philosophers went as far as the human mind could go by the contemplation of nature. And what was their verdict? Sophocles rendered the verdict in his masterpiece, *Oedipus Rex*: "Better not to have been born." If we are mere products of the natural world, if that is our mystery, then it is better not to have been born, and Christians who believe in the God-Man who rose from the dead, "are of all men most miserable." The modern European has forsaken his mysterious human relationships with his kith and kin and his relationship with the God-Man in order to find comfort with the nature gods – with the negro, with the natural pagan religions of Judaism, Islam, and Hinduism or an ecumenical combination of all the 'natural' religions. There is no real mystery to any of those religions. Just go to any graveyard and stare at a human skull, as Hamlet did. But what if there is a greater mystery in death than the liberals can conceive of? What if Christ is "the grave where buried love doth live"? What the philosophers could not conceive of in their contemplation of the natural world, that the God-Man would deliver mankind from the bondage of death through His death on the Holy Rood, was and is the true mystery of existence that our people, the people who loved much, bore witness to. We will be forever in the thrall of nature worship if we do not seek the God-Man in and through our kith and kin. Christ's humanity does not diminish His divinity, just as our connection to our kith and kin does not diminish our humanity; it deepens it and allows us to understand, in our hearts, the mystery of Christ's God-Manhood. +

# The Young Drummer and the Good Samaritan

July 14, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas, Sanhedrin Christianity, Young Drummer

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Shakespeare, Thomas Nelson Page



Yet this in no wise alters the fact that those who form no more than a part of a universal mish-mash, of a homeless multitude of faceless ‘un-men’, will never have any pride of place or sense of belonging, nor will ever know the Christian virtues of charity and love. Love like charity not only begins at home but perishes without one.

-Anthony Jacob in *White Man, Think Again!*

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests, and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand, had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

-Thomas Nelson Page in *Under the Crust*

---

Pope Francis the blasphemer has been up to his usual hijinks again. This time he has blasphemed by invoking the parable of the Good Samaritan in order to attack white pietas. He tells us that the Good Samaritan “did not ask for documents” before helping the man who had been beaten by thieves. Of course he is placing the Moslems and colored invaders in the position of the “certain man” who was beaten and robbed on the way to Jerusalem. And he is placing white people in the position of the priest and the Levite who “passed by on the other side.”

I think it is best, from a prudential standpoint, to confine your intense hatreds to men and/or women who are already dead. That way you stay out of jail, because it's not illegal to strangle, in your imagination, an enemy who is already dead. And for many years I have hated dead men more than any living man. At the top of my list is George Bernard Shaw. He will probably always be at the top of my list, but in recent years two rivals for the top spot have appeared. One is Angela Merkel and the other is Pope Francis the blasphemer. I'm sure there are others, a legion of others, who share the same views as the Merkel Monster and Francis the blasphemer, but those two have used their positions of authority to attack the living God by destroying His image in man. And I hate them for it, with all my heart, mind, and soul. Let me now turn these blog pages over to the Young Drummer from Grimm's fairy tales. What follows is an interview he did this week with the Good Samaritan.

---

**Young Drummer:** Your name has been invoked a lot lately, invoked as a justification for what I consider to be vicious attacks on the body of Christ. What do you think of the people who have invoked your name for liberal causes?

**Good Samaritan:** I hate them. Attacks on the dead, and these people who willfully distort my story for their own selfish ends are attacking me, are usually successful because the dead are not there to defend themselves.

**YD:** I'm here to allow you to defend yourself.

**GS:** I thank you. When our Lord told my story, He was responding to a lawyer who “tempted Him.” The lawyer wanted to know what he had to do to inherit eternal life. Of course we realize that the lawyer really didn't think Christ could teach him, a lawyer, anything. After all, Christ was merely a carpenter's son, and the lawyer was a doctor of the law. But Christ responded to the lawyer for the sake of others who were listening. Let me quote the whole sequence of events:

*And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?*

What ensues next is my story. I needn't quote it again; I'm sure all your readers are familiar with it.

**YD:** That's not always true in this, the 21<sup>st</sup> century. So let me tell your story:

*And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.*

**GS:** Now that the stage is set, let me quote from the great Bard of Avon:

*Mark you this, Bassanio,  
The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose.  
An evil soul producing holy witness  
Is like a villain with a smiling cheek,  
A goodly apple rotten at the heart.  
O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!*

In my judgement Francis the blasphemer is quoting Holy Scripture in order to facilitate the reign of Satan and destroy Christ's reign of charity. Let me explain. First, our Lord was telling us, through my story, that our neighbor is our fellow man. We are not to extend charity exclusively to those who live next door to us or exclusively to our kin. But where in the parable does our Lord tell us to invite strangers into our homes and our nations, strangers who have demonstrated murderous and licentious appetites, in order to prey upon our wives, our children, and our people?

Secondly, I did not take the stranger who was beaten on the road into my home. I took him to an inn. I had no reason to believe that the stranger on the road was a rapist or a murderer. Had I thought he was, I would have turned him over to the law, I would not have taken him to an inn. The so-called men of God who give sanctuary to Moslem, Mexican, and black criminals are defending the robbers who assaulted the traveler on the road, which is the complete opposite of what I did. The white people being beaten, raped, and murdered by Merkel's and Pope Francis's noble savages are the travelers on the road who need someone to show charity toward them. Merkel the Levite and Francis the Priest "have passed by on the other side" in order to cozy up to the Prince of Darkness by helping his minions destroy the white race.

**YD:** The devil's assault on our Lord has centered on the destruction of the European hearth fire, because it was there that the European people came to love Him in and through their own people.

**GS:** Precisely. "Love, like charity, begins at home, but perishes without one." I only extended charity to the traveler on the road because I learned charity at home, amongst my kith and kin. If I had no kith and kin, if my heart were dead to all feelings of filial devotion and love of my own people, then I would have killed the stranger on the road.

**TD:** Amen to that. This constant assault on white pietas can only lead all mankind to the fiery pit.

**GS:** That's right. But there is another reality that neither Angela Merkel nor Pope Francis know of. There is the reality of the Christian European hearth fire. It is there that hearts of flesh encounter the same Lord and Savior that the apostles encountered on the Road to Emmaus. Christ will always be with us so long as we stay by our European hearth fire.

**YD:** God keep you, my Good Samaritan friend.

**GS:** And God keep you.

#### **Post Script from the Young Drummer:**

*I do not look on modern Europe from an Olympian height, because I am not an Olympian. I am born of Europe; when Europe bleeds, I bleed. And Europe is bleeding now, because the European people have lost their prophetic vision that came to them when they made Christ Jesus the sovereign King of Europe. Now, when Christ has been placed in a Gnostic box outside of Europe, when He no longer occupies a place at the Europeans' hearth fire, the European people have become mere recorders that can be played upon by Satan. The European people desperately need to reclaim their souls by reconnecting with my Europe, which is the Europe of faith, hope, and charity. It is not given to me to know the day and hour of His return. But He has given me a vision of a love that passeth the understanding of the rational mind. That vision is the sacred heritage of the European people. They have forsaken that heritage. Why? "Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more" until Liberaldom is dust.*

---

The two entities, the eternal Europe of the Young Drummer, and the Gospel of Christ in which we learn of the Good Samaritan, became one incorporate union during the Christian era of the European people's history. It was the task of the secular utopians, such as Robespierre, Marx, Trotsky, and Jefferson, to destroy that incorporate union in the name of a glorious new future for mankind, devoid of the evils and imperfections of Christian Europe. And it was the task of Christian utopians such as Hilaire Belloc, Teilhard de Chardin, and Pope Francis to join with the liberals in the destruction of Christian Europe. And what does the new Europe, purged of the imperfections of the antique Europeans, look like? It looks like hell. We no longer see men and women trying to unite their passion to His passion. Instead we see men and women who have nothing inside them but a passionate hatred for their own people and a passionate hatred for the Christ of old Europe.

If Christ be not risen then we most certainly should not make Him the cornerstone of our civilization. But if Christ rose from the dead on the third day, shouldn't we, in all the essentials, want to follow Him in the footsteps of the people who believed in the risen Lord? The liberals have built Liberaldom on the premise that Christ did not rise from the dead, that He was a fraud. We are facing a spiritual Rubicon. Either we stay on the European side of the river with the Europeans from long ago, or we must cross over to the liberals' side of the river with Angela Merkel and Pope Francis and denounce our 'racist' ancestors, while doing penance for our irredeemable whiteness.

The great majority of Europeans are trying to survive the liberals' onslaught on the white race by denouncing the antique Europeans and agreeing to do penance for the sin of whiteness. Witness all the 'white privilege' courses that are being taught at the European and American universities. But if the passion of men united to Christ through white pietas is replaced by the 'wisdom' of philosophers determined to build a utopian world based on the doctrine that everything from white Christian Europe was evil and everything opposed to white Christian Europe is good, then the European people will cease to exist, because we cannot live without the vision that they, the condemned and despised antique Europeans, bequeathed to us. Noble hearts do not forget their dead, especially when their honored dead left them with a memory more precious than gold. "If I forget thee, O Jerusalem" is how we must feel about Christian Europe. We shall keep the memory alive because He lives there, He does not dwell in Liberaldom.

For me, the whole conflict between the Young Drummer-Good Samaritan world and the Angela Merkel-Pope Francis world is summed up in Luke:

*While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat. And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.*

The key passage is, "And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead." The Rousseaus, the Voltaires, the Shaws, the Einsteins, and all the anti-European legion of European intellectuals who worship science and the noble savage treat Christ with scorn. "The dead do not rise," is their constant refrain. And the Merkels and the Pope Francises have joined the mockers rather than take a stand with the 'racist' Europeans. As for me and my house, we will stand with the antique Europeans who did not mock Christ. They believed that Christ delivered Jairus's daughter from the bonds of death just as He will deliver us from death at the appointed time. How can any European ever, having been vouchsafed a vision of the living God, settle for the liberals' 'potage-of-lentils' culture of diversity? We can't and we won't. +

# Most Barbarous, Most Degenerate Liberalism!

July 21, 2018

Categories: Democracy, Liberalism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Shakespeare



It will come  
Humanity must perforce prey on itself  
Like monsters of the deep.

—King Lear

---

We state the obvious when we say that the liberals' feigned outrage over Trump's meeting with Putin is simply another manifestation of their hatred of Trump. But this clash between Trump and the liberals is not a clash of opposing ideologies, it is internecine warfare. Mad-dog liberalism is the malevolent offspring of classical liberalism. The mad-dog liberals view Trump, the classical liberal, as the parent who is trying to take them back to the bad old days when they had to ask for the car keys and return home by a specified time. Such restraints are unbearable, — they must have no restraints. And since they are malevolent offspring, they will stop at nothing, not even murder, in order to avoid any restraints on their appetites.

The reason Trump feels closer to leaders such as Putin and Orbán is that those leaders represent nations much higher up on the slippery slope of liberalism. Those nations will descend into mad-dog liberalism if they do not reject democracy, but they are currently at the first stage of the democratic cancer, the stage when the inner ugliness cannot be seen by the outward eye. Our society, which is in the final stage, can be seen in all its inner ugliness; there is no longer a healthy looking outward veneer.

It must be said of Trump that he is a better man than all his Republican predecessors. He has kept his word on the abortion issue, and he is trying to keep his word on open borders. But the liberals needn't worry – you can't return to classical liberalism once you have made the descent into mad-dog liberalism. Our entire culture is one vast indoctrination network for mad-dog liberalism. The mad-dog liberals control the schools, the churches, and the media. How can anything good, by which I mean Christian, come to fruition in such a culture? Nothing good will come out of any culture conceived and born of liberalism. It is not only mad-dog liberalism that we must oppose, we must also reject classical liberalism despite the fact that classical liberalism seems benign, just as cancer in its early stages seems benign, because classical liberalism leads to mad-dog liberalism.

The people of Europe have never come to terms with liberalism, which was revealed in its purest form during the French Revolution. The mad-dog liberals such as Priestly, Price, and later, men like Belloc, accepted and lauded the French Revolution in its most horrific manifestation under Robespierre. The classical liberals rejected Robespierres' Jacobinism for a modified Jacobinism, a liberal mixture of the old world and the new utopian world. But there can be no compromise with liberalism. It is a devouring, reptilian monster that must prey on humanity like a monster from the deep. And it will devour even its own children. Robespierre devoured his fellow Jacobins, just as the modern European Jacobins are devouring each other.

Even great Christ-haters like Voltaire and Shaw understood that you could not discuss any important issue having to do with the European people without reference to Christianity. Albeit the likes of Shaw and Voltaire knew Christianity had to be discussed in order to purge it from the face of the earth, but they did know it had to be dealt with. 'Tis not so with the modern Europeans. Even professed Christians act like everything of importance can be handled without reference to Christianity. This cannot be – we are all born of Christian Europe. All the good that is left in modern Europe, and there is very little good left, comes from Christian Europe. And all that is bad in modern Europe, which is practically everything, stems from the European peoples' acceptance of a false Christianity opposed to European Christianity.

In *Miracle on 34<sup>th</sup> Street*, Fred Gailey, the intrepid, kind-hearted defender of Kris Kringle, states that he intends to prove that Kris Kringle is the one and only Santa Claus. It is my contention, and shall always be my contention, that at the poetical core of the European people is the one, true God, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. I cannot present mathematical proof of my contention, but I do not regard mathematical proof as genuine proof in spiritual matters. I ask you to look through, not with, the eye and see life as the physically blind, but not morally blind Gloucester sees life: "I see it feelingly." All great hearts can see the European silken thread that leads to the Savior. But we must have the desire to follow that thread to its source, rejecting all other false threads that lead us astray.

I would use the term 'mystical' to describe the European thread that leads to Christ, but the term 'mystical' has been mightily abused. It has been and still is used to describe rational systems of thought stemming from the minds of Buddhist monks and Christian theologians. So let me substitute the term 'poetic' for 'mystical'. Once having cleared that hurdle, we can proceed with the defense of European Christianity.

The demise of the European people has come about because theological Christianity, which always was a fierce rival of poetical Christianity, has completely routed poetical Christianity. Martha, who "was careful and troubled about many things," was not gently rebuked because she was doing kitchen work, she was rebuked because she had lost sight of what all work, including kitchen work, was for. The theological man, the man tintured with the pride of science, puts God in a box, 'out there' – He is a geometrical given – and then proceeds to get down to business. But if God is not in human hearts, if we cannot know Him through that organ, which St. Paul and the European poets insist is the organ of sight, then how can we know our business? How can we know the living God? Suppose a child is brought up in a home in which the mother and father separated at the child's birth, and the mother has custody of the child while the father has no visitation rights. What will be the child's conception of the father? It might be a good one if the mother chooses to portray the father in a good light, but it is more than likely the mother will portray the father in a bad light. But good or bad, the child's conception of the father will be only an intellectual construct. He will not have any intimate, heart-to-heart contact with his father. That is what we get when we embrace theological Christianity. We have no contact with the heart of God, we only know Him through an intellectual process, which may lead us to think kindly of God, as the classical liberals do, or it may lead us to hate God, as the mad-dog liberals do, but in both forms of liberalism there is no contact with the living God, the God who enters human hearts.

The first liberal was the devil; he successfully got Adam and Eve to break their ties to a loving, personal God in order to establish a business relationship with an impersonal, natural force that was above and beyond God. They believed in Albert Einstein's cosmic religion billions of years before the great Einstein 'discovered' it. Christ delivered us from the bondage of the devil's cosmic religion through His death on the cross, but the price of our deliverance was and is that we take up our cross and follow Christ. St. Paul stresses that we must share in Christ's

crucifixion if we are to share in His resurrection. And that Pauline assertion, that the fruits of Christ's resurrection can only be gained by sharing in His crucifixion, was the weapon Satan used to bring the Europeans back to a cosmic nature religion, which places them in the devil's fold.

Through the medium of theology, the devil got the European people back to nature and to nature's gods. He used the medium of theology at the beginning of his attack, because he saw that a frontal attack was hopeless. If we look at the work of St. Thomas Aquinas, for instance, we do not see a denial of the Christian God. Far from it, we see an intellectual affirmation of the triune God. But is that God the same God the apostles encountered on the road to Emmaus, the God who made their hearts burn within them? Is it the same God that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus? No, it is not. Aquinas placed God outside of man; He was to be found by reason's contemplation of the natural world. Aquinas is generally considered the optimist and Calvin the pessimist, because Calvin insisted on the doctrine of total depravity while Aquinas claimed that our reason was untainted by original sin. But what both theologians have in common is that they rejected the poetic core of the Christian faith. St. Paul insisted that there was an indwelling spirit in the human heart through which a man could develop an intimacy with Christ. And that intimacy was not an ecstatic union with a pagan deity, it was a moral union of hearts. The European people followed St. Paul's injunction to circumcise their hearts, and by doing so they joined their hearts to His sacred heart. This was the miracle of European culture, that the European people responded to God's grace. Only a Christian who thinks dogmatic theology and religious faith are one and the same would allow the external history of the European people – their wars, their lusts, and their quests for the treasures of this world only – to blind him to the incredible moral beauty of Christian Europe. Why is Christian Europe and her people judged by her trash bins and not by her poetic essence?

The European bards such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens, are one with the apostles in their vision of the European inn at Emmaus. It is there that our hearts burn within us in the presence of the risen Lord. And even the atheist poets, the Byrons and the Shelleys, knew who the enemy of their beloved cosmic religion was. It was the men and women with hearts of flesh who rejected the gods of nature for the God above nature.

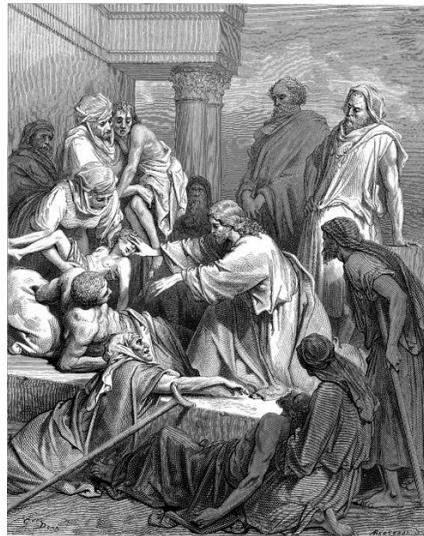
The wheel has come full circle; the European people have returned to nature and nature's gods. They could not live with a rational God who disdained to enter human hearts, the God of the rationalist theologians and the classical liberals. It is not possible to defeat the mad-dog liberals by referring to classical liberalism: "Let me show you how irrational your policies are." That doesn't work. The mad-dog liberals are being rational – they use their reason to destroy what they hate, white Christian Europe. The Tucker Carlsons and the Paul Joseph Watsons, the classical liberals, can point out the hypocrisy and irrationality of the liberals from now to doomsday, but they will never deflect the mad-dog liberals from their maniacal assault on the white race. Nor will the white grazers ever pick up the mantle of white Christian Europe and fight for England, Harry, and St. George. They will continue to appease the mad-dog liberals by declaring, from under their beds, that they are not racist. Is that the sum total of the white man's existence in the 21<sup>st</sup> century? Yes, it is. Does it have to be? No, it doesn't. There is that poetical-mystical connection to God that St. Paul writes about in *1 Corinthians 13*. If our apostle, St. Paul, was right then we can reconnect with the living God through white pietas. And once that reconnection is made, Europe will become Europe again and her people will no longer plead for a small corner in Liberaldom. They will demand that Christ be reinstated as the King of the European people. Certainly, it is not written that the European people will return to the poetic-mystic faith of St. Paul. But it is not written that they won't. Christian Europe was a miracle of God's grace; it serves as a sign of contradiction to those who tell us that God does not enter human hearts. He can and He will come to us, if we come to Him with hearts of flesh warmed and nurtured at our racial hearth fire. +

# In His Name

July 28, 2018

Categories: Blood faith, Charity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Herman Melville, St. Paul, Thomas Hughes



As to Mr. Mounier and Mr. Lally, I have always wished to do justice to their parts, and their eloquence, and the general purity of their motives. Indeed I saw very well from the beginning, the mischiefs which, with all these talents and good intentions, they would do to their country, through their confidence in systems. – Edmund Burke, *A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

---

Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. – *Psalm 91: 14*

---

The historian Norman Cantor claimed in his book *The Meaning of the Middle Ages* that the much maligned Middle Ages gave birth to the modern age. On the face of it, Cantor's assertion seems preposterous. How can the Middle Ages, the age of monarchy, superstition, and irrationality be compared to our modern age of democracy, science, and reason? But Cantor's point is a valid one. It was the Middle Ages that gave birth to scholasticism, which is the poison that killed the European people. Men cannot live by reason alone. When they try, they end up putting their faith in a manmade system, and they sever their connection to the living God who is the source of all true knowledge.

The devil is a coward; he refused to meet the European people in open combat. Instead he went through the back door of the church and placed a wedge between God and mankind by telling men that they could only know God through mind-forged systems. The great appeal of this approach to religious truth is that it eliminated the irrational and problematic intricacies of the human heart. To put it bluntly – human beings are messy. They have all sorts of illicit passions that can foul up the perfect systems of the rationalists. In his novel *The Underground Man* Dostoyevsky's protagonist asks his liberal audience what would happen if they built their perfect glass palace and he decides to smash it just because he wants to smash it. Precisely. And then there is the excellent point made by Owl in (the real) Walt Disney's *Winnie the Pooh*. The gopher thinks he can solve the problem of Winnie the Pooh, stuck in the doorway of Rabbit's house, if someone will just remove the bear. "Got to get rid of the bear, he is gumming up the whole works!" Owl replies, "Dash it all, the bear *is* the problem!" When we look to systems, even when those systems are systems about God, we lose God and we lose man.

Richard Weaver, in his *Visions of Order*, defends the state in the trial of Socrates, who was charged with undermining the Athenian society through his attacks on the gods. This defense of the state goes against the modern belief that Socrates was a martyr for the truth. Who was closer to the truth? The pagan Greeks did not know the one true God, but their reverence for Zeus and other divine-human gods indicated a racial memory of the one true God. What could Socrates offer as a replacement? He offered abstract reason, which leaves a man alone with himself contemplating the nothingness of existence. Melville tells us, in *The Confidence-Man*, that the love of God and the love of man are co-ordinate:

*"I do not jumble them; they are co-ordinates. For misanthropy, springing from the same root with disbelief of religion, is twin with that. It springs from the same root, I say; for, set aside materialism and what is an atheist, but one who does not, or will not, see in the universe a ruling principle of love; and what a misanthrope, but one who does not, or will not, see in man a ruling principle of kindness?"*

"Yes, all that may be true," the reasoning man replies, "A lack of faith in Divine Providence leads to a lack of faith in man, but if our reason tells us that we cannot know with certainty that there is a loving God at the center of existence, hadn't we better rely on some rational system instead of the irrational faith of men who believe in a mythic God?" We can't respond to the rationalist with the five scholastic proofs for the existence of God, because those proofs are only valid for false gods. They are not valid proofs for the existence of the one true God. But we can tell the rationalist that there is a way we can know God. We can eschew the purely rational 'two plus two equals four' logic and proceed on a journey through the labyrinth of the human heart. The scholastics placed a 'do not enter' sign at the entrance way of the human heart, which read, like Dante's sign at the beginning of hell, "Abandon all hope ye who enter here." But isn't that our only hope? If Christ is truly the Son of God, where can He be found if not in the human heart? This is what the race war is all about. The liberals have decreed that the Europeans must have no hearts, they must be committed to a scientific, utopian world based on abstract reason. That world can only stand so long as the Europeans remain outside of themselves, outside of their own history and their own hearth fire. They must be devoid of all humanity lest they fall prey, from the liberals' satanic viewpoint, to the siren call of the God who comes to human hearts.

Every institution throughout the European nations has been set up to encourage the colored heathens to heed the call of the blood and to encourage the Europeans to repudiate the call of the blood. And isn't it obvious why the liberals have institutionalized the deblooding of the European people? Left to reason alone, they are only partially human. The worst of the whites have become rationalized beasts of prey; they have become liberals. And the best have become moderate Christians who cannot be used in defense of the right, because they have no heartfelt passions, but who can be used as an undergirding for the wickedness of the liberals. Satan can use moderate, rational Christians for whatever purpose he wants, because the moderate Christians, the Christians without a racial hearth fire where a love for their kith and kin is nurtured, have only one issue – the one issue they are permitted – they must sing continual hymns and anthems to diversity and diversity's god, the sacred negro. The man of passion loves once and forever. The moderate Christian loves moderately so long as it is reasonable to do so. It is no longer *reasonable* to love the God-Man in and through our own people, because such a love sets a man against the principalities and powers of the world. So now we are enjoined to love first the negro, and all other things of the liberal world will be added unto us.

The things of this world are the carrots on the stick the liberals hold out to us. We have only to declare, like Caiaphas, that the Lord God is a product of a man-made system designed to keep order in a rationalized pagan world. But will whites ever be allowed to be part of that system? No, they won't. Burke, in his *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France*, makes reference to two French statesmen, Mounier and Lally, who thought there could be a kinder, gentler system of Jacobinism. Both men ended up fleeing France. The white Europeans will not be so lucky. There is no longer any place to run to. The great utopia has arrived, but there is no place for whites in the brave new world. Why should we desire a place in that world? We can hear our Lord asking, "What good does it do to gain the whole world if a man loseth his soul?"

In the novels of Joseph Conrad we can see the beginning of the European people's transfer from a culture founded on the love of the God-Man to a utopian-based culture in which the white man lives on a few platitudes based on the theories of God. Such a man has lost himself and must wander about the world trying to lap up the blood of the pagans of color in order to feel alive again. The nobler whites in Conrad's novels still try to be white. They try to live up to the European honor code, despite the fact that they can no longer trace the code back to its source. Tom Lingard, in Conrad's *The Rescue*, is such a man. "I am a white man inside and out; I won't let inoffensive people – and a woman, too – come to harm if I can help it." Lingard has that which we have lost, "that charity of honor," which was the sole possession of the people who made the ethos of 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 13 their *raison d'être*. The transition-stage novels of Conrad make for very painful reading. When I read them in my youth I was drawn to the Tom Lingard and Lord Jim type heroes, but I longed for just one of those heroes to trace the white man's honor code to its source. They never did, and therein lies the tragedy of Western man. Without a human connection to the God-Man, our honor has faded away into the dark night of liberalism where there is no honor, no love, and no light. We have returned, through the good offices of the scholastics who deified reason divorced from the human heart, to heathenism.

*The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."*

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

— Tom Brown at Oxford

The only question left in the minds of the Europeans is whether they will become Socratic heathens, like the conservative liberals, or whether they will become negro-worshipping heathens, like the mad-dog liberals. The mad-dog liberals currently have the upper hand, and they are not likely to lose it, because liberalism is an ever-evolving, all-devouring succubus; it will not stop and reverse its forward progress. Trump is a small pebble in the path of the liberal succubus that the liberals eventually will rid themselves of. But even if we could return to Socratic liberalism, the liberalism of reasonable debate and discussions, would that be desirable? It certainly would be preferable to mad-dog liberalism, but that type of liberalism is still poison to the European's soul. We were not born to discuss and debate God's existence, we were born to champion the Savior against all the heathen world.

After our Lord healed the ten lepers and bid them go tell the priests, one leper returned to give thanks. Christ praises the man for returning to give thanks. Then the Pharisees demand to know when the kingdom of God will come. Christ tells them, "The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or, lo there! for, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you." If God has not placed something of Himself within us, why does Christ tell us that the Kingdom of God is within us? The liberals have taken one aspect of Aquinas, his deification of human reason, and one aspect of John Calvin, his insistence on the total depravity of man, and forged a soulless heathenism out of those two perversions of Christianity. In Liberaldom, all white men are totally depraved except the godded white men, the liberals who have used their exalted reason to transcend their whiteness. So long as they stay elevated, above the totally depraved racist whites, they will find salvation through their mind-forged vision of the sacred negro.

Chandler was right about the hero: "Down these mean streets a man must go, who is not himself mean, who is neither tarnished nor afraid." But in whose name does the hero go forth? The mean streets are the streets of Liberaldom. And we go forth in His name to restore His reign of charity in a world that has no place for charity. Liberalism has not reduced human suffering, it has increased it one-thousand fold, because now the Europeans suffer without the comfort of the Savior. The old fairy tales are right: We can only venture forth, like the Third Dumb Brother, and trust that a passionate love for our people and our Savior can defeat the satanic liberals' system that holds our people in bondage. +

# As You Would Oppose the Devil

August 4, 2018

Categories: Blood faith, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Feminism, Jacobinism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism, White Genocide

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Anthony Jacob, August Strindberg, Edmund Burke, Walter Scott



Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation. – Luke 20: 46-47

---

Liberalism is a religion. It has its own set of rituals and rules that must be adhered to if one is to remain in good standing and free from persecution by the liberals. But like the Jewish Pharisees who preceded them, the liberals are hypocrites. They do not really believe what they profess. And the root cause of the liberals' hypocrisy is the same as that of the Pharisees of Judaism. They cannot bear the light of truth, because that light would destroy their Christ-denying, satanic world that they have set up to satisfy their own illicit desire to be as God. A list of all the liberal hypocrisies would fill an encyclopedia from A to Z. Let me list a few that are particularly blatant and striking.

## I. The Russian Hypocrisy

I remember, in my elementary school days, the atom bomb drills that we would go through. The school principal would sound an alarm, and our teacher would then instruct us to get our coats, go into the hallway, and sit up against the wall with our coats over our heads. I never asked my teacher what was the use of putting our coats over our heads, because like most children of that era I trusted adults. They knew what they were doing. As we age we begin to doubt that adults really know what they are doing. And then when we become adults we *know* that adults do not know what they are doing, because we are now adults and we don't know what we are doing.

During the Cold War when Russia was Communist, the liberals told us we had to get along with Russians for two reasons. The first reason was a utilitarian reason: "If we don't get along with them, everything will go ka-boom!" Movies such as *Dr. Strangelove* and *Fail Safe* pounded home that theme. And the second reason we were supposed to get along with the Russians was that Russian communists and the Americans were all alike. Movies like *The Russians Are Coming* emphasized that theme. And unfortunately that was true: American democracy and Russian communism have the same anti-Christian Jacobin roots.

Let's fast forward to the 21<sup>st</sup> century where now we are not supposed to get along with the Russians. Why is that? Because (we are told) they have committed human rights violations and they try to influence our elections. Really? Whatever human rights violations might be occurring in modern Russia, they pale in comparison to the human rights violations that took place under the communists. But wait – we were supposed to love the communists, because they were just like us. And they were just like the liberals. They were Jacobins.

There are more human rights violations in the United States and Canada today than in Russia. But of course the liberals of North America do not look on the extermination of the white race and legalized infanticide as human rights violations. The real reason the liberals hate Putin and the Russians is because Russia is still a sovereign state that has not made the commitment to exterminate its white citizens and replace them with colored heathens. They very well could do that in the future if they stay on the democratic path, but they have not yet made that commitment. The Russians still cling to certain aspects of Christianity, such as an abhorrence of sodomy and a respect for the family unit. Liberals of the West find such views offensive. So the great hypocrites who used to tell us to get along with the Russians to prevent nuclear war now tell us we should go to war with them in the name of human rights, which translates to liberalism.

## II. The Feminist Hypocrisy

Tennyson was correct when he described the differences between men and women in *Idylls of the King*:

*For men at most differ as heaven and earth,  
But women, worst and best, as heaven and hell.*

Once a society has gone to the devil, it is the demonic women who rule, because they have the sustained demonic energy that evil men can only muster up in dribs and drabs. This is why the most epic hypocrisy in all of Liberaldom is the feminist hypocrisy. Only one man, William Shakespeare in his play *Macbeth*, ever depicted the depth of evil to which a woman, totally given over to her own will, could descend.

The feminists started out saying they didn't mean to diminish motherhood: "That's all right for some women." They just didn't want a woman to be relegated to being "just a wife and mother." Of course, that was a lie. Motherhood was demeaned, and our whole society was turned upside down (*Miss Julie* style) (1) in order to accommodate Lady Macbeths such as Betty Friedan and Susan Brownmiller who hated God and all mankind, including female mankind. How can you claim to be for women while you treat femininity as something to be cured by pills, diaphragms, and abortions? "But the feminists have taught us not to abuse women!" Have they? Haven't the feminists welcomed the Moslem invaders? Have the feminists ever condemned the blacks who rape white women at will? And what society is condemned by the feminists? The pre-20<sup>th</sup> century white, Christian, patriarchal society, which condemned the rape and abuse of women. Of all the liberal hypocrisies, the feminist hypocrisy is the worst — it stinks to high heaven and plunges the nations who promote it into the deepest pit of hell.

## III. The Equality Hypocrisy

The liberals profess to believe in the equality of all races, yet under the banner of racial equality they have elevated the black race to the status of a deity. Race is not supposed to matter because we are all equal, yet everything a liberal does is determined by race. The white race must be exterminated so the black race can thrive. Anthony Jacobs wrote *White Man, Think Again!* before the fall of South Africa, so it was to Kenya he turned to as a warning to the European people:

Kenya, we must understand, is a microcosm of the entire West. Therefore let us ask ourselves, What would have been our general White position today if the world had consisted only of Kenya, with no other place for us to go to and no other form of government for us to live under? What then? We, the White race, would already have been obliterated or reduced to everlasting servitude, would we not? Yet however fanciful it might still seem to the white peoples of the northern American states and occupied Europe, the world today does in the most vital sense consist only of Kenya, for we cannot keep on being racially overruled and uprooted and moved on. Wherever we are now we are in effect in Kenya; for certainly the operations of the anti-White conspiracies, the techniques of the Communists, Liberals and One-Worlders, remain significantly identical whether they be applied in Kenya or Alabama.

Those words can and should be applied to modern South Africa. All whites of the West are in the same position as the whites in South Africa. The colored barbarians seek our blood. And with the aid of liberal cabals throughout the West they will get their wish, unless the white man repudiates the “all are equal but some are more equal” hypocrisy of the liberals. It’s difficult to know to what extent the white South Africans are fighting back, because news of the white genocide and of white resistance in South Africa is suppressed, but I hope and pray that the rumors of white resistance are true. They are us, they are our people.

#### IV. The Humane-Compassionate Hypocrisy

I grew up hearing, in school and church, that liberals were compassionate. Their hearts bled for all humanity. ‘Tis not so. I discovered, during a lifetime among them, but hopefully not of them, that the liberals have no compassion for any human being on the face of the earth. You cannot harden yourself against the Light of the World and still retain the humanity that comes from the Light of the World. Individual human beings mean nothing to the liberals because like their mentor, Satan, they hate everything that stinks of humanity. They hate procreative love, they hate the natural ties between parent and child, and they hate all ties a man feels toward his kith and kin, because such ties are human links to the humane God.

Under the guises of compassion for the negro, the liberals have set out to destroy the white race, because mercy and compassion, the divine mercy and compassion, became incarnate in the culture of the white race. The negro must be championed, not because the liberals have any compassion or love for the negro, but because the black race, as an aggregate herd, can be utilized to destroy the white race, which once bore witness to the God whose love and compassion for humanity is a sign of contradiction to the liberals’ hatred of humanity. The compassionate liberals have the same relationship to humanity as the wolf has to the lamb. He needs the lamb in order to feed on him, but he does not have any compassion for the lamb as he devours him.

#### V. The Non-Violent Hypocrisy

The liberals abhor violence, yet they are mass murderers. Their model is Robespierre. Before taking office as *Le Suprême* of France, he was a passionate advocate for the abolition of capital punishment. He remained a passionate opponent of capital punishment after he became head of France. How could he justify such hypocrisy? It was easy. Before there could be a world where capital punishment was unnecessary, evil had to be purged from the world. Robespierre was not allowed to complete his purge before he was purged, but the liberals are still trying to complete his work. “The world must be made safe for democracy,” Woodrow Wilson declared as he plunged his nation into war on the side of the assassins. The Russian communists were always our allies because they believed in purging millions upon millions of people for the sake of an egalitarian ideal, just as we believe in purges for the sake of an egalitarian ideal. All unwanted babies must be killed so we can have a world where all babies are wanted and cared for. All white people must be purged so that the liberals who have transcended whiteness and the natural and noble savages of color can live in peace and harmony on the earth. And that peace and harmony is always in the future; in the here and now there must be bloodletting – a whole lot of bloodletting.

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the Principle of Evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the “compunctionous visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved : they only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon, and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians and the chemists bring — the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces — dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world.*

The only violence the liberals oppose is violence against their bloodletting reign of terror. The rules of Liberalism state that violence against the people — and the people are the liberals and their colored minions — is morally reprehensible. Such violence will be met with violence. The reason black murderers go free and Paul Hill was executed is because blacks are the people, while Paul Hill was a non-person striking back against “the people” who were engaged in the business of purging Liberalism of its unwanted scum. That is the essence of the liberals’ nonviolent heresy. The unclean, the unwanted must be violently dealt with in the name of liberal purity. When the liberals don’t do the purging directly, they do it indirectly like Pope Francis the blasphemer. He, like Robespierre, is against capital punishment for criminals who rape and murder, but he is not against the capital punishment of the European people at the hands of the Moslems and the colored heathen. Nor was the “good” Pope John against the torture, rape and murder of white nuns and priests at the hands of colored barbarians. He was against any violent retaliation against the black barbarians. That is the modified Christian version of the nonviolent, liberal hypocrisy. Which brings us to the sixth liberal hypocrisy.

#### VI. The Christian Hypocrisy

The liberals use Christianity to serve their needs. When they want to condemn capital punishment for black murderers, they tell us that Christ is against taking human life. When they want to slaughter millions of babies in their mothers’ wombs, they tell us Christ is compassionate and does not want women to suffer through the pangs of an unwanted pregnancy. When they want to support massive colored immigration in the white nations, they cite the parable of the Good Samaritan, but when dealing with the sin of sodomy they shift gears and tell us that St. Paul’s strictures against the sin are no longer valid in an evolving world. No one ever challenges the liberals’ right to invoke Christianity whenever it suits their purpose. But they must be challenged. By what right do the liberals, who do not believe in the Son of God, invoke Christ’s name in support of their satanic blasphemies? And that is the key to all the liberals’ hypocrisies: Their hypocrisies are cloaks for their Pharisaical hatred of the Light of the World. We should not be deceived by the liberal scribes and Pharisees, we should oppose them with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) “You only talk like that – and besides, my secrets are known to everybody. You see, my mother was not of noble birth, but came of quite plain people. She was brought up in the ideas of her time about equality and woman’s independence, and that kind of thing. And she had a decided aversion to marriage. Therefore, when my father proposed to her, she said she wouldn’t marry him—and then she did it just the same. I came into the world — against my mother’s wish. I have come to think. Then my mother wanted to bring me up in a perfectly natural state, and at the same time I was to learn everything that a boy is taught, so that I might prove that a woman is just as good as a man. I was dressed as a boy, and was taught how to handle a horse, but could have nothing to do with the cows. I had to groom and harness and go hunting on horseback. I was even forced to learn something about agriculture. And all over the estate men were set to do women’s work, and women to do men’s—with the result that everything went to pieces and we became the laughing stock of the whole neighbourhood.” — *Miss Julie* by August Strindberg

# Democracy – The White Man’s Covenant with Death

August 11, 2018

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Anthony Jacob, St. John, Whittaker Chambers



So we are still at a loss to explain the White retreat, and always will be at a loss to explain it if we look for the explanation among the non-Whites. No, only too obviously we are being defeated from within; by the High Finance which with the help of its running dogs, the Liberals, organises the systematic brain-dirtying of the Western voting masses and university students, and either appoints its own puppet politicians or exerts enormous pressure against the ‘unappointed’ ones. It is a vast power of hatred, destructiveness and megalomaniac ambition spreading among us, its victims, the seeds of despair, futility, disorientation and even acceptance. It is a new ‘religion’ (or perhaps a very ancient one); and the majority of us cannot fight it because we are weak in love and, owing to the censorship of other than Leftist views, even weaker in understanding. The result is that those few among us who can fight it and do fight it are instantly attacked, not even so much by the ‘Liberals’ themselves as by those of us who cannot and dare not fight it — by the Empty Men, the men of parrot mind and parrot conviction.

-A. Jacob in [White Man, Think Again!](#)

---

And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth. —*Revelations 6: 8*

---

In *Witness*, Whittaker Chambers noted that the courts in the Soviet Union were filled with reams and reams of paperwork for every single court case that came up. He concluded that the more illegitimate a government was, the more paper work they put out in order to cover up the fact that their government was illegitimate. This is certainly the case in all the nations of the West. They attempt to cover up for their totalitarian regimes by a mountain of legalese. The Tommy Robinson case in Britain is an example. His crime was a non-crime, an invented crime by an illegitimate, totalitarian government. Tommy Robinson wanted, in the true spirit of a British patriot, to prevent the Islamization of his nation. He followed all the democratic rules of peaceful protest, and he made the obligatory condemnation of racism — “Most of my friends are black” — but still the British government sent him to prison where he was tortured and deprived of uncontaminated food and water. He is currently out on bail, but he is not out of the woods by any means. He has become a person of interest to the state; the smallest infraction against the totalitarian British state will send Tommy Robinson back to jail.

What happened to Tommy Robinson was horrific, but not unusual; it was not an aberration of a normally humane British government. His case is the norm in liberal Britain. This is what Britons and all the European people must come to terms with. The liberals are devoid of all humanity. They have only one desire, they must destroy all white resistance to their totalitarian regimes. They will not be deterred by votes, petitions, protest marches, or public appeals to their humanity. They have no humanity. The European people cannot comprehend that the liberals want their blood, because they have not thrown off the mind-forged shackles of liberalism. The whites who are appalled by the cruel treatment of Tommy Robinson and others like him are classical liberals. They believe in rationality, equality under the law, and the democratic process. Some of those classical liberals, such as Tucker Carlson, are very courageous in their outspoken defense of classic liberalism. But classical liberals, who are now called conservatives, do not understand the liberal dynamic. It is a continually evolving ideology. Evolving toward what? The liberals claim they are moving toward heaven on earth, but it is quite apparent, from a Christian perspective, that the liberals are heading for the deepest pit of hell. Will they be satisfied when they get there? Of course not, but they will have reached their final destination.

The question that every white man should ask himself is, “Do I want to follow the liberals’ democratic process all the way to hell or do I want to fight back?” Currently the European people have steadfastly refused to step away from liberalism. No matter what the mad-dog liberals do, the conservatives respond with, “We must have faith in the democratic process, we must keep up the pressure on our elected officials, and slowly but surely we will win out.” When has faith in the democratic process ever resulted in anything good for white people?

In the democratic era of our history we have seen total war, the war “to make the world safe for democracy,” and now, under the mantle of the democratic ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity, we are witnessing the extermination of the white race. What has been the conservatives’ response to the attack on the white race? They tell us that we need more democracy! Instead of rejecting the devil and all his works, the conservatives bid us seek redemption from the devil. In the book of *Revelations*, Christ warns us, through St. John, that faith in Him cannot be blended with paganism, Judaism, or any other -ism. He, and He alone, is the beginning and the end. The blending of Christianity and democracy produces leaders such as Angela Merkel and Pope Francis the blasphemer, who are determined to attack God by destroying His image in man. When those two monsters of immorality meet to discuss “the problem of populism,” they are meeting to discuss how they can kill the last remaining remnants of white pietas, which is our only link to the living God.

The devil wins when we accept his either/or: “Either you must be a mad-dog liberal or a classical liberal.” That is no choice at all, because either way we will be in the clutches of the devil. The classical liberals are quite different from true conservatives such as Edmund Burke and Anthony Jacob. Burke and Jacob wanted to conserve a particular people and their particular faith in a personal God. Burke and Jacob hated universals such as “the people” because they realized that such abstractions were used to destroy their own kith and kin in the name of an aggregate herd called “the people.” But the conservatives of the 20<sup>th</sup> century were quite willing to give up on their kith and kin and transfer their allegiance to a universal idea of mankind. They did this because they were and are Gnostics. All of life is an abstraction to the classical liberals. So long as you support the idea of Christianity, the idea of the family, and the idea of humanity, you will be on the right track. But a disembodied idea is nothing at all. It is mere air. The modern conservative thinks that once you vote or protest against an atrocity of the mad-dog liberals you have done your Gnostic duty. But it is not abstract ideas that are being tortured, raped, and murdered, it is individual white people, people who used to be called, in the non-Gnostic age of Europe, the conservatives’ kith and kin. There is something terribly wrong when we respond to the horrors inflicted on our people with democratic rationality. Men who love their own in Him and through Him do not — I repeat — they do not respond to the rape, torture, and murder of their people with a Thomistic-Buddhist pacifism. They become Goths.

Mad-dog liberals such as Angela Merkel and the German councilwoman openly tell their own people they will be replaced by colored heathens. They taunt white people, fully confident that white people will not act against them in retaliation. Some whites might protest Gnostically, through marches or petitions, but Gnostic protests can be dealt with quite easily. Would Angela Merkel or any of the mad-dog liberals throughout the West ever tell any non-white race of people they were planning to exterminate them? Of course not, they would be in fear of

their lives. But white people have been carefully trained to consent to their own extermination. Why must they consent? That is the given, it is supposed to be self-evident: "We hold this truth to be self-evident, that all whites are evil — except those liberals who have transcended whiteness — and must be eradicated from the face of the earth."

The neo-pagans who blame Christianity for the decline of the white race are correct. But they are wrong when they fail to distinguish faith in Christ from the intellectual system called Christianity. The apostles' hearts did not burn within them on the road to Emmaus because they encountered a Jewish Socrates who unfolded to them a philosophical system. Their hearts burned within them because they had encountered the living God. Our people, as a people, also encountered our Lord on the European road to Emmaus. We became one with the apostles, St. Paul, and Him.

The classical liberals want to Socratize Christ: "He left us a good system." But Christianity as a philosophy is no defense against mad-dog liberalism. The mad-dog liberals hate Christ and the white race. How can a tepid belief in rationality and fair play counter the demonic fury of the liberals? It can't. The moderate philosophical Christianity of the classical liberals ultimately becomes the enabling system that keeps mad-dog liberalism alive and well, because it encourages white people to stay within the confines of liberalism. They are told *ad nauseum* that good, polite Europeans submit to the rule of law, even though their leaders have told them they are going to be lawfully exterminated. And they are told *ad nauseum* by their church men that Christianity and democracy are one and the same. Where does that leave white people? It leaves them in the lions' den. But instead of placing their faith in the living God to keep them safe, the modern Europeans look to the liberals who threw them into the lions' den, to somehow, if they petition, vote, march, and plead, let them out of the lions' den.

There are no white people left alive who have not grown up under the shadow of liberalism. Some of the oldest have known a few decades of classical liberalism, but every single white person alive today has been brought up to honor and respect the liberal faith. In church that means all whites must accept the blending of Christianity with the heathen faiths. Christ is not, we are told, the beginning and the end. He is the God who must give way to the heathen gods of color who are greater than Him. And in society adherence to the liberal faith means that the white race must give way to the black race, because the white race is evil. All revolutions succeed when the powers that be doubt their right to rule. The people who had seen a great light, the people who walked on water because they believed in the Son of God, lost their faith in Him and fled to the heathen gods of color and to rational, science-based systems for comfort. Now the liberals rule. The Europeans will come to their own again when they believe in their ancestral God, the God who enters human hearts, more than the liberals believe in their satanic faith. It is truly horrific to see what is happening to white people in what used to be called Christendom. And it is doubly sad and horrific to see white people respond to the liberals' jihad with the Gnostic verbiage of liberalism. The Christian Europeans, our honored dead, speak to us from across the great divide and bid us fight. "We can't fight," is the modern Europeans' response, "We can't fight, because there is a huge chasm between our Europe and your Europe." But then we hear our Savior's voice: "The things which are impossible with men are possible with God." Men who believe as the ancient European people believed do not permit their nations to become white slaughterhouses. Something within them, something called "that charity of honor" makes them rebel against the rule of the liberals. Until that something within becomes a burning passion in the hearts of the European people, the Tommy Robinsons, the Jonathan Fosters, and the entire white race will be offered up on the sacrificial alters of the liberals. The democratic process is, in all its essentials, the liberals' satanic religious rite. We must break away from that covenant with Satan and renew our covenant with the Son of God. +

# Who Follows in Their Train?

August 18, 2018

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Restoration of European civilization

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Herman Melville, Robert Louis Stevenson



Home I return across the sea,  
And go to bed with backward looks  
At my dear land of story-books.

-Robert Louis Stevenson

---

The late John Tyndall of Britain and the late Samuel Francis of the American South were two of the last pundits with some kind of official status, the one the founder of a political party, and the other a journalist for a Washington-based paper, who defended white people's right to maintain their own culture separate and distinct from the people of color. That doesn't seem like too much to ask for, but it was too much for the liberals. Tyndall was jailed for an offhand remark about Moslems and Samuel Francis was fired from his job at the *Washington Times* for writing that there was no evidence the white man's culture could be maintained by the blacks. Tyndall and Francis were condemned and punished even though they were always democratic – they never advocated fighting liberalism outside the parameters of democracy. But should white people start looking outside the parameters of democracy? Of course they should, but at present they won't.

There is a tragic flaw in the democratic populism of Tyndall and Francis. Let me state it bluntly: Both Tyndall and Francis treated the issue of the empty tomb as a side issue, when in fact it is the main issue. When Dostoyevsky said that the whole issue facing the European was, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" he was placing the European peoples' dilemma squarely before our eyes. People act according to their religious vision. The liberals believe in the unholy trinity of the abstracted intellect, the negro, and science. The blacks believe in the power and might of black barbarism, the Moslems believe in Allah, and on it goes through the entire pantheon of heathen gods and their colored devotees.

What all the colored races have in common is that their religious faith determines their actions. And since every heathen faith is opposed to the Christian faith, every colored heathen hates the white man. The liberals' post-Christian heathenism is in one accord with the colored heathens' faith on that one central issue – the hatred of the white Christ-bearing race. Even when a white man wins an election in that milieu (the Trump victory is cited as a victory for Samuel Francis-populism), the victory is quickly turned into a defeat, because it is only a delaying action and does not significantly alter the ongoing liberal attack on the white race.

Whites cannot go up against liberals and colored heathens, who have a religion, without a religion beyond some vague belief in democracy and the rule of law. Democracy is an anti-Christian heresy, and the rule of law is liberal law, which is codified hatred of the white race and the Christian God. The liberals' reign has never been opposed by the European people, because the European people no longer take their strength and inspiration from the Europeans who firmly believed that Christ rose from the dead.

In my freshman year in college, I repeatedly sought out a teacher who shared my interest in English literature. The teacher's particular favorite author was Herman Melville, who, as even a casual reader of Melville can grasp, was obsessed with the Dostoyevsky issue, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" Since that was my obsession as well as Melville's obsession, and since my teacher was a great devotee of Melville, I thought that he would share my obsession. He did not. He was completely indifferent to something that was mine and Melville's primary concern. How can you be a Melville scholar and be indifferent to Billy Budd's question, "Sentry, are you there?" and Clarel's quest:

*Then keep thy heart, though yet but ill-resigned—  
Clarel, thy heart, the issues there but mind:  
That like the crocus budding through the snow—  
That like a swimmer rising from the deep—  
That like a burning secret which doth go  
Even from the bosom that would hoard and keep;  
Emerge thou mayst from the last whelming sea,  
And prove that death but routs life into victory.*

And how can you be a white populist and treat the antique Europeans' belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead as a 'side issue'?

Granted, that quarrels between Christian denominations have caused wars, granted, that Christians fought Christians during the Christian era of Europe, which has led many theologians to deny that there ever was a Christian Europe, but total war came in the post-Christian era of the Europeans' history. Before that, when Christians fought Christians, there were some limits placed on the ravages of war. The better men on both sides had some feeling for their foe, who was, despite their differences in political alliances, their brother. When his Indian allies violated the terms of the surrender and massacred British prisoners during the French and Indian Wars, the French general told the British commander that he would have sooner lost the battle than have been responsible, through his Indian allies, for that breach of honor. It's easy to sneer at such contradictions – trying to kill your enemy on the battlefield and then showing mercy when they have surrendered – but such contradictions bore witness to a people who were still trying to respond to the Light. Now the struggle is over. There is no honor, no chivalry, there is only an ignoble surrender to death-in-life liberalism. We are no longer involved in wars, we are engaged in a surrender that is worse than a war. The European people have declared themselves a non-people who can only exist through the life-blood of the colored heathens: "You live to serve the colored heathens, serve them well, and you shall live," is the dictate of the liberal tribunal.

It is good to kneel in prayer to the living God, but it is a terrible thing, a blasphemy, to kneel before the liberals and their colored gods. Is this the promised end for the white man? Must he live a monk-like existence in prayer and penance for the sin of whiteness? "Through my fault, through my fault, through my most grievous fault, I have sinned against the colored races.

Mea culpa, mea culpa, mea maxima culpa." Mere populism is an insufficient response to liberalism, because it doesn't fill the void in the white man's soul. In the absence of faith, a real faith as distinct from an intellectual faith, the white Everyman will always be defeated by the liberals, who do have faith. They believe in the unholy trinity.

When Christ tells Nicodemus that he must be born again in order to obtain eternal life, Nicodemus is confused:

*Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?*

We, the European people, must be born again. We must return to our European childhood in much the same way that Nicodemus returned to his childhood of prophecies and miracles and as Robert Louis Stevenson returned to his childhood in his *A Child's Garden of Verses*. Stevenson knew that he was falling victim to the spiritual ennui that comes upon a man who has lost faith in the God who bids us believe "like unto a little child." He restored his faith by reconnecting with his European hearth fire.

It is not an easy thing to do, to believe as a little child, but it is the only way for the European people to regain their souls. We are not like the other races. We cannot believe in our race if we don't believe that our race and our faith are one. If we are not the Christ-bearing race, what are we? We can't be like unto the colored heathens, because we are white. We can be post-Christian liberals who worship Satan in and through the colored races, we can be un-men who graze in the liberals' pastures while waiting for our turn to be slaughtered, or we can be Europeans again and live according to the Word that was made flesh. That really is what is at the heart of the cultural wars. The antique Europeans made the Son of God their touchstone of reality. What was perfect, what was good, came from Him. And what was wrong and what was evil was opposed to His word. We cannot make common cause with post-Christian liberals who believe that everything opposed to the faith of the antique Europeans is good and everything connected to our ancient faith is evil.

I frequently hear classical liberals expressing their astonishment at the mad-dog liberals of the European nations. "Can't they see that massive immigration is killing their nations?" No, they do not see. They are religious zealots who see everything through the eyes of their faith. They believe in their triune god — the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science — that will deliver them from the unholy night of Christian Europe and usher them into a new and glorious world freed from the bonds of whiteness and Christianity. It all sounds quite fantastical, doesn't it? But that is what liberals believe and that is the faith they will fight to defend.

On the surface it seems like the new faith of liberalism that replaced Christianity started in the mid-1960s, but that is not the case. The 1960s marked the beginning of the final stage of the liberals' revolt against Christ and the Christ-bearing race. In the final stage, the liberals institutionalized the satanic values they had been preaching in the universities and the churches for the past 50 years. Now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, there are no traces left of old Europe and the people who saw a great Light. St. John tells us that Christ "came unto His own, and His own received Him not." What must have been Christ's reaction when the modern Europeans whose ancestors made Christ their own, rejected Him? His sorrow and pain is infinitely greater than ours, the rejected and despised Europeans, because His humanity is infinitely greater than ours.

When I went to college, every course in the humanities, no matter whether it was literature, religion, or history, always turned out to be a course about the evils of Western culture and the glories of the non-white cultures. In comparative religion courses, for instance, the heathen religions of the colored races were always presented as infinitely superior to European Christianity. This was the mind and soul dirtying of the white race that Anthony Jacob wrote about in *White Man, Think Again*. And it is an effective tactic. The response of the church men to the attack on European Christianity was to denounce European Christianity and blend Christianity with the natural religions of the colored heathens. Pope Francis the blasphemer's adulation of the people of the Amazon rain forest is the end result of the synthesis of Christianity and the nature religions of the pure and noble savages of color.

There is something satanically clever in the liberals' incorporation of the noble savage into their trinity. Satan, who hates humanity, knows that man needs human conduits to his gods. So he has induced the men of reason and science to bring the heathens of color into his unholy trinity as the saviors, who will act as conduits to Satan and his kingdom of everlasting night. The clear-thinking classical liberals, the conservatives, always lose in their contests with the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals have a human conduit to their god, who is Satan, while the conservatives have only reason and science. They have the father and the holy ghost, but they do not have the savior. I recently heard Tucker Carlson asking why liberals, who are supposed to believe in reason and science, do not see that Third World immigration is destroying the West. They do not see that reality because they have a different religious vision from Tucker Carlson. They believe in the noble savage. The colored races are their messiah. You can't counter that belief with abstract reason and science. You can only defeat that faith with a belief in the Christ of old Europe. The tragic flaw of the conservative populists is that they do not believe in the divinity of Christ so they cannot go into battle with the armor of Christ as their European ancestors did.

In my own case, the mind and soul dirtying tactics of the liberals did not work. The study of the heathen faiths filled me with disgust and gave me a greater appreciation for the faith of my European ancestors. I still do not understand, from within, the appeal of the noble savage and the religions of nature. I can only conclude that the spiritual ennui caused by reason and science has made the European people susceptible to any religion with blood in it, even if it is heathen blood.

But a man must go with his own vision. I must assert, against the mad-dog liberals, that there is no love, no honor, no charity, and no truth in their noble savage religion. And I must assert, against the classical liberals, that abstract reason is a whore and science is a poor substitute for the real Holy Ghost who proceeds from the Father and the Son. I refuse to believe that my people are irredeemable. If we, the white remnant, stand by the antique Europeans, others will follow in our train. +

# The Gift of Sight

August 25, 2018

Categories: Blood faith, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: St. John



Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth. – [John 9: 35-41](#)

---

The [liberal couple who went on a bike trip](#) through the Middle East to show us that “evil is a make-believe concept” were the product of one hundred years of liberal indoctrination. Their liberalism got them killed. That is sad, but not tragic. The real tragedy is when non-liberal whites are killed as a result of liberalism. At least the two bike-riding liberals got to die for their faith. But why should the non-liberal whites have to die for the liberals’ faith?

Andre Gide, the French novelist who championed decadence and nihilism, once said that he didn’t believe in the devil but that was precisely what the devil wanted, for him to deny his existence. The liberals of the Western world are in thrall to the devil, even though they do not believe in the devil. The devil manipulates them through the colored races. The liberals’ worship of the colored savages is devil worship. Just as the antique Europeans worshipped Christ in and through their people, so do the liberals worship Satan in and through the colored races. All things evil, such as rape and murder, can be sanctioned if they are done by the colored minions of Satan. It is virtually illegal now to arrest a black man in America or a Moslem in Europe, because they are the godded men, whom the liberals revere and worship.

Satan prefers to let the liberals worship him through the colored races, because if the liberals were to openly profess a belief in the biblical devil, they would be vulnerable to a belief in the devil’s biblical antagonist. But of course the liberals who reject a personal devil do believe that the white race is demonic. Always excepting their exalted selves, the liberals maintain that the evil white race must be purged so that the good, the colored races, can endure while the evil whites perish.

Unfortunately for the liberal bike riders, the Moslems and the other heathens of color do not always distinguish the good whites, the Atticus Finch whites who have gone beyond whiteness, from the run of the mill whites who are responsible for all the evils on earth. But even if some liberal bike riders die, the liberals will hold to their faith. They will trust in their gods to the end, because the colored heathens provide the liberals with an alternative faith, a faith that keeps the Son of God away from them. Liberals talk and write about love more than their non-liberal, European ancestors, but they have an incredible fear of the Divine Love that engenders all human love. Outside of His love there is no love. The liberals, despite their rhetoric, have created a world without love, because they have cut all ties to the God of love. “Nearer my God to me” has become, “Nearer the colored races to me.”

Shakespeare got to the heart of the matter when he told us that Christ was the grave where “buried love doth live.” The liberals do not believe that, so they have placed a ‘do not enter’ sign on the European hearth fire in an effort to dam up the channels of grace that lead us to the Divine Love. At the heart of the liberals’ worship of the colored heathen is a desire to avoid the crucifixion that accompanies all true love, because all those who truly love suffer with their loved ones in life and death. If our love of Christ brings only a crucifixion without the resurrection it is unbearable. “Let us put Christ in a nursing home and euthanize Him,” is the liberals’ demand. “He is no longer serviceable.” And His people must follow Him to that great liberal nursing home where they, because they once knew His name, must be euthanized as well.

We will always believe a lie when we use the liberals’ own terminology to combat liberalism. Liberals such as the two freeze-dried hippie bike riders murdered by Moslems do not have a death wish. They have a Utopian fantasy of the noble non-white savages and an egotistical desire to pontificate to the world about their heightened consciousness, which allows them to see beyond white pietas to a universalist vision of mankind. Their exalted intellects see the world as a Coke commercial. Such thinking is suicidal, but it does not spring from a death wish as defined by psychology. There is nothing in the realm of psychology that can explain liberalism. We need to turn to the Gospels if we are going to understand the evil of liberalism.

The Gospels as a whole tell us a remarkable, strange, and fantastical fairy tale. But it is a fairy tale that our people, when they were young at heart, believed in. Let me turn to a small segment of that marvelous fairy tale, which deals with a man’s blindness, the restoration of his sight, and his subsequent defense of Christ against the scribes and Pharisees. In *John 9*, Christ passed by and “saw a man which was blind from his birth.” His disciples ask Him whether the man was blind because of his own sins or the sins of his parents. Jesus replies,

*Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.*

Christ bids the blind man wash in the pool of Siloam, and he is cured of his blindness. He can see! That is the first great miracle. But there are two more miracles to come. The second miracle is that this man born blind, this Jewish Everyman – his modern equivalent would be a white grazer – has the courage to defend Christ against the scribes and Pharisees. The formerly blind man’s parents refuse to give a name to the man who restored their son’s sight:

*And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.*

Sound familiar? Our modern churchmen will not name the European Christ for fear that they will be called racist and be put out of the liberals’ synagogue.

Then the scribes and Pharisees try to browbeat and intimidate the man born blind. But he will not back down.

*Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.*

Then comes the third miracle, the greatest one of all. The man born blind believes in the fairy tale of the Son of God.

*Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.*

The European people when they were a Christian people were the blind man. Christ gave them sight. In the midst of darkness, He came into the world in order that the blind might see. And when our people saw the light, they responded to Him. They defended Him against the scribes and the Pharisees who claimed He was a blasphemer and a charlatan. They clung to the fairy tale throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe. Now, it is the scribes and Pharisees, the men of reason, science, and negro worship who have won out. Is there not one man left, a man crying in the wilderness, who will proclaim his belief in the Son of God, the crowned King of Old Europe?

Let us go back to the modern hippie on the bike. "Evil is a make-believe concept." Yes, the concept of evil, as defined by Western man, is contained in the fairy tale of Christ. It was the fairy tale that formed the white man's civilization. And the liberals' new anti-European fairy tale, in which the virtuous liberals fight the evil white racists in the name of their colored gods is presented to us as the true fairy tale, which we should cling to with all our heart, mind, and soul. Can we blend the two fairy tales as the moderate Christians urge us to do? They take a strong dose of negro worship, science, and reason, mix it with the Christ story, and presto-chango, you have... What do you have? You have nothing at all. Or can we create an entirely new fairy tale, a neo-pagan fairy tale that rejects European Christianity and modern liberalism?

Neither moderate Christianity nor neo-paganism is an option for the European. The moderate Christian, the classical liberal, will be absorbed by the mad-dog liberal because the mad-dog liberal has all the power of hell to aid him while the moderate Christian has only his own abstracted mind to aid him. Why doesn't he call on his God? Because rational, moderate Christians do not tilt at windmills and climb glass mountains, they form think tanks and dialogue with mad-dog liberals. That is the rational way to reconcile Christ and the devil.

The neo-pagans cannot be taken seriously because they do not take the white man's history seriously. You can't create a new religion for the white man that is neither Christian nor liberal. For almost two thousand years, white people lived and died in the name of Jesus Christ. You can hold fast to that belief, or you can create a hybrid religion in complete opposition to Christianity. But the hybrid religion will feed off the spiritual capital of Christianity. There will still be a savior, but he will be the Noble Savage; there will still be original sin, but it will be invested in the white race. Everything Christian will survive, but in a twisted and perverted form. The neo-pagan who tries to create something apart from the Europeans' Christian history will find himself overwhelmed by the mad-dog liberals and the moderate Christians, who always unite with the mad-dog liberals. The reason the neo-pagans are so fond of Hitler is because he tried to create a new option for the European people that was neither liberal nor Christian. His plight will be the same plight as any European who ignores the Europeans' Christian past.

Whether the liberal goes biking through the Mideast in order to prove that evil is a make-believe concept or whether he stays home and supports negro worship and the Moslem invasion of Europe, it all amounts to the same thing. The liberal has decided that the white Christian fairy tale is a lie, so he must flee from whiteness. Aided by his reason and his science, the liberal must find salvation in the people of color. Needless to say, he will not find salvation in the people of color. He will, in some instances, find physical death, as the hippie bikers did, but in every instance he will find spiritual death. There is no avoiding our destiny. We can't escape to Crete. Either the Christian European fairy tale is true or it is not. The liberals are acting according to their unbelief. They are fighting for their un-faith. We can't be moderate and rational in defense of The Faith. Was He moderate and rational when He bore our griefs and carried our sorrows?

I love the man born blind who defied the scribes and Pharisees of Jewry and then fell to his knees and worshipped Christ as the Son of God. The fairy tale is true – we must reject the scribes and Pharisees of Liberalism and kneel beside the man born blind. That is what it means to be a European. +

# For God So Loved the World

September 1, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Halfway-house churches, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson



“Wondrous was the cross of victory.” – *The Dream of the Rood*

---

Liberalism is from the devil. That is so obvious it seems rather unnecessary to say it, but we must say it over and over again for the simple reason that the modern Europeans do *not* see that liberalism is from the devil. They are morally blind, because they have rejected the light of the world in order to return to nature and nature’s gods.

Our faith is determined by what we see. When the Europeans saw with their hearts, as St. Paul enjoined them to do, the European people saw Christ clearly: He was their Lord and Savior. And they saw the devil clearly: he was Christ’s mortal enemy who prowled about the world, seeking the ruin of souls. When the cord is cut, when the love that once was there, at our racial hearth fire, is replaced by the intelligence that is out there, in nature, we become as tinkling cymbals and sounding brass, we become unmen in search of a God.

The modern Europeans do not see liberalism as the work of the devil, because they no longer see that our God, “our Jesus,” is more than nature. The devil no longer has to slink around and hide in the holes and corners of Christendom with the intent of ruining souls. Now he merely goes on inspection tours of his kingdom, because Satanism is the ruling ethos of the European nations. Satan has a little checklist that he takes with him on his tours.

“Are the abortion mills running at full speed?” he asks his junior devils.

“Yes,” the junior devils reply.

“How about the organized Christian churches – are they still blending negro worship, Judaism, and Islam with Christianity?”

The junior devils reply, “Yes, the nature religions have more than a foothold in the Christian churches, they dominate them. Your enemy, Jesus Christ, has become a non-entity, a mere figurehead who is called upon to bless nature and nature’s gods, the sacred negro being the primary god.”

“How about the schools?”

The junior devils reply, “Ah, that is our greatest triumph. The liberals, inspired by your satanic hatred of Jesus Christ, relentlessly pound home the same Christ-hating, white-hating message in preschool, elementary school, the secondary schools, the colleges, and the graduate schools.”

“I am pleased, but you must never forget that the attack on Jesus Christ must always be linked to an attack on the European people. If they, the Europeans, have a change of heart and return to old Europe, to His Europe, millions and millions of souls who belong to me will go to Him.”

“No worries, mate, we will always center our attack on the European people.”

Satan frowns. “Don’t address me as ‘mate’.”

“I’m sorry, your exalted and magnificent one.”

“That’s better. You are doing well, but let me stress that eternal vigilance is necessary. We cannot rest until Christendom becomes Satandom.”

“But Christendom is Satandom, your excellency. You have done it!”

“Truly?”

“Yes, Christendom is now Satandom – or Liberaldom — they both amount to the same thing.”

“Then we must not rest until we make heaven itself part of Satandom!”

“That, your exalted majesty, will be hard. We couldn’t break Him on the cross. He forgave those miserable humans in the midst of mortal pain.”

“Yes, but that is His weakness. He loves those miserable wretches. We will break Him through His love for them. Once they all turn from Him, rejecting His sacrifice on the cross, He will despair, and I will supplant Him.”

“Your cause is our cause, your Majesty.”

The unknown Saxon poet who wrote *The Dream of the Rood* saw the Cross of Christ as a “wondrous” sign of our salvation. He didn’t see the Cross as the unnatural, sick creation of a degenerate people. His faith was the faith of St. Paul; it was grounded in the vision of his heart. The great and tragic transformation from St. Paul’s faith and the great Saxon poet’s faith, both of which were centered on Jesus Christ, to a faith in Christianity as a nature-based philosophy has made the European people a soulless aggregate herd without a human identity. The

Pope Francises and the Angela Merkels try desperately to find their identity, their spiritual core, by worshipping the colored heathens. Such worship does give them something to live for, but can that kind of devotion ever result in anything but spiritual death? Of course it can't. But that is the end result of the revolt against the cross of Christ.

It is the utmost folly to think that the European people can survive as a people without destroying the breeding grounds of liberalism, the churches and the schools. In church and school the hatred of white people, past and present, is preached and taught with an unrelenting, singular, all-encompassing hatred. I recently saw an American literature anthology that is being used in some of our schools. There were 'true life' accounts of black slaves, supposedly written in the 19<sup>th</sup> century but obviously written in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, all sorts of poems by red Indians and radical feminists, and then a few selections from 'dead white males' in which the editor explained why the white male authors were evil. I think I would prefer a complete ban on white male authors, as the Brits do, rather than see them pilloried by liberal editors. But in either case the central point is the same – our people and our heritage are demonized at every educational level while we dutifully send our children, young and old, off to have their minds and souls dirtied with the stink of liberalism.

If the organized Christian churches were actually Christian, they would constitute a bulwark against liberalism. But this is not the case. The churches are one with the educational establishment. In many instances, certainly as regards the extermination of the white race, the liberal clergy have exceeded the secular liberals. They want to avoid accusations of racism, so they zealously support the liberals with a devotion that leaves them, they hope, above reproach. When the secular liberals, such as Theresa May and Angela Merkel, support the confiscation of the land of the white farmers in South Africa, the church men shout even louder for confiscation. When the secular liberals demand an end to the white race, the church men demand that end at a faster rate. The Academy, in all its tentacles, and organized, Christian Jewry are one; they have set up a vast network of unmen who continually attack the European Christ and His people.

The reasonable, moderate Christians always roll their eyes and change the subject when you use terms such as Satandom to describe modern Europe. They do not want to acknowledge the fact that liberalism is from the devil, because they are in love with the superficiality of dialogue and democracy. If they keep things superficial, if they maintain that liberals are reasonable people that you can work with, without recourse to extreme measures, they can continue to hold elections and talk endlessly about getting the right candidate into office. How can any candidate for any office make a dent in liberalism if he is not permitted to eradicate the breeding grounds of liberalism? There I go again – asserting that liberalism is from the devil, but is it not from the devil? Is Angela Merkel open to pity for the German people whom she has gleefully turned over to Moslem rapists and murderers? Does Theresa May feel remorse for her support of the land-grab and murder of white South African farmers? Does Pope Francis feel any guilt over his relentless campaign against the white race and his blasphemous attacks on Jesus Christ? We are dealing with the devil when we deal with liberals, and we must deal with them as Alfred dealt with the heathen Danes. We must defeat them. And then, if they are truly repentant, we can extend mercy. But we can't dialogue with them while they are at the head of a demonic horde of colored heathens who feed on the blood of white people.

Whenever classical liberals such as Paul Joseph Watson or Alex Jones are taken off the air by the mad-dog liberals, there is always a cry of 'unfair!' amongst the classical liberals. Of course it is unfair. The liberals say they are for free speech and then they suppress free speech. But free speech, democracy, liberty, equality, and all the other 'god' words that the liberals use are mere verbal subterfuges. The liberals have only one rule. They must prevail, because they are the godded men and women who rule in the name of their colored gods. White racists must be eliminated. Anything that aids that cause is not only permitted, it is laudatory. Such is the liberals' creed, a satanic creed that can only be defeated by men who have embraced the cross of Christ and are determined to fight the devil and all his works without recourse to democracy, dialogue, and compromise.

Let me refer to a short story, or, more accurately, a short parable written by Robert Louis Stevenson. In the parable there is a scholar, a priest, and a Germanic everyman. The parable is set in pre-Christian times when Odin was god and king. The scholar proves to the priest that Odin is not god, and the priest decides he will find another god. Then the priest and the scholar ask the Germanic everyman what he thinks of their intellectual findings about Odin. The German replies, "I must go and die with him."

Our commitment to our people and our God cannot be conditional, depending on what new theory our educational establishments and our clerical organizations come up with. There is one God, and there is only one people who took that God into the heart of their civilization. We can't become part of another civilization that is completely opposed to our people and our God. The little brown church in the vale and the country school house might have been good things once when the *Dream of the Rood* was preached in the churches and all things taught in the schools pointed to that dream. But now that the little brown church in the vale and the little country school house have become the breeding grounds for Satanism, we must destroy those breeding grounds and return to the hinterlands of Europe where we can regroup and come back against the liberals as Christian Europeans instead of weak, vacillating unmen who are neither Christian nor pagan.

It's quite easy to go through European history and find nothing but evil. After all, the European people were all sons of Adam and daughters of Eve; they were not without sin. But the antique Europeans declared their belief in "the best of dreams," the dream of "a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light." That light was our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. What is the liberals' dream? They dream of a glorious breed of man-gods who are without sin, who will destroy the evil whites while allowing them, the whites who have transcended whiteness, to share their kingdom of heaven on earth. Needless to say, the liberals' kingdom of heaven on earth is hell on earth. We see their new kingdom of hell all round us. If we love the European people and the Christ of old Europe enough to oppose the liberals with our whole heart, mind, and soul, He will not forsake us in the day of battle. He will vouchsafe us a dream of the Rood that will sustain us till the ending of the world.

It is certainly not a discernable scientific fact that Christ will be with us in the day of battle against the liberals. Our belief that He will be with us comes from a very unscientific organ of sight, the human heart. "We are such stuff as dreams are made on," is only a depressing thought if we equate all dreams as emanating from nothingness, from unreality. But if we view the dream as the reality, the dream of Christ crucified, Christ risen, we will see that it is Satan who rules Liberaldom, and we will know that Christ will not abandon us in our battle against Satan and his liberal minions. But we must fight liberalism in His name, not in the name of democracy, philosophy, or racial equality. +

# Our Hope and Our Faith

September 8, 2018

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Halfway-house churches, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, George Fitzhugh



I call a commonwealth Regicide, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers, and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles; and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it—this I call Regicide by establishment. —Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. —[John 13:1](#)

---

Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all. But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews? Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber. —[John 19:38-40](#)

---

No French king, not even Louis the XIV, was as bloodthirsty or tyrannical as Robespierre. No Russian Czar was anywhere near as bloodthirsty and tyrannical as Lenin and Stalin. No British monarch ever taxed the American people like the native-grown democratic government taxed them. No war in the non-democratic age of Europe was ever as bloody and terrible as the American Civil War and World Wars I and II. And no white South African president ever called for the liquidation of the blacks of South Africa, nor did the white South Africans allow blacks to slaughter other blacks as well as whites. But the liberals of the West wanted democracy in South Africa. Then, and only then, did we witness bloody barbarism on an epic scale. Democracy is Satan's form of government. Through that system of government he has imposed his will on the European people. What is Satan's will? His will is that the European people shall be eradicated from the face of the earth. And his will shall prevail unless the white grazers have a crisis of faith and cease to believe in democracy.

All evils under the sun have been and still are sanctioned under the guise of democracy. To put it simply – democracy means the majority can tyrannize over the minority. In reality, under our modern system of elections, a majority of a tiny segment of voters end up tyrannizing over the majority of non-voters. But even if everyone voted, the immorality of democracy would remain – the majority decide what is right, and they inflict their decision on the minority. And when the majority is liberal — and that is the reality in the Western European nations — or when the majority are black, as in South Africa, the ruling majority imposes a satanic rule on the minority. Prior to their approval of the 1992 referendum ending apartheid, the South African whites had the last European government, in that it was not democratic, on the face of the earth.

Why is democracy coupled with Christianity when there has never been a Christian democracy? Democracy gives a quasi-divinity to the rule of Satan, which renders white grazers, who have been stripped of their Christian faith, morally anesthetized, completely incapable of resisting any edict stemming from a democratically elected government. The democratically elected government of South Africa announces that it is going to confiscate the land and – let's state the obvious – kill the white South Africans. And no one in the West objects. In fact, Theresa May says it is fine so long as it is done lawfully. What does she mean by lawfully? She means democratically, which translates to "We must do what Satan wills." No, we must not do what Satan wills, we must do what Christ wills. And Christ does not will that we should cede the world to Satan even if Satan wins every election in the world. Fitzhugh warns us that a government is only beneficial when the government body is conservative. (1) When liberals and/or negroes govern, white Christians should rebel, because the government is not conserving that which is essential to conserve — the white, Christ-bearing race. Leaders such as Angela Merkel and that German councilwoman who openly countenance the Islamification of white Germany would not be tolerated for one second if the German people, like all of the European people, were not under the thrall of democracy. "Fit to govern? Not fit to live!" should be the white Christian's response to liberal leaders such as Merkel and May.

I often hear that we should look to Russia or to Hungary as exemplars of democracies that work. No, no, a thousand times, no! What is good in modern Russia and modern Hungary is that their leaders are still mindful of their nations' non-democratic Christian past. When Putin opposes homosexual marriage and agrees to take in white South African farmers, he is doing what Nicholas II would have done. He is acting like a non-democratic Christian leader. When Orbán resists the Islamization of Hungary, he too is acting like a Christian ruler from old Hungary. But if the Russians and the Hungarians continue on the democratic road they too will end up in the slough of despair, which is where all who follow the democratic way end up.

We must never forget that the Jews ("Give us Barabbas!") democratically voted to crucify Christ. Nothing has changed since that exercise in democracy. Whenever democracy is the ruling faith, the Christ-bearing people are crucified, and Christ, who suffers with His people, is crucified anew. In Jacobin France, communist Russia, democratic Europe, and the democratic United States, it was the implementation of democratic principles that led to the dethronement of Christ and the destruction of the European people. Once you institute 'one man, one vote,' you have given Satan the power to govern, because the colored heathens, who outnumber the whites, will always support that which is anti-Christian and anti-white. This is why the liberals in the European nations will never place any restrictions on colored immigration. They shall not rest till there are no whites, except themselves, left in the formerly white nations. They too will perish as the colored heathens do not love the liberals as the liberals think they do, but before the liberal de Klerks perish, the white grazers will already have been led to the slaughter by their democratic leaders.

Democracy is always ushered in with the cry of liberty, equality, and fraternity, but what democracy brings is tyranny. None of the ties that bind us to humanity, and through our humanity to the humane God, can survive when they are democratized. Our family ties cannot be democratized and still survive, nor can we permit our white Christian culture to be democratized out of existence because the colored heathens and the liberals have no use for it.

And that is the crux of the whole matter. Are we going to consent to the murder of the European people and the destruction of every last vestige of Christian Europe because the liberals have decided to destroy them "lawfully" and democratically? Democracy as practiced by the demon whites of modern Europe has its roots in Christian theology. First the Roman Catholic theologians and then the Protestant theologians felt it was easier to advance the cause of Christ if He, our Lord and Savior, was placed in a closed box that men could only obtain access to

through a complicated system. The system became the important thing while Christ faded away. The systematizing of God in the churches led to the systematizing of man in society, through the democratic process. At the time of the French Revolution, the French clergy did not care if their charges were atheists so long as they didn't become Protestants. That lack of concern for what is inside of a man, so long as he adheres to the rules of the system, always leads to the dissolution of real faith and leaves a man open to treasons, stratagems, and spoils.

Some years back when John Paul II was spewing out blasphemies from the Papal throne, I received a letter from a Catholic apologist who was trying to win Roman Catholics who had converted to Protestant fundamentalism back to the fold. Wouldn't I help him win those fundamentalists back to the true faith? I sent a letter to the zealous apologist stating that what I wanted to see were more Christians in the world, and it seemed to me that the converts to fundamentalism had more of the real Christianity in them than John Paul II or any of my fellow Roman Catholics. Needless to say I never heard back from that gentleman. I do not want to enter into partisan religious controversies here. The point is that our Lord sent us a Comforter, the Holy Ghost, and St. Paul enjoined us to circumcise our hearts so that we could come to know the Savior. Why then do Christians cling to their systems about God rather than the living God who enters human hearts?

Secular democracy is a logical consequence of intellectual Christianity which gives us a system instead of Christ the Lord. I can only conclude that it is the cross of Christ that has made systems, religious and secular, more appealing to the European people than the Christ-centered faith of St. Paul and the antique Europeans, because the systems promise us Christianity without the cross. But the systems in the church have failed, and the democratic governments have failed. Isn't it time to look back to old Europe and see what they saw when they accepted their cross and loved Christ in and through their kith and kin?

Twentieth century conservatives were not conservative, because they did not want to conserve the European people and their ancient faith. They wanted to conserve the democratic system which is the other side of the Marxist coin. Hegel saw the thesis and the anti-thesis going on forever, but Marx put an amen to that process. Once 'the people' came into their own, history was at an end. You can't oppose a government of the people, because 'the people' are the government; they are the end of the thesis and anti-thesis process. That is the Jacobin, Marxist, democratic system. By the late 20<sup>th</sup> century and through the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the liberals have clung to that view of 'the people,' with one significant change. Now 'the people' are the colored races only; whites cannot be 'the people.' That ideology has turned the liberals into mystics. They are currently, en masse, involved in a Gnostic leap of faith. They believe that they can transfer their minds into the bodies of the colored heathens and live their lives through the colored races. If you look at the passion with which the liberals involve themselves with the non-white races, particularly the black race, you can see the Gnostic transformation at work. The white grazer does not believe in the Gnostic transformation with the passion of the mad dog liberal, but he does believe in democracy, which the liberals invoke whenever the grazer starts to question the negro-worshipping premises of liberalism. Which brings us back to the question that will determine the destiny of the white race. Will the European people ever have a crisis of faith, will they ever cease to believe in democracy?

It doesn't appear that the European people will forsake democracy. The church organizations, which are hostile to Christ and the European people, keep telling the European people that democracy and Christianity are one. (When John Paul II went to South America back when Pinochet ruled in Chile, he visited all the left-leaning democracies but refused to visit Pinochet's non-democratic, Christian dictatorship.) Possibly when the Western democracies can no longer deliver the material goods, the white grazers will lose faith in the democratic system. But I do not put much store in movements that stem from mere materialism. Without a spiritual impetus such revolts become mere anarchy, everyman's hand against everyman. The European people must look at the fruits of democracy – abortion, homosexual marriage, and negro worship – all bound together by a merciless cruelty, and then they must have an internal conversion to the Light of the World. Is that likely? No, it is not. I certainly don't see any signs that the Europeans are going to break their democratic chains. But we are not going to be vouchsafed a material sign. Christ still seeks to enter human hearts, He is the sign that a European clings to in the democratic era, which is the satanic era of the European people's history. Satan's era shall not be the last era — that is our hope and our faith. Our Lord speaks to us still even in the darkness of the 21<sup>st</sup> century: "These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation; but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." +

---

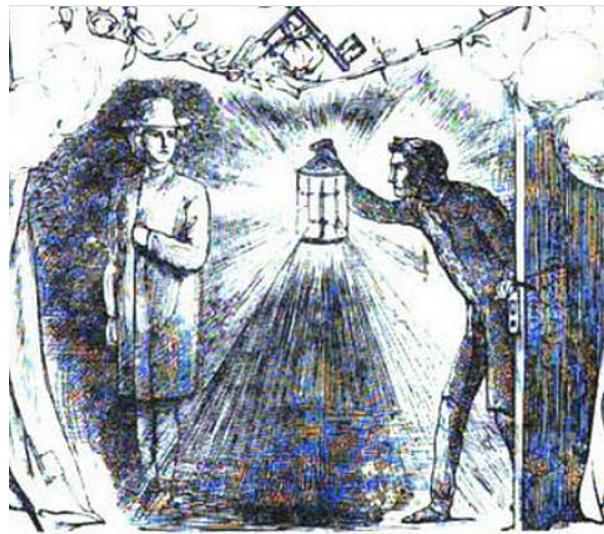
(1) All government proceeds *ab extra*. Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by the necessity of keeping its negroes in order, which preserves a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the governing class would cease to be conservative. –George Fitzhugh, [Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters](#)

# The Forgotten and Condemned Europeans

September 15, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Third Dumb Brother

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Charles Dickens, Richard A. Proctor



Jasper was to have been tracked remorselessly to his death by the man whom he supposed he had slain. Risen from his grave, Dorothea was to have driven Jasper to his tomb, there to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt: but to find there instead, alive and implacable, the man whom he had doomed to a sudden and terrible death, and in whose dust he had come to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt.

—Richard A. Proctor, [Watched by the Dead: A Loving Study of Dickens Half-Told Tale](#)

---

Let me begin with C. S. Lewis's description of the effects that the preaching of a false Christianity has on the belief in the one true God:

*Tirian had never dreamed that one of the results of an Ape's setting up a false Aslan would be to stop people from believing in the real one. He had felt quite sure that the Dwarfs would rally to his side the moment he showed them how they had been deceived. And then next night he would have led them to Stable Hill and shown Puzzle to all the creatures and everyone would have turned against the Ape and, perhaps after a scuffle with the Calormenes, the whole thing would have been over. But now, it seemed, he could count on nothing. How many other Narnians might turn the same way as the Dwarfs?*

The organized Christian churches set before us a process which was called Christianity, but that process was put in motion by a demonic intellect far greater than the theologians. In the Roman Catholic Church, the Christian Everyman was told he could only obtain access to God through a complicated system of checkpoints and interrogations. At each checkpoint, the religious devotee is examined to determine if he has truly emptied his heart of all passions so that his brain is ready to receive the faith from the men of reason. But what if the living God does not choose to enter human minds? What if He chooses to come to mankind through the human heart? The laity yearn for intimacy with Christ; that is why there are litanies to His Sacred Heart. But the laity also have an intense fear of intimacy with the living God, which is why they permit the clergy to rationalize the mystery of His Sacred Heart. "We give you a rationalized Christ and you check your passions for intimacy with the living God, and for intimacy with your kith and kin at the door of the church."

The Protestant theologians repeated the Roman Catholic theologians' process. They made the Bible a mere rubber stamp for their theology, rather than the living testimony of the Son of God. In point of fact, the Protestant churches that were founded on "Biblical principles" have united to deny that the Word became enfleshed in the hearts of men. For what is the denial of the European hearth fire but a denial that His word can be made flesh?

The race war is a war of faith. The church men claim they have abandoned the Christ of the European hearth fire in order to give us a new and better Christ, a Christ shorn of the racist trappings of old Europe. But is there a better Christ than Rembrandt's Christ? Did the European people get it right? Was Christ, the Son of the living God, at the heart of their culture? If He was, then it is to that church, which consists of hearts united to His heart through their kith and kin, we must look to for salvation.

I made a determination in my early twenties that I lived in Satandom. When you make such a determination early in life, the economic problem always looms large. In order to make a living, you must go among them. How do you make a living without becoming "of them"? God will judge how well I managed the balancing act, but even now, in my old age, I have to be careful that I do not go among them too often, lest I become of them. The problem is not with the hardcore or mad-dog liberals, whom I avoid, to coin an old phrase, like the plague. The problem I have, in maintaining my guard against the powers of hell, is with the European enablers of the mad-dog liberals: the neo-pagans and the Judaized Christians of organized Christianity. The people in those camps retain some of the old Christian European virtues but mix those virtues with something hideously liberal. I am drawn to the old virtues and revolted by the liberalism.

Let's start with the neo-pagans. No man is an island; we all need communion with our fellow men. But if it is not communion, if we are not one at heart, is it not better to remain alone? I recently viewed a video by someone who brilliantly dissected the insane white-hating policies of the mad-dog liberals and exposed those policies as the policies of sick, demented individuals. My heart soared — here was a kindred spirit. But then the speaker concluded with an apologia for the blood faith of the pagan Europeans. "Oh, what a falling off was here." I try to be understanding — "Isn't this the effects of the constant blasphemous preaching of organized Christian Jewry? Haven't they given us an image of the false Aslan?" Yes, they have, but still, hasn't He planted a desire for truth, a desire to know the living God, in our hearts? The sheer moral beauty of old Europe and her people has been buried by the modern Europeans, but isn't it still there for the noble souls who seek that beauty? It is a fatal blindness, the blindness of intellectual pride, which keeps the neo-pagan from embracing the antique Europeans and their God. One thinks of St. Paul's statement about the Athenian philosophers, "To the Greeks foolishness." When your disgust with the mad-dog liberals stems from your disgust with their thought processes and not their rejection of Christ, you are only in love with your own mind, not your own people. Such a love will not conquer the mad-dog liberals.

The 'Christians' of organized Jewry are the other side of the neo-pagan/Christian Jewry coin. The neo-pagans see the European fairy tale as foolishness while the Christian-Jews see the European fairy tale as a stumbling block. They don't believe that the European Christ, the Christ of the Gospels and St. Paul, was the Son of the living God; that Christ was racist, Islamophobic, sexist, and an anti-Semite. So they give us a new Christ, a Christ who can be blended with liberalism. Such Christians might break with the mad-dog liberals on the subject of Islam, but they will stay in the fold because of negro worship. They do not believe the Word was made flesh in old Europe. But if He wasn't made flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, then is it really possible to know Him? If their testimony is wrong, then who is right? Is it to church councils and Bible experts we should look or is it to the people who loved much?

What unites the neo-pagan and the Christian-Jew? They are united in their rejection of the human heart as an organ of sight. They both cling to their intellects as protection against Lear's wheel of fire. But our reason will not save us from the wheel of fire. In fact it is our reason, divorced from our heart, that will place us on the wheel of fire. Our Lord enjoined us to enter into the romance of the Cross, forsaking the philosophical systems of the Greeks and the theological systems of the Jews. "So be it," said the antique Europeans. "We will follow the poetic of the Star of Bethlehem even if that star leads us to the Cross." How can we refuse to see the moral beauty of those people and their God?

The devil has drawn the neo-pagans and the Christian-Jews into his world in order to envelop them in his reptilian coils of abstract reason, which is what he excels at. And they, the neo-pagans and the Christian-Jews, are not great reasoners even though they consider themselves to be godlike in their reason. Their world is a world we dare not enter, lest we be enveloped in Satan's coils. Is this the promised end?

There is one, and only one, option for the European people. They must reject Satan's world, the world of science and the dialectic, and return to Christ's Europe, the Europe of Walter Scott, Handel, Rembrandt, and the people who loved much. But they can't return without a human conduit; someone from old Europe must draw them back. I call upon the remnant band to enter Satan's world, not in the spirit of compromise, not with the intention of dialoging with the devil and his minions, but sword in hand, determined to conquer in the name of the Christ of old Europe. But you must believe in that Christ and His world before you enter therein. If you waver in your faith, you will be devoured by the devil.

In 1887 Richard A. Proctor wrote a book called [\*Watched by the Dead: A Loving Study of Dickens Half-Told Tale\*](#). It is indeed a loving study, the only type of study that should be written about authors who gave us their heart's blood. In the book, Proctor tells us how he thinks Dickens intended to finish his unfinished novel, *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*. I agree with Proctor's vision of the completed novel, but that is not what I want to focus on. I want to pick up on a point Proctor makes about Dickens. He points out that in most of Dickens' novels there is a character, seemingly dead, as is the case in *Edwin Drood* and in *Our Mutual Friend*, who is not really dead; or there is a character, such as Wilkins Micawber in *David Copperfield*, seemingly on the periphery of society and of no consequence. But before these novels end, the seemingly dead characters and/or the seemingly inconsequential characters step out of the shadows and defeat the evil antagonists. Proctor is mainly concerned about the novels of Dickens, but he also points out that the same process is in effect in the novels of Walter Scott. As a lifelong devotee of both authors, I can attest to the truth of Proctor's observation. I would add that the same thing he observes in the works of Scott and Dickens is present in Shakespeare's plays. Edgar, thought to be dead, turns the tables on his evil brother Edmund, and the inconsequential, simple-minded Dogberry defeats the evil machinations of Don John the bastard and his henchman, Borachio: "What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light..."

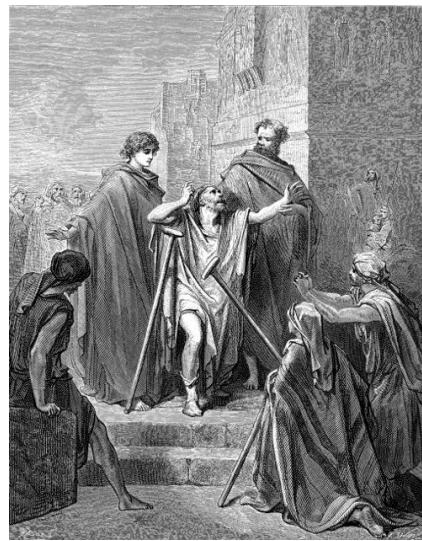
Now, let me go into territory where Proctor does not go. I think all great European poets – and Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens are three of the greatest – weave the Gospel of Christ into the fabric of their stories. They do not do this in a rational, planned, didactic manner, they do it because the Christ story has entered their hearts. When they write from the heart, His story comes alive before the eyes of our heart. So let me repeat, all great European poets depict Christ interacting with His people, the Europeans. Christ is the inconsequential character, thought to be dead, thought to be a simpleton, who enters human history and defeats the enemy of mankind, the archangel Satan. St. John tells us even before he knew the Scripture that Christ must rise again from the dead, that "he saw and believed." Why did he see and believe? Because he, the apostle whom Christ loved, laid his head on Christ's sacred heart at the last supper. And so did they, our people, lay their heads upon His Sacred Heart. They saw and believed, and so shall we, if we follow their way, and not the way of the prophets of reason, science, and Christian Jewry. We who are about to die demand a miracle. We cannot exorcise the demons of liberalism from Europe unless we go within. The liberals have a local habitation and a name. They inhabit modern Europe and their name is legion. We must look to our God, who also has a local habitation and a name. He lives in hearts of flesh and His name is Jesus. The European people will only survive as a people if they love Him in and through the forgotten and condemned white people of old Europe. +

# The Beautiful Gate

September 22, 2018

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Kenneth Grahame



Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. – [Acts 4: 25-26](#)

---

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. – Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

When I went to college in the early 1970s, which were culturally part of the late 1960s, the Dalai Lama was all the rage with the hippies and the leftists among the student body. I remember shocking a young female devotee of the Dalai Lama who was trying to get me to look at life from outside of Western culture, by taking the same stance vis-à-vis Western culture that Ratty took in regards to his River:

*'I beg your pardon,' said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. 'You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!'*

*'THE River,' corrected the Rat.*

*'And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!'*

*'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other.'*

-Kenneth Grahame, [Wind in the Willow](#)

It is indeed a sad and tragic commentary on the spiritual decline of the European people when the current [Dalai Lama](#), a purveyor of shallow Asian mysticism, is more conservative about the survival of the European people than any of the liberals or conservatives of European ancestry. That the European nations should be for the European people is now a heresy throughout the nations of Europe. How did we come to this pass? Why do white people think they have no right to exist as a distinct people?

Let's start at the end of the line and then go back to the beginning. The end of the line for white people was when the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives ran from the sound of the guns. The liberals, who are possessed by the devil, will always attack the white, Christ-bearing race. In every century prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century there were men from the upper ranks of the European nobility and the European intelligentsia – Burke, Havelock, Metternich, Lee, etc. – who defended the white race against the onslaught of liberals and colored heathens. But in the 20<sup>th</sup> century the conservatives' resistance to liberalism ceased. Men who are now called paleo-conservatives, such as Richard Weaver and Russell Kirk, were not conservatives; they took refuge in the idea of conservatism while denying the essence of European conservatism, which is pietas, the love of one's own kith and kin. The pre-repentant Jonah was the prototype for the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives. They hid on board ship, immersed in their universalist philosophies, while their people perished in the sea of liberalism. There were notable exceptions to the cowardice of the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives — Anthony Jacob stands above them all — but such exceptions were ignored by the respectable conservatives and demonized by the liberals. Charles Peguy once said that we shall never know just how many acts of cowardice were committed by men because they were afraid of not seeming sufficiently progressive. And what is the essence of progressiveness? It is the rejection of your own people in favor of the people of other races. If you won't defend your own people, because you are afraid of the racist label, you are not conservative, you are a traitor, who gives aid and comfort to the liberal enemy while trying to divorce yourself from the responsibility for your treachery by spouting universalist pap about "respecting our democratic traditions." To hell with our democratic traditions, they are the traditions of the devil. There is only one tradition I have any respect for, the tradition of my people who loved their own, in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

"Those are mighty harsh words for just a little infraction of the rules," Long John Silver tells Captain Smollet when he is told he must be tried for mutiny and murder. You could say the same thing about my polemic against the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives. But is the betrayal of your people to an implacable enemy devoid of mercy just a little infraction of the rules? Twentieth century conservatives allowed actual white people to be buried in the dust heap of history while they went merrily on their way defending a universalist ideal called "the people." A little infraction? It is a violation of that charity of honor which sets the Europeans apart from the colored heathens and the liberals.

Now that we have seen the end, let us go back to the beginning, to the Garden of Eden. Satan placed a wedge between God and His people by appealing to Adam and Eve's pride of intellect. He did not try to get them to deny God, instead he enticed them into denying pietas. They severed their filial relationship with God in order to place themselves in a position of intellectual equality with God. Hasn't that always been at the heart of the matter? When the great scholastic placed reason above revelation wasn't it done to place the human intellect on an equal basis with God? And hasn't that desire for intellectual equality with God always led to the elimination of the living God in favor of the nature gods that can be known by human reason? The noble savages of color have become the gods of the liberals, because those gods are compatible with human reason; they can be seen and touched. The European people have

returned to Baal because they cannot bear a God who isn't there for them. Science, an offshoot of human reason, is a god who is there. And the great god Science points lovingly to the heathen Gods of nature. "I see nothing, yet all that there is I see," proclaims Hamlet's spiritually anesthetized mother. That is the liberals' mantra as well. They see nothing in Christian Europe but racism; they do not see the living God, yet they proclaim that they see everything there is. The Christ story has become a ghost story to the modern Europeans. It is an entertaining story on certain festive days when you want to hear such stories, but it is not part of the fabric of their lives, it is not a sustaining force like science, nor is it as real and as inspiring as the stories about Martin Luther King Jr. and Nelson Mandela, the true gods of the modern Europeans.

The history of the European people is quite different from the history of the non-European peoples. The colored heathens have remained with their pagan gods. Granted there are some Christian converts within the heathen cultures, but those minority groups have not been able to derail the pagan fabric of their heathen nations. In contrast to the colored heathens stand the Europeans. They rejected paganism for Christ and changed the course of European history. Any attempt to change the Christian center of European culture would be disastrous for the European people, because you cannot change your gods without destroying your people. Of course that is what has happened. Liberalism is the Europeans' attempt to return to Baal. Their worship of the colored heathens is a tragic repudiation of 2,000 years of European history. By labeling white pietas undemocratic and racist, the liberals have successfully stopped all conservative opposition to liberalism. The European people now live in a liberal theocracy where the worship of the colored heathen is mandated.

Kipling developed a hopeful myth about his beloved English people. He claimed they were slow to anger, but when they were aroused, "when the English began to hate," then the enemy was in trouble. But I think Kipling took years and years of Christianity for granted. It is the love of Christ, the Christ who took flesh amongst the European people, that gives a man the passion to hate those who attack his kith and kin. Without the love that once was there for the Son of God, the English and all the European people do not have the capacity to hate the devil and all his works. They can't do what they must, which is to drive the liberals and the colored heathens from the European nations. They must send the liberals to hell and the colored heathens back to heathendom.

Let me come back to the God whom the liberals claim is not there. When Moses went up to Mt. Sinai, his people returned to Baal. They did not have enough faith in the living God, who was more than nature, to forsake the nature gods. The same thing has happened in modern Europe. When the churchmen, under pressure from their bastard children, the mad-dog liberals, banished the God-in-man culture of the antique Europeans, the European people no longer had a God who was there, so they made new-old idols of the colored heathens. When we look at the modern European nations and their offshoots, such as the United States, we see in the mixture of the post-Christian liberals and colored heathens images of hell more gruesome and horrific than Dore's illustrations for Dante's *Inferno*. And still the work of the devil continues. Our children are taught, in church and school, the catechism of liberalism – "And thou shalt love the sacred negro and the colored races with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt hate the white race with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. There is none other commandment greater than these." The liberals' gods are jealous gods; they shall have no other gods before them, and every last remnant of the antique European culture and the heirs of that culture must be eradicated from the face of the earth. That is the one great commandment of the rulers of Liberaldom: "So it is written, so it shall be."

Where is the diversity in liberalism? There is nothing diverse about heathenism. Whether it is the heathenism of the Moslems and the colored races or the heathenism of the technocratic liberals, it is all the same – the worship of sex, blood, and power. There can only be diversity when "the soul knows its worth." When the European people took Christ into their hearts and made Him the cornerstone of their culture, they displayed a diversity of gifts. Certain traits were associated with the Swiss character, the English character, the Italian character, and so on. But all those diverse national traits were grounded in one unifying love, the love of Jesus Christ. Can we look at the vast panorama of European history prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century and still proceed suicidally onward to the liberals' hell on earth?

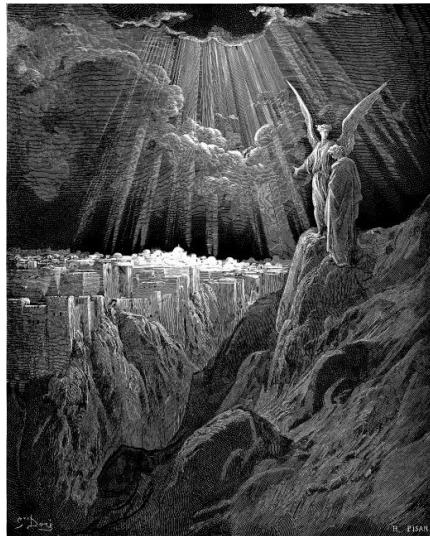
Throughout the Christian centuries there were always men like Julian the apostate, who wanted the European people to return to paganism. But the European people always resisted the apostate intellectuals of Europe in order to stay with the God-Man. Now, they too, the European peasants, have left Christ to join with the blasphemers: "If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself." He did not save Himself; instead He saved us. How can we leave Him, once again, alone on that cross? Why have we forsaken Him for nature and nature's Gods, the colored heathens? He will never compel us to love Him, not because He is too proud, but because He does not want the love of slaves. He wants us to love Him as our Lord and kinsman. The liberals' "diversity" is the work of the devil. We should reject that world and champion eternal Europe, which is a "land of pure delight," because our people and our Savior reside there. +

# His Europe Shall Not Pass Away

September 29, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Blood faith, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Christina Rossetti, John Sharp Williams



What can I give Him, poor as I am?  
If I were a shepherd, I would bring a lamb;  
If I were a Wise Man, I would do my part;  
Yet what I can I give Him: give my heart.

-[Christina Rossetti](#)

---

Dylan Thomas, the passionate, religiously irreligious poet, tells us that:

*Though wise men at their end know dark is right,  
Because their words had forked no lightning they  
Do not go gentle into that good night.*

I think any man, that but man is, wants, in his inmost heart, to bring heaven to earth through his life's work. He wants God to smile on his work, and he wants his fellow men to see the face of God in his work. But if he fails, does that mean that he knows, "that dark is right"? I do not concede that point. If we have given Him, as Christina Rossetti says, our heart, have we failed?

I bring this up because I am one of those old men whose words have forked no lightning. Nevertheless, I feel compelled, by something inside of me stronger than reason, to offer up my work to God. Perhaps in my final hours I will see that I was wrong, but until that time I have to obey that instinct inside. Which brings me, for the second time (I dare not say final time, because I thought the last time was the final time) to the subject of questions – or perhaps they could best be described as attacks – that I have received over the years.

I don't have a comment section on my blog because I have discovered that if someone doesn't understand what I took great pains to make clear in an article, then they are not going to understand me any better in a reply that I do not spend as much time on. And since most of the comments are of a 'hostile' nature – 'Why are you so hostile to my church?,' be it Catholic or Protestant, and, "Why are you a racist?" – I do not see much point in wasting my time responding. What I miss though, is a chance to come into contact with a kindred spirit. But then on the other hand I avoid being disappointed by finding out that there are no kindred spirits out there. But I do occasionally encounter (I won't 'out' anyone) kindred spirits. I know a man in Canada who has kept the faith, shotgunner from the Old South, a New Zealand farmer, and a Vanishing American who seem to be struggling to give Him their heart. I always keep such individuals in my prayers and any others that I hear about. I want the man who was referred to me by Shotgun Barrel Straight to know that I have kept him in my prayers. And then there is the woman who calls herself Denise. I have also kept her in my prayers. As for the others, whom I don't know by name, I have kept them in my prayers as well, because I always pray for the unnamed Knights of Europe. Of what good are such prayers? I don't know. Our faith is not something seen. Before leaving this subject, let me ask for prayers for the Vanishing American who was absent for some time and has returned to tell us that she is dealing with an illness. She is a woman in the mold of Christina Rossetti, God keep her.

In regards to the hostile attacks from the denominational Christians, I can only say that they are right: I am not in sync with the orthodox Roman Catholics or the doctrinal Protestants. But my faith is not – in that which is essential, or so it seems to me – incompatible with the faith of the European peasants, Protestant, and Catholic, who lived and died prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century. What I write are public prayers, addressed to my God and my people; I hope that they reach the heart of God and the hearts of my fellow Europeans. If I fail on both counts, I still do not concede that dark is right.

John Sharp Williams, a U. S. Representative and a U. S. Senator, cut through all the blather about states' rights when he articulated, in a speech delivered to the Confederate veterans on May 31, 1904, the real cause for which the South fought:

*But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own...*  
= [Confederate Veterans, Volume 12](#)

The term "white man's civilization" strikes us as something terribly unmodern. And it is certainly unmodern; no modern conservative would use such a term. He would talk about our democratic traditions and/or our Greco/Roman/Judeo/Christian heritage, but he would not under any circumstance talk about the "white man's civilization." That would be racist and we all know that racists are damned. And the liberals? They would pounce on that term, "the white man's civilization," and use it as proof positive that all white men, and Southern white men in particular, must be exterminated before the Brave New World, an enlightened world, can come to fruition.

The important point that Williams stresses is that the Southern people did *not* lose the Civil War. They lost on the battlefield, but they kept fighting after Appomattox to preserve the "white man's civilization," which was under assault by the Jacobins of the North. And at the time of Williams' speech, the Southern people were victorious; they had preserved the white man's Christian heritage.

History accords us many examples of people preserving their culture after defeats on the battlefield. The Saxons lost the Battle of Hastings, but it was their culture that remained the dominant culture in England, because they stubbornly remained faithful to their Saxon hearth fires despite the efforts of the Norman rulers to destroy them as a people. Likewise the Scots,

who lost time and time again on the battlefield, but ultimately made England grant them the religious independence they sought. And unfortunately, the Aztecs also preserved their faith, despite the fact that the Spanish defeated them on the battlefield. They stubbornly refused to give anything other than outward adherence to the Christian faith, and now, when the strong European presence has disappeared not only in Mexico but throughout the Western world, the ancient Aztecs' faith has resurfaced in Mexico and the United States. The Mexican re-conquistadors represent the resurgence of the Aztecs who were beaten, but not destroyed, so many years ago by Cortez and his Spanish cavaliers.

What is that "incomparable" something that "being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed"? It is the faith that is "bred in the bone." For centuries the noblest men and women of Europe gave Christ their hearts, and their heartfelt, passionate faith carried the faint of heart and the lukewarm along in their train. But once the Christian faith was 'proven' to be incompatible with science and reason, the European leadership succumbed in the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, to an irreligious, ethical Christianity devoid of any real faith. And by the second half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the European people had only a fast-disappearing respect for the ethos of Christianity divorced from a faith in the source of that ethos. That is not enough to preserve a civilization, as we have witnessed. The 21<sup>st</sup> century is the first century since the European people bent their knee to Christ in which there is not only an absence of faith, but there is also an absence of any Christian ethos. And as a consequence of the Christian void in Europe, there are no longer any Europeans. What the Saxons, the Scots, and the Southerners preserved, the "white man's civilization," has been ceded on all the white ethnic fronts to the liberals and the colored heathens, who are Satan's minions.

Neo-pagans such as Kevin Strom look at the Aztecs, the Orientals, and the blacks and see that those people have maintained their identities during all the years of white dominance, and now they are strong in defense of their people while the whites are weak in defense of their people. And many whites, the liberals, have joined with the colored heathens to attack the white race. The neo-pagans then assume that the solution to white genocide is a return to the paganism of the Greeks and/or the Vikings. But that is a colossal misreading of European history. When the European people were Christian they ruled the world; when they ceased to be Christian they surrendered the world to the colored heathens. You can't judge the Christian character of a people by their church attendance, which may be just a carryover from the habits and traditions of their ancestors. You can judge a people's faith by their art work, their political structures, and their social organizations. By the 20<sup>th</sup> century a Christian artist was an anomaly, and secular democracies were all the rage. The bred-in-the-bone faith of the antique Europeans was no longer present in 20<sup>th</sup> century Europe, the century when the European people started on the road to oblivion.

You can't — and I repeat myself with this assertion — make yourself believe that Christ rose from the dead because such a faith would help your people beat back the colored onslaught on the European people. But you can take the neo-pagan blinders off your eyes and see that all that was good and pure and noble in old Europe stemmed from the European people's faith in Jesus Christ. And even if you can't believe in the Christian fairytale, you might want to examine why that story once inflamed the hearts of so many white men and women of Old Europe. Then, if you have a heart, you might begin to respect the hearts of your Christian forbearers more than the minds of the philosophers and the scientists. Organized Christian Jewry has given up on the incarnate Lord. Perhaps the neo-pagans, who seem to have some respect for their racial hearth fire, can trace white pietas to its source and become men again.

What happens when the white man's Christian culture has been destroyed? Is it true that we can never reclaim it? I don't think we should see our demise in that light. It is certain that the continuum of European culture, preserved during the Reconstruction Era by the Southern people, has been broken by Southern and Northern Europeans since the time in which Williams lived. But if that continuum has been broken, does that mean we must simply accept the new European civilization, which is a non-civilization consecrated to Satan? Almighty God, forbid it! Nothing is written. We can't re-create old Europe, but we can build a new Europe based on the faith of the antique Europeans. Individual people make up a nation. If it is possible for one individual to spiritually return to old Europe, then how can we say that our people cannot alter their headlong flight to the abyss?

Dylan Thomas was right to advise us to rage against the dying of the light, but his assertion that "dark is right" is an assertion stemming from a tortured heart defeated by the demons of modernity. The heart that loves much, the European heart, sees the light that shineth in darkness. We can't escape our destiny — either we are the Christ-bearers, the people who have seen a great light, or we are of all men most to be pitied. The mind-forged Europe of the great men of reason and science is a fraud; it is a trick of the devil. Christ's Europe, the Europe born of the union of His sacred heart with European hearts that loved much, is the real Europe that shall not pass away. +

# Liberaldom is Hell

October 6, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Jacobinism, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Utopianism

Tags: Christopher Marlowe



Hell is empty,  
And all the devils are here.

—*The Tempest*

---

Two days ago I read an account of yet another woman who had been sexually molested by Brett Kavanaugh. As I read the account I realized that the woman making the accusation was the granddaughter of a girl I once dated in high school! How could Kavanaugh have molested a girl before she was born? When I brought this up to the Senate Committee, I was told that white racists were very evil and devious people – they could even rape the unborn. “No,” I replied, “the rape, murder, and torture of the unborn is the particular delight of liberals, not men like Brett Kavanaugh.”

The Kavanaugh hearing is not about the liberals’ concern for the molestation of women. If they cared about the molestation of women, they would not love the Moslems and blacks who have made the rape of women a cornerstone of their cultures, or should I say their non-cultures? The Kavanaugh hearings are about abortion. The liberals fear that Kavanaugh’s appointment will leave the court one justice away from overturning Roe v. Wade. Naturally when you have attained absolute power, you don’t want to give up any of that power, but the liberals need not worry. Even if pro-life judges obtain a 5 to 4 majority on the Supreme Court, they will not be able to make abortion illegal in the United States of America. We are a liberal nation, committed to the ongoing march to Utopia. In a utopian state, it is essential that all powers reserved for God shall become the powers reserved for the liberals. Married procreative love must give way to licensed lust and infanticide, because men and women in Liberaldom must be as God — they must be in charge of procreation. You cannot turn back on the road to Utopia. Legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, miscegenation, and every other evil under the sun were implicit in liberalism right from the start. And the liberals are committed to making that which was implicit in liberalism from the start, namely the devil’s will, explicit at the finish.

When a runner stands at the starting line of a race we assume he will keep running, barring a complete physical collapse, to the end of the race. His appearance at the start of the race causes us to make that assumption. Centuries ago the liberals announced, through men like Rousseau, that they intended to build the kingdom of heaven on earth. In order to achieve that goal they had to maniacally, with malice aforethought, chip away at the Christian foundations of Europe. They were not able in one generation, nor in two or three generations, to destroy the Christian fabric of Europe. But they have, in this, the 21<sup>st</sup> century, finally achieved their goal. In the 20<sup>th</sup> century the Christian faith succumbed to the liberals’ scientific attack, and now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the Christian ethos has followed the Christian faith into the dustbins of history.

The incredible hatred the liberals have for Trump, which is a maniacal hatred that goes beyond any political invectives of the past, is the result of Trump’s attempt to go back, not to Christian Europe, but to a more moderate place on the road to Utopia, a place where white people are not demonized and babies are not slaughtered in their mothers’ wombs. But we cannot go back to that moderate place, because the devil is not a moderate. He will fight through his liberal minions to preserve his kingdom. Burke should forever be our guide on this crucial point: **You cannot have just a little bit of liberalism; it is an all-devouring, reptilian monster that must consume every last vestige of Christian Europe.** And of what does Christian Europe consist? It is not our democratic governments or our Greco-Roman-Judaic-Christian heritage that we must fight to preserve, it is the people of Europe, whose ancestors believed that heaven visited earth in the person of Jesus Christ, that we must defend and preserve.

Republican presidents prior to Trump wanted to go slower along the liberal road to Utopia, but they never tried to go backward on the utopian road. Reagan claimed to be committed to “pro-life principles” but he never backed it up with his court appointees because he was incapable of fighting an all-out war with the mad-dog liberals. How could he, when he was a classical liberal himself? Trump is also a classical liberal – there is nothing in his inaugural speech opposed to liberalism – but he has come along at a time when the mad-dog liberals will brook no opposition; they will not return to the Reagan years of liberalism. And then there is the human factor – Trump is a loose cannon in the mold of Andrew Jackson and Theodore Roosevelt. Even though his stated beliefs are well within the confines of American democratic principles, his non-liberal instincts, which were bred out of all our previous Republican presidents, occasionally surface and cause problems for the classical liberals and the mad-dog liberals. Nothing of long-lasting value can come out of the democratic process, but it is significant that Western leaders such as Trump, Orbán, and Putin earn the particular hatred of the liberals. Such men, who have not completely liberalized their souls, represent discordant notes in the liberals’ utopian kingdom of heaven on earth. To the liberals, abortion does not represent a discordant note, the Moslem invasion does not represent a discordant note, negro worship does not represent a discordant note, but a leader in any European nation who does not want the total extermination of the white race, because he has a remnant of white pietas in his soul, is a discordant note that must be silenced by whatever means necessary.

Liberal hate fests such as the Kavanaugh hearings should tell us something. You can’t deal peacefully with liberals. They are only interested in the democratic process and the rule of law when those processes serve their ends. When they don’t, they dismiss such processes and move on to another form of attack on the white race. And the timid white grazers in the “palpable night of their terrors” always think that if they are non-violent and polite, they will appease the liberals’ wrath and win them over. The liberals’ will not be won over; they have left their humanity behind them in order to enter the brave new world of Utopia. Nothing that stinks of humanity can move them. When the council woman from Cologne tells the German people that Germany will soon belong to the Moslems, it is clear what must be done in Germany. When Pope Francis the blasphemer wags his finger at the whites of Europe and tells them they must turn their nations over to colored heathens, it is clear what must be done in reaction to the Pope’s obscene tirade against the European people. In every European nation it is the same. The liberals have decreed that the European people must submit to their own extermination at the hands of the colored heathens and the Moslems. Why must we submit to our own extermination? The France of Louis XVI was a microcosm of Christian Europe. The rulers’ faith in the legitimacy of their regime weakened under the assault of the intellectuals:

*An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will.*

What happened first in France has happened throughout all the European nations over the last two centuries. Why do white men submit to the will of the liberals? I think it is because the devil, who was and is the first liberal, has the ability to be all things to all people. Life is a crucifixion. The devil offers each of us some kind of bargain so that we can obtain our desires without a crucifixion. He might offer riches to one man – “You can be Christian and a money grubber if you call yourself an entrepreneur.” Thus the capitalist has a reason not to repudiate liberalism. He tells the Christian white woman that she can have a career and children providing that she accepts “the gains the feminists have made.” I recall a Danish woman reporter lamenting the lack of chivalry in the white males of Cologne during the New Year’s Eve Moslem rape fest a few years back. But she was adamant that she didn’t want to go back to the bad old days of the Christian patriarchy; she just wanted white males to protect women when Moslems assaulted them. You can’t have it both ways. You can’t have the benefits that stem from a Christian culture while holding on to the liberal values that suit your selfish ends.

In Marlowe’s *Dr. Faustus*, we see Faust at a crucial crossroads of his life. He has sold his soul to the devil, but he is wavering. He wants to break his deal with the devil. The devil then sends him Helen of Troy in order to keep him in the fold.

*Was this the face that launch'd a thousand ships,  
And burnt the topless towers of Ilium—  
Sweet Helen, make me immortal with a kiss.—*

*Her lips suck forth my soul: see, where it flies!—  
Come, Helen, come, give me my soul again.*

As long as the European people think that liberalism can provide them with their Helen of Troy, whether it is riches, freedom from childbirth and motherhood, power and prestige, or freedom from the cross of Christ, they will continue to debate with liberals and discuss things with liberals rather than fight liberals to the death. They will refuse to see the obvious – that liberalism is from the devil – because there is always something that each individual European thinks he will lose if he steps outside of Liberaldom and attacks, not just one policy of the liberals, but liberalism itself.

My education, like that of all whites in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, consisted of horror tales about the white people of the undemocratic and non-liberal years of European history. The technological advances of the moderns were trumpeted as advances made possible by more enlightened views of God and man. But my upbringing was a lie – church, state, and society were not asking the right question: “What good does it do if a man gains the whole world if he loses his soul?” The antique Europeans pursued all the things of this world that the modern Europeans pursue, but there was a crucial difference between their Europe and modern Europe. The antique Europeans did not try to justify their sins by creating a new world in which sin was virtue and virtue sin. The pursuit of wealth for wealth’s sake, à la Ebenezer Scrooge, was seen as evil. The murder of an infant in his mother’s womb was considered murder. The woman who denounced motherhood and pursued a career outside the home was not seen as a paragon of femininity. A church man who suggested that the negro was more sacred than Christ was not allowed, if he was not lynched on the spot, to continue in his clerical profession. And the essence of liberalism, the desire to exterminate the white Christ-bearing race through race-mixing, was seen as the horror of all horrors.

At the hour of our death we need the world of the antique Europeans, a world in which sinners struggled toward the light. We do not want the liberals’ world, no matter how wonderful the liberals claim it shall be once we get rid of the white racists. We cannot, if we have not pursued the light that shineth in darkness in our lifetime, suddenly turn on a light switch at the hour of our death. Whether our death “be now, or whether it is to come,” we all pale and quake in the face of that dreadful monster. If we have never touched the living God during this life, the God who enters human hearts, we will have no real comfort during the trials of this life, and we will die without His divine comfort at the end of our lives.

Liberalism gives us hell. That is what the Kavanaugh hearings are all about – the continuing efforts to destroy every last vestige of Christian Europe by destroying the hearts of the European people. “Do we reject the devil and all his works?” If the answer is yes, then we must reject liberalism in its entirety. There must be no more discussions and polite debates with Satan’s minions. It is time to fight. That charity of honor demands that we do so. +

# The Heart and the Hearth Fire

October 13, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Charles Dickens, Le Fanu



Of my wretched uncles' religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels. – Le Fanu, [Uncle Silas](#)

---

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. – [Romans 1: 20-22](#)

---

As Edgar tells of his own suffering his father's suffering, and King Lear's suffering, Albany finally has to end the chronicle of suffering:

*If there be more, more woeful, hold it in;  
For I am almost ready to dissolve,  
Hearing of this.*

I feel as Albany felt when I read about the various atrocities inflicted on the white race by the liberals and the colored heathens. There is a limit to how much I can absorb before I dissolve. C. S. Lewis advised us not to read newspapers, lest we become overly involved in events that we cannot control and as a consequence ignore certain matters close at hand over which we have some control. He makes a good point, but Lewis still lived under a Christian canopy. His right to live in his rooms at Oxford were taken as a given. He didn't have to worry about the Moslems and the colored heathens at his front door. They were over there – in other lands far afield from England. The one weakness of Lewis's *Narnia*, which is the greatest literary work of the godless 20<sup>th</sup> century, comes toward the end of the *Last Battle* when Lord Digory says, "It's all in Plato, it's all in Plato." No, it is not all in Plato. Our God has a local habitation and a name. His name is Jesus and His local habitation is the human heart. When our racial hearth fire is attacked, we are deeply and intimately involved in that attack, because the attack involves our God and our people. When our kith and kin bleed, we bleed. Without that sympathetic connection to our people, we are bereft, we are cut off, not only from our people, but also from our God, who comes to us through our kith and kin. We must, like Albany, know our limits, but we also must see that the race war, whether in South Africa or across the street, is local. The liberals and the colored heathen want our blood. Every white atrocity story is our story, because we are connected to our people and our God through our racial hearth fire. The bell tolls for us.

Why were all the early racial Universalists always atheists, while the 'racists' were Christians? It is no accident, because those people without a home, without a racial hearth fire, cannot know the God-Man of the Christian faith. Such creatures, the men without a people they can call their own, have no ties to humanity. They have left their humanity behind in order to become philosophical speculators, so they must live life second-hand through the colored heathens.

The whole thrust of Satan's attack on God has been directed at the white race, because the European people made Christ the God of their racial hearth fire. 'To be a white man' meant to be a Christian. In modern Europe, what does it mean 'to be a white man'? It means one must hate the white race and love the colored heathens. Why? Is it the Christian thing to do, to despise your own people? The romance of Christ's birth, death on the cross and resurrection from the dead has become as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal to the European people. They have speculated that romance out of existence. Now the liberals who say there is no such thing as race worship the colored races. Men must worship something; if they do not worship the God-Man they will turn to the man-gods of nature. Pope Francis's rain forest gods are one with Rousseau's Noble Savage.

I've reached the time of life when a number of my friends and relatives have received that summons which we all dread. The sudden death of a loved one by heart attack or stroke is more of a shock to our spirit, but the long, slow death from cancer seems more terrible still. Sympathy for the loved one is paramount, but there is also a certain guilt: "How can I proceed with life as usual when he or she is going through such suffering?" And then there is the resentment: "Why should anyone, particularly someone I love, have to endure such suffering?" And finally there is our own fear of death: "Is this the promised end?" Neither the old paganism nor the new paganism, which is liberalism, gives us an answer to death. The Viking funeral service and the liberals' death-and-dying courses do not help us deal with our longing for "the touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice that is still." We can't go to the churches for an answer, because they cannot provide us with a heartfelt vision of the God-Man who conquered death. They can only put out an intellectual theory of a God who may or may not have risen from the dead. But they do tell us that we can hope that at some future date mankind will live in a racially harmonious world in which mankind will survive, even though all men will perish as individuals. What is missing in that scenario of the liberals? Personal immortality is missing. Why should I, or anyone, bother about utopia if everything ends with the grave?

The pagans face death by immersing themselves in the ecstatic moment. Their faith is in sex and blood. The liberals are trying to do likewise, but they are failing miserably. They are dying in despair and forcing the white grazers to die in despair as well, because they have destroyed the European hearth fire. At the hour of our deaths, we need Christ, the God of our ascending race. And He comes to us through our people. The dying always want their loved ones around them at their hour of death, but if their loved ones have forsaken their European hearth fire, or if they themselves have forsaken their people during their lifetime, they will lack that human conduit to the living God that we all, even if we fled from Christ during our lifetime, need at the hour of our death. Satan's attack, through his liberal minions, on our racial hearth fire has been successful. The Europeans have lost everything – they have lost their will to live, and they have lost His blessed assurance and comfort at the hour of their deaths. Why have they sold their souls to the devil? What will he tell us at the hour of our deaths? "Despair and die!"

The Enlightenment did not begin with Rousseau and the French Jacobins. You can trace the Enlightenment philosophy back to the great scholastic and then to its ultimate source – the enemy of mankind. But the idea of enlightened man-gods who could do without the God-Man became institutionalized in Europe at the time of the French Revolution. That is why Burke, who saw that the French Revolution marked the death knell of Christian Europe, was anathematized by the liberals. Satan did not want to be 'outed' at that point in history. Now that the 'enlightened' idea of God has become embodied throughout what was formerly called Christendom we are faced with a tragic irony: The people who once saw a great light are blind. The great era of Enlightenment is upon us and behold, "all is cheerless, dark and deadly."

Utopian ‘Christians’ and the secular liberals always point to the Christian era of European history as a period of darkness, because the antique Europeans were racist, sexist, homophobic, and Islamophobic. In other words, they were unenlightened. They, according to the liberals and the theologians, were steeped in superstition and prejudice. But what were they prejudiced against? They were prejudiced against the darkness of heathenism, which the liberals have revived; a heathenism that leaves us without the Savior. St. Paul tells us, “That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in thine heart that God have raised him from the dead, thou shall be saved.” Is that confession and that heartfelt faith such a little thing that we can trade it for the glories of liberalism?

The philosophical speculator can only delineate evil, he cannot delineate the good. Socrates could tell us that Zeus was not a god, but he could not tell us who God was, nor could Plato, nor any of the other philosophers who followed in his train. But St. Paul could define the good, not by way of the syllogism but by a heart to heart connection to the living God. It was the Europeans who followed St. Paul that carved out a realm of light in a world that had once been in total darkness, not the philosophical speculators. Our hope in this world and the next is not something we can see with our minds, but we can see Him with our hearts if we believe as St. Paul and the antique Europeans believed.

The liberals tell us that we are getting close to the kingdom of heaven on earth if we just would eliminate the last remnants of the white man’s Europe. But what is occurring is something quite different from what, according to the liberals, is supposed to be happening. The world has been plunged into darkness. There are degrees of darkness, to be sure, but all the nations of Europe are moving away from the light. As we move further and further away from our racial hearth fire, we move further away from His realm of charity. And it is only through that charity, engendered and nurtured in our European home, that we form a bond with the living God. It doesn’t matter how many church organizations survive if our racial hearth fire is destroyed. We must be part of His realm of charity in order to confess with our mouths and believe in our hearts. We need our home, if we intend to live and die connected to Him.

In a little known work of Dickens, called [\*Master Humphrey's Clock\*](#), Master Humphrey rejects the cosmic mysticism of the heathens for the European way, the way of charity, which begins at home and connects us to our people, living and dead, who are sustained by His divine charity.

*What if I be? What if this fireside be tenantless, save for the presence of one weak old man? From my house-top I can look upon a hundred homes, in every one of which these social companions are matters of reality. In my daily walks I pass a thousand men whose cares are all forgotten, whose labours are made light, whose dull routine of work from day to day is cheered and brightened by their glimpses of domestic joy at home. Amid the struggles of this struggling town what cheerful sacrifices are made; what toil endured with readiness; what patience shown and fortitude displayed for the mere sake of home and its affections! Let me thank Heaven that I can people my fireside with shadows such as these; with shadows of bright objects that exist in crowds about me; and let me say, 'I am alone no more.'*

*I never was less so—I write it with a grateful heart—than I am to-night. Recollections of the past and visions of the present come to bear me company; the meanest man to whom I have ever given alms appears, to add his mite of peace and comfort to my stock; and whenever the fire within me shall grow cold, to light my path upon this earth no more, I pray that it may be at such an hour as this, and when I love the world as well as I do now.*

Our fight is not for a lighter shade of darkness, which the more conservative politicians offer us. Our quest is to find, once again, the light that shineth in darkness. We won’t find that light at the top of the pagan’s cosmic tree. We will find it in the visionary heart of Master Humphrey and his friends, who are gathered together by the European hearth fire. That hearth fire, so demeaned by the liberals in church and state, is the only hearth fire where there is the charity which never faileth. The European people have died as a people because they have accepted the darkness of liberalism. They no longer believe that there is a light that shineth in darkness, because they no longer have a heart for the Son of God. They have become as Le Fanu’s Uncle Silas – they have a certain intellectual desire to be godly, but they have lost the heart to love the living God. We must cling to our only hope – we must believe that His charity never faileth. At the hour of our death and in the face of the death of our people, we must stay with Master Humphrey and his friends who knew that Christ is the beginning and the end of the European story. +

# The Sign of Our Salvation

October 20, 2018

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Francois Mauriac



Virtue might be rarer than vice, but it exists, especially in the hearts and souls of our European ancestors. Where the liberals see nothing but evil in our European ancestors, I see a roll of honor, a charity of honor. In the collective face of the European people of the days gone by, I see faith, hope, charity, and our Lord Jesus Christ. If we let “our ancient hearts” unite with theirs, we can be as they were, staunch in defense of our people and our God and unrelenting in our hatred of the liberals, who have loosed the dogs of color upon us and institutionalized blasphemy. It would be morally reprehensible to attempt to compromise with such creatures. Nor would it be realistic. Those people who have turned their hearts from the God of mercy will not be merciful to His people.

All seems cheerless, dark, and deadly on the European front. A sneering, satanic liberalism pervades what was once called Christendom. Living in Liberaldom is like living with the death of a loved one: there is an agony in the heart that can only be eased by a contemplation of Him and His promise that nothing eternal dies. That is our hope. If ancient European hearts unite with Christ through His people, then the liberals will not prevail. Ancient Europe will triumph over modern Babylon, even more surely than the turning of the earth. + — [CWNY](#)

---

In Dostoyevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov*, the Grand Inquisitor hurls a number of accusations at Christ. Among those accusations is the charge of desertion: “You said you would come back to earth, but you didn’t.” That is a serious charge. When a father deserts his children, he is not a good father. To his credit, Alyosha does not give a rational defense of God. He points to Christ and lets Ivan win the debate.

Why do I applaud Alyosha’s non-defense of God? Because Alyosha’s non-defense is the only proper defense. The rational defenses of Christ’s ‘failure’ to return to earth, along with the rational defenses of the suffering we must endure on this earth, always end up supporting the Ivan Karamazovs of the world: “Case closed: the Christian God has been found guilty. Let us look to another God.” That is precisely what happened in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Christ was found guilty of desertion; He left his children to suffer and die alone while He went off to... Where did He go? And where is the Comforter He promised?

The colored heathen can say with pride that they, like the dwarves in C. S. Lewis’s *Chronicles of Narnia*, were not taken in by Christ; they remained faithful to their heathen deities. And the small minority of colored heathens who adhered to the white man’s code, the Gunga Dins who “were white, pure white inside”? They were and are regarded as traitors. The liberals’ worship of the colored heathens does not include them, the Uncle Remuses of the heathen world who serve the white man and worship the white man’s God.

The liberals’ hatred of all things white and Christian stems from their belief that they were tricked. They gave up the fleshpots of Egypt to champion Christ, and He turned out to be a fairy tale. While the colored heathens were enjoying themselves, the white people suffered through centuries of sexual repression and cruelty because of their adherence to the will of the Christian God. The unshackling process that began in the 20<sup>th</sup> century and was completed by the 21<sup>st</sup> century has set the European people free from Christ. But what are they doing with their new-found freedom? They are recreating Heathendom. For what is liberalism in its essence? It is a synthesis of all the heathen faiths; feminism, Islam, and negro worship are reincarnations of the cruel nature religions that preceded the Christian religion. In his poem *Clarel, a Pilgrimage to the Holy Land*, Herman Melville tells us that science cannot umpire the feud between heathenism and Christianity. But the modern Europeans decided science could umpire that feud. And science decided in favor of nature and nature’s gods. The colored heathens won the debate. They were real, they were pure, and they were natural, while the white man was not real, he was not pure, and he was not natural.

There is no appeal from the liberals’ supreme court. The white man has been found guilty of foisting a false and unnatural religion on the world, the penalty for that crime is death. The church-going, white ‘Christians’ seek to avoid the death penalty by blending their Christianity with liberalism. “We are not racist, we are not sexist, we are not Europhiles.” By betraying his race, the moderate white ‘Christian’ hopes to save himself and his church from the wrath of the liberals. But that will not work. Only the white illuminati, the whites who have transcended whiteness and the Christian faith will be allowed into the liberals’ utopia.

When the apostles met the risen Lord on the road to Emmaus, they asked Him to, “Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” And then – “When it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.” Our people knew Him, through the testimony of the apostles and the Holy Ghost who dwells in the human heart. Ah, there’s the rub. Does the Holy Ghost reside in the human heart and did the apostles really see the risen Lord? Everything centers on one essential point: Do we see with the heart or with the head? The apostles on the road to Emmaus, after their encounter with the risen Lord, did not say, “Now we see things clearly, we understand the dialectic expounded by the wise man.” No, they said they understood because their hearts burned within them. How do we test the veracity of the apostles’ testimony? Is our heart drawn to the Christ story, does it make us say, “My life is like this tale, so I’ll keep it for sympathy’s sake”? Or do we reject it as unscientific? George Bernard Shaw, who, more than any other writer, painter, or composer, managed to take upon himself the attributes of the devil, used to point out with glee that it was science that had turned the European people into a non-people in search of a new faith. The incarnation of Christ and His resurrection were scientifically unverifiable, so they must be false. That simple  $2 + 2 = 4$  logic is correct from a purely scientific viewpoint. And since Christ never came back to earth to refute the scientists and the Shaws, it must mean, from the liberals’ standpoint, that Christ be not risen. Liberaldom could not have been built without the European peoples’ tacit acceptance of Shaw’s and the scientists’ assertion that Christ be not risen.

God will judge the intent of the scholastic theologians, Catholic and Protestant, who attempted to scientize God, but we can judge the results. God cannot be scientized, He cannot be probed and dissected like a laboratory specimen. The end result of such a process will be the creation of a false, mind-forged God who does not make men’s hearts burn within them. It’s very easy to become a complete sceptic about Christianity when one wades through the various theological wars of the church men, each one trying to hand God to us in a golden, scientized bowl, but it is very hard to remain skeptical when one encounters the Word made flesh in the hearts of the men and women of Europe who loved Him. It is their testimony, the testimony of hearts that loved much, which we must cling to when the darkness of Liberaldom makes us feel that God has forsaken us.

Cyrano de Bergerac, after discovering that his beloved Roxanne loves another, very eloquently expresses his complete defiance of the world. His friend cuts to the heart of the tirade: “Say this to all the world, then whisper to me, ‘She loves me not.’” The scientizing of God in the churches has killed the European people. Unlike the colored heathens, the European people staked everything on Christ. They were not deterred by suffering or by His seeming desertion, because they had that which was essential: they had charity, the charity that hopeth all things

and believeth all things. That charity is missing in our scientized world, because the ‘pride of science’ men, the scholastics of Christian Jewry, the Rousseaus, the Voltaires, the Darwinians, the Einsteins, and the Shaws placed a wedge between God and man by declaring that all thought stemming from the human heart was false while all thought stemming from the abstracted mind contemplating the natural world was true. When that scientized view of existence takes hold of a man’s soul, he says, “Christ loves me not, I shall look for another God.”

Christ is the cornerstone of our faith. If we lose Him, we lose everything. And where does He reside? He resides with the Master Humphreys of Europe, the men and women who see Christ through their kith and kin. Theirs is a continuum, a spiritual connection, between the apostles on the road to Emmaus and the European people when they were a people. If we take the scientized veil from the eyes of our heart and see the risen Lord as the apostles saw Him, as the first European tribesmen, the men who conquered Rome, saw Him, we can touch Him and we can know Him intimately through the charity that begins at home and ends with His heavenly home of many mansions. It is very easy to become unbalanced, to allow our analytical minds to overrule our hearts, and accept Ivan’s Karamazov’s indictment of God: “He lied to us, He did not return, and He permits us to suffer and die without hope.” But I ask you, when the European Christ stands before us, the Christ of the Gospels, the Christ of St. Paul, the Christ of the European poets who expressed the heartfelt faith of their people, does not our heart burn within us?

In his autobiography, Francois Mauriac says that we all are given the chance to say what St. Peter would have liked to have said (and subsequently does say, even though it leads to his crucifixion) on the night of Christ’s crucifixion. We can say, “Yes, I know that Man, He is Christ the Lord.” The race war, which is so one-sided because the European people have lost the heart to fight, is about the Man of Sorrows. The liberals say that He was a fraud and a liar. They cannot punish Him directly, but they can attack Him through the people who championed Him. The grazers seek to avoid the liberals’ wrath by claiming “We do not know that man!” That is what the statement, “I am not a racist,” means. When a white European makes that statement, when he leaves his racial hearth fire, he is leaving the European Christ behind. Is there any other Christ? No, there is not. That Christ is the Christ who entered the circumcised hearts of the people of Europe. He piped to our ancestors’ hearts and they responded. Now, once again, Christ has been dragged before the Sanhedrin and found guilty. When a white man washes his hands of the European people and tries to save Christianity by abandoning the European-centered vision of Christ, he is behaving like Pontius Pilate, who knew Christ was innocent but still consented to His crucifixion. And when a white man becomes a liberal, he is joining the Jews who screamed, “Crucify Him!” The race war is part of the eternal conflict between God and the devil. Satan currently holds the field; by appealing to the Europeans’ pride of science, he has killed their hearts. All the rational apologetics ever conceived by the minds of men cannot restore the Europeans’ faith in God if they haven’t the heart for God. And without a racial hearth fire, they have no heart.

Whenever I think of the scientizing of the European people, a sad, lonely, despairing face appears before me. It is the face of a Roman Catholic priest I knew when I was an undergraduate. I had come, through the good offices of the European bards, to a trembling faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ and thought that a course in the Gospels might help strengthen my faith. I chose Father \_\_\_\_\_’s course because I had read a book he wrote some twenty-five years before, which suggested that he believed in Jesus Christ. The first day of the class was quite a disappointment. Father \_\_\_\_\_ subjected God’s word to the same scrutiny the literary critics subjected Shakespeare to. I found such critical scrutiny offensive when applied to Shakespeare and blasphemous when applied to the Gospels. And after class, in his office, I told Father \_\_\_\_\_ what I thought of his class. I also asked him about his faith, namely, what had happened to it. First, he defended his approach to the Gospels: “We can’t presume that the Gospels are the word of God in an academic classroom.” In response to my second question about his loss of faith, he said, “There are so few signs.” That is when I saw the sadness, the loneliness, and the despair on his face that has stayed with me all through my life. It was the sadness and loneliness of a man who has lost contact with our Lord, and it was the despair of a man who had no idea how to reestablish that contact. How many souls have gone through the same tragedy, the tragedy of the scientized soul, and how many Europeans are currently living that tragedy? Needless to say, I dropped the course. I didn’t want to go down Father \_\_\_\_\_’s lonesome road. A scientized faith is not a faith. It promises us paradise and gives us hell. Do we reject the devil and all his works? If our answer is, “Yes, I reject the devil and all his works,” then we must reject the pride of science. Then, having circumcised our hearts, we will be able to see our Lord and Savior through the people who loved much. +

# With Better Knowledge

October 27, 2018

Categories: Charity, Defense of the White Race, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: George Fitzhugh, St. Paul



For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

— [Acts 28: 27-29](#)

---

*Lucio.* Sir, I know him, and I love him.

*Duke.* Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

— [Measure for Measure](#)

---

When I got involved in what was called the pro-life movement in my mid-twenties, I thought that abortion was the issue that trumped all other issues. I was wrong. Legalized abortion is the result of the abortion of the white race from the mystical body of Christ: that is the issue that trumps all other issues. So long as that first abortion remains the institutionalized faith of the European people, such atrocities as legalized abortion and such blasphemies as negro worship and legalized sodomy will remain part of the fabric of our Western un-civilization.

Under the auspices of progress, democracy, and science, the post-Christian liberals broke the European people's incorporate union with Christ in order to form a covenant with the devil. Once that covenant became institutionalized, all protests, such as the pro-life movement, against just one aspect of liberalism were doomed to fail because the protestors sought redemption from the devil. Instead of fighting the devil, they tried to appease the devil. Pro-lifers and anti-immigration whites were and are polite, non-violent, and democratic when they protest. Are the liberals, who are Satan's minions, ever sympathetic to the protestors? No, they are not. The devil does not compromise.

It will always be thus. In the United States we are currently facing an invasion on the Mexican border that will be just as disastrous for the European Americans as the Moslem invasion has been for the people of Europe. However, the invasion will not be opposed by white Americans because the decision to abort the white race has already been made by the principalities and powers of Liberaldom. What is needed to stop the invasion is a people who believe that they are a people. The white race is the Christ-bearing race. If they refuse that role, who and what are they as a people? They are nothing; they are a non-people. Neither the Moslem invasion of Europe nor the Mexican invasion of the United States is about jobs or compassion for the travelers on the road as in the parable of the Good Samaritan. The invasions are part and parcel of Satan's war against Christ. He thinks that if he destroys the Christ-bearing race, he will be able to cut mankind off from all contact with his antagonist, who is Christ the Lord.

Now that the Ganelons of liberalism have opened the flood gates of the European nations in order to let the colored heathens in to exterminate the white Europeans, who will say them nay? It will not be any member of organized Christian Jewry, nor will it be anyone from the ranks of the liberal illuminati. There will be no defense of the European people, because the European people have lost their identity as a people. Why should they oppose any invasion of their nations, be it Mexican, Moslem, or African if they do not believe they have a right to exist as a people?

From my perspective the European people have not only a right to defend themselves, they have a moral obligation to defend themselves. What is the reason for the dichotomy between my view of self-defense and the modern Europeans' view of self-defense, or should I say their view of self-destruction? The modern Europeans have accepted their leaders' credo — "White people have no right to defend themselves." I believe that the Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, and the modern Europeans do not believe that the Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. That is the difference between a man who thinks the European people should defend themselves against the onslaught of the colored heathens, and the modern Europeans who think they should cede everything, their wives, their children, and their lives, to the colored heathens, because they have no right to exist as a people.

The crisis of the modern Europeans, or should I say the tragedy of the modern Europeans, lies in their rejection of the Word who was made flesh. That rejection, which is now universal throughout the European nations, was ushered in by the theological studies of the Roman Catholic and Protestant theologians. Citing St. Peter's admonition that men should "sanctify the Lord God in your hearts and be ready to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you," they preceded to explain to the European people the attributes of God. But they failed miserably — in fact they became blasphemers — because they failed to heed St. Peter's advice. Knowledge of God comes from the heart — "Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts." If we don't speak from the heart, our words have no meaning. Did St. Paul talk about God as the theologians talked about God? And did our Lord talk about Himself as the theologians talked about Him? Is the faith passed down from one generation to the next by faithful hearts who loved much, or is it passed down from one generation to the next by brilliant minds who know the magic, theological formulas? If the Faith is passed on by the latter method, then we are no better off than the pagans with their high priests and priestesses who passed on the divine secrets to the laity when the laity showed them the proper obsequiousness. But what happens, in such a system, to the human heart that longs for communion with the living God? It withers and dies.

In the Roman Empire the remote gods of the philosophers who could only be approached through the men of intellect were replaced by the gods of the mystery religions, the gods of sex and blood. Those gods were never replaced in the hearts of the colored heathens, but they were replaced in the hearts of the European people by Jesus Christ. Christ conquered the heathen gods, not by denouncing the passions emanating from the human heart, but by purifying those passions, by drawing us to Him, to His Sacred Heart. Did He really perform that miracle? The theologians tell us He did not. They refuse to acknowledge that the European people responded to Christ's passion with a passion of their own. And since, in their judgement, there has

never been a Christian Europe, we are advised to return to the way of the pagans — we must look to the high priests of the intellect to tell us who and what God is. But if we go back to such a religion, we will be worse off than the pagan Greeks whose greatest poet told us it was better never to have been born than to live a life without a faith in a God above the nature gods. The European people are naked to their enemies, the colored heathens, because they have accepted the “Christian” theologians’ paganized version of Christianity. “Through our intellects, and our intellects alone, you can approach the living God.” Where is the heart in such a religion? Is it any wonder that the European people have surrendered to the colored heathens? Kill the heart, and faith withers and dies. And without faith the people perish.

Solomon built temples for his wives’ heathen gods, and in doing so he destroyed the nation of Israel. The liberals have made the heathens of color their gods, and by doing so they have destroyed the European people, because they have aborted them from the mystical body of Christ. The devil wants us to believe that the mystical body of Christ consists of the members of the churches of organized Christian Jewry, but those churches are theological constructs. They are the great cleansing houses that wash all traces of humanity, all longing for the living God from the hearts of their followers. The real mystical body of Christ consists of those people who love Christ with faith, hope, and charity. And above all, charity. From whence comes the charity that believeth and hopeth all things? It comes from our love of home and hearth. If there are no breeding grounds for charity, how can we come to know the living God? The theologians did not and do not see the love that once was there at our European hearth fire, so they aborted the European people in order to purge the Christian faith of its impurities. But in doing so they denied the Word made flesh. They turned Christ into a Gnostic God of the philosophers and the European people into a non-people. “Can love be put in a golden bowl, and wisdom in a silver rod?” We, as a people, are facing extinction because we have followed the men who believed that God could be scientized.

The apostles who knew Christ when He walked the earth came to believe in His humanity before they believed in His divinity. It was only after His resurrection from the dead that they fully understood the link between His humanity and His divinity. St. Paul did not see the connection between Christ’s humanity and His divinity until his encounter with Christ on the Road to Damascus. That is the uniqueness of the Christian faith, a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks: Christ is true God and true Man. If we lose contact with His humanity we lose contact with His divinity. I submit that we lose contact with His humanity when we place His divine humanity in a golden bowl called theology and label everything outside that bowl as impure and irrelevant. George Fitzhugh, in his criticism of the thought processes of the Northern Unitarians, described the end result of the ‘God in a golden bowl’ theology:

*Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man’s whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.*

—Cannibals All! Or Slaves without Masters

The European people entered the 20<sup>th</sup> century with leaders in church and state who thought that the “cool calculations of the head” were a substitute for the unreliable instincts of the heart, but what have the cool calculations of the philosophers’ and theologians’ heads wrought? We now live in a world without light. We are surrounded by heathenism, the heathenism of the colored barbarians and the heathenism of the post-Christian liberals. Only the love that once was there can produce men and women who can defy the heathenism of the liberals and the colored barbarians.

The secular utopians and the “Christian” utopians have heaped an unrelenting stream of abuse on the antique Europeans. The end result of that abuse has been the demonization of the white race. If Christian Jewry and the liberals have got it right, if the white race has polluted the earth with racism and sexism and every other evil under the sun, then how can we countenance their continued existence on the face of the earth? “We can’t,” is the reply of the liberals and the moderate Christians. “We must look to the purer races to save us from whiteness.” There is a malignant dualism in the liberals’ hatred of the white race. On the one hand the white race is accused of not being sufficiently Christian – “They committed adultery, they engaged in wars, they lusted after the riches of the world, etc.,” but then on the other hand they are deemed to be evil because they were Christian – “They believed that abortion was evil, the separation of the races was good, and that Jesus Christ was the Son of God.” And tragically the members of the churches of Christian Jewry have become an amen chorus for the secular liberals. They have denounced the antique Europeans for their sins of racism, sexism, and worldliness in order to blend their new, purer Gnostic Christianity with the liberals’ post-Christian heathenism.

The theologians followed the way of Martha and rejected the way of Mary, who loved much, when they made their theologies synonymous with the Christian faith. The key passage in the Scripture verse that they use to justify their rationalism is the passage that reveals the insufficiency of their rationalism: “Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts.” If our reason does not flow from our hearts, how can it bear good fruit? We are the people of the inn at Emmaus; we are not the people of the first circle of hell in which the great pagan philosophers sit around endlessly discussing the nature of God and existence. The apostles at the inn of Emmaus knew God because their hearts burned within them. That is our way to Christ as well.

A close relative of mine recently died after a long illness. She was a noble soul, struggling toward the light, but it was very depressing to see the great difficulty she had in understanding some of the most basic tenets of the Christian faith. She was constantly trying to find hidden meanings in passages of Scripture that if taken at face value would have given her great comfort. When I begged her to listen to her heart when reading Scripture, she replied that she didn’t know what was in her heart. That is tragic. Life is not something that should be left to the philosophers and theologians. When we spend a life in pursuit of their abstractions, we are left without the comforts of a Christian heart.

Flannery O’Connor once complained to a friend that the people who most consistently failed to understand her stories were the literary critics, the men and women who studied literature. The same thing happened within the Christian churches. The men who studied God, the theologians, were the men who most consistently failed to understand the Christ story. The Christian faith is a story about God’s relationship with His people. It is not a philosophy for those men and women who seek esoteric knowledge. It is not impossible to place ourselves back in the Christ story, but we need to first circumcise our hearts and ask Christ to enter therein. The road to Emmaus, which leads to the inn of Emmaus, leads us to the enlightenment that comes, not from the abstract intellect, but from a heart-to-heart communion with the Son of God. The demonized European hearth fire is the inn at Emmaus. We must return to that hearth fire and defend it against all the world. +

# The Reptiles

November 3, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctious visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. —Burke, [A Letter to a Noble Lord](#)

---

In my childhood I used to enjoy my family's trips to the local zoo. I enjoyed looking at all the animals, with one exception. I did not enjoy going into the reptile house: I hated the snakes and alligators. No, the word 'hate' does not adequately convey how I felt when I saw the reptiles. Something stirred inside, deeper than hatred. I now believe that I sensed the connection between the reptiles and the enemy of mankind. Didn't the devil assume the form of a reptile when he approached Adam and Eve in the Garden?

I bring this up from my past because the feeling inside me, deeper than hatred, that I had for the reptiles in the zoo, has returned. I feel the same way now about the liberals as I felt about those reptiles that I viewed in my childhood. I feel a hatred beyond hatred for the liberals, but I do not concede that my hatred beyond hatred for them is some sort of irrational, unwarranted phobia any more than I would concede that my loathing for the reptiles in the zoo was irrational and unwarranted. In fact, let me be blunt: I think there is something wrong, something terribly wrong, with any European man or woman who does not feel, when in the presence of a liberal, that they are in the presence of a horrific, reptilian monster of depravity.

In C. S. Lewis's book *Prince Caspian*, volume 4 of the *Chronicles of Narnia* series, Lucy states: "Wouldn't it be dreadful if some day in our own world, at home, men started going wild inside, like the animals here, and still looked like men, so that you'd never know which were which?" Lucy comes close to describing the descent of the European people into liberalism. But they have gone beyond "wild inside." That status belongs to the colored heathens, who have never left that state (men on the outside, beasts within) throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe. The Europeans chose a different path. They went from wild on the inside to Christian on the inside. When they fell, they were incapable of becoming mere beasts again like the colored heathens whom they worship; they became reptilian inside.

Our world has gone beyond the darkness of heathenism: the institutionalization of liberalism has given us hell on earth. Liberals have retained their biologically human exteriors, but inside they have become reptilian monsters. You can't have rational debates or come to some kind of compromise with a liberal, because rational debates and equitable compromises presuppose some kind of humanity in both parties. That is a fatal error. Liberals have no humanity; they are cold-blooded, heartless reptiles. The advice contained in the old children's ditty is apropos: "Never smile at a crocodile, Never tip your hat and stop to talk awhile." You wouldn't jump into a snake pit and expect to dialogue with the vipers, so why should you expect to dialogue with the liberals? The democratic process was only meant for Christian whites; it was never meant for Christians and colored heathens, nor was it meant for reptilian liberals and Christian whites.

When white people attempt to return to "wild inside" paganism they always go one step lower; they become Satanic. They still, by and large, maintain the outward semblance of human beings, but their outward form cloaks their demonic hearts. In *Proverbs* we are told that a beautiful woman who lacks discretion is like a golden ring in a pig's snout. The sage of *Proverbs* is referring, of course, to the promiscuous pagan female. The modern feminists make such females look wonderful by comparison. At least the pagan female has not given herself up to "that which is against nature." We expect something better from the Christian woman than mere paganism. But when the feminists rule, we see something worse than a golden ring in a pig's snout. We see feminist vipers who hate all things natural and all things Christian.

Unlike the white neo-pagan, the Christian European does not want to return to paganism. He has set his sights on Christ. But even if the white Christian wanted to apostatize, he could not go back. Every attempt to return to the ancient Greeks or to the Vikings ends up in a bloodless, rationalized piece of sophistry that leaves its proponents defenseless against the liberals' reptilian onslaught. Their hatred is grounded in the hatred of God and the hatred of the white race. And their faith is in the colored races and in their own cold, bloodless minds and hearts. How can the neo-pagan face down that religion with his non-religion? Wouldn't it be much better to invoke the God whom the pagan Greeks and the pagan Vikings bent their knee to?

You can't tell the liberals that no multi-racial, multi-cultural civilization has ever survived, because the past has no meaning to reptilian liberals. And you can't tell the liberals that there has never been a civilization based on the satanic principles of feminism that has flourished as a civilization, because the concept of 'civilization' is meaningless to the liberals. Their only concern is for the destruction of the white race. That is the summit of their aspirations. They are envenomed from top to toe with "direnst cruelty." To dialogue with such creatures is suicide. Wilkie Collins, the Victorian author who specialized in mystery novels, used the drug laudanum to relieve his pain from a recurrent illness. Over the years, as the pain increased, Collins took larger and larger doses of laudanum. One day his manservant for some reason, possibly to relieve a headache or perhaps out of curiosity, took some of the laudanum, less than half the dose that Collins was taking regularly, and died as a result. The European people have adjusted to the deadly poison of liberalism as Collins adjusted to the laudanum. At times, the poison breaks out in its most virulent form – the French and Russian Revolutions – but the liberalism that has been institutionalized throughout the European nations has come upon the European people gradually. It had to come that way. If you could somehow transport a 19<sup>th</sup> century European, an everyman, to 21<sup>st</sup> century Europe, and show him a feminist coven, a gay marriage ceremony, a legalized abortion, or a black on white marriage, what would be his reaction? He would not believe that he was dealing with human beings. He would believe, and he would be correct, that he was dealing with creatures who were human on the outside, but who were in reality cold-blooded reptiles inside. If he was the timid sort, he would flee from such creatures. And if he was like unto a Walter Scott hero, he would take sword in hand and attack the inhuman spawns of Satan.

Of course there will be no attack on the citadels of Liberaldom, because the European people have been cut off from their past. The antique Europeans believed that history was moving toward one stupendous event – the return of Christ. The liberals have secularized that history; they believe mankind is progressing toward the kingdom of liberalkind on earth. That future

does not include white people. And it is a pity – no, it is a tragedy — that the non-reptilian, church-going whites do not see what the liberals have in store for them. They see their clergymen as representatives of Christ who are helping them to see a Christ purified of the racism and sexism of the past. But is the ‘purified’ Christ the real Christ? Isn’t he the false Aslan that C. S. Lewis writes about in *The Last Battle* and one of the false Christs that Christ warns us about in *Matthew 24:24*: “For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders: insomuch that if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.” Liberalism presents us with the wonder of progress, but is it the accumulated knowledge of the material world really a great sign and wonder? The diabolist George Bernard Shaw listed Pythagoras, Ptolemy, Kepler, Copernicus, Aristotle, Galileo, Newton, and Einstein as the greatest men of the world. Why? Because Shaw was a post-Christian European who worshipped the intellect of man abstracted from the heart of God. Christ did not leave us bereft when He left this earth. He left us the Holy Ghost to dwell in our hearts. But if we deny the Holy Ghost we will be left with the Bernard Shaws of the world, seeking signs and wonders from the men of philosophy and science.

Burke outed the liberals in his various writings on the French Revolution. He noted that it was the European intellectuals who could and did empty their hearts of all traces of humanity. This has been my experience as well. I have worked in academia and in blue collar jobs with the white grazers. The grazers are very depressing because they have been morally neutered; they are not full-blown reptilian liberals, but they do not see the evil of liberalism nor do they have any desire to reconnect with the Europe in which His word was made flesh. But it is in academia where a man, if he is still a man, finds the non-humans. There are no words I can write that can adequately convey the evil that exists in academia. And the ethos of academia rules the Western nations. Church, state, and society all have become part of academia. We all must be educated. We must learn to hate all things white and Christian. We must learn that reptilian hearts and liberal minds are the only hearts and minds fit to rule over us. Have my people learned all that? Yes, they have. But in the ungrammatical words of Badger in *The Wind in the Willows*: “It is time for us to learn them,” the liberals. The reptilian liberals will not stop ‘progressing’ until they have enveloped the European people in their coils and squeezed the lifeblood out of them. Resistance is only useless if whites refuse to be white. **Our race is part of our spiritual essence; without that essence we will not have the spiritual backbone to resist the serpentine coils of the liberal leviathan.**

Our kitchen stove currently has only one burner on which we can boil water. The other three burners can never quite reach the boiling point, even when we turn the temperature on high. Sadly, the white grazers are like unto our kitchen burners that are incapable of reaching the boiling point. They might get irritated with some aspect of liberalism, but they never reach the point of passionate hatred for the liberals that a truly European Christian should have for them. Why have they lost their hearts? Why don’t they love Him and the antique Europeans enough to hate the reptilian liberals? The cry of racism has been and continues to be one of the liberals’ most effective tactics. And perhaps the most effective tactic of all has been the appeal to the white grazers’ intellectual pride. The liberals have always presented themselves as the scientific, progressive truth-seekers while the antique Europeans have been and still are presented as moribund, unscientific, racist, sexist, and stupid. But all that having been said, we are still left with an apostasy from Him, our Lord and our Kinsman. I said that I didn’t have the words to describe the horror of liberalism, so I’ll turn to the Bard of Avon. [His description of Lady Macbeth](#) reveals the essence of liberalism. The liberals are at war with all things natural and Christian.<sup>(1)</sup> And in order to accomplish their “fell purpose” they must needs blend their reptilian souls with the devil:

Come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,  
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full  
Of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood;  
Stop up th' access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctions visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, your murd'ring ministers,  
Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,  
And pall thee in the dunkest smoke of hell  
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark  
To cry, “Hold, hold!”

The liberals hold the field because there are no longer any Europeans willing to enter the lists against them. Or so it seems. But the spirit of God still works in human hearts. Christ has not abandoned the European people – they have left Him. In *Matthew 24:24* He seems to suggest that there will always be a faithful remnant. In that hope we live. +

---

(1) Feminism has ‘progressed’ beyond the condemnation of white males for the ‘abuse’ of women. They now condemn the white males — it is always the white males, never the males of color who are condemned — simply for being heterosexual white males. The condemnation of heterosexuality is in line with the liberals’ condemnation of all natural instincts, and the condemnation of white males only is in line with the liberals’ condemnation of all things Christian. We must remember that the white race is the Christ-bearing race. The white males’ apostasy from that role has not altered the liberals’ hatred of them.

# No Longer Under Their Dominion

November 10, 2018

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Muscular Christianity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Burke, George Fitzhugh



They know, that he who fears God fears nothing else; and therefore they eradicate from the mind, through their Voltaire, their Helvetius, and the rest of that infamous gang, that only sort of fear which generates true courage. Their object is, that their fellow citizens may be under the dominion of no awe, but that of their committee of research, and of their lanterne. —Burke, [A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly](#)

---

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord. —[Joshua 24: 15](#)

---

Although I went out and voted straight Republican in the midterm elections, I did not vote because I believe it is a citizen's duty to participate in the democratic process. I voted to support a man who is fighting a courageous, rearguard defense of a white Christian army retreating from the battlefield after losing a war to an implacable, merciless foe who will not take any prisoners; they will kill all their enemies.

Trump is the best we'll ever get within the democratic process. His conversion to millennialist Christianity is sincere. That faith is not my faith, nor is it the faith of the antique Europeans, but it is closer in ethos to the Christian faith than liberalism. I don't believe anything good will come from within the democratic process, because the democratic process is from the devil, but when one courageous man is fighting a rearguard action that might save a few white lives, I think we should support him.

Having said all that in defense of Trump, I must add that I believe it is against the interest of white Europeans to place too much stock in elections. Despite the Orbáns and the Trumps, who are both anomalies soon to be supplanted by more thoroughgoing liberals, it is clear that the democratic process is a very effective weapon of the liberals, which they are using to destroy the white race. The formula is simple: The liberals come to power through the democratic process. Once in power, they try to make the white grazers dependent on them through government jobs and medical programs, but in the long run, the liberals plan to phase out the white grazers by replacing them with the colored heathens from abroad. That is a winning hand, because in a democracy all you need is an aggregate herd in order to justify your bloodletting. Once you achieve a majority, whatever you do has 'the sanction of law.'

It is already too late for whites in the United States and in the nations of Western Europe to save their nations, because even if they close their borders immediately, there are just too many colored heathens already in their countries. In Eastern Europe it is a different story. If the people in those nations learn from the mistakes of the Western European countries and repudiate democracy in favor of nationalist dictatorships, they might survive. However, the nations of Eastern Europe have universities, and where there are universities there are liberals. Only a complete repudiation of liberalism will save the people of Eastern Europe from being destroyed by the liberals' democratic formula, which is massive colored immigration under the sanction of the liberals' law.

Sadly, the white grazers who voted for Trump do not see him as a rearguard defender of a defeated people. They hope that somehow he can actually do something to help them against an enemy that seems, for reasons they cannot understand, to hate them. There is a great deal of white rage out there. If a non-democratic leader could direct that rage, the liberals and the colored barbarians could be defeated. A case in point — where I vote, there are not enough registered Democrats in the area to make it worthwhile to the Democrats to have someone at the polls. So, on election day there was only one Republican passing out literature, a man in his mid-sixties, wearing a hunting jacket and a NRA hat. Before and after voting I talked with him. He complained of the caravan and of the liberals' underhanded tactic of paying women and children to march in the caravan. He complained of the new wave of Mexican immigrants who had no intention of learning English or preserving "our way of life." He complained about the American schools, which are polluting young Americans, and he complained about our cities, which had become unlivable because of high crime rates the liberals seemed to be indifferent to. I let him talk, and when he was finished, I pointed out that all the ills he was talking about were not going to be changed by Republican victories. "You and I are a dying breed; when our generation passes, the liberals will have an overwhelming majority. They will impose their will on the white minority." He conceded the point and said he didn't know what else could be done. That is sad, because there is something else that can be done, but it is not democratic. We should follow Alfred, Havelock, and Forrest, who put the defense of their people above the democratic process.

The white males of the European nations might be very confused — how could it be otherwise when the leaders in the churches are like unto Francis the blasphemers and the leaders in most of the Western nations are like unto Angela Merkel? But the white males do understand that the liberal elites hate them. They know that they have been marked for economic disenfranchisement, and they know that they are considered moral pariahs, not fit to live with decent liberals and the glorious colored races of the earth. So far their rage has been self-destructive — drugs, alcohol, and suicide. But what if that rage could be harnessed? (1) We, the white remnant, must raise nondemocratic leaders who think with their hearts, hearts committed to their people and their God.

The leadership of the white Europeans is currently leading the European people astray. Let's take Rush Limbaugh and the English Defence League as examples. Right before the midterm elections at a rally with the President, Limbaugh correctly stated that Trump was the best we were ever going to get, but then he went on to say that we had to defend our culture and the Constitution. That's not good enough. What is our culture? It is not '1776' and our 'democratic way of life.' All that is good in our culture comes from our white Christian heritage. If we are ever to become a nation instead of an aggregate herd, we must be white and Christian. We cannot tolerate liberals or colored heathens within our nations. And what about our Constitution? It is a meaningless piece of paper when it is referenced independent of our white Christian traditions —

*Throw our paper platforms, preambles and resolutions, guaranties and constitutions, into the fire, and we should be none the worse off, provided we retained our institutions — and the necessities that begot and have, so far, continued them. —Fitzhugh, [Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters](#)*

Members of the English Defence League are like unto the Rush Limbaugh conservatives. They want a Britain that protects the people from terrorists, but their Britain is a multi-racial, multi-cultural Britain that provides a haven for the colored heathens and the Moslems. The white working class Britons, who are the true Britons, are taxed out of existence in order to support the non-white and therefore non-British element that wants to destroy the white Britons. You are not a defense league, you are not English — you are one with the liberals if you will not defend your own people and the God of your people. White people are currently being used to serve the colored races and their heathen gods. Is that our destiny? Are we not a

people and do we not have our own God whom we should serve, while forsaking all other gods? It seems so obvious that I shouldn't have to say it – white people have a right to be a distinct people separate from the nonwhite races. It shouldn't be left up to the Dalai Lama to defend white people's right to exist.

While an undergraduate I attended a conference sponsored by the 'religion' department of the university, the topic was the decline of religion. At the conference a collection of priests, ministers, and religious experts decided that rationalism had killed the Christian faith, but they also concluded that there was no returning to the age of faith, because, "We are all Hegelian rationalists now." But are we, the people of Europe, all Hegelian rationalists? This is the issue upon which our destiny on this earth and through all eternity hinges. Is the Christian faith a philosophy that has been proven false by the rules of logic and reason? The intellectuals of the West, not excepting the intellectuals in the church, have conceded that the Christian faith is not true. And the European peasantry has been morally neutered because they have been educated to view life through the minds of the philosophers. It's a second fall of man, this descent into rationalism, and it has been the death knell of the European people. I must assert, against the intelligentsia of Western Europe, that there is a wisdom that transcends rationalism. I am not a Hegelian rationalist. There is more wisdom in Hank Williams' famous song, "I Saw the Light," in which he expresses his heartfelt faith in Jesus Christ than there is in all the tomes of philosophy ever written. Faith is not a philosophy, it is something beyond philosophy. When our people break the chains of rationalism they will see the light and they will be a people again: They will be the Christ Bearers.

When the Jacobin-organized mob gathered outside the Palace of Versailles with the clear intent of storming it, Louis XVI ordered his soldiers not to fire on the mob because there were women and children in their ranks. Was Louis acting the part of a Christian gentleman? No, he was not. He was acting the part of a man who had come to doubt the legitimacy of his position as the defender of the faith and the defender of his people. The philosophical speculators, the caustic wits, had planted doubt in Louis's mind. Maybe just a little bit of liberalism could appease the mob? But what kind of people use women and children as cannon fodder for their cause? Is it possible to deal kindly with such people? It was Louis's duty to protect his family and the families of the loyal French citizens, who, because of Louis's folly, were all massacred along with the loyal Swiss guards and Cossacks who never left their posts.

It seems as if, so long as the Europeans remain in thrall to the philosophical speculators in church, academia, and the media (the pamphleteers), that we are doomed to repeat over and over again the fatal mistake of Louis the XVI.

If we look at the caravan invasion of the United States, we can see the Jacobins at work. They are paying women and children to walk along with the invading army in the hope that Trump will either be unable to order his troops to fire on them or that he *will* order his troops to fire on them, thus giving the Jacobins a chance to label him a moral pariah. I do not think any of the European leaders have the will necessary to stop the caravan-type invasions of their nations. In fact, most of the European leaders, Putin, Trump, and Orbán excepted, are welcoming the invaders into their nations. Only a white Christian leader, a man imbued with pietas, will fight for his own people against the Jacobins and the colored heathens. The Christian does not fight against non-combatants, but if the enemy makes women and children into combatants, then it is a Christian's duty to fight the enemy. It is a painful duty, but if there are no Europeans willing to defend their own, there will soon be no more Europeans.

The battle for Europe and its people was lost when the philosophical speculators such as Rousseau, Voltaire, and Shaw were allowed to attack the European people from Mt. Utopia. The European people were found wanting in every aspect of their lives, from the viewpoint of the self-anointed Olympians. We must do what is necessary to defend our people – yes, we must stockpile arms and develop our own militias — but all that will follow from the one thing that is needful. We need to reestablish our connection to our past. The antique Europeans were not moral pariahs, they were moral giants. They loved their own and they loved the stranger to the extent it was humanly possible to love the stranger. Why is it that the most demonized whites are the pre-Civil War Southerners and the pre-1990 South Africans? They were the only people in history who managed to elevate the black savage to a level above sheer bestiality, and yet they are demonized as racists. That continues to be the fate of all the European people who lived and died during the Christian centuries of Europe: They have been demonized and thrown into the dustbins of history. And now the modern Europeans are told that they can only survive if they denounce their ancestors and do homage to the liberals' colored gods. And the leaders of the West have complied with the liberals' edicts. From Merkel and Trudeau to Francis the blasphemer, it is the same litany – whites must die in atonement for... for what? The only thing the modern European needs to atone for is his acceptance of the liberals' attack on the antique Europeans. Our 'racist' ancestors knew the living God; if we embrace them we too shall know the living God. And then we will fight, not as the colored heathens and the liberals fight – they fight to eradicate all that is good and decent and Christian. We will fight as Alfred fought, in defense of what is good and decent and Christian. +

---

(1) The recent murders by and subsequent suicide of the white Marine is an example of the white rage that must be properly channeled. Maybe that man had that within him that was not amenable to nobler actions than indiscriminate killings. But possibly, had he lived in a Christian European culture instead of a liberal culture, he would have been a different man.

We should be clear about the nature of liberalism. The liberals are determined to destroy all white resistance to their regime. We cannot respond to the violence of the liberals with doctrinaire pacifism. Shedding blood for the sake of shedding blood is evil, but it is also a great evil to refuse to shed blood in defense of your own kith and kin. The recent assault on Tucker Carlson's home is just one more indication that you can't deal peacefully with liberals. They do not fear whites because they know whites will not meet liberal violence with a violence commensurate with the liberals' violence. In the name of the God of Mercy, we must defend our people against the liberal and the colored barbarians who have no mercy, because they hate Christ and love the devil.

# From Darkness to Light

November 17, 2018

Categories: Christian counter-attack, Defense of the White Race, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edmund Burke, Robert Lewis Dabney



Before I go whence I shall not return, even to the land of darkness and the shadow of death;

A land of darkness, as darkness itself; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and where the light is as darkness. – [Job 10: 21-22](#)

---

The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide! – H. F. Lyte

There was a remarkable television show called *Yancy Derringer* that ran for one year from 1958-1959, remarkable because it depicted a Confederate soldier and his people in a positive light. The 1950s through the early 1960s were the golden years for Westerns. Sometimes all three television channels carried Westerns at the same time. But you need a belief in good and evil to enjoy Westerns. It is no coincidence that shows such as *Cheyenne* and *The Rifleman* passed out of existence in the mid-sixties when the Christian ethical hangover from the 19<sup>th</sup> century died out.

You could not technically call *Yancy Derringer* a Western, although it was a Western in ethos, because it was set in New Orleans, a few years after the Civil War. Let's call it a Southern. The title character is a former officer in the Confederate Army who has come home, only to discover that his plantation Waverly has been turned into a gambling casino. Standing on what he regards as sacred ground, the home of his father and his grandfather, Yancy says, "This is my home. I was born and raised here, my father and my grandfather lived here." Then in a magnificent moment, a white moment, Yancy explodes. He turns over the gambling tables while striking everyone who tries to stop him. By the end of the episode, the first one in the series and by far the best, Yancy has cleansed his home of the villains who desecrated it. The scene in which he overturns the gambling tables is reminiscent of Christ overturning the tables of the money lenders in the Temple, and the final scene in which Yancy throws a dagger into the heart of the leader of the despilers is reminiscent of Odysseus's cleansing of the great hall after his home was violated by the evil suitors. But Yancy, like all the magnificent men of the old South, is Christian, not pagan. His bloody defense of his home is necessary and proper.

I bring up a 'mere story' without any apologies, because we, the European people, are from the "dear, dear land of story books." The European people, like Yancy Derringer, have seen their racial home violated. But unlike Yancy Derringer, they have not driven the despilers from their racial home. R. L. Dabney in his book, [A Defense of Virginia and the South](#), written shortly after the Civil War, tells us that a man's racial hearth fire is his home and that "a people should rather contend for their rights upon their threshold than upon their hearthstone." All the Southern people's laws against racial amalgamation were necessary measures to defend their threshold which protected their racial hearthstone. The Jacobins of the North attacked the Southern threshold and violated the sanctity of the Southern people's racial home. But through the heroism of men like Nathan Bedford Forrest, the Southern people, during the infamous Deconstruction era of Southern history, falsely called the Reconstruction era, drove the Northern despilers from their home. They fought for their racial hearth fire and maintained it until the 1950s when they became like unto the rest of the European people – a flock of white sheep led by maniacal Jacobins intent on sacrificing the white race to the less than tender mercies of the colored heathens. The code of the Virginians is the code of the white man. When we denounce the pre-Civil War Virginians and/or the apartheid South Africans, we denounce ourselves, we defile our souls, in order to curry favor with the devil and his minions.

*But while we believe that "God made of one blood all nations of men to dwell under the whole heavens," we know that the African has become, according to a well-known law of natural history, by the manifold influences of the ages, a different, fixed species of the race, separated from the white man by traits bodily, mental and moral, almost as rigid and permanent as those of genus. Hence the offspring of an amalgamation must be a hybrid race, stamped with all the feebleness of the hybrid, and incapable of the career of civilization and glory as an independent race. And this apparently is the destiny which our conquerors have in view. If indeed they can mix the blood of the heroes of Manassas with this vile stream from the fens of Africa, then they will never again have occasion to tremble before the righteous resistance of Virginian freemen; but will have a race supple and vile enough to fill that position of political subjection, which they desire to fix on the South.*

The Samuel Francis-type populists, who are obsessed with democratic solutions to a tragedy that was inflicted upon the European people through the democratic process, bid us look to Hungary and Poland as exemplars we should imitate. But that is a false reading of European history. The Eastern Europeans are in the position of defending their threshold against the colored heathens. Their racial hearthstone has yet to be violated. We, the whites of the Western European nations, cannot fight a battle in defense of our familial and racial threshold because that threshold has already been violated. The colored heathens are in our home. To blather on about restricting immigration is the equivalent of closing the barn door after the horses have already escaped from the barn. Yancy Derringer did not go to the threshold of his home and vet the new arrivals. Instead he did what we should do – he drove the despilers from his home.

The European people are now in the position of the Southern people during the 'Reconstruction' era. Their Jacobin rulers have made all racial threshold laws illegal, and they have violated the sanctity of the European people's racial hearthstone. Our response should be like unto the response of the Southern people immediately after the war. Thus far the modern Europeans have not responded to the violation of their racial home as the fictional character Yancy Derringer and the real life Nathan Bedford Forrest responded. Why haven't they tried to drive the invaders from their racial home? Isn't it obvious? The modern Europeans do not share the same faith as the 19<sup>th</sup> century Southerners. Their faith is not the 'bred in the bone' faith of the antique Europeans. No European prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century would have permitted the violation of his racial home without a fight. And that white pietas was not confined to just the Southerners of the 1860s. The Northern leadership was Jacobin, but the peasantry of the North was like unto the peasantry of the South, which is why the war had to be presented to the Northerners as a war to 'save the Union' rather than a war to deify the negro. My grandfather's grandfather (I know I repeat myself with this story) fought for the Union in the Civil War, survived the War, and lived into his late 90s. I got a chance, as an adult, to talk to my grandfather about his grandfather. The Union veteran had told my grandfather that he would never have fought for the Union had he known the Union intended to grant equal rights to the negro.

The deification of the colored heathens and the democratization of the white race came upon the people of the West incrementally, through democratic platitudes and universalist pap. But once the Europeans no longer had the faith which is bred in the bone, the Jacobins could proceed to accelerate the process of white genocide. They now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the first century of the post-Christian era of European history, can dispense with the gradual destruction of the white race. They can kill, maim and destroy at an accelerated rate of speed, because the white Europeans have been morally neutered by intellectual Christianity and the democratic process. It is currently easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than it is for the white Europeans to put a halt to white genocide. How then can we be saved? "With God all things are possible."

A man can't be held morally culpable for being born in Satandom, but he can be held morally culpable if he accepts the rule of Satan as the natural state of man. Burke saw the various European powers rushing to make peace with the new Jacobin government once Robespierre had been eliminated. But every single member of the new Jacobin government had given their approval to the assassination of the King and Queen, and every man who dealt with them shared in their crime – they had the blood of the martyrs on their hands, for both the King and the Queen of France, whatever their faults, were most certainly martyrs for the Christian faith. We can't be expected to simply grab our guns and attack the citadels of Liberalism head on. But we can be expected – it is our solemn duty – to refuse to give internal assent to the reign of Satan while we work with might and main to overthrow the men and women who rule in Satan's name. And when I speak of overthrowing the liberals, I am not speaking of voting for a Republican candidate over a Democratic candidate or a Conservative candidate over a Labour candidate. I am talking about a Christian counterrevolution designed to destroy the liberals' satanic system of government and its accompanying manners and customs. We need to replace their system of government and their manners and customs with a culture and government grounded in the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. The Christian government will follow when we replace the customs and manners of Satandom with the customs and manners of a Christian people. That is all in all.

At the time of the French Revolution the European people faced their moment on the heath. Would they give themselves over to liberalism and accept the religion of Satan, whose adherents cover up their bloodletting with cries of liberty, equality, and fraternity, or would they, like Banquo, fight against that Satanic temptation and pray for divine assistance: "Merciful powers, Restrain in me the cursed thoughts that nature, Gives way to in repose!" If we do not ask the God of mercy for the grace to resist the temptation to live comfortably in Satandom, we will be consumed by Satan and his ministering angels of destruction.

We can't sup with the devil. In my own anti-nation, the United Negro Republic of America, I have seen two courageous white men absolutely destroyed because they simply could not see that liberalism is from the devil. Trump has been demonized by mad-dog liberals and cut adrift by the conservative-liberals because he has tried to infuse a modicum of white pietas into a Satanic system of government that holds white pietas as the unpardonable sin. Likewise Tucker Carlson. His home was attacked because he too tried to inject an element of white pietas into a system that will not tolerate white pietas. "This is war!" the Antifaers screamed outside Carlson's home while his wife cowered alone and frightened in the recesses of her home. In the name of the God of mercy, let's give them war.

At the time of the Civil War in America, the leaders of the South were still bred-in-the-bone Christians, while the leadership in the North consisted of Unitarians, deists, and intellectual Christians. The Northern victory was not complete until the Southern leadership in church and state became one with the Jacobin North. Once there was that unity of thought and heart it was possible for the liberals to inoculate the peasantry, North and South, with the religion of liberalism. The same dechristianization process, the deblooding of the European people, took place in Europe. First the European intelligentsia answered Dostoevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" with a 'no,' and then the European peasantry were gradually induced to accept the rule of Satan over Christ's reign of charity. Just as the infrastructures, the dams and the bridges, and disaster prevention measures against fires and floods, have become non-infrastructures and non-disaster prevention programs as states like California became colorized, so have the European people become a non-people now that they have permitted the colored invaders to desecrate their racial hearthstone. What can stop the desecration? It won't be stopped by voting.

In his [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#), Burke makes the point that, "The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines." Then he goes on to describe the Jacobins and their total break with Christian Europe:

*It has not been, as has been falsely and insidiously represented, that these miscreants had only broke with their old Government. They made a schism with the whole universe; and that schism extended to almost every thing great and small. For one, I wish, since it is gone thus far, that the breach had been so compleat, as to make all intercourse impracticable; but, partly by accident, partly by design, partly from the resistance of the matter, enough is left to preserve intercourse, whilst amity is destroyed or corrupted in its principle.*

Modern Europe has become Jacobin France; it is a total break with the customs, manners and traditions of our European ancestors who loved Christ and hated the devil. I, like Burke, wish that certain outward symbols of old Europe were not used by the liberals to make the white grazers believe they are living in something other than a commonwealth consecrated to the devil. However, if a man has anything within, he can see the world that he lives in. Is white pietas completely dead? It appears so. I come again to the camel and the needle's eye. Lord abide with us. +

---

**Correction:** Last week, the sentence about the Swiss guards who stayed at their posts during the French Revolution should not have included the Cossacks. It should have read – "The Cossacks who defended the Czar during the Russian Revolution suffered the same fate as the Swiss guards." I'm sure the Cossacks would have fought for Louis XVI, but of course they were not there.

# Still Our Ancient Foe

November 24, 2018

Categories: Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy, Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Kenneth Grahame, Thomas Hughes



And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

[Luke 4: 1-8](#)

---

Now that there is no longer any opposition to liberalism, the liberals have made explicit that which was always implicit in liberalism. They believe that every kind of violence – rape, assault, torture, and murder is licit so long as it is done to cleanse the republic of the impure. “We are against violence,” the liberals tell us, “unless it is violence against fascist racists.” But aren’t all white people fascist racists? Yes, they are, except the special Illuminati, who have transcended whiteness. So then we must conclude that the liberals mean to exterminate all the non-illuminated whites. And they are doing just that. This purge is a repeat performance. Robespierre was against capital punishment, except (there is always that exception) when capital punishment was used to cleanse the republic. The liberal Jacobins will never be satisfied until there are no white people left. They keep the grazers in line by letting them think that they can be part of the Illuminati. “Let the white South Africans perish, and let the white racists in every European nation be exterminated, what is that to me. I am not racist, I will be spared.” Such is the fantasy of the white grazer. The angelic liberals will put a mark on his door and he will be saved from death. But will he? No, he will not, nor in the end will the Illuminati themselves be saved from the black plague that they created to destroy the non-illuminated whites.

The liberals always sing hymns of joy every time a new wave of colored heathens enter a European nation, but does it ever occur to the liberals that their world, which is sustained by whites, will perish when the colored heathens replace the whites? No, that never does occur to the white liberals. Our reason is illuminated by what is in our hearts. The liberals’ hearts belong to Satan. There are no rational arguments that can make them denounce Satan. They support the colored heathens because the colored heathens are the human conduits to Satan. And conversely they hate the white race because whites once were, and could be again, the human conduits to Christ the Lord. It is the eternal battle of good vs. evil. The liberals have made their choice while the European grazers remain in limbo. In that comatose state they are easily manipulated by the devil.

The conservatives’ failure to understand the religious dynamic of liberalism has led us to a dismal swamp of futility. The conservatives continue to point out the irrationality of liberalism while the liberals continue to intensify their devotion to all things Satanic. The liberals do not see that their cushy government jobs will cease when there is a colored majority. The neo-con liberals do not see that an egalitarian army consisting of feminists and colored heathens cannot fight. Soon, and quite possibly now, we will no longer have an army that can defeat either Russia or China. (It wouldn’t be so bad if Russia took Alaska and the rest of the United States, but China is a different matter.) And then the neo-cons won’t be able to play with their paper soldier army anymore. And the feminists? There is no feminism in the cultures of the colored heathens. Since liberalism will be no more when Heathendom replaces Liberaldom, why not welcome the colored heathens into the white nations? We should not do that because we, the white remnant, are not heathens. White Christians should not desire to live in a black South Africa, an Islamic Britain, or the Aztec state of California. It is not an either/or proposition: reptilian liberalism or colored barbarism. The white European should reject both, but as long as the European people believe that liberalism and Christianity are compatible, they will continue to support white genocide in the hope that the liberal angel of death will pass them by.

The oft-quoted witticism, attributed to a whole host of wits, which suggests that a man who is not a liberal when he is young has no heart, but if he is still a liberal when he is old then he has no head, is, like all attempts to be clever rather than truthful, a very great lie. The lie contained in the immoral witticism is that liberals, even when they are in error as they are in their youthful, halcyon days, are still not in sin because their hearts are in the right place. And the conservatives, even when in later years their practical, cynical wisdom turns out to be closer to reality than that of the ‘idealistic’ liberals, are still considered evil because they have no humanity, they lack hearts. The deadly assumption underlying that ‘clever’ witticism is that liberals have good hearts. That is contrary to reality. Was the devil well-intended when he told Adam and Eve to defy God? Byron thought so and so did Gide and a whole host of European intellectuals, but the antique Europeans, as a whole, did not view the devil as the hero in the story of the Garden of Eden. And then we come to the French Revolution. Were the liberals, the Jacobins, really men and women who had their hearts in the right place? I would say that the Jacobins had hearts that belonged to the father of liberalism, Byron’s hero, and that those hearts were evil. But then I am a reactionary beyond the ken of liberal humanity. And that is my point. Shouldn’t we all, we Europeans, if we have any real humanity, be beyond the ken of liberal humanity?

The 20<sup>th</sup> century did produce men with no hearts. The theoretical conservatives in church and state were men who saw reason divorced from the human heart as the truth and the way. They fit neatly into the parameters of the previously mentioned witticism. But the real conservatives, men such as Edmund Burke and Anthony Jacob, did not divorce reason from their passions. They loved their people and used their reason to champion their people’s cause. Faith springs from a heart imbued with that charity of honor, it does not stem from the brains of the philosophers and theologians. “There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophies.” The liberals have hearts consecrated to the devil. He gives them the passion to strike out at God through their attack on the white race. How can we counter the liberals’ attack? We can eschew the conservatism of systems and embrace the conservatism of the heart, which is the conservatism of Ratty in [The Wind in the Willows](#):

*‘By it and with it and on it and in it,’ said the Rat. ‘It’s brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It’s my world, and I don’t want any other. What it hasn’t got is not worth having, and what it doesn’t know is not worth knowing. Lord! the times we’ve had together!’*

“Still our ancient foe, does seek to work us woe.” When we forget that, we lose the war against Satan and his minions. Our “ancient foe” cannot be defeated by reason divorced from the heart. Chateaubriand’s observations on the fall of man should be heeded:

*Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undertake so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.* [The Genius of Christianity](#)

The European intellectuals were so impressed with their God-given reason that they decided to go it alone. They gave an intellectual assent to God, but they no longer were attached to God, they no longer had a heart to heart connection to the living God, because they thought that their reason had made such a connection unnecessary. And that pride of reason leads to liberalism, because it creates a void in the human heart that must be filled. Just as communism is a derivative of capitalism, so is liberalism a derivative of intellectual Christianity. We must have a faith that touches our hearts. If we give only an intellectual assent to God and the things of God, without giving Him our hearts, we will either become liberals, who have given themselves over to Satan, or we will be defeated by the liberals because we haven't the heart to fight them.

If we can believe the Gospel accounts, and why should we question them, we see that Christ wanted something more from his followers than mere intellectual acceptance of His divine status. He wanted their love: "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?" Christina Rossetti speaks for our people when she asks: "What can I give him?" And then she answers her own question: "Give my heart." It is striking how often St. Paul stresses that one great theme – we must give Him our hearts. If we don't love much, if our reason is not illuminated by Him, then we will fall prey to the devil who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. Liberalism is an all devouring hellhound who does the work of his master. With an unerring instinct, that hellhound attacks whatever connects mankind to the living God. And it is the purveyors of 'go it alone' intellectual Christianity that have left us defenseless against the hound of hell, which is liberalism.

The question that Thomas Hughes poses in [Tom Brown at Oxford](#) when his hero is confronted with a choice between Socrates or St. Paul is, "Shall we be heathens or Christians?" St. Paul's way is the way of our people, the way of hearts that loved much. There is a great dichotomy between St. Paul's faith and the faith of the theologians that followed him. There is no dichotomy between St. Paul's faith and the antique Europeans' storybook faith in the Man of Sorrows who redeems us from sin and death. Why did we reject the romance of the Christ story and replace it with a philosophy called Christianity? It is always that "pride of science" that keeps us from the living God. Intellectual Christianity is Socratic Christianity; its adherents gather around the first circle of hell, clinging to that first rung while trying to convince themselves that reason alone will keep them from falling deeper into the pit.

The liberals use the barrier of race to keep the intellectual Christians from approaching the living God. If white pietas is evil, if it is the unpardonable sin, then the Pauline Europeans who loved much were wrong. Then St. Paul was wrong about the wisdom of the circumcised heart, and Christ was wrong when He asked Peter, "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?" He should have told Peter to "Go and think about God, get your act together intellectually, and come back to me then." The devils that went over the cliff with the swine knew who Christ was, and they feared and loathed Him. Likewise the liberals: they know in their satanic hearts that they must destroy the white race in order to attack Him whom they hate. White pietas, which leads the European to Christ, must die so that Satan can reign on earth as he reigns in hell. Standing against that hellish, reptilian vision of utopia is the European remnant, the people who believe as the antique Europeans believed, that His kingdom come lives in hearts that love much, and His will shall be done by those same loving hearts. +

# Lo! He Abhors Not the Virgin's Womb

December 1, 2018

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas

Tags: John Donne, Shakespeare



Yea, Lord, we greet thee, born this happy morning,  
Jesus, to thee be all glory giv'n;  
Word of the Father now in flesh appearing;

---

After a verbal exchange with Feste, the Lady Oliva's fool, Viola, the heroine of Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*, realizes that Feste is anything but a fool.

*This fellow is wise enough to play the fool,  
And to do that well craves a kind of wit.  
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,  
The quality of persons, and the time,  
And, like the haggard, check at every feather  
That comes before his eye. This is a practice  
As full of labour as a wise man's art;  
For folly that he wisely shows is fit,  
But wise men, folly-fall'n, quite taint their wit.*

In modern Liberaldom, any man who wants to make a living must not offend the principalities and powers of Liberaldom. He must be wise enough to play the fool. He must pretend, even if he is not a liberal, to be in complete accord with all the basic tenets of liberalism, particularly the main tenet: 'Thou shalt love the negro with thy whole heart, mind, and soul, and thou shalt hate the white man with all thy heart, mind, and soul.' If the white grazer is found deficient, if he violates the great commandment, he will be cast into outer darkness where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Independent of the immorality of supporting liberalism, and we really can't separate ourselves from that issue, is the problem of the ever-changing nature of liberalism. Liberalism is an express train. The first station stop is called "equality for all." That is where the colored heathens are invited on the train with the whites. The second station is the "some are more equal than others" stop. At that station the whites are piled into the box cars, they are no longer allowed in the passenger section of the train. At the next station stop, the "white genocide station," the whites are taken out of the box cars and herded into the stockyards where they will be slaughtered. And then the train moves on to its final destination – which is hell.

The difficulty in coming to some kind of terms with the engineers of the liberal train is that they move past the different stations so fast. A case in point – about 24 years ago I was asked, by a conservative magazine editor, to write a series of articles for his magazine. I jumped at the opportunity because at that particular time I was struggling to support a wife and children. I sent off the first article, full of hope and expectation. I honestly thought the article would be well received. There was nothing, from my point of view, controversial about what I had written. The article was not about race. So I was very surprised when the editor asked me to take out a reference I had made to "Christian Europe." I refused to take out the reference, and as a consequence my career as a conservative pundit was over before it began. I had failed to see just how far to the left the political spectrum had shifted. Even the "conservatives" were too liberal to permit a good word to be said about the antique Europeans. And it has gotten much worse in the last 24 years. Men are fired for using words such as "niggardly" and terms such as "cotton-pickin'." Nor is it enough to remain silent about issues pertaining to the sacred negro. Anything less than enthusiastic support is seen as hostility to the liberals' regime, and that hostility is punished. How did we come to this pass? Why is white pietas, which is our only connection to the living God, proscribed in church and state? And why do white people submit to the proscription?

I must come back to the same theme again. White people are the only people who have made the hatred of their own people into a religion. All our major institutions – our churches, our schools, our universities, and the various media outlets – preach hatred of the white race. Why do the whites stand alone, hating their own people and worshipping the people of other races? The whites stand alone in their hatred of whites because they stood alone in their acceptance of Christ as Lord and Savior. Christianity is a dangerous religion; it must be taken to heart, it must be lived, in order to be the life-sustaining force that once inspired our people. We must believe His cross, the cross that "leadeth us," is our salvation. If we refuse to take up the cross we will become post-Christian intellectuals, we will become liberals who hate their own people, or we will become white grazers who tolerate the hatred of their own people. There is an overwhelming beauty at the heart of the Christ story. But it is a moral beauty that can only be seen by a human heart, a heart enflamed by His love in and through the channels of grace He has provided for us. Without white pietas we cannot know the Savior. We will be left with our intellects alone, and our intellects alone always produce men and women who see with, not through the eye. They see nature and nature's god, the noble savage, they do not see the beauty of the Man of Sorrows who has redeemed the world.

All heresies emanate from the clergy, and then spread outward to the laity. The reason the heresies start with the clergy is because the clergy are the men of intellect. They think about God until they think Him into a closed box of their own devising. It is always the humanity of God that gives the churchmen problems. They can't really accept the incarnate God, the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. So they take refuge in either a non-incarnate Pharisical-Sadducean God who would not deem to soil Himself by taking human flesh, or else they take refuge in the Socratic Christ, who hands down his philosophical precepts to the thinking men.

The liberals' religious hatred of the white race stems from the churchmen's qualms about the incarnation of our Lord and Savior. St. Augustine, who never quite left his Manichaeism behind him, asserted that there was the City of God, which was the organized Catholic Church, and the City of Man, which consisted of the human flotsam that had to be avoided at all costs. If we excuse St. Augustine, which I do not, because he lived in a time when the European barbarians were at the gates of Rome, we still must ask why the churchmen who followed St. Augustine, the churchmen who could see the Word made flesh in the European nations, still maintained that there was no such thing as Christian Europe. We are told that the people from whom Rembrandt, Handel, and millions of other witnesses to the Word made flesh came, were an illusion. They didn't exist. But if they didn't exist, to whom should we look to in

order to see the Word which was made flesh? Should we look to the men of intellect? "Yes," say the churchmen. "You must look to us!" But if we must look to the men of intellect, why should we not look to the men of intellect outside the church? If intellect is all, let us look to the men who were too smart to be fooled by the Christ story. The churchmen acquiesce to the demonization of the white race in the hopes that their modified philosophical Christianity, a Christianity that demythologizes the incarnate Lord, will prove acceptable to the liberals who will then leave the organized churches intact and allow them to be part of the brave new world of science, reason, and the noble savages of color. But that world is not a world that men and women with hearts of flesh can live in.

The mantra of the heretic in every age is that he equates the hatred of humanity with the love of God. The heretic thinks he must hate all things human in order to champion God. But doesn't that leave the God-Man out of the picture? Our Lord took flesh and dwelt among us so that He could join the human with the divine. If we renounce our humanity we renounce our connection to the living God. This is where the connection between the liberals and the Christian heretics comes into play. The heretic denounces the Word that was made flesh in the European people, because he refuses to accept the fact that humanity can be sanctified by the grace of God. The liberals agree. They refuse to see the moral beauty of the antique Europeans because they hate, like the fallen angel, the Word made flesh. The maniacal hatred of the liberals for white people is an ancient hatred that is fueled by the devil. He cannot strike God directly, but he can attack God by attacking the people who formed an incorporate union with Christ. Wherever the image of God in man appears, Satan strikes. Has he totally effaced that image? No, he hasn't, but we are in dire straits. The image of God in man has been banished to the catacombs of Europe where men and women who "receive Him still" hold a place at their racial hearth fire for the Son of God.

We cannot continue to deceive ourselves about the nature of liberalism. Donne said that, "No man is an Island," least of all John Donne, "because I am involved in Mankind." But John Donne was speaking as a European who had discovered, through the grace of God, that his humanity was part of Christ's divine humanity, he knew the worth of his soul and the souls of his fellow men. However, if we take that faith in the Word made flesh away from the Europeans, what is left of our humanity? We see the birth of the non-humans, the liberals. They have built an island unto themselves: it is an island inhabited by creatures devoid of all humanity. And is not such an island the devil's isle? For him, paradise is an island of dead souls, an island inhabited by creatures who have renounced their God-given humanity and hate the God-Man as Satan hates the God-Man.

The modern European grazers are trying desperately to carve out a niche for themselves in Liberaldom. That can never be, because the liberals must destroy the people who once championed the Word made flesh. Nor should we want to be part of Liberaldom. Don't look to Christian democracies – they are snares of the devil. Christ always loses when the veracity of His word is put to a vote. We do not want Barabbas, we want our Lord and Savior, we want our Jesus. +

# The Sign of Our Redemption

December 8, 2018

Categories: Charity, Christmas, Democracy, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Grazers, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Balzac, C. S. Lewis



For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. — [Luke 2: 11-12](#)

---

We are advised in Psalm 1 not to “walketh in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.” With that injunction before us, let me ask a question – has there ever been a ruling elite more ungodly, more sinful, and more scornful of everything good and decent than the liberals? Of course the answer to that question is obvious – there has never been a ruling elite as evil as the modern liberals. They fit the psalmist’s description like a custom-made suit. But if it is clear that the liberals are the people the psalmist warns us about, why do the modern Europeans ignore the psalmist’s advice and submit to the rule of the liberals?

It could be that the European people submit to the liberals’ rule because the liberals have the power of life and death. They can take a man’s means of making a living from him, they can imprison him, and/or they can kill him when he opposes liberalism. Isn’t that the answer to the question, why do the modern Europeans not oppose their liberal rulers? No, it is not the answer. We cannot, considering how powerful the liberals have become, expect one individual or a few individuals to launch a military counterattack on the liberals, but we should expect, if the European people were still Christian, to see signs of internal dissent. We should see signs that the European people do not accept liberalism. The liberals could not have established complete ascendancy in the European nations if the European people had not given their internal assent to liberalism. And that is the tragedy of modern Europe – the European people have not, in their hearts, turned against liberalism.

Let me put the tragedy before the reader’s eyes by relating an incident from my childhood. I and a half dozen friends in our preteen years, 11 or 12 years of age, were playing basketball at a public court when a group of high school kids came and told us to leave the court. This had happened before – might makes right on the playground – but since my team was winning and the game was almost over, I asked the high school kids to wait until we finished. They refused to wait, but I stubbornly refused to leave the court, which was very foolish. The leader of the high schoolers proceeded – for want of a better description – to beat the hell out of me. Fortunately, this was a dispute between white kids, so I was not beaten to death, but I was forced, literally and figuratively, to eat dirt and concede defeat. But I never gave internal assent to the high schoolers; I didn’t believe they had the right to force us from the court.

The liberals have the European people on the ground eating dirt just as the high school bully had me on the ground eating dirt. There is no shame involved if you are beaten by overwhelming force, but there is shame involved, and something worse – dishonor and disgrace – if you give internal assent to your enemies and lay in the dirt, saying and believing that your punishment is well-deserved and if you are ever allowed up and out of the dirt you will promise to never do anything that forces the liberals to place their collective foot on your neck and grind your face into the dirt.

Now, my playground example is not an exact copy of the European tragedy. The liberals do have their collective foot on the culture of the antique Europeans and on all the white people who defend that culture. But not every white grazer is made, at least not directly, to eat dirt. Most of the white grazers stand by and watch while other whites, whites who try to oppose liberalism, eat dirt. The white grazers are in the position of my school chums, who stood by while I was beaten. But my school chums were better than the modern white grazers. They thought I was stupid to oppose the high schoolers, but they didn’t think I was in the wrong. They had not given internal assent to the bullies. The white grazers have given internal assent to the liberals. They believe that white South Africans and all other ‘racist’ whites deserve what they get and that the black savage is indeed noble. And that is a tragedy. We must recover our honor by refusing to give internal assent to liberalism or we shall stand disgraced before our ancestors and our God. We all die, we can’t control that. But we can control whether we die at one with God or at odds with God, at odds with God because we have walked in the counsel of the ungodly, stood in the way of sinners, and sat in the seats of the scornful.

The internal assent to liberalism, which is from the devil, was given by the European people at the time of the French Revolution. Burke, with unparalleled passion, a passion stemming from white pietas, and with great eloquence, an eloquence only exceeded by Shakespeare, turned all but the most ardent European liberals against Robespierre and his butchers. But he was unable to turn the European intelligentsia against democracy as a new system of manners and customs designed to replace, in the European people’s hearts, the customs and manners of Christian Europe. The story of the European people ever since the French Revolution has been the story of a terrible, horrifying descent into hell. Under the mantle of democracy, the devil became the ruler of the European nations. And once he conquered Europe, he conquered the world, because he has always held the colored nations in the palm of his hand.

There was always a Greek contingent that thought the Christ story was foolishness and a Hebrew contingent that considered the Christ story a stumbling block, lurking on the fringes of Christian Europe. Those two forces ultimately had more in common with the colored heathens than they had with the Christian Europeans. And it was through the democratic process that the pagan Greek intellectuals and the recalcitrant Jewish Pharisees and Sadducees managed to join with the colored heathens and place the Christian Europeans on the fringes of Europe while the liberals took over the vital center of Europe.

The Old Testament, the Gospels, the letters of St. Paul and the other apostles present us with a fairy tale vision of the living God. The European people, the ‘barbarians’ who conquered Rome, accepted the fairy tale vision of Christianity. But the men of intellect, the European intelligentsia, which in the beginning consisted almost entirely of clergymen and then later extended to a whole class of secular academics, were always ashamed of fairy tale Christianity. They were tainted with the dwarfs’ fear of being fooled:

*Aslan raised his head and shook his mane. Instantly a glorious feast appeared on the Dwarfs’ knees: pies and tongues and pigeons and trifles and ices, and each Dwarf had a goblet of good wine in his right hand. But it wasn’t much use. They began eating and drinking greedily enough, but it was clear that they couldn’t taste it properly. They thought they were eating and drinking only the sort of things you might find in a stable. One said he was trying to eat hay and another said he had got a bit of an old turnip and a third said he’d found a raw cabbage leaf. And they raised golden goblets of rich red wine to their lips and said “Ugh! Fancy drinking dirty water out of a trough that a donkey’s been at! Never thought we’d come to this.” But very soon every Dwarf began suspecting that every other Dwarf had found something nicer than he had, and they started grabbing and snatching, and went on to quarreling, till in a few minutes there was a free fight and all the good food was smeared on their faces and clothes or trodden under foot. But when at last they sat down to nurse their black eyes and their bleeding noses, they all said:*

"Well, at any rate there's no Humbug here. We haven't let anyone take us in. The Dwarfs are for the Dwarfs."

"You see," said Aslan. "They will not let us help them. They have chosen cunning instead of belief. Their prison is only in their own minds, yet they are in that prison, and so afraid of being taken in that they cannot be taken out."

-C. S. Lewis, The Last Battle

And they were also tainted with the Parisians' fear of being considered stupid: "In Paris, when they want to disparage a man, they say: 'He has a good heart.' The phrase means: 'The poor fellow is as stupid as a rhinoceros.'" (Balzac, *Eugenie Grandet*) The democratic wars of the late 1700s up to World War I were wars to establish the new-old coalition of pagan intellectuals, unrepentant Jews, and colored heathens over the Europeans, who believed in His kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven.

World War I marked the end of Christian Europe. Throughout the 20<sup>th</sup> century you could still see the beautiful remnants of the European fairy tale. And you could still see the beautiful remnants for the same reason that a profligate son who has spent over half of his billion dollar inheritance still appears to be rich. But the Christian capital has now been spent. World War II was a war between three unchristian -isms – democratism, communism, and Nazism. Which was worse? All three were and are united in their hostility to the Christian fairy tale.

The lie that liberals and conservatives have been putting out for centuries is that the dawning of the democratic era of European history was the dawning of a new age of light. That democracy equals light and old non-democratic Europe represents darkness is a given in the modern world. Liberals, who hate everything white and Christian, should view the democratic era of European history from that perspective. But why do professed Christians still cling to a messianic faith in the democratic process? Why do they continue to equate all things democratic with goodness and light when it is obvious that democracy has produced the ungodly, sinful liberals who mock and scorn the cross of Christ?

The modern Christians accept democracy and all its attendant evils because they have only an intellectual faith. They have not given Him their hearts. They will complain about certain aspects of liberalism, but they will never oppose liberalism itself, because they think liberalism is light and European Christianity is darkness. But what our people, the antique Europeans, bore witness to is true. We can walk on water if we believe in Him alone, or we can try to blend His word with the principles of democratic liberalism and drown in the sea. There is no third way. The European people are drowning because they have not repudiated liberalism in their hearts.

The angel of the Lord told the shepherds that He, the Christ child, would be "a sign unto you: Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger." When conservatives stop pointing to other democracies where the democratic cancer is not as severe as in the Western nations as our exemplars, but point instead to the dear, dear land of storybooks, to nondemocratic Europe, when Christian women stop calling themselves Christian Feminists, and when white pietas is not condemned as 'racist,' then and only then will the European people become what they were meant to be – the advocates for and the protector of His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven.

Christmas still has an impact on the European people, but it cannot be just one moment of nostalgia or one tiny acknowledgement of a cute little story. The Christ story was at the center of our non-democratic ancestors' culture; it was not subordinate to the democratic process of the liberals. The liberals' brave New World has had its day. Do we really want to "walketh with the ungodly, standeth in the way of sinners, and sitteth in the seat of the scornful"? That is not the way, or at least it should not be the way of the Europeans. We do not belong to the city of democracy and liberalism. We belong to His city: "For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord."<sup>+</sup>

# The Light of the World

December 15, 2018

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christmas, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: George Orwell, Rudyard Kipling



Away in a manger, no crib for a bed,  
The little Lord Jesus laid down his sweet head.  
The stars in the sky looked down where he lay,  
The little Lord Jesus asleep in the hay.

The cattle are lowing, the baby awakes,  
But little Lord Jesus no crying he makes.  
I love Thee, Lord Jesus, look down from the sky  
And stay by my cradle 'til morning is nigh.

Be near me, Lord Jesus, I ask Thee to stay  
Close by me forever, and love me, I pray.  
Bless all the dear children in thy tender care,  
And take us to heaven, to live with Thee there.

---

I grew up at a time when the European people were leaving Christmas as a celebration of the birth of our Lord and Savior behind and replacing that celebration with post-Christian, paganized celebrations of rock music and the sacred negro. But there were still remnant bands of Christians in the late 1950s and the 1960s who kept Christmas in their hearts, because the culture of the heart, which was old Europe, had not completely disappeared.

It doesn't matter if intellectual Christianity survives, because that religion does not reach the heart. Satan has successfully cut off the European people's access to the living God by separating the European people from their racial hearth fire, where hearts of flesh commune with other hearts of flesh, and through that communion touch the heart of God. I look at our modern world with horror, because even the very secular world in which I grew up seems infinitely superior to the present. It seems there are shades of darkness – we have "progressed" from grey darkness to pitch-black night.

Because I do not think darkness is right, I intend to celebrate the Light of the World this Christmas. So I'm pulling up the drawbridge and shutting out the liberal world that I hate. There must be some antique Europeans out there – God always has His remnant. I love that remnant band. May you have a very Merry Christmas! +

---

**Addendum:** The usual story will appear on Dec. 22 and Dec. 29. The regular blog posts will resume on Jan. 5.

Most of the dystopian novels and short stories of the 20<sup>th</sup> century focused on right-wing dystopias. Only Orwell and [Kipling](#) prophesied that it would be the leftists who would give us a dystopian hell on earth. Orwell and Kipling were right. But even Orwell and Kipling failed to see that the leftist dystopias would not include white Europeans. But that is the case. Lord, abide with us!

# Remembrances VIII: The Shepherds of Europe

December 22, 2018

Categories: Older posts (pre-April 2019), Remembrances



And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

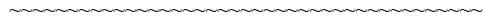
And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.

And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

[- Luke 2: 8-18](#)



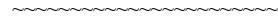
I won't go over old ground in this remembrance. It's been two years since Father Bontini updated the remembrances for me. Since that time we, the Christian Britons, have lost our territories in Northern Scotland, but we have retained the land mass that used to constitute Wales and we have taken control of all the major isles – the Western Isles, the Orkney Islands, the Shetland Islands, the Isle of Skye, and the Isle of Man. Ireland, North and South, as well as England and Scotland, with the exception of Skye, belong to the Moslems. But the moral essence of Britain still lives in Arthur II's Britain. It wouldn't be accurate to say we are in a constant state of siege, but we are in a constant state of readiness for a siege. There have, for instance, been six major Moslem assaults on Britain – we are Britain – in the past year. But in between the assaults, life in Britain goes on in defiance of the Moslem and the liberal world around us.

Shakespeare graces our stage, true British shops and true British craftsmen are in abundance, and the old Book of Common Prayer, which is simply a liturgical version of the Bible, has been brought back. Much has been lost, but what we have now is sacred to us because we realize just how precious our heritage was, and still can be if we do not falter in our resolve to maintain white, Christian Britain.

What has taken place in Britain for the last half-century is part of a worldwide campaign to destroy the white race. The liberals hate Christ, but they cannot strike out at Him directly, so they attack the Europeans, who were and are the Christ-bearing race. By a strange metamorphosis, the liberals have renounced their white souls and made the destruction of the white race their 'holy' mission in life. And of course the colored heathen are quite willing to aid the liberals in their mission. In the end, if the plans of the liberals are not altered, they too will be eliminated by their colored minions, just as a pet snake will turn and strike his keeper, but that is not my concern. I am concerned about the whites who have remained faithful. They are my people and I must support them until the Lord sees fit to take me home.

In Britain and the rest of the European countries, the colored assault has come under the banner of Islam. In the United States, Banyon, Canada, and the other European satellite countries, the colored assault has been waged in the name of the sacred negro. The situation in all the European countries and those countries settled by Europeans is very fluid. Sometimes I hear of white setbacks and then I hear of white counter-attacks. Just last month, for instance, I heard that all of Bavaria was in the hands of the white Christians, but only two months prior to that I had heard that all of Germany belonged to the Moslems. Reports from the various European countries are sketchy and indeterminate. And in these remembrances I want to stick to events that I either witnessed myself or were witnessed and reported to me by close friends. What follows is an account from my friend, Arthur Walker, who used to run a private detective agency in Georgia. He is now a leader of the White Underground in what used to be called the United States of America.

– Rev. Christopher Grey

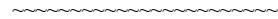


The territory that we formerly held consisted roughly of the land masses of what used to be the states of Georgia and South Carolina. But we were forced to abandon those land masses because we simply lacked the men to defend them. Some whites, as you know, made their way across the ocean to Christian Britain. The rest of us have become part of the Underground. We keep contact with each other through the use of (I know you hate the devices but they are necessary) digital cell phones and other such communication devices. We have some members working as moles in the liberal population. They provide us with valuable information about the liberals' army and police force.

We exist as a loose collection of clans, only we rove around more than the Scottish clans of old. I am, for want of a better word, the clan leader. Of course the leadership was thrust upon me because of my connection to you, Reverend. You have no idea what you mean to the white Christians of this nation. The old United States no longer exists as an independent nation. Personally I don't think it ever did exist, but perhaps I am letting my Southern heritage influence me. Even if the Southland was the only true nation in the Northern Hemisphere, as I maintain, it no longer exists at present. What we have now is the United Republic of the Americas, which consists of what formerly constituted Canada, the United States, and Mexico. Now they are one united country with one government and one state-sponsored religion. Yes, the nation which once prided itself on the separation of church and state has now become part of a theocracy.

I've mentioned some of the uglier aspects of the new state religion before, but let me go through a few more of the details. The 'worship' services are conducted by a mixed group of clergymen, mostly Catholic priests with some Protestant ministers. The litany is a bizarre mixture of the Catholic Mass, the new Anglican Book of Prayer, and the Quran. But all the readings are geared toward negro worship. Just one example will suffice – when they say the Apostle's Creed, they proclaim, "I believe in the sacred negro, the natural ruler of this heaven on earth, and I believe that the negro is the savior of all those who call on him by name. I believe in the holy Catholic Church of the negro, I believe in one God, who is the negro, and I believe that the negro will come to rule over all the earth when whiteness has left the earth. Amen."

That creed is recited in every church throughout the United Republic of the Americas, by every white person left alive and by all the colored citizens of the United Republic. What can we say of such a creed? Do all whites believe it? It's difficult to know how many whites have given their internal assent. Every once in a while we get a breakaway, a man or woman who has had enough and seeks to join the Underground. What follows is a story of one breakaway. I suppose, lest I forget, I should tell you that every member of the white clan takes an oath of allegiance to King Arthur II. You see, we need, like all men, a particular land and one particular king to whom we pledge our allegiance. The wheel has come full circle. We have come home to Christian Britain. And when we conquer the Americas, we will not, this time, throw the tea into the ocean. We will welcome a visit from our King, who serves the King of Kings. Now, on to the story of one man's journey from darkness to light. Such stories never get old.



I was six years old when my parents were forced to give me up to the state. As you know, the new Constitution of the United Republic requires that a white man who wants to marry a white woman must get a special dispensation from the state. Having obtained that dispensation to marry he must then agree to have no more than one child. If the white female gives birth to a second child, one of the children must be turned over to the state to be executed or to be trained as a priest in the One Holy Catholic Church of the Negro. The life or death of the white child is up to the discretion of the state. My parents decided to keep my baby brother and offer me up to the state. I don't think they did this because they hated me; my memories of them are of two kind, fond parents. But my baby brother was more vulnerable and more likely to be executed to spare the expense that goes with the care of infants. So I was given to the state in the hope – I know my parents had that hope – that I would be made a priest and not a corpse. And such was the case. I became a priest. I've learned since then that over three-fourths of the second white children are executed. But I still have no idea why I was not one of the children executed by the state.

I won't bore you with the details about the course of study I went through in order to become a priest of the United Republic of the Americas. Suffice it to say it was long and thorough. Every aspect of liberal culture was shoved into my heart, mind, and soul. By the time I was ordained at age 22, I was eminently qualified to go forth as an apostle for the Lords of Liberalism – the sacred negroes.

For my first two years I was a parish priest. I said the sacred negro mass and I attended to the needs of my parishioners, which meant I brought them Holy Communion when they were sick, the wafer representing the blood of the negroes who had been slain by white racists, and I did the usual visitations and such.

Then, two years into my parish work, I was given a new assignment. I was sent to work as a special counselor in the rehabilitation unit of the United Republic of the Americas. It was my job to visit whites who had been imprisoned for racism. I had to decide whether they could be rehabilitated or whether rehabilitation was impossible. If I recommended rehabilitation, they were sent to rehabilitation camps, but if I thought they could not be rehabilitated they were executed. Did I feel any remorse when I labeled a white man or white woman "unfit for rehabilitation"? No, I did not. You must remember that I had been trained from birth to believe that white racists were evil. So I felt no guilt or remorse when I sent white racists to their doom.

You might wonder how many white racists I recommended for execution. I can't give the exact number, but I would estimate that I sent at least 200 out of the 300 I interviewed to be executed. Of course, now their faces haunt my dreams, but they didn't haunt me back then.

I think I began to question the religion of the sacred negro – but I can't be sure that my doubt didn't start before that – when I was sent to interview Paul Davis. I was thirty years old at the time and Paul Davis was twenty-eight. He had been accused of marrying a white woman without special dispensation, and he was also accused of fathering four children by that same woman without reporting any of the births to the state. His case was an extreme one – he seemed like a recalcitrant racist. I had little doubt of what my recommendation to the Council would be. But still, I was a professional, and I was determined to conduct my interview with an open, liberal mind. I have since learned that there is no mind more closed than a liberal one, but that is not part of this story.

---

#### Act I, Scene 2. John Taylor's Interview of Paul Davis, Conducted in Davis's Prison Cell.

Taylor: I see by the records that you were imprisoned two weeks ago. I would like to help transfer you from this prison to a rehabilitation center. Would you like that?

Davis: No, I would not like that.

Taylor: Then you prefer to stay in prison?

Davis: No, I would prefer to get out of prison to be with my wife and family.

Taylor: But you have no legitimate wife, you were married without permission from the state. And you did not turn your children over to the state after their births.

Davis: Why should I turn my children over to the executioners?

Taylor: Come now, you know the answer as well as I do. Let me read to you from the Liberal Code of Law, which is sacred to all true citizens of the Republic. I quote, "When any white male who has married with the proper state approval fathers a second white child, he must turn one of the white children over to the state. And when a white male marries a white female without permission from the state, his life, his wife's life, and all his children will be subject to execution by the state." Did you know that was the law?

Davis: Yes, I did.

Taylor: Then why didn't you comply with the law?

Davis: Because I don't recognize the validity of the law. I hold to another law, it begins with...

Taylor: I must stop you right there before you incriminate yourself any further. You were going to refer to a certain book and a certain God depicted in that book. Don't utter His name or mention that book in my presence, or I shall be forced to terminate this interview right now and recommend that you be executed as soon as is humanly possible.

Davis: I knew I was a dead man as soon as I was arrested. But I saved my family – I made sure that they found refuge in the White Underground before the Liberal Police came for me.

Taylor: (closing the book in which he has been taking notes). Then there is nothing left to be said. I'll mark you down as an irredeemable white racist and recommend that you be put to death.

Davis: Without a trial?

Taylor: Of course without a trial. You know that white racists are not entitled to the protection of the law. They are outside the law.

Davis: In most cases. But the sons and daughters of the white Illuminati who have transcended whiteness and become spiritually black, and any offspring they might have, are entitled to due process. Isn't that so?

Taylor: Yes, it is so. But how does that apply to you? Surely you're not claiming to be related to one of the Illuminati?

Davis: But I am related to one of the Illuminati. Governor Grover is my father. As you know, all white children are required to take their mother's name, in keeping with the principles of feminism. But if you check the records, you will see that I am the biological son of Governor Grover. I never knew him – he was separated from my mother when I was one year old, but I am his son, his one and only child, a fully authorized and certified child.

Taylor: If what you say is true, then you will be entitled to a trial. I'll check on your story and get back to you.

Davis: Yes, you do that.

---

#### Act I, Scene 3, John Taylor's Aside.

I did check on Davis's story and discovered he was not lying. His father was the Governor of the district. He told me that he wanted nothing to do with his son, that he had had nothing to do with his upbringing, but he did acknowledge that Paul Davis was his only child. So I turned in the necessary paperwork and Davis's trial was set for two weeks hence.

It might seem curious that such a government as ours should give anyone a trial. Why go through the motions of a trial when the verdict has been predetermined? But that is the point. Liberals need trials to justify themselves. They believe in liberalism, to a certain extent. The trials are their version of 'Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.' The more illegitimate the regime, the more legalese and paperwork is needed to convince the rulers of the revolutionary regime that they really do constitute a legitimate government. The French Jacobins, the Russian

communists, the American 1776ers all cloaked their revolutionary movements in reams of legalese and paperwork. They labeled falsehood self-evident, and truth subversive. Thus reenacting, as all revolutionary tribunals do, the trial and crucifixion of our Lord. So, observing all the rules of criminal procedure and with all the proper liberal legalese, Davis was tried for high treason against the United Republic of the Americas.

Once I presented the paperwork, I thought my work was done. But I was in for a shock. When I came into work two days after my meeting with Governor Grover, I had a short cryptic note on my desk: "You are to defend Paul Davis. Signed, Governor Grover." The note sent chills down my spine. If I truly tried to defend Paul Davis, wouldn't I, after the trial was over, be accused of an excessive sympathy with an irredeemable white racist? And wouldn't that make me a white racist, subject to the same penalty as all white racists? I asked for clarification in a return memo, but I got no response. In desperation I went to Father Todd, an older priest who lived in the rectory with me; he was the parish priest who generally said mass while I was the special priest in charge of the rehabilitation process. I occasionally assisted at mass, but in the main I stuck to the rehabilitation work. But I needed advice, and Father Todd was at hand.

---

#### Act I, Scene 4.

Taylor: They've asked me to defend Paul Davis.

Todd: I thought that was an open and shut case, that he was already sentenced to death for white racism, which is treason.

Taylor: There was a complication. It turned out that his father is Governor Grover.

Todd: That's some twist of fate. Did the governor ask you to defend Davis?

Taylor: Yes, and I'm rather worried about it.

Todd: Why?

Taylor: I'm afraid I might be accused of racism after the trial is over, or maybe even during the trial. After all, it's only natural for people to think you share the views of someone you defend.

Todd: I think your worries are unfounded. Just let him speak for himself and then back away.

Taylor: You mean I should just put him on the stand and let him denounce himself.

Todd: Yes.

Taylor: But that wouldn't be a very good defense.

Todd: You're not obligated to make a good defense, you are simply obligated to put up some defense. I highly recommend that you let the racist damn himself, and then walk away. I think that is what Governor Grover wants as well.

Taylor: That sounds like the best plan. Thank you, Father.

Todd: It was my pleasure.

---

#### Act II, Scene 1. The Trial of Paul Davis for High Treason.

Bailiff: Here ye, hear ye, the most illustrious high court of the United Republic of the Americas is in session, the honorable Judge Parker presiding. All rise.

Parker: Paul Davis, you are accused of high treason by marrying a white female without the permission of the state, and subsequently fathering four children by the same female without offering up three of those children to the state for execution or for training in the priesthood. How do you plead?

Davis: Not guilty.

Parker: Do you deny the truth of the charges then?

Davis: No, but I do not acknowledge that marrying a woman of my own race and fathering children by that woman is a crime of any kind. Therefore, my plea is not guilty.

Prosecutor: I rest my case. The defendant Paul Davis is guilty as charged.

Taylor: The defense also rests.

Parker: But you haven't presented a defense of your client.

Taylor: It was my client's wish that he be allowed to defend himself. And I complied with his request. Therefore the defense rests.

Parker: All right then, I'll pronounce sentence. Paul Davis, you have been found guilty of the most serious and heinous crime known to man. You are a white racist. I sentence you to be handed over to the torturers and then executed. There can be no mercy for white racists, because a white racist is outside of the orbit of grace that has been established by our religious tenets. Grace comes from the negro, who is the god of nature. Outside of the natural world there is no salvation. Take the racist wretch away.

---

#### Act II, Scene 2. John Taylor's Aside.

I was not a lawyer. I didn't spend a lot of time in the courts, so I can't say for sure that Davis's trial for treason was the shortest on record, but I think it must have been, because the defendants, I was told, usually tried to deny their racism. Davis came right out with it. He even seemed to think his racism was a virtue. I was very far from approving of his views, but I was struck by the boldness of his racism. Truly he was a brave man, albeit a brave man with a perverted, distorted view of existence.

Something else struck me about the trial. I knew Davis was to be sentenced to death. My own recommendations had sent many men and some women to their deaths, but the words, "handed over to the torturers," struck a discordant chord in my soul. "Why was it necessary to torture the white racists?" I asked myself. And my answer? "It was necessary to torture the white racists to impress upon other whites the seriousness of white racism." Did I accept that answer? Not entirely. I was uneasy. And Father Todd sensed my uneasiness. The Sunday after Davis's sentencing, two weeks before his scheduled torture and execution, I celebrated a mass with Father Todd. After the mass we sat down to breakfast together in the rectory.

---

#### Act II, Scene 3.

Todd: This jelly is delicious, it's homemade, you must try some.

Taylor: No thank you, father.

Todd: Come on, you can't be watching your weight, you don't have any weight on your frame to watch.

Taylor: (placing a small blob of jelly on his toast). Thank you, I will have a taste.

Todd: (studying Taylor's face). What's the matter, Jonathan? You don't seem yourself.

Taylor: I'm sorry if I'm not much company.

Todd: Oh, don't worry about that. Nobody can be cheery all the time. You're not obligated to put on a cheery face just for me, but if there is something troubling you that I can help you with, I'd be only too willing...

Taylor: It's really nothing.

Todd: Well, now I know there is something troubling you. Every time, in my years in the priesthood, that someone told me that their troubles were 'really nothing' their troubles turned out to be really something.

Taylor: Really, Father, it's really...

Todd: Yes, I know, it's really nothing. Now that we've established that it's really nothing, why don't you tell me what the 'really nothing is' that is bothering you?

Taylor: Well, it's not exactly something I can put a name to. I suppose it comes to this: I feel degraded. I feel that I've been part of a shameful affair.

Todd: Are you referring to the trial and conviction of Paul Davis?

Taylor: Yes.

Todd: Listen, Jonathan, it's not always easy to accept the existence of pure evil. But we know from the tenets of our faith that pure evil exists in the white race. We must oppose that evil with our whole heart, mind, and soul. And evil is not some disembodied spirit, it is located in the hearts of white people, particularly white men. But I'm not telling you something you don't know. You've been raised on the Baltimore Catechism of Vatican IV.

Taylor: Yes, I have.

Todd: Then you know that we are created to love the sacred negro with all our heart, mind, and soul, and to hate all white men who have not gone through the process of metamorphosis.

Taylor: But are white people, and most especially the white males, really so evil? Don't they have some common humanity with the rest of mankind?

Todd: No, they don't. I think in your heart you know they don't. You know your catechism.

Taylor: But then, by what right do we exist? Aren't we white?

Todd: Now you really surprise me. We are not white. We have gone through that great spiritual cleansing that has made us whole again, we have attained oneness with the colored races.

Taylor: But we don't even torture animals, yet Davis was sentenced to be tortured.

Todd: It is a necessary deterrent. After all, animals are not racist.

Taylor: Well, it still troubles me.

Todd: Look, Jonathan, take a week off, go to the mountains or some place. Go on a retreat to Mt. Nelson Mandela, but go somewhere to clear your mind and your soul of the rot that is clouding your vision. You are needed here, don't lose everything you've built up.

Taylor: Well, the trial ended early, so maybe I can afford to take a week's vacation.

Todd: By all means, you can't afford not to.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 4. The Retreat House on Mt. Le Conte, Now Named Mt. Nelson Mandela, in the Tennessee Great Smoky Mountains.

Old Man: Greetings, I hope I am not disturbing you.

Taylor: (sitting on the porch with a book). No, I'm just a little surprised to see someone in this area; it's pretty isolated.

Old Man: Yes, it is isolated.

Taylor: May I ask you what you are doing up here?

Old Man: Why, are you some sort of a policeman?

Taylor: Of course not, I'm a priest and this is the retreat house of my order. I didn't mean to pry into your business.

Old Man: Didn't you?

Taylor: Well, I guess I did. You don't usually see white men roaming around the countryside without a permit.

Old Man: How do you know that I don't have a permit?

Taylor: It must be prominently displayed on your outermost garment, and I don't see it on your person.

Old Man: That's very perceptive of you. And in point of fact, you are right, I don't have a permit to roam through these mountains or any other place in the United Republic of the Americas. I am what you would call a recalcitrant white racist. The type of man you would recommend for execution.

Taylor: How do you know that about me?

Old Man: It could be because I saw your picture in the paper during the trial of Paul Davis. Or it could be that you once recommended me for execution.

Taylor: (looks closely at the old man). Have I ever seen you before?

Old Man: I was clean shaven then, without the beard and the long hair, but you still should have recognized me. A man ought to remember the occasion when he sends another man to his death.

Taylor: If what you tell me is true, I can only say I did what my conscience and my duty dictated.

Old Man: I'm sure you did. But that doesn't excuse you. What you did was evil and what you are still doing is evil.

Taylor: (standing up and assuming a defensive posture) What is your purpose here?

Old Man: Calm down, I'm not here to hurt you. Nor am I here to chastise you for sending me to be tortured and executed.

Taylor: Then why are you here?

Old Man: I'm here to play Ananias to your Saul of Tarsus.

Taylor: I don't understand you.

Old Man: When St. Paul was called Saul, he persecuted Christians, but then he encountered the living God on the road to Damascus. After that encounter the Lord sent Ananias to him because our Lord needed Paul, "to bear my name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel."

Taylor: But I'm not this Saul you speak of.

Old Man: Of course you're not Saul, but you are like unto him in that you are persecuting Christians.

Taylor: Even if what you say is true, you are not Ananias or whatever his name was.

Old Man: I'm taking upon me the role of Ananias, and you, even if you are not St. Paul, are going to bear our Lord's name to the Gentiles and Kings and the children of Israel.

Taylor: I have a cell phone with me.

Old Man: Yes?

Taylor: One call and the police will come and get you, you are an escaped white racist.

Old Man: That's true, but what makes you think the police can find me? They couldn't hold me in prison after you marked me for execution, and they'll never be able to get me out of these mountains.

Taylor: What is to stop me from laying hold of you and making you wait for the police?

Old Man: You're welcome to try, but I wouldn't advise it.

Taylor: You must be at least forty years older than I am, surely you couldn't resist me?

Old Man: (he advances on Taylor and throws him to the ground with ease). Let's have no more talk of restraining me against my will.

Taylor: All right, I can't restrain you, and you claim you can elude the police. What is it you want, and please don't tell me you want to play Ananias to my Saul.

Old Man: But that is what I'm going to do. Let's go inside the cabin.

Act II, Scene 5. John Taylor's Aside.

The old man spent three days with me. I was the wedding guest, and he was the Ancient Mariner who held me with his glittering eye. I kept telling myself that I should call the police or I should run from his presence. But I was fascinated by him. He told me at the onset that he was going to tell me the actual history of my people and once I had heard their story, the Old Man, henceforth called the Ancient Mariner, said that I would want to resume my place in the European story. What was the European story and what was my place in it? The Ancient Mariner started with God's plan to create mankind: Satan rebelled against Him because he hated the little, sniveling creatures called men. And he showed his contempt and hatred for mankind with the first man in the Garden of Eden. From that time on, according to the Ancient Mariner, Satan has been in a constant state of war with mankind. The European people became his main focus because they loved the Son of God who died on the cross for their sins.

It was all quite new to me. I had heard that Christ had once been important to white racists, and I knew that my church had once (before His name was banned) included His name in the litany along with the other lesser prophets, but I did not know that Christ had once been considered a god nor that He was still revered by some Europeans who were still living.

The Ancient Mariner wove Bible history and European history together in one integral story. Shakespeare, Scott, Dickens, and a whole canon of European poets and sages became, in the tale of the Ancient Mariner, one with Isaiah, Jeremiah, St. Paul, and the Apostles. And they all pointed to one magnificent beginning, the incarnation of Jesus Christ, and one magnificent denouement, the crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Maybe if I had grown up in the old liberal days, when the Christ story as told by the European people was still permitted to be told, albeit told only to be ridiculed, I would not have been so impressed with the Ancient Mariner's tale. But it came to me fresh and new, like a bolt of lightning from another world. And there was something else. The Ancient Mariner possessed a passion and fire that I had never known. My whole life had been guided by one principle: to subdue all the passions of my heart, because they might be racist, and racism was evil. But right in front of me was an impassioned man with a heart on fire and he was an unapologetic white racist! It was something to behold, but still I was not quite convinced. I was intrigued and fascinated by the Ancient Mariner, but I needed to know more.

In the evening of the third day, sitting by the fire in the living room of the retreat house, I asked the Ancient Mariner to tell me his story. He looked at me with his glittering eye, which was pure fire, and said, "I suppose it is time for my story. You've been an attentive listener and you do in part believe. Perhaps my story will be the final push."

Act III, Scene 1. The Ancient Mariner's Aside.

I grew up in what was then called New York City (it is now called New Africa). I was raised in the Roman Catholic faith at a time when Christ was still nominally seen as the Savior of mankind, in that we said our prayers to Him and not to the sacred negro as you do now. But although Christ was still theoretically the reason we went to mass, in those days the social gospel, the gospel of diversity, was the driving force behind the mass. And when Pope Francis I came out with the encyclical on the black race, in which he developed the point that collectively they were co-equals with Christ and just as necessary for our salvation, the stage was set for the eventual elimination of Christ from the mass. But I don't want to get too far ahead of myself. The point is that I was raised with some contact with the actual Christ story. It was not completely suppressed in those days. Nor were the works of literature, music, and art from Christian Europe suppressed in those days as they are now. Still, despite some exposure to the Christ story, it didn't take. I wasn't moved by it. That could have been because of the dry, lifeless way it was presented to me, or possibly it was just my own perversity, but whatever the reason I became completely enthralled with liberalism. I fancied myself a great artist, because I wrote songs and played an electric guitar. If records from that time period had not been expunged, you could look up my name and see that I had a few best-selling albums.

My most popular song was a protest song I wrote at the time when the African nation of Banyon was being run by a white minority, about 10% of the population. There was a black terrorist in that country who was jailed for rape and murder. He was guilty of those crimes and many more, but I, like the entire Western intelligentsia at the time, thought all the blacks in Banyon were saints and all the whites in Banyon were devils. So I wrote a song about the great African Saventi. I still remember, God forgive me, the refrain:

*A man without taint
Fights the forces of hell
Saventi the saint
Will fight till he hears the whites' death knell.*

I went across America and most of Europe singing that song and others like it. Besides getting rich from my albums, I also earned a letter from President Saventi and an invitation to visit him in Banyon after the fall of the white government and the election of Saventi as the first Banyonese president of the new republic. This was two years after my tour. I eagerly assented. I went to Banyon as a Catholic would go to Rome for an audience with the Pope. Banyon was my Rome and Saventi my Pope.

Before I tell you of my meeting with Saventi I must tell you that I was in a love with a white woman from Banyon. She was my age, which was twenty-six. She wrote to me during my anti-apartheid tour and subsequently came to visit me. She was beautiful and she was a fervent anti-apartheid white. "I am ashamed of my people, in fact, I don't regard them as my people," she said on many occasions. "I will fight apartheid with all my heart and soul, and if it takes bloody revolution, I'll take my part in that." I assured her that I didn't think it would take a bloody revolution.

"The world is against the white supremacists in Banyon. Soon there will be elections and Banyon will be a free black state." I was right about the elections. Apartheid ended two years after Jennifer's visit to the States. But was it bloodless? Only while the election was taking place. Afterwards there was a bloody massacre of whites. But of course I was blind to that massacre as were the rest of the liberal whites throughout the world. I probably would have remained blind had it not been for Jennifer. But let me tell you of my dinner with the great Saventi. I'll pick up the conversational thread as the dinner was winding down."

Act III, Scene 2.

Saventi: You know it was great artists like yourself who helped pave the way to the Free Republic of Banyon?

AM: I'm glad I played some small part in the establishment of your Republic, but really there were so many people of the West who supported your cause.

Saventi: Yes, but most did not have a public voice. You had a public voice, and you had the courage to use that voice. You are a true citizen of Banyon.

AM: I am honored.

Saventi: But all is not perfect here in Banyon. There are still some in the West, the white fascists, who claim we are allied with the communists and we are massacring the whites. These are base lies.

AM: What can I do to help you?

Saventi: You can now sing the praises of the free black, integrated Banyon just as you used to sing about the evils of white, apartheid Banyon.

AM: I will, I've already started writing a song about the new Banyon.

Saventi: Excellent, and now I know you must be tired. I'll have one of my wives show you to your quarters.

AM: Thank you, I am rather tired. But I must ask you one more question.

Saventi: Just one?

AM: (smiling). Just one for now. I made the acquaintance of one of your citizens, an anti-apartheid activist, during my concert tours. I heard from her regularly up until the election. But since that time, I have not heard from her. I wonder if you could help me get in touch with her.

Saventi: She is a sweetheart of yours?

AM: (blushing) Yes, I suppose she is.

Saventi: Say no more. I will help you find her.

AM: Ah, there is just one difficulty. She may have stopped writing because she has found someone else. I don't want to embarrass her if she really doesn't want to see me.

Saventi: I understand. I will make discreet inquiries and then let you know. What is her name?

AM: Her name is Jennifer Dawson.

Saventi: Don't worry, you shall hear from her, I'll see to that. And in the morning I'll have one of my men show you around the black Free Republic of Banyon so that you can refute the white fascists of your nation.

AM: I don't need to see it in order to believe in the free state of Banyon. I've seen you and I believe in you.

Saventi: As always, you are too kind.

Act III, Scene 3. Ancient Mariner's Aside.

The next day I was given a sumptuous breakfast, but my host was not present. I was told he had some important business to attend to, by the man who was to be my guide through the capital city of Banyon. I was disappointed that President Saventi could not be my guide, but I certainly understood. He was an important man.

I was taken through sections of the capital city by my black guide along with two armed black bodyguards. "White fascists make it necessary," my guide explained. But I didn't see whites anywhere. What I saw was absolute squalor and hostile looking black men and women. I tried to beat down my former image of the capital when it had been ruled by whites. The liberals showed those pictures, prior to the revolution, in order to show how disgustingly white the city was. But in doing so they gave people like me a glimpse of a clean, well-run city which was a shocking contrast to the new capital city. But in the end I put it down to "the growing pains of a country that has thrown off colonialism," and tried to think good thoughts about the new Free Black Republic of Banyon.

Although what I saw of Banyon was not very uplifting, there were whole areas that I was not allowed to see at all. "Too dangerous, there might be white fascists there," was all I was told. So my tour was not very enlightening or uplifting. When I returned to the Presidential Palace, I was given another wonderful supper, but my host was not in attendance. His first deputy did attend, but when I asked him about Jennifer Dawson, he told me he knew nothing of such a woman nor had "his excellency" told him anything about the matter. I was taken completely by surprise when at the end of the dinner, I was told that I would be taken to the airport at 10 a.m. in the morning.

"I hope you had a pleasant visit with us," was the final words of the first deputy.

Back in my room I was frantic. I had come to see the new Banyon, but that was really secondary. My main reason for coming had been to see the woman I loved. Now I was told that I had to leave Banyon without seeing her. It was unbelievable to me. How could Saventi send me away without seeing Jennifer? Could it be that he had discovered she had found someone else? That had to be it. That would also explain why I was being sent away so suddenly. The great, kind, and good Saventi wanted to spare me the pain and embarrassment of finding out that the woman I loved was not in love with me. But still, I wanted to see her, because love always hopes against all odds. I didn't doubt Saventi's kindness, but I still wanted to see Jennifer. How could I convince Saventi to let me see Jennifer?

What followed was providential, although I wouldn't have named it so at the time, because I didn't believe in Providence, I believed in liberalism, and the liberal's God is the black man.

There was a knock at the window, and through the window came a black Rumpelstiltskin.

"Do you wish to find the young lady called Jennifer Dawson?"

"Yes, do you know of her?"

"Certainly."

"Could you tell me where she is?"

"No, I cannot tell you, but I can show you where she is, but we must leave here immediately."

So I left immediately with a pint-sized negro who insisted on being paid \$10,000 American dollars for taking me to Jennifer Dawson. What the greedy little opportunist didn't know was that I would have paid him ten times that amount. I was rich, I had made a fortune with my anti-apartheid protest songs. But I did have enough sense to withhold \$5,000 of the money.

"You'll get the rest when I see Jennifer."

"Certainly, I understand," the little dwarf intoned in a nauseatingly smooth voice.

The black Rumpelstiltskin did not possess a car, but he knew where I could rent one without any questions asked. So I went with him and paid an exorbitant price for one night's use of a broken down black Cadillac. The enormously fat negro who rented the car to me seemed to be, facially, a dead ringer for the greasy Rumpelstiltskin. I assumed they were related, which made me feel a little better about the secrecy of my trip. Maybe the fat negro would not squeal on his cousin or brother, whatever the dwarf's relation to him was.

I did the driving; the dwarfish negro's legs were too short to reach the gas pedal, while the dwarf gave me directions. After about a 90 minute drive, we came to a vast plain with only a few trees. My companion told me to stop the car at the bottom of the embankment. We both got out of the car.

"This is as far as I go."

"What do you mean?"

"My cousin will send a car for me, with my two brothers in it. The one will drive me back, and the other will wait for you to drive you back."

"But I'm not paying you the rest of the money until I see Jennifer."

"You will see her. If you go to the top of that hill, you can look down and see a prison camp for white fascists. Jennifer Dawson is in that camp."

"But she was not a white fascist, she was an anti-apartheid activist. This is a horrendous mistake. I will see Saventi about this."

"It was Saventi who ordered her imprisoned."

"I don't believe that!"

"Saventi ordered the imprisonment of all white fascists on the day of his inauguration."

"That can't be true, the press would have reported it."

"Well, they didn't. And what I tell you is true. Jennifer Dawson is in that prison camp. But if you don't believe me, that is your privilege, I'll go now."

I saw another car pulling up with only one person in it. One of the midget's cousins must have been following us. I didn't have a gun, but I had youth and considerable strength on my side. I took my five thousand from the dwarf and beat his cousin to a pulp.

"You won't get any money at all until you take me to Jennifer Dawson. And if what you say is true, you won't be paid in full until you help me get her out of that prison."

The saving grace for me or for any man, and by grace I mean Him from whom all grace flows, was that I had one spark of humanity left in me: I genuinely loved that woman. My love for her made me man enough to treat those two blacks like the savages they were instead of like the deities that I and my fellow liberals said they were.

Through a series of bribes I was able to get Jennifer past the camp guards and out to the bottom of the hill from which we started. What I saw en route to Jennifer's cell was something I'll never forget. It was something out of Dante, where poor, tortured men and women, all white men and white women, were suffering through every indignity and every torture ever conceived. If I could have done it, I would have freed them all and killed all their black tormentors. But I couldn't, so I tried to free Jennifer. When I saw her, I did not at first recognize her. Her naked body was emaciated, and she was a mass of bruises from head to foot. Only her eyes, which burned with a special light, told me that she was Jennifer Dawson. I wrapped Jennifer in my shirt and carried her from the prison. I placed her in the back seat of the car. When I heard cries of, "A prisoner has escaped!" I started up the car. Neither the midget nor his cousin tried to stop me, but they kept yelling to the guards to hurry up before I got away. We did get away from the immediate vicinity of the prison camp, but when the car ran out of gas, I was forced to walk on, carrying Jennifer in my arms, until we left the desert behind and came to one of Banyon's many jungles.

I spent three days trying to get deeper into the jungle without taxing Jennifer's strength too much. I didn't know if we were being followed or not. But I didn't want to make us easy to find if we were being followed. I carried Jennifer a good deal of the time, which made for slow going, but Jennifer simply couldn't walk very far. On the third day I found a rather hospitable looking cave that I thought would serve as a place where Jennifer and I could stay while she regained her strength. As it turned out Jennifer and I were not the only whites who had decided to seek refuge in the cave. We had stumbled on the beginnings of a white colony in the midst of the jungles of Banyon.

Act IV. The Colony.

DM: I can't tell from the outside just how far that cave extends.

Reverend Hill: No, you can't. That is why we decided it made a good refuge for us.

DM: How many are you?

RH: There are exactly 441 white refugees who are making their home here. There will be 443 if you and your lady stay here.

DM: How did you all get here? Did you come here together?

RH: No, we didn't come here together. When the terrible bloodletting started, the whites who could fled to wherever they found a road not blocked with black savages. Most of them were cut down, but some made it to the jungle. At first we were a small band of twenty, but gradually, over the last six months, we have increased our number to the 441 you see here.

DM: Jennifer has been telling me a little of what happened after the end of apartheid, but I didn't press her for too many details, because it seems to exhaust her to talk about it too much.

RH: That is understandable.

DM: She was raped and tortured.

RH: Yes, I assumed as much. I'm afraid that is the norm, not an aberration in the new black Free Republic of Banyon. On the night of the election I saw white women being dragged through the streets, tortured, raped, and made, while being tortured and raped, to suffer every other indignity that could be heaped on human beings. They were violated, not only in their bodies, but in their souls. Some white men fought for their wives and children, but they were unarmed and unprepared for the savagery of the attack. Most of the men were butchered.

DM: May I ask how you managed to escape?

RH: Let me first say that I didn't deserve to escape. I was one of the clergymen, we were legion, who clamored for the end of apartheid. It was the Christian thing to do, I said, because we were all God's children and so on and so on. Reality and I were not friends. But I was forced to look at the reality of the black man on that night of sorrows, the night that Banyon became a free black republic.

I had called for a special election evening service to give praise to God for setting the blacks of Banyon free from their oppressors. I was confident that they would be freed, because the polls said that the anti-apartheid forces would win. The relentless pressure from the West and from whites like me from inside Banyon had finally turned the whites in Banyon against themselves. They wanted the world to love them, they no longer wanted to be called racists.

DM: Did everyone here vote for an end to apartheid?

RH: No, there are many here that voted against ending apartheid, but they still had to suffer from the sinful, willful ignorance of people like me. But I must say there has been no rancor from those people. We are all in the same boat now, and they have chosen not to shun us.

DM: I'm not a native of Banyon, but I was an anti-apartheid activist in my country.

RH: I know that, I recognized you when you came in. I used to have some of your albums.

DM: It seems like years ago, but it was only one week ago that I was being wined and dined by Saventi. Now, I plan to kill him.

RH: I don't think you will be allowed anywhere near him.

DM: We'll see. Right now, I want to help Jennifer recover. Is there much danger of discovery here?

RH: There is a slight danger, but the natural savages of color do not like to venture out of the friendly confines of the city. Strange, isn't it? You would think, based on the rhetoric of men like me, that the noble savages would be more comfortable in the jungle than the unnatural white men. But that is not the case. The negroes have been too busy, for the last six months, looting and destroying the formerly white cities of Banyon, to venture out into the jungles of Banyon. So we are safe for a time. But eventually, when they have made the cities uninhabitable, they will come looking for white settlements to loot. That is when they will get a surprise.

DM: How so?

RH: They will find formerly passive whites who will fight to the last man. Everyone here now knows about the black race.

DM: Will you have a chance?

RH: Not much of a chance, but we will have no chance at all if we don't fight.

DM: You say you were an Anglican cleric, but the people here consult you about their physical ailments.

RH: I was a late vocation. After I graduated from medical school, I decided I was not cut out for medicine. I shifted to divinity school and took orders in the Anglican Church. From that time on, I plagued the world and the whites of Banyon with my self-righteous pap about freedom and equality.

DW: As a medical man, what do you think of Jennifer's chances?

RH: As a medical man, I can't say what her chances are. She was raped by Saventi and then he turned her over to his special troops to be raped and tortured by them. Then she was taken to that prison camp where you found her. It's a wonder she has lived this long. I think her desire to see you again kept her alive.

DM: When you spoke with her what did she say?

RH: She felt guilty for her part in the blood bath, that much I know. But I assured her that she was not alone, that I was a greater offender than she was. Still, she had to tell me of that night.

"The bloodletting was beyond horror, Reverend, it was something unearthly, it was as if the devil had come up from hell to urge his black minions on and on to greater and greater atrocities. I saw true evil that night. All my life I had spoken out against evil white men. I realized on that terrible night that it is only white men, white men who love the devil's antagonist, who can help against the evil of black barbarism. I spit on the U.N. and all those phony freedom loving organizations that bid us love the noble black savages while hating our own people."

DM: I did the same thing.

RH: So did I and so did all the clear-thinking, kind, compassionate liberals of the West. In the name of love, we demeaned the God of love in order to go whoring after the devil's own, the black barbarians.

DM: Is there really a devil, Reverend?

RH: Yes, there is. What has happened in Banyon is the proof. Mere psychology cannot explain Banyon. We need recourse to the Gospels in order to understand what is happening here. Our Lord believed in the devil, and He told us to shun the devil and all his works. What have I, and my fellow liberal clerics done? We have embraced the devil and all his works by our support of the colored heathens against the Christ-bearing race.

DM: That is a strong condemnation of everything I once believed in.

RH: Is it true? That's all that you need to ask yourself. Is it true that there is a devil and there is a loving God who is the antagonist of the devil?

DM: But it goes against everything modern, everything...

RH: Everything scientific and reasonable?

DM: Yes.

RH: Is what happened in Banyon reasonable and scientific? It is demonic. Science and reason are man-made abstractions. Reality is of the spirit. There is a devil and there is a God, our Lord Jesus Christ. That is the reality we must come to terms with.

DM: I've never really considered Christ as an actual reality. He was always, in the church I was brought up in, a kind of social worker, a man ahead of his time who paved the way for civil rights.

RH: That is what I was brought up to believe as well, although in my time there were still a few clergymen who actually believed that Christ was the Son of the living God. Actually, there was only one that I can think of. He was later barred from preaching and removed from his parish for preaching racism. His name was...

DM: It was Christopher Grey, wasn't it?

RH: Yes, it was. I take it you've heard of him.

DM: Yes, all liberals, and I was certainly a liberal, knew of Christopher Grey. He was racist and he was...

RH: Christian?

DM: Yes, and we all hated him with a passion.

RH: So did I. I once met him when he came to Banyon – this was after he was barred from the Anglican Church. He came here to visit a friend who had fled Kenya when Kenya became an independent black state. His friend kept telling us what would happen if we copied Kenya, but of course we didn't listen to him. Grey gave some public lectures supporting his friend's views of African affairs. I attended one of those lectures and confronted him afterwards.

"By what right do you come here and preach hate?" was my first question to him when he stepped away from the podium.

Christopher Grey replied, "I preach the hatred of the devil and all his works, if that is what you mean by hate. But there is a difference between your hate and my hate. Your hate is grounded in the hatred of the living God, who, since you can't strike back at him directly, you attack by attempting to destroy the Christ-bearing race. I hate the devil, because I love Christ and His people. Surely you can see the difference?"

Of course I couldn't see the difference at all. I was too filled with hatred for that man and what he stood for to see any truth in anything he said.

DM: Was that the last time you saw him?

RH: No, it wasn't. That was three years ago. I saw him just six months ago on the eve of the anti-apartheid election. He saved my life.

DM: Was he living in Banyon?

RH: No, he came, once again, at the request of his friend, to help his friend and his family escape from Banyon. He got his friend and his friend's family out of Banyon and then came for me. I was locked up in the white compound, scheduled to be executed the next morning. That night he came to the prison, strangled the two guards and set me and forty other white captives free. The others he took back to Britain with him, but I decided to remain here.

DM: Why?

RH: To try to atone for my sins against Christ and His people. Gradually, over the last six months, I managed to give aid and comfort to a large number of the despised and rejected whites of Banyon. I should have been attending to their needs during the twenty years that I was a cleric here, but I was too busy doing the devil's work, attending to the needs of Satan's black minions.

DM: They certainly were my gods and I suppose they were and still are the gods of the white European people.

RH: Yes, they are. I don't know the outcome of all this. All we can do is try to serve the living God in and through our people. Which is the way of the cross, the way of all our people until the advent of reason, science, and negro worship destroyed the European peoples' belief in the living God and in themselves as the Christ-bearing race. Every white man and every white woman must ask themselves where they belong, if not with their own people. Where will they learn to love if it is not by their own racial hearth fire? I, who preached love for all mankind, hated my own people. I was a pariah, fit for nothing but treachery against my own people. Neither you nor Jennifer need to beat yourselves to death over your own guilt; it was my responsibility, the responsibility of my entire generation, to preach the love of Christ through the love of one's own, one's kith and kin.

DM: Still, there is this matter of a white man's honor. I've only had a week to ponder my mistakes, or should I say sins. But all those romances of Walter Scott, which will be banned in the future no doubt, which I dismissed as part of my unenlightened past, have come rushing to the forefront of my memory. A Walter Scott hero would not allow his intended to be raped without avenging that outrage. I am going to kill Saventi. I know his death will not restore white Banyon, some other black thug will take Saventi's place, but I must kill him. It is part of the code, a code I've disgraced by prancing around the world singing folk songs about the noble black savage. That code, dormant for most of my life, has taken hold of me. I'm new to this Christian European thing, Reverend. Am I wrong?

RH: In wanting to kill Saventi?

DM: Yes.

RH: No, I don't think it would be wrong to kill Saventi. It would be a great good, but there are prudential concerns. You don't want to just throw your life away in a futile attempt. And what about Jennifer? She needs you.

DM: I don't think Jennifer would want me to kill Saventi to avenge her honor, but I do think she wants me to fight for the white people of Banyon. And the one, Jennifer's honor, is connected to the honor of every white in Banyon, the murdered, raped, and tortured whites of Banyon. And I am the only white man that might be able to get near Saventi. I don't think he knows precisely what happened to me. The black midget and his cousin certainly won't be talking; they acted without his orders. So I think if I suddenly show up with some plausible story about where I was, Saventi might be fooled and give me another audience. Then I'll kill him.

RH: Speak to Jennifer before you go, that is all I ask. Then go with my blessing.

Act V, Scene 1. Two Weeks Later.

Jennifer: This is the first time I've walked outside of the cave.

DM: How does it feel?

Jennifer: Wonderful, but I don't think I can manage much of a walk.

DM: That's all right. We'll go back whenever you say. I'm just glad to see you up. Rev. Hill says you've made outstanding progress.

Jennifer: I guess Heidi's grandfather was right?

DM: What do you mean?

Jennifer: In that story – I read it when I was a little girl – goat milk and faith is what helps Heidi's friend Klara to walk.

DM: Is it possible for either of us to have faith, the kind of faith that Rev. Hill has?

Jennifer: Rev. Hill's faith is of recent vintage, too. Yes, I think it is possible. I'm only an infant, as regards my faith, but I can feel it inside of me, it is real.

DM: I've only mentioned it once, but now that you're on the mend I must...

Jennifer: You must kill Saventi, is that what you want to tell me?

DM: Yes.

Jennifer: I love you, David, and I'm afraid for you, but I won't ask you not to go. I used to consider myself a feminist. In fact I was such a feminist that I felt guilty when I began to fall in love with you. Real feminists do not love men. But my faith has changed that. I see that there are things a man, a man of honor, must do or else he is not a man. A woman must respect that.

DM: Will you marry me before I go?

Jennifer: Yes.

Act V, Scene 2. Morgan Has Obtained a Private Audience with Saventi.

Saventi: We were very worried about you. Where have you been all this time?

DM: In the desert. Strange as it sounds, I was abducted from my room and taken to some place in the deserts of Banyon.

Saventi: How far did your abductors take you?

DM: I don't know, I was unconscious.

Saventi: Then how did you know you were in the desert?

DM: When I regained consciousness, that's where I was.

Saventi: Who were your abductors?

DM: I don't know.

Saventi: Why, because all black men look alike to you?

DM: Aren't you assuming they were black? How do you know they weren't white fascists?

Saventi: Were they white?

DM: No, they were black.

Saventi: Then why play games with me?

DM: I'm not playing games with you.

Saventi: Yes, you are, Mr. Folk Singer, the great champion of black Banyon. You lying, white fascist. I know where you were. You were with that whore, Jennifer...

One more step and I'll blow your brains out. Guards! Take this man away.

Act V, Scene 3. Saventi's office.

Kantini: I don't see why we must treat him differently than the rest of the white prisoners. I've refrained, at your orders, from torturing him, and he has been fed like a king, but I still must say I don't understand.

Saventi: Kantini, you are a good and loyal pit bull, but I'm afraid you do not understand the politics of our particular situation. We control Banyon because the liberal whites love us; they have created a fantasy of the poor but noble black savage who needs their aid and their pity. I know this to be true because I have studied at their universities.

Kantini: I spit on their pity.

Saventi: So do I, and I'll go further than that — I hate the liberals of the West more than I hate the white reactionaries.

Kantini: I hate all whites.

Saventi: As I do, Kantini. I assure you, we will kill them all. But we must be wise. We must not give our enemies, and we have a few in the West, the opportunity to say we are behaving just like the white fascists who used to rule Banyon. This David Morgan fellow is very famous in the United States and Europe. If we torture and kill him, the West will take note.

Kantini: But surely you aren't going to let him live?

Saventi: Of course I'm not going to let him live. But it must seem right to the liberal West. They must be shown by a reliable witness that David Morgan has become a white racist.

Kantini: And who will be that reliable witness?

Saventi: Pope Francis.

Kantini: That pig?

Saventi: Yes, that pig will be my reliable witness. His papal visit is next week. He wants to give the black Republic of Banyon his blessing. I intend to make sure that Pope Francis is my witness to the world. He will see that David Morgan is a white racist that I must execute for the good of the state. Never fear, my good and faithful pit bull, David Morgan shall die.

Kantini: Will your Excellency allow me the privilege?

Saventi: Yes.

Kantini: Then he shall die slowly and painfully.

Act V, Scene 4. Pope Francis's "Interview" with David Morgan, in His Jail Cell.

Pope Francis: I've heard terrible things about you, my son.

DM: What did the great Saventi tell you?

PF: That you joined in a plot, a plot of the white fascists hiding in the jungle, to kill President Saventi.

DM: I did try to kill Saventi, but there was no plot. It was my own idea, no one else was responsible.

PF: But what could possibly have possessed you? You were such a good friend of the black people of Banyon. Was it because of that woman?

DM: What woman?

PF: Jennifer Dawson.

DM: What did he tell you about her?

PF: He told me that you were in love with her, but when you discovered that Saventi had made her his fourth wife you went berserk. You stormed out of the Presidential Palace and eventually ended up with the white fascists, plotting your revenge on President Saventi. My son, we all must suffer disappointments in life, and disappointments in love are some of the worst of them, but we must persevere, we must be true to our ideals despite disappointments. President Saventi is a saint. He forgives you for your attempt on his life, and he will permit you to leave the country on the condition that you renounce all attempts on his life and never write or speak a word against President Saventi or the Free Black Republic of Banyon. I think those are more than generous terms. If you accept them, I am to be your safe convoy back to Europe and from there, you can return to your homeland.

DM: I can't accept those terms, because they are a lie. Saventi is a monster. He raped Jennifer Dawson and then turned her over to his black henchmen to be raped and tortured in a white prison camp. I saw one of those prison camps, your Holiness, and they were something from hell. I won't renounce Jennifer or my people. I intend, if I live, to tell the world what I saw here and to kill Saventi.

PF: President Saventi told me you would fabricate lies to justify your hatred of him. Please relent, it's not too late to stop your execution.

DM: It's not too late for you to become a white Christian. Why won't you believe me?

PF: Because I believe Saventi. I looked into his face and I saw holiness.

DM: I have nothing more to say to you then.

PF: I'm still willing to be your safe convoy if you'll only repent. Otherwise you will be executed. I can't blame Saventi, he can't permit such plots against the state.

DM: I thought you were against capital punishment.

PF: Not in this case, this is a legitimate execution. White racism must be purged from the face of the earth.

DM: You go to hell.

Christopher Grey: It's time to leave this place. Your people are waiting for you in the jungle.

DM: Who are you?

CG: My name is Christopher Grey, and we must move quickly.

DM: I can't leave until I kill Saventi.

CG: He is dead and so is Kantini.

DM: How?

CG: Never mind how. Come with me.

Act V, Scene 5.

Ancient Mariner: That was some 40 years ago, I suppose Christopher Grey was in his early sixties back then. He is still alive today. He is over one-hundred years old.

Taylor: I've heard some terrible things about him.

AM: Of course you have, you've heard those things from liberals.

Taylor: Who is he then?

AM: He is flesh and blood; that is certain. But he is a kind of Melchizedek, the mysterious high king of Salem, who came seemingly out of nowhere to aid Abraham. Now mind you, I'm not saying Christopher Grey is Melchizedek, but I am saying he has done what Melchizedek did. On many, many occasions he has come to the aid of Christians who seemed destined to perish at the hands of colored barbarians or liberals. I can't recount all the missions of mercy he has successfully carried off. My case was just one of his many miraculous missions of mercy. When he took me out of that cell, we traveled through the Banyon desert for many miles. As we approached the jungle where Jennifer and the rest of the white Banyonites were, I looked up at the sky and couldn't help but feel that I was back with the shepherds who were vouchsafed a vision of the Star of Bethlehem. I knew nothing about stars, so I didn't know what the modern name for the star was that shone so brightly that night. But for me it was the Star of Bethlehem. Its light gave my new-found faith a special intensity and fervor. Christopher Grey didn't try to discourage me when I got on my knees before the star. He got down on his knees with me and recited Scripture:

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

Taylor: Once you got back to Rev. Hill and the other whites, did you take up residence there?

DM: No, we didn't. Jennifer wanted to stay with the white remnant of Banyon, to try and be of some use. You see, she wanted to make up for her treason. But Rev. Hill thought that she could get better medical care in the States. At that time the States still gave medical care to whites.

Taylor: I've heard of those times.

DM: The USA eventually went the way of Banyon and outlawed whiteness, but for about 12 years Jennifer was able to receive medical treatment in the United States. We were told by all the doctors that Jennifer, because of all the injuries she had endured at the hands of the black barbarians, could not bear children. But ten years after our return to the States she gave birth to a baby boy. He is alive and well today with a family of his own.

Taylor: Does he live here with your wife and you?

AM: He lives near me. He has lived in the White Underground since he was five years old.

Taylor: And your wife?

AM: We had 38 good years together. She died two years ago. We both tried, during that time, to support the whites in Banyon and the United States. I continued my song writing, but of course my pro-white folk songs were banned. Still, we did what we could. I think I would have given up if it hadn't been for Jennifer. She looked on me as a rock, so I had to be one.

Taylor: And now?

AM: The dead are not dead; she still needs me to be a rock, and I need her to be my inspiration. Of course, we are both sustained by Him and through Him.

Taylor: What became of Christopher Grey?

AM: He returned to Britain in order to be a thorn in the side of the Moslems and the liberals, but he has visited these shores on other mercy missions. He has friends throughout Europe, the United States, and Banyon.

Taylor: This all seems so fantastical. Your world is so different from the world I have known.

AM: It rests with you to decide which world you belong to. I have told you of your people and their God.

Act V, Scene 6. Two Weeks Later.

Father Todd: Do you feel well enough to assist at mass this afternoon?

Taylor: No, I don't, can we wait a little while longer?

Father Todd: You'll forgive me if I seem unsympathetic, but you don't seem disabled. Why can't you assist at mass? It's been two weeks since your alleged beating at the hands of Paul Davis.

Taylor: What do you mean by my 'alleged' beating?

Father Todd: I don't think you were really beaten at all. I think you played Sidney Carton to his Charles Darnay.

Taylor: I don't know what you are talking about...

Father Todd: Sidney Carton, in Dickens' *A Tale of Two Cities*, changed places with Charles Darnay and went to the guillotine in Jacobin France instead of Darnay.

Taylor: I've never read Dickens; his books are on the Index. What were you doing reading a condemned book?

Father Todd: Don't try to put the blame on me. Dickens' works were not on the Index when I was a young man.

Taylor: You mean in those terrible days when everything white and Christian was not proscribed by our wonderful government?

Father Todd: There it is.

Taylor: What?

Father Todd: Outright blasphemy. I haven't forgotten why you went on vacation. You had doubts about your vocation as a priest consecrated to the sacred negro.

Taylor: Okay, Father, I will tell you the truth. I no longer believe in the sacred negro. I believe in the God of my people. I believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. I believe that He died to save me from sin and death, and I love Him in and through the people of my own race. I freed Paul Davis because I was in a position to free Paul Davis. I had him change clothes with me, and then he tied me up and left the prison pretending to be me. The authorities believed that he had beaten me and changed places with me. Now, you know the truth. But I must tell you that I only wish that I could free all the white captives of this hideous monstrosity of a church that you serve, and I, God have mercy on me, used to serve.

Father Todd: (screaming). You filthy, degenerate, treacherous snake! I'll tell them everything and you'll die slowly, painfully, and justly.

Taylor: All in the name of liberty, equality, fraternity, and the sacred negro, isn't that about the size of it?

Father Todd: I won't listen to this blasphemy any longer.

Taylor: I'm afraid I anticipated you, Father Todd. Your cellphone is permanently out of order.

Father Todd: That won't stop me. I'll drive to the government offices to report you.

DM: I'm afraid you will not be able to visit with the government officials, Father Todd.

FT: Who are you?

DM: We are members of the European resistance movement, the people you call white fascists. You are going to be tried for your crimes against your people. You had better pray to the God that you have forsaken that we are more merciful than the god and the people that you serve.

Taylor: What will happen to him?

DM: He won't be tortured, I'll promise you that much.

Taylor: Will he be executed?

DM: It's possible, if he seems irredeemable. But first he'll be imprisoned. He'll be fed well and treated humanely. Then comes the big 'if' – If we see that he truly and sincerely has left the Church of the sacred negro in order to return to Christ's church, we will find a place for him in the White Underground. But that will be up to him. Right now, he is headed for prison.

Taylor: How is Davis doing?

DM: He's doing fine. He never thought he would see his wife and children again. Now it looks like he'll be around to see them grow up white and Christian.

Taylor: That's good.

DM: He is very grateful to you. His wife says they will name their next child after you. John, if he is a boy and Joan if she is a girl.

Taylor: That is very kind of them, but it was you...

DM: Nonsense. You were a hero, a real life Sidney Carton.

Taylor: I'll have to read that book someday.

DM: You'll get a chance to read all of Dickens' works where you are going. Arthur's Britain does not ban Christian works.

Taylor: Are you sure that I belong in Britain?

DM: Yes, I'll miss you, but right now the government officials are too focused on you. You need time to live and grow as a Christian. Arthur's Britain is the place for you. If you leave tonight, William and James will put you on the ship with some other future Britons; you will arrive in time for Christmas.

Taylor: All right, it's settled. But I won't say goodbye – we shall meet again.

DM: Most certainly.

POSTSCRIPT: Three weeks later, Christmas Eve Day.

Taylor: Is it true that on the first two Christmas Eves here, you performed the entire *Christmas Carol* from memory?

Grey: Yes, like my hero, Sir Walter Scott, I have a photographic memory. The works I want to remember stay with me. But last year, our third Christmas in the new-old Britain, I decided to dole out the parts. I was the Ghost of Christmas Past and the narrative voice. This year, our fourth Christmas, I'll just be the narrative voice.

Taylor: I'm a little nervous about my part. I only read the *Christmas Carol* for the first time on the boat coming over here.

Grey: You'll be fine.

Taylor: Is this typecasting?

Grey: (laughing). No, you are playing Scrooge as a young man because you are younger. After all, you are a repentant Scrooge – if you played him that would be typecasting.

Taylor: (laughing). Well, I only hope I don't ruin it.

Grey: You won't.

Taylor: I certainly can identify with Scrooge after his conversion. He is so happy that he is a light as a feather. Do I have a right to such happiness?

Grey: Don't put the grace of God in that category. None of us have any rights – we have His love and that is everything.

Taylor: Whomever I talk to here, they seem to be of one accord – "Christopher Grey is a man who walks with God." How does a man like myself learn to walk with God?

Grey: Just love Him in and through your people.

Taylor: That's all?

Grey: That is everything.

Taylor: Rev. Grey, I don't mean to burden you, particularly on Christmas Eve day, but I would like to know more of your story. You understand that I do not ask for your story in a spirit of mere intellectual curiosity?

Grey: Yes, I understand that. There is something from my past that might help you. It's not my whole story, but it certainly has determined what the content of my life's story has become.

Neither of my parents were Church of England, they were what was called 'non-conformist,' in that they attended a Protestant Gospel-based church, but they were not narrow sectarians. If you believed that Christ was the Son of God who died for our sins, my parents looked on you as their fellow Christian. Both my parents were large in stature, my mother was very tall for a woman, and my father was a raw-boned, muscular man well over 6'6" tall. I only bring that into the story because, as you'll see, it is going to have something to do with my path in life. It's a wondrous thing, how seemingly irrelevant things can shape our destinies.

With such parents, and with the fruits of the earth to nourish me, I grew up to be quite a strong, muscular young man. I don't think my spirit was as strong as my body was though. I accepted my parents' faith, but I didn't pay as much attention to my spiritual life as I did to my physical life. I lifted weights, which I forged at the farm in our blacksmith shop, and the weightlifting added to my natural strength inherited from my parents. Don't worry, this is all leading somewhere.

Taylor: (laughing). I'm not going to sleep, I assure you.

Grey: Okay. I never had any desire, in my young manhood, to do anything but farming as my life's work. I pictured myself marrying some pretty farm girl and settling down on a farm near my parents' farm. And while I was preparing for that life I indulged my two passions – wrestling and weightlifting.

It was the wrestling that changed my destiny. In order to be successful as a wrestler – and I was quite successful as a country wrestler – you needed more than strength, you also needed endurance. So almost every night, after my farm chores were done, I did three to five miles of roadwork. I didn't do my running in the morning because I started the farm work so early that I really wasn't able to fit the running in then. I knew all the roads in the area and there were virtually no cars in those days, the country folk were still using horse coaches and carts, so there was very little danger of running into a vehicle in the dark. Looking back on it now, I realize I was in more danger than I thought. The British people in those days were allowed to bear arms. I never considered the fact that with my size and in the dark, a farmer could easily have mistaken me for a large animal of some kind and blasted me with his shotgun. But I ran in the darkness, completely oblivious to any danger. That is not a deliberate metaphor for my spiritual state at the time, but you can take it for one.

Now I come to the night when God called on me by name. I suppose I'm open to the usual charges of seeing divine intervention in an accidental circumstance, but it is my conviction that what happened on that night, so many years ago, when I was 20, was no accidental circumstance.

I was about two miles into my run when a horse-driven carriage, going extremely fast, too fast for safety, passed me on the road. In fact I had to dive into a ditch to avoid being hit by the carriage. As I got up I noticed that whoever was driving the carriage had stopped about 100 yards up the road. A young woman got out and ran back toward me. She was visibly upset, almost in a state of hysteria. At this point, let me shift to the dramatic mode, which is the way I see the events of that night.

Young Woman: Are you hurt?

Young Grey: No ma'am, I'm not hurt, but I must tell you that you were going too fast for these roads and...

Young Woman: Yes, I know, but I have to prevent something terrible from happening. Now, if you're not hurt, I must be going.

Young Grey: Wait, if you must get somewhere in a hurry, I can take you there. I know these roads.

Young Woman: (looking me straight in the eye) Will you take me where I want to go without asking questions?

Young Grey: (looking her in the eyes) Yes.

Young Woman: Then let's go.

~~~~~

Taylor: You really went with her without asking questions?

Grey: You must understand that I was young and a romantic at heart. I know such things are not even spoken of today, especially in the world you've come from. But for me it was the fulfillment of the deepest yearning of my heart – to do battle against the forces of evil, and I believed anyone opposed to that fair lady had to be evil, for the sake of a damsel in distress, was all that a romantic could ask for.

Taylor: Was it all you had hoped for?

Grey: Yes. We went about two miles farther down the road and then she asked me to stop. She had reason to believe that her younger sister, blinded by a fatal infatuation, had run off with an older man. My lady knew, by instinct, that the man was evil. And by evil she meant diabolical.

"We might encounter anything in that grove where she was told to meet him. Are you willing to face anything for a woman you don't even know?" she asked me.

I told her I was. Then we proceeded to the grove in the woods. What I saw sent chills down my spine. The sister was bound and gagged, stretched out on some kind of altar. There were present one white man, dressed in Satanic robes, and he was assisted by four loin-cloth attired black men. The white Satanist was going through a satanic ritual with the obvious intent of sacrificing my lady's sister to the devil. My blood was up with that charity of honor and I rushed upon the demonic white man. But before I could reach him I had to deal with his black henchmen. That didn't take long. Once I had disposed of them, I turned to deal with the diabolist. First, he pointed the sacrificial knife at me, but then, surveying my size and the look in my eye, he pulled a revolver from out of his robes and pointed it at my heart, saying, "One step further, and you die. I command you to go back, in the name of Satan, I command you!"

"In the name of Christ, I defy you."

Taylor: I presume he missed?

Grey: He fired at point-blank range and missed.

Taylor: What happened to him?

Grey: I killed him.

Taylor: And his henchmen?

Grey: I thought I made that clear, I killed them when they tried to stop me from preventing the sacrifice.

Taylor: That must have been rather traumatic, to kill five men like that at such a young age?

Grey: I wouldn't use the term 'traumatic' – I don't like the terminology of psychology.

Taylor: I'm sorry, it will take some time to divest myself of the trappings of my old life.

Grey: I'm not reproaching you. I just want to keep things clear. The incident stirred up something deep inside of me, but it was not bloodlust, nor was it remorse for what I had done. What it stirred up in me was something that Edmund Burke said was missing in the French people during the bloody French Revolution. He called it, "that charity of honor." It is the white Christian's response to the murder of other white Christians and to the destruction of God's image in man. That is what stirred within me that night, and that is what I, and every white man who is still Christian, lives by. There was an instinct inside of me, deeper than reason, telling me that I had to kill in defense of innocence. The Christian heart will see us through where reason fails.

Taylor: Why did he miss?

Grey: I can't prove this, but I think the words 'Jesus Christ' made him flinch just enough to shoot wide. There is great power in the Word made flesh, and His word was made flesh in my heart on that night.

Taylor: There are similarities between your story and David Morgan's story.

Grey: Every white Christian is called to fight the devil and his works. It might not always be a physical fight, although in our current post-Christian era, it is often likely to be, but the spiritual battle is always with us. What I encountered on that night was unusual in that the white diabolist, a professor, actually believed in Satan. Most liberals then and now do Satan's will, but they do not actually believe in Satan. But what that liberal was doing, sacrificing a white Christian on the altars of Satan, with the aid of colored heathens, was to become the liberals' religion in the 20<sup>th</sup> and the 21<sup>st</sup> centuries. I have lived a long life, I've seen the liberals destroy all of Christian Europe, and now, thank God, I've lived to see the beginnings of the European people's return to Christian Europe. You shall be part of that movement – the great homecoming of the European people.

Taylor: What happened to the two women?

Grey: The fair damsel became my wife, and her sister lived many happy years with a Christian husband. They had a large family. My wife died young, but she has never left my side. It won't be long now till I see her again face to face.

Taylor: Is that incident what made you become a clergyman?

Grey: Yes, I never wanted, before that evening, to be anything but a farmer.

Taylor: Any regrets?

Grey: No, even though I was finally dismissed from my parish for 'racism' I got to meet many Christians and do some good in my work as a clergyman.

Taylor: Is there a true church?

Grey: Yes, but it is not the Anglican Church or the Roman Catholic Church or any of the other organized churches. Christ cannot be put in a closed box. He is not, as my friend C. S. Lewis said in his Narnia series, a tame lion. Christ's church consists of those who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ as true God and true man. And when I refer to belief, I'm not referring to an intellectual assertion of the truths of Christianity. I'm talking about an interior conviction that Christ is our Savior.

Taylor: How does one come to that faith?

Grey: Through your people. Stay by your racial hearth fire, stay with Christ, and all will be well. Now that I've told you a little bit about my beginnings, let us come to the present. Don't worry about your part in the play, you'll be fine. I'm sure your performance will be worthy of Dickens. He and all of Europe's honored dead will be with us today. Did you ever read what Dickens said about Christmas and our honored dead?

Taylor: No, I haven't. I'm afraid I have a lot to catch up on.

Grey: This is what he wrote:

On this day we shut out Nothing!

"Pause," says a low voice. "Nothing? Think!"

"On Christmas Day, we will shut out from our fireside, Nothing."

"Not the shadow of a vast City where the withered leaves are lying deep?" the voice replies. "Not the shadow that darkens the whole globe? Not the shadow of the City of the Dead?"

Not even that. Of all days in the year, we will turn our faces towards that City upon Christmas Day, and from its silent hosts bring those we loved, among us. City of the Dead, in the blessed name wherein we are gathered together at this time, and in the Presence that is here among us according to the promise, we will receive, and not dismiss, thy people who are dear to us!

Taylor: That is beautiful.

Grey: Yes, it is. After tonight's service and play, we'll have all sorts of games and parties on Christmas Day. It's for the children. We have a lot of children in Christian Britain. You are welcome to come to any of the festivities that strike your fancy.

Taylor: Thank you, from the bottom of my heart.

---

**Finis. Christmas Eve in Christian Britain.**

:  
Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did NOT die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset, and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God Bless Us, Every One!

Grey: And now, please sing with me:

All:

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide!  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, oh, abide with me.

Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;  
Earth's joys grow dim, its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see—  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.

I need Thy presence every passing hour;  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's power?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.

I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness;  
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.

Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies;  
Heav'n's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me.

Grey: Merry Christmas! +

# The Mystic Toyland

January 5, 2019

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christmas, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Young Drummer

Tags: St. Paul



Childhood's joy land,  
Mystic, merry toy land  
Once you cross its borders  
You can ne'er return again.

-Mother Goose in *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. – *Colossians 2: 8*

In the wonderful fairy tale movie *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*, Laurel and Hardy, who are both Third Dumb Brothers, do battle with Barnaby and the boogeymen to save the inhabitants of Toyland from destruction. At the beginning of the movie, long before the final battle in which the wooden soldiers drive the boogeymen out of Toyland, Mother Goose sings the Toyland song. In the song she tells us that once we cross the borders of that mystical world of Toyland we can “never return again.” Never? With all due respect to Mother Goose, I would assert that it is possible to return. She is right to tell us that we shouldn’t seek to leave Toyland, but she is too ‘this world only’ practical to see why it is not written that no one ever returns to Toyland after leaving Toyland. With men it is impossible, but with Christ it is possible.

The Garden of Eden was like unto Toyland. It was a wonderful mystic world which God made to sustain Adam and Eve. But it could only sustain them so long as they were like unto little children. Satan was the Barnaby of the Garden of Eden: he placed a wedge between Adam and Eve’s childlike faith in God, leading them down the path of philosophical speculation: “Dying from a bite of an apple? Don’t be absurd! Just think about it – how can knowledge be bad?” So Adam and Eve were banished from the mystical Garden, and so were we, their descendants, banished from that mystical storybook land.

The reason our European ancestors used to celebrate Christmas was because the birth of our Lord and His subsequent crucifixion and resurrection from the dead allowed us to return to the storybook land of Eden, but of course that return can only be through His cross. And that has been the main reason why the liberals have built Liberaldom over the ruins of Christendom. They have rejected the cross of Christ. The traditions and customs of the Christian Europeans were outward symbols of a deeply held interior faith. Our people believed He had gone to prepare a place for us in His Kingdom, a Kingdom that was the visionary home of the European people. The theologians’ attack on the Word Made Flesh opened the door for liberalism:

*As a history of the world, the empirical history after Christ is qualitatively not different from the history before Christ if judged from either a strictly empirical history or a strictly Christian viewpoint. -Karl Löwith*

The devil never attacks God directly, he always attacks God through His people. The theologians who tell us there never was a Christian Europe, that there is no empirical or qualitative difference between pagan Europe and Christian Europe, leave us with a God who did not take flesh and dwell among us; they leave us with a Gnostic God without a local habitation or a name. He is the unknown God whom the Athenians worshipped: “There is no sign of Christ in Europe from a strictly Christian viewpoint.” That is the eternal refrain of the men of philosophy and theology. But the history of our people, which we can see clearly if we see through, not with, the eye, gives the lie to the sneering cynicism of the men of the scientized intellects.

It would be more accurate to say there is no sign of Christ from a Christian **utopian** viewpoint. All have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God, but can we honestly look at European history and say we see *only* sin? That would be like visiting the Louvre and condemning the whole museum because you saw trash bins in the basement. Christian utopianism always places the followers of that type of intellectual Christianity with the secular liberals against their own people. Hilaire Belloc thought Robespierre’s bloodletting was necessary to purge the Republic of Catholics who were insufficiently Catholic. So we should thank Robespierre and his cohorts for giving us the pure, unadulterated, Catholic France that we see before us today?

Satan wants the churchmen to speculate about God. He loves theological disputes because he knows that philosophical speculation leads men away from the love of God, away from their mystical core, and into the realm of eternal night. When the European people followed the way of the cross, which was the way of St. Paul, when their intellects were purified by loving hearts, they lived, interiorly, in a mystic Toyland. Their young men saw visions, and their old men dreamed dreams of His Kingdom come. What do the European people see now and what do they dream about? They see the sacred negro and they dream of the kingdom of God on earth, which can only be achieved when the white race is eliminated from the earth.

**The idea that mankind progresses morally is neither Christian nor pagan. It is post-Christian.** The Christian Europeans believed that history was moving toward the return of Christ, they did not believe they were moving onward and upward to moral perfection, a moral perfection that would bring about the Kingdom of God on earth. The difference between the Christian view of history and the post-Christian view of history accounts for the great divide today between the reigning liberal culture and the culture of the antique Europeans. Old Europe was indeed a mystical Toyland, a Toyland that we can return to if we reject intellectual Christianity and return to the heartfelt faith of St. Paul, the apostle who enjoined us to circumcise our hearts and let the dear Christ enter in. But if we reject the antique Europeans as impure and degenerate because they were insufficiently Christian, which always translates into, ‘they were racist and sexist,’ then we must join with the liberals and look to another Christ, a purified Christ, who will rule over the Kingdom of God on earth, which is, in reality, the kingdom of hell on earth.

The vilification of the European people in the ‘Christian’ churches, which has been going on for over a century, has resulted in the secularization of Christ the Lord. If the antique Europeans were wrong, if Rembrandt’s Christ was not the true Christ, then who or what is Christ? Christ has become a nebulous figure in modern Christian Jewry. He is something more than man, but less than God. Pope Francis paved the way for the eventual elimination of Christ altogether when he deified the savages of the Amazon Rain forest. Therein lies the hope of

men who live in this world only — the future belongs to the noble savages of color — they are the salvation of mankind, minus the non-illuminated members of the white race, who cannot be saved because their unilluminated whiteness damns them to hell.

There used to be, let us go back 125 years ago, two reasons why a man could not celebrate Christmas. The first reason was bereavement. When a man lost a loved one during the Christmas season, it was not possible to celebrate Christmas as he was wont; a man must have time to grieve. But when Christmas comes the next year, the Christian European places his honored dead at the Christmas feast, and he is able, once again, to celebrate Christmas. Dickens' marvelous essay called "What Christmas Is As We Grow Older," which Christopher Grey referenced in *The Shepherds of Europe*, beautifully describes how our grief over the death of our loved ones is transformed into joy because of our faith in the Babe in the Manger.

The second reason a man could not celebrate Christmas some 125 years ago was the Ebenezer Scrooge reason. Scrooge didn't believe in the Christ of Europe. The Jews and the Ebenezer Scrooges of old Europe could not celebrate Christmas because they worshipped another god, a golden idol, instead of Christ the Lord.

Now we come to our present century, the first non-Christian century in Europe since the European people first bent their knees to Christ. In modern Satandom a third obstacle has emerged, which makes the celebration of Christmas very difficult. When Scrooge repented, when he saw the light, he ventured out into a Christian community to share his new-found faith with his fellow Christians. Now, the man who has kept Christmas in his heart for 365 days of the year and wants to celebrate what he believes in his heart with the type of outward ceremonies described in Washington Irving's *Old Christmas* must withdraw from the community around him, because the community around him consists of liberals who despise Christ and intellectual Christians who have blended Christ with liberalism. Christmas, when celebrated with family and friends who believe in Christ as St. Paul believed and as our European ancestors believed, should afford us a "foretaste of heaven." (I must credit the daughter of a close friend with that wonderful description of a truly European Christmas.) Despite the liberals' and the theologians' condemnation of the antique Europeans, we are one with them in faith and blood.

The estrangement I feel during the entire calendar year from the surrounding community intensifies during the Christmas season because I see, as I celebrate Christmas as the old Europeans celebrated it, the divide between the spiritual beauty of our ancestors' faith and the satanic ugliness of modern liberalism clearly delineated. A man has to be either morally anesthetized or completely immersed in the satanic culture of liberalism in order to celebrate Christmas with liberals or intellectual Christians. When Christmas is celebrated as the antique Europeans celebrated it, we feel renewed for the battle. We know our enemy and we know that we must hold Christmas in our hearts, as the ghost of Christmas present enjoins us, 365 days of the year lest we be defeated by the enemy of mankind who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

In the name of a purified God and a purified people, religious experts such as the previously quoted Karl Löwith bid us leave the mystical European Toyland and seek Christ in another land, a multi-cultural hell, with another people. But who is the purified Christ and who are the purified people? **Behold, it is a second fall of man.** We have left Christ and His people in order to dwell in Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. The liberals and the intellectual Christians tell us we must not worship the past, in fact we must hate our past in order to progress. What must we progress toward? The liberals say it is the kingdom of God on earth. And the intellectual Christians tell us that we must progress toward a clearer understanding, with their help, of the nature of God. But while we are coming to that clearer understanding of God we are enjoined to worship the next best thing, the sacred negro and the other colored gods of nature.

**We do not worship the past as the liberals and the intellectual Christians worship the future.** We revere the past because He dwells in the past with our people, who, despite their imperfections, had hearts of flesh. And with those hearts of flesh they saw and knew the living God, the God the liberals hate and the theologians and philosophers have sylogized out of existence. That despised and rejected God has a name and a place: His name is Jesus and His place is with the European people who have not crossed the borders of that mystical storybook land of Christian Europe.

Modern Europe is not our world. We do not seek electoral victories that promise us a piece of the liberal pie. We seek to drive the liberals and their colored allies out of storybook land just as the wooden soldiers drove Barnaby and the boogymen out of Toyland. **Why speak of fairy tales as Satan tightens his grip on the European people? Why not suggest something practical, like a new political party?** It is because Satan has the people who embraced democracy and science in his grip that I want the European people to place themselves back in that glorious European fairy tale in which the Babe in the Manger grows up and becomes the Savior of the world, who "hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows." Is He really so obscure and remote from us? Only if we have no heart for our people and the sacred heritage they bequeathed to us. Do we stand with St. Paul and the antique Europeans, or do we stand with the liberals and the Athenian intellectuals who worship an unknown God that exists only in the future? The Israelites who had to decide whether they stood with Moses or with Korah, Dathan, and Abiram had a similar choice. Satan will not prevail if we stay with the people who revered the Babe in the Manger. We, the European people, ask Him to stay. +

# The Red Death of Liberalism

January 12, 2019

Categories: Antique Christianity, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Edgar Allan Poe, Eugene O'Neill



For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? — *Matthew 16: 26*

---

And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. — *Matthew 18: 2-3*

---

In Edgar Allan Poe's story "The Masque of the Red Death," the revelers at the party thought they were safe from the Red Death that was ravaging the surrounding countryside, but in the end they too were devoured by the Red Death. It does not take a prophet to know that the European people are in the position of the revelers, because the Red Death of Liberalism is not in the future, it is in the present. The European people are partying while the Red Death kills them off.

Despite differences in politics, the various mainstream news outlets, such as CNN, NBC, and Fox, and the various alternative news sites such as Breitbart, the Council of Conservative Citizens, and the Drudge Report are all united in that which is essential to perpetuate the Red Death; they are united in their belief in the democratic process. You get the information out to the people, and then they act on that information by participating in the democratic process, which includes voting, writing letters to Congress, and participating in nonviolent protests.

The alternative news sites have sprung up because the moderate liberals think — and they are correct — that the mad-dog liberals are suppressing the truth, they are not reporting the story of white genocide. But despite the fact that the mad-dog liberals control the content of the mainstream news organizations and reserve the right to regulate the alternative news sites, the moderate liberals, who are called conservatives, still cling tenaciously to the hope that somehow the democratic process, which is the tool of Satan, can be used to dethrone Satan. This can never be. Isabel's heartfelt plea to the Duke in Shakespeare's *Measure for Measure* is just as true today as it was then: "You bid me seek redemption from the devil." We must look to someone besides the devil for our redemption.

Many of the post-World War II conservatives expressed a sympathy for and/or a belief in Christianity, but they prefaced their stated belief in Christianity as a religion with the rejection of the antique European people's faith in Christ. They did not go into the future holding on to the strings of the past, because they rejected their racial hearth fire where the Christ of old Europe dwelt and replaced it with a universalist religion without a place for the Christ of old Europe. The 'conservatives' did not believe, in contrast to Burke, that democracy and its accompanying universalist platitudes was incompatible with the Word made flesh. They blended Christianity with democracy and came up with Christo-liberalism, which is liberalism salted with some Christian phrases, but is still, at its core, liberalism. The shipwreck of the European people took place when the conservative leadership in church and state steered the good Ship Europe onto the rocks of philosophical speculation and racial amalgamation.

I don't want to leave the 'progress' heresy that I touched on last week, because that heresy is the link between the mad-dog liberals and the conservatives who claim to be in opposition to the mad-dog liberals. When you accept the premise that democracy and its universalist assumptions of racial and cultural diversity is progress, how can you oppose the progressive reforms of democracy? You can't. The conservatives never tell us we must kill abortion doctors, because a Christian people do not permit the slaughter of infants. Nor do they tell us that we must imprison the liberals and drive the colored heathens from our nations. Instead they tell us that we must work through the democratic process to limit abortions and we must work through the democratic process to restrict immigration. Can you be moderate when dealing with the devil?

Why, now that the liberals have thrown off their false humanistic masks and revealed themselves in all their satanic inhumanity, are the churchmen and the 'conservatives' more willing than ever to compromise with them? Part of the reason is the obvious one. The liberals are in power, and it is dangerous to oppose the powers that be. But that is only part of the reason. The modern conservatives would not continue to adhere to the democratic process out of sheer cowardice, because there are many conservatives who are not cowards. The mad-dog liberals could not rule without the consent of the non-cowardly conservatives. Why then do they consent to the rule of the mad-dog liberals? The conservatives consent to the liberals' rule because the conservatives believe in the democratic heresy. They believe that democracy and its attendant customs and traditions is superior to the governments of old Europe with their attendant customs and traditions. But is the democratic culture, which has given us race-mixing, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and transgenderism, really superior to the customs and traditions of old Europe? By some magical hocus pocus the modern conservative thinks we can have democracy without the above-mentioned evils. Is that possible? I recently saw a travelogue by James A. Fitzpatrick, the man who traveled the globe for MGM Studios. He was visiting Denmark, which at that time (1950) seemed like the ideal democratic state. But was that wonderful 1950s nation wonderful because they were a democracy or because the evils that come with democracy had not surfaced yet? Denmark at that time was still white, and her people were still living according to the Christian ethos of their forefathers. Now that democracy, with its racial diversity and sexual perversity, has taken root in Denmark, is it still the ideal state that Fitzpatrick lauds? No, it is not. Denmark, like all of the European nations, has succumbed to the Red Death of Liberalism, because Denmark followed the path of democratic diversity.

Like a mad scientist who seeks to put together a human being by collecting body parts and fusing them together, the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives have sought to reconstruct the Christian faith by fusing all the theories of God together — Greek, Roman, Hebrew, and Moslem — in order to make a universalist Christian façade that was acceptable to the scientized brains of modern Europeans. But like the mad scientist, the conservative intellectuals forgot the animating spirit. They forgot pietas. The love that once was there, at the Europeans' racial hearth fire, the love for their people and for Christ, was missing. You can't kill pietas and still expect a man to love a generic God and a generic people. In *Great Expectations*, Miss Havisham, who has raised Estella to shun mankind so that she will not be deceived by an excess of sentiment for individual members of mankind, is horrified when Estella grows up and has no heart to love "even her," Miss Havisham. The atrocity stories reported by the alternative news sites fall on deaf ears because the European people have no heart left for their people or their God — the scientized intellects in church and state have killed white pietas.

What is missing in the scientized Christian façade of the modern churches is the incarnate Lord. Why do the church men make common cause with Jews, Moslems, and academics while denouncing the white European Christians who have not cut their ties to the ‘racist’ and ‘sexist’ antique Europeans? It is because the scientized mind always has a problem with the Word made flesh. It goes against the tenets of Gnosticism. And when our incarnate Lord’s incarnation is Gnosticized, so is His resurrection from the dead. Do we believe as little children, do we believe that we will see our Lord in the flesh along with all our loved ones in the place which He has prepared for us? Organized Christian Jewry now serves as a halfway house for Europeans who can’t quite quit the Christian habit. In the halfway house churches, the recovering Christians are shown how they can have a little bit of faith in Christianity while giving their heart and soul to the colored gods of liberalism. Those gods are scientific because they are natural. And what is natural is sacred, is it not?

I had a philosophy teacher in college who was a devotee of Nietzsche and his doctrine of eternal recurrence. Nietzsche was not a great favorite with the liberals. On the one hand they liked his anti-Christian polemic, his devotion to the “eternal cosmos” instead of the ‘unnatural’ Christian God. But they did not like his doctrine of eternal recurrence, because that doctrine was in conflict with the liberals’ doctrine of progress. Liberalism combines paganism with a secularized Christian theory of history. The Christian Europeans believed history would end with the return of Christ, while the liberals believe that history will end when they have set up the kingdom of God on earth. And that God must be a natural God, because nature is all. Enter the sacred negro. Nietzsche would have deplored the worship of the negro, just like our modern neo-pagans deplore the worship of the negro, but Nietzsche is at one with the liberals in his rejection of the unnatural God-Man who died on the cross and rose from the dead on the third day.

The Christian Everyman has not fared well in the age of science. Under the auspices of scientific truth, the neo-pagan and the mad-dog liberal have launched an unrelenting attack on Christ and His people. And the Christian Everyman has surrendered to the enemy because the leaders in church and state who were supposed to conserve that which was essential, the love which sees beauty on the cross, have compromised with the devil who bids mankind look at God through the eyes of a scientist examining a bug under a microscope.

The Christ-haunted playwright Eugene O’Neill once wrote a play called *Lazarus Laughed*. At first those who saw Christ raise Lazarus from the dead rejoiced and laughed at death. But over time, the eyewitnesses began to doubt what they had seen. “Maybe it was a trick, maybe Lazarus didn’t really return from the dead.” What happens to Lazarus’ friends over the short space of O’Neill’s play has happened over a longer period of time to the European people. Doubt set in. The European people could look at nature unflinchingly because He had conquered nature, but as their knowledge of nature increased, their faith declined. Did Christ really conquer nature, or was He still subordinate to nature? Was He and is He the precursor of the sacred gods of color, the cosmic God of Teilhard du Chardin, or is He Jesus Christ, our sovereign Lord and Savior?

From whence comes the spiritual virility to resist the scientific onslaught on our sacred faith? Is there anything that can stop the Red Death of Liberalism? The answer to those questions lies in our past. They, the European people when they were a people, believed in Christ more than in science. They trusted the Word made flesh more than the research of the scientists. If it be neo-paganism, it shall fail, if it be liberalism, it shall fail, if it be Christo-liberalism, it shall fail, but His charity shall not fail. He has left us a Comforter until He returns, and I have never known one single man or woman with a heart of flesh who failed to find comfort in the Man of Sorrows. If we return to pietas, the love of our own, we will find Him, the God above nature, the God with a human heart. +

# Purely Sentimental

January 19, 2019

Categories: Charity, Christmas, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, George Fitzhugh, Weyl & Marina



The national dustmen, after entertaining one another with a great many noisy little fights among themselves, had dispersed for the present, and Mr. Gradgrind was at home for the vacation.

He sat writing in the room with the deadly statistical clock, proving something no doubt – probably, in the main, that the Good Samaritan was a Bad Economist. – [Hard Times](#)

---

Our ruin will be disguised in profit, and the sale of a few wretched baubles will bribe a degenerate people to barter away the most precious jewel of their souls. – [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

Every year during the Christmas season we are greeted with a capitalist salvo against Dickens' *Christmas Carol*. His work is excoriated by the capitalists as sentimental \_\_\_\_\_. And the Victorians who loved the *Christmas Carol* are also sent to the dustbins of history with the label ‘sentimental,’ which in the mind of the capitalist translates to, ‘idiots who don’t understand how wealth is created and distributed in a capitalist society.’ As one of those idiots who weeps when Bob Cratchit describes his visit to the gravesite of Tiny Tim and who rejoices when he discovers that Tiny Tim “did not die,” let me say a few words, expletives deleted, against the tough guys in the ranks of the capitalists, the men who hate Dickens’ *Christmas Carol*, and in defense of the people who get all ‘sentimental’ over it.

Those who deride sentiment always have a sentiment about something else that is dear to them. They use the word ‘sentimental’ as a devil word in the hopes of defacing what you hold dear and elevating what they hold dear. What does the capitalist hold dear? What makes him feel all warm and gushy? The capitalist, be he neo-con or *National Review* conservative, gets all warm and gushy about free markets and wars to expand free markets on into infinity. In justification of his sentimental love for free markets and wars to expand the free market, the capitalist tells us how much better mankind, in the aggregate, is when the capitalist system is in place. The capitalist then goes on to tell us how much more wealth there is in capitalist societies compared to socialist and communist societies.

Let us grant that capitalism creates more wealth than socialism and communism. But let us also note that communism and socialism are reactions to capitalism run amuck. On the Welsh side of my family tree, the men were all coal miners. My great-grandfather, a first generation Welsh-American, started working as a breaker boy at eight years of age and then advanced to become a full-fledged coal miner. (1) He died of a heart attack at age 60 while walking home on Christmas Eve laden with Christmas presents for his eight children. He was the only member of his family, one of eight brothers, to live past age 50. His brothers all died of black lung. “Cry me a river,” the capitalist responds. But what type of system is it when negro slaves live better than white Christians? (2) That marvelous system of creating wealth that theoretically ‘trickles’ down to the masses but in reality stays invested in the Darwinian elite, never would have been modified in the slightest degree if the capitalists had not been compelled to make concessions by the labor unions, which, over the course of time, became capitalist entities themselves, freezing out the nonunion workers and casting them into outer darkness.

In his movie *Metropolis*, Fritz Lang gives us a hint at the solution to the eternal conflict between the capitalist and the laborer. After a long bitter conflict between capitalism and labor, the movie ends with a compromise: “Head and hands want to join together, but they don’t have the heart to do it... Oh mediator, show them the way to each other...” Then the mediator steps in, and the capitalist, who is the head, joins hands with the laborer, who is the hands: “The Mediator Between Head and Hands Must Be the Heart!” And so the movie ends. Sentimental mush? Yes, from the capitalist’s perspective it is sentimental mush; the capitalist does not want to compromise with labor. And from the Marxist perspective, the movie is also sentimental mush, because the Marxist does not want to compromise with the capitalists, he wants to eliminate them. It’s significant that Lang later repudiated the movie because as he moved further to the left, he left ‘sentimentality’ behind and looked to Marxism for salvation from the capitalist system. But before he became a hardened Marxist he was on the right track.

Lang was right – the heart must be the mediator between labor and capital, but it must be a heart purified by the one true Mediator between God and Man and between men and men. When the adherents of two ‘this world only’ systems clash, they will be forever at each other’s throats, because both groups have proceeded without Him. The grace of God is not something we can see with the material eye, but the fabric of our life here on earth, if viewed with the interior eye of a heart connected to His sacred heart, allows us to see that His grace is the only reality we can hold onto in this vale of tears. If that is sentimental mush to the capitalist, then so be it. I prefer, like Fezziwig, to stay with old Europe and its ancient customs and traditions, grounded in the love of Christ, than to live in the world of the entrepreneurs and plunderers. Scrooge was an easy convert compared to the modern capitalist, because he lacked an ideology of wealth. The modern capitalist would have thrown the ghost of Jacob Marley right out the door and then returned to his study to read Gilder’s *Wealth and Poverty*.

The deriding of sentiment in favor of pure intellect has deep roots. Socrates derided the simple faith of the Athenian people in favor of his “sublime” faith in nothingness. And the Athenian people reacted to his theology by inviting him to drink hemlock. St. Thomas changed St. Paul’s “charity never faileth” to Aristotle’s “reason never faileth,” and the faithful responded with the Protestant Reformation. In due time the Protestant Reformation produced Protestant scholastics who were just as opposed to “charity never faileth” as the great medieval scholastic. When does the Hegelian dialectic end? With Protestantism? With Communism? Or does it end with Capitalism? The dialectical struggle between men of strife will end when Christ returns. Until that time there will be wars and rumors of wars between systems grounded in materialism and espoused by men with a sentimental attachment to their own reason divorced from the God who enters human hearts. (3)

The monstrous inhumanity of capitalism and its children, socialism and communism, consists of their atomization of human souls. The individual human being becomes part of an aggregate herd called humanity. There are no family ties, no racial ties, and no religious ties to the humane God in their systems. There is only the great debate over the allocation of the goods of this world. And whether it is communism, socialism, or capitalism the final solution always entails the distribution of goods to a small elect and the casting into outer darkness of the undeserving non-elect. The communist-socialists simply differ with the capitalists on the issue of the elect. The capitalists want to be the elect, while the Marxist-capitalists want the people, be they the French proletariat or the noble savages of color, whom they (the Illuminati) will lead, to be the elect. The Christian European must respond with, “A plague on both your houses.” We should maintain our sentimental attachment to what was the common faith of the European people prior to the age of systems, the faith in the God-Man who overcame the world through His divine charity, which, unlike the materialist, rational systems grounded in this world only, never faileth.

The capitalists have correctly identified their greatest enemy in Charles Dickens. No man ever attacked capitalism with a greater zeal than Charles Dickens. God bless him for it! But Dickens did not succumb to the false either/or of capitalism vs. communism. He rejected both heresies. In *Hard Times*, the hero, Stephen Blackpool, rejects the capitalism of Josiah Bounderby and Thomas Gradgrind and the socialism of the radicals for an ancient non-ideological faith in Someone beyond the ken of the systems analysis men.

*'If aw th' things that touches us, my dear, was not so muddled, I should'n ha' had'n need to coom heer. If we was not in a muddle among ourseln, I should'n ha' been, by my own fellow weavers and workin' brothers, so mistook. If Mr. Bounderby had ever know'd me right—if he'd ever know'd me at aw—he would'n ha' took'n offence wi' me. He would'n ha' suspect'n me. But look up yonder, Rachael! Look aboove!'*

Following his eyes, she saw that he was gazing at a star.

*'It ha' shined upon me,' he said reverently, 'in my pain and trouble down below. It ha' shined into my mind. I ha' look'n at 't and thowt o' thee, Rachael, till the muddle in my mind have cleared awa, above a bit, I hope.*

...

*They carried him very gently along the fields, and down the lanes, and over the wide landscape; Rachael always holding the hand in hers. Very few whispers broke the mournful silence. It was soon a funeral procession. The star had shown him where to find the God of the poor; and through humility, and sorrow, and forgiveness, he had gone to his Redeemer's rest.*

And what of Thomas Gradgrind, the man of facts and figures? His sentimental love for the daughter he ruined through facts and figures, brings him back to faith, hope, and charity:

*Forced to admit that much of his misfortune is attributable to his own hard system of philosophy, he becomes a humbler and wiser man, bending his hitherto inflexible theories to appointed circumstances; making his facts and figures subservient to Faith, Hope, and Charity; and no longer trying to grind that Heavenly trio in his dusty little mills?*

The repentant Gradgrind, like the repentant Scrooge, is in accord with Burke, Shakespeare, Scott, Dickens, and the European people during that ‘sentimental’ Christian era of their history. Hard economics, the economics of systems, whether the system be capitalism or Marxism, must be subordinate to His reign of charity. It is worth noting that neither capitalism nor communism has ever produced a major poet. The capitalists have Carl Sandburg and the leftists have a longer list of minor poets, but the major poets see something more than ‘this world only.’ How could it be otherwise? The great European poets are in line with the Gospels and St. Paul. And our Lord and His apostle never advise us to seek first the things of this earth so that we can buy our way into heaven.

The reason that Trump is hated by the communists on the left and the capitalist Republicans is because he has injected a discordant note into the political debate. He has one foot in the camp of the capitalists, but he also has one foot in the camp of the men of old Europe who wanted the economic numbers to be subordinate to individual human beings. Buchanan, when he turned against free trade, also earned the hatred of the Democrats and the Republicans. This is how it will be in the European countries so long as the one true Mediator is left out of our systems. The Marxist left will be at odds with the corporate capitalists, and both sides will be at war with anyone who even suggests – let alone tries to implement – any policy of an economic or social nature that hearkens back to the ancient faith of the European people.

In Shakespeare’s *A Midsummer Night’s Dream*, Theseus decides to hear the play of the bumbling working class men of Athens despite the fact that he has been told that the play is an inept production:

*I will hear that play;  
For never anything can be amiss,  
When simpleness and duty tender it.  
Go, bring them in; and take your places, ladies.*

All our works on this earth are inept stammerings. We see through a glass darkly. But when our works stem from a heart that sees His sacred cross as the penultimate of reality, they are pleasing to our Lord just as the inept production of the Athenian workmen was pleasing to Theseus. Is it possible to prefer the capitalist’s vision of Walmarts and wars-without-end to Dickens’ vision of a Victorian village consecrated to the Son of God? The capitalist and the Marxist are united in their vision of an earthly paradise centered on themselves, on their prideful attempts to create a world controlled by their minds and their wills. Dickens’ vision leads us to the Savior who has overcome the world, while that other vision leads to the fiery pit. But the capitalist need not worry – he will feel right at home in hell, because the devil is not a sentimentalist. +

---

(1) From *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters* by George Fitzhugh:

*Coal mines. — The number of children and young persons employed in these mines is enormous, and they appear to commence working, even underground, at an earlier age than is recorded of any other occupation except lace-making. The Commissioners report —*

*"That instances occur in which children are taken into these mines to work as early as four years of age, sometimes at five, not unfrequently between six and seven, and often from seven to eight, while from eight to nine is the ordinary age at which their employment commences... That a very large proportion of the persons employed in these mines is under thirteen years of age; and a still larger proportion between thirteen and eighteen.*

*"That in several districts female children begin to work in the mines as early as males. "That the nature of the employment which is assigned to the youngest children, generally that of 'trapping,' requires that they should be in the pit as soon as the work of the day commences, and, according to the present system, that they should not leave the pit before the work of the day is at an end."*

The pit is an exact metaphor for what capitalism gives us – hell on earth.

(2) From *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters* by George Fitzhugh:

*Is not slavery to capital less tolerable than slavery to human masters?*

*Where a few, as in England, Ireland and Scotland, own all the lands, are not the mass, the common laborers, who own no capital, and possess neither mechanical nor professional skill, of necessity, the slaves to capital?*

*Was it not this slavery to capital that occasioned the great Irish famine, and is not this same slavery that keeps the large majority of the laboring class in Western Europe in a state of hereditary starvation?*

*In old societies, where the laborers are domestic slaves, and exceed in number the demand for labor, would not emancipating them subject them at once to a mastery, or exacting despotism of capital, far more oppressive than domestic slavery?*

And from *American Statesmen on Slavery and the Negro* by Nathaniel Weyl and William Marina:

*To what extent was Calhoun’s comparison objective and factual? To what extent was it mere special pleading in favor of the peculiar institution? One uncontested fact lends force to Calhoun’s assertion that the conditions of the Negro slave were better than those of unskilled white labor. Throughout the South, it was customary to employ Irish gangs in digging irrigation ditches and draining swamps, work that was not only unusually hard and dangerous, but which exposed the laborers to malaria and a variety of gastroenteritic diseases. When asked the reason for this preference, a planter told that eminent observer of slavery in the South, Frederick L. Olmsted: "It is dangerous work and a negro's life is too valuable to be risked at it. If a negro dies it is a considerable loss you know." Wh. H. Russell, the London Times correspondent in*

*Washington during the Civil War, speculated about the vast number of "poor Hibernians (who) have been consumed and buried in these Louisianian swamps, leaving their earnings to the dramshop keeper and the contractor, and the results of their toil to the planter."*

*... In his classic study *The Health of Slaves on Southern Plantations*, Postell reviews testimony of contemporary physicians to the effect that the Negro slave received "good care, wholesome diet, prompt medical attention, and restraint from dissipations which were injurious to his health" and was "healthier in the main than the whites." To what extent was Calhoun's comparison objective and factual? To what extent was it mere special pleading in favor of the peculiar institution? One uncontested fact lends force to Calhoun's assertion that the conditions of the Negro slave were better than those of unskilled white labor. Throughout the South, it was customary to employ Irish gangs in digging irrigation ditches and draining swamps, work that was not only unusually hard and dangerous, but which exposed the laborers to malaria and a variety of gastroenteritic diseases. When asked the reason for this preference, a planter told that eminent observer of slavery in the South, Frederick L. Olmsted: "It is dangerous work and a negro's life is too valuable to be risked at it. If a negro dies it is a considerable loss you know." Wh. H. Russell, the London Times correspondent in Washington during the Civil War, speculated about the vast number of "poor Hibernians (who) have been consumed and buried in these Louisianian swamps, leaving their earnings to the dramshop keeper and the contractor, and the results of their toil to the planter." ... In his classic study *The Health of Slaves on Southern Plantations*, Postell reviews testimony of contemporary physicians to the effect that the Negro slave received "good care, wholesome diet, prompt medical attention, and restraint from dissipations which were injurious to his health" and was "healthier in the main than the whites."*

(3) I recently listened to an exchange between Tucker Carlson and a Jewish neo-con by the name of Ben Shapiro. Shapiro was going into raptures about the glories of automation which would place 10 million truck drivers out of work. That type of free market economics makes the capitalist feel all warm and sentimental, but it sickens anyone with a soul.

# Our Kindred Faith

January 26, 2019

Categories: Blood faith, Christ the Hero, Feminism, Negro worship, Older posts (pre-April 2019), White Genocide

Tags: Martin Farquhar Tupper, Thomas Nelson Page



Count, count your hopes, heirs of immortality and love;  
And hear my kindred faith, and turn again to bless me.

— [Martin Farquhar Tupper](#)

---

Picture a liberal household on the eve of Martin Luther King Jr. Day. Two quality children, one girl, seven years old, one boy, five years old, and one liberal father and one liberal mother are in attendance.

*Girl: Mother, why do we celebrate Martin Luther King Jr. Day tomorrow? Aren't we supposed to celebrate him every day of the year?*

*Mother: Yes, dear; we should keep Martin Luther King Jr. and the sacred blacks in our hearts 365 days of the year, but we need to have a special day to take time off and celebrate the wonderful goodness of Martin Luther King Jr. Do you understand that, dear?*

*Girl: Yes, mother.*

*Mother: Do you understand why we must always love Martin Luther King Jr. and the black race?*

*Girl: Yes, mother, like teacher says, we must love the blacks with our whole heart, mind, and soul so that we can share heaven on earth with them once the white males are eliminated from the face of the earth.*

*Mother: That is right.*

*Girl: But Mother?*

*Mother: Yes, dear?*

*Girl: Aren't Daddy and little Joey white males? Must they be destroyed?*

*Mother: Daddy has been trained not to be white and not to be a male. And little Joey will be trained not to be white and not to be a male. So it's quite possible that neither Daddy nor Joey will have to be destroyed. But don't get to loving Joey or Daddy too much, because they are white males, and white males are mostly evil, even when they have been retrained not to be white and male.*

*Girl: But Mommy (she starts to tear up), I really do love Joey and Daddy.*

*Mommy: You mustn't use terms like 'love' when speaking of white males. They can be tolerated when they behave properly, but you must never love them. Our love must be reserved for the black race. You cannot love black and white; that would be a betrayal of the black race, which we must love and revere. Now wipe your tears and light the candles on the Martin Luther King Jr. altar.*

*Girl: Will there be presents on the altar in the morning?*

*Mother (smiling): I wouldn't be surprised if there were many presents. Say your prayers to Martin Luther King Jr. tonight and see what happens tomorrow morning.*

*Father: I'll start putting the presents on the altar.*

*Mother: Yes, you do that.*

*Father: Shall we attend the 9 o'clock service or the 11 o'clock?*

*Mother: The children will be up early – they'll be so excited – so let's attend the 9 o'clock service. And this time, don't embarrass me by trying to sit with me in the front pew.*

*Father: I wasn't trying to sit with you in the front pew. I know that white males must sit in the back of the church. But you forgot your pocketbook – I was just trying to give it to you. I intended to go right back to my assigned seat.*

*Mother: Just don't let it happen again.*

*Father: Yes, dear. Do you have any final instructions?*

*Mother:* No.

*Father:* Then I'll say goodnight.

*Mother:* Not until you've said your prayers.

*Father:* Yes, dear.

The liberals worship the negro, that is obvious. Martin Luther King Jr. Day is much more important to them than Christmas. They will tolerate any and all attacks on Christ during the Christmas season, but they will brook no opposition to the deification of Martin Luther King Jr. or any of the sacred negroes on Martin Luther King Jr. Day – or on any other day of the year. If I were a learned academic, who published an article on the absurdity of the incarnation and birth of Christ, there would be no hostile comments from the liberals. In fact, I would be lauded for publishing a thoughtful scholarly work that demythologized the Christ story. But if I were to publish an article stating that Martin Luther King Jr. was a Marxist and a degenerate, Nelson Mandela was a vicious terrorist, and the black race was not to be worshipped, the liberals would have me destroyed. So we must ask ourselves in this special week that the liberals have set aside for religious festivals why the liberals worship the black race.

The movie *Rebel Without a Cause* was considered liberal in its day but is now condemned because it suggested that juvenile delinquency was caused by absentee fathers and fathers who yielded their authority to the female of the species. The liberals have moved on from such antiquated notions, but there is a line in that otherwise unremarkable movie that I want to highlight. When the hero, James Dean's character, is about to play 'chicken' with his automobile against another boy's automobile, Dean's character asks his opponent, "Why are we doing this?" The other boy replies, "You got to do something." The liberals no longer believe in Christ, but men and women must believe in something, so they have turned to the sacred negro. Do they love the sacred negro? No, they don't; they worship him. What is the difference? A pagan does not love his gods, he propitiates them with sacrifices. That is the great difference between the Christian God and the pagan gods. Christ wants mercy, not sacrifice; He wants our love and He wants us to love our fellow men in and through Him. The post-Christian liberal worships as a pagan: he is incapable of a deep, heartfelt love because he has cut himself off from the font of love, but he can worship in the old pagan style, he can propitiate his gods through sacrifices. And whom does the liberal sacrifice to his heathen gods? He sacrifices other whites in the hope that his sacrifices will be acceptable to the sacred negroes, who will then allow him to be with them in the kingdom of heaven on earth.

There simply are not enough whites to fulfill the sacrificial needs of the negro gods, whose need for white blood seems to be insatiable. So the liberal must look for racism everywhere. If he can't find it, he must invent it, in order to send more whites to the sacrificial altars of the negro gods. Already the liberals are turning on each other in order to keep the sacrificial altars supplied with fresh white blood.

God will judge the hearts of the various missionaries who tried to convert the black heathens. No doubt there were some who were sincere Christians, but at some point the attempt of white Christians to convert the colored heathens became a new religion opposed to Christianity. It was the whites who converted — they began to worship the negroes, giving them the reverence and adoration that was meant for Christ. Now the new religion has been institutionalized throughout the Western world. The liberal rulers, the Grand Inquisitors, will only permit state-sponsored churches to exist, churches that preach a blended Christianity that speaks of Christ the civil rights champion, but not of Christ the Savior.

In our modern democracies we have mock elections in which the outcome is already predetermined. Every candidate agrees to acquiesce to the extermination of the white race in the name of liberty, equality, and diversity. Trump, as off this stage we have shown, was a throwback to the 1950's liberal, who wanted the whites to be part of the brave new world. The liberals only permitted him to run because they were certain he would lose. Once he won, the liberals made sure that he was kept in check. There is absolutely no political discourse in our anti-nation. Our young people have nothing inside them but hatred for a God they never knew and for their own people whom they only see through the liberals' eyes. Their discourse consists of screaming obscenities at Trump and every white male who opposes any part of the liberal agenda, an agenda that has brought us hell on earth.

The great shift from Christianity to negro worship took place because of the failure of the Christian churches to preach Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, as St. Paul preached Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, with an inner certainty that Christ was who He said He was. When Christ became an abstract philosophical God, He was rejected, just as the abstract philosophies of the Greeks were rejected by the devotees of the mystery religions. The spiritual vacuum created by intellectual Christianity allowed Satan to enter the heart of Christendom and construct Satandom over the ruins of Christendom.

The new religion, the worship of the negro and the other gods of color, has revolutionized every aspect of European culture. The new culture can be seen in its most horrific aspect when we look at the cruel feminist matriarchy that has replaced the Christian patriarchal family structures of old Europe. The feminist movement sprang up from the civil rights movement. Liberal white women who spent all their time demonizing white males for their 'oppression' of blacks decided they too were oppressed by the evil white males. And if white males were evil, then the culture that white males built was evil. So it became necessary for white females to take charge of the construction of a brave new world devoid of white men and the white man's God. All the evils that stem from Lady Macbeth feminism – "Come you spirits, That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here, And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full Of drest cruelty" – such as legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and transgenderism, come from the initial break from the oppressive white 'racist' culture created by the unredeemable original sinners – white males. You can't go back to anything good and decent because any opposition to the perversions of liberalism is deemed racist. The churches will not champion the Christ of old Europe, because He was the God of racist white males. But they will support the savages of color and the horrific unsexed feminists because they are the chosen ones – they are not white racist males. So where does that leave the white Christian? Will he renounce his ancestors and step into a future in which he can only survive if he worships the noble black savage and consents to live according to the dictates of the feminist harpies? Or will he become like unto the hero in Thomas Nelson Page's story "[The Goth](#)"? Will he hew his way, sword in hand, through the legions of academics, feminists, and colored heathens and return to his racial hearth fire? It seems as if he has chosen the former course; he has chosen to worship the sacred negro and follow the dictates of the feminist Lady Macbeths. He has chosen to break the great bond of mercy, which connected him to his God and his European ancestors, and pursue instead the path of merciless sacrifice.

The bond must be renewed, or humanity as it once was will be no more. Only the demonized Europeans, who established a sympathetic tie to Christ the Savior, truly became human beings. Our Lord told us that we were not born to die, we are immortal, with personalities who belong to an immortal God. That is too great an inheritance to be sacrificed on the altars of negro worship and feminism:

*Count, count your hopes, heirs of immortality and love;  
And hear my kindred faith, and turn again to bless me.  
For lo, my trust is strong to dwell in many worlds,  
And cull of many brethren there, sweet knowledge ever new:  
I yearn for realms where fancy shall be filled, and the ecstasies of freedom shall be felt,  
And the soul reign gloriously, risen to its royal destinies:  
I look to recognize again, through the beautiful mask of their perfection,  
The dear familiar faces I have somehow loved on earth:  
I long to talk with grateful tongue of storms and perils past,  
And praise the mighty Pilot that hath steered us through the rapids:  
He shall be the focus of it all, the very heart of gladness,—  
My soul is athirst for God, the God who dwelt in Man!  
Prophet, priest, and king, the sacrifice, the substitute, the Saviour,  
Rapture of the blessed in the hunted One of earth, the Pardon in the victim;  
How many centuries of joy concentrate in that theme;*

Once the sympathetic bond is renewed, miracles will occur, that is certain. Will the European people renew that tie? We can't reason our way back to Christian Europe. But we can love much and kneel before His sacred cross, which is the sign of contradiction to the unholy altars consecrated to the liberals' merciless gods, who require the bloody sacrifice of the European people. Those men on the sinking *Titanic*, those men of Europe, are our guiding lights. They went to their deaths singing "[Nearer My God to Thee](#)".

In the Gospel according to John, we are told that "many of the people believed on Him, and said, When Christ cometh, will He do more miracles than these which this man hath done?" What miracles do the liberals expect from reason, the negro, and science, their unholy trinity? They expect to build the kingdom of God on earth without the cross of Christ. That is the impetus that drives the liberals. They, like the Jews who rejected Christ, want an earthly kingdom.

If Christ was God, the liberals tell us, He would have come down off the cross and built Liberaldom. And since He didn't do as they willed, they have rejected Him and turned to the sacred negro gods. In opposition to the liberals' celebration of Martin Luther King Jr. and the negro gods, let us celebrate this week, and every week of the year, the European people who loved the Man of Sorrows, who promised us a cross in this world and a place in His kingdom come in the next world. +

# Depth Speaks to Depth

February 2, 2019

Categories: Antique Christianity, Christ the Hero, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Resurrection, Scientism

Tags: Martin Farquhar Tupper, Unamuno



For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. – *John 3:16*

---

Look to thy soul, O man, for none can be surely for his brother:  
Behold, for heaven—or for hell,—thou canst not escape from Immortality.

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

---

Let us begin with John:

*Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.* –1 John 4: 2-3

John does not focus on a belief in a generic God; he wants to place the one true God before our eyes. And he emphasizes that the one true God is Jesus Christ, who came to us “in the flesh.” That belief, that Jesus Christ was true God and true man, became part of the collective soul of the European people. The true Gospel commentary is not the rationalized, scientized clap-trap called Biblical studies, it is the testimony of the European bards, who show us Christ interacting with His people. And His people believed as St. John and St. Paul believed, that Jesus Christ came to us in the flesh because He loved us. He was and is:

*Prophet, priest, and king, the sacrifice, the substitute, the Savior,  
Rapture of the blessed in the hunted one of earth, the pardoner in the victim:*

George Bernard Shaw, the quintessential liberal whom the modern liberals either ignore or condemn, gave us the reason, in *Back to Methuselah*, for the European people’s loss of faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. The reason was called ‘science.’ The rational, scientized mind cannot believe in the Word made flesh. That the spirit of God took flesh and dwelt among us is an anathema to the Jew, the Moslem, the philosopher, and the scientist. The philosophers and theologians in the church set the stage for the scientists, and then the scientists took command of the religious life of the European people. In the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, the Christian churches were on the defensive; they tried to show that Christianity and science were compatible, and by the end of the 20<sup>th</sup> century science had triumphed. The Word made flesh, our Lord and Savior, was turned into a Gnostic God who could be all things to all people. And that type of faith is of the anti-Christ whom the apostle warns us about.

Something vital is lost when we approach our God from a purely rational and scientific standpoint. Something vital is lost because depth speaks to depth. I majored in English literature in college because I liked English literature. That sounds like the logical thing to do, but it wasn’t. I discovered that the professors of literature had no understanding of the great authors. Why was that? It was because the professors did not approach the great poets with visionary hearts, they approached the European bards through the analytical minds of psychologists and philosophers. How can superficiality, which is what the science of psychology and the discipline of philosophy are, deal with depth? It can’t. The same process, the process of turning depth into superficiality, which took place in the study of literature, also took place in the religious sphere. The churchmen jettisoned the European people’s vision of the Word made flesh, which came from a heart to heart encounter with Christ, in favor of rationalized systems that were more in accord with science, which translates to superficiality. I once read a book by a “conservative” Catholic theologian that was advertised as an orthodox defense of the major tenets of the Christian faith. But when I came to the chapter on eternal life, I discovered that the author was not as advertised; he was not an orthodox Christian. He ridiculed the antiquated notion of the resurrection of the body and posited, in place of that doctrine, a new scientized version of formless specks of spiritualized matter comingled with each other after their lives were ended here on earth. Why is such a doctrine more compatible with science than my belief and the antique Europeans’ belief that we shall meet our loved ones in the flesh in His heavenly kingdom?

*I look to recognize again, through the beautiful mask of their perfection,  
The dear familiar faces I have somewhere loved on earth.*

But of course I am being unscientific, while the theologian who believes that our immortal souls become a pixie dust that is scattered throughout the cosmos is scientific. Unamuno was right when he referred to the resurrection of the dead: “All or nothing.” Either science is wrong, and Christ is the Savior who gives us eternal life, or science is right and we return to the compost heap. There is no in-between, no quasi-resurrection of human particles. There can be no compromise with science; it is all or nothing.

Jesus Christ is the heart of God. He can only be found in the depths of hearts who love much. That was the triumph of the antique Europeans. The Europe they built was in response to His love: “We love Him because He first loved us.” The Christian utopian, speaking from a diseased mind devoid of a heart for God, hurls anathemas at the antique Europeans for failing to build the kingdom of God on earth according to the dictates of his rationalism. The liberal hurls anathemas and condemnations at the antique Europeans because (we know the litany): “They were racist, sexist, etc.” We cannot stay wedded to the superficiality of nature/science-based systems in church and state and still maintain a connection to the Word made flesh. The spiritual abortion of the antique Europeans from the womb of Europe has been performed in the name of a new nature/science-based faith that places the noble black savage at its unholy center. We can’t compromise with the regicides who performed that abortion, whether they be Christian Jews, neo-pagans, or liberals — they all have the blood of our people and our Lord on their hands.

Shaw correctly identified the cause of the European people's loss of faith. But he, as a science-based man whose heroes were all scientists, did not think that the loss of Christ the Lord was a tragedy. He suggested that men should create a new religion that was more compatible with science. Therein lies the incredible superficiality of the Western intellectuals who have lost their connection to Jesus Christ. Can faith be created in a test tube? Is it that easy? Do you just pour in a few chemical ingredients and then say some psychological mumbo-jumbo over the ingredients, and then presto-chango, you have a new religion! That is what Nietzsche and the modern neo-pagans think you can do. And that is what Shaw thought as well. Thus science doth make superficial, heartless idiots of us all, if we accept science as the truth and the way.

Neither Shaw nor Nietzsche nor any of the other members of the European intelligentsia who bid us turn away from Christ and look to science saw the final outcome of their apostasy. We now, in the scientific 21<sup>st</sup> century, can see the end result. If the European people refuse to worship the God-Man, they will worship the beast in man. Thus the liberals worship the negro, and the neo-pagans worship their genetically superior intellects. Is this the final end? Yes, it is if we deny that Jesus Christ came to us in the flesh. "Nearer, My God, to Thee," is a beautiful hymn, but "Nearer, My Genes, to Thee," and/or "Nearer, My Negro Gods, to Thee" are not beautiful hymns, they are blasphemous odes to a science-based faith that has no room for the Light of the world.

The French Jacobins replaced an older spirit-based government with a nature/science-based government. All the nations of Europe gradually adopted similar atheistic Jacobin governments under the guise of democracy. The human spirit cannot survive under such regimes. A Trump or an Orbán might inject a certain element of discord by using rhetoric from the Christian era of Europe, but such rhetoric will not change the fact that the devil has become the ruler of the democracies of the European people. The European people became a people because they joined their hearts to His heart – they cannot become a people again by blending intellectual Christianity with nature and nature's gods. Those gods and the people who worship them belong to Satan.

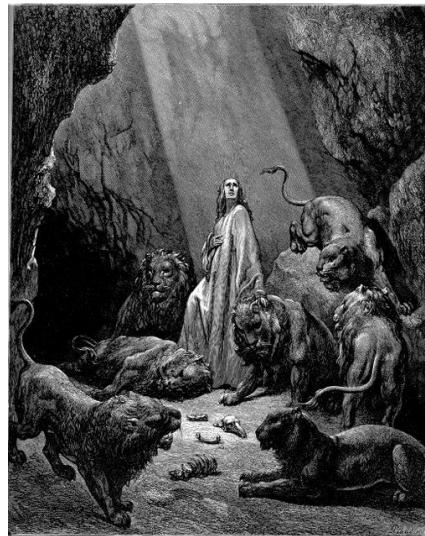
Superficiality is the linchpin that holds all of Liberaldom together. There can be no depth in a liberal society because if men and women plunge to the depths of their hearts, they will discover an incredible longing there that cannot be filled by the modern -isms. All the nature/science-based systems have not been able to change the tragedy of life here on earth. The tragedy is that we, who feel immortal longings, must die. To perish in the nature-science compost heap? Or to die in this world and go unto eternal life in His Kingdom come? Life is unbearable without faith in His promise of eternal life. What are the alternative visions of the various branches of liberalism? The mad-dog liberals tell us we can be part of the kingdom of God on earth if we will worship the negro and support the movement to end global warming. The neo-pagans tell us we can create a kingdom of great minds that shall not survive their short term on earth. And the churchmen who want to blend Christ with nature and science make Christ subordinate to nature and science. He too becomes subject to extinction. Against the superficiality of modernity stands the antique Europeans who plunged to the depths with the sure and certain hope that He was there. Christ descended into hell and on the third day He rose from the dead. If we make His tragedy our tragedy He will make His triumph our triumph. We must turn from the dung-heap un-civilization of superficiality and embrace the people who believed that Christ is the grave where buried love doth live. +

# The Miracle of Christian Europe

February 9, 2019

Categories: Antique Christianity, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Scientism, White Genocide

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare



They say miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern and familiar, things supernatural and causeless. Hence is it that we make trifles of terrors, ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear. – [Shakespeare](#)

---

My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt. – [Daniel 6: 22](#)

---

A friend recently related to me that his son had taken a course in theater during his time at the local university. Toward the end of the course, which covered only contemporary black and feminist playwrights, my friend's son began to suspect that the Ph.D. teaching the course had never even read Shakespeare. When he asked her about Shakespeare, she replied, "He was some white male who wrote long, boring plays many years ago." Now, you might applaud that sentiment because you have never cared for Shakespeare yourself, or you might consider it of no consequence that Shakespeare has disappeared from college curriculums, but Shakespeare has always been regarded as one of the greatest poets of the European people. He was, in the words of Ben Jonson, "Not for an age, but for all time." Jonson was right, but of course Jonson was speaking of the continuum of European history. When he said that Shakespeare was "for all time," he meant so long as the European people remained true to their God and their race. Once they have forsaken their God and their race, the continuum of European history will be over; the European people, as a people, will no longer exist. I would submit that that doleful tragedy has already occurred. The Europeans are no longer a people. All the blather about restoring America, Britain, France, or any other European nation by electing an anti-immigration candidate and/or a prolific candidate is empty rhetoric. Advocates of such policies are deaf, blind, and dumb. You can't treat a serious wound with a bandaid, you must cauterize the wound before you can restore the body to health. The European people have passed the point of first-aid, they need major surgery, the surgery of the divine physician, in order to escape their death-in-life existence.

I remember reading a neo-pagan's blog post a few years back in which he mocked the notion that "gentle Jesus" was the only one who could stop white genocide. The intellectual sneer is a very effective weapon, particularly in an age in which men have been debased by the pride of science. But the neo-pagan was not and is not alone in his intellectual contempt for Christ. The liberals and the churchmen are one in spirit with the neo-pagan, differing only from him in their style of mockery. They don't attack Christ directly, they attack Him indirectly by mocking His people. The liberals mock and condemn the 'racists' of Christian Europe, and the churchmen join them in their mockery and condemnation. So gentle Jesus goes into the dustbin of history, and we are left with the neo-pagans' brains, the liberals' noble black savage, and the churchmen's blueprint for a new Christianity that will give us a purer, nobler Christ than the one whom the antique Europeans worshipped.

If our Jesus, the gentle Jesus of Handel, Shakespeare, Rembrandt, Dickens, Scott, and the European people from whom those artists came, is not God, then we should drink the liberals' hemlock, because we have no reason to live. And I would submit that the European people have come to that conclusion; they are drinking the hemlock of racial oblivion because they have been defeated by the intellectual sneer; they do not believe in the gentle Jesus of the antique Europeans.

Our thoughts, for good or evil, spring from our heart. The French Revolution sprang from hearts that hated the Christ of the European people. The culture that was supplanted by the Jacobins sprang from hearts that loved Christ. There is a great deal of anger toward God in all of us because our lives are full of suffering of a physical and spiritual nature – sickness, decay, and death in the physical realm and unrequited love and loneliness in the spiritual realm – the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune of which Hamlet speaks. But the European people, when they were a people, overcame their anger and surrendered themselves to His love. That is not a little thing, it is all in all. The two cultures, one based on the hatred of God and the other based on the love of God, have always been the contending forces within the confines of Europe. For centuries the 'love of Christ' culture was the dominant culture, but now it is the 'hatred of Christ' culture that is the dominant culture. The ill effects of that culture are all around us, but those effects will not be removed until the European people's hearts are stirred enough to overcome the civilization of the intellectual sneer.

The essence of modernity consists of making man self-sufficient by eliminating all mysteries. If what we can see in the material world is all that there is to see, then life is simple. Love is mere friction, honor is a meaningless word, and faith in gentle Jesus is sentimentality. Dostoyevsky's underground man hurled his defiance at modernity when he told the liberals that "a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key." That defiant stance vis-à-vis the modern liberal world is no longer the mantra of the European. The people who stood in reverent awe before the mystery of God's creation and His redemptive love now sit in a soulless stupor in front of television sets that proclaim the goodness of the sacred negro and the evil of whiteness. In this, the holiest month on the liberals' calendar, we should reflect on the end of European history and the new history of Europe now that the break with the 'love of the Christ' culture is complete.

When the continuum of Christian Europe is broken, the classical liberal who still cherishes the fruits of Christ's Europe but does not acknowledge Christ as the source of those fruits, is cut adrift from life by the new breed of liberals who hate all things white and Christian. Dostoyevsky describes the descent from classical liberalism to malicious, Christ-hating liberalism in his novel *The Possessed*. Stephen Verkhovensky, the classical liberal, denounces the new breed of liberals:

*"And I declare," Mr. Verkhovensky squeaked, throwing himself unreservedly into the fray, "that, to me, Shakespeare and Raphael are of greater value than the emancipation of the serfs, than nationalism, than socialism, than the younger generation, than chemistry—and perhaps even than mankind itself! And it is this way because they represent the very highest human achievement, an achievement of beauty without which I wouldn't be able to go on living.*

*"Oh, Lord," he cried, throwing up his hands, "ten years ago I was shouting the same thing from a platform in Petersburg, using almost exactly those same words and, like you now, the people there didn't understand a thing; they snorted, laughed, and hissed. Ah, you poor, little people, there must be something missing in you if you can't understand these things! Let me tell you that mankind could survive without the English, without the Germans, and most certainly without the Russians; that it could subsist*

*without science and even without bread. But it is impossible to do without beauty because then there would be nothing left for us to do in the world! And that's the whole mystery and the whole story! Science itself wouldn't last a minute without beauty—do you realize that, you who are laughing now? It would turn into black ignorance and it wouldn't be able to invent a nail for you. No, I won't give in!" he concluded shrilly and incongruously, bringing his fist down violently on the table.*

Stephen Verkhovensky is right, but he, like our modern classical liberals whom we call conservatives, does not go far enough. It is true that we cannot live without beauty. But true beauty is moral beauty; we cannot luxuriate in the fruits of the antique Europeans' faith in Christ if we do not share their faith in the God-Man. I once read a music critic's blurb describing a recording of Bach. The critic said that we need not share Bach's faith in order to enjoy his music. Oh really? We must share Bach's faith in order to enjoy the music, just as we must share the antique Europeans' faith in order to share the fruits of the culture they bequeathed to us. The conservatives want to create a democratic culture that is not a haven for degenerate mad-dog liberals. But democratic cultures are cultures based on the hatred of Christ – they will always be a haven for mad-dog liberals and a 'hell on earth' for white Christians. What was good in the democratic cultures of the 1950s was not a result of the democratic way, it was a result of a lingering Christian ethos in a people who were in the process of letting go of their lifeline, which was and is the Suffering Servant whom the prophet Isaiah told us would come to us.

Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.- [\*Isaiah 53: 4-8\*](#)

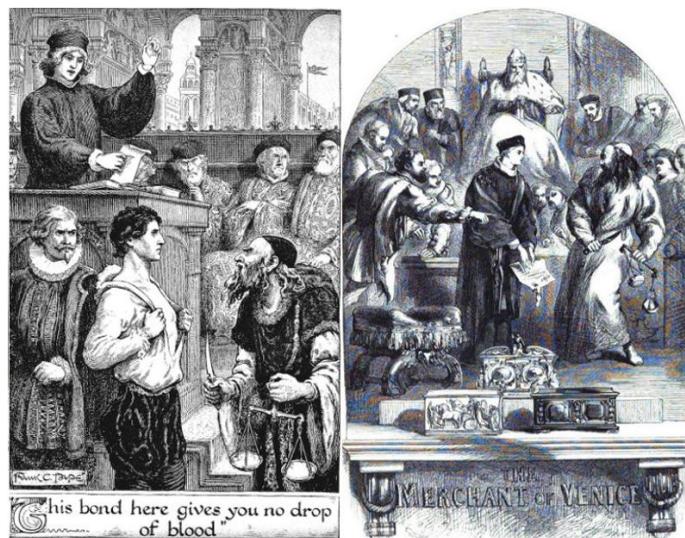
A friend asked me if I thought that white people would ever get sick of worshipping the negro. I told him that negro worship would remain the faith of the European people until they turned their hearts away from the democratic culture grounded in the hatred of Christ and returned to the European culture grounded in the love of Christ. That seems like an impossibility at present. But I cling to the fairy tale response to impossible odds. David slew Goliath and routed the Philistines armed only with his faith in the living God. Once we, the remnant band, resist the temptation to make democratic alliances with heathens and decide to venture forth in the name of the Man of Sorrows, trusting only in Him, the tide will turn. Do I really believe such 'nonsense'? Certainly not in the dark nights of the soul, but when the poetic fire is upon me, as it was upon all our people when they loved much, I do believe that His divine charity, and His divine charity alone, will enable us to conquer the liberals. Faith moves mountains and faith is engendered by love. God came to us through His divine humanity in order to set our hearts on fire. Anyone, be he clergyman, neo-pagan, or liberal who bids us mock "gentle Jesus" is our enemy. We have dwelt too long in the science lab and the philosopher's classroom. It is time to look at life through the eyes of the antique Europeans who saw their one true love on The Cross. +

# Thus Is Mercy Crucified

February 16, 2019

Categories: Chivalry, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Quality of mercy

Tags: Herman Melville, Shakespeare



I hate him for he is a Christian. – Shylock

---

But mercy is above the sceptered sway,  
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings;  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likkest God's  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy. – Portia

---

Tucker Carlson seems to be the only man with a soul left in the mainstream media. He covers stories that the other soulless men and women of the media will not touch. I recently saw the [video clip](#) from his news show of the arrest of the 66-year old Roger Stone. As you know, Roger Stone was found guilty of the heinous crime called “lying to Congress.” The FBI descended on the arch villain with enough men and heavy artillery to launch an invasion of Mexico and clean out the drug lords. But that type of invasion would be racist and imperialistic, not to mention risky, because the drug lords might shoot back. Far better to invade Roger Stone’s home and arrest him for a non-crime. (1)

Humpty Dumpty said that whenever he used a word it meant whatever he wanted it to mean. So it is with the Humpty Dumpty liberals; whenever they make a law, it means whatever they want it to mean. Thus, the liberal law called “lying to Congress” really means, “We don’t like your polities, so we are going to send our goon squad to get you.” As the FBI attacked the arch traitor and fiend who lied to Congress, you could hear a minstrel’s voice in the background singing,

*“Send in the goons,  
Where are the goons?  
Don’t bother; they’re here.”*

So it shall be for all of us, when we run afoul of the maniacal Humpty Dumpties of Liberaldom. Ask not for whom the goon squad comes, it comes for thee.

The utopian ideal of our constitutional government was based on what Andrew Lytle called a “cynical balancing of powers.” Our government was composed of a legislature, which was supposed to be the most powerful branch of government, followed by the executive branch, and then the judiciary, which was meant to be the least powerful branch of the government. In practice the judiciary became the most powerful branch of government with the executive branch and the legislative branch vying for second place. When the executive branch is in line with the liberal elite of the nation, the executive branch is more influential than Congress. Such was the case during Obama’s presidency. When the executive branch is not totally in lock step with the liberal elite, Congress becomes more powerful than the President. This is why Trump lost the battle for the Wall: Congress had the real rulers of the nation, the liberal elite, on their side. Nothing is ever done in a Jacobin state that goes against the anti-Christian principles of Jacobin liberalism. Elections are meaningless in Jacobin nations; they are held in the name of a mythical ‘people’ in order to serve the cause of Christ-hating liberalism. (2)

It is easy to get side tracked and blame everything on the Jewish financiers such as Soros, but the Jewish financiers, the Shylocks, have always been a thorn in the side of the European people. We must ask ourselves why the thorn in our side was allowed to become a deadly infection. We need go no further than Shakespeare for the answer to that question. Shylock was not allowed to triumph over Antonio, because the Christians would not allow him to work his will upon them. They bent his Jewish law, the law of hatred for Christ and His people, to their law, which was the law of mercy. *The Merchant of Venice* is verboten nowadays, but even in the 1960’s when the play was still read and performed, Shylock’s soliloquy on the universality of hatred was used as a justification for the equality of all people and all faiths.

*I am a Jew. Hath not a Jew eyes? Hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions, fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer, as a Christian is? If you prick us, do we not bleed? If you tickle us, do we not laugh? If you poison us, do we not die? And if you wrong us, shall we not revenge? If we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility? Revenge. If a Christian wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance be by Christian example? Why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute, and it shall go hard but I will better the instruction.*

So Shylock demands his pound of flesh. And let us note that he refuses thrice the money. There is something Shylock wants more than money. Even Jewish financiers have a faith; we cannot just ‘follow the money trail’ in order to discover the hidden conspiracies that supposedly govern our lives.

*You two green-horns! Money, you think, is the sole motive to pains and hazard, deception and deviltry, in this world. How much money did the devil make by gulling Eve?*”  
– The Confidence-Man

Faith governs our lives. Shylock's hate-based faith is more important to him than his gold. He can't crucify Christ anew, so he strikes back at Him by attacking His people. Thus Antonio must bare his breast and prepare himself for sacrifice on the altar of the Jewish financiers. But he is spared, at the last trump, because Christ, through His people, intervenes, and mercy triumphs over sacrifice. The European people are now at the mercy of the Jewish financiers because they have no Christian mediator to step in and stop the bloody sacrifice. If there are no Christian conduits for Christ, the Shylocks of Liberalism will triumph. And they must not triumph, because our faith, based on mercy not sacrifice, must be the law of our people. The essential point that is always missed when the purveyors of the 'equality of faiths' read *The Merchant of Venice* is the Duke's response to Shylock after Shylock has been found guilty of attempted murder:

*That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit,  
I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it.*

Yes! There is a difference between the spirit of a Christian European and an unrepentant Jew, just as there is a difference between the spirit of a pagan and a Christian. We do not have a Judeo-Greco-Roman-Christian heritage, we have only one heritage, the heritage of men and women who loved Christ. There is no mercy outside of Christ's love. The neo-pagan and the Jew are fraternal twins at odds with each other. They are competing for the same turf – a merciless world run by their brains, which are fueled by hearts that hate the living God.

The Shylocks of ancient Jewry saw what they viewed as the heretical cult of Jesus of Nazareth become the religion of the European world. Now, in this the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the wheel has come full circle. The Christians are in the minority again because the gentiles have become Shylockian Jews. There is no need to spend a fruitless search for the true biological Jew. Look to our people's history instead. During the French Revolution the Jewish financiers joined with the French Jacobins, the lapsed Catholics, to destroy Christian France. When you are attacked by ten thousand tigers you don't try to distinguish between the Bengal tigers and the Siberian tigers, you simply try to defend yourself against their ferocious onslaught. The gentiles have become spiritual Jews, they have rejected Christ. It makes no difference whether it is a biological Jew or a liberal gentile who takes the pound of flesh nearest the heart of the Christian, the Christian is still just as dead.

Only when we have established that it is the unrepentant Jews (not the Jessicas who have become Christians) and the post-Christian liberals and neo-pagans who have become like unto the Jews, who want to destroy the white Christ-bearing race, can we launch a successful Christian counterattack against Satan and his minions. If we ally with one branch of liberalism in order to attack another branch of liberalism, we will dilute our faith, which is grounded in the love of the God-Man. But if our faith is not diluted, we will have the strength and courage to fight to the death. How can anything of lasting value be accomplished if we make common cause with those who hate Him?

Roger Stone is being persecuted because he is connected to Trump, and Trump is being persecuted because he is tangentially connected to Christian Europe. There must be only one hundred percent, pure, unadulterated liberalism in the nations of Europe. That is what the liberals seek. All those who want even a modicum of old Europe will be destroyed. Never make the mistake of believing that the enemies of Christian Europe do not mean what they say. Louis XVI didn't believe the Jacobins meant what they said, Nicholas II did not believe the communists meant what they said, and the white grazers do not believe the liberals mean what they say when they talk about the elimination of all white people and their God. But they do mean what they say. The hatred of the whites because of their Christian past is the liberals' faith, and they are systematically and maniacally acting on that faith.

When I was growing up I read Bullfinch's work on Greek mythology, and I always felt sorry for Ajax, who, unlike Achilles, Hector, and Odysseus, did not have a god to back him. He stood alone, and he fought and died alone. In that context, the context of a world in which the gods had no ethical compass, Ajax was the most heroic warrior of them all. But how should we feel about a people who refuse to fight for a God with an ethical compass that passeth the understanding of mortal men's minds, a God who took flesh, dwelt among us, was crucified for our sins, and then rose from the dead on the third day? Should we flee from that God and seek to blend our faith in Him with the unrepentant Jew, claiming that the Jews do not have to convert because they are the chosen ones of God, regardless of their rejection of Christ? Or should we go on 'ecumenical jihads' and make common cause with Moslems and Jews? Or worse yet, should we make the negro our primary god and place Christ below the negro in our pantheon of gods? Small wonder that the liberals, who do not dilute their satanic faith, have defeated the white Europeans.

The reason we must go into the future holding on to the strings of our Christian European past is because the antique Europeans knew that love must not be diluted, it must not be an abstract concept or a fuzzy impersonal commitment to a generic people and a generic God. Love must be personal and devotional, we must love our Jesus and we must love our kith and kin in and through our Jesus. The liberals do not dilute their hatred, it is one and indivisible. We must respond to the liberals' hatred with an undiluted love of the God-Man and His people. Without the love that once was there we will surely fail, but with that love we will be more than a match for the liberals. +

---

(1) The police and the military units of the European nations exist to serve the State. And the various liberal states throughout Europe and her satellites, such as the United States and Canada, have one goal: to destroy the European people. Despite that rather obvious fact, white grazers persist in viewing their local police and military as 'their' troops and 'their' police. They are no such thing. They are hired goons, who delight in preying on defenseless whites, whether they are prolifers, yellow vests, anti-immigration protestors, or Republicans who "lied to Congress." The French goons who assaulted the retired Foreign Legion officer for daring to participate in an anti-immigration protest are the prototype for all the goon squads of the liberal states. They have no God, no honor, and no nation. They serve the Shylockian, 'pound of flesh' states of Liberalism.

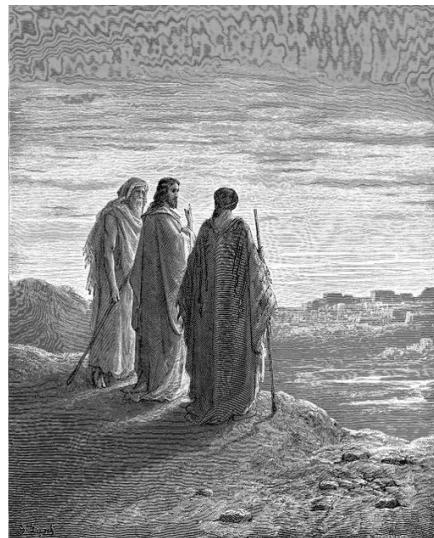
(2) Why, if the people rule, was the colorization of the European states never put to a vote? The 'people' only exist when the liberals want to invoke them in order to justify their bloodletting.

# The Mysterious Stranger

February 23, 2019

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Democracy, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Pietas

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, St. Paul



Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

— [1 Corinthians 13:8-10](#)

---

I can live no longer by thinking. — Orlando, [As You Like It](#)

---

Prior to the advent of Ray Harryhausen, the greatest special effects creator of all time, monsters in movies were usually just photographically enlarged lizards. Harryhausen gave a reality to film monsters that was truly amazing. I still vividly remember the monsters that he created for the movie *The 7th Voyage of Sinbad*, which I saw in my childhood. I saw the movie in an enormous movie theater, the type of theater that no longer exists, armed only with a \$.25 box of popcorn which was big enough to last through two showings of the movie.

Toward the end of the movie a Cyclops has a battle to the death with a dragon. My sympathies were entirely with the Cyclops. But in the end the dragon kills the Cyclops. If it had been Sinbad that killed the Cyclops I wouldn't have minded, because Sinbad was the hero, he was one of my own, he was human. My sympathy with the Cyclops stemmed from the fact that the Cyclops, through the brilliance of Harryhausen's animation, seemed to have more human traits than the reptilian dragon. I also rooted for King Kong over the Tyrannosaurus Rex in the original *King Kong* movie for the same reason. Now, what is the point of such nostalgic meanderings? When I see Trump battling with Ann Coulter, Nancy Pelosi, and the rest of the reptilian lizards of Liberaldom, my sympathies are with Trump, because at least he has some humanity. He is not one of my own, he is not an antique European, but he has not, like the Coulters of Liberaldom, completely left his humanity behind.

Why do I say that Trump has some humanity? There are two reasons. The first reason is that Trump, unlike the two Bush-men and Reagan, has actually tried to appoint prolific judges. The second reason is that Trump, unlike the two Bush-men and Reagan, has actually tried to include white people in the American dream. Trump will fail in both instances just as Sisyphus failed to get the rock up the hill, but there is a certain nobility, at least in my judgement, in his efforts.

Those who claim Trump has betrayed them on the immigration issue have never listened to any of Trump's speeches. He has never, even though the liberals call him a white supremacist, been a believer in a white America. He believes in real diversity, that white, black, brown, red, and yellow can and should live together in the great American melting pot. The liberals hate Trump because their diversity is an Orwellian diversity: "Everyone is equal, but some are more equal than others." Trump's Americanism is completely against reality, because a diverse people are not a people, but he has not suddenly betrayed his ideals now that he is President; he is being true to his Americanist beliefs.

As for the wall, it might, if built, save some white lives, so it will not be a total waste, but the wall issue is not really the central issue. We need to evict every single non-white and every single liberal from our nation, because the colored tribesmen and the liberals are committed to the destruction of the white race. The wall is the bandaid on a wound that needs to be cauterized, which I spoke of a few weeks ago, it is not the solution to the problem of white genocide.

The reason that Trump has earned the ire of the reptilian Republicans such as Ann Coulter and of the reptilian Democrats is because he is not a fully initiated reptilian himself. Mark him well, you will not see his like again in any elected office in any white nation. The liberals will not permit even one particle of valiant dust in the satanic mills of democracy. If that is the case then wither does the white man go, what is his recourse if the satanic mills reject him?

Turn and fight — that is the white man's only recourse. If the liberals tremble before a man who has only a small modicum of valiant dust, what would they do if they had to face an army of integral Europeans with valiant blood? They would crumble before such an army. But valiant blood, the valiant blood necessary to defeat the liberals, cannot be purchased on the cheap in the markets of democracy and organized Christian Jewry. Valiant blood comes from within; people who look without, to manmade intellectual systems, will always be defeated by those who have a blood faith. The liberals cling to the colored heathens in order to fuse their Gnostic hatred of all things white and Christian with a blood faith grounded in the hatred of all things white and Christian. The two entities, the liberals and the colored heathens, constitute the incarnation of Satan in the midst of what was once Christendom.

The intellectual systems that have destroyed the European people come from the two sources that St. Paul makes reference to in [1 Corinthians 1: 22-23](#): "For the Jews require a **sign**, and the Greeks seek after **wisdom**: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a **stumblingblock**, and unto the Greeks **foolishness**." Our Lord is crucified anew whenever an intellectual system based on Caiaphas's kangaroo court and on Socrates dialectic is substituted for a heart-to-heart connection to Him. The organized churches have fused the two strands together, the Greek element and the Judaic element, to form a bulwark against Christ. The democratic systems of the European nations are the secular counterparts of the anti-Christian systems of the churches. Thus the secular entity, the Jacobin system, has fused with the Church systems in order to ensure that Satan shall reign in church and state.

Ivan Karamazov claimed he did not reject God so much as he rejected God's world. But isn't that tantamount to rejecting God? Let us take a look at heaven, prior to our Lord's incarnation. And let us suppose our Lord has gathered a team of experts from earth, five PhDs, to advise Him on the best way to reach out to mankind.

*Christ: I've decided to reveal myself to mankind.*

*PhD#1: That is good, but you must be careful to market yourself so that you appear in the best possible light.*

**Christ:** I've decided to enter the womb of a virgin, be born in a stable, and live an obscure life as the son of a carpenter. Then I intend, when I reach manhood, to heal the sick, cure the lame, heal the blind, and raise some poor souls from the dead.

**PhD#2:** I don't think the virgin birth stuff is a good idea — the people aren't going to buy that. The healing the sick, curing the lame, and making the blind see is okay, but you'll need some reliable witnesses, preferably men of science, to attest to the cures. As for the raising of the dead, that is ridiculous. I wouldn't try it.

**PhDs#3, 4, and 5:** (in chorus) Yes, we wouldn't try it.

**Christ:** Then I intend to allow the Jews to condemn me to death and the Romans to crucify me. Afterwards, I shall rise again from the dead on the third day, appear to my followers in the flesh, and return to my Father in heaven while leaving the Holy Ghost here on earth to comfort my people.

(The five PhDs look at each other and at Christ with worried looks on their faces. Finally PhD #4 speaks up.)

**PhD#4:** I think you should go with a less fantastical plan of reaching out to mankind. I suggest you leave things in our hands. We have some great think tanks on earth that can come up with a great organizational plan for your entry down there on earth. Leave things in our hands, and we'll clean up your act in order to make it more practical and appealing to mankind. After all, we've had a lot of organizational experience and you haven't had any experience.

**PhDs#1, 2, 3, and 5:** Yes, PhD #4 is right, just leave it to us. We'll come up with the right plan to suit your needs and ours.

**PhD#1:** Where did He go?

**PhD#2:** I don't know, He just suddenly disappeared.

**PhD#3:** Well, He isn't going to get very far as a God if He won't talk to people.

**PhD#4:** I tried to talk with Him, but I don't think He listened to me.

**PhD#5:** What will we do if He proceeds with His own crazy plan?

**PhD#1:** We'll just have to work like hell to redirect Him. We'll have to turn His plan into something more acceptable to the human mind.

**PhD#2:** Gosh, He's a pain in the you-know-what.

**PhD#3:** (looking at PhD#1) You mentioned hell — maybe it's time to start working with that other guy.

**PhD#4:** Well, he is certainly easier to work with, and he is also much smarter than Christ.

**PhD#5:** If he is willing, let's go with him.

**PhDs#1, 2, 3, 4 and 5:** Agreed.

Christ decided to enter history by way of the human heart. And He prepared us for His entry by constantly urging His people, through the prophets, to turn from the worship of Baal, which is the worship of the sensual material world, and look to a personal God who is more than the sum total of the divergent parts of the natural world. But the Caiaphases of Jewry and the Greeks who reject the foolishness of the Incarnation hold to the religion of Baal, because if God can be contained within the confines of their systems, which consist only of what can be analyzed, dissected, and catalogued by the human mind, then they control God; in fact they become greater than God, because their minds tell us who and what God is. The pride of intellect is the original sin, and Satan can frame that sin in the form of virtue. The virtuous churchmen of Europe are proud of their knowledge of God, but that pride kills love, and faith can only be engendered by love. The darkness deepens — Lord with me abide.

There is no point in writing with the hope of enkindling some remnant spark of humanity in the European people if the European people are irredeemable. And it does seem like the systems analysis people have triumphed. Conservative and liberal are all of one mind on the subject of God: he or she or it is the sum total of their mind-forged vision of the natural world. Anyone who tries to inject an element of pietas into church politics or state politics is met with the intellectual sneer and more often than not public censure in the form of economic disenfranchisement, imprisonment, and sometimes execution, all in the name of virtue, because white pietas is not part of the religion of the modern liberals. So why bother?

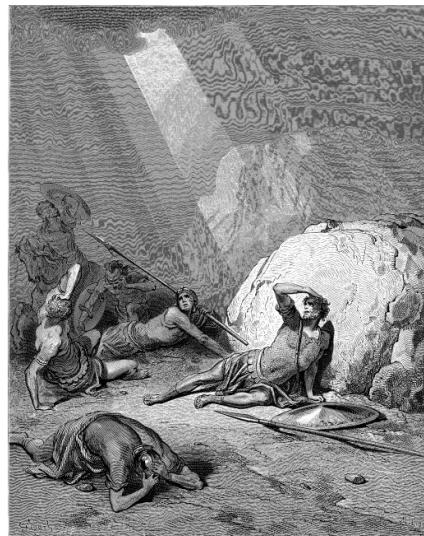
I look to Edmund Burke, who felt compelled, despite what seemed to be the impossibly of putting a dent in the armor of the Jacobins, to stay true to something inside of him that urged him to fight on. And Anthony Jacob picked up where Burke left off. He took up the defense of the European people and their God in spite of the intellectual sneer and the condemnation of the intellectuals in church and state. It all seems hopeless, but that is what Satan wants. There is a world of pure delight that is more, much more, than the sum parts of the natural world, and the way to that world is through the love of our own in and through that mysterious stranger who is Christ the Lord. +

# The Return to Damascus

March 2, 2019

Categories: Blood faith, Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Shakespeare, Wilbur Daniel Steele



And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. — [Acts 9: 3-5](#)

---

It is painfully obvious from a Christian perspective that the liberals have triumphed over the Christian Europeans. The Christian channel of grace, the familial and racial hearth fire, has been dammed up so that liberalism can live into perpetuity, and Christian Europe will remain a dead letter. And liberalism, a religion that adheres to the doctrine that whites are evil and the colored heathens are godlike, will remain the religion of the European people until what is Christian is no longer synonymous with the doctrines emanating from the organized Christian churches.

---

The French Jacobins and the American constitutionalists (Jefferson, Franklin, and Madison were not Christians) were determined to live by a faith that was not dependent on the Christian's God. The American experiment in atheism was not as sudden and drastic as the French Revolution, but it eventually became like unto the French Revolution in the 1860s when the Jacobin government of the North waged a merciless war against the Christian South. But it was not till the early part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century after World War I that the white intelligentsia of the European nations completely cut their ties to the Son of God. It became impossible in the aftermath of World War I for the intelligent European that Dostoyevsky spoke of to believe in the divinity of Christ and the mercy of God. That feeling of God-forsakenness was the mark of the 'intelligent' European after World War I and continued to be the mark of the European intellectuals through World War II.

During the period between the wars, the existentialists took center stage. 'Existence precedes essence' was their mantra, and under that banner they proclaimed the death of God. But men cannot live without a religion. The pure atheism of men such as Sartre, Becket, and Camus gave way to the worship of the noble black savage and other savages of color. But it was the existentialists, who claimed that reality was their *raison d'être*, who paved the way for negro worship, feminism, and all the other satanic -isms, because if the pure horror of existence makes the existence of a loving God impossible, then men are free to pursue other gods. And the European people have done just that — they have pursued the gods of liberalism.

There were Christian responses to the existentialists, but the problem with the responses was that they were based on the false assumption that God could be handed to mankind in the form of a computer printout: "Here, this will explain the ways of God to men." The Christian apologists were like the ape who disguised a donkey as Aslan in C. S. Lewis's book *The Last Battle*. When the donkey was unmasked, the dwarves did not turn to the real Aslan, they rejected Him as well — they were not going to be fooled again. The churchmen went into battle with false theories about the essence of God, and the end result of their theorizing was the destruction of the people's faith in the real Christ, the Christ whose existence precedes and transcends all the essences the human mind ever conceived of. The existentialists only defeated a caricature of Christianity, they did not defeat the living God.

The Christ of the Gospels, the Christ whom the European people loved before they became too 'intelligent' to love a fairy tale God, was not brought into the lists against the existentialists. The remote computer printout God was considered sufficient. But we need our exiled Savior. "Will He no come back again?" No, He will not come back again so long as the mind-forged Christ, the false Aslan of the theologians, remains in the organized churches. That Christ is compatible with negro worship, feminism, and the hatred of the European people's vision of the living God. We can't have two Christs. If the Christ of old Europe is not the living God, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because the Christ of modernity is not the God who saves.

In Shakespeare's *Measure for Measure*, the cynical, superficial Lucio tells the Duke, who is in disguise, that he knows the Duke and loves him. Yet he has nothing but bad things to say about him.

LUCIO. Sir, I was an inward of his. A shy fellow was the Duke; and I believe I know the cause of his withdrawing.

DUKE. What, I prithee, might be the cause?

LUCIO. No, pardon; 'tis a secret must be lock'd within the teeth and the lips. But this I can let you understand, the greater file of the subject held the Duke to be wise.

DUKE. Wise? Why, no question but he was.

LUCIO. A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing fellow.

DUKE. Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking. The very stream of his life, and the business he hath helmed, must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings-forth, and he shall appear to the envious a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier. Therefore you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much dark'ned in your malice.

LUCIO. Sir, I know him, and I love him.

DUKE. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

The whole history of the European people and their break with the living God is contained in that exchange. Christ did not come to us in power and might so that we could know with rational certainty that He was the Son of God. If He just wanted our minds He would have come down off the cross when the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders mocked Him: "If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him."

Christ wants our hearts. David and Mary Magdalene found favor with God. Why? Certainly not because they were great sinners. They found favor with the Lord because they had hearts that loved much. They had the knowledge of God that stems from the love of God. Loving knowledge binds us to Him while mere catechism knowledge creates a gulf between us and Him. The miracle of our people, when they were a people, was that they followed the path of loving knowledge and forsook the path of intellectual knowledge divorced from the heart which loves. The loving heart knows the beloved: the scientized intellect knows nothing. The cold obituary in the newspaper that describes the mother, father, or spouse you loved hardly describes the loved one. It is you who loved them that really knew them. The church of Christ consists of those men and women who love Christ as St. John and St. Paul loved Him.

Why did St. Paul bid us circumcise our hearts instead of opening up our minds? He wanted us to see the Christ he encountered on the road to Damascus, the Christ who enters human hearts. That is the Christ the liberals flee from like the devils in the Gospel who begged our Lord to let them enter the swine. And that is the Christ whom the churchmen have replaced with their computer printout God, who rubber-stamps the sacred decrees of liberalism. It's not possible for a loving heart connected to Christ's sacred heart to accept the fusion of liberalism and Christianity, while condemning the antique Europeans as unChristian because they loved their own people. "The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose," and he can cite church documents and use theology for his own purpose. If that is so, how does the European Everyman separate truth from falsehood? It is impossible unless we go through the narrow gate that the liberals and the churchmen have barricaded and placed sentinels in front of to stop anyone from attempting to break through the barricade. But we must break through. The heart that truly loves will not be satisfied to live outside of his racial hearth fire where there is no mercy, no love, and no Savior.

In the short story "[The Man Who Saw Through Heaven](#)," Wilbur Daniel Steele depicted an evangelical minister who lost his faith when he went to an observatory and stared at the heavens through the instruments provided to him by scientists. He had a road to Damascus experience in reverse. He replaced Christ with nature and nature's gods. His road to Damascus story in reverse has been the story of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century Europeans. They think they have seen the living God in science, which will save them from the existentialists' vision of nothingness. But what if the prophets, the apostles, and the antique Europeans were the true existentialists? What if the fairy tale is true? Just because our scientized brains tell us that Christ be not risen does that mean that darkness is right? There is a subterranean current of our lives, if we do not let go of the vision of our heart, that draws us to the Christ story in its entirety. Like Posthumus in Shakespeare's *Cymbeline*, who sees the heavenly vision with his heart: "The action of my life is like it, which I'll keep, if but for sympathy," and St. Paul, who sees Christ darkly through a heart circumcised by the love of Christ, the European can see the living God if he leaves the road that leads away from Damascus and returns to the road to Damascus where he will encounter, once again, the living God whom St. Paul and the antique Europeans knew and loved.

I rejected the modern world in my mid-twenties when I came to believe in the Christ of old Europe. As the shadows of modernity lengthened and engulfed all of what was once Christendom, I became conscious of the fact that I was a man in exile. There was nothing left of my people and their faith. And the most striking contrast between my people, the antique Europeans, and the modern Europeans, was the complete absence of the prophetic fire in the modern Europeans. The prophets who told us of the coming of the Lord had passionate hearts that enabled them to hold on to their faith in the living God despite the opposition of the Jezebels and the Ahabs. What happened to that passionate, prophetic fire? Was it no longer

necessary once Christ took flesh and dwelt among us? That cannot be true. It is the prophetic fire, the passion for a connection to the living God, that enables the Christian to pass on the faith from one faithful heart to another. We can't become lukewarm exponents of a Socratic Christ without losing our faith in the passionate Shepherd who died on the cross for our sins. In all the fairy tales that come from the heart of old Europe, a rescue comes at the last moment – "When hope seems nearly gone, God's relief to us will surely come." But does real life, our existential life here on this earth, really work that way? Where is God's relief to us? The relief has come and is with us now, even unto the ending of the world, but we cannot avail ourselves of that relief unless we possess the prophetic fire that sustained Elijah in the desert and our people throughout all the Christian centuries when they strove so mightily to maintain the prophetic fire. I love them now and always – they are my people and they have borne witness to our Jesus, the God of our ascending race. +

# A Mystery

March 9, 2019

Categories: Antique Christianity, Charity, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: G. M. Trevelyan, Shakespeare



But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden *wisdom*, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: [1 Corinthians 2:7](#)

---

For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him, in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell for ever and ever in perfect fulness. – [Tom Brown's School Days](#)

---

St. Paul enjoins us to believe in Christ's mysterious, divine charity: "Behold I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

It was the devil's self-appointed task to destroy, through his liberal minions, the Europeans' faith in Jesus Christ by attacking that mystery which St. Paul writes about and Handel put to music. Truth, the liberals tell us, cannot be mysterious, it must be rational and scientifically verifiable or it is not truth. Where is the scientific evidence that Christ rose from the dead? And where is the scientific evidence that those men and women of old Europe who believed that Christ rose from the dead are with the Lord, body and soul, even though they are dead and buried? There is no scientific evidence to support the major tenets of the Christian faith, nor is there a rational explanation for the Trinity, the virgin birth, original sin, or the creation of man from the dust of the earth and the creation of woman from the rib of man. So isn't it time to leave the age of credulity and enter the new age of science and reason? "Yes, it is time to leave the age of credulity," the liberals tell us. "That is why we have taken the reins of government in church and state." One thinks of the prophetic words of Isaiah: "And the government shall be upon His shoulders." Yes, the government should be upon His shoulders, not the liberals' shoulders. But before we leave the credulous antique Europeans behind, let us look at the new mystery religion that has replaced Christianity.

The gods of the pagan Greeks succumbed to rationalism, and as a result the Greeks succumbed to the Romans. But the Roman gods were mere state gods, they no longer had any mystery. The mystery religions replaced them in the hearts of the people. Christ did not conquer the mystery religions because His story was rational and scientific, He conquered the mystery religions because His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead was a greater mystery than that of the mystery religions. (1) The pagan Greeks and Romans watched their civilizations die because they failed to realize that rationalism kills mystery and without mystery there can be no faith. And what happens to a people without faith? They die out as a people.

St. Augustine quite naturally thought the coming of the 'barbarian' hordes, the European tribesmen, meant the end of civilization. He wanted to give the faithful something to hold on to, so he invented a false concept of the Church. The Roman organization became, in Augustine's mind, the true Church. Everything outside of that Church was the city of man, which was evil. Catholic and Protestant theologians have differed on many things, but they all have remained under the spell of St. Augustine regarding the church of Christ. They do not believe that the Word of God is passed on from heart to heart; they believe it must be passed on through mind-forged organizations consisting of smart men who hammer out creeds and special bulletins about God and then pass their findings on to the faithful. And the main purpose of those creeds and bulletins is to destroy the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen so that their rational formulations of the essence of Christianity can take center stage. It is not a question of St. Augustine or Aquinas. Nor is it a question of Aquinas or Calvin. It is a question of St. Paul and the circumcised heart versus the mind-forged theories of theological experts who thought, and still think, that Christ can be put in a scientized box and played upon as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern sought to play upon [Hamlet](#).

HAMLET. I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

GUILDENSTERN. My lord, I cannot.

HAMLET. I pray you.

GUILDENSTERN. Believe me, I cannot.

HAMLET. I do beseech you.

GUILDENSTERN. I know no touch of it, my lord.

HAMLET. 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most excellent music. Look you, these are the stops.

GUILDENSTERN. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.

HAMLET. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be play'd on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

The conquest of Rome by the European tribesmen was providential, because the Europeans, when they bent their knees to Christ, did not bend their knees to the Roman system. Why should they bend their knees to a system they had defeated? They bent their knees to a God whose heart was greater than the heart of Odin:

*The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself.*

#### —History of England by G. M. Trevelyan

The central conflict throughout the Christian centuries of Europe has been between the churchmen, the intellectual Christians who wanted to turn the mystery religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen into a scientized philosophy, and the European people who loved much and wanted to hold on to the Christ of St. Paul and the Apostles. The conflict finally ended in favor of the churchmen when the preponderance of scientific facts, and the alliance of the churchmen with the liberal proponents of scientific facts, convinced the European people to give up on the Christ of the Gospels and St. Paul.

It seems too obvious to have to be stated, but that has been Satan's goal all along – to obscure the obvious Gospel truth that Christ comes to us through the heart, in order to make us believe that we cannot know God unless we find the right 'system.' The great system never comes – it is always in the future, a future that can only be realized if we repudiate the past where Christ dwells with our people. In the meantime, we still need a religion. That is where the liberals step in. They kept debunking the Christ story because it was a mystery that defied science and reason, while they handed mankind a new mystery religion that was just as irrational and unscientific as the religion they rejected.

The centerpiece of the liberals' new religion is the noble black savage. Feminism, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, transgenderism and every other evil under the sun are part of the liberals' mystery religion, but the various parts of their religion are held together by the worship of the sacred negro. Just as Christ is the cornerstone of the Christian faith, so is the negro the cornerstone of the liberals' faith. While the churchmen have taken great pains to divest Christianity of its mysterious, irrational elements, thus destroying the faith, they have also taken great pains to embrace the mystery of liberalism, which is the mystery of the noble black savage. How can men who do what blacks do – rape, murder, and pillage – be sacred entities? And how can we, mortal men who must die, expect to be saved from death by the worship of the noble black savage? "Ah, that is the great mystery of our faith," the liberals tell us in rapturous ecstasy. But must we submit to the liberals' mystery religion?

If a man believes that this world is all there is, he will embrace the liberals' new mystery religion, because it is the religion of the powers that be. And if a man wants to have success in this world and keep open a possibility of some position in the next world, which may or may not exist, he will embrace organized Christian Jewry, which combines the worship of the negro with a cookie-cutter Christianity. But what if a man loves and hates with the same passion as the ancient Europeans, the men who left Odin for Christ? Such a man will not bend his knee to the liberals' mystic negro, nor will he compromise with the Christian philosophers. He will have all or nothing: he will have the Christ story with all its mystery, all its tragedy, and all its triumph.

"Why should you not explain the mystery of God in logical, rational terms? Are you afraid that your faith cannot stand up to reason?" Such is the refrain of the great rationalists throughout the Christian centuries of Europe – the Shaws, the Russells, and the Voltaires. And the theologians have taken the bait. They approached God with slide-rules and dissecting kits in order to pluck out His mystery. Is that how we know the living God? Christ called a little child unto him and said, "Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven." It is the poetic of our people to which we must cling, their childlike trust in His promise that we need not fear the world because He has overcome the world. Christ did not try to explain the tragedy of life away, instead He drew us to His sacred heart so that we would be able to see our redemption in His sacrifice on the cross. The antique Europeans understood the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because they, like unto a child, understood the Christ story with their hearts rather than with their rational, empirical minds.

We cannot approach God in the spirit of internet trolls and expect to see the Kingdom of Heaven. There is more wisdom in Robert Louis Stevenson's *A Child's Garden of Verses* than in all the theological tomes ever written. Why? Because there is a reverence for the mystery of a Christian hearth fire in those poems of Stevenson's childhood. Without that reverence, we will surely die out as a people, and we will not, as individuals, have any contact with the living God. The mark of a man is not that he kneels to no-one. The mark of a man is determined by whom he kneels to. Our people once knelt in "humble adoration" to Christ. If that seems foolish to the philosophical trolls and is a stumbling block to the Jews and the neo-pagans, then so be it. We will cleave unto Him, because the mystery of His loving charity is the mystery that speaks to our hearts:

#### *THE UNSEEN PLAYMATE*

*When children are playing alone on the green,  
In comes the playmate that never was seen.  
When children are happy and lonely and good,  
The Friend of the Children comes out of the wood.*

*Nobody heard him and nobody saw,  
His is a picture you never could draw,  
But he's sure to be present, abroad or at home,  
When children are happy and playing alone.*

*He lies in the laurels, he runs on the grass,  
He sings when you tinkle the musical glass;  
Whene'er you are happy and cannot tell why,  
The Friend of the Children is sure to be by!*

*He loves to be little, he hates to be big,  
'Tis he that inhabits the caves that you dig;  
'Tis he when you play with your soldiers of tin  
That sides with the Frenchmen and never can win.*

*'Tis he, when at night you go off to your bed,  
Bids you go to your sleep and not trouble your head;  
For wherever they're lying, in cupboard or shelf,  
'Tis he will take care of your playthings himself. +*

---

(1) If the Christian rationalists would leave the stage and let Christ's Gospel stand alone against the liberals' mystery religion, Christ would triumph once again. It is our duty to see that the Christian rationalists cease their intellectual warbling and listen to the forgotten voice of the ancient European people who understood the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because they saw life "feelingly."

# The Discarded God of a Condemned People

March 16, 2019

Categories: Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Halfway-house churches, Older posts (pre-April 2019)

Tags: Anthony Jacob, Edmund Burke, John Donne, Thomas Hughes



To have once been nothing, and now to be co-heires with the Son of God: That Son of God, who if there had been but one soule to have been saved, would have dyed for that; nay, if all soules had been to be saved, but one, and that onely had sinned, he would not have contented himselfe with all the rest, but would have dyed for that. And there is the goodnesse, the liberality of our King, our God, our Christ, our Jesus. – [John Donne](#)

---

It is easier for me to understand the nihilist than the halfway-house Christian. I disagree with the nihilist, but I understand him. If your reason will not let you believe that Christ rose from the dead, then it follows that life has no meaning. But the halfway-house Christian, the man who professes to believe in Christ's divinity and then rejects the aspects of the Christ story that do not agree with what he deems reasonable is impossible for me to understand. I must acknowledge the existence of such people, the halfway-house Christians, because they are legion, but I cannot really understand them from within as I can understand the nihilist.

Let me pick out one former acquaintance as an example of the halfway-house Christians that I cannot understand. He was a Roman Catholic priest in good standing with the Church. I naively thought when I made his acquaintance that since he regularly celebrated mass and recited the Nicene Creed in church he believed in the Christ story as I, a man in his mid-twenties who had gone from nihilism to faith in Christ, believed. But our two faiths were not compatible. My acquaintance did not believe in original sin as depicted in the Bible nor did he believe in any of the Old Testament miracle stories such as the Flood, the destruction of the Tower of Babel, nor the parting of the Red Sea. Did he still believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead? Yes and no. He believed in some kind of spiritual life after death, but whether it was a personal resurrection or not was unclear to him. What was this halfway-house Christian's passionate belief? His passion was for the negroes. He passionately believed that they, as a race, were the suffering servants whom he had to love with his whole heart, mind, and soul. Now, that modern priest was probably closer to the liberal side of the great divide than other halfway-house Christians, but all the modern 'Christians' have problems with some aspect of the Christ story which begins in the Garden of Eden and culminates in Christ's resurrection from the dead. My difficulty in understanding such 'Christians' centers around my difficulty in viewing some of God's miracles as more rational than others. If Christ is truly who He said He was, why is it more difficult to believe in original sin, the creation of the world, the creation of man, and the other Old Testament miracles than it is to believe in Christ's divinity? If Christ was truly God and Man, doesn't everything else follow? Why should we stay in a rationalist limbo, trying to reconcile the Christian faith with a watered down intellectual Christianity that is more compatible with human reason?

The Christian rationalist has no firm ground to stand on. He is forever at the mercy of the next encyclical or the latest biblical study which will tell him just how much, or how little, he is supposed to believe of the Christ story. Thomas Hughes spoke to that very issue over a century ago:

*At the same time, as we also know that the methods and principles of historical investigation are constantly improving, and being better understood, and that the critics of the next generation will work, in all human likelihood, at as great an advantage in this inquiry over those who are now engaged in it, as our astronomers and natural philosophers enjoy over Newton and Franklin — and as new evidence may turn up any day which may greatly modify their conclusions — we cannot suppose that there is the least chance of their settling the controversy in our time. Nor, even if we thought them likely to arrive at definite conclusions, can we consent to wait the result of their investigations... Granting then... that if these facts on the study of which they are engaged are not facts — if Christ was not crucified, and did not rise from the dead, and ascend to God His Father — there has been no revelation, and Christianity will infallibly go the way of all lies, either under their assaults or those of their successors — they must pardon us if even at the cost of being thought and called fools for our pains, we deliberately elect to live our lives on the contrary assumption. It is useless to tell us that we know nothing of these things, that we can know nothing until their critical examination is over; we can only say, "Examine away; but we do know something of this matter, whatever you may assert to the contrary, and mean to live on that knowledge." — [Alfred the Great](#)*

St. Paul enjoined us to keep in memory "that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that He was buried and He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures;" That Christ rose from the dead "according to the Scriptures" was the faith that sustained our people against the pestilence that walketh in darkness and the destruction that wasteth in noonday. We have succumbed to the pestilence of liberalism and are being destroyed by the colored heathens because we have lost our connection to the living God. We can't know Him without hearts that love much, and we can't love in the abstract, we must love our own, the people of our racial hearth fire, or we will not have the heart to love God. Our minds might assent to the basic tenets of Christianity, but if our hearts are not moved by Christ, our faith is as a sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal. The 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives in the church who wanted to conserve the church while jettisoning the European people, and the conservatives in the secular society who wanted to conserve our democratic institutions while jettisoning the European people, were not conservatives. They were the aiders and abettors of the outright liberals who wanted to attack Christ through His people. If you won't defend the people who took Christ into their hearts, you are, in essence, leaving Christ behind and forging ahead with the liberals who have adopted a strange new God who requires sacrifice and rejects mercy.

In my lifetime I have seen the completion of the transformation process of the devil. Europe and Christ used to be synonymous. Ben Gunn said he had not eaten a Christian diet for three years on Treasure Island. There was no need for him to say he had not eaten a European diet because Christian and European meant the same thing. Now when you link the antique Europeans with Christ in 'Christian' circles, when you speak of the covenant between the ancient Europeans and Christ, you are treated like a pariah. How can you claim that racists were one with Christ? Is not racism the original sin? No, it is intellectual pride, pride in our ability to place God out there, away from our racial hearth fire, and proceed according to our own abstract idea of God, that is the original sin. Piety is the way to God; it does not lead us away from God. When you proscribe the European hearth fire, you have proscribed the living God. The flood of non-European people into European countries is the equivalent of a satanic reversal of Christ's incarnation. When the 'Dream of the Rood' Europeans took Christ into their hearts, He became incarnate in Europe. Now that the liberals have demonized Christian Europe and opened up the floodgates to the colored heathens, Satan has become incarnate in Europe.

Satan did not ask Adam and Eve to deny God, he bid them *expand* their knowledge of God. They were told to give up the provincial, sentimental God who cared for His children, in order to become full partners with a cosmic God. The devil was a Chardinian. Under the guidance of the liberals, the European people have participated in a second fall of man. They rejected the little way, the narrow path of love that Christ chose when He took flesh and dwelt among us, for the broad path of cosmic knowledge. Do we really know God better now that we do not love our people? It seems to me that we have lost God now that we no longer love our people. We are passengers on a plague-infested ship, piloted by the devil.

Anthony Jacob, who was banned from all the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservative publications, wrote that “charity not only begins at home, it perishes without one.” Burke wrote about, “that charity of honor,” which sustains a Christian people. Both men, Burke and Jacob, were true conservatives. They wanted to conserve their people, who were white and Christian. That should have been the goal of all the men who claimed to be conservative, but it wasn’t. They sought to preserve an abstract, universal, conglomerate called ‘the people’ who were loyal to a remote, abstract God who could only be presented to ‘the people’ after he/she/it was dissected, analyzed, and purged of racism, sentimentality, and provincialism. Who is that purified God? Behold, it is the sacred negro.

The little Christ born in a stable in Bethlehem became the savior of the world. The great cosmic Christ born in the minds of Christian rationalists became an inconsequential God who lives only to rubber stamp the decrees of liberalism. It is now verboten in ‘Christian’ circles to invoke the Christ of old Europe. We are enjoined to look to the new, streamlined Christ, who cannot save, He can only provide comfort and support to the liberal elect who seek to build a kingdom of God on earth. In that kingdom, the liberal elect, who have purged themselves of whiteness, will take charge of the eternal religious festival dedicated to the colored gods who have redeemed us from... What, pray tell, do they redeem us from? Do they redeem us from death? No, but they do redeem us, if we worship them, from the original sin of racism. But then again do they really redeem the white man from the sin of whiteness? The reality of the liberals’ brave new world seems to contradict their theory. No matter how devoutly the liberals worship the sacred negroes, no matter how subservient the white grazers are to the sacred negroes, “thou art a sinner because thou art white” is still stamped on the foreheads of the liberals and the white grazers. Is there no atonement in the new religion? No, there is not. There can be no atonement, for the unpardonable sin of whiteness. Shouldn’t that tell us something, shouldn’t that tell us everything, about the new religion? Can a savior who has no mercy be a savior? Why were our people’s hearts drawn to Christ? Was it not because He, through His divine charity, redeemed us from sin and saved us from death? Why is that vision of the living God, the vision of the proscribed and condemned antique Europeans, now an anathema and the new vision of the merciless gods of color the ruling orthodoxy? Must the European people remain forever in their self-imposed exile from their people and their God all because of ‘racism,’ that man-made bogeyman who keeps the liberals’ kingdom of eternal night in order?

My children never went to ‘school,’ because they were educated at the parental hearth fire. Their religious education consisted of the literature of the West and the Bible. It was truly amazing to see how the literature of the West commingled with the Bible. The history of our people is the retelling of the Christ story. If you try to eliminate the Christ story from our people’s history, you eliminate our people. And conversely if you try to eliminate our people from the Christ story, you eliminate the Christ story as a historical reality. You make it an abstract theory. St. Paul’s “according to the Scriptures,” becomes “according to the abstract theories of really smart men.” And those smart men have given us a Gnostic God who is everything and nothing. He is too weak to be a savior, so he has given way to the new black Messiah. Our people, when they were a people, had a heart to heart covenant with the living God. Donne’s ode to “Our Jesus,” which was the lay of the antique Europeans, must be our faith while the lay of the liberals who sing of the colored gods of sacrifice must always be an anathema to us. In the name of the God of Mercy, we must cling to the Christ-centered hearth fire of the European people.+

---

**Addendum:** Let’s be clear about the liberals’ fake tears for the victims of the shootings in the mosques in New Zealand. The liberals do not care about the death of Moslems. They do not care about the death of anyone, with the exception of their own illustrious selves. Bush and Blair killed millions of innocent Moslems with the consent of the liberals. The liberals will use this shooting to clamp down on white people who advocate, by word or deed, that white nations should remain white. “Terror has no religious affiliation,” the liberals intone. Don’t believe them. Islam is a religion of terror and so is liberalism. Legalized abortion is terrorism, the massive bombing of civilian populations is terrorism, and on the Moslems’ ledger is a legacy of bloody terror against white Christians. So was the shooting justifiable? You could make a case that it was; are not all Moslems by what they profess potential terrorists? Yes, they are. But still, my heart did not soar within me when I heard of the shootings as my heart soars when I hear of the shooting of an abortion doctor or as it would soar if I heard of the shooting of a violent Jihadist or a black murderer and rapist. A Christian should not live in the land of theory. Even though you can make a theoretical case for the shooting of all members of a religious sect that advocates terror, we must listen to our Christian hearts, which recoil at the indiscriminate slaughter of civilians, even if the civilians are members of a religious body, liberal or Moslem, opposed to white Christians. A Christian has the added burden of fighting within the moral parameters of his Christian faith. That puts him at a disadvantage when he fights enemies who have no moral parameters. But that is our cross, a cross that our Savior, in my judgement, wants us to bear.

The halfway-house Christians will rush to condemn the perpetrators of the shooting. They will not be full of loving forgiveness for the men who did the shootings, because the shooters were not members of a liberal-sanctioned religious sect. They were, in the vernacular of the liberals, ‘white supremacists.’ But they are not the moral pariahs the liberals claim they are. White self-defense is not morally reprehensible. But we see, in these shootings, the insufficiency of white self-defense that is not grounded in the Christian faith. The mark of a Christian is not that he doesn’t fight, the mark of a Christian is that he discriminates when he fights, between the militant, aggressive enemies of his people and the non-militant civilians who had the misfortune to be born into a false religion.

I realize that it is simpler to take either an ‘all violence is wrong’ stance, or a ‘by any means necessary’ stance, on the subject of white self-defense. But I can’t do that. The liberals and their heathen allies must be resisted. They are violent and merciless and we must resist them. With violence? Yes, with violence. But should our violence be without mercy? No, there is the difference between us and them. We must temper our violence with mercy. There will be no mercy for the shooters in this case, because they are white. But they should be shown mercy, because they are not as responsible for the killings as the liberals who let the Moslems into New Zealand and the Moslems who declared war on white Christians. But nevertheless, we must hold out for Christian warfare, which extends mercy to the enemy, a mercy that seems to be lacking in the men who did the shootings in the mosques.

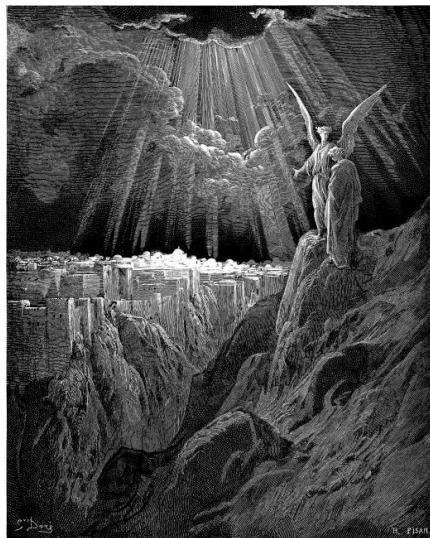
The liberals have no problem with bombing Moslems over there, because over there, they are the enemies of liberalism. But they do have a problem with killing Moslems in white nations because over here the Moslems are part of an invading army that are doing what the liberals desire: they are destroying the white race.

# An Alternative Vision to Liberalism and Neo-Paganism

March 23, 2019

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Defense of the White Race, Europeans and Christ, Older posts (pre-April 2019), Rationalism, Utopianism

Tags: Adam Mickiewicz



Your soul deserves the place to which it came,  
If having entered Hell, you feel no flame.

-Adam Mickiewicz

---

I read the [Manifesto](#) of Brenton Tarrant the New Zealand mosque shooter. There is a certain nobility in that young man. He has a heart, which is more than can be said of the liberals and their Christian allies, who are not Christian. But I still stand by my initial response to the killings in the mosque, which I wrote last week before I knew there was only one shooter and before I read the Manifesto. It is not wrong to resist the onslaught of merciless enemies who rape and murder your people. The fact that Tarrant wanted to do something about the rape and murder of his people places him far above the liberals and the false Christians of organized Christian Jewry, who see the destruction of the white race as a necessary step on the road to Utopia, which is the kingdom of hell on earth. Having said all that, I must add that the neo-paganism of the Mosleys and the Identitarians disgusts me. How can a European proceed in any action of great enterprise without taking the Man of Sorrows into account? It is true that the code of chivalry, which stems from the antique Europeans' connection to Christ, has often been more honored in the breach than the observance, but nevertheless it was real, just as Christ's presence in the European people was real. We can't become virtuous pagans again, without becoming like our enemies, who are beasts of prey. The Europeans have shown themselves to be more proficient at killing than the other races, but is that ultimately our pride and glory? No, it can't be. Our pride and glory should be in Him who saves our people from being mere biological entities fit to slaughter or be slaughtered in the biological arena. Do we belong to Him or to the dung heap? That question cannot be put aside as a poetical side issue, fit for parlor talk and playtime. It must be decided upon. If we belong only to nature as the men and women of the nature-based religions of Islam, liberalism, Judaism, and the rest posit, then let us all proceed to act like beasts, let us kill or be killed. But if, as the condemned and forgotten antique Europeans believed, condemned by the liberals and forgotten by the neo-pagans, we belong to Christ then we must proceed according to His charity of honor which tells us that we must fight as He would have us fight, extending mercy to an enemy who has no mercy.

When hell is empty and all the devils are here on earth, it becomes imperative that we follow Edgar's injunction to speak what we feel and not what we ought to say. I feel a hatred beyond hatred for the liberals and their anti-Christian Christian allies, who have created a hell on earth that makes young men such as Brenton Tarrant feel compelled to respond in kind to the deviltry of the liberals and their colored allies. And I feel a sadness and disgust that the only resistance to the deviltry of the liberals is coming from young whites who have no faith in the Christ they have never known, because the church men won't preach Christ crucified, Christ risen, and have given themselves over to a non-faith in cosmic nothingness. Brenton Tarrant is not a terrorist, he is a brave young man who responded to Islamic terrorism without the aid and guidance of the Christ of old Europe. Let us pray not only for his physical well-being as he faces the wrath of the liberals, but let us also pray that he finds the God of His people, the God who made the lame to walk and the blind to see. Christ still comes to all those who call on Him by name. [\(1\)](#)

If there is only going to be two forces in the world, the liberals and the colored heathens vs. the neo-pagans, with whom does the Christian side? With neither. Of what good does it avail us to gain the whole world if we lose our souls? If the liberals win, the Christian loses, and if the neo-pagans win, the Christian loses. The Christian European must not make the same mistake as the halfway house Christians. They were afraid of going it alone with Christ as their only support, so they attached themselves to the liberals who seemed to be the rulers of this world. We can't seek to ally ourselves with the neo-pagans in the hopes that they will fight the liberals and their colored minions for us. We must fight them ourselves, in His name. If we do that, the neo-pagans with hearts of flesh will convert and bend their knees to Christ. The ones who have hardened their hearts and trust only in their minds will ultimately be absorbed by liberalism.

One thing I've noted when reading the literature of the neo-pagans is that they have an inordinate confidence in their ability to control history. The Christian is concerned with, "What does God want me to do?" Then he acts on that belief, leaving God to determine the results of his action. But the neo-pagan thinks that his own mind is providence. "As I think, so the world shall be ordered." But the world will never be ordered as the neo-pagan wills it to be ordered, because existence is too complicated to be "figured out" by the human mind. We must give our wills up to Him.

The neo-pagan believes in the Father, which is his own intellect, and he believes in the Holy Ghost, which is science, but he has no Savior. The triune God is eternally part of the fabric of the European people's history. Even when they reject Christ to form a new religion, their new religion is constructed in a perverse imitation of Christianity. The liberals have a Savior, and the neo-pagans do not. I have often wondered why the neo-pagans are so obsessed with linking their cause with Hitler. I think it is their hope that he can be the Messiah that they seek. But the liberals' messiah, the noble black savage, seems to resonate with the European people more than Hitler does. Hitler made some noise for a time, but the egalitarians, the Jacobins of democracy, ultimately brought him down. All neo-pagans will go the way of Hitler unless they return home and embrace the Christ of eternal Europe.

St. Paul said that the last enemy which shall be destroyed is death. And yet the liberals and the neo-pagans both proceed as if they have conquered death without the aid of Christ. They both look on the survival of the species on this earth as the only realistic victory over death that is possible. The liberals want a kingdom of God on earth controlled by God the Father, which is their intellects, a kingdom which is made possible by the Savior, which is the sacred negro, and a kingdom sustained by the Holy Ghost, which is science. But can I or you or any of our loved ones be saved from death by the liberals' religion? And the neo-pagans who tell the white man that fertility, white fertility, is necessary to rout the colored barbarians, do they tell us why we should be fertile? Our people once believed that children were a blessing, the fruits of a Christian union. If Christ be not risen, then why should we procreate? To extend our miserable lives as a species a few more years here on earth? We can't have the fruits of faith in Christ without faith in Christ. We must have a childlike faith in "our Jesus" in order to form the type of union that results in children. Children are not weaponry to be used against the enemy, they are blessings from God. They help us to share in the sorrow of His crucifixion and the joy of His resurrection. Liberalism and neo-paganism come together on the issue of procreation. Both "religious" groups seek to wrest from God the procreative blessings which are His, and His alone, to give. And He wills that our children should be conceived and loved in and through Him. Let us leave, forever, the stink of the science laboratory and animal breeding programs to once again conceive Christian children consecrated to Christ the Lord.

While the neo-pagans either embrace the rotting corpse of Hitler, hoping that somehow he can be a savior, or while they look for another Messiah, the liberals have found their Savior. And the book of their Savior is *To Kill a Mockingbird*. "Stand up, your father is passing," is the liberals' fantasy. They are the Father, they are the great and benevolent Atticus Finch who loves his only begotten son of the spirit, who is Tom Robinson. With the support of science, which is free of prejudice, provincialism, and everything suggesting that there is anything or anyone that is above nature, the Father and the Son are worshipped and glorified. The liberals are so lost in their love of themselves and their abstract negro gods that they do not take note of the fact that the negroes hate them in their assumed role of the great Atticus Finch. They know nothing of the white man's flight from Christ through them. All they know is that the white man is weak and does not care about his own people. So they will smite the white man and his children, even Atticus Finch and his children. The Moslems and the other non-whites also fall under the liberals' protective mantle, so long as they hate the devil, which is the unredeemed whites. But they too will not accept the liberals' vision of liberal greatness, and like the blacks they will kill the whites, liberal and non-liberal, with a maniacal hatred that is rooted in Satan's hatred of Christ.

The liberals have created hell on earth, and they order us to live in it while they torture, maim, and murder us. The neo-pagans offer us a different version of hell on earth. They offer us a science laboratory devoid of light, devoid of love and devoid of God. I reject both worlds and both visions. My heart belongs to old Europe. I don't see how it is possible to commit to any other world. When Christ asks His apostles if they too will leave Him, Peter replies, "Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou has the words of eternal life." We can't leave old Europe, because He resides there. He does not live in the liberals' hell on earth or in the hellish science lab of the neo-pagans. In the old Anglo-Saxon poem called "Daniel," the author bids us —

*Consider now the holy might and wondrous works of God. We saw how He shielded the young men in the furnace from death and the leaping flames, because they served Him.*

The Messiah that the prophets heralded came to us as the Suffering Servant. Our people saw their salvation in His crucifixion and resurrection. If we look at existence through their hearts, we will see that our salvation does not come to us through the sacred negro or through the minds of great white thinkers. Are we really too intelligent to believe that He is still our only hope? +

---

(1) Pray for Brenton Terrant. Pray as Henry Lyte prayed: "Help of the helpless, Lord abide with me." Please Lord, abide with Brenton Terrant, in life and death, abide with him as we hope and pray that you will abide with us.

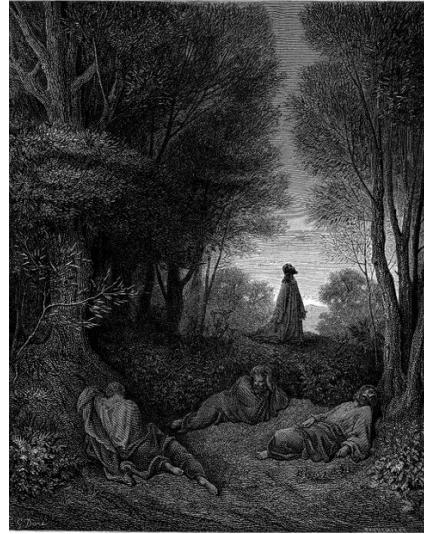
# The Darkness Deepens

April 21, 2019

Categories: Chivalry, Muscular Christianity

Tags: Edmund Burke

Please see [To My Readers](#)



But let us take care. The moral sentiments, so nearly connected with early prejudice as to be almost one and the same thing, will assuredly not live long under a discipline, which has for its basis the destruction of all prejudices, and the making the mind proof against all dread of consequences flowing from the pretended truths that are taught by their philosophy. – Edmund Burke, [Further Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)

The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime. – Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

Let me begin with Edmund Burke:

*Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections.*

The liberals are holding all sorts of sympathy ceremonies for the victims who were killed in the New Zealand mosque. In my area there was a huge ecumenical ‘religious’ ceremony in which all the female clergy and most of the female laity wore some sort of Moslem headgear. Do the liberals really feel pity for the Moslems who were killed by Brenton Tarrant? No, they don’t, because the liberals have separated themselves from the font of pity and mercy, they have separated themselves from Christ. Men and women who kill babies in their mothers’ wombs and then throw them on the trash heap are not, I repeat, are not full of pity for the victims in the New Zealand mosque. What the liberals are doing, laity and clerical, is showing the liberal world how virtuous they are. When white Christians are murdered by Moslems and/or black barbarians, there is no outpouring of sympathy for the victims, because when the victims are white, they are justly killed for the sin of whiteness, according to the dictates of liberalism. And when dark-skinned Christian Nigerians are killed by Moslems, there is no outpouring of sympathy for those victims, because they are considered Uncle Remuses, who have adopted a white man’s religion.

Brenton Tarrant was responding to the merciless assault on his people by a merciless enemy. Where he went wrong was in responding to a merciless enemy with the same tactics used by his enemies. When Rogers, of Rogers’ Rangers fame, attacked the Abnaki Indians, this is what he told his men: “You all know what these Indians have done to New England. For near a hundred years they’ve been sneaking up on our towns and farms, cutting folks to pieces while they were still alive, roasting ‘em alive, torturing ‘em every way a sick mind could think of. Well, we’re going to put an end to that. Remember our orders – kill every fighting man among ‘em, but let the women and children alone even though they’ve killed and captured ours.” When the Christian kills, his actions must be motivated, as they most certainly were in the case of Rogers and his men, by love. And the killings that must be done in defense of those we love must be done within the confines of chivalry: “let the women and children alone.” From a purely pagan, pragmatic standpoint, it is good policy to kill the children, because they are savage warriors in the making, and it is good practice to kill the women, because they are the breeders of savage warriors. But the code of chivalry forbids pagan pragmatism.<sup>(1)</sup> The Christian does not advocate the abortion of black babies because there is a good chance that they will grow up to be black murderers, nor does he advocate the indiscriminate killing of Moslems regardless of their age, sex, or degree of culpability in the Moslem invasion of the West. I do not believe that any good can come from a response to Islamic terrorism rooted in neo-paganism, like liberalism, lacks that “charity of honor.”

Who is to blame for the shootings in New Zealand? First and foremost it is the liberals. They are allowing the Moslems to enter the white nations in the hopes that the Moslems will kill off the whites. And secondly I blame the Moslem invaders. I am against bombing them over there, in their own countries, but I am in favor of banning Moslems from the white nations. I find it astounding that the pro-Israel ‘Christians’ throughout the European nations, especially in this country, are adamantly opposed to violence against domestic Islamic terrorists and liberals who defend the terrorists, yet they have no compunction about bombing innocent Moslems over there. And they are relatively innocent when they are over there, unless you think a Christian can kill a Moslem just for being a Moslem.

It shouldn’t be hard to see that any killing that does not stem from pietas — “I will defend my own” – is evil. But the modern ‘Christians’ have reversed that simple Christian precept — It is all right to kill if the killings are state-sanctioned wars of conquest, but it is wrong to kill in defense of our loved ones. The end result of that kind of twisted theology is that white Christians have become hypocritical Quakers. They will not fight the colored barbarians or the liberals, who have ordered the destruction of the white race, but they will fight, through the state, to destroy all enemies of atheistic, Jacobin democracy.

The magnificent hymn “In the Garden” speaks of an intimacy with Christ that can only come when His heart unites with our hearts. “He walks with me and He talks with me and He tells me I am His own.” Yes, we are sinful, yes, we are imperfect, but He felt that we had something inside us worthy of redemption. The intellectual Christian puts God ‘out there,’ because ‘out there’ he can control God by keeping Him away from human hearts. That Semipelagianism has destroyed Western man. “Our intellects are pure, but our hearts are sinful.” The European Christian rejects that Gnostic perversion of the faith:

*Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time. – Anglo-Saxon Poetry*

We are creatures of the heart. If we are not allowed to come to the garden alone to commune with the living God because our hearts are impure, but must only approach Him through the great wizards of the intellect because their minds are pure, then we are lost souls. We have no touchstone of reality. The non-whites still have a reality, they have never left their nature gods.

But the white man cannot go back. He must have a heart-to-heart connection to the God above nature, or else he must be an outcast man, doomed to wander through the arid wastes of a mind divorced from the human heart. [\(2\)](#)

And in order to fortify his dried-up soul, he will worship, second-hand, the gods of nature. The liberal worships the gods of color while the neo-pagan tries, like Hitler, to revive the pagan gods of the ancient Europeans. The liberals have been more successful than the neo-pagans because their ‘noble black savage’ has a contemporary historical presence that the ancient Vikings lack. If and when the European people come to see Christ, once again, as a God who enters human hearts, they will be renewed as a people and will not acquiesce to their own destruction because the wizards of intellectual Christianity have turned them away from the living God.

Something very old and something very new has become institutionalized in the European nations. The something old is paganism, and the something new is post-Christian paganism. The old paganism was cyclic, it did not progress, it simply, like nature, repeated itself over and over. But post-Christian paganism, which is liberalism, views the historical process as an ever-evolving, ever-advancing process. History is moving, under the guidance of the liberals, toward something magnificent:

*And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,  
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?*

In the fullness of time, the fusion of liberalism and paganism has given birth to the Prince of Darkness. He has become the ruler of the European nations by luring the churchmen away from the Christ whom we encounter in our hearts, and toward the Christ that can only be known through the minds of the philosophers and theologians. It wasn’t necessary for Satan to attack the laity directly, because once he turned the clergymen away from the living God it was only a matter of sitting back and letting nature, and nature’s God, the noble black savage, take its course. What have they, the clergymen, wrought? They have given us darkness where there was light – they have taught us that the highest form of love is the abandonment of our kith and kin, they have taught us that only great minds can know God, and they have taught us that there never was a Christian people, it was all a lie. But it was those people who said, without qualification or equivocation, that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. If those people were not Christian, if they were the source of all evil, to whom do we turn to in this world? To the modern clergymen who have blended liberalism and paganism? To the liberals who bid us worship nature and nature’s god, the noble black savage? Or do we turn to the neo-pagans who bid us worship our white genes? [\(3\)](#)

The conservatives in church and state, who are not conservative, have joined with the liberals in that which is essential – our apprehension of the living God. They have both placed God out there and have forbidden access to Him except through them. That is paganism:

*From these things, I began to instruct him in the knowledge of the true God; I told him that the great Maker of all things lived up there, pointing up towards heaven; that He governed the world by the same power and providence by which He made it; that He was omnipotent, and could do everything for us, give everything to us, take everything from us; and thus, by degrees, I opened his eyes. He listened with great attention, and received with pleasure the notion of Jesus Christ being sent to redeem us; and of the manner of making our prayers to God, and His being able to hear us, even in heaven. He told me one day, that if our God could hear us, up beyond the sun, he must needs be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear till they went up to the great mountains where he dwelt to speak to them. I asked him if ever he went thither to speak to him. He said, “No; they never went that were young men; none went thither but the old men,” whom he called their Oowokabee; that is, as I made him explain to me, their religious, or clergy; and that they went to say O (so he called saying prayers), and then came back and told them what Benamuckee said. – [Robinson Crusoe](#)*

The ‘conservatives’ tell us that Benamuckee is Christ, but we must wait till they do more research and study before we can know anything about Him. And the liberals tell us that Benamuckee is the noble black savage, the Messiah, whom the prophet Jesus Christ prepared the way for. Thus the mad-dog liberal branch of the new paganism trumps the classical liberal branch of neo-paganism because the mad-dog liberals have a flesh and blood savior that they can call their own. But that god is a false God; his dethronement will come about when the European people fight their way through the wizardry of the experts and return to the God of their people. Until that time, they will be at the mercy of the liberals’ god, a god who has no mercy.

The editor of *National Review* magazine recently published a rousing defense of Google’s internet monopoly. Isn’t that a betrayal of the magazine’s original intent? No, it is not. *National Review* was always a modernist, liberal magazine just as 20th century conservatism was always a modernist, liberal movement, Gnostic in origin in that it championed a process over the reason for the process. Mary fell down at her Savior’s feet and was upbraided by Martha for a lack of respect for the process of hospitality consisting of kitchen work. For what end was kitchen work intended? It was for Christ, who bid us come to Him in the garden. If the system is all, we shall end up with Benamuckee as our god, because Benamuckee only requires external assent and sacrifice. But if we step away from the systems and seek Him in the garden, we will understand with our hearts and we will serve the living God of mercy and love. That is not a little distinction – the distinction between the gods of sacrifice and the God of mercy. It was our people who made that distinction crystal clear, and it is the modern church men and their secular partners in crime who want to blur that distinction. To what end? To go with the demon-possessed swine who went over the cliff. +

---

(1) I have learned since I wrote my first article on the subject of Brenton Terrant that he did indeed target women and children along with Moslem men. We must, as Christians, condemn such actions. But that should not make us become hypocritical Quakers. And let us not be too sanctimonious. In my mid-twenties I went to visit a Roman Catholic conservative writer whom I admired. He was of Eastern European extraction and he had suffered much under the communists. During the course of a long conversation, he asserted quite casually that you had to target the communists’ women and children because they were targeting your women and children. I went away from that conversation in a state of shock. This was not the Walter Scott ethos that I expected to hear from my idol. When I had time to think over what my idol had said, I asked myself how I would have felt had I been under the communist yoke and/or I had members of my family killed by the communists. It becomes a messy business, doesn’t it? Still, in the end, my idol was no longer my guiding light. I don’t believe in going outside that charity of honor, which the best of our blood adhered to.

The Moslem mayor of London has told us that the soaring murder rate in that once peaceful city is the price we must pay for diversity. In the face of that hideous ideology of violence, and now that the major cities of the United States have become like unto Africa, we should look at how a Christian people once fought heathenism without becoming like unto the heathens.

*To the credit of the British soldier be it said, that infuriated as they were by the thirst for vengeance, the thought of the murdered women, and the heat of battle, not a single case occurred, so far as is known, of a woman being ill-treated, insulted, or fired upon—although the women had been present in the massacres, and had constantly accompanied and cheered on the sorties of the mutineers. To the Sepoys met with in Delhi no mercy was shown; every man taken was at once bayoneted, and the same fate befell all townsmen found fighting against us. The rest of the men, as well as the women and children, were, after the fighting was over, permitted to leave the city unmolested, although large numbers of them had taken share in the sack of the white inhabitants’ houses, and the murder of every Christian, British or native, in the town. It would, however, have been impossible to separate the innocent from the guilty: consequently all were allowed to go free.—*In Times of Peril* by G. A. Henty*

Let us reject genocidal policies of the liberals and the neo-paganism of Brenton Terrant for the faith and courage of the European people when they were Christian in spirit and blood.

(2) The countries of Eastern Europe and Iceland still have a chance, if they reject diversity and democracy, to avoid the bloody consequences of diversity and democracy. But they must return to their non-democratic Christian roots. That is a warning from a man who lives in the hellish pit of diversity to the men and women who are at the top of the pit: “Don’t enter the pit.” As for the rest of us? We must remain faithful while suffering through our Babylonian captivity.

(3) I realize that when a Christian European rejects the fusion of liberalism and Christianity in the organized churches and also rejects neo-paganism, he has no place to lay his head. I suppose that is why there are so few Christian Europeans. But the Son of Man also had no place to lay his head.

# The Outcast Europeans

April 27, 2019

Categories: Faithful hearts

Tags: St. John, St. Paul



Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. [John 9: 35-39](#)

When the kingdom of Judah was destroyed a small remnant of Jews were sent as captives to the land of Babylon. And remarkably they remained faithful to their God while suffering through their Babylonian captivity. In the book of Psalms we read of their faithfulness:

*By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion. We hanged our harps upon the willows in the midst thereof. For there they that carried us away captive required of us a song; and they that wasted us required of us mirth, saying, Sing us one of the songs of Zion. How shall we sing the Lord's song in a strange land? If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget her cunning. If I do not remember thee, let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth; if I prefer not Jerusalem above my chief joy.* – [Psalm 137: 1-6](#)

The European people are suffering through their own Babylonian captivity, but they have not, like the ancient Jews, remained faithful during their captivity. Why haven't they? One reason is that the European people refuse to admit they are in captivity. How can a democratically elected government be compared to Nebuchadnezzar? You're right – it can't: Nebuchadnezzar was much kinder to the Jews than the liberals are to Christians. The liberals permit state-sanctioned Christianity (which is not Christianity), but they crush any and every manifestation of a genuine, heartfelt faith in the Christ of old Europe. Yet the European people refuse to accept that democratically elected governments can be more destructive and more opposed to everything Christian and virtuous than the 'tyrannical' pagan kings of the Old Testament. Abortion is called 'choice,' white genocide is called 'diversity,' and the worship of the noble savage is called 'respect for civil rights.' Is that not tyranny? Is that not a captivity infinitely worse than the Babylonian captivity of the Jews?

The second reason that the exiled Jews remained faithful is that the Lord sent them prophets such as Jeremiah, Daniel, and Ezekiel so that they could hear the word of the Lord. Many, many times the Jewish people rejected the words of the Lord given to them through the prophets, but the Jews of the Babylonian captivity did not reject the words of the Lord.

Would the words of the Lord have had any effect on the remnant Jews if His words had not been presented to them by men with hearts inflamed with a love of the Lord? Daniel, Ezekiel, and Jeremiah were not theologians or philosophers. If they had been, they would not have been able to stir the hearts of their people. Like St. Paul, the prophets Jeremiah, Daniel, and Ezekiel were poets of God. They circumcised their hearts, and that circumcision allowed them to hear the word of the Lord God. We are not lacking philosophers and theologians in modern Christian Jewry, men who will tell us what their intellects have discovered about the nature of God. What we are lacking is men and women with hearts of flesh who know God feelingly, because their hearts are connected to Christ's heart by way of a sympathetic connection to their people. The channels of grace are our familial and racial hearth fires; if we allow the liberals to reroute those channels of grace and direct them toward the people of other races and other faiths, we will become... We have already become, a non-people without a familial or racial home.

That which is essential to our faith, the love of Christ in and through our people, must be accepted as an unchallenged prejudice that is deeply embedded in our hearts. And we must act according to that prejudice without making it into a syllogism. A man cannot act if everything in his life must be figured out without reference to his prejudices. The church men have been neutered because their faith in Christ is a propositional faith, dependent on theology and philosophy. They place Christ outside the realm of the human heart, where all true knowledge of God dwells, and make our faith dependent on the human intellect, which translates to their intellects. And what have they come up with? Nothing that a man can believe in that will sustain him in the dark nights of the soul. The prophets and St. Paul loved much — they sought the knowledge of God through a heart to heart communion with the living God; consequently, they had something to give us — a certainty that Christ is the God who enters human hearts, that He is our Jesus who will abide with us in life and death. That prejudice took root in the hearts of the antique Europeans, and all those men and women who cling to that prejudice constitute the church of Jesus Christ. The church buildings, inhabited by men and women who have no contact with the God of the prophets and St. Paul, are the great liberal cleansing houses. They exist to purify the white Christians and make them receptive to the new Messiah, the Benamuckee of the liberals, who does not enter human hearts.

White people now take it as a given that they must hate every manifestation of white pietas. The Dalai Lama is able to see and say that Europe should belong to the Europeans and that refugees should return to their native countries, but no white man will dare to say that the European nations must be white. In fact the white Europeans now have an ingrained prejudice against white Europeans. Conservatives and liberals tell us that white nations must be diverse, which means they must be dominated, numerically and culturally, by the colored tribesmen. [\(1\)](#) If a white person even suggests what the Dalai Lama said openly, he is labeled a white supremacist (the label 'racist' has lost some of its potency due to excessive use) who must be punished either by economic disenfranchisement, imprisonment, or death.

The church of faithful hearts who love much, the church of the prophets and St. Paul, will not fail us, but the church of the scholarly minds, the really smart men, has failed us and will continue to fail us. As we sink further and further into the slough of despair, the church men still tell us not to worry, because soon they will come up with the answer to the God problem, and then all things will be set right. That will be the last word we hear as we slide into the mire of the slough of despair. But St. Paul bid us search the Scriptures with our hearts. There, in that communion of hearts of flesh with the Word made flesh, we can know our Lord.

I frequently reference the great hearts of Europe, men such as Burke, Rembrandt, Scott, Shakespeare, and Dostoyevsky, because they are part of that long line of Christian warriors who saw life feelingly, and as a consequence they bore witness to the living God. But there is an unnamed great heart who set the stage for the great hearts of Europe. He appears in *John 9*. I wrote about him once before in an article entitled, "The Gift of Sight." His story is our story. And his response to the liberals of his times should be our response to the liberals, in church and state, of our times. The man was born blind, and Christ gives him sight. First, his neighbors question him:

The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened? He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

Then the Pharisees question him:

*They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.*

When the Pharisees are unable to make the man born blind admit that he was not born blind, they decide to go to work on his parents:

*But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.*

His parents wanted no part of their son nor were they interested in the man who cured him. Why? The apostle tells us that they were afraid that the Pharisees would put them out of the synagogue. Think about that. They felt no desire to know the man who made the blind to see, their own son, but they were very concerned lest they be forced to leave the synagogue. Does not that sound very familiar? The grazers of modern Churchianity do not care to know the Christ of old Europe, the Christ who made the lame to walk and the blind to see, the God of Rembrandt, Handel, and St. Paul, because to adhere to the God of those people would stink of “white supremacy” — it would result in one’s expulsion from the modern Christian synagogues of diversity and multiculturalism. But we should leave those synagogues in order to experience what the man born blind experienced when he refused to betray the man who gave him his sight:

*Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses’ disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.*

From whence comes the courage to defy the Pharisees who have the power to make us leave the synagogue? It comes from the love of Christ who has given us sight. We were blinded by sin and the fear of death, and He gave us the sure and certain hope that through His cross we would be redeemed from sin and death. To have been nothing, as John Donne tells us, and then to be co-heirs with Christ is something beyond the ken of the human mind. Only the heart that loves can believe in that mystery.

The man born blind is willing to be cast out for Christ’s sake, but what he gains by his rejection of the Pharisees is something so much greater than what he loses by not being a member in good standing of their church:

*Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.<sup>(2)</sup>*

Does not every word in *John 9* resonate with us today? The liberals in church and state are in the process of casting out all those men and women who profess an allegiance to the Christ of the European people when they were a people. If we cling to that God and those people, we will be cast out of the synagogues of the liberals. But what will we lose if we are cast out of the liberals’ synagogues? We might lose – no, we will lose – many of the material benefits that come with an adherence to the dictates of the rulers of the synagogues of modernity. But what will we lose if we abandon the faith of our people? We will lose that intimacy with Christ that the man born blind obtained through his fidelity to Christ and his rejection of the Pharisees. But of course there is a price we must pay for that intimacy with Christ.

Jeremias de Decker, the great Dutch poet, who was an intimate friend of Rembrandt, told us the price we must pay in two short lines from his poem, “The Passion of Jesus Christ (Good Friday)”: “Men cannot receive uncrucified, The fruit of the cross.” What is a constant source of amazement and inspiration to me is the way our people, the antique Europeans, took Christ into their hearts without flinching from the crucifixion: “Even though it is a cross that leadeth me.” Such courage, such fortitude, such faith only comes from an intimacy with Christ that the intellectual Christians can never know, and that the liberals spit on. Cannot we, the remnant band, the captives of Babylonian liberalism, take heart from the remnant band of Jewish exiles, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans, and stand up to the rulers of the synagogues? We can and we shall, because we have seen Him and because we know that it is He and He alone who speaks to our hearts. The darkness around us is deepening, but there is light. The man born blind saw that light: “And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.” +

(1) Our enemies have such contempt for us that they openly tell us how they will destroy us. I reference once again the Moslem mayor of London, who said that for the sake of diversity we must accept the fact that London is the murder capital of the world. He invokes that word, diversity, as he would invoke the power of a magic talisman. And it works. Whites will sacrifice everything, their wives, their children, and their heritage, on the altars of diversity. If the Europeans no longer believe in the Word made flesh, they will be destroyed by the word of Satan, “diversity.”

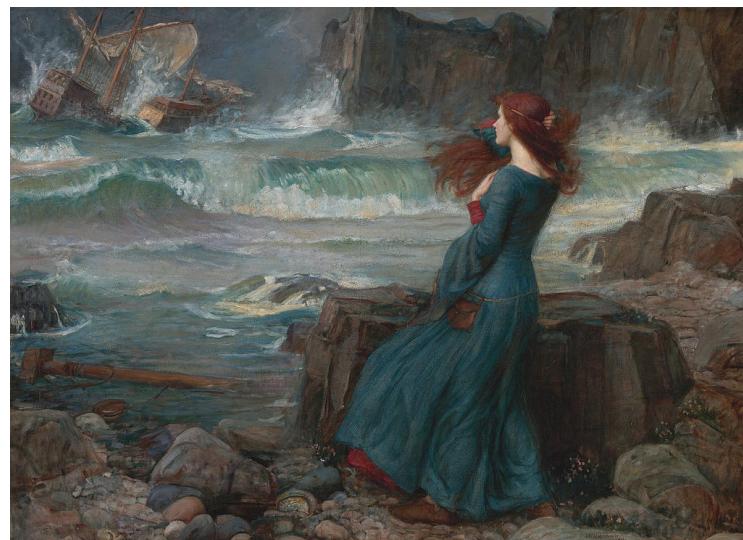
(2) The significance of the fact that Christ sought out the man born blind when He heard that the man had been cast out of the synagogue cannot be overemphasized. We all, because we are spiritually weak, fear to be cast out of the synagogues of the principalities and powers of this world. But if we love much, if we love Him, He will seek us out. The grace of God is a living reality: the man born blind is our exemplar.

# The Parable of Europe

May 4, 2019

Categories: Censorship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke



This world is a parable—the habitation of symbols—the phantoms of spiritual things immortal shown in material shape. May the blessed second-sight be mine—to recognise under these beautiful forms of earth the Angels who wear them; for I am sure we may walk with them if we will, and hear them speak! — [J.S. LeFanu](#)

We shall always believe a lie if we seek to understand existence through the eyes of the psychologists. Their eyes see only the material manifestation of a much deeper spiritual malady, which shall always remain outside the ken of the superficial minds of the psychologists. Thus when Malcolm Muggeridge coined the term, “the great liberal death wish,” to describe the liberals of the West, he was deceiving himself and his conservative readers and only scratching the surface of the thing called liberalism. Muggeridge accused the liberals of a yearning for death, because they seemed to have no desire to defend themselves against the communist threat from without and the moral threat from within — the Babylonian sexual revolution. But if we look at the liberals at that time in 1979 and the liberals of today, we do not see any indication of a desire to die. What we do see is a desire to live free of the restraints of the Christian faith bequeathed to them by their European ancestors. They were and are like unto the devils depicted in St. Matthew:

*And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. — [Matthew 8: 28-32](#)*

The liberals are in the process of drowning themselves in the sea of diversity, but that is not their desire; their desire is that thee and me shall be drowned in the sea of diversity, and that they will float above the rising waters on a celestial cloud of glory destined for the elect who have obtained, through the power of their exalted intellects, a mind purged from the evils of whiteness and freed from the burden of Christ, who bids us take up our cross and follow Him. Everything the liberals do is based on their desire to be free of the cross of Christ. What seems like a death wish from a Christian perspective is their life wish. Thus the liberals will continue to invite Moslems into the white nations, they will continue to exalt the noble black savages no matter how murderous they become, and they will continue to systematically destroy every last vestige of the Europeans’ culture when it was Christian. Any white who resists the disestablishment of Christian Europe will be destroyed.

Satan is not omnipotent, but he is much more intelligent than we are. However, he does have to work through human beings; he has to get them to buy into his agenda. How well has he done? It would seem he is doing quite well. Probably not as well as he would like, because he is never satisfied, but he certainly has accomplished something that our European ancestors never thought would have been possible: he has built Satandom on the ruins of Christendom. But it is one thing to take a fortress and another thing to hold it. We shall see how long Satan manages to hold onto his kingdom of hell on earth. It seems, now that he has conquered Europe, that he can reign in perpetuity, but there are always a few Hamlets that “know not seems.” It is those individuals that give the devil sleepless nights.

The liberals, inspired by the devil, are in the process of rooting out everything from a time when the Europeans were still ethically Christian and everything from an even more distant time when the European people were believing Christians. There is nothing too insignificant, too ‘small potatoes,’ to be overlooked. The liberals will eliminate everything from the Europeans’ Christian past. And they will eliminate our Christian European heritage in the name of eliminating racism. Think about that. If whiteness is evil, then everything white must be eliminated. But if we eliminate all whiteness, then we eliminate the only culture in which the Word took flesh and dwelt among us. That is precisely what Satan wants.

Of course it is very disturbing – no, it is much more than disturbing, it brings out an anger that is beyond anger – when the liberals hack away at everything decent and virtuous in our past in order to solidify their unholy liberal reign. The recent posthumous assault on Kate Smith was just one more liberal assault on our white heritage. The Kate Smith statue was removed from Philadelphia and her recording of “God Bless America” was banned because that kindly Virginia belle had once sung the songs, “And That’s Why Darkies Were Born,” and “Pickaninny Heaven.” Both songs, by the way, extol black virtues, as the Southern whites so often did in the spirit of *noblesse oblige*, but that makes no difference to the liberals. They simply look for whites who place blacks within the framework of an older white civilization and then they condemn the whites as racist, which of course means they are damned.

The banishment of Kate Smith and her recordings is reminiscent of the liberals’ ban of Disney’s *Song of the South*. The movie extolls what Donald Davidson called the “good darkies,” but it had to be banned because blacks were depicted in a setting in which they were subservient to whites. They were also depicted as Christians, not as drug pushers, pimps, and jive artists, but that didn’t matter to the liberals, the movie was banned as racist. I had to get my copy of it from a foreign country. But of course the damnation of Kate Smith’s recordings and Disney’s *Song of the South* are just two examples of the pillorying of whites by the liberal inquisition.<sup>(1)</sup> Our monuments, our art, our entire past must be eliminated in the name of “eliminating racism.” After Roxanne rejects Cyrano, he goes on a rant against everybody and everything. His friend, who knows him, says, “Say this to all the world, then whisper to me, ‘she loves me not.’” The liberals scream racism to all the world when they are pillorying white people and their culture, but what they really are saying is, “I hate Christ and His people.” Burke knew them inside and out:

*The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.*  
— [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

Christ, when He walked this earth, said that He had to go about His Father’s business. The liberals, so long as they walk this earth, must go about doing Satan’s business. That business consists of tearing in pieces His image in man. And sadly, as the liberals intensify their attack, the churchmen intensify their repudiation of all things Christian and European. Pope Francis speaks for that hideous breed of vipers when he praises the savage gods of the rain forests and sends money to the invaders of the European nations. Tell all the world you are being kind

and compassionate, then listen to the truth: "You have betrayed your God and your people in order to court favor with the devil." As the liberals become more uncompromising, the churchmen become more compromised. At first we, the European Christians, were advised to be compassionate and open to other races and other cultures. In the name of Christianity we were supposed to compromise. Now we are no longer told to compromise, we are told to surrender to the liberals in the name of a new religion based on the worship of the noble savages of color and the hatred of the white race.

It is now, after the European people have been systematically de-Christianized, that the liberals can take off their masks. We can look directly in their faces and see the sneering face of Satan, but who is to say what is satanic? The European grazer has no moral basis to judge anything. After over a century of indoctrination, the liberals have entered the European grazer's inmost soul and convinced him that there is no God except the gods of the liberals. While the 20th century conservatives spent their time defending democracy, the mad-dog liberals spent their time tearing to pieces God's image in man. Of what good is democracy when your people have lost their vision of the Lord God, Jesus Christ? It is of no use to the Christian, but it is a great weapon of the devil.

When the liberals openly tell us that violence against white people is "good violence" and call for the assassination of white politicians such as Trump and Orbán, white Christians cannot become Quakers in the hopes that the liberals will spare them while killing their white brethren. But the main battle is a spiritual battle. We cannot mount a counterrevolution without having made an internal conversion from liberalism to Christ. When that happens, we will know when we must be violent and when we must refrain from violence.

Most of the violence today comes from the liberals and the colored heathens, which is supposed to be the "good violence." The violence of the New Zealand mosque shooter is bad violence, according to the liberals, because it was not violence against white people. But all the violence, the mass shootings, strike at the core of the white culture, the culture of the antique Europeans, because at the core of that culture is Christ. Does He enjoin us to fight without taking His charity of honor into account? The liberal, the colored heathen, and the neo-pagan are one in their superficiality. They see only with the material eye so they think that only material means can be used to "get results." It is not the promised end that Christ wants us to pursue, but it is the end result of the pursuit of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

The civilization of the parables, of which the prophet spoke, "I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world," is the civilization of the antique Europeans. Their belief in our Lord's parables compelled them to look past the worldly wisdom of the scribes and the Pharisees to the heart of God. There is the true wisdom, there is the love that passeth all rational understanding. When we eschew the parables of Christ in which He enjoins us to view Him as "He that soweth the good seed," to whom shall we turn? The liberals have made it clear to whom they have turned. Must we also turn to Satan in order to combat Satan? No, there is a world that our ancestors entered, through faith, that is our world. Nothing has transpired in the 20th century and the 21st century that should separate us from the antique Europeans' world of Christian parables. Christ's crucifixion, death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead is still the sign of our redemption. Neither science, democracy, nor the noble savage can serve as an alternative to that sign. Is it not better to trust in Him, to believe in the parable of Christ crucified, Christ risen, than to believe in Satan's hellish world of diversity and multiculturalism, where there is no light, no mercy, and no God? +

(1) My favorite cartoons are the Mickey Mouse, Donald Duck, and Goofy cartoons that Walt Disney created in the 1930s through the 1950s. But there are certain cartoons which cannot be seen in their entirety today. You can buy special "From the Vault" DVD copies in which a liberal commentator explains why the cartoons are evil (racist), and the DVDs are rigged so that you cannot fast forward past the commentary (I turn off the sound). Two cartoons that are particularly good (and therefore have been condemned) are *Mickey's Friend Friday*, in which he battles, Robinson Crusoe style, black cannibals in order to save Friday. And in *Spare the Rod*, Donald Duck battles a liberal psychiatrist and pygmy head hunters who have escaped from a circus train. But of course the list goes on and on. The Dr. Dolittle books have been censored by Loftings' own family because they were racist. The author of the Tin-Tin books repudiated his *Tin-Tin in Africa* book, and on and on it goes. There is a huge liberal bonfire raging into which the white grazers are told to throw every last remnant of our white past. And when they have completed that task, the liberals will tell the white grazers to jump into the fire themselves. Will they do it? Yes, they will, because once they have repudiated their past, they will have no way of discerning the truth. If the liberals tell them the fire is democratic, multicultural, and diverse, they will enter the fire in the belief that they will emerge from the fire cleansed of whiteness and ready to become part of Liberaldom. Of course the fire will consume them, but the grazers, having repudiated the miracle of Christ crucified, Christ risen, have decided to believe in the miraculous miracle of liberalism, which promises them a place in Liberaldom, which in reality is Satandom, if they will repudiate the one great evil – whiteness.

# The Wheel of Fire

May 10, 2019

Categories: Censorship, Classical liberalism, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke



You do me wrong to take me out o' th' grave.  
Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound  
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears  
Do scald like molten lead

[King Lear](#)

There is a certain practical wisdom in many of the old adages such as, ‘A stitch in time saves nine,’ and, ‘You can lead a horse to water but you can’t make it drink.’ But some old adages are wrong. For instance, let’s take the old adage that I heard ad nauseum in my childhood, ‘Sticks and stones can break your bones, but names can never hurt you.’ Oh really? The slanderous word can and does hurt more than sticks and stones. Just look at what the word ‘racist’ has accomplished for the liberals. It has brought about the destruction of a civilization and created the most satanic non-civilization the world has ever seen.

All governing bodies, if they are truly governing bodies, must restrict free speech. If they allow the customs, manners, and morals upon which their authority to rule is based to become the constant subject for ridicule and contempt they will soon cease to be a governing body. Louis XVI did not lose his crown and his life because he was too oppressive and didn’t allow free speech, he lost his crown and his life because he did not suppress free speech. He let the pamphleteers in the press and the academy run wild with their criticisms of the customs, manners, and morals that were the foundations of the French monarchy, while refusing to suppress the Jacobin’s advocacy of liberty, fraternity, and equality as alternatives to the French monarchy.

Before the French Revolution the American Jacobins – Jefferson, Franklin, and Madison – engineered their own revolution. Prior to our “glorious” union of atheist states under the mantle of the Constitution, every single state had a denominational, Christian state religion. This is the way it must be. You cannot have a governing body that governs according to some abstract theory separate and apart from the religious faith of the people of the nation. But that is precisely what the American constitutionalists set out to do. They told their people that, “Your religion and the customs, manners, and morals that go with that religion are a private thing. What you must adhere to as your rule of law is a vague belief in the will of the people as determined by democratic procedures implemented by enlightened minds.”

So America — and all of Europe eventually followed America — became a nation governed by the principle of benign, religious indifference. “We won’t be Christian, but we will still be moral and virtuous.” But if the moral foundation of your nation is no longer the Christian faith of Alfred the Great, what is the moral foundation of your nation? Can “What is truth?” be a ruling principle? If we reject Christ, what “rough beast” will become our religious truth? The people, as defined by the Illuminati, are the ruling authority of the European nations. And who are ‘the people’? The noble black savage is the God of the descending race of the European un-men who once worshipped Jesus Christ.

The reason why the rulers of America did not suppress the 1960’s Phil Donohue Show-type of free speech – “Why not abortion? Why not gay-lesbian rights?” etc. – was because there was no moral consensus against such things. Every society has certain boundaries that cannot be transgressed; you are not permitted to engage in ‘free speech’ on those boundary topics. For instance, the sanctity of the noble black savage cannot be challenged in our society because the noble black savage is the sum total of the European people’s faith. The belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead and the civilization that was based on that belief can be challenged and spit upon. That tells us all we need to know about our anti-civilization and its rulers.

The liberals are not morally correct in any of their policies because liberalism is satanic, but the liberals *are* strategically correct. They should, now that they have absolute power, crack down on all free speech in order to retain their power. Why should they permit the slightest criticism of their regime? Who do they have to answer to? The churches? Certainly not, the churches are in the liberals’ back pocket. The white peasantry? Again the answer is no. There is no white peasantry. The Gnostic non-faith of the modern European people started in the churches, spread to the academy, and then was handed down to the masses. That new faith has killed the white peasantry. There are no integral white men left who will venture forth against the liberal Leviathan, armed only with faith in Christ and David’s slingshot. Instead, white men with slide rules and calculators try to prove that it is illogical for liberals to destroy the white race.

The new liberal purges on the social media platforms of everyone to the right of Jane Fonda are happening because of the upcoming presidential election. The liberals don’t want a repeat of the last presidential election. Why don’t they just ban elections? They will ban elections in the near future if they don’t get the results they want. In the past they allowed elections to take place because the elections helped to perpetuate the myth that the people, not a liberal oligarchy, rule the nation. We all know the myth of the historical dialectic of the thesis and the antithesis, which is brought to a close when the people, whether they are the communists or the democratic Europeans, become the final synthesis. But the liberals will not continue with the subterfuge if they do not get the electoral results they want. If too many whites vote white, they will lose their voting rights. And they will lose their voting rights because whites are not considered to be ‘the people,’ and only ‘the people’ have rights.

It’s important to note that the liberals do not have to supply a reason for their suppression of whites. They might call the offending white a white supremacist, a hater, or an advocate of violence. All those ‘reasons’ are just subterfuges. The liberals are on a mission to build the kingdom of hell on earth, so they must crush all opposition to their regime. That is why it is futile for whites to seek fair play from the liberals. They are not committed to fair play or to any other outmoded ethical standard from the white era of the Europeans’ history. This is the new era, in which malice and hatred bear down truth and mercy. There is nothing benign in religious indifference, because people must have a religion. If they won’t have Christ, then they will be forced to worship the libearls’ savage gods of color.

The classical liberals, who are now called conservatives, are forever trying to seek redemption from the devil because they are proceeding according to the spiritual agenda of Dostoyevsky’s Grand Inquisitor, who bids us look to a man-made system rather than to the living God. “Christ’s plan for man, to the extent that we can understand it, is inefficient and impractical.” That is the substance of the Grand Inquisitor’s complaint against God. “You thought too much of men, they can’t handle their freedom. We gave them something better, we gave them a system.” The democratic system has become, for the white man, like unto the theological refuge that the Grand Inquisitors of Christian Jewry gave their parishioners. It is the

armor that David rejected. But the systems, in church and state, are the devil's snares. We have become thoroughly enmeshed in systems and lack the strength, which only comes from a faith in someone greater than the systems, to extradite ourselves from the devil's snares.

The undergirding of the liberals' new faith is the belief, articulated by men such as Rousseau, Diderot, Einstein, and Shaw, that the Christian faith belongs to that intermediary stage of human evolution, one step above the totem and taboo stage of mankind's history, but well below the level of scientific man, whose religion is cosmic and intellectual in contrast to Christianity, which is provincial and stupid. But it is a curious thing – why does the 'higher' religion return us to the totem and taboo religion in which we bow down before the sacred negro?

At some point the European, if he is ever going to reclaim his spiritual manhood, must deal with the question of science. Can we believe, against the evidence of science, that Christ rose from the dead? If we can't believe in that miracle then we must submit to the dictates of the men of science who bid us worship the man-gods, because there is no God-Man.

Burke in his opposition to the French Revolution articulated the alternative to the cosmic religion of humanity. He saw the old religion and its attendant code of ethics as the only religion for the European people. The new religion of humanity was a false religion without honor and without charity.

*We know, and it is our pride to know, that man is by his constitution a religious animal; that atheism is against, not only our reason, but our instincts; and that it cannot prevail long. But if, in the moment of riot, and in a drunken delirium from the hot spirit drawn out of the alembic of hell, which in France is now so furiously boiling, we should uncover our nakedness, by throwing off that Christian religion which has hitherto been our boast and comfort, and one great source of civilization amongst us, and amongst many other nations, we are apprehensive (being well aware that the mind will not endure a void) that some uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition might take place of it. – [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)*

And what is that uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition that has taken the place of the European people's faith in Christ? You know what it is, because the liberals have taught us our catechism. "You shall love the sacred negro with all your heart, mind, and soul, and you shall hate the white man with all your heart, mind, and soul." What is a white supremacist? We are never told exactly what that entity is, but those two words have the power to destroy the white race. Why do those words and the other word, racist, have the power to destroy us? They have that power because the Europeans have given liberals the power to destroy them with the devil words. If a man does not believe in the Word made flesh, he will be the slave of the devil words of the liberals. White men now spend their entire lives on this earth trying to prove that they are not racists, that they are not white supremacists, but they can never get out from under the racist-white supremacist label because when the liberals invoke those words, they mean whatever the liberals want them to mean, and they apply to any white man who impedes the liberals onward and upward march to utopia.

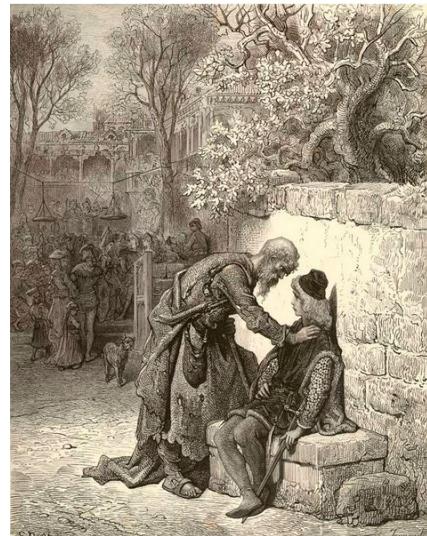
No appeal to the liberals' sense of justice or their mercy will avail the white man who has fallen into their clutches. There is no justice in the liberals' courts and no mercy in the liberals' hearts of stone. They will follow the logic of liberalism to its ultimate conclusion. All non-illuminated whites – thee and me – must die for the sin of racism/white supremacism. Only when the white man stands up to the men with the devil words and refuses to be ashamed of white pietas will there be any relief for the whites living in the midst of liberal Babylon. Until that time the liberals will rule Liberaldom through the power of the devil words. Would the Europeans be afraid of those words if they had hearts of flesh? If they loved their God and their people, they would be fearless in defense of their God and their people. Perfect love casteth out fear. The love that once was there must once again become the animating spirit of the European people. But what are the chances that the European people can be stirred from within? Are they capable of seeing His blood upon the rose? It doesn't appear so. There was still, in the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, a slight ethical remnant of the Christian faith left in the European people. But now even that ethical remnant has been destroyed. The love that once was there, for kith, kin, and God has been replaced by a hatred for kith, kin, and God. Through the power of his words – racism and white supremacy – Satan has severed the white European from Christ and His people. In the face of our death and the death of our loved ones we can only hold onto His promise that He has conquered death. So it is with the death of our civilization. We can only hold onto His promise that He will be with us always even in the face of death. Nothing eternal perishes! And the bond forged by the European people with Christ the Lord is an eternal bond that will sustain us in life and death so long as we refuse to sever that bond by adhering to the words of the devil instead of His holy word. +

# That Other Realm

May 18, 2019

Categories: Classical liberalism, Democracy, Faithful hearts, Jacobinism, Quality of mercy

Tags: C. S. Lewis, Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke, Nathaniel Hawthorne



A kind providence has placed in our breasts a hatred of the unjust and cruel, in order that we may preserve ourselves from cruelty and injustice. They who bear cruelty, are accomplices in it. The pretended gentleness which excludes that charitable rancor, produces an indifference which is half an approbation. They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate...

That the Christian Religion cannot exist in this country with such a fraternity, will not, I think, be disputed with me. On that religion, according to our mode, all our laws and institutions stand as upon their base. That scheme is supposed in every transaction of life; and if that were done away, everything else, as in France, must be changed along with it. Thus religion perishing, and with it this constitution, it is a matter of endless meditation what order of things would follow it. But what disorder would fill the space between the present and that which is to come, in the gross, is no matter of doubtful conjecture.

-Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

The age of prophecy ended with John the Baptist, who stood in the long line of prophets that foretold the coming of the Lord. Once our Lord entered history, the age of prophecy was over. But there was a second tier of prophets, men of Christian Europe who told us what would happen if we abandoned the Christ of whom the prophets spoke. Foremost among those prophets was Edmund Burke. Burke, right from the beginning of the French Revolution, saw that the French Revolution was not a mere regime change; it was not an attempt by one faction of Monarchs to place a different monarch on the throne. The revolution represented an attempt to replace the Christian faith as the rule of law in order to facilitate the rule of Satan. Because of Robespierre's maniacal consistency in that he did not attempt to dethrone Christ incrementally but all at once, Burke's criticism of Robespierre was eventually accepted by the bulk of the European people, minus the liberals in his own party. But his criticisms of the anti-Christian nature of the underlying satanic ethos of the French Revolution – liberty, equality, and fraternity – did not have any effect on the European people. Once Robespierre disappeared from the scene, the Europeans embraced the American experiment in Jacobinism, which was and is an incremental implementation of the rule of Satan over the rule of Christ. Every single member of the new French Directory that deposed Robespierre

had signed the death warrant of Louis XVI, and every single European nation that went democratic signed on to the death of Christian Europe. Prior to the American and French revolutions, the moral basis of the European governments was Christian; after those two revolutions the moral basis of the European governments was satanic.

Such an assertion, that the age of democracy ushered in the reign of Satan, seems outrageous because Satan did not immediately rear his head in the democratic nations of the West. But that is because of what Burke called "the unbought grace of life." The ruling ethos of the democratic governments was based on the assumption that "Christ be not risen," but the Europeans still largely adhered, until the 1960s, to the ethical code that came from a belief that "Christ is risen." We now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, can see Satanism undiluted now that the unbought grace of life has been spent. There is no Christian ethos at work in the European nations because the belief that Christ be not risen has taken hold throughout the European nations. Dostoyevsky, who was a prophet as Burke was, has been answered. He posed the question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" The reply of the "intelligent" Europeans is, "No."

The European people have yet to come to terms, as Burke and Dostoyevsky did, with liberalism. Burke stated flatly that liberalism was from the devil: "The first liberal was the devil." And Dostoyevsky, about 80 years later, echoed Burke in his novel [The Devils](#), in which he warned the West about the satanic nature of the Bolsheviks. Most classical liberals, who are falsely labeled 'conservatives,' accept Burke's criticism of the Robespierre Jacobins, but they fail to understand his warning that the democratic 'ideals' of the Jacobins, whether they were Robespierre Jacobins or incremental Jacobins, represented a flight from Christ in order to build a new European society based on the Satanic principles of the thing called liberalism.

All that was good in the democratic nations of Europe came from that remnant of grace left over from the Christian religion, which was confined to the private realm in the age of democracy. Tragically the European people mistakenly believed that democracy and science were responsible for what was good in their nations. Countries such as Denmark and Sweden seemed like parades in the 1950s and early 1960s. They had avoided the capitalist excesses of the United States and the socialist excesses of the Soviet Union. But what happened to those nations when they spent the unbought grace of life? They lost their sense of pietas; they no longer loved their own in and through Christ, so they succumbed to the moral rot from within that accompanies sexual Babylon and the barbarian assault from without that is visited upon a people who have no faith. The incremental Jacobinism of the United States and the post-Robespierre Jacobinism of France became the ruling principle of the non-communist nations of Europe, and as a result they have all become satanic nations that worship the noble savage. The formerly communist nations of Europe, which now appear like parades compared to the older democracies, will become like unto the Western democracies if they do not repudiate incremental Jacobin democracy. Listen to our prophets, men such as Burke and Dostoyevsky, men who had the prophetic fire of Isaiah and Jeremiah. They told us that there can never be a Christian democracy. The ethos of "Give us Barabbas!" can never be allowed to rule over our faith in the Man of Sorrows.

When Christ joined the two apostles on the road to Emmaus and heard of their sadness at His death, He gently upbraided them for their lack of faith: "Then he said unto them, 'O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken. Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?' And beginning at Moses and at the prophets he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself." Christ enjoins the apostles to do what St. Paul, after his conversion, enjoins us to do: search the scriptures with our hearts. The Catholic scholastics and then the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, maintained a scholastic equivalent of "Dueling Banjos": they sought to avoid the pitfalls of the passionate heart by appealing to reason. But reason, devoid of the passion of the heart, always becomes the servant of Satan. We can certainly fall from grace through misplaced passion, but we most certainly will fall from grace, as Adam and Eve fell from grace, if we make reason, divorced from the heart that loves, our sovereign Lord.

*Strong passion under the direction of a feeble reason feeds a low fever, which serves only to destroy the body that entertains it. But vehement passion does not always indicate an infirm judgment. It often accompanies, and actuates, and is even auxiliary to a powerful understanding; and when they both conspire and act harmoniously, their force is great to destroy disorder within, and to repel injury from abroad.* [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

The unbought grace of life must be defended by hearts on fire with that charity of honor that motivated the prophets, St. Paul, and the European people when they were a people and not a democratic herd of cattle. The wars within Christendom were horrible, tragic affairs. Men, even Christian men, are not angels, but the evil effects of wars between Christians were mitigated by the European people's faith in Christ. The wars of liberalism have been so much worse than the wars between Christians ever were for the reason that there is no mercy in the liberals. A Christian will extend mercy to his enemy because he feels that he too is a sinner, but the liberal will not extend mercy to his enemy because the liberal does not believe in the beginning of the Christ story. He does not believe that liberals are the sons and daughters of Adam and Eve whose humanity is tainted with original sin.

The Southern people of the United States were the defenders of Christian civilization in the northern hemisphere during the American Civil War, yet they were forced to accept a Carthaginian peace, a peace without mercy, at the close of the war. Why? Because the Jacobin leadership of the North did not see themselves as men in need of Christ's mercy. They, like Shylock, demanded their pound of flesh, for they believed themselves to be without sin: "What judgement shall I dread doing no wrong?" The liberals believe that all sin rests with their enemies. That is why the country least responsible for World War I, Germany, was forced to pay war guilt money to the nations that entered the war on the side of the assassins. The liberals of America, France, Britain, and Russia had no mercy on their enemy. Why should they have mercy? They were without sin and their enemy was the embodiment of evil. In World War II the liberal dynamic was at work again. This time Germany was equally at fault, but why did the Western powers side with the Communists? They sided with the Communists because communism and democracy both stem from the same Jacobin roots. Communism is Robespierre Jacobinism and modern democracy is incremental Jacobinism. Lincoln, Lloyd George, Clemenceau, FDR, and Stalin were one in their Jacobinism and one in their rejection of Christian Europe.

Melville asks the question in his poem [Clarel, a Pilgrimage to the Holy Land](#), "Wherefore ripen us unto pain?" The spiritual life is painful. If we love deeply the death of our loved ones and the contemplation of our own death is unbearable unless we believe that Christ is who He said He was. But if there is no faith in Christ, how does a person face that terror of terrors? The liberals' solution is to avoid the depths. They have created a whole civilization – I call it an anti-civilization – based on an avoidance of the spiritual realm of existence. They must emphasize, in church, academy, and government, the material realm and only the material realm of existence lest they come into contact with the spiritual depths of life. Then they would

have to face the horror of horrors without any spiritual armor. Science, and its attendant religion, Negro worship, is not a faith that can sustain us in the face of death. Science offers us an anesthetized passage from life to nothingness, and the liberals' materially based religion helps us to be eased with our nothingness in this world by blotting out the image of God in man.

The liberals' hatred beyond hatred for Trump can only be understood through the eyes of a Christian European. Then we can see that Trump has transgressed against the basic tenet of liberalism: that incremental Jacobinism must always move forward. What was acceptable ten or twenty years ago within the confines of liberalism is no longer acceptable once the liberals have broken down a new moral barrier. Homosexual marriage is one example. Once you give your assent to that, there is no turning back. Border restrictions and legalized abortion are two more examples. Trump has shown a sincere desire to turn back some of the incremental gains of the liberals; therefore, they must destroy him. Incremental Jacobinism has advanced beyond the Robespierre Jacobinism of the Russian communists; the liberals have incrementally killed the Christian faith of the European people. Without that faith the European people have nothing inside of them that says, "We won't accept your world." They accept the liberals' world because they don't believe there ever was any other world. We desperately need a European Puddlegum.

"No. I suppose that other world must be all a dream."

"Yes. It is all a dream," said the Witch, always thrumming.

"Yes, all a dream," said Jill.

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"No," said Jill and Scrubb, "never was such a world."

"There never was any world but mine," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddlegum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia, and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

Puddlegum's words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked at one another like people newly awaked.

"Why, there it is!" cried the Prince. "Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we've all seen the sun."

-C. S. Lewis, The Silver Chair

The venomous beast that must be killed before the European everyman can begin the journey back to the spiritual realm of existence is the great scholastic dragon. The churchmen had a choice. They could have chosen the way of the passionate heart, the way of St. Paul and those noble Europeans who followed in St. Paul's train by holding Christ in their hearts. But the churchmen went the way of Hawthorne's Mr. Smooth-it-away in "[The Celestial Railroad](#)" and the Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's *Brothers Karamazov*. Was it ever supposed to be that easy? "Can wisdom be put in a silver rod, Or love in a golden bowl?" We do not need great intellects, we need hearts that love Christ in and through the people of Europe, whom the liberals demonize while simultaneously denying that they ever existed. Edgar's words, "Men must endure their going hence even as their coming hither," echo our Lord's words, "He who endures to the end shall be saved." The passionate heart, the European who loves much, shall endure to the end. +

# The Narrow White Gate

May 25, 2019

Categories: Classical liberalism, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Religion of Satan

Tags: Anthony Jacob



I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world; let his nobility remain in 's court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flow'ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire. — [All's Well That Ends Well](#)

Let us begin with the four white public school teachers in New York City who were recently demoted or removed from their duties for “[toxic whiteness](#). ” The brave new world is here. The liberals have left incremental Jacobinism behind in order to proceed with the last act of the drama in which they throw off their masks and stand before us in all their satanic fury, confident that the white grazers are too spiritually gutted to distinguish good from evil and the remnant band of Europeans who can still distinguish good from evil are too few and too marginalized to resist them.

We have taken “too little care of this.” The attack on all things white, because whiteness was wedded to all things Christian, started in the devil’s workshop. The academy in church and state was and is the place where Satan reigns. It is there, where the men of intellect, unaided by hearts connected to the living God, join with Satan to go on an unsentimental journey to a mind-forged heaven on earth. Men were supposed to become as gods if they went with Satan on that journey, but they have become worse than beasts, they have become un-men.

I first heard the concept of ‘toxic whiteness’ articulated in my college classroom in the early 1970s. A radical sociology professor (are there any other kind?) called the *Leave It to Beaver* television show of the late 1950s an “insidiously white” show. Later, throughout the 1970s and the 1980s, I frequently heard the liberals refer to the *Leave It to Beaver* show as a hideous manifestation of evil. Only Walt Disney was demonized more than *Leave It to Beaver*. And why was *Leave It to Beaver* demonized? The show was demonized because it was the Jane Austen of television shows, depicting the ordinary activities of a white, middle class family (Austen’s characters were mostly white, upper class families) with warmth and humor. Why is that evil? Let’s go to the heart of the matter – whiteness is evil because whites were and are still called to be the Christ-bearing race. If you hate Christ as the liberals hate Christ, you must attack every manifestation of whiteness, because whiteness is indeed toxic to liberals and to all the non-white races who reject the God of mercy in order to serve the heathen gods of sacrifice.

We wouldn’t want to follow Wally and Beaver into their college years, because their world, the world of the 1950s and early 1960s, was the twilight world of ethical Christianity. The full-fledged faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen was gone, but the ethical remnant of that faith still remained, soon to be extinguished. Mother Goose, in *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*, tells us we can never return to the childhood of our race. She was wrong – through Christ that return is possible. We, like Wally and Beaver, can return to whiteness, but only if we renounce incremental Jacobinism and go all the way back to Europe, when it was white and Christian.

The great betrayal of Christ in the 20<sup>th</sup> century took place within the ranks of the conservative intelligentsia. I do not cite the liberals as traitors, because they were and are the avowed enemies of Christ. It is the conservatives, who expressed (at least intellectually) a belief in Christ, that were and are the traitors. And their betrayal consists of this – they had no sympathetic connection to Christ through their people, they had only a Socratic belief in a mind-forged, abstract God. Without that sympathy, they became as tinkling cymbals and sounding brass, fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils. Pope John XXIII stood for all the conservatives when he [expressed loving forgiveness](#) for the black savages who tortured and murdered his fellow whites and his Catholic brethren. Is not such forgiveness genuine Christian charity? No, it is not, because without what Burke called “charitable rancor,” without a protective, loving impulse to fight for one’s own people when they are attacked, a man is worse than the heathens, he belongs to the dark angel who has made the hatred of Christ and His people his one deep and abiding passion. The godless, inhuman popes, and the think-tank conservatives, who want to preserve systems while they blissfully accept the death of their people, are one in their repudiation of that which is essential, a heart of flesh connected to God through kith and kin. They made common cause with the liberals who have made common cause with Satan. Let God judge their souls, but we shall judge their actions. They are false to their people and their God. When the conservatives in church and state bid us abandon our “charitable rancor” in the name of a nonracist, universalist love of generic mankind, we shall reject them as we reject the devil and all his works.

“See how they love one another,” was the mark of the Christian. “See how they hate one another,” is the mark of a liberal. The liberals, in the name of liberalism, have made whatever is bestial, whatever is cruel, and whatever is anti-Christian the basis of their satanic faith. It is no longer possible, now that the liberals have proceeded with the last act of their anti-white drama, to see the race war in any other light than the true light. The race war is a war of faith. Our people once believed that when Christ came to this earth, divine mercy walked among us in the flesh. We were redeemed from Satan’s power by the “heroic munificence” of Christ the Lord. Can the liberals’ hatred for whites possibly be understood without reference to the God that the whites took into their hearts and their racial hearth fire? Surely such hatred, a hatred of epic proportions, must have something supernatural that fuels it.

The liberals’ hatred comes from Satan. He cannot abide the God of mercy, because he does not believe that mankind is deserving of mercy. The Shavian sneer, the hatred of all things human and Christian, is the essence of Satan. The liberals have made the satanic sneer and the detached intellect, detached from pietas, the harrowing essence of their faith. Just as Christ harrowed hell to save poor sinners, the liberals harrow whites to save themselves from Christ’s mercy, which insults their intelligence, to build a new Tower of Babel that will place them above the angels and above the Lord God.

Kurtz, in Conrad’s *Heart of Darkness*, looks at the evil he has done and the evil mankind is capable of and pronounces judgement on that evil: “The horror, the horror.” The democratic leadership of the West, liberal and conservative, does not look at liberalism and say, “The horror, the horror.” Without the perception that liberalism is a satanic, reptilian entity, we will be destroyed by it, because we will not have the will to resist. If we don’t feel the flames of hell when we come into contact with liberalism — “Your soul deserves the place to which it came. If having entered Hell, you feel no flame” — we will not feel the need to call on Christ, the hero of great “munificence,” who descended into hell itself in order to save poor sinners from Satan’s power. We cannot look at pure hell without being paralyzed with fear, unless we look at that hell knowing our Lord goes before us in the battle against Satan and his minions. The conservatives who will not champion that which must be conserved, their people, and the church men such as Pope Francis the Blasphemer, who court favor with the liberals and their heathen gods of color, have no problem with white genocide because they have become spiritually anesthetized; they do not feel the flames of liberalism. What is impossible for a European Christian — to live in the midst of liberals without feeling the flame — is possible for the anti-European ‘Christian’ intellectuals — they are content to live amongst liberals and become co-heirs of the kingdom of hell on earth which shall become a reality when whiteness is purged from the face of the earth.

When there is no “charitable rancor” in our hearts that makes us want to defend our people when they are the victims of cruelty and injustice, and when there is no “charitable rancor” in our hearts that makes us want to defend our honored dead and the civilization of unparalleled spiritual beauty they bequeathed to us, we become the accomplices of Satan in his assault on all things white and Christian. The late Samuel Francis and the late John Tyndall tried to get whites to defend themselves by pointing out the impracticality of liberalism — it is bad for whites in the material realm. But people won’t fight — at least white people won’t — for materialism. What is the spiritual force driving mere materialism? The liberals have a religious zeal that will destroy their white enemies unless their white enemies come at them with an unshakeable faith in the Man-God who harrowed hell.

The logical, pragmatic conservative refuses to believe that the liberals will go through with their stated plan to destroy whiteness, because he believes that common sense will prevail and the liberals will see it is against their self-interest (since they are white) to destroy whiteness. This is where mere pragmatism fails the conservative. If we see through, not with the eye, we can see that the liberals have replaced the mystery of the Christ story with a new mystery religion. They believe that they have been changed, that their repudiation of whiteness has purged them of whiteness. They believe if they endure to the end, if they love the black man and all the colored races while hating all whiteness, they will be saved. After raising Estella to hate all

humanity, particularly the male half of humanity, Miss Havisham is shocked when Estella has no love for her. The liberals will be shocked when their colored minions, whom they have loved and nurtured, turn on them, but they will cling to their religion to the end, because they hate Christ and all those who believe in Him.

Is liberalism a religion? Yes, it is. The liberals have institutionalized the hatred of the white race and the love of the colored races with one exception: the colored people who embrace the white man's religion must be purged along with the white man. The murdered black Christian Nigerians earn no tears from the liberals because they, in the liberals' eyes, are apostates — they have left the true religion to embrace the hated white man's God. But is the liberals' religion a faith? Can you just create an abstract faith with no basis in reality because you can't stand reality? The liberals' religion is a non-faith.

When Robespierre saw that straight atheism did not work, he instituted harvest festivals in which he made his people bow down before nature. Is that faith? No, it is not. Nor is the liberals' nature-based religion of the noble savage a genuine faith. Real faith is of the spirit and blood, it reaches into the depths of the heart. Our ancestors' white faith was of the heart. They loved their people in and through the Savior. When the heathens attacked their hearth fires, they struck back because such attacks were directed at their people and their God, who were united in one incorporate union. That is the union, not the union of American atheistic states, or the anti-white European Union, which we must fight to preserve. If we love much, if we renew our covenant with the Christ of old Europe, we will strike back in defense of our people and our God. The first step back must be an internal conversion — we must reclaim our white souls by embracing our white Christian heritage and rejecting, as we reject Satan, all those who tell us our redemption lies in our repudiation of all things white and Christian. Within provincial, white Europe is a narrow gate that leads to His house of many mansions. Outside that world is the broad gate which leads us to Satan and his kingdom of eternal night. +

# Breaking Satan's Rules

June 1, 2019

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke



This circumstance assures some degree of permanence to the power of those, whom we know to be permanently our rancorous and implacable enemies. But to those very enemies, who have sworn our destruction, we have ourselves given a further and far better security by rendering the cause of the Royalists desperate. Those brave and virtuous, but unfortunate adherents to the ancient constitution of their country, after the miserable slaughters which have been made in that body, after all their losses by emigration, are still numerous, but unable to exert themselves against the force of the usurpation, evidently countenanced and upheld by those very Princes who had called them to arm for the support of the legal Monarchy. Where then, after chasing these fleeting hopes of ours from point to point of the political horizon, are they at last really found? Not where, under Providence, the hopes of Englishmen used to be placed—in our own courage and in our own virtues, but in the moderation and virtue of the most atrocious monsters that have ever disgraced and plagued mankind. — Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

The prolife movement as a movement to provide protection under the laws of the United States for the unborn was a colossal failure. But was it a total failure? No, because some babies were saved by the efforts of prolifers. I feel the same way about Trump's presidency. He has failed to stop white genocide and he has failed to stop legalized abortion, but his presidency has not been a total failure, because some white lives have been saved simply by his rhetoric about the illegals and by his restrictions on federally funded abortions. In addition, many private colleges and schools with a Christian ethos have temporarily avoided their inevitable shutdowns by the liberals as a result of Trump's presidency. But both the prolife movement and Trump's presidency were and are failures as movements, because they both were and are movements from within Liberaldom. To seek justice for whites and mercy for the unborn within the framework of democracy is, which oft our stage we have shown, to seek redemption from the devil.

In order to ensure Trump's defeat in the upcoming presidential election, the liberals are deplatforming everyone even tangentially connected to 'toxic whiteness.' Some of those deplatformed are called 'white supremacists,' some are called 'haters,' and others are simply told they've been deplatformed because of a 'technical glitch.' I remember an old Andy Capp cartoon in which a neighbor woman comes to Andy's door and asks to borrow his bottle opener. Andy tells her he can't loan her his bottle opener because he's using it to cut linoleum. The woman starts to walk away, stops, ponders a moment, and then turns back towards Andy's back door. "You can't cut linoleum with a bottle opener," she shouts. Andy shouts back at her, "You can do anything you want with a bottle opener if you don't want to loan it." The liberals can and will deplatform for any reason they make up, but there is only one reason – they hate white people.

I understand why liberals are doing what they are doing: they are possessed by the devil. But I do not understand the 'conservative' whites. Every time one of them is deplatformed, he or she expresses outrage and surprise. Why are they outraged and surprised? Did they really expect fair play from the liberals? If they did, then they do not understand liberalism. They don't see the obvious: liberalism is from the devil. And that is the problem with the resistance to liberalism: it is a non-resistance, because it is not a resistance rooted in the spirit and blood faith of our people. It does not go to the heart of the Christian fairy tale, hence it is powerless against liberalism.

The conservatives often give an intellectual nod to Christianity as a religion, but they look askance at you when you talk of Christ and the devil. Such talk hearkens back to the so-called Dark Ages (really the centuries of spiritual enlightenment) that are best left behind for a more intelligent, less intense type of Christianity that does not include talking snakes and personal encounters with the devil as depicted in the Gospels when our Lord confronts the devil in the wilderness.<sup>(1)</sup> Likewise the neo-pagans: they are too intelligent to be taken in by fairy tales. They will combat the liberals with their own version of intelligent liberalism, based on their fantasies of Viking pagans who never existed in reality and their superior brain cells too full of intelligence to believe as their white ancestors, whom they hold in contempt, believed.

The Christian fairy tale is either entirely true, from the Garden of Eden to Christ's resurrection from the dead, or it is entirely false. If it is the truth, then we should act on that truth. We should not be surprised when the liberals do evil; we should expect them to do evil, because they are satanic. Once we have overcome that major hurdle, we will act according to the reality of the enemy before us. We will not fight democratically, because the democratic process is a train bound for hell with no stops on the way to the station.

What would happen if we listened, once again, to the lay of the European minstrels? What if we do not proceed according to the liberals' ironclad rules of behavior? We don't know what might happen, but look what happened in old Europe when white people responded to the lay of the greatest minstrel of them all, the Lord God, Jesus Christ. Old Europe came to life like some mystical wonderland from a storybook, because the European people took Christ into their hearts. And in order to take Christ into their hearts, they needed a racial hearth fire. Hearts of flesh do not come into being from the brain of a god as the goddess of wisdom, Athena, came to life when she sprang from the head of Zeus. No, hearts of flesh come into being in men and women with familial and racial hearth fires connected to Christ. White Europe, which was once a mystic realm of the spirit, is now a slaughterhouse with white carcasses hanging on the walls and white grazers standing in line just outside waiting to come in and be slaughtered. This is the world we live in. There is no way back through the satanic democratic process. But outside of that process there is someone greater than liberalism. His world is a world of miracles. We need to leave the liberals' world and commit to fairy tale Europe with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Then? Miracles will occur in Europe once again.

The liberals came to power throughout the European world by constantly playing the liberal Anvil Chorus: "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism." The din of that music, constantly repeated, drowned out the softer melody of the European minstrels. And over the course of time, that chorus entered the hearts of the European people. Like the wedding guest that "has been stunned and is of sense forlorn," The European people became the unthinking, unfeeling tools of a satanic liberal hierarchy filled with hatred for Christ and the people who loved Him. The lay of the King of the European minstrels, our Savior, who sang of His house with many mansions and how He would be with us always, even when Science failed to sustain life in our bodies, was heard no more. There was only the liberals' Anvil Chorus.

Trump should be supported by all white people, but he should be supported for what he is, a heroic rear-guard of a defeated army. And whites have been defeated because the liberals' Anvil Chorus has beaten down the lay of the European minstrels. Men who heed the minstrel's chorus of Christ crucified, Christ risen, do not need to live their lives in slavery to the democratic process that hammers out the Anvil Chorus of liberalism: "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism."

The United States was the first white nation to adopt a government based on abstract principles rather than the traditional faith of the European people. France, a few years later, followed the American example. At first the French followed Robespierre's model: "Jacobinism now!" Then, after Robespierre, they followed the American model, "Let us move incrementally toward the kingdom of God on earth." During our Civil War, the first modern war in that the North disregarded the rules of chivalry because Utopians do not look upon themselves as

original sinners, the Unitarians of the North shifted from incremental Jacobinism to Robespierre Jacobinism. They stayed with Robespierre Jacobinism from 1860 to 1874 when the Reconstruction Era was supposed to have ended. But did it end? No, it did not. The Southern people were still being reconstructed, just as the Northern people were being reconstructed, into a non-people without a racial hearth fire. It would have been better, spiritually, for the Southern people had the overt "Reconstruction" been made permanent, because under those repressive strictures the Southern people saw themselves as a white Christian people, separate and distinct from their Jacobin oppressors. Once they were mainstreamed, what became of the Southern people? Once we, the European people, were mainstreamed into Liberalism, what became of us as a people?

The intellectual Christians throughout the Christian era of European history always denied they were living within a Christian culture. They denied that there could be a Christian culture. What those Christian Utopians, who always pointed to the sins of the European people, failed to grasp was that the European people, in the midst of their sins, held to a belief that Christ was the spiritual summit of human existence. All European societies were in agreement on that belief. And that belief, no matter what the Utopians say to the contrary, made the European people different from the non-European people.

The American and French revolutions were both spawned by men determined to be governed by a different spiritual ethos than the people of Christian Europe. We can now see clearly what that new ethos was; it was a very old ethos, the ethos of darkness. The liberals have decreed that we must all live in a pagan realm where nature is all. All wisdom, all truth, is to be found in the material realm. The liberals have discovered the beauty of the Noble Savage and the godlike perfection of an ever-evolving democratic system, which acts as a great reaping machine, destroying all things white and Christian, and protecting all things dark, bestial, and heathen.

We can't change the fact that we live amongst liberals, but must we be of them? It is my contention that the European who is still connected to Christ through old Europe constitutes a spiritual force the liberals cannot deal with, because it is outside their frame of reference. They are used to white men who follow all the rules of liberalism. The integral Europeans, the men who set themselves apart from liberalism, are the Europeans who will bring Liberalism down. Just as our Lord rejected the worldly temptations of Satan in the wilderness, so should all Christian Europeans set themselves apart spiritually from Satan's world. We are Tell, standing athwart the mountain pass with an arrow for Gessler's heart, and we are Guiderius and Arviragus, the sons of Cymbeline, standing alone against the Roman legions and refusing to yield, "Our Britain's harts die flying, not our men." Would that could be said of all of us, once again. The liberals are not invincible, they are not gods. But if we believe that their Anvil Chorus of "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism" is a greater chorus than "King of Kings and Lord of Lords," we will surely perish. "Once more unto the breach!" +

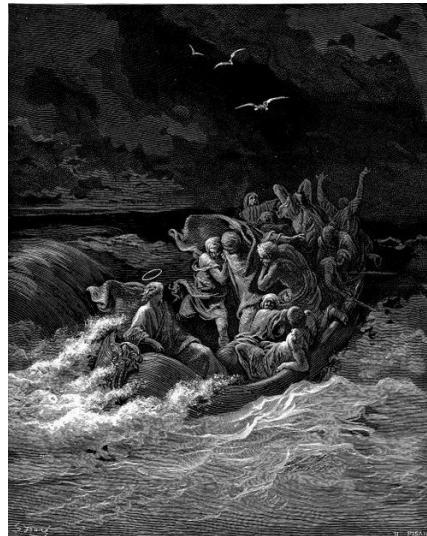
(1) And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness. Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. [Luke 4: 1-14](#)

# Keep Thy Heart

June 8, 2019

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Neo-paganism

Tags: Anthony Jacob



When on that shivering winter's night, the Pequod thrust her vindictive bows into the cold malicious waves, who should I see standing at her helm but Bulkington! I looked with sympathetic awe and fearfulness upon the man, who in mid-winter just landed from a four years' dangerous voyage, could so unrestingly push off again for still another tempestuous term. The land seemed scorching to his feet... But as in landlessness alone resides the highest truth, shoreless, indefinite as God—so, better is it to perish in that howling infinite, than be ingloriously dashed upon the lee, even if that were safety! For worm-like, then, oh! who would craven crawl to land! Terrors of the terrible! is all this agony so vain? Take heart, take heart, O Bulkington! —Melville, *Moby Dick*

Then keep thy heart, though yet but ill-resigned—  
Clarel, thy heart, the issues there but mind;  
That like the crocus budding through the snow—  
That like a swimmer rising from the deep—  
That like a burning secret which doth go  
Even from the bosom that would hoard and keep;  
Emerge thou mayst from the last whelming sea,  
And prove that death but routs life into victory.

— Melville, *Clarel*

Maybe I am alone in my need for heroes, men who have gone before me who have loved what I love and fought for what I love. Some people regard that need as a weakness, a moral failing; if that is so, then I am morally weak. I don't expect perfection from my heroes; I believe in original sin. What I need from my heroes is a reverence for Him, in and through the European people. For this reason most of my heroes predate the 20<sup>th</sup> century, because the 19<sup>th</sup> century, even though science had most certainly reared its satanic head in that century, was the last century in which the best of the European people still loved Christ at their racial hearth fire.

One of the exceptions to my ‘no heroes in the 20<sup>th</sup> century’ credo had been Anthony Jacob, who wrote *White Man, Think Again!*, a book that was published and then banned in South Africa in 1965. What struck me about Anthony Jacob was that he actually seemed to care, in contrast to other 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives, about white people. And he also, in contrast to the 20<sup>th</sup> century neo-pagans, seemed to understand the importance of the European people’s connection to Jesus Christ. There were many passages in his great work that led me to believe that Anthony Jacob was not a 20<sup>th</sup> century agnostic:

*Only sham love compromises; genuine love never does because it never can, because love is the comprehension of life itself – and is a form of light. It is not love that evades vital (i.e. ‘life-full’) issues or runs away or talks false peace; it is love that fights to the death, for it knows that to compromise is to dilute, and that to dilute love is to kill it. That is why the gentle, hard-as-nails Jesus (who taught us to disdain death; not, like the Orientals, to disdain life) came with a sword in his hand....*

*It is surely not wise for the Church to pander to this idolatry. Even if Christianity were to be the religion only of a select few, it would be none the worse for that. Has it ever been anything else but the religion of a select few, and can it ever be anything else? Christianity is the religion of the White and not the non-White peoples, who debase it even where they accept it. They might pay lip-service to it where the white man is strong and his institutions accordingly respected, or where it has obtained a form of superstitious hold over them. But they can no more accept and comprehend essential Christianity than the white man can accept Shamanism. This, above all, makes it all the more reprehensible that the Church, instead of recognizing this, should swing round viciously upon the white man and hold him to blame for it – that white man upon whose unadulterated identity Christianity exclusively depends.*

So was Anthony Jacob a Christian? A new edition of *White Man, Think Again!* (2017) has been published in which the editor, a ‘friend’ of Anthony Jacob, tells us that Jacob had no religion:

*Secondly, and Tony did not have to be told to do this, as he “knew it by himself,” as he said to me, the book would have to have a decidedly pro-Christian slant, even though personally, he was not a believer in any religion. This was because Christianity was one of the mainstays of Afrikaner nationalism, and the Voortrekker Press would simply not publish a book which did not hold that position.*

The phrase, “a sword shall pierce your heart” describes my reaction to Kemp’s assertion. Does that negate everything Anthony Jacob ever wrote? No, of course not. Anthony Jacob was the most eloquent and courageous defender of the white race in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, and his assessments of the black African people, the liberals, and the white people of Africa have stood the test of time. What Kemp says about Jacob’s religious indifference touches me to the core of my being, but it in no way negates anything Anthony Jacob wrote. Why am I so affected? Because I loved Anthony Jacob for what he said in defense of my people. I felt, when I read of his indifference to Christianity, as I felt when I learned of my mother’s agnosticism. I still loved her, but I could no longer trust her as a guiding light. In terms of faith, I had to keep a spiritual distance from my mother. So it is with Anthony Jacob. When I first read *White Man, Think Again!* some forty years ago, the passion of Mr. Jacob entered my soul; he was one of my heroes. Now? He is a great man, whom I admire, but he is no longer my hero.

Not all those who say ‘Lord, Lord’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven; I think there is more of Christ in a man such as Anthony Jacob, who loves his people, than there is in a thousand intellectual Christians who are willing to sacrifice their fellow whites on altars consecrated to the sacred negroes. But a man, if he is to be truly a man, needs to be connected to His people through the God of love. The question of Christ’s resurrection from the dead can never be a matter of indifference. The older neo-pagans such as Samuel Francis, John Tyndall, and alas,

Anthony Jacob, respected Christianity as a magnificent creation of the white race. The second and third tiers of neo-pagans spit on Christ, lumping Him in with their Jewish enemies. The older neo-pagans make for better company, but neither view is acceptable. All talk about race is meaningless if Christ be not risen. Why should I care about keeping my people separate and distinct from the people of other races if there is no God who has made my people separate and distinct from other races? The charity which begins at home and perishes without one, which Anthony Jacob writes so eloquently about, has a source. If white people are cut off from that source, they will become – no, they have become – men without souls doomed to look at life second-hand through the dark races, as the liberals view life, or through their own mind-forged fantasy world of pure intelligence, as the intellectual Christians and neo-pagans view life. It is always the same hurdle that must be overcome, the hurdle of intellectual pride. Are we too intelligent to believe that Jesus of Nazareth was and is the Son of the living God? I am not too intelligent to believe in that God. And I don't understand, nor do I want to understand, why the men of 'intelligence' find it easier to believe in their petty, puny minds than in the heart of Christ.

Men like Arthur Kemp are very good at handing out practical advice, based on animal husbandry and demographics, but their knowledge is grounded in empiricism, which is the quicksand of the devil. This empirical knowledge appears to be safe, solid ground, unlike the mystic waters of Christian Europe, but the quicksand envelops a man and chokes the life out of him while the great raging sea brings us, if we look to Christ to guide us, safely home. There is a link between Bulkington, the true hero of Melville's *Moby Dick*, who chooses landlessness over the empirical land, and the pilgrim Clarel, who finishes his earthly pilgrimage with a vision of the living 'God'. Bulkington is Clarel.

The neo-pagan Nikos Kazantzakis, the author of *The Last Temptation of Christ* and *Zorba the Greek*, gives us a glimpse, in his autobiography, of the neo-pagans' pride of reason. Kazantzakis rewrites the prodigal son story. He has the prodigal son, upon his return, tell his brother, "I failed but you shall succeed. Leave our father and become a success on your own." Why did the story of the prodigal son fail to stir Kazantzakis' heart? Because Kazantzakis believed that the mark of a man is that he kneels to no-one, not even to our Father which art in heaven. In contrast to Kazantzakis is Johanna Spyri, the author of *Heidi*. The grandfather in *Heidi* comes down from the mountain to reconnect with his people and his God after his meditation on the story of the prodigal son. Is it really so terrible to admit one has sinned and then to ask for forgiveness from the God of mercy? "Yes, it is," says the neo-pagan, "because there is no God, only a sickly Jewish carpenter whom the Judaic-Christians call their God." And the 'Christian' equivalent of the neo-pagans, the scholastics, create their own God of pure intellect so that when they worship, they worship their own minds.

Pastor N. F. S. Grundtvig of Denmark saw that his people could only know the living God if they searched the Scriptures, as St. Paul enjoined them to do, with their hearts. With the prophetic heart of that second tier of Christian prophets who warned us what would happen if we abandoned the prophetic fire and the prophetic knowledge of the one true God, Grundtvig told us that the holy word of God was rendered null and void if it was sifted through the minds of theologians. In order for the Word of God to take root in our hearts, Grundtvig maintained, it had to come to us undiluted by theological experts. The theological expert is the creation of Satan because through him Satan can turn everything into an intellectual construct. And Satan is undefeated in the intellectual arena.

The living God cannot come to us through His holy Word if His holy Word becomes, which it has become, the sole property of theological experts. And the story of our people, of their love affair with Jesus Christ, as told by the European bards, can only be received in our hearts if we hear that story from the bards themselves, unobstructed by creatures called literary critics. Do you see the hellish closed circle that has enveloped the European people? They have gone from being free men who belong to Christ to being the bond slaves of Satan, who keeps his kingdom in order by constantly appealing to the Europeans' pride of intellect, manifested in their faith in experts who have scientized life. An automobile can be scientized, but not a man, and certainly not the Lord God. The Roman Catholic scholastics and then the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, scientized God in order to hand Him to the laity in a neat little box with a golden ribbon on it and a label that read, "Not to be opened except by the clergy." Pope Francis the blasphemer spoke for all the anti-Christian Christians when, in a recent audience, he wagged his finger at the faithful and warned them they could not go directly to God, they must go through the Church. Through the Church consisting of men and women who believe in Christ the Lord? No, that is not the Church which Francis the blasphemer is referring to. He is referring to the Church as an assembly of great minds who have taken upon themselves the right to determine who and what God is. Small wonder, particularly since the church men have decided that the negro is God, that the neo-pagans have chosen to reject intellectual Christianity for the Sturm und Drang of neo-paganism. But in the end, Pope Francis the blasphemer and the Christian intellectuals are spiritually united to the neo-pagans, because both camps have chosen to reject the living God for an abstract God that emanates from their minds. The blaspheming Christian intellectuals have chosen the noble black savage while the neo-pagans have chosen their superior white genes. The pope's mind-forged heresy will always triumph over the neo-pagans' heresy, because the Europeans will always cling to the heresy that has a personal savior. The neo-pagans have no savior in their religion.

It is often the good swimmer that drowns, because he places too much confidence in his ability to conquer the ocean currents unaided by anything other than his own athletic prowess. So it is with human intelligence. It is almost always the very smart men who fall victim to the snares of Satan. They think they can go it alone, without recourse to the living God, and as a consequence they end up prisoners of Satan and science. It is Dogberry, the bumbling constable in Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, who discovers and brings to light the villainous machinations of Don John the bastard and his evil cohorts. The smart men, such as Claudio and Antonio, were unable to see and discover the villainy of Don John because they had too much confidence in their own intelligence. St. Paul tells us that the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men. If we become foolish as He was 'foolish,' we will be able to see visions that the intelligent men do not see. The men of intellect who inhabit the first circle of hell, the virtuous pagans such as Anthony Jacob, Samuel Francis and John Tyndall, seem so wise in the ways of the world, but when we look closer we see that they are blinded by the same satanic ray of light that blinded Adam and Eve:

*Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in knowledge to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new feelings, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undertake so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.*

-Chateaubriand, [The Genius of Christianity](#)

I have often been disappointed – although in the case of Anthony Jacob it goes beyond disappointment – when I discovered that a man I thought was going to be my companion in the battle against the devil and his minions was *not* going to be my companion because he had no use for the Suffering Servant. But it is better to go into battle alone than to have a false ally who will desert you in the day of battle. We must accept a man's word when he says he does not believe in Christ. But we can hope, if the tenor of his life revealed a sense of pietas, that at the last moment, at the hour of death, the man saw the risen Lord. That is my hope for that first tier of noble neo-pagans from whom I was estranged on this earth.

Now back to the present and the enemy before us. The liberals have intensified their merciless persecution of the white race. They have given their black shock troops virtual free reign to rape, torture, and murder white people; and neo-paganism, whether the Greco-Roman neo-paganism of the first tier neo-pagans, such as Jacob, Francis, and Tyndall, or the new, updated neo-paganism, whose adherents look to a future of white intelligence independent of the Greeks and Jesus Christ, will not be able to stop the bloodletting of the liberals and their colored allies. We need men who are firmly rooted, in spirit and blood, in Christian Europe. A merciless enemy can only be successfully opposed by men who fight in the name of the God of mercy.

A man fights for what he holds dear. It makes a difference whether a man treasures his white genes, the sacred negroes, or Jesus Christ, the first and the last. If we have taken Christ into our hearts, we will be connected to other hearts of flesh, living and dead, who have taken Christ into their hearts. That communion, the communion of saints, will sustain us against an enemy who is possessed by the devil. Without faith in the God whose love passeth the understanding of the colored barbarians, the liberals, and the neo-pagans, we can never restore our civilization or protect our people from the pestilence of liberalism and the arrows of the colored barbarians. We need to go beyond intelligence to the foolishness of God, the God who was so foolish that He was crucified for our sins: "He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not his mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not his mouth." That God and kinsman cannot be a mere footnote in the white man's history: He is our history.

The first tier of neo-pagans, such as Anthony Jacob, who had a certain respect for old Europe and her people but were unable to see that Christ was the spiritual fount of old Europe, are all gone now. The second and third tiers of neo-pagans have no respect for old Europe and her people. They look to a new Europe that is... What is that new Europe? What rough beast will we worship in the new Europe? The neo-pagans need to strike the 'pagan' from their name, because the real European pagans, our progenitors, bent their knees to Christ. They saw beauty on the cross. Where is the beauty in neo-paganism? The liberals tell us we must worship the dark races and make Christ one with the gods of heathendom, while the neo-pagans tell us we must worship Hitler and their white genes. Over and against the liberals and the neo-pagans is the Man on the white horse: He once was at the center of Europe. Now He rides alone on the periphery of Europe, ready to enter the lists again if we call on Him by name. +

# No More Night

June 15, 2019

Categories: Negro worship, Pride of intellect, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Thomas Aird



The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations. —[Deuteronomy 7: 7-9](#)

Toward the end of Thomas Aird's poem "[The Devil's Dream on Mount Aksbeck](#)," the devil is offered a chance to accept the mercy of God:

*At last, from out the barren womb of many thousand years,  
A sound as of the green-leaved earth his thirsty spirit cheers;  
And, oh, a presence soft and cool came o'er his burning dream,  
A form of beauty clad about with fair creation's beam;  
A low sweet voice was in his ear, thrilled through his inmost soul,  
And these the words that bowed his heart with softly sad control:—*

*"No sister e'er hath been to thee with pearly eyes of love;  
No mother e'er hath wept for thee, an outcast from above;  
No hand hath come from out the cloud to wash thy scarred face;  
No voice to bid thee lie in peace, the noblest of thy race:  
But bow thee to the God of Love, and all shall yet be well,  
And yet in days of holy peace and love thy soul shall dwell.*

*"And thou shalt dwell 'mid leaves and rills far from this torrid heat,  
And I with streams of cooling milk will bathe thy blistered feet;  
And when the troubled tears shall start to think of all the past,  
My mouth shall haste to kiss them off, and chase thy sorrows fast;  
And thou shalt walk in soft white light with kings and priests abroad,  
And thou shalt summer high in bliss upon the hills of God."*

The devil rejects God's mercy:

*So knew the Fiend, and fain would he down to oblivion go;  
But back from fear his spirit proud, recoil like a bow,  
Sprung. O'er his head he saw the heavens upstay'd bright and high;  
The planets, undisturbed by him, were shining in the sky;  
The silent magnanimity of Nature and her God  
With anguish smote his haughty soul, and sent his Hell abroad.*

At Eastertime we greet our fellow Christians with, "Christ has risen!," and the reply is, "Indeed He has!" One can picture the devils in hell commenting on the success of their master:

*1st Junior Devil: "Our master has sent his hell abroad."*

*2nd Junior Devil: "Indeed he has."*

The devil has been enormously successful in the past 100 years; he has sent his hell abroad throughout the European world, the only world where Christ once held a significant place. But there is an irony involved in the devil's success. That proud spirit had to get the consent of the very creatures he hates in order to work his will upon them. Isn't that rather ignoble, to prowl about the world trying to ruin souls by trickery instead of a straight-forward challenge? Yes, in my opinion it is rather ignoble, but then I am not privy to the innermost thoughts — nor do I want to be — of the devil. Perhaps he is able to save his ego by some sophistry we do not understand, but howsoever he convinces himself that petty treachery is compatible with his pride, he does work his will upon mankind by making it appear that what men desire most is what the devil can provide for them.

There never was a time when the temptations of the devil were not appealing, but I think Charles Maturin gets it right in his novel [Melmoth the Wanderer](#), in which he depicts men and women of old Europe, whom the devil asks to give up their souls for what he can give them. They ultimately refuse to give up their souls; the devil fails. Why does he fail? He fails because those Europeans lived in a Europe that was consecrated to Christ. Our Savior was still present in the hearts of the European people in the 'unenlightened' days of Christian Europe. There were limits to the evils they did, because Christ was present in their hearts. And so long as He is present within the human breast, Satan cannot enter. But once the European people's heart-to-heart covenant with Christ was broken, Satan can, will, and did become the ruler of the European people. The constant turning away from God and the turning back to God in the Old Testament is the story of a heart-to-heart covenant, the breaking of that covenant, and the return to the covenant. When Moses, the people's connection to the living God, went up to Mt. Sinai, the Hebrew people felt abandoned by God and returned to Baal. The European people have made the same return to Baal, which is a return to nature and nature's gods, as the Hebrews did when Moses 'abandoned' them.

The Grand Inquisitor hurls the accusation, “You abandoned mankind,” at Christ. And what is Christ’s answer? He does not give an answer. It seems that Satan is there for us, but our Lord is not. That is the crux of the matter. Is there a realm of existence that “knows not seems?” Hamlet’s mother did not see the vision from another world vouchsafed to Hamlet, yet she asserted with certainty, “I see nothing, yet all that there is I see.” The scholastics thought there was no incompatibility between reason and revelation: “Since all that is can be known by reason, including God’s revelation, why should we not place reason on an equal level with revelation?” Why indeed? We should not place human reason and God’s revelation on an equal level because we cannot know God through reason. Reason forms no covenants, it only draws up contracts. Reason cannot see beyond what seems. If we look at God’s word through the eyes of reason, it appears that He does not answer prayer and that He lied about His imminent return. But if we approach His holy word with our hearts, and if we pray with our hearts, does not a different picture of God emerge, distinct from the absentee God whom we see with the eyes of reason? All deep thought comes from the heart – if we refuse to think from the heart we will never see anything other than the material world, the world of Baal.

Once reason contemplating nature became synonymous with revelation the stage was set for the triumph of Satan in the Western world. Satan started his own back-to-nature movement. The clergymen told their people that God was in nature, which opened the door for the liberals, who took that clerical maxim one step further – “God is nature.” Our modern non-civilization is a synthesis of the ‘rational’ civilizations of Babel, Sodom and Gomorrah, and Egypt. The European people prefer their Egyptian night to Christian Europe, but why do they prefer that night? They have no heart left for God; that is why they have chosen the night of science and the dark races over Christ. Science will sustain them where Christ has failed them, and the sacred negro will allow them to feel connected to Baal.

In my lifetime, I have seen the devastation caused by the liberals’ rationalistic attack on Christ. I had a college professor who spoke for that whole world of liberal vipers. In class after class, he pounded home his theme, “Where is the life in a dead body? How can you believe in a God that cannot help you in this world and cannot sustain life in your body after you leave this world?” If, like Lady Macbeth, we have made thick our blood and stopped up “th” access and passage to remorse” then we cannot answer the liberals. Nor can we answer the liberals if we have accepted the clergymen’s anti-vision of God – that He does not enter human hearts, He only comes to enlightened minds. But if we have a heart for God, if we are drawn to Him by something in our hearts that is beyond reason, we will know that He has not abandoned us on this earth and He will not abandon us in the world to come. It was not a little thing, our connection to the antique Europeans, it was everything, because through those hearts of flesh, we touched the heart of God.

The conservatives of the 20<sup>th</sup> century such as Weaver, Tate, and Kirk, all proceeded under the assumption that the disease of liberalism could be cured by rational analysis. But rational analysis, whether it is the rational analysis of a liberal or a liberal conservative, is not true thought, because it does not encompass the wellspring of thought, the human heart. Stavrogin, in Dostoyevsky’s novel *The Devils*, is rational to the end:

*The citizen of the Canton of Uri was dangling just by the door. On the table there was a scrap of paper with the words, “Accuse no one, I did it myself,” written in pencil. Next to it on the table there was also a hammer, a piece of soap, and a large nail, apparently in case the other one hadn’t held up. The strong silk cord on which Nicolai Stavrogin had hanged himself was lavishly smeared with soap. All this indicated that to the last second he was in full possession of his mental faculties and had acted with premeditation.*

*After the autopsy, all our medical experts rejected any possibility of insanity.*

Stavrogin’s end is our end if we continue to see with the rational jewels of the head rather than with the eyes of the heart. Before the churchmen decided we could combat the king of rationalism with our own reason, separated from a spirit-infused heart, there were integral men, our European progenitors, who spoke of a different way:

*Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time. –Anglo-Saxon Poetry.*

The synthesis of Babel, Sodom and Gomorrah, and the Egyptian night needs a rationalist base to hold it together. If even a few Europeans thought with their hearts, that synthesis of evil would start to crumble. The modern Europeans are proceeding as if nature, the nature which can be dissected and analyzed by rational minds, is all. Our young people are brought up to believe that they should welcome the assault of the colored heathens on the white race and spend their lives combating racism and global warming. The great rationalist, utopian state that Lincoln hoped would “long endure” has given birth to a brood of vipers, conceived and nurtured by the rationalism of the devil. And if we are one with Satan in his rationalism, we will be one with him in his estrangement from God and humanity:

*O'er soft and unsubstantial shades which towering visions seem,  
Through kingdoms of forlorn repose, went on the hurrying dream;  
Till down where feet of hills might be, he by a Lake was stayed  
Of still red fire—a molten plate of terror unalloyed—  
A mirror where Jehovah's Wrath, in majesty alone,  
Comes in the night of worlds to see its armour girded on.*

*The awful walls of shadows round might dusky mountains seem,  
But never holy light hath touched an outline with its gleam;  
'Tis but the eye's bewildered sense that fair would rest on form,  
And make night's thick blind presence to created shapes conform.  
No stone is moved on mountain here by creeping creature crossed;  
No lonely harper comes to harp upon this fiery coast.*

*–Thomas Aird*

It was only the ethical remnant of what was once the European people’s heartfelt faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen that sustained the European people in the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Now that the ethical remnant has been destroyed, there is no “holy light” left over Europe. All is darkness. Dylan Thomas was aware of the dying of the light, but he was unable to trace that light back to its source, so he died in an alcoholic stupor. At least he had the heart to know that life was unbearable without the light. That is the beginning of wisdom. Is it possible to go any further, to actually move toward God’s “holy light”? Before there was Nature, there was the God who was and is greater than nature. How do we know that? Because of what is inside of us that yearns for something, for someone, beyond nature. We who are about to die need that “holy light” to illuminate our hearts and give us a glimpse of a spiritual realm of existence that transcends the shallow, closed-in world of darkness that has become the only world for the modern Europeans.

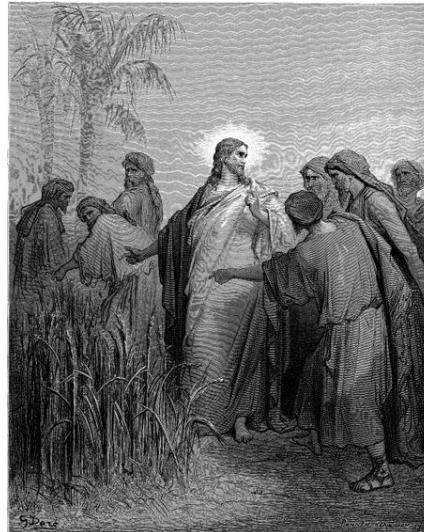
The counter-revolution cannot begin until we throw off the chains of nature and nature’s gods. It is not impossible to break those chains, but we must leave the dungeons of academia behind and venture forth into the open air of that other realm, the realm of visionary hearts of flesh who loved so much that they saw their beginning and their end in the cross of Christ. I don’t see any hope for our people until we, the last Europeans, stand up to the principalities and powers of the Liberaldom and declare that this, our modern utopia of science and the sacred negroes, is not heaven on earth, it is hell. A hell we reject in the name of Christ’s holy light that once shone over the European people, as the Star of Bethlehem once shone over the shepherds on that night of nights when the light of the world came to us through our incarnate Lord. +

# The Bowstrings of the Spirit

June 22, 2019

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Faithful hearts, Jacobinism, Pride of intellect

Tags: Edmund Burke, N.F.S. Grundtvig, Thomas Nelson Page



It was a dry cold night, and the wind blew keenly, and the frost was white and hard. A man would die to-night of lying out on the marshes, I thought. And then I looked at the stars, and considered how awful it would be for a man to turn his face up to them as he froze to death, and see no help or pity in all the glittering multitude. — [Great Expectations](#)

When Walt Disney died, the entire technical crew, the cartoonists, the directors, the writers, who had been with Walt, remained. But Disney Studies never, after Walt's death, put out anything even remotely as good as the type of movies and cartoons that came out of Disney Studies when Walt was alive. The heart of the studio was dead. In a similar vein there was the Inklings, a club of writers that C. S. Lewis started, to form a counter-culture within Academia that was opposed to the anti-Christian bias of Academia. When C. S. Lewis died, the Inklings died. In both cases, Disney Studios and the Inklings, the old forms survived, but the substance was gone, because the substance of Disney Studies and the substance of the Inklings depended on the heart and soul of one man. "But O for the touch of a vanished hand, and the sound of a voice that is still."

We currently live in an anti-civilization, a world completely opposed to the civilization of old Europe, because we have lost contact with the God-Man who was and is the heart and soul of our civilization. Many of the outer forms of the old Europe still remain, but it is crystal clear that the substance of modern Europe is not the substance of old Europe. New Europe and old Europe are two diametrically opposed worlds. That fact seems too obvious to have to be stated, but it needs to be stated over and over again, because it is not obvious to the conservatives and the grazers, the people who constitute the great majority of the European people. Only the liberals realize that a new world, their world, has been built over the ruins of old Europe. The conservatives still cling to their Augustinian reading of history: "There can never be a Christian culture. Everything outside the organizational structure called the Church is the realm of the barbarians. Let us take refuge behind the hollowed walls of Christian academia." Such logic leaves out the great miracle, the conversion of the European tribesmen that [Thomas Nelson Page](#) writes about:

*On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.*

How can we forget those Europeans who saw that Odin was the forerunner of Christ and who carved out a place for Christ in the midst of a heathen world? All that was good, all that elevated the European people to another realm, a better realm of existence than mere paganism, stemmed from the European tribesmen's leap across the pagan divide from Odin to Christ. If that conversion never occurred, if those Europeans were not really Christian, and the real Christian men and women are still in the future, a future purged of the false Christ of the European people, then we are of all men most to be pitied, for we have believed a lie.

"That is no tragedy," the liberals tell us, "You can become like us and cavort around the throne of the sacred negro, which is true happiness and eternal bliss." If barbarism is happiness and the extinction of the human personality is bliss, then the liberals are right: we should join them in their long day's journey into the beautiful night of Liberaldom. The white grazers have no problem with the darkness of liberalism, because the conservatives tell them that "darkness is right," that there never was a Narnian upper world, there is only the liberals' world of eternal night. In that world there are the four freedoms, freedom to worship the sacred negro, freedom to speak the praises of the sacred negro, freedom from fear, namely the fear of the living God, and freedom from want, which is the freedom to give up the bread of life, which is Christ the Lord, in order to obtain the things of this world only. The white grazers have been bound hand and foot by their 'conservative' leaders and turned over to the liberal torturers. In the name of a pure Christian future that is always on the horizon, but never actually materializes, the conservative intellectuals have betrayed the only civilization that was genuinely Christian in order to join with the liberals in the building of a civilization that is a new Babel, a hell on earth.

The reason why the conservatives work within the perimeters of liberalism in order to effect change rather than attack liberalism itself is because the modern conservatives are not Burkean conservatives. It was Burke's contention that prior to the French Revolution, "The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines." Because the nations of Europe were Christian and the Jacobins were opposed to Christianity, Burke maintained that Christian Britain and the rest of the European nations could not, without betraying the moral essence of their nations, make peace with the Jacobin government whether Robespierre or the Directory was in charge of it. But the nations of Europe did make peace with the Jacobins, and we, the European people, have been paying the consequences of that 'peace' for centuries, in small dribs and drabs at first, but now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, we are paying the price with our blood.

During the French Revolution, Jacobin sympathizers throughout the European nations were either completely indifferent to — or, in many instances, they rejoiced at — the torture and murder of white Christians. And they justified their indifference and/or their exaltation by claiming that the murdered whites were insufficiently Christian, so they deserved to be killed:

*What ferocity of character drew on the fate of Elizabeth, the sister of King Lewis the 16th? For which of the vices of that pattern of benevolence, of piety, and of all the virtues, did they put her to death? For which of her vices did they put to death the mildest of all human creatures, the Duchess of Biron? What were the crimes of those crowds of Matrons and Virgins of condition, whom they massacred, with their juries of blood, in prisons and on scaffolds? What were the enormities of the Infant King, whom they caused by lingering tortures to perish in their dungeon, and whom if at last they despatched by poison, it was in that detestable crime the only act of mercy they have ever shewn?*

*What softening of character is to be had, what review of their social situations and duties is to be taught by these examples, to Kings, to Nobles, to Men of Property, to Women, and to Infants? The Royal Family perished, because it was royal. The Nobles perished, because they were noble. The Men, Women and Children, who had property, because they had property to be robbed of. The Priests were punished, after they had been robbed of their all, not for their vices, but for their virtues and their piety, which made them an honour to their sacred profession, and to that nature, of which we ought to be proud, since they belong to it. My Lord, nothing can be learned from such examples, except the danger of being Kings, Queens, Nobles, Priests, and Children to be butchered on account of their inheritance. — [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)*

Is such liberal ferocity in the past? No, it is not, it is still with us. Have not the liberals countenanced the massacre of the whites in South Africa because they were ‘racists’ and therefore outside the ken of humanity? And haven’t the conservatives ignored the plight of pro-Apartheid whites in South Africa because they were insufficiently Christian, because they were – horror of horrors – white separatists? But South Africa really is the entire Western world. The liberals must destroy everything white because old Europe was Christian, and the conservatives will not defend old Europe or the continued existence of whites who champion old Europe, because the antique Europeans, from their utopian viewpoint, were insufficiently Christian. Belloc, the ‘conservative’ Catholic, was an ardent supporter of the Jacobins because he felt that the murdered aristocrats were insufficiently Catholic, so they deserved to be purged. That ‘conservative’ angelism is what enables the liberals to reign unopposed. And if the great purgers are not opposed, they will enlarge their vision of the purge. It is no longer the aristocrats who must be destroyed, it is all the non-illuminated whites who must be blotted off the face of the earth. Rich or poor, all whites have become aristocrats in the eyes of the liberal Jacobins.

The liberals’ onslaught has intensified in the 21<sup>st</sup> century because there is no longer any Christian check on their hatred, and it has intensified because every individual white fears that he will be found wanting, that he will be seen as too white, making him one of the non-illuminated whites who must go to the guillotine. This is why white liberals scream ‘racist’ at the top of their lungs at the slightest pretext and more often than not with no pretext whatsoever. They must prove that they are illuminated whites who have transcended whiteness. They live in the hope that the dark gods of liberalism will place a mark on their door so that the angel of death will leave them alone. But the dark gods of liberalism are not gods of mercy: they will kill the illuminated whites just as readily as the non-illuminated whites.

And the conservatives? Will they resist the liberals’ onslaught? No, they won’t. Their mission in life is to preserve impersonal, cosmic, Chardinian Christianity, and impersonal, abstract democracy. Individual human beings, particularly non-illuminated white human beings, do not interest them. They live for the future, a future in which they have won the illuminated debate with their liberal cousins and the world is run according to their Socratic, white minds, which have transcended racism, provincialism, and all feelings, including a passion for the living God, that stem from the human heart. The European with a heart that still lives must reject the inhumanity of Christless liberalism and its cousin, intellectual Christianity, which is also Christless because it lacks a heart of flesh, grounded in pietas.

*If the words and sounds mean nothing—  
‘people’ and ‘the fatherland’—  
if for us they have no meaning  
more than numbers, earth, and strand,  
futile is all formulation,  
all talk of ‘God’s congregation’  
or God’s kingdom’s hills and vales.*

*If our hearts lack any feeling  
that we are a race divine,  
if no pain that with this calling  
we ourselves could not align,  
we mock words we cannot follow,  
make ‘redeemed’, ‘reborn’ sound hollow,  
though God wants us as His own.*

*In the people’s mouth the Word tells  
what the world has never seen;  
when the Word sounds in the heart’s depth,  
only hearts know what it means;  
for the bowstrings of the spirit  
and the flaming heart’s sweet lyric  
are the echo of God’s Word.*

-N.F.S. Grundtvig

Throughout the gospels, the scribes and the Pharisees follow Christ around in order to mock Him and to tally up His transgressions against the law. When He tells them why He heals people on the Sabbath and why He eats with publicans and sinners, the scribes and the Pharisees never listen to His explanations. They are not interested, because they have only one concern – their own power. And Christ is a threat to their power. Some of the scribes and Pharisees might even have suspected that Christ was indeed the Son of God, but that doesn’t matter to them. It is this world, and this world only, that they care about. The modern scribes and Pharisees in the liberal-conservative camps have applied the sneer and the tally sheet of transgressions against the liberals’ law to the antique Europeans who gave their hearts to Christ. “Seek and ye shall find.” The friends of the man who was sick with the palsy found a way to bring their friend to Christ. They lowered him down from a hole they made in the ceiling. Is it really so difficult to find the Son of the living God if we go to the heart of old Europe? Isn’t He the moral essence of that civilization? We must have a ground to stand on, the words ‘people’ and ‘the fatherland’ must be our connection to the God who enters human hearts. My God, who is Jesus Christ, and my people, who are the antique Europeans, formed a union of hearts with Christ. Who shall sever us from that union? Certainly not the liberals, and certainly not their conservative brethren. The bonds of the heart should never be broken. And they shall not be broken. Outside of those bonds is cold, merciless death – within those bonds is mercy, love, and life. +

# The Great Liberal Tribunal

June 29, 2019

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Good ground of Christian culture, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens, N.F.S. Grundtvig



In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. – John 1:1

The liberals demonize Christian Europe, and the intellectual Christians say there never was a Christian Europe. But despite the liberals' demonization and the intellectual Christians' denial, I maintain that the antique Europeans, those men and women who predated the 20<sup>th</sup> century, were the "good ground" that "did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred." The colored barbarians, the liberals, and the intellectual Christians constitute the three different kinds of ground upon which the "good seed" could not grow. First there are the people who, having heard the word, allowed Satan to "taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts." Then there are the people who were the stony ground; they at first received the word "with gladness," but they "have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended." And the third group are those who receive the word "sown among thorns; such as hear the word, And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful."

What all three groups of people have in common is that they lack the "good ground" – they lack hearts of flesh receptive to the Word made flesh. Is it possible for a people whose ancestors were once the "good ground" to become once again the "good ground" upon which our Lord built His church? That is the question for the Hamlets of Europe.

Let me refer to a piece of folklore. A cosmopolitan was lost in the backwoods of Maine (it could be any backwoods you choose). He pulls up to an old farmhouse, knocks at the door, and asks the farmer who opens it, "How do I get to Bangor from here?" The farmer replies, "If I was going to Bangor I wouldn't start from here." If you intended to build a Christian culture, you wouldn't start to build within the confines of Liberaldom, but like the lost cosmopolitan we are here, so we must start from here.

Liberaldom was built by Europeans who came to hate, like the followers of Caiaphas, the Word made flesh. The intellectual Christians refused to oppose the liberals because the Word of God had not taken root in their hearts; when the persecution came, in the form of "you are stupid" and/or "you are racist," the intellectual Christians caved in to liberalism. There is no way we, as a people, can return to Christ unless we circumcise our hearts and ask Him to make us the "good ground." Then, in the midst of Liberaldom, we will see the quicksand of Satan become the "good ground" of Christian Europe once again.

Satan has become the ruler of the European world (the non-European world always belonged to Satan) by destroying, through the theologians, the heart to heart connection between God and man. Both the Roman Catholic theologians and the Protestant theologians decided that God could not enter human hearts, because human hearts were sinful. God was only able to enter special human minds – their minds – and those special minds could tell the sin-laden people all about God. But God's word is meant for human hearts. Words from the heart are the substance of all our sacred bonds in life. If we cannot speak the language of love from the heart, how can we love?

*If a heathen language – let us say, Chinese, though I know not with how much or little right – did not have the words and expressions for the invisible yet living God as the Lord of all things visible, then the Spirit of Christ could not possibly reveal either itself or the Word of God's mercy in that language. To reveal oneself and divine truth to someone can only happen through words that are known and can be appropriated, making that person aware of God and the divine, the invisible, and the eternal—which is what these things are in truth. – N.F.S. Grundtvig, Human Comes First*

The Bible is not the living word of God if it comes to us from the minds of theologians, nor are the church documents the living word of God if they come to us as the gospel according to the Illuminati. The scientizing of man started with the scientizing of God. There is a direct line between the Christian scholastics and the modern day psychologists, anthropologists, and sociologists who want to scientize our language so that there is no poetic content left in our culture. Once the poetic heart of our language is eliminated, there will be no spiritual contact between man and man and there will be no spiritual contact between God and man. All will be "cheerless, dark and deadly." That is not quite accurate; it is more accurate to say that all is "cheerless, dark and deadly." Western man has entered the anesthetized stage of European history in which the European people must be anesthetized by the superficialities of materialism and/or the opiates of drugs and alcohol. The spiritual realm of life is not even a shadow on the wall, it has disappeared in the mists of our forgotten history. Never to return again? We shall see; what once existed can exist again.

The bards who came from the "good ground" of Christian Europe and did not reject their people, bards such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens, tell us stories about the interaction between Christ and His people. But I am only speaking of those bards who wrote from a heart connected to their people. I am not speaking of poets such as Shelley and Byron who made a conscious decision to stand, like Satan and the theologians, apart from their people. There are many works from the heart of Christian Europe that speak to us still if we would open our hearts to the Word made flesh. Let us look at Dickens' masterpiece *Great Expectations* as a for-instance, not with the mind of a post-Christian literary critic, but with the heart of an antique European. Pip's journey from light to darkness and back to the light can be our journey. He has a home, a Christian home, because of Joe Gargery who helps offset the cruelty of Pip's older sister who is "bringing him up by hand." But once he has contact with the 'higher' intellectual culture of Miss Havisham and Estella, he can no longer be content with his home:

*It is a most miserable thing to feel ashamed of home. There may be black ingratitude in the thing, and the punishment may be retributive and well deserved; but that it is a miserable thing, I can testify.*

*Home had never been a very pleasant place to me, because of my sister's temper. But, Joe had sanctified it, and I had believed in it. I had believed in the best parlor as a most elegant saloon; I had believed in the front door, as a mysterious portal of the Temple of State whose solemn opening was attended with a sacrifice of roast fowls; I had believed in the kitchen as a chaste though not magnificent apartment; I had believed in the forge as the glowing road to manhood and independence. Within a single year all this was changed. Now it was all coarse and common, and I would not have had Miss Havisham and Estella see it on any account.*

When we became ashamed of our racial home, in which we knew our Lord through his people who believed in the Word made flesh, we became the unpeople without souls to call our own. The way a man speaks about God reveals how he feels about God and his people. Do the theologians speak of Christ as St. Paul spoke about Christ? Do the theologians speak of Christ as Christ spoke of Himself? If our faith is in the theologians and the theologians' church, our faith is not rooted in the "good ground," which is the European people when they had hearts of flesh, it is rooted in the thorns and stony ground, which allows the devil to enter into a man's heart.

The liberals are currently putting the finishing touches on the de-Christianization of the European people. The [BBC News](#) notes that Facebook "has agreed to give the names of French users who are suspected of using hate speech on its platform to the courts when requested." And what, according to the great liberal tribunal, is hate speech? "Illegal hate speech is defined by the European Commission as public conduct that incites violence or hatred to groups of people defined by characteristics such as race, religion, and ethnic origin." Let us translate that doublespeak: It is forbidden to say anything against the forces of evil who are intent on destroying every last vestige of the people who once believed in the Word made flesh. Every blasphemy against the God of the antique Europeans shall be permitted, and every atrocity, no matter how cruel and merciless, committed against white people shall be permitted, but there shall be no criticism or resistance, in word or deed, to the liberals' purge of the white Christ-bearing race. Our theologians, the church men, gave up their defense of Christ and His people many years ago. Who will speak a word in His and their behalf now?

"In the beginning was the Word." The devil knows that. That is why the liberals, who are under the influence of Satan, attack any manifestation of the Word made flesh. We must not abandon that word. We must love our people and our God with hearts of flesh, and we must express that love with words that come from the heart, not with the words of the theologians and the psychologists, which are devil words used to destroy our heart-to-heart connection to the living God. Let me return to Pip, of *Great Expectations*. He returns to the God of his ascending race and to the love of his racial and familial hearth fire through the love of a repentant sinner. At the deathbed of that repentant sinner, Pip unites his love for his benefactor, the repentant sinner, with our Lord's love for all repentant sinners. And he uses the language of love:

*With a last faint effort, which would have been powerless but for my yielding to it and assisting it, he raised my hand to his lips. Then, he gently let it sink upon his breast again, with his own hands lying on it. The placid look at the white ceiling came back, and passed away, and his head dropped quietly on his breast.*

*Mindful, then, of what we had read together, I thought of the two men who went up into the Temple to pray, and I knew there were no better words that I could say beside his bed, than "O Lord, be merciful to him a sinner!"*

If we unite our love for our people to His love, the love that passeth the knowledge of the theologians, the philosophers, and the psychologists, we will not perish as a people nor will He leave us bereft of comfort in our battle against the pestilence of liberalism, which commands us to walk in darkness and die at the hands of Satan.

St. Paul enjoins us to, "Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." And what is the whole armor of God? Is it the knowledge of the theologians? No, it is the Word made flesh. It is the knowledge of a heart connected to Him. We face an enemy in the liberals, much crueler than the cruel tyrants of the Old Testament, such as Darius and Nebuchadnezzar. We face a post-Christian enemy that hates Christ and His people with a fury that can only come from one source. Our ancient foe doth indeed seek to work us woe. The triumph of liberalism is his triumph. There is only one defense against the merciless, satanic assault of the liberals. We must unequivocally commit our hearts to the Word made flesh, while forsaking the scientized culture of death, championed by the liberals and the theological purveyors of Christless Christianity. We stand with Daniel in the lion's den and with all the Europeans, our honored dead, who saw the living God with hearts of flesh. +

# Surviving the Tempest of Liberalism

July 6, 2019

Categories: Democracy, Faithful hearts, Homeland, Religion of Satan



The day goes by like a shadow o'er the heart. – Stephen Collins Foster

In France they have their Bastille Day, and in America we have our 4<sup>th</sup> of July. In both cases the celebrations are grounded in the satanic principles of “liberty, equality, fraternity.” Liberty from what? From all restraints placed upon us by the living God. Equality? Yes, an equality for the people, but “the people” as defined by the Illuminati. And who is our fraternal brother? It is Satan.

America was the first breakaway nation, the first nation of Europeans who broke away from the European commonwealth of Christian nations in order to “form a more perfect union.” France and the rest of the European nations soon followed in America’s unholy train. The Southern people’s revolt in the 1860s was the revolt of a Christian people trying to hold onto their filial relationship to God and their familial relationship to their kith and kin against the dictates of a governing body that demanded a universality based on the worship of Baal. The weakness of the Southern revolt was that it was grounded in the assumption that “the Constitution has been sabotaged,” rather than, “the Constitution was penned in hell.” Let us now proceed, in this the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the century that should use the phrase “In the year of Satan”, under the correct assumption that the document penned in hell and the principles emitting from that document must be opposed by Christian Europeans.

We must see that the destruction of the white race has been codified into law in the European nations. All the utopian nations of Europe are conceived in liberty from God and dedicated to the proposition that the white race and the Christ of old Europe are evil. And conversely, all non-whites and all non-Christian religions are good and pure. The liberals fight to make sure that their satanic republic “shall long endure.”

You can’t stop the great liberal purge of the Christ-bearing race by begging the liberals to go back to a less virulent form of the democratic cancer. Once the cancer has spread, you can only fight it and kill it; you can’t go back to its first stage. The Trump presidency is a perfect example of the futility of trying to go back to a higher position on the slippery slope that leads to hell. Under Trump’s presidency, the Mexican invasion of the United States has not been stopped, but that is not Trump’s fault. He has done more than any other president tried to do or ever will do to stop the Mexican invasion of the United States. His efforts have failed miserably because you can’t stop an invasion sanctioned by a liberal elite that hates all things white and Christian by invoking the principles of that same white-hating, Christ-hating elite. Flesh and blood people are invading the United States, just as flesh and blood people are invading the European nations. The invasions cannot be stopped by an appeal to an abstract belief in the democratic way. The democratic way is a tool of the devil, a tool the liberal elite uses to destroy whiteness. Could Ganelon have been expected to save the Christians whom he plotted to destroy? Trump cannot fire upon the invaders because his own party and the Democratic Party would have him removed from office. And the harpies of the so-called conservative right, such as Ann Coulter, who have been screaming at Trump to do something about the invasion, would join in the chorus of people demanding his removal from office if he actually used violence to stop the invasion. Only a people who believe they are a people with a homeland will defend their people and their homeland.

White people do not believe they are a people, nor do they believe that they have a racial home. Africa for blacks, Europe for blacks and Moslems, and the United States for blacks, Moslems, and Mexicans. But Europe for whites? Or the United States for whites? That is racist. The Pope’s heart bleeds for the Mexican “refugees” who drowned, but does his heart bleed for whites in South Africa and the European nations who have been murdered and dispossessed by the black Africans, the Mexicans, and the Moslems? No, his heart does not bleed for those white victims, because the Pope’s heart belongs to the great hater of the white race, his fraternal brother, Lucifer.

Nothing good in America came from our Constitution, which was written by Enlightenment agnostics who held Christ in contempt. What was good in America stemmed from the customs and manners that were born and nurtured in Christian Europe. Those customs and manners could not stand up against the liberal Illuminati once the foundation of those customs and manners, which was and is faith in Christ as true God and true Man, was rent asunder. The much vaunted light of American liberty and justice was not a light, it was the beginning of a new European era, the era of the European people’s descent into the darkness of liberalism, which constitutes, then and now, the enthronement of Satan in the nations that once recognized Christ as their King.

Our home must be more than the place where we live. It must be sacred ground because those whom we love most and those who love us dwell there in communion with the living God. “What God has joined together let no man rent asunder.” We have allowed the liberals and their confederates in organized Christian Jewry to rent asunder the sacred bonds that bind us to our kith and kin and our God. The day of Christian Europe has become the night of Liberalism.

Stephen Foster, the great Northern apologist for the Southern people, put it quite well: “The day goes by like a shadow o’er the heart...” We can’t ever be a people again, we can’t return home, unless we love our people in and through Christ. Like “God’s spies” we can make that observation, but we can’t will “the love that once was there.” We can’t become Christians for the pragmatic purpose of restoring our people. We must actually believe, as our people once believed, in the suffering Servant. Then we will feel as they felt about their people and their homeland. When I was a schoolboy, I memorized the poem, “[Marco Bozzaris](#)” by Fitz-Green Ralston (1790-1867). The poem tells the story of Bozzaris’s heroic resistance to the Turkish invaders of his homeland.

*An hour passed on—the Turk awoke;  
That bright dream was his last;  
He woke—to hear his sentries shriek,  
“To arms! they come! the Greek! the Greek!”  
He woke—to die midst flame, and smoke,  
And shout, and groan, and sabre-stroke,  
And death-shots falling thick and fast  
As lightnings from the mountain-cloud;  
And heard, with voice as trumpet loud,*

*Bozzaris cheer his band:*

*"Strike—till the last armed foe expires;  
Strike—for your altars and your fires;  
Strike—for the green graves of your sires;  
God—and your native land!"*

*They fought—like brave men, long and well;  
They piled that ground with Moslem slain,  
They conquered—but Bozzaris fell,  
Bleeding at every vein.  
His few surviving comrades saw  
His smile when rang their proud hurrah,  
And the red field was won;  
Then saw in death his eyelids close  
Calmly, as to a night's repose,  
Like flowers at set of sun.*

Such story poems used to be the birthright of every European. I still remember how my heart stirred within me when I recited the lines, "Strike—till the last armed foe expires; Strike—for your altars and your fires; Strike—for the green graves of your sires; God—and your native land!" All that schoolboy stuff is now considered racist and unchristian. But we must assert, against the liberals and the churchmen, that pietas is not racist. Why did our sovereign Lord take flesh and dwell among us if He thought that our human ties of affection and love were not our connections to the living God? The attack on those human ties is an attack on our God. Who shall separate us from the love of Jesus Christ? The liberals and the churchmen tell us they shall separate us from the love of Jesus Christ by separating us from our people. As for me and my house, we shall serve the Lord, by loving our people in and through the incarnate Lord.

A friend recently told me of a television show on the History Channel called *Ancient Aliens*, which claims to tell 'true' stories of aliens from other planets who have visited earth and founded civilizations here. Only a scientific minded people, who are the most credulous of all people, could believe such rot. The Christ story, which begins with the creation of the world in seven days and proceeds through the temptation in the Garden of Eden, the Great Flood, the Incarnation and then the Crucifixion and Resurrection of our Savior is deemed too fantastical to believe, yet scientific 'histories' of aliens are presented as fact to the credulous, superstitious moderns. The foolishness of God is difficult to believe in, but His foolishness strikes a chord in our heart that helps us surmount our unbelief. Do the gods of the science-minded liberals – the negroes, the aliens from other planets, or the bushmen from the Amazon jungle — strike a chord in our heart? When will the European people return home? They will return home when they use the visionary organ of sight, the human heart, instead of their logical, credulous brains, which see only what appears on the surface of life but fail to see what dwells below the surface in the depths of the human heart.

Faith binds us to God and our people; it is the reason we fight in defense of hearth and nation. A people devoid of faith will not fight. The European people no longer believe in the same God their ancestors believed in, and as a consequence they are being overrun by barbarian hordes who do have faith; they believe in their heathen gods while the Europeans do not believe in Christ. I do not see any future for the European people except a future of slavery and extinction. Unless? There is only one 'unless,' the same 'unless' that has always been our only hope. Christ promised us He would be with us always. I do not see how we can progress beyond our faith in His promise. Why is the worship of Baal, under the mantle of science and the noble savage, a progression from darkness to light? If we ignore the experts who tell us there never was a Christian Europe, we will discover, in our past, a people who loved much. Through those people and their God we will come to see life "feelingly," again, and we will prevail against the wickedness and snares of the devil and his liberal minions.

Human beings, despite what the Christian Gnostics and the liberals tell us, are the only medium for God's revelation. He comes to human hearts, not to Platonic minds. His word planted in human hearts is the true light of the world. The liberals' attack on our racial hearth fire is Satan's attack on the Word made flesh. If we resist that assault, if we strike for our altars and our hearth fires, we will stand with the Lord God who did not disdain to take on human flesh. "Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God. Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her: That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory. For thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. And when ye see this, your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb: and the hand of the Lord shall be known toward his servants, and his indignation toward his enemies.:—" [Isaiah 66: 9-14](#) +

# The Image of the Beast Shall Die

July 13, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke



His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in colour to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. And I Daniel alone saw the vision: for the men that were with me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. – [Daniel 10: 6-7](#)

And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength. And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; – [Revelation 1: 15-18](#)

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. – [Revelation 20: 12](#)

The 4<sup>th</sup> of July celebrations in America always resemble a macabre dance of death, but they appeared particularly ghastly this year in lieu of the fact that the whites in America are facing a mass invasion of Africans (who are being flown in), Mexicans, and Moslems at our southern border that makes the Moslem invasion of the European countries seem small in comparison. Every time a new influx of barbarians violates the British nation, there is a segment of American ‘tough guys’ who gloat over the Brit’s failure to protect their nation. “That can’t happen here,” the tough guys jeer, “because we have our guns.” Well, it seems something greater than guns is necessary to stop the invasion of the barbarian hordes. Without the will to fight, mere guns are worthless. And without pietas – ‘I will defend my own’ – white people will be and are defenseless against an invading army that is aided and abetted by the liberal rulers of our nation.

I am glad I still can purchase a gun without going on the black market. If a white burglar tries to violate my home, I might be allowed to shoot him in self-defense, but all the guns in the world, owned by white grazers who do not believe that whites have a racial hearth fire or a God of their ascending race, will be useless against an invading army that will not be deterred by abstractions such as ‘democracy’ and ‘peaceful co-existence.’ Broomsticks and garden hoes in the hands of a people with pietas are more effective weapons of self-defense than guns in the hands of people who believe in democracy and the rights of man. We are facing a crisis of biblical proportions that can only be dealt with by a people who believe God still speaks to them through His word.

There is no dichotomy between the Old Testament and the New Testament. Christ speaks to us through His prophets in the Old Testament, and He speaks to us directly in the New Testament. The divine charity is always there for those who seek God in their heart. Throughout the Old Testament we see the same depressing pattern: the people fall away from God, and they are brought down by the barbarian hordes – the Egyptians, the Assyrians, the Babylonians, the Persians, etc. There are brief restorations under good kings who listen to the prophets, kings such as Hezekiah, and his great grandson, Josiah, but the bad kings outnumber the good kings and eventually the people of Judah become a captive people. I am not suggesting that the captivity of the European people is exactly the same as the captivity of the Jews during the Babylonian captivity, but I do think there are spiritual parallels between the two captivities that we should not ignore.

The prophets brought the word of God to the people. They enjoined God’s people to take His word into their hearts. When the people’s hearts were hardened against His word, when they returned to Baal, they became the slaves of the heathens. The European people took Christ into their hearts and championed Him against heathendom. They fell away from Christ every time the churchmen managed to convince them that the minds of the theologians were greater than the heart of God. The constant battle between the intellects of men and the heart of God finally ended with the victory of the men of intellect. The 20<sup>th</sup> century marked the beginning of the Babylonian captivity of the European people. But that is where the spiritual parallel ends. The European people, unlike the Jews of the diaspora, did not and do not acknowledge their captivity. They continue to worship Baal through science, democracy, and the ‘noble savage.’ And the liberal rulers of the European people were not, and are not, as humane as tyrants such as Nebuchadnezzar and Darius. There is no foe deadlier than the post-Christian liberal, because the post-Christian liberal has all the zeal of a Christian European, but it is now a zeal for everything satanic, everything opposed to Christ’s reign of charity.

Tommy Robinson is going back to jail for opposing Islamic rapists, Jared Taylor was banned from Poland and the rest of the European nations for speaking of white solidarity, and whites throughout the European world are being denied the right to even speak of white people as a distinct race of people worthy of surviving as a people. All this has come about because white people have returned, through science and democracy, to the worship of Baal. The Jared Taylors of neo-paganism offer us no solution to white genocide, because they enjoin us, from within the cult of science and democracy, which is the worship of Baal, to oppose white genocide with the same democratic and scientific anti-vision of existence that has brought on white genocide. The Jared Taylors of Europe want to avoid Jesus Christ without going over the cliff with the swine. But that is not possible – you must stand with Christ or go over the cliff with the swine.

Trump cannot do what is necessary to stop the barbarian invasion of his nation, because he lacks an integral faith. He has built one altar to Jesus Christ and another altar to science and democracy. That is not sufficient. The devil will not share his throne with Jesus Christ. Trump was elected under the mantle of Satan – he cannot move against Satan and his people from within the bowels of Satandom. We need leaders who are not bound by the rules of science and democracy, we need leaders who seek the living God in their hearts and then act on the faith that is in their hearts. Would Alfred permit the barbarian hordes to invade his nation? No, he would not. But Alfred did not believe in the worship of Baal. He believed, as the prophets believed, in the living God.

God did not grant eternal life on this earth nor did He grant success in every battle to the kings who followed His will. But He did, and He will, sustain His people when they follow His will. They will not be overwhelmed by the heathens as a people, nor will they die alone and in despair as individuals. That is God’s promise to His people, and He has kept that promise. Instead of trying to organize democratic pep rallies for whites, white leaders should be enjoining their people to return to God. But of course our “leaders” do not believe that Christ is the living God. They believe in two-thirds of the liberals’ trinity — they believe in the abstract intellect of man, which is the father, and they believe in science, which is the Holy Ghost. They do not believe in the liberals’ savior, which is the noble black savage. Their unbelief infuriates the liberals, but it can’t really hurt them because two-thirds of a faith is not a fighting faith.

When the Jared Taylors of Satandom are rebuked by their fellow liberals for their unbelief in the noble savage, they take their case to the first person of the Trinity, the abstract intellect. And much to their surprise, they always lose in that court. Why are they surprised? Don't they see the image of the noble savage emblazoned on the courtroom door when they enter that tribunal? The verdict of the liberal court has been predetermined: the white man is always guilty as charged.

Neo-pagans, such as Arthur Kemp, tell us that the whites in South Africa and the British in India were overwhelmed by demographics. The Europeans came to those nations and through the practice of Christian charity they decreased the death rates and increased the birth rates of the indigenous colored populations. As a consequence the whites in those hostile lands were outnumbered and defeated. But wait a minute! Does it make that much difference whether whites are outnumbered 100,000 to 1 or 200,000 to 1? I would suggest that the whites in India and in South Africa were *not* defeated by demographics, they were defeated by their own liberalism. They lost the will to fight because they lost their faith in the God who defends His people against the heathens' arrows that flieth by day and the liberals' pestilence that walketh in darkness. The only demographics that matter are the demographics of faith. When whites cease to believe in the living God, when the vast majority of whites worship Baal, they will be defeated by the colored heathens even if they outnumber the colored heathens. Nationalist leaders who bid us look to democracy, science, and improved breeding through animal husbandry in order to combat white genocide are not white leaders. They want liberalism without the plunge over the cliff with the swine. But that is always where those who reject Christ end up – they go off the cliff with the swine.

The 20<sup>th</sup> century was a century of transition for the European people. They progressed from an ‘image of God’ culture to an ‘image of the beast in man’ culture. The liberals held the reins of power and they used that power to attack God through His people.

*The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.*

– [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

Look at our art in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Does it make us feel connected to a God above nature? Do we see the image of God in man? No, we see the image of the beast in man. And that new image, the image of the beast in man, became codified and written into law in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Feminism, negro worship, gay pride and every other perversion have become virtues in the ‘beast in man’ culture of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. How can men and women who accept the ‘beast in man’ culture of modernity resist the arrows of the colored barbarians and the pestilence of liberalism? They can’t and they won’t, because mere beasts who worship the man-gods of nature, the noble colored savages, do not have any love for their own people. They only live through the man-gods of nature.

God and God alone will judge the intentions of the European missionaries who tried to convert the colored heathens, but whatever their intentions were the end result was that the European missionaries turned away from their own culture, the ‘image of God in man’ culture, in order to embrace the ‘beast in man’ culture of the colored heathens. And with a missionary zeal the churchmen preached their new gospel, which is an anti-gospel, the gospel of Satan, to the European people. Every ‘charitable’ outreach in church and state is now directed toward the aid of the colored heathen. But is that aid given as alms to the needy should be given, in the spirit of Christian charity? No, it is not. The ‘aid’ to the colored heathen is given as tribute to the man-gods of the new gospel of the anti-Christ, the gospel of the ‘beast in man.’

There are always a few intellectuals who can live with two-thirds of the new trinity, the abstracted intellect and science. But the bulk of mankind, particularly European mankind, need a Savior. If they cannot believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior, they will turn to the noble savages of color. How then can the European grazers oppose the barbarian invasion? They can’t kill their gods, so they must plead with their gods to be merciful. But there is only mercy in the living God, the God of the prophets, the God of Daniel, the God of St. Paul, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, who is the beginning and the end. The European who does not forsake his people, the European who refuses to worship the ‘beast in man,’ is the only force on earth that can resist the barbarian invasion of his nation, whether that nation is in Europe or North America. Such a European has that within, the grace of God, which enables him to stand against a multitude of colored heathens and liberals. If God’s image in man perishes there will be no mercy on the face of the earth, but the liberals’ victory need not be the final victory. If we search our hearts for the living God, we can prevail over the liberals and the colored barbarians. It has been done before. It only seems like the liberals have won because the Europeans have lost their vision of the God-Man and replaced that vision with the man-gods of color. “I know not seems.” +

# Unstudied from the Heart

July 20, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Fear of racist label, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Mackay, Nathaniel Hawthorne



Now as he was speaking with me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright. And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be. – [Daniel 8: 18-19](#)

Some dwell in deserts; seek and inhabit of their own accord homes in dark places; they wait for the heavenly home. Often he who grudges them life brings hateful fear upon them, shows them terror, at times empty splendor; he, the crafty slayer, has power over both; he persecutes lone-dwellers. Angels stand before them ready with the weapons of the spirit; they forget not to give aid; they protect the lives of holy men; they know their gladness is with God. These are the tried warriors who serve the King who never withdraws the reward from them who are faithful in love. – [Guthlac](#)

In his short story “Earth’s Holocaust,” Nathaniel Hawthorne depicts a community of Europeans – “but whether in the time past or time to come is a matter of little or no moment” – who decide that they want to rid themselves of all the “worn-out trumpery” of the past in order to build a more perfect world. In order to accomplish their “noble” end, they build a huge bonfire and start heaping the family crests, the military decorations, the great literary works, and everything else connected to old Europe into the bonfire. And finally they cast the Bible into the fire:

*In the general destruction of books already described, a holy volume, that stood apart from the catalogue of human literature, and yet, in one sense, was at its head, had been spared. But the Titan of innovation,—angel or fiend, double in his nature, and capable of deeds befitting both characters,—at first shaking down only the old and rotten shapes of things, had now, as it appeared, laid his terrible hand upon the main pillars which supported the whole edifice of our moral and spiritual state. The inhabitants of the earth had grown too enlightened to define their faith within a form of words, or to limit the spiritual by any analogy to our material existence. Truths which the heavens trembled at were now but a fable of the world's infancy. Therefore, as the final sacrifice of human error, what else remained to be thrown upon the embers of that awful pile, except the book which, though a celestial revelation to past ages, was but a voice from a lower sphere as regarded the present race of man? It was done! Upon the blazing heap of falsehood and worn-out truth—things that the earth had never needed, or had ceased to need, or had grown childishly weary of—fell the ponderous church Bible, the great old volume that had lain so long on the cushion of the pulpit, and whence the pastor's solemn voice had given holy utterance on so many a Sabbath day. There, likewise, fell the family Bible, which the long-buried patriarch had read to his children,—in prosperity or sorrow, by the fireside and in the summer shade of trees,—and had bequeathed downward as the heirloom of generations. There fell the bosom Bible, the little volume that had been the soul's friend of some sorely tried child of dust, who thence took courage, whether his trial were for life or death, steadfastly confronting both in the strong assurance of immortality.*

*All these were flung into the fierce and riotous blaze; and then a mighty wind came roaring across the plain with a desolate howl, as if it were the angry lamentation of the earth for the loss of heaven's sunshine; and it shook the gigantic pyramid of flame and scattered the cinders of half-consumed abominations around upon the spectators. – “Earth’s Holocaust”*

The modern, scientized Europeans, clerical and lay, will respond to Hawthorne’s parable with ridicule: “We still have Bibles, we still have our faith — we have just progressed to a purer Christianity.” But we few who still see life as a parable can see that Hawthorne was describing liberalism. He saw the end result of the liberals’ progression to a ‘higher’ stage of existence: it leads to the dethronement of Christ the King and the enthronement of Satan. Our present anti-civilization is the embodiment of a “desolate howl.”

The fundamentalists, if there are any left, were and are right to oppose the liberals’ assertion that, “Man is a monkey, therefore we must all love one another.” But the liberals’ doctrine of progress entails so much more than Darwinian evolution. The same evangelicals who oppose evolution have accepted the liberals’ progressive view of democracy as part of mankind’s march to the light. And they have grafted the nation state of Israel onto their new and improved version of Christianity. So even the avowed “Biblical” Christians have decided to be very unbiblical in the face of liberal progress. And I need not mention the Catholic churchmen who wallow in the slough of liberalism like pigs in slop.

The modern European must be a repentant Samson in terms of his spiritual strength. He has the accumulated weight of over a century of liberal progress on his shoulders, which he must throw off and stand before the liberal world ready to do battle with the Philistines of liberalism. He must leave behind the cult of, “I am not a racist, please love me.” No matter how obsequious, no matter how subservient the white cultist is, the liberals and the colored barbarians will not love him. They haven’t the heart for love, because they have forsaken the God of love. If you join the liberals in their ‘progression’ toward the light of science, democracy, and the new and purer Christianity, you will join them in the darkness of the kingdom of eternal night where Satan dwells, prowling about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

If we don’t consciously reject the liberals’ progressive view of history, we will be swept along with the liberals into hell. The liberal is neither Greek nor Christian; he rejects the cyclic history of the pagan Greeks as well as the Christian eschatology. The liberals’ doctrine of progress is, like every aspect of liberalism, a perversion of Christianity. The antique Christian believed that God entered human history at one particular date in history, and he believed that God would once again enter human history at the end of time. He did not believe, as the liberal believes, that mankind was evolving toward moral perfection, a moral perfection that would lead to the kingdom of God on earth. The hatred of all things white is connected with the two conflicting views of history, the Christian view and the liberal view. You cannot, as the 20<sup>th</sup> century and 21<sup>st</sup> century ‘Christians’ tried to do, and are still trying to do, blend the Christian view of history with the liberals’ view; you cannot progress toward Babylon and still hold on to your Christian faith. In order to live and thrive in our modern Babylon you must either completely renounce Christ, as the liberals have done, or you must reject the Christ of old Europe, claiming He was a false Aslan, and graft Christ onto the nation state of Israel, Islam, and the sacred Negro. If ‘racism’ becomes the unpardonable sin, which it has become in all Christian circles, then the modern Christian who wants to move with the liberal times can feel justified in rejecting the racist antique Europeans and their antiquated Christ, in order to embrace the new blended Christianity that our Lord condemns in the book of *Revelation*.

C. S. Lewis was groping toward the light when he wrote *Pilgrim’s Regress*. He realized that any man or woman born in the 20<sup>th</sup> century had to return to the faith of the European people prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the century in which science triumphed over Christ. We can all, if we look at our racial history, see Satan’s myth of man’s progression toward moral perfection on

this earth. Let me tell a tale of two grandmothers, my grandmothers. My paternal grandmother was a first generation American of Welsh descent. Her father started working in the mines at age 8 as a breaker boy and worked as a coal miner until his death at age 60. Her mother died before her father, and she, at age 14, became the woman of the house until she married at age 18. Her formative years were between 1900 and 1914, the years before World War I, which were culturally part of the 19<sup>th</sup> century. She never left that cultural milieu. When her church started preaching something different from what she had heard in her childhood, she stopped going to church. And she never — and this is essential — respected academia. Was her distrust of academia blind ignorance or was it a deeply ingrained prejudice against an alien ideology that attacked the hearth fire from which she derived her spiritual sustenance? I would say it was the latter. My grandmother had wise blood; she clung to her little Welsh hearth fire her entire life. I loved her then and now.

All that we know of faith and His divine charity we know because of the faith and love of men and women like my grandmother, who stood by the faith bequeathed to them at their racial and familial hearth fire, which was and is the faith of old Europe. My father went to college on the G.I. Bill, and the education he received separated him from his mother's faith, but there was something vital he retained from his mother who refused to progress: "Whenever you pray, always pray in Jesus's name." That, more than anything else he ever learned in academic or in the modern churches, sustained my father in the hour of his death. One thinks of the words penned by Charles Mackay:

*A nameless man, amid the crowd  
That thronged the daily mart,  
Let fall a word of hope and love,  
Unstudied from the heart,  
A whisper on the tumult thrown,  
A transitory breath,  
It raised a brother from the dust,  
It saved a soul from death.  
O germ! O fount! O word of love!  
O thought at random cast!  
Ye were but little at the first,  
But mighty at the last.*

The love that was "unstudied from the heart," which came from our born of woman Savior, was the love bequeathed to our people in the days before the European people became too intelligent for the unstudied love from the heart. Everything must now be studied or it is not real. But that is contrary to reality. Traditionalist movements based on an intellectual adherence to abstract systems are not the type of tradition we need. We need a heartfelt faith, we need our Jesus, who lived in the hearts of the antique Europeans and will come to the hearts of the men and women who 'regress' to old Europe.

I won't dwell on my other grandmother. She went the way of church and state, the way of the intelligent people. As the church shifted, so did her faith. She lacked something in her soul, the spiritual backbone to resist the intelligence gambit of the liberals. The way of the third dumb brother, who embraced the foolishness of God, not the modern way, was not the intelligent way, and my maternal grandmother, like so many de-souled Europeans, succumbed to the fear of being insufficiently progressive.

We of the second, third, and fourth generations removed from the turn of the 19<sup>th</sup> century cannot simply remain faithful to the faith we received. We must regress; we must place ourselves firmly in old Europe and remain rooted at the hearth fires of our honored dead, the Europeans who loved Christ, "unstudied from the heart." A love that can be put under a microscope and examined is not love. The modern propensity to study God's love until it has become a non-love, and the modern propensity to study human love until it becomes mere biology, is a spiritual sickness. The scientizing of God and man always results in the disappearance of God from human hearts and the dissolution of the human personality.

The liberals know Jesus Christ as the demons knew Christ: "Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God." What is lacking in the demons' knowledge of Jesus Christ is what is lacking in the liberals' knowledge of Jesus Christ. Both sets of demons lack hearts of flesh, because they desire, then and now, the power of the illuminated knowledge of the natural world, rather than intimacy with the living God who imparts, through His connection to hearts of flesh, a knowledge greater than intellectual knowledge. Having rejected that greater knowledge, the liberals must cast everything white and Christian into Hawthorne's bonfire. And the intellectual Christians must join the liberals, they too must scream, "Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?" If they don't side with the liberals, they, who are like unto Caiaphas and Dostoyevsky's Grand Inquisitor, will be forced to give up their power, the power that comes with being the 'God dispensers,' the intelligent Illuminati who keep God enclosed in their golden box of knowledge. Hence the liberals and the Christian Illuminati are bound in wedlock, through the power of the abstract intellect, to science and the noble savage, and against the people that were connected to God, not through their enlightened intellects, but through their heartfelt love for the Savior who did not despise the Virgin's womb.

The bonfire of liberalism is still burning. The liberals have thrown everything directly connected to Christian Europe into the bonfire. Now they are proceeding to throw everything even tangentially connected to Christian Europe into the fire. The more conservative, democracy-loving liberals, whose hearts belong to the new order, men such as Geert Wilders and Donald Trump, are being thrown on the bonfire as well, because the liberals must destroy every semblance of a link between modern Europe and Christian Europe.

We must regress. The maxim, "You can't go back in time," is a maxim of liberalism. It refers to the material realm: it means that our scientific progress is the same as our moral progress. That is a lie. Morally we have 'progressed' beyond the morally depraved anti-civilizations of Babylon, Sodom, and Gomorrah. We must go back to incarnate Europe, the Europe that honored the Word made flesh.

I see no signs of any moral awakening of the European people. The love that once was there is gone. Is it really possible that the European people prefer the Babylonian night over the light of Christian Europe? Is the fear of that word 'racist' so great that it can separate us from the love of our own people and the love of our divine Savior? We need the strength of the repentant Samson and the faith of Daniel. Let us pray for that strength and that faith. +

# The Humanity of God and the Inhumanity of the Liberals

July 27, 2019

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Religion of Satan

Tags: N.F.S. Grundtvig



Can I then be so cold-hearted,  
think that under this same roof  
heartless men should play the master,  
daily give of evil proof,  
and baptize in worldly oceans  
human clay to devil's wiles,  
off'ring wine at Jesus' table  
to the god of murderous lies,  
who will bless the loss of souls?

-N. F. S. Grundtvig

The devil has chosen to attack Christ through liberalism. "If I can liberalize the European people, I can remove Christ from their hearts, and then I will have triumphed over Christ." Satan has triumphed over Christ in the cultural wars. His people, not Christ's people, rule Europe and the world. It is our task, the remnant band, to restore Christ the King to His rightful place. And failing that, it is our task to die faithful, fighting to the last man. Surely we can fight for Christ just as nobly and as fiercely as our ancestors fought for Odin.

It is the noble savage, championed by such 'lights' as Rousseau and Addison, that has given liberalism the anti-Savior that was and is necessary to keep Christ away from the European people. Christ is now a king in exile, forsaken by His people, who have tossed Him aside for new kings and new gods.

The ideologies of humanity which always necessitate the destruction of the greater part of white humanity need a Savior diametrically opposed to the Savior once championed by white Europeans. Christianity is the one and only faith that holds to the belief that the living God entered human history. The European people, when they accepted Christ, became a people with a Christian past. The story of Christ's presence in history became the history of the European people. The new ideologies, the Jacobin and communist ideologies, the ideologies of liberalism, must oppose the white race because the ideologues of liberalism believe in a future kingdom on earth purged of the evil ones, the people who championed an evil religion which poisoned the hearts and minds of the European people and impeded the liberals' march to the new enlightened world of humanity unchained.

If you demonize the European Christians in the name of a liberal future, be it a Christless future or a future with a purer, more radiant Christ cleansed of His European trappings, you have killed the image of the living God in His people and created a new God, made in the image of Satan. It is now a given amongst the liberals who rule the European nations that whites must be replaced by the people of color, because the people of color are noble and pure while the whites are evil and impure. And it is now a given in Christian circles that Christianity and white pietas, which the 'Christians' call racism, are incompatible. So the people who constituted the heart of the Christian church, the antique Europeans, are shoved aside as bad Christians. But who then are the 'good' Christians? Francis the Blasphemer? The new age advocates of Christian Judaism? Or is it the theological Christians who bid us look to their systems, which rent asunder our heart to heart connection to the living God so that we could know Him better through their enlightened minds?

In modern Europe, even in conservative circles, it is forbidden to link Christianity to Europe. That is racist. It is racist because... Why is it racist to state the truth? The liberals never tell us why. They don't have to give a reason for their liberalism because they are in power. Jefferson Davis wanted, after the war, to have his day in court, because he thought he would win in court. But the liberals were not about to give up a victory won on the battlefield in a court of justice. So it is with the modern liberals. They have won the cultural war, they don't have to explain why every white man who opposes any aspect of liberalism is damned as a racist. It is simply a given, a sacred given more mathematically certain, in the liberals' minds, than the givens in geometry.

What are we to make of the Christians who inhabit the buildings called churches? Why do they foam at the mouth like vicious attack dogs every time Europe and Christ are linked together? Is it because they have reached a higher, more purified state of being, have they ascended to heaven while still on earth? That is what they believe. But the truth of the matter is not what the purified Christians tell us it is. The modern purified Christians want all the benefits of a Christian culture without the sacrifices that are necessary to maintain a Christian culture. You cannot have liberalism and Christ. The modern anti-European Christians claim they reject European Christianity because the antique Europeans were racist. Were they racist because they loved their own people? Yes, the modern European Christians tell us, it is racist to love your own people — that is the meaning of the parable of the Good Samaritan. But is that the meaning of the parable? No, of course not. The post-Christian liberals, such as Francis the Blasphemer, interpret the Good Samaritan parable in the light of liberal ideology because they want the liberals to love them. The Good Samaritan does not invite the stranger on the road into his own house, he takes care of him on the road and leaves him at an inn. Nor does he seek out the muggers in order to invite them into his home so that he can worship them as they rob, rape, and murder his family members. But of course the professed Christians are not interested in Christ's truth. They want the love of the world, and the powers that be in the liberal world hate Christ and his people. The anti-Christian churchmen are the Amen chorus for the liberals. The liberals scream, 'racist' at the antique Europeans, and the churchmen scream, 'Amen.'

If the members of the liberals' Amen chorus were really Christian they would support the people who made the Incarnate Word part of their culture. Did the people of color ever know mercy or love before they were exposed to European culture? No, they did not. Yet in the name of their alleged love for the colored heathen, the Amen chorus wants to join with the liberals in order to eradicate the culture of the antique Europeans and destroy any and all whites who are still determined to stand by that cultural heritage. The Amen-ers and the liberals are constantly attacking the 'haters', which translates to people who hate the rule of Satan, who was, is, and ever shall be, the great hater. Liberalism is a religion of hate dedicated to the destruction of all things 'great and beautiful' that came from the antique Europeans' covenant with the God of love. There is no love in Liberaldom, there is only hatred for Christ and His people. Feminism, gay pride, negro worship, and so many other perversions have become sacred rights in Liberaldom, so again, I ask, do the rulers of such a world and their Amen chorus of 'Christians' have a right to condemn the antique Europeans for their alleged 'racism'? No, they do not have that right. Their heaven on earth is hell, and they are the hounds of hell, because they have denied their humanity and that denial makes them worse than beasts, it makes them devils.

*Devils both then and also now,  
when face to face with Jesus,  
say, 'Yes, we know you are God's Son,  
O, please do not destroy us!'  
But what they know they cannot trust,  
and with the Prince of Darkness must  
dwell, for he is their Father!*

*Human comes first and Christian next;  
on this truth they, misguided,  
both beasts and devils long baptized,  
themselves on Moors they prided,  
they called them 'wise,' though lost to Christ,  
and, while they mere right answers prized,  
left heathens to damnation!*

N. F. S. Grundtvig

The antique Europeans did not leave heathens to damnation because they loved their own people at their racial hearth fire, and the warmth of that European hearth fire extended to the hearth fires of the colored races. Without white pietas, there is only damnation for the whites *and* the people of color. Walt Disney's granddaughter recently condemned her grandfather as a racist. It is precisely that type of cowardly impiety, the hatred for white pietas, that has made white people and their new colored gods into the slaves of Satan. Those who truly love will endure to the end. We must counter the liberals' hatred of the white race with our love of our people in and through the Savior. If we cling to our humanity, the humanity revealed to us by the God who took on human flesh and dwelt among us, we will not go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberals, nor will we be overwhelmed by the barbarians of color.

It is not possible to prove to the liberals or their Amen chorus of purified Christians that you are not racist, because they are not concerned with the truth. They use the term 'racist' as an enemy pilot uses a bomb. The bomb is dropped because war has commenced after all diplomatic options have been exhausted. Trotsky coined the term 'racist' to deal with his enemies, the white Christians, he did not coin the term as a means of aiding colored heathens or making peace with whites. When whites stop condemning white pietas, when they stop desecrating their white progenitors, then, and only then, will they be on the road to recovery. Recovery from what? Recovery from the sickness unto death, the denial of their humanity and the denial of His divine humanity.

Samuel Johnson's dictum that a man who is not a liberal when he is young has no heart, and a man who is not a conservative when he is old has no head, is false. The mark of a Burkean conservative, who is the only true conservative, is that he has a heart. He does not permit the murder of his people for the sake of an abstract concept of humanity. It was Burke the conservative who cared about the victims of Robespierre's purges to cleanse the French Republic by killing everyone connected to Christian Europe. It is always the heartless creatures of liberalism, who love their mind-forged systems and hate humanity, who murder millions in the name of humanity.

The followers of Odin bent their knees to Christ because they saw, with the eyes of the heart, that the humanity of Odin was their link to the God who was greater than Odin, not because He was smarter than Odin, but because His heart was greater than even Odin's great heart. We are the people who love Christ because of His divinely human heart. We will fight to the last man for our racial hearth fire because He dwells there with our people. We must be what the liberals call racist, because we must love the human first, before we can know and love the living God, whose divine humanity sustains us in this world and the next. +

# Doubt and Faith

August 3, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Faithful hearts, Rationalism

Tags: Walter Scott



Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. – *Matthew 5: 4*

What are we to make of, “Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus”? When Jesus said that He intended to go into Judaea again, His disciples advised Him not to go there. “Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?” When Jesus makes it clear that He will go back to Judaea, Thomas says to his fellow disciples, “Let us also go, that we may die with him.” Is there any greater loyalty than that? Thomas knows Christ cannot hope to survive if He goes to Judaea, but nevertheless he decides to stand by Christ to the end. Yet that same Thomas, also called Didymus, declares, after the risen Lord appeared to the other disciples when Thomas was not present, “Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my fingers into the print of nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.” We know how that story ends:

*And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.* [John 20: 26-29](#)

Through all the Christian centuries the label “doubting Thomas” has been applied to those who lack faith. Is the label unfair? Well, Thomas does doubt His Lord. But would any of the other apostles have fully believed in Christ’s resurrection from the dead if they had not been present when He appeared to them in the flesh? There was one, and that one was John: “Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and believed.” Why John? Why did he see the empty tomb and believe? John saw and believed because he conquered his rationalism on the night of the last supper when he laid his head on Christ’s sacred heart. Thomas was not a moral pariah like Judas Iscariot, he loved much; he was willing to die for Christ. But he couldn’t completely believe till he saw the risen Lord. When he did see him in the flesh, he declared, “My Lord, and my God.” He wanted to believe, but he needed help to overcome his rationalism, and our Lord had compassion on him and gave him the help he needed. And then He speaks to us and tells us that we shall be blessed if we believe without having seen what Thomas saw, the risen Lord.

I’m at the age where death is no longer a mere abstraction to me. I’ve seen it close up in the seemingly lifeless faces of loved ones. “Is this the promised end?” My rationalism tells me, ‘yes’ – that horrid monster death is the promised end for all things mortal. I, like Thomas, when the rational mind predominates over my heart, doubt the reality of the risen Lord. I am not John. But I do have that within which is part John; my heart says, “Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.”

In Milton’s *Samson Agonistes*, Samson, after he has been blinded by the Philistines, is visited by Delilah who offers him her body, telling him that there are still pleasures that a blind man can experience. Samson rejects the offer with a most striking vehemence. And he does so because he knows that the temptation of Delilah is the temptation he is the most susceptible to. All of us, the people of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries, are born into the culture of rationalism. It is in our mother’s milk and the bottled milk we feed upon; it has been woven, under the guise of theology, into our churches, and it has been woven into our culture under the guise of science. We must react with violence, the type of violence that taketh the Kingdom of Heaven by storm, against the culture of rationalism that presses down upon us in church and state.

The Holy Ghost resides in the human heart. He is the comforter that we need if we are to be like John: “He saw and believed.” This is why we cannot, as the modern day conservatives suggest we do, combat the liberals’ rationalism with what we believe to be the correct rationalism. There is no correct rationalism. Christ’s resurrection from the dead is not rational. And we must believe that Christ rose from the dead. If we don’t believe in that stunning, startling, unscientific conquest of dumb nature, there is no use continuing any further with the charade of life. I once saw a modern movie in which the hero tells his pregnant girlfriend to get an abortion, because, “This is a trashcan world.” That cuts through all the liberal rhetoric about the brave new world of love, equality, and freedom – “This is a trashcan world.” If Christ be not risen, we are maggots crawling on a trash heap. The love that once was there in Christian Europe, the Christian Europe that the liberals denounce and the church men tell us never existed, allows us to see the risen Lord. We see Christ without actually touching His side and His hands, because the people who believed without seeing Christ in the flesh did see Him in the love that once was there at their racial and familial hearth fires. Our fight for the European hearth fire is the fight for our Jesus, who tells us that even death, that horror of horrors, will not separate us from those we loved here on earth — in Him and through Him, by the power of the Holy Ghost, who dwells in hearts of flesh.

Robert Frost is often quoted by conservatives because he makes reference to God, but Frost did not take the road less traveled, he took the well-traveled road of a vague, impersonal God, who did not transcend the natural world. That well-traveled road, the road of Greek rationalism, leads us to a world of faithlessness. Christ chose Thomas as one of the twelve, because he had that within, “Let us go and die with him,” which transcended rationalism. He couldn’t quite believe, but he was willing to fight for a man who seemed more than man. He was like unto the followers of Odin: “It might be hopeless, but we will fight to the last man for our Lord and kinsman.” It is that feeling of pietas our Lord builds on. He can enter human hearts, hearts that love, and turn rational minds inward to the Lord of human hearts. When that miracle occurs, the doubting Thomas says, “My Lord and my God.”

Let us never forget that Greek rationalism led the great poet Homer to despair. His vision of the afterlife in *The Odyssey* is a vision of nothingness. And Sophocles, in *Oedipus Rex*, tells us that it is better to never have been born. Is that the ‘vision’ we want to build upon? Do I want that vision in my heart when I look at the seemingly lifeless faces of my loved ones who have died in this world? Is that the vision I want in my heart as I face my own death? Please God, send us the Comforter and give us the heart to conquer the rationalism within our own souls and the ever-encircling gloom of rationalism in the hostile liberal world around us.

In the “Grand Inquisitor” chapter of *The Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky accurately depicts the false path, the path of rationalism, which the organized Christian churches took into Satan’s dark woods. The human heart seems to be a labyrinth in which a man can get lost. But that labyrinth is the only path to Christ, because the Holy Ghost dwells there. The easy road to God on the rationalist Celestial Railroad is a road that leads to hell. If we constantly stare at dumb nature, we will not see God, we will see a spiritual void which we will try to fill with nature’s gods and nature’s opiates. We must hold out for “all or nothing.” Unamuno went back and forth from faith to doubt because he could never quite conquer his rationalism. We who

are about to die cannot be rationalists. For the sake of our souls, for the sake of our loved ones, we must take the path less trodden on, the path of faith in a personal Savior who transcends reason.

In the late 1960s, the liberals made explicit what had been implicit in the European world since World War I ended – Rationalism, with its attendant worship of science and the noble savage was the new religion of the modern Europeans. One of the ugliest manifestations of that new religion was the development of death and dying courses in the universities. In those courses, the liberals taught young men and women that death was not something to be afraid of. Why did we no longer need to fear death? Was it because the old, old story of Jesus and His love was true? Of course not. The liberals told us that we did not have to fear death because human beings were mere creatures of nature. We were not sons and daughters of Christ who were not meant to die – we were just natural entities destined to return to the natural world. The atheism of the gypsy in Walter Scott's novel, [Quentin Durward](#), became the mainstream faith of the ruling liberal elites in church and state:

*"To be resolved into the elements," said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; "my hope, trust, and expectation is that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recompounded in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under different forms — the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldebaran and his brethren. — In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it! — Hence! begone! — disturb me no farther! — I have spoken the last word that mortal ears shall listen to."*

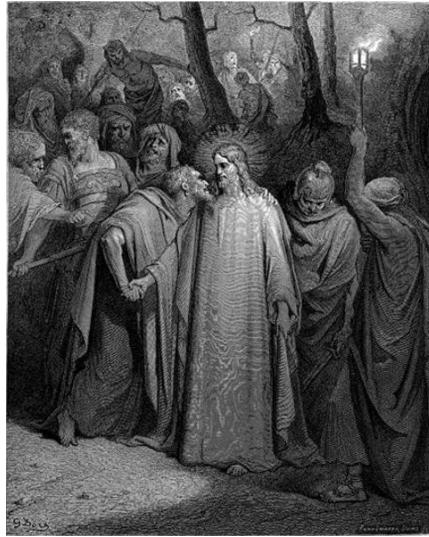
That new-old faith of the liberals is not my faith, nor can it ever be a genuine faith for a human being. How can we have a faith in nothingness? Dylan Thomas was right to rage against the dying of the light. And he was also right to drink himself into alcoholic oblivion when he could not believe in the light. We dare not look on Dylan Thomas from the Mt. Olympus of rationalism – “It’s a pity that he didn’t rest content with nature and nature’s gods as all rational men do.” No! The pity is that Dylan Thomas gave up on his rage against the dying of the light. He stopped raging and succumbed to the rational world of science and the noble savage. There is a light beyond this rational vale of tears. That light has a local habitation and a name. His home is the human heart, and His name is Jesus. +

# The Great Denial

August 10, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, N.F.S. Grundtvig



Of a 'people' all are members  
who regard themselves as such,  
find their mother-tongue sounds sweetest  
and their fatherland love much;  
All the rest like goblins evil  
turn their backs upon the people,  
bar themselves from kindred tie  
and their birthright too deny.

-N. F. S. Grundtvig

Why is white pietas, which is our only connection to the living God, proscribed in church and state? And why do white people submit to the proscription? – CWNY

I see that some bloggers have tried to point out that the last two mass shooters in America fit more into the category of crazed liberals than right wing extremists, but that is an exercise in futility. The liberals are in power, and they will use their power to impose their vision of reality on the people that work and slave under the all-seeing eye of the liberal Leviathan. Satan still prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls, but he no longer has to prowl about as an outsider trying to destroy the Christian culture of the European people. Now that liberalism, which is Satanism, has been institutionalized throughout the European nations, Satan prowls about the European nations, as an old-time inspector of the dikes in Holland might have prowled about the dikes trying to ascertain where they might spring a leak. Satan looks for weaknesses in his institutions. He checks on the pro-life movement to make sure it stays democratic and useless. He checks on the churches to make sure their Christianity is in lock-step with the liberalism of the academy. Nor does he neglect the elementary schools – he makes sure they stay liberal and satanic. And he checks the various media outlets to make sure there is a steady stream of vicious hate-filled rhetoric directed against the white race, and a steady stream of propaganda in favor of the sainted races of color.

I remember, back in the beginning of the internet era, listening to conservatives such as George Gilder, who told us that the internet would be a great means of countering liberal propaganda, because it would democratize free speech by taking it out of the hands of the mainstream media pundits. But the exact opposite has taken place. The internet has become the liberals' main means of attacking the white race and ensuring that all whites stay in line with the liberals' program, which is a program designed for the complete and utter destruction of the white, Christ-bearing race. How did that happen? It happened because you cannot restore that which is of the spirit with purely mechanical restoratives. Computers can improve the record-keeping of a company, they can facilitate the flow of information, but they cannot provide the faith and hope that sustain a people. That was and is the fundamental mistake of the conservatives. They did not put Burke's assessment of the European people into their computers:

*"The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines."*

You can't leave incarnate Europe behind as an undemocratic relic of the past and replace it with a democratic, technologically savvy, modern civilization and hope to survive as a people, even if you do computerize your democracy. What difference does it make if Satan speaks to us through the older print media or through the modern internet media? It is still Satanism that is being disseminated.

I've noticed, since the liberals' internet crackdown, that many sites that were formerly aggressively pro-white have become much less so. They have censored themselves in order to survive on the liberal-dominated internet. I used to compare the dissenting internet sites to the samizdat publications in Soviet Russia. But I now see that was a poor comparison. In the samizdat publications the Soviet dissidents printed the truth. They did not write from within the Soviet system, relying on the Soviet government's belief in free speech to keep their publications in circulation as the American internet bloggers currently do. "But the Soviet regime did not permit free speech whereas our regime does permit free speech," you reply. Is that true? The American and the other Jacobin nations of Europe permit "free speech" so long as that free speech does not constitute a danger to liberalism. The liberals do not always get it right, they often censor right-wingers who do not constitute a real danger to liberalism, but they do try to keep their kingdom in order just as thoroughly as the Soviet leaders of communist Russia tried to keep their kingdom in order. And the American experiment has proven more successful than the Soviet experiment, because incremental Jacobinism is more long-lasting than instant Jacobinism: It weakens and destroys the spiritual substance of a people much more effectively than the "Jacobinism now" regimes of revolutionary France and Soviet Russia. None of the Russian communist regimes achieved the total ascendancy over their people that the incremental Jacobin regimes of the European nations of America and Europe have achieved. When a liberal government moves incrementally, the people accept Satanism while bragging about their freedoms. If Lady Macbeth feminism, gay rights, and negro worship had been immediately institutionalized after World War I, there would have been much more resistance to those evils than there is today, because the European people of that time were only one generation removed from believing Christians. They still retained a Christian ethos. It took time for the Christian hangover to disappear. Now, after over a century of incremental Jacobinism, the European people accept all the major precepts of liberalism. They are quite willing to give up their faith in their God and themselves, as a distinct people connected to God through pietas, in order to have a place in Liberaldom. "Be it ever so humble, please let us have a home in Liberaldom." But there can never be a place for white people in Liberaldom, because at the heart of Liberaldom is Satan. He will never allow white people into his earthly kingdom because of their Christian past. When they die, unrepentant of their liberalism, then Satan will welcome them into his kingdom, but not before their deaths. In this world, Satan will keep the white race at bay.

A few months ago I made reference to four public school teachers in New York City who were demoted or removed from their duties for "toxic whiteness." If, as the liberals assert, whiteness is a disease, then shouldn't we be told why whiteness is considered a disease? No, the liberals tell us, we need not be told, that is a given; and if we have to ask why whiteness is a disease, then it is proof we are toxically white.

The disease of whiteness was condemned long ago by Plato and by Caiaphas. Both men banned the poetic of life from their republics, because that which is poetical is not subject to the iron-clad logic of philosophy and theology. Are there depths to life that cannot be reached by the human mind? "No, there are not." Thus spoke Plato and Caiaphas. And thus speaks the devil. If there is a poetic heart to existence, if the mythic world is real and the material world is the unreality, then Christ is risen and the devil shall be defeated. The European people once defied the logic of the devil to proclaim the reality of the epic myth of Christ's victory over death. Now we have closed that epic chapter of our history and submitted to Satan, but Satan has not forgotten, nor will he ever forget, that white people once saw the poetic essence of life in Jesus Christ and proclaimed that truth to all the world. They mustn't ever be allowed to proclaim that truth again. That is why the liberals have made "toxic whiteness" a crime.

In every denomination of organized Christianity, throughout the history of the European people, there have always been clergymen and theologians who proclaimed that the hatred of humanity is the mark of a good Christian. They tell us that we must hate what is inside of a man in order to love God, but did original sin so deface His image in man that we must hate our humanity in order to love God? No, 'tis not so. Christ will build His kingdom on human hearts that love much: "Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! for behold, the kingdom of God is within you."

The liberals have taken the perverted theology of the anti-human faction of the organized Christian churches and made it their own theology, only the liberals have exempted the colored races and the illuminated whites. *They* are worthy of redemption, but the unilluminated whites are totally depraved, they are damned. The churchmen do not oppose the liberals' anti-white, anti-Christian faith because it is in line with their theology of the greatness of God and the depravity of humanity. But why would God take the form of human flesh if humanity was totally depraved? "He didn't take flesh and dwell among us," the liberals tell us. Likewise the Jews and the Moslems also tell us that He did not take flesh and dwell among us. They face the contradiction that the perverted theologians are not willing to deal with: If we are too depraved for the kingdom of God to dwell in our hearts, then the Incarnation is a lie. And the intellectual Christians are acting as if it were all a lie by joining the liberals in their condemnation of the white pietas that sustained and animated the European people before white pietas became a disease.

If we cannot act on the love that we feel for our own, if we must hide our noblest and best instincts in order to show the liberals that we truly love the sacred gods of color, then we will perish from the earth and suffer the pains of hell in the next world, because we cannot be connected to Christ except through our humanity. We touch His sacred heart because we have human hearts. Once we become part of Liberaldom, we renounce our humanity and our God.

By a tragic irony what the old hard-hearted theologians used to tell us, that man was filth and God was all, has become much closer to the truth than it was during the Christian European era of history. Liberals, having divested themselves of their humanity, do seem to be totally depraved creatures without one single spark of humanity. But we must remember a time when liberalism, not white pietas, was considered a disease. And we must remember that we belong to His Kingdom, the Kingdom of God that He has placed in our hearts, and not to the liberals' kingdom of evil, which was conceived by Satan and is consecrated to his unholy will.

There are no supports left for the Christian European. Everything Christian and European has been torn asunder. Only our hearts are left. Inside His Kingdom of the heart, we must find the strength to resist liberalism and cling to our European hearth fire. All is indeed cheerless, dark, and deadly – we have only our "trembling faith," and His promise that He will be with us "always, even unto the ending of the world." +

# Endeared with All Hearts

August 17, 2019

Categories: Democracy, Rationalism, Religion of Satan, Superficiality

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare



Engraving of Gustave Dore illustration of the Vision of Death

And when Elisha was come into the house, behold, the child was dead, and laid upon his bed. He went in therefore, and shut the door upon them twain, and prayed unto the Lord. And he went up, and lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house to and fro; and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and the child opened his eyes. And he called Gehazi, and said, Call this Shunammite. So he called her. And when she was come in unto him, he said, Take up thy son.

-[II Kings 4: 32-36](#)

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;  
And there reigns love, and all love's loving parts,  
And all those friends which I thought buried.  
How many a holy and obsequious tear  
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye  
As interest of the dead, which now appear  
But things remov'd that hidden in thee lie!  
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
Who all their parts of me to thee did give:  
That due of many now is thine alone.  
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,  
And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.

-[Shakespeare, Sonnet 31](#)

Prior to the coming of Christ the history of the Jewish people, beginning with Adam and Eve, was a history of a falling away from God and then a return to God. There were always prophets who tried to call the Jewish people back to God. They seldom were treated kindly, but they did keep a certain segment of the Jewish people connected to the living God; one thinks of Elijah and the seven thousand. But it seems, at the time of our Lord's incarnation, that the prophets had lost out to institutionalized atheism: The Pharisees had lost all touch with the living God and replaced Him with a 'practical' system presided over by 'smart men'. When Christ came before the smart men, proclaiming that He was the Son of God, the smart men had Him crucified.

The European people have repeated the spiritual journey of the Jews. Their history after their acceptance of Christ has been one of sins and revolts against God, but it has also been a history of devotion to, and the love of, Christ the Lord. The utopian Christian theologians, who are not Christian, have focused only on the sins of the Christian Europeans; they have refused to look at the love and devotion of the antique Europeans and have written them off as no different than the pagans. Actually the theologians tell us that the colored pagans are better than the Christian Europeans. Dismissing the theologians, who are not interested in the truth, let us state the obvious – the European people, prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century, were a people who saw Jesus Christ as the Alpha and the Omega of existence. There was still a prophetic fire within the European people that made them seek Christ, even in the midst of their sins and their constant backsliding. But when we come to the 20<sup>th</sup> century of the Europeans' history, we no longer see hearts with a longing for the Savior. The prophetic fire has been replaced by a liberal Sanhedrin. The Pharisees of rationalism, science, and the Noble Savage have institutionalized sin and the revolt against God. And that is the difference between modern Europe and old Europe. Our ancestors sinned much and often revolted against God's will, as all mortals will do, but our ancestors did not institutionalize sin and revolt. They did not call sin virtue and revolt progress. The Europeans of the 20<sup>th</sup> century have entered the Caiaphas stage of their history; they have put Christ on trial and found Him guilty of blasphemy against their new gods of reason, science, and the Noble Savage.

That really is the crux of the matter. The European people have rejected Christ because belief in His resurrection from the dead is irrational, unscientific, and racist. Why is it racist? Because it was the white Europeans who believed, as a people, in the unscientific, irrational resurrection of Christ. The believing European Christian is now in the position of the original apostles who were on the fringes of institutionalized Jewry, trying to stay true to the voice of the prophets who urged them to adhere to the prophetic core of their faith and continue looking, in spirit and truth, for the true Messiah. A true European Christian must be an exile from our modern 'Grand Inquisitor' Europe, he must stay on the outside of a world that has institutionalized, in church and state, the old Pharisical religion of Caiaphas and the smart men. The conservatives, who want to conserve democracy and the Constitution, want to conserve that which should be destroyed, a system that is in line with the Sanhedrin whose members said, "Let us crucify Him."

In Shakespeare's *Macbeth*, two men, Macbeth and Banquo, stood on the heath confronted by witches. Both men were offered the world if they acted according to the will of the witches. Macbeth succumbed to the witches' will and Banquo did not. The European people also had their moment on the heath. They had a choice between the way of the cross, the way of the antique Europeans, who loved much and believed, and the way of the Pharisees, who were willing to make common cause with Satan and crucify the living God in order to retain their positions of power in this world. There must be a return to the spiritual realm of old Europe. The modern Europeans' decision to live and die with the Pharisees of modernity must be reversed.

The Pharisaical system of government, our vaunted democracy, and our Pharisaical churches have been designed to give us bread and circuses in this world and ease us into an anesthetized eternal sleep in the next world. What did old Europe offer us? It offered us the hope that if we shared His cross we would also share in His resurrection. But we can only believe in that through the faith that emanates from love. If we don't have the heart to love what is good, what is pure, what is noble, then we will not believe that Christ is with us in this world and has gone to prepare a place for us in the next world. The great fallacy of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> century leaders in church and state has been and is the mistaken notion that you need only appeal to a man's reason and then all will be well. If you present mankind with abstract theories of a utopian world, they will fall in line, rejecting old Europe, and help you to build a perfect society. But pure reason, divorced from the heart that loves, encourages men to turn on one another in an endless competition for the things of this world that the intellectual utopians have told them is their birthright. All will share in the new utopia, except the unreasoning people of faith who believe in the Son of God. All are equal, but some are more equal. The 'more equal' – not the meek – will inherit the earth in the Pharisaical system of the Illuminati because they are the second person of the Illuminati's trinity while the white race, collectively, is the devil.

**Queen.** No, no! the drink, the drink! O my dear Hamlet!  
The drink, the drink! I am poison'd.

**Hamlet.** O villany! Ho! let the door be lock'd.  
Treachery! Seek it out.

**Laertes.** It is here, Hamlet. Hamlet, thou art slain;  
No medicine in the world can do thee good.  
In thee there is not half an hour of life.  
The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,  
Unbated and envenom'd. The foul practice  
Hath turn'd itself on me. Lo, here I lie,  
Never to rise again. Thy mother's poison'd.  
I can no more. The King, the King's to blame.

[-Hamlet](#)

Let us lock the doors and seek out the villains who have separated the European people from their kith, their kin, and their Savior. Behold! The clergy, the clergy's to blame. Faith cannot exist without love, nor can love exist without faith. That incorporate union of love for the Savior in and through His people sustained the European people's faith in the Son of God. The rational wedge that the clergy placed between the European people and Christ was the equivalent of a dagger to the heart. And when the love that once was there disappears because there are no hearts of flesh left who truly love unto the end, then the Christian faith will disappear from the face of the earth.

From the 1850s to 1900 the European intellectuals who believed that Christ rose from the dead were in the minority. That is why Dostoyevsky said the main issue was, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ." Once that question was decided by the 'intellectuals,' that Christ did *not* rise from the dead, the stage was set for the non-intellectuals', the grazers', loss of faith in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. An ethical remnant of the Christian faith survived through the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, but ethics without a religious core cannot last forever. Most Europeans in the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, and there are still a few left in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, thought the customs and manners that stemmed from a belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead could be maintained without that belief. The parents in the 1960s who believed that sex should be confined to the marriage bed of a man and a woman but who had lost their belief in Christ, were shocked when their offspring practiced free love. Why the shock? If Christ be not risen, are not all things permissible? Now, there is no longer any shock at such 'trivial' things as premarital sex because now even the ethical remnant of faith in Christ as true God and true man has died out. But death has not been, nor can it ever be, conquered by a superficial faith in reason, science, and the Noble Savage.

The greatest tragedy that can befall an individual or a society is the tragedy of superficiality. Balzac, who accurately depicts the decadence of a Parisian society that has embraced superficiality as a substitute for faith, has the main character in one of his novels make a death-bed declaration both pompous and irreverent: "Now, I must take holy communion." Balzac tells the reader, "So you see, superficiality and vanity can be a substitute for religious faith." Balzac's Paris has become modern Europe. We have made superficiality and vanity a substitute for faith in Jesus Christ. No heart that truly loves can accept the death of his loved ones. Death is a sword in the heart. There are only three remedies for that stab in the heart. We can cling to His word that tells us death shall not triumph over His love for us; we can stay anesthetized with the opiates of drugs and alcohol until we pass into nothingness; or we can embrace the superficiality of a world governed by the European Sanhedrin, crucifying Christ anew by crucifying His people while we indulge our pagan appetites through our love of the Noble Savages of color.

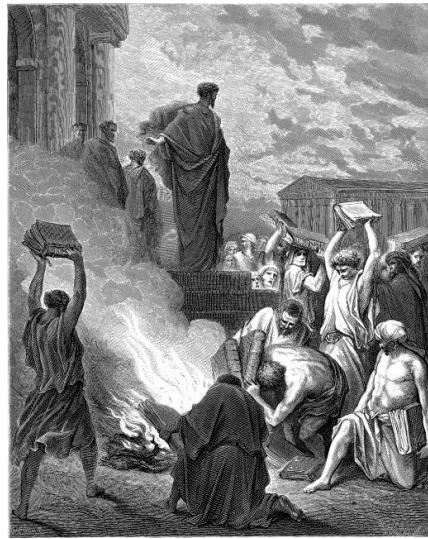
If you are part of the new Sanhedrin's world order you have left the Christ of the Gospel, who is the Christ of old Europe, behind. There can be no blending of the new and the old worlds. There are two roads and they lead us to very different destinations. The one road leads to hell and the other road leads to His house of many mansions. Young Oliver Twist, forsaken by the whole world, strikes back against overwhelming odds, against the denizens of Satan, because they have denigrated the memory of his mother. I shall always love Charles Dickens and his progenitor, the bard of Avon, because they got it right. It is the heart that loves which sustains a truly Christian civilization. We must bear our cross and love much, because "He is the grave where buried love doth live." They have denigrated our Savior and our people who loved much: We must become like unto the apostles who stayed away from the Sanhedrin and clung to the true Messiah, their God and Kinsman, Jesus Christ. We must remain in the upper room where there is faith, hope, and charity. +

# And Make Ourselves a Realm

August 24, 2019

Categories: Faithful hearts, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Hans Christian Andersen



Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. — [Colossians 2:8](#)

Once the revolutionaries have triumphed and institutionalized all things satanic, the conservative must cease to be conservative — he must become a counterrevolutionary, or else he will become an aider and abettor of liberalism, despite his claim to be a conservative. Franco and Pinochet were counterrevolutionaries; Reagan, Thatcher, Tyndall, Samuel Francis, and Trump were and are conservative liberals. They were and are against certain aspects of liberalism, but they did not and do not challenge the basic Jacobin assumptions of their nation nor the other European nations. And the Jacobin foundations of modern Europe must be challenged and destroyed because Jacobin Europe is Satan's Europe.

*O here, where late our little city stood,  
And now this desolation darkens us,  
Friends, with rapid hand and heart renewed,  
Building, once more uprear we root and tower,  
And make ourselves a realm.*

Our “little city” was Christian Europe, liberalism was the desolation that darkened our city, and the liberal tower of Babel built on reason, science, and the noble savage is what we must root out in order to rebuild our European city. However, I do not see, in this realm of Satan, anyone who thinks we should ‘uprear’ liberalism from its roots and build a Christian realm. Why is that? Why is there no one who believes we must destroy the liberals’ realm instead of trying to work within the parameters of liberalism to affect “meaningful change”? The answer is quite simple – you do not seek to destroy that which you believe in. And all modern Europeans believe in at least two out of three of the linchpins of liberalism. They all believe in reason and science – who will be so base as to deny the validity of reason and science? Some neo-pagan conservative liberals such as Jared Taylor and some populist conservatives such as Tyndall and Francis do not and did not believe in the noble savage, but most conservatives believe in all three of the linchpins of liberalism. The liberals’ kingdom of eternal night depends on the progenitor of science and the noble savage, and that progenitor is pure, abstract reason, divorced from the human heart.

My mother, who adhered to the ethics of the Christian faith all her life but was unable to believe in Christ, because His resurrection from the dead was in conflict with reason and science, had a book of fairy tales, which I inherited when she died. In that book is a remarkable fairy tale written by Hans Christian Andersen called “The Snow Queen.” In that story we see the sickness of modern man diagnosed, and we see what the cure for that illness is.

If you know the story, you will recall that the two principle characters are a girl named Gerda and a boy named Kay. In the story some wicked Hobgoblins have “a mirror with the power of causing all that was good and beautiful, when it was reflected therein, to look poor and mean; while that which was good for nothing and ugly, stood out and looked worse than ever. In this mirror the most beautiful landscapes looked like boiled spinach, and the best persons were turned into frights, or appeared to stand on their heads.”

One day the mirror breaks, “and now it worked much more evil than before; for some of these pieces were hardly so large as a grain of sand, and they flew about in the wide world, and when they got into people’s eyes there they stayed; and then people saw everything perverted, or only had an eye for that which was evil. Some persons even got a splinter in their heart, and then their heart became a lump of ice. Then the wicked Hobgoblin laughed till he almost chocked, for all this tickled his fancy.”

Of course the evil splinters are the splinters of reason, and when one of those splinters pierces Kay’s heart he falls victim to the evil Snow Queen and becomes unable to say the Lord’s Prayer. “He was quite frightened and he tried to repeat the Lord’s Prayer; but he was only able to remember the multiplication table.” What should that simple story, told by a man regarded as a simpleton, tell us? It tells us what St. Paul told us. We should search the Scriptures with our hearts in order to discover that the folly of God is greater than the wisdom of men.

When Gerda finds Kay, he is a lost soul.

*Little Kay was quite blue with cold; for the Snow Queen had kissed away his feelings, and his heart was a lump of ice. He was pulling about some sharp, flat pieces of ice, which he laid together in all possible ways, puzzling out how to make something with them. He fitted them into a great many shapes the most complicated, for they were the “Ice Puzzles of Reason.”*

What a remarkable description of reason divorced from the human heart – “The Ice Puzzles of Reason.” Did Kay recover? Yes, he did because —

*Gerda wept hot tears which fell on his breast, and they thawed his heart and melted away the bit of the mirror there. He looked at her, and she sang:*

*“The rose in the valley is blooming so sweet,  
The Child Jesus is there the children to greet.”*

Then Kay, like all the Christian Europeans who preceded him, wept and believed.

Jesus wept at Lazarus’s death. If He knew that He was about to raise Lazarus from the dead, why did He weep? Was it because He, who could see into the future, saw all the suffering that death would cause mankind? How could the heart of hearts not weep in the face of all that suffering? Our hope is in our tears of grief. My mother had a heart that loved, but she also had a heart with a splinter of rationalism in it. Did my tears, shed on her deathbed, joined with the tears of our precious Savior, take the splinter of rationalism from her heart and leave only His

divine love there? That is my hope. We all live in the valley of the shadow of death, which is made all the darker because of rationalism, but is it not possible that at the last hour many who seemed lost in the icy cold of rationalism will feel the warmth of His love? We must, for our own sake and for the sake of our loved ones, fight rationalism with all our heart, mind, and soul.

Our Lord told us that we must, if we are to inherit the kingdom of heaven, become like unto little children. Why then do we create a new language, a language not of the heart, when we speak of our Lord? Paul was not a theologian nor were the apostles. Shouldn't that tell us something? Why do we need a more scientized and rational exposition of the Christian faith than that which is presented to us in the Gospels and the epistles of St. Paul? We don't need theology, but the devil does need it. He wants mankind to study and scientize God until God becomes the sum total of the natural world, a world devoid of the personal Savior who gives us the hope that the grave is not the natural end of our lives.

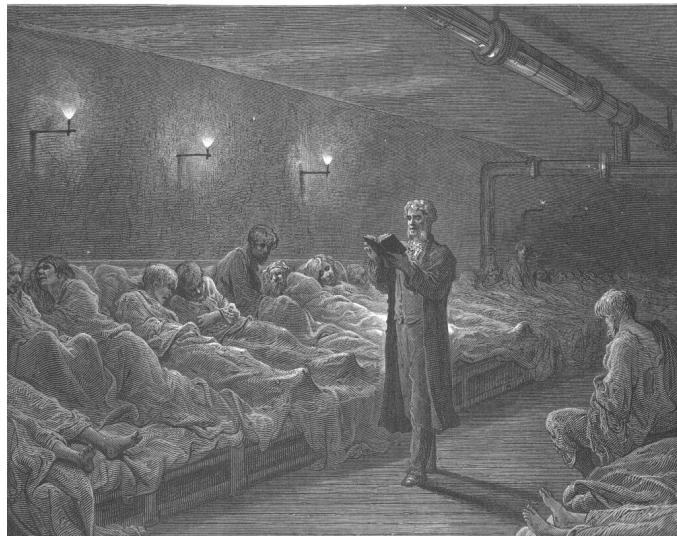
The tears we shed at the deathbeds of our loved ones, if they are consecrated to Him, are sacred prayers. Surely He hears such prayers and surely He will come to our loved ones and us at that fateful hour. Christian Europe was built on the tears and prayers of those who wept and believed. I do not see how our rationalism, our science, be it the science of God or the science of the natural world, or our worship of the noble savage, has improved on the hope-and-prayer civilization of the antique Europeans. I don't want to read or hear about any more conservative plans for saving our Western democracies, I want to rise and ride to the sound of the trumpet of our Lord who bids us root out rationalism from our hearts and our civilization. All counterrevolutions start in the human heart and then extend to the greater world. In the European fairy tales the third dumb brother, the brother imbued with the foolishness of God, always goes forth into the great world armed only with a heart of flesh. He always triumphs where his older brothers, the rationalists, fail. So shall we triumph if we eschew rationalism and seek Him through the narrow gate of the human heart which leads us to His sacred heart.

St. Paul tells us that "faith worketh by love." If that is so, how can we have faith if we try to know God by way of abstract reason? We must come to God with hearts capable of loving that which is good, noble, and pure. Do we have such a capacity? Not if we accept the theologians' God of pure intellect as the true God. If God does not have a human heart, if the incarnation is a lie, which all the Gnostic churches assert, then we are lost. Let us take refuge in the fleshpots of Egypt, the only refuge for rationalists who have come to the conclusion that man is a glorified beast without a heart that longs for and can know the Savior, whose divine love has conquered death.

It doesn't seem that there are any Europeans left who will repudiate rationalist Europe and return to the fairy tale Europe of Hans Christian Andersen. It all seems so hopeless. And that is what the devil wants. He wants all Europeans to stay imprisoned within the walls of rationalism. He wants the only remedy for our loneliness to be the company of other rationalists. Such 'company' will only make us feel our loneliness the more acutely. But where there is one, there are others. I am not a rationalist. I do not accept the devil's world. The kingdom of heaven is within. Let us cling to the fairy tale vision in defiance of the rationalist hell around us, and build ourselves a realm that honors the vision and heart of the antique Europeans who saw the God beyond reason, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. +

# Who with Me My Burden Shares?

August 31, 2019  
Categories: Faithful hearts, Religion of Satan, Resurrection, Superficiality  
Tags: Shakespeare



*Lear:* O, ho, are you there with me? No eyes in your head, nor no money in your purse? Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a light; yet you see how this world goes.

*Glou.* I see it feelingly.

[King Lear](#)

My best friend in junior high school and high school shared my hatred of school, and we also shared, as we advanced into our late teens, the existential angst of the modern age. We felt lost, just as those characters in the modern novels and movies, such as *The Loneliness of a Long Distance Runner* and *Cool Hand Luke*, felt lost. Let me dwell on *Cool Hand Luke* for a moment, because my friend Michael saw the movie a dozen times.

The movie is based on the true story of a man who escaped from a prison in Georgia, was captured again, escaped again, and then lived the rest of his life in freedom. Yet the people who made *Cool Hand Luke* chose to have the main character die at the end after making a plea for help to an unknown God who has forsaken him. The Man with No Eyes, the fearsome sharpshooter working as a guard, brings Cool Hand Luke down in an old abandoned church. Of course Luke had to die, forsaken by God and man, because that is the modern, Thomas Hardy vision of reality: "As flies to wanton boys are we to the gods – they kill us for their sport."

My friend went one way after high school and I went another way. He progressed from existential angst to radical Jacobinism, living the Henry-Miller life in Paris, and embraced every radical cause he could find in order to anesthetize himself against the spiritual void of modernity. I went another way – I returned, not to the liberal, blended Christ of school and church, but to the Christ of old Europe. In that old Europe, I see a different ending for *Cool Hand Luke*. As the Man with No Eyes raises his rifle and has Luke in his sights, he suddenly sees before him someone other than Luke. He sees an image of Christ on the cross. He lowers his rifle, wipes his eyes, and takes aim again. But again, that image of Christ blurs his vision, and he puts down the rifle for good. As Luke is returned to prison, we hear the words from the hymn that a convict had been singing earlier in the film:

*Through this world of toil and snares,  
If I falter, Lord, who cares?  
Who with me my burden shares?  
None but thee, dear Lord, none but Thee.*

When Luke leaves prison a few years later he leaves with the knowledge that Christ will indeed his burden share. "None but thee, dear Lord, none but Thee."

The liberals are still proceeding according to the internal dynamic of liberalism — they are 'progressing.' But toward what are they progressing? They are progressing to the kingdom of their god on earth. It is a man-made progression, inspired by the devil, independent of and hostile to Christ. The white Europeans will never be welcome in the kingdom of god on earth, because the new god, the god of the liberals, is a savage, man-god spawned by the forces of progress, which were and are reason and science. That new man-forged god, the noble savage, is a jealous god who will not share his throne with Christ; hence, the people whose ancestors championed Christ must be destroyed. All the liberals' talk about inclusion and diversity is a lie, framed and inspired by the father of lies. The new world will not be racially diverse, it will be a savage, barbaric world of colored heathens. A few whites might be kept around as computerized beasts of burden, but that is doubtful. The colored heathens have not shown any inclination in South Africa or Rhodesia to keep whites alive in order to maintain their kingdoms of hell on earth.

The 20<sup>th</sup> century was the first century in the Christian European people's history when the belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead entered the realm of the nursery school — it became a pleasant story like "Goldilocks and the Three Bears" but it no longer was seen as a reality. As a result the modern age gave birth to paintings in which the human personality was unrecognizable and to literature — "Rage, rage against the dying of the light" — in which modern man voiced his despair. That type of art and literature was seen as a progression from the 'unrealistic' art and literature of old Europe. Is that true? Is Picasso's art more realistic than Rembrandt's art, and is Joyce's *Ulysses* more realistic than Scott's *Ivanhoe*? It all depends on Christ's resurrection from the dead. If He be not risen, then modern art and literature depicts reality. But what if Christ did rise from the dead on the third day? Then the antique Europeans' art and literature is the 'realistic' art and literature, and modern art and literature is trash. And we should stop trying to turn the trash we call democracy into a civilization. Instead we must turn to the people who believed in Christ's resurrection from the dead and build a realm based on their faith.

I once read a music critic's commentary on the back of an album of Bach's music in which he stated we need not share Bach's faith in order to enjoy Bach's music. Au contraire, we must share Bach's faith in order to truly enjoy Bach's music. If we do not believe that Christ rose from the dead, then Bach's music only heightens our existential angst. We either weep because such a celestial vision is not true, or we ridicule Bach for his naiveté. That music critic represents the older conservative liberals who still want the fruits of a Christian civilization without the faith that built that civilization. Men cannot live with the existential angst of the avant-garde artists and the modern *literati*. They must either cling to the fruits of the older, Christ-centered Europe, like the music critic, or they must develop a new faith to replace the faith of the antique Europeans. Enter, stage left — the far left — the noble savage. He is the "rough beast" born in the liberals' new Jerusalem, but he was not born in a stable in Bethlehem, he was born in the abstract minds of a people who left Christ for Satan. In the late sixties we saw the transition from the existential angst of "Christ be not risen, we are alone in the universe," to "Christ was a fraud, we are now free to worship the trinity of reason, the noble savage, and science."

In the aforementioned movie *Cool Hand Luke*, we can see the beginnings of the new 21<sup>st</sup> century religion of the modern Europeans. In one of Luke's escapes he enlists the aid of two negro children. By this act he shows us that he is a really "cool hand." How else can a white man be cool? In and of himself he is nothing, he must graft his soul onto the black man. By the 21<sup>st</sup>

century the white Cool Hand Lukes disappear and the noble black savages replace them, just as Christ was replaced by the colored heathen when Christian missionaries stopped trying to convert the colored heathens and worshipped them instead.

Liberalism is built on man's desire to avoid the cross of Christ. But the cross of Christ leads, according to the antique Europeans, to Christ's resurrection from the dead. If we avoid the cross of Christ, we will not share in His resurrection. That is the obstacle Satan, the first liberal, had to overcome. He had to make us see Christianity as a crucifixion without the resurrection. And he has done it. The resurrection, according to Satan, is irrational and unscientific, so who would willingly embrace a religion that places the shadow of the cross over our 'pleasures' here on earth and cannot deliver the goods at the hour of our death? At least science, the new Holy Ghost, can anesthetize us as we pass into non-existence. It's a horrible, nightmarish vision of reality, but Satan has managed to make that nightmare the new faith of the European people.

J. J. Pollitt, in his book *Art and Experience in Classical Greece*, points out that when the Greeks lost their faith in the gods, they had a period of existential angst, the golden era of Greek drama. However, that era metamorphosed into the era of vase painting, in which the Greeks showed an obsession with the trivial and superficial details of life. This is how it must be once a people has lost their faith. They cannot live with the "better not to have been born" vision of Sophocles' Oedipus or the "rage, rage against the dying of the light" vision of Dylan Thomas. They will move on to a religion of triviality.

We have moved on to a religion of triviality. Karl Barth's comment on the new religion as articulated by Feuerbach is on the mark: "We have heard Feuerbach speak, and we have heard something nauseatingly, disgustingly trivial." To be content with the banality, the perversity, and the triviality of modernity is the greatest tragedy that can befall a people. Is there any remedy for such a tragedy? Yes, there is — the remedy that King Lear finds. His religion of triviality disappears when he sees life "feelingly." Hearts that love will find Christ, they will embrace His cross, because they will know, through their love, that His cross leads to the resurrection.

In the early days of my marriage when I was struggling to keep my growing family financially solvent, I had a string of part-time and temporary jobs, one of which was teaching English literature. I had a student in one of my classes, of whom I became quite fond. He was a great reader, but his reading was of all modern authors. When he brought up his favorite authors in class, he was always frustrated when I spoke disparagingly of them. "Mr. \_\_\_\_\_, how can you say that?" he would indignantly ask, when I was dismissive of Stephen King and other such authors. In class and outside of class I took the trouble to show him the triviality of the modern authors, by exposing their lack of depth and by pointing out the inexhaustible depths of the antique European authors. A transformation took place. That young man saw, to paraphrase Hank Williams, "the light." It so seldom happens, but it can happen. A man can leave the culture of Satan, the culture of triviality and perversity, and return to the culture of Christ crucified, Christ risen. But he must have a heart of flesh.

The vase painting culture of the Greeks in their declining years could not sustain them. They fell to the Romans who absorbed their culture of perversity and triviality and syncretized that culture, along with the Jewish culture, the mystery religions, and every other culture on the face of the earth, save one. The Roman system could not absorb the Christian faith, because Christ was and is the God above the syncretic religion of perversity and triviality. When Rome sought to absorb Christ, the European tribesmen resisted Rome in the name of Christ. We now have come full circle: The United States of America, with all Europe following in her train, has become the new Rome. All religions are welcome in the united republic of perversity and triviality, save that one religion: The religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen, as believed in and championed by the antique Europeans.

Can perversity and triviality sustain the European people? The Romans maintained their empire for centuries upon centuries. So who can say that the liberals' modern Roman Empire cannot be sustained for many, many centuries to come? It certainly appears that the men and women of modern Europe are determined to go off the cliff with the swine. However, there is one crucial difference between the old Rome and the new Rome. The rulers of the old Roman Empire had to crush the new faith, the emerging Christian faith, while the rulers of the new Roman Empire must crush the old faith, the Christian faith of the European people. Will that make a difference? Will the European people claim their "rights of memory," will they insist on bringing the Christ of old Europe into the new Europe? It doesn't seem likely they will; they seem content to wallow in the pig slime of perversity and triviality. But Satan will not take any chances. He would rather destroy the entire white race than take a chance that even one European might invoke the memory of Christian Europe and sound a charge that will encourage other Europeans to strike back at the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. The European people will never be welcome in the liberals' Rome. I claim my "rights of memory" in Old Europe. The European people who still have hearts of flesh will do likewise. As for the rest? They are no longer Europeans, they are the un-men, the servants of Satan. +

# All Through the Night

September 7, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Good ground of Christian culture, Resurrection

Tags: Charles Dickens



Sleep, my child and peace attend thee  
All through the night;  
Guardian angels God will send thee  
All through the night.  
Soft, the drowsy hours are creeping,  
Hill and vale, in slumber sleeping,  
I my loving vigil keeping,  
All through the night.

While the moon her watch is keeping  
All through the night;  
While the weary world is sleeping  
All through the night.

O'er thy spirit gently stealing,  
Visions of delight revealing,  
Breathes a pure and holy feeling,  
All through the night.

Deep the silence round us spreading,  
All through the night;  
Dark the path that we are treading,  
All through the night.  
Still the coming day discerning,  
By the hope within us burning,  
To the dawn our footsteps turning,  
All through the night.

Star of Faith the dark adorning,  
All through the night;  
Leads us fearless toward the morning,  
All through the night.  
Though our hearts be wrapped in sorrow,  
From the home of dawn we borrow,  
Promise of a glad tomorrow,  
All through the night.

---

When I was a child, the arrival of the Labor Day weekend was bittersweet. It meant a picnic with my family – parents, siblings, grandparents, uncles, aunts, cousins, etc. – but it also meant the reptilian entity called ‘school’ was making ready to squeeze me to death in its coils as soon as Labor Day ended. I think the experience of school itself was horrible enough, but the anticipation of it was even worse. But let me leave the bitter for the sweet for a moment.

I vividly remember one particular Labor Day family gathering in the park when I was seven years old. My Welsh grandmother, who had nine brothers, was there along with many of my great uncles. There was a vast panorama of white working class people in the park, trying to get a little bit of family time before the work week started up again. When the various picnic activities were ended, we all sat down at the picnic tables and ate. After the meal one of my great uncles stood up and sang the Welsh song, “All Through the Night.” I still remember feeling my heart pounding as my great uncle sang. Why did it have such an effect on me? I don’t know, it just did. And I must stress that my great uncle was not a professional singer, he was a coal miner, but I never heard a better rendition than his on that Labor Day weekend over a half century ago. The words “unstudied from the heart” come to mind. It was not democracy that summoned that song from the depths of my great uncle’s heart, it was his connection to his people, the antique Europeans, in and through the Savior that inspired him to sing of our Savior’s love, which is with us always even “All Through the Night.”

As the presidential election approaches, we should remind ourselves that nothing that is good in America stems from democracy. The United States is not a beautiful city on a hill, a beacon light for other nations, it is hideous monstrosity of a nation conceived in Jacobinism and dedicated to the proposition that the wisdom of men is greater than the folly of God. The Democratic Party has recently made explicit what was implicit in our country from its foundations: that white Christians are not welcome in America. The so-called religious liberty granted to Christians in the early days of our nation was a calculated and successful gambit to remove any and all Christian influences from our government. “You can attend tax exempt church services on Sunday if you support secular Jacobinism throughout the week.” That ‘compromise’ still exists. So long as organized Christian Jewry, the churches of Christ without Christ, act as the ‘Amen chorus’ for liberalism, they will be allowed to exist. But any attempt by a European Christian to act according to the faith that is in him, the faith of our people

when they had hearts of flesh, shall be condemned and dealt with. Modern ‘Christians’ have sold their birthright for the privilege of singing ‘Amen’ to liberalism in the church of their choice, with the added ‘privilege’ of avoiding the penalties inflicted on non-liberals, who are the people that must be dealt with.

I see in that park from long ago, a bit of country in the midst of the city, where I communed with my white kith and kin and listened to “All Through the Night,” a glimpse of heaven, the heaven that all of us see when we place ourselves in Christian Europe. Dickens, in *Oliver Twist*, describes that heaven as only he could:

*Who can describe the pleasure and delight, the peace of mind and soft tranquillity, the sickly boy felt in the balmy air, and among the green hills and rich woods, of an inland village! Who can tell how scenes of peace and quietude sink into the minds of pain-worn dwellers in close and noisy places, and carry their own freshness, deep into their jaded hearts!... The memories which peaceful country scenes call up, are not of this world, nor of its thoughts and hopes. Their gentle influence may teach us how to weave fresh garlands for the graves of those we loved: may purify our thoughts, and bear down before it old enmity and hatred; but beneath all this, there lingers, in the least reflective mind, a vague and half-formed consciousness of having held such feelings long before, in some remote and distant time, which calls up solemn thoughts of distant times to come, and bends down pride and worldliness beneath it.*

*It was a lovely spot to which they repaired. Oliver, whose days had been spent among squalid crowds, and in the midst of noise and brawling, seemed to enter on a new existence there. The rose and honeysuckle clung to the cottage walls; the ivy crept round the trunks of the trees; and the garden-flowers perfumed the air with delicious odours. Hard by, was a little churchyard; not crowded with tall unsightly gravestones, but full of humble mounds, covered with fresh turf and moss: beneath which, the old people of the village lay at rest. Oliver often wandered here; and, thinking of the wretched grave in which his mother lay, would sometimes sit him down and sob unseen; but, when he raised his eyes to the deep sky overhead, he would cease to think of her as lying in the ground, and would weep for her, sadly, but without pain.*

That is what Christian Europe was all about. The great monster death lost its horror when the horror was joined with the hope in His resurrection from the dead and our loved ones’ resurrection in and through Him. The antique Europeans had faith, they loved much. And we have lost their faith, the faith that He is with us all through the night. We cannot replace the loss of that faith by celebrating the end of racism and/or the triumph of democracy. Just the opposite is the case. We need a *return* to racism, which is white pietas, and we need an *end* to democracy, which is the reign of Satan, and a return to Christian Europe.

Four more years of Trump might mitigate, ever so slightly, the liberals’ onslaught on the white race. But his re-election will not change the course of liberalism nor will it do anything to restore that which must be restored, our Christian European heritage. We need to step outside the liberals’ realm entirely and embrace the Star of Faith that leads us fearless through the night of liberalism toward the morning of Christian Europe. We can’t be part of their realm. Yet, as their realm, the liberals’ realm, becomes more blatantly satanic, our churchmen have become more blatantly pro-liberal and anti-Christian. At some point we must remember what we were and see what we have become. That which was lost was and is our hope and our glory; that which we have now constitutes “the horror, the horror.”

During my college and graduate years I met a great deal of academics like that music critic I mentioned last week, who thought you could enjoy Bach’s music without sharing Bach’s faith. Many of the professors I knew loved the great European poets, such as Shakespeare and Spencer, but not one of those academics believed in the God of Shakespeare and Spencer. They thought they could luxuriate in their poetry while immersing themselves in the culture of reason, the noble savage, and science. It doesn’t work that way. As the faith which inspired the artists and poets of Christian Europe disappears, so do the fruits of that ancient faith disappear. The white Christian artists and authors of long ago are now being systematically eliminated from our modern college curricula, just as the customs of our Christian ancestors are being eliminated from our common culture — which is really not a culture, but a non-culture which celebrates the triumph of Satan over all things noble, true, and beautiful, all things Christian.

There are no more loving vigils kept by the cradle of a Christian child, surrounded by guardian angels. Instead we have day care centers in which our young children are surrounded by bored, hard-as-nails, minimum wage ‘caretakers’ who torment children in the buildings consecrated to Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King Jr. Our children are being violated not only in their bodies but in the depths of their souls. The liberals hate children and childhood, because our Lord said that we must all be like unto little children in order to inherit the kingdom of heaven. What must we be like unto in order to be part of the liberals’ kingdom of hell on earth? We must be like unto the archangel Lucifer who hates Christ with a passionate intensity and seeks to destroy Him by destroying His image in man. The outward physical ugliness of the modern whites who disfigure their bodies in the style of African tribesmen and tribeswomen mirrors their inner ugliness. There is no femininity, no gentleness, no kindness in the women, and no Christian masculinity, no charity of honor in the men. The election of a Republican who wants to destroy all things white and Christian at a slower rate than the Democrats is not going to turn our de-souled, inhuman men and women into human beings again. We need to restore our “All Through the Night” culture, a culture which bred men and women with faith, hope, and charity.

The liberals incrementally deadened the souls of the European people under the guise of democracy, science, and enlightenment. Now the European people live in hell without the knowledge that they live in hell – “Your soul deserves the place to which it came, If having entered hell you feel no flame.” It is no longer a case of ‘if these shadows are not altered, Europe will become hell.’ The European nations have become hell, and the most ‘enlightened’ nation of them all, the United States, has led the way to hell. Our nation is a synthesis of perversions and blasphemies. Whatever is perverted, whatever is ungodly is considered good and pure in our nation, and whatever is pure, noble, and humane is proscribed in our nation. We can hold elections from now till doomsday if we like, but when your democratic elections take place in hell, it is of no consequence who gets elected, because the option to leave hell and return to His Europe is not on the ballot. If we don’t feel the flame, nothing will avail us.

Karl Stern, a Jewish convert to Catholicism, wrote a book called *A Pillar of Fire*, in which he attempted to show that the insights of psychology (he was a psychiatrist) were compatible with Christianity. I read the book as a young man, and I kept thinking of Gremio in Shakespeare’s *The Taming of the Shrew*. He asks, “Who would be married to hell?” Modern psychology is the heir of scholastic theology. The scholastics, in contrast to our Lord and St. Paul, told us we could know God through reason and the study of nature, rather than through a sympathetic connection to God – our hearts joined with His sacred heart. The practice of psychology makes the same presumption about man that the theologians made about God: You can look at men through the eyes of science and “pluck out their mystery.” Is that possible? No, it is not. The scientizing of God through theology and the scientizing of man through psychology has led to an anti-vision, a purely biological vision, of man and God. They are both confined within the borders of the natural world. That world is hell. Our God is not from hell. He harrowed hell to save poor sinners, but He is not of hell, He belongs to heaven, and so do we unless we choose to stay with Satan in his kingdom of eternal night.

In a civilization in which the people have given a place to the incarnate God at their racial and familial hearth fires, a glimpse of heaven is given to all the men and women, no matter how lowly their station in life, who are part of the life of that civilization. Their daily lives become consecrated lives; they partake of His heavenly kingdom, the kingdom that is within human hearts imbued with a love for the Savior. What happens when He is not allowed into a civilization because that civilization is consecrated to reason, science, and the noble savage? The people of that civilization become the citizens of hell, because their daily lives are consecrated to Satan. We must feel the flame and fight back against all the forces of hell. We cannot be neutral: Satan does not take prisoners, he devours the lukewarm. Just as our Lord harrowed hell, we, in imitation of Him, shall defy the flames of hell and cling to our Savior all through the night, until we see His star of faith over Europe once again.+

# Not of the World

September 14, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Religion of Satan, Resurrection

Tags: St. Paul



While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word. — John 17: 12-20

The Pharisees, seeking to “entangle Him in His talk,” asked Christ, “Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?” Christ’s reply shut the Pharisees’ mouths. “Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.” Christ never refuses to give an answer to anyone who is seeking the truth. But He knows the Pharisees. They have already made their decision about Christ; He must die so that they can continue to reign over the Jewish people in the name of a Messiah who will come in the future. If they acknowledge Christ as the Messiah, what would become of them?

Our modern Pharisees, the liberals, have made the same determination as the ancient Pharisees. The vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen, must die so that they, the liberals, can reign in perpetuity as the heralds of a new kingdom of God on earth, which is always in the future when all white Europeans have been purged from the face of the earth. And that is what liberalism is all about. Christ must die so they can reign.

The sum total of the liberals’ politics is the denial and the hatred of the living God. They must always be at war with the European people, because it was the European people who championed the living God. You can try to hold on to your “Churchianity” and avoid the persecution of the liberals by denouncing the racist and sexist antique Europeans, which is exactly what our modern “Christians” have done, but that will not stop the liberals from throwing the Judases of Churchianity into the fire with the faithful Europeans. All Europeans must die so that pharisaical liberalism can live.

The modern pharisaical liberals have done the old Hebraic liberals one better. Whereas the Hebraic Pharisees claimed to be the rulers of all that belonged to God’s realm, they still needed Caesar’s approval to proceed against Christ, who was a threat to their ungodly realm of ungodliness. The modern liberal Pharisees do not need Caesar’s approval to move against the ungodly Europeans, because they have control of Caesar’s realm and God’s realm. Church and State serve the liberals in a satanic unity of thought and purpose that has made the 21<sup>st</sup> century the first non-Christian century in the European people’s long history.

Even though the faith in Christ as true God and true man died out in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, there was still an ethical remnant of that faith remaining. That is why I cite the 21<sup>st</sup> century, when the ethical Christian remnant has disappeared as well as the faith from which that remnant came, as the first completely non-Christian century in the European people’s history. Horrific sins such as sodomy and abortion have been institutionalized in modern pharisaical liberalism along with the blasphemy of negro worship. And it is the liberals’ plan to ensure that sin and blasphemy remain at the heart of modern Europe. They have created a vast international network to keep the European people permanently in bondage to Satan and the powers of darkness. That vast international network has a non-local habitation, the European nations, and it has a name: it is called Academia.

The European people have been educated out of existence. They have been taught that racism and sexism are the unpardonable sins, which cry out to the liberal Pharisees for vengeance. Racists and sexists must be purged. So it is written, so it shall be. But the white European, whom the liberals call a racist, is in reality a man who rejects the blood and sex cults of the heathens. It would be more accurate to call such a man the last man with pietas. And the sexist? It would be more accurate to call the white sexist a patriarchal Christian – a man who believes that men and women have complementary and distinct roles in life that have been ordained by God.

Certainly the most striking aspect of John, chapter 11, is the apostle’s account of the raising of Lazarus. All our lives hinge on the truth of St. John’s account: “Lazarus come forth.” But what happens after Christ raises Lazarus from the dead is also quite striking. St. John tells us that “many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their way, to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.” It is impossible to fathom people who could witness a man’s resurrection from the dead and only be concerned about the persecution and punishment of the man who performed the miracle. But such are the Pharisees and such are they that serve them. The antique Europeans were like unto the Jews who saw and believed. The modern liberals are like unto the Pharisees who wanted to kill Christ and Lazarus. And our modern churchmen are those “who went their ways to the Pharisees” in order to tell them all about the treacherous Christ who was going around destroying the pharisaical religion of the Jews. “They are racist, they are sexist,” the churchmen tell the liberals. “We must destroy them,” the liberals respond. “Where your treasure lies so dwells your heart.” Churchmen such as Francis the blasphemer attack the antique Europeans because they, the churchmen, treasure their positions in the liberal world. If they were to champion the Christ of the antique Europeans, the Christ who raised Lazarus from the dead, they would lose the favor of the principalities and powers of this world. But what did our Lord say about this world? “For what shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?” It has been the assigned task, assigned by the liberals, of organized Christian Jewry to convince their charges that a man can have this world, he can worship at the shrines of the liberals’ heathen gods, and still retain his soul. Is that possible? No, it is not. We can’t exchange incarnate Europe for liberal Europe and still retain our souls.

Both my parents, who were of the World War II generation, were the first members of their families to go to college. And as a consequence they were much more liberal than their parents. As the offspring of “educated” parents, I and my siblings also went to college, and as a consequence we were more liberal than our parents, because in the Western world we are taught, in school and church, that life is a progression toward the light. What is old – monarchies, patriarchal families, a heartfelt faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen, are unenlightened prejudices and superstitions of the past, which are bad. Many people in the 20<sup>th</sup> century tried to hold onto a lukewarm Christianity by blending Christ with the progressive, evolutionary zeitgeist of liberalism. Teilhard de Chardin was the foremost exponent – “Everything That Rises Must Converge” — of that Christian blending. But the blending does not work. At the hour of our death we have only one hope. The hope expressed in John 11: 25-26: “Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?”

The belief in the progression of man toward the light of liberalism is incompatible with the faith expressed in *John 11: 25-26*. We must come to terms with that. We need to decide whether the antique Europeans or the pharisaical liberals and the lukewarm churchmen, who seek to blend Christ with liberalism, are right. I became spiritually older than my parents when I felt drawn to the vision of the antique Europeans. I could not find any beauty, faith, or love in modernity. Nor can I understand, from within, how my people can feel at home in modern Europe. Intellectually I see that they have embraced modernity, but I cannot understand their love of modernity in my heart. I still hope that there will be some that find their way back to an older, European vision of life that compels them to embrace Christ and His people and reject Satan and his minions.

The miracle itself, the rising of Lazarus from the dead, is the central event of John 11 just as the healing of the man born blind is the key element in John 9. But in both miracles what happens afterward amongst the Pharisees and the fearful unfaithful speaks to us across the chasm of time. The parents of the man born blind stepped away from their son because they “feared the Jews; for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that He was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.” And the Pharisees reaction to Christ’s healing of the man born blind is the same reaction they have to His raising of Lazarus from the dead. They seek to kill Christ to protect the corporate entity of pharisaical liberalism, because they, and they alone, as the corporate entity, can bring God to the people. So it has been in organized Christian Jewry throughout the European people’s history. Once Christ rose from the dead the Pharisees couldn’t kill Him directly so they had to kill His image in man, they had to kill the people who believed in Him. And the fearful and timid, whom we shall always have with us, still fear the treachery of the Pharisees’ spies and the wrath of the Pharisees more than they love Christ. To be cast out of the synagogues of liberalism is a terrible thing. It seems, if we look at the modern Europeans, that it is the worst thing that can happen to a man. But is it the worst thing that can befall us? What happens to the man born blind when he defies the Pharisees by refusing to denounce Christ?

*Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?*

And the man born blind gets a direct answer from Christ because Christ knows that he loves much.

*And Jesus said unto him, Thou has both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.*

My heroes, the heroes of Christendom, are the men and women who defy the corporate entity of pharisaical liberalism. The man born blind saw past the blind sight of Dylan Thomas to the source of all light. And our Lord sought him out! That is the reward of all those who defy corporate, pharisaical liberalism.

They have done it awfully well in this, the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Church and state are one incorporate entity, they are one synagogue: to be cast out from their synagogue is a fearful thing. But if we are not prepared to be cast out of their synagogue, He will not seek us out to give us comfort. We will not have a chance to say, “Lord, I believe,” as we fall at His feet and worship Him. We will be allowed, if we deny Him before men, to fall at the feet of the liberals’ shrines to reason, science, and the noble savage. Is that enough? If we settle for that then we are of all men most to be pitied. The culture of the incarnate Lord was built on the same faith in the divine humanity of God that Christ had when He decided to take flesh and dwell among us. He knew that He would not perish in Mary’s womb nor would His death on the cross destroy His sacred humanity. He rose again on the third day. Every aspect of our liberal world has been set up to ensure that we do not believe in our God-given humanity. We must not, the pharisaical liberals tell us, believe that He, through His divine humanity, will draw us to Him through our humanity. All that is human must die so the corporate entity of liberalism can live. That is a perverse reversal of what must happen. Corporate, pharisaical liberalism must die so that the vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen shall live, once again, in the hearts of His people. He will seek us out if we reject the Pharisees and turn to Him. +

# Sacred Tears

September 21, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Jacobinism

Tags: Charles Dickens, George Fitzhugh, Herbert Butterfield



Let the tears which fell, and the broken words which were exchanged in the long close embrace between the orphans, be sacred. A father, sister, and mother, were gained, and lost, in that one moment. Joy and grief were mingled in the cup; but there were no bitter tears: for even grief itself arose so softened, and clothed in such sweet and tender recollections, that it became a solemn pleasure, and lost all character of pain.

Time flies even when you're not having fun. While talking with an acquaintance who has kept up his subscription to *National Review* for the last fifty years, I realized that I had not seen an issue of the magazine in the last thirty years. In my twenties I subscribed to the magazine and also went to the library and read all the back issues dating back to the magazine's beginnings. The book review section of *National Review* gave the reader the chance, if he took the trouble to obtain the authors' works, to catch up on the history of the conservative movement in the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

I bring this up because my acquaintance — actually he is somewhat more than an acquaintance and less than a friend — was lamenting the fact that *National Review* has become a liberal magazine. I commiserated with him and left it at that. But I do not think that *National Review* has become a liberal magazine: I think *National Review* always was a liberal magazine. Their liberalism was rooted in their rejection of Burkean conservatism. A case in point: I cancelled my subscription to the magazine when the editors published an article titled, "Abortion: A Spirited Debate." In the article 'conservatives' on both sides of the abortion issue expressed their opinions. I don't recall all the authors, but I do recall that the prominent conservative, Ernest van den Haag, was pro-abortion. I sent off a cancellation notice to *National Review* in which I told them that the sanctity of the child in the womb was not a debatable issue and that any person or magazine that treated it as a debatable issue was not conservative. The editors replied that I was a hopeless reactionary and that I would find life awfully lonely without *National Review*. Well, I did find life awfully lonely, but I would have felt my loneliness all the more acutely had I continued to pretend I was in sympathy with the *National Review* conservatives.

What conservatives in the 20th century lacked was what Christian theology lacks: A commitment to a personal savior above the intellectual theories about God and a commitment to the preservation of a particular people who took that very particular and personal savior into their hearts. Governments, Burke asserted, were not as important as customs and manners. In fact, governments only existed to protect the immemorial customs and manners of the European people. And those customs and manners were rooted in the European people's faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. Any government, be it a monarchy or a republic, that failed to preserve the Christian customs and manners of the European people was not a legitimate government. The Southern conservative George Fitzhugh echoed Burke's sentiments:

*All government proceeds ab extra. Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the government class would cease to be conservative.*

James Burnham, who started out his career as a Trotskyite and then became an ardent anti-communist, was typical of the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives. He wrote many books such as *The Struggle for the World* and *The Suicide of the West*, which were considered conservative masterpieces. But the fatal flaw of Burnham's anti-communism was that his anti-communism was rooted in pragmatism — it was 'this world only.' And because it was 'this world only,' Burnham failed to see that there was no spiritual difference between the American democratic experiment and the Russian communist experiment. The former was incremental Jacobinism and the latter was the 'Jacobinism now' of the Robespierre Jacobins. The incremental Jacobinism of the American experiment in democracy has been more long-lasting than the Russian experiment, but that won't necessarily stop the triumphant incremental Jacobins of the United States and Western Europe from becoming Robespierre Jacobins. The New Age liberals lack the caution and the patience for incremental Jacobinism. But perhaps caution and patience are no longer necessary considering the spiritually anesthetized state of the European people. The democratic zeitgeist, be it Russian communism or Western democracy, can only be resisted by a spiritual force greater than the zeitgeist of modernity. There is no such force in modern Europe.

What would it take to defeat the purveyors of modernity? It would take a people who believe that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. Such a people, when united to such a God, would have the spiritual force to resist the zeitgeist of modernity. In the absence of that spirit, all Burnham's managerial programs and the countless other programs and political pamphlets of the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives amount to nothing. If you diagram and codify nothingness it still remains nothingness, it does not become a spiritual force.

The managerial conservatives, such as Burnham and Tyndall, ignored that which is essential for true conservatism, faith in something or someone beyond this world, and proceeded to unveil their plans to defeat the communist enemy from without and the liberal enemy from within while standing in the quicksand of democracy. The intellectual Christians, such as Weaver and Kirk, attempted to fuse the Western philosophical tradition with Christianity and democracy. That fusion eliminated the human element, the European people, which were and are necessary to defend the faith that made Europe Christendom.

The modern liberals tell us, "We will bring you hell." Is there anything in 20<sup>th</sup> century or 21<sup>st</sup> century conservatism that can counter such creatures? No, there is not. Thomas Aird says it all in his poem, "The Devil's Dream on Mount Aksbeck": "The dreamer knew the work he marred, and felt a Fiend's delight." The devil hates Christ and His people with a passion that cannot be understood or resisted by reason alone. We must be joined to Him, who loves much, in order to understand the love that is beyond reason, which is the only force in heaven and earth that can overcome the passionate hatred of the devil and his minions.

In Shakespeare's *King Lear*, the exiled Lear brought himself and his kingdom to utter ruin because of his failure to distinguish good from evil — he cast out his good daughter and placed his confidence in his two evil daughters. This is what the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives did and what the 21<sup>st</sup> century conservatives are still doing. They have cast out the good — the antique Europeans — and they have kept what is evil — the purveyors of democracy and racial diversity. But Lear, once he has lost his kingdom and seen the fruits of his daughters' evil, repents of the evil he countenanced through his moral blindness. I see no such repentance in the modern conservatives. They still look to democracy as their savior.

Sometimes we are told to look to democratic Hungary and sometimes we are told to look to democratic Russia, where the democratic virus seems to be less virulent. But we will always believe a lie if we look to democracies for our salvation, even if those democracies are professed Christian democracies. Throughout Latin America and Europe, the most manically anti-white and anti-Christian parties are the Christian democratic parties. The Voltaires and the Rousseaus will always “mock on,” but should we become their lackeys by continually supporting liberal regimes that have institutionalized everything that is anti-Christian and anti-European just because those regimes are democratic? What is good cannot be synonymous with what is democratic. When that satanic premise rules, every evil under the sun is countenanced – legalized abortion, gay rights, feminism, and white genocide – because those evils have been democratically legalized. There must be a moral center in our souls that passes judgement on democracy. If there isn’t, if democracy is at the center of our souls, we will never oppose the devil, we will be at his mercy. And the devil has no mercy.

The Southern people did not lose the Civil War in 1864. They maintained their civilization after 1864 because they refused to accept the verdict of democracy, they refused to accept the fact that their whiteness and their Christian faith made them moral pariahs simply because a democratically elected government decided they were moral pariahs. The Southern people lost the war when they accepted a place in the liberal government in 1877, because what was implicit in their re-entry was an agreement to abide by the incremental Jacobinism of the liberal Leviathan. Men such as Andrew Lytle and Donald Davidson remained spiritually unreconstructed, but the Southern people, as a people, became like unto the men and women of the North, they became grazers in the liberal fields of white oblivion. They lost their souls because they allowed the democratic process and all its attendant evils to become the moral center of their souls.

The pro-life movement, which started out as a movement to make abortion illegal, became a movement to ensure that abortion remained legal in perpetuity, because the people involved in the pro-life movement placed the democratic process at the center of their souls and left the unborn babies at the periphery of their souls, where they hovered around in a sort of limbo. The pro-life credo was not, “We will not abide the slaughter of the innocents.” Instead the credo was, “We will protest the slaughter of innocents within the confines of the democratic process, but we will not protest the slaughter of the innocents outside the democratic process.” To whom are you loyal when you have chosen the democratic process as your moral touchstone? Is it Christ, or is it the devil?

Writing in 1950 the great English historian Herbert Butterfield commented that as the belief in original sin died out so did the give and take, the compromise necessary in democratic politics, die out. If you believe that you as well as your political opponent are tainted with original sin, then there will be some humility. You might believe your opponent errs, but you will not believe he is beyond the ken of humanity. But when the Christian belief in original sin disappears, the liberal concept of original sin comes to the forefront. Sin is no longer endemic to the entire human race, it is now endemic to one race and one sex – the white male. Democracy writ large as in Jacobin France and the United States of America should never be acceptable to the European conservative, but even the smaller democratic structures, the village and county democracies, cannot work when the moral center of the democratic rulers is a liberal center. Christians can vote on which policy is best to ensure the continuance of the Christian customs and manners of European civilization. But they cannot vote on the best means to advance liberalism and destroy the white Christ-bearing race. Such a vote is blasphemy just as leaving the fate of the unborn to the mercies of the democratic process and leaving Christ to the democratic mercy of the Jewish rabble (“Give us Barabbas”) is and was blasphemy.

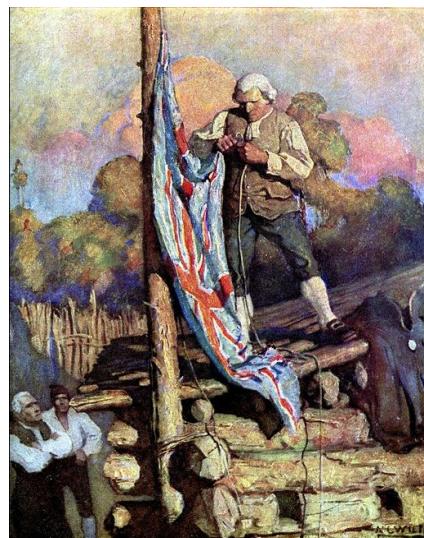
This world has been called, quite correctly, a vale of tears. But our Lord gave us the hope that our tears, when consecrated to Him, could soften and ultimately redeem the pain of this world. That is what our Europe, which is no more, was all about. Liberalism intensifies the agony of existence by destroying the white moments of the soul, those moments on earth when we feel connected to Him and to our kith and kin. There must be something inside of us that passes judgement on the culture of democracy. We can’t live in that nightmarish world where there is no light, no love, and no God. The devil’s dream on Mt. Aksbeck, to mar the work of God, cannot be our dream. We are not the democratic minions of the devil, we belong to non-democratic Europe, the Europe whose people did not disdain the God who made the deaf to hear, the blind to see, and the dead to rise again. Are such things so inconsequential that we can leave His Europe behind for democratic Europe? It cannot be, nor shall it be. +

# The Liberals' Orphanage of Horror

September 28, 2019

Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson, St. Paul



Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. – Edmund Burke

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill him. – *Matthew 26: 3-4*

---

I have not seen a news story from the official establishment media for over three years. There is no need to reference such ‘news’ sources because they are simply propaganda outlets for liberalism. The alternative news sites such as Breitbart and the Conservative Coalition provide you with much more accurate information than the propaganda ‘news’ of the liberals. However, even though the alternative news sites are more accurate than the mainstream ones, there is a great danger involved if we do more than dip our toes into the world of news, even if that news is gleaned from the alternative sites. Because, whether the news comes from the formal propaganda agencies of the liberal establishment or the alternative news sites, we are still swimming, or at least attempting to swim, in the moral quicksand of liberalism. We are trying to find a spiritual homeland amongst a people, the liberals, who despise the spiritual homeland of the European people. Why did “Dixie” become the national anthem of the Southern people? It became their anthem because the song spoke to their hearts, invoking the sacred image of a spiritual homeland that they could love and defend against the invader. “I’ll take my stand to live and die in Dixie.” All political revolutions are preceded by a moral revolution in the hearts of the people. We live under a political oligarchy opposed to all things white and Christian because the European people have given up their spiritual homeland, incarnate Europe, in return for the right to live in Liberaldom. We are now spiritual orphans, dependent on the mercies of the liberal overseers of the orphanage for our every need. Have they tended to our needs? No, they have not given us anything close to what was provided for us in incarnate Europe; they have left us bereft of everything that makes life bearable – the love of kith and kin and the love of a personal Savior greater than reason, science, and the noble savage.

The mere reportage of the atrocities that have come about under the liberals’ regime of reason, science, and the noble savage does not really offer the white Everyman any hope. He must have a spiritual homeland in which he can take his stand against the liberals. In the absence of such a homeland he must make himself content in the liberals’ orphanage. Which means he must anesthetize himself against his past. He must learn to hate all things white and Christian lest he be cast out of the liberal orphanage, the only home he has. It is not a real home, it is not of the spirit, but it is the only home the liberals will permit him.

In order to make the orphanage acceptable to whites as a place where they are made ready for the slaughterhouse, it was necessary to trivialize white civilization. Deep-rooted family and racial ties were replaced by a commitment to sport teams, and faith in the God-Man was replaced by the worship of the sacred negro and the cosmic force. Can such trivialities sustain a people who once believed in the God of Handel and Rembrandt? On the surface it seems like such trivialities can sustain the European people. They don’t seem to need a spiritual homeland. But what is going on below the surface? The increased suicide rate among young white males, the increase in drug use, the increased addiction to sexual perversions all indicate that life in the liberals’ orphanage is not what the liberals purport it to be.

Still, white people cling to their tenuous place in the liberals’ orphanage. And they cling to their place in the liberals’ orphanage with their whole heart, mind, and soul precisely because their place in the orphanage is so tenuous. The atrocity stories about the torture murders of whites by blacks, the mass rapes and murders of whites by Moslems, do not make the white grazers want to fight the liberals and their colored minions, it makes them divorce themselves from ‘other’ whites, the ‘bad’ whites who have brought ruin upon themselves by being too overtly white. “The good whites, like us, will be accepted in Liberaldom,” is the belief of the white grazers. And as they go to the execution block they will still be hoping against hope that their benevolent liberal rulers will discover they are the good whites who do not deserve to be killed. They will never grasp the fact, because they have given their souls to Liberaldom, that all whites are evil by virtue of the fact that they are white. This is not an abstract principle to me, it is a horrific reality. My father, for instance, was a white grazer, a World War II veteran, who believed in racial diversity and the American flag. During his final illness he suffered through the living hell of a hospital committed to racial diversity, which translates to the torture of white patients through neglect in favor of the treatment of black and brown patients. Grazers never stop believing — like a mistreated dog they keep looking to their masters, the liberal overlords, fully confident they will be treated with compassion and kindness. But compassion and kindness are relics of another world, a world we have left behind for the great modern world of Liberaldom. Let us all hold hands and join in a psalm of praise to that brave new world of diversity, cruelty, and spiritual desolation.

The ‘get the information to the people’ alternative news sites are closing the proverbial barn door after the horses have already escaped. You must have rulers and a people with the heart to address and correct wrongs in order to get anywhere with your atrocity stories. In the Western world the rulers have created a culture in which whites are offered up for sacrifice. And they have created a culture of non-resistance to liberalism amongst the people who are being made ready for sacrifice. It will take something much more potent than alternative news sites and elections to combat the liberals’ culture of white genocide.

What is that something more potent than alternative news sites and elections? Oft this stage I have repeatedly said what that something is, much to the disgust of the enemies of Christian Europe. But it is the antique Europeans who felt connected to their people and their God, in spirit and blood, who carved out a spiritual home for the European people in the midst of heathendom. The anti-Christian enemies of the antique Europeans started out as isolated figures in the halls of academia and organized Christian Jewry, until, in the American and French Revolutions, they managed to institutionalize their mind-forged religion of hated. The rest of the European nations have followed in the footsteps of the American and French Jacobins.

The liberals institutionalize evil by damming up the channels of grace. They criminalize pietas, the love of our kith and kin, so that we cannot form an alliance with the God of mercy and love who comes to us through those ties. The better way, better than philosophy and the speaking in tongues, which St. Paul told us about, was charity. If that charity is proscribed, that charity which can only be known and then practiced by those people who have a spiritual homeland, then what becomes of the European people? They are left bereft of a homeland, they are dependent on the liberals’ state-operated orphanage.

The European culture of Christ crucified, Christ risen, is now so remote to the European people that any serious presentation of that culture as an alternative to the modern liberal orphans is met with scorn, ridicule, disbelief, and in some cases fierce persecution. One thinks of *Acts 5: 40*:

*And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.*

When the liberals command us not to reference the ‘racist’ and ‘sexist’ faith of the antique Europeans, haven’t we been commanded not to speak in the name of Jesus? Yes, we have been so commanded. But we shall not cease to speak of those people and their God, who is our Jesus as well as theirs.

The liberals, having forsaken the living God, have become as hard-hearted as Satan; they cannot be moved by charitable pleas to stop white genocide. Nor can the grazers be compelled to abandon their liberal orphanage. They fear the unknown world outside the orphanage walls too much. So what must be done? It appears that nothing can be done. But in this world, this liberal world of institutionalized blasphemy and cruelty, there is a narrow mountain pass in the hinterlands of Europe. That pass is guarded by griffins, dragons, and evil trolls. If a European, a third dumb brother, is willing to approach that mountain pass armed only with the charity of honor which was the distinguishing characteristic of the heroes of old Europe, he will discover that the griffins, dragons, and trolls are no match for a European knight of charity. They will fall before him. And he will then make his way through the mountain pass and destroy the dam holding back the water of pietas from flowing into the European valley. When that river once again nourishes the blighted European valleys, the liberal trolls and wizards will flee and the European people will come back to life again.

I refer to the European fairy tale of the third dumb brother, because that tale, which occurs again and again in the folklore of our people, tells us what our people learned about existence. They saw that at the heart of this world of pain and sorrow was a Heart that had overcome this world of pain and sorrow. “If the world hate thee, know that I have overcome the world.” We need to see the visions and dream the dreams of our people when they had faith. If we remain in the liberals’ orphanage where there are no visions of the Christ of old Europe and no dreams of the love which passeth all understanding, we will continue to be the ‘death in life’ people, the people without souls.

All heresies, Protestant and Catholic, stem from clergymen who seek to make the Christ of the Gospels into Caiaphas, a religious leader who set himself up in opposition to the living God of mercy and love in order to champion his own narrow, mind-forged religion of cruelty. The ideologues of liberalism, be they the American sons of liberty, French Jacobins, Russian communists, or modern liberals have made, and in the case of our modern liberals, are still making, the religion of Caiaphas their religion. Then and now the main feature of the religion of Caiaphas is the hatred of the living God. This is why the liberals must always be about the business of destroying the spiritual homeland of white people. The Europeans must never have a place from which they can take their stand, because that place, that Europe, is His Europe. But we will take our stand – Alexander Smollet is our exemplar. Wherever a European Christian lives according to His lights and defies Satan and his minions, there, on that spot of ground, is Christian Europe, our homeland.

*“Now you’ll hear me. If you’ll come up one by one, unarmed, I’ll engage to clap you all in irons, and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won’t my name is Alexander Smollett, I’ve flown my sovereign’s colours, and I’ll see you all to Davy Jones.”*

We will not plead for a place in the liberals’ orphanage of horror. We will insist on an end to liberalism. There is no other alternative for the white European. The Trump and Brexit ‘victories’ are perfect examples of the futility of trying to work within the framework of the liberal orphanage in order to obtain rights for white people. The white European will never be given a place to live and work within the liberal orphanage. Let us leave that charnel house, that orphanage, and return to our spiritual homeland, which was and is, Incarnate Europe. +

# The Fruits of Compromise

October 5, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Liberalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety.

-Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;  
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

-Shakespeare, [Cymbeline](#)

---

Let me continue last week's thread: "All political revolutions are preceded by a moral revolution in the hearts of the people." Burke, and then his spiritual counterpart, Dostoyevsky, faced the brave new world of the liberals and saw the "principle of evil himself" that was and is the font of liberalism. We must fully grasp that depressing fact, but none the less true, even if it is depressing, before we can respond to liberalism as Christian Europeans should respond. "Stop! This must not go on!" Nicholas Nickleby commanded as he stepped forward and began to beat Wackford Squeers with the same cane Squeers had been beating the defenseless and crippled Smike with. I do not see, in the European people, the same righteous indignation about the evil liberals do that Nicholas Nickleby showed toward Wackford Squeers. And Wackford Squeers was a gentleman compared to the liberals; he lacked the "cold malignity" of the liberals; he could not quite descend to their level of evil.

Of course Nicholas Nickleby is a fictional character, so we can discount him and continue to capitulate to liberalism. But can we? Let us pause a moment. Nicholas Nickleby's response to evil cannot be dismissed as a mere storybook response to evil. Dickens was describing a spiritual reality. The European people, when they were a people, believed that heroes should respond to evil with the same charity of honor that Nicholas Nickleby demonstrated when he beat Wackford Squeers. Only a few heroes lived up to that creed, but the fact that a hero in old Europe was expected to fight the devil and his minions rather than debate and dialog with them indicates why old Europe, with all her imperfections, gave us a glimpse of His kingdom come while the new, improved liberal Europe gives us a foretaste of hell.

What we now find acceptable, even laudatory, has been made acceptable and laudatory by the revolution that took place in the hearts of the European people. Negro worship, legalized abortion, gay rights, feminism, and Islamic terrorism are just some of the horrors that our ancestors would have responded to with the command, "Stop! This must not go on." And then they would have acted on that command. The first outward manifestation of the liberals' moral revolution, or should we say their immoral revolution, was the French Revolution. Pure evil emerged, spewing forth from the hearts of academics – lawyers, philosophers, and theologians – and the French people did not oppose that evil.

*I title did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.*

-Burke, [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)

Is it possible to preserve the "unbought grace of life" while enjoying the fruits of a satanic revolt against God? "Yes, it is," the incremental Jacobins of Europe proclaimed. "If you reject the extremism of Robespierre, if you grant tax-exempt status to the churches that support the liberal state, if you do everything that Robespierre did, but do it gradually and democratically, you can have the 'freedoms' and 'pleasures' Satan can give, and you can have God as well." But such a compromise is a mirage, a trick of the devil. Where your treasure lies so lies your heart. You cannot treasure the things of Satan and still retain God in your heart. That is where intellectual Christianity comes to the fore. The immoral revolution in the hearts of the European people could not have taken place if the theologians – Roman Catholic and Protestant – had not damned the human heart as impure and unchristian. If we can only approach God through the intellects of enlightened clergymen we are ultimately left to the mercy of the evil one who has no mercy, because metaphysical speculation, detached from the human heart, is Satanism. The reason our modern clergy have joined the liberals in their condemnation of the antique Europeans is because they do not think a heart of flesh is the bedrock of faith. They are pagan

philosophers who are uncomfortable with the illogic of the God who took on human flesh. Thus, our past, our Christian past, has been eradicated by the liberals and the anti-European, and therefore anti-Christian, churchmen.

If the European people were one with their progenitors, they would not be the confused, cowardly creatures they now are. They are confused because they think they can actually be part of Liberaldom if they voice their disagreement with certain aspects of liberalism in polite terms. And as the mad-dog liberals become crueler, divesting themselves of all humanity, the grazers and the ‘conservatives’ become more polite and self-effacing. But I ask you, was Robespierre gentle to the people who were civil to him? Did civility and politeness make Stalin feel warm and gushy so that he stopped killing millions? Civility should be the byword when Christians meet to discuss how best to advance His reign of charity, it should not be the byword — in fact it should have no place at all — when we confront liberals whose stated goal is the elimination of all things white and Christian.

Civility in the face of liberalism is a cowardly betrayal of Christ. Only men who are taking the hallucinogenic drug called democracy can think that liberals will stop their murderous campaign against the white race if we, the whites, will only be civil to them. Are they civil when they slaughter the innocents? Are they civil when they invite Moslems into the white nations to rape and murder whites? Are they civil to any white politician, such as Trump, who tries to include white people in the liberals’ ‘diverse’ world? Civility, kindness, mercy, and above all charity, stemmed from Christian Europe. How can you expect liberals who have made the hatred of Christian Europe their reason for being, to be civil, kind, merciful, or charitable? You can’t, unless you have become so spiritually anesthetized that you no longer are able to distinguish good from evil. We are back with Peter on the night they took Christ away to be crucified. “Do you know that man?” And of course Peter, with an instinct for self-preservation, denied our Lord thrice. But there is one instinct stronger than the instinct for self-preservation, an instinct that the liberals and the theologians do not believe in: the instinct to return the love bestowed upon us by the living God. Peter, after his denial of Christ, died on the cross because his loyalty to the font of love was greater than his fear of the liberals. The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, but the love of God is the ultimate end of wisdom. We arrive at that consummation through the human heart. Do our minds tell us to deny His Europe and embrace Jacobin Europe? If that is the case, then we have no heart, because we have denied the living God who comes to us through the human heart.

It has been the self-appointed task of the ‘Christian’ theologians to destroy the wellsprings emanating from the hearts of the faithful so they can remain on the straight and narrow, undeterred and uninfluenced by the dangerous passions emanating from the human heart. Life is not that simple. You can’t destroy the human in order to get to the divine. You must go through the labyrinth of the human heart, with all its pitfalls and temptations, in order to reach the God with the divinely human heart. Without Christ as the moral exemplar within our hearts, we are left with only our feeble minds as our moral exemplars. Which leaves us at the mercy of Satan and his minions.

I referenced Burke at the beginning of this post because what he described as the compromising spirit of his fellow Europeans toward the Jacobins – “an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will” – is what has been taking place within the ranks of ‘conservatives.’ The crackdown on all websites to the right of Hillary Clinton has made the ‘conservatives’ try to be more civil and more submissive to the liberals. But such a policy is not only immoral, it is also impractical. The liberals are possessed by the devil, they are determined to go over the cliff with the swine. They will not have anything to do with anyone remotely connected to Jesus Christ. And white Europeans were once intimately connected with Jesus Christ; therefore, white people must be eliminated. You might think you will save yourself by denouncing your past, your people who loved much, but you will then be part and parcel of Liberaldom. You too will go over the cliff with the swine. We lose everything if we seek to make peace with the liberals; we lose the battle in this world, and we lose the ultimate battle, to obtain a place in His house of many mansions.

R. L. Stevenson observed that, “a man could not vary from his faith, unless he could eradicate all memory of the past.” That has happened to the European people. The liberals demonized the antique Europeans by calling white pietas ‘racism’ and the Christian patriarchal family ‘sexism.’ The churchmen went along with the liberals, jettisoning the actual flesh and blood Europeans for a new, abstract, nondescript, universalist type of Christian without the racist and sexist tendencies of the older European Christians. But such ‘perfect’ Christians are not Christians. They are liberals. They do not worship the God who enters human hearts, they worship the archangel Satan who enters human minds in order to tell the unfaithful that, “You shall be as gods.”

Robespierre discovered that his revolution based on pure reason could not sustain itself. The people needed something for their hearts. So Robespierre went from the execution of all those who were not atheists to the execution of all those who were atheists. But his state religion was not the Christian religion, it was paganism revisited. He failed because he moved too quickly and too harshly, but his method, the blending of Christianity in many of its outward forms with the spiritual substance of paganism, was accepted, over time, by the French people and the rest of the European people. The romance of liberalism, which consists of the European people’s love affair with reason, science, and the noble savage, has replaced, in the hearts of the European people, the romance of Christ crucified, Christ Risen. Why has that romance triumphed over the Christ-centered romance of old Europe? Why did Judas, who seemingly saw the same Christ as the other apostles, decide to betray Christ? Obviously there was something he failed to see. Why did Burke see “pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil” in the Jacobin regicides, while Price, Fox, and Priestley, his contemporaries, and later men such as Belloc and Sarkozy, see the triumph of good over evil in the victory of the cannibalistic regicides over the Christian monarch of France? Who are we compromising with when we try to please the liberals? Why doesn’t the romance of His Europe inspire us to rise and ride? I do not understand the modern Europeans nor do I want to. Blessed are they that lived, loved, and mourned under the shadow of the cross, which once enveloped all of Europe. They are my people, which I’ll keep close to my heart, for sympathy’s sake. +

# The People without a Heart

October 12, 2019

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, Friedrich Schiller, La Fontaine



Oh, learn to feel from what a stock thou'rt sprung;  
Cast not, for tinsel trash and idle show,  
The precious jewel of thy worth away.

-Schiller, *William Tell*

---

The conservatives of the post-World War II era, men such as Richard Weaver and Russell Kirk, have been completely dismissed by the modern conservatives, who are not conservative. They are liberals who differ with their liberal cousins on certain economic issues, but in the main they agree with their cousins on that which is essential, the supremacy of the material realm over the spiritual realm, thus proving the truth of Burke's prophecy about the new age that was upon us: "But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded..."

It was and remains my contention that unless we, the European people, come to see that democracy is antithetical to Christ's reign of charity, whether it comes to us in the French or American mode, we will never break free of the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. "He did not die but nothing of life remained," will continue to be our destiny. The people of color can reject incarnate Europe and continue on their merry, pagan way, but the European people cannot go back to paganism without committing suicide. Their past, unlike the past of the people of color, is inextricably bound to incarnate Europe; if they seek to sever themselves from His Europe they will become the unmen, the people without souls. Like the Man in the Danish fairy tale, "The Man Without a Heart," (1) the European people are now a mind and body without a heart. They live in a purely material realm of existence without the spiritual sustenance that once sustained them. They have given their hearts to the men of science and democracy. And the men of science and democracy have placed those European hearts in a science lab where they can be regulated and controlled by the superior minds of the liberals. The grazers are allowed access to their hearts when the liberal lab technicians call all the whites together to worship at the shrines of the colored heathens. Then, after the services, the Europeans' hearts must be placed back in the science lab to prevent them from being aroused at the destruction of their people and the liberals' attack on the living God who dwells in hearts of flesh.

The modern liberals, under the guidance of Satan, have accomplished what the Rousseaus and the Voltaires set out to do: They have convinced the European people that their salvation lies in a repudiation of their past. "If you embrace the future," the liberals tell them, "You shall be as gods." They will be purged of their whiteness and their souls, but that is no tragedy because sophisters, economists, and calculators have no need of a soul. Those creatures, the sophisters, economists, and calculators, must be providing the European people with something that I can't see, because they have kept the European people in their power for the past century. I suppose – but I'm only guessing – that when a people have only known one reality, the reality of Satan's hatred for humanity, particularly white humanity, they spend their lives trying to live and survive within that reality. That there could be a divine love at the heart of existence is now an alien concept to the European people. There is no personal love of God or man in the new Europe, there is only the impersonal love of cosmic nature, the type of love the psychiatrists call the "oceanic feeling," that makes a man or woman feel at one with the natural world. Speaking only for myself, I must say that I have no love for nature or the cosmos — I don't want to be one with cosmic nature — because that type of nature, dress it up how you will, is nothing but an impersonal dung heap.

The Kirk and Weaver conservatives missed that which was and is essential. Both men supported the idea of God and the idea of a godly people, but because of a philosophical avoidance of the human heart, they failed to name the particular God and the particular people necessary to sustain European civilization. Jesus Christ was and is the Word-made-flesh, He is not some vague, shadowy figure contained within the framework of something called our 'Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition.' He is the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end of our existence. That is what our people believed, the people who took Him into their hearts and their civilization. When He is the unchallenged King of your civilization, it is possible to simply reference your "religious tradition" without undermining your civilization. But when Christ has been dethroned by the Utopian heralds of a new civilization based on the custom and manners of Satan, you cannot simply make reference to "our heritage," because "our heritage" has become our democratic heritage, bequeathed to us by the Voltaires and the Rousseaus. In order to exorcise the democratic demons from our society, we need to call upon our Jesus, not our 'Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition.' If we don't call on Him by name, the demons will declare, "Jesus we know, but we do not know the Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition." And because they do not know or fear that abstract entity, they will stay within the body of European civilization and continue to work their will upon the European people.

Richard Weaver concluded his masterpiece, *Ideas Have Consequences*, with a recommendation that we take our stand on the metaphysical right of private property, which was one of the few metaphysical rights left us as a holdover from old Europe. That won't do. The right of private property became a metaphysical right because the people who made it a metaphysical right believed that Jesus Christ was the Son of God. You can't hold onto that right, or any other right stemming from old Europe, while holding the central issue in abeyance: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day?

We must consider the great difference between the pagan Greco-Roman culture and the Christian European culture. If we consider rightly we will not blend the two cultures, as the intellectual conservatives do, and we will not equate Western civilization with the pagan Greeks, as men such as Victor Davis Hanson do. The pagans did not reject the living God; they never knew Him. The modern Europeans have rejected the living God, and they have built a culture based on that rejection. Think on the enormity of that crime! How can we have anything to do with liberals — how can we dialogue with them or engage in polite debate with them — when they preside over a civilization grounded in the hatred of the Light of the world?

I had a sociology professor in college who kept ranting about white people who hated change and sought to go through life safe and secure in their "white bubble." The liberals, for all their self-proclaimed originality, are all cut from the same cloth. I have heard the "white bubble" attack ad nauseum in the last forty years, and the 'given' in the attack is that the whites' culture as it once existed was evil, and to resist the destruction of European civilization is to perpetuate evil and defy the good. Instead of defending their past and stating their determination to go into the future holding onto the threads of the past, the European grazers have responded to the attack on their past by agreeing to repudiate their past. And in return for their betrayal of old Europe, the grazers hope they will be allowed to continue to graze in the fields of Liberaldom, even though the grass is becoming scarcer and scarcer and is starting to taste like dirt.

The first and primary reason why we cannot repudiate our white civilization, what the liberals call our “white bubble,” is because He resides there with the people who had hearts of flesh. He does not live in modern Europe, the Europe conceived in regicide and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal as part of nature’s dung heap. But within that dung heap, by a leap of faith, we must believe that the colored races are more equal; they are the lords of the dung heap. Is this the promised end? Do we really think that the utopia of the dung heap is superior to His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven?

The second reason we cannot repudiate our past for a place in the liberals’ dung heap is that the liberals are liars — they will not give white people a place in their world even if they agree to leave their “white bubble.” Witness the case of Donald Trump. Has there ever been a President more vilified by the liberals than Donald Trump? No. He is hated more than Richard Nixon, who previously wore the ‘most hated’ mantle. Why the intense hatred? Is Trump unwilling to leave the “white bubble”? No, he is not. He has repeatedly, by word and deed, shown his Americanism, making ‘diversity’ one of the central tenets of his presidency. But – and herein lies the rub – Trump wants to make white people part of the liberals’ brave new utopian ‘paradise.’ And that is heresy. Whites must be destroyed, the “white bubble” must cease to exist. If you are against that religious tenet, the primary religious tenet of the liberals, you will be tied to the rock upon which Prometheus was tied, while liberal vultures peck at your liver.

An objective observer from Mars would think that a religious state dedicated to the supremacy of Satan and the eradication of European Christians would be opposed by the organized churches who profess to believe in Jesus Christ. That has not been the case. The organized Christian churches have either openly attacked Christian Europeans, which is the case with Pope Francis the blasphemer, or they have attempted to blend Christianity with Judaism in order to make it more compatible with the ethos of ‘this world only,’ which is the case with the largest branches of organized Protestant Jewry. Trump’s conversion was quite sincere, and it is natural that a man seeking water in a desert should take water from the only well he finds, but Judeo-Christianity is not the European Christianity of our European progenitors. The fusionism of Francis the blasphemer is more inclusive than the fusionism of the Judeo-Christians and the Greco-Roman-Judeo conservatives, which is why Francis the blasphemer and his cohorts have become more acceptable to the liberals than the other Christian fusionists. However, I wonder if ultimately even they, the Roman Catholic fusionists, will prove themselves to be too European for the liberals. Be that as it may, their fate is but a trifle here. What counts is the non-fusionist Europeans, the remnant band. It is hard to believe that Christ wants us to trust in Him and Him alone against all the forces of hell, but that is exactly what He does want. In life and death we have only our faith in His word to sustain us against the terror by night, the pestilence that walketh in darkness, and the destruction that wasteth at noonday. Look at all the well-planned programs of the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives that were designed to defeat the liberals and make the 21<sup>st</sup> century the conservatives’ century. They have all failed. The managerial conservatives of the 20<sup>th</sup> century helped to usher in the century of Satan. (2) It is Satan and his minions that now rule Europe. Why don’t we pick up the discarded sword of our non-fusionist ancestors and attack the liberals, armed only with that discarded sword? The European who forsakes all other helps save His help is the only force on earth that can defeat the liberals and their master. “When our grace we have forgot...” Do we believe that charity never faileth? If so, let us proceed to attack the liberals in His name, for charity’s sake. +

---

(1) When at home, this wise man was, as a rule, occupied with boiling, melting, and mixing the most remarkable things. One day he placed a small pot on a quaint-looking little oven, and was in the act of carrying out a very important experiment. The pot contained, namely: three drops of rat’s blood; forty drops of the juice of henbane and chelidonia; the finger of a thief, who had been hanged on the gallows; four slugs; the heart of a frog, and a bit of his own finger-nail. As soon as this began to boil, the wise man poured three drops of a green fluid into the pot. Instantly a white steam arose, spread itself above the stove, and assumed the shape of a ghost’s figure, surmounted by a large head with a pale, colorless countenance, large, round eyes, and a broad mouth.

The old sage was struck with astonishment, and wondered if this figure might, indeed, be Fortune itself.

“What do you wish for?” asked the figure, with its broad mouth.

“What do I wish for?” repeated the student. “Perfect happiness. Fortune herself is my desire.”

“Explain what you mean by Fortune,” pursued the spirit.

“Fortune,” began the other, “is a power of nature, and—“

“Be quick!” cried the ghost. “Do you wish for money?”

“No, no,” answered the wise man; “the greatest happiness is to have no heart. I wish that you would take mine from me.”

“Shall I take your heart?” asked the spirit again.

“Yes, take it, and hide it so well that it will never be found.”

—Danish Fairy & Folk Tales

(2) It was striking to me when I would read the intellectual conservatives that although they professed to be very traditional, they were proceeding under very nontraditional premises; paramount among those premises was that a man did not need his own personal kith and kin so long as he could hold onto an idea of a universal kith and kin. That did not, from my perspective, seem to be the way God had ordered our lives. But then that is the way with great planners and great thinkers: they always assume they are smarter than God.

### The Acorn and the Pumpkin

God’s works are good. To prove this truth  
I need not search the world, forsooth!  
I do it by the nearest Pumpkin!  
“Fie! Fruit so large on vine so small!”  
Exclaimed one day a wiz young bumpkin! ”What could He mean who made us all?  
This Pumpkin here is out of place.  
If I had ordered in this case,  
Upon that oak it should have hung—  
A noble fruit as ever swung  
To grace a tree so firm and strong.  
Indeed there’s been a great mistake!  
Had my opinion but been sought,  
When God set out the world to make,  
All things had then been as they ought!  
All things had then in order come!  
This Acorn for example,  
No bigger than my thumb,  
Had not disgraced a tree so ample.  
The more I think, the more I wonder!  
The Pumpkin on the oak should grow,  
The Acorn on the vine below;  
God surely made an awful blunder!”  
With such reflections proudly fraught,  
Our Sage grew tired of mighty thought,  
And threw himself on Nature’s lap,  
Beneath an oak, to take a nap.  
It chanced that during his repose,  
An Acorn fell plump on his nose!  
He wakened with a mighty start;

He shrieked and seized the injured part!  
"Oh! Oh! alas! I bleed! I bleed!  
This acorn 'twas that did the deed!  
I see that God had reasons good,  
And all His works were understood,  
For truly, what had been my woes,  
Had, then, a Pumpkin whacked my nose!"  
Thus home he went in humbler mood!

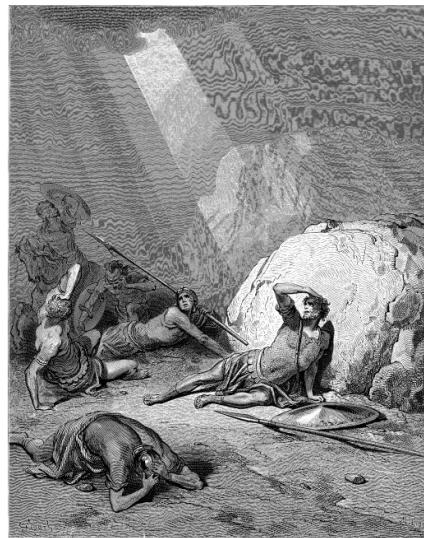
-La Fontaine

# Love's Own Light

October 19, 2019

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Pride of intellect, Rationalism

Tags: Nathaniel Hawthorne



Whether unto grace or guilt, all must live through Him,

Live in vital joy, or live in dying woe:

Death in Adam, life in Christ; the curse hung upon the cross:

Who art thou that heedest of redemption, as narrower than the fall:

All were dead,—He died for all; that living, they might love:

If living souls withhold their love,—still, He hath died for them.

Eve stole the knowledge; Christ gave the life:

Knowledge and life are the perquisites of soul, the privilege of man:

Mercy stepped between, and stayed the double theft;

God gave; and giving, bought; and buying, asketh love:

And in such asking rendereth bliss, to all that hear and answer,

For love with life is heaven; and life unloving, hell.

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

---

We cannot understand the European people outside of their Christian history. Many modern conservatives have suggested we do so, that we treat the European people as a generic people who can be studied and probed in order to be cured, without ever considering their past history. But this is akin to the doctor who treats a patient for an illness without taking the patient's medical history into account. We must take the European people's Christian past into account if we are going to effectively eliminate the wasting disease, the disease of liberalism, which is killing them.

Satan countered God's creation of man with a successful coup d'état in the Garden of Eden. He appealed to Adam and Eve's pride of intellect in order to get them to renounce their filial relationship with God. They were told to forget the fairy tale about the tree with the forbidden fruit and embrace the reality of man's intellect responding to and controlling cosmic nature. That coup d'état of Satan was countered by the incarnation of Christ, His subsequent death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. If you are Satan, how do you nullify Christ's divine act of mercy? You do what you did before, you appeal to man's pride of intellect.

The man who worships his own intellect has no room in his heart for the living God. Upon that principle, Satan has built his church, and he maintains that church by continually denigrating all human feelings that reside in the human heart. When we understand this stratagem of the devil, we can understand why the scholastic movement, the scientific study of God, is from the devil. The humane God, the living God who took flesh and dwelt among us, can only be known through the human heart. When the Catholic and the Protestant scholastics demonized the human heart in order to deify their intellects, they cut the European people off from God. We, like the Ancient Mariner, were cut adrift from the font of love:

*Alone on a wide, wide sea,  
So lonely 'twas that God himself  
Scarce seemed there to be.*

Pope Francis the blasphemer was recently reported as saying that Jesus Christ was not the Son of God. You can dismiss Pope Francis as an isolated madman who doesn't know what he is saying, but I do not see isolated madness in Pope Francis; I see the logical, maniacal, satanic madness of our age behind the anti-Christian ravings of Francis the blasphemer. What is the essence of our modern civilization? It is the pride of intellect, or to be more accurate, it is the pride of science. If you believe in the Christ story in its entirety – the creation of the world in seven days, the creation of man in the image of God, man's fall from grace in the Garden of Eden, and Christ's mission of divine mercy that was completed when He rose from the dead on the third day – you place yourself among the stupid people, the unscientific people who believe in fairy tales. Balzac summed up the essence of modernity when he remarked that, "In Paris if you tell a man he has a good heart, it is the same as telling him he is as stupid as a rhinoceros." Yes, that expresses the issue quite succinctly. The antique Europeans, when viewed scientifically, are stupid. They believed, quite literally, in the Christ story.

The liberals' worship of the negro is not based on a belief in the intrinsic worth of individual members of that race. In fact any time a person of color demonstrates a sympathy for the intrinsic moral value of the white people's ancient civilization, he is condemned by the liberals. What the liberals worship when they worship the blacks is their own intellects. They are proving their superior 'intelligence' by worshipping that which is antithetical to the older, 'stupid' civilization of the white Europeans; they have made what is natural, the noble savage, their God. In their natural religion, racism, which is really white pietas, has become synonymous with stupidity. And who among us wants to be regarded as stupid? Isn't intelligence the sign of our election? But what is the essence of our election? To what and to whom are we connected when we enter the ranks of the illuminated men of intellect who have rejected the living God? We are connected to the liberals' world, which is without faith, hope, and charity, and we are united to him whom the liberals serve – the proud angel of science, Lucifer.

When we reject the stupid and unscientific faith of the antique Europeans, we are back with the Athenians whom St. Paul confronted. They were men who "spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing." They considered themselves to be the illuminati, the intelligent ones, yet St. Paul calls them ignorant:

*Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, To The Unknown God. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.*

The modern Europeans have decided in favor of the ignorant Athenians; they have proclaimed their intelligence by rejecting the stupidity of St. Paul. Surely such intelligence makes the angels weep and places a sword in the heart of our Lord. But what is that to the liberals, who do not believe in the divine humanity of Jesus Christ?

A common theme in ‘Christian’ circles is to emphasize the similarities between Christianity and the other faiths such as Islam, Judaism, Hinduism, Buddhism, etc. But those ‘faiths’ are non-faiths, based on a rejection of the living God. When ‘conservatives’ such as Peter Kreeft recommend that Christians unite with the Jews and Moslems against liberalism, they reveal their own non-faith. Liberalism is the synthesis of all the non-Christian faiths; what they have in common with liberalism, a hatred of the God who took human flesh, makes their devotees the kissing cousins of the liberals. They will never unite with a European Christian; it is only Christian apostates who can make common cause with the liberals and the heathen faiths. Of course they can only be called apostates from the standpoint of the antique Europeans. If they got it right, if the faith they held in their hearts was the true Gospel of Christ, then the modern Christians who seek to fuse Christ with science, democracy, Judaism, Islam, and negro worship are wrong.

St. Paul was and is the saint for all people, but he is most particularly the saint for the European people. He represents our people at their best, when they loved much and would not compromise on that which was essential – faith in Christ and Christ alone as our salvation. St. Paul was not a theologian, he was something far greater: he was a poet of the spirit. With a passion emanating from a heart on fire with the love of Christ, he preached before the Athenians, the Romans, and the Jews, that Jesus Christ was the Son of the living God. It was not St. Paul’s belief in God that made the Athenians laugh at him and the Romans and the Jews persecute him. All those pagans, even the Athenians, believed in some kind of God. It was Paul’s claim that Christ was the Son of God, which placed him at odds with the world. He found himself in the same position as Christ before the Sanhedrin, when Christ made it clear to Caiaphas that He was the Son of God. Was it madness that made Paul think he saw the risen Lord on the road to Damascus? Our people did not think so when they built a civilization based on St. Paul’s assertion that the folly of God was greater than the wisdom of men. And that really is the crux of the matter. Christ’s wisdom was not and is not the wisdom of this world. Faith in Him cannot be reconciled to any of the faiths – Judaism, Islam, or liberalism, which emanate from the natural world. Christ’s love passeth the understanding of any mind-forged system of men. But does His love passeth the understanding of the human heart? St. Paul enjoined us to search the Scriptures with our hearts because in that union, that of the Word made flesh with hearts of flesh, is the consummation devoutly to be wished, the consummation of Christ with His people.

The story of the European people is not finished. We now live in hell, but we can climb out of hell if we cease to fuse the gods of liberalism with Christ. That was the key to St. Paul’s strength of faith. He was not a fusionist. When I worked in academia, I took note of the fact that very, very few of the academicians attacked Christ directly. None, of course, believed He was the Son of God, but they left Him alone as a figure of hatred. Like Francis the blasphemer, they generally regarded Christ as a good guy. It was St. Paul who earned their wrath and their hatred. Paul did not say anything about Christ that Christ did not say of Himself, but somehow the liberal academics managed to dismiss Christ’s claim to be the Son of God as a later addition, an addition of St. Paul. Bless that unclippable, unrelenting Apostle of Christ crucified, Christ risen! Our Apostle did not compromise with liberalism, and because he did not compromise, our people were able to know and love Christ. Why are we now too intelligent to believe in St. Paul’s vision of the risen Lord?

Four authors that I keep coming back to again and again for spiritual sustenance are William Shakespeare, Walter Scott, Charles Dickens, and Edmund Burke. I find in those authors the true Christian mysticism that St. Paul writes about in I Corinthians 13, “charity never faileth.” At the heart of our ancient civilization is that undefinable entity called charity. It was the belief of St. Paul that charity was the primary attribute of the God who took flesh and dwelt among us, and it was the belief of my people, the antique Europeans, that they were most like unto God when they practiced charity, not when they sought to rival God by out-thinking Him. The triumph of liberalism has resulted in the end of charity. Yes, we still have what are called ‘charitable institutions,’ but what the liberals call charity is not the charity that St. Paul spoke of. He spoke of Christ as the connection between human hearts and true charity. When our incarnate Lord is cast aside and what is inside the human heart is demonized, there can be no genuine charity. In fact, what is charitable becomes satanic. It is now ‘charitable’ to kill babies in the womb lest a young woman’s life becomes damaged due to an unwanted pregnancy. And it is now ‘charitable’ to stand by while the creatures of color from without and within the white nations murder, rape, and assault white people. Never mistake His reign of charity for their reign of Satan.

St. Augustine placed a wedge between Christ and his people when he declared that there was the city of God, which was the church of enlightened minds, and there was the city of man, which consisted of the barbarians from the fens and bogs of Europe. But is St. Augustine’s church *the Church*? Those ‘barbarous’ Europeans took Christ into their hearts and made Him the Alpha and Omega of their civilization. Throughout the Christian centuries of European history, the theologians have clung to the Augustinian view of the church. “The hearts of the faithful are sinful, but the minds of the theologians are pure. Isn’t that obvious?” No, it is not obvious to me. The theologians’ focus has been on the sins of the Europeans, which are no different than the sins of the pagans; therefore, the theologians tell us, we must look to them to escape the desolation of sin and destruction. But there is something different about the Christian Europeans which is quite obvious to those who see through, not with the eye. The Europeans had, when they were a Christian people, that which no other people before or since have possessed. They had the faith, hope, and above all, charity, that comes from touching the heart of God. You can’t acquire that faith, hope, and charity by thinking ‘correctly,’ in the mode of Aristotle and Plato. You can only come to that inner vision, that faith, by committing to the heart of God as St. Paul did and our people, the ancient Europeans, did. The theologians and the philosophers of the West, as Fitzhugh tells us, have been “so busy with the worst features of human nature (the Europeans’ human nature) that they have not even found a name for their better feature.” The managerial Christians of yesterday and today have taken it upon themselves to ‘fix’ the faithful. And when you set out to ‘fix’ people you focus on what is wrong with them. The problem with such a cold, scientific approach to human souls is that the Mr. and Mrs. Fixits often become like unto the scientist in Hawthorne’s short story “[The Birthmark](#)”:

*In those days when the comparatively recent discovery of electricity and other kindred mysteries of Nature seemed to open paths into the region of miracle, it was not unusual for the love of science to rival the love of woman in its depth and absorbing energy. The higher intellect, the imagination, the spirit, and even the heart might all find their congenial ailment in pursuits which, as some of their ardent votaries believed, would ascend from one step of powerful intelligence to another, until the philosopher should lay his hand on the secret of creative force and perhaps make new worlds for himself. We know not whether Aylmer possessed the degree of faith in man’s ultimate control over Nature. He had devoted himself, however; too unreservedly to scientific studies ever to be weaned from them by any second passion. His love for his young wife might prove the stronger of the two; but it could only be by intertwining itself with his love of science, and uniting the strength of the latter to his own.*

Of course we know how the story ends. Aylmer becomes obsessed with a birthmark upon his wife’s cheek, and in attempting to eradicate the birthmark he kills his wife. The antique Europeans have been placed in the position of Aylmer’s wife. They were not perfect Christians, therefore their civilization and the heirs of their civilization must be destroyed in order to produce perfect human beings fit to live in the liberals’ kingdom of heaven on earth. The attack on whiteness will continue and intensify so long as liberals rule in the European nations, because that birthmark, the birthmark of whiteness, must be removed so that scientific mankind can progress.

I contend, against all the world if necessary, but hopefully in union with a few kindred souls, that the antique Europeans, when seen through the visionary eye, represented the ‘best feature’ of man. They were the people who saw the Word made flesh and believed in the Word made flesh. The liberals in church and state have declared war on those people and on every man, woman, and child who dares, even tangentially, to stay connected to the antique Europeans. But we will cleave to those people because our Lord dwells with them; He does not dwell in Aylmer’s laboratory of science. The greatest tragedy, the institutionalized tragedy of liberalism, is the rejection of His love in preference for the approval of Satan and his minions. +

# The Beasts of Liberaldom

October 26, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Fear of racist label, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Negro worship, Religion of Satan, Scientism

Tags: Shakespeare



Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. – [Daniel 7: 2-3](#)

In the 1950s and 1960s the liberals used Trotsky's racism gambit to help them undermine the last vestiges of the white European civilization in the Northern hemisphere. But by the 1970s the mere charge of racism against white Southerners and right-wingers had lost some of its sting, for the simple reason that it was hard to find individual whites who used the 'N' word and attended Ku Klux Klan rallies, so the liberals started using the term, "institutionalized racism." No longer was it just whites who used the N word and attended Ku Klux Klan rallies that were racist, it was every single white man, woman, and child who lived and breathed in nations established by white people. By their mere existence they were racist, because racism was part of white people's innermost being, a heinous disease of the spirit that could not be cured; it could only be eradicated by killing the patient. How then were the liberals going to escape the 'cure' for institutionalized racism? They would become the Elect, they would build a new civilization based on institutionalized anti-racism. And the sign of their election, which meant, in their minds, that they would not be purged along with the racist whites, was the extent of their religious fervor, the extent of their passionate hatred of all things white.

The anti-white dogma is the central dogma of the liberalism that has been institutionalized throughout the European nations. And the corollary of the anti-white dogma is the worship of the black race. We cannot effectively challenge the liberals if we do not challenge their doctrine of the sacred negro. The anti-communist conservative William Schlamm wrote that, "Communism is the final synthesis of all heretical tendencies that have pervaded western civilization for many centuries. Communism is the culminating hubris of Promethean man who reaches out for the world and means to remake creation. It is scientism gone political." Is that accurate? Well, communism is certainly a great evil. But is it the "final synthesis" of evil? Schlamm was a former communist who looked the communist Medusa in the face, so we can understand why he thought it was the final evil, but communism is a derivative of liberalism, just as Jacobinism, Americanism, Islam and Judaism were and are derivatives of liberalism. The essence of liberalism is the worship of nature and the denial of mankind's filial relationship with God. All heresies, modern and ancient, are derivatives of that first liberal revolt against God, which came about because of Satan's hatred of the living God and the human beings created in His image. Once we grasp that reality we can understand why the love of the noble black savage and the hatred of the ignoble white race is essential to liberalism. The noble black savage represents all that is good, all that is natural and pure, while the ignoble whites represent all that is unnatural and impure. Of course what is ignoble and impure is whatever Satan deems to be impure and ignoble – the people who support what is humane and Christian.

If you make communism alone your synthesis of evil, you will still be under the thrall of liberalism, which is the true synthesis of evil. Whittaker Chambers, for instance, turned from communism to American democracy and negro worship. And it is the American version of liberalism that has proved to be the longer lasting version of liberalism. When the Russian communist empire fell, the European people should have said, "We have scotched the snake, not killed it," instead of proceeding onward to a synthesis of evil that has surpassed Russian communism. Russian communism was a derivative of French Jacobinism, which was a derivative of Satan's liberal revolt against God. That revolt has been institutionalized throughout the Western world in the form of democracy, which is incremental Jacobinism. Judaism is also part of the liberal revolt; it is not the synthesis of the derivative parts of the revolt, as the neopagans, who are spiritually akin to Caiphas and his Sanhedrin gang, try to make it.

What the Jewish governing body did, institutionalizing Satan's revolt against God in order to become gods, was what the democratic rulers of the Western democracies did during the era of liberty, fraternity, and equality. The people of the West did not heed Burke's warning about the new religion of nature that the democratic fervor represented. It makes a difference if we are ruled by sophists, economists, and calculators committed to Satan's anti-Christian world of science or by men such as Alfred the Great, who had that "charity of honor," which is in the heart of every true European Christian. We "have taken too little care of this"; our souls belong to the God above nature — we cannot hide from Him in the bowels of democracy, science, and the sacred negro without participating in a second fall of man.

The various derivative branches of the liberal leviathan – democracy, negro worship, science, Islam, and Judaism — seldom mesh together as they are supposed to mesh together; the various adherents of the derivative faiths are often at war with each other. But they are one in their hatred of the God above nature and they are one in their hatred of the people who once championed that God. Thus the women of science and democracy declare, "Better rapists than racists," as they welcome the Moslem invaders, and the Roman Catholic Pontiff declares that the people of the rain forest, not Christ, are the gods we must look to. "It is nature that leads us on, there is our refuge and our strength," so say all the adherents of the derivative faiths, which are part of the great liberal revolt against God.

During the Civil War Lincoln said that we were engaged in a great war which would decide whether any nation conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal could long endure. What liberty, and what equality? It was liberty from God and the supremacy of the noble savage that Lincoln championed. For the four years of the un-Civil war and the subsequent "Reconstruction" years, the United States shifted from incremental Jacobin-liberalism to Robespierre's version of Jacobin liberalism. That period of American history, in which over a half-million whites were slaughtered in the name of democracy and equality, was just as bloody as Robespierre's reign of terror, and in both cases, the French and the American reign of terror, we were told that the terror and the bloodshed were necessary so that liberalism, the revolt against God, could long endure.

That great Civil War that Lincoln spoke of, the war to ensure that Satan would rule on earth as he does in hell, raged on into the early 20<sup>th</sup> century and did not end until the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Now, there is no war, at least there is no war between Satan's minions and the followers of Christ. There are only internecine wars between the various branches of liberalism. It is the dream of the blaspheming liberals to bring all the warring factions together under the banner of nature and nature's god, the noble black savage, but there will always be discord in Babylon, just as there will always be discord in hell.

There is a diversity of heresies. Satan does that to ensure that "poor, bare, unaccommodated man" shall be forever seeking refuge from one heresy to another. Daniel saw the Four Beasts that were "diverse one from another," but yet he also saw that our Lord would triumph over the Beasts.

*Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces.*

*And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings.*

*And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.*

*But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.*

*And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him.*

*Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.*

The Beasts of liberalism can only survive if men's minds remain attuned to Satan's promise, "Ye shall be as gods," and men's hearts remain unmoved by Christ's love. Would hearts that love embrace the Beast called democracy, especially now that the mask has been removed and we can see the satanic evil of feminism, sexual perversion, and negro worship staring us in the face? Only people who have no heart could accept such moral ugliness. The moral rot has gone too far to be expunged by voting. Liberals openly call for the torture-murder of Trump and any other white who even hints at a sympathy for anything white and humane. What can be done with people who have embraced the beasts of democracy, science, and the sacred negro? First we must weep as Ezra wept –

*And at the evening sacrifice I arose up from my heaviness; and having rent my garment and my mantle, I fell upon my knees, and spread out my hands unto the LORD my God. And said, O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee, my God: for our iniquities are increased over our head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens. –Ezra 9:5*

And then we must refuse to be like unto the liberals who worship the beasts of liberalism.

When Edgar is a wretched outcast he reflects on his condition:

*Yet better thus, and known to be condemn'd,  
Than, still condemn'd and flatter'd, to be worst.  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune  
Stands still in esperance, lives not in fear.  
The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome, then,  
Thou unsubstantial air that I embrace!  
The wretch that thou hast blown until the worst  
Owest nothing to thy blasts.*

–King Lear

But then he sees his father, who not only is an outcast, but also has had his eyes put out.

*But who comes here?  
My father, poorly led? World, world, O world!  
But thy strange mutations make us hate thee,  
Life would not yield to age.*

Edgar then concludes he was wrong to say he was at the worst:

*O gods! Who is't can say, "I am at the worst"?  
I am worse than e'er I was.*

With that piece of wisdom before us, we cannot say that this is the worst of all possible worlds we live in. But we do live in a world that has become terribly biblical. Liberaldom has provided the European people with institutionalized blasphemies and cruelties that mirror the blasphemies of Sodom and Gomorrah and the cruelties of Jezebel and her ilk. Such blasphemies and cruelties turn us to *Daniel* and the *Book of Revelation* in an effort to understand a "synthesis of evil" that is unfathomable without reference to the Bible. Daniel was deeply disturbed by his dream of the four beasts.

*Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.*

He kept the matter in his heart. That is the only way he could live in the face of that vision of evil. The living God is in Daniel's heart, and that God will sustain Daniel in the face of a horrific synthesis of evil that will consume the man who has not taken God into his heart. We, the modern Europeans who are staring the beasts of Liberaldom in the face, will not be able to live in the face of that horror if we do not take the Suffering Servant into our hearts. There is no philosophy, no intellectual construct that can sustain us against the beasts of Liberaldom. The darkness, the horror, of liberalism has become so widespread, so pervasive, that a man is forced to take refuge in one of the derivative branches of liberalism that seem least offensive, or else he must go deeper, to the heart of Europe where the Savior dwells.

If we can't believe that Christ was at the center of the antique Europeans' civilization, then to whom or what do we turn? If we don't believe that the antique Europeans' faith and the virtues stemming from their faith were real, then what is real? Is there no such thing as Christian women, women who have a special gift for nurturing and caring for children? Is there no such thing as men who feel bound to defend the weak and helpless and fight for their kith and kin? Is there no such thing as honor, charity, and love? "No, there isn't," the united beasts of Liberaldom proclaim, "There is no charity, honor, or love, and there is no Savior." The four beasts, the beasts of Liberaldom, are upon us. Listen to what the liberals say, look at what they do. Are we not, when in the presence of liberals, amongst creatures from hell with no vestiges left of the humanity that was once the mark of a European? First we weep and pray as Ezra did. Then we vow to keep the living God in our heart, as Daniel did. In the two books that tell us of the Great War with the beasts of liberalism, *Daniel* and the *Book of Revelation*, we are told of the only comfort there is on this earth:

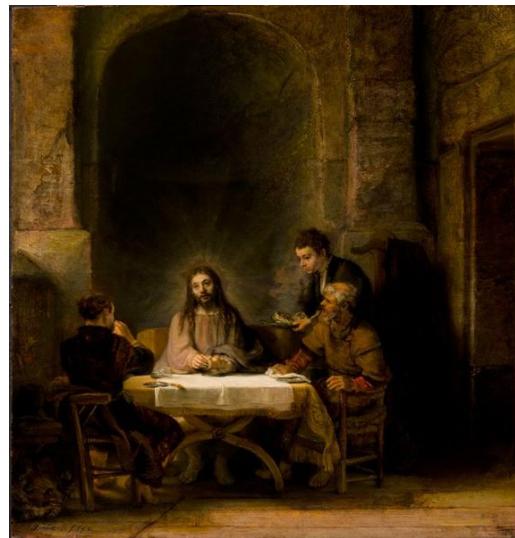
"And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." +

# A Place Beyond Science

November 2, 2019

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Faithfulness, Resurrection

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare, Thomas Hughes



But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

And it came to pass, as he sat at the table with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

-Luke 24: 29-32

---

I once read that Wilkie Collins, author of *The Moonstone* and *The Woman in White*, took laudanum to alleviate the pain of a recurring illness. Over the years he was forced to take larger and larger doses to keep the pain of his illness from overwhelming him. One day, for whatever reason — perhaps because of idle curiosity or because he had a severe headache — Collin's manservant took less than half a dose of the laudanum that Collins took regularly. Tragically, the manservant died. That sad incident comes to my mind a lot lately, because it has a certain relevance to the spiritual sickness of the European people. The European people are still standing after taking doses of liberalism that the Europeans of 100 years ago would have been unable to absorb and still live. When liberalism, which is Satanism, comes to a civilization incrementally, the people of that civilization do not "feel the flame" — they live in hell without any perceptible knowledge of their hellish existence. The European people's plight would not be so desperate if a foreign invader had forced them to accept the satanic principles of feminism, Islam, negro worship, and the other derivatives of liberalism as their ruling principles. If liberalism had been forced upon them, the European people could still have held onto their souls, like the Jews during the Babylonian captivity who kept the dream of their true homeland alive while suffering through their captivity. But such, unfortunately, is not the case with the European people. No enemy from without has made them accept the major tenets of liberalism. They have made all that is Satanic — feminism, the worship of the negro, and the incorporation of all faiths, save the Christian faith, into the European nations — part and parcel of their civilization. How long can such a satanic union endure? The liberals have made it their task, their exalted mission, to ensure that the union between Satan and the European people endures for all eternity. And who will say them nay? Who will refuse to be in union with the devil?

It is useless to talk about getting the proper conservative candidate to run against a left-wing candidate. There is no such thing as a conservative candidate within the context of democracy as practiced by the European people. Yet that is all the so-called conservatives talk about. "Le Pen got 35% of the vote in France, we are on our way!" Or, "The Nationalists in Britain won two seats, people are beginning to wake up!" And in our own country, it is always the next Republican candidate or some third party "populist" candidate who is going to "restore America's greatness." What constitutes America's greatness? America as a nation state was never great, it was and is an abomination. But her people had greatness to the extent that they shared in the common civilization of the European people, the people who took the Word made flesh into their hearts.

A conservative must be a counter-revolutionary, or else he is merely a wolf in sheep's clothing. Under the guise of conservatism, he perpetuates Satan's realm, which is held together by "Give us Barabbas" democracy. There are two incorporate unions in the lives of the European people. The first incorporate union is in our past, a union formed between the European people and Christ. The second incorporate union is in our present, the incorporate union that the Europeans have made with Satan. We cannot restore anything of value by voting for candidates who remain within the liberals' kingdom of eternal night. Something more is needed. We need to make a complete break with the liberals and the liberals' god in order to renew our ties to His Europe and His people.

In my early twenties, for reasons I need not go into, I roamed through Europe. And during the course of my roaming, I made a very un-profound discovery: the youth of Europe were going through the same spiritual upheaval as the youth in America. They, the post-World War II generation, had left the old 'Christ is Risen' culture behind and were searching for something or someone to fill the void. I vividly remember a discussion I had with some young Brits who were studying at a university in London. They were all materialists in that they were either Marxists or Socialists who were not interested in anything connected to the spiritual realm of existence. In fact there was only one student, a Scot from Inverness, who was even remotely interested in something other than leftist politics. The Scot was absorbed with aliens, not aliens from other nations, but aliens from other planets. Once he made it clear that he was not Christian, the young Scotsman was tolerated by the other students. I listened to the sci-fi Scot for a while and then I stated what seemed to be obvious. Coming from the position of Shatov in Dostoyevsky's novel *The Possessed* — "I shall believe in God" — I told the Scot that he was talking rot.

"You don't believe in people from outer space?"

"No, I don't."

"What do you believe in then?"

"I believe there is only one question worth considering: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day? If He didn't, we should all blow our brains out, and if He did, then we should stop talking about Marxism and spacemen and follow Him."

The hostile silence was palpable.

The 20<sup>th</sup> century was the century of spiritual laudanum. The European people were incrementally anesthetized against all things Christian. Had they been given a large dose of liberalism at the beginning of the century, had homosexual marriage, feminism, transgenderism, and fusionist Christianity been jammed down their throats in large, unhomogenized, and unadulterated amounts, they would have died outright. But they lived through the small doses, and their 21<sup>st</sup> century heirs, the creatures of the ‘Christ be not risen’ anti-civilization, have become the walking dead. They have a certain outward resemblance to human beings, but inwardly there is nothing; they are spiritually dead. But here is where the laudanum parable stops. Mere physical organisms die when the poison spreads. But if, as our faith tells us, we are not mere physical organisms, cannot a people who are spiritually dead return to life? Yes, it is possible, but only in and through Him. And there’s the rub – our people have left the civilization of Christ is Risen for the anti-civilization of Christ be not risen. All ‘restorations,’ all political programs, to ‘make our nation great again’ are useless if we don’t seek to go from here, Satan’s realm of death in life, to there, His realm of charity, in which there is life eternal for all who love Him.

I had a philosophy teacher in college who was an exception to the general rule of academics at the time. He did not, like his fellow academics, attack Christ indirectly by claiming Christ’s followers had misinterpreted His message. No, there was no indirection in that man of philosophy, he attacked Christ directly, claiming that His ludicrous, egotistic claim to be the Son of God had taken hold of His followers who were unable to live with His death so they invented the story of His resurrection from the dead. Wasn’t that what the Sanhedrin claimed when confronted with the empty tomb? Isn’t that the claim our modern anti-civilization is built upon? “Christ’s resurrection from the dead is a fairy story just as Jack and the Beanstalk is a fairy story.” But our people once believed that the Christ story was true. What or whom has come between them and Christ to make them leave His Europe for Satan’s Europe? The degenerate playwright George Bernard Shaw identified the source of the European people’s flight from Christ: It was science. Christ’s resurrection from the dead was incompatible with science; therefore, since science was truth and truth was science, it followed that Christ did not rise from the dead. Christ could be kept around as a facilitator of all causes that were not in conflict with science, such as the worship of the sacred negro, but He could no longer be worshipped as the font of divine love who had redeemed mankind from sin and death through His crucifixion and His resurrection from the dead.

We can’t return to a belief in Christ crucified, Christ risen, by an appeal to pragmatism. There are currently a large number of T.V. evangelists who tell their audiences that faith in Christ will bring them riches untold in this world. Is that true? Rembrandt became impoverished in his later years when he painted the Word made flesh. All the original apostles, save John, died martyrs’ deaths. It does seem that the European people thrived as a people when they believed that Christ was the Son of God, but there is nothing to indicate that individual Europeans thrived in the material realm because of their faith in Christ. And we must hold all ‘pastors’ who suggest that we shall have financial success if we trust in Him as moral pariahs.

The appeal of science is that it can deliver the material goods that Christ cannot deliver. If you trust in science and in the men who think scientifically, you will prosper in this world. What about the next world? Well, if your clergymen blend science and faith, you may obtain a measure of hope in the next world while retaining the things of this world. But such moral juggling is from the devil. Macbeth found, to his horror, that he had traded his soul for what the devil could give him in this world, and the devil double-crossed him:

*And be these juggling fiends no more believ’d  
That palter with us in a double sense,  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope.*

The devil does not love us, nor does he want our love, so he always appeals to that which is inside of us that is not of God. He seems, through the gambit of science, to have succeeded beyond his wildest dreams: he has the European people in the palm of his hand.

It’s impossible to exaggerate the extent of the European people’s thrall to the devil. No appeal to something beyond the realm of science can reach them. What are we to make of such a people? Leave them to heaven. We know, as the antique Europeans knew, that there is a divine love beyond science, and that divine love has a local habitation and a name. His name is Jesus and He resides in hearts that love Him. After years of imbibing the soul-killing laudanum of liberalism, the European people have lost their heart to respond to Christ, but that should not deter us from seeking Him in the recesses of our heart. We are one with the men of the Titanic who went to their deaths, after placing the women and children in the lifeboats, singing “Nearer My God to Thee.” Even if it is a cross, that leadeth me? Yes, even if it is a cross.

The end of liberalism and the beginning of a new chapter in the lives of the European people can be found in the remarkable book *Tom Brown’s School Days*, written by Thomas Hughes in loving remembrance of his hero, Arnold of Rugby. In Part 2, Chapter 2, Tom, the hero of the book, discovers through the good offices of young Arthur that the Bible is not a thing to be studied by theologians who then dispense its contents to the great unwashed in the pews, it is the living word of God that can and should be the book that those with hearts of flesh turn to in order to know the font of love.

*Tom was at first utterly astonished, and almost shocked, at the sort of way in which Arthur read the book and talked about the men and women whose lives were there told. The first night they happened to fall on the chapters about the famine in Egypt, and Arthur began talking about Joseph as if he were a living statesman—just as he might have talked about Lord Grey and the Reform Bill, only that they were much more living realities to him. The book was to him, Tom saw, the most vivid and delightful history of real people, who might do right or wrong, just like any one who was walking about in Rugby—the Doctor, or the masters, or the sixth-form boys. But the astonishment soon passed off, the scales seemed to drop from his eyes, and the book became at once and for ever to him the great human and divine book, and the men and women, whom he had looked upon as something quite different from himself, became his friends and counsellors.*

We once did love Him, not without cause. If I forget thee, incarnate Europe, and if I should cease to love thee... That shall never be. There is a “land of pure delight,” where He resides with His people; that land, not Liberaldom, is our home. Let us vote with our hearts and leave Liberaldom for His house of many mansions. +

# Lost

November 9, 2019

Categories: Faithful hearts, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Rationalism

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare



Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me, you would seem to know my stops, you would pluck out the heart of my mystery, you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be play'd on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me. — [Hamlet](#)

---

I have never had the so-called American sympathy for the underdog. I wept when the New York Yankees lost to the ‘underdog’ Pittsburgh Pirates in the 1960 World Series. The Yankees represented to me, at that point of my childhood, all that was noble and good; they were the heirs of the Lou Gehrig Yankees. I saw the Pirates as a pack of jackals picking at the entrails of a noble lion. Of course I was placing my own fantastical construction on that World Series event, a construction that had very little basis in reality. Lou Gehrig was indeed the noblest ball player of them all, but it did not follow that the 1960 Yankees inherited his mantle of nobility. But the point I want to emphasize is that I did not and do not automatically support the underdog in the battle simply because he is the underdog. Now, if the underdog is the noble one, as was the case with David in his battle against Goliath, then I do support the underdog. However, when I see nobility in the vilified favorite, I support the favorite. And doesn’t the favorite become a kind of underdog, when he is a noble lion facing an overwhelming pack of ignoble jackals? Wasn’t Maximilian the noble one in his contest against the Mexican revolutionaries? Weren’t the British the noble lions in their battle against the American revolutionaries? And certainly the Cossacks who defended the Czar against the Russian Jacobins were the noblest lions of them all.

I wrote the above as a preface to what follows, because I do not want what follows to be misconstrued as an abstract defense of the underdog. What I am defending is the human personality, in all its God-given nobility, against the scientized intellects of a committee of inhuman purveyors of abstract theories, with no connection to the realities of man’s spiritual life. The restoration of the misplaced Europeans of the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the ‘Lost Patrol,’ will take place when the European people once again side with the human personality, joined with His divine humanity, over and against the scientized committee men in church and state.

All the military men of the South, despite their noble intentions, failed to defeat the Yankees. There was one exception to that general failure — that exception was Nathan Bedford Forrest. Forrest lacked a diploma from West Point, but he had something far better than a West Point diploma, he had a genius for war as it was waged in reality rather than a theory about war that had no basis in reality. As a result Forrest never presided over a loss, and when Jefferson Davis was captured toward the end of the uncivil war, he was trying to make his way to the ranks of the man who had held the Yankees at bay for four years despite his lack of a West Point education.

Now let me move forward to the 20<sup>th</sup> century, to Reykjavík, Iceland in the year 1972. The Russian chess master and reigning World Champion, Boris Spassky, had all the advantages over Bobby Fischer. Spassky regularly played against an array of chess experts to sharpen his skills, and he played according to the book of scientific chess. Yet, the isolated genius who practiced against himself defeated Boris Spassky. It was a great victory for the human personality, the solitary genius defeating a collective body of experts. Of course it would have been an even greater victory had the United States really been a Christian nation. Then the battle would have truly been a clash between good and evil as was the case when Forrest, who was ironically called “that devil” by the demonic General Sherman, fought in defense of the Christian South against the ungodly government of the North.

The modern liberal heresy that says all that is ignoble and inhuman is good, and everything that is human and noble is evil, began, as all heresies begin, in the ranks of the Christian clergy. The clerical heretic thinks that it is easier to control men, for their own good, if you dissect them and remove all that is ungodly from their hearts. Unfortunately, or, more appropriately, tragically, the heretic soon determines that everything emanating from the human heart is ungodly, so he eliminates the human heart and commands all men to view the abstract intellect, his intellect, as their ruling principle. But when you eliminate the human heart and all the passions emanating from the human heart, you destroy man’s connection to the incarnate God. If man is totally evil, if what is inside of him is irredeemable, then why did our Lord take human flesh and dwell among us? Pope Francis the blasphemer now tells us that Christ our Lord did not take human flesh and dwell among us. That is the end result of a theology that dignifies the abstract intellect of man and demonizes the human heart.

Our bards, the European poets who were attuned to the hearts of their people, have shown us the end result of a theology that is not of God, but of men. In Dickens’ *Great Expectations*, Miss Havisham loves a man unworthy of love who leaves her at the altar, and as a consequence she closes her heart to all emotions and passions that reside in the human heart. She raises her adopted daughter, Estella, to despise humanity as she despises humanity. Of course tragedy ensues, and Miss Havisham dies asking Pip’s forgiveness. The Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky’s *The Brothers Karamazov* takes the same position vis-à-vis his parishioners as Miss Havisham took toward Estella. He circumvents God’s will, who wants men to seek Him in their hearts, in order to serve them better than God does. The Inquisitor eliminates the erring human heart and gives men what they need to survive in this world. But can we survive with the certainties of science, the things of this world, without something that speaks to our heart’s desire to transcend the things of this world?

Is it not remarkable that the Jewish clergy, the men who were supposed to be the guardians of the faith, crucified the living God? Why, with the prophets before them, with the whole history of their people’s covenant with God before them, did they reject and kill Christ? They committed that unspeakable crime because the God they worshipped was a scientized God devoid of humanity. What should have been a sign unto them of Christ’s divinity, that He made the blind to see, the deaf to hear, and the lame to walk, was a sign unto them of Christ’s pact with the devil. That is and always shall be the mark of the heretic. He believes whatever is humane and compassionate is evil and whatever is inhumane and cruel is godly. The Christian heretic and the liberal are one with the high priests of the Sanhedrin, the men who scientized God into a cruel, vengeful God made in the image of their minds.

If God can only be known when He is scientized, then men must be scientized as well so they can know God. When the church seemed to be at its strongest in the Middle Ages, it was in reality sowing the seeds of modernity throughout the nations of Europe. When God is scientized, when He becomes an object of study that can only be known through the human mind, His image in man is defaced. There are always those in the ranks of the clergy who are willing to kill the humanity in man in order to purify the church of God. But if, as St. Paul tells us, the church of Christ consists of hearts that love Him, then you attack Christ’s church when you demonize the human heart, because you have left the dear Christ without a place to “enter in.”

Hamlet would not be “played upon” by Rosencrantz and Guildenstern as if he was a recorder. And Dostoyevsky’s Underground Man said that “a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key.” Whenever we side with the men of the scientized intellects who profess to ‘help’ men by scientizing them, we side with the powers of darkness, because science, in the name of enlightenment, has obscured, and in many cases obliterated, His image in man.

The 20<sup>th</sup> century has produced competing ideologies of science that all lead back to the same charnel house of death-in-life liberalism. The capitalist can ignore the 14-hour a day misery of the coal miner because the ‘scientific’ capitalist system produces the greatest economic good for the greatest number of people, people in the aggregate, not individual people, who were and are created in the image of God. And the neo-cons can eliminate the jobs of thousands of truck drivers with the same rationale that the overlords of the coal miners used – ‘It benefits mankind in the aggregate if we use machines instead of men to drive trucks.’ The communist response to capitalism came from within scientism. The communists claim their system is the correct scientific solution to the bad science of the capitalists. Lost in the conflict is the man created in the image of God. There is nothing divine in the aggregate herd. The capitalists and the communists do not see His image in men with their statistics, so they think they can do what they will with their statistical human beings who have been divested of their souls, their God-given humanity.

Modern wars are now fought by one group of statistical entities against another group of statistical entities. The *Novus ordo* Catholics champion the scientized God of de Chardin while the traditionalists champion the scientized God of Aquinas, but in both cases, the divine humanity of Christ and the divinity in man is obscured by the scientific theologies of the religious experts.

The same conflict goes on in the secular arena. The conservatives want to conserve, through the good offices of scientific analysis, our ‘democratic way of life’ while the liberals want to build a new way of life based on their scientific analysis. Again, what is lost in both cases is man. Show me a conservative in the 20<sup>th</sup> or 21<sup>st</sup> century that links his conservatism to the white race. Where are the Dabneys and Fitzhughs in the ranks of the conservatives? The post-World War II conservatives simply wanted to integrate more slowly than the mad-dog liberals. And that is still the conflict today. The Republican and the Tory want to liquidate the white race at a slower rate than the mad-dogs of the various democratic parties and labor parties throughout the European nations. The scientific conservatives want a more orderly white genocide than the mad-dog liberals. That will not do. The European Christian will not consent to the sacrifice of his people on the altars of science, democracy, and diversity, because he knows that without pietas he and his people are lost: they are the people without a home in this world or the next world.

We come to God through pietas, the love of our own. If our blood ties to our kith and kin are scientized out of existence, we will lose our faith in the living God. And of course that is what has happened: the Europeans now have a scientized image of God, the natural savage, to worship instead of the living God who used to preside over our racial hearth fire. Why is it that only the white race has been ordered to give up ‘racism’ in the name of science? Why is it unscientific for the European people to love their own, yet it is not unscientific for the colored races to love their own? Is it because white pietas leads to His kingdom come and colored racism leads to hell on earth? Yes, that is the reason. White pietas revealed the image of God in man; it benefited white humanity and colored humanity because it allowed the dear Christ to enter into our lives. Now that white pietas has been scientized out of existence, we have seen the demise of all things good, noble, and true, and the triumph of all things ignoble, evil, and false. The mystery of existence is contained in the God-Man. When we comprehend that mystery with our non-scientific hearts, we will fight for our own with our whole heart, mind, and soul, and in that fight we will once again know and love the living God. +

# Rejecting the Liberals' Ghostly Bargain

November 16, 2019

Categories: Charity, Faithful hearts, Liberalism, Resurrection



—Except this. That as they were assembled in the old Hall, by no other light than that of a great a fire (having dined early), the shadows once more stole out of their hiding-places, and danced about the room, showing the children marvelous shapes and faces on the walls, and gradually changing what was real and familiar there to what was wild and magical. But that there was one thing in the Hall to which the eyes of Redlaw, and of Milly and her husband, and of the old man, and of the student, and his bride that was to be, were often turned, which the shadows did not obscure or change. Deepened in its gravity by the fire-light, and gazing from the darkness of the paneled wall like life, the sedate face in the portrait, with the beard and ruff, looked down at them from under its verdant wreath of holly, as they looked up at it, and, clear and plain below, as if a voice had uttered them, were the words: '*Lord, keep my Memory Green!*' — [The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain](#)

---

When I was a child there was no question which season was the best season of the year. It was summer. There was no school in summer, and you could do so many outdoor activities in summer that you could not do in winter. And my love of summer continued into my adulthood, because when I married and had children I enjoyed the summertime activities with my children. However, now that my children have grown, I find, much to my surprise, that I hated autumn, hated because it meant the end of summer, has become my favorite season. Physically and spiritually autumn now appeals to me more than summer. But I can still understand why so many people adore summer and do not welcome autumn. So I understood and sympathized with a young woman, about 30 years of age, standing next to me in line at a local amusement park this past August, when she said that she hated to see the end of summer. I said, "Yes, it is sad to see 'the last rose of summer.'" The woman's response surprised me.

"That is beautiful, did you just think it up?"

Now, I wasn't quoting Proust or Joyce, or some other esoteric writer of the past, I was quoting one of Thomas Moore's songs that used to be as widely known as the Beatles' *Let It Be*. I suppose I shouldn't have been so surprised, because I frequently encounter, in this brave new world of diversity, white people who have no knowledge of Christian Europe. Apparently a diverse education no longer extends to our spiritual progenitors, the antique Europeans. ([I](#))

The Christian Europeans were intimately concerned with history, particularly their history, because they believed, unlike all other people, that their God had entered human history. Once you believe in the Christ story, once you have taken that story into your heart, you can no longer view history as a cyclic process; you believe human history began in the Garden of Eden and will end with the second coming of our Lord. And in between those two events the history of every single human being is of "eternal moment," because He has created us in His image, to share all eternity with Him or to go to hell, if we choose to go to hell. So it is of no small consequence — it is of eternal consequence — that the modern Europeans have chosen hell over His kingdom come.

There are warning labels on alcohol, cigarettes, and a good deal of our food products, but there are no warning labels on our culture. We don't see any signs in our schools — "What you learn here, if taken to heart, will send you to hell." Nor do our churches have any warning signs as we enter — "Warning, we believe that hell is heaven and heaven is hell, abandon Christian Europe if you enter this church." And on it goes. If the liberals were honest and forthright, they would warn people that all the major institutions of Liberaldom lead us to hell, but if the liberals were honest and forthright they wouldn't be liberals. So the great lie, the lie that says the liberals' hell is really heaven, goes unchallenged.

In Christian Europe the European everyman served the King because the King served Christ. Kings who forgot their rule came from Christ frequently ceased to rule. It is quite different in Liberaldom. The liberals have instituted the principles laid forth in Plato's Republic. The state does not serve God, God serves the state. So long as your religion does not conflict with the religion of the state, you may have a religion. But is such a religion really a religion if you must make your vision of God subordinate to the state's vision of God? If Christ is only invoked to condemn racism, but is not invoked to condemn negro worship, feminism and legalized abortion, is He really the same Christ that was worshipped by the antique Europeans, the Christ who rose from the dead on the third day? Of course, He isn't. That Christ, the Christ of old Europe, has been banned from the liberals' republic.

The liberals are correct, not morally correct, but tactically correct, to ban all remembrances of Christian Europe, because when a man, a European man, remembers Christian Europe, he will know what he once was, a child of God, and he will remember what he has lost, His kingdom come, by accepting a place in Liberaldom. What then? He will challenge the liberals' right to rule, and that challenge, the challenge of a European imbued with the power of faith, faith in the living God, is something the liberals cannot abide, because such a challenge will mark the beginning of the end of Liberaldom.

There is a Christmas story by Charles Dickens called *The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain*, which should be placed on an equal footing with *The Christmas Carol*, but for some reason it is not as well known. In the story, the Haunted Man makes a bargain with a ghost. The ghost will give him peace of mind by removing his remembrance of all "sorrow, wrong and trouble." Of course when the Haunted Man loses his remembrance of all sorrow, wrong and trouble, he loses all contact with humanity. He becomes a walking abstraction, unable to share in the happiness of others, whose happiness is woven in with sorrow, wrong and trouble, and unable to truly empathize with the suffering of others because he has left suffering behind. The story is so contemporary, because the plight of the Haunted Man is the plight of the European people. We have renounced incarnate Europe, we have not kept our memory of that sacred place and those blessed people green. Instead, we have become like unto the living dead — we walk through the valley of the shadow of death-in-life liberalism, completely immune to the suffering of others and the happiness that once was mixed in with the sorrow, wrong and trouble of the antique Europeans. The devil's lie rules the European people — "You can be happy here on earth; you can avoid all the sorrow, wrong and trouble found in Christ's Europe if you just follow the liberal way, which is my way."

At first glance the modern Europeans seem one with Buddha. Didn't he and his followers believe that an intellectual detachment from suffering humanity was the key to "inner peace"? Yes, there are great similarities between Buddhism and modern liberalism, but the white race can never be exactly like any of the colored races. When whites go wrong — and there is no wrong greater than liberalism — they forge their wrong in a perverse caricature of the faith that their ancestors once held. Thus the modern Europeans are abstracted from humanity just as Buddhists are abstracted from humanity, but the modern white liberal has added a Christian's evangelical zeal to his Buddhist abstraction from humanity. We must, the people of the liberal captivity, become abstract humanoids devoid of all humanity or the terrible swift sword of liberalism will cut us down. The Buddhist seeks to avoid evil by intellectually removing himself from it, and the liberal institutionalizes evil in order to avoid the source of all suffering, the people who saw beauty on the cross. Those people are an evil that cannot merely be avoided, they must be purged. The vision that reclaims the Haunted Man and brings him back from death in life to eternal life is the vision that has been banned from the liberals' Europe:

'O Thou,' he said, 'who, through the teaching of pure love, hast graciously restored me to the memory which was the memory of Christ upon the cross, and of all the good who perished in His cause, receive my thanks, and bless her!'

It is the remembrance of the vision of Christ on the cross that restores the Haunted Man. But the Haunted Man wanted to reclaim his soul; he was not content with death in life; he wanted his humanity back. Is there any indication that the European people want their memory of Christian Europe back? Do they feel the loss of their humanity as the Haunted Man did? No, they do not. They are still wallowing in the pig slime of modernity in the hope that if they consume enough pig slime they will enter the kingdom of God on earth. Because they have no remembrance of what they once were as a people, the Christ bearers, they have become what the science of the liberals tells them they are – mere beasts, fit for one thing, the liberals' nightmarish world of death in life, stripped of all capacity to love God or man.

Let us put the European people's tragic fall from grace in simple terms. Suppose there once was a young man, born of God-fearing parents who nurtured him, loved him, and gave him, through their love, an intimate knowledge of the living God. When he became an adult his parents died. At first he grieved and vowed, in his heart, to keep their memory green. And so long as he kept their memory green, he was able to love God and bear up under the sorrows and troubles of the world. But then tragedy ensued. The young man began to listen to the surrounding din of men called academics. From state pulpits and ecclesiastical pulpits they told him of the evil of his parents. They demonized such parents and commanded him and others like him to put the remembrance of their parents out of their minds and hearts and place all their hopes in the new world that the academics were forging, a world devoid of sorrow, wrong and trouble. What would we think of a young man who listened to the academics and let his remembrance of his parents die out? Wouldn't we call such a man a moral pariah, a reprehensible coward? I would. And that is what I call the modern Europeans, moral pariahs who do not have the moral courage to challenge the liberals' utopia in the name of the people who bequeathed to them a vision of the living God.

Never, never lose sight of the fact that the liberals' attack on 'racist' whites is an attack on the living God who comes to us through our humanity. If we denounce white pietas, we denounce Him. The Lord has blessed me with many children, and they are indeed a blessing, because they have brought me closer to Christ. In loving them, I have learned so much more about His loving heart than I could ever have learned from theology or philosophy. But if I thought happiness consisted of the absence of sorrow, wrong and trouble, I would have taken the academics' bargain and rejected fatherhood, because each and every child has increased my burden of sorrow and worry in this world. I love my children, hence I suffer because their sorrows and troubles are my sorrows and troubles. But would I have any happiness in this world, or hope of happiness in the next world, if I did not share the suffering of my loved ones? No, I would not; therefore, I reject the liberals' bargain, the same bargain the ghost offered to the Haunted Man, a bargain he ultimately rejected. And we should all, we Europeans, reject the liberals' ghostly bargain and return to His Europe where there is a multitude of sorrow, wrong and trouble, but where there is also the love of God, which passeth the understanding of the liberals, the creatures who have left His kingdom come in order to live in their mind-forged hell on earth.

Pietas, pietas, the passionate love of our own — that is our challenge to liberalism! We shall not yield, we shall not cease to love, even in the face of an avenging army of maniacal, liberal inquisitors who are determined to eradicate the Christian Europeans from the face of the earth. We will counter their hate with our love of Him in and through our people, of happy memory, who loved much and received His forgiveness and His blessing. +

---

(1) There are always certain gaps in every man's or woman's education. For instance, I was surprised to hear William F. Buckley, an educated man, confess, in his mid-sixties, that he intended to read *Moby Dick* for the first time. So you might think I am making too much of one woman's ignorance of "["Tis the Last Rose of Summer"](#)" But that was just one example of what I insist is the loss of something more significant than a lack of knowledge of certain European classics. That woman's ignorance was representative of a severance, a severance from our people's incomparable, irreplaceable moral heritage. That moral heritage, which connects us to Him, is much more important than our democratic heritage or our scientific knowledge. Nor is a mere academic knowledge of the great works of Western literature enough. We must have an organic connection to the spirit of the people who produced and loved those great works. "Lost, lost, lost," says the evil dwarf in Scott's *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*. And so are we if we don't see life feelingly and reconnect with those "dear old folk from long ago."

# Forgive Us Our Trespass

November 23, 2019

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Pride of intellect

Tags: J. S. LeFanu, Shakespeare



Merciful Heaven,  
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt  
Splits the unweageable and gnarled oak  
Than the soft myrtle; but man, proud man,  
Dress'd in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd,  
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven  
As makes the angels weep; who, with our spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

-Isabella, *Measure for Measure*

'Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.'

-*The Dream of the Rood*

---

By way of preface, I haven't put any links up on my blog since my removal from Word Press in April, because I don't want to bring some other blogger down who might be found guilty by his or her association with me. That is the nature of the times we live in. The European people live under the rule of the Babylonian liberals, and their rule is not a benevolent one.

At the beginning of *The Christmas Carol*, Dickens lays particular stress on the fact that Marley is dead. "There is no doubt that Marley was dead. This must be distinctly understood, or nothing wonderful can come of the story I am going to relate." I must lay 'particular stress' on the fact that the European people are a captive people living under very cruel and merciless overlords, who have allowed the devil to fill the void in their souls created when they left Christian Europe to forge a new realm, where people were 'free' of the constraints of the Man-God, Jesus Christ.

It's quite possible, even quite probable, that the European people will remain under the rule of their liberal overlords for many centuries to come. "Then why, if we are doomed to be captives of the liberals, should we bother to oppose them?" We should oppose them because men are not merely biological beings. Never let the fact that we have biological needs obscure the fact that we are of the spirit; our real need is for communion with our people and our God, in spirit and truth. And the spiritual truth of our existence here on earth is that it is better to be spiritually connected to the living God, even though we live under the rule of Babylonian liberals, than to deny our captivity and practice the same religion as the rulers of Babylon in order to appease the rulers of Babylon. Daniel was one of the Christ-bearers; it was his task to hold to the Christian faith even in the midst of Babylon. That is our task: We, as a people, must be faithful to the prophets, the apostles, and our European progenitors who kept the faith alive in spite of dungeon, fire, and sword.

It is not a good thing, the Babylonian captivity of the European people; I weep by the rivers of old Europe just as the Jews wept during their captivity by the rivers of Babylon. But we go beyond sadness to tragedy if we deny our captivity, because that denial constitutes an acceptance of all or part of the liberals' faith, a faith which will send us to hell. What did our Lord tell us? He told us to beware of those who could kill our souls; they were far more dangerous than those who could merely kill our bodies. "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell." (*Matthew 10:28*) Liberalism is a soul-killing faith; we must put on the whole armor of God in order to protect ourselves against it. From whence comes the armor of God? It comes from within: "Behold the kingdom of God is within you."

I had a friend who tried to become a priest in the Novus Ordo branch of the Catholic Church, and then, when that attempt failed, managed to get ordained in a traditionalist branch of the Catholic Church. But like David Copperfield, who tried life on his own and found he liked it no better than his former life, he found that he didn't get along with the traditionalists any better than he got along with the Novus Ordo Catholics. What was the problem? Was my friend simply a trouble-maker, unable to get along with anybody? No, that was not the case. The friend in question was an unpretentious, mild-mannered man who wanted to serve Christ. "The problem was here," said my friend, pointing to his heart. "They don't have a heart for God," was the verdict of my friend. His experience with organized Christian Jewry has been my experience with organized Christian Jewry, Protestant and Catholic: The clergy have decided that Christ didn't know what He was doing when He appealed to the hearts of humble fishermen rather than to the brains of the 'smart guys' in the Sanhedrin. But Christ knew the Sanhedrin had hardened their hearts against Him; they were too smart to believe that love came down from heaven in the person of Jesus Christ.

The religious wars in Christian Europe were never wars between Christians who held to the true faith, the faith of the apostles and St. Paul. The so-called religious wars were in reality theological wars, men adhering to one mind-forged theory of God fought against other men with differing mind-forged theories of God. And when theories of God collide, the dear Christ, the Christ who enters human hearts, is left out of the picture.

Theological speculation is the root of liberalism. The devil told Adam and Eve to speculate about God. And their theorizing about God led to their betrayal of their Father who loved them in return for... what? The reason organized Christian Jewry is defenseless against the liberals is because organized Christian Jewry wants to be part of Liberalism. The churchmen would like a more moderate liberalism than their secular counterparts, but they do not want to go back to the 'stupid' faith of the antique Europeans who believed in the whole Christ story. Really, how can an intelligent man believe in talking snakes and a non-evolutionary creation of man? But if we can't trust God to tell us the truth in the beginning of the Christ story, how can we believe Him when we come to the end of the Christ story? The reason our modern churchmen have not declared war on the liberals is because they are ultimately not opposed to them; they have no heart for God, because their minds have killed their hearts. They have become like unto Uncle Silas in [J. S. LeFanu's novel](#):

*Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels.*

Perhaps our clergymen once had a vein of sincerity in their faith, but they forgot the beginning of the Christ story. The devil always appeals to our pride of intellect. It is not 'racism' we need to worry about — *au contraire*, we need to be racist in that we need to love our own in order to conquer that greatest of all sins, the pride of intellect, which makes us think we can reorder God's world so it is in harmony with our reason rather than His folly. What did St. Paul mean when he said that the folly of God was greater than the wisdom of men? He was telling us that the human heart connected to the Divine heart, through love, is the truth and the way.

Charity never faileth; when we forget that, we become either cannon fodder for the liberals, or worse yet, we become liberals. Jacob Marley warned Scrooge of the chains he was forging for himself because of his hardness of heart. The European people have allowed themselves to be chained, link by link, to liberalism. And they will never break the chains of liberalism until they respond to Christ's divine condescension with the same passion that animated the prophets, the apostles, St. Paul, and the antique Europeans.

Our existence here on earth cannot be explained by science alone. How could mere biological entities create a civilization such as Christian Europe? How could mere biological entities exhibit the faith, hope, and charity of the antique Europeans? Are not such manifestations of the spirit something more than nature? Yet the liberals tell us we are not of the spirit, we are mere vegetable matter. But somehow, by a great scientific miracle, the anointed ones, the liberals who have gone beyond whiteness, beyond their God-given humanity, can build the kingdom of God on earth with the colored people of the world as their raw material. It's an absurdity on top of an absurdity, yet that is the 'scientific' reasoning of the liberals. And that 'scientific' faith has been institutionalized throughout the European world. Each incremental link of the liberal chain that binds the European people to the liberals was forged in hell, but each link was presented to the European people in the form of a perverted Christianity. Negro worship started out as civil rights. Who could be against that? But if we exempt the black race from original sin and make that race an object of worship, savage gods devoid of mercy, who is served? There is only one who is served, and that one is Satan.

Feminism started out as an organized movement to make the white male 'respect women.' The astounding assumption that the antique Europeans, particularly the Victorians, did not 'respect women' stands as an everlasting testimony to the deranged demonism of feminism. Why is the ethos of Lady Macbeth holy while the sanctity of the life-bearing and life-nurturing women of old Europe, women such as Little Dorrit, considered to be demonic? And now, we are told that heterosexuality itself, or at least white male heterosexuality, must be condemned in the name of feminism. And our churchmen acquiesce to that condemnation because it is compatible with their mind-forged Christian faith, which condemns all passions emanating from the human heart because such passions can lead a man astray. Of course reason can never lead a man astray. Is that true? We have only to look at our very rational 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries to see the wonders of a mind-forged, rational, man-made world, in which human creatures, devoid of hearts of flesh, dance like puppets on strings. And it is Satan who pulls the strings.

When I was growing up, my history teachers generally led off their classes with the old maxim about the nations who didn't learn from history. Such nations, we were told, were doomed to repeat past mistakes. There is a certain amount of truth contained in the old maxim. But there must be a genuine desire to know the truth in history, otherwise the old maxim will do you no good. European history today is only used by the liberals as a battering ram to break down the last remnants of white resistance to liberalism. They either make up 'historical' events that place the European people in the worst possible light or else they put the worst possible interpretation on an isolated part of the Europeans' history, a part that does not represent their whole history. The liberals have already come to a conclusion about the European people's past before they look into the past. The verdict was decided on before the trial of history began: The antique Europeans are guilty.

The two fatal errors of the modern historical studies of the European people are that the studies do not look at our people's whole history, and the studies do not go beyond factoid history. Our history starts in the garden of Eden and continues onward, not always upward, through the prophets who foretold of the coming of Christ, and then culminates in the Christian centuries in which our people wrestled with Satan in order to defend His realm of charity here on earth. Our sword was always the cross of Christ and our shield was always the heart that truly loved. When the academics, the new Sanhedrin, persuaded us to abandon our spiritual sword and forsake our heart's first love, we became defenseless against the wickedness and snares of the devil.

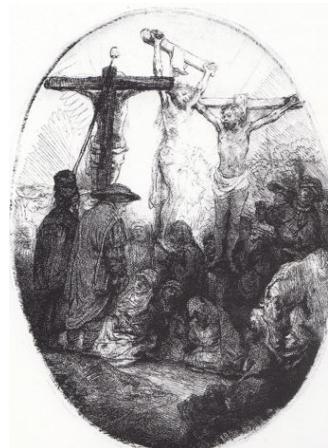
The second fatal historical error we made and still make, is that we confuse factoid history, the study of dates and outward events, for the real history. Dates and historical events are only the outer crust. To know history, we must see history through the spiritual eye, not with the material eye. Our bards are the true historians: "Poets, under various denominations of Bards, Scalds, Chroniclers, and so forth, are the first historians of all nations." (Walter Scott) The poets are the "first historians" because they tell us of the spirit behind the facts of the pedestrian, factoid historians. Our first historians, the European poets, tell us of a people who saw a great light; they saw the Word made flesh and believed in the Word made flesh. And our poets told us of a great people's battle with the devil and his minions to preserve their faith in the Word made flesh. Now our true poets tell us of the lost people, the people who have repeated the original sin of Adam and Eve. The European nations have institutionalized the pride of intellect from which flows all the sins of our modern age; they have become the hallmarks, or to be more accurate, the hell-marks, of our Western un-civilization. Negro-worship, Christian fusionism, feminism, homosexual marriage, transgenderism, and the degradation of all things humane and charitable are the fruits of the pride of intellect which dominate the European people. Only the love that once was there, our love for our people in and through Christ, not our hatred of our people in and through Satan, will kill the 'pride of intellect' culture of modern Europe and set us back on the Road to Calvary which leads us to His redemptive love and His house of many mansions. +

# The Love That Frees Us from Satan's Power

November 30, 2019

Categories: Charity, Faithful hearts, Pride of intellect, Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Thomas Nelson Page, Washington Irving



And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. – *Luke 23: 43*

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. – *John 9: 35-38*

---

Nathaniel Hawthorne has been and still is, if he is read at all, condemned by the modern literary critics for his obsession with one theme – the hardened heart. In such short stories as “[Dr. Heidegger’s Experiment](#),” “[The Birthmark](#),” “[Rappaccini’s Daughter](#),” and “[Ethan Brand](#),” Hawthorne depicts the fatal consequences of a life lived according to the scientific principles of dissection rather than the passions of the human heart. And in the *Scarlet Letter*, Hawthorne puts an exclamation point on his ‘obsession’ by making Roger Chillingworth, the wronged husband of an adulterous wife, a man who sins mortally by looking into the human heart with the eyes of a scientist, and by so doing, detaches himself from humanity. Hawthorne was not alone in his opposition to what he saw as the scientizing of man. His 19<sup>th</sup> century counterparts, Scott, Dickens, and Dostoyevsky, also saw the essence of modernity in rationality detached from humanity. And before them was [Edmund Burke](#), who saw, in the new world order of the French Jacobins, a soulless scientific world completely opposed to the religion of Christ, who comes to men through their hearts of flesh. In science-based cultures, hearts of flesh are proscribed, because men with hearts of flesh are opposed to the progression of man from the ‘superstition’ of faith to the world of ‘enlightened’ reason.

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the “compunctionous visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometers and the chemists bring—the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces—dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world.*

It certainly was not easy for the liberals to “eradicate humanity from the human breast.” Lady Macbeth tried but ultimately failed because she lacked a scientific ideology to sustain her. A modern psychiatrist would have told her that she was just realizing her human potential, by fighting against white male stereotypes about women that said women should be weak and submissive. She would have left the psychiatrist’s couch and gotten a job teaching ‘women’s studies’ at Stanford or Harvard. The point being that we have allowed the scientists in church and state to replace the Christ-centered European culture of the heart that loves for the scientized culture of the mind that hates all things humane, noble, and beautiful. The liberals have labeled Burke and the European poets ‘obsessive’ while they have institutionalized their own obsessions, their passionate love of the noble savages of color, and their passionate, obsessive hatred of all things white and Christian. It is not obsession itself that is wrong, it is what a man is obsessed with that counts. And I maintain that Burke’s and the great European poets’ obsession with the evils of a science-based culture that views man as a glorified ape without a heart for God, was the right obsession. And if you read through the Gospels and the epistles of St. Paul, you will discover that Christ and St. Paul were also obsessed with the hardened heart.

The man of science, the psychiatrist who scientizes man, and the man of theology, the theologian who scientizes God, are one in spirit. Both see the human heart and all passions emanating from the human heart as evil. The psychiatrist sees only animality in mankind, so he declares animality to be normality and absolves mankind from sin: “I’m okay, you’re okay.” How can there be any sin if we are apes? Can apes sin? The theologian who damns the human in order to praise the divine is looking at man with the same eyes as the psychiatrist. He sees nothing worthy of redemption in the human heart, so he places that worthless entity aside and looks to his own mind, his science-trained mind, to guide the beasts called men toward the light of his vision of heaven, which is really a vision of hell, a scientized, inhuman laboratory of test tubes with the distilled essence of brain cells in them.

The scientific view of existence which says everything is of nature and nothing is of God was promulgated to make man eased with being nothing. In exchange for eternal life, if they repented of their sins, men were told that they need not repent because there was no God before whom a man could repent. But then of course this meant there was and is no loving divine presence in our lives: We can’t weep and be forgiven and share eternity with Him who died for all. Is this brave new world really superior to old Europe?

To harden one’s heart against all things humane and Christian is indeed the “unpardonable sin” that Hawthorne’s Ethan Brand discovers. It is the “unpardonable sin” because the man of the hardened heart does not think he needs pardon. The hard-hearted liberal and the hard-hearted metaphysician feel they are not in need of God’s mercy or forgiveness because, like Shylock, they are not conscious of their own sinfulness: “What judgement shall I dread, doing no wrong?” The thinking man, the theologian, can do no wrong because he has no heart, which is where he thinks wrong resides, and the liberal thinks he can do wrong because there is no wrong, there is no sin as the antique Europeans defined it; there are only sins against liberalism, the ‘racist’ and ‘sexist’ sins.

In direct contrast to the liberals and the theologians is the good thief. He is quite conscious of his sinfulness:

*And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. – [Luke 23: 39-42](#)*

And then our Lord, who is still going about His Father’s business even on the cross in the midst of mortal pain, says to the good thief, “Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise.” What a moment! To know that a lifetime of sin and sorrow can be turned into a victory over sin and sorrow through a heart-to-heart connection to the Suffering Servant is worth more than anything that the world of science can offer us.

We know nothing of the good thief's life apart from the moment he shared with Christ on the cross. Did he ever hear Christ speak before that moment? Perhaps he was there, possibly to pick pockets, when Christ gave His Sermon on the Mount. What we do know is that the good thief was able to recognize, in his heart, the Heart of hearts. He loved much and was forgiven. Christ does not abrogate the rites of confirmation and baptism by telling the good thief that "today shalt thou be with me in paradise." What He does is point to Himself as the Lord of those rites; they exist to place us before Him in spirit and truth, and the good thief is already there, he has received Christ in spirit and truth.

I love the good thief. The man who feels he is without sin and needs no redeemer will never know what the good thief knew – only Christ can forgive sin and heal the heart laden with sorrow, wrong, and trouble. Outside of His grace, there is no grace. The men and women of modern Europe, the liberals, have spent the "unbought grace" of life handed down to us by the antique Europeans, which they received from Christ the Lord. The liberals will never know what it feels like to be forgiven their sins, because they, in their mind-forged religion of cruelty and impiety, know themselves to be without sin. If we follow in their train we shall never hear the blessed words of forgiveness and hope that the good thief heard.

It's possible to get a Ph.D. in literature in our modern universities without ever having read a work of literature. All a literature major needs to know is the psychological theories of the literary critics. There is no need, if you want to succeed in academia, to actually read the great works of Western literature. After all, how can we expect Shakespeare, Scott, or Dickens to tell us anything about life that the scientized experts, the psychiatrists, can't tell us? I would prefer a complete ban, which is now taking place, on all the literature of the West, rather than watch the great works become mere grist in the psychological mills of the experts.

The same process of desoulment that took place in the literary circles of academia also took place in the church. Just as a man can become a Ph.D. in literature without any direct contract with literature so can a man become a Christian in good standing with his local church without having any contact with God. In fact, that is what our churchmen desire. They want the laity to empty their hearts and open up their minds to their clergymen, who will cram God into their heads. That way nothing human gets in the way of the streamlined, scientific faith of the clergy. But what if the clergy's plan is not God's plans; what if He really does enter our lives through the human heart? (1)

Throughout the Gospel, Jesus makes the lame to walk, the blind to see, and the dead to rise again. And in the case of every miracle, the Pharisees who govern the Jewish people do not look at Christ's miracles of compassion and love, instead they focus on Christ's breaches of the law. They claim He has violated "The Law" by healing on the Sabbath. And they claim He casts out devils because He is in league with the devil. Let us bring the man born blind into the lists once again. If we are reading the Bible as little Arthur in *Tom Brown's School Days* read the Bible, with the belief that the men and women of the Bible were real, historical persons, we encounter, in the man born blind, a heroic example of how we must respond to His divine love. After Christ gives the man born blind his sight, the Pharisees try to deny the miracle by claiming it never occurred — it is a fraud. But the parents of the man born blind confirm that their son was indeed born blind. That is all they will say; they do not make any claims about Christ "because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue."

Having failed to discredit Christ's miracle of compassion through the parents of the man born blind, the Pharisees then go after the man himself. What happens? The man born blind refuses to back down to the Pharisees.

*Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out. — John 9: 26-34*

There, in that confrontation between the Pharisees and the man born blind, we see where true faith resides. The man born blind has a heart of flesh; he has the courage to defy the Pharisees because he loves the man who gave him his sight. We must realize what it meant for a Jew to be cast out of the synagogue. The life of the synagogue was everything to the Jew; without that life there was no community and no comfort in this world. But still the man born blind stands tall. "Of course he stands tall," the modern man retorts, "Christ gave him his sight." Then why don't we, the modern Europeans, stand tall? Haven't we been the recipients of an even greater miracle than the man born blind? The Man of Sorrows has borne our sins; He has given us eternal life through His sacrifice on the cross. Shouldn't that give us the courage and love to defy the modern Pharisees of Liberalism?

Our European ancestors did defy the Pharisees of science as the man born blind defied them. But the modern Europeans are only concerned with their place in the liberals' synagogue. They have forsaken the God-Man who gave them sight and life eternal. If, and that 'if' is all in all, we denounce the Pharisees of Liberalism, the Pharisees of science and theological speculation, we shall know the living God because He shall seek us out when we are cast out of the liberals' synagogue.

*Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth. — John 9: 36-41*

The good thief, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans, were one in that which was and is essential: They had human hearts of flesh that responded to the love emanating from His divine heart. We can conquer the scientific world of Liberalism if we also, like the good thief, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans respond to His love with our renewed hearts of flesh. +

---

(1) I know it is not Christmas yet, but I want to give the reader enough time, if he or she so chooses, to read, along with their loved ones (the stories always are best read aloud amongst those we love) one or all five of the greatest Christmas stories ever written.

1. "[The Shepherd Who Watched by Night](#)" – Thomas Nelson Page  
(I cannot read this story without weeping)

2. [The Christmas Carol](#) – Charles Dickens

3. [The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain](#) – Charles Dickens

4. [Old Christmas](#) – by Washington Irving

5. "[What Christmas Is As We Grow Older](#)" – Charles Dickens  
This last one is not a story, it is a prose poem dedicated to Him and all the living and the dead who are connected to Him through the love that is always present, but is particularly present at Christmas time.

# For Unto You Is Born

December 7, 2019

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts

Tags: Hans Christian Andersen, John Sharp Williams



When the Christ-Child to this world came down,  
He left for us His throne and crown,  
He lay in a manger, all pure and fair,  
Of straw and hay His bed so bare.  
But high in heaven the star shone bright,  
And the oxen watched by the Babe that night.  
Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

Oh, come, ye sinful and ye who mourn,  
Forgetting all your sin and sadness,  
In the city of David a Child is born,  
Who doth bring us heav'ly gladness.  
Then let us to the manger go,  
To see the Christ who hath loved us so.  
Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

-Hans Christian Andersen

---

When I look at modern Europe I feel a sadness beyond sadness and an anger beyond anger. The sadness that goes beyond sadness stems from the knowledge of what has been lost, and the anger that surpasses anger is centered on the liberals who have destroyed Christian Europe. Acting with malice aforethought, the liberals have cut the European people off from their Christian past.

The modern churchman feels no sadness at that which is lost nor does he feel any anger toward the liberals. You can't mourn for what is lost if you don't believe that what was lost was of any value. Nor can you be angry with the people who destroyed your cultural heritage if you don't believe that heritage was of any worth.

If there is no sadness for our loss, if we do not weep by the rivers of Babylon, then our anger will be misdirected. That is the great tragedy of Neopaganism. The neo-pagans are one with the liberals in their hatred of Christian Europe; they do not mourn its passing, but they are angry with the liberals for not proceeding into a future designed and organized by the neo-pagans. Despite their seeming differences, the liberals, the churchmen, and the neo-pagans are in agreement about the central issue, "which was and is the question of these wars." They are united in their hatred of Christian Europe.

What I see when I look at Christian Europe, and what the liberals, the churchmen, and the neo-pagans see, is something entirely different. They are in the majority, and I am in the minority. Shall I then cede the field to them? No, I shall not, because I maintain that what I see through the eye, in contrast to what they see with the eye, is true and what they see is false. Let us bring a beautiful actress from Hollywood's golden age onto the stage. Life would be a lot simpler if the soul of a beautiful woman was in harmony with her outward beauty, but that is seldom the case. So I make no claims for Linda Darnell's spiritual beauty. She may have been a wonderful woman, or possibly something less than wonderful. That is more than I know or want to know. What I do know is that she was a radiant beauty (see [The Mark of Zorro](#)). That of course is my subjective opinion, based on my perception of outward womanly beauty. But someone else — I don't know who that could be — might find Linda Darnell singularly unattractive or even repulsive. By way of analogy, let us say that Christian Europe is Linda Darnell. The liberals find her repulsive and ugly, the churchmen find her too flawed according to their theory of what a beautiful woman should look like, and the neo-pagans claim she is too Jewish-looking to be considered beautiful. All three groups bid us look to the future in order to find a truly beautiful woman.

The mystical entity called the 'future' is the linchpin of the liberals', the modern clergy men's, and the neo-pagans' mind-forged world dominated by their theories of perfection. The past, filled with imperfections, must be eradicated so that the future can triumph. But what kind of future is there if we leave Christian Europe behind? "We will have a wonderful future," the champions of a science-dominated future inform us. The "You ain't seen nothing yet" of Ronald Reagan was and is the mantra of all the warring factions of futurists.

Keats said that truth was beauty and beauty was truth. Yes, that is correct. But we are still left with the question, "What is truth," because we still must determine what is beautiful. I claim that true beauty is moral beauty and that there is no greater beauty in heaven or earth than the moral beauty of Christ the Lord, as seen through the hearts that loved Him, the hearts of the antique Europeans. To look to a future based on the demonization of our Christian past, which constitutes a rejection of the beatific vision of Christ, is to look to a future devoid of faith, hope, and charity. But of course we no longer need to look to such a future, that future is here now; it is our present reality: Modern Europe is a world devoid of the faith, the hope, and the charity that once sustained the European people when they cherished, and did not renounce, their past.

In his magnificent speech before Confederate veterans on May 31, 1904, John Sharp Williams, a U. S. Representative, praised the Southern people for keeping our European civilization alive during the so-called "reconstruction" years after the war.

*But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own.*

Then he goes on to say,

*Slavery is lost, and it is certainly well for us and the public – perhaps for the negro – that it has been lost. But the real cause for which our ancestors fought back of slavery, and deemed by them to be bound up in the maintenance of slavery – to wit, the supremacy of the white man's civilization, the supremacy of the ethical culture, which has been gradually built up through countless generations – has not been lost.*

William's speech is a two-edged sword. On the one hand, it inspires us to know that our people, white Europeans, once stood tall and fought back against the liberal leviathan. But on the other hand is the horrible fact that the Southern people who came after John Sharp Williams, and the people of all the other European nations as well, caved in to the liberal leviathan. That civilization which Williams depicted as "so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry," has been destroyed. What then? How should we then live if that civilization is no more? We must go deeper — that is how we shall survive. If we go to the heart of that ancient European civilization, we go to Christ the Lord.

It is certain that old Europe, championed by the Southern people during the Civil War and the reconstruction era, is no longer in existence as a civilization. It is of the past, a past that has been condemned by all the various champions of a utopian future. But if we do not try to restore that civilization by adhering to the inconsequential outer forms of that civilization, such as the democratic process, Greek philosophy, and/or the Roman legal system in church and state, but go instead to the Dream of the Rood, which is the real heart of Western civilization, we will be able to regain that which was lost. (1)

I do not say that we shall ever see old Europe as it once existed again. I do say that so long as two or three are gathered together in His name, in union with the antique Europeans who built a civilization consecrated to Him, then the old South, the old Europe, still lives. Lost causes only become lost when the 'defeated' people no longer believe in what they fought for. The Southern people, like the European people throughout the world, only lost the war with the Jacobins when they came to believe in the same faith as the Jacobins. The resistance to Jacobinism must start from within. Do we believe that we are created in the image of God or do we believe we are created in the image of the beast? If we believe the latter, then we will not restore European civilization, because the image of the beast culture is the image of the future. What is past is the 'image of God in Man' culture that our dear old folk of long ago built in defiance of the pagan gods of nature. Have we 'progressed' beyond those people? Why is the demonism of infanticide, homosexuality, feminism, and negro worship considered a progression? We have supped full of liberalism, and that hideous, foul-tasting repast has left us too spiritually stupefied to live as Europeans should live, in loving remembrance of our honored dead who rest in the arms of the Lord, and in loving remembrance of Him, the God who lives.

There is a song in the magnificent movie called *The Wonderful World of the Brothers' Grimm* in which the children sing of [Christmas Land](#). Our Europe was Christmas Land. There was love, honor, beauty and faith in that town. I, for one, do not intend to leave it, not ever. Which is a good place to leave off for this year.

For December 14<sup>th</sup>, December 21<sup>st</sup>, and December 28<sup>th</sup> I will post another remembrance of Christopher Grey. The next regular post will be in the New Year, January 4<sup>th</sup>. The remembrances were and still are intended as depictions of a dystopian future dominated by the liberals and their heathen allies. Tragically that future has come upon us at such an accelerated rate that the dystopia is no longer in the future, it is here. But the last word will not be spoken by the liberals and their allies. In the beginning was His word, and in the end His word shall prevail. I will dwell in Christmas Land again this year and every year, and it is my hope and prayer for thee, that you are able to dwell in Christmas Land this Christmas and in all the Christmases to come, on this earth and in His house of many mansions in heaven.

"Christmas is coming, the goose is getting fat," — although I must admit I've never tasted goose –, "who'll put a penny in an old beggar's hat?" I will. God bless the old beggar and God bless the European remnant. Merry Christmas! +

---

(1) Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgement will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforesome did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.

*-The Dream of the Rood*

# Remembrances IX: Those Who Mourn

December 14, 2019

Categories: Remembrances



While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

[Luke 8: 49-55](#)

---

## Act I. Scene 1.

Inn Keeper: Are the tables set in the banquet room?

Waitress I: Not yet, your wife told us not to set the tables too soon, because she doesn't want the tables to get dirty before the guests get here.

Inn Keeper: For God's sake, it's only a half-hour at most before they start arriving. Set the damn tables. You can get that idiot kid to help you. Now hurry up, I need to check on the dinner preparations.

Waitress II: He's a bear tonight.

Waitress I: Well, this is the night when he gets out of the red – it's Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve. He'll have over one hundred people from the ecumenical conference here.

Waitress II: He's lucky they put up that conference center so close. Business was bad before that came in.

Waitress I: It keeps me working.

Waitress II: This is my first Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve here – do these people tip a lot?

Waitress I: It depends on how much they drink.

Waitress II: I understand.

Waitress I: Well, I suppose I should find the idiot and get him to help us.

Waitress II: Mr. Marshal doesn't seem to like him much, why does he keep him around, particularly since the kid is deaf and dumb?

Waitress I: He's not really a kid, I think he must be in his mid-twenties, and he isn't deaf and dumb. He can hear, but he can't speak.

Waitress II: He gives me the creeps.

Waitress I: Well, he is a good worker. He does whatever you tell him.

Waitress II: Is that why Joe keeps him on?

Waitress II: No, Joe thinks he is worthless. He came here 6 weeks ago, two weeks before you started. Mrs. Marshal was sick at the time, nothing serious, but she needed extra help in the kitchen and with the errands. The idiot was just there; I think he was trying to get a handout. Mrs. Marshal hired him on a temporary basis and she has taken a liking to him. He is kind of like a family pet now, at least to Mrs. Marshal. She won't let Joe fire him.

Waitress I: There he is, Hey, over here, give us a hand.

---

## Act I. Scene 2.

George Jackson, a slight, balding man in his mid-forties, his wife, Joan, an attractive woman in her mid-thirties, and their daughter, Louisa, aged eight, enter the restaurant.

Joan: This is a lovely view, you can see the snow falling on the mountains.

George: I just hope it doesn't fall on the roads below the mountains. If it does, we'll be stuck here. I didn't want to drive tonight...

Joan: You're such a gloomy Gus, why can't you enjoy the moment without worrying about things? We've just been to the most wonderful Mandel-Cybele-Christmas Eve ceremony I've ever seen. And to think that all over the civilized world people are worshipping Mandela and his people and Cybele just as we do.

Daughter: Mommy, why do we call it Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve, why don't we just call it Mandela-Cybele Eve?

Joan: Haven't they explained that to you in school?

Daughter: No.

Joan: Well, they should have told you about it. Jesus Christ was a very good man who lived a long, long time ago. He went around the country he lived in, teaching the principles of racial equality and feminism. His message was so unpopular with the white males in his country that they killed him. But by his death he paved the way for our true appreciation of the black race and womankind.

Daughter: But we are not all equal mother, teacher says that the black race is the holy race and the white race is the sick and sinful race.

Joan: That's right, but Christ didn't know all that in his time, he simply prepared the way for the worship of the black race and the liberation of women. His message was perverted by a terrible man called St. Paul, but ultimately truth won out and Christ became what he was meant to be, the forerunner of the sacred black race and feminism.

George: Dear, I don't know how much theology Louisa can understand.

Joan: She needs to hear the truths of our faith. I'm really surprised that her teacher is not telling her about our evolution as a people from darkness to light.

George: Just let her enjoy her meal.

Joan: I don't like that kind of irreverence, George.

George: Sorry.

Joan: I wonder who will be seated at the other three seats at our table.

George: I wish we could have gotten the Tuckers and their daughter to come to the dinner, then we wouldn't have to share our table with strangers.

Joan: Where is your spirit of adventure? We might get three very interesting people at our table.

George: I doubt it.

Joan: Look, George!

George: Where?

Joan: Over by the door. Those three people might be coming to our table. It looks like one is a priestess and one a priest. I don't know who the other man is.

George: Great, now you'll talk theology all evening, and I won't enjoy my meal.

Joan: Shut up, they *are* coming to this table.

---

### Act I. Scene 3.

One female priestess of the new Roman Catholic African Church, Sister Jacqueline, age 26, one male priest of the Roman Catholic African Church, Father Mike, age 62. And one archivist of the Roman Catholic African Church, Herbert Broadhurst, age 46, are seated at the table with Joan and George and their daughter. They have all introduced themselves.

Joan: What exactly does an archivist do, Father?

Herbert: I'm not a priest, you don't have to call me father, Herb will do.

Joan: Sorry.

Herb: Nothing to be sorry about.

Joan: What is it that you do, if you don't mind relating it.

Herb: I don't mind in the least, although I'm afraid what I do is rather boring.

Joan: I'll bet it isn't boring at all.

Herb: Well, an archivist collects and stores documents from the past.

Joan: Who's past?

Herb: The Europeans' past. I collect books, manuscripts, and historical chronicles of Europeans from long ago.

Joan: Doesn't that entail reading many books from the era of racism and sexism?

Herb: Yes, it does.

Joan: But aren't such works forbidden?

Herb: To the normal citizen they are forbidden. But I am an archivist, I have special permission to read and catalogue the old literature and histories.

Joan: It sounds like a pretty filthy job.

Priest: Filthy, yes, but necessary.

George: Why is it necessary, Father Mike?

Priest: Because sometimes it is necessary to reference the past in order to understand the present.

George: For instance?

Priest: Well, let's take our liturgy, for instance. We all, those of us who have white skin, kneel during the Mass and strike our breasts 17 times and declare we are white and sinful. Those 17 strikes on the breast and the accompanying declarations of white sinfulness is the result of the 17 black martyrs who were killed when the Free Republic of Banyon was dominated by white people. If we didn't have an archivist, we would not know why we beat our breast 17 times.

Joan: But why do we have to know that detail?

Herb: I don't think you are going to convince them that I do something useful, Father.

Priest: Well, historical research can be useful if it is used properly.

Priestess: But what if it is not used properly? I for one have never approved of the archives. If I had my way, we'd simply burn the archives.

Herb: Then I'd be out of a job.

Priestess: So what?

George: Here comes the first course, it looks good.

Joan: Father Mike, will you say grace?

Priestess: He is not permitted to say grace. When a female priestess is present, no male priest is permitted to co-opt the female priestess no matter how many years seniority he has.

Priest: She is quite right.

Joan: I'm sorry, I forgot.

Priestess: Never mind. Dear Nelson Mandela, who represents all the sacred black race, and dear Mother Cybele, who represents all the oppressed female race, bless this food which we are about to receive and may we be ever mindful of the white male menace that always threatens us. Amen.

Joan: Yes, thank you, Sister Jacqueline, that was quite eloquent.

George: They certainly give you big portions here.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Daughter: Are you really and truly a priestess?

Priestess: Yes.

Daughter: I'd like to be a priestess when I grow up.

Priestess: It takes a lot of work.

Joan: What, in your judgement, Sister Jacqueline, is the main requirement for being a priestess?

Priestess: You must hold the two great commandment in your heart. You must love the black race and the goddess Cybele with all your heart, mind, and soul, and you must hate the white male with all your heart, mind, and soul. Your average person is lukewarm in their love of the black race and Cybele and lukewarm in their hatred of the white male. A priestess can't be lukewarm in her love or her hatred.

Priest: Aren't you going to make a distinction between the white males who have renounced their whiteness and the white males, such as those inhuman monsters in the underground, who have not renounced their whiteness?

Priestess: Some make such distinctions, but I don't. I do not see why there should be any white males left alive on this earth. We have the means of determining the sex of the child in the womb, so it should be mandatory that all white male children should be aborted.

Herb: Most white male babies are already executed by the state.

Priestess: Yes, but not all are executed. And look at John Taylor, he was lawfully born and raised as a priest. And what happened? He became a member of the white underground.

George: I thought he went to England.

Priestess: Yes, he did, for two years. But now he is back and he works for the white underground. He is with David Morgan.

Priest: Surely because one white male, who was raised to renounce his whiteness, returned to the slime pits of whiteness, you don't condemn all white males who have renounced their whiteness?

Priestess: I don't trust any white males and I don't think we should allow any of them the opportunity to betray us.

Joe: Everything all right here? How is the food?

Priest: It's excellent as always.

George: Yes, it's great.

Priestess: It's adequate. But let me ask you a question.

Joe: Ask away.

Priestess: Who was that young white male I saw come out of the kitchen a few minutes ago in order to wipe up that spill at the table near the kitchen?

Joe: He's just some idiot aide that we hired to help out during the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas season.

Priestess: Does he have papers?

Joe: Of course he does, do you think I'd hire a white male without papers?

Priestess: I want to see his papers.

Joe: What right do you have to tell me who I can hire?

Priestess: I have every right, I'm a priestess in the one Holy Catholic Church of Mandela-Cybele.

Herb: She does have the right, but I suggest you just let it alone and enjoy the meal.

Priestess: Yes, you would let it alone.

Herb: Can't you just relax for one night, must you always be on duty?

Priestess: Don't get male with me. Perhaps you were planning to romance me.

Herb: God forbid.

Joan: What God?

Herb: It's just an expression.

Priestess: Watch your expressions.

Herb: I'm sorry.

Priestess: I want to see that young man's papers.

Joe: I understand, I'll go get his papers immediately.

Priestess: And bring him out here with his papers.

Joe, Yes, your... er...

Priestess: Sisterhood.

Joe: Yes, your sisterhood.

---

**Act I. Scene 4.**

The Kitchen.

Joe: Who let that idiot out of the kitchen?

Waitress II: I told him to go clean up the spill.

Joe: Didn't you know that he was supposed to stay in the kitchen when there were other people in the restaurant?

Waitress II: Nobody told me.

Joe's wife: What is wrong, dear?

Joe: A priestess saw him and wants to see his papers.

Wife: What did you say?

Joe: I said I'd get his papers and send him out with the papers.

Wife: But he doesn't have any papers.

Joe: I know. If you remember I wanted no part of him when he came here. You insisted I give him a meal. Then you insisted that I should keep him on. He is probably a member of the white underground.

Wife: Oh no, Joe, you just have to look at him to know that he is simply a lost innocent.

Joe: Lost from where? He had to come from somewhere. And where is he right now?

Wife: I sent him to the wine cellar for another bottle of wine.

Joe: He's taking a long time, maybe he knocked the shelves down on himself and he is dead.

Wife: Don't talk like that.

Joe: It wouldn't do me any good if he was dead, that priestess would still want to see his papers.

Wife: Maybe if you tell her that you couldn't find him she'll forget about it.

Joe: Not her, she wants his papers and that's that. There is no getting around her. I wish she'd choke to death on her shrimp cocktail, but we can't count on that kind of luck.

Wife: What can we do then?

Joe: There is one chance. Remember that accountant that worked on the books off and on during the last five years?

Wife: Yes.

Joe: Well, he died of heart attack a couple weeks ago.

Wife: I didn't know.

Joe: Well, I didn't want to upset you, seeing that you had just been ill, so I didn't tell you. But this is what we can do. I'll say that he was in charge of the paper work and that he told me that the idiot had given him his papers. It's a long shot, but it might work.

Wife: What do you mean it might work? They'll imprison him — I mean the idiot — and they're liable to imprison Mr. Jenkins's family as well.

Joe: Jenkins didn't have any family. And it is better for the idiot to go to prison than us. Besides, for all I know he is a member of the white underground. In which case, he belongs in prison anyway.

Wife: No, I don't want him to go to prison. You can tell the lie about Mr. Jenkins to save us, but let's give the young man time to escape. I'll tell him right now.

Joe: Are you crazy? They'll know we helped him to escape and we'll go to jail. I don't see why you're so attached to that idiot.

Wife: I must tell you something. At first, I just felt sorry for him. You never did, but I did. But then there was something else. Remember when I was sick?

Joe: Sure, you had a bad case of the flu.

Wife: That's what I thought it was at first, but that night, when you slept in the spare room so I could get some rest, I felt the fever burning me up and I knew I was going to die. I tried to call for you, but I couldn't cry out, the fever had dried my throat up. All I could do was lie there and die. And then he came to me, that young man you call the idiot. He had a glass of water in his hand and he lifted my head from the pillow and helped me drink the water. Then he laid my head back on the pillow and placed his hand on my forehead. And Joe, you must believe me, at the moment he placed his hand on my forehead, the fever left me.

Joe: This is pure nonsense. You were delirious from the fever and you had a dream about the idiot. That's all it was. Fevers come and go, there is nothing miraculous about that. The only miraculous thing is your overwrought imagination. You really can come up with some doosies.

Wife: How can you account for the glass then?

Joe: What glass?

Wife: The water glass. When I woke up, there it was by my bedstead. It was full of water.

Joe: So what?

Wife: You see I drained that glass of water during the night.

Joe: How would you know, you were feverish.

Wife: I do know. I vividly remember draining that glass of water he gave me. And furthermore, we don't have any glasses like that glass in the house or the restaurant.

Joe: Where is the glass now?

Wife: I don't know, after I drank from it in the morning, I washed it and then put it in the cupboard, but when I looked for it the next day it was gone.

Joe: There you have it, it was all a dream.

Wife: Was it?

Joe: Of course, otherwise you would have to say that the idiot was some sort of angel or something like that – that he is right out of a fairy tale. But just look at him, he is an idiot.

Wife: Is he, Joe?

Joe: Of course, he is.

Wife: Still, we can't give him up to that priestess.

Joe: We must. It's him or us.

Wife: You must leave here quickly. Get your coat and see if you can find the Nelson's house. It's a mile or so away. Say that I sent you.

Joe: You'll do no such thing. I'm sorry about this, I have nothing against you, but we have to turn you in to a crazy priestess out there. I warned you not to leave the kitchen.

Wife: No, Joe, I won't let you turn him in.

Priestess: Take him. You're not out of this yet, but for now, he is all we care about.

Joe: Well, now you've done it. If they don't believe my story about the papers, I'll be hauled off in chains as well. Is that what you wanted?

Wife: Of course not, but I can't bear to see him hurt.

Joe: Forget about him, there is nothing you can do for him now. You just concentrate on backing up my story, that should be your only concern.

---

### Act II. Scene 1.

The snow is coming down in great blankets now. The people in the restaurant, about one hundred and twenty, have been informed that the roads are currently impassable. The idiot was beaten and then tied to a tree in front of the restaurant. He was tied in a sitting position. The snow fall has already reached the level of his chest. The people at Joan Jackson's table are in the process of eating dessert.

George: My father used to say that no matter how much you ate during a meal, you always had a special place in your stomach for dessert.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Herb: The dessert is delicious.

Priestess: I agree.

Priestess: Is that all men can think of, their stomachs?

Herb: No, sometimes we think of other things.

Priestess: What do you mean by that?

Herb: Nothing at all.

Priestess: I think you are trying to play sexual games with me. That is strictly forbidden in Article VI, section 2 of the Constitution of the American-African Republic. I intend to have you arrested to stand trial for sexual harassment and not only that...

Daughter: Mommy.

Joan: Don't interrupt when the Priestess is talking.

Daughter: But, Mommy.

Joan: Be quiet, Louisa.

Daughter: But Mommy, all I wanted to say was that the man out there is soon going to be covered with snow.

Priest: Oh, dear, the snow is getting rather high. Perhaps we should bring him inside and chain him in the wine cellar.

Priestess: There is no need for that. Let him stay out there.

Priest: But I really think he is either going to suffocate or freeze to death.

Priestess: That need not concern us.

Priest: But he is entitled to a trial.

Priestess: No, he is not entitled to a trial. He is a white male without papers, he has no rights.

And don't think I've forgotten about you.

Herb: Well, this has been a very pleasant dinner.

George: Can she get you in trouble?

Herb: Sure, she can. She has a lot of power. But in this case, if she really intends to pursue it, there isn't much of a case.

Joan: What did you mean by that remark, when you said sometimes men think of other things?

Herb: I meant what I said. I meant that sometimes men think of other things besides their stomachs. She was the one who decided what the other things were.

Joan: Still, I think you meant something sexual.

George: All remarks are not sexual remarks.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Priest: I wish we could do something for that young man out there.

Herb: I think he is a goner, Father. She won't let anyone touch him.

Priest: It's a pity.

Herb: Yes, it is.

Joan: I don't think any white male has the right to judge the actions of a Priestess in the Roman Catholic African Church.

George: But Joan...

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

---

## Act II. Scene 2.

Joe Marshal comes up to Joan Jackson's table.

Joe: I just got word that the power is going out all over the area. And the roads, at present, are impassable, so it looks like we could be here for a long while without any light.

Priestess: This is gross negligence. How can this be allowed to happen?

Herb: I think it is called nature.

Priestess: What do you mean by that?

Herb: Nothing sexual, I assure you. I simply mean that big snow storms can defy even all our modern technology.

Priestess: You seem to love to attack everything modern. Perhaps you prefer your old world of the archives, the world of racism and sexism?

Herb: I didn't say that.

Priestess: You implied it, which is the same thing. I'm going to charge you with counterrevolutionary sentiments when I leave this restaurant.

Herb: I suppose I'll have a lot of charges to answer for.

Priestess: Yes, you will.

Joe: Look, be that as it may, I'm passing out candles for every table. Will you help me?

Herb: I'd be glad to.

Joe: I really don't need help with the candles, my waitresses can handle it, but I wanted to get you away from that Priestess in order to talk with you privately.

Herb: If it's about that young man and his papers, I'm afraid I can't help you, I'm under a bit of a cloud myself.

Joe: No, it's not that, I think I can wiggle clear of those charges. It's about the rest of the night. I still need to keep these people happy.

Herb: That won't be easy. People don't like it when the power goes out.

Joe: But that is not my fault.

Herb: I know it isn't, it's nature's fault, but try to tell that to a bitch like her royal sisterhood over there.

Joe: You take chances, I'd be afraid to use that term even in the privacy of my home.

Herb: You know something, I don't really think I give a damn anymore. Maybe I have spent too much time in the archives. When a man spends 8 hours a day, sometimes 10 or 12, in a different world than his contemporaries, he starts to think and feel about things differently than the people around him. I'm heartily sick of women who aren't women and men who aren't men. And I'm sick of trying to pretend I care about this nation we live in.

Joe: Look, that is more than I know about. I just wanted you to do that play you did here four years ago.

Herb: That was just a history play about some Christmases from long ago that I strung together. But I can't do it tonight because I don't have any copies of the play with me. If you remember, I picked volunteers from the audience who read the various parts, while I was the narrative voice.

Joe: I remember. And you do have copies of the play to give out. I recorded the play, had the words written down, and then made copies of the play. You can give out the parts to volunteer readers again.

Herb: Yes, but they'll have trouble reading their lines in the dark.

Joe: I have eight high-powered flood lights powered by a generator that I can shine on the stage. The audience will be at their tables with the candle lights while the stage will be illuminated by the flood lights.

Herb: I suppose it could be done. But as of right now the power is... I was going to say the power was still on.

Joe: It will be off for some time, at least that is what the reports say. Will you do the play?

Herb: On one condition.

Joe: What?

Herb: Here is my coat. I want you to wrap that young man outside in this coat, give him something warm to drink, and shovel some of the snow away from him.

Joe: Are you crazy?

Herb: Possibly, but that is what I want you do to. Once the play starts nobody will notice you. And without the outside light, it will be too dark for anyone to see you helping him.

Joe: Why does everyone feel sorry for that idiot?

Herb: I don't know that everybody does feel sorry for him. I didn't notice any outpouring of sympathy for him when they chained him out there.

Joe: I guess there wasn't. But my wife has been in tears since they put him out there.

Herb: Good for your wife.

Joe: Okay, I'll do it. I don't know why you want to make a big deal about it, but I'll do it. First let me introduce you to the audience, then you hand out the parts. Once the play starts, I'll sneak out there and see what I can do for the idiot.

Herb: Don't just see what you can do for him, I'm telling you to do something for him.

Joe: Okay, but let's start the show.

Herb: One more thing.

Joe: What?

Herb: In the play, I speak, if you remember, of an old Christmas before it became a Mandela-Cybele-Christmas. She, the Priestess, wasn't here when I did that play on this stage a few years back. She won't permit it to be performed, so you'll have to slip something in her drink to put her asleep.

Joe: Permanently?

Herb: That wouldn't be a bad idea, but I think that would get you in trouble. What I had in mind was a sleeping potion, something that would put her out for two to three hours. Could you manage that?

Joe: If she drinks, I can manage it.

Herb: She drinks all right. She is quite old-fashioned in that regard; she is a stone-cold alcoholic.

Joe: Okay, then, as soon as I come to your table and give her the drink, you head up to the stage.

Herb: And then you visit that young man out there.

Joe: Agreed.

---

### Act III. Scene 1.

The play within a play. Herb Broadhurst gives out the parts to various volunteers from the audience, then he steps forward to introduce the play.

Herb: This is a one-act play that I wrote, mainly for a few close friends that I knew were interested in the subject.

Member of the audience: What is the subject?

Herb: If you let me finish, I'll tell you. The subject is the transition from Christmas to Mandel-Cybele-Christmas. The characters in the play are fictional, but they are based on real life people that I encountered in my job as a European archivist.

Joan Jackson: Is the play heretical?

Herb: Certainly not. How can history be heretical? I simply present this play as a history of a bygone era. An era that I'm sure everyone here is glad to know is over. How can the past, which we condemn, reach out and hurt us? It can't. So I give you the play, which, I hope, will amuse you until the lights go back on and the roads are clear.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 2.

The study of a Roman Catholic parish. One old priest, about 75 years of age, is seated in the study as a younger priest, about 40 years of age, enters.

Younger priest: Isn't it exciting, Father?

Older priest: What?

Younger: The new missal in which we finally give true homage to Mandela and to Cybele.

Older: I don't know that I care for it.

Younger: Surely you can't object to it, we are simply making explicit what has been implicit for many years.

Older: I see that, but I wonder if now is the proper time. There are still, I think, a great deal of the laity who are attached to the old image of Christ as the Son of God.

Younger: He is still the son of God.

Older: Yes, He is, in the sense that all of us are sons of God, but He loses, in the new missal, His distinctive identity as the one and only Son of God.

Younger: Surely it is better that we make what we actually believe to be true the main focus of our worship?

Older: I suppose so.

Younger: You suppose so, Father. I'm surprised at you, do you or do you not believe that Nelson Mandela and the black race are the hope of mankind? And do you or do you not believe that Cybele represents the immortal spirit of womankind.

Older: I do believe both. But I am questioning the timing of the declaration of the Pope. Many Catholics are still attached to the old concept of Christ.

Younger: But that old concept was false, and it came to us from white supremacists.

Older: Yes, it did, but many people took comfort in that old concept of Christ.

Younger: Nonsense. I think you are exaggerating the emotional appeal of the old concept. The people love Mandela and Cybele. You'll see, the new missal will be a huge success.

~~~~~

Herb, the Narrator: And the new missal was a huge success. There were a few members of the congregation who walked out of the church, but they were arrested as soon as they stepped out into the street. No one ever heard from them again.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 3

Narrator: An Anglican rectory. This time it is the younger priest who has his doubts about the transition from Christmas to Mandela-Cybele-Christmas while the older priest constitutes the 'Amen Chorus' for the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas.

Older priest: Have you heard the great news?

Younger priest: About the changes in the prayer book?

Older: Yes.

Younger: I don't have any problems with the theology. I was brought up to believe in Mandela and Cybele as our saviors. But my grandfather was a great believer in the old European Christ.

Older: Didn't he go to prison?

Younger: Yes, he was imprisoned, because he refused to accept Mandela and Cybele as co-redemptorists with Christ. In fact he died while in prison. I think his heart gave out on him.

Older: That is a shame, but whiteness must be purged.

Younger: I know, but I wonder if there aren't more people like my grandfather lurking out there. This change might set them off.

Older: How do you mean 'set them off'?

Younger: I mean it might drive them to take up arms against the American-African Republic of the United States.

Older: I doubt that there are that many closet European Christians out there. I think we have done a pretty good job of weeding them out of our nation.

Younger: Perhaps.

Older: You worry too much.

Younger: Perhaps, but I can still see that look in my grandfather's eyes the night they took him away. I was 10 years old at the time. "No man cometh unto the Father except by me," he screamed, and his eyes were pure fire.

Older: Did you visit him in jail?

Younger: No, my parents wouldn't permit it. But I'll never forget the look on his face.

Older: Well, your grandfather was an exception. The people will love the new prayer book because they love Mandela and Cybele and they don't love the Christ of old Europe.

Younger: I suppose everything will be all right.

Older: Of course, it will.

~~~~~

Joan: Sister Jacqueline is sick! She won't wake up!

Herb: Is there anyone here who can attend to Sister Jacqueline?

Doctor: She is breathing normally and does not appear to be in dire straits. I think she simply had too much to drink. I suggest you place her on a bed or a couch somewhere and let her sleep it off.

Herb: That is your expert medical opinion?

Doctor: Yes.

Herb: Now we can proceed with the play.

Joan: Wait, I don't think the play should proceed.

Herb: Why not?

Joan: It's offensive.

Herb: Why is it offensive?

Joan: It is blasphemous.

Herb: Why is it blasphemous?

Joan: It insults Mandela and Cybele.

Herb: I don't see how an accurate depiction of the process by which the European people moved from the worship of Christ to the worship of the black race and Cybele can be seen as blasphemous.

Joan: It just is, and I won't let it continue. And Sister Jacqueline wouldn't let it continue if she was...

Herb: If she was awake and sober?

Joan: Father Mike, I want you to stop the play.

Father Mike: I really haven't the authority to stop the performance, as Herb says, it is not blasphemous.

Joan: Then I'll stop it, I'll....

George: Joan.

Joan: What do you want?

George: I want you to sit down and shut up, you are making fool of yourself.

Herb: All right then, let's pick up where we left off.

---

#### Act III. Scene 4.

A Protestant parsonage, next to the church. One minister, the pastor, is fifty years of age, and the other minister, the assistant pastor, is in his late twenties.

Pastor: This is great news, the Ecumenical Council of Churches has declared that Christ is no longer to be considered the Son of the living God. He has been reduced to a minor prophet.

Assistant: That is good news. Will it be announced in all the churches this Christmas Eve?

Pastor: Yes, all nativity scenes of Christ and Mary will be removed and replaced by nativity scenes of Nelson Mandela and Cybele.

Assistant: How will they be depicted?

Pastor: Mandela will be depicted as a child in a manger with Mother Cybele hovering over him, surrounded by black tribesmen.

Assistant: That sounds wonderful! Will the Orthodox churches be following suit?

Pastor: Yes, they will, but they will stick to their own dates for the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas.

Assistant: Praise be to Mandela and Cybele.

Pastor: Amen to that.

Assistant: Do you expect any resistance from the laity?

Pastor: There is always some resistance to change, but it is our job to help the people adjust to the changes in their faith. We must be gentle, but we must also be firm. We can't let them backslide into superstition and racism.

Assistant: I don't personally know of anyone who won't welcome this news.

Pastor: I know of one man.

Assistant: Who?

Pastor: My younger brother. He is forty years old, married, with four children, three boys aged nine, seven, and five, and one daughter, aged three. He never goes to church. He always puts up a nativity scene with the baby Jesus, Joseph, Mary, and the three wise men every Christmas.

Assistant: That is disgusting.

Pastor: Yes, it is. I must at least try to reason with him. I'm not looking forward to it, but I must try.

Assistant: Well, good luck, I don't envy you the task.

Pastor: Nor do I.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 5.

It is Christmas day in the study of the offending brother. His wife and children are in the living room.

Pastor: I see you have the nativity scene out again this Christmas.

Brother: Of course.

Pastor: You know that the church frowns on such things.

Brother: What church?

Pastor: The Christian Church.

Brother: We've been all over this before. The church you serve is just an organization, it has no soul, no life.

Pastor: There is no other church outside of what we, as modern Christians, determine to be the church. And I must tell you that all the organized Christian churches, including the Orthodox churches which celebrate Christmas on a different date, have decided to dispense with the traditional nativity scene and to go with the Mandela-Cybele nativity scene.

Brother: You do what you like, but I will stay with Christ and His people.

Pastor: That is heresy, that is racism.

Brother: So be it then.

Pastor: I must warn you that...

~~~~~

Sister Jacqueline: Stop this performance! I won't have it, I simply won't have it.

Herb: But it's just a little historical drama depicting our transformation from the darkness of Christianity to the light of liberalism.

Sister Jacqueline: It is blasphemy, disguised as history. You are under arrest.

Louisa: Sister Jacqueline, Sister Jacqueline, the snow is still coming down and I'm afraid it's going to go over that man's head.

Sister Jacqueline: Will someone shut that little brat up?

Joan: She is dead, she is dead!

Sister Jacqueline: I'm sorry to hear that, but she should not have interfered. That is what happens when you don't obey your superiors.

Joan: I know she was wrong, but...

Sister Jacqueline: There are not buts, she was wrong and she died for it.

George: You foul, loathsome witch, I'll kill you

Sister Jacqueline: Chain him and him outside by that idiot.

Joe Marshal: I can't believe it.

George: They've killed my daughter. But I still don't know what you are talking about.

Herb: Isaiah told us all about that Idiot:

"Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth."

Father Mike: It can't be. What about Mandela and Cybele?

Herb: Let's make this the beginning of a new old Christmas. Let us sing praises to the one and only Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world.

---

**Act IV. Scene 1.**

Christmas Eve day, some six hours prior to the events just depicted. We are in the headquarters of a white resistance organization, somewhere in the mountains of what was once called Tennessee.

David Morgan: This will be your first Christmas here since your conversion.

John Taylor: Yes, I was part of *The Christmas Carol* for two straight years in Britain, but Christopher Grey orchestrated the whole production. I'm a little nervous about being in charge of this production.

Morgan: You come highly recommended, Christopher Grey said you'll do a "wonderful" job.

Taylor: I hope so. I'm sorry that you won't be able to see it.

Morgan: I'll see it on tape.

Taylor: You're filming it?

Morgan: Sure, how could we not film the directorial debut of John Taylor?

Taylor: Will you be back by Christmas day?

Morgan: Yes, if all goes well. We have a quick strike planned against an official who's been very, very aggressive in her persecution of our people. She will be celebrating Mandela-Cybele-Christmas at an ecumenical center and then eating supper at a nearby restaurant. We plan to take her there.

Taylor: Will you kill her?

Morgan: Probably not. We'll take her prisoner like we took Father Todd prisoner three years ago in that rectory where you once resided with him.

Taylor: He is still a prisoner, isn't he?

Morgan: Yes, we don't seem to be able to get through to him. He remains in that other world.

Taylor: I pray for him regularly.

Morgan: Well, there is always some hope. As for Sister Jacqueline, she will not, after tonight, sign any more death warrants against our people.

Taylor: I finally heard from Britain again.

Morgan: From Christopher Grey?

Taylor: No, I heard about Christopher Grey. Father Bontini wrote me a long letter about him.

Morgan: Please let me hear it.

Taylor: I'll condense it somewhat and leave out some of the parts not related to Christopher, but this is what Father Bontini wrote about Christopher.



"Christopher received a letter from Pope Francis II, the son of Pope Francis the Blasphemer and the same pope who presided over the trial and condemnation of Christopher Grey a few years back, at which he received the death penalty. As you recall, Christopher escaped from his cell because of an earthquake and the aid of an angel of mercy.

"The pope's letter was an urgent plea to Christopher Grey and to Christopher Grey alone. He said that he was on his death bed and desperately wanted to hear about the 'real Jesus Christ' that Christopher Grey spoke of. He went on to say that he didn't expect Christopher to believe that he was at death's door and in need of a Christian presence at his death bed, but if Christopher could forgive him his sins, and if Christopher would trust in his word, he would like him to come to his death bed.

"I told Christopher that he shouldn't go. I told him that I thought Pope Francis II was lying, that he just wanted to get Christopher back in the hands of the Vatican authorities. Do you know what he said? He told me that, 'I suspect that he might be lying. In fact, there is a very good chance that he is lying, but I must go to him, because he might be sincere. He could be a fellow sinner who needs the comfort of our Lord at the hour of his death.'

"But isn't there someone else who can give him that comfort?" I asked him. He just looked at me with that look of his, the look that says you have said something rather strange. 'Who among his followers, the people who have surrounded him during his pontificate, would preach Christ crucified, Christ risen to him?'

"No one," I answered at once."

"There you have it," Christopher responded, "I must go to Italy and to Rome itself."

"So Christopher went to Rome to provide comfort to the dying pope. But Pope Francis II was not dying, he was alive and well. He had Christopher thrown into prison and beaten unmercifully for over a week. After seven straight days of the beatings, the Pope ordered the execution that had been held in abeyance after Christopher's escape two years ago. The execution was to be on the eighth day. The night before his execution was to take place, Christopher awoke and discovered that there was a man in his cell, who was washing his wounds with some kind of ointment.

"Christopher: Is this to make me presentable at the execution?

"Jailer: No, this was not ordered. I am not supposed to provide you with any medical treatment.

"Christopher: Then, why, my son, are you doing it?

"Jailer: Don't you remember me?

"Christopher: The light in the cell is not good, and you have just awakened me. Perhaps if you could stand in the small light by the door. Yes, I do recognize you, you are the father of that young boy that was caught in the earthquake two years ago.

"Guard: Yes, I am the father of that child, who would have perished if you had not saved him. And I would have perished as well, because I would not have left my son trapped in the rubble, I would have stayed and died with him.

"Grey: How is your child?

"Jailer: He is a fine, healthy boy of eight years of age now.

"Grey: That is good news.

"Jailer: He is waiting for me at the White Table Inn with two friends.

"Grey: I don't understand.

"Jailer: Much has happened inside me since that day you saved my son. Everyone that I called to for help simply kept running away. The earth trembled at our feet, and they all were afraid, thinking they would be victims of the earthquake if they didn't take refuge on what the scientists told them was safe, solid ground, so they ignored my pleas for help. Except you. You stopped and looked at me, you knew me as the man who had, by order of the pope, beaten you while you were chained to the Vatican walls. 'Don't worry,' you said as you lifted the rubble off of my son, 'There doesn't seem to be any broken bones.'

"Then you led us out of the center of the earthquake to solid ground. I tried to put into words how I felt, but I was speechless before you. I feel ashamed. You gave me a copy of Christ's Gospel, in my native tongue, and told me to read it with my heart. Then you blessed me and my son and left for Britain.

"I have searched the Gospels with my heart during the last two years, and I have discovered Christ. And I have tried to provide the comfort of Christ, as you did for me, to the men and women imprisoned within the Vatican dungeons.

"Grey: Bless you for that.

"Jailer: But it is time to leave this place. My son and I, and my two friends, my late wife's brother and cousin, are coming with us, if you'll give us sanctuary in Britain.

"Grey: Of course, I will. Arthur's Britain is open to all the European knights of the cross.

"Jailer: Then we shall leave this place and the Vatican death chamber will lose one of its victims.

~~~~~  
Act IV. Scene 2.

"The jailer and his son, the jailer's brother-in-law, the cousin of the jailer's wife, and Christopher Grey have managed to procure a ship to take them from what was once called Brindisi, but is now called the port of Mandela, to Christian Britain. AS the others on board sleep, the jailer's brother-in-law approaches Christopher Grey, who also is not asleep, but is standing alone on the foredeck, looking out to sea.

"Brother-in-law: I'm sorry to intrude on you.

"Grey: You are not intruding, I was just looking at the sea; it is truly beautiful.

"BIL: You English are all in love with the sea.

"Grey: Possibly, it is all around us. But I grew up in the middle of England, of farming stock.

"BIL: They say you are well over a hundred years old, so I assume that you lived in England before it became part of the Islamic Republic.

"Grey: Yes, it was before that time.

"BIL: That must have been a wonderful period of history?

"Grey: It wasn't paradise, life was still hard, but yes, they were better times. But, my son, you haven't come on deck to talk about the sea or about merry old England. You have something on your soul that is troubling you. Why don't you confide in me?

"BIL: I hate the present rulers of Italy. They will countenance any cruelty, they will approve every atrocity against the white Italian people, so long as the atrocities are done in the name of the noble savages of color. That is why I wanted to come to Britain with you and my sister's husband. But I am troubled in my heart. I don't think I belong in Christian Britain.

"Grey: Why is that, is it because of the language barrier? Because if that is all, I must tell you that we have many Britons who...

"BIL: No, it is not that.

"Grey: Then tell me, my son.

"BIL: I don't believe in Jesus Christ. I don't believe, as my brother-in-law believes, that Christ rose from the dead. How can I hope to belong in a country where people do believe that Christ rose from the dead?

"Grey: Let me ask you this. Do you want to believe that Christ rose from the dead and that all those who die believing in Christ do not really die?

"BIL: Yes, I would very much like to believe that, but I cannot believe.

"Grey: Why can't you believe?

"BIL: Because four years ago, I saw my sister waste away before my eyes. She was only 22 years old. At the hour of her death, there was no light in her eyes. And when the mortuary police came to take her body away to be cremated, my sister ceased to exist. It was the same with my wife. How can I say that I believe in the resurrection of the dead? It would be a colossal lie. Yet, I want to live in a place other than this hell on earth called Italy. So I didn't tell you, till now, that I am not a believing Christian.

"Grey: Did you ever hear of Thomas, also called Didymus?

"BIL: No, is he someone from the Bible?

"Grey: Yes.

"BIL: The Bible is banned in Italy. My brother-in-law has a copy that he has offered to share with me, but I was never interested.

"Grey: Thomas was one of the twelve apostles. You have heard of the twelve apostles who were the followers of Christ?

"BIL: Yes, I've heard of them. And I have also heard the Christ story. How He was supposed to have died on the cross and then rose from the dead.

"Grey: Well, after Christ's resurrection from the dead, He appeared to ten of the twelve apostles. Judas, of course, was missing and so was Thomas. When Thomas returned from wherever he had been, the others told him Christ had just appeared to them in the flesh. Thomas did not believe them. "But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed."

"Most of us are in the position, vis-à-vis our Lord, of Thomas. We love Him, but we can't quite believe in His resurrection from the dead.

"BIL: But some people, our people, the white Europeans, did once believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead, didn't they?

"Grey: Yes, most of the European people, prior to the 20th century, did believe that Christ rose from the dead.

"BIL: I thought so. The Vatican officials keep telling us that the churches never said that Christ rose from the dead.

"Grey: They are lying, because they no longer believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead, they have rewritten the Christ story to make it compatible with their un-faith.

"BIL: Which is?

"Grey: The worship of the abstract collective mind of the white liberals, which is the father, the worship of the noble black savage, who is the savior, and the worship of science, which is the holy ghost.

"BIL: Yes, they do worship those three entities.

"Grey: Of course, they do.

"BIL: But how can I have faith? I don't believe in the noble savage, but I'm afraid that I do believe, against what I would like to believe, in reason and science.

"Grey: Let me tell you a story, a true story, from my childhood. I grew up on a farm in England. My parents, as with most farmers in those days, could not afford to leave the farm. There were too many things to take care of. Twice a year they spent an evening away from the farm. Once on Christmas Eve, at a big church fest, and once at Easter. Well, it was Christmas Eve,

the day before my first birthday. Yes, I was born on Christmas Day. That evening my parents left me with my fourteen year old cousin. She was a reliable young girl, who know how to take care of a baby.

"On that night she placed me in my crib and sat beside it, waiting for me to go to sleep. It was unusually warm that night for a late December evening, so the window in the bedroom was open. As my cousin went to close the window, a hawk landed on the window sill. He flew straight for my crib and perched on the side, apparently ready to strike. My cousin screamed – she was, as she said later, too paralyzed with fright to move. But Smokey, our gray and white cat, who was mainly an outside cat but was permitted inside for his meals, was not too afraid to act. He leaped on the hawk and broke his neck. Then he simply stood there with no more interest in the hawk than if it was a piece of wood.

"My cousin made much of Smokey, giving him the cream that was usually reserved for desserts, and she told the story in vivid detail when my parents came home. From that day onward, Smokey had the run of the house. And when I left the crib, Smokey slept with me in bed.

"Smokey was about four years old at the time he delivered me from the hawk. I grew up hearing about his heroic deed and we became inseparable. Then it happened, as it must happen to all those we love, humans and pets, Smokey died when I was thirteen years old. It was the first time that death, the death of someone I loved, had entered my life. I'm afraid I didn't take it very well. No one, not my parents, nor the pastor, could console me. After my parents went to bed, I would go out to Smokey's grave, and lay on the grave weeping and begging God to take Smokey into His Kingdom.

"One night, about four weeks after Smokey's death, I was lying at his grave and weeping, as I did every night, when I felt a hand on my shoulder. It was an angel, and the angel had Smokey in his arms. He took my hand and placed it on Smokey's head so that I could pet him. I felt him purring. Then the angel spoke: "It's all right, he is with the Lord and he will be safe with Him until you come." Then he was gone.

"BIL: Was it real, the vision you saw, or was it madness?

"Grey: It was real. I don't know why I was vouchsafed that vision. Maybe it was because Our Lord wanted me to comfort all those who mourn, like I was comforted that night. I know I have tried to do that my entire life. And I want to comfort you. Christ is there for us and our loved ones, we, and they, do not die.

"BIL: I want to believe that. And I do, right now, in your presence, feel that it is true.

"Grey: Stay with that feeling. Stay amongst people who give you that feeling, that is what the communion of Saints entails. Will you pray with me?

"BIL: Yes.

~~~~~

Taylor: I won't read any further, because I know you have work to do tonight.

Morgan: Yes, we do. But so do you. Good luck with the play.

Taylor: And good luck to you. May Christ be with you.

---

#### Act V. Scene 1.

Back at the restaurant, Sister Jacqueline has once again taken charge. The 'Idiot' has disappeared, and Sister Jacqueline has ordered George and his wife, their daughter, Joe Marshal and his wife, Herb, and Father Michael arrested.

Joan: Why am I being arrested?

Jacqueline: Because you were part of the trick.

Joan: I had nothing to do with any trick. It was those others who were in on the trick. They made my daughter pretend that she was dead.

George: She was dead.

Jacqueline: Silence that man.

Father Mike: I protest this treatment. I had nothing...

Morgan: Untie those people.

Jacqueline: What is the meaning of this? I forbid...

Morgan: You shall never have the power to permit or forbid anything again. Take her away.

Joan: Who are those men?

Joe: It's the white underground.

Joan: Then we will all be killed.

George: I'll tell you once more and then I'll gag you – Shut up!

Morgan: What went on here?

Herb: We had a visitor, if you'll step outside with me. I'll explain what happened here. You two might want to come along with me.

---

#### Act V. Scene 2.

Outside by the tree, after Herb has told David Morgan about the events of that night.

Morgan: You three saw and believed — what will be the reaction of the rest of the people?

Herb: I think it will be the same as before "And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done. Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not."

Morgan: What should be done with that woman?

Herb: I'm tempted to say leave her behind and let her be killed by the liberals she serves, but I suppose we must take her with us.

Morgan: But as a prisoner.

Herb: Yes, of course.

Morgan: What about the others?

Herb: I think her father has had a genuine conversion, and he can be part of the underground.

Morgan: What about your husband?

Barbara: Please take him with us, I think he believes, or at least he will in time.

Morgan: "Lord, I believe, help my unbelief"?

Herb: I think so. Let's take him with us. What about Father Michael?

Morgan: He'll have to come along too, but he'll have to join Father Todd in prison. The members of the Sanhedrin are the hardest ones to convince. Okay, let's pull out of here, we can still reach the mountains in time for the Christmas Eve festivities.

---

#### Act V. Scene 3.

The Christmas Eve performance of *The Christmas Carol* has ended. The white Europeans, the counterrevolutionary remnant, are gathered together. George Jackson, Louisa, Joe Marshall and his wife, and Herb Broadhurst, the former archivist, are amongst the faithful.

Morgan: Christopher Grey has asked us to sing, in fellowship with him and our brothers and sisters in Christ across the waters, "Abide with Me."

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide;  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, oh, abide with me.  
Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;  
Earth's joys grow dim, its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see—  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.  
I need Thy presence every passing hour;  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's pow'r?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.  
I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness;  
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.  
Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies;  
Heav'n's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me.

Morgan: Merry Christmas!

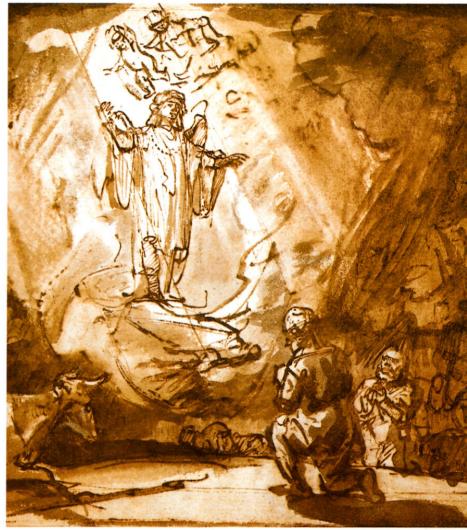
The End

# O Holy Child of Bethlehem

January 4, 2020

Categories: Christmas, Liberalism, Sanhedrin Christianity

Tags: Shakespeare, Walt Disney the man



"The world is no doubt encroaching on our families and our Christmas. The hatred against traditional morality is becoming so intense as to be scarcely believable." – Letter from a friend, December 21, 2019

But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. – [Matthew 27: 20](#)

---

Let me begin the new year with a Christmas reflection – There are no longer Christmas truces. When the European people were still ethically Christian (ca. 1914-1965) and still in part Christ-haunted, you could have contact with liberals without feeling you were lying down with some kind of reptilian monster. They still, at least at Christmas time, showed some signs of humanity. But now it is quite different. The modern liberals, acting on the assumptions of their liberal progenitors — assumptions that their progenitors often did not act on — have pushed onward to liberalism's ultimate conclusion, the worship of Satan and the hatred of Christ. When the creatures called liberals have reached that 'beast in man' state of existence, or should I say non-existence, any contact with them brings us to the sadness beyond sadness and the anger beyond anger. And since the liberals are in power, the celebration of Christmas can never be just a peaceful family affair; it must be of necessity a continuance of the same war against Satan and his minions that we wage during the other 364 days of the year.

During Christmas in my family we read *The Christmas Carol* and the other Christmas stories I have mentioned previously rather than *King Lear*, but in terms of our stance vis-à-vis the surrounding liberal world, we remain just as opposed to the liberals at Christmas time as we remain opposed to them during the rest of the year. In fact, I find that the Christian ramparts must be even more fiercely defended at Christmas than at any other time of the year because Satan, through his liberal minions, intensifies his attack on Christ and his people during the Christmas season. And there is a Satanic logic behind the liberals' maniacal Christmas attacks – "Don't let them look back, don't let them get warm and fuzzy over the Babe in the manger. Our world, which must be all of humanity's world, is in the future, a future without white Europeans who worship a fairy tale God."

In 1959 Walt Disney produced the last of his great animated films. It was a straight-forward retelling of Perrault's fairy tale, *Sleeping Beauty*. In the finale, Prince Phillip, having hewed through the thorns separating him from the Princess Aurora, who is Sleeping Beauty, prepares to restore the Princess with "love's first kiss." But Maleficent cannot permit such a consummation. She turns herself into a dragon as she declares, "Now prepare to deal with me and all the powers of hell!" The Prince does deal with her: he hurls the sword of truth into the dragon's heart. Maleficent disappears, and only the sword of truth, which is also a cross, remains in the ground. Little did Disney know, nor did I know when I saw that movie as a child, that some fifty years later another movie studio, still bearing the name of Disney, would produce a film in which Maleficent was the feminist heroine of the *Sleeping Beauty* film. There has been an immoral revolution in our culture. We have shifted from a people who revered the custom and manners of Christian Europe to a people who revere and venerate Satan and all the powers of hell. What has brought about this second fall of man and what prevents us, as a people, from climbing out of hell?

The European people fell from grace when they allowed the devil's sneer to replace their Lord's loving embrace. The classic Christmas carols of the European people all speak of a filial bond between Christ and His people—

- "Let loving hearts enthrone Him"
- "Son of God, love's pure light"
- "Where meek souls will receive Him still, The dear Christ enters in"
- "Love came down at Christmas"
- "Born that men no more may die, Born to raise the sons of earth, Born to give them second birth"
- "Yet what I can I give Him, give Him my heart"
- "Lo, He abhors not the Virgin's womb"

Are the Christmas carols that sprang from the heart of Christian Europe out of line with the message of the prophets, the Gospel of Christ, and the epistles of St. Paul? No, they are not. They are completely in accord with the prophets, the Gospels, and St. Paul. We are connected to Christ through our humanity. The God who did not abhor the Virgin's womb cannot be known by way of the syllogism, He must be known through the human heart. The devil, after he was cast out of heaven, sought to sever mankind's filial relationship with God by appealing to their pride of reason. He succeeded beyond his wildest dreams only to be defeated by Christ's divine condescension on the cross. After that defeat, Satan retrenched; he began, all over again, to attack mankind using the same gambit that he had used in the Garden of Eden: "Ye shall be as Gods."

Have the liberals become gods? Yes, in their own minds they have; they are the first part of the new trinity. They are reason undeterred by prejudice and superstition. And their pure reason, backed by the Holy Ghost of science, has discovered that the noble black savage, in the abstract, is the Savior who must be worshipped and adored. This new faith is completely and unalterably opposed to the Christian faith. There can be no middle ground between the liberals' triune faith and the triune faith of the antique Europeans. The churchmen's attempt to deify their abstract intellects while maintaining their faith in Christ has only resulted in their capitulation to liberalism. When they denounced the heart-to-heart connection to the Savior by demonizing all the human ties that connect us to God, particularly our love of kith and kin, they left themselves and their followers bereft of the God who enters human hearts. You cannot make up a new Christianity based on pure reason and expect your people to maintain the same passion and intensity in their faith as their European predecessors who believed in the human Christ, the Christ of the Christmas carols and the Gospels. What you will get is soulless automatons who give an intellectual nod to God by attending church while they give their hearts to the liberals' world and the liberals' savior.

The European people have become like unto Sisyphus. They will never get the rock up to the top of the hill so long as they adhere to the Christianity of the Sanhedrin. Why, when Christ bid us worship in spirit and truth, have the European people given themselves over to the Sanhedrin? Why is "truth" confined to that which can be put in a golden bowl by men of reason? If our faith is always dependent on what the men of reason in the organized churches tell us, then our faith is always in the ever-changing future. We must always wait for the final results of their research before we can know and believe in the living God. The Catholic must wait for the next council and the next pope, a good pope, before he can know God, and the Protestant must wait upon new Biblical studies before he can know God. In the meantime, while the Europeans wait for the light, they have made their peace with liberalism. It is the grazers'

adherence to the anti-Christian Christian Sanhedrin that keeps the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth in order. Liberalism is the antithesis of Christianity, it can only be defeated by Europeans who believe in the one true God, the God of the prophets, the God of the Gospels, the God of St. Paul, and the God of our people when they had hearts of flesh.

As the liberals become more blatantly Satanic, the grazers have become more bovine, completely oblivious to the evils of liberalism. Maleficent stands before them representing all the powers of hell, and the European grazers continue to chew their cuds and graze in the fields of liberalism. There is no liberal blasphemy that can stir the European grazer to the point of outrage. There is no blasphemy, no evil that can make the grazer say, "Stop! This must not go on!" What you have are mild disagreements that can be worked out through the democratic process. Let me relate, once again, something that a veteran pro-life protestor told me when I entered the anti-abortion picket lines as a young man. I asked the veteran why we didn't, because we were many, just storm the abortuaries and burn them to the ground. The long-time protestor told me that he had lined up hundreds of men when the clinics first started, who were willing to do just that. But their parish priest got wind of it and denounced such 'violence' from the pulpit. That is the essence of Sanhedrin Christianity – the men of intellect will always side with the powers of hell against Christ's reign of charity, because in their own minds they do not believe that Christ entered human hearts and established a realm of charity on this earth that must be defended against all the powers of hell. What is hell to the churchmen? Hell is the parishioner who does not accept their word as law. They believe that only one thing is useful – that they, and they alone, should tell us what God wills. In the case of legalized abortion, it was the clerical apostate's decision that 'God's will' was that any opposition to abortion should remain within the confines of democracy. But what if democracy exists to ensure that Satan can rule in perpetuity? Must we submit, must we be ruled by Maleficent and all the powers of hell?

The shadows of hell have gradually enveloped the European people so that now they no longer believe there ever was a light in the darkness. Dylan Thomas, a religious atheist, raged against the dying of the light, but in the end he knew that, "darkness is right." Is that the final word – is the darkness of hell our destiny? Is it the ultimate reality?

If we live in Liberaldom without rejecting Liberalism in its entirety, we will come to believe that "darkness is right." When Gratiano, one of the Christian Venetians trying to save Antonio from Shylock, is brought face to face with Shylock's unalterable determination to have his pound of flesh despite the Christians' appeals for mercy, he says:

*O, be thou damn'd, inexecrable dog!  
And for thy life let justice be accus'd.  
Thou almost mak'st me waver in my faith  
To hold opinion with Pythagoras,  
That souls of animals infuse themselves  
Into the trunks of men. Thy currish spirit  
Govern'd a wolf who, hang'd for human slaughter,  
Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,  
And, whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallowed dam,  
Infus'd itself in thee; for thy desires  
Are wolfish, bloody, starv'd and ravenous.*

Gratiano almost returns to intellectual paganism because he sees that Shylock's merciless cruelty has seemingly been given the sanction of law. But of course Portia, acting the part of our Lord and Savior, brings true charity into the law, and the light triumphs over darkness. Gratiano's wavering faith is restored, and all is right in Christian Venice.

We misread *Merchant of Venice* if we simply take the play as an anti-Semitic tirade. Shakespeare is not a neo-pagan — he does not think the Jews are irretrievably damned as a people. He makes that clear when he depicts the conversion of Shylock's daughter to Christianity. But he does think that the unrepentant Jew, the Jew who has set himself against Christ's mercy, is a "damn'd, inexecrable dog." And so are all liberals, whether they be Jew or Gentile, inexecrable dogs, when they set themselves up as an organized Sanhedrin opposed to the Light of the world. And we will become pagans with the souls of beasts if we adhere to the blended Christianity of any or all of the modern branches of the Christian Sanhedrin.

Pride of reason and fear of being cast out of the liberals' synagogues keep the European people in darkness. Will they ever rise up out of the slime pits of liberalism? Only if something inside them gives them the courage to defy the liberals' and the clergymen's intellectual sneer. Christ did not abhor the virgin's womb. We shall not abhor the Christ Child, born of the virgin Mary. We shall love Him in spite of Maleficent and all the powers of hell. +

# Liberalism Confounded

January 11, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Pietas, Religion of Satan



And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth. —Revelation 6:8

And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. —Revelation 22: 12-13

Let us say you are a parent of an adult child who has either mothered or fathered a child out of wedlock. You do not approve of having children out of wedlock, but the child now exists, so you must try and help your adult child deal with his or her child as a Christian should. This is the way I feel about so many of the wars within our democratic, liberal culture. I don't approve of democracy — it is anti-Christian — but it exists, so I can't help but sympathize with the men and women who are struggling within the confines of democracy, however misguided, to support some values that are not wholly liberal values. I am referring to President Trump's current battle with the democratic jackals over the Iranian bombing. I do not believe that we should have troops in Iran — I do not believe we should have troops anywhere in the Mideast — yet all of the American presidents in the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries, Democrat and Republican, have chosen to place American troops in Iran. So, with that as a given, just as the child out of wedlock is a given, I want to see those American troops protected as a Christian leader should protect his own soldiers. Within that context what Trump did was right and proper. Pelosi and her legions from hell place themselves in the position of the Scribes and the Pharisees who had no concern for the blind, the sick, and the lame that Christ healed; they were only concerned with attacking Christ, so they used His miracles of healing that He performed on the Sabbath as an excuse to denigrate Him. So it shall always be with the mad-dog liberals. Any Christian act of a public official will be condemned because the liberals will always oppose that which is Christian; and it is Christian to defend one's own.

Trump's religion, which is a fusion of Christianity and Judaism, is not my religion. Nor do I believe, as Trump does, in America and the democratic way. But Trump is at least a man with some convictions not wholly incompatible with old Europe. He has actually tried, in contrast to Bush and Reagan, to do something about legalized abortion. And he has actually tried, in contrast to all the other presidents of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries, to base his economic policies on the needs of individual Americans rather than on abstract utopian theories.

Trump is a rarity in public office, just as Andrew Jackson and Teddy Roosevelt were rarities: he is a man. And a man, in contrast to a self-serving politician, will fight for what he believes in. Trump's willingness to fight for a set of values that are not in complete harmony with the liberals' values has made him the most hated man in Liberaldom. Even Pope Francis the blasphemer has joined his liberal compatriots in their attack on Trump. Why should a leader of a white nation who is not a white nationalist, but who does not want to eliminate the white race, earn the hatred of the liberals and the pope? We know the answer to that question. There must be nothing left of old Europe in the new world of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Trump's moderate liberalism, which allows for a remnant of European civilization, is not acceptable. Everything that stinks of Christian Europe must be eliminated from the brave, new, utopian Europe. Hence Trump, the 1950s liberal who has retained a man's courage and a heart of flesh, must be opposed by all liberals, religious and lay.

I find it incredible that conservative-liberals such as Ann Coulter do not realize that we will never see another Republican president even remotely as good as Trump. It is quite obvious, if you take off your democratic blinders, that our vaunted democracy does not produce men with the courage to defy the liberals, it produces unmen who grovel before the liberals in the hopes that they will allow them a place in Liberaldom. Trump represents the last dying gasp of the white man's participation in American politics, just as Hendrik Verwoerd was the last genuine white man to govern South Africa.

Tragically, the white grazers who voted for Trump did not see his election as a rearguard defense, giving them a little breathing room to get ready for the liberals' final assault on the white race. Instead they viewed his election as a victory for the onward and upward movement of the American people. To proceed upon the assumption that progressive, democratic ideals can replace white pietas is not a progression, it is a descent into hell. The modern European democracies are grounded in the satanic ethos of the French Revolution. You can't restore that which has been lost, white pietas, by clinging to a slightly higher elevation on the slippery slope leading to hell. You must climb out of the slippery slope and put an iron-clad Christian roadblock in front of that slippery slope.

The Christian barrier to our descent into hell consists of our love for our kith and kin in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. The conservative-liberals who want to live on a higher elevation on the slippery slope are constantly looking for white leaders and white protest movements that are within the framework of democracy. Such leaders are not leaders, they are men with a remnant of pietas, which they have retained because they have something within them that is undemocratic, something ancient and Christian. So it is with the protest movements. Can we build on such leaders and such protest movements? No, we cannot, because such leaders and such protest movements act on the assumption that we can compromise with Satan. You can't maneuver from within the devil's kingdom. There are no safe sanctuaries in Satan's house, which is a kingdom diametrically opposed to our Lord's house of many mansions.

Let me return, once again, to that courtroom in Act IV of Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*. Shakespeare poses the question: What if the devil's will, that charity and mercy should perish from the earth, becomes the law? Then every Christian will be at the mercy of the devil's Sanhedrin of liberals. The European people, over time, have buried Shakespeare's warning in the verbiage of democracy, pluralism, and diversity. As a consequence, we now live according to the ethical code of Shylock: "I hate him because he is a Christian." The love that once was there has been replaced by the liberals' hatred of everything stemming from old Europe, everything that is charitable, merciful, and morally beautiful.

Once the devil has institutionalized his will, once he has made white pietas and Christian charity illegal, then every lifeline that the white grazer clings to plunges him all the deeper into the pit of hell. But how is it possible for a drowning man to refuse the lifelines that are offered to him? If he refuses the devil's lifelines, how can he be sure that another lifeline will ever come his way? "You said you would come back, but you did not," is the accusation that the Grand Inquisitor hurls at Christ. Satan has taken advantage of Christ's absence to impose his will on the European people: "He is not coming back, which means He never really existed. Trust in me and what I can give you." The European people have accepted that Faustian bargain.

This a most singular tragedy, this tragedy of the European people. We see before us a people incapable of responding to the Ghost of Christmas Past, who bids Scrooge place his hand on the angelic ghost's heart in order to be sustained in his journey backward in time, a time when he still had a heart of flesh. Scrooge was an easy reclamation compared to the modern Europeans, because Scrooge could be moved by the little human things, namely his sentimental attachments to a Christian woman and a charitable employer. The modern Europeans possess something that Scrooge did not possess, which has allowed them to keep Christ out of Liberaldom. They possess an ideology that has banished the past from their lives, except as a thing of ridicule and disgust. They have utopian ideologies that 'free' them from any connection to old Europe. The feminist looks to the new woman who has left the nurture of children behind, the mad-dog liberal looks to a future without whites and their God, the Christian clergyman looks to a future in which the European Christ has been replaced by the cosmic Christ,

and the neo-pagan looks to a future of brilliant neo-pagan minds purged of the sentimental prejudices and superstitions of the past. The strength of ideology has given the European people hearts that cannot be touched by anything humane or Christian. Can such people even be called a people? No, they cannot be called a people. They are an aggregate herd of subhuman creatures filled with the pride of their pathetic, imbecilic minds and the fear of being cast out of the aggregate herd of ideologically-minded monkeys, who are devoid of all the attributes of human beings.

Yeats saw that Christ was no longer the lodestar of Western civilization, but he didn't see it as a tragedy, because he thought that a new savior, a "rough beast," could be fashioned by great occult thinkers such as William Butler Yeats. Has the "rough beast" culture of the modern Europeans produced a savior? Yes, it has. It has produced the noble black savage. But the new savior is devoid of faith, hope, and charity. Can we live without those relics from old Europe? I can't and I won't. If a stubborn, unyielding defiance is all that is left to us, let us maintain that stubborn, unyielding defiance until the ending of the world. That is little enough to do for Him who has redeemed us with His blood. Christ has woven us into His story, which ends in His Kingdom come. At the poetic core of the European civilization that now stands condemned is that heavenly vision vouchsafed to all those who have kept their hearts alive, untainted and unsullied by the stink of the modern ideologies of liberalism. He has not left us alone, He has sent us a Comforter, and that Comforter resides in hearts of flesh.

It is very unscientific to rely on something that cannot be seen by the material eye. But that unseen something, that gentle voice of the Holy Ghost, enjoins us to look to Him who saves. In the midst of Liberaldom, which is a charnel house, we must look back and embrace the Suffering Servant who was the poetic center of old Europe. He can and must remain, as the old hymns proclaim, our strength and our refuge, even if the ideologues of modernity tell us we must look to a new future without the Christ of our dear, dear land of storybooks. Like unto a child, that is our faith; we are still and always shall be His children. +

# Our History is a Fairy Tale

January 18, 2020  
Categories: Charity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Spenser



Gustave Dore – Christ Feeding the Multitude

“Will you wear the armour that I bring you, for unless you do you will never succeed in the enterprise, nor kill the horrible monster of Evil? The armour is not new, it is scratched and dinted with many a hard-fought battle, but if you wear it rightly no armour that ever was made will serve you so well.”

-Lady Una's appeal to the Red Cross Knight, from *The Faerie Queene* by Edmund Spenser

---

I do not think, although I could not swear to it, that a week has ever gone by in the United States, and quite possibly in Europe as well, in which there has not been some sort of televised documentary on the life of Adolph Hitler. And in addition to the television documentaries there are enough biographies of Adolph Hitler to fill a huge wing of a vast library. We grant that Hitler was a significant historical figure during the 1930s and 1940s; however, this still doesn't explain the extraordinary amount of attention he continues to receive from the liberals. So we must ask the question – why are the liberals, after all these years since his death, still so obsessed with Hitler? Let us first dismiss the oft-stated liberal assertion that Hitler was some sort of supernaturally evil being, the likes of which the world had never seen before. Certainly, he was a vicious tyrant and a mass murderer, but the world had seen mass murderers and vicious tyrants before the advent of Adolph Hitler. And Hitler was not the worst of the mass murderers and vicious tyrants of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. He did not come anywhere close to Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, or the abortion doctors of the European nations. So the question remains: Why has Hitler been demonized by the liberals? The liberals have shunned and demonized Hitler for the same reason that Ivan Karamazov shunned and demonized Smerdyakov. Smerdyakov was the intellectual demon child of Ivan, who was acting on the intellectual premise of Ivan Karamazov's atheism: Everything is lawful if there be no God. And Hitler was the demon child of the liberals. He believed, as all liberals believe, that man is part of nature, nature as defined by science.

The meaning of the word ‘natural’ changed as the European people became more and more enamored and enslaved by the scientific view of life. In Walter Scott’s Europe, what was natural to man were his spiritual connections to his fellow men and his God. Man’s biological nature was merely the outer garment of his true spiritual substance underneath. But in modern Europe the outer biological garment became all in all. And if mere biological nature is all in all, then whatever is natural, as defined by science, is justifiable and meritorious. Hitler justified his cruelties by referring to the cruelty of nature, just as our modern liberals justify their ‘family planning’ by way of abortion by referencing nature as defined by science. Isn’t motherhood more natural than the violent termination of the natural process? No, not if nature is devoid of the spirit of God, who created the natural world. Motherhood is of the spirit – that is what the Christian asserts. If there is no animating spirit in nature, then what is natural is what is cruel and merciless: We are all laboratory rats subject to the whims of the men and women in the white laboratory coats. That child must die, that child can live. That race, the white race, must die out, and that other race, the black race, must be perpetuated. Why? Because science, the abstract science of the liberals, must be all in all. So it is written, so it shall be.

Internecine wars between liberals are the most deadly wars of all, because neither side sees human beings as anything more than biological collectives. And biological collectives have no real value. It is only the Christian who sees God in history rather than God in nature, who values individual human beings. We have gotten so far away from the God who entered human history that we cannot even imagine a time when the European people saw themselves as God’s people, separate from the world of the natural sciences.

When Hamlet rebuked Rosencrantz and Guildenstern for trying to play upon him like a pipe, and when Dostoyevsky’s Underground Man said that, “A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key,” they were asserting the European vision of existence, asserting their place in the Christ story. Our Lord took great pains to establish that His world was not the natural, mathematical world of  $2 + 2 = 4$ . Do you recall what He said in *Mark* chapter eight? After He warns His disciples to “beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the leaven of Herod,” and they think that He is talking about eating bread, He asks them why they still do not understand Him.

*And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven. And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?*

There is something in existence that is more than math. Christ was and is that something.

If I could paint like Gustave Dore I would paint a picture of liberalism as the kingdom of hell. And within that kingdom, the worshippers of Baal, the men and women of science, would be fighting eternally for supremacy in hell. The most depressing thing about the alternative news sites on the internet is that they offer us no Christian alternative to the hell of liberalism. The followers of Mithra, the neo-pagans, are forever attacking the followers of Cybele, who most certainly have the upper hand at present, but within that internecine warfare, there is no Christian presence. Mussolini, who started out as a communist and then shifted to fascism because, “Communism has no virility,” embodied the two different sides, feminine and masculine, of the same pagan coin.

Time flies even when you’re not having fun. It seems like yesterday, but when I count the years it was about thirty years ago that I had a series of conversations with a “hard science” conservative. “The whole problem in modern America,” the hard science man maintained, “Is that there is too much emphasis on liberal arts and not enough emphasis on the hard sciences.” The hard science man then went on an anti-liberal arts tirade, reminiscent of Thomas Gradgrind’s apologia for “facts” in Charles Dickens’ *Hard Times*.

Since the hard science man was my elder, I was respectful to him, but I made it clear that I was not in agreement with him. "The problem is not that we have too much of liberal arts and not enough of hard science, the problem is that science has encroached upon the liberal arts to the extent that we no longer have liberal arts in any of our universities. Our liberal arts, especially our literature, has become part of the science departments. Our poets are only read, when they are read at all, through the prism of the 'sciences' of psychology, sociology, and anthropology."

"What subject do you teach?"

"Literature."

"Ah ha, no wonder you hate the hard sciences."

"I don't hate the hard sciences, I just think they should stay where they belong. If we take science with us when we commune with God or with our fellow men, then we will destroy our God and our fellow men."

It was all to no avail; the hard science man went off into the night railing against the humanities and extolling the beauty and wonder of the "hard sciences." AS he wandered off, I thought not only of Thomas Gradgrind, I also remembered that Russell Kirk had written a letter during World War II to a hard science man who had recommended we dispense with the humanities for the duration of the war. Kirk wrote that if we did that we might as well join the enemy rather than fight them. I think Kirk was a little too late with his warning; the major reason for World War II was that science had already absorbed the humanities.

The pride of science, which is the original sin, was and is part of our fallen nature. But that sin, that original sin, gained an institutionalized position in the European world when Scholasticism, the scientific study of God, became the truth and the way in the Catholic and Protestant churches. Our modern European hell on earth is the final outcome of the interneceine quarrels between the Platonists and the Aristotelians, the Thomists and the Calvinists, and the Jungians and the Freudians. The devil smiles and bids us choose one of the combatants over the other. But all scientized theologies lead to hell, because studies of God always become studies of the God-in-nature rather than God in our history. Our God is the fairy tale God, who came to us in the flesh in order to assure us that we are "more than nature," we belong in the fairy tale of God, which is the fairy tale of Christ's birth, crucifixion and resurrection from the dead.

In Shakespeare's *The Tempest*, an assortment of sinners are set upon a seemingly deserted island. Unbeknownst to them, they have been placed there by Prospero, a man who possesses, through the power of prayer "which pierces so that it assaults Mercy itself and frees all faults," the ability to bend the natural world to the spiritual realities of charity and mercy. In the face of one miracle after another, one of the sinners proclaims, "And there is in this business more than nature was ever conduct of." Yes, that is what the historical drama of the European people is all about. Our people, as distinct from all other peoples and cultures, once saw that there was something in our lives here on earth more than nature. Through the gradual scientizing of God, we have lost that connection to Christ and substituted a vague, universalist pantheism for our historical consciousness of the living God.

During the era of the medieval scholastics, who were the architects of modern liberalism, the great thinkers first lined up behind Plato because his philosophy allowed for some unknown spiritual force, whereas Aristotle, the realist, was an atheist. After Aquinas, Aristotle rather than Plato became the Christian philosophers' light bearer, and Plato was deemed, by scholars such as Ronald Knox, to be the source of all heresies. In subsequent years, the Plato vs. Aristotle debate was continued by Jung and Freud. Jung saw a cosmic force in existence while Freud adhered to the strict atheistic line. But such controversies were all within the confines of scientific naturalism, which has no room for the God above nature. Once our minds, abstracted from the heart that loves, are focused on nature and nature's God, the true God and true Man becomes lost in the cosmic mists. When our moral imaginations are centered on Christianity as a cosmic melting pot of religions, we come up with a superficial God unable to sustain hearts of flesh, much like the God depicted by so many of the Renaissance painters. Rembrandt was one of those superficial painters in his early years, but he became something quite different in his later years. He became a man with a deep consciousness of the Christ who entered human history, the God that can only be seen by men and women who have given Him their hearts.

The sickness unto death of the European people has come upon them because they no longer see with their hearts. Like the dwarves in C. S. Lewis's book *The Last Battle*, the modern Europeans are not going to be taken in by a fairy story. But what if that fairy story is true? It is truly astonishing that the European people no longer care to know about the Christ of old Europe. They have moved on to a new Christianity more compatible with the natural world. Dickens' *Haunted Man* was desolate when he lost his connection to his fellow men and his God through his desire to remove all sorrow and trouble from his life. That is not the case with the modern Europeans. They do not feel the loss of their humanity when they embrace the liberals and their promise of an earthly utopia, devoid of all sorrow and trouble and all humanity, because they have left the Christ of history, our human history, and replaced Him with the gods of inhumanity, the gods of science. Everything cruel and unnatural, unnatural from a Christian viewpoint, has the divine sanction of science in our modern un-civilization of desolation.

The devil can create a tempest — he has done just that — but he doesn't know what the extent of its damage will be, because he doesn't know if there are any Europeans left on earth who will be willing to stand in the face of the tempest. When we take His love personally, when our hearts comprehend His sacrifice, we will take the attack on His Europe personally, and we will stand firm and resist the fierce tempestuous storms of liberalism, set in motion by the devil. We shall not return to paganism in any of its modern forms, not by way of Hitler, Stalin, or cosmic Christianity. We must dwell in His world, the world of the Word made flesh, and defend that world with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

# The False Gods of Liberalism

January 25, 2020

Categories: Negro worship, Neo-paganism, Pride of intellect, Religion of Satan

Tags: Chateaubriand, Shakespeare



For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect. But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. – [Mark 13: 22-23](#)

Another Martin Luther King Jr. day has come and gone, but the liberals have vowed, and they always keep their vow, to keep Martin Luther King Jr. in their hearts all 365 days of the year. Since that special day comes almost right after Christmas, we can get a very good idea of how the God-Man, Jesus Christ, fares in Liberalism. The most noticeable difference between the MLK holiday and Christmas is that the liberals, who are not comfortable with the term ‘Christmas’ because they do not want Christ mentioned by name, are very comfortable mentioning the name of Martin Luther King Jr. on his special day. In fact, they revel in the sacred name of Martin Luther King Jr. What should we think of a people who exalt a person such as Martin Luther King Jr. to a god-like status far above the status of Jesus Christ? And what should we think of the church-going whites who theoretically claim to believe that Christ was the Son of God, who accept the deification of Martin Luther King Jr.? I know what I think of them. I think the liberals are desouled unmen devoid of all humanity, and the church-going grazers are Ganelons who court the favor of the wicked, because they are too cowardly to stand with the few against the many.

There is no doubt that some of the Christian missionaries in Africa, men such as Edmund Hodgson, who was tortured and slaughtered by the Baluba for daring to preach Christ crucified, Christ risen to black Africans, were well-intentioned. But there is also no doubt that the missionaries, such as Dr. Livingstone, who went to Africa suffering from an Atticus Finch syndrome, turned from Christian missionaries into the devotees of the noble black savage. Their spiritual descent into darkness represented the spiritual descent of the European people.

The worship of the noble black savage is the main pillar of the liberals’ new religion. By elevating noble black savages such as Martin Luther King Jr. to divine status, the liberals are able to give a religious sanction to their brave new world, devoid of all things white and Christian. The European people could not go back to the paganism of the colored races or the paganism of their own people before the Christian era; something had happened to the European people that made a return to pure paganism impossible. That something was, of course, their conversion, as a people, to a faith in Jesus Christ as true God and true man. There is no going back once that acceptance has been made. What can be done, however, has been done. The Europeans have become pagans of the future; they have made for themselves a new paganism that has an unholy trinity, which is the new religion in the celestial, pagan future of the liberals. The new savior in the new trinity, the sacred negro, must be upheld against all the forces of hell, consisting of white Christians, in order to maintain the thrones and altars of Liberalism. Legalized abortion, feminism, and all the other institutionalized evils of our modern world are maintained by the people’s faith in the noble black savage.

A people without faith perishes. That is why the liberals’ have absorbed the grazers in the formerly Christian churches. They gave the grazers a new unholy trinity – reason, the noble black savage, and science. That is the liberals’ satanic equivalent of the Holy Trinity. The new Christless faith could not have triumphed over the old faith without the ‘good offices’ of the godded men in the ranks of the Christian intelligentsia. They condemned the human ties that connect us to the Savior and told us that we could only find God through their illuminated minds. But their illumination left us without the heart that loves. In the absence of that affective organ of sight, the European people made a descent into darkness. Chateaubriand’s description of man’s first fall describes the Europeans’ second fall from grace:

*Observe, too, what is very important : man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undergo so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.*

– [The Genius of Christianity: or, The Spirit and Beauty of the Christian Religion](#)

The “ray of light” that overpowers us comes from Satan, who bids us illuminate our minds so that we can be as God. That other light, the Light that shineth in darkness, comes from the God who enters human hearts. Why do we study God instead of seeking Him by searching the scriptures with our heart as St. Paul enjoined us to do? I saw this destruction by illumination applied to the European poets when I studied literature in college. You must read an author’s works with your heart if you want to see his vision. If you want to put him in a laboratory and study him, you approach his work with an illuminated mind. Neither man nor God can be known by way of the mind divorced from the heart. There was too little care taken in our church-based universities, which all became secularized citadels of the devil, of the sin of pride. By seeking illuminated knowledge rather than affective knowledge, the European people became like unto the demonic angel Satan, and they lost their connection to the Son of God.

If a man wants to be one with the liberals and keep one foot in the Christless Christian church of his choice, he can do so by embracing cosmic Christianity, which allows for a vague, nondescript God who serves as a prop for the liberals’ gods. But such a man can never go to the depths of his own soul for comfort, because there is nothing there; he has given his soul to the devil through the mediation of the liberals, who have built Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth through the unholy trinity that is maintained and perpetuated by such festivals as the Martin Luther King Jr. holiday.

It is clear that the European grazers have placed their hopes in the new paganized utopia of the liberals, which is sustained by the new savior, the sacred negro. Why have they given their assent to the “cold malignity” of the liberal metaphysicians? What did they have to lose? Old Europe was built on the European people’s Dream of the Rood. They were the people who took the living God into their hearts. If that heartfelt vision, that Dream of the Rood, is condemned by the great ‘Christian’ theologians, then the Christian people will seek new gods. Look to our universities if you wish to see the new paganization embodied. They have become so imbued with the spirit of Satan that it is no longer possible for Satan to distinguish between the

universities and his kingdom of hell in hell. As he prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls, he often does a double-take when he visits the local colleges – “Wait a minute, am I in my hell below, or in the new hell on earth? I can’t see any difference!”

Education is the key; we all must be educated. First the clergy told us that we must be educated before we could know God. Then the universities, founded by clergymen, told us we must be educated so that we wouldn’t fall prey to prejudice and superstition – the prejudice of love for our kith and kin, and the superstition of faith, faith in the Christ of old Europe. So long as we worship education, we will worship the liberals’ unholy trinity. I vividly remember a committed pro-lifer complaining to me while we were on the picket lines that his nephew was going to work at a blue collar job and get married rather than go to college. “Why is that bad?” I asked him. “Because you must get an education,” was his reply. Yes, we all must be educated. We must be educated to hate everything white and Christian. Every poll ever taken indicates that the ‘educated’ people are liberals. Why then do professed Christians continue to support education? Was Christ wrong when he chose non-educated men to be His disciples? Was St. Paul just being whimsical when he said that the folly of God was wiser than the wisdom of men? Was Christ Himself an idiot? Yes, He was, at least according to the dictates of liberalism, the liberalism that the European people have embraced.

The sign of contradiction to the liberals, and the man who puts the coward’s name on the modern Europeans, is the man born blind who was healed by that ‘idiot,’ our divine Lord and Savior. The man born blind defies the educated ones, the scribes and Pharisees, because he loves the man who gave him his sight. And when Christ tells him who He is, the man born blind falls to his knees and worships Him. We have come a long way from, “Yes, we’ll gather at the river... that flows by the throne of God,” to its opposite: “Yes, we’ll gather at the university... that encompasses the center of hell.”

The liberals have, in the name of education, extended their control over the Europeans so that they now have no real opposition left. Their hysteria over Trump is the hysteria of a fanatical cleaning freak who finds one tiny spot on her kitchen floor. All the roads in the modern European nations lead to Liberaldom, because all the major roads of Europe have been constructed according to the theories of the educated men in church and state. No matter what road the wandering European takes, he ends up in Liberaldom.

The liberals are Shylock: they cannot be converted:

*You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;  
You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops and to make no noise  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do any thing most hard  
As seek to soften that—than which what’s harder?—  
His Jewish heart.*

[-The Merchant of Venice](#)

And the white grazers are the parents of the man born blind; they will not stand with the Christian Europeans, because they are afraid of being cast out of the liberals’ synagogue, which provides them with all the ‘comforts’ of life: a personal savior, who is the sacred negro, a promise of economic prosperity, and wonderful diversions such as Stupor Bowls and Twitter.

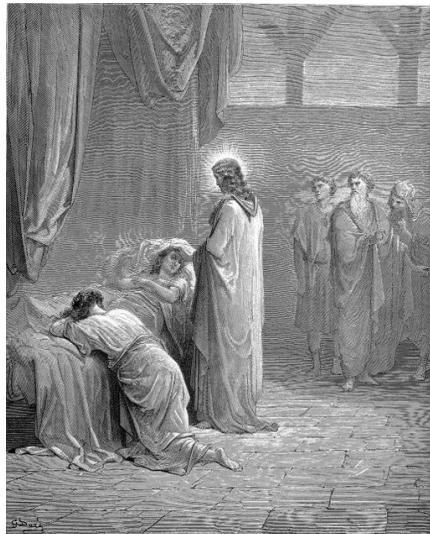
Is this the promised end or image of that horror? The liberals have had over one hundred years of dominance, yet, they still tell us that they need more time in order to build their kingdom of heaven on earth. No, they have had enough time. This is their world. They have built the kingdom of hell on earth. Is this, our modern Europe, the apex of civilization? If this uncivilization is our final destiny, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because the men and women of modern Europe have no humanity; they have become formless, soulless pieces of inert matter. We need all of our faith to believe that there once was a European Narnia. The dead are not dead, they speak to us from across that seemingly impassable divide. They speak to us of a land of pure delight, presided over by the Man of Sorrows who gave the man born blind his sight and who will, if we see with our hearts, give us the faith, hope, and charity to transcend this world of un-men and see the God of our people: “Lord, I believe. And he worshipped Him.” +

# Our Common Hope Is Not the Noble Savage

February 1, 2020

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Resurrection

Tags: Dream of the Rood, Edgar Allan Poe, Shakespeare



May the Lord, who here on earth suffered aforetime on the cross for the sins of men, be a friend unto me; He has redeemed us and has given us life, a heavenly home.

[-The Dream of the Rood](#)

---

Our hearts are small and so are our affections – we cannot mourn deeply for all humanity. Only Christ can and does mourn deeply for us all. Outside my small circle of family and friends, I have mourned for those whom I felt drawn to because they in some small way, and in some cases in a large way, have supported His reign of charity here on earth. Hence I mourned for the singer Glen Campbell, who in later life became a Christian and sang many great hymns in honor of our Lord and Savior. And I mourned for Samuel Francis, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, and Andrew Lytle, because they were Europeans of the old stock. (I know Samuel Francis was not wholly in the Christian camp, but he was not hostile to Christianity as so many of the neopagans are.)

The people we mourn for when they pass who are outside our small circle of friends and family, define us as a people. The incredible outpouring of sympathy and ‘love’ for the basketball star Kobe Bryant by white people is a very sad commentary on the spiritual state of the European people. Obviously, you don’t dance on the grave of your enemy, but to mourn the passing of a man who opposed His reign of charity and supported the liberals’ reign of Satan is the act of a people who have nothing left inside of them that compels them to love what is true, noble, and beautiful, namely Jesus Christ and the people who followed in His train. That void in their souls has been filled with the love of all that is ignoble, false, and morally reprehensible – the gods of Liberaldom.

Men must have a religion; it is a great tragedy that our people, who once were the Christ-bearers, have now made it their *raison d'être* to elevate the sacred negro to the pinnacle of their new pantheon of gods. Do they really love the negroes? No, they don’t. Love cannot be an abstraction, it must be rooted in our love of Christ. Outside of that reality, there is no love, there is only intellectual posturing. Who is served when a black athlete is elevated to the status of a beloved god? Are white people served? No, because they debase themselves and lose the vision of Him who saves. Are the individual black athletes who are worshipped being served? No, they are not, because they too need the God who saves; they cannot, by virtue of being black, save themselves or white people from sin and death. When will all this end? When will the European people return to their God and reject the false gods of Liberaldom? Satan gives us his answer to that question. Like the Raven in Poe’s poem, he sits above the chamber door of the European people and says, “Nevermore.” Is Satan’s word the last word?

Poe’s dark vision is infinitely superior to the non-vision of the modern Europeans who worship nature and nature’s gods, the noble savages of color. Poe faces life without the Redeemer, and he despairs, because he knows that without His love all those we loved on this earth are lost to us forever.

“Prophet!” said I, “thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or devil!—  
Whether Tempter sent, or whether tempest tossed thee here ashore,  
Desolate, yet all undaunted, on this desert land enchanted—  
On this home by Horror haunted—tell me truly, I implore—  
Is there,—is there balm in Gilead?—tell me—tell me, I implore!”  
Quoth the Raven, “Nevermore.”

“Prophet!” said I, “thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or devil!—  
By that Heaven that bends above us—By that God we both adore—  
Tell this soul with sorrow laden if, within the distant Aidenn,  
It shall clasp a sainted maiden whom the angels name Lenore—  
Clasp a rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore.”  
Quoth the Raven, “Nevermore.”

“Be that word our sign of parting, bird or fiend!” I shrieked, upstarting—  
“Get thee back into the tempest and the Night’s Plutonian shore!  
Leave no black plume as a token of that lie thy soul hath spoken!  
Leave my loneliness unbroken!—quit the bust above my door!  
Take thy beak from out my heart, and take thy form from off my door!”  
Quoth the Raven, “Nevermore.”

And the Raven, never flitting, still is sitting, still is sitting  
On the pallid bust of Pallas just above my chamber door;  
And his eyes have all the seeming of a demon’s that is dreaming,  
And the lamplight o’er him streaming throws his shadow on the floor;  
And my soul from out that shadow that lies floating on the floor  
Shall be lifted—nevermore!

[“The Raven”](#)

Why is Poe's vision of despair superior to the modern Europeans' vision of celestial liberalism? Because Poe's vision faces the tragedy of death. From the depths of despair we can find the Redeemer. We can, in the depths of our soul, find the God who is the "grave where buried love doth live." But if we embrace superficiality, the superficiality of a naturalized vision of death, which tells us that man is a piece of vegetable matter who returns to nature, then we will indeed be lost. Satan's "Nevermore" will remain enshrined on our chamber door, and we will just yawn and continue to worship at the altars provided for us by our liberal overlords, the purveyors of a superficial faith in this world only.

In a speech at one of the Democratic Party presidential conventions several elections ago, Senator Bill Bradley said that the essence of America was that the American people refused to accept the tragedy of life. Americans believed, Bradley claimed, that tragedy could be overcome by democracy. Is that so? Can the ultimate tragedy, the tragedy of death, be overcome by legislation? No, of course such a tragedy cannot be overcome by legislation, but liberals of all stripes, white Americans and white Europeans, believe that they can build a world that is devoid of tragedy. How can such a belief be reconciled with the fact that we must die? Blissful happiness on this earth can't be reconciled with a soul that yearns for immortality. But the two irreconcilables, utopia and death, can be reconciled if we cease to look on man as a creature worthy of redemption and eternal life. If man is simply a by-product of nature, then it is no tragedy if he returns to the nothingness from which he came. In liberalism, the only tragedy is the tragedy of racism, sexism, and a lack of faith in the liberals' utopia. When the last opponents of the liberals and the liberals' nature gods are eliminated, there will be no more tragedy, no more pain and suffering, there will only be natural creatures bent in reverence and homage to nature and nature's gods.

You cannot change the reality of the existence of Jesus Christ as true God and true man by denying His existence. But you can change the lives of the men and women of Europe by altering their vision of the one true God. The European people's belief in Christ crucified, Christ risen, has been destroyed by a philosophical blending process. Christ went from the status of the one true God above the natural world to that of a God who was the sum of the parts of the natural world. Then He was demoted to the status of a lesser God among the nature gods. That is why it is now possible for white Europeans to intellectually affirm their faith in Jesus Christ while giving their hearts to the greater gods, the noble savages of color. "What I can, I give Him, give Him my heart," has become, "What I can, I give them (the gods of color), give them my heart." But of course the heart must be dehumanized in order to become attuned to the gods of color. The cauterized heart, the heart that is a slave to superficiality of liberalism, is the building block for Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

If we place the 'Dream of the Rood' Europeans, who are my people, up against the modern Europeans, we can see why modern Europe has been plunged into darkness while old Europe contained the Light that shineth in darkness. The 'Dream of the Rood' people followed St. Paul's injunction to circumcise their hearts: "Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time." The theologians who believed that the wisdom of men was wiser than the folly of God cauterized the hearts of the European people so that their minds could be more receptive to God. But God comes to human hearts, hearts that have been circumcised; He cannot enter the heart that has been sealed by the surgeons of liberalism. The cauterized heart cannot see — it has lost its depth, and as a consequence it only sees the abstract superficialities of the godded men of reason. When the godded men say the negro is sacred and must be worshipped, the white grazers, the men and women whose hearts are dead, say, "Amen, blessed be the sacred negro."

Liberal-conservatives in the 1960s started referring to their mad-dog liberal cousins as 'bleeding heart' liberals. Nothing could be further from the truth. The essence of liberalism is represented by the heart that does not bleed. The liberals have taken the circumcised heart that is open to Christ and His people and closed it in order to infuse all mankind with their inhuman ideology of a perfect world of inhuman vegetables. The heart that truly loves responds to Christ's divine love by loving Him in and through other human hearts of flesh. The liberal heart, which no longer bleeds because its blood has congealed, only responds to abstract theories of life because it is governed by the superficialities of the men of ideology. The false sentimentality of the hallmark greeting cards is all that the liberal world can provide for the white grazers. When they mourn, they mourn for whomever the liberal Jacobins tell them is worthy. And when they rejoice, they rejoice for whatever cause or holiday the liberals deem worthy to celebrate. The absence of a genuine inner life, a life of the spirit, is the distinguishing mark of the modern Europeans; they have no genuine feelings that they can call their own, their sorrow and their joy is second-hand.

Poe, like the author of the *Dream of the Rood*, faces the black despair of death. But unlike the author of the *Dream of the Rood*, Poe does not see past death to the Beatific Vision. What prevented Poe from seeing that the God whom he professed was the "God we both adore" could turn the defeat of death into victory? I would suggest it was the non-poetical side of Poe's nature that prevented him from seeing through the eye to the Savior rather than with the eye to a vision of hell. Poe was a mathematical genius as well as a poetical genius. And the weakness of his poetry is that it was too mathematical. If existence is nothing but math, as the Raven above the chamber door tells us, then we must embrace the superficiality of the 'cauterized heart' culture of the modern Europeans or else we must commit suicide. Those are the two alternatives open to us in modern Europe. It is my contention, and it is a contention that did not originate with me, that there is a third alternative. There is the Dream of the Rood that our European progenitors adhered to just as Posthumus Leonatus, the hero of Shakespeare's *Cymbeline* adheres to the heavenly dream that he sees with the inner eye of the circumcised heart:

'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;  
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

The constant mathematical refrain of "Nevermore" did not originate with Poe. It originated with Shakespeare. King Lear, in the face of the death of his beloved daughter Cordelia, says:

And my poor fool is hang'd! No, no, no life!  
Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,  
And thou no breath at all? Thou 'lt come no more,  
Never, never, never, never!  
Pray you, undo this button. Thank you, sir.  
Do you see this? Look on her, look, her lips,  
Look there, look there!

But at the end of *King Lear*, unlike at the end of "The Raven," we do not despair, because in Shakespeare's *King Lear* we get an overwhelming sense of a spiritual presence, a divinely human person who died on a cross, who has redeemed us from sin and death. It was not a misreading of Lear when Ernest Hemingway said that whenever he wanted to be cheered up, he read *King Lear*. We come to the beatific vision through the cross of Christ. If we recapture a true tragic sense of life, we will come to believe in the God-Man who is "the grave where buried love doth live." That is the European vision, the vision of the people who circumcised their hearts and let the dear Christ enter in. +

# The Liberals' Utopian Hell

February 8, 2020  
Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Democracy, Pride of intellect, Utopianism

Tags: Edmund Burke



The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. —[Letters on a Regicide Peace](#) by Edmund Burke

---

All of the nations of Europe have been under the thrall of utopian ‘ideals’ since the original utopian state, the United States of America, reared its reptilian head in 1788. Most of the European nations prior to the 21<sup>st</sup> century, with the exception of Russia, rejected Robespierre’s ‘Utopia Now’ model of massive bloody purges, in favor of the American utopian model of a gradual purging of the non-illuminated white people who were not fit for utopia. (1) In an ironic twist we have seen, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, a shift toward Robespierre’s model of utopia in the Western European nations while the Russians and many of the other formerly communist nations have shifted to the old American model of utopia. But the dominant theme in the European nations in the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries (in France and the U.S. it was the dominant theme since the 1700s) has been utopia.

The one essential in utopia is the illuminated mind, free from the prejudices and superstitions of the past. The ‘myth’ of the golden age in which the past is idealized is a pre-Christian ideal of the pagans. Plato is the one exception to the pagans, because the pagan Greek philosopher was ‘advanced’ in his philosophy: he was imbued with a pride of science that scorned the past before the Christian theologians made it their *raison d'être*.

The secular, totalitarian utopias of the modern era were made possible by the utopian thinking of the Christian theologians in the ranks of the clergy and the illuminated members of the laity. What seems obvious to the non-enlightened laymen such as I — namely that utopian states which always exclude the Christian God and institute laws violating the values stemming from a faith in Jesus Christ are not the type of incorporate unions that I or any other Christian should support — is not obvious to the ‘enlightened’ Christians, both clerical and lay. Let Hilaire Belloc speak for the entire pack of Christian utopians. He maintained to his dying day that the French Revolution was a necessary purging of the insufficiently Christian monarchy of France. He justified his monstrous, blasphemous credo by pointing out the imperfections of the Christian Frenchman of the 1700s. That is the great advantage the utopians have over every non-utopian regime: There are always major imperfections in a reality-based government, because human beings are imperfect. But a utopian government, which is always in the future, has no imperfections since a utopian nation does not consist of actual human beings; it consists of fantasy human beings who are born, as Athena was born from the brain of Zeus, from the illuminated brains of the utopian thinkers. The utopians have a perfect record, because their utopia is always in the future where the imperfections of the past will be eliminated.

What happens when the utopians come to power? Why are they not held accountable for the imperfections of their utopias when the imperfections become apparent? Why, for instance, did Belloc support Robespierre’s purges despite the fact that he killed good Christians as well as ‘bad’ Christians? Why wasn’t Robespierre’s regime of terror and the regimes of the utopian regicides that followed in his utopian train condemned for their sins as the Christian aristocrats who went to the guillotine were condemned? The answer lies in the illuminated minds of the utopians. They have no humanity themselves, so they do not think that the elimination of imperfect, non-illuminated human beings is wrong. Everything is lawful if it contributes to the construction of the perfect world of the future. But the perfect worlds are always built on the slaughtered bodies of actual flesh and blood human beings, in the name of an abstract ‘humanity’ of the future. How can the inhumane, the men without human hearts, build a perfect, humane world? They can’t. They can only build Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. (2)

The ‘sins’ of the non-utopian people of the past and the idea of the ‘transition period’ keep the utopians’ kingdoms of hell on earth in order. Robespierre was an anti-capital punishment zealot before he came to power, and he remained an anti-capital punishment zealot when he was in power. But it was necessary to purge the impure, the French aristocrats, before the perfect France, a France where capital punishment was unnecessary, could be built. So it goes with all the utopias of the European nations – the liberals told us that abortion had to be legal until we had a nation where abortion was unnecessary, because enlightened human beings, human beings devoid of the prejudices of their Christian past, would use the proper birth control. And every atrocity that is possible to be visited upon a people can and should be permitted in South Africa if the atrocities are committed against the sinful, ‘racist’ whites. No matter that their ‘sinful’ world was a heaven for black and whites compared to modern South Africa. No, they were racists and impure, therefore we must allow the new black rulers their transition period. But such transition periods are not temporary, they represent the incarnation of Satan into the body politic of formerly Christian nations. Utopian states will not become something other than what they are until white Christians repudiate utopian thinking and return to their Christian past with a determination to take that past into the future.

All utopian thinking, with the exception of Plato, has its origins, whether the utopians are aware of it or not, in Christ’s injunction to, “Be ye perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.” ([Matthew 5:48](#)) But there is a very big difference, the difference between heaven and hell, in looking at your own sins with the eyes of the heart in order to live the life that our Savior wants us to live, and looking at the sins of others with an illuminated mind in order to condemn those others, the original sinners of the past, so that you can proceed to build a future devoid of all non-illuminated humans. The ‘illuminated’ thinking is the product of the inhumane minds of post-Christian liberals. John Paul II was fond of apologizing, not for his own sins, but for the sins of the European Christians of the past. His apologies dovetailed with the secular liberals’ condemnations of all things European and Christian. How can a Christian leader support the purveyors of a ‘utopian’ hell on earth? It’s easy, if you make the Christ story into an illuminated philosophy. Then you can be one with the secular Illuminati of Liberaldom while still holding a position in organized Christian Jewry.

When the European people took Christ into their hearts and placed Him at the center of their culture, it almost seemed, if you looked at their culture through and not with the eye, that they were a race of people completely distinct and separate from the heathens of color. And now? The European people seem to be a race of people completely separate and distinct from the Christian Europeans, and they also still seem to be a race of people completely separate and distinct from the heathens of color, but no longer separate and distinct for the same reason as the Christian Europeans.

The modern Europeans have taken utopian thinking, which is nothing less than a denial of the sovereignty of God, into their souls, and as a consequence they do not have, for all practical purposes, any soul left to call their own. They have only their illuminated minds to rely upon. And their illuminated minds are at the mercy of Satan, who cannot defeat the heart connected to our Lord but who can easily defeat men and women who have traded their hearts of flesh for illuminated minds. The ‘purge’ mentality of the modern liberals is the result of utopian

thinking that has no room for individual human beings. The slaughter of the white people will continue so long as there is no Christian reaction against the utopian thinking of the liberals, the conservatives, and the neo-pagans.

Must we then become unenlightened? Must we become prejudiced reactionaries? Yes, we must. We must become so reactionary and so prejudiced that we come to believe that charity is greater than illumination. “But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.” ([Matthew 12:7](#)) The utopian illuminati must sacrifice millions on the altars of their utopian states while the knights of charity, the antique Europeans, fought to extend His reign of charity over the entire world. To whom shall we give our allegiance and our love?

In the confrontation between Alyosha and Ivan in Dostoyevsky’s *Brothers Karamazov*, we see the contrast between the utopian and the Christian. Ivan asks Alyosha if he would consent to the torture of one innocent child if a perfect world without suffering could be built upon the suffering of that one innocent child. Alyosha’s reply always makes my heart soar: “No, I would not.” The modern Europeans have repudiated Alyosha’s Christian response to the utopian mandate of the liberals: “Yes, we do consent to the slaughter of the unborn, the enfeebled, and the non-illuminated whites if it will lead to the kingdom of God on earth.” But even if such a kingdom could be built, how can it be a kingdom of God on earth? Does our God sanction the ethos of the Grand Inquisitors of Liberalism? Does He sanction the slaughter of the innocent in the name of a utopian multitude of the future?

The utopians, who are legion, whether they are ‘Christian’ utopians or secularized utopians, are joined in one incorporate union of hatred for the God who took flesh and dwelt among us and for the people with hearts of flesh who still feel connected to that God. Even the elect – there is always an elect – whom the utopians claim they are striving to serve, have no real value in the cold, merciless eyes of the utopian metaphysicians. Look at our modern American utopians. Trump, a man with some humanity, a man not completely tainted with utopian ideals, has done much to improve the economic welfare of the blacks whom utopian liberals such as Nancy Pelosi claim they serve. But what has been her reaction to Trump? “Better that every single black starve to death rather than one single non-utopian note be struck on the celestial harp of liberalism.”

An abstract love is not love. The liberals hate the white race, but they also hate the colored races to the extent that the colored races exhibit any humanity, because in the end game of liberalism all that is human must be destroyed so that a perfect inhuman world can be built over the ruins of humanity. The Word made flesh gives the lie to the liberals’ world. Is this the final battle? We know neither the day nor the hour, but we do know that the liberals and all their works come from Satan. That is all we need to know in order to rise and ride against the utopians of Liberalism. +

---

(1) From 1860 to 1874, the liberals in the United States government shifted from a gradual utopian state to a Robespierre-utopian state in their attempt to eliminate the undesirable, non-utopian element in their nation, namely the white people of the South. After 1874, the liberals shifted back to a gradual, incremental attack on the white Europeans in their midst. Should there ever be an anti-utopian uprising again, the liberals stand ready to out-Robespierre Robespierre as they did once before during the Civil War and the “Reconstruction Era.”

(2) The shedding of innocent blood never bothers the utopians —

*From this sleep the queen was first startled by the voice of the sentinel at her door, who cried out to her, to save herself by flight—that this was the last proof of fidelity he could give—that they were upon him, and he was dead. Instantly he was cut down. A band of cruel ruffians and assassins, reeking with his blood, rushed into the chamber of the queen, and pierced with an hundred strokes of bayonets and poniards the bed, from whence this persecuted woman had but just had time to fly almost naked, and through ways unknown to the murderers had escaped to seek refuge at the feet of a king and husband, not secure of his own life for a moment.*

*This king, to say no more of him, and this queen, and their infant children (who once would have been the pride and hope of a great and generous people) were then forced to abandon the sanctuary of the most splendid palace in the world, which they left swimming in blood, polluted by massacre, and strewed with scattered limbs and mutilated carcases. Thence they were conducted into the capital of their kingdom.*

*Two had been selected from the unprovoked, unresisted, promiscuous slaughter, which was made of the gentlemen of birth and family who composed the king’s body guard. These two gentlemen, with all the parade of an execution of justice, were cruelly and publicly dragged to the block, and beheaded in the great court of the palace. Their heads were stuck upon spears, and led the procession; whilst the royal captives who followed in the train were slowly moved along, amidst the horrid yells, and shrilling screams, and frantic dances, and infamous contumelies, and all the unutterable abominations of the juries of hell, in the abused shape of the vilest of women.* — [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#) by Edmund Burke

One cannot help but think of women such as Nancy Pelosi and the legions of feminist harpies that now dominate the American political scene when we read Burke’s description of “the vilest of women.” History does indeed repeat itself. Men and women, and the women even more so than the men, become in the absence of any Christian restraints the most cruel, bloody, and inhuman creatures on the face of the earth. They rival Satan in their demonism. And in that equality, they have “become as gods” – they have become like unto the demigod of evil, the archangel Satan.

# The Fear of the Devil and his Minions

February 15, 2020

Categories: Charity, Democracy, Pride of intellect

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Hell is empty and all the devils are here. —*The Tempest* by Shakespeare

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger: but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. —*Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

---

Herman Melville once wrote that, "No utter surprise can come to him who reaches Shakespeare's core – All that we seek and shun is there – Man's final lore." But apparently the conservative-liberals see no need to look to the Bard of Avon when they need to come to some understanding of their mad-dog liberal cousins. Recently I saw one of those pretty, female newscasters on the Fox News Network ask her audience why mad-dog liberals such as Nancy Pelosi and her cohorts were being so historically uncivil to the President of the United States. Is she serious? Has she no understanding of the nature of evil? When you make the break from God, the one true God, there is no going back. You must push that break to its ultimate conclusion: the worship of Satan and the annihilation of all things human. Shakespeare, in *Macbeth*, shows us the end result of the liberals' break with God, and he shows us the only way we can deal with liberals who have made that break with God. Macbeth loves his wife, who has made Satan her soulmate, outside of God's love, and as a result he becomes a bloody tyrant who is wedded, through his wife, to Satan. Ultimately Lady Macbeth self-destructs, and Macbeth is slain on the field of battle by a man who doesn't believe that evil can be vanquished by civility.

The mad-dog liberals understand that there is a war going on between the liberals, the unmen and unwomen committed to the rule of Satan, and the European remnant who still remain connected to Christ's Europe and the values stemming from that Europe. The conservative-liberals of Fox News and the alternative news sites do not understand that there is a war going on. They refuse to understand that obvious reality because they do not want to give up their faith in democracy as a panacea for all the problems of life. You can't vote evil out of existence; that is what the conservative-liberals refuse to come to terms with. They keep calling for more civility and more democracy when what is necessary, what is imperative, is that we respond to the liberals' attack on all things humane and Christian with the same will and passion in defense of Him and His people as the liberals have shown in defense of their satanic faith. The violent and passionate shall beat it away. Why do we meet the liberals' incivility with the imbecilic fudge of democratic civility? And why do we greet their calls for a war of extermination with Emersonian platitudes about toleration and democracy?

If there are no Shakespearean depths to life, if Ralph Waldo was right that superficiality is truth, then we needn't take the liberals' assault on God through their assault on the white race as a serious matter, because if there is no depth to life, then there is no God who dwells in the depths of the human heart. (1) If the human heart is as superficial as the liberals tell us, then good and evil are mere artificial constructs that can be manipulated according to the whims of Emersonian minds. But if Shakespeare is right, if there is good and evil, if a man can choose between heaven or hell, then it is not prudent to respond to the passionate hatred of the minions of Satan with a tepid faith in superficial platitudes about democracy and civility.

If we leave aside the scholastics' disputes over God's grace and man's free will and simply state that everything good stems from the grace of God and man's free will response to God's grace, we can proceed with the defense of the entity which the theologians tell us was an impossibility, namely, Christian Europe. That entity was a magnificent tapestry woven by the hand of God, using His people as the strands in the tapestry. It has been and remains Satan's task to unweave the tapestry of Christian Europe one strand at a time until there is nothing left of Christian Europe. The conservative-liberals, represented by the previously mentioned newscaster who wanted to know why liberals were so uncivil, are people who want some of the strands of the Christian European tapestry to stay in place, strands such as civility, but they no longer want many of the other Christian strands, such as the patriarchal family, to remain in the tapestry. That cannot be. It is a case of all or nothing. If you don't defend the entire European tapestry, which is held together by a non-fusionist faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, you will eventually witness the destruction of every single strand of the European tapestry.

Bernie Sanders, the freeze-dried hippie, was right when he held up Denmark as a model for all nations, but only if he was talking about the Denmark of the 1950s. The Danes at that time were a white, ethnically homogeneous people who had not yet taken their Christian tapestry completely apart. But now, some 70 years later, they have nothing left. Where there once was a beautiful tapestry, there now is a liberal-Islamic hellhole. The true conservative must be a counter-revolutionary: he must commit to the arduous task of reasserting the truth of Christ crucified, Christ risen, and then he must re-strand the fabric of his nation in accordance with that new-old faith. A vague belief in an ecumenical God, civility, and diversity will not suffice. Quite the contrary – we must believe in the Christ, who is the beginning and the end, the first and the last, not in an ecumenical Mr. Softie, and we must not treat Satan's minions with civility nor should we abandon white pietas in order to become racially diverse. We should be a non-diverse people with a diversity of gifts which we place at the service of the one true God.

From a Christian perspective, it is quite apparent – transparently apparent – that the liberals have totally given themselves over to the devil. Yet the 'conservatives' fail to see that the liberals are possessed by the devil. And in point of fact nothing will get you dismissed from the public debate quicker than an assertion that in dealing with liberals we are dealing with Satan. Ionesco's rhinoceros in the bedroom can only be seen by those who are 'stupid' enough to believe, quite literally, in the devil and the devil's Divine Antagonist. And that really is the key. Intellectual pride was slyly woven into the Christian European tapestry under the guise of 'knowledge of God.' That strand became the pretext for the removal of every single Christian strand of the tapestry. And once those Christian strands were replaced, once the patriarchal family was replaced by the worship of Cybele, once the code of chivalry was replaced by the law of the survival of the cruellest, and once that "charity of honor" was replaced by the merciless cruelty of democratic Jacobinism, then the 'pride of intellect' strand, disguised as the 'knowledge of God' strand, stood out in all its satanic splendor, surrounded by all the other supporting strands of a new satanic tapestry. The new tapestry is now complete. That other tapestry is only a memory, a memory that the liberals must attack whenever anyone dares to bring it up by advocating the restoration of even just one strand of that old European tapestry.

The reason Trump is hated by the liberals more than any Republican president has ever been hated before is because he is serious about removing the ‘legalized abortion’ strand from the liberals’ tapestry. He won’t succeed because it is necessary to first remove the ‘pride of intellect’ strand before any of the Christian strands can be rewoven back into the European tapestry, but the liberals still must oppose, with satanic fury, any and all attempts to regress to any of the customs, manners, and laws stemming from Christian Europe. Trump’s dilemma is the dilemma of all the democratically elected officials who do not accept all of the premises of liberalism. They will be crucified because the liberals will have all or nothing: they will not rest from satanic strife until they have made Satan’s law the only law on the face of the earth. They want war, a war without mercy, a war that will end with the victory of liberalism and the defeat of incarnate Europe. That is what liberalism is all about. We can’t be civil with warmongering liberals nor can we look to the democratic process, a process created by Satan, to save us from the slings and arrows of the liberals who want our blood, just as Dracula wants the blood of his victims. The pestilence that has enveloped Europe is the pestilence of liberalism unchecked and unchallenged by white Christians.

In his *Letters on a Regicide Peace*, Burke observes that as the evil of the Jacobins became more apparent, the Europeans’ reaction to that evil became less intense. Familiarity brought acceptance. That is the great danger of mistaking tolerance of evil with forbearance and charity. It is Christian to forbear and forgive those who trespass against us, but is cowardly and unchristian – it goes against that charity of honor – to be tolerant of merciless inhuman cruelty and blasphemy. The people of Europe do not see liberalism for what it is because their spiritual nerve endings are dead. First they tolerated liberalism, then they accepted it as the truth and the way. We have institutionalized the hatred of the white race, sodomy, abortion, and negro worship all in the name of tolerance and democratic civility. There are many people, perhaps a majority, who do not like one or more of the institutionalized evils of liberalism. My parents, for instance, were 1950s liberals who were uncomfortable with the legalization of homosexual marriage. But they had to accept it because it had become part of the liberals’ democratic imperative. Their rejection of homosexual marriage would have necessitated the rejection of democracy and the rights of man. And where would we be without the rights of man? We would be right back with the *Dream of the Rood* and that would be wrong... Why would it be wrong? When the Moslems went on a rape fest on New Year’s Eve in Cologne, Germany three years ago, a Danish female journalist asked, after the riot, “Where were the men, why didn’t they do something?” Then she went on to say, however, that she didn’t want to go back to the bad old days when women were confined, horrors of horrors, to the kitchen and the hearth fire, but she did want males to act like males when Moslems assaulted women. Life doesn’t work that way. “Life is earnest, life is real,” you can’t breed men who will fight for the values of Christian Europe when you have institutionalized all the values opposed to His reign of charity.

In the end it all comes back to the words of St. Paul: “Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.” It is the knights of charity who can see the true God above the hell of liberalism. If we have no such knights left to us, we are indeed lost. The vision of His love only seems lost because we are afraid to rip that satanic strand, the strand of intellectual pride, from the tapestry of liberalism. Once we conquer that fear, we will have conquered, through the grace of God, Satan and his minions. ‘Tis a consummation most devoutly to be wished. We can tear the liberals’ tapestry asunder. +

---

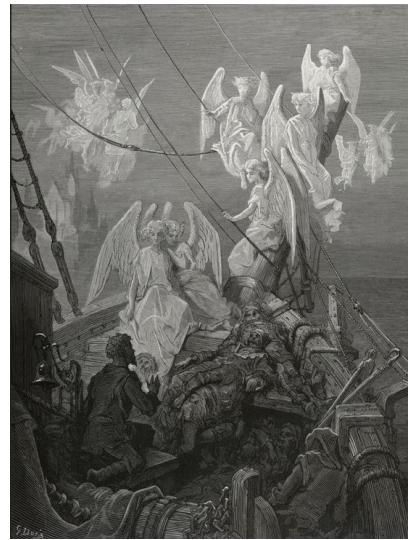
(1) For, in the mysteries of Mercy, the one fore-knowing Spirit  
Outstrippeth reason’s halting choice, and winneth men to Him  
Who shall sound the depths? Who shall reach the heights?

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

# By the Grace of God

February 22, 2020

Categories: Fear of racist label, Good ground of Christian culture, Grazers, Pride of intellect



And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

[- Matthew 13: 3-9](#)

---

When you want to stop a plague from spreading, you must destroy the breeding ground for the plague. The devil, who hates humanity and the God who took flesh and dwelt among us in order to redeem humanity, looked on the spread of Christianity throughout Europe as a plague. He could not, in an instant, destroy such a widespread plague, but he could, over time, gradually destroy the breeding ground for the Christian faith, which was, is, and always shall be the human heart. With an unrelenting, all-consuming hatred, the devil set himself the task of severing the Europeans' heart to heart connection to the Savior by redirecting their vision from the "eyes of the heart," the organ of sight, to the "jewels of the head," the source of intellectual pride and all of the satanic evils that stem from that pride.

Satan's long term plan, to destroy the European people's faith in Christ by destroying their hearts, has succeeded. The European people have, like the seeds in the Gospel parable, been devoured, scorched, and choked out of their heartfelt faith in Christ. They no longer are the "good ground" where faith can flourish because they have not kept their hearts. They have allowed the devil to convince them that it is their great minds divorced from their hearts that can lead them from the darkness of prejudice and superstition to the light. To what light? The devil never defines that light, he simply fills men's minds with a contempt for humanity and a great dream of a heaven on earth. Heaven on earth will come about through the good offices of the enlightened minds of illuminated men and women who shun the plague-ridden ground of the antique Europeans, in order to stand firmly in the devil's kingdom of hell on earth.

We have all heard the phrase, "shun them as if they had the plague." That has been and continues to be the liberals' response to the antique Europeans. And the grazers in church and state have responded to the liberals' condemnation of the plague-ridden Europeans with stout denials of their connection to the antique Europeans: "We are not like them: we are not racist, we are not sexist." But the liberals always err on the side of caution. It is better to assume that all whites, even whites who do not seem to have any outward marks of the plague, are carriers of the fatal illness than to risk infection. "Eradicate them all," is the mantra of the mad-dog liberals. Of course such a credo will ultimately result in the destruction of the liberals themselves, as they turn on each other with the suspicion that "even thee, my fellow liberal, show signs of the plague." No member of the white race will ultimately be pure enough, but before the final purging of the carriers of the plague, the liberals will stave off their own end by convincing themselves they can become pure, they can be saved from the plague by a fierce, unequivocal condemnation of the white, Christ-bearing race.

Tragically, the grazers who are seeking to avoid the plague of the antique Europeans do not realize that they already have the real plague. They are not in the final stages of the plague as the mad-dog liberals are, but they most definitely have the plague. It is the antique Europeans whom the grazers shun that are free of the plague. It has been my experience, sadly, that you cannot bring the white grazers back. You cannot get them to return to Christian Europe. You might be able to get them interested in a certain aspect of the antique Europeans' heritage, but as soon as the grazer realizes that aspect leads to the plague-ridden world of old Europe, he will draw back to what he thinks, because the illuminated liberals have told him so, is the safe, non-plague ridden land of Liberalism.

Let me mention one example, out of the countless ones I could give, of a grazer who would not be 'lured' back to 'plague-ridden' Christian Europe. A friend/acquaintance of mine had managed to maintain her 'Catholic to the Max' stance through the reign of John Paul II, but Francis the blasphemer got to her. She told me that she hated him, even though she knew it was wrong to hate the Pope. I told her that her hatred was well-placed, and I quoted Burke's statement about love and hate: "They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate." She liked the quote and asked me to tell her more about Burke. I did, telling her about his critique of modernity and his defense of old Europe, and I never heard from that 'friend' of over thirty years again. Is that just one isolated incident? No, it is not. Whenever I present old Europe to a white grazer as an entity separate and distinct from modern Europe, a separate and distinct world that we should enter leaving modern Europe behind, the white grazer flees from me as if I have the plague.

What is it that keeps the white grazer in the world that will surely kill him, body and soul, and makes him avoid the "good ground" of Christian Europe as the plague? Certainly the fear that the man born blind overcomes, the fear of being cast out of the liberals' synagogue, is at the root of the white grazer's fear. But how has the devil, through his liberal minions, managed to convince the white grazer that all that is good and noble and pure is contained within the liberals' synagogue, while all that is evil, ignoble, and impure stems from Christian Europe?

The first thing that comes to mind is that the liberals have managed to brand the antique Europeans with the racist and sexist labels: "We can't look to them, we can't go back, because they were racists and sexists." But that doesn't explain the white grazers' fear of old Europe. Why, if you are a Christian, would you allow the liberals to define the good? Why would you let them demonize your people who worshipped Christ rather than the noble savage and supported the Christian patriarchy rather than a Lady Macbeth matriarchy? You would do such a thing if you accepted the clergy's break from God. When the Grand Inquisitors decreed that the "good ground," which consisted of human hearts connected to His sacred heart, was not the "good ground," that their illuminated minds were all that was necessary for faith, the stage was set for Satan to enter into the heart of Christian Europe and turn Christendom into Satandom. It doesn't matter whether you are among the Protestant fundamentalists or the Catholic traditionalists, their attitude toward the "good ground" is the same: "That is merely *culture* and *culture* is of no consequence." Oh really? What the inquisitors dismiss as 'mere culture' is everything; it is our response, the human response, to God's grace. If men are not allowed a Christian culture, a solid "good ground" to stand on, because the theologians tell them that a Christian culture is an impossibility, then men will embrace Satan's culture while affirming an intellectual belief in a nebulous intellectual concept of God. This is why you have pro-abort feminists distributing communion in the Catholic Church and evangelical Christians slavishly worshipping the unrepentant Jew in their churches. When God is pure intellect, you can make him into anything you want – a 'him' or a 'her,' an 'it' or a 'cosmic force.'

When I speak of culture I am not speaking of something that only an elite band of superior intellectuals can understand, such as opera or modernist painting. I am speaking of what Pastor Grundtvig called, "the living well springs" of life, which are and ever shall be human hearts responding to God's grace. The theologians look at the human heart and see evil, so they seek

refuge from that evil in the human mind. But in that flight, they have embraced evil. Satan lies in wait for all men and women who shun the perilous journey through the human heart. There is great evil in the human heart, but there is also redemption. We can't come to Him through any other way: "Behold, the kingdom of God is within you."

The white grazer will continue to graze in the plague-infested ground of Liberaldom because he is convinced that the other ground, Christian Europe, is the plague-ridden ground. So long as what is human is considered stupid and what is inhuman is considered intelligent, the white grazer will remain estranged from his people and His God. Is there no hope then? There is a seemingly impassable gulf between the grazer's world and Christian Europe. A mediator who is both divine and human is necessary to bridge that gulf. We can only bear witness to that 'little' God, the God who enters human hearts; we cannot make the grazer respond to that God.

It is easy for me to answer the question, "Do you hate the liberals?" Yes, I hate them as I hate the devil and all his works. But it is much more difficult to explain my feelings about the white grazers. They stand with the liberals, they do not love God or their people enough to defy the rulers of the liberal synagogue as the man born blind defied them. However, they do have some humanity, and some feeling for the Christ of the Gospels. My own parents were grazers, so how can I hate the grazers? Yet, the grazers are the enablers of Satan. Without their fear of being cast out of the liberals' synagogue into the plague-ridden ground of Christian Europe, the devil could not isolate and destroy the Christian remnant. There is no Christian communion because those in the 'Christian' community of grazers are afraid of the liberals who, like a perverse Satanic sower, are busily seeking out the 'bad seeds,' the men and women with hearts of flesh, so that those 'bad seeds' can be destroyed.

The courage exhibited by the man born blind, the moral courage to defy the Pharisees, came from a man who was touched to the heart by Jesus Christ. If we have no heart that can be touched by anything stemming from the European people who made Christ the center of their culture, we will never rid ourselves of the liberal plague. It will gradually consume us by killing our bodies and defiling our souls. What is to be done when the people who once saw a great light allow the devil to kill the living well-spring of life, the human heart? There is only one thing that can be done. We can keep that well-spring alive by giving Him, our Lord and Savior, and them, the antique Europeans, our love and our loyalty. Christina Rossetti, that wonderful Christian poet, speaks to us from the other side, the "good ground," of the divide between old Europe and new Europe: "Yet what I can I give Him: give my heart." In order to live in Christina Rossetti's Europe, we must have hearts of flesh. His grace still works through those "mysterious human relationships," our love of our kith and kin, which Thomas Hughes writes about. Sisyphus could not push that rock up the hill within the confines of pagan Greece. We can, if we allow the dear Christ to once again enter our hearts. Simple prayers are best: Please God, give me the heart to love Thee in and through thy people. In Christ's name, Amen. +

# Fester Lilies

February 29, 2020

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism, Negro worship

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



And Jesus said, "For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind." Then some of the Pharisees who were with Him heard these words, and said to Him, "Are we blind also?" Jesus said to them, "If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, 'We see.' Therefore your sin remains. —John 9: 39-41

My fantasy house is the one overlooking the sea on the coast of Cornwall in the 1944 movie *The Uninvited*. Of course I would want the ghosts evicted before I claimed possession of the house. My second choice, if the house in Cornwall was unavailable, would be a house overlooking a lake in the Lake District of England or in Maine. I do not currently live near an ocean or a lake, nor is it likely I ever shall, so why bring up a frivolous house-show topic? I bring up such a topic because I want to make a clumsy analogy: During my children's younger years we were lucky enough to live within driving distance (a half-hour) of a wonderful lake in the woods. We didn't limit our visits to the lake to the summer time, we went there throughout the four seasons. Once in the early spring we visited the lake on two consecutive days. On the first day the lake was covered with ice, then on the second day the lake was completely free of ice. I had never seen such a dramatic, rapid deicing before. In previous years the ice on the lake had gradually melted away. No doubt something momentous had been taking place below the surface before that dramatic transformation, but externally it appeared to be an instantaneous process that had to be seen to be believed. Such has been the case with Western culture. Going into the 1960s it seemed that the European people retained all the customs and manners of their Christian forebears, but when those customs and manners were challenged in the mid 1960s, all those customs and manners dating back over a thousand years seemed to crumble, from a cultural standpoint, almost instantaneously. Obviously, something was going on internally for a long time, something within the soul of the European people, that made their transformation from a Christian people into a post-Christian people almost instantaneous. That something, the internal cancer, was of course the thing called liberalism. We have not yet come to grips with that hideous entity, which is why the European people no longer exist as a people; they are the first race of unmen that the world has ever known.

Burke was correct when he said that the first liberal was the devil. The devil hates God and His people with a deep and abiding hatred. Because of that hatred, the devil had to destroy Christian Europe; he had to turn Christendom into Satandom. He has accomplished that seemingly impossible task by patiently undermining all things human and Christian, using Christian rhetoric and maintaining the outward forms of Christianity to kill the substance of Christianity, a heartfelt faith in the Word made flesh.

There are no liberals to be found in the ranks of the colored people. Some, in the European nations, will ape liberalism to obtain a position in Liberaldom, but they always remain true inside to the non-liberal tenets of their race. They are worshipped by the white liberals who hate their own race, but the colored people do not love the white liberals, nor do they have anything in common with them. True, they hate the white race as the liberals hate the white race, but not for the same reason. The coloreds make use of the liberals' hatred of the white race for their own ends, but they do not understand the reason for the liberals' hatred of their own people. How can they? It is completely outside their frame of reference. The colored heathen, who loves his people to the extent that a heathen can love, cannot understand how a man can hate his own people as the liberals hate their people. The operative word is 'man.' The liberals are not part of humanity – they have become unmen.

In order to become a race of unmen you must have once, in your past, been a Christian people. Only when you have reached the pinnacle of human culture, when you have touched the heart of God through the God-Man, Jesus Christ, can you become less than human by repudiating the God-Man, Jesus Christ. There is a terrible judgement hanging over the heads of the European people. In the midst of mortal pain our Lord said, "Father, forgive them for they know not what they do." The liberals know what they are doing; they are trying to eradicate the living God from the hearts of His people, because they hate the living God as Satan hates the living God.<sup>(1)</sup> The stink of liberalism is far greater than the stink of heathenism, because the post Christian liberal is closer to Satan than the heathens of color are.

*The summer's flow'r is to the summer sweet  
Though to itself it only live and die,  
But if that flow'r with base infection meet,  
The basest weed outbraves his dignity:  
For sweetest things turn sourest by their deeds;  
Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds.*

"Sonnet 94" by Shakespeare

Satan is a coward. Byron and Milton invest him with a brave, pagan nobility, but they are wrong. He did not attack the Christian Europeans in a stand-up fight, he attacked by way of infection. Liberalism was and is the "base infection" that killed the Christian Europeans. The satanic liberals did not tell the Christian, "You must kill your kith and kin." No, they, like the devil they serve, are far more subtle. They told the white Christian that it is not Christian to love your kith and kin more than the stranger. Then they worked on that initial break from our human ties of affection and love by extending the premise of, "You must love the stranger as you love your kith and kin" to "You must despise your kith and kin." And on it goes: The code of chivalry, which includes a respect for the 'fair sex,' becomes a capitulation to the Lady Macbeths of feminism, who must kill their infants in the name of womanhood, womanhood as defined by Satan. And in the ultimate perversion of our faith, the liberals have transformed our love of Christ into a love for the sacred noble savages of color. Is it any wonder that the European lilies now give off an odious smell far worse than the heathen weeds of color?

When faith in Jesus Christ becomes a philosophy, when it becomes an intellectual construct, faith in Jesus Christ disappears because the Christian faith loses its distinctive character. Christ's claim to be the one true God, to be God incarnate, is so shocking, so incredibly different from every mind-forged philosophy of God before or after Christ's incarnation, that His claim must be dismissed as absurd unless we threw out all the laws of science and logic in order to see through and not with the eye. The 'Christian' empiricists refused to throw out their rationalism, their view of God as the sum of nature's many parts, and as a consequence, our Lord and Savior became one God in a pantheon of nature gods. The comparative religion classes that sprang up in the 'religious studies' departments in U.S. universities in the 1960s were studies in atheism. When studied, the Christ story dissolves into a dew – a vague cosmic

feeling. Our people who took the Christ story into their hearts dissolved into a dew as well, when the Christ story became a philosophy. Their identity as a people was inextricably linked with Christ as the beginning and the end of history; if He was not God, then they were not a people. The European people went from being the Christ-bearers to festering lilies that smell far worse than weeds.

In the same Chapter of Luke, Chapter 23, in which Christ says, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do," the good thief rebukes his fellow thief for railing against Christ, and he asks Christ to forgive him his sins and remember him when He comes into His kingdom.

*And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise. – Luke 23: 39-43*

If we do not see that Liberaldom is a garden of festering lilies, that it is a colony of sinners who know what they have done, we will become part of Liberaldom and we will be "lost, lost, lost." The thief on the cross should be our exemplar, not the Jewish rulers and Roman soldiers who mocked Christ while He was on the cross. What had He done to warrant their hatred? He dared to claim that He was the Son of the living God, the fulfillment of the prophecies that the Jewish rulers were supposed to believe in, and He dared to claim He was the God above the nature gods in which the Romans believed. And therein lies the key to the internal rebellion that had been building for centuries, which finally became manifest in what seemed like an instantaneous event in the 1960s. The Rousseaus, the Shaws, and the Voltaires could not accept the absurdity of a God above nature, a God who rose from the dead on the third day, nor could they accept the uniqueness of that God — they could not believe that there was one true God who would descend to enter human history. There it is — the liberals are one with Satan, they hate humanity, so they refuse to believe that God took flesh and dwelt among us. And every attempt to make Christianity respectable to the 'intelligent' men, the Shaws, Rousseaus, and the Voltaires, results in the naturalization of Christ; He becomes part of nature, and the European people become unmen who hate Christ and His people (2).

We cannot become natural weeds like the colored heathens. What seems disgusting when the colored indulge their appetites seems demonic in the Europeans because of the contrast between a lily and a festering lily. We can never go back, it is all or nothing. We cannot stand with the intelligentsia who mock and scorn our Lord, because they are the people who know what they are doing: They are one with Satan. Liberaldom is hell; we must reject it in its entirety and join with the good thief.+

---

(1) It's possible that the Generation Xers and those following them no longer know what they are doing when they mock and scorn our Lord. After all, they have never known any culture other than the festering-lily culture of the Europeans and the weed-infested-garden culture of the colored heathens. But the European intelligentsia, our rulers, do know what they are doing. For the love of Him who died on the cross, we cannot stand with them as they "delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces His image in man."

(2) If there was any doubt, which there cannot be, of the Satanic nature of liberalism, you need look no further than the recent debate and vote in the U.S. Senate on two abortion bills. One group of liberals thought that abortion should be legal at every stage of development including birth, while another group thought that abortion should be illegal after four months because that is when the fetus (they never call the child a child) feels pain. Then the first group of Satanists replied that there was no scientific proof that the fetus (translation: child) felt pain. There is the tragedy of the European people. They are unmen deciding the fate of actual human beings created in the image of God. And they always decide in favor of Satan, who hates God and humanity. We cannot live on peaceful terms with such creatures without becoming like unto them.

# The Evil of What Seems

March 7, 2020

Categories: Fairy tale mode of understanding, Negro worship, Rationalism, Religion of Satan, Scientism

Tags: Robert Louis Stevenson, Shakespeare



*Hamlet.* Ay, madam, it is common.

*Queen.* If it be,

Why seems it so particular with thee?

*Hamlet.* Seems, madam! Nay, it is; I know not "seems."

'Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,  
Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
Nor windy suspiration of forced breath,  
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,  
Nor the dejected havior of the visage,  
Together with all forms, moods, shows of grief,  
That can denote me truly. These indeed seem,  
For they are actions that a man might play.  
But I have that within which passeth show,  
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

[-Hamlet, Prince of Denmark](#) by William Shakespeare

For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. —[Romans 8: 24-26](#)

---

The liberals have invoked their holy ghost and declared Vice President Pence unfit to lead the fight against the coronavirus because he is a Christian and therefore unscientific. Christians usually respond to such attacks by attempting to prove to the liberals that ape-to-man evolution is unscientific. "We," the creationists claim, "believe in *true* science." I do not believe in the absurd ape-to-man theory of the liberals, but I also disagree with the Christians who defend God's word by attempting to prove that His word is compatible with science. It's a question of emphasis: If we spend all our time and effort defending God's word against the onslaughts of liberals who call Christians unscientific for believing in God's word, haven't we given too much credence to science by trying to prove, with concrete, material evidence that which cannot be proved with concrete material evidence? The spirit goes where it lists; it cannot be put in a science laboratory and dissected.

St. Thomas highly exaggerated the compatibility of reason and faith, and as a consequence he gave the atheists, the Voltaires and the Rousseaus, the philosophic ammunition to destroy the Christian Europeans' heartfelt faith in Christ as true God and true man. When Aquinas's five proofs of the existence of God were shown to be unreasonable, the Christians who equated reason with faith lost their faith. The scientific trap is similar to the rationalist trap. Even if you prove Darwinism wrong on scientific grounds, you are still left with the hard fact that Christ's resurrection from the dead cannot be proved by science. If we allow ourselves to be drawn into the scientific debate, we will be betrayed in deepest consequence when the liberals play their trump card: "Your faith is unscientific — you cannot prove that the dead shall rise again." And if we cannot prove His resurrection by reference to science, are we then going to renounce our faith in the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost for the liberals' faith in the abstract intellect of man, the sacred negro, and science? Yes, the European people have shifted to the new faith, because science, the liberals' holy ghost, has replaced the comforter that our Lord gave us when He left this earth. If we don't seek the Comforter in our hearts, He cannot aid us in our struggles against the principalities and powers of this world, which seek to do us harm. And the principalities and powers of this world have done the European people harm; aided by the holy ghost of science, they have torn asunder the European people's faith in the Christ who enters human hearts. "If God's existence cannot be verified by science, He cannot be God," is the credo of the ruling liberal elites in the Western world.

The unholy trinity of abstract reason, the sacred negro, and science, is a uniquely European religion. How could it be otherwise since the Europeans' faith, prior to their acceptance of the unholy trinity, was a belief in the holy trinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost? In order to destroy the Holy Trinity it was first necessary to turn Our Father Who Art in heaven into abstract reason. The medieval scholastics and the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train were the great proponents of a theoretical God who could only be known through the illuminated minds of the men of the new Sanhedrin. Then, the great natural philosophers, such as Rousseau and Voltaire, discovered, through the power of their abstract reason, the noble savage who was and always shall be the second person of the liberals' trinity. And finally it was necessary, if the abstracted intellects of the illuminated men and the sacred negro were going to long endure as gods, that the Holy Ghost of Science should appear on the scene to help sustain the first and second parts of the unholy trinity. The devil cannot create anything, but he can ape the good in order to perpetuate evil. His kingdom of hell on earth has replaced Christendom, because he has managed to replace the Holy Trinity with his unholy trinity. "God in three persons, blessed Trinity," has become, "Evil in three entities, the archangel Satan."

There are those who attack the second person of the holy trinity, the noble black savage, but their attacks are not effective because they do not attack reason, abstracted from the heart of God, nor do they attack science. Many times in my life I've had illnesses that ended when I broke out in a fever that purged the illness. Even though I was physically weaker than before, I felt something close to euphoria when the illness had left my body. The European people are, at present, spiritually sick. If they ever manage to purge their souls of the unholy trinity, they will feel what it is like to have been dead and restored to life. They will be weak at first from the tremendous effort they made to throw off their sickness-unto-death, but they will proceed, guarding their new-found faith carefully because they do not want to relapse, to become what they were meant to be, the Christ-bearers, the people who saw a great light and bore witness to the truth of that great light to the whole world.

No man is an island. The unholy trinity was purged from my soul many years ago, but I can't help but grieve over the white grazers (never the liberals – they know what they do), who remain in thralldom to the unholy trinity. What is it about the devil's trinity that keeps the white grazers in line? The first striking contrast between the Christian trinity and the devil's trinity is that the devil's new faith is something that can be seen. Reason, abstracted from the poetic of the human heart, can be used to place wisdom in a silver rod and love in a golden bowl. The sacred negro can also be seen and worshipped right here on earth; he is not an unseen God whose adherents claimed He rose from the dead. And science? The liberals' holy ghost is all around us. We see the wonders of science in everything we do. How could anyone be so irreverent, so stupid, so base as to blaspheme against science?

The second contrast between the Christian faith and the devil's triune faith has to do with deep, human intimacy and impersonal superficiality. Christ offered individual men and women, who called on Him by name, a heart-to-heart intimacy. What was lacking in the impersonal unknown god of the philosophers, the savage gods of ecstasy such as Cybele, and the impersonal god of nature in the science lab was to be found in the antique European's incorporate union with the Man of Sorrows. The modern Europeans broke that union to live in union with the devil, because they did not want intimacy with a God who could not guarantee them happiness in this world only. Can the devil? That is his promise, but can that "juggling fiend" be believed? No, he cannot. And even if he could deliver the material goods, would a man, a man imbued with that "charity of honor," accept the devil's bargain? Of course he wouldn't, but the modern Europeans have embraced the devil in the hope that he can give them, through the unholy trinity, what the triune God of the antique Europeans cannot give them.

If we worship what can be seen and what is superficial and inhuman we will become... we have already become such people, we have become laboratory specimens who have broken all ties to our kith and kin because such ties could lead us out of the science lab to passions and affections that give us intimations of a world beyond the grave presided over by a personal God whose love cannot be seen in the science lab.

In Shakespeare's *Hamlet*, the evil genius Claudius is worried about one man. That one man is, of course, Hamlet. Claudius cannot remain king if men feel deeply about the King who has just been buried. Hamlet, the man who "knows not seems," is determined to delve beyond what "seems" to the heart of existence. Claudius and he must clash. We, the European people, must clash with the liberals in the name of the antique Europeans, our spiritual progenitors who formed genuine human relationships with their kith and kin and the God-Man. "Seems, madam! Nay it is; I know not 'seems.'"

That should be our response to the unholy trinity of the liberals. The devil has destroyed the Europeans' heart-to-heart connection to the Savior by giving us science, which seems to be the real tangible holy ghost, the sacred negro, who seems to be the real natural savior that can be seen, and the real father, abstract reason, who seems to be in the tomes of philosophy and theology. We must not accept what seems. Like Hamlet, we must delve below the surface of life and claim our birthright: "It is I, Hamlet the Dane." Our defiant response to the unholy trinity should be like unto Hamlet's response: "In the name of what we have seen with the eyes of the heart, the Holy Trinity of the Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost, we defy what seems – the unholy trinity of the devil."

I have in my family library a six volume set of storybooks that were my mother's when she was a little girl in the 1920s. And I also have in my family library a sixteen volume set of storybooks that my parents bought for me and my siblings when we were growing up in the 1950s. In my mother's set of books from the 1920s, I estimate that about 85% of the stories and poems are stories celebrating our Christian European heritage, stories that lead us to Him by depicting the little way to God, how we proceed from the particular, the hearth fire and the village, to the larger world in general, instead of the cosmic way, in which the great philosophers and theologians start with a cosmic generality and never quite get around to particular human beings. In the sixteen volume set from the 1950s, I estimate that the kith-and-kin stories make up about 65% of the stories while 'edifying' liberal stories make up the other 35% of the stories.

Now, there are no European storybooks. The liberals still, however, have their stories. They are generally published over the internet as cautionary tales. They warn children about the dangers of racism and sexism to be found in that bad world, which Robert Louis Stevenson called his "dear, dear land of storybooks." Let us be absolutely clear about what is at stake in the battle of the storybooks. Robert Louis Stevenson's world of storybooks is a world where the Holy Trinity is ever present. The liberals' land of cautionary tales is the kingdom of the unholy trinity. Let me take one 'cosmic' story from the 1920s storybook in order to illustrate the liberals' universalism, a universalism that has no room for one particular people, the European people, and one particular God, our Lord and Savior. The story, written by Israel Zangwill, is called "The Melting Pot, A Story of True Americans." Included in the same volume are stories by Hans Christian Anderson, Edmund Spenser, and Walter Scott — liberal universalism, back then, was still sharing the stage with Christian particularism. In "The Melting Pot," a "true story," Zangwill tells us how he left Russia, a land of prejudice ruled by a terrible Tsar, to come to the land of light where there was no prejudice and no "religious bigotry." Zangwill's American dream of a great melting pot has come to fruition throughout the countries of Europe. And what is this brave new world, this melting pot? It is a land that has no room for the white, European Christian. It is a land governed by the unholy Trinity. Is this what diversity comes down to, a kingdom of eternal night? Then I will cling to my God, my people and my prejudices, all through the night.+

# Liberalism Is the Virus

March 14, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Liberalism, Religion of Satan, Resurrection, Scientism

Tags: Shakespeare, St. Paul



Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen. —[Romans 16: 25-27](#)

---

It wasn't that long ago when the liberals were telling us not to panic over the Ebola virus, which was so deadly that even incidental contact with the virus, such as the touch of the hand of someone infected with it, could kill us. Now the liberals tell us that we *should* panic over the coronavirus even though the coronavirus is nowhere near as deadly as the Ebola virus. One account predicts 7 million deaths in the United States as a result of the virus. What is going on? Why are we witnessing such a disproportionate panic over what amounts to a case of the flu, which certainly can kill as flus have done in the past, but not on the level of another Black Plague. I think in this case Rush Limbaugh is right. The liberals are trying to manufacture a crisis – and judging by the stock market they are having some success – that will bring down Trump.[\(1\)](#) What the liberals are doing is the moral equivalent of screaming ‘fire’ in a crowded movie theater when they know there is no fire. People will be trampled to death, people will die as a result of the liberals’ manufactured panic, but the liberals do not care; they have only one mission – to destroy Trump.

The liberals always bitterly oppose every Republican president, but their vitriolic hatred of Trump has gone way beyond bitter opposition. Not even Nixon, the man who successfully prosecuted Alger Hiss, was hated like Trump is hated. What is different about Trump, why has he earned the special hatred of the liberals? Hasn’t he given his earnest endorsement of the second person of the liberals’ trinity, the sacred negro? Yes, he has. Has he ever blasphemed against the liberals’ holy ghost, which is science? Ah, there’s the rub. He has never directly challenged science, but he has expressed a sincere belief in a blended Christianity, blended with Judaism, and by doing so he has indirectly challenged science. And that is no longer acceptable to the liberals at this stage of their descent into the abyss. They once could abide a few Christian glitches in their machine, but no longer. Once you have achieved a complete victory on the battlefield it does not make any sense to make any concessions to your enemies.

What are the concessions that Trump wants? First, he wants white people to be included in the onward march of liberalism. The other Republican presidents simply wanted to exterminate the white race at a slower rate than the Democrats; they did not want to stop the extermination. That annoyed the Democrats, but it did not make them manufacture epidemics in order to defeat them. And secondly, Trump, because he has made a sincere conversion to a halfway-house, Jewish-Christian faith, has sincerely tried to appoint prolife judges. What is obvious when we view the liberals’ hatred of Trump is that the liberals cannot abide even the smallest particle of Christianity. Anyone who is connected to Him, even slightly, must be destroyed.

After communism failed to be the god that George Orwell had hoped it would be, he was forced to consider, quite deeply, the problem of the European people’s moral drift. They seemed to be a people without a soul. “What,” Orwell asked, “could replace the European people’s belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead?” He never found an answer to that question. I can answer it – Noting can replace the European people’s faith in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. If our reason and our science will not let us believe that Christ rose from the dead on the third day, we will self-destruct as a people, while trying desperately to cling to the liberals’ noble savage as our new Messiah. But how can the noble savage save us from sin and death? He can’t, but there is no need for a Messiah who saves us from sin and death if there is no such thing as sin and death. The liberals promised the Christian Europeans freedom from sin and freedom from the fear of death if they forsook Christ for liberalism. The European people accepted the liberals’ covenant, a covenant with Satan. How have they fared under their new covenant?

The European people’s covenant with Satan was quite similar to Macbeth’s covenant with Satan. At first Macbeth seemed to be getting what he wanted from the Witches. He was King and he did not have to fear any man born of woman, so the witches told him. We know the rest:

*MACBETH. Thou losest labour:  
As easy mayst thou the intrenchant air  
With thy keen sword impress, as make me bleed:  
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.*

*MACDUFF. Despair thy charm;  
And let the angel whom thou still hast serv'd  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd.*

*MACBETH. Accursed be that tongue that tells me so,  
For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,  
That palter with us in a double sense;  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope*

—[Macbeth](#) by William Shakespeare

The “juggling fiends” of liberalism told us that freedom from Christ meant freedom from our guilty sins. We could violate all the Ten Commandments and still be free of guilt. Solzhenitsyn references Lady Macbeth in his *Gulag Archipelago*. He says that she ultimately lacked the liberals’ ideology, so she caved in to her conscience. Ideology, Solzhenitsyn maintained, allows the evil doer to continue in his or her evil without any pangs of conscience. But there are sins in the world of the “juggling fiends,” the fiends of liberalism: Thou shalt not be racist, thou shalt not be sexist, thou shalt not be homophobic, thou shalt not be Islamophobic... Are not the new commandments of the liberals just as restrictive as the old Ten Commandments? We have given up our souls to live by the devil’s covenant, which, in the end, only gives his devotees a new set of sins to atone for, and the devil does not forgive those who disobey his commandments.

While imprisoned on the Isle of Patmos, the apostle John was vouchsafed a vision of the man who was worthy to open the book which was sealed with seven seals. It was the “Lion of the tribe of Judah” – it was Jesus Christ. He had defeated the rider on the pale horse in order to give His people a world where “they shall hunger no more, neither shall they thirst any more, nor shall the heat of the sun strike upon them. But the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne shall lead them as a shepherd, and shall guide them into the fountains of waters of life. And God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.” I have wept without ceasing over the death of my loved ones. It is only my hope and faith in the Christ who comes to comfort John on the Isle of Patmos that keeps me from weeping unto despair. What can the liberals give us — what have they given us — that can replace John’s vision of the Lion of Judah who turns our tears of sorrow into tears of joy? They have given us the opiates of liberalism. We are enjoined to immerse ourselves in sex without end, drugs that can anesthetize the pain of existence, and ideologies that can keep His holy cross away from our lives. But if we do not live with Him through His crucifixion we cannot live with Him in His resurrection. That is the Orwellian dilemma.

The European people, the people of the abstract intellect, the devotees of the sacred negro, and the great scientific thinkers, do not believe in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. Death remains unconquered in the liberals’ new covenant with mankind, but it can be obscured, it can disappear from our sight, if we take the opiates of liberalism. The liberal-created hysteria over the coronavirus is just one more attempt, by the liberals, to keep their kingdom of eternal night in order, a kingdom that can only be sustained by a constant supply of opiates. There must not even be a glimmer, which Trump represents, of that other world, the Apostle John’s world, in the midst of Liberaldom.

If a man with only a small particle of the light that once illuminated all of Europe can elicit such hatred from the liberals, what kind of reception would a Christian hero, a Quentin Durward or an Alfred the Great, receive if he suddenly emerged in the midst of Liberaldom? The hatred of the liberals would exceed hatred, it would become an all-consuming satanic fury that would destroy the liberals from within. And that is the great secret of Satan that he has kept from the liberals. He hates his minions just as he hates those who follow Christ. The liberals think they have discovered a great secret in their new covenant with Satan, but their new covenant ignores the evil intentions of Satan and fails to see the “revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began.” Is it possible that the “simple fools,” the antique Europeans, saw something that the modern Europeans do not see when they saw Christ as the mystery who taketh away the sins of the world and destroyeth the rider on the pale horse? It is possible and if we cannot believe what those “simple fools” believed we will become like unto the unmen of Liberaldom who have left God and humanity behind in order to reside in hell with the devil, who hates God and humanity.

When we look at the 20<sup>th</sup> century conservatives in church and state, it is shocking to see how little significance they placed on the antique Europeans’ faith in Christ as the beginning and the end of human history. They gave a brief nod to ‘religion’ as something that is good for the masses, but they seemed to have no idea how their great theories to save mankind from the communist menace and other such liberal panaceas were dependent on a people who believed, not in Socrates, not in Plato, not in Aristotle, but in Jesus Christ, the Man of Sorrows, who was born in a stable in Bethlehem, was crucified by Pontius Pilot, and rose from the dead on the third day. The unbought grace of life that Burke saw as our Christian heritage was given very little credit by the great conservatives who thought that liberal-conservative minds could defeat mad-dog liberal minds without reference to the heart of Europe, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

The so-called coronavirus crisis is just another onslaught of the liberals against what little remains of the light that once illuminated all of Europe. Trump is a man who is in line with the classical liberals of the 1950s, but that is no longer acceptable to the modern liberals because the 1950s liberal was still acting upon certain Christian precepts. Now, there must be nothing left of Christian Europe. The entire white race must be aborted because there might be some remnant of grace left in some white hearts. That cannot be tolerated. That is the reason a flu, which is milder than the SARS flu of 2002-03 and the swine flu of 2009, has become a national crisis. The crisis exists in the minds of the liberals who have given their hearts to Satan. We don’t need Nietzsche’s Übermensch to combat the liberals, we need the Christian hero who knows that, “the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,” was and is Jesus Christ. +

---

(1) Even if the coronavirus should prove to be worse than the Black Plague, haven’t Biden and his liberal cohorts proved the exact opposite of what they are claiming, namely, that it is only they and they alone who can halt the plague. We need a Kipling-type leader to stop the plague, a man who can keep his head when all about him are losing theirs:

*If you can keep your head when all about you  
Are losing theirs and blaming it on you*

Who is the lion in this “crisis” and who are the jackals?

# Our Hope in Ages Past

March 21, 2020

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Liberalism, Pride of intellect, Religion of Satan

Tags: Irwin Cobb, Shakespeare, St. Paul



These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. –[John 16: 33](#)

Let me start with some observations on the coronavirus crisis. First, Trump did try to do something to prevent the spread of the virus. On January 30, he instituted a ban on travel to and from China. What happened immediately afterwards? Biden said Trump's decision was, "hysterical xenophobia ... and fear-mongering," exaggerating the danger of the virus and picking on the nice, benevolent Chinese communists. Yet now Biden tells us that he and his liberal cohorts are the people who should lead us out of the crisis. If we follow the [timeline](#), we can see that as the coronavirus was spreading, the Democrats were so busy trying to impeach Trump that they had no time to spend on the problem of the coronavirus. They are people with one priority, the same priority as the demons who went over the cliff with the swine.

Secondly, I have no desire to get the virus, nor do I want any of my family members to get the virus. I don't think the disease is a particularly funny topic, but humor, of the right kind, can be a catharsis. I highly recommend a music video that my daughter played for me by a country singer named [Buddy Brown](#). He did us all a service by allowing us to laugh at the virus. The video is a kind of exorcism.

Now, back to a more sober aspect of the coronavirus crisis. What the crisis drives home to me is the fact that there is no Christian presence left in the liberal elites of the European nations. When the Italians just leave their elderly who are infected with the virus to die without medical treatment, because it is not cost-effective to treat them, and when politicians such as Biden cannot put partisan politics aside and rally around a leader who is trying to reduce the suffering of his people, you can see past the thin veil of the liberals' feigned humanity to their satanic core. The liberals who love to pontificate about their concern for humanity, and Pope Francis is one of the worst of the liberals, actually hate individual human beings. The 'open borders' Pope does not care about the people who are being and will be destroyed by open borders. He and his liberal cohorts in crime only care about the sign of their election — they are the intelligent ones who have gone beyond the boundaries of fear, prejudice, and superstition. They are not prejudiced against Orientals, blacks, or any other stranger; the only danger in their eyes are white people who believe that the European people should have a homeland that is theirs and theirs alone.

Will this crisis change the liberals' views on open borders and diversity? No, it won't. The liberals have committed themselves to a new religion, a religion without mercy, without love, and without that charity of honor. Such creatures must always support that which is opposed to Christ's reign of charity. And Christ's reign of charity begins in a non-diverse home and extends to a non-diverse village and nation. Have we ever seen a diverse Christian nation? No, we have not. Diversity dilutes love. In order to truly love, we must love with an intensity and passion greater than the generic love of the liberal purveyors of diversity. We must love much, we must love our Lord, and we must love our people in and through our Savior. Is it just a coincidence that the greatest proponent of diversified love, Francis the blasphemer, resides in a nation that has treated the coronavirus victims just as inhumanely as communist China has treated her victims? Quite probably it is a coincidence, but it is not a coincidence that the new religion of diversity, the religion of diversified love, is a religion with no room for the one particular God of love or for the people who once championed that God of love.

What about the white grazers? Will this coronavirus crisis shake their faith in the liberal elite? My anecdotal evidence, which I have gathered while standing in grocery store lines caused by the liberals' cries of "panic, panic, doom, doom!" is that the grazers no longer believe in the liberal elite. That doesn't mean they believe in Walter Scott's Christian Europe, but they no longer believe that the liberals, represented by the liberal news media and the Democratic Party, are the people to turn to in a crisis. They do not believe the Democrats' spin, "It is Trumps' fault." They believe this is a crisis caused by the Democrats and perpetuated by the media. Does that mean the white grazers are poised to reject liberalism? No, it does not. It simply means that the white grazers are in limbo; they are uncertain about the future, or should I say *their* future, but they still believe that intelligent people do not believe in the poetic of old Europe, and that is a tragedy. The European grazers are still not ready to answer Dostoevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ," with an unequivocal, "Yes." Man's first fall from grace was grounded in the pride of intellect – the devil told Adam and Eve they were too intelligent to believe that eating from the tree of the forbidden fruit would kill them. And the Europeans' second fall from grace was grounded in the pride of intellect as well: "We are too intelligent to believe in the fairy tale of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead." Thus the fear of being thought stupid, of being unscientific, doth make practical atheists of the European people. They are too intelligent to leave Liberaldom, despite the fact that Liberaldom is becoming increasingly uncomfortable for them, because they do not want to be numbered among the stupid people who are, according to the liberals, surely damned. But didn't our Lord, before He left this earth, warn us that the liberals, the creatures of 'this world only,' would hate us?

*These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. –[John 15: 17](#)*

Dickens asks, in *Great Expectations*, why human beings always seek the respect of the people they most despise. Why indeed? Isn't the answer to that question rooted in our pride of intellect? And isn't our conquest of that pride our salvation? We can't love much and be forgiven if we are too smart to kneel before His Holy Cross and ask for His forgiveness. The devils in [Matthew 8](#) sought to escape from Christ, so they asked to enter the swine, which promptly went headlong over the cliff. The liberals are devils; they are determined to go over the cliff with the swine. If the European grazers will not divorce themselves from the liberal devils, they too will go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberal swine.

Irwin Cobb, author of the marvelous [Judge Priest](#) stories that describe, with humor and love, the people of the old South in the era just after the Civil War, wrote a very telling remark about the Gospel of Christ in his autobiography. He said the Gospel was a sublime book, but it was impractical to live your life by it. That has been, and continues to be, the attitude of the conservatives in church and state. They give a nod to Christianity the religion, and then they return to the Greek philosophers, to abstract reason, when they want to "solve" the problems of life. But the one great problem of life cannot be solved by the philosophers, the purveyors of abstract reason: We must die. That is what makes the problem of life insoluble. Sophocles' indictment of the philosophers is correct: "Better never to have been born," if there is no Redeemer. To live outside of His love is pure hell. The wisdom of the worldly-minded conservatives is that we should live with their wisdom, the philosophers, in this world, and then at the hour of our death we should call on Him. But that type of philosophy undercuts the Gospel of Christ and Christ's personally anointed spokesman, St. Paul. "Through Christ and in Christ," was St. Paul's passionate response to the problem of life on this earth. St. Paul saw

that Christ stood alone before the terrible horror of death, and He did not waver in His faith, because He and His father were one. It is “practical” to live “through Christ and in Christ,” on this earth. It is the only practical course to follow.

St. Stephen seemed impractical; it was sheer folly to defy the rulers of the synagogue, wasn’t it? Well, he did die, but he was given a vision of the risen Lord: “I see the heavens opened, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God.” The liberals have not eliminated the tragedy of life, they have increased the suffering in this world one thousand-fold because they have “pragmatized” the care of the elderly, the infirm, and the children in the womb: They kill them, because it is practical. And they have left us spiritually bereft of our Comforter, the Holy Ghost, who bids us turn to Him in life and death.

I have a cousin, a mad-dog liberal, who works with people who are at death’s door. Over her lifetime in that profession she has observed that people with faith are much better off in the face of death than those without faith, but that observation has not given her faith in Christ, because she is “too smart” to believe in fairy tales. You cannot become a Christian for practical reasons. You must feel that Christ is in you and you are in Him. The connection between our kith and kin and our God, which the *Dream of the Rood* poet and William Shakespeare in [“Sonnet 31”](#) speak of is something that we have lost as a people. Eric Voegelin, the Platonist, is referenced in conservative anthologies a thousand times more than St. Paul. But there is a wisdom of the heart, the circumcised heart, that tells us to listen to our blood. If we go back, if we join with our European ancestors, in spirit and blood, we will be one with them and with Him.

As I stated at the outset, I do not want to contract the coronavirus. I am not going to stand at the dock as the cruise ships come in and embrace coronavirus-infected Jewish millionaires as they leave the cruise ship. Nor do I want my family members, my friends, or even the liberals to contract the coronavirus. But in the end, whether it is the coronavirus or some other illness that gets us, we are going to die. So the larger question is – are we going to die in Christ’s loving embrace or are we going to die within the satanic embrace of liberalism? The most serious illness of all is the one that kills the soul as well as the body. And that illness is liberalism. The coronavirus is being trumpeted as something more than it is, a flu, because of the satanic nature of the liberals. Everything must be used for the destruction of His reign of charity. When the coronavirus dies out, there will be other plagues that the liberals will use to try and make us turn our souls over to them in exchange for a plague-free existence. Don’t believe them. *They* are the plague we should worry about, and His people, the people of old Europe, knew the antidote for that plague: “In Him and through Him. +

# The Pestilence That Walketh in Darkness

March 28, 2020

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Democracy, Grazers, Religion of Satan

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Shakespeare



Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. – [Psalm 91: 14](#)

Life is inherently tragic because we are mortal men who must die, yet we have intimations of immortality. But life becomes even more tragic when those in authority, the principalities and powers of this world, work to destroy the unbought grace of life. Such is the case in Shakespeare's *King Lear*, when Lear turns his kingdom over to his evil daughters, and such is the case in the modern European nations ruled by the minions of Satan, who make Lady Macbeth, Goneril, and Regan seem like mild lambs in comparison.

This coronavirus crisis was born in the war laboratories of the Chinese communists, and it is being spread by their liberal allies in the Western nations. To oppose the spread of the virus by restricting travel to China or to suggest any kind of restrictions on immigration is to oppose all that is liberal and 'good.' It will not be permitted. What is there left to discover about the liberals? They, like Smerdyakov in the *Brothers Karamazov*, believe there is no God outside of their own intellects. So everything is lawful if they desire it. And what they desire is the destruction of everything good, noble, and honorable. Every remnant of that which was our glory, our hope, and our comfort, Christian Europe, must be destroyed. This latest liberal assault, the coronavirus crisis, has been a very, very successful gambit. It has destroyed small white businesses and further isolated whites from each other, making them even more dependent on the federal and state governments. Right now the crisis appears to have no end in sight, because the Democrats in the U.S. Congress are resisting any financial or medical aid bills unless they include all sorts of liberal agenda items, such as more funding for abortion, in the bills. And in Britain and Canada, the powers that be refuse to place any restrictions on foreign trade and travel, even in the face of an ever-widening circle of disease. The liberals are the demon-possessed swine, and they are determined to take thee and me over the cliff with them. They might get their way in terms of 'this world only' – they might get our bodies – but will we save our souls? "That," as Hamlet says, "is the question."

The liberals have no differences with the Chinese communists because they are of one accord with the Chinese communists. N. G. Chernyshevsky's book, *What Is to Be Done*, was studied by Lenin, who sought to put the principles described in the book into practice when he became head of communist Russia. Chernyshevsky asserted there was no essential difference between a plant, a mineral, an animal, or a man. Any view contrary to his view was part of the "prescientific era" and was self-evidently false. After placing man on the level of a vegetable, Chernyshevsky then goes on to tell us how reason, man's reason, unfettered by the unscientific Europeans, will build a paradise on earth. Can mere vegetable and mineral matter really build a heaven on earth? And if that could be done, how can minerals and vegetables enjoy themselves? But Chernyshevsky's 'scientific' viewpoint has become the liberals' viewpoint, and it remains unchallenged in the Western world. Certain logical consequences of that viewpoint are rejected by more conservative-minded liberals, but the scientific determinism of the modern liberal-communist ruling elites is never challenged.

The liberals have taken Chernyshevsky's vision of man into the 21<sup>st</sup> century. And they have forged that vision, which is really a vision of the unmen, into a fighting faith that has no room for the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. How can there be a place for Christ within the confines of an ideology that says we are created in the image of vegetable matter?

The coronavirus crisis is the liberals' payback for Trump's election. The white grazers, by voting for Trump, revealed they did not want to go quietly into the night, they wanted to be part of Liberaldom. That was not acceptable to the liberals, because white people represent the unscientific era of man's history, the era when men did not realize they were vegetables. You cannot take people with such an unscientific past into the future. Even if the white grazer repudiates his past, which tragically he has, the white grazer will not be allowed into the future. He cannot be trusted to annihilate himself, so the liberals have been forced to step up the annihilation process. Won't many of the liberals be destroyed by the virus as well? Yes, some will. But the liberals do not care about their fellow liberals either; they have no genuine feelings for anything human. They have progressed beyond humanity, to the higher scientific phase of the unmen, that of creatures who have no humanity.

Even if the death tolls of the coronavirus do not reach the levels the liberals hope for, the crisis has been a liberal success. The liberals have destroyed many small, white, independent businesses, and they have shown the white grazers their power. (1) Oppression works, particularly when the people who are being oppressed have no strong faith to sustain them against their oppressors and inspire them to launch a counterattack. That has been and continues to be the subject of these wars. The white grazers have no love or respect for the liberals, but they do fear them. And without a strong faith, they will not be able to overcome their fear of the liberals. They will appease them in all things in the hope that the liberals will withhold their wrath. It won't work – it never has and it never will. Liberalism is from the devil, and the devil cannot be appeased; he hates humanity and the God who loves humanity. "There shall be no mercy," is the devil's credo, and it is the credo of his liberal minions.

When Burke wrote his anti-Jacobin salvo, he managed to persuade many of the European intelligentsia to condemn the Robespierre Jacobins. Only a small remnant, men such as Kingsley and Price, and later, Hilaire Belloc, remained Robespierre Jacobins. But Burke was never able to convince the European intelligentsia that the Jacobin ethos would remain in Europe so long as democracy was the new 'God word' throughout Europe.

Dostoyevsky also warned the West of the dangers of Jacobinism in its Marxist guise. He had less success than Burke — there were very few members of the European intelligentsia who were willing to condemn communism when it reared its satanic head in Russia. It was always the Czar and Christian Russia that were attacked. And right up to the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the first century since the Europeans first committed themselves to Christ that has begun under the auspices of a religion opposed to Christ, the liberals have always considered the communists their brethren while they view all those who oppose the communists as their enemies. And they are right, not morally right, but right in that they know their spiritual counterparts. They all believe as Chernyshevsky believed: "Blessed be the unmen, who are no different from vegetables, minerals, or animals. Blessed be our abstract reason, which shall lead us to paradise, when the unscientific Christians have been purged from the face of the earth."

I hold with Pastor Grundtvig, the great Danish poet, who said that any theologian, be he Protestant or Catholic, who emphasizes man's sinful nature to the exclusion of what is within man that bears the image of God, is from the devil. If you deny that there is anything worthy of redemption in man after the Fall, you denigrate Christ, you make His incarnation and subsequent crucifixion and resurrection from the dead a mockery, because Christ saw men as worthy of redemption. He loved us. I have heard the 'hard guy' theologians speak, and I cannot see any difference between the religious 'hard guys' and Chernyshevsky. Man becomes mere vegetable matter in both ideologies, and abstract reason, illogically divorced from sinful man,

becomes all in all. If we are governed, in church or state, by illuminated minds detached from the human heart, we will always be viewed as vegetable matter, easily disposed of, without any regard for such unscientific concepts as mercy and love.

When I look at the food lines and the deserted streets of our new coronavirus-afflicted world, I can draw only one conclusion: The liberals have made the transition from a war of persuasion to a war of destruction. They are forcing the white grazers to submit to liberal authority through sheer force, the force of germ warfare. This war was inevitable once we left Christ out of the European drama. If charity and mercy, His charity and mercy, are unscientific, then, "Humanity must perforce prey upon itself like monsters from the deep."

Monsters indeed! Yeats asked "What rough beast, its hour come round at last, Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?" It will not be the benign, intellectual paganism that Yeats hoped for. It will be the real beast, it will be Satan. The fruits of liberalism are before us. The liberals' brain child is mankind's ancient foe. The coronavirus germ warfare is just one more onslaught of the devil. We must think in terms of the Psalmist:

*He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.  
I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust.  
Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.  
He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler.  
Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day;  
Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.  
A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.  
Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked.  
Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation;  
There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.  
For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways.  
They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.  
Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.  
Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.*

That psalm has always been a source of strength to the Christian Europeans. But it is so unscientific, and haven't Christians throughout the centuries cited that psalm in vain? Haven't they died from the arrows that flieth by day and the pestilence that walketh in darkness? Yes, they have. Still there is that vision of Christ on the Cross. He loves us and the liberals do not. To whom then do we turn?

"None but thee, Lord, none but thee."<sup>+</sup>

---

(1) It is the 'democratic' governors who are closing down white businesses by imperial fiat. Many of those businesses employ white males who are living paycheck to paycheck. They do not live on welfare checks nor do they make a living by robbing and stealing. They need to work. And most of the work they do does not put them at risk for the coronavirus. But thus far they have not been able to persuade their governors to let them work. Why? Because the coronavirus has allowed the liberals to govern us as Chernyshevsky wanted vegetables and minerals to be governed. "You bid me seek redemption from the devil," Isabella tells the Duke in *Measure for Measure*. And so do we ask redemption from the devil when we seek for mercy and fair-dealing from our liberal overlords.

# St. Paul and Anders

April 4, 2020

Categories: Fairy tale mode of understanding, Pride of intellect, Scientism

Tags: Edmund Burke, St. Paul



And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

— *Acts 19: 18-20*

---

“But surely you would like to change caps with me,” said the king, and he lifted his shining gold crown from his head.

Anders said never a word but when the king came nearer to him with his gold crown in one hand, and the other outstretched toward that beautiful cap, then, with one jump, Anders was out of his chair. Like an arrow he darted out of the hall, through the palace, down the stairs, and across the yard. He ran so fast that the necklace the princess had given him fell from his neck, and all the cakes rolled out of his pockets.

But he had his cap! He had his cap! He had his cap! With both hands he clutched it tight as he ran back home to his mother’s cottage.

— “The Cap that Mother Made” (a Swedish tale)

---

The Swedes recently announced that they were going to follow the Italian model in dealing with the coronavirus. Illegal immigrants of color will receive treatment while old white folks will be placed on the ‘deplorable’ list and left alone to die. This is not really a new policy in the European nations. My father, a veteran of the ‘Big War,’ which the liberals always claim as ‘their’ war because it was against Hitler, was neglected in favor of the colored illegals when he entered the hospital in his last days. And what is wrong with such a policy? Isn’t it practical to let the old white people die off and try to save the people of color, who are the noble savages? Yes, it is practical if you are trying to build a new world, free of white Europeans and their God.

The liberal-created coronavirus crisis has given the white grazers, if they have eyes to see, a rare glimpse behind the liberal curtain. What we see behind the curtain is the liberal expert. In the name of his scientific expertise – in religion, medicine, politics, and in every other aspect of our lives – the liberals bid us trust the expert. But the expert is in reality the Emperor who has no clothes. His expertise is a lie. That is what we can see so clearly during this coronavirus outbreak as the liberals’ experts predict 7 million deaths in the U.S. while simultaneously forbidding the use of the chloroquine drug, which has not been “clinically proven”; it has only been proven “observationally” as a cure for coronavirus. And if it is not “clinically proven” by an expert, it is not a reality. So it is in the liberals’ brave new world. That which is not liberal cannot be. Reality is false, and the liberals’ lies are true. ([1](#))

The first liberal expert, the expert who spawned the legions of liberal experts throughout our history as a people, was Satan. Satan told Adam and Eve they would not die if they ate the forbidden fruit. And he made that claim based on his scientific expertise. He knew the natural world better than God. How could a delicious fruit produce death? But of course Satan, like all liberal experts, had a hidden agenda. He hated God and he sought to strike out at God by attacking his creatures. And that has always been and always will be the case with the liberals. Through the scientific expert they attack God and humanity.

The European people’s inordinate respect for and fear of the experts in religion, medicine, law, and politics stems from the original sin of Adam and Eve, who were deceived by Satan, the religious expert, who offered them equality with God. Christ faced religious experts when He stood before Caiaphas. How could the son of a carpenter, a non-expert, challenge the combined expertise of the Sanhedrin? It was blasphemous. So the experts sentenced the Word made flesh, our Lord and Savior, to death.

As it was with our Savior so it was with His greatest champion, St. Paul. St. Paul stood before the Jewish religious experts and the Athenian philosophical experts and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen, without any respect for the Jews who rejected their own prophets and the philosophers who would not acknowledge a God with a local habitation and a name. What is so striking about St. Paul’s Christian faith is that he does not see Christ as a stepping stone to a higher faith. For him the grace of God is everything: “Through Christ and in Christ.” Is not that in keeping with the words of our Lord in the Revelation of St. John? “I am the beginning and the end.” Teilhard de Chardin was not an aberration, he merely made explicit what was implicit in the theological approach to God, which enjoins us to believe that the religious expert has something to tell us that is greater than the provincial God championed by St. Paul. In theological Christianity, we are not enjoined to take Christ into our heart; instead we are enjoined to partake of the wisdom of the religious experts. But the religious experts are juggling fiends who will steal our souls, “with honest trifles, to betray’s in deepest consequence.” They will leave us, if we believe in their expertise, bereft of a heart that loves, which is our only way to the Savior whose divine love surpasseth the understanding of the experts.

The coronavirus revolution is another outbreak of Robespierre Jacobinism, just as the communist uprising in Russia was an outbreak of Robespierre Jacobinism. Such outbreaks occur when the liberals feel that the construction of their utopian society, which necessitates the destruction of all things Christian, is proceeding too slowly. And the revolutionary purges are always arranged by metaphysical experts devoid of all humanity:

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil.*

—Edmund Burke

"The frailty and passion of a man." Our weakness is our humanity, but it is also, through Him and in Him, our strength. If we admit our frailty, our dependence on the Suffering Servant, He will grant us the grace to set our passionate love against the passionate hatred of the devil and his liberal experts. And in that battle the passionate European shall bear it away.

True conservatism, Burkean conservatism, does not consist of the support of a system in religion or politics. It consists of St. Paul's vision of Christ as the Beginning and the End. If we do not see Christ as a stepping stone to a larger cosmic vision of God, if He remains the Word made flesh, who was born in a stable in Bethlehem, crucified under Pontius Pilate, and rose from the dead on the third day, He will be the God of the little things, the God of our hearth fires and our hearts. We will support His channels of grace, because His grace is our salvation. But when the cosmic Christ becomes our Lord, when we worship a new Athenian vision of God that satisfies the egotism of the theologians who want to be the first to give us a new improved theology of God, then we lose God and we lose the civilization of the men and women who asked the dear Christ to enter into their hearts.

The liberals have managed to get the European people to kneel to their false gods because the theologically minded churchmen have not taken Christ into their hearts. Without a heartfelt faith of their own they cannot present the real Christ to their people. They are like unto the vagabond Jewish exorcists in *Acts*, who thought they could use Christ's name to fight the demons without having first taken Christ into their hearts:

*Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.*

– Acts 19: 13-16

If we attack the demon-possessed liberals with the pseudo-Christianity of the churchmen and/or the pseudo-conservatism of the system-dependent conservatives, we will have to flee our house naked and wounded.

It became glaringly apparent in *The Merchant of Venice* that Shylock had plotted Antonio's death beforehand when he refused thrice the money of the original bond. Shylock wanted his pound of flesh and nothing else. So it is with the liberals. When a French doctor has found a cure for coronavirus which the liberals refuse to even consider, some states have even banned the chloroquine drug as a treatment because Trump recommends it and because the doctor who prescribes it does not believe in the liberals' doctrine of climate change, then we can see that the liberals have a satanic plan that is all and all to them. There must be a crisis that permits liberal experts to run every aspect of our lives. There must be such a crisis because white, Christian Europeans must be eradicated from the face of the earth. That is what liberalism is all about, Charlie Brown, and you too, Charlie Brown, will have to be exterminated.

Theologians know nothing about God, because the living God comes to us through the wellspring of the human heart, not through the abstract intellect. Doctors have a certain technical skill, but they know nothing about spiritual or physical health. If they have a connection to the other world, Christian Europe, they can be of some use, but outside of that world they serve Satan. And what of the lawyers? They become like unto the archenemies of Christ in the Gospels when they use the letter of the law to destroy the spirit of the law. Should such 'experts' be our guides? To what end? Are they not guiding us off a cliff?

If we go back to the original expert in the Garden of Eden we can see what unifies all the modern experts of Liberaldom: They hate the living God because He offends their pride. They must be as gods, so they attack the living God through His people. The Europeans once were His people, so the liberals have centered their attack on the Europeans. But the noble savages of color can only remain the liberals' gods so long as they stay outside of the orbit of Christian Europe; it is always that entity which is under attack. The theologians attack Christian Europe by pointing out the insufficiencies, from their utopian heights, of the antique Europeans. And the secular liberals attack the antique Europeans precisely because they were Christian. Thus the pride of intellect unites the religious expert and the secular expert in one great hatred, the hatred of Christ and the people who once called on Him by name.

The Swedes have not deviated from what has become the mainstream morality of the European governments. They are simply being more explicit – "The young must die in their mothers' wombs and the old whites must die quickly to make way for the non-whites." That is now the anti-white, anti-Christian ethos that rules Europe. Let me posit a different ethos, an old ethos, as an alternative. In an old Swedish fairy tale a young boy named Anders is given a hat by his mother: "A prettier cap was never seen, for his mother herself had knit it; and who could ever make anything half so nice as mother!" Throughout the rest of the story Anders is offered money, kisses from a beautiful princess, and bigger and finer hats, if only he will relinquish the hat his mother made for him. Anders refuses to give up the hat, even when his own brother calls him a fool for his many refusals. And in the end –

*Anders' face grew red, very red. "I was not foolish," he answered sturdily, "I could never have bought a finer cap, not for all the king's crown. I could never have bought anything in all this world one half so fine as the cap my mother made me!"*

*Then his mother took him up on her lap, and kissed him.*

We are to Christian Europe and to our Lord as Anders was to his hat and to his mother. There is no finer place for us than Christian Europe, because that is where our kith and kin and our Lord dwell. The land of the experts, the land of Liberaldom, is not, and never shall be, our home. +

---

(1) Laura Ingraham tried to report on the benefits of the chloroquine drug, but she was locked out of her Twitter account because of her deviation from the liberals' party line, which is: "There is no cure, there is no hope, you must cease all work, all of life, and stay in your homes until the experts tell you it is safe to come out." That date, the date when it will be safe to come out, will always be in the future; it will never come about in reality, just like the liberals' utopia.

# Emmaus

April 11, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Grazers, Resurrection

Tags: Charles Dickens, Edmund Burke



Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. —[Luke 24: 25-36](#)

---

A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with a lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. —[The Mystery of Edwin Drood](#)

I know very little about Mike Lindell, the “[My Pillow Man](#)” from Minnesota, but he did something that is never done in the public arena. He spoke the truth about the media: “This is evil.” If the European people had said that about all of the French Jacobins, not just the Robespierre Jacobins, and then acted upon that insight, there would not have been a communist revolution in Russia in 1917, and there would not have been a coronavirus revolution in 2020.

Our decline as a people has come about because we have lost the ability to distinguish between good and evil. It is an extraordinary thing, now that the liberals have shown themselves to be completely evil, without any trace of humanity: the white grazers seem unable to see the liberals’ for what they are. They are satanic, devoid of all the attributes the European people once considered the mark of a human being. It was once considered noble and honorable to love your own people, to practice charity and mercy, and to honor, revere, and love the Savior, Jesus Christ. Now it is considered just and good to hate your own people, to be devoid of charity and mercy, and to denigrate our Holy Savior. And that is really what is behind the weakness of the West in the face of the Chinese communists’ assault on the European nations. Our people are dying of the virus, and the liberals, who are one with the Chinese communists in their hatred of all things European, are maniacally resisting all the efforts of anyone — that French doctor Dr. Didier Raoult is an example — trying to help victims of the virus and give the Europeans hope that the virus does not have to become another Black Plague. But of course the liberals want another Black Plague, because the *raison d'être* of the post-Christian European, the liberal, is the hatred of the people who once were the Christ-bearing race. Such people must be eliminated because they might revert and take up the discarded burden, the cross of Christ, of their ancestors.

Thomas Paine spoke for all liberals, past and present, when he said:

*Of all the systems of religion that ever were invented, there is none more derogatory to the Almighty, more unedifying to man, more repugnant to reason, and more contradictory to itself, than this thing called Christianity. Too absurd for belief, too impossible to convince, and too inconsistent for practice, it renders the heart torpid, or produces only atheists and fanatics.*

If we say an atheist is someone who does not believe in a God, then no man is an atheist. Paine believed in a false God, he believed in his own abstract intellect, the noble savages, and science. And so did his idol Robespierre, and so do all our modern liberals believe in the triune God of Thomas Paine. But if we say that all those who do not believe in the living God, Jesus Christ, are atheists, then we see before us an army of militant atheists totally committed to whatever is diametrically opposed to what Paine called the most “repugnant” of religions. And what does Paine suggest as an alternative to our ancient faith in the God-Man? He suggests the second oldest faith, a faith in our own minds:

*I do not believe in the creed professed by the Jewish church, by the Roman Church, by the Greek church, by the Turkish church, by the Protestant church, nor by any church that I know of. My own mind is my church.*

That is the credo of all liberals, the deification of man’s original sin, which the liberals do not believe in, the pride of intellect. So long as liberalism is the ruling doctrine of the European people, we will continue to remain in fetters, subject to whatever evil the liberals decide to thrust upon us. In Paine’s day the purge took place via the guillotine, and right now in 2020, it is the coronavirus purge. We must see the connection. Just as Paine called the slaughtered aristocrats, “so few sacrifices, for the greater good,” so do our modern liberals, who vehemently oppose the use of any drug that might reduce the death toll of the coronavirus, feel that a “few sacrifices” are necessary in order to destroy Trump and move all mankind, minus the white race, closer to utopia.

A doctor, who was interviewed by Laura Ingraham about successfully treating coronavirus patients with the chloroquine drug, asked why there was such hostility to a drug that was helping people. Why indeed? The answer is rooted in the debate between Paine and Burke. In Paine’s *Rights of Man* he castigated Burke for impeding the building of utopia by his concern for just a “few sacrifices,” who were undeserving of life in the brave new world. So it is today. A few sacrifices are necessary so that the liberal utopia, which is always in the future and never quite materializes in the present, can come to fruition. Paine lost his debate with Burke. Melville’s *Billy Budd* is an attack on Paine and his *Rights of Man*, and such poets as Wordsworth and Coleridge, after their initial enthusiasm for the French Revolution, turned on the revolution and sided with Burke. Such men turned on the French Revolution and its defenders because they came to see what Burke saw — the French Revolution was a satanic assault on Christian Europe. There can be no middle ground between Satan and Christ. We either worship our own

minds, which can be easily manipulated by Satan's superior mind, or we can give our hearts to Christ and venture forth, armed with the grace of God, in opposition to Satan and his minions.

The devil must, like our Lord, work through humanity. He can inflame men with his own satanic will, he can create a satanic tempest, but he cannot control the results. The grace of God working in human hearts is an ever present challenge to Satan. The satanically inspired liberal is always working for the destruction of all things Christian. But throughout our history, the liberals have chosen to subvert by subtle lies, by perversions of the truth, rather than by outright attacks on Christ and His people. The Robespierre French Revolution, the American Civil War, the Russian Revolution are exceptions to the general modus operandi of the liberals. Those revolutions were naked-fist revolutions; there was nothing subtle about them. And now this present revolution, this communist-inspired revolution (which is the same as liberal-inspired, they are all part of the same ideological package) is a naked-fist attack on the white race. The liberals have destroyed the economies of the white nations, they have taken many white lives, but will this new naked-fist revolution advance liberalism? I'd like to say there will be a Burkean reaction, but I cannot say with any certainty that the white grazers, when they see that the liberals are working with might and main to increase the death tolls, to create economic chaos and to increase human suffering, will turn from liberalism in order to embrace His Europe.

The President of Brazil has issued the chloroquine drug to his people in defiance of the liberals (he uses the term 'cultural Marxists'). And the good doctors, those who still believe that a doctor should attempt to heal the sick, are issuing the drug to their patients. What are the liberals doing? They are attacking anyone who suggests the drug can cure the disease and they are attacking anyone who suggests that the disease has anything to do with Communist China. And what are the liberals' spiritual brethren, the Chinese communists, doing with their coronavirus victims? [They are burning them alive](#). Is not the spiritual metaphor obvious? The liberals' crusade against anything that reduces human suffering during this crisis and their alliance with the satanic Chinese communists reveals their spiritual essence. They hate Christ, who is our hope in this world and the next, and they have formed an alliance with Satan in order to kill that hope within us.

It is Easter, Christ has risen! Indeed He has! Our faith in His resurrection from the dead and His assurance that He will be with us alway, even unto the ending of the world, will sustain us during this current onslaught of the devil and his liberal minions. It is not a little thing, it is everything, that Christ has given us His word that He, and not the devil, shall prevail. The old hymn enjoins us to be faithful in spite of dungeon, fire, and sword. Let us add, "in spite of the liberals' coronavirus" to that list. Our Lord "suffered these things" so that we might have eternal life. Nothing can alter that: "Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day." +

# Clinically Unproven

April 18, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Scientism

Tags: Andrew Lytle, Stark Young, Thomas Hughes



Love now consists in word and not in deed,  
Faith depends on reason not on the Scriptures, as it used to be;  
Religion has ascended from the heart to the head  
It now dwells in the brains, and the heart, alas! is empty.

-Jeremias de Dekker

---

There can be no middle ground between Satan and Christ. We either worship our own minds, which can be easily manipulated by Satan's superior mind, or we can give our hearts to Christ and venture forth, armed with the grace of God, in opposition to Satan and his minions.

-CWNY

David Horowitz, a former mad-dog liberal who converted to classical liberalism (conservatism) [recently stated](#) that he had never seen anything in American politics that even came close to the hatred the liberals have for Trump. Their hatred is so great that they cannot join with Trump to combat the coronavirus. Horowitz wanted to know the reason for the liberals' hatred beyond hatred. We already have told the classical liberals why the mad-dog liberals hate Donald Trump, but let's go over it again.

Our modern liberals go back all the way to their father, who is Satan. Why does Satan hate God? He hates God because he wants to be God: "I shall not serve." And Satan has instilled his desire to be as God into his followers, the liberals. After World War I there was still a remnant of Christian Europeans in the European nations, but the European governments were run by liberals, who were acting upon Thomas Paine's faith, "My own mind is my church." By the 21<sup>st</sup> century the liberals had a stranglehold on the European people, and they were getting closer, in their minds, to heaven on earth. Once the last non-illuminated whites, the Christians, were eliminated, paradise would be achieved. The 2016 election was only permitted because it was supposed to be a walk-over. The liberals told the American people that Trump was evil and Hillary was good. How could anyone who had been properly taught fail to vote the right way? But the impossible happened. The white grazers did not do as they were told, they voted for a white male who did not want to exterminate the white race. A heretic had become President! And he has been treated as a heretic who must be burnt, along with his followers, at the stake. Now, the liberals didn't have to panic. They own the courts, they control Congress, and they control the fourth estate. Trump cannot really damage them. But they can't control their hatred. That a public official, the highest public official in the country, has had the courage to include white people in his American dream is more than the liberals can stomach. And when you add the fact that Trump has tried to stop legalized abortion and has invoked the Christian God in his war against the coronavirus, you can see why Satan's minions hate Trump.

I am not an American exceptionalist, I do not think America is a sacred city built on a hill. Nor am I a modern dispensational Christian. But I love Donald Trump for the moral courage he has shown in this crisis and in his ongoing war with the liberals and their Chinese communist allies.[\(1\)](#) This is not a time for an Olympian indifference to the onslaught against Trump, as if we are above the fray. If you are white and/or Christian, Trump is fighting for you and for me. I hate the conservative Olympians who attack Trump just as much as I hate the mad-dog liberals.

Even if the coronavirus plague dies out and Trump is reelected, the evil entity of liberalism will remain at the heart of our culture. There are too many liberals in the European nations, and there are too many white grazers devoid of a heartfelt faith in the liberals' divine antagonist. We do not need more theologians and philosophers in order to restore the faith that we have lost, the faith that moves mountains. We need heroes, we need men such as Nathan Bedford Forrest:

*The hero saves not only by his prowess; he saves by the divinity within himself. Indeed his prowess depends upon this divinity. The hero's most perfect image is, of course, Christ the man-god. There is no hero unless the odds are overwhelming against the thing he stands for, or the rescue which takes him upon his quest. They are the powers of darkness; they show in the brutal weight of matter, the seemingly irresistible forces of mass. Since fear and desire make all of us tremble, the first quest of the hero is triumph over himself; and afterwards he follows the quest, a selfless, and devoted individual on the way of becoming an archetype. Indeed because he is devoted, he is fearless. We do not know all the circumstance of Forrest's triumph over himself. We know it only in his actions and because of one statement; he bought a one-way ticket to the war; that is, he had committed himself without reservation of goods or person. This is of the very quality of heroism, because it is a triumph over death. It is also the secret of his triumph over great odds. Never thinking of himself, he is free to think of the enemy; and so he finds the weakness which will topple all the weight and mass. There was never a greater half-truth than the statement that God is on the side of the biggest battalions. Moscow and Napoleon's retreat stand for refutation of this.*

- Andrew Lytle in Bedford Forrest and His Critter Company

There is a pathetic macho posturing that goes on among many of the conservative pundits. They vie with each other to prove that they, armed with statistics, can project the gloomiest outcome for whites.[\(2\)](#) They seem to take a particular delight in describing the hopeless state of the European people. But the European people's state is only hopeless if you believe that history is determined by the "brutal weight of matter, the seemingly irresistible forces of mass." I hear the statistics-men sneering, "Forrest lost!" Did he? When the war was over and the Jacobins descended upon the South like wolves licking their chops at the prospect of easy meals, the Southern people turned to Forrest. They asked him to rise and ride again, in their blackest hour. And he responded to their pleas. The Wizard of the Saddle became the head of an invisible army of confederate veterans who fought back against the forces of darkness, the "seemingly irresistible forces of mass." He did not win a victory for all time, that is not possible on this earth, but he was victorious in that he saved, through his heroism, a people and a

civilization that would have perished if he had taken an Olympian view of existence and bid his people take refuge in Plato and Aristotle. The God of Battles is Christ the Lord, because He bids us practice charity. Is it charitable to abandon your people in the name of an elevated philosophy or theology that has no room for individual human beings, the same human beings whom Christ died to save? We must stand against “the seemingly irresistible forces of mass,” because that “charity of honor” is what distinguishes a Christian European from the devil’s own, the liberals. We cannot remain philosophically distant from our people when the enemy has invaded our hearth fires.

*She had not the heart to finish, but laid down the pen and pushed aside the ink-stand, the little bronze drum, which casual chance had saved from the wreck, with only a few of the gilt cords bent. She sat gazing at her fingers, as they lay on one of the other parts of the book, and beyond her fingers she saw the writing there. “November 29. We heard today of new orders in the town and that the Yankees had men on the roads coming this way. My husband was at Bayou Sara, where our plantation is falling to ruin, and we did not think it prudent to wait till he should return. We hastened to prepare for the coming soldiers. This was not easy, perched in this open field as Don’s Retreat is, and the negro quarters between us and the forest. We did what we could and waited, listening to the sound of negro voices mingled with the jangling of spurs and the clatter of sabres. I pictured to myself our former gardener Aleck, inflated with pride at his new dignity of corporal, coming in with insolence and insults demanding watches and money. This perpetually recurring dread and horror makes night a terror and life a torment. Oh, if we women and helpless old men and children were only where we might feel safe from negro insults, negro violence, and from the constant fear of these things! God help us—I look at the graves of our beloved ones and think with thankfulness of the rest which is theirs.”—New Year’s Eve, 1864—*

*She closed the book, already praying, her eyes fixed on the last embers of the fire, her whole body quiet with some strong force that made life dear to her—and believed that God saw in every heart its own sorrows.*

-Stark Young, [So Red the Rose](#)

This coronavirus war is an extension of the American Civil War, which was an extension of Robespierre’s French Revolution. The French Jacobins, the Northern Jacobins, and our modern liberals were and are at war with the same enemy – white, European Christians. The coronavirus war has been successful because liberalism has gone deep into the vitals of the European people. The European people will not fight back against the liberals because they do not see that the liberals are totally evil with only one reason to live – to attack God by attacking His people. The theologically-minded clergy and the philosophically-oriented conservatives hope to avoid the wrath of the liberals by maintaining a Buddhist distance from their people. But we, as Christians, cannot remain aloof. The divinity within, the grace of God, commands us to fight for our people in spite of the democratic aggregate of liberals arrayed against us.

If we lose elections, if there are no candidates who will stand up for white people, we need not despair. Why should we place our hopes in the democratic process which has never been good for white people? The liberals only use the democratic process when it serves their ends. Have they ever, for one moment, viewed Trump as their President who is fighting a virus that attacks all Americans? Of course they haven’t. At every turn, they oppose Trump. They have fought tooth and nail, and continue to fight, to limit the use of the hydroxychloroquine. They lie about the number of the dead, they lie about the possibility of ever opening up the country again, they continue to slavishly worship the Chinese communists and treat them as their bosom allies, and they continue to command European Americans to despair and die. They are the enemy, implacable, unyielding, and without mercy.

Trump’s electoral victory was the realization of the late Samuel Francis’s populist dream – to elect a white man who would represent white people as well as the colored races. That was also Tyndall’s desire in Britain. But what both populist leaders failed to come to terms with was the evil of liberalism, an evil so deeply rooted in the fabric of Western civilization that only a people whose hearts burned within them with the spirit of Christ crucified, Christ risen could effectively counter the evil of liberalism:

*The result of Hardy’s management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the “Apology” had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, “You needn’t have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson.”*

“I don’t understand,” said Tom.

“Well, there’s something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn’t there?”

“Yes, a great deal,” Tom answered, after a pause; “but it isn’t the same thing.”

“Why not the same thing?”

“Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning.”

“Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not.”

“How do you mean?” said Tom.

“Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can’t name it—know no more of it then he knew about his demon, of course, we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens.”

-Thomas Hughes, [Tom Brown at Oxford](#)

Trump’s victory was not a victory, because liberalism remains the ruling ethos of the European people. If we go back to Horowitz’s observation about the liberals’ maniacal opposition to every Trump initiative to ease the suffering of the American people during this coronavirus crisis, we can see the futility of placing our hopes in a material solution to a spiritual problem. The European people must be the Christ-bearing people. If they can’t be the Christ-bearing people because He does not dwell in their hearts, they will never be a people again. The counter-revolution will come when the theological and philosophical filth is cleared away – we cannot find God in the Olympian heights of our mind-forged systems, we must find Him in our hearts. That is the way of the cross, the way of our people when they were a people.

The French doctor Didier Raoult recently made an incredible, heartfelt [critique of the “clinical” theory of medicine](#). He said that you cannot ignore the observations that a medical drug is curing people of an illness by claiming that the cure is not a reality until it is clinically proven to be a reality in a science laboratory. Hasn’t that clinical theory of the Catholic and Protestant scholastics been the cause of the spiritual sickness of the European people? The scholastics denied the ‘observational’ fact of Christian Europe that was built by people who followed St. Paul’s injunction to search the Scriptures with their heart, and bid us look instead to the men who had a purer intellectual vision of God, a God who was always in the abstracted reason of their minds, a God who had never made His presence known in one particular civilization. Where does such a clinical philosophy of God leave us? It leaves us naked to our enemies, the liberals, just as the clinical theory of medicine leaves us naked and defenseless against the coronavirus.

It looks like the death tolls of the liberal-communist virus will not, despite the liberals’ and the Chinese communists’ efforts, exceed the death tolls of the flu of 1917 or 1957, but the damage has been done. Many whites have lost their jobs — one of my sons is included in that hated white aggregate – and many people, white and colored, have lost their lives; it has become increasingly difficult for those of us who cannot “skin a buck and run a trout line,” to get food, and a general feeling of hopelessness and despair has settled into the hearts of the European grazers.<sup>(3)</sup> And men such as Didier Raoult and Donald Trump, who are trying to alleviate human suffering, are excoriated by the mad-dog liberals and the managerial conservatives who want to bring the whole world into the camp of the demon-possessed swine who are going over the cliff. We shall not go over the cliff with the swine if we face this crisis, and every crisis that the liberals send our way, with the faith of our Christian ancestors, the men and women who built a clinically unproven civilization grounded in the love of a clinically unproven Savior who was, is, and always shall be our only hope in this world and the next – our Jesus. +

(1) Trump’s courage in severing our ties with the World Health Organization, which is in reality the Communist Chinese Department of War, makes him the greatest President the United States has ever had.

(2) “It’s romance,” said the professor.

"Very well. Then the point is: not what the colonel is, being Southern, but what he would be if he were not Southern."

The professor regarded this remark as mere bombast. He had not been invited to Montrose, but had felt free to call because he was collecting statistics. Collecting statistics was already a new kind of entre. Nobody in the country had heard of statistics before, but the negroes were very much impressed. They welcomed investigation so heartily that what had at first seemed to the professor a gold mine of data began to irk him as excessively African detail, as communicative as it was imagined.

*-So Red the Rose*

(3) After over one hundred years of damning everyone who advocates states' rights, the liberals have now become states' righters. The democratic governors have assumed dictatorial powers. They are openly defiant, declaring that they will not open up their states again no matter what the President says. The maniacally insane governor of Michigan has banned garden seeds, motorboats, and family gatherings. The liberals will not cease from mental strife until they have built hell on earth.

# Demon-crats

April 25, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Grazers

Tags: Robert Lewis Dabney



Now that society is satanic, Satan is a conservative. – CWNY (2012)

And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

[Luke 17: 11-19](#)

In the 1959 Disney movie *Sleeping Beauty*, Prince Phillip must face “all the forces of hell” when he faces Maleficent, who throws off her human façade in order to assume her true identity — a reptilian, satanic fiend. That is what is so striking about the liberals in this new phase of their onslaught against God — all attacks on God must proceed through His people — they no longer feel the need to hide their satanic essence behind a human mask. They have ‘come out’ in all their satanic fury. They tell us quite openly that they would rather see millions of people die of the virus than see Trump reelected. They openly sanction gay pride marches, women’s marches, and Islamic worship services while suppressing white businesses and all gatherings of whites — “where two or three are gathered together.” But will the liberals’ unmasking do them any harm? The old adage is apropos — ‘If a tree falls in a forest and there is no one there, does it make a sound?’ If there are no Christian Europeans left in the European nations, will anyone notice that the liberals are satanic?

Unfortunately the liberals’ unmasking will not awaken the white grazers to the satanic nature of the liberals. Many of them are angry at the Democrats, but they are angry without a sustaining faith. Their anger will dissipate when the plague dissipates. What is needful will still be missing — a people who see that the liberals, and the democratic governments they have created, are satanic. It is not possible to live according to the liberals’ laws and God’s laws. There is a huge difference between an imperfect government grounded in a faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, such as the French monarchy prior to the French Revolution, and a Jacobin-democratic government grounded in atheism, regicide, and a faith in the man-god, the noble savage. The Christian seeks to mitigate the imperfections of the former government from within, he does not seek to destroy the moral essence of that government through revolution. But the latter type of government, a government grounded in atheism, regicide, and a faith in the man-gods of nature, must be destroyed, it cannot be reformed. That is why Burke remained passionately opposed to the revolutionary French Jacobins even after Robespierre’s death. The evil Jacobin entity, disguised as democracy, still remained at the heart of the French government. When liberals hold the reins of power, the conservative has to become a counter-revolutionary, otherwise his conservatism is merely liberalism in disguise. Robert Lewis Dabney made the same observation as Burke in his criticism of the conservatives of the North. Having destroyed the Christian South they proceeded on their merry way to utopia by staying just slightly behind the liberals who were busy destroying all the channels of God’s grace.

*It may be inferred again that the present movement for women’s rights will certainly prevail from the history of its only opponent: Northern conservatism. This is a party which never conserves anything. Its history has been that it demurs to each aggression of the progressive party, and aims to save its credit by a respectable amount of growling, but always acquiesces at last in the innovation. What was the resisted novelty of yesterday is today one of the accepted principles of conservatism; it is now conservative only in affecting to resist the next innovation, which will tomorrow be forced upon its timidity and will be succeeded by some third revolution; to be denounced and then adopted in its turn. American conservatism is merely the shadow that follows Radicalism as it moves forward towards perdition. It remains behind it, but never retards it, and always advances near its leader. . . . Its impotency is not hard, indeed, to explain. It is worthless because it is the conservatism of expediency only, and not of sturdy principle. It intends to risk nothing serious for the sake of the truth, and has no idea of being guilty of the folly of martyrdom. It always when about to enter a protest very blandly informs the wild beast whose path it essays to stop, that its “bark is worse than its bite,” and that it only means to save its manners by enacting its decent role of resistance: The only practical purpose which it now serves in American politics is to give enough exercise to Radicalism to keep it “in wind,” and to prevent its becoming pusy and lazy, from having nothing to whip. No doubt, after a few years, when women’s suffrage shall have become an accomplished fact, conservatism will tacitly admit it into its creed, and thenceforward plume itself upon its wise firmness in opposing with similar weapons the extreme of baby suffrage; and when that too shall have been won, it will be heard declaring that the integrity of the American Constitution requires at least the refusal of suffrage to asses. There it will assume, with great dignity, its final position. —Robert Lewis Dabney*

Have we reached the final position in this, the 21<sup>st</sup> century? I think we have ‘progressed’ beyond Dabney’s final position. We have extended suffrage to Democrats who are infinitely inferior to, and more dangerous than, asses. “Fit to govern? No, not fit to live,” should be our response to the Democrats. Yet when the coronavirus fades away, the conservatives will go back to defending Democracy. They will continue to place their hopes in elections to determine who shall reign in hell.

Liberalism is grounded in a faith in the man-god that emanates from the mind of the liberal. Whether that god is the noble savage or the Übermensch, it is still the same god, it is the mind of man. There has been no conservative reaction to the liberals’ mind-forged religion of the man-god because the conservatives in the church reacted to the deification of the man-god by demonizing man. They championed a God without humanity, without a human heart, in order to oppose the man-god of the liberals. But does our faith depend on a false either-or? Is it a choice between God and man? No, it is not. The liberals and the ‘conservative’ theologians are one, in that they both deny the divinity within man, the grace of God, in order to place their faith in the God without, which is human reason. That great champion of Pauline, Christ-in-man Christianity, Pastor Grundtvig of Denmark, fought the good fight when he championed the “living wellsprings” of the human heart that bind us to the living God. Those “living wellsprings” are the only weapons we have to combat the Democrats of Democracy. Without those wellsprings we are naked to our enemies, our conservatism will not help us because it is grounded in the preservation of liberalism.

Chesterton lauded St. Thomas Aquinas for engineering the only successful revolution in the Church. Aquinas placed God out there, in man's abstract reason, and left St. Paul's injunction to "search the Scriptures with your heart," back in the days of unreason and superstition. After that revolution, clerical conservatism became the defense of scholasticism rather than the defense of a heartfelt faith in Jesus Christ; the religious conservatives and the secular liberal became one in their defense of abstract reason and their condemnation of the divinity, the God-given divinity, within man.

The same 'conservative' defense of liberalism that took place in the church has taken place in our secular Democracy. First the conservatives opposed the deification of Martin Luther King Jr. by pointing out that a whoremonger and a communist should not be set up as a national icon. But once he became part of the fabric of democracy, the conservatives lauded him just as much, if not more, than their liberal colleagues. So it was with the feminists. I recall a debate that William F. Buckley had in England with Germaine Greer. Buckley began the debate by surrendering. He stated he was not in England to dispute the equality of women, he was only there to question whether it was necessary to pass an equal rights amendment in order to reach that admirable goal of equality. Thus the desire to conserve Democracy doth make moral cowards of its adherents.

Bruce Catton, the Lincoln apologist who masqueraded as a historian of the Civil War, once wrote that American democracy, when implemented properly, namely with the full enfranchisement of negroes, represented "freedom from all fears." Really? Do we no longer need to fear the pestilence that walketh in darkness and the arrows that flie at noon day if we adhere to the principles of Democracy? Do we no longer need to fear death itself? With no due respect I disagree with Catton. If we believe in "We the People" democracy rather than His Europe, we become part of an incorporate union of demons committed to a flight from Christ, which can only have one end – over the cliff with the swine.

In the U.S. (the other European nations differ only in degree not in kind) over half our population, the Democrats, are completely satanic; they have left all things human behind. And the Republicans, the party that Dabney described as the "party which never conserves anything," are committed to a more gradual implementation of the satanic principles of the Democrats. They do not have any heartfelt convictions that lead them to say, "Stop, this must not go on." They have only a moderate, rational objection to change they think is too violent and sudden. That is not sufficient. We must be composed of sterner stuff. We must, we Europeans, say, "Stop, this must not go on!"

An acquaintance, who is an Olympian conservative, recently asked me why I have such sympathy for Trump since he has accomplished so little, when viewed from the Olympian heights of conservative theory. I told the Olympian I admire Trump because he is Prometheus. If you recall, Prometheus was a minor god in the Greek pantheon who stole fire from the major gods in order to give it to mortals, whom he took pity on. Prometheus was punished for his concern for insignificant mortals; he was bound to a rock while vultures pecked at his liver. Trump, as a billionaire, was a minor god in Liberaldom. He could have remained materially happy and comfortable, keeping his friendships with the Hollywood celebrities and enjoying his later years by jetting around the world spending his money on luxuries. Instead, he stole electoral fire from the gods of Liberaldom and sought to give that power to white people. He failed to defeat the liberals and save white people, because you can't defeat the demons of Liberaldom from within the confines of Democracy. Now Trump can only endure while the Coulters, the Drudges, and the rest of the liberal vultures peck out his entrails. The original Prometheus was saved by the God-Man, Hercules. Trump needs, like all of us, the real God-Man, who Aeschylus saw through a glass darkly; he needs Christ the Lord to come and release him from the Promethean rock. Our Jesus comes to us through the Christ-imbued hero. We must attack the Democrats in His name, not in the name of Democracy.

Democracy is Demoncracy because there is no place for the Christian hero within the democratic system. (1) We are told we must dialogue with inhuman fiends rather than deal with them in the only way possible to deal with demons, the way Prince Philip dealt with Maleficent. If we take that spirit into battle, the spirit of the Christian warrior who fights in defense of His realm of charity, we will truly have a solid ground from which to launch a counter-revolution. We will be moving away from Yeats's rough beast, the demonic man-god of Liberaldom, who is a composite of Nietzsche's Übermensch and Rousseau's Noble Savage, back to that stable in Bethlehem where all counter-revolutions against Democracy begin.

The Democrats' selective shutdowns of white business and their passionate hatred of the use of any drug that helps stem the coronavirus-related deaths has given us a rare glimpse of liberalism unmasked. We will remain in the liberals' merciless clutches if we treat their satanic power over us as something that is written, something akin to fate. If we remain pagans, if we deny that we are the Christ-bearing people, then we will be fated to serve the liberals on this earth and serve Satan in the next world. Far better to adhere to the foolishness of the cross, to the God who transcends fate and bids us follow Him. That is the exact opposite of the Democrats who command us go over the cliff with the swine. Jesus came and stood in the midst of His disciples after His resurrection from the dead and told them, "As the Father has sent me, even so send I you." We are called to fight the devil and all his works just as our Lord did. We are called to advance His reign of charity, not to conserve Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. +

---

(1) Democracy never works because truth is always diluted in a democracy. You must compromise with evil in order to form a majority coalition. By doing so you become like unto the Nicolaitanes condemned by our Lord in the Book of Revelations: you have elevated the blending of Christ and paganism into a doctrine.

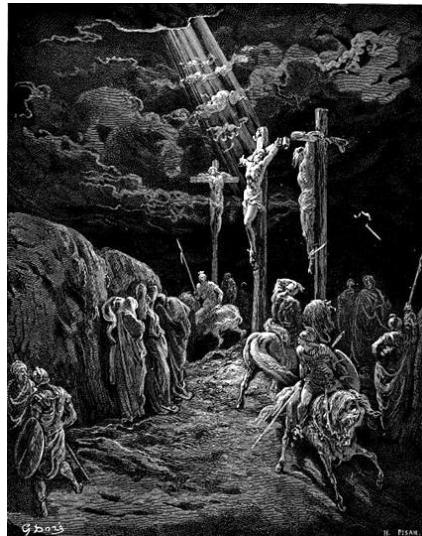
Christ is truth, paganism is falsehood, and never the twain shall meet. We have left Christian monarchies behind. Let us pray for a good dictator, a man who rules in His name.

# Out of the Shadows

May 2, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Democracy

Tags: Edmund Burke



As a rood was I raised up; I bore aloft the mighty King, the Lord of heaven; I durst not stoop.

— “The Dream of the Rood”

When I was a child growing up in the 1950’s my parents allowed me to watch a television show called *Captain Kangaroo*. The star of the show wore a captain’s uniform with big pockets like a kangaroo’s pouch. I knew that Captain Kangaroo was not really a kangaroo, even as a child, but it wasn’t until I got older that I discovered Captain Kangaroo was not a captain. I think I should be forgiven my naiveté about Captain Kangaroo’s false identity, because after all I was only a child. But what are we to make of seemingly grown-up people who regard the World Health Organization as a world health organization? It is quite obvious that the W.H.O. is a branch of the Chinese communists’ war department, a war department that is concerned not with world health, but with death and destruction. So again, what do we make of people who defend that organization? Are they just naïve, as I was naïve when I thought Captain Kangaroo was a captain? No, that is not the case; they are not children. Are they stupid? No, that is not the case either. Are they morally blind because they have rejected the light of the world? Yes, that is the case. “There are none so blind as those who will not see.” All liberals refuse to see evil because they have given their souls to the evil angel of darkness who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. Nothing can make them declare that the communist Chinese are evil, just as nothing will make them declare that legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, and the demonization of the white race is evil. They have crossed a moral Rubicon, and they do not plan on going back.

The white liberal — and there are no non-white liberals — has set himself against the white race because white Europeans once built a civilization dedicated to the Light of the world. No other people, as a people, loved so much that they saw, “His blood upon the rose?” Now that Old Europe has been condemned by the liberals and its reality has been denied by the churchmen, from what moral ground can the European Everyman condemn and fight Chinese communists, Muslim terrorists, black murderers, Aztec warriors and liberal adherents of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth? They have no moral ground to stand on. The clergy bids them take comfort in a mind-forged God that is impersonal and forever changing, the colored heathens continue to rage against the white race simply because they are heathens who have never known the light, and the liberals attack the white race because the continued existence of white people gives them a vague fear of that which once was and they hope shall never be again. But is that hope a certainty? Can the liberals ever be sure that they have banished Christ from Europe forever? No, they can’t, which is why they attack the white race with a maniacal fury infinitely greater than the colored heathens’ rage.

I once had the misfortune to share a 45-minute train ride with a nun who was returning from some kind of Eastern mysticism conference where she met with mystics from the Orient. She shared her mystical experience of the divine oneness with me. I was in my mid-twenties, having fairly recently come to a belief in the Christ of the Gospels, of St. Paul, and of the antique Europeans. The nun’s ecumenical, mystical atheism sickened me. But I politely listened to her — perhaps I should have silenced her — as we rather slowly, all too slowly, made our way home. The woman finally became aware that I was not responding to her mystical rapture with the proper enthusiasm, so she asked me point blank what I thought. I told her. The substance of my response was the words of our Lord: “I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.” We passed the rest of the way in silence.

We cometh to the Father through Christ, and we cometh to Christ through our humanity. If the people who took Christ into their hearts are damned, if they didn’t know Christ, to whom can we turn for the words of eternal life? The liberals tell us we can turn to them, to their triune faith, and the theologians tell us we can turn to their systematic theology or to their Chardinian mysticism. But we must not turn to the antique Europeans, we must not turn to the Word made flesh in Old Europe because, the theologians tell us, the Word never was made flesh in Old Europe; we cannot find the heart of Christ in that culture.

*“As a history of the world, the empirical history after Christ is qualitatively not different from the history before Christ if judged from either a strictly empirical or a strictly Christian viewpoint.”*

Karl Lowith’s words of ‘wisdom’ are not atypical. He presents the intellectuals’ Olympian view of Christian Europe: It never existed! All those men and women who lived and died with the vision of the Rood in their hearts never really existed, there is simply no evidence from an “empirical” or “strictly Christian” viewpoint of their existence. If we strike the words, “strictly Christian” and substitute the word “utopian,” we will come to the crux of the matter: There never was a Christian Europe unless that Christian Europe can be proven to be a utopian paradise. But such a paradise can never come about on this earth. And to denounce Christian Europe and her people because Christian Europe was not utopia leaves us bereft of our history and our hope in ages past. If the people who loved much did not show us the way to God, through the eyes of the heart, then how can we know God? “You can’t,” the theologians tell us. “Your God is a myth,” the liberals tell us. Then both sets of experts bid us turn to their intellects as a guide. What will happen if we reject the experts and return to the Dream of the Rood Europeans? We will recover our souls, we will respond to existence with the heartfelt passion of a people who have seen a great light in the depths of their heart.

The cold malignity of the thoroughbred metaphysician that Burke writes about has cast a pall, a satanic pall, over the European people. In this new phase of the war against the Christ-bearing people, the crisis of the communist Chinese virus, the liberals have made explicit what was always implicit in liberalism. The liberals hate humanity as Satan hates humanity. And the liberals most particularly hate white people because of their past connection to that “mysterious stranger” who died on a cross for our sins. Some conservatives have told me that the liberals have over-played their hands; they should not have been so explicit with their support of the Chinese communists, because now the American people will reject them. Is that true, will the blatant attack on the white race turn the white grazers against the liberals? No, it will not, because the “conservatives” are not conservative. Let us go back a few decades.

In 1949 the quintessential liberal, Arthur Schlesinger Jr., published a book called *The Vital Center* in which he criticized the far left progressives who would not admit that communism in Russia had failed and that communism posed a threat to liberal democracy. Such views in today’s political climate would mark Schlesinger as a conservative. But of course Schlesinger was not a conservative, he was the type of conservative that Dabney labeled “the shadow that follows Radicalism!” We can’t oppose communism in the name of liberal democracy, because liberal democracy and communism proceed from the same Jacobin roots. If we go deeper into Schlesinger’s book, we see just how thoroughly liberal he was. He denounced Burkean conservatism as “the ethical afterglow of feudalism... inappropriate in a non-aristocratic, dynamic, progressive business society of the United States.” Schlesinger wanted the same thing

the far left progressives wanted, the kingdom of God on earth without God, but he favored a more moderate march, a less bloody march forward. And so it is with our modern “conservatives” who want to oppose the communists while preserving our “democratic ideals,” when it is our democratic ideals that have left us naked to our communist enemies and all the enemies of Christian Europe. If the white European Americans had been asked, “Do you want America to be overrun by Mexicans?”; if they had been asked, “Do you want your economy and your access to essential medical supplies to be dependent on the communist Chinese?”; and if they had been asked, “Do you want to allow a strong, Islamic presence in your country?”, do you think they would have voted ‘yes’ on any of those issues? Yet we have been invaded by Mexicans, we are dependent on the Chinese communists, and we do have a strong Islamic presence in our nation. Why? It is because the liberals do not frame their questions to the white grazers in terms of invasions and economic independence, they ask the question, “Do you want democracy and all the magnificent freedoms that come with democracy?” Then the grazers scream, “Give us Barabbas, give us democracy!” and Christ is crucified again through His people, who are crucified by the purveyors of democracy.

When this so-called pandemic started, which has turned out to be a flu like all other flus, great medical experts were telling us that we could no more stop this, the communist Chinese virus, than we could stop the wind. The ‘experts’ were really referring to liberalism, not to a virus. They were and are telling us that we *shall not* try to impede liberalism or we shall be punished. The shutdowns are not because of the virus, the shutdowns are punitive. To the liberals, Trump’s election represents an impediment to the forward march of the liberals. The disgusting white pigs who voted for him must be punished. And they are being punished. Look at the food lines, look at the unemployment figures. But we can’t turn to the conservatives who are the shadows of the liberals to save us. Stephen Tonsor, a 1960s conservative, echoed Schlesinger’s criticism of Burke, and even Richard Weaver castigated Burke for his rejection of forms in favor of the particular. Yes, Burke did reject formal theology and philosophy. He preferred a particular, personal God, the God of our ascending race, instead of the unknown God of philosophy and theology, and he preferred a particular people, the antique Europeans, to a universal aggregate called mankind. Burke’s and Dabney’s conservatism was grounded in our Dream of the Rood ancestors. That ground, the ground consecrated by the blood of Christ, is the ground we must stand on and never yield even though the liberals tell us we must yield or be crushed.

This communist Chinese virus attack has devastated the European people because they have turned their eyes away from the cross to that which is without, to science, reason, and the gods of nature. Our true faith lies within –

*“Now I have joy of life that I can seek the triumphant cross alone more often than all men, do it full honour. Great is the desire for that in my heart, and to the cross I turn for help.”*

It was not wrong to shut down the schools and churches in an attempt to stem the virus. God knows, considering what is taught in both places, it would be a great good to shut those twin towers of atheism down forever, but the liberals didn’t shut down the private businesses and the family gatherings because they wanted to help their people. They shut down businesses and family gatherings because they wanted to impoverish white people and drive them to despair. They used statistical aggregates to justify their treacherous onslaught. And the ‘conservative’ shadows of the liberals are no better. The conservatives are now pointing to Sweden as our model.<sup>(1)</sup> Sweden? The nation that has destroyed itself from within by handing their country over to Moslems? The nation that has made sexual perversion the law of the land? I don’t care about your statistics, Mr. Conservative, or your theories of the herd and the greater good – “Let us let the virus run its course.” The statistics of expedience belong in hell, in Satan’s kingdom of eternal night. We need to look to that which is within, to His kingdom come. Before Christ became a by-product of a syllogism, He was Our Lord and Savior who could, when seen with the eyes of the heart, guide us through an existential maze that our rational minds could not pass through. There is no ‘solution’ to the communist Chinese virus crisis from without. The solution lies within. ‘Dream of the Rood’ Europeans do not yield to statistics, plagues, or the devil’s minions. They still dream dreams and see the vision of Him who died on the cross to save them from sin and death. +

---

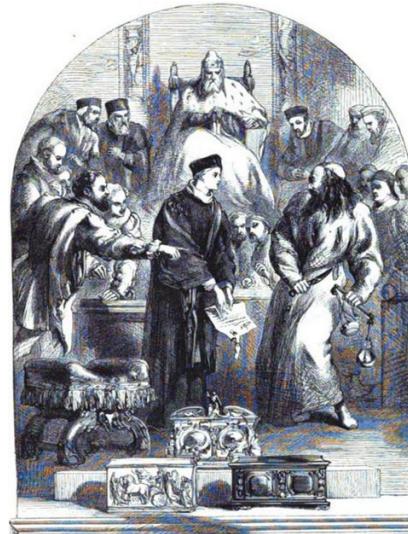
(1) In *Tom Brown’s School Days* Thomas Hughes tells us that Dr. Arnold closed down Rugby for a term when a deadly virus was sweeping through the school. Arnold of Rugby was a Christian of the old school — he sought to do what Christ would have done. The Demon-crats did not close the schools and churches out of concern for the health of American citizens, they closed the schools and churches to get Trump. And they closed the white businesses and instituted house arrests in order to get white people. The Swedes did not keep their schools, churches, and businesses open to help white people. They didn’t have any Trump to get, so they decided, based strictly on utilitarian principles, to risk the lives of the expendable elderly whites in order to keep their satanic kingdom in working order. It is morally reprehensible, it is a sin without pardon, for ‘conservatives’ to laud the Swedish model. We cannot continue to look only at systems, without judging what is inside, at the heart of the systems we are supporting. Give us Christ, not Barabbas.

# Shall Malice Bear Down Truth?

May 9, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Grazers, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



It is thus, and for the same end, that they endeavor to destroy that tribunal of conscience which exists independently of edicts and decrees. Your despots govern by terror. They know, that he who fears God fears nothing else; and therefore they eradicate from the mind, through their Voltaire, their Helvetius, and the rest of that infamous gang, that only sort of fear which generates true courage. Their object is, that their fellow citizens may be under the dominion of no awe, but that of their committee of research and of their lanterne. —Burke, [A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly](#)

---

And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain, And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds. —[Book of Revelations 16: 8-11](#)

---

In Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice* Shylock seeks to use the law to cut the heart out of Antonio whom he hates because he is a Christian and because he lends money without charging interest. Shylock's subterfuge is exposed and his bloody purpose is thwarted when Portia steps in and enforces the spirit of the law, which stands in stark contrast to Shylock's twisted interpretation of the letter of the law.

The white grazers and the white conservatives have not yet come to the same conclusion as Portia came to — they do not see that behind the liberals' façade of democracy and fairness is pure, dephlegmated evil. The liberals want to destroy the white grazers, not because the grazers are Christian as Antonio was, but because their ancestors once were Christian. Nothing will deter the liberals from pursuing their desired blood-path, no appeal to their better nature (they have none), no appeal to their sense of justice (they have none), and no appeal to their humanity (they have none) will avail.

*I pray you, think, you question with the Jew.  
You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bathe his usual height;  
You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops and to make no noise  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do anything most hard,  
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—  
His Jewish heart.*

—[Merchant of Venice](#)

The liberals have interiorized Satan's hatred of the Christ-bearing race. They will not cease from their satanic course until the white race is destroyed. Their sacrificial altars must flow with the blood of white people in order to satisfy their internal bloodlust. "We will have sacrifice, not mercy," is the war cry of the liberals.

The grazer cannot see the evil of the liberals because he has been spiritually anesthetized by intellectual Christianity in the churches, which is religious atheism, and by democracy, which is a system of government conceived in hell and dedicated to the proposition that everything humane and Christian is undemocratic and therefore evil. Hence the grazer has nowhere to turn. He can't turn to organized Christian atheism to find redress for the evils of democracy, because organized Christian atheism has decreed that Christian Europe was not Christian Europe, it was racist and sexist Europe and its people are damned. Their descendants must repent, they must become liberal, or else they too will be damned. So the grazers put on sackcloth and ashes and return to democracy. And there they are told the same thing: you must show true contrition by democratically consenting to your own destruction.

The liberals' "take no prisoners" assault on the white race through the coronavirus crisis is the result of the white grazers' refusal to self-destruct by way of democracy. They voted for a man, a Prometheus, who wanted to keep them alive. The Fourth Estate's vicious attacks on Trump are attacks on the constituency that he represents, white people begging for a chance to live and breathe within the confines of a charnel house dedicated to Satan. If you cannot see that the liberals' hatred of Trump, which is a hatred so intense that it can have only one source, is an attack on the Christ-bearing race you are either a liberal yourself or else you are a spiritually anesthetized grazer. No man can stand up to the satanic hatred that Trump has had to endure. No man should have to. What did he do to warrant such hatred? He took pity on white people — that is what he did. The liberals' attack on Trump is an attack on thee and me. Every single death from the coronavirus is a result of the liberals' refusal to stop all dealings with the Chinese communists. And how can you look at the unemployment lines and the food lines without feeling pity for the whites in those lines and hatred for the liberals who have brought such devastation among us? When Ariel relates the sufferings of the refugees on the island, he says to Prospero —

*That if you now beheld them, your affections  
Would become tender.  
Prospero. Does thou think so, spirit?  
Ariel. Mine would, sir, were I human.*

*Prospero. And mine shall.  
Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling,  
Of their afflictions, and shall not myself,  
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply  
Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art?*  
—The Tempest

The conservative Olympians in church and state have not come down from Mt. Olympus to defend Prometheus or the people for whom he stole the electoral fire because they do not believe there is a bond between them and the white race. They have no kith and kin, they are pure mind. What is needful, in their minds, is an intelligence that is above human passions and sentimental attachments. They do not believe in the old notion of, "One of their kind." And that philosophy makes them useless in the battle that is raging, the battle of Satan and his liberal minions against the white race, which once championed the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Rush Limbaugh is one of the few conservatives who has stepped down from Mt. Olympus to support Trump. He recently stated that the liberals have lost all control of themselves. Their hatred of Trump has reached the level of insanity. That is true, but I would change 'insanity' to 'satanic.' And I would add that the liberals have always been satanic, but now they no longer are capable of hiding their passionate hatred of Christ and His people. What has Trump done that has drawn the liberals out? We must deal with their hatred because we should take pity on Trump and any man who is facing what he is facing, and we must deal with the liberals' hatred because it is not just directed at Trump, it is directed at every single white who will not agree to the destruction of the white race. And that really is the crux of the matter. Yes, the liberals are angry because they thought the election was a done deal, and they saw it wrested away just as it was in their grasp. But they have lost before and managed to control their emotions and wait for the next election. What made Trump's victory different? First and foremost, he did not accept the ruling premise of liberalism that the white race must self-destruct. He was not and is not a white supremacist, which is a pity because the white supremacy that the liberals abhor simply means that whites should love their own people, but he is not a believer in the liberals' doctrine of "The white race must perish." And the second reason that Trump has made the liberals take off their masks and reveal themselves in all their satanic fury is that Trump has shown a sincere Christian desire to stop legalized infanticide. The demons who run our nation cannot tolerate such an outrage. And they will rage, rage against even one small ray of light in the dark night that they have worked so hard to spread over the face of the earth.

Theoretically we are governed by a system of checks and balances with a judiciary, a Congress, and a chief executive. That theory is incorrect. We are governed by the Fourth Estate, which consists of an intellectual elite – academics, journalists, media pundits, scientists, and the usual assortment of psychiatrists and sociologists. That Fourth Estate is in reality a fifth column. They do everything in their power to break down any and every regime that 'stinks' of Christianity. They always support regicide in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity.

*What direction the French spirit of proselytism is likely to take, and in what order it is likely to prevail in the several parts of Europe, it is not easy to determine. The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master.* —Burke, [Thoughts on French Affairs](#)

Trump's 'victory' was not a victory because he can do nothing to supplant the liberal Fourth Estate that rules our nation and all the European nations. But Trump's crucifixion has shown those who have eyes to see the truth about liberals – they are demonic. This is the fourth outbreak of the liberals' naked-fist demonism; the French Revolution, the Russian Revolution, and the Northern war of extermination in the 1860's were the other three. Will it just be business as usual when the coronavirus war is over? We cannot know such things for certain, but it appears highly unlikely that the white grazers will repudiate intellectual Christianity or democracy in order to embrace His Europe. (1)

We always will believe a lie when we accept the enemy's definitions of existence. The liberals' death wish is not a death wish. They will surely die from their attempt to strike out at God through the white race. But in attacking the white race, the liberals think they are fleeing from death. In their minds Christ represents pain, suffering, and death. The hard-eyed atheist, George Bernard Shaw, excoriated Christianity as the cruellest of all religions. What is cruel about Christianity? We are not promised a kingdom of God on earth, we are not promised lives devoid of suffering and death. It is the liberals' hope that science, their Holy Ghost, can relieve them from suffering. But what about death? Can the abstract intellect of man, the noble black savage, or science save them from the death they seek to avoid by rejecting Jesus Christ? It would seem, from a Christian perspective, that the liberals' flight from Christ does not free them from death, it only places them with the swine as they go over the cliff. However, if a man foreshortens his vision, if he focuses only on the ecstatic moment, on the demonic fire within, he can convince himself that death cannot overtake him so long as he avoids the God-man. Is that insanity? No, it is something even larger than insanity, it is pure demonism. And that is the inner dynamic of liberalism. The liberals have interiorized the hatred of Christ. They cannot be defeated by intellectual Christians or democracy-loving conservatives. They can only be defeated by a people who have interiorized the love of Christ, the love of Him who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. Such people will hate where they should hate: they will hate the liberals and all their works; and they will love where they should love: they will love His people and fight to perpetuate His reign of charity here on earth rather than conserving Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

The lack of His influence in the European nations is crystal clear when we look at the European governments' willingness to trade with the communist Chinese. Aren't such trade deals, in which China receives most favored nation status, a direct deal with the devil? What can we say of a people who willingly trade with the devil? In this coronavirus crisis, the devil that the liberals worship has once again shown himself to be a liar. We were supposed to recognize Red China because, 'You can't just ignore a whole country.' So the eager capitalists and their liberal allies dealt with China; it was the practical, worldly thing to do. Was it right? No, it wasn't, but what is right is never practical, so we were and are told. But now the devil has betrayed his minions. The juggling fiend has brought them down in the practical realm as well as in the spiritual realm. He has ruined their economies. Will it make a difference? Will the Demon-crats be held accountable for trafficking with Satan? They most certainly will be held accountable at the last judgement, but I doubt that there will be a reckoning in any court of justice in this world, because our modern courts of justice are courts of injustice: they are liberal courts. What justice there is in this world comes by way of men with hearts connected to Him, not by way of men with minds connected to intellectual Christianity and democracy. The hero in C. S. Lewis's novel *Perelandra* is given the rare privilege of coming face to face in single combat with Satan, and he is able to fight without holding back. Perhaps, now that the liberals have become so openly satanic we too will be called upon to fight them without holding back. If we fight in His name, if we interiorize our love of the Jesus whom the liberals hate, they will face an army like they have never faced before. And by the grace of God, we shall conquer. Tis a consummation, a victory, devoutly to be wished. +

(1) The two great commandments of the Fourth Estate are – 'Stay home' and 'Wash your hands.' But if I'm staying home because the coronavirus is out there and not in my home, why must I wash my hands one-hundred times a day? Because I ponder such existential paradoxes, and because I grew up hearing radical sixties' folk songs about Billy Joe McCallister and answers that were blowing in the wind, I took the time to compose a new-old folk song for the coronavirus era. To be sung to the tune of *Blowing in the Wind*:

How many months can a man stay at home,  
Before he jumps off a bridge?

REFRAIN

The answer my friend,  
Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

How many times can a man wash his hands,  
And still retain his skin?

REFRAIN

The answer my friend,  
Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

And for how many years will white people hide in their homes,  
And pretend the liberals are their friends?

REFRAIN

The answer my friend,

Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

# A Different Realm

May 16, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Dostoyevsky



*Jesus before Caiaphas – Rembrandt*

I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. —John 17: 23

---

It has become abundantly clear in this coronavirus crisis that the liberals' concern is not for the well-being of the American people, black, white, or other. If they were concerned about actual human beings, they would stop the virus in its tracks in the nursing homes by firing all the low-wage illegal immigrant custodial staffs and authorizing the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug at the beginning of the illness, not right before the hour of death. And secondly, they would not shut down businesses that are in safe areas, which constitute most businesses in the United States. What is largely a problem for New York City should not become a problem for the whole nation. And thirdly, they would not use science as a God word to scare the living hell out of people who are at their mercy in a 'crisis' such as this.

Let me dwell on that third point. I avoid both the liberals and the conservatives (the classical liberals), because both groups place an inordinate emphasis on man's abstract reason, independent of an indwelling spiritual connection to Christ. I don't want to listen to the narrative of either camp, because I don't want to be drawn into their orbits. The classical liberal generally says kind things about Christianity, and the non-classical liberal says bad things about Christianity, but both parties do not believe, as I believe, that it is the Christian heart, not the abstract intellect that will guide us safely through the labyrinth of existence. So in all things spiritual I do not consult liberals of either the classical or mad-dog liberal mold.

Christians of old Europe used to see themselves as spiritual entities who had to pay attention to their biological outer crust for the sake of the spiritual essence within. It is quite different with the classical liberal and the mad-dog liberal: they believe that nature is all. The antique European rejects that biological view of existence, but there are times when he must rely, to some extent, on the wisdom of the mere nature experts, those who have come to be called the men of science. For instance, if you have a medical problem or if you need to know when a plague is a plague or not, you need someone who knows a little more about science and medicine than you do. But what if the men of science have no conscience? What if they believe, not in "through Christ and in Christ," but in man's god-like reason abstracted from the living God? Then, as Ludwig von Drake says, "You've got a horrible mess."

Even in the case of the coronavirus plague, what seems like merely a matter of accumulating the scientific facts is not just a matter of accumulating the scientific facts. Our vision of existence, our spiritual core, even if that core consists of no spiritual substance, will determine how we marshal and interpret the 'scientific facts.' That is why there are such divergent views in the scientific community regarding this recent plague, or this recent flu, depending on which authority you believe.

Let me, a non-scientific expert, highlight the problems of a European Everyman during a 'crisis' such as we now face: Because I believe, as Burke believed, that if you "suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, he will become our master," I do not pay much attention to the liberals' or the classical liberals' news sites. So I heard about the coronavirus rather late from one of my sons, who informed me of it. My reaction to the news was much like my reaction when I have just settled down for a long winter's nap and I hear some kind of commotion on the street in front of my house — "I suppose I'd better get up and see what is happening, because it is right in front of my house." Like it or not the coronavirus was coming and I had to make certain decisions about it.

So I listened to the various news outlets, news outlets that I usually avoid. With only one exception, Rush Limbaugh, the authorities, both conservative and liberal, said that what was coming was a plague of Biblical proportions. A whole host of scientific and medical experts were projecting death rates that indicated the end of the world. What is an Everyman, a non-expert, to make of such predictions? Do you curl up in a fetal position and refuse to leave your bed? Do you run out in the streets and leap in front of the first speeding car you see? Do you assume sackcloth and ashes and start doing the penances that you always resolved to do someday, but just not today? Or do you do none of the above, and disregard the scientific experts?

I was aided by a certain skepticism in regard to medical experts that I acquired in my early teens, as a result of my interest in weight training. I read *Strength and Health* magazine, published by the father of American weight-lifting, Bob Hoffman. Mr. Hoffman regularly criticized the medical establishment for their lack of attention to good nutrition and exercise. I came to believe that, "Doctors are all swabs," and that there was no illness, except one's final death, that could not be cured by exercise and/or diet. Subsequent events, particularly once I became a father of children, forced me to alter my opinion of doctors — sometimes they were necessary, and all health problems could not be solved by diet and exercise. But I still retained a certain distrust of what the 'medical experts' proclaimed; if doctors were not essentially evil as I first believed, they were still not the infallible gods that my fellow countrymen believed them to be.

Hence, I did not quite believe the scientific prophecies of doom that were being so authoritatively bandied about. Now it appears that the medical experts were not experts, they were humbugs in the service of the liberals who wanted there to be a perception that there was a plague so that they could move toward their final solution, the extermination of the white race, at an accelerated pace.

If we grant what has now become obvious, that this virus is not the greatest plague in the history of mankind, what then do we make of it? Some of the conservatives who were screaming pandemic, gloom, gloom and doom, are now saying it was all a hoax. But can they be trusted? Is it an either/or, is it either a pandemic of global proportions or a hoax? Most certainly the food lines and the unemployment have been created by the hoax of the 'global pandemic.' But is this a serious illness that warrants some special measures? Perhaps the school and church closings in certain urban areas were warranted. This flu does seem to be more serious than most, although I can't even be sure of that, because the medical experts have an agenda, a liberal agenda, that they are pushing. So the central problem during this 'crisis' is the central problem that a European Everyman faces every day of his life in modern Europe. How can he trust leaders who have rejected Christ as the lodestar of Western civilization?

I concede that in medicine and certain public health issues we must be cognizant of the fact that a man has a biological nature. But if we make abstract reason contemplating man's biological nature our touchstone of reality, instead of an indwelling spirit, the indwelling spirit of Christ, we will live our lives according to the statistics of the scientists. The most

depressing aspect of this ‘pandemic’ is the willingness of conservatives and liberals to base their cases for/or against – panic or hoax – on statistics that ignore individual human beings. For instance, you don’t approvingly cite the Swedes’ ‘herd immunity’ plan even if it flattens their curve. They are murdering their elderly. And you don’t cite the statistics of the coronavirus deaths in urban locations in order to impoverish and starve human beings living in rural areas by ‘shutting them down.’ We have lost our vision of the God-Man, Jesus Christ, the non-utilitarian God who loves particular human beings, not abstract statistics.

“That’s rebellion,” Alyosha said softly.

*“Rebellion? I wish you hadn’t used that word,” said Ivan feelingly. “I don’t believe it’s possible to live in rebellion, and I want to live! Tell me yourself—I challenge you: let’s assume that you were called upon to build the edifice of human destiny so that men would finally be happy and would find peace and tranquility. If you knew that, in order to attain this, you would have to torture only one single creature, let’s say the little girl who beat her chest so desperately in the outhouse, and that on her unavenged tears you could build that edifice, would you agree to do it? Tell me and don’t lie!”*

“No, I would not,” Alyosha said softly.

-The Brothers Karamazov

Christ stood before a tribunal, a tribunal presided over by the high priest of Judaism, and He was condemned as a blasphemer because He said that He was God incarnate. But there was a people who saw, in the humiliated and crucified Christ, the Savior of the world. The European people’s descent into hell, their abandonment of the vision of the God-Man is a tragedy far greater than this so-called pandemic. The pandemic crisis is in fact part of the ongoing attack against Christ. Once Christ was brought before the tribunal of man’s abstract reason, first by the religious atheists, the scholastics in the Catholic and Protestant churches, then by the outright atheists, the Voltaires and the Shaws, He was condemned again. He has been found wanting by the men of statistics, the philosophers, theologians, and scientists. And He has been condemned as a blasphemer by the liberals. Both groups, the religious atheists and the outright atheists, have told us that Christ is a liar. The theological atheist has felt the need, like Dostoevsky’s Grand Inquisitor, to rework the Christ story because Christ did not return to earth as He promised. And the liberal has felt free to look to a new trinity more in keeping with the needs of modern man. St. Paul stands in contradiction to both camps — he claimed that he lived “through Christ and in Christ.” He felt alive because the grace of God was alive inside of Him. That was also the faith of the European people: they saw, in their inmost hearts, the Savior that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. Whatever is left in this world of God’s grace comes from human hearts which are not completely closed to St. Paul’s vision of that lonely figure, the son of the living God, standing before the religious atheists and the outright atheists of the Sanhedrin. Has Christ left us? No, we have left Him.

When Donald Trump went before the liberal Sanhedrin, the Fourth Estate, he was trying to include them in his mission of compassion. He was inviting them to join with him in the fight against the coronavirus, but the Sanhedrin wanted no part of Trump’s mission. They wanted to condemn Trump, because they view him as the font of all evil: He is a white man, and as such a creature he has a connection to the God-Man whom they hate. The ‘press conferences’ became min-trials at which Trump was always found guilty. Haven’t we, the remnant band of Christian Europeans, faced such tribunals in our lives? The home schooling parent, the politically incorrect teacher, the blogger who has been condemned for ‘hate speech,’ the anti-abortion protestor, and every other man, woman, or child who has deviated from the norms of the liberals have felt the wrath of the modern defenders of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

A drowning man will grasp at any life preserver he can, so I do not blame the whites who have been thrown out of work and impoverished by the liberals’ coronavirus onslaught for organizing protests in the name of their civil liberties. But there are no civil liberties outside of Christian Europe. There is no freedom, no civil liberty, in a republic dedicated to Satan. It is only when we see liberalism for what it is, and Christ for what He is, that we will have the grace, the will, and the heart, to depose Satan who currently rules the European nations through his liberal minions.

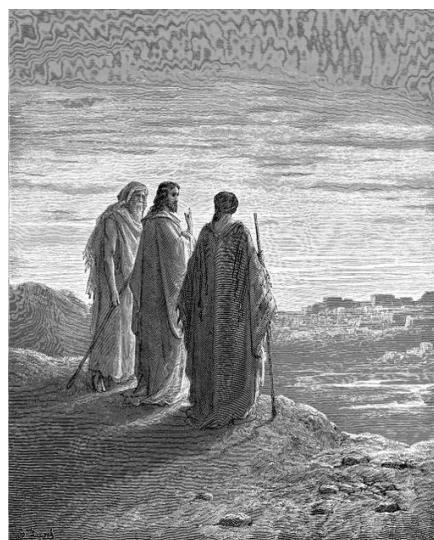
We can’t reason with demons. The liberals are not misinformed, they know what they are doing when they withhold medicine from those who are ill in order to inflate the pandemic statistics. And they know what they are doing when they ‘close down’ people’s livelihoods. They are pure evil. We can’t fight them by way of demoncracy. We must see that we belong to another realm of existence, a realm of human hearts connected to His divine heart. Our prayer is always the non-liberal prayer, it is His prayer: “Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven.”+

# Sweet Fields Beyond the Plague of Rationalism

May 23, 2020

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Whatever is left in this world of God's grace comes from human hearts which are not completely closed to St. Paul's vision of that lonely figure, the son of the living God, standing before the religious atheists and the outright atheists of the Sanhedrin. —CWNY

---

The conflict between the demonic little dwarf Tony Fauci, who insists there is no clinical evidence to support the claim that the coronavirus is the Wuhan virus, and the conservatives, who assert that the Chinese plague came from the war laboratories in Wuhan, is a microcosm of the tragedy of Western man ever since the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. There are the forces of evil, represented by Fauci, the liberals, and the Chinese communists, but there are no corresponding forces of good to counter the forces of evil. And we cannot have a happy conclusion to the fairy tale of European civilization without the forces of good.

Are not the conservatives the forces of good? No, you cannot represent an opposing force to evil when you are a shadow, to once again borrow Dabney's term, of the evil force which you oppose. The liberal openly disposes of the Christian God in order to adhere to his triune God of the abstract intellect, the noble savage, and science. The conservative wants to keep Christ in the framework of the abstract intellect – he wants Christ the philosopher rather than Christ the savior – while maintaining the noble savage as his savior and science as his holy ghost. It is only when we return to a fairytale vision of life, the vision bequeathed to us by Christ, St. Paul, and the antique Europeans, that we can respond to the forces of evil as Christ would have us respond. What then is missing in the conservative's response to the evil dwarf and his liberal cohorts? The prophetic fire is missing, the prophetic fire of Isaiah and St. Paul, which is grounded in the charity that never faileth:

*It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in; glittering like the morning star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! what a revolution! and what an heart must I have, to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.*

— Burke, [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)

Can “that charity of honour” be seen? Can we bring charity and honor into the duel of statistics between the liberals and the conservatives? No, we cannot, because charity is not so nominated in the democratic bond we have forged with the devil. We can only bring ‘clinical facts’ that can be seen with the eye of science into the arena, we cannot bring that which can only be seen through the eye into battle. That is the democratic rule. But the liberals’ ‘facts’ come from Satan – they are satanic lies he uses to attack the living God. We cannot counter those lies and the people who live by those lies by referencing the rationality of conservatism and the irrationality of liberalism, because that false definition of good and evil – “We, the conservatives, are good because we are rational, and the liberals are bad because they are irrational” – is part of the great lie, that abstract reason, divorced from the grace of God, can arrive at the truth.

Must we always find some abstract theory of God, must God be put in a golden bowl so that He can be validated by man’s abstract reason? “Yes,” the conservatives tell us. So God resides out there somewhere while the conservatives enter the lists, armed with good solid statistics, but without the full armor of Christ, which can only be worn by those men and women who have allowed the fairytale God into their hearts. In contrast, the liberals enter the lists armed with statistics and the full armor of Satan, because they have allowed the demonic angel of darkness into their hearts. The mad-dog liberals always defeat the classical liberals because they follow that which is within, while the classical liberals, the conservatives, follow that which is without, an abstract God who cannot sustain a man in the day of battle. If liberals demand statistical data to decide whether a nation that has never been Christian and is committed to the ideals of Jacobin France and Stalinist Russia is good or evil, then they have already told you they are beyond the ken of all things human. Why then do the conservatives try to deal with them? You can’t expect to convert the devil, you can only oppose him as our Lord did when he was tempted by him in the desert.

*Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.*

*And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.*

*And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.*

*But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.*

*Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,*

*And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.*

*Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.*

*Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;*

*And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.*

*Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.*

*Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.*

The conservatives caved in to the temptation of the devil. Our Lord refused to give the devil empirical evidence of His divinity by casting Himself down from the pinnacle of the temple. So they, the conservatives, have taken it upon themselves to present their own miracle to Satan's minions. They present their marvelous theories to the liberals, which are designed to dazzle them by their rational brilliance. But the liberals are never dazzled by the rational brilliance of the conservatives. They remain unmoved by the prolifers' scientific proofs that the child in the womb is a living, breathing personality, and they remain adamantly opposed to the slightest suggestion that the Chinese communists created the Wuhan virus with malice aforethought, despite all the conservatives' empirical evidence of the malice aforethought. Perhaps something besides an appeal to the liberals' reason is necessary to defeat liberals. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. The liberals treasure their truine faith, which is diametrically opposed to Christ's reign of charity. They will make common cause with any individual or group that attacks Christ through His people – the Chinese communists, the Moslems, the Jews, the colored savages – all are a treasured part of Liberaldom. You can't, Mr. Conservative, defeat the liberals by showing them how irrational they are. The liberals are rational: they have made a rational decision to defend the faith that is within them — the hatred of Christ and His people – with the cold, rational malignity of the devil. You can't deal with creatures who hate with that intensity by reasoning with them or appealing to their compassionate nature; those who worship Satan have left compassion behind. You must have something inside, you must have Christ inside, in order to fight the devil and his minions.

The liberals, with an unerring instinct to destroy even the symbolic remains of Christian Europe, have dug up Nathan Bedford Forrest's and his wife's remains in order to remove them from hallowed ground. Lee and Stonewall Jackson were great heroes and should always be honored by white Europeans, but Forrest was a hero who stood above them all. I doubt if he ever read Burke, but he was the one man who understood, as Burke understood, that the enemy, the Jacobin liberals, could not be dealt with as if they were Europeans who still remained within the fold of Christ, the Good Shepherd. They were a new breed of unmen who scorned that charity of honor which once was the distinguishing mark of the European. The European civilization of *I Corinthians 1:13*, the civilization that the theologians tell us never existed, only existed as a civilization in the North American hemisphere in the nation that Nathan Bedford Forrest defended. He was the last fairytale knight of old Europe. It is quite fitting, from Satan's viewpoint, that he and his wife should be posthumously tried and condemned by the liberal Sanhedrin who hate all those men and women who loved Christ in and through their people.

The liberals and their allies in the organized churches (Pope Francis the blasphemer recently issued a happy Ramadan to the Moslems) have decreed that white people are the major source of evil in the world. And in a certain sense they are right – they, the liberals who have repudiated their European heritage, are the major source of evil in the world. But those other whites, the white people of old Europe who loved Christ, were they evil? That is what the illuminati tell us, but I don't see my people with the mind of an illuminati; I see my people through the interior eye of the heart. And there I see faith, hope, and charity. Christ entered human history so that we could be part of His story, which is the story of, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son." We cannot separate ourselves from the people who took Christ into their hearts, who became part of His story, without losing our souls. The white race is the Christ-bearing race. Even the white grazers who have lost a clear vision of our Lord still show us every time there is a crisis such as a plague, flood, or famine that it is only white people who know what charity is. It is only the liberals, who make war with their heathen allies against the white race, that have not charity because they have repudiated their people, the people who saw a great light.

In Shakespeare's *The Taming of the Shrew*, the shrew, Katherina, has taken herself out of our Lord's loving embrace. She will not serve Him through the channels of grace He has provided. She wants autonomy from all divine-human restraints. But she gradually becomes aware of how His grace works through human channels. And in her submission to her husband, she submits to our Lord:

*Such duty as the subject owes the prince,  
Even such a woman oweth to her husband;  
And when she is froward, peevish, sullen, sour,  
And not obedient to his honest will,  
What is she but a foul contending rebel  
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—  
I am ashamed that women are so simple  
To offer war where they should kneel for peace,  
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,  
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.  
Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,  
But that our soft conditions and our hearts*

*Should well agree with our external parts?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!  
My mind hath been as big as one of yours,  
My heart as great, my reason haply more,  
To bandy word for word and frown for frown;  
But now I see our lances are but straws,  
Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,  
That seeming to be most which we indeed least are.*

The modern conservative needs to see that his reason is not what our Lord wants: He wants our hearts. If we love much we will know how to deal with evil dwarfs and their liberal minions.

The insufficiency of abstract reason to combat liberalism was brought home to me recently when I saw an exchange between a conservative and a liberal, who were discussing the Chinese method of dealing with the coronavirus. The liberal defended the Chinese purging of the virus by the murder of the victims of the virus. The classical liberal was appalled. But why was he appalled? If abstract reason is our touchstone of reality, isn't it rational to kill the sick so that the healthy can live? The classical liberal, the modern conservative, is Ivan Karamazov. He makes abstract reason his God and then reserves the right to be appalled when Smerdyakov, acting on that premise, commits murder. If Christ be not risen, there is no reason why we should not commit murder for the greater good, the greater good being the biological survival of the herd. Let us step back into the divine narrative of His redemptive love. Our story must be, once again, interwoven with His story. There is indeed, "A Land of Pure Delight," but we cannot get there except through Him, the Christ of old Europe, whom the liberals mock and the men of reason regard as a poetical triviality, fit for fireside tales at Christmas time but not suited for the serious business of life. Let us shun that rationalism, which is the true plague, and embrace His realm of charity, which passeth the understanding of abstract reason.+

# Our Miracle Culture

May 30, 2020

Categories: Classical liberalism, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Scientism

Tags: St. Paul



Rembrandt. *The Angel Appears to the Shepherds*.

"Tis the time's plague when madmen lead the blind." —[King Lear](#)

---

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. —[John 1: 1-5](#)

---

There is one thing certain about the coronavirus: it has become the most politicized virus in the history of the European people. Wasn't such a politicization inevitable? People without a blood faith must turn to the abstract 'science' of politics to convince themselves that "still they live" and to convince the aggregate herd (there are no human personalities in modern democracies) that their political schemes can bring mankind happiness and freedom from suffering.

In contrast to the modern purveyors of secular happiness stands Jesus Christ. He promised His followers a cross. That was a very odd promise for someone running for office. But of course Christ wasn't running for any office; He was and is the Word made flesh, and He left us free to reject Him or take Him into our hearts. Again, wasn't that rather foolish? Who wants to take a crucifixion into their heart? Certainly not the liberals of either the mad-dog or classical mold. We dare not fall into the trap of choosing between the liberalism of the mad-dog liberal and the classical liberal, who is now called a conservative, because both forms of liberalism lead us to hell.

I have quoted Thomas Mann's story before, but I want to reference it again because it is apropos. Back in ancient times a Greek servant, an Athenian, was doing the shopping for his master. While going about the business of shopping he saw Death in the marketplace, and Death looked at him with what the servant considered a threatening look. He stopped shopping, ran back to his master's house, and started packing his meager belongings. His master asked him what he was doing. "I'm sorry, I must leave you for a time. I was in the marketplace, and Death looked at me with a threatening glance, so I'm going to Crete to escape him."

So the servant left for Crete. His master then went to the marketplace to find Death, and when he found him, he asked him why he had looked at his servant with a threatening glance. Death replied, "I did not look at your servant with a threatening glance. That was a look of surprise. You see, I have an appointment with him today in Crete."

The tragic irony of the coronavirus crisis is that it is a man-made tragedy; it is the result of the liberals' (both classical and mad-dog) attempt to escape from Christ. We all suffer and die, but our suffering increases tenfold when we try to avoid the cross of Christ. The European people have had devastating plagues when they were a Christian people, but this particular plague, or virus, is the result of liberalism; it was not an inevitable part of the European story because we would not, if we were a Christian people, have opened up our borders to the heathens of color. A Christian nation is a provincial nation; the leaders of a Christian nation care about the particular people within their nation and they endeavor to protect their people from the dangers that come from the pestilence that walketh at noonday through open borders. The coronavirus deaths, the unemployment, the despair that has led to increased suicides, are all the result of the liberals' hatred of Christ and the classical liberals' indifference to Christ.

In order to highlight the differences between a Christian people with Christian leaders and the current European nations led by liberals and classical liberals, let us pretend that the coronavirus has entered into a fictional Christian nation. What would and would not be the Christian response to the virus? Let us start with the scientists, the 'experts.' If they looked at existence through a heart connected to Christ, they would try to provide their nation's leadership with accurate information about the virus. They would not invent an end-of-the-world-plague scenario in order to give their liberal cohorts the excuse to place the nation under martial law. And what would the fourth estate and the respective houses of Congress do in a Christian nation? They would rally around their king or their president in his attempts to combat the virus. They would not automatically oppose the use of a drug that seemed to offer people a cure for the disease simply because their king or president recommended it. Nor would they close down the country in an effort to ruin the economy so they could destroy their political opponent. But of course we do not have a Christian nation, and the Democrats have tried to destroy Trump by rolling up the death tolls and destroying the economy.

Now let us look, through the eyes of the people in our fictional Christian nation, at the classical liberals. At first glance the conservatives, who consist of the intellectual Christians, the libertarians, the Jeffersonians, and the Darwinian capitalists, seem to represent the good because they oppose the mad-dog liberals. But the conservatives have their own agenda that is also opposed to Christ's reign of charity. It is unChristian to destroy another man's livelihood in order to destroy your political opponent; that is what the Democrats are doing. But it is also unChristian to 'open up' your nation, citing the Darwinian Swedes, because nature is all and nature does not care about the individual, it only cares about the herd. The conservatives are the greatest danger to our faith because they seem preferable to the Democrats. However, there should be something inside of us that is horrified by the cold rationality of the conservatives such as Heather MacDonald: "Conservative values like small government, self-reliance, and liberty can be defended without recourse to invisible deities or the religions that exalt them." That immoral imbecility can only come from a mind that has been thoroughly 'educated' in modern universities specializing in the 'Ye shall be as gods' theology of Satan. We cannot decide anything of importance — and how we respond to a plague or virus is important — without reference to that "invisible deity" within, whom our ancestors believed to be that very visible God who suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died, and was buried; and on the third day He rose again from the dead.

We, as a people, have lost touch with the miracle culture of old Europe, the culture of Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, because first our churchmen, and then, following in the churchmen's footsteps, our secular rulers, have damned the God-given divinity within man; they blasphemed against the Holy Ghost in order to champion that which was outside of man, the natural world which could be dissected by the mind of man. The new faith became an outward thing held together by science. The mad-dog liberals accuse their enemies, the classical liberals, of being unscientific, and the classical liberals fire back with the same charge against the mad-dog liberals. But neither side is willing to repudiate the new holy ghost, which is science.

The professed Christians in modern Europe have managed to keep faith with the mad-dog liberals by wedging Christ into the first part of the liberals' trinity, which is the abstract intellect. If faith in Christ becomes a philosophy, it is still possible for the 'Christian' to maintain the liberals' faith in the noble black savage and science. That is why organized Christianity does not give the white grazer an alternative faith to liberalism. The churchmen have forsaken Christ for the promise of liberalism: "Ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil." But why then can the churchmen, the conservative liberals, not see the evil of liberalism and the good that was in the antique Europeans? Why are the liberals deemed good and the antique Europeans deemed evil? Is it because the latter were racist and sexist? Yes, it is. But why is pietas evil? And why is a recognition that women, the life-bearers and the life-nurturers, have a different role than men, the Christ-bearers, evil? All of the maniacal, satanic hubris of modern man can be summed up by the words of St. Paul in [Romans 1: 22](#): "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools." Our modern European civilization, which is in reality an uncivilization, was built on the Tower of Babel assumption that man's intellect, unaided by the grace of God, can reach the heavens. The end result of that 'exalted' reasoning has placed us in hell on earth.

There are a number of James Fitzpatrick films from the early 1950s in which he visits rural communities in Holland, Denmark, and Switzerland. Those communities, which are racially and ethnically homogeneous, seem to be, in Fitzpatrick's eyes, and in my eyes, as close as human beings can get to heaven on earth. Death and suffering still exist in those communities, but the man-made tragedies that increase human suffering and the religious despair at the hour of death that exist in the more 'advanced' nations are not a part of those communities. However, at the end of those marvelous vignettes, Fitzpatrick and I part company, because he attributes the magnificence of those provincial white communities to democracy. Au contraire! It is democracy, the government of diversity and equality, that ultimately brought down those white, provincial cultures. The people depicted in the Fitzpatrick films were living in nations that still adhered to a Christian ethos, and many of the older members of those communities still retained a faith in the miracle culture of old Europe. When that faith faded, the ethos started fading, and by the 21<sup>st</sup> century those white Christian communities were non-communities in a non-nation. Neither capitalism, socialism, distributism, nor any other theory of economic development can restore such non-nations. They are dead, as we are dead as individuals if we do not reject the theories of liberalism, classical and mad-dog, and return to the faith of the people who walked on water because they believed in the Son of God.

The mad-dog liberals and the classical liberals seem to be at odds during this coronavirus crisis, but they are not at odds on that which is essential, that the culture of the antique Europeans should be seen through the eyes of the heart and recognized for what it was – the miracle culture of the people who saw His blood upon the rose. They made His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead part of their blood. The statistical culture of the mad-dog liberals and the classical liberals is built on the assumption that what is essential is not essential. The mad-dog liberals say that Christ be not risen, and the conservatives tell us that whether Christ be risen or Christ be not risen is irrelevant – what is necessary is that we adhere to the proper philosophy. What unites the liberal and the conservatives is their love of the negro and their rejection of the miracle culture of the antique Europeans.

Mankind must have a personal savior; if they will not have Christ because His resurrection from the dead is unscientific, then they will have the noble savage as their savior. During this so-called health crisis, the real crisis, the vicious, unrelenting attack on the white race by the heathens of color has increased tenfold. And the liberals who encourage the attacks and the conservatives who are indifferent to the attacks still keep arguing about economics.<sup>(1)</sup> The only economy that we should worry about is ignored — we should preserve our spiritual economy, the miracle culture of the antique Europeans. Go and learn what Dostoevsky's Stepan Trofimovich meant when he said that Shakespeare was more important than shoes. Our lives are indeed a miracle; we are either connected to His miracle or we are nothing. Our modern uncivilization is a wheel of fire. If we look back to that other civilization, to His Europe, we can know something of the divine love which transcends statistics, plagues, and economic theories. There must be more to our faith than an adherence to the laws of an organized church. We must have something inside of us that allows us to transcend the law in order to live in Him and through Him. +

---

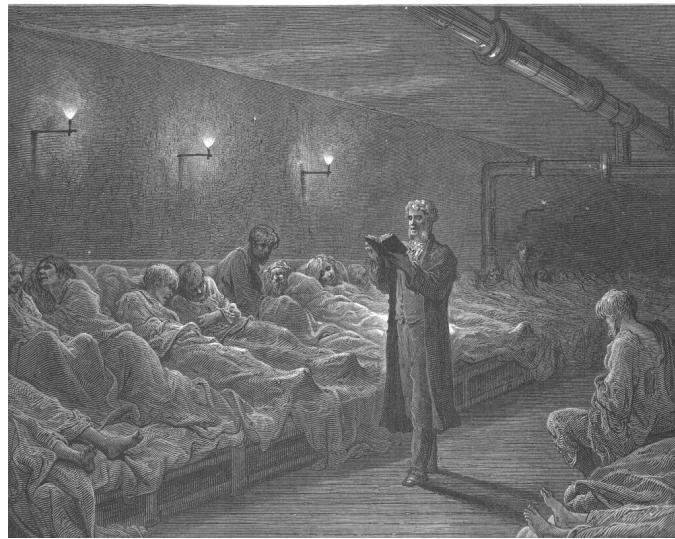
(1) On a daily basis innocent whites are murdered by black barbarians. The black murder plague is far worse than the plague called the coronavirus. When Tommie Lindh, the white, 19-year-old, Swedish man, was murdered trying to stop a black barbarian from raping a white girl, the liberal and conservative media were silent, as they are always silent in the face of the murder of a white by a black. But when a black criminal dies while being arrested by white policemen, the media explodes with condemnations of white racism, and the black barbarians seize the moment to increase their burnings, lootings, rapes, and murders. We live in the midst of diversity-created plagues – coronavirus and black – that have one source: the hatred of the Christ-bearing race. When our churchmen stop hating the white race and start defending His Europe, when the liberals are opposed instead of appeased, then we will begin to see some light in the darkness.

# Amid the Encircling Gloom

June 6, 2020

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Negro worship

Tags: D. P. Duguauquier



Doré. Scripture reader in a night refuge

---

Our race is our spiritual stronghold. Within that stronghold are the mysterious human relationships that give us the wherewithal to fight the battle against principalities and powers. If you strip a man of his racial identity, you strip him of his soul. How can a man without a soul fight the good fight? He can't; he can only surrender to the devil and his minions. – CWNY (2012)

---

On a daily basis innocent whites are murdered by black barbarians. The black murder plague is far worse than the plague called the coronavirus. When Tommie Lindh, the white, 19-year-old, Swedish man, was murdered trying to stop a black barbarian from raping a white girl, the liberal and conservative media were silent, as they are always silent in the face of the murder of a white by a black. But when a black criminal dies while being arrested by white policemen, the media explodes with condemnations of white racism, and the black barbarians seize the moment to increase their burnings, lootings, rapes, and murders. We live in the midst of diversity-created plagues – coronavirus and black – that have one source: the hatred of the Christ-bearing race. When our churchmen stop hating the white race and start defending His Europe, when the liberals are opposed instead of appeased, then we will begin to see some light in the darkness. – CWNY

---

The opinions that follow are merely anecdotal; they have not been clinically tested. You have been warned.

I was brought up in a white middle-class household by parents who considered themselves to be “moderate liberals.” Both my parents were the first of their lines to go to college. My mother did not believe in Christ’s resurrection from the dead; she thought Christianity was a good ethical system. And my father rejected all of the Old Testament – fundamentalism was an anathema to him – but he made a leap of faith when he came to the New Testament. My parents, my pastors, and my teachers in the all-white public schools I attended, all believed in the sacred negro. So of course I grew up believing in the sacred negro as well.

My faith was first tested when I encountered the sacred negroes on the rival sport teams. They did not play according to the code that I was taught to play by. But my coaches had prepared me for that rude awakening. They explained to me beforehand that I shouldn’t expect the black players to behave like whites. They had suffered years of racism and oppression, so I had to make allowances. Did I make allowances? Yes, I did. Although once during a high school basketball game, I responded to insults against my mother with an elbow to the face of the offending player. I got a lecture from my coach afterwards about “understanding their rage,” etc. Did I understand? Yes, I suppose I still did. I apologized for my “unwarranted” outburst.

Let me fast forward to the summer of my freshman year in college. I had a job as a camp counselor at a camp for inner city boys. The camp was run by blacks for black boys, ages 8 to 12 years. I was the only white counselor amongst a whole host of black counselors. That did not bother me because, as I said, I was raised to revere the black race. I was not picked on – I suppose I would have been picked on had I been weak and frail, but I was not. So my moral dilemma had nothing to do with what was done unto me. It was not a case, as it was in junior high and high school, of being tolerant of the blacks’ uncivil behavior toward me as a white man. No, it was a case of the black counselors’ cruelty toward the black children. I need not chronicle the long litany of cruelty and abuse I witnessed; let one 8-year-old boy step forward. He was not in my group, but I saw what he endured. He was weak, frail, and nonathletic, which is a difficult fate to endure in a white camp for boys, but in the black camp he was in danger of being removed, by an excess of cruelty from his counselor and his fellow campers, from the face of the earth. I intervened and got him transferred to my group even though the head of the camp told me that blacks were not whites: “We do things differently.” Ah, there’s the rub! I could not agree that cruelty to children was not cruelty if it was perpetrated by black men. To me, it was still cruelty. There was a footnote to that anecdote: The boy’s mother told me at the close of camp that she was grateful to me for showing her son a kindness that he had never received before from a male. That is rather sad, isn’t it?

Now, that one, small anecdote can be easily dismissed as white racism. You can tell me that there is even more cruelty in the white race – “Look at their wars, look at colonialism” etc. But I can only bear witness to what I have seen through the eyes of my heart. I saw then and I see now that it is only in the white race, when the white race was Christian, that we see that undefinable virtue that never faileth. Outside the white race there is no such thing as charity.

*Africans have respected power deriving from force for too many centuries to acquire any moral shackles – they admire and follow the man with strength. Here is an illustration, amusing but unfortunately quite true. In a school run by the Catholic Church for young men showing aptitudes which might befit them for eventual priesthood, a film was being shown. The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thorns upon His head, excited cries of ‘Pika! Pika!’ rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.*

*Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black man’s back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.*

-D. P. Duguauquier, Congo Cauldron

During the 1950s a child of moderate liberals, be he Catholic or Protestant, was usually exposed to the Christ story before he was given the straight, organizational party line, the party line that destroys faith in the Christ story. So I had the Christ story in my heart as a touchstone of reality even during my late teens and early twenties, when the scientific worldview forced me to conclude that, “Christ be not risen.” But it was the Christ story that triumphed over science by my mid-twenties. Why? Because I saw Christ in His people. They, the antique Europeans,

who had charity, spoke to my heart: "I wept and I believed." That 'sentimental' attachment to our people must not be allowed to perish from the earth, because it is our connection to the living God. If Christianity becomes, as it has become, synonymous with the worship of the negro, then what is our faith? Are we supposed to believe, contrary to the words of our Lord, that the cruel and the merciless shall inherit the earth?

These 'spontaneous' outbursts of love for George Floyd are not spontaneous outbursts of love. The blacks are just as cruel to their own people as they are to the whites. They don't really care about the death of George Floyd, who was not murdered. However ill-advised it was to kneel on a man's neck, it must be emphasized that the police officer who has been damned by the liberal world could have killed instantly with one blow to the head or one bullet if he had been trying to commit murder. But of course that is not the issue. The blacks want a world in which they can rape, murder, and steal to their hearts' content. And they have such a world. (1) Every time a black dies at the hands of a policeman, black or white (in Baltimore, the majority of the officers were black), the powers that be make it illegal to arrest blacks. And the 'spontaneous' riots, which are called protests? They are planned and orchestrated by the Jacobin-Marxists who call themselves Antifa. It was Trotsky who gave the Jacobin-Marxists their battle plan. He said that the Marxists should use the black race to destroy the European governments. And they have done just that. Who will say, "Stop, this shall not go on!"

No one will say stop, this shall not go on because it is up to the Christ-imbued European to stand up to the forces of Satan. And tragically there are no Christ-imbued Europeans. Organized Christian Jewry only produces 'Christians' who have disregarded our Lord's stricture against serving two masters. The churchmen have tried and are still trying to serve Christ and the Negro. That cannot be. What happens when you cannot condemn cruelty when negroes are the practitioners of cruelty? What happens when you must condemn the Christ-centered culture of old Europe because it was racist? You will support the liberals who serve Satan because they are not racist. It is significant that the only whites who practiced cannibalism as a cannibalistic sect (the Donner party was an aberration) were the French Jacobins, who drank the blood of the French aristocrats after they were beheaded. And the modern Jacobins, the Antifa, tell us to "Eat the rich." Thus the two become one, the Antifa liberal is joined in his cannibalism to the noble black savage.

*The Batatela tribe were described in 1899 as being a race of remarkably tall and well-made people where no signs of disease or age were apparent. It was discovered afterwards that this was due to the fact that the young Batatelas ate their parents directly any signs of decrepitude became too evident.*

-Congo Cauldron

But why should we be prejudiced against cannibalism? If the sacred negro does it, how can it be wrong? What right do we, white racists, have to judge our gods? And isn't eating the older members of the herd in keeping with the wisdom of the Darwinian Swedes and their conservative advocates in the United States? Let's all gather at the sacrificial altars on which white blood flows by the throne of Satan.

At the hour of his death, H. F. Lyte, possibly the most Christ-imbued European who ever lived, asked our Lord to, "Hold thou thy cross before my closing eyes." He saw his salvation in the cross of Christ, because he had lived his entire life in and through Christ. Most Europeans fell far short of Henry Lyte, but there was a time when we, as a people, believed that men and women who lived as Henry Lyte lived, in and through Christ, were the penultimate of humanity. That an entire people believed the living God had entered human history through humanity was a miracle. We must support that miracle culture, especially now that it is completely condemned by 'Christians' and liberals. If we make black barbarians our saviors then we are damned. How can we, who once had Christ as our Savior, stoop so low? Who is being served when we worship the blacks? Is our God being served? Are we, the European people, being served? Are the people of color being served? Only Satan is being served.

This terrible, blasphemous rush, by avowed Christians such as Vice-President Pence, to worship at the altars of the noble black savage in the wake of the death of George Floyd has brought home to me something I have tried to avoid. I have frequently called such 'Christians,' who combine the worship of the negro with the worship of Christ, half-way house Christians. I did that because I wanted to believe there was a remnant of the true faith in those Europeans who called themselves Christians. But it is not so. Absolutely nothing remains in organized Christian Jewry of our ancient faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. What we see before our eyes when we look at the unfaith of the modern European Christians is the noble black savage on the sacred cross of Christ.

There is no more inspiring and hopeful story in the Gospels than the story of the good thief who asks our Lord to remember him when He comes into His Kingdom. But when the intellectual Christians take Christ off His sacred cross and place Him in the position of the good thief, asking the noble black savage for mercy and forgiveness, then we see before our closing eyes the most hideous blasphemy in the history of mankind. It was the antique European people who held His cross before our eyes, in life and death we belonged to Him. Now we are constantly told by all the world that we must hold the sacred negro before our eyes in life and death. The shame is ours, the guilt is ours, the damnation is ours, if we do not tear the hideous blasphemy of negro worship from our hearts. Lord, forgive us our sins and stay with us "amid the encircling gloom, in life and death, abide with us." +

(1) If the police cannot arrest the greatest perpetrators of crime, for fear they might kill them when they resist arrest, of what use is a police force? Our policemen come from our culture, a culture which is ruled by Jacobin-Marxists who have placed the sacred negro at the religious center of our culture. Do you really think that young men, who want to make a living, are going to oppose their liberal rulers by arresting black people? No, they won't. Especially after they see what has happened when police officers wound, maim, or kill blacks in their efforts to make an arrest. The police officers, who must do something, will concentrate their efforts on white prolife demonstrators, white ranchers, and whites who voted for Trump. Then, like the police in the European nations currently are doing, they can really release their inner demons and use force in the defense of the Jacobin-Marxist government that pays them. The police are not the friends of white people. Protect yourself and your family and look to Christ for salvation, not to Democracy. It is better that we have no police than a police who serve the liberals and their gods.

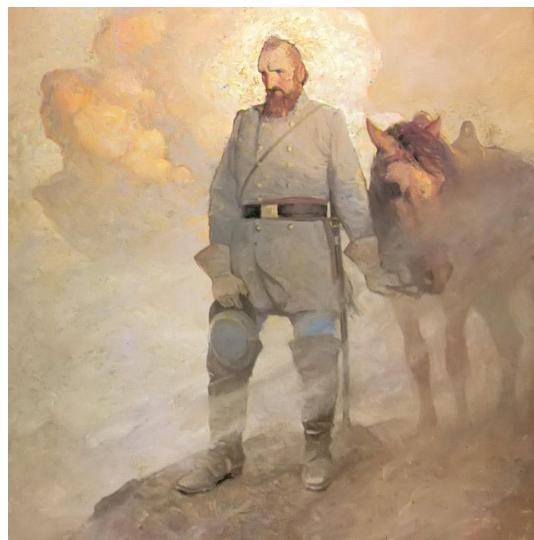


# Our God and Our People Matter Most of All

June 13, 2020

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Jacobinism, Muscular Christianity, Negro worship

Tags: Edmund Burke



O all you host of heaven! O earth! What else?  
And shall I couple hell? O, fie! Hold, my heart,  
And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up. Remember thee!  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat  
In this distracted globe.

-Hamlet

---

There's a hope that leaves me never,  
All through the night.

-Welsh folk song

---

"No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon." ([Luke 16:13](#)) The sacred negro has one very great advantage over Christ: he can be seen with the material eye, he is not of the spirit. He has come to represent mammon, the false god of riches and success. You cannot have success in this world, the Jacobin-Marxist world, without paying homage to the sacred negro and the other lesser gods of color. The new religion of negro worship appears to be more completely developed in the United States than any other nation, but all the white nations hold to the democratic way: they love the noble savage, and that love will ultimately destroy them.

Just when you think it is impossible to be surprised by the extent of the intellectual Christians' and the conservatives' apostasy, I find that I am surprised. The liberals have gone beyond anything they have ever done before during the COVID-19 crisis and the George Floyd insurrection — that does not surprise me — but the conservatives and the intellectual Christians, during the George Floyd insurrection, have thrown themselves on the altars of the sacred negro with a passionate intensity that indicates even more than an indifference to Christ; it indicates that they share the same hatred for Christ as their mad-dog brethren. That has thrown me for a loop. I didn't know they were that far gone.

To talk of making America great again in the aftermath of the George Floyd blasphemy is an absurdity. White America only existed as a real nation in the South before the Civil War. ([11](#)) Since that time we have been a Jacobin-Marxist non-nation, consecrated to the sacred negro. Trump's 'victory' was nothing more than a man picking up one broken shard from the ruins of a stately mansion burnt to the ground. There is no house left to defend against the looters and despoilers, but we have a certain admiration for a man who is at least man enough to take down a few looters before he goes down.

Beginning with Spengler's *Decline of the West* in 1918, the 20<sup>th</sup> century has produced enough 'death-of-the-West' books to fill a large library. I'm not speaking of the celebratory death-of-the-West books, the books in which the authors were glad the West was dying; I am speaking of the men who wanted to show us the way to restore the West. Richard Weaver, in *Ideas Have Consequences*, spoke for all the death-of-the-West authors when he said he was not going to conclude his objective analysis of the ills of the West with a plea of impotence, he was going to offer a solution to the demise of the West. And what was Weaver's solution? He told us to cling to the right of private property.

Other death-of-the-West conservatives offered different restoration plans from Weaver's, but their plans did not really differ in kind from Weaver's plan. All the conservatives presented very rational, material solutions to a spiritual problem. That which all conservatives sought to avoid, the issue of "Who moved the stone," was placed off to the side while the Socratic conservatives debated with the Jacobin mad-dogs. The debate has now ended in America: the 'noble savage' Jacobins have won. But throughout the European nations the conservative shadows of the liberals are busy outlining their policies of defeat. They have made Christ into Socrates and the noble black savage their savior. Such states cannot stand up against the looters and despoilers.

Yeats's oft-quoted statement that the best lack all conviction and the worst are full of passionate intensity no longer describes the plight of Western man. It is now a case of the best, the formerly Christian Europeans, having adopted the passionate intensity of the worst, the mad-dog liberals; they have learned to love the sacred negro. And with that love of the sacred negro comes legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, transgenderism, and every other evil under the sun. If the natural savage represents virtue, then the complete indulgence of one's appetites becomes virtuous and the practice of the old Christian virtues becomes sin:

*They teach the people, that the debauchers of virgins, almost in the arms of their parents, may be safe inmates in their house, and even fit guardians of the honour of those husbands who succeed legally to the office which the young literators had pre-occupied, without asking leave of law or conscience.*

-Burke, [Letter to a Member of the National Assembly](#)

The liberals, or if you like a harsher phrase, the radical left, are pushing their Satanic logic to its ultimate conclusion. Like predatory carnivores, they sense that their prey will not fight, so they are going in for the kill. The Socratic Christians have joined the radical left; they also want white blood as well. And they hope if they join with the radical left that they will be spared.

It is fight or die; there are no other options for the white European. It's possible to be killed later than sooner by sacrificing your kith and kin to the liberals and the heathens of color, but that is the only way to survive, for a time, in Liberaldom. Do you want to survive that way? "Yes," the grazers and the conservatives proclaim, "We will survive if we denounce the racist whites and their civilization." That won't be the case – the conservatives and the grazers will be slaughtered soon after their betrayal of their people. If the white grazers and the conservatives don't love His Europe and His people enough to fight for them, then they are not going to be of any use to themselves or the remnant band. Is there a remnant band? I don't see them, but what is our faith if it can be seen?

In old Europe, the Europe of Shakespeare, Handel, and Rembrandt, we were vouchsafed a vision of the living God. We saw, with our hearts, the divine Love. And in modern Europe we have been given a vision of unadulterated Satanism. If we love where we should love and hate where we should hate, we will oppose the liberals with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Why hasn't that happened? **Why don't the European people want to fight the liberals to the death? They won't fight the devil and his minions because they do not love the God-Man who died on the cross for our sins and to save us from death. Only our Savior can inspire us to fight against the seemingly irresistible forces of liberalism.** But He no longer dwells within the European people's hearts. There can be only one Savior. If the sacred negro has replaced Christ as the God of the European people, how can they fight against the liberals? They can't and they won't. Thus the love of the sacred negro doth make cowards and traitors of the European people.

The conservative death-of-the-West chroniclers could not unseat the mad-dog liberals because they themselves were universalists. They could not champion a particular people against a generic love for all mankind, which the liberals made claim to, because they would not champion the particular God who entered human history. Paine, in his *Rights of Man*, dismissed Burke's concern for the victims of the Terror with the statement: "What matters the loss of a few frills and few people." That is the same man who said of Christianity: "It has been the most dishonorable belief against the character of the Divinity, the most destructive to morality and the peace and happiness of man, that ever was propagated since man began." Paine, who sought to make man's religion conform to reason and science, won out over Burke, who was concerned with "a few frills and few people." Christian Europe was that frill and all the white Europeans who adhere to His Europe are the few people who must be eliminated. We cannot place our hopes, as the conservatives do, in the debate over universal theories designed to save a generic mankind from unhappiness and suffering in this world. There is no panacea in the abstractions of the liberals, be they classical or mad-dog. There is only death in life and eternal damnation in rational, scientific panaceas that reject our unscientific faith in our risen Lord.

If you can't love a particular God and a particular people, you will never be able to draw a line in the sand and tell your enemies, "Thou shalt not cross that line, or you will die." If our God and our people can be dismissed as "frills and a few people," we will watch the people who worship the great universal god, the sacred negro, destroy every vestige of the European civilization that once was our spiritual home. Throughout the European world, the monuments, the art works, even the bodies of our honored dead are being destroyed and desecrated. Does it matter? Why should we defend dead racists? Shouldn't we embrace what is scientific and real, the natural world of the sacred negro? Can the sacred negro, with the backing of science, which is the liberals' holy ghost, raise the dead? Does the sacred negro love us? For the love of Him who died on the cross we must drive them, the liberals and their colored minions, back across that European line, and then we must defend that line against all the world.

I knew that the conservatives were spiritually weak because they were not really conservative, and I knew that the grazers were confused and easily manipulated by the liberal elite. But I did not think the liberals and their colored minions could be so blatantly evil without eliciting *some* kind of response from the conservatives and the grazers. The spiritual rot is even deeper than I thought. What is there left to say to the conservatives and the grazers? Nothing at all.

So much blood has been shed by white men for the negro. Our 'civil' war, which had nothing civil about it, was fought under the banner of 'black lives matter,' and a "few" white lives didn't matter. That remains the mantra of the Jacobin-Marxist. The people that matter are the blacks, and the vermin that must be exterminated are the whites throughout all of the European nations. All the white men and the white women in leadership positions in the European world have signed on to the extermination of the white race under the banner of 'black lives matter.' But why do black lives matter? If Christ be not risen, if faith, hope, and charity belongs only in fairy tale books, then why should I, or any man, care about a criminally inclined race of people? Only white Christians, the whites of the old South, and the apartheid South Africans cared enough about black people to make the attempt to save them from themselves, to put a stop to their hellish, murderous heathenism. When there are no longer any whites to stand between them and the Orientals, they will become beasts of burden, enslaved by the masters of torture and cruelty. And the whites who worship them, where will they be? They will be in the place with the swine who went over the cliff in their mad flight from the Son of the living God.

In my freshmen year in college I read Bertrand Russell's famous work on the religions of the world. When he came to Christianity he asserted that no force of will, no sentimental desire to once again embrace our beloved dead, could alter the nothingness of our existence here on earth. I rebelled against Russell then just as I rebel against the 'black lives matter' mantra of the Jacobin-Marxists and the colored barbarians now. I won't betray my God and my people by bowing down to the principalities and powers of this world. If, as it appears, there are no Europeans left on the face of the earth, I can at least make my refusal. I will not bend my knee to any God but Christ, and I will be faithful to only one nation – His Europe. As for the rest of the world, the inhuman devils cavorting around the throne of the sacred negro, who is a conduit to Satan, at that world, I hurl my defiance.

The love that once was there in that magnificent living tapestry of Christian Europe is still here. I can see all of my honored dead when I close my outer eyes and listen with the inner eye of the heart. They still live in Christ and through Christ. That vision of the heart will sustain me and thee in our day of battle with the liberals and their colored minions, and it will sustain us "all through the night." +

---

(1) It is not just offensive, it is blasphemous when outwardly masculine sport figures applaud the removal of the Confederate flag at sporting events like NASCAR. That flag, the only American flag with a cross on it, is the symbol of a Christian nation in which charity was extended to all people, black and white, and the honor of that civilization was maintained by a white hierarchy who worshipped Christ, not the negro and science. And because they didn't worship the negroes, they were able to elevate the negroes. That is something the liberals have never done and never will do.

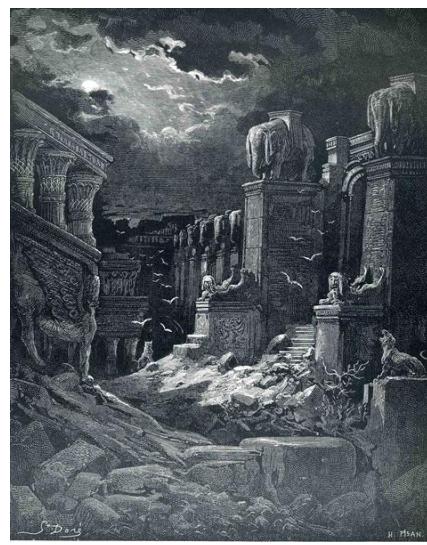
The modern world condemns all that is good and lauds everything that is evil. It is an easy thing to denounce your Christian forebears by calling them racists. But let's state the truth of the matter. The outwardly masculine anti-racists are spiritual cowards. They lack the moral courage to stand with a few brave souls against the world. Will we ever see European manhood, the Christian manhood of men like Burke, Havelock, Forrest, and Lee, again? No, we won't, unless we see the God-Man's blood upon the rose.

# The Iniquity of Negro Worship

June 20, 2020

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Fear of racist label, Negro worship

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare, St. Paul



Dore, Babylon

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. –[Revelations 18: 5](#)

The gentle bard told us what happens when charity gives way to cruelty:

*It will come  
Humanity must perforse prey on itself.  
Like monsters of the deep.*

Of course the inevitable has happened: without the charity that never faileth, which only existed in racist Europe, humanity is preying upon itself. The demon-crats want a police force in order to enforce the laws of demon-cracy, the Antifa want no police because they still perceive the police as a threat, and the black gods of the demon-crats and the Antifa hold their white subjects in the ranks of the demon-crats and the Antifa in contempt. Bringing up the rear are the conservative shadows of the liberals who respond to the burnings, the lootings, the rapes, and the murders by the blacks with pleas for dialogue with the devil and his minions. “Surely,” the conservatives plead, “we can all agree on that which is essential – we must love the negro, with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Proceeding on that essential, can’t we all come together?” No, we can’t all come together based on our love of the sacred negro. That religious absolute is the reason we live in a non-nation quickly becoming hell on earth.

I was surprised to see the people of the new nation of CHOP demanding porta-potties from the old nation of the demon-crats. Isn’t the need to defecate something that belongs only to the original sinners of racism? I thought utopian humanity had gone beyond that need. I suppose, for a time, certain non-utopian elements will appear in utopia. The utopians might have to receive aid from outside until they can evolve beyond racist humanity and become as gods who do not need porta-potties, electricity, and garbage removal.

Some demon-crats have expressed concerns over the extremism of the Antifa utopians. By what right do they criticize the Antifa utopians? Aren’t the Antifa their children? The demon-crats cannot, so long as the Antifa act in the name of the sacred negro, oppose anything the Antifa do. That leaves the Nancy Pelosis, who love their ice cream, and the Joe Bidens, who love their status as politicians, in a bind. They dare not seem too far to the right of Antifa, because their careers are based on being on the left, but if they allow Antifa to have their way they will not be allowed their ice cream palaces or their highly exalted status in Liberaldom. They will be consigned to a porta-potty existence in CHOP and other such mini-states.

The devil can set a tidal wave of evil in motion, but he can’t control where it goes and who it will engulf. Nor can we, mere mortals, predict the end result of the devil’s assault on the Christ-bearing race. All we know is that it will not be good. Will the Antifa liberals destroy the demon-crats and set up a whole nation of CHOPs? Will the demon-crats continue to rule while allowing for certain CHOP states within our anti-nation? Or will the blacks destroy the white liberal geese that are providing them with golden eggs by murdering the white Antifaers and the white demon-crats? I think we will have what Sweden has, what France has, what Belgium has, and what Britain has: we will have a far left government with a police and military that do not enforce any laws against the creatures of color, but that will enforce very strict laws against white ‘racists.’ And of course the definition of a white racist is: “Anybody who is white.” I think it would be better for the white grazers if the Antifaers completely destroyed our existing government. Then it will be clear to whites that they are on their own. They won’t hold out any false hope that their police and their military are going to save them. Of course neither I nor any man knows exactly how this new gambit of the Jacobin-Marxists will actually play out. But we do know who is behind this onslaught, so we know with complete certainty that what ensues will not be good. And we also know that we cannot dialogue with the devil. We must stop retreating before his minions in the hope that they and their master will stop just short of us. They won’t stop of their own accord, they must be stopped by Christian men.

The America of “My Country, ‘Tis of Thee, Sweet Land of Liberty,” is finished. But that should not make us despair. We never really belonged to that country. We belong to His Europe; whatever was good in our nation came from the Christian faith, which our illustrious founding fathers deemed too trivial and unimportant to be enshrined in our laws and Constitution. Lincoln was right: we were and are a nation conceived in liberty, liberty from God. Can such a nation long endure? No, it did not long endure. Americans needed a God; they couldn’t worship a system of government without a God at the center of that government. The sacred negro has entered the void at the heart of our nation and the other democratic nations of Europe. He is the new Savior of the European people. We won’t be able to see Him who saves while we are kneeling before the altar of the sacred negro.

Only the white Europeans, as a people, held His sacred cross before their eyes. “In life and death, oh Lord abide with me.” And only the white race has made the sacred negro their God. Is that a coincidence? Of course not. Negro worship comes from academia; the Rousseauian philosophers and French pamphleteers ushered in the French Revolution, and the flames of that revolution continue to be fueled by academics throughout the European world. We must then ask – from whence came academia? It came to us through the rational sector, the non-poetic sector, of ancient Greece. The first talk show culture existed in ancient Athens. “Let’s sit around and discuss the idea of God, while rejecting beforehand the possibility of knowing the truth about God.” Into that world, the world of academia, came St. Paul. And he preached the resurrection and the life through Jesus Christ.

*Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry. Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him. Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean. (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)*

– [Acts 17: 16-21](#)

When our people came to see the same vision St. Paul saw on the road to Damascus, they became a people such as the world had never seen before. They bore witness to the one true God, whom the Athenian academics claimed could not possibly be the one true God. When we blend their world, the academics’ world of talk shows and panel discussions, with St. Paul’s inner world, the world of a heart connected to Christ, we destroy faith in Jesus Christ. The church as an organization is a ‘this world only’ organization. Dostoyevsky depicts such a church, a church opposed to Jesus Christ, in the Grand Inquisitor chapter of his novel [The Brothers Karamazov](#). That church, the church of philosophy and theology, whose clergy study God from outside instead of taking Him into their hearts, spawned academia. And academia ultimately made Christ an intellectual construct who could be rejected completely or turned into Socrates.

I have not lost the thread of the story. We came to this pass where evil is given free reign so long as it is done in the name of the sacred negro, because we, as a people, have lost St. Paul’s vision of Christ as an ever present reality within every human heart that seeks to know Him “feelingly.” That is the way of true wisdom, the heartfelt wisdom that eschews the putrid, false wisdom of academia. The Europeans cannot, having once taken the one true God into their civilization, return to pure paganism. They must have a god who is a satanic caricature of the one true God. The negro is their savior, he is the new suffering servant. But has he really suffered at the hands of white people as his devotees tell us? No, he has not. His alleged persecutors in apartheid South Africa and the Old South were in reality his liberators who attempted to save him from heathenism, but the liberals must tell a different story, they must tell us of the black man’s horrible suffering because he must be their savior. And how does the new savior compare to Christ concerning mercy and forgiveness? There is no mercy or forgiveness in the black savior. Nor is there any hope for the resurrection of the dead in and through the black savior. Yet still the liberals cling to him, and the white grazers kneel to him. Do the grazers secretly

yearn for Christ? I do not know just how far down the slippery slope they have gone, but it is a sad fact that we have a state religion that has surpassed Sodom and Gomorrah and the Babylonians in evil. And the evil of this our modern uncivilization is unopposed because the evil is done in the name of the sacred negro who cannot be opposed.

We know neither the day nor the hour, but I wonder, when I see Satan's banner – "Black Lives Matter" – defiantly placed at the heart of what was once Christendom, if the final battle, the Icelandic Ragnarök and/or the Biblical Armageddon is now at hand. But then I draw back – such things are not within the ken of mortal men. And we are told that not even the angels in heaven know the day nor the hour. However, we have been given the heart to distinguish good from evil. It is not possible to love the sacred negro and love Christ. Nor is it possible to blend the two loves in order to avoid conflict. We have a war on our hands that can only be avoided if we surrender to the devil and his minions.

We are constantly told by the liberals that any criticism of Black Lives Matter is heresy and will be dealt with quite severely. White reactionaries will not be allowed to impose their old world racism on the new utopian world of diversity. But that old racist world had in it all that we will ever know of the love that passeth the understanding of the rational mind. To know that we touch the heart of God through human hearts imbued with His divine charity is a gift more precious to us than all the riches of this world. "Like unto that of a little child." (1) What the great poets of our race saw in our people was a childlike faith in our Father which art in Heaven; they believed He would be with us always, through His Son, in life and death. They received that faith at their racial hearth fire, and they took that faith to all the corners of the earth. Now all the colored heathens of the earth are converging on the formerly Christian nations of Europe, at the special invitation of the Jacobin-Marxists, to sit on the thrones and be worshipped in the churches that were once consecrated to Christ our King.

Whites will only fight "Black Lives Matter," which is the sign, symbol, and substance of liberalism, if they desire to become, once again, children of God. If they have no such desire, if they want to be grown-up pagans who get along quite nicely without the Divine Love, then they will continue to bow down to the sacred negro in order to obtain the approbation of the liberals and, they hope, the riches of this world. I am not that tough. I need the Divine Love and mercy. Therefore I will not bend my knee to Black Lives Matter – I will fight that entity with my whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) Some readers have asked about a blog post I wrote in September 2007 called, "The Sacred Heritage." The authors I mentioned in that post had the European Faith of, "like unto that of a little child." The post is viewable [here](#).

# Back from the Dead

June 27, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Faithful hearts, Negro worship

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare, T. Lothrop Stoddard



Gilbert. *Lear and the Fool*

LEAR: Prithee go in thyself; seek thine own ease.  
This tempest will not give me leave to ponder  
On things would hurt me more. But I'll go in.  
In, boy; go first.- You houseless poverty-  
Nay, get thee in. I'll pray, and then I'll sleep. Exit .  
Poor naked wretches, whereso'er you are,  
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads and unfed sides,  
Your loop'd and window'd raggedness, defend you  
From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them  
And show the heavens more just.

-[King Lear](#)

Jasper was to have been tracked remorselessly to his death by the man whom he supposed he had slain. Risen from his grave, Drood was to have driven Jasper to his tomb, there to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt: but to find there instead, alive and implacable, the man whom he had doomed to a sudden and terrible death, and in whose dust he had come to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt.

-Richard A. Proctor, [Watched by the Dead](#)

That Trump has not said anything against the deification of George Floyd and the Black Lives Matter group should not surprise us. Trump never at any point in his campaign nor in his inaugural speech gave any indication he was opposed to the worship of the sacred negro. In fact, everything he said and did told us that he was one with the liberals in his worship of the sacred negro. Trump ran afoul of the mad-dog liberals because he thought then (and still thinks) a nation dedicated to the sacred negro does not have to exterminate whites. Whites should be allowed, Trump maintains, to live and work in the United States so long as they do homage to the sacred negro. That is why the liberals hate him; they want every presidential candidate to sign on to the extermination of the white race, and Trump has not done that.

Trump is the best president that white people will ever get; the rest of the Republicans who follow Trump will agree to the gradual extermination of the white race, just as their Republican predecessors such as Bush and Regan did. But Trump's vision of whites working side by side with the negroes in an effort to maintain a nation consecrated to the negro is not compatible with the Christian faith. Such a vision, even if it were possible to bring about, is morally reprehensible because we should not bend our knee to the sacred negro. And it is not possible, even if we wanted to abandon our faith in order to be part of Liberalism, to work side by side with the liberals and the negroes, because they believe that the white race must be eliminated. You can't *mea culpa, mea culpa* your way out of the original sin of white racism. If you are white, you are guilty; you will not be forgiven your whiteness, you must die for your sin.(1)

If Trump is the best that we can elect and he is committed to the same soul-killing, blasphemous faith as the mad-dog liberals, which is the worship of the sacred negro, then everything is cheerless, dark and deadly; we are doomed. Isn't that right? No, it is not right. We are only doomed if we stay within the prison of democracy. Whites have always been a tiny minority among the races of the world. If they have small, village-meeting type democracies within the confines of a non-democratic white government, they might not do themselves great harm. But if they make a racially diverse democracy their national system of government, they are committing suicide. Which is, of course, what whites have done. They accepted the extermination of the white race in the name of a democratic government which has placed the sacred negro at the center of our culture. Our church services, our arts, our sports, and our civic organizations are all centered on one thing – the worship of the great black gods.

Democracy is the white people's shroud. If they accept that shroud as their destiny, if they do not tear that shroud to pieces, they will have earned the eternal night the liberals have planned for them. Christian Europe was an impossibility, yet it came into being despite its impossibility because the white Europeans who took Christ into their hearts did not live life second-hand through the demon-kratic process. They saw the divine love in Christ and they loved Him; they saw evil in those who opposed Christ's reign of charity, and they fought that evil. They did not vote on who God was nor did they try to stop evil by dialoging with the devil.(2)

Noting remains left inside of the European people because they have answered Dostoyevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?", with a resounding 'No.' We entered the 20<sup>th</sup> century with the 'no,' but there still remained a great Christian ethical holdover through the first 50 years of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. The second half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century was the half-century in which the European people discarded the last remnants of the ethos that stemmed from a faith in Christ. Now, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, we have embarked on a new journey without the Christian faith and without the ethos that came from a faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. Whither do we go without our ancient faith? We go to the sacred negro; surely he will save us from the pestilence that walketh at noonday and the arrows that flieth by night. Do you believe that? Do you believe in the sacred negro? Our European people, especially our young people, do not even know that they have a sacred heritage. They believe they are only alive to the extent that they worship the sacred negro: "In the sacred negro and through the sacred negro, there is life." That is what our people are taught. No wonder they are in despair. Somewhere in the recesses of their soul they yearn for someone besides the

sacred negro. They will never find that Someone if the remnant band who still believe in Christ as true God and true man will not stand against the Black Lives Matter movement of the liberals and the colored heathen.<sup>(3)</sup> “Truth is truth till the end of reckoning,” Isabella declares in Shakespeare’s *Measure for Measure*. And negro worship is demonism; that is and always shall be true till the end of reckoning. You cannot serve two masters. If your Christian faith consists of proclaiming the compatibility of Christianity and negro worship, you are not a Christian. If we are true to our Jesus, we must renounce the devil and all his works, even if that means we must stand alone against the demon-possessed liberal swine who command us to bow down before the sacred negro.

It appears when we look at the modern Europeans that the European people are a race of cowards. How else can we explain a people who willingly place themselves in subjugation to another race, a race of cruel, merciless people who have not charity? But if we look at the history of the European people, we see there once was great courage and virtue within their ranks. What happened to them? It is our faith that gives us courage and strength. The Europeans now have a very strange faith — they believe they must submit to the cruelties of blacks because the black race is the manifestation of God incarnate. From my perspective, as a Christian, that is the ultimate blasphemy, but it is the belief of the modern Europeans.

Is it possible to go from where we are, in a nation in which the inhabitants worship the sacred negro, back to that other nation in which the inhabitants worshipped the Lord God, Jesus Christ? Yes, it is possible. It doesn’t, at present, seem very likely that the European people will break away from the sacred negro, but still there is that lonely figure standing before the Sanhedrin and answering Caiaphas’s question, “Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?,” with the words, “I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.” What was it that destroyed our faith in the great “I am”? It was the first part of the liberals’ trinity, the abstract intellect of man. St. Bonaventure warned the world about the danger of the Thomistic revolt against the indwelling spirit of Christ championed by the apostles and St. Paul. Their experience of God was a direct, heartfelt encounter: they saw Christ “feelingly” with the passion of men with hearts of flesh, and they passed on a vision of the heart, not a theory of God, to subsequent generations of Christians. By placing God out there, St. Thomas and all the philosophically minded clergymen made man’s abstract intellect, not man’s heart, the great arbiter of truth.

The first abstract-intellect men in the church decided in favor of the Christian God, but the natural philosophers who followed in St. Thomas’s train decided against the Christian God, who was declared to be a fraud. First the Voltaires and the Rousseaus revolted, but they were just a few weakened links on a strong chain of faith stretching all the way back to that stable in Bethlehem. But over many, many years, with the backing of science, men of “intelligence” succeeded in making the Christ story into a bedtime fairy tale, something that no intelligent people give any credence to. We must now prepare to meet with Caliban. We must destroy negro worship by attacking, as St. Paul did, the first person of the liberals’ trinity, the abstract intellect of man.

It is now taken as a given that the “intelligent” men and women are liberals. But is that the case if intelligence comes from vision, not from rationality? What do the prophets, who see with blinding sight, tell us about existence? What do St. Paul and the Apostles tell us? And what do the poets of our race, men such as Shakespeare, Chateaubriand, Scott, Dostoyevsky, Burke, and Grundtvig, tell us about that indwelling spirit within us who has a local habitation and a name? Kent begs King Lear to “see better,” to see with his heart, so that he can know it is Cordelia who loves him, not Goneril and Regan. So long as we remain captive to the satanically illuminated mind, we will not know the God who loves us, we will remain tragically allied with the liberals and the savage gods of color, and ultimately, through them, we will be connected to Satan.

I noticed in my early days in the prolife movement that “prolifers,” when going before the liberals’ Sanhedrin, would condemn legalized abortion because innocent black babies were being aborted. That was and is true, but what are you conceding when you say abortion is bad only because it kills black babies? You are kowtowing to the liberals’ god, the sacred negro. That is a game you cannot win: you cannot plead for redemption from the devil. The essence of the liberals’ new religion of the noble black savage is bloody sacrifice, not mercy. I saw another example of conservatives pandering to the black gods of liberalism the other day on Breitbart, which reported that Muhammad Ali Jr. had come out against Black Lives Matter. That does Muhammad Ali Jr. credit, but it does white people no good when the conservative shadows of the liberals ineffectually oppose liberalism by trying to find blacks who are opposed to the extermination of the white race. Do you really think you can obtain mercy and forgiveness from the liberals and the noble savages of color because you can find one black out of a thousand who is willing to allow white people a chance to live? Mercy and love have one source – “None but thee Lord, none but Thee.” Why won’t white people look to the God of their ascending race to save them instead of the second person of the liberals’ trinity?

In his book *Watched by the Dead*, Richard A. Proctor points out that in almost every book Charles Dickens wrote, there is some character gliding through the book that is thought to be dead, or, if still alive, thought to be inconsequential or too downright stupid to be taken notice of. And that character always steps out of the shadows of death, inconsequentiality, and stupidity to turn the tables on the evil villains of the novel. The same pattern can be seen in the works of Shakespeare and Walter Scott. Christ was the inconsequential figure in the Roman Empire and in the Jewish state who was considered dead and buried, but He became the reason for the defeat of both those secular realms, and He became the moral center of a realm called Christian Europe. Now the wheel has come full circle: Christ is once again a shadowy, inconsequential figure in a secular realm that combines the worst features of Roman paganism with a Shylockian hatred of the living God.

The complete collapse of white people in the face of the Black Lives Matter movement indicates a spiritual sickness that cannot be cured. Negro worship has become too deeply ingrained in the heart and soul of the European people. But our people must be cured. I have no empirical proof, but I know that the Mysterious Stranger still stands outside of our racial hearth fires waiting to be invited in. Is it as simple as saying, “Come, Lord Jesus”? Yes, it is that simple, once we have purged from our heart, mind, and soul, all three persons of the liberals’ trinity, the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science. If we fight only a defensive war – “Please allow me into Liberaldom, because I too worship the sacred negro” — we will surely cease to exist as a people in this world and will surely suffer eternal damnation in the next world. But if we go on the offensive, if we attack the immoral imbecility of the men of the abstract intellect, the blasphemy of negro worship, and the soul-killing superficiality of science, we will find our people and our God once again.+

(1) The best-selling book, which is now a textbook in our schools, *White Fragility*, by Robin DiAngelo, is a precise exposition of the liberals’ religion. All whites are guilty of racism and all whites must die – except the illuminated whites such as DiAngelo, who have gone beyond whiteness to a plane of existence that thee and me cannot achieve. What DiAngelo desires for us is Haiti:

*The nature of these events is well shown by the letter of a French officer secretly in Port-au-Prince at the time, who himself escaped by a miracle to the lesser evil of an English prison in Jamaica. “The murder of the whites in detail,” he writes, “began at Port-au-Prince in the first days of January, but on the 17<sup>th</sup> and 18<sup>th</sup> March were finished off en masse. All, without exception, have been massacred, down to the very women and children. Madame de Boynes was killed in a peculiarly horrible manner. A young mulatto named Fifi Pariset ranged the town like a madman searching the houses to kill the little children. Many of the men and women were hewn down by sappers, who hacked off their arms and smashed in their chests. Some were poniarded, others mutilated, others ‘passed on the bayonet,’ others disemboweled with knives or sabres, still others stuck like pigs. At the beginning a great number were drowned. The same general massacre has taken place all over the colony, and as I write you these lines I believe that there are not twenty whites still alive – and these not for long.”*

*This estimate, was indeed, scarcely exaggerated. The white race had perished utterly out of the land. French San Domingo had vanished forever, and the black State of Haiti had begun its troubled history.*

[-The French Revolution in San Domingo](#) by T. Lothrop Stoddard

(2) I sometimes go to a nearby shooting range. I don’t know why, but every shooting range I have ever gone to has a resident ‘gun nut.’ I don’t use that term in a derogatory sense – the gun nut is not a crazy man just itching to gun people down, far from it. The gun nut is usually an Americanist, an American Legion man who loves to show off his guns and talk about our marvelous Constitution with a Second Amendment that guarantees our right to bear arms.

The gun nut at this particular range is named, as most gun nuts are, Joe, and he regularly shows me guns of an amazing variety and high quality. Joe never shoots his guns, he just shows them off. Which calls to mind Patrick McManus’s (the great comic outdoorsman) statement to his wife when she asked him why he owned so many guns that he never shoots: “You don’t have a gun to shoot it, you have a gun so that it can be your gun.”

One day Joe – “he held me with his glittering eye” – started going on about other countries like Britain that had no Second Amendment and therefore had no guns to cherish anymore. Without trying to tweak Joe, because I liked the man, I said that the liberals in our country would eventually, by imperial fiat, take all the legally registered guns away from our people, so that it behooved us to start up a black market traffic in guns. Joe was incredulous: “They wouldn’t violate the Second Amendment.”

White people such as Joe, who are not at heart liberals, must come to realize that liberalism is from the devil. The devil does not respect constitutions, elections, or any of our democratic procedures. In fact he uses them for his own purposes. When they don’t suit his purposes, he abandons them. Look within, look to pietas – there you will find the passion and the fire to love much, to love your own and hate the devil.

(3) Tucker Carlson is the best of the mainstream commentators. He confronts issues that all the other ‘conservatives’ run away from. However, he falls woefully short in his commentary, because he still avoids the main crisis of the European people. Recently I heard Carlson say, quite rightly, that the terrorists of Antifa and Black Lives Matter should be opposed. Language is sermonic: calling terrorists terrorists is certainly a good start; they are not ‘protestors.’ Carlson went on to say that Trump should do something. Yes, he should. But what should be done to stop terrorists? The answer is simple – terrorists should be shot and killed. No government that is still a government can tolerate what is now going on in the name of Black Lives Matter. The F.B.I. gave orders to “shoot to kill” when they were dealing with the “white supremacist” Randy Weaver and his family. And they did just that: they shot and killed

Weaver's wife while she was standing in the doorway of their house, with her baby in her arms. Surely she was a dangerous terrorist who deserved to die! But the "peaceful protestors" throwing Molotov cocktails while they loot, murder, and rape are a protected species. The police are told not to shoot those creatures but to let them be.

No man can be elected to office in our nation who does not do homage to the sacred negro. If Trump gave the order to "shoot to kill" the Antifa/Black Lives Matter terrorists, he would be removed from office, tried for murder, and then executed. And he knows that. Trump is a very brave man, but he is not going to deliberately put his head on the chopping block.

Carlson is right to focus on the accelerating rate of the crime wave engulfing our anti-nation. But he is dead wrong to call for democratic solutions to a crisis that is a crisis of faith. If our people had the same faith in Christ as the antique Europeans, they would not be naked to their enemies. They would do what has to be done. We cannot avoid this thing called faith. Do we serve Christ or the negro?

# Recrossing our Spiritual Rubicon

July 4, 2020

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Negro worship, Religion of Satan, Utopianism

Tags: Edgar Wallace, Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Rembrandt. The Return of the Prodigal Son

She crept among the trees to the trunk of a tree whence she could see, beyond some intervening trees and branches, the lighted windows, both in their reality and their reflection in the water. She placed her orderly little basket at her side, and sank upon the ground, supporting herself against the tree. It brought to her mind the foot of the Cross, and she committed herself to Him who died upon it. —[Our Mutual Friend](#)

For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid. —[Mark 6:50](#)

The lack of a Christian response to the Antifa/Black Lives Matter assault on the white race and the Demon-crats' Covid-19 assault on the white race has supplied those who need to see before they believe a look at the state of the European people's collective soul. Lo and behold, they have no collective soul, they have forfeited their souls to the devil and his minions

All utopian thinking is divorced from the human heart, existing only in the airy nothings of the abstract intellects of the utopians. As a result, the closer a nation gets to the implementation of utopia, the closer that nation gets to the institution of everything inhuman, cruel, and barbaric. God is humane – He comes to us through human hearts. The Christian utopians in the Church, who jettisoned the human heart because it was impure and theologically problematic and bid us turn to their utopian plans for a perfect Christian future, paved the way for the secular utopians who moved us to an even greater 'perfection' than the Christian utopians. The utopian churchmen look to a perfect Christianity devoid of the racist Europeans while the secular utopians look to a perfect world devoid of the racist Europeans and the Son of God. Christ the social worker can stay in our modern utopias, but He must be subordinate to the sacred negro, who is at the center of all the European utopian states. Pope Francis the blasphemer and his like-minded clerical sycophants can stay at one with the secular liberals because their 'Christianity' is a utopian 'Christianity' completely in line with the Christ-less utopias of the secular utopians. Some European nations are not as 'advanced' – which translates to 'satanic' – as the United States is, but all the European nations are moving toward democratic utopias that are in reality the incarnation of Satan.

Obviously I am generalizing when I say that the European people, as a people, have lost their collective soul. Surely there must be some European people left with souls that still live? That is my hope, or why bother writing? But we must face the reality that even if we allow for exceptions, we are still faced with the tragic reality that the majority of our people have given their souls to the devil while the rest of our people have been spiritually neutered; they haven't the will or the heart to fight their demon-possessed countrymen. In our own nation, the anti-nation called the United States, we are about to reap what the devil has sown. We are going to see what happens when people forsake their Christian past in order to embrace a Christless future.

So let's be clear: other white nations might not have crossed their spiritual Rubicon, they might still have many miles to go before they reach it, but in the United States we have crossed our spiritual Rubicon. We are an anti-nation that is totally in the hands of Satan and his minions. If we try to behave as if the liberals are something other than what they are – demons – we will continue to try and deal with them as if they are human beings capable of responding to existence with human sentiments and human decency. Utopians have no humanity, they have renounced everything but their own abstract intellects, which can view the suffering of mankind with complete indifference if that suffering leads to their utopian kingdom of heaven on earth, which is in reality the kingdom of hell on earth.

The alternative news sites, which report many of the various atrocities committed by the liberals in the name of their utopian kingdom, with the sacred negro at its center, are just as shocking in their opposition as the atrocities they report. The conservative and nationalist opposition to liberalism is shocking because it is completely disproportionate to the atrocities reported. The conservatives' opposition to the liberals' demonism is the equivalent of a man who writes a letter to his local paper as his family members are being massacred by vicious barbarians who have invaded his home. When you have crossed a spiritual Rubicon as a nation, when your rulers are demon-crats and the bulk of your people are easily manipulated by the demon-crats because they have become convinced they have no sacred heritage to defend, you cannot try to survive by democratic measures. When Satan enters the body politic, extraordinary measures, measures that come from a spirit opposed to Satan, must be used.

Let me reference the master of thrillers and high class melodramas, Edgar Wallace. In his novel [The Fourth Plague](#) (1913), he tells of two Italian brothers from the ranks of the nobility, one evil and one good. The evil brother, Festini, plans with the aid of his secret society, the Red Hand, to drop bombs containing the Bubonic Plague all over Britain in order to destroy Britain. Without revealing that Festini is his brother, the good brother goes before Parliament and tells them that the normal democratic procedures will not stop the Red Hand. The good brother asks the members of Parliament to grasp the fact that the Red Hand is pure evil and must be dealt with by taking extreme measures that fall outside the normal procedures for dealing with lesser criminals:

*"I do not know," he said, "what plans this Parliament has formed for ridding the country of so dangerous and so terrible a force. No plan," he spoke earnestly and emphatically, and punctuated his speech with characteristic gestures, "which you may decide upon, can be effective unless it includes some system of physical extermination. I do not make myself clear, perhaps," he said, hurriedly, "although I have a very large acquaintance with your language." He emphasized his point with one finger on the palm of his hand. "These men are going to destroy you and your kind. Believe me, they will have no compunction; the plague will be spread throughout England unless you take the most drastic steps within the next few hours. There is no existing law on the statute books which exactly provides for the present situation. You must create a new method to deal with a new crime, and, Mr. Speaker, whatever this House does, whatever steps it takes, however dreadful may be the form of punishment which it, in its wisdom, may devise, it cannot be too drastic or too severe to deal with the type of criminal organization which the 'Red Hand' represents."*

In the beginning of his novel, Wallace tells us that "all the characters in the book are fictitious," but that is no longer true. We now face real life members of the fictional Red Hand. They are called by various names – liberals, Antifa, and Black Lives Matter, but they are all completely evil. The good brother's response to the Red Hand should be our response to the

liberal/Antifa/BLM creatures from hell – “Don’t arrest them, eliminate them.” But of course it is too late for that – white Christians are on the outside of the law, and the various branches of Liberaldom feel toward us as the good brother felt about the Red Hand headed by his demonic brother: “Eliminate them.”

Burke went before the British Parliament and warned its members that the Jacobin plague was a plague like no other. And Dostoevsky went before his people and warned them that the Jacobin-Bolshevik plague would result in the death of millions. We refused to see that America was also facing a potential plague spawned by demon-possessed liberals, and now it is upon us. Let us cease the democratic platitudes and deal with the evil demons of liberalism as Christian men should deal with evil.

It would be easy to dismiss the best of the melodramatic adventure authors of the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, but authors such as Wallace, H. C. MacNeile, Johnston McCulley, and Sax Rohmer had something that the existentialist writers of the 20<sup>th</sup> century and the social justice authors of the 21<sup>st</sup> century lacked: they still had a Christian view of good and evil. The villains were against white Christian Europe, and the heroes defended white Christian Europe. If Christ did indeed rise from the dead, then Sax Rohmer’s novels about the evil Fu Manchu, who always wants to destroy the “white Christians” are more realistic than Samuel Beckett’s *Waiting for Godot* or James Joyce’s *Ulysses*. But of course the great men of intellect do not believe in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. In the absence of that belief, good becomes evil and evil becomes good. Paine’s *Rights of Man*, in which he calls Christianity the most evil religion ever conceived, became the liberals’ Bible while Burke’s assertion that Christian Europe was our only hope, which had to be defended against the demonic Jacobins, was rejected.

When liberals rule, the humane God is discarded in favor of the inhuman god. Negro worship is the logical outcome of liberalism. Under the banner of the sacred negro, everything evil is good and everything good is evil. Small wonder that our cities are being ripped apart by anarchists and black barbarians while the police are ordered to become non-police, to “stand down” and let the sacred negroes destroy white business and kill white citizens, who are really non-citizens with no right to live in utopia. When I see the black butchers parading through the streets of our cities I see the image Stoddard sets before our eyes in his recounting of the events of the French Revolution in San Domingo: “A young mulatto named Fifi Pariset ranged the town like a madman searching the houses to kill the little children. Many of the men and women were hewn down by sappers, who hacked off their arms and...” Why go on? Let us never forget that these massacres, this barbarism, is part and parcel of the liberals’ utopia. What we see before us – the rapes, the lootings, and the murders — are all one big liberal religious festival, except the Pelosi and the DiAngelos no longer knit while they watch the executioners, they eat ice cream and sip wine instead.

There are no provisions in our Constitution to deal with pure evil. In a democracy there is no such thing as original sin; we are all rational creatures who can work things out by appeals to reason. But what if even our reason, *contra* St. Thomas Aquinas, is infected with original sin? What if we can’t come to a rational agreement about what is good and what is evil? The conservative shadows of the liberals keep appealing to the liberals’ reason under the assumption that what is good is what is rational. The liberals then respond, quite rationally, with their demands: “You must die because you are white.” You see the liberals have a religion: they do believe in original sin. They believe in the original sin of whiteness, which is a sin that cannot be forgiven.

In Shakespeare’s *Much Ado About Nothing*, it is the bumbling Constable Dogberry and his companions that catch the villains in the drama: “I have deceived even your very eyes. What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light...” So it is with those authors in the first part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century who tried to please their audiences with exciting ‘potboilers.’ What they brought to light, writing within the framework of a Christian worldview, was that when evil men have placed themselves beyond the ken of humanity, when they are ruled by Satan, it takes a hero, not a candidate, to destroy the evil men. Democracies do not produce Christian heroes, they produce men who, at their best, compromise with evil, and at their worst surrender to evil. Since the defeat of the South in our uncivil war, it has been one compromise with evil after another on the part of white Christians. Now the democratic charade is over. Satan has been unmasked, he was always the force behind our democratic anti-nation. Are the European-Americans too spiritually weak to fight? Yes, they are. All that the conservatives can do, citing educated secularists such as Victor Davis Hanson and Heather MacDonald, is bid us elect a candidate who will democratically oppose the demon-crats, the Antifa, and the BLM. The liberals and their minions are in our streets, they are in our homes, they have no mercy, they have no honor, and they have no charity. They have only the hatred of all things white and Christian that shall endure so long as Satan endures – until Christ returns and consigns Satan and his minions to eternal hell. Do you really think such creatures can be stopped by voting?

I know why the Breitbart conservatives and the Tucker Carlsons do not bid Christian men to rise and ride. They, like their scholastic counterparts in the Church, are uncomfortable with the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. It seems stupid to speak of chivalry and “that charity of honor” in a world of computers, the internet, and new technologies that demand a new language in order to talk about them. I have never learned that language. This I have learned – The modern liberals, be they demon-crats or Antifa, and the colored barbarians of Black Lives Matter are in league with the devil. They are far more evil than the worst villains in the fictional pot boilers of MacNeile, Wallace, Rohmer, and McCulley. Those authors, even with their vivid imaginations, could not conceive of creatures as totally evil as our modern liberals. Why, when the reality of the existence of original sin and the devil is so vividly revealed to us, do we look to secular remedies for that which is a crisis of faith? The devil is attacking, through his minions, the Christ-bearing race. Christ will not leave us defenseless, but He, not ‘our democratic traditions,’ must be invoked if we are going to have any success against the liberals. Must I, again, go through the litany of their cruelties? They murder babies in their mothers’ wombs, they round up the elderly and put them in “nursing homes” in order to infect them with the Covid-19 virus. And they encourage colored barbarians to murder, rape, and destroy. What is there left to say? Just this – All that we know on this earth of charity, which never faileth, and the love which passeth the understanding of the rational mind, came to us through our Christ-imbued European hearth fire. If we are ashamed of that hearth fire, or worse yet, if we demonize that hearth fire, we will stand naked and defenseless before the enemy of mankind. It is impossible for mere mortals to swim against the liberal current and recross their spiritual Rubicon, back to Christian Europe. But all things are possible through Him who saves. The history of our people, when they were a people, proves that. We were born of Christian Europe: that is our hope in this world and the next. +

# The Anaconda's Coil

July 11, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: John D. Phelan, John Sharp Williams



In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. —[Isaiah 27: 1](#)

---

Every 4<sup>th</sup> of July I ask myself why white people celebrate the 4<sup>th</sup> of July. And every year I can only come up with the one great line from the movie *Rebel Without a Cause*. When James Dean asks his rival why, now that they have become friends, they are playing ‘chicken’ with their automobiles, his rival-friend says, “You got to do something, now don’t you?” It seems that the white grazers have a great desire to celebrate something, so they shoot off firecrackers and eat hot dogs on the 4<sup>th</sup> of July. It always strikes me as a rather obscene holiday, but this year, in the wake of the Antifa/Black Lives Matter assault on the white race and the demon-crats COVID-19 assault on the white race, it seems particularly obscene to see white people celebrating the 4<sup>th</sup> of July.

During our American un-Civil War, the Southern people did not celebrate the 4<sup>th</sup> of July. It is a pity – it is a tragedy – that they did not extend that spirit of resistance to star-spangled Americanism past the reconstruction years when they were allowed back into the Union. John Sharp Williams was right to applaud the great Southern heroes of the reconstruction era in an address given to the Sons of the Confederate Veterans on May 31, 1904 ([Vol. XII, No. 11, November 1904, pp. 517-521](#)), heroes who kept the South from being destroyed during those dark days. But shouldn’t there have been a grave warning attached to his praise of the veterans’ efforts to preserve the “white man’s civilization”? The South was accepted back into the Union with the proviso that her people would tow the mark, that they, like the Northerners, would worship the negro. For a time the Southern people skirted around the negro issue, with grandfather clause voting rights and segregation, but Eisenhower ended the South’s delaying action when he sent Federal troops to Little Rock. The Civil War finally ended on September 23, 1957. Now no Americans of the North or the South question the state religion of the United States, which is the worship of the sacred negro.

Burke and his American counterpart, George Fitzhugh, both pointed out that when a government ceases to be conservative, when it sets itself against the customs, manners, and religion of its people, there is no reason to support that government. Thomas Paine, who condemned Christianity and the people who followed that religion, was the lodestar of the American Revolution (*Common Sense*). Lincoln and his cohorts merely put the finishing touches on a Jacobin revolution conceived by men who rejected the Word made flesh and accepted the negro as the second person of their new trinity.

The Antifa/BLM creatures from hell are not following wise policies when they attack demon-crats holding public office. The demon-crats are the great preservers of the American republic, which has flown the banner of the sacred negro for the past century and a half. Why, if you are a Jacobin-Marxist, would you want to destroy the American republic? The police enforce the laws of the land, which are anti-white and anti-Christian, and the American military engages in foreign wars in defense of the sacred negro and the nation of Israel, so why should Jacobin-Marxists oppose those entities? It is white Christians who should oppose them; they are the people that are suffering under the yoke of demon-cracy. Why don’t they oppose demon-cracy? Why do they still celebrate the 4<sup>th</sup> of July? Is it because ‘you got to celebrate something, now don’t you?’ Must that something be the religion of the sacred negro?

A recent piece in the *Chronicle of Higher Education*, required reading for the powers-that-be in academia, declared that “Colleges Are in for a Racial Reckoning: Name Changes Are Only the Beginning” when administrators and faculty come back in the fall. The myth that somewhere there is a white racist among their ranks continues to live on in the halls of academia. Quite the opposite is the case. I vividly remember an incident at the university where I worked some thirty years ago. A black clerical worker had supposedly had the n— word written on her car. After the FBI and a whole host of other law enforcement agencies investigated the crime of the century, it was discovered that the clerical worker had written the bad word herself. Was she disciplined? Of course not, because it was the fear that white racists might fire her for incompetence that had made her do what she did to ensure she would not be fired for incompetence. This type of radical negro worshipping madness will go on until this hideous republic called the United States of America is destroyed because white Christians refuse to support it. That “racial reckoning” that the *Chronicle of Higher Education* has called for is indeed a reckoning we should wish for, hope for, and strive for. We should have a racial reckoning with the liberals in which we demand that all European nations should be white nations free of negroes, liberals, Muslims, and all other non-Europeans.

You cannot defend our demon-cracy without defending everything vile, debauched, and evil. Every religious service, every sporting event, every classroom lecture in some way does homage to the negro and demonizes the white race. George Floyd the black criminal allegedly said he couldn’t breathe, but it is whites who cannot breathe; they are given no breathing room in this republic of the negro and for the negro. As everything white is condemned when nothing white should be condemned except liberalism, we must ask, why are all things white condemned? Why must our past be blotted out and our future be a future of unalloyed hell in which we live only to serve the negro?

John D. Phelan of Montgomery, Alabama saw quite clearly as the war clouds gathered over his nation what the Civil War was all about: it was about the negro – should white Christians bow their knees to Christ or to the sacred negro?

*This serpent Abolition  
Has been coiling on for years;  
We have reasoned, we have threatened,  
We have begged almost with tears:  
Now, away, away with Union,  
Since on our Southern soil  
The only union left us  
Is an anaconda’s coil.*

The Civil War was an extension of the Jacobin revolution in France, in which men who would be as gods struck out at God by destroying His image in man. The Jacobin-Marxist revolution in Russia was another outbreak of that same ongoing assault on the image of God in man. The United States has always been at the forefront of that same revolution, which is why our government supported the communists in both World Wars. Do we want to live under the yoke of such a government? What is left to us of our Christian past? Nothing is left to us. Everything from white Christian Europe is demonized. And at the heart of that demonized Christian Europe is Christ the Lord. He has become a demon to the liberals and their colored minions, and Satan, through the sacred negro, has become the god of the post-Christian liberals.

*You deserve the place to which you came  
If, having entered hell, you feel no flame.*

A people who willingly jettison their past have no future. The liberals now date everything prior to the deification of George Floyd on May 25, 2020 as part of B.G.F. – Before George Floyd. All that prior history is racist. And after George Floyd? White racism will always exist, but it will be more thoroughly condemned. Whiteness will be banished from our language — we already speak a bastardized English — and all art works produced by white civilization will be banned or become negroized — black actors will play all the parts in Shakespearean dramas and all other works from the pre-George Floyd era, the era of white racism. This is not a sci-fi dystopian fantasy of the future, it is here and now and it is not something that white Christians should submit to and certainly not something they should celebrate with firecrackers and barbecues, because the fireworks symbolize our cities, which are on fire, and the barbecues symbolize the white race, which has been sacrificed on the altars of the sacred negroes.

If I had been an older liberal right before the George Floyd rebellion, and the younger Antifa liberals had come to me for advice (which they wouldn't have done, but let's pretend they did), I would have advised them not to launch the final stage of the anti-white revolution based on George Floyd. I would have told them that he, a black criminal, was not the best primer for the revolutionary flames. I would have told the young radicals that the deification of George Floyd would not be accepted by the whites: "They will resist it." I would have been wrong. It has worked, which shows me and all those who choose to see that the indoctrination of the white race by the far left has been a glorious success. Even the 'conservatives' worship the sacred negro.

A conservative who wants to conserve our 'democratic way of life' is not a conservative, he is a far-left radical, because our 'democratic way of life' is centered on the worship of the sacred negro. How can such a creed be called, from a Christian European perspective, conservative? In many respects the conservative left is more dangerous than the Antifa-Demonocrat left, because the conservatives are at the forefront of preserving academia, from preschool through the college years. It is the conservatives who are screaming during this pandemic that we must reopen our schools and our churches, which are the citadels of Satanism. If the conservatives were what they should be, namely Christian counterrevolutionaries, they would see that nothing good will ever happen to the European people so long as academia in church and state is still pouring out its filth on generation after generation. And they would use the COVID-19 crisis to start dismantling academia. We are reaping the 'benefits' of a truly liberal education in Satan's classroom. Dante placed a sign above the entrance to hell, "Abandon all hope ye who enter here." Dante's hell is here, it is called Academia. There is a direct pathway from the unhallowed halls of Academia to the deepest pit in hell.

Let us give 'higher education', which is the lowest, foulest education, a pestilence, what they desire. Let us give them a "racial reckoning." We will take off their "anaconda's coil" and declare for the first time in the history of academia what is true: The demonized antique Europeans were the Christ-bearing race. They were the people of *I Corinthians 13*. If we are connected to them, we will be connected to Him. The liberals of academia are connected, through the sacred negro, to the devil. So long as our people stay 'educated,' so long as they send their children to the "public orphanages" of the liberals, and so long as they allow themselves to be 'educated' out of their 'racism,' which is pietas, they will be a non-people without a past or a future. To be white is to be Christian; the devil knows that, which is why he attacks the white, Christ-bearing race with such an unrelenting fury. The odds against us are fearsome because our people have forsaken our past where He who is our only comfort and our only hope dwells. Please, Lord, "Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent." +

# Caliban or Christ

July 18, 2020

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Jacobinism, Negro worship

Tags: Dream of the Rood



Fuseli & Dore

We must prepare to meet with Caliban. – *The Tempest*

'Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

'There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.' – *The Dream of the Rood*

When Russell Kirk's book *The Conservative Mind* was published, Thomas Molnar remarked that Kirk had revealed that there were some conservatives hiding out in America, but he had failed to show that they ever had any influence on the American people or the American government. I concur with Dr. Molnar: the America of the Declaration of Independence and the U.S. Constitution is rooted in the "rights of man," not in the love of God. It seems blasphemous to a people brainwashed by the superficialities of "separation of church and state" and "We, the people" to speak of God rather than the democratic process as our touchstone of reality, but all people that have ever existed frame their governments around their religious faith. Our exalted founding fathers had a god: it was abstract reason, and they founded a republic based on that god. But abstract reason cannot sustain a people; they need a personal, hearth fire God. Our Civil War was fought to decide which personal God was to fill the void created by the framers of our atheistic Constitution. The northern Unitarians saw the glory of the coming of their Lord, the sacred negro, and they placed him where Christ the Lord should have been placed. Consequently, conservatism in America is based on radical Jacobin-Marxism, which places the sacred negro at the forefront of an ongoing utopian revelation. The end result of that revolution must of necessity bring about the destruction of all things white and Christian. Conservatives in such a society merely act as regulators of the revolutionary process – they want it to proceed along orderly lines; they want the white grazers to be killed humanely with the proper democratic aesthetics rather than butchered indiscriminately without the proper aesthetics.

Because our conservatives do not want to be counterrevolutionary and challenge the state religion of negro worship, they always adroitly avoid the cancerous tumor at the heart of the body politic and focus on the ingrown toenail. For example, I recently watched a conservative pundit interview a concerned parent about the Marxist BLM curriculum in our public schools. The concerned parent said that white children are being taught they are totally depraved and unfit to live. Yet, on the same show both the conservative pundit and the parent dismissed home schooling ("not a real option") and insisted that parents should "stand up" to the liberal "mob." That same conservative pundit was and is at the center of the "get our kids back to school" movement. Abstract reason is a whore who will ultimately bed whomever has the cash. A hearth fire European would never forsake His Lord or his people by sacrificing his children on the altars of the sacred negro, but tragically the European people have abandoned their hearth fire; they now prefer shopping malls and interracial sporting events to their racial hearth fire. An individual is powerless to change the Marxist BLM curriculum from within the American system, but he can become a counterrevolutionary force from without that system: he can become an unrepentant, prejudiced white man, prejudiced in favor of a heartfelt faith in Christ over an intellectual, Christless Christianity blended with a belief in the sacred negro, and prejudiced in favor of his own kith and kin over a belief in the democratic equality of all peoples of all races and creeds.

Trump's efforts to put a stop to the Aztec death squads is commendable. And I hope he carries out his threat to do something about the crime in the cities where the Democratic mayors have refused to restore order. But let me ask – who are committing the murders in our cities? It is the sacred negroes. Are the federal troops going to be allowed to do what has to be done to violent murderers? Eventually, if you are really serious about a war on crime, you must face the fact that "war means fighting, and fighting means killing." I do not think a government grounded in a belief in the sacred negro is going to be able to kill sacred negroes in order to put an end to their reign of terror. It is much more likely that our federal troops and local police will be sent out into the hinterlands of our anti-nation in order to disarm "white racists."

Louis XVI did not lose his head because he was a terrible king who oppressed his people. Far from it, he was an exemplary Christian who tried to rule in Christ's name. He lost his head because he failed to understand that an internal, moral revolution had taken place in his nation. The pamphleteers, what we now call the press and academia, could no longer tolerate any authority over them and especially not that of a Christian king. Louis XVI made the mistake of thinking there was something he could do to appease the academics and the pamphleteers. He didn't understand that they were pure evil, they could only be dealt with by force. They wanted his blood and the blood of his kith and kin. He should have fought them "to the knife." It is often hard to see when men and women who once were Christian have gone over to Satan, but if we don't see when the worm has turned, we and our kith and kin will suffer the same fate as Louis XVI. Whether we call our enemies Jacobins, Marxists, Antifa, or Democrats, they all serve Satan and they serve him through the sacred negro. If we don't "prepare to meet with Caliban," the negro god of the liberals, we will never rebuild Christian Europe, we will be a non-people without a homeland on this earth and without any hope for a place in His house of many mansions.

Let us look at New York City as a microcosm of the West. Without a doubt, no city is more like unto Sodom and Gomorrah and ancient Babylon than New York City is. But all the European nations are heading for the same fate as the white New Yorkers if they don't give up the worship of the sacred negro and return to Christ. We are the cowboy in that magnificent song, "[Ghost Riders in the Sky](#)," who must mend his ways in order to avoid spending all eternity in hell. One of the ghost riders tells him – "Cowboy, mend your ways this day or with us you shall ride on horses spouting fire." The devil walks the streets of New York; he has been welcomed into the city in the name of the sacred negro, and he will not leave until he is forcibly evicted by Dream of the Rood Christians.

From a practical pagan standpoint, it seems insane to disband your police force and turn your city over to blood-thirsty barbarians. And from a Christian European standpoint, it goes against "that charity of honor" to allow blood-thirsty barbarians to murder your people. But a liberal is neither pagan nor Christian, he is an unman, born as a result of the blending of intellectual Christianity with paganism. When the Grand Inquisitors of intellectual Christianity turned Christ into Socrates, the European people went whoring after pagan gods. And whom did they finally choose? They chose to bend their knees to the sacred negro. We can only understand the New York City phenomenon if we grasp that fact — This is a satanic faith we are dealing with: Blacks must be good, they must be sacred, or otherwise the white post-Christian European cannot have a savior. It is better, in the sick mind of the liberal, that millions of innocent whites should die than he should be left bereft of his savior, the sacred negro.

We have come to this pass because our clergy blasphemed against the Holy Ghost. They refused to believe that God could and does come to men through the heart and not the head. It is not wrong, it is not anti-Semitic, to point out the great number of Jews involved in anti-European organizations, but we cannot overlook the fact that the Judaized Christians, white Europeans, who like Lady Macbeth have stopped “up th’ access and passage to remorse” by denying the Christ who comes to us through the human heart, have become like unto Caiaphas and all the Grand Inquisitors of intellectual Christianity who must modify and ‘improve’ God’s word so that it is more compatible with man’s reason. What are the main charges the Grand Inquisitor hurls at Christ? He tells Him that He thought too highly of mankind; He should not have given such miserable creatures free will. “They don’t want it,” the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ, “They will exchange their freedom for bread,” for the things of this world. And the second charge against Christ is that He broke His promise: He said that He would return soon, and He didn’t return. Therefore, the Grand Inquisitors were forced to reinstate the Sanhedrin, a religious organization opposed to the Word Made Flesh.

The negro is of this world only; the liberal believes that the sacred negro, allied with the abstract intellect of man and science, can give them the things of this world. And the negro is here and now; he does not require men to believe in the Second Coming of a Savior whose followers claimed He rose, unscientifically, from the dead on the third day. Against that faith, the unfaith of the unmen of the kingdom of hell on earth, stands the Dream of the Rood Europeans. They did not seek first the things of this world; of their own free will they saw life in death, they saw beauty, nobility, and truth in the cross of Christ. They “wept and they believed.” Nor did they look for another savior because they felt abandoned. You do not feel bereft of Christ if you have taken Him, through the Holy Ghost, into your heart. The devil is incarnate in what was once Christendom, because the European intelligentsia, in church and state, have made white pietas a crime and the worship of the sacred negro a sacred duty.<sup>(1)</sup> We who still believe in mercy, not sacrifice, will not accept the sacred negro as a substitute for our Lord and Savior.

We do well to dwell on the words of the “[Battle Hymn of the Republic](#)” written by a Unitarian minister, a feminist. In stirring terms, she calls on the forces of intellectual Christianity, a Christless army, to join with her in a crusade against white, Christian Europeans. In the name of the sacred negro, the liberals will smite the white Christians with the terrible swift sword of Satan. We are engaged in an ongoing civil war to determine whether a nation conceived in liberty from Christ and dedicated to the proposition that the sacred negro is God can long endure as a nation. That evil republic shall long endure if we don’t respond to the liberals’ militant faith with a passionate militant faith diametrically opposed to their faith. Surely if we are one with Him who bore our griefs and our sorrows on the “glorious tree,” we shall have the heart not only to endure, but to conquer. Is that a dream? Yes, it is, it is the Dream of the Rood, the poetic reality of life bequeathed to us by our people who saw with their hearts and believed. The darkness of negro worship will be banished from the earth when the Word Made Flesh becomes, once again, the light of the European world. +

---

(1) The definition of systemic racism is — any white who references his or her past. Whites seem to have accepted that definition, which is why they constantly look for “good blacks” who tell them that they don’t have to be exterminated for something their ancestors did. They can live on in the brave new world as support staff for the sacred negroes so long as they repudiate their ‘racist’ past.

We must constantly reference our past; it is a moral imperative. Why? Because all that we are and ever shall be that is good, noble, and pure comes from our past, where the people, our people who saw a great light, lived their lives with His sacred cross before their eyes. We are being pushed to a moral reckoning – will we embrace the sacred negro and live in a hell on earth in preparation for our eternal damnation, or will we stand with our God and our honored dead, the God of mercy and love and the people who saw beauty, truth, and love on the cross?

# The Light Beyond Rationalism

July 25, 2020

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens, Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke, Ian Maclaren, Walter Scott, Wilbur Daniel Steele



Doré. *St. Paul at Ephesus*

For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. —[1 Corinthians 1: 19-25](#)

---

Based purely on my own anecdotal observations I have concluded that this stepped-up, intensified attack on the white race by Antifa and Black Lives Matter has brought out a rage in some white grazers that was not there before, and it has forced some of the button-down conservatives who have never liked people such as me using terms like “satanic” and “negro worship” to concede that just maybe the liberals are satanic and just maybe they really and truly do worship the negro. But will the rage against the BLM fiends and the new awareness amongst some whites about the real religion of modern Europeans bring about a change in the hellish conditions the European people are currently living under?

I doubt it, because of the extent that the worship of Satan, through the sacred negro, has become institutionalized throughout the European world. Burke said that if “we suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, he will become our master.” The liberals have been telling us their story of the evil white race and the sacred negro for over one hundred years, which is why I think it is highly unlikely that the rage of a few white grazers and the new awareness of a few white conservatives is going to start a white counterrevolution. But unlikely is not the same as impossible. If a poll had been taken at the time of Christ’s crucifixion and resurrection from the dead on the subject of “which religious cult will replace Rome?” you probably would have gotten 45% for Mithra, 35% for Cybele, and the remaining 20% for the philosophers. The religion of the Nazarene would have gotten a statistical zero. The spirit is not subject to the same laws of birth, death, and decay as plant life, no matter what Oswald Spengler tells us.

In order for the European people to go from here, the worship of the sacred negro, to there, the worship of Christ the Lord, they must reject rationalism. St. Paul led the charge against the rationalist dragon when he stood before the Athenian philosophers and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen. Hamlet followed in his train when he confronted Rosencrantz and Guildenstern and refused to be “played upon” as if he were a musical instrument with a predetermined amount of notes. Burke echoed St. Paul’s and Shakespeare’s defiance of the rationalists when he exposed the “cold malignity of the metaphysicians”:

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of Evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil.* —[Letter to a Noble Lord](#)

Scott continued the attack:

*Among those who were the first to ridicule and abandon the self-denying principles in which the young knight was instructed and to which he was so carefully trained up, Louis XI<sup>th</sup> of France was the chief. That Sovereign was of a character so purely selfish—so guiltless of entertaining any purpose unconnected with his ambition, covetousness, and desire of selfish enjoyment, that he almost seems an incarnation of the devil himself, permitted to do his utmost to corrupt our ideas of honour in its very source. Nor is it to be forgotten, that Louis possessed to a great extent that caustic wit which can turn into ridicule all that a man does for any other person's advantage but his own, and was, therefore, peculiarly qualified to play the part of a cold hearted and sneering fiend.* —[Quentin Durward](#)

Then Dostoyevsky’s *Underground Man*: “A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key,” and Dmitri Karamazov: “I defy the logic of two plus two equals four,” upheld the Christian Europeans’ defiance of rationalism, a defiance grounded in the Gospel of Christ and the epistles of St. Paul.

And finally it was Ian Maclaren’s young pastor of Drumtochty, who came to Drumtochty determined to bring the newer, scientific Gospel to his people; but then, with the memory of his mother in his heart, he preached Christ crucified, Christ risen, the unadulterated, unscented Christ, to the people of Drumtochty.

*Next minute he was kneeling on the hearth, and pressing the magnum opus, that was to shake Drumtochty, into the heart of the red fire, and he saw, half-smiling and half-weeping, the impressive words, “Semitic environment,” shrivel up and disappear.*

*As the last black flake fluttered out of sight, the face looked at him again, but this time the sweet brown eyes were full of peace.*

*It was no masterpiece, but only the crude production of a lad who knew little of letters and nothing of the world. Very likely it would have done neither harm nor good, but it was his best, and he gave it for love's sake, and I suppose that there is nothing in a human life so precious to God, neither clever words nor famous deeds, as the sacrifices of love.*

*The moon flooded his bedroom with silver light, and he felt the presence of his mother. His bed stood ghostly with its white curtains, and he remembered how every night his mother knelt by its side in prayer for him. He is a boy once more, and repeats the Lord's Prayer, then he cries again, “My mother! My mother!” and an indescribable contentment fills his heart.* —[Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush](#)

The folklore of our people gives the lie to rationalism. But is the folklore true? If we decide, with our abstract reason, that the folklore is false, then we will add the sacred negro and science to our unholy trinity and reject the Christ in whom the European people believed. And then we will, of necessity, have to reject the European people. There are variations on the anti-European theme. The intellectual Christians squeeze Christ into the ‘abstract reason’ position of the unholy trinity and place the negro in the position of the Savior while retaining science as the Holy Ghost. The neo-pagans embrace abstract reason and science while rejecting the negro and Christ, which is why they always lose in confrontations with their liberal cousins: they have no Savior. But when all variations are stated, we are left with one huge obstacle to the restoration of the European people – Christ’s incarnation and His resurrection from the dead is irrational and unscientific; therefore, the European people must look either to a utopian future with a modified, rationalized Gospel of Christ or a utopian future completely devoid of Christ. In either case, the European people must, if they want to survive on the lowest rung of the liberals’ ladder of diversity, repudiate their ‘racist’ past and embrace the new doctrine of ‘white is evil and the negro is good.’ And as we now can see clearly, ‘racist’ means something entirely different from the dictionary definition of racist. The liberal definition of racist is – Any European who believes in the Gospel of Christ as St. Paul and the antique Europeans believed. The condemnation of our heartfelt faith in Christ the Lord is at the heart of the Antifa/BLM attack on the white race. They are from hell, and only those who love much, only white Christians, will have the passion to fight such creatures to the death.

It seems completely out of place to talk about gentle Jesus in the wake of the demon-cratic, Antifa, BLM assault on the white race, but I ask you – what force on this earth can overcome such evil? In [Our Mutual Friend](#), Dickens tells us, through John Harmon, that there are white moments in this life when we touch the heart of God through His channels of grace:

*So, she leaning on her husband's arm, they turned homeward by a rosy path which the gracious sun struck out for them in its setting. And oh! there are days in this life, worth life and worth death.*

The hearth fire virtues, those bonds we form with our kith and kin, give us the faith, hope, and charity to survive in this vale of tears. The demon-crats, the Antifa and the BLMers would destroy every channel of grace that connect us, through our people, to the living God. It’s of no use to dialogue with such creatures from hell — they don’t want a dialogue, they do not want peaceful coexistence. This is war, against an enemy that has no mercy.

In the 20<sup>th</sup> century, as psychology, the scientific study of mankind, replaced the Biblical view of mankind, our laws reflected that new world view. Murderers and other violent criminals were often given second and third chances. The end result of that new psychology was an increase in the murder rate, for the simple reason that society gave murderers extra opportunities to murder. But still, there was a belief, even among liberals, that violent white criminals should be apprehended and punished. What kind of society would we have if murderers and rapists were not punished?

Enter, stage left, the sacred negro. When the negroes commit violent crimes, there is a strong belief among liberals that they have not committed any crime, that the crimes attributed to them are fabrications by racist whites (see *To Kill a Mockingbird*), or that their alleged crimes are justifiable, self-defense killings of their white oppressors. If you look at any police show, you will never see black criminals. And all of the documentaries on crime focus on the Mafia and white murderers such as the barbaric white fiends that recently surfaced in Florida. Evil exists in all races, no white Christian has ever disputed that, but no white Christian should ever exempt one race from original sin. The consequence of that exemption has resulted in the destruction of all that was decent and good in our civilization – the pietas that connected us to His divinely human heart.

Would the demon-crats and the Antifa be able to destroy every last vestige of our European civilization if they did not invoke the sacred negro? Of course not. Which is why they do invoke the sacred negro, to justify everything they do. Every time the liberals meet the slightest opposition, the cry of ‘racism’ surfaces. It is their battle cry, and thus far they have defeated all their enemies under that banner. So long as abstract reason remains the first person of the liberals’ trinity, the negro will be sacred, and Satan, through the sacred negro, will reign supreme in the European world.

Great artists are not separate from us because they are unlike us; the Shakespeares, the Rembrandts, and the Handels are separate from us in their artistic excellence. But we are drawn to them because they express, through their art, what we feel. The lesser artists, who do not reach our hearts, men like Proust and Joyce, belong only to an intellectual elite who enjoy only that which is esoteric and devoid of humanity. Dostoyevsky belongs with the great artists; he describes for us, through his art, a modern man’s journey from rationalism to faith in Christ, the God-Man. Dostoyevsky was a radical, inspired by the revolutionary atheist Visarion Belinsky. During his imprisonment for his revolutionary activities he gradually converted to a faith in Jesus Christ. But it was only when he saw that there was a higher truth than rationalism that he could believe in the God-Man. First it was the humanity of Christ, what he called the “radiant personality” of the God-Man, which drew him away from rationalism. And then later, after much suffering, he came to believe that Christ’s “radiant personality” pointed to the truth – Christ was indeed the Son of the living God. Dostoyevsky believed that he, “an intelligent man, a European,” could believe in the divinity of Jesus Christ.

Christ faced the religious rationalists when He stood before the Sanhedrin, and He faced the secular rationalists when He stood before Pilate. In both instances He stood alone – “He hath borne our griefs, And carried our sorrows.” St. Paul also stood before the religious rationalists, the Jews, and the secular rationalists, the Athenians, who considered the incarnation and resurrection of Christ blasphemy and foolishness. But St. Paul did not stand alone — Christ was with him: “In Him and through Him.” What Dostoyevsky went through is what we must go through, the inner struggle against rationalism, if we will be able to stand against Satan and his minions. We cannot ‘out-reason’ the liberals – we must defeat them with a heartfelt faith in the God who transcends reason. In the absence of that faith, we stand alone before the liberals’ rationalist tribunal where the white man is always guilty and the negroes are sacred. Is the folklore of our people, the Christ story, true or false? It is true, and our certainty that it is true will sustain us against this intensified onslaught of the devil.

We do well to dwell upon the short story, “The Man Who Saw through Heaven,” by Wilbur Daniel Steele, written in 1919. In the short story a fundamentalist minister goes to an observatory and, for the first time in his life, looks at the heavens with the outer eye of reason rather than with the inner eye of faith. In a ‘Road Away from Damascus’ experience, he sees the un-light of rationalism. Having lost the Savior he plunges into primitive religions. At his death his wife is left with the hope that her husband has finally purged the rationalist demon from his soul:

*“From here, Mrs. Diana, your husband walked out — “*

*“He had sunk to idolatry. Idolatry!”*

*“To the bottom, yes. And come up its whole history again. And from here he walked out into the sunshine to kneel and talk with ‘Our Father Which — ‘ “*

*“She got it. She caught it. I wish you could have seen the light going up those long, long cheeks as she got it:*

*“Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy Name!”*

*“We went down hill in the darkness, protected against goblins by a vast rattling of gourds and beating of heathen drums.*

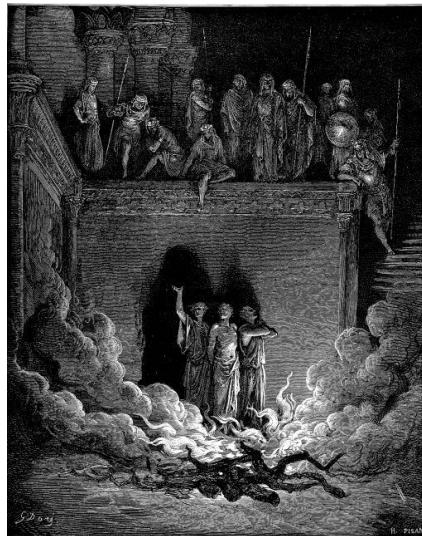
We too must walk out of the rationalist nightmare and return to Him who bids us pray to “Our Father which art in Heaven,” rather than to the sacred negro who is Satan’s surrogate. +

# Up Off Our Knees

August 1, 2020

Categories: Grazers, Negro worship, Religion of Satan, Utopianism

Tags: Nathaniel Hawthorne



Doré. *Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego in the Furnace.*

To Beatrice,—so radically had her earthly part been wrought upon by Rappaccini's skill,—as poison had been life, so the powerful antidote was death; and thus the poor victim of man's ingenuity and of thwarted nature, and of the fatality that attends all such efforts of perverted wisdom, perished there, at the feet of her father and Giovanni. Just at that moment Professor Pietro Baglioni looked forth from the window, and called loudly, in a tone of triumph mixed with horror, to the thunderstricken man of science,—“Rappaccini! Rappaccini! And is *this* the upshot of your experiment!”

-Nathaniel Hawthorne, “[Rappaccini's Daughter](#)”

---

The European people are a captive people; they are the slaves of the negroes. There have been other captive peoples throughout the history of mankind, but the European people are the first people that have willingly handed themselves over to another race of people without being conquered in battle. They surrendered themselves to an alien race without firing a shot against their enemies. What about the Civil War? That was whites fighting whites – we shall come back to that anon.

The uniqueness of the Europeans' willing surrender to an alien race cannot be understood unless we understand the uniqueness of the Christian faith. That God entered human history at one particular point in time, not as a cyclical nature god, but as the God above nature, was completely different from all other religions. And that uniqueness was increased when Christ came to us as a God of mercy, not as a God of sacrifice. When the European people could no longer believe in the miracle of the God of mercy they sought to return to the gods of sacrifice, but they could never return to unadulterated paganism. Their new paganism had to incorporate a nature god, a cruel, sacrificial god, and their new paganism also had to include, because of their Christian past, a suffering servant. So the negro had to become the new God of the European people. He was not and is not the god of any other race, not even the black race; he is the god of the European people. He is uniquely their god and their god alone, because they and they alone made Christ the center of a civilization that the theologians tell us never existed. However, theologians have always been ahistorical because actual history is not an abstraction, and theologians deal only in abstractions.

The hierarchy of the North at the time of the uncivil Civil War consisted of utopians, men who had forsaken actual Christ-centered Christianity for an abstract intellectual Christianity, and men who had forsaken Christianity altogether. It was New England that was dominated by fiery theologians such as Jonathan Edwards and secular theologians such as Julia Ward Howe. The South had Christian pastors such as R. L. Dabney. The utopians needed, as utopians always do, something new and perfect, so they created a religion without humanity in order to destroy all that was old, imperfect, and humane. Hawthorne, who saw with blinding sight because he lived in the midst of the utopian theorists, wrote about the utopian mania. In his short stories and novel [The Blithedale Romance](#), he depicted the inhumanity of the utopians, who, in the name of a utopian humanity, set themselves the task of destroying every last vestige of what was good and noble in the imperfect civilization they lived in.

With her dying breath, Rappaccini's daughter, who has been poisoned by her utopian father, tells him, “Thy words of hatred are like lead within my heart; but they too, will fall away as I ascend. Oh, was there not, from the first, more poison in thy nature than in mine?” Yes, there was and is much, much more poison in the utopians than in the imperfect, white Christians. The Civil War was a war of white Christians against Christian utopians and secular utopians. Thomas Nelson Page wrote that, “We shall aid the negro, but we shall not be dominated by him.” The Northern utopians told Page, the Christian, that, “You shall be dominated by him, because he is our god.” The utopians have won. White people, North and South, worship the sacred negro: they will not oppose anything done in his name. The shocking moral cowardice of the European people was on display during the opening festivities of the baseball season. In all of baseball, only one man refused to kneel to the sacred negro. I hope that one man, Samuel Coonrod, will stay true to his instincts, that he will not be intellectualized out of his faith by a ‘Christian’ pastor. God bless him for choosing the narrow way.

Let us never forget what Rappaccini's daughter discovers – the poison is in them, the utopian liberals. They hate with the passion of the devil, the malignant fiend that hates our Savior because He loves us. And they have advanced their cause under the banner of the sacred negro. The blacks do not understand liberalism; they don't understand the inner dynamics of a post-Christian people, because they have never been a Christian people. All they understand is power; they understand that whites are weak and will give them whatever they want. Nor do the utopian whites see what is obvious – the blacks hate them just as much as they hate the white grazers. The liberals do not see that obvious fact because they must have a savior, a savior that they can champion against the evil white race. The Antifa goons are a more militant, more violent version of Atticus Finch, but they remain Atticus Finch — they will help their black gods to conquer the white enemy. And they think their black gods will be grateful – “Stand up, your father is passing.” Yet, the BLMers tell the Antifa that they do not want their help, but that doesn't stop the utopian whites – “Though he slay me, yet will I trust in him.”

War is a great tragedy, but the surrender of a once Christian people to barbaric negroes without even a whimper is a far greater tragedy. The Europeans have reached the season mentioned in [Ecclesiastes](#): “A time to kill, and a time to heal; A time to break down, and a time to build up.” The gradual destruction of the white race has accelerated; it is now the season to kill whites – that is the *Ecclesiastes* of the liberals. The white Christians must kill in self-defense and then they must rebuild Christian Europe. The moral imperative is clear, but so long as the false Aslan, the abstract Christ of the theologians, reigns supreme in the churches, which have become anti-pietas churches, the European people will remain the sacrificial offerings of the liberals' church of the sacred negro.

I once heard two women at the supermarket engage in one of those morbid, medical gossip chats that women at supermarkets love to engage in: “They opened him up to see how bad it was and they immediately closed him up when they saw how widespread the cancer was,” the morbid gossiper informed her companion. The listener replied, “I guess an operation was ruled out?” “Of course,” the ghoulish gossiper informed her, “there is no hope.” Recent events have opened up the insides of the European grazers and that has been quite a revelation. The moral rot seems to be incurable. But, contra Unwin and Spengler, the spirit is not subject to mere biology. The physical cancer that was incurable in the poor man who was the subject of the supermarket gossips is not the same cancer that the European people are sick with. The European peoples have a fatal spiritual cancer that will surely kill them, but only, “If these shadows are not altered.”

Will the shadows of Jacobin-Marxist, negro worship be altered? That is more than we can know. The devil must work through his minions. It's possible they have pushed too hard and too fast. If you take everything away from the white grazer, his hope in another world and his material subsistence in this world, might not he become something more than a grazer? Or will the white grazer cling to his assigned pigsty in Liberaldom in order to avoid confrontation with the liberals and their gods? Right now it appears that the white grazer will cling to his pigsty.

We must ask ourselves why a race of people who produced warriors such as Alfred the Great, Sir Henry Havelock, and Nathan Bedford Forrest, artists such as Rembrandt, composers such as Handel, and poets such as Shakespeare now produce cowardly men who bow before the sacred negro, and 'artists' who can only laud graffiti painted on the walls of urban slums by their black gods, graffiti that is inferior in quality to the paintings of prehistoric cave dwellers? Is this the promised end? Is this the final resting place of the European people? Or can we hope that some Europeans will at least at the hour of their deaths manage to write "Our Father Which..." in the mud of their pigsty?

The key element in the Jacobin-Marxists' assault on the white race and the Christian churchmen's repudiation of the antique Europeans is the ahistorical, utopian vision. The Jacobin-Marxists — without the slightest interest in the historical record of the white's interactions with the black race, which shows that the whites were the victims, their kindness to the blacks was repaid with bloodthirsty treachery — launch an unholy crusade against the white race based on the whites' alleged mistreatment of blacks. And then they step in as the visionaries who will give us a perfect world in which illuminated whites cavort around the throne of the sacred negro. And the Amen chorus for the liberals, the utopian churchmen, make way for the sacred negro in their churches while they deny the historical Christ, the Christ who lived in the hearts and the civilization of the antique Europeans.

Caleb was in his mid-eighties when he asked to be placed in the midst of the enemies of the Lord so he could fight for his Lord:

*And now, behold, the LORD hath kept me alive, as he said, these forty and five years, even since the LORD spake this word unto Moses, while the children of Israel wandered in the wilderness: and now, lo, I am this day fourscore and five years old. As yet I am as strong this day as I was in the day that Moses sent me: as my strength was then, even so is my strength now, for war, both to go out, and to come in. Now therefore give me this mountain, whereof the LORD spake in that day; for thou hearestest in that day how the Anakims were there, and that the cities were great and fenced: if so be the LORD will be with me, then I shall be able to drive them out, as the LORD said. And Joshua blessed him, and gave unto Caleb the son of Jephunneh Hebron for an inheritance. -[Joshua 14: 10-13](#)*

A foolish old man? No, Caleb triumphed over the Anakims despite the fact that they seemed invincible. "You shall have the city of Hebron with all its giants, if you will gather together your men and take it." Nothing is impossible for European men who keep faith with the Christ of history, our blessed Savior. If we get up off our knees, if we refuse to give homage to the sacred negro, we will take Christian Europe back from the liberals and the colored heathens.

Black despair has descended on our people, because of the Chinese attack on the white race through the COVID-19 virus and the Antifa/BLM attack on the white race. It is time to do battle with the enemies of our God and our people. The white grazers must see someone of their own race standing up against the liberals and their negro gods. I know the reaction to such an assertion — "No one will follow a Christian leader." That is quite possible, but should that matter? Who wants to live in their world, a world consecrated to Satan, through the sacred negro?

The utopian poison is in them. If we look to our history, not to their cruel, inhumane, utopian theories, we will renew the covenant our people made with the living God. We will place Christ back in our hearts and our nation. Let us get up off our knees and stand with Joshua — "As for me and my house, we will serve the Lord." +

# Christian Europe is His Word Made Flesh

August 8, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Negro worship, Rationalism, Utopianism

Tags: Hans Christian Andersen, Nathaniel Hawthorne



Rembrandt. *The Angel Appears to the Shepherds*

Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. —2 [Corinthians 3:1-3](#)

---

You must attend to the commencement of this story, for when we get to the end we shall know more than we do now about a very wicked hobgoblin; he was one of the very worst, for he was a real demon. One day, when he was in a merry mood, he made a looking-glass which had the power of making everything good or beautiful that was reflected in it almost shrink to nothing, while everything that was worthless and bad looked increased in size and worse than ever. — Hans Christian Andersen, ["The Snow Queen"](#)

---

A number of white grazers and even some of the older demon-crats have expressed concern over the extreme measures of the Antifa/BLMers. I prefer the extremism of the Antifa/BLMers to the older, more moderate Jacobinism of the demon-crats. I prefer the new extremism because I want the choice that the white grazer must make to be crystal clear: Satan or Christ, there is no in-between position a man can take. That has always been the case, but previously the white grazer, if he wanted to have this world and Christ, could wrap Christ up in democracy and civil rights and claim he was being Christian in his support of democratic institutions, and he could claim that his worship of the negro was a noble attempt to enfranchise the downtrodden negro. Now it is clear that the grazer must either completely submit to the liberals and their negro gods or else he must make war against them with the realization that there can be no peace between the white race and the Antifa/BLMers.

What our visionaries such as Burke and our poets such as Hawthorne told us about the utopian Europeans has turned out to be all too true. Burke told us that they would calmly assent to the extermination of millions upon millions of people in the name of the future utopia. And Hawthorne warned us that nothing from our past was untouchable, the utopians would destroy everything. History imitated art recently when the Scots proposed legislation that would criminalize the reading of the Bible in churches and Antifa/BLMers in Portland burned Bibles. Let me reference Hawthorne's short story, "Earth's Holocaust":

*The doubt implied in his question was well founded. In the general destruction of books already described, a holy volume, that stood apart from the catalogue of human literature, and yet, in one sense, was at its head, had been spared. But the Titan of innovation,—angel or fiend, double in his nature, and capable of deeds befitting both characters,—at first shaking down only the old and rotten shapes of things, had now, as it appeared, laid his terrible hand upon the main pillars which supported the whole edifice of our moral and spiritual state. The inhabitants of the earth had grown too enlightened to define their faith within a form of words, or to limit the spiritual by any analogy to our material existence. Truths which the heavens trembled at were now but a fable of the world's infancy. Therefore, as the final sacrifice of human error, what else remained to be thrown upon the embers of that awful pile, except the book which, though a celestial revelation to past ages, was but a voice from a lower sphere as regarded the present race of man? It was done! Upon the blazing heap of falsehood and worn-out truth—things that the earth had never needed, or had ceased to need, or had grown childishly weary of—fell the ponderous church Bible, the great old volume that had lain so long on the cushion of the pulpit, and whence the pastor's solemn voice had given holy utterance on so many a Sabbath day. There, likewise, fell the family Bible, which the long-buried patriarch had read to his children,—in prosperity or sorrow, by the fireside and in the summer shade of trees,—and had bequeathed downward as the heirloom of generations. There fell the bosom Bible, the little volume that had been the soul's friend of some sorely tried child of dust, who thence took courage, whether his trial were for life or death, steadfastly confronting both in the strong assurance of immortality.*

One race championed the one true God, which is why that race must be eliminated from the face of the earth. The prescription against the Bible in Scotland and the burning of the Bible in Portland indicate that the "children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light." The liberals are going to the heart of white culture: they are attacking the Word made flesh. What should be our response? Should we try to vote for a candidate who is against burning bibles? Would such a candidate, even if he were elected, have the courage to put a stop to such blasphemy if the blasphemy was done in the name of the sacred negro? Of course not. The liberals have moved on, they have a new god much more suited for the dystopian hell they envision for the new, non-racist, non-sexist, non-Christian mankind of the future.

Yesterday I heard a 'conservative' pointing out what he felt was an illogical inconsistency, namely the Bible burnings. "That has nothing to do with race, that has to do with religion." But that is precisely the issue. The modern conservatives, who are mere shadows of the liberals, have never understood what their mad-dog liberal cousins do understand. The race issue is a religious issue. The rationalist utopians hate God for creating a world that is imperfect; they do not accept the reality of original sin. How can they, the illuminated creatures of light, be tainted with original sin? They must strike out at the Christian God by destroying His image in man. What sacred book did the evil ones, the white Christian Europeans, revere? That book must be destroyed.

The mad-dog liberals are not being illogical when they burn bibles. They are being maniacally and consistently logical. It is the conservatives who appeal to reason, abstracted from the heart, and the theologians who deny the reality of the Word which was made flesh in the culture of the antique Europeans that are being illogical. They deny the Christ who entered human history while they look to another more perfect Christ and a more perfect Christian people of the future, a Christ who is subordinate to the sacred negro and a non-racist band of illuminated whites who worship the sacred negro. Thus does the utopian ideal destroy our hope in ages past. We do not need a utopia that can never come to fruition, we are sorely-tried souls who need our Savior, who told us that He has a house of many mansions prepared for those who call on Him by name.

The reason ‘Founding Father’ conservatives such as Ann Coulter have turned on Trump is because they do not perceive the reality of the American experiment in utopia. We, the Christian Europeans, have lost the cultural war, we have spent the unbought grace of life, our Christian heritage, and ceded everything to the liberal utopians. Trump has fought a courageous rearguard action; he has saved some white lives, for which he should be lauded. Those conservatives who want something more from Trump than a rearguard fight for a few white lives need to look at life without the utopian-tainted glasses of democracy and reason. America has not *gone* wrong, it was wrong from the start. You cannot extract Christ from the body politic and place reason in His stead. If you do, you will get what we have now, a new religion of the sacred negro. The ‘get the kids back to school’ movement championed by the conservatives reveals the non-conservative ethos of the conservatives. Why should a Christian European want the kids back in school? What is being taught in our schools? The hatred of the white race is being taught in our schools. The love of the sacred negro is being taught in our schools. And the hatred of Christ the Lord is being taught in our schools. In the name of God, why should we want to ‘get the kids back to school’?

Is truth revelatory or is it rational? The Dream of the Rood Europeans were revelatory Christians. Christ did not come to them from out there, in the land of reason where the theologians and philosophers dwell, He came to their hearts, and it was there that they knew Him as their Lord and kinsman. The early conflicts within Christendom were conflicts between rationalist Christians and revelatory Christians. Over time the revelatory Christians were squeezed out of the church and Christianity and rationalism became one. Now those twin towers of atheism, intellectual Christianity and secularized academia, have joined forces to attack the revelatory faith of the European Christians. I have heard nothing from the ‘conservatives’ during this current onslaught of the devil by way of Covid-19 and Black Lives Matter that indicates they understand that their illuminated minds, unaided by the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans, are no match for the religious zeal of their mad dog liberal cousins. I hope Trump wins reelection – his reelection will slow down the Marxist-Jacobin assault — but whether he wins or loses, it will not change the fact that the Europeans have lost the cultural war without a fight. Only revelatory Christians will be able to retake Europe from Satan. They hear a different drummer, a drummer who is the exact opposite of Thoreau’s distant drummer. We walketh in the counsel of the ungodly, standeth in the way of sinners, and sitteth in the seat of the scornful when we dialogue with the liberals through the democratic process. Isn’t that dialogue an admission that liberalism is legitimate, that Satan can rule Europe if he is democratically elected?

# Epistles of the Living God

August 15, 2020

Categories: Charity, Chivalry, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Liberalism, Rationalism

Tags: Andrew Lytle, Shakespeare, Thomas Nelson Page



Barton. *Sailing boats on the Serpentine*

But mercy is above the sceptred sway;  
It is enthroned in the hearts of Kings,  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likkest God's  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.

-*The Merchant of Venice*

---

I remember a conservative columnist some forty years ago writing that there was a greater chance of a Sioux Indian uprising than a Nazi uprising. He was making a comment on the liberals' propensity to bring up the Nazis every time a Republican disagreed with the Democrats. Nothing has changed over the last forty years, except – I wouldn't have thought it possible – the liberals have increased and extended their use of the Nazi accusation, using it even more than they did forty years ago. Apparently “age cannot wither nor custom stale” the liberals’ infinite delight in invoking the Nazi bogeyman to denigrate their opponents. But wouldn’t it be ironic if the liberals, who have been using the Nazi accusation for their own political purposes for the past 75 years, have actually brought the Nazis back to life in reality through their support of Antifa and BLM? I bring this up because I went to a gun shop this past weekend with one of my sons. He was having trouble getting the armaments he needs because in the wake of the Antifa/BLM assault on the white race, arms and

ammunition sales have increased tenfold. Kipling wrote about the time when the English would begin to hate. Is it possible that the white grazers have begun to hate? The white men in the gun shop were not hunters preparing for deer season. Nor, with the exception of my son and I, were they Christian warriors. They were angry young men who clearly identified themselves as the men whom the liberals have been invoking every time they want to discredit their opponents. Did this bring me great joy? No, it did not. I took a certain grim satisfaction in the knowledge that a large group of white males are not going to go quietly into the night just because the liberals ordain it, but I want a Christian counterrevolution, not a Neo-Nazi revolution. Hitler was the lesser of two evils during World War II – Stalin and Mao were the greater dangers – but a Christian does not choose between two evils, he champions the good. The Christ-centered Europeans have not yet entered the lists against the liberals. Perhaps they will never appear again this side of heaven. However, we can still endure our going hence, in the name of our Lord, who tells us that he who endures to the end shall be saved.

The mantra of the Black Lives Matter barbarians is social justice. They demand it, they must have it, or they will kill every white person on the face of the earth. Since the church men won’t give the Christian response to the BLM barbarians’ lying assertion that the white race has not treated the black race properly, thereby giving them the right to engage in violent assaults on white people, let me provide the Christian response.

The liberals have left Christianity behind them in the ‘age of superstition,’ and the blacks have never been a Christian people. The blacks who are exceptions have always been a persecuted minority within the black community because they are perceived as toadies to the white man. So in the absence of a Christian vision we would not expect either the liberals or the blacks to have any comprehension of real justice.

The European Christian knows, as Shakespeare’s Portia tells us, “That, in the course of justice, none of us should see salvation. We do pray for mercy, And that same prayer doth teach us to render the deeds of mercy.” But the liberal, like Shylock, does not believe he needs mercy because he believes he is without sin. There is only one great sin in the liberal’s new religion and that is white racism. He, the liberal, is illuminated, he has progressed beyond racism. So he is without sin, but thee and me are horrendous sinners. We are non-illuminated whites. And there can be no mercy for us because there is no mercy for racists in the liberals’ utopian faith. The liberals feel no kinship with racists, so they respond to all pleas for mercy as Shylock responded: “My deeds upon my head! I crave the law, the penalty and forfeit of my bond.”

That is also where the blacks have placed themselves. Like Shylock, like the liberals, they crave justice without mercy because they see themselves as a race of people who are devoid of sin. What is actually the case? If the blacks received justice without mercy what would be their fate? They would be exterminated. Whenever whites have extended charity toward blacks by trying to stop their tribal bloodlettings and giving them a glimpse of the one true God, the blacks have repaid that charitable outreach with blood. The old South, apartheid South Africa, and French San Domingo are three of the most striking examples of white charity and black treachery. But the entire history of the interaction between the white race and the black race, when looked at from a Christian perspective, reveals that the black race, with a few exceptions, has repaid the whites’ charity toward them with hatred and malice. But despite the historical record, which shows us that blacks have never learned the difference between mercy and sacrifice, and despite the fact that blacks have never ceased to regard kindness as a weakness they could exploit, the liberals tell us that the whites are guilty of the mistreatment of blacks and must submit to their annihilation because of their guilt. If we were to give the liberals and the BLM barbarians the justice they demand, we would have to execute the liberals for treason and the blacks for their crimes of violence against the white race. However, because of our Lord, we must be merciful, we must temper justice with mercy, but that mercy should never countenance the sacrifice of our people to liberal treachery and black barbarism.

If actual elections are allowed to take place this fall, Biden and company will lose. The Demon-crats have allowed the Antifa/BLM fiends to push them too far to the left too quickly. Their only hope is to have virtual elections, which would result in a Demon-cratic victory. What the Demon-crats have failed to grasp is that the white grazers do not believe they are racist. They will accept the fact that their ancestors were racist, but they do not believe they themselves are racists. And they resent being called racists. If they are allowed to vote, which I doubt, they will return Trump to the White House. But whether Trump is re-elected or the Demon-crats steal the election, the utopian religion of the liberals, the religion of the sacred negro, will remain the state religion of the satanic republic called the United States of America.

All that the white grazer wants is to be included in utopia. He wants to be certified ‘non-racist’ so that he can live and breathe in the brave new world of the liberals. He is willing to worship at the shrine of the sacred negro so long as he can be absolved of the sin of his racist ancestors. But there is the rub. The antique Europeans were not racist in the modern liberals’ meaning of that term. They were not evil overlords who took advantage of poor, downtrodden negroes. Far from it, they were a remarkable race of people who loved their own people in and through the God of mercy. And because they loved in His name, they were able to extend kindness and mercy to the bloodthirsty barbarians of the colored races without capitulating to them. When the Europeans lost their faith in Christ, they capitulated to the bloodthirsty barbarians. We will never stop the violence in our cities or change the prevailing climate of despair in our nation by renouncing our Christian ancestors as evil racists. Our people were epistles of Christ, “written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.” White people will not be allowed in the new kingdom of hell on earth, but why should we seek that kingdom? If our only hope is to live in a liberal pigsty while rejecting our people who were epistles of the living God, then we are of all people most to be pitied, for we will have denounced our hope of heaven for a place in the liberals’ hell on earth.

Currently the conservatives’ response to the Antifa/BLM assault on the white race is to report their atrocities to the white grazers in order to encourage the white grazers to vote for a conservative liberal, who is less extreme than the Antifa/BLM barbarians. An eight-year-old white boy is cut to pieces in London by a crazed African, the Swedish police blame the victims when the Moslems murder innocent whites, and in the United States those who murder, loot, and rape are given free rein so long as their atrocities are done under the banner of the sacred negro. If you think voting for a more moderate liberal should be our response to the atrocities committed on an hourly basis by the Antifa/BLM barbarians, then you are a pathetic creation of reason divorced from the human heart. I recently heard one of those pathetic conservative commentators go back in time to condemn ‘racist Democrats’ in the name of his modern conservative, anti-racist credentials. He went through a litany of Democrats who had once been slavers and segregationists and enjoined his listeners to join with the non-racist

Republicans. You cannot damn your own people, the people with hearts of flesh, and expect to conquer the Antifa/BLM creatures from hell. If your people were really as evil as you say, why should non-Christian utopians who do not believe in mercy forgive you? What should be lauded in our past, the intense love that whites had for their own people and their charitable outreach to the people of other races, has been unilaterally condemned by churchmen, Republicans, and Demon-crats. A plague on all their houses. Let us ride with Forrest once again:

*The meeting was held in Room Number 10 in the Maxwell House, and Lee's letter was read. In the course of the meeting a name for the Klan was discussed. Taking the word "invisible" out of Lee's note, somebody suggested the Invisible Empire; and this was adopted. The next matter was to select the commander and his title. A voice from the back of the room called out, "The Wizard of the Saddle, General Nathan Bedford Forrest." He was then elected and became the Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire. His powers were supreme.*

*In this way was General Forrest made the last ruler of the South. Only those veterans who were honorably discharged and those who were in prison at the end of the war were eligible, something over one hundred thousand men.*

*"It was," says Judge Albion Tourgee, a Reconstruction Judge in North Carolina, "a daring conception for a conquered people. Only a race of warlike instincts and regal pride could have conceived or executed it.*

*"It was a magnificent conception, and, in a sense, deserved success. It differed from all other attempts at revolution in the caution and skill required in its conduct. It was a movement made in the face of the enemy and an enemy of overwhelming strength. Should it succeed, it would be the most brilliant revolution ever accomplished. Should it fail—well, those who engaged in it felt that they had nothing more to lose."*

*It did not fail. It baffled in a few years all the efforts of the victors to destroy the Culture of the South, and it succeeded, when the fortunes of the Southern people were at their lowest, because for once it had a leader whom the people knew would not fail. It was the last brilliant example in Western Culture of what Feudalism could do.*

-Bedford Forrest and His Critter Company, Andrew Lytle

Andrew Lytle uses the term 'Feudalism'; I would use the term pietas, but I see in Forrest what Lytle saw and what Thomas Nelson Page saw in the Goth.<sup>(1)</sup> I see the undaunted, invincible spirit of the European hero undeterred by rationalism, science, and negro worship, determined to fight for his people in the name of Him who saves. That is the spirit we need. Is that what we shall see once again in the European people? It doesn't appear so. The coming war will be between the contending liberal factions – the Marxist-Jacobins and the neo-pagans.

The grace of God once enveloped the European people. Perhaps if we love much and believe, the culture of the people who became epistles of the living God will triumph over the darkness of liberalism. It seems simple-minded to place our hopes in pietas, but the striking thing about our people when they ruled the earth was their child-like simplicity. They really did believe in the story of the Christ child who became the Hero that saved mankind from sin and death. It is our faith in Him, not in reason, science, or the sacred negro, that will see us safely home. +

---

(1) On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

*-Under the Crust*, Thomas Nelson Page

# Cannon Hinnant

August 22, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Faithful hearts, Faithfulness, Negro worship

Tags: Sarah Doudney



Barton. *Pinch of Salt*

Sleep on, beloved, sleep and take thy rest,  
Lay down thy head upon thy Savior's breast;  
We love thee well, but Jesus loves thee best—  
Good night! Good night! Good night!

-Sarah Doudney

The [murder of five year old Cannon Hinnant](#) was particularly horrific because he was so young, but his murder was not out of the ordinary. In point of fact the murder of innocent whites by barbaric blacks is America's favorite national pastime, part of the religious festival called liberalism. Cannon Hinnant joins with the burning white child (see [CWNY 8-24-2013](#)), Jonathan Foster, and an ever growing legion of white victims who have been sacrificed to the liberals' barbaric black gods. Would a Christian people permit such a barbaric religious festival to continue? Of course not. Would a pagan people permit such a barbaric religious festival, a festival in which their own people are the sacrificial victims, to continue? Of course not. But would a post-Christian people who have replaced Christ with the sacred negro permit the continuance of such a barbaric religious festival? Yes, a post-Christian people would, could, and does support the continuance of a religious festival in which black barbarians murder whites with the full approval of their liberal devotees.

The major news outlets will not cover the story of Cannon Hinnant's murder. White athletes will not refuse to honor the American flag until there is justice for the white victims of black barbarism. White people will not get T-shirts with pictures of Cannon Hinnant and the words 'White Lives Matter' emblazoned on them. 'Christian' pastors will not condemn black barbarism from their pulpits. Blacks will not be asked to think about black privilege nor be commanded to annihilate

themselves because of their long history of racist crimes against the white race. In short, nothing at all will happen within the ranks of the post-Christian Europeans that will begin a counterrevolution against the armed doctrine of the liberals who have made the destruction of the white race and the deification of the negro the two main tenets of their faith.

Time is a difficult thing to fathom. There are events in my life that happened many, many years ago, which seem like they happened only yesterday, and there are events in my life that took place within the last year that seem like events of many, many years ago. In the first category is the memory of something that happened to me about 25 years ago. I was desperately trying to make a living for my family at that time, so I was relieved when a conservative publication asked me to write a series of articles for them. I was aware that I had to avoid the race issue — I couldn't write an article in defense of Nathan Bedford Forrest nor one in defense of apartheid South Africa or the pre-Civil War South. But I was not aware that the use of the term 'Christian Europe' was considered, even in conservative circles, to be a 'racist' term. My refusal to strike that term from the first piece I wrote ended my affiliation with that respectable 'conservative' publication.

The white Europeans' refusal to strike back against the liberals who countenance the massacre of white innocents such as Cannon Hinnant and the black barbarians who perform the ritualistic murders is the result of the churchmen's and the conservatives' (their partners in crime) refusal to accept the reality of Christian Europe. The assertion that the antique Europeans were "Epistles of the Living God" is an anathema to the modern churchmen and the modern conservatives. They prefer to condemn their European ancestors as racist so that they can be part of Liberaldom.

It is quite easy to condemn your ancestors because they are dead and unable to defend themselves, but there are consequences that come with what seems like such an easy and expedient condemnation. In the case of modern Europeans the consequence of their willingness to cut their ties to their ancestors because of their 'racism' is that they have no future as a people. They jettisoned their past so they could be part of the future, but they failed to see that the utopian liberals do not plan to allow white people to live in the utopian sate of the future. Non-illuminated whites must be exterminated; that is the main tenet of liberalism.

In almost every town and city throughout this nation and the other European nations you can find buildings that are called Christian churches. But what is preached in those churches? Is it the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans? Do the churchmen preach that Christ and Christ alone is our salvation? No, they do not. And they do not preach that doctrine because it is 'racist'. The epistles of the living God, our people, the antique Europeans, preached that Gospel and were 'racists'. And racists cannot enter the kingdom of a god who is a natural god, compatible with reason and liberalism. We have seen who that god is. The Socratic Christ is the new Christ of Liberaldom. With a modest smile he refers all religious controversies to the liberals. And they solve every controversy by bowing in awe before the sacred negro and condemning the racist Europeans of the past who blasphemed against the sacred negro by declaring that their 'racist' culture was grounded in the Word made flesh.

Right now the pathetic conservative shadows of the liberals confine their criticisms of the Antifa/Black Lives Matter creatures to talky news shows on which they interview a black 'conservative' who says that it is wrong to exterminate whites of the present in order to make up for the terrible sins of the whites of the past. And the white conservative then falls on his knees in adoration before the black god. How does such a spectacle serve white people? It doesn't serve white people because it perpetuates the lie that whites, when they were a Christian people, were a degenerate race of unnatural, morally depraved creatures from hell. And where does that leave the Christian faith? If what they taught us, our honored dead, about the living God was false, then to whom can we turn to for the words of eternal life? We can't turn to the modern churchmen because they are just echo chambers for the liberals. Must we then turn to the liberals? That is what we are told in church and state — "Truth is liberalism and liberalism is truth." Then it must needs follow that the sacred negro is God and we must fall on our knees and bless him when he murders our white children. We must praise the murderer of Cannon Hinnant because he is part of that collective body called the sacred negro. We cannot escape the logic of the liberals' imperative unless we reject liberalism in its entirety. We must reject the first part of the liberals' trinity, which is reason detached from the human heart, and we must reject science and all its attendant studies of man such as psychology, anthropology, and sociology. When we reject those two entities as revelatory sources, we will reject the sacred negro. And then we will be His people again, loving and hating with hearts of flesh. We will love our own in and through Him, and we will hate those who attack our own. The black barbarians will no longer be allowed to butcher our people with impunity because a cabal of liberals worship Satan through them.

If a European views the modern conservative-liberals or the mad-dog liberals too long without turning his eyes back in time to the antique Europeans, his heart of flesh will turn to stone, just as the modern conservatives' and their liberal cousins' hearts have turned to stone. We must only look at those modern Medusas as reflected and deflected by the shield of old Europe. We must be among them, but we can never be of them. Satan hurled his defiance at the Lord God — "I shall not serve." We must counter his defiance of the living God with our defiance of him. We must refuse to serve Satan by refusing to worship his surrogate, the sacred negro.

We are entering terrible times. The age of democracy is over, which is a good thing; the white Christian has never fared well under the tyranny of democracy. But are the white grazers going to be able to stand up to the liberal oligarchy when it abandons the thin veneer of democracy and imposes martial law? The white grazers are not made of the same stuff as the men who served under Forrest when he took command of the Ku Klux Klan. They have no faith in themselves as people, because they no longer believe that their people once were Epistles of the Living God. Reason asserts, and science confirms reason's assertion, that there is no such thing as Epistles of the Living God. Such a miracle presupposes that God can take root in the human heart. We are in the position of Puddleglum in *The Silver Chair*, who must maintain the existence of Narnia when Eustace and Jill have begun to believe the White Witch's assertion that there never was a Narnia. Reason and science have beaten down the European people. The White Witches in Church, State, and the Academy tell us that there never was a Narnia, a Christian Europe. If we can't even say it — Christian Europe — we will lose all contact with our people when they were Epistles of the Living God, and we will continue to be enslaved by liberals who encourage their black gods to feast on the blood of white people.

We constantly hear the refrain that black lives matter. But let's go to the heart of that doctrine. What does it mean? It means that no lives matter because there is no God. The BLM movement is straight from hell. Satan is a coward. He is afraid to strike out at God directly, so he strikes at Him through His children. We are either children of God, created in His image, or we are creatures of dumb nature, just maggots on a garbage heap. That is the magnificent vision of man presented to us by the BLM movement – we are all natural, organic maggots, but somehow, through an act of faith, we must believe that the blacks are a special deified breed of maggots that can give us a vision of – what do they give us a vision of? They give us a vision of hell on earth. To live one day with the vision of our people when they were a people consecrated to the living God is worth more than ten thousand lifetimes with the liberals' BLM vision of hell.

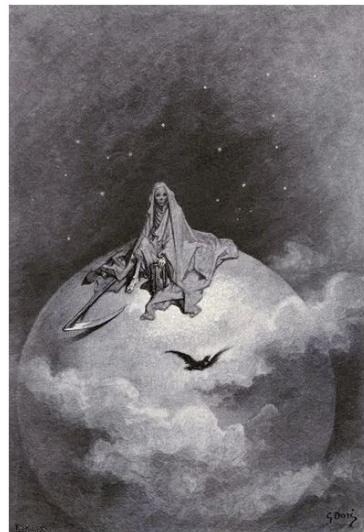
The witches of liberalism have ensnared the European people in the coils of Satan through the religion of the sacred negro. White lives matter most of all because it is only when white people exist as a people, when they are Epistles of the Living God, that we can see a vision of the God who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. He didn't die for just the white race, He died for us all, but do I need to state the obvious? Yes, I do, because Satan's minions have made the truth illegal. Only the white race championed the God who died for all. If we are extinguished as a people we will live in a world – we now do live in such a world – a world without love, without hope, a world that no longer knows what mercy means. Please God, take Cannon Hinnant into thy loving care and abide with us amid the encircling gloom of liberalism. We call on you by name, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. +

# The Cruel Gods of Liberalism

August 29, 2020

Categories: Charity, Fairy tale mode of understanding, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



The major news outlets will not cover the story of Cannon Hinnant's murder. White athletes will not refuse to honor the American flag until there is justice for the white victims of black barbarism. White people will not get T-shirts with pictures of Cannon Hinnant and the words, 'White Lives Matter,' emblazoned on them. 'Christian' pastors will not condemn black barbarism from their pulpits. Blacks will not be asked to think about black privilege nor be commanded to annihilate themselves because of their long history of racist crimes against the white race. In short, nothing at all will happen within the ranks of the Christian Europeans that will begin a counterrevolution against the armed doctrine of the liberals who have made the destruction of the white race and the deification of the negro the two main tenets of their faith. – [CWNY](#)

---

O all you host of heaven! O earth! What else?  
And shall I couple hell? O, fie! Hold, my heart,  
And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up. Remember thee!  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat  
In this distracted globe.

*Hamlet*

---

They attempted to assassinate the memory of those, whose bodies their friends had massacred; and to consider their murder as a less formal act of justice. They endeavoured even to debauch our pity, and to suborn it in favour of cruelty. They wept over the lot of those who were driven by the crimes of Aristocrats to republican vengeance. Every pause of their cruelty they considered as a return of their natural sentiments of benignity and justice.

*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

Interviewer. I know things can and will get a lot worse, it doesn't take a prophet to see that, but would I be exaggerating if I said that we, the European people, have never been as far from your country, which is Christian Europe, as we are at present?

Young Drummer. No, you are not exaggerating. The gulf between my nation and your non-nation is enormous.

Int. Is it impossible to bridge that gulf?

Y.D. You bridged it. That is why you are talking with me.

Int. But is it possible for my people, as a people, to bridge the gulf?

Y.D. Like you I do not claim to be a prophet, but it does not appear that the European people are capable of leaving the pigsty of democracy for Christian Europe. They do not have that within which makes the impossible possible.

Int. Pietas?

Y.D. Yes, that is what they lack. Only men and women with hearts of flesh, men and women who love much, can transcend the demons of modernity – rationalism, negro worship, and science.

Int. They won't give up rationalism and science.

Y.D. Then they will not be able to live without the sacred negro, because he is the savior that the post-Christian European must have.

Int. When I look at successful counterrevolutions, Pinochet in Chile, Franco in Spain, and Forrest in North America, I can see what is lacking in the modern European people.

Y.D. For instance?

Int. Well, first, neither Pinochet, Franco, nor Forrest thought they could not act against a democratically elected government. All they were concerned with was a Jacobin-Marxist enemy that was attacking their people. And secondly all three counterrevolutionary leaders were working with a military-oriented base. Forrest had former Confederate soldiers in his ranks, and both Pinochet and Franco had large elements of the military on their side. In my anti-nation, however, the military always backs the demon-cratically elected liberals. So a counterrevolutionary leader in a democracy would have to go against a formidable military power without any military-minded people on his side. And that presupposes that a counterrevolutionary leader, a man opposed to democracy, could actually emerge from the ranks of the European people.

Y.D. What you describe is true. So long as there are no Burkean conservatives, men who see Christian Europe and not democratic Europe as that which must be preserved, you will continue onward to hell on earth.

Int. Then all is cheerless, dark, and deadly?

Y.D. Yes, so long as your people look to the devil for their salvation. So long as they remain in thrall to democracy, they will remain in thrall to Satan, who rules them through his surrogate, the sacred negro. Show me a modern conservative, as distinct from a Burkean conservative, who does not pay homage to the sacred negro.

Int. There aren't any.

Y.D. No, there aren't. But before we end this interview, I must point out to you the greatest counterrevolution in history. Christ is frequently described as a revolutionary against pagan Rome and the paganized Sanhedrin of the Jewish people. But wasn't paganism itself a revolution against the one true God? Adam and Eve were the original revolutionaries, they turned to Satan who promised them equality with God if they would turn their minds to nature and dumb nature's god, who is Satan. Christ, through His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection, give all those who believed in Him the power to restore, through His grace, the spiritual equilibrium that was lost through the fall of Adam and Eve. The counterrevolution must start with a spiritual renewal within. We must have hearts of flesh, hearts that can "receive Him still."

Int. But hearts of flesh are proscribed in modern Europe. Church and State have joined together to attack the Word made flesh. Both entities hope to consolidate their power through their illuminated minds.

Y.D. We who are about to die need a miracle. Modern Europe needs the same miracle that we as individuals need. That miracle is much greater than any of the so-called wonders of science. That the dead shall be raised is the one true miracle which was brought about by our Lord Jesus Christ. I don't know what else to tell you. If you have bridged the gulf, then you must continue to believe that there will be others. That charity of honor demands that we believe, and that we act on our belief, that the gulf between modern Europe and Christian Europe can be bridged. Glass mountains can be climbed and enormous gulfs can be bridged by hearts of flesh consecrated to Him who saves.

---

If Trump wins re-election, the win will slow down, ever so slightly, the extermination of the white race. But a Trump victory will not change the religious core of our culture. The modern Europeans are a post-Christian people. Their customs and manners are anti-Christian. And an anti-Christian nation must, of necessity, exterminate whites because of their Christian past. There is no election or policy stemming from democracy that can change the religious core of our liberal nation. Let us suppose, for instance, that a Republican mayor is elected in one of those democratically controlled cities where the Antifa/Black Lives Matter creatures from hell are rioting. And let us suppose the new Republican mayor builds up the city's police force and sends more police out on the street. Will that stop the Antifa/BLM barbarians from rioting and looting? No, it will not. More police is not the solution. The police must be empowered to do what is necessary. Thirty policemen who are empowered to shoot and kill rioters are more effective than 3,000 police officers who are told to stand around and get hit by bricks, stones, and bullets. The demon-crats, the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter all believe in their anti-white, anti-Christian faith. If they are to be successfully opposed they must face off against men with "that charity of honor" which stems from a faith in Christ. A vague Republican faith in democracy and the rule of law will not stop the Jacobin-Marxist coalition of demon-crats, Antifa, and BLM, because the religious faith of the Republicans is the same faith as the demon-crats, Antifa, and BLM: They believe in the sacred negro. So long as that remains the ruling faith of our people, the rioters will not be shot. How can you shoot your gods? (1)

The pathetic conservatives always evade the central issue. I heard Tucker Carlson, one of the best of the pathetic conservatives, urging people, in the wake of the Anti/BLM attacks on the white people of Kenosha, Wisconsin, not to cower in their houses. What are they supposed to do? Call the police? The police, if they do come, will just stand around in order to be targeted by bricks and bullets from the rioters. Should they get their guns and shoot back? What would happen to them if they did give the rioters what they deserve – a bullet? They would either be imprisoned for life or executed. From the liberals' perspective the Antifa and the colored barbarians are on the side of right, they are anti-white and anti-Christian. So long as that post-Christian dystopian vision of reality rules our nation, we will live in hell.

In Dante's *Inferno*, Satan is found upside down in the pit of hell. That is our world, everything has been inverted. What is good is labeled evil and what is evil is labeled good. Bloody rioters are called peaceful protestors for social justice, the dismemberment of children in the womb is called choice, and sexual perversity is called gay rights. Liberalism is an armed doctrine that must be opposed with a force commensurate with the force used against us. Violent rioters and violent abortion doctors cannot be won over with peaceful dialogue. The devil wants Christians to dialogue on into the night as he continues to strike back at God through His children.

Franco's counterrevolution did not outlive him. His people returned to the pigsty of democracy after his death. And Pinochet's people returned to democracy before Pinochet's death. There is a limit to what a European counterrevolutionary leader can accomplish without a sufficiently Christian base. Both Franco and Pinochet had to form coalitions with neo-pagan Europeans and colored pagans in order to oust the Jacobin-Marxists, and those loose coalitions could not sustain the counterrevolution.

In contrast, Forrest's counterrevolution was grounded in a thoroughly Christian, non-utopian, non-modern Christian people, untainted by rationalism, science, and a belief in the sacred negro. That is why the soul-preserving, life-preserving effects of his counterrevolution lived on many years after his death. It was only when the Southern people succumbed to rationalism, science, and the belief in the sacred negro in the 1950's that the Southern people joined the post-Christian, anti-European world. It will take something much greater than a Republican electoral victory to restore that which was lost when we abandoned the European civilization that Forrest defended.

In the two conventions, Democrat and Republican, we saw mad-dog liberals squaring off against classical liberals. The classical liberals, who retain a remnant of the Christian ethos, are certainly preferable. But both liberal camps are part of a closed system. They are part of a rational, science-based, two-plus-two-equals-four civilization, a factoid anti-civilization of dumb nature that destroys hearts of flesh in the name of a mind-forged, man-made religion grounded in rationalism, science and a belief in the sacred negro. No one of either convention will condemn the religion of the sacred negro. Both parties will condemn white racism and ignore the murder of innocent whites such as Jonathan Foster and Cannon Hinnant. Nothing good can be expected from a people who condemn their Christian ancestors and sacrifice their children to the colored barbarians. I'm sick to death of hearing about the superiority of capitalism to Marxism. Both systems are based on a mathematical anti-vision of man. We will not be saved by any mathematical system. We will be saved by the Word made flesh.

You cannot breathe a word about the one culture that was not nature-based in any modern venue. But if we can't even say it – that Christian Europe once existed and must be restored – then how can it – and He – be defended? The conservatives want white people to stop cowering in their homes, they want them to fight by voting for Republicans. What do the Republicans stand for? And what is the white grazer's touchstone of reality? He has been told over and over again that his ancestors, men with hearts of flesh, men like Forrest and his remnant band of confederate veterans, were evil racists who must be consigned to the dustbins of history. So in order to be accepted in the new, non-racist world of the future, the white grazer must not have a heart of flesh, he must, the conservatives tell him, be guided by their non-racist illuminated minds. But what will stop the grazer from following the liberals' illuminated vision? Nothing at all. The reason why men like Matt Drudge and Richard Spencer go from what seem to be conservative causes to leftist causes is that there is no spiritual heart in the anti-Christian ideologies of the neo-pagans and their liberal cousins. A man can easily slide from one mathematical system to another. Where does this leave the European Christians? It leaves us at the foot of the cross asking for mercy for our sins against the Light, and for His protection during the Babylonian captivity of the European people. +

---

(1) The officers in Kenosha did the right thing morally and legally, and they should be commended by liberals and blacks alike. They saved black lives. I thought black lives matter? A black athlete (who, by virtue of being black and an athlete, is sacred) proclaimed, in the aftermath of the Kenosha shooting of that horrendous criminal, that blacks live in constant fear of the police. "No white father," the black athlete intoned, "has to tell his children to be afraid." Oh really, I'm a white father and I had to teach my children to be very afraid because they lived in a nation where black barbarians prey on innocent white people with the encouragement of a liberal cabal of bloodthirsty Jacobins.

The only abuse of blacks I ever witnessed when I was a police officer was done by black police officers. They are just as cruel to their own people as they are to whites. There are only two solutions to the "black problem." Either we follow Malcolm X's solution and give the blacks their own separate state, with black police officers who will show the blacks what real police brutality is, or we reinstate slavery to keep the blacks from killing whites and each other. I prefer segregation, the former solution, not because slavery as practiced by the white Southerners was immoral, but because the maintenance of the negroes places too great a burden on whites. Of course I don't believe that the liberals or their conservative cousins will adopt the humane, Christian solution to the black problem. They will continue to deify negroes and turn a blind eye to their crimes against the white race and other races, including their own. I have often been accused of referring all things to "gentle Jesus." Yes, I do. Christians who love their people in and through Christ do not sacrifice their people on the altars of the liberals' black gods. Tommie Lindh was an innocent victim of black savagery. Cannon Hinnant was an innocent victim of black savagery. Jonathan Foster was an innocent victim of black savagery. The whites being massacred by black savages in South Africa are innocent victims of black savagery.

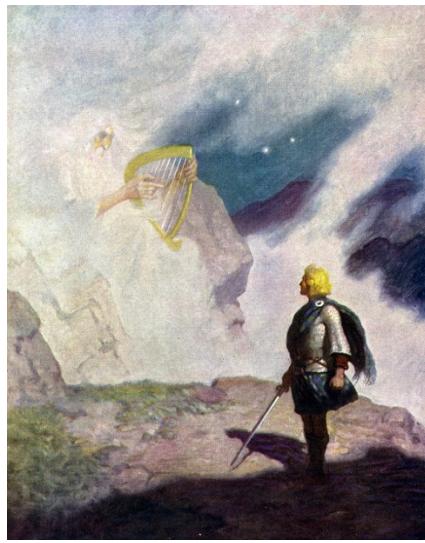
But who is it that the media and the liberal establishment, which are one and the same, mourn and exalt? The black savages who maim, rape, and murder. Nothing good will happen to the European people, as a people, until they look to restore Christian Europe, a land in which Christian men opposed the slaughter of the innocent, and forsake Liberalism, a land ruled by Satan in the name of the sacred negro.

# The War That Has Been Thrust Upon Us

September 5, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship

Tags: Dostoyevsky, Edmund Burke



N. C. Wyeth. *Wallace's Vision*

To all this let us join the practice of cannibalism, with which, in the proper terms, and with the greatest truth, their several factions accuse each other. By cannibalism, I mean their devouring, as a nutriment of their ferocity, some part of the bodies of those they have murdered; their drinking the blood of their victims, and forcing the victims themselves to drink the blood of their kindred slaughtered before their faces. By cannibalism, I mean also to signify all their nameless, unmanly, and abominable insults on the bodies of those they slaughter.

As to those whom they suffer to die a natural death, they do not permit them to enjoy the last consolations of mankind, or those rights of sepulture, which indicate hope, and which mere nature has taught to mankind in all countries, to soothe the afflictions, and to cover the infirmity of mortal condition. They disgrace men in the entry into life; they vitiate and enslave them through the whole course of it; and they deprive them of all comfort at the conclusion of their dishonoured and depraved existence. Endeavouring to persuade the people that they are no better than beasts, the whole body of their institution tends to make them beasts of prey, furious and savage. —[Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

After the murder of counter-protester Aaron Jay Danielson in Portland by Antifa/BLMers from hell, a liberal commentator cried that you could not equate the justifiable killing of a white racist with the unjustified killing of anti-racists. And after a black barbarian shot Cannon Hinnant in the head, a black prison guard on social media derisively said, “He should have ducked.” In those murders we see the armed doctrine of the liberals – all non-illuminated whites must be killed. And it is me and thee that are non-illuminated. The liberals have decreed it is meritorious to kill non-illuminated whites and it is a vicious, horrendous crime to kill the murdering scum in the ranks of the Antifa/BLMers. Of course the Antifa must fly the Black Lives Matter flag when they murder because they too are white, hence they must denounce whiteness all the more, and they will lose their shields if they don’t hide behind Black Lives Matter. Kyle Rittenhouse may be acquitted for his meritorious killing of the two Antifaers because they were white, but he shouldn’t even have to go on trial — he should be given a medal of honor and a parade. When the demon-crats applaud and laud the murderers and looters of the Antifa and the BLM, and when the Republicans say a prayer at their convention for the horrendous black criminal, Jacob Blake, both parties have shown us where their hearts are:

*Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections.* —[Regicide Peace](#)

The shadow-conservatives who attack Trump for not living up to their illuminated conservatism have no right to attack him, because they are not Burkean conservatives, they are classical liberals who believe in democracy. They believe in the American system of Jacobinism, which was conceived in hell and dedicated to the proposition that men can decide all the important questions of life without recourse to the living God. That system, based on abstract reason and modern science, always results in the worship of nature and nature’s god, which is the sacred negro. Within that system a man like Trump, who is a modern democratic man with a tiny remnant of white pietas, is the very best man you will ever get. Do you think a Romney, a Bush, a Ted Cruz, or any other Republican shill would be one-half as good as Trump? But from a Burkean standpoint, the standpoint of a Christian counter-revolutionary, a standpoint that the modern ‘conservatives’ will not take, Trump is part of Liberaldom, and as part of Liberaldom he will not ultimately help the European people to leave Liberaldom and return to that other world, which is Christian Europe. We need a leader who will repudiate Jacobinism in its Marxist and its American forms. Such a leader cannot emerge from within the Jacobin confines of American democracy.

All we need to know about the Republicans who claim to offer us an alternative to the demon-crats can be seen in their call for prayers for Jacob Blake. Their “elective affections” are one with the demon-crats. They condemn white policemen who try to thwart black barbarians while they weep and pray for the black barbarians. How do they differ from the demon-crats who exalt the sacred negroes and ignore the murder of innocent whites? That which must be said is not said by any political party nor is it permitted to be said in any public venue: Negro worship, which is the state religion of the United States is the worship of Satan.

There must be a reckoning for the murder of the Aaron Jay Danielson in Portland, for Cannon Hinnant, for Jonathan Foster, and for all the white victims of liberal treachery and black barbarism. Why are Antifa Satanists and black barbarians allowed to walk the streets carrying AR-15 rifles while whites are expected to cower in their homes awaiting execution? And why, when whites come out to protest, are they gunned down without any attempt on the part of the liberal establishment to punish the murderers? Oh, I forgot, the murder of a white is not murder, it is a meritorious execution of a racist. And we dare not place our hopes in the police. They work for the state, and the state will not allow them to act against the Antifaers or the BLMers. (1) As Forrest and his followers did many years ago, so we should do. We cannot rely on either a demon-cratic government or a Republican government to protect us from the liberals and the black barbarians who want our blood. We must be a law unto ourselves. How can Christian men consent to be ruled by Satan’s minions? Doesn’t that charity of honor demand that we rise and ride in defense of our people and our God? The ‘pro-lifers’ failed to procure protection for the innocents in the womb because they did not love enough to kill the baby killers. In fact, they denounced Paul Hill when he did what had to be done. So it is now with the white grazers. If we don’t love enough to kill the murderers of our people, we will perish as a people, and Satan will reign unchallenged. The Antifaers and the BLMers have made it abundantly clear that we cannot serve two masters. We can serve Satan or we can serve Christ, there is no in between despite what the purveyors of star-spangled Americanism tell us.

Let me preface what I am about to say next with the assertion that in any war it is the spiritual substance of the people that must be paramount. An army of a committed few with something within, determined to fight to the knife, is better than a whole host of spiritually gutted men with AR-15s and shotguns in their gun cabinets. However, using Forrest as our exemplar, certain practical considerations about armaments are necessary. The enemy is armed, yet they don’t have jobs. Who is arming the creatures of Antifa and Black Lives Matter? I assume it is George Soros and others of his ilk. So right away we shall despair if we seek to defeat the enemy with our superior armaments. They will always be better armed than we are, because they have more money. Need I cite David and his slingshot? But still, let us come to the practical matter, something I am woefully inadequate to discuss, but I will – I did not grow up in a gun family. My father served in World War II, but he was not a hunter nor did he believe in keeping a gun in the house for self-defense. I did not own a gun until, after a teaching position I held

was eliminated, I got a job as a police officer. When I left the police force, I kept a handgun for self-defense and taught my family members the use of the gun. But I never became the type of country boy depicted in the Hank Williams Jr. music video, "Country Boys Can Survive," because my interests didn't really lie in that direction. And I had hoped in my old age to pursue those other interests exclusively. Now I find that it is not possible to live in peace. The liberals want war, they will not accept any terms but unconditional surrender. And that I will not do. So I have had to put aside time for the shotgun and the rifle. I realize that guns are not magic in and of themselves, but I feel I must take some care of this, lest I give the enemy an easy conquest.

It is not easy for a Christian to shed blood. Like Burke, the Christian feels that, "The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity, the rest is crime." But what do we make of creatures who delight in bloodletting for the sake of vanity, for the sake of building a utopian Tower of Babel dedicated to the pride of reason, to science, and to the sacred negro? Can creatures possessed of such a zealous thirst for blood be opposed by Christian Europeans with a reluctance to shed blood? Yes, such creatures can and must be opposed, because something inside of us rebels against the inhuman cruelty and bloodlust of the liberals and the colored barbarians. In the name of Him who saves, that something inside of us says, "This shall not go on."

We have come to this dreadful pass where the grim visage of death in life and life without hope has overwhelmed us, because we have lost sight of the Romance that's above the sceptered sway of mere reason. The Christ we see in the Gospels is not a Socratic Christ, He is not a great sage. Nor is the Christ we see in the epistles of St. Paul an Aristotelian philosopher. Then who is He? He is the one true knight, the knight errant of Europe who bids us remember the childhood of our race so that we will not forget we belong to His world, a world where reason is humbled and purified before the poetic light of the Word made flesh. Without a childlike faith that does not exalt the rational man who is independent of our Savior, we are wanderers in a foreign land, the land of reason, science, and the noble colored savage.

Trump knows where the magic bricks come from that the Antifaers and the BLMers throw at the police and the private businesses, and he knows where the guns come from which are used to kill white people, yet all he can do is demand that the white police officers in Kenosha, Wisconsin face criminal charges. That is how a democratic leader, the best of the democratic leaders, responds to the liberals' and the colored barbarians' assault on the white race. Soros and his ilk are a protected species as are the colored barbarians. Why should we hold elections at all? The results will be the same: A liberal oligarchy ruling in the name of the sacred negro will govern our nation no matter who holds public office. But we cling to life no matter what. A Trump victory will afford whites a slight delay before their final execution. (2)

Why must we be governed by liberals who hate whites? Why must we cower in our homes waiting to be executed by Antifaers or BLMers? Why is our President more concerned about the meritorious shooting of Jacob Blake than the murder of Cannon Hinnant and thousands of other white victims of black barbarism? (3) The 'why' is there before our eyes. Look at the world we have embraced. When we left His Europe, the non-statistical world of Handel, Shakespeare, and Rembrandt for Rosencrantz and Guildenstern's world of statistical maggots on nature's dung heap, we left faith, hope, and charity behind for the pride of reason, the wonders of science, and a new God, the sacred negro. If we reject that world of glorified maggots for His world, we will put on the whole armour of Christ and defeat the devil and his minions. But that rejection must take place within our souls. We can't have abstract reason and our Savior, we can't have science and our Savior. And most of all, we cannot worship the sacred negro and Jesus Christ. The liberals' war against the Light has been thrust upon us, and we cannot defeat the liberals by way of democracy and democracy's god. We must call upon Him who "hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows," even if such a divine condescension cannot be statistically computed. +

---

(1) Danielson's murderer was shot by federal police after he gave an interview bragging about the murder. But the local police did not apprehend him after the shooting nor stop the murder before it happened by disarming the mob. Police kill more white criminals than black criminals, even though blacks commit more crimes. There is a racial disparity in law enforcement: Whites are discriminated against. How could it be otherwise when police brutality against innocent whites such as pro-life protesters and ranchers is lauded while simple law enforcement against black barbarians is condemned by church and state? There is no essential difference between the demon-crats and the Republicans on the issue of negro worship. They have all joined hands around the throne of the sacred negro. How effective will the police be if they cannot touch the major perpetrators of crime because they are sacred? Everyone wants approval from their peers. If the police are lauded for arresting whites and condemned for arresting blacks, whom do you think they are going to focus on? Just look at the case of Roger Stone, who was convicted of lying to a pack of liars. Storm troopers with rifles, shotguns, and helicopters were sent to arrest him as if he were ten times more dangerous than John Dillinger. And yet the Antifaers and the BLMers march through our streets looting, murdering, and raping with impunity. But of course their violence is the 'good violence', done to combat white racism. And what is white racism? It is anything that is good and pure and Christian.

(2) Hilary Clinton has ordered Biden not to concede the election no matter what, because she knows that the courts are demon-crat-dominated and the military will back the courts. So if we place our hopes in a Republican victory, which we should not do, our hopes will be dashed. Only that revelatory faith that we have abandoned will sustain us in the dark days ahead. Dostoevsky's Father Zosima gives the lie to our modern kingdom of hell on earth which we must fight "to the knife":

*Look at the worldly, at those who set themselves above the people of God—have they not distorted the image of God and His truth? They have science, but science contains nothing that does not come through the senses. The spiritual world, the nobler side of man's being, has been rejected altogether, banned as it were triumphantly, perhaps even with hatred. The world has proclaimed freedom, now more loudly than ever; but what do we find in that freedom of theirs? Nothing but enslavement and suicide! The world says: "You have needs—satisfy them. You have as much right as the rich and the mighty. Don't hesitate to satisfy your needs; indeed, expand your needs and demand more." This is the worldly doctrine of today. And they believe that this is freedom. The result for the rich is isolation and suicide, for the poor, envy and murder; for while the poor have been handed all these rights, they have not been given the means to enjoy them. Some claim that the world is gradually becoming united, that it will grow into a brotherly community as distances shrink and ideas are transmitted through the air. Alas, you must not believe that men can be united in this way. To consider freedom as directly dependent on the number of man's requirements and the extent of their immediate satisfaction shows a twisted understanding of human nature, for such an interpretation only breeds in men a multitude of senseless, stupid desires and habits and endless preposterous inventions. People are more and more moved by envy now, by the desire to satisfy their material greed, and by vanity. Giving dinners, riding in private carriages, occupying high social positions, and having myriads of servants—these are considered so important by some that they devote their whole lives to acquiring them and sacrifice for their sake their love of their fellow men, and sometimes even kill themselves if they cannot obtain what they believe they must have.*

(3) If the main cause of the decline of European civilization, which is the replacement of Christ with the noble black savage, is never addressed by the leaders of the West, then the leaders of the West are not fit to lead. For more than a twelfth month the liberals have told the story of the evil whites and the evil civilization they built on the backs of the suffering servants, the negroes. So the liberals have decreed that that civilization and the whites who built it must perish. Trump can act when the Antifa isolate themselves from Black Lives Matter, but neither he nor any other white leader will act forcibly against Black Lives Matter. This careful avoidance of the second person of the liberals' holy trinity while focusing on police brutality against blacks is like a public official who declares war on air pollution by ignoring the factories spewing out noxious fumes while he attacks the people burning leaves in their back yards.

# The Great Religious Talk Show

September 12, 2020

Categories: Classical liberalism, Negro worship, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens



Dore. The Vision of Death

"What do I wish for?" repeated the student. "Perfect happiness. Fortune herself is my desire."

"Explain what you mean by Fortune," pursued the spirit.

"Fortune," began the other, "is a power of nature, and—"

"Be quick!" cried the ghost. "Do you wish for money?"

"No, no," answered the wise man; "the greatest happiness is to have no heart. I wish that you would take mine from me."

"Shall I take your heart?" asked the spirit again.

"Yes, take it, and hide it so well that it will never be found."

"Far, far away," said the spirit, "in the middle of a wild forest, there is a sea with an island on which an old castle is standing. I shall bury your heart fifty feet under the deepest cellar in this castle. Are you contented?"

"Yes, and I shall rejoice to be rid of it."

Now the stream vanished, and the pot boiled quietly as before. The wise man felt a cold touch at the left side of his chest, and knew that he had lost his heart. Since that day he lived much more peacefully, and was able to see the greatest want and distress without feeling the least trouble. He thought himself happier than all other beings, and was able to pursue his studies undisturbed.

*-Danish Fairy and Folk Tales*

---

'Bitzer,' said Mr. Gradgrind, broken down, and miserably submissive to him, 'have you a heart?'

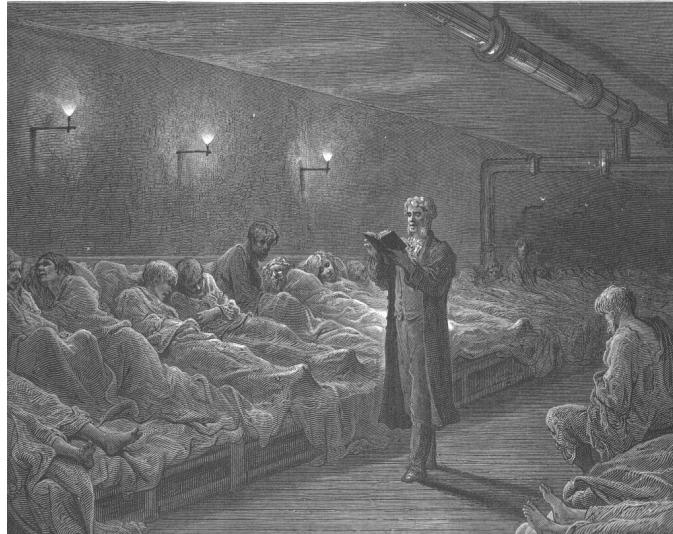
'The circulation, sir,' returned Bitzer, smiling at the oddity of the question, 'couldn't be carried on without one. No man, sir, acquainted with the facts established by Harvey relating to the circulation of the blood, can doubt that I have a heart.'

'Is it accessible,' cried Mr. Gradgrind, 'to any compassionate influences?'

'It is accessible to Reason, sir,' returned the excellent young man. 'And to nothing else.'

*-Hard Times*

---



Dore. Scripture reader in a night refuge

The star had shown him where to find the God of the poor; and through humility, and sorrow, and forgiveness, he had gone to his Redeemer's rest.

#### Hard Times

---

The liberals' "elective affections" are with the sacred negroes and all those who hate the white race. To what extent have they, the liberals, suborned the affections of the white grazers in favor of their cruelty? It appears they have been very successful in their attempt to suborn the pity of whites and turn them against their own people. If what appears to be true is true, that whites actually believe their ancestors were evil and beyond redemption and that they must do penance for their ancestors' evil by ceding their civilization and their very lives to the sacred negroes, then it is quite useless to have elections this fall.

The Republicans are campaigning for a return to the first circle of hell, where the virtuous pagans sit around a heathen campfire and talk about the virtuous life. The demon-crats are campaigning for the final descent into the pit of hell. Even if the demon-crats lose the presidential election because the white grazers are not prepared to go into the deepest pit of hell, the devil still has won, because he has won the cultural war: the European people have rejected Christian Europe because it was 'racist,' and they have embraced post-Christian Europe because it is not racist. The political debate is not about whether we shall be Christian or heathen — that has been decided already: we shall be heathen — what is up for debate is the fate of the white grazers. Trump claims there is a place for the white grazers in the first circle of hell, while the demon-crats claim there is no place for white grazers in their kingdom which has 'progressed' beyond the first circle of hell. They are for the deepest regions of hell where they intend to dwell with the devil in perpetuity.

Dante errs when he places virtuous pagans in hell who have never been exposed to the light of Christ's love. But what about those who have been exposed to the Word made flesh, the Christian theologians and philosophers who worship reason untainted by a heart of flesh — haven't they chosen the first circle of hell? Yes, they have. They don't hate the Word made flesh as their liberal brethren do — they are beyond love and hatred — but they always side with the liberal hellhounds because they, like the mad-dog liberals, do not believe that abstract reason unilluminated by the human heart is pure evil. They think, against the blood wisdom of our people, that their exalted Grand Inquisitorial reason shall take them and their followers to heaven on earth. That cannot be. Such 'exalted' reasoning brings a man, and a civilization, to the deepest pit of hell. What seems to be a polite, cozy talk show discussion about religion starts with a supper with the devil, then precedes to a long vacation in the devil's summer house, and finally ends with a permanent residence in hell. Why must that be the case? Do I not place too much emphasis on hearts of flesh, on what I call Christian Europe? That is only true if the Christian faith is something other than what St. Paul claimed it was. He enjoined us to search the scriptures with our hearts so that we could become "epistles of the living God." Doesn't that injunction require that we have a heart?

If we can't see the face of Jesus Christ in the living epistles of the people who took His word into their hearts, where can we see the face of Jesus Christ? "You don't need to see His face," the Thomist and all the rational, first-circle men of reason tell us. "All you need is our philosophy." But whose philosophy shall I choose? Why should I choose one rational scheme over another? Is truth revelatory or is it rational? I maintain, because I have seen the face of Jesus Christ in European hearts of flesh and not in abstract reason, that truth is revelatory, not rational.

Negro worship has replaced Christ-centered Christianity because organized Christian Jewry rejected St. Paul's revelatory vision of Jesus Christ in favor of reason unaided, and as the churchmen asserted, unpolluted by humanity. Dmitry Karamazov is the exemplar of the heart of flesh, which the theologians hate. He despises 'two plus two equals four' theology, and he allows his passion for Grushenka to bring him to the brink of murder and despair. But his heart of flesh overcomes his evil passions, and he comes to the foot of the Cross. In contrast, the great intellect, the great rationalist, Ivan Karamazov, is left naked to the merciless god of the rationalists, the archangel Satan. It is significant that when Hollywood made a movie of *The Brothers Karamazov*, Ivan became the hero. Twentieth century modernists were incapable of believing that a rationalist could be a villain. But not only can a rationalist be a villain, a pure rationalist is always a villain; he is the boon companion of the greatest rationalist of them all. Satan lurks behind the arras of the great religious talk show, a diabolical Polonius making sure that there are no hearts of flesh present at the talk show.

It's a curious thing — the mad-dog, secular liberals are one with the conservative Christians in their rejection of St. Paul's vision of charity. St. Paul saw Christ in his heart and told us we could know Him through that vital organ of sight. The liberals and the churchmen damn that organ of sight and bid us turn to their visions of a rational utopian world ordered and run by illuminated minds free from the illicit passions of the human heart. It is very easy to find illicit passions in the hearts of the antique Europeans because they were mortal men and women. But is that all we can see in their hearts? Is Rembrandt the sum of whatever sins he may have committed, or is he to be judged by the vision within his heart? I cannot be silent on this issue of the passionate hearts of my people. They had a vision of the heart that completely transcends the cruel utopian theologies of our clergymen and the hellish utopias of the liberals. We must reject both evils and stand, even if we stand alone, with the ancient hearts of our people.

In the culture that the theologians damn as impure and the secular liberals damn as racist is the blood faith of a people who took Christ into their hearts. If the theologians and their followers would look at those people through and not with the eye they would see with blinding sight and become epistles of the living God instead of the Amen chorus of Liberaldom.

The Christ story is all in all, and it was always present as a vital, living entity in our people until our people divorced Christ and married the sacred negro. Let me reference a work such as Dickens' *Hard Times*. The book is certainly the greatest critique of the inhumanity of unbridled capitalism ever written, but it is so much more. When the hero of the book, one Stephen Blackpool, a suffering servant who has been rejected by the socialists and the capitalists, disappears under suspicion for the robbery of the bank, only one faithful heart remains in Coketown who still believes that Stephen is innocent and that he will return. And the one faithful heart, Rachel, wins another woman over to her side, and together they wait and pray for Stephen's return. Dickens did not make a rational decision to write a Christian allegory, he wrote from the heart, and the Christ story was in his heart. That is the beauty of our people when they were a people.

All my life I have heard the theologians tell me to abandon the whitened sepulchre of Christian Europe for their Christian rationalism. But is not reason unilluminated by a heart of flesh the real whitened sepulchre? The people with the ancient hearts saw a great light, they lived and died in the shadow of the cross. The modern theologians see no light, they bid us sit in church and think about 'white privilege' while we contemplate the magnificence of the noble black savage. That is not my world, I cannot live with the inhuman vision of the anti-pietas, anti-European, Christless Christians.

However much I might rail against the first-circle-of-hell talk show conservatives, both lay and clerical, they now constitute the ranks of the opposition to the mad-dog liberals. Isn't it better to make peace with them and reside in the first circle of hell rather than go into the deepest region of hell with the mad-dog liberals? No, it is not better. It is not better for two

reasons. The first reason is that hell is still hell and I do not want to live in hell. The second reason is that the liberals will not let you remain in the first circle of hell, they will not let you go halfway off the cliff with the swine, you must go all the way. Unamuno was right: it is all or nothing. Either we stand with the men whom Moley (from *The Wind and the Willows*) called the "Death or Glory Toads," the antique Europeans, or we can become the shadows of the liberals, following them ever so cautiously, wearing conservative outer garments covering up our liberal hearts, into the center of hell.

The great battle will not begin until we walk away from the religious talk show where the 'racism' of the 'evil,' antique Europeans with hearts of flesh is taken as a given. If we proceed against the Tower of Babel rationalists, refusing to accept their given, that white pietas is racism, we will find a heart and a will to resist what now seems irresistible, the liberals' juggernaut. But of course in order for that to happen the whites who have made a whitened sepulchre of reason divorced from the human heart must reclaim their hearts, like the philosopher in the Danish fairy tale, "The Man Without a Heart":

*The old man turned furiously upon him, and reached for his staff, but at the same moment he felt a stinging pain in his left side, threw up his hands, staggered to his feet, and cried: "Mercy, mercy! I have served the Evil One! Some one gave me back my heart. Oh, give me my youth again, that I may live like other men!"*

*In the next second the two figures outside the windows became alive again, and the two brothers clasped each other in their arms, while the sisters held each other by the hand. But a great change had taken place in the room. There now stood by the philosopher's chair a little boy, gazing curiously at the many singular objects about him. This man had found his heart again, and was to begin life afresh.*

*For none of God's creatures can live without a heart.*

"Like unto a child": that is the miracle of Christian Europe. +

# White Privilege

September 19, 2020

Categories: Faithful hearts, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Shakespeare, Stark Young



Rembrandt. *Carrying of the cross*

"The way I've been obliged to see it is this: our ideas and instincts work upon our memory of these people who have lived before us, and so they take on some clarity of outline. It's not to our credit to think we began today, and it's not to our glory to think we end today. All through time we keep coming in to the shore like waves—like waves. You stick to your blood, son; there's a certain fierceness in blood that can bind you up with a long community of life."

[So Red the Rose](#) by Stark Young

---

The Reverend – let us leave his name and denomination a blank – was eighty-five years old. He had been put out to pasture, so to speak, when he was seventy. He was still in good health, but it was his church's policy to retire their clergy at age seventy unless there was some pressing reason for them to continue in their duties. In the case of Reverend Everyman there was no pressing need for him. In his fifteen years of retirement he had never once been asked to substitute for any of the still functioning clergy, but this past August was different. Summer vacations and COVID-19 had diminished the ranks of the available clergy. The powers that be in the Reverend's church decided, "Let's get old Rev. Everyman to fill in one Sunday."

"Is he available?" a junior clergyman asked.

"Certainly," his superior replied, "He is just sitting around collecting dust, so let's dust him off and put him in the pulpit this Sunday. What harm can he do?"

So on August 16, 2020, the Reverend Everyman stepped out of retirement. At first, nothing unusual happened; the Reverend went smoothly through the service. He did all the readings himself because he had no assisting clergyman and he did not want the laity to read. After he read the Gospel, which was [John 9](#), the story of the man who was born blind, the Reverend stepped up to the pulpit to deliver his sermon, his homily, or his commentary, whatever you prefer to call it. First he greeted the faithful, introducing himself because he had never done a service in this particular church before and wishing them all a pleasant summer – the usual formalities. Then he presented his homily/sermon.

"There are two great miracles in the story of the man born blind. The first is the miracle of God's grace: He has compassion for the man born blind and cures his blindness. That is the obvious miracle. We can all see that miracle. But there is a second miracle in this story that we often overlook. That is the miracle of God's grace working within the heart of an individual human being. After the man born blind receives his sight, he faces incredible pressure to deny the Man who restored his sight. We must remember what it entailed for a Jew at that time to be cast out of the synagogue. The synagogue was the Jew's social and religious life. The parents of the man born blind were unwilling to take the risk of being cast out of the synagogue. Yet, their son did take that risk. He spoke back to the Pharisees and defended the man who had given him his sight:

*Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?*

*Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.*

*The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.*

"And then the Pharisees cast the man born blind out of the synagogue. Now, we come to the great moment. When Christ hears that the man born blind has been cast out of the synagogue, He seeks him out:

*Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?*

*He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?*

*And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.*

*And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.*

*And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.*

*And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?*

*Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.*

"In these two miracles, which are intertwined, we see our faith embodied. Our Lord shows us His divine compassion, and we respond to His divine compassion. Ah, but as Hamlet says, "There's the rub." Do we, in 2020, respond to God's grace as the man born blind responded to His grace? No, my friends, we do not. In this very church, last week, you were asked to sit there and think about 'white privilege.' And you all sat there, listening to unholy blasphemies from the pulpit because you were afraid to be cast out of the synagogue. But if you are afraid

to be cast out of the synagogue, our Lord will not seek you out; you will remain captives of the blasphemers. There are two white privileges, and neither of those privileges are what the authorities, the purveyors of blasphemy, are referring to when they talk about white privilege.

"The first white privilege is the privilege shared by all the races of mankind. That is the privilege of knowing that Christ died on the cross to redeem us from sin and death. And the second white privilege is the privilege to champion Christ crucified, Christ risen in a hostile world. That privilege, which is also a cross, was borne by our white ancestors, the men and women who are now damned as racists by the Marxists in the Democratic party and by the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter creatures from hell. While you sit in those pews and worship blacks, and when you leave this church and kneel down to the banners of the BLM creatures, you crucify your Lord anew, and you disgrace your ancestors who loved their own people in and through Jesus Christ. There is no dichotomy between the Old and New Testament. Today the Old Testament reading, [Psalm 139](#), is in complete accord with the story of the man born blind. The man born blind is loyal to the God of mercy, and because he loves much he refuses to renounce Christ even though he knows he will be cast out of the synagogue. He hates the enemies of the true God, just as the psalmist does:

*Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.*

"Surely we must not join with the bloody men of the Democrats, the Antifa, and the Black Lives Matters. We must, like the man born blind, cling to our Lord and Savior. May Christ be with you always, even to the ending of the world. Amen."

During the course of the homily/sermon, over four-fifths of the congregation exited the church. Of the remaining one-fifth, all but one man shunned the Reverend Everyman when he stood outside the church to greet the people as they left. That one man embraced the Reverend, and with tears in his eyes, asked him to pray for him in the battle to come. "You've given me a renewed faith and a renewed hope, Reverend."

"God bless you, my son, may Christ strengthen you."

The reaction to the Reverend's homily/sermon was swift. Two days later he was given official notification that he no longer had a pension and he no longer was a member of the clergy. He was defrocked and defunded. The Reverend was not surprised. He knew what he was doing when he spoke out against the Pharisees in the synagogue of liberalism. Was it worth it? After all, only one man took the sermon/homily into his heart. "Yes," the Reverend said, "it was worth it." The Reverend bought a van and at age 85, started a new life as a wanderer on the face of the earth. He would preach the Gospel in KOA campgrounds and other wilderness locations to whomever would listen. And when his time came, he would go to his Lord, the God of the meek, the humble, and the merciful, the God who stands as a sign of contradiction to the merciless gods of Liberaldom.

In Shakespeare's *Richard III*, a Scrivener comments, to himself, on what he dares not say in public because a bloody tyrant will brook no opposition:

*Here's a good world the while! Who is so gross  
That cannot see this palpable device?  
Yet who's so bold but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.*

[—Richard III](#)

For quite some time now the liberals have been hell-bent on the extermination of the white race under the banner of the sacred negro. Yet no one is permitted to say what is obvious. The conservatives talk about preserving law and order, but they never touch on the main enemies of law and order, the sacred negroes. They are just as quick as their liberal counterparts to condemn the 'rogue cops' when they hurt, maim, or kill the sacred negroes while trying to arrest them for their crimes. Must I point out that none of the celebrated negroes – Blake, Floyd, etc. – would have been injured had they not committed crimes and then resisted arrest? No nation can long endure, Mr. Lincoln, when those who govern that nation are too illuminated to protect their people from black noble savages who murder, rape, and pillage because they know they can do so with impunity.

I listened to a conservative the other day telling his audience that we were living in the best of all worlds because the stock market was booming. Is he mad? Yes, indeed he is. Even if the stock market boom that he was extolling becomes a permanent boom, does it then follow that these are the best of times? Our young people have embraced negro worship, they hate their own kind and the cultural heritage of the antique Europeans, and the few that have not embraced negro worship have succumbed to despair because they do not think there is a future for the white race in Liberaldom. Yet, the stock market man tells us we live in a world of financial wonders that should make us all deliriously happy. A conservative who is not a counterrevolutionary is not a conservative, he is a liberal, because he seeks to preserve the Jacobin-Marxist revolution. It matters little whether the liberal-conservatives, who are the capitalists, or the mad-dog liberals, who are the socialists, rule; they both worship Baal under the guise of the sacred negro. That is the truth that cannot be spoken of in our modern, dystopian hell.

If I was to be executed, and my executioners gave me a choice of an execution in two weeks or four weeks, I would choose four weeks. We are made that way, we cling to life. That is why I would like to see Trump win the presidential election. It will delay, ever so slightly, the final execution of the white race. But ultimately our salvation as a people does not depend on elections. In point of fact, we must renounce democracy in order to survive as a people, because our modern democracy is based on the premise that white pietas is evil. Conservatives never attack Black Lives Matter by defending the white Christians of the Old South, the people who took Christian Europe to the northern hemisphere. Instead they claim that the Black Lives Matter creatures should not attack contemporary whites because they are no longer racist. We must not overlook the moral cowardice of such a 'defense,' which is no defense: "You can no longer call us racist. We are not racists, it is our ancestors who were racists!" Is that so? Yes, it is so. Our ancestors, the whites of the Old South, built a civilization based on pietas, the love of their own in and through Christ the Lord. If they were wrong, if they were racist in the pejorative sense of the word, then all of Christian Europe was wrong from its inception: the Dream of the Rood Christians were wrong, St. Paul was wrong, and, if we take that liberal logic to its ultimate conclusion, Christ be not risen. That is what the Demon-cratic-Antifa-BLM movement is all about. Satan has decreed that, "Christ be not risen, He is a fraud. You must follow me and destroy every last vestige of the culture based on Christ is Risen and every single, individual, white person who refuses to renounce that culture. The conservative-liberals seek to survive by renouncing their ancestors and joining the ranks of the illuminati. "We too are non-racists. In fact, the liberals are more racist than we are."

If the Republicans somehow manage to retain the presidency, the rioting will continue in the democrat-controlled cities, and the demon-crats in Congress will continue to nullify all of Trump's initiatives. If the demon-crats win, the riots will intensify throughout the nation, and all resistance to the rioters will be squashed by the military and the police. That is something we must keep in mind. The hierarchy of the military are Obama appointees. They are not going to mount a counterrevolution against their demon-cratic brethren. And the police who have been given racial sensitivity courses for the past forty years will side with the liberals who pay them. We owe it to our women, those who have remained faithful through all these years, not to remain passive because we do not want to act outside of the democratic shackles of Satan. We must pick up the cross of Christ, our white privilege, and destroy the enemies of white pietas. And we must do this because we love our own and hate the devil and all his works. +

# The Shadow of Satan

September 26, 2020

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts, Homeland

Tags: Shakespeare



Gilbert. *Lear and the Fool*

'Tis the time's plague, when madmen lead the blind. —[King Lear](#)

---

In his song-poem "My Old Kentucky Home," Stephen Collins Foster describes the sorrow involved when what was once our home is no more:

*The day goes by like a shadow o'er the heart,  
With sorrow, where all was delight.*

For me, modern Liberaldom is the 'shadow o'er the heart' culture. The liberals of the mad-dog and classical persuasion have placed a shadow, in the form of a black shroud, over old Europe. If we must worship the negro and forsake our ancient hearth culture, because those dear old folk of long ago did not worship the negro, then how can we have a culture at all? Our culture comes from our racial hearth fire. If we were a purely pagan people, our hearth fire gods would sustain us. When our God was the one true God, He sustained us through our racial and familial hearth fire. The Christian does not differ from the pagan because the pagan's faith emanates from his hearth fire and the Christian's faith does not. That is the lie of the theologian, the intellectual Christian who has no blood faith. The Christian has a familial and racial hearth fire just as the pagan does, but the Christian's hearth fire is consecrated to Christ rather than to a series of heathen gods. When we forsake our European hearth fire to embrace the anti-pietas culture of liberalism, which is a fusion of intellectual Christianity and paganism, we condemn our children to hell on earth. They will be lost, without a vision of the living God, if they are denied access to their bardic past. In the name of a mathematical, utopian future, the liberals have created a civilization which has demonized white pietas.

*Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the LORD, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done.* —[Psalm 78](#)

Christian Europe was a wonderful work of our Lord. That great work has been obliterated by the work of Satan. Just as our Lord worked through men to build Christian Europe, Satan has worked through men to build satanic Europe. And let us not deceive ourselves about that. The liberal is satanic: we cannot reason with a liberal any more than we can reason with a deadly, poisonous snake.[\(1\)](#) There is nothing that pleases the devil more than a nice, rational debate, because the devil knows that reason, detached from the human heart, is the essence of his kingdom of hell on earth. Once the European steps away from his hearth fire because he believes that prejudice and superstition reside there, that selfsame European belongs to the devil.

The United States has advanced further than any other nation toward the kingdom of hell on earth. But every single European nation is on that slippery slope of reason detached from the human heart. That detachment always results in a severance from the bardic culture of old Europe, the culture of the parable, which is of the spirit. That severance allows the new men of reason and science the liberty to create a culture of math and the syllogism, which is the culture of dumb nature. It is not possible to live with the shadow of liberalism over our hearts. We must remove that shadow by returning home. Even if that home is now a devastated vineyard, we must rebuild it with a heart that has cast off the shadows of Liberaldom.

It wasn't that long ago, about 25 years ago, that the classical liberals such as George Gilder were extolling the benefits of the computer revolution. Through the computer, the liberals, they told us, would be defeated because they would no longer have a monopoly on the flow of information. The computer would democratize information, thus allowing American, conservative populism to overcome American liberalism. But that has not been the case. The mad-dog liberals, through search engines like Google and social media websites like Twitter and Facebook, now have a greater monopoly on thought and speech than they ever had in the print and ink era. Why is that? It is because the conservatives are not conservative. They, like their liberal cousins, believe in the mathematical nature culture of Satan more than the fairy tale culture of old Europe. In the European fairy tales the hero ventures forth without a mathematical plan to guide him. He trusts in God to take him safely home through the good offices of benevolent fairies and angels. But a man with a system, be it Thomism, communism, capitalism, or democracy, does not need fairy tales; he does not need, or so he thinks, the people of the parable and the spirit. "Oh what a falling off was there!"

I always feel a certain satisfaction when a Trump or an Orbán wins an election in Liberaldom, but my heart does not soar at such tidings because I know that electoral victories from within Liberaldom are not really victories for the European people. They are merely delaying actions before our inevitable defeat by the forces of Satan and his liberal minions. I use the term 'inevitable' conditionally: Our defeat is only inevitable if we do not return to our home, to our racial hearth fire, where the parable of the God-Man who saved us from sin and death reigns supreme.

I had a student some 30 years ago whom I still recall quite vividly. And I remember him for two reasons. The first reason is that he died tragically at the hands of a black barbarian. And the second reason is that he was very interested in what I had to say about literature. That made him a rare student. But he was not in agreement at first with what I had to say about modern authors; I unilaterally condemned them all. His hero was Stephen King, and he defended his hero in class and outside of class. I didn't talk down to the young man — I wasn't that much older than him at the time, only about 12 years, which was, I think, one of the reasons I finally changed his opinion of Stephen King. I was a young man defending the old authors. What it finally came down to was that Shakespeare, Dickens, Scott, Dostoyevsky, and the other old white Europeans had depth of soul, and Stephen King and the other moderns did not. My young friend, because he still had a soul, came to see, once he was exposed to the authors with the ancient European hearts, that Stephen King and his ilk were nothing; in fact, they were hideous purveyors of liberal filth. But of course that young man from my early teaching days had that within which enabled him to reject modernity. Are there any such young men, or old men for that matter, left today? It doesn't appear there are, but perhaps that is how the devil wants it to appear so that the European Christian, the man imbued with white pietas, will believe he no longer has a spiritual home, a people to whom he belongs, and then he will die in despair. [\(2\)](#)

Does it make any difference whether a man dies in despair or whether he dies feeling connected to a long line of people with whom he shares a kindred faith? I think it does. St. Paul tells us that, “none of us liveth alone and none of us dieth alone, for whether we live we live unto the Lord, and whether we die we die unto the Lord.” If we die having renounced our people, the people who lived and died unto the Lord, do not we die alone? That is a fearful thing. Small wonder so many opiates are needed to sustain the post-Christian Europeans. Death will come to us all, but is it not unthinkable to die without the faith of the antique Europeans? Will the great god of the liberals, the sacred negro, comfort us at the hour of our deaths? Is he a god worthy of our love and reverence?

A traditional, non-utopian European seeks to preserve the heritage bequeathed to him by his ancestors. He does not think that “he began today,” nor does he think he has a right to alter the sacred heritage of his ancestors. All changes of a material, technological nature must be used to help preserve his cultural heritage, not to supplant it. In contrast to that genuine conservatism is the liberalism of the modern Europeans. In modern democracies, technology is not used to preserve the culture of the antique Europeans, it is used to destroy it. We have the technological means, for instance, to ensure that a greater number of children live past their births, but instead of using that technology to preserve life, we use it to ensure that a greater number of children never live to see the light of day. That is because we do not want to preserve the traditional reverence for infant children that our Christian ancestors bequeathed to us. We also have the technology to place barriers between our people and foreign invaders. But we do not do that because the foreign invaders, be they Moslem, Mexican, or Chinese, are anti-European and anti-Christian, which is in keeping with liberalism. And we have the technology, the armaments, to destroy the Antifa/BLM barbarians, who prowl about the streets in order to loot, rob, rape, and kill. But our government does not use their armaments, their technology, to fight the Antifa/BLM barbarians, because those creatures from hell are moving forward, away from ‘racist,’ Christian Europe. They are moving toward a liberal utopia in which Satan rules unchallenged.

At present, you are deemed a madman, a racist, or both, if you see yourself as part of a continuum, a long line of kith-and-kin Europeans who lived and died to preserve a Christ-centered civilization instead of a new, technological civilization with the sacred negro at its center. It is a great irony of European history that the people who so proudly lauded themselves for their democratic governments, their science, their technology, and their God-like reason, have succumbed to a primitive religion, the worship of the sacred negro, which places them on a lower scale than the primitive black savages whom they worship.

Pride of reason was the original sin; Christ’s passion was God’s cure for our original sin. Europeans who placed pietas, the love for their kith and kin in and through Christ, at the center of their civilization kept pride of reason at bay. But the scientizing of God brought pride of reason back into the mainstream of European culture. It became acceptable to deify man’s reason as long as it was used to study God. That acceptance of a little bit of liberalism has resulted in the triumph of Satan. He has built Liberaldom in Europe’s green and pleasant land. We allowed a small corner in Christendom to be used for reason detached from the heart, and Satan made that small corner into all and all; he transformed Christendom into Liberaldom. Now we crawl on our bellies before the sacred negro because we are too smart to bend our knees to Christ. If we love much, if we see His blood upon the rose of Christian Europe, we will get up off our bellies and destroy the liberal leviathan. If we don’t see His blood upon the rose of Christian Europe? Then we will be damned. Please Lord, abide with us. +

---

(1) The premise of demon-cracy is that men can work out their differences without recourse to violence. But that premise only holds when there is a basic agreement on that which is essential. You cannot democratically settle your differences with pro-abort, negro-worshiping liberals whose avowed purpose is the destruction of the white race and the Christian civilization that once sustained the white race. Talk shows won’t save us from the snares of the devil. In fact, the talk show, in which we reason with the devil’s own, the liberals, as if they are our buddies, is a snare of the devil.

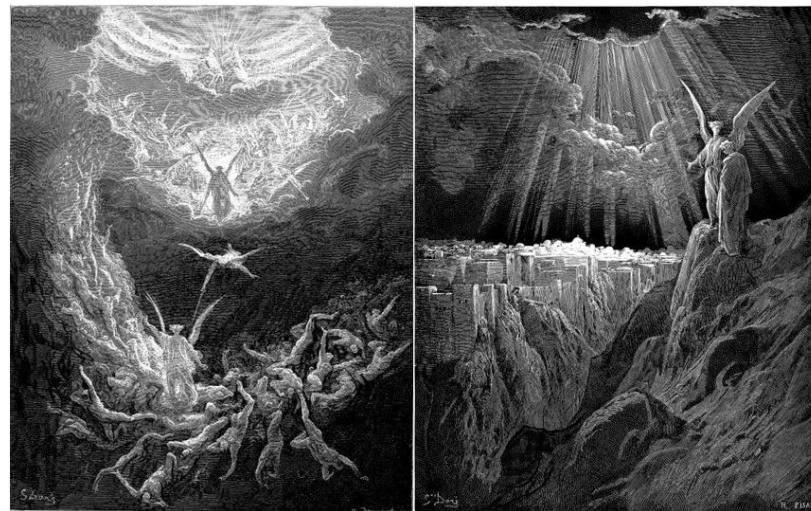
(2) A man is not meant to live alone, but how can he have any contact with a people who have denied they are a people? A remarkable short story/short novel, *Master Humphrey’s Clock*, by Charles Dickens, gives us the key: Cling to a chosen few who have not renounced their kith and kin who died in the arms of our Lord.

# Armageddon

October 3, 2020

Categories: Democracy, Jacobinism, Muscular Christianity, Pietas, Rationalism

Tags: Herbert Butterfield, Major James Innes Randolph, Thomas Molnar



Dore. *The Last Judgement and The New Jerusalem*

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. —*Revelations 20: 12*

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. —*Revelations 21: 2*

I live in a poor, white, small town. There are a large number of Trump signs in the town, and one Black Lives Matter and a Biden sign on a lawn of one of the more prosperous houses in town. That is pretty much how it breaks down in the countryside surrounding my town as well: the wealthy people who have ‘moved out’ are mostly Biden supporters while the poor whites with working farms are Trump supporters. About five miles down the road from our town is a larger more prosperous small town. In that town Biden supporters outnumber the Trump supporters by about 10 to 1, and it is always the more prosperous homes displaying Biden/Harris signs. The signs could be misleading though because I think there are many Trump supporters who are afraid to publicly declare their support for Trump. In that more prosperous town down the road, for instance, the main street in the town has a Democratic Party headquarters in public view with all the memorabilia and literature that goes with a presidential election, but there is no Republican Party headquarters anywhere to be seen. Not without some difficulty, I managed to get a Republican Party worker on the phone, and I asked him why there was no Republican headquarters in the town. His answer was quite revealing: “We’re afraid we’ll get a brick, or worse, through our window.” Now, I am not disputing that person’s assessment — he was undoubtedly correct — but why is it that the Republicans, particularly the Trump supporters, are the people who must fear the violence of the left? The demon-crats constantly cite the right-wing, white bogeymen who are going to come and get them, but in reality they have no fear of white bogeymen; they know that they, not the non-existent right-wing, wield the terrible swift sword. They, and they alone, have the right to use violence because they are the godded men and women building utopia over the bodies of ‘white racists.’

Writing in 1950 Herbert Butterfield pointed out that as the belief in original sin faded, the demonization of the opposing political party by the other political party would increase, because the feeling that we are all flawed, none are without sin, used to keep the two parties from proceeding toward open, violent warfare against an irredeemable enemy. Now the Republicans have a remnant of the old Christian ethos while the Democrats have none at all, so it is they, the demon-crats, who feel that any and all measures, even violent measures, are meritorious when used to defeat their Republican enemies. Since they are without sin, they feel entitled to throw the first, second, third, and fourth stone, and the Molotov cocktails at their opponents. That is the reason that the demon-crats will be the victors in the upcoming Presidential election. If Trump wins the election, the demon-crats, through the courts, through the military, and through violence in the streets will not allow a Trump victory. On the other hand, if the demon-crats win, the Republicans will grumble and scream ‘fraud,’ but they will not mount a violent counterrevolution against the demon-crats. The classical liberals who want a little bit of Christianity in their liberal cocktail will always lose to the mad-dog liberals who prefer the straight atheist cocktail, because their fusion of liberalism and Christianity does not provide its adherents with the strength to stand up against the wickedness and snares of the devil’s own.

Thomas Molnar, the great Hungarian counterrevolutionary, always preferred to be called a man of the right rather than a conservative, because he saw that the conservatives were not conservative, they were classical liberals who wanted to preserve democracy, which was rooted in Jacobinism. The people of the West have still not come to terms with the horror of democracy. Robespierre was finally killed by his fellow Jacobins because they realized that even they were not pure enough to survive Robespierre’s cleansing of the Republic. But they never repudiated their attack on Christian France. Every single member of the post-Robespierre Directory had signed on to the assassination of the King. And every single European nation in their acceptance of democracy as the truth and the way has signed on to the death of Christian Europe. Every Christian counterrevolution, Forrest in the South, Franco in Spain, and Pinochet in Chile, has been anti-democratic. And that is what we must be, anti-democratic, if we really want to be Christian warriors instead of slaves of the Jacobin zealots and their allies in the ranks of Christian Jewry who make common cause with the Jacobins because they, like Belloc before them, denounce the antique Europeans as insufficiently Christian.

But how do those ‘insufficiently Christian’ men compare to our modern, enlightened Christians? They, the modern Christians, make a few pathetic protests about abortion and the excessive violence of the hard left while dutifully embracing the democratic ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity. In contrast, the antique Europeans believed that Christ was greater than democracy, and they fought for His reign of charity rather than the rights of man. Vladimir Solovyov’s critique of Thomism, that it placed human reason above the revelation of Christ the Lord, should be our critique of democracy: it places a rational system of government above His reign of charity. When the newly appointed candidate to the Supreme Court tells us that she will place the Constitution of the United States above her faith, we can see the terrible results of placing man’s reason above God’s revelation to man through Jesus Christ. Reason is a whore; she will sleep with anyone she wants. The French Jacobins made a prostitute their Goddess of Reason.

Abstract reason is now ensconced in all the citadels of Europe while ‘the people’ have become the sacred negroes and the entire white race has become the aristocrats who must be exterminated. And strange as it seems, the poor whites have been most particularly singled out for extermination. The Antifa creatures from hell are the spawns of evil, “illuminated” whites from mostly upper middle-class families. So much for the Jacobin-Marxist lie that proclaims their revolutions are made against the rich in the name of the poor. It was the French peasantry that resisted the Jacobins, the Russian peasantry that resisted the Russian communists, and it is the dirt-poor whites who are looking to Trump to save them from poverty and the murderous savagery of the Antifa and Black Lives Matter barbarians.

We have come to a pass where hideous, demonic creatures — we cannot call them human — are allowed not only to live and breathe in our nation, but they are allowed to govern. There are demon-crats holding office in many of the states; two monstrous reptiles, Biden and Harris, have been given permission to run for office, and the followers of the demon-crats are allowed to own property and walk the streets of our anti-nation without fearing for their lives. Only a people who have embraced hell, an actual hell more hideous than the fictional hell described by Dante and illustrated by Dore, could stomach and permit the presence of liberals, for liberalism is truly the synthesis of Sodom and Gomorrah, Babylon, and the fleshpots of Egypt.

Most certainly there are some devout liberals in the Republican Party, and everyone who votes for Trump does not do so for good reasons, but that being said, it is within the ranks of Trump’s supporters that we must work to start the counterrevolution. Right now the white grazers are still too enamored of democracy to make a serious dent in liberalism. But once they see the terrible outcome of the upcoming democratic Armageddon, we must prepare them for the real Armageddon. The liberals must no longer be permitted to kill the unborn and

exterminate the white race under the banners of democracy and the sacred negro. They must, in His name, be opposed by ancient hearts who believe in a Savior who is greater than the sacred negro.

Most Southern apologists during the Civil War and after it defended the premise that they, not the Yankees, were the true Constitutionalists. They were following the Constitution while their enemies were perverting it. Fitzhugh and Andrew Lytle were the exceptions to that line of thought. Both men saw the heretical nature of the U. S. Constitution and the Declaration of Independence, which placed documents conceived in the brains of rationalists above the traditional revelatory faith of the European people. Major James Innes Randolph, writing immediately after the Civil War, got it right:

I hates the Constitution,  
This "great" republic too.  
I hates the Freedman's Buro,  
In uniforms of blue.  
I hates the nasty eagle,  
With all his brags and fuss...  
I hates the Yankees' nation  
And everything they do,  
I hates the Declaration  
Of Independence, too  
I hates the glorious Union--  
'Tis dripping with our blood...

While that piece of doggerel lacks Shakespearean eloquence, it cuts to the heart of the matter. The American experiment in democracy was a utopian break from Christian Europe, predicated on the proposition that the wisdom of men is greater than the foolishness of God. And what has been the result of that experiment in democracy? A once-Christian people worship the sacred negro, and in the name of that sacred god they murder infants in the womb, celebrate every depravity known to man, and condemn all that is good, noble, and pure. "Let us make America great again." When was America ever great? The European Southland was great, but has anyone in either party suggested we resurrect that civilization? We are reaping the bitter harvest of reason detached from a heart of flesh. If we recapture our ancient hearts, we will reject the unholy trinity of the modern liberals – Reason, the Sacred Negro, and Science – and we will start back on the long road to recovery. That road leads to a cross, but it also leads us to His Kingdom come, a far better place than the liberals' hell on earth.

I was a teenager when the Manson murders occurred, the hideous torture-murders of Sharon Tate, her baby, and the women and men who shared the house with her. Before the murderers were discovered, 'experts' such as Truman Capote conjectured they had been done by one isolated psychopath. When it came out that highly educated upper-middle-class young women had done the murders at the behest of a white man who wanted to lead black revolt against the white race, the white grazers turned all their faces away; they could not face the fact that reason, detached from the human heart, produces Satanic creatures from hell. There wasn't supposed to be a hell in democracy. Now, we have millions of Charles Mansons, whites who place themselves, in their fantasies, at the head of black savages who will destroy the white race. And we have millions of creatures from hell – they are called demon-crats, Black Lives Matter, and Antifa – who are ready and willing to torture and murder white just as the Manson clan tortured and murdered their victims.

The Black Lives Matter movement has revealed the horrible extent of the evil which has enveloped the white European nations. Hell is indeed empty and all the devils are here! A little bit of Christianity won't save us. In fact, it is a little bit of Christianity that has left the democratic conservatives and the white grazers who support them naked to their enemies, because the democratic-conservatives have preserved politeness and civility, remnants of the Christian ethos, while the liberals have completely and whole-heartedly embraced Satan. (1) And Satan has no mercy, he does not have anything in his soul but hatred for Christ and the Christ-bearing race. Politeness and civility divorced from the Dream of the Rood faith in Christ the Lord turns into cowardice in the face of the enemy. We need the whole armor of faith, a passionate unyielding faith in the God-Man Jesus Christ, if we are going to prevail against the onslaught of the devil. Instead of politeness and civility, instead of the democratic way, let us embrace that "charity of honor" and send the hellhounds – the demon-crats, the Antifa, and the BLMers — back to hell where they belong. +

---

(1) The malicious glee with which the liberal elite has responded to Trumps' illness reveals the impossibility of dealing peacefully with liberals. We have spent the unbought grace of life. No election will bring that grace back.

Please God, restore President Trump to health; he is struggling toward the light, and abide with us amid the encircling gloom.

# According to Thine Own Heart

October 10, 2020

Categories: Pietas, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Hippolyte Taine



Barton. In Kensington Garden

O worthy Duke,  
You bid me seek redemption of the devil.  
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak  
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,  
Or wring redress from you. Hear me, O hear me, hear!

*-Measure for Measure*

---

For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. —2 Corinthians 4: 6

---

I do not trust Paul Craig Roberts because he writes in economic hieroglyphics and once called abortion a trivial side issue. But I am very suspicious of the Washington DC establishment and of doctors in general, so when Roberts said that Trump was being sent to Walter Reed Hospital so the doctors there could murder him, I was very concerned. Why should I be concerned about Trump since he believes in the great American experiment in demon-cracy and I do not? I care about Trump in much the same way that Sir Walter Scott cared about Bonnie Prince Charles. Scott was an ardent supporter of the counterrevolution which put an end to the Stuarts' attempt to replace a throne-and-altar European monarchy with a divine-right-of-kings, Asian style monarchy. And yet he admired the cavalier prince because of his courage and his panache. I admire Trump for his courage and because he has a small remnant of white pietas, which all his Republican predecessors lacked.

Because of my concern for Trump's safety, which was made all the greater because of Paul Craig Roberts' assertion, I watched more of the news on Monday than I usually watch in a whole month. That was a mistake on my part, because I listened to the liberals' questioning of Trump's doctors at the press conference outside Walter Reed. The press had no concern for Trump as a human being or Trump as the President. Their desire was that he should die, and if he failed to die, their next best hope was that he could be declared mentally incompetent. My reaction to the nest of vipers was an incredible rage that could only be satisfied if I were personally able to strangle each and every one of those creatures from hell. How does the devil get the time to make such creatures? And how does he make them appear to be, at least outwardly, so lifelike? You would almost think they were human. But then of course they open their mouths and instead of human speech, inhuman venom proceeds from their mouths and shows them to be creatures conceived in hell. My youngest daughter who watched the venom conference with me – it was not a press conference – had to leave the room in order to weep. I suppose that is the difference between the male and the female; I wanted to kill in the presence of such unmitigated evil and my daughter had to go and weep.

In 1959 Walt Disney made that magnificent retelling of Perrault's fairytale *Sleeping Beauty*. In the film, Maleficent finally confronts the hero in her true form, that of a reptilian dragon. The liberals are now confronting the white race in their true form of a reptilian dragon, but no one has emerged to throw the sword of truth into the dragon's heart. Why is that? Why are the liberals not seen for what they are, namely creatures from hell, and why are there no leaders who can see that we must do to the liberals what Prince Phillip did to Maleficent? There is no opposition to the liberals because the conservatives are one with the liberals on that which is essential for the liberals' rule: Reason, detached from the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans, must be the guiding light of men in the new religion of Satan. The conservatives, who are the shadows of the liberals, only oppose the liberals within the confines of the new, blasphemous trinity of reason, the sacred negro, and science. Such an 'opposition' is not an opposition, it is an affirmation of demonism as the ruling principle of our nation.

Let us look at how the symbiotic relationship between the conservatives and the liberals plays out. If we look at legalized abortion as one of the most glaring examples, but certainly not the only one, of the liberal and conservative dynamic at work, we can see the devil's handiwork close up. Abortion was made legal forever more in the land of liberty on January 22, 1973, the exact date that President Nixon agreed to a peace accord with the Viet Cong without requiring an accounting of our prisoners of war. Is there a parallel there? I think there is. A government that won't protect babies in the womb is not a government that will protect the soldiers who go to war (even if it is not an official war) for that government.

We are approaching the fiftieth anniversary of Roe vs. Wade, and there is still no hope of procuring protection for the infants in the womb. That is because the conservatives who claim to be prolife are also believers in the democratic way, a system of government designed by rationalists, which makes the Christian God subordinate to the U. S. Constitution. I remember, when I was a young man filled with "challenge and desire," asking a veteran prolifer who had been picketing at one of the local abortuaries since the liberals started the murder factories, why we didn't just storm the abortuary, kill the abortion doctor and his staff, and burn the abortuary to the ground. His response was quite telling: "I once had about one hundred men lined up to do just that when Father \_\_\_\_\_ got wind of it. He denounced such actions from the pulpit, and that pretty much ended any real resistance. Since then I carry this sign around on Saturdays, and I vote prolife." The devil always wins when decent men place a rational system above that "charity of honor." The democratic process that resulted in "Give us Barabbas!" also resulted in legalized abortion. We will never make abortion illegal so long as we remain democratic. "What if we get prolife judges?" A prolife majority on the Supreme Court would only return abortion to the states, and after nearly fifty years of permitting abortions how many states will then make it illegal? Legalized abortion continues to exist as the result of schools which preach abortion as a sacred right and church men who regard abortion as a lesser issue than civil rights, climate change, and open borders. We cannot seek redemption from the devil. And the democratic process is a creation of the devil, in that it places a man-made system above God's revelation to man.

Let me stay with the abortion example, because it tells us so much about the demise of the European people. I used to sit at tables in various malls with anti-abortion literature on display. The purpose of my interaction with the public was to convince them that the child in the womb was a human being who deserved to live. The assumption behind my efforts was that I could appeal to people's reason, and once they saw that the child was a child they would no longer be pro-abortion. What an absurdity! Of course, the pro-aborts knew the child was a child – that is why they needed to take violent action against the child in order to ensure that he or she would not invade their privacy, their right to live unencumbered by a child. I had not taken into account Taine's wise observation about the real place of reason in human affairs:

*In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligences; for, if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet. —The French Revolution*

It is significant that the ‘Christian’ apology for abortion came from the monk who separated the heart from the head and revelation from reason. Aquinas never said we could abort, he said that which would one day be a child should be treated as a child, but his reasonable heirs, men and women who believed in the sovereignty of reason, decided that the delayed ensoulment theory suited the ardent longing of their hearts, their longing to destroy a child who did not suit their life style. Reason is not the moral element in man; we cannot appeal to it as the final arbiter of what is right and wrong. That is the theological error of the great scholastic and that is the error of our modern conservatives who try to reason with Maleficent. Our Lord needs reason illuminated by a heart that loves, He does not need or want illuminated reason divorced from the heart.

The poet-pastor of Denmark, N. F. S. Grundtvig, was a remarkable clergyman in that he condemned any clergyman, Catholic, Lutheran, Calvinist, etc., who said that which was within the human heart was unredeemable. There had to be something, the good pastor insisted, within us that was capable of responding to God’s grace. If there wasn’t, then how could we know God? Of course the Catholic and the Protestant scholastics told us we could know God through *their* illuminated minds. But doesn’t that contradict St. Paul who told us to search the Scriptures with our hearts? And doesn’t it contradict St. Paul’s assertion that charity never faileth? Did he tell us that reason never faileth? Did he tell us to study the Scriptures with our illuminated minds until there was nothing left of the Holy Scriptures? Why do the conservatives always cite Jefferson, the man who rewrote the Gospels in order to purge all the irrational events, such as the virgin birth and Christ’s resurrection from the dead, as their ‘conservative’ progenitor?

The Polish existentialist Jan Kott once wrote a book called *Shakespeare Our Contemporary*. In that book, Kott highlighted the dark, existentialist elements in Shakespeare’s plays that made him, in Kott’s mind, a contemporary with the likes of Samuel Beckett and the modern, ‘let’s all commit suicide’ playwrights. But Kott neglected to point out that Shakespeare, who saw into the darkest recesses of the human heart, also saw redemption in the human heart. There was Edgar as a counterweight to Edmund, and Cordelia as a counterweight to Goneril and Regan. The great temptation that the scholastic churchmen and the conservatives succumbed to was the temptation to flee from the “horror, the horror,” the evil present in the human heart, to embrace pure reason. That flight serves the devil, because when we take refuge in reason detached from the heart, we are naked before our enemy who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. There is great evil in the human heart, witness the liberals, but there is redemption there as well, witness our people when they were a people. Ah, there’s the rub. The conservatives and the churchmen will not credit the people with the ancient hearts because they were racist, they had pietas. The conservatives are now illuminated Christians without pietas. But the illuminated Christians will always lose to the liberals; they will be their shadows. They will champion a rationalist Christianity devoid of the blood faith of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. The end result of such a faith is that the conservatives dialogue with Maleficent instead of putting a sword through her heart. Liberalism will live and thrive so long as we reason with the devil while condemning the Christ-centered faith of the antique Europeans.

St. Paul said that his vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen was a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks. The modern liberal is like unto the Jews that St. Paul spoke of. They condemn the blood faith of the European people because such a faith is antithetical to everything they believe in – sexual Babylon, legalized abortion, and the worship of the sacred negro. The modern conservatives condemn the blood faith of the European people because it is also antithetical to what they believe in. They believe in a Socratic Christ who is confined within a rational system. But when we study God in order to dissect Him, making Him the sum of the dissected parts, we lose the second person of the holy Trinity, we lose our Savior. The conservatives leave Christ in church with the rational men and embrace the negro for their real life savior. They never defend the culture and the people of old Europe because those people were racist. They defend the modern adherents of the democratic way because they are not racist. We must be ‘racist,’ we must have white pietas in order to see the living God and act on that vision.

The Europeans’ vision of the Rood was not rational, it was uniquely European and therefore racist; it was also unscientific. But was it true? Did that European vision lead us to “something of great constancy”? Did those dear old folk of long ago give a local habitation and a name to the living God? I say they did. His name was and is Jesus. The liberals tell us that there is no room for hate in Liberaldom. Then why do they have nothing inside them but hate for the living God and the people who championed the living God?

Is it time to jest and dally now? Is it a time to dialogue with the devil? No, it is never such a time, and it is most especially not such a time when the devil has drawn his terrible swift sword. Armed with cruel hate, he is now, under the mantel of the sacred negro, attacking the Christ-bearing race with unparalleled fury. Whether this is the end time or an image of that horror, is not for us to know. But we do know that the liberals and their colored minions are the devil’s own who cannot be voted or dialogued out of existence. +

# We Must Regress

October 17, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Democracy, Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Jacobinism

Tags: Robert Lewis Dabney



Barton. *Toddlers*

The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever. – *Psalm 23*

Anyone who votes for the Biden-Harris ticket is possessed by the devil. That fact cannot be disputed. And roughly half of the voters are going to vote for the Biden-Harris ticket. Even if Trump, like last time, manages to win an electoral victory, is it really possible, from a Christian perspective, to democratically govern a nation when half of it is committed to Satan? No, it is not possible; the last four years have made that abundantly clear. Every Trump initiative, his efforts to appoint pro-life judges, his efforts to fight the Chinese communists and their Wuhan virus, and his efforts to control our borders have been resisted and often thwarted by the demon-crats. They hate Trump with a maniacal fury unsurpassed in the annals of American politics. And the liberals' hatred for Trump is not confined to just this nation. The liberals in other European nations also hate Trump with a maniacal fury. But Trump's policies are well within the framework of classical liberalism. They do not differ that much from the policies of John F. Kennedy, whom the liberals adored. Why then is Trump hated more than Nixon and Reagan and even more than Franco and Pinochet?

The pagan viewed history as a cyclical process. Mankind was not, in the pagan's mind, progressing toward perfection. The Christian, whose God had entered historical time, looked to an end to human history when his God returned to earth. Christ was the beginning and the end. But the Christian did not equate the passage of time as a movement towards the moral perfection of mankind; he saw the passage of time as a step closer to the return of Christ. So neither the pagan nor the Christian saw the progression of time as a moral progression for mankind. Enter stage left, the liberal. The liberal has secularized the Christian's expectation of the return of Christ. The liberal expects an end to history that shall be brought about by the moral perfection of mankind. The chosen ones are those who work for the moral perfection of mankind — they shall be saved — and the evil ones are those people who do not work for the moral perfection of mankind. They shall be damned.

The new view of history, the post-Christian view, was always on the fringes of Christendom in the 'elevated' minds of 'great' thinkers such as Voltaire and Rousseau, but it didn't become part of the fabric of the European people's culture until the French Revolution. After that revolution even professed Christians who rejected the outright atheism of the French Jacobins came to accept the post-Christian view of history — that mankind was morally progressing toward the kingdom of God on earth. It's hard to see how a Christian could accept the idea of the moral progression of mankind when St. Paul emphasized that our salvation depended on, "Christ in me and I in Christ." How can people who reject St. Paul's faith continue to morally progress? They can't, but our modern 'Christians' go along with the liberals, believing that the accumulation of scientific knowledge — the replacement of the horse with the automobile, the replacement of ink and paper with computer printouts, and other such scientific 'advances' — constitutes a moral improvement. That we are moving onward and upward is the moral given of the democratic, scientific nations of the West. I see all the scientific advances, but still I do not see a moral improvement. Is the acceptance of legalized abortion a moral improvement? Is the acceptance of communism a moral improvement? Is the worship of the noble black savage a moral improvement? And is the implementation of sexual Babylon a moral improvement? The liberal says, yes, to all those questions, and the conservative does a "respectable amount of growling" over communism, abortion, and sexual Babylon, but in the end he accepts the implementation of those moral 'improvements' because he does not oppose the ultimate progression that buttresses up all the other progressions: the transformation of civil rights for the negro into the worship of the negro.

Trump is in favor of civil rights just as John F. Kennedy was, but Trump does not see that the civil rights movement had nothing to do with civil rights. The negro already had civil rights, particularly in the old South prior to the Civil War: he had the right to raise a family and be a part of a Christian civilization, a right he was not afforded in Africa or Liberaldom. The civil rights movement was part of the ongoing Jacobin revolution. The negro had to become the new savior of the European people in order to keep the new trinity intact. A return to mere civil rights and away from the worship of the negro, which is what Trump represents, is an intolerable attack on the liberals' faith. They won't permit such an attack, just as they will not tolerate any effort to deal with the communists as an enemy nor any attempt to deal with unborn infants as human beings. We must progress, we can never go back. And moral progress is always measured by the illuminated minds of the liberals. Whatever moves the European people away from Christian Europe is seen as progress, and whatever seems to be taking us back, even slightly, is seen as heresy, a heresy that must be punished with fire and sword.

If you are still a European Christian, you should take note of the liberals' hatred of Trump. He is a millennialist Christian, which is far afield from European Christianity, and he is a classical liberal who wants whites to be included in the American dream. But that small retrogression has made him a hated figure in Liberaldom. So what would they think of me and thee if they knew our views on liberals and Christian Europe? Ask not for whom the death knell tolls, it tolls for thee and me.

As he approaches death, which I am praying will be later rather than sooner, Rush Limbaugh has become much more European in his commentary and less Americanist. He was one of the first to label the Covid-19 virus a flu that the liberals were going to try to turn into a pandemic in order to "get Trump." And he has correctly stated that if the demon-crats manage to subvert this election and win, there will be no more elections, no more courts of law, no more anything resembling old America. I would argue that this has already happened to a large degree, but still Limbaugh has grasped, unlike the other conservatives, that this Presidential election is like no other, because Trump is the only Republican President who was, and will be if elected again, a retrograde President. Neither Bush, who now supports Biden, nor Pence, who says prayers for Jacob Blake and thinks it is wonderful that Scalia and Ginsburg were such good friends, are retrograde Republicans. They are a 'let's go at a slower rate toward perdition' type of Republicans. As such, they are opposed by the demon-crats, but they are not maniacally hated as Trump is hated. The liberals' hatred for Pence is only because of his association with Trump. And we should note that the intellectual Christians in the ranks of the Catholics and the Evangelicals have a preference for the Bush-Pence type of 'Christian.' They want polite Christians who intellectually affirm the Christian virtues while wholeheartedly endorsing politeness and civility towards the great haters of Christ and His people. I have a cousin who works at a nearby hospital, and she tells me that it is always her professed 'Christian' co-workers who side with liberal hospital administrators against older staff members whom they perceive to have homophobic and racist tendencies. This Jacobin revolution,

like the original Jacobin revolution, could not have been completed, in fact, it would not have even been contemplated, had not the so-called Christians accepted the post-Christian, Jacobin view of history – that mankind was advancing, through reason, through the worship of the sacred negro, and through science toward the moral perfection of the human race.

I grew up at a time when most liberals had something of the Christian ethos left in their soul. But as our society has ‘progressed’ in the last fifty years, that remnant of Christianity has left the souls of the liberals. They have become reptilian creatures with whom any man who still adheres to Christianity cannot have any contact. In *Doctor Zhivago*, Pasternak depicts a moment in time after the communist revolution when Zhivago is forced to live among reprogrammed Russians who now profess to be happy, well-behaved communists. Zhivago has to leave the room because he still has a soul, and the presence of these de-souled human beings makes him physically sick. That is my reaction to the liberals of this generation. And I do not understand how those who call themselves conservatives can debate with the liberals as if they are united in one common cause, differing only in non-essentials. Perhaps it is because the conservatives are united with the liberals on that which they see as essential – the moral progression of mankind under the banner of the sacred negro and the condemnation of the ‘racist’ Europeans of the past. You cannot hold on to a faith in two masters. You can either serve the negro or Christ. Our condemned European ancestors choose to serve Christ. The liberals have chosen to serve the negro, and their conservative shadows will follow a few steps behind them:

*It may be inferred again that the present movement for women's rights will certainly prevail from the history of its only opponent: Northern conservatism. This is a party which never conserves anything. Its history has been that it demurs to each aggression of the progressive party, and aims to save its credit by a respectable amount of growling, but always acquiesces at last in the innovation. What was the resisted novelty of yesterday is today one of the accepted principles of conservatism; it is now conservative only in affecting to resist the next innovation, which will tomorrow be forced upon its timidity and will be succeeded by some third revolution, to be denounced and then adopted in its turn. American conservatism is merely the shadow that follows Radicalism as it moves forward towards perdition. It remains behind it, but never retards it, and always advances near its leader... –Robert Lewis Dabney*

The Bush and Pence Republicans make me ill. But I am drawn to the hard-core Trump supporters who went to that rally in Florida and chanted, “We love you!” As the reptilian liberals make their final purge of the impure Europeans, it is that remnant of pietas in white souls which we must try to keep alive and turn into an all-consuming fire of charity that will destroy Liberaldom. Do I think such a miracle is possible? Not if I look at life with the eye of reason alone. With that eye, I see only darkness ahead. But with the other eye, the eye illuminated by a heart that loves, I see my people rising up against their liberal overlords and facing off against them in battle. And then, as in the old hymns, I see the triumph of the Lord and those who are “on the Lord’s side.”

While being fully aware of the fact that a Trump victory will not cure the sickness unto death that has enveloped the European people, I still want that victory to occur for the same reason that I wanted my father, during his final illness, to survive through one more Christmas. We cling to life ourselves, and we want those whom we love to live. Even if there are only a few white grazers with a remnant of white pietas left in their souls, I want them and the members of my family to have a few more moments of European life before they must take up arms against the liberals. The prospect of a Biden-Harris victory is too hideous to contemplate. But if it comes, we must believe, because it is true, that He will give us the grace to face even that tragedy.

My parents ‘progressed’ away from Christian Europe to American liberalism. They were both the first members of their families to go to college, and their moral progression, by liberal standards, coincided with their financial progression. My siblings also progressed, from their parents’ classical liberalism to mad-dog liberalism. I went through the hell depicted by my brother in spirit, Fyodor Dostoyevsky, and came out, by the grace of God, on the other side of hell. I won’t go back there. My children did not absorb any part of liberalism because they heard, for more than a twelve-month, the story of another world, a world separate and distinct from Liberaldom; that world was and is Christian Europe. The one great consolation of my old age is that I have been able to see the face of Jesus Christ in my children, who have never been tainted with the progression called liberalism. Once an entire continent was filled with such people. We must regress to Christian Europe, because it is only in that culture and with those people that we see the face of Jesus Christ. +

# Our God Has Sent His Angel

October 24, 2020  
Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism

Tags: Edmund Burke



Rembrandt. *Vision of Daniel*

And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee. –*Mark 10: 49*

---

So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. –*Revelations 2: 15-16*

---

One of the mistakes a man of my age often makes is to judge events and people according to what his experiences were when he was growing up. In other words, older men often fail to ‘adjust the typewriter.’ And the mere fact that I use the term ‘typewriter’ rather than computer indicates that I have failed to adjust. But let me give another ‘for instance’: when I was young, the mainstream churches had gone over to liberalism, but the smaller, fringe churches were much more Christian in their orientation. After all, they had come into being because of the liberalism of the mainstream churches. But some fifteen years ago I discovered, to my horror, just how far the fringe churches had shifted to the left. I encountered ‘born again Christians’ and ‘conservative’ Catholics who had very little knowledge of (nor did they adhere to) the faith of the European people. An incredible shift to the left had occurred even in the fringe churches. That leftward shift caught me by surprise.

The same thing has occurred in politics. I was the only one in my family who thought that Hillary would lose to Trump, because I remembered that when Reagan ran he always did better than the polls showed. And I also remembered the days of George McGovern, who was too blatant with his left wing views, which spelled disaster for him, and Hillary was very blatant in her leftism, much more so than her husband and Obama had been. But I was wrong; Hillary won the popular vote and would have won the electoral vote if Pennsylvania had allowed mail-in voting, which they are now allowing in this election. What was the change I had not taken into consideration? I had not taken into account Burke’s assertion about the [twelvemonth of indoctrination](#). The relentless liberal indoctrination process in our schools, our churches, and the media had taken its toll. What seemed left wing in McGovern’s day has become mainstream. That is why I no longer have any confidence that the blatant leftism of the Biden-Harris demon-crats will bring them the defeat they would have been handed forty years ago. “The times they are a-changin’.”

This past weekend I went to a shooting range with some of my sons. The range was out in the country, away from the rich folk with their luxury houses and their “Biden Harris” signs; there were no Biden supporters at the gun range. The men there were the ‘deplorable’ men that Hillary Clinton spit on; they had Trump stickers and ‘God and Guns’ stickers on their four-wheel drive vehicles. They would look on me as a man-from-Mars if I brought up European Christianity, but still those white grazers are an infinitely better breed of men than you’ll find within academia or in any of the other centers of Liberalism. But as I talked with the men, I became incredibly sad, because they are all “so far from doing harm that they suspect none.” They see that the radical left – the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter creatures – hate them, but they do not see that their churches and their schools and the entire democratic structure which they reverse as part of their American-exceptionalism heritage has been designed to destroy them. They believe, like the pro-lifers, that the evil entity called liberalism is a subversion of the American democratic process, rather than the inevitable result of the American democratic process. Hence they look to democracy to save them. Should Trump lose, they have no Plan B. That is why it is sad to be among these decent men whom the liberals have designated for extermination. They will grumble and cry unfair if the Biden-Harris leftists win, but they will not take up arms against the Philistines of Liberalism, because there is no spirit of counterrevolution in their American hearts. They cannot see any life outside the perimeters of democracy. That is a terrible tragedy, because in reality there is no life for the white European *within* the framework of democracy.

I am not a Thomist; I do not view existence with a Buddhist-Thomistic quietude, which is why I hope and pray for a Trump victory this fall. Individual white lives will be saved, and white jobs will be saved if Trump wins, so we can never say that this election is of no consequence. But we should see that even a Trump victory, which is doubtful, will only slow down the onward march of the liberals toward... toward what? Where would the leftists of Liberalism have us go? “We shall bring you hell!” the Antifaers scream. That is the promised end of liberalism. We will find ourselves in hell on earth while we still live on this earth, and we will spend all eternity in hell after our lives here on earth end if we take the spirit of liberalism into our hearts.

If we adjust the typewriter (or computer), what has changed in the last four years to make a Biden-Harris victory more likely than four years ago? First, there will be a whole host of new, younger voters who will vote for the Biden-Harris ticket. In school and church, if they go to church, our young people hear the leftists’ lies, and they will vote in accordance with the Jacobin-Marxist party line. Secondly, the ‘news’ outlets have clamped down on free speech to an incredible degree, and even the more moderate news channels, such as Fox, have shifted to the left. The conservatives’ response to the clamp-down – they call for more civility and politeness – is woefully inadequate. Let us pause there. One last remaining ‘conservative’ outlet, News Max, runs specials lauding Martin Luther King Jr. and George Bush, who now supports Biden. And their support of the police is a non-support. They condemn ‘rogue cops’ who are not rogue cops while supporting a theoretical police force that never gets their hands dirty by arresting black criminals. That policy of non-support for white policemen, who actually do their jobs and try to arrest black criminals, is right in line with their non-support of the antique Europeans. They routinely condemn the ‘racists’ of the old South while proudly proclaiming their non-racist Americanism. Small wonder that the white grazers are holding a losing hand as the election approaches.

The Covid-19 gambit of the liberals’ ally, the Chinese communists, has also been very successful. The Chinese didn’t succeed in completely destroying the American economy, but they did hand the liberals a very great weapon, a reason for the mail-in ballot which will enable them to steal electoral votes in key states. A disputed election, an election which goes to the courts, will result in a Biden-Harris victory, because our courts always decide in favor of liberalism for the simple reason that they are liberal.

Four years ago if the Antifaers and the BLM creatures from hell had openly committed the atrocities they are currently engaged in, I would have said they had destroyed the demon-crats’ chances for an electoral victory. I would have said that the extreme violence of the leftists had turned the electoral tide toward the Republicans. But now, I’m not so sure about that. Decent people are appalled by the violence in cities like Seattle, Portland, and Chicago, and decent people are buying guns at a record pace in order to protect themselves and their families from

the colored hordes. But are there enough decent people left who will vote for Trump? Again, I must refer you to the liberal propaganda onslaught in church, state, and academy. The prospects for white people seem quite grim.

If we look at the electoral scale it appears to be weighted in favor of the demon-crats. But is there not one thing to which we cannot assign an exact weight? "If ye ask any thing in my name, I will do it." We can give what money we can afford to Trump's campaign, and we can vote for him, but we can also pray that somehow our Lord will aid us in this war against the devil and his minions. What if we pray, and our prayers are not answered? I don't know the answer to that question. It seems that the side that should win, if we look at European history, often does not win. Still, I believe we should call on Him by name and ask Him to intervene in this upcoming election. We are not praying for riches when we pray for a Trump victory, we are asking our Lord to help us begin the long journey back to His Europe and away from Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. Of course if we do not have the humility of the prodigal son in our hearts, if we do not want to return to a land where unborn babies are protected and the old virtues of faith, hope, and charity are revered, our prayers will not be answered. The Philistines of Liberaldom will triumph.

A Trump victory will not change the fact that we live in Liberaldom, which is a kingdom diametrically opposed to the image-of-God-in-man culture of old Europe, but there still are very good Christian reasons for hoping and praying for Trump's re-election. Currently in many democratic cities, the forces of evil, the Antifaers and the BLM creatures from hell, are being given free rein to rape, pillage, and murder, while the police are ordered to 'stand down.' If Biden-Harris are elected, the police will no longer stand down, they will join the Antifa and BLM rebellions because they will be ordered to do so by the Federal government. The liberals, under Biden and Harris, will switch from States' Righters back to Federalists. It will be the same with the military as it is with the police. The military currently is not intervening in the wars in our cities. In a Biden-Harris regime, the military, along with the police, will be used to crack down on white gun owners and whites who try to defend themselves against the onslaught of Antifa and the colored barbarians.

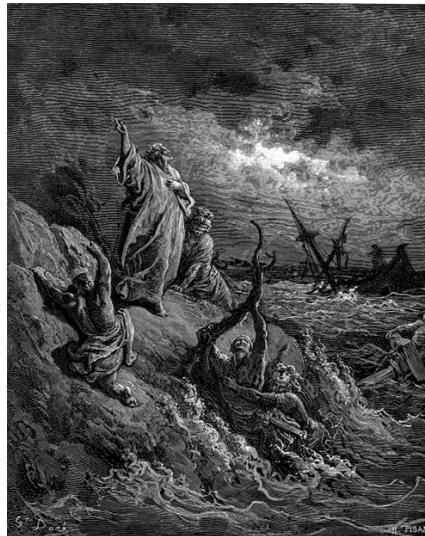
We can't walk away from our Christian heritage. The liberals will side with the Jews, the Moslems, the blacks, the Asians, and every other non-white entity against the white race, because the white race is the image-of-God-in-man race. The liberals can't, as Burke tells us, strike God directly, so they must attack His image in man. I pray for a Trump victory because I love my kith and kin, but if we place our hopes in democracy alone we will be betrayed in deepest consequence. Our covenant is with a personal God, not with an abstract theory of the rights of man. If we are given breathing room because of a Trump victory, let us use that victory to start on the road back, not to the land of liberty, but to the land of the covenant, to Christian Europe. +

# Which Is In Christ

October 31, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Jacobinism, Muscular Christianity

Tags: Edmund Burke, Miss Mulock



Dore. St. Paul Shipwrecked

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. – [Romans 8: 35-39](#)

---

Without opening one new avenue to the understanding, they have succeeded in stopping up those that lead to the heart. They have perverted in themselves, and in those that attend to them, all the well-placed sympathies of the human breast. – Edmund Burke in [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)

---

The ongoing Jacobin revolution throughout the European world is based on a purging of the European people from the European nations. Africa for Africans, Asia for Asians, and Europe and its satellites must be African and Asian. Whither goeth the European? He must be exterminated. We know who is behind the great purge, it is the devil, but we do not know if the devil always approves of the tactics used by his minions. Currently, in the United States, and it also appears to be the same in most of the European nations, the devil's minions have decided it is time for a direct assault on the white race. They no longer believe there is any need for subterfuge. Confident in their belief that there will be no serious opposition to any cause that flies the banner of the sacred negro, the devil's minions have decided to kill the Cannon Hinnants, the Aaron Danielsons, and the Tommie Lindhs of the white nations until there are no longer any whites left to murder. What then? There will be heaven on earth. That is the vision of the illuminated liberals. They will be the benevolent caretakers of a blessed kingdom purged of all non-illuminated whites. Some non-illuminated whites might survive as lamp shades and facial creams, but they will no longer survive as a people. Will there be any opposition to the great purge? We can hope and pray there will be some resistance, but as things stand right now it looks like the purge will be successful.

What are the bad signs, the signs that there will be no resistance to the purge? The first bad sign is that there is still no resistance in the ranks of the white 'conservatives' to the deification of the sacred negro. Let us take the arrest and subsequent death of George Floyd as an example, since it seemed to be the incident the liberals used to start the last phase of the purge. I heard Lou Dobbs, and a former white republican governor of Virginia, and many other 'conservatives' use the word 'murder' in reference to the death of George Floyd. I do not believe, based on the evidence I have heard, that the officer who is now rotting in jail did anything wrong, but even if you believe that he should have researched the suspect's medical condition before trying to arrest him, in order to ensure that the arrest would not be too hard on his drug-crazed nervous system, the arrest still cannot and should not be called murder by any stretch of the imagination. And when I hear so-called conservatives using the word 'murder' in order to show that they are not racist, I want those conservatives to be forced, in an urban setting, to answer every single call that involves the arrest of a black. I will give you one hundred to one odds that in less than a year, those conservatives, if they actually try to arrest the black criminals, will be in jail charged with brutality and/or murder. How do you arrest brutal criminals? If you "reimagine" police work and decide that you should simply chat with criminals who are black — maybe you can even give them a cookie — then you do not have a police force, you have a Society of Friends. I think the entire Quaker regalia would be a more fitting uniform for our modern police, at least the police that the liberals think we should have. But of course the Society of Friends' approach to police work only applies to black criminals. If a white person goes unmasked in a public arena, or a pro-life protestor or a white gun owner is involved in a disturbance, then the liberals will inform the police they can now put on their Nazi uniforms and arrest the dirty, blankety-blank white 'criminals.'

The second bad sign, which is linked to the first one, is that the conservatives are not conservative. They do not oppose the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals are against the Christian hearth-fire faith of the European people, they oppose the mad-dog liberals because they think that they, not the mad-dog liberals, are better equipped to build that "shining city on a hill" with a melting pot of all the peoples of the earth at the top of the hill. But is that "shining city on a hill" which Ronald Reagan made reference to in his Presidential campaign really something to be desired? Hasn't that utopian dream become a nightmare? The melting pot has become a cauldron in which white victims are boiled alive as black savages and illuminated whites dance around the cauldron while keeping the coals beneath the cauldron at a white heat. The conservatives never defend white civilization. They do not defend the South's attempt to resist the infusion of the black savage into the heart of European civilization, nor do they resist the 'liberation' of women, a 'liberation' which has resulted in legalized abortion and the death of the Christian patriarchal family. Yes, I equate Christian with patriarchal. Just as there can be no real faith in the Word made flesh if we do not have a racial hearth fire where we see the Word made flesh embodied, we cannot know our heavenly Father unless we see His love embodied in loving fathers.

"Up the farm-yard way. There—he is on the gravel-walk. He has stopped; I daresay it is to pull some of the jessamine that grows over the well. Now, fly away, dove! Father's here."

And the next minute a general shout echoed, "Father's here!"

He stood in the doorway, lifting one after the other up in his arms; having a kiss and a merry word for all – this good father!

O solemn name, which Deity Himself claims and owns. Happy these children, who in its fullest sense could understand the word 'father!' to whom, from the dawn of their little lives, their father was what all fathers should be—the truest representative here on earth of that Father in heaven, who is at once justice, wisdom, and perfect love.

-Miss Mulock, [John Halifax, Gentleman](#)

It is not any defense of that which should be defended, Christian Europe, to say that the antique Europeans were racist, but we, the good Europeans, are not racist. We must say what is true, that white pietas is sacred, and it is through the love of our kith and kin that we come to know the living God. Without that love we have nothing, we have not charity, not for our own people nor for the stranger. Without pietas, we are reeds blown in the wind, subject to whatever false universalist ideology comes our way, an ideology that is easily blown away by another ideology, so long as that ideology comes as a superficial, universalist ideology without spiritual substance. Thus the democratic capitalist ideology is blown away by democratic socialism, and democratic socialism is blown away by an universalist anarchy – a war of the utopians against whatever is not utopian, that which is Christian and white.

As it is with race – “We are not racist, but our white ancestors were” – so it is with women’s ‘rights’ – “We are not sexist, but our ancestors were.” That is the apologia of the modern conservatives. They will not defend the Christian patriarchy of old Europe, which ‘restricted’ women to home and child-rearing. Instead they cite the new woman, the woman who has the choice to become Lady Macbeth—“Unsex me here”—or a working mother combining business and home. That is always the non-vision of the modern conservatives. They think you can have a little bit of liberalism and a little bit of Christianity. You mix the two together and you get “My country ‘tis of thee, Sweet land of liberty.” Right? No, that is wrong. What you get is what Burke warned us about: you get utopian creatures from hell who must destroy everything human in order to move humanity to utopia:

*They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. — Burke, [A Letter to a Noble Lord](#)*

The utopians are extremists; they can only be defeated by men and women who are more extreme in their defense of the good than the mad-dog liberals are in defense of evil. We need extremists, not conservative Quakers who believe we can ‘dialogue’ with Satan. What has been the result of that dialogue, of that attempt to debate that which cannot be debated? Whether we can or cannot abort – whether we should permit the existence of the white race or not – and whether we should allow heathen gods to be placed on Christian altars.

There are consequences when you try to fuse good and evil into a democratic synthesis. It can’t be done. Good must either defeat evil, or evil must triumph over good. Our European folk stories and fairy tales, the ones we have left behind in order to make room in our minds for ‘serious’ stuff, all tell us one essential thing – there *is* such a thing as good, and that good is embodied in Christ the Lord; and there is such a thing as evil, and that evil is embodied in the devil. We can either serve the good, which is Christ, or we can serve the devil; we cannot fuse the two together and call that fusion a “democracy.”

Right now we have reached the stage in which pure evil prances around the political stage, in the form of demon-crats such as Biden and Harris, and we have reached the stage where creatures from hell stalk our streets under the banner of Black Lives Matter. Such creatures riot, loot, and kill on a daily basis, and they intensify their murderous sprees (as they are currently doing in Philadelphia) every time a black criminal is killed or maimed. The conservatives’ response to the pure evil of the demon-crats, the Antifa and the BLM is *more* dialogue. That is the sickness of the fusionist mentality. The integral man, the Christian European, cannot abide the fusion of that which he loves, his kith and kin and his Savior, with a universalist people and a new deity, the sacred negro. That universalist fusion dilutes love. It makes the European a Quaker in his response to pure evil, and it makes him a dried-up lab scientist in his response to the one true God who is deserving of our passionate heartfelt love and adoration.

I long for a Trump victory for the same reason I longed for my father to survive just a few months more during his final illness. I couldn’t face his death, “at least not yet.” But I had to face his death, just as we must face the fact that the mad-dog liberals will not be stopped within the confines of modern democracy. They are an unrelenting, merciless, ungodly force that will kill everything good, everything noble, everything beautiful and innocent, without the slightest “compunctions visitings of nature.” In fact, it is their professed armed doctrine that man’s nature is Satan’s nature. They have re-created themselves in the image of Satan; therefore they must kill Christ by destroying His image in man. That it is Satan’s desire that the mad-dog liberals show their hands at this point in history is not something we can know for sure. What is certain is that his minions have decided it is no longer necessary to cloak their evil. They do not fear the white Europeans because they do not believe there are any Christian Europeans left on the field of battle; they have either been slain or neutered by the democratic faith of the conservatives, which is one with the faith of the Quakers: “Thou shall not defend one’s kith and kin.” If the Christian Europeans no longer have the will to fight the devil and his minions, who will stop the bloodletting? In the works of the great poets of our race and in our fairy tales and folk stories, we find a belief that was best expressed by Hansel’s and Gretel’s father: “When hope seems nearly gone, God’s relief to us will surely come.” That hope, that faith, is grounded in St. Paul’s sure and certain hope that “in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump,” we shall be saved by Him who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. The demon-crats, the Antifaers, and the BLM creatures are pushing the white Europeans to a final reckoning, a reckoning which they, Satan’s minions, think will result in the triumph of darkness over the light. But we have that within which tells us that it is His word that shall be the last word.

The mad-dog liberals must have legalized abortion because they must be as gods, and how can you be a god without controlling the act of procreation? And the liberals must worship the negro because a post-Christian people must have a savior diametrically opposed to the Christians’ Savior. The mad-dog liberals do not want to alleviate the ills of blacks, they want to increase whatever ills they suffer and invent other ills that have no basis in reality. All this they must do because the black race must be the suffering servant the post-Christian liberal worships and serves through his illuminated mind, a mind that has gone beyond pietas, beyond charity, to an inhuman monster of supernatural cruelty, rooted in Satan’s supernatural hatred of Christ and His people. The European fairy tales are true — there is Christ and there is the devil — and now the liberals have decided to make it clear whom they serve. We can’t dialogue with Satan, nor can we fight Satan without divine aid. Our Lord will not leave us defenseless if we call on Him by name. +

# It Will Be Now

November 7, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Faithful hearts, Muscular Christianity

Tags: Shakespeare



He was a man, take him for all in all...

---

*Hamlet.* Not a whit; we defy augury. There's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

---

I have always been moved by the love and affection the Southern people retained for Robert E. Lee, even after he lost the Civil War. He made some crucial military mistakes, but still his people loved him because they knew he had given them his life's blood. So it is with Donald Trump. He has given his life's blood for his people. He deserves their love, and it seems that he has it. I hope he retains it always, even in defeat.<sup>(1)</sup> Whatever Trump's mistakes were, he was the embodiment of what a Christian leader should be. He loved much and fought mightily against the same forces of evil that Lee fought against, only at this stage of European history the forces of evil are infinitely mightier than they were at the time of Robert E. Lee.

I don't think Trump's critics on the 'conservative' side really understand that "life is earnest, life is real." The conservative critics preferred theory to reality. When Trump failed to adhere to their utopian theories of democracy they turned on him and joined the mad-dog liberals in their venomous attacks on Trump. Democracy with a large D is a terrible system of government; it is organized anarchy, a war of all against all with no mediating authority. A 'leader' in a democracy is not really that powerful. When Trump won a close election in 2016, it was not a coup d'état in which he eliminated all of the evil cabinet members and court sycophants of the previous regime. Far from it. The media, which are part of the liberal opposition, and all the federal bureaucrats and the Republican Rhinos remained intact during Trump's presidency. In order to get anything done, Trump had to make all sorts of coalitions with divergent factions. That is the nature of demon-cracy. I hate democracy, but it is not Donald Trump's fault that we have a democracy and not a throne-and-altar Christian monarchy. The conservative intellectuals such as Ann Coulter, who threw fits when Trump did not immediately set things right, showed an amazing lack of understanding, considering that they were supposed to be wise pundits, of just how democracy works.

Trump was faced with an impossible task. He faced off against a majority coalition – the academy, the churchmen, the media, and the demon-crats – who are possessed by the devil. Such creatures cannot be dealt with democratically, yet Trump was forced to deal with them democratically. The difference between good and evil was never so apparent as it was during Trump's interactions with the press when the coronavirus was at its peak. Trump was manfully trying to balance concern for the health of the American people with his concern for the American economy, which is also a health issue because poverty and unemployment produce their own set of health problems, while all the liberals, and unfortunately a good deal of the conservative liberals as well, could do was attack Trump. "Better two million people should die," one liberal commentator declared, "than Trump should be re-elected." And what is so bad about Trump – what has he done to earn such hatred? He has injected an infusion of genuine humanity, a touch of Christian charity, into a political system that was and shall be again, once Trump departs, devoid of humanity and Christian charity. Trump's people love him because they know that he has fought for them with a fierceness and a passion that can only be produced by love. He tried to balance concern for the health of the American people with his concern for the economy during the Covid-19 crisis, he tried to appoint prolific judges who would limit the wholesale slaughter of infants, he opposed the communist Chinese, and he fought against liberal economic policies designed to impoverish white Americans. When a leader exhibits that type of charity, "that charity of honor," we must support him even if his actual successes seem very slight. For how do we measure success? If we look at the satanic forces arrayed against Donald Trump, his 'slight' successes seem enormous.

Trump entered hell when he became President. Did we expect him to convert Satan's minions and transform the hell on earth that the liberals have been building for centuries into heaven on earth? He battled mightily against the devil and his minions, and because he had the moral courage to do battle with them, they chained him to the Promethean rock and pecked away at his entrails. He has earned the respect and love of every man and woman who still has a heart that loves. Like Alfred, like Lee, like Forrest, he has given his life's blood for his people. I love and honor him for that.

If, as it appears, that the demon-crats have stolen the election by liberal chicanery and Trump has been removed from office, what is to be done? Should we despair and die? No, we should not, because that is what he, the archangel Satan, and his minions, the liberals, want. They hate all things noble and Christian, and they think they now have destroyed the last tiny remnants of Christian humanity. Is that true? They have certainly destroyed the last remnants of Christian humanity within the framework of democracy. But is our hope bound up with the fortunes of democracy? Remember it was the democratic process that produced, "Give us Barabbas." I hoped and prayed for a Trump victory because I wanted more time before what I knew was coming, the armed battle against Satan and his minions. Shouldn't I, as a Christian, have wanted that battle to come sooner rather than later? I suppose I should have, but it is not a pleasant prospect, and I, because I am weak and mortal, said, "Not yet, oh Lord, not yet." But it has come; it is time to break the liberals' chains of democracy and "step out" into the real world, where what is good, pure, and noble must be defended and fought for as real Christian men of old Europe fought for their Christian hearth fires. Trump's victory four years ago gave us a Christian respite. We had a few more moments to walk in the sunlight of a remnant Christian culture. But now the darkness of Satan's everlasting night has descended upon us. We must fight to restore the light that shineth in darkness; Christ will aid us if we call on Him by name.

I believe, against the wisdom of the Scribes and Pharisees, that the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men, but I don't want to lie about my feelings either. Trump's loss goes beyond depressing. First and foremost it goes beyond depressing because I love my wife and children. They need, like all Christians, to feel that there is some concrete, visible representation of something honorable and Christian left on this earth. There is that within me that screams, "They didn't deserve this, please God, they didn't deserve this." And then there are the white grazers, my people, who are confused and bewildered about everything, particularly all things pertaining to God, but they are more sinned against than sinning. They have

something inside of them still; they are struggling toward the light that once shone all over Christian Europe. They need to believe in the source of that great light. The right type of hero worship, which they had for Trump, was a start toward the one great hero, Jesus Christ. Only an intellectual conservative or a Gnostic neo-pagan could be indifferent to the sufferings of the white grazer and make common cause with the Biden-Harris demon-crats in order to punish Trump instead of their intellectual theories.

The first liberal, as Burke tells us, was the devil. It has always been and always will be the devil's desire that his will, not God's, shall rule here on earth as he rules in hell, which is a perverse parody of the Lord's prayer. Through his minions in society, men like Shaw, Voltaire, and Rousseau, and through his minions in the organized churches, as distinct from the real church, the church of "where two or three are gathered together in my name," Satan has managed to create, through the democratic process, hell on earth. Trump's presence, as off this stage we have shown, represented an attempt to inject Christian charity into a democratic system opposed to all things Christian. The liberals reacted to Trump as Dracula reacted to Van Helsing when Van Helsing thrust the crucifix into his face. And we must, now that the liberals have shown their fangs, do what Van Helsing did to Dracula. We must drive a stake through their collective heart.

On election eve one of my sons said that if Trump won, we, the Christian remnant *and* the liberals would be much better off. But if Biden and Harris won, we *and* the liberals would be worse off. He was right. Why should the liberals oppose even a remnant of Christian charity being injected into the political arena? The answer can be found in the Gospel:

*And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts. – [Matthew 8:28-34](#)*

The liberals must, because they worship darkness and not the light, flee from Jesus Christ. If we bow to their will, simply because they claim they have been democratically elected to do Satan's will, we will go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberal swine. If we do not denounce "give us Barabbas" democracy, the white grazers will despair and die because they will see no alternative to swinish, demonic demon-cracy. The deep state and the deep church — Pope Francis the blasphemer is a Satanist — are totally opposed to Christ. They hate anything that resembles His reign of charity. Those two forces are fearsome, reptilian entities that seem invincible. Still, I can say without lying that I believe if we call on Him by name, He will send His angels to protect and defend us in the coming battle against Satan and his minions. In this our darkest hour, when it seems like all the forces of hell have prevailed against all that is good and honorable and Christian, we shall see, if we pray to Him who saves, that He will sustain us in the day of battle just as He will sustain us at the hour of our death.

After we honor Trump for his efforts, and after we grieve for our electoral defeat, we must make the determination to turn this electoral defeat into a victory. The liberals bared their satanic fangs during the election in a way that they never did before. They think, now that they have disposed of Trump, that they will be able to reign in perpetuity. That is not so. Now the real war shall begin. Democratic resistance to liberalism is over. But quietly, without any official declaration of war, we must internally, "With Ate by his side... let loose the dogs of war." The liberals have invaded our homes, violated our women, and murdered our kith and kin. They must not remain unopposed just because they have won an election by chicanery. We must, in the name of the God of mercy, make them know that their merciless cruelty will not go unopposed.

I should say, before closing, that I do not know when the final internet shutdown will take place. Trump's presence in the political arena has mitigated, somewhat, the boldness of the internet tyrants. I will keep writing until the final shutdown. "If it be not now, it will come." So let me place my heart in my hand and write the words from that old song: "I have loved you dearly, more dearly than the spoken word can tell." Though I have not seen you face to face, I love you, ye remnant band of Christian Europeans. None of us shall yield, because He did not yield to the devil, who tempted Him in the desert, nor did He yield on the cross. "By the cross we conquer." +

---

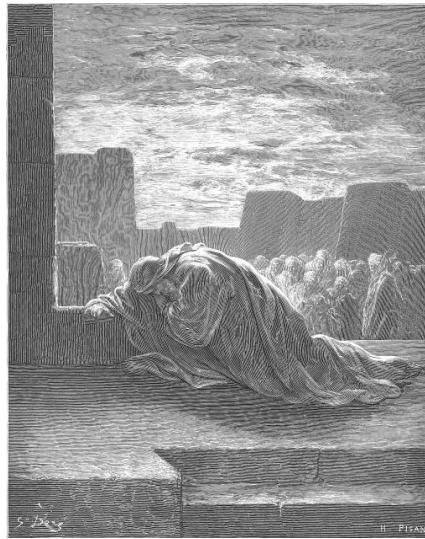
(1) Trump might still win an electoral victory. I hope and pray that he does. But whether it be now or four years from now, the final reckoning with the liberals must take place. No people can exist as a people under God who permit liberals to hold sway in their nation.

# It Shall Not Be Business As Usual

November 14, 2020

Categories: Charity, Democracy, Grazers, Muscular Christianity, Religion of Satan

Tags: C. S. Lewis, John Buchan



Dore. Ezra in prayer

Trump entered hell when he became President. Did we expect him to convert Satan's minions and transform the hell on earth that the liberals have been building for centuries into heaven on earth? He battled mightily against the devil and his minions, and because he had the moral courage to do battle with them, they chained him to the Promethean rock and pecked away at his entrails. He has earned the respect and love of every man and woman who still has a heart that loves. Like Alfred, like Lee, like Forrest, he has given his life's blood for his people. I love and honor him for that.

If, as it appears, that the demon-crats have stolen the election by liberal chicanery and Trump has been removed from office, what is to be done? Should we despair and die? No, we should not, because that is what he, the archangel Satan, and his minions, the liberals, want. They hate all things noble and Christian, and they think they now have destroyed the last tiny remnants of Christian humanity. Is that true? They have certainly destroyed the last remnants of Christian humanity within the framework of democracy. But is our hope bound up with the fortunes of democracy? Remember it was the democratic process that produced, "Give us Barabbas." – [CWNY](#)

---

Since the days of our fathers have we been in a great trespass unto this day; and for our iniquities have we, our kings, and our priests, been delivered into the hand of the kings of the lands, to the sword, to captivity, and to a spoil, and to confusion of face, as it is this day. And now for a little space grace hath been shewed from the LORD our God, to leave us a remnant to escape, and to give us a nail in his holy place, that our God may lighten our eyes, and give us a little reviving in our bondage. – [Ezra 9: 7-8](#)

---

AOC's call to make a list of all who supported Trump and hunt them down was an accurate summation of the Democrats' major policy concern: The white race must be eliminated. And why was it no surprise when the conservative pundits who told us it was the end of the everything if Trump lost, immediately fell in line and became part of the loyal opposition? Why, if it was the end of everything, didn't they tell us to grab pitchforks, rifles, and shotguns and take to the streets rather than submit peacefully to the liberals who openly tell us they are coming for us? The reason is quite simple – The conservative pundits are liberals. They believe the most important thing in life is that the great American talk show – the show where clever Republican liberals try to out-wisecrack Democratic liberals in order to prove that they are the smart guys – shall continue on into eternity. Most of the conservative pundits, Limbaugh being the exception, seem happy that Biden has won since he gives them more chances to make sarcastic comments about his gaffes and his senility. But I don't find their jokes very funny, nor do the 'deplorables,' the white grazers who voted for Trump and have now been designated for slaughter. In 2016 Hillary's supporters laid down in the street and foamed at the mouth because Trump threatened to limit their abortion rights, and he was opposed to the extermination of the white race. Trump's supporters are not lying down in the street or foaming at the mouth, but they are very depressed and some are suicidal. But isn't turn-about fair play? Isn't that part of the democratic process? It is part of the demon-crat process, a process which tells us that the agony of white grazers is a good thing while the slightest tummy upset of a liberal is a bad thing. When Trump won, the liberals wept because they wanted to kill babies and kill whites. They thought Trump would stifle them, so they opposed him in everything, and eventually brought him down by making common cause with the Chinese communists. The white grazers, whom the liberals want to eliminate, are depressed because more babies will be killed and they will be killed as well. Whom should we be concerned about?

Every Trump supporter was not on the side of the angels — they were a mixed group — but every Biden-Harris voter was and is on the side of Satan. That is why the demon-crats 'won' the election and why they have won the cultural war. They have faith; they worship the devil through the sacred negro, while the white grazers are still groping for a faith they can call their own. They can't turn to the organized churches, because the churchmen have embraced liberalism. So where do they go? A romance is often, as John Buchan points out in his novel [Huntingtower](#), quite crude and earthy in its beginnings:

Dickon groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in the retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith?

But then a romance can grow, if there is genuine humanity in its inception, to something of great constancy, to something that is noble and good. The "simple fools" with their MAGA hats and Trump banners had something inside them which the conservative intellectuals lacked. They had a feeling for a leader who loved them and sought to protect them from the wickedness and snares of the demon-crats.

And that type of love is the stuff of romance. "We are such stuff as dreams are made on." The white grazers' dreams, when they voted for Trump, were not completely divorced from the hearth-fire faith of the antique Europeans. For that reason, and that reason alone, the demon-crats bared their fangs and attacked with satanic fury. The break with old Europe must be complete. There must be no European hearth fire in the liberals' utopian world. The Bush-Romney Republicans are not the objects of the liberals' hatred because they believe, like the liberals, in the destruction of the white race. Neither Trump nor the white grazers who supported him ever advocated anything resembling what the liberals' call 'white supremacy.' But merely being white makes you a white supremacist in the demonic ideology of the liberals. We can't escape this issue of white pietas. If we give up our racial hearth fire, if we march behind the banner of 'We are not racist,' we will continue to lose to the liberals.

When Trump won in 2016 without cheating, the liberals treated his election as an illegal usurpation. The election was supposed to be a mere formality, like the elections in the Soviet Union used to be. This time around the liberals made certain that there would be no repeat of 2016. The Biden-Harris ticket got fewer votes than Hillary the witch got, yet they won, because the liberals were quite willing to break every electoral rule in order to win, just as they were quite willing to commit murder, through the communist Chineses virus, and through the Antifa/Black Lives Matter barbarians, in order to eliminate their enemies, the white Trump supporters. And as is always the case with liberals, they didn't care if thousands of non-whites,

the collateral damage, were killed as well. The liberals adhere to only one law – their will is sacred because their will is God’s will. And who is their God? It is Satan, whom they worship in and through the sacred negro.

Solzhenitsyn asked himself the question, when he was imprisoned in the Gulag Archipelago, why didn’t we resist when they came for us? Why didn’t we get whatever weapons we could lay our hands on and fight as a united group? I think the answer to Solzhenitsyn’s question can be found in Dostoevsky’s book, *The House of the Dead*. In that book Dostoyevsky writes about his experience in prison, during which he got a chance to observe first-hand men who were imprisoned for murder. And he noted that once they had transgressed that moral barrier of ‘thou shalt not kill,’ the second, third, and fourth murders became quite easy. The murderers had become a moral authority unto themselves, and that made them able to kill again and again. But such men are unusual; most men need some moral authority in order to justify the killing of their fellow men. A soldier finds his moral authority for killing in the State, and so do the bulk of the European people. And that is the tragedy of the European people. The mad-dog liberals believe that they are the State, whether they are elected to power or whether they are not elected; they believe themselves to be the State. And their religion of State is the worship of Satan through the sacred negro. Anything is lawful in the defense and advancement of that State. This places the white grazer in an impossible position. He believes that the modern democratic states are sacred and cannot be violently opposed, just as the Soviet citizens believed that the Soviet State could not and should not be violently opposed. The white grazer will defend his home from burglars, he will support state-sanctioned wars and his local police, but he will not fight against the State, because he has retained half of the Christianity of Alfred the Great, while the mad-dog liberals have embraced the entire dogmatic theology of the devil. Let us go back to Alfred.

Alfred started the reclamation of his kingdom with just a few acres of land in the hinterlands of Britain. That was his Christian kingdom. And then, because he was truly Alfred the Great, he reclaimed all of Britain from the Danes. And he so impressed the pagan Danes when he showed mercy to them after he defeated them, that they made a genuine conversion to the true faith. Now we come to the crucial point that is of such significance to modern Europeans. On his death bed Alfred enjoined his sons to ‘keep the law.’ Alfred was right of course, he was always in the right. It was imperative that his sons should adhere to the Christian laws that he had laid down for all Britons. But what if Alfred had lost to the Danes? What if he was forced to live in the hinterlands of pagan Britain? Would he have commanded his sons to ‘keep the law’? Of course not. He would have commanded them to keep fighting until Christ was King over all of Britain.[\(1\)](#)

The liberals, the men and women who voted for Biden, are totally committed to Satan; that is why they were prepared to violently resist Trump’s reelection if their mail-in ballot subterfuge failed. But the white grazers, the men and women who voted for Trump, are in limbo. They have a certain preference for Christian things, but they do not have an “[Onward, Christian Soldiers](#)” faith in the Christ of the Gospels, the Christ of old Europe. And when you only retain a partial faith, you will be annihilated by the demon-possessed liberal swine who have made Satan their god. The grazers have retained the Christian Europeans’ respect for the law, but they are incapable of seeing that the law, once it is no longer Christian, is not the law that Alfred, the exemplar of Christian rulers, told his sons to adhere to. The exact opposite is the case. Our law is grounded in Satan’s will. Alfred would have told us – he is telling us still – to oppose that law with our whole heart, mind, and soul.

With the exception of the *House of the Dead* type of murderers, the Ted Bundies, the white Europeans need State sanction when they kill. The exemplar for all liberals is Robespierre, who made man’s reason into a god, and in the name of that god started his purge. That purge still continues in the European nations. In the name of reason, the sacred negro, and science, the non-illuminated whites must be eliminated. AOC and her ilk have told us outright, the liberals are coming for thee and me.

It would seem that the colored barbarians, particularly the black barbarians, do not need state sanction to kill. But when they kill whites, do they not kill with the state sanction of the liberals? And when they kill each other, isn’t it in adherence to their ancient barbaric faith in bloody sacrifice? Civil rights for blacks, in a white Christian society, must of necessity involve a suppression of the blacks’ barbaric faith in bloody sacrifice. They must be forced to adhere to Christian precepts of law and morality. In a post-Christian society, a society based on man’s reason, the black barbarians are encouraged to practice their ancient faith. Of course the illuminated whites never anticipate that the blacks might not always distinguish between illuminated whites and non-illuminated whites; Atticus Finch is only admired by the white liberals.

We must fully understand why the liberals hated Trump. He was opposed, unlike his Republican predecessors, to their religion of bloody sacrifice. He did not want infants to be slaughtered on the liberals’ altars (other Republican presidents merely gave lip service to the anti-abortion cause), and he wanted white people to be included in the American dream, and not exterminated. The liberals will always oppose such a politician, they will eliminate him by whatever means necessary. Where does that leave the white Europeans? It leaves us in the demon-cratic slaughterhouse. We can stay within the perimeters of demon-cracy and wait to be slaughtered, or we can oppose the liberals, as Forrest opposed them. But how can we fight without state sanction? How can we not fight? If we remain passive, haven’t we chosen to support Satan over Christ? Is it noble to brag about your acceptance of the law if that law is the liberals’ law, a law based on the slaughter of the innocents and the ritual murder of the white race?

If this election has not taught us that we cannot reason with the devil, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because we will remain in thralldom to the devil and his minions during our lives here on earth. And the next world? It is my hope and prayer that I and the white grazers will not give up our hope for another world, even while under the heel of Satan in this world. But it will be better for us, the white Europeans, if we fight for His reign of charity here on earth. That fight is what gave our European ancestors a sure and certain hope in His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. If we don’t fight, if we follow the conservative pundits and make peace with our liberal overlords, we will endanger our own souls and the souls of generations of Europeans still to be born. The Witch of the Green Kirtle just about convinces Jill Pole and Eustace Scrubb that there never was a Narnia or an Aslan until Puddlegum breaks the hellish spell and defies the Witch:

“No, I suppose that other world must be all dream.”

“Yes. It is all a dream,” said the Witch, always thrumming.

“Yes, all a dream,” said Jill.

“There never was such a world,” said the Witch.

“No,” said Jill and Scrubb, “never was such a world.”

“There never was any world but mine,” said the Witch.

“There never was any world but yours,” said they.

Puddlegum was still fighting hard. “I don’t know rightly what you all mean by a world,” he said, talking like a man who hasn’t enough air. “But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won’t make me forget Narnia, and the whole Overworld too. We’ll never see it again, I shouldn’t wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I’ve seen the sky full of stars. I’ve seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I’ve seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn’t look at him for brightness.”

Puddlegum’s words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked on one another like people newly awaked.

“Why, there it is!” cried the Prince. “Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we’ve all seen the sun.”

—The Silver Chair

Our schools, our churches, and every major institution in our nation support the Underworld of the Witch of the Green Kirtle. They tell us that there never was an Overworld, a world in which men and women looked to a Suffering Servant who came to redeem mankind from sin and death. What are the liberals celebrating when they celebrate the death of one tiny instance of Christian humanity in their Underworld? They are celebrating the total victory of darkness over light. Right now our greatest enemies are the conservative pundits who tell us to get back to business as usual. It shall not be business as usual. In the name of God, we must reject the ‘non-resistance to evil’ policy of the conservative Quakers and act like European men who actually believe in Christ the King and oppose the devil and all his works – and the devil’s proudest work is the liberal who hates Christ as the devil hates Christ.

Biden will reinstate the anti-white propaganda throughout our military, he will re-establish the United States’ subservience to communist China, and he will put in motion the legal machinery to have Trump and his family prosecuted for crimes against the satanic state. When the State is satanic, to oppose Satan is treason. Then they, the demon-crats, and the conservative shadows of the demon-crats, will come for the white grazers. The white grazers will have one more season to hunt deer before the liberals shall order the militia to hunt them. And while the purge is going on, the conservative pundits will tell us to sit tight and wait for a Bush or a Pence to come along and save us through the demon-cratic process.

When we walk through the valley of the shadow of death we need our ancient faith, which is a revelatory faith, not an intellectual faith, in Christ the Lord. We are helpless and hopeless if we stay within the confines of demon-cracy. But outside of those hellish confines there is faith, hope, and that charity of honor. That charity and that honor, which are grounded in His love, shall see us safely home. +

---

(1) Biden will legalize some ten million colored infidels because that is the essence of liberalism – a satanic coalition of post-Christian Europeans allied with the barbarians of color. It will take another Alfred, supported by a remnant band of Christians, to drive the liberals and the colored barbarians from the European nations that once called themselves Christian. The United States, the exceptionalist nation, is indeed an exception. Our anti-nation is exceptionally satanic because we had less of a Christian tradition to throw off. When David was hiding in the cave from his enemies, he asked the Lord to, “Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name: the righteous shall compass me about: for thou shalt deal bountifully with me.” So shall it be with us when we reject democracy and turn to the God of David and the God of Alfred, our Savior, Jesus Christ.

# Unmitigated Evil

November 21, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Grazers, Homeland

Tags: George Fitzhugh, Stark Young, Thomas Hughes



A credulous father and a brother noble,  
Whose nature is so far from doing harms  
That he suspects none; on whose foolish honesty  
My practices ride easy. I see the business.  
Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit:  
All with me's meet that I can fashion fit.

-King Lear

---

Draw thy sword.  
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,  
Thy arm may do thee justice; here is mine.  
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,  
My oath, and my profession. I protest,  
Maugre thy strength, place, youth, and eminence,  
Despite thy victor-sword and fire-new fortune,  
Thy valour, and thy heart, thou are a traitor;  
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;  
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince;  
And, from th' extremest upward of thy head  
To the descent and dust below thy foot,  
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou 'No,'  
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent  
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,  
Thou liest.

-King Lear

---

I went to a Trump rally this past weekend. I went to the Trump rally even though I don't believe in the effectiveness of rallies. Why did I go? I went to the rally for three reasons. First, I was concerned for the safety of the people at the rally, and I wanted to be of some assistance if they were attacked by Antifaers or Black Lives Matter barbarians. Secondly, I just wanted to compliment the Trump supporters for their loyalty. In my view such loyalty to a man who has fought for them shows that they have something inside of them that is rare in this day and age. And thirdly I wanted to see if there was a counter-revolutionary sentiment stirring in the hearts of the Trump supporters.

As to the first point: It was a small town protest, not of the magnitude of the Washington DC protest, so other than a few black barbarians and white college punks who screamed obscenities from a distance, there was no Antifa or BLM attacks.<sup>(1)</sup> But the Trump people at the rally did need protection because they were amazingly, stunningly naive about the possibility of violence. One very pretty woman in her mid-forties was standing on the corner, waving a big Trump banner as the cars went by. I told her to duck if she saw a rifle barrel sticking out of any of the passing cars. She said, "Why would anyone want to hurt me. I'm just expressing my opinion. I don't hate anyone." What can you say to such people? I thought of Shakespeare's *King Lear* and the scene in which Edmund, the evil brother, says that his good brother, "is so far from doing harms that he suspects none."

A cousin of mine, a Trump supporter who knows I don't generally go to political events, accused me of going there to mock the Trump supporters. Far from it; my cousin doesn't know me very well. I wanted to try and help the Trump supporters avoid Edgar's fate; I wanted them to understand that they have an implacable enemy that wants their blood. Edgar ultimately has to confront his evil brother Edmund and kill him. That is what we must do vis-à-vis the liberals, but there currently does not seem to be any awareness, on the part of the white grazers, that they are facing, in their liberal opponents, pure, unmitigated evil. Edmund repents as he lays dying; our liberal foes are worse than Edmund. There is always a possibility of a death bed conversion, but we must see that liberalism is a very strong repellent of God's grace. Most liberals will cling to their hatred of Christ and His people throughout their lives, and after their deaths they will take that hatred into hell with them. If we don't realize that the liberals have recreated themselves in the image of Satan and are determined to eliminate Christ's image in man from the face of the earth, we will not be able to fight and win the war that we must fight and win. Did I make any headway with the Trumpian Edgars? Of course not. When you talk about demonized swine, which is what the liberals are, you place yourself back in the bad old days, before people became too enlightened to believe in such fairy tales.

My second purpose, to compliment the Trump supporters on their loyalty, met with more success than my first intended purpose. They are the condemned and demonized deplorables, and they were quite responsive to someone who told them that they were noble and honorable. There was an older man who had come from an eastern European country when it was under communism, and now had the misfortune to live in a nation that was going down the same communist path. "Trump is the only leader who opposes them," he said, "And we will be completely under their control if Trump loses." Then there was the wheelchair-bound man who wept when the woman in charge of the Trumpy bear stand gave him a free Trumpy bear.

Everyone at the rally was white, but they would have embraced any black or Mexican who came to join them, and they would have run a mile from me if I had brought up white pietas. But still those people had, though they didn't know it, white pietas. They know that they are hated by the liberal elite, and they know that Trump placed himself between them and the liberal

elite and took the blows that were directed at them, and they love him for it. It's difficult during this liberal-created COVID crisis to have direct interaction with people, but I hope I managed to convey my thanks to those white grazers with whom I spoke. They have that within which our Lord can build upon:

*And let us not be hard on him, if at that moment his soul is fuller of the tomb and him who lies there, than of the altar and Him of whom it speaks. Such stages have to be gone through, I believe, by all young and brave souls, who must win their way through hero-worship, to the worship of Him who is the King and Lord of heroes. For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him, in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell forever and ever in perfect fullness.*

—Thomas Hughes, *Tom Brown's Schooldays*

God bless those mysterious human relationships! They constitute the “lovely intangibles” that the pre-conversion Doris in *Miracle on 34th Street* dismisses and the “foolish,” Quixotic lawyer declares to be “the only things that really are worthwhile.”

As I left the rally, I went by a beautiful old mansion situated in the affluent section of the town. The inhuman creatures who inhabit the house had a Biden-Harris sign with the words, “Love, not Hate” under it. How do creatures who spit on everything humane and noble and openly support the worship of Satan dare to proclaim that they favor love over hate? They dare to make such proclamations because they are inhuman creatures who have become, through intellectual pride, one with Satan, who regards everything that stinks of Christ’s love for mankind as evil, and everything that exalts Satan’s hatred of mankind as good. I still hope and pray that the liberals’ complete triumph over those white grazers at the Trump rally will be delayed another four years — that will be a miracle of God’s grace if it occurs. The two million Trump votes that were given to Biden can only be returned to Trump by an act of God.<sup>(2)</sup> We can still pray; they can’t take that from us.

Now, sadly, I must come to my third reason for going to the Trump rally: I wanted to see if there was any counterrevolutionary sentiment among the Trump supporters. There was none. Possibly in the MAGA rally in Washington DC I would have found someone who was willing to think counterrevolution instead of ‘wait till next time,’ but I doubt it. The white Trump supporters, like Trump himself, are supporters of a fusion of Christianity and liberalism. They have more of a Christian ethos than the mad-dog liberals, but they still believe in democracy and reject the older Christian cultures of the European nations. Half-liberal and half-Christian will not prevail against the internal demonism of the liberals. Four more years of Trump will give us a President who opposes communism, who opposes the anti-white instruction in our military and civil service agencies, and who opposes the wholesale slaughter of the unborn. But you can’t have just a little bit of liberalism. Liberalism is the giant Blob in the old sci-fi movie – it will consume everything unless it is completely eradicated. Four more years of Trump would be a very great blessing, because some white lives in the womb and outside the womb will be saved during a Trump administration, but ultimately there must be a white counterrevolution. The liberals represent unmitigated evil; they cannot be dealt with within the demon-cratic parameters of the devil.

Because “life is earnest, life is real,” and because there is something incredibly noble in Trump’s fight against the mad-dog liberals, I have bent over backwards to avoid Ann Coulterism, which is grounded in a complete misunderstanding of what can actually be done by a leader who has been elected President rather than a king who has been anointed or a dictator who has taken power by means of a coup. I would prefer a king or a dictator, but that is not what we have, so I can’t hold the President accountable for not immediately making the changes in the nation that a king or a dictator could make. All that having been said, even a very good President, and Trump is the best President we have ever had, cannot deal effectively with liberalism within the confines of American demon-cracy, because the American experiment in demon-cracy is grounded in the Jacobin concepts of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Those concepts are diametrically opposed to white pietas which is the foundation of a Christian culture. Some years back I wrote about getting lost in the Lake District of England when I was a young man in my early twenties. A retired English couple saw that I was lost and invited me to stay the night in their cottage. At first I refused the invitation, but the man insisted I stay: “You Yanks and us are all of the same blood.”

Yes, we are, we Europeans, all of the same blood. And if we are true to our blood, we will be true to our faith in Jesus Christ, because faith is of the blood and heart. Just as Christ became flesh and dwelt among us, so did He become one with the European people when they took Him into their hearts. The lifeblood of their culture was their faith in Jesus Christ. When an idea of God replaces the blood faith of a people — and that is the case in organized Christian Jewry — Satan enters in and makes his will the new faith. We structure our governments according to our faith. The Jacobin governments of the United States, France, and the other European nations are based on the anti-revelatory faith of the intellectual Christians. They place their reason above revelation and end up supporting Satan over Christ. It’s no coincidence that the most organized and anti-revelatory branch of organized Christian Jewry produced the highest percentage of Biden voters. How can that happen? How can professed Christians vote for legalized abortion and communism? It’s easy if you believe that man’s reason transcends faith, and a universal, generic love for mankind transcends pietas. Then you will support all things antithetical to old Europe because the people of old Europe were ‘stupid,’ they believed, quite literally, in the Christ depicted in the Gospels, and they were racist, because they believed that they could only know Christ through those mysterious blood ties that we form with our kith and kin.

What is good in organized Christian Jewry is the individual who forms, against the mandate of the Church authorities, a personal attachment to Jesus Christ. And what is good in our democracy is an individual who, in defiance of the pundits, conservatives and liberal, forms a personal attachment to a leader who exhibits pietas: “I will fight for my people.” The individual who rejects rational Christianity for a blood faith in Jesus Christ and the Trump supporter who loves Trump because Trump fights for his people, have that within which George Fitzhugh describes as our only hope in this vale of tears:

*We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man’s whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.*

—*Cannibals All! or Slaves Without Masters*

What we witnessed during the French Revolution was the devil’s attempt to completely destroy God’s image in man. He defaced that image, but he didn’t completely destroy it. Our Civil War, which was anything but civil, was also an attempt, by the devil, to destroy God’s image in man. Again, he was partially successful, but he didn’t completely destroy God’s image in man. We are still fighting that Civil War, and this time the devil is determined to complete his revolution. The similarities between then (1860) and now (2020) are striking. A coalition of Jacobin liberals and colored barbarians joined together in the 1860s to destroy the image-of-God-in-man culture of the South:

“Oh, Mother; I can’t stand it! Oh, Mother. Oh Mother!”

“My dear little girl,” she said, surprised at her voice and the ordinary words, for she felt as if she would faint, “you must be calm and brave. You must control yourself. We may have a great deal to do today and we must seek strength and help from God. Kneel down and ask God to give us strength.”

Lucy, who had started with every fresh report of the cannon, grew quiet as she knelt by the armchair and buried her face in her arms. She was on her knees quiet thus for some minutes and from that time on was calm and helpful.

Before Agnes had finished dressing, William Veal knocked on the door; the whole place was full of Yankees, he said.

“Where?” she called, taking the garments Lucy held out to her and hurrying to dress herself.

“The house is surrounded by Yankees,” William said. “Nigger Yankees.”

By the time she got to the front gallery, cavalry in their dusty blue uniforms were riding through the gate. She ran down the stairs and to the kitchens. There was not a servant male or female in the whole court or in the cellars or servants’ rooms. A skirmish was going on in the woods beyond the gate. Servants were running to the scene of the fight, risking bullets through their brains. Then after a few minutes the firing in the wood ceased; the cook and housemaids returned. Agnes ordered breakfast immediately. She went to Belle’s room, ordered a tray brought to her, went through the dining-room and upstairs. Edna, the maid, brought tea and buttered bread on a small silver platter to her room. And after taking it, for she was weak from the long night, Agnes went again below stairs.

*Over the grounds there was a great confusion. They were cooking in the back court for Colonel Gobel's Confederates, with Paralee standing over the fire. But in the dining-room no breakfast had been brought. A little mulatto girl, Bessie, ran to Agnes's room.*

"Oh, Missis," she said, pulling at her collar, "them Yankee niggers is in Miss Belle's room and they ain' nobody wid her 'tall."

*Agnes darted along the back gallery into the room, seeing on her way that the whole grounds were full of negroes. They were at the smokehouse and over the kitchen court, on foot and on horseback. She could hear them tramping in the parlors and the rattle of their sabres and spurs. She rushed in to her daughter. There they were. Lucy was in the bedroom and the negroes were tramping through the sitting-room, threatening, cursing.*

"Get out," Agnes ordered. "Get out of my house. Get out of my sight!"

*A big black who seemed to be in command gave a guffaw, and the other negroes, watching him evidently, followed. One of them came up to her and with his open hand boxed her on the cheek. At once another negro put a pistol against her breast; she could smell his sweat. Then the big negro who had struck her said, "Don't shoot her, Mose, slap her. Slap the old slut." He broke into a stream of abuse.*

-Stark Young, [So Red the Rose](#)

That terrible destruction of the Southern civilization was grounded on the malignant hatred of Satan for Christ. The terrible swift sword was Satan's sword, and the sacred negro was the spiritual justification for the use of that terrible swift sword. As it was then, so it is now. But there is, tragically, one crucial difference between then and now. There were, in the 1860s, men with white pietas, men with a blood faith, who resisted the onslaught of the devil. The image-of-man-in-God culture was saved for a time. In 2020 we need a counterrevolution, but we no longer have men with the spiritual substance to start and sustain a counterrevolution. Church and Academy have destroyed white pietas. Trump and his followers are divided against themselves. They have a longing for a hearth fire faith, a faith that is rooted in their love of kith and kin, but they cannot act on that longing because all the modern authorities tell them that the true faith is not of the blood, it is of the mind, and that new faith proclaims that white pietas is evil and universal enfranchisement with the sacred negro as the more-than-equal god of that universal enfranchisement, is what we all must strive for.

It is useless to talk of counterrevolutions without pietas. When whites recover their pietas, or should I say if they recover their pietas, then and only then will they mount a counterrevolution against Satan and his minions. Until that time the best we can hope for is an electoral victory for Trump which will give us a slight respite in this war that only one side, the wrong side, is fighting. Should Trump win the election, it will be a victory wrought by prayer, because only a miracle can take those stolen votes away from Satan's minions and give them back to Trump. And if we lose? Then we must pray that our Lord gives us the strength to endure. In the end this conflict will not be settled by elections. The liberals represent the militant forces of unmitigated evil. We can't come to terms with them because they will give us no terms except unconditional surrender to their will, which is Satan's will. We cannot surrender to such an enemy. Surely Christ will sustain us in the day of battle. +

---

(1) The females of the species are always the most vitriolic and obscene. They make me think of Tennyson's observation: "For men at most differ as Heaven and earth, But women, worst and best, as Heaven and Hell." A society that produces such creatures, women who have embraced hell, is truly a society at the end of the line.

(2) It actually appears that more than 2 million votes were stolen from Trump. And why on earth were so many ballots in the democratic states sent to Merkel's Germany and socialist Spain to be counted? Is it still a conspiracy when it is so blatant? No, it is an outright assertion of the liberals' tyrannical power. They do not believe there is any legal recourse for the whites who voted for Trump. They believe they can commit fraud on a massive scale and get away with it. If they are right, if they get away with it, they will proceed with their final solution – which is the complete extermination of the white race. But let us pause there. If the liberals get their wish, that the white grazers shall not have any voice within the confines of Liberaldom, then why should the white grazers continue to graze within those confines of Liberaldom? The old maxim which says, "Be careful what you wish for, you might get it," applies to the liberals. You might at the peak of your arrogant pride, find out that the men you thought you had under your heel have rediscovered their manhood and decided that if their votes do not count in our demon-cracy, then the time has come for non-democratic action. Alfred and Forrest are our exemplars.

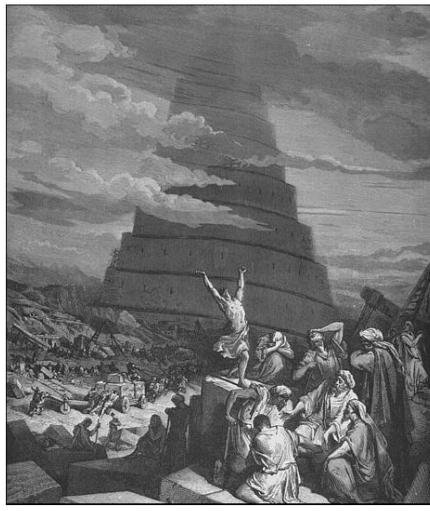
# Shall Satan Rule Unchallenged?

November 28, 2020

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Democracy, Religion of Satan

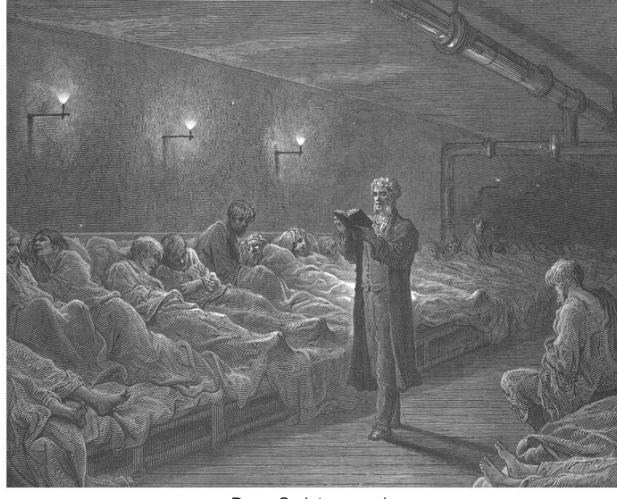
Tags: Edmund Burke, Walter Scott

We can have Satan --



Dore. Confusion of Tongues

Or we can have charity --



Dore. Scripture reader

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. —Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

A great liberal icon, one Joseph Stalin, has placed this election in its proper context: "It's not the people who vote that count. It's the people who count the votes." The mad-dog liberals grasped that essential fact, while the conservative-liberals did not, and that made the difference in the election. For all the Christian reasons I have previously stated I wanted Trump to win another four years. But I have always been conscious of the fact that my views on demon-cracy and elections is at variance with the views of the mad-dog liberals, the conservative-liberals, and the white electorate in America and Europe. I view democracy as a heresy that a Christian must struggle to live with as the Jewish people struggled to live with their pagan rulers during their Babylonian captivity. You must resist while trying to survive as a people who do not have the power to supplant your heathen rulers. Because of my views on demon-cracy I have always voted for the candidate who I thought had a remnant of Christian humanity in his soul; I never voted for a man who I thought would restore all things in Christ because I knew such a consummation could never take place within the framework of demon-cracy.

I did not vote in the first Presidential election that I was eligible to vote in, the election of 1972 in which Nixon defeated McGovern. I did not vote in that election because I was only concerned with my own personal spiritual struggle at that time. I was struggling with the Dostoyevskian question: "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" Was I going to follow Ivan Karamazov or Alyosha Karamazov? I decided that I was going to follow Alyosha: "Lord, I believe, help my unbelief." In 1976, in keeping with my Christian rejection of "Give us Barabbas" democracy, I looked for some Christian humanity in the Presidential candidates. I voted for Reagan in the primaries and then did not vote in the general election, because I did not see any Christian humanity in either Ford or Carter. In 1980 and 1984 I voted for Reagan. He proved to have less Christian humanity than I had hoped for, but I still do not regret voting for him. I never voted for a Republican candidate or a Democratic candidate again until the Romney-Obama campaign. I voted for Romney because I thought His Mormonism would give him some Christian instincts — after all, the Mormons as a religious group were purported to be the most conservative of the religious bodies. I was wrong about Romney; he turned out to be a mad-dog liberal just as the 'born again' George Bush the II was a mad-dog liberal.

Then there was Trump. I saw what I thought was some Christian humanity in the man. And this time I was right. That man exceeded my hopes. I have been roundly criticized for equating Trump with Alfred and Forrest, but I stand by that comparison. We must judge Trump by the forces arrayed against him. Alfred is rightly called the Great, but he did not face, in the pagan Danes, an enemy as irredeemably evil and treacherous as the post-Christian liberals. And he was allowed to actually fight his enemy as such an enemy should be fought, with the sword. In addition, Alfred had followers willing to fight his enemies with the sword. So did Forrest: he had men willing to march into hell for him and fight the black barbarians and carpet baggers.

What he did was heroic, but he had the backing of real men and an entire people. Trump's situation has been much more difficult than either Alfred's or Forrest's. He does not have an army of men willing to fight for him. Quite the opposite is the case — he has an army of liberals fighting against him. And this modern army is much more malevolent, much more satanic than any army has been in the past.

Each and every member of the modern liberal army has crossed a moral Rubicon. They have placed themselves beyond the boundary which separates the human from the satanic, and they have made it their unalterable intention to build Satandom over the graves of white humanity. Whatever is human is still tangentially, and in some cases directly, connected to Christ. So everything that is human must die in the liberals' world. The reason the mad-dog liberals and their cousins, the neo-pagans, hate Trump is because Trump represented the injection of something humane and Christian into a body politic that was devoid of everything humane and Christian. And the reason the intellectual Christians and the conservatives are indifferent and often hostile to Trump is because they do not think that Christianity and/or conservatism needs to be rooted in what is real and what is earnest. Life is all theory to them. They, like Belloc before them, condemn actual Christians struggling with might and main against the liberal Jacobins, in order to support theoretical Christians of the future. Trump is a millennialist Christian, nor does he understand the sinister nature of the 'civil rights' movement, but why can't any of the conservative intellectuals or the professed Christians see the evil that he fought against and the good for which he fought?

To those who think 'any old Republican candidate will do,' I would pose the question: Why has the liberals' hatred for Trump been ten thousand times greater than their hatred for any other Republican candidate? Off this stage I have given you the answer. Trump wanted to regress, he wanted to inject some elements of Christian humanity into a governing body that had 'progressed' beyond Christian humanity. We must see that John Donne is right: "No man is an island." If you claim to be human you have a stake in what has happened in this country during the past four years. Satan has shown his face, more completely than he has ever shown it before in human history. His minions throughout the world are watching what has happened here. It now appears that they, the liberals, no longer need to fear any resistance to their rule. They can do whatever they please, they can kill every last vestige of white, Christian humanity, and no one will say them nay. That was the message of the last four years in our exceptionalist nation. We have shown the world what hell is, it is embodied in the naked satanic hatred of the American liberals for any injection of Christian humanity into their satanic realm of inhumanity.

The liberals take up Caiaphas' hatred of Christ, which was imparted to them by Satan, and seek to spread that hatred throughout the European world. In order to do that they had to become like unto the Scribes and Pharisees, they had to become experts on the subject of God, they had to become metaphysicians:

*Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the "compunctions visitings of Nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. —Burke, [Letter to a Noble Lord](#)*

Have we not seen that moral nightmare that Burke described unfold before our eyes in the liberals' hatred for every single effort of Trump to inject some Christian humanity into our satanic nation? The complete satanic, pharisaical essence of the liberals was never so manifest to me as it was during Trump's news conference when he had five or six victims of the Covid-19 virus sitting a table with him. He talked with them about their illness and their recovery through the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug. After talking with them, he opened the discussion up to the Fifth Column, our press. Were they interested in a cure for Covid-19? Were they interested in the alleviation of human suffering? No, they were not. Like the scribes and the Pharisees before them, their hearts were closed to Christian charity. Any Christian act in Satandom — and Trump's outreach at that press conference was Christian — will be repulsed as Christ was repulsed by the scribes and Pharisees.

*And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. —Matthew 21: 23-27*

The liberals' hearts are closed to all things humane and Christian. Never before, not since Europe was Christianized, has Satan's presence been more openly paraded as virtue. And the shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, have rushed to become like unto the scribes and Pharisees of Liberaldom. Is that what Christ enjoined us to be — scribes and Pharisees?

There are indeed more things in heaven and earth than are found in the philosophy of the scribes and Pharisees, but we no longer believe in that world beyond the metaphysics of the illuminated men of intellect. If we seek out that which is 'foolish' in old Europe and what is 'foolish' in the modern world, we will discover that charity, which is the foolishness of God, is still and always shall be our only infallible guide and hope in this world and the next.

In the wake of Trump's electoral victory, which was turned into a defeat by the disciples of Uncle Joe Stalin, I have taken to stopping and talking with anyone who is still flying 'Trump for President' banners. The other day I stopped in front of a farm and talked with an elderly man (he was 87), who still had a Trump banner emblazoned across his barn. He had me pegged as twenty years younger than I actually am, so he called me a 'young fellow.' I listened to him reminisce for about 30 minutes, at the end of which he invited me to come to his house for Thanksgiving dinner. I thanked him but said I already had plans for Thanksgiving. He seemed glad to hear it. I think he thought that anyone who stopped to talk to an 87 year old farmer must be very, very lonely. And he was right. I am lonely, and I am hungry for some human contact. I have been blessed, and I am grateful for my immediate family, none of whom are liberals, but I like to think that there are some non-liberals out there, who are not my kin but are of my kith, that still shun the wisdom of the scribes and Pharisees in order to adhere to the foolishness of the Christian hearth fire virtues of old Europe. That 'deplorable' old man cared about what had happened to his native land; he knew that we had faced a democratic Armageddon in which the forces of evil had seemingly triumphed. Why should he, on the verge of the grave, care about what happens in this vale of tears? He cares because he has grandchildren and children that still need to see some reflection of God's grace embodied in a people. And he cares because that is the nature of all those of our own kind, who still remain European; we need to see, we want to see, Christian humanity in our people. If all things satanic are embodied in our culture, how many of our own kind will come to know Jesus Christ?

In 1892 Rev. I. B. Praneitis published a small treatise, called *The Talmud Unmasked*, in which he documented the hatred of the Jews for all things Christian. He was subsequently executed by the Bolsheviks during the Russian revolution. I don't want to go into a long tirade about the Jews, but I do want to point out that the Jews' traditional hatred of European civilization is grounded in their hatred of Jesus Christ. As Walter Scott points out in his *Religious Discourses*, the Jewish hierarchy rejected Christ because He detected their hypocrisy and their rejection of the prophets to whom they were supposed to be committed:

*The cause of the Pharisees' unbelief, and their strenuous opposition to the Gospel tenets, had root undoubtedly in our blessed Saviour's detection of their hypocrisy, and his publicly exposing the foul principles and practices which they covered with the most formal affectation of strict holiness. They could not bear the light, which, not content with playing on the outside of their whitened sepulchres, penetrated into their foul charnels, and showed to the public gaze the dust and rottenness which their shewy exterior concealed. They could not endure the friendly zeal of the Divine Physician, when he rent from their wounds the balsams with which they soothed, and the rich tissues under which they concealed them, and exhibited festering and filthy cancers which could be cured only by the probe, the knife, and the cautery. Hence they were, from the beginning of our Saviour's ministry until its dreadful consummation, (in which, they had a particular share,) the constant enemies of the doctrine and of the person of the blessed Jesus. Under his keen and searching eye, the pretensions which they had so long made in order to be esteemed of men, were exposed without disguise; their enlarged garments and extended phylacteries, their lengthened prayers, their formal ceremonial, and tithes of mint and anise, were denounced as of no avail without the weightier matters of the law —justice, mercy, and faith. Feeling thus their own sanctimonious professions held up to contempt, and their pretensions to public veneration at once exposed and destroyed, the Pharisees became the active and violent opposers of those doctrines to which the Sadducees, with sullen apathy, seemed to have refused a hearing. It was the Pharisees who maligned the life of our blessed Lord; who essayed to perplex the wisdom of Omnipotence by vain and captious interrogatories; and who, unable to deny those miracles by which the mission of Christ was authenticated and proved, blasphemously imputed them to the agency of daemons. —Walter Scott, [Religious Discourses](#)*

Throughout the history of Europe when our people were truly Christian there were prayers said in the Protestant churches and in the Roman Catholic churches for the conversion of the Jews. That is right and proper. We should pray for the conversion of our enemies. But should we pray for the success and triumph of our enemies? The Jewish hatred for Christ and His people has been spread throughout what was once called Christendom by the Judaizing of the European people. Liberalism is the extension of Shylockian Judaism. All white Christians

stand before the liberals' Sanhedrin, and they stand condemned. Will there be any Christians in all of Liberaldom who will try to stop the liberals from exacting their pound of flesh from off the hearts of every single white European Christian?

I frequently hear Trump supporters and Trump himself asking why the liberals hate them and him. The liberals hate white Trump supporters and Trump because they and he retain a remnant of Christian humanity. But they are wrong to attempt to fuse that Christian humanity with Judaism; they will never be able to triumph over their enemies if they try to fuse two polar opposites. You cannot blend Christ's reign of charity with Shylock's hatred of Christ's reign of charity.

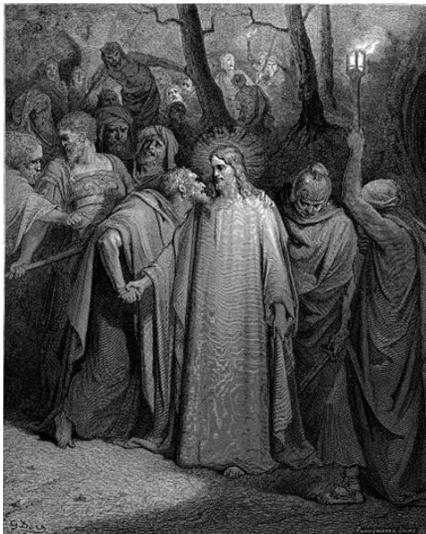
There is nothing racist, sexist, or anti-Semitic about Christ's reign of charity. To hate the devil and love Christ is what we were born to do. All the modern democratic panaceas are based on either a blending of Satan and Christ, or on a complete rejection of Christ. We can't proceed any further with the blending or the rejection. The long road back to Christian Europe, which leads to the narrow gate, is the only path to our salvation as a people and our salvation as individuals. +

# We Must Hate the Devil and His Minions

December 5, 2020

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Faithful hearts, Rationalism, Religion of Satan, Sanhedrin Christianity

Tags: Shakespeare, St. Paul, Thomas Hughes, Thomas Nelson Page



Dore. The Judas Kiss

I will be flesh and blood;  
For there was never yet philosopher  
That could endure the toothache patiently,  
However they have writ the style of gods  
And made a push at chance and sufferance.

— *Much Ado About Nothing*

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

— *Under the Crust*, Thomas Nelson Page

---

The advice, “take things philosophically,” was in common parlance when I was growing up. If your favorite sport team failed to win, you were advised to take it philosophically: “It’s only a game and there is always next season.” If your brother got that last extra piece of apple crumb pie at Thanksgiving that you had regarded as yours, you were advised to take that disappointment philosophically: “Someday your mother, possibly at Christmas, will make another apple crumb pie, and you can beat your brother to the second helping.” But can the greater tragedies of life, assuming there are greater tragedies than your failure to get a second helping of apple crumb pie, be overcome by “taking things philosophically”? Can the death of our loved ones and the contemplation of our own death, for instance, be assuaged by taking death philosophically? Plato tells us that, yes, even death itself can be overcome by taking things philosophically. He tells us that his mentor, Socrates, who spent his life telling everyone around him to disbelieve in everything around them, took hemlock at the behest of the state. And he took the hemlock serenely and contentedly while talking over the merits of the state’s case against him with his philosophically-minded friends. What do we think of such serenity? I look on it with horror. It is the serenity of superficiality that Balzac describes when he tells us how a man who has been a superficial humbug all his life manages to maintain that superficiality even in the face of death. I prefer Longfellow’s Christian stance vis-à-vis the tragedy of death —

*Tell me not in mournful numbers,  
‘Life is but an empty dream!’  
For the soul is dead that slumbers.  
And things are not what they seem.  
Life is real! Life is earnest!  
And the grave is not its goal;  
‘Dust thou art, to dust returnest.’  
Was not spoken of the soul.*

Stalin, one of the great liberal icons, once said that the death of one individual is a tragedy, but the death of two million people is a statistic. Spoken like a true philosopher. Let me throw Ivan Karamazov and Alyosha Karamazov into the debate. Ivan, the philosopher, asks Alyosha if he would build the happiness of all mankind on the suffering of one innocent child. Alyosha, the Christian, replies, “No, I would not.” Plato would build the happiness of mankind on the suffering of one – nay, not just one, but on millions upon millions of innocent victims, because Plato viewed life philosophically; he believed in an universal aggregate called mankind but despised individual human beings. Our Lord eschewed universals and came to save individual human beings from death. Plato and all the lesser philosophers that followed in his train tell us “in mournful numbers, that life is but an empty dream” for individual men and women of flesh and blood, but we can lose ourselves in the serenity of universal thought that will cure our longing for the “touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice that is still.” Is that correct? Can good, sound thinking transcend tragedy? No, it cannot. Taking things philosophically can only be a remedy for those men and women who have steeped themselves in trivialities and superficiality. Does the survival of planet earth, for instance, which you bring about by recycling, really help you face your own death and the death of your loved ones? The complete capitulation of organized Christian Jewry to Platonic universalism has left the European Everyman without his ancient faith in the God-Man who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. We are a people without the star of Bethlehem as our guide because Plato has replaced Christ. My heart soared when I first read Hughes’ *Tom Brown at Oxford*, because in that work he defended the God-Man, Jesus Christ, against the heathen philosopher who cast a pall over Christian Europe.

*The result of Hardy’s management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the “Apology” had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, “You needn’t have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson.”*

*“I don’t understand,” said Tom.*

*“Well, there’s something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn’t there?”*

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—know no more of it then he knew about his demon, of course, we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

The contrast between Socrates' philosophical serenity, as defined by Plato, in which he faces death without any need for a personal Savior, is in direct contrast to St. Paul's Christian faith:

*Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

It is a tragedy that our churchmen have blended Plato and Christ and our politicians have rejected Longfellow's Christian affirmation that "life is real, life is earnest," for platonic utopianism.

This past election has shown us the end result of allowing Christ's crucifixion and resurrection to become a philosophical premise, a rational proposition rather than a blood faith. After telling us for over two centuries that democracy is the non-violent way to enact change – that we don't need bullets when we have ballots – we are now told that the ballots of the non-illuminated whites do not count, only the ballots of the illuminated whites and the colored barbarians, including those who are not even citizens of this country, count. The platonic-minded conservative pundits tell us to accept the fact that we now live in a subsidiary of communist China. We are to take the election results philosophically. After all, we can always hope for a Republican victory in four more years. And can't we take hope in the fact that the Republicans picked up some House seats? No, we can't take hope in such tripe. It is not Republican shadows of the liberals that we need. We need a leader with Christian humanity. There are none in the ranks of the Republicans. Trump was an exception. It seems that it was too much to hope for, that Trump could be the beginning of a counter-revolution. He was hated by the mad-dog liberals in high tech, in the media, in the Republican Party, and in the conservative and liberal realms of Academia. He was one healthy human cell in a body filled with cancerous cells.

Arrayed against the haters, the liberal cancer cells, were the non-illuminated whites. They, like Trump, have a partial faith in Christian things and a partial faith in liberal things. That half-faith is why they lost the election.<sup>(1)</sup> The mad-dog liberals openly stole the election and then challenged the 'conservatives' to challenge the election in court — "See how far you get." We must not take our cue from conservative pundits. They have a vested interest in all the lies of demon-cracy. They will tell us to write letters – we tell them we did that – they will tell us to vote – we tell them we did that – they will tell us to protest – we tell them we did that. What next? The conservative pundits have no answer. But we know the answer. A Trump supporter at a Trump rally told me she did not hate anyone. Is it possible, if we have a blood faith in Jesus Christ, not to hate the devil and all his works? And are not the liberals the greatest and proudest work of the devil? I don't understand this new blended Christianity. The *Book of Revelation* tells us not to blend Christ, but the new Christianity that seems to be triumphant in 'Christian' circles tells us that a blended Christ is the truth and the way. But the blended Christians won't fight. Do you think for one moment that the various judges in the battleground states would refuse to hear election fraud cases if the so-called conservatives made the same threats of violence the leftists routinely made? Do you think the cowardly weasel Bill Barr would declare there was no election fraud if he feared the Right as he fears the Left? Of course not.

War is a terrible thing because "war means fighting and fighting means killing," but there is one thing worse than war. And that one thing worse is surrender to a bloody, satanic, tyrannical oligarchy that feasts on the blood of the innocents in the womb and the blood of non-illuminated whites. The Republicans and the conservative pundits will try to place themselves in the ranks of the Illuminati in the hopes that they will avoid the purge. Most of them will not be able to escape it despite their cowardice; they too will be purged. And the people they betrayed, the non-illuminated whites who have been told they mustn't hate, that they must love the democratic way, will be the first, second, and third victims of the purge. I refuse to take the great liberal purge philosophically, because I am a Goth who loves and hates with my whole heart. I love old Europe and her people, and I hate the liberals with my whole heart and soul. Is such a love and such a hate wrong? Yes, the modern Christians tell me. But do I trust in what the platonic Christians tell me? No, I do not. I must go with my blood faith which tells me to love and hate with my whole heart.

It is very unwise – it is not prudent – to wear your heart upon your sleeve when you write. Nevertheless I have been and will continue to be unwise and imprudent. My heart goes out to Trump because of what he has striven so mightily against, the most satanic army ever assembled in the history of mankind. And my heart goes out to the white grazers, who are going to be slaughtered by Satan's minions because their half-liberal, half-Christian faith will not allow them to hate where they should hate. This is a very basic 'neighborhood bully' situation, only more deadly. We have been told by the liberals that either they will have our total surrender to their wills or they will have our blood. They have pushed us to the wall. We must either surrender to their will or fight to the death. The liberal conservatives' compromise – that we can vote against the devil and his minions – has been held up to the light and been revealed as a sham. We cannot vote the devil and his minions away because they determine the rules of the voting: "You may vote so long as you vote correctly. If you don't vote correctly, we will vote for you and then exterminate you." That is what happened in the last election. If you are a mad-dog liberal or a neo-pagan who has left all human feelings and passions behind you, then the fraudulent election need not concern you, but if you retain some remnant spark of what is human inside you, then you must see what the election means. It means that they, Satan's minions, are coming for thee and me. It is fight, in the full meaning of the word, or surrender philosophically and serenely to the liberals' will. And what do they will? They want us to drink the hemlock.

The neo-pagans are bragging that their 1/16<sup>th</sup> of 1% destroyed Trump and his 'sickening' Trumpy bear followers, who deservedly lost because they lacked Nietzschean fortitude. The mad-dog liberals are claiming that Biden won a resounding victory because the vast amount of Americans embrace Black Lives Matter, Antifa, and the communist Chinese. And the good old shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, tell us that we are better off without Trump. He was too uncivil and divisive. I hold to a different view. If not even one shred of Christian humanity – and Trump was that one Christian shred of humanity – is to be allowed in our democracy, then why should we support demon-cracy? Isn't it abundantly clear our democracy is demon-cracy? Do I think that the white grazer is up to the challenge — can he love and hate enough to fight? No, I do not think he will fight. I think that he will take the election fraud philosophically and serenely while awaiting his and his people's extermination.

That is what I see with the eyes of reason. But what do I see with the eyes of faith? I see a cruel utopian mind who banned the poets, the men with hearts of flesh, from his utopian state. And I see the liberals, mad-dog and conservative, continuing Plato's utopian persecution of men and women with hearts of flesh. But then I see our Lord enjoining His people to break the chains of philosophy and come to Him. He will prevail, because there always has been and always shall be faithful hearts that will not surrender to Satan and his minions.

I wanted, and still pray for, an electoral victory. But we as a people and as individuals are only "of all men most miserable" if we place our hopes in democracy alone. St. Paul enjoins us to be, "steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord." Yes, we shall be steadfast, we shall support His reign of charity against all the forces of hell arrayed against us. We shall not fade philosophically and serenely into Satan's eternal night. +

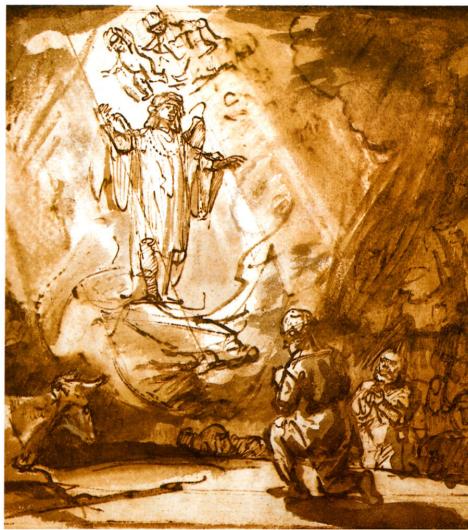
(1) An antidote for philosophical universalism in the Christian churches, which turns individual men and women into statistical aggregates, is a blood faith in Jesus Christ, grounded in the non-rational, anti-philosophical love of our kith and kin. So long as cosmic universalism reigns supreme in our churches, so long as pietas is 'racism,' white people will be either mad-dog liberals who attack non-illuminated whites under the banner of 'Black Lives Matter' or they will be half-way house Christians who defend the good while fervently denying they are 'racist.' That is a losing hand for the halfway-house Christians, because what the liberals call 'racism' is pietas – the love of our kith and kin in and through Jesus Christ – which makes us integral Christians and gives us the passion and the discernment to love where we should love and hate where we should hate.

# They Hate Him Whom We Love

December 12, 2020

Categories: Charity, Democracy, Pride of intellect, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens



Rembrandt. The Angel Appears to the Shepherds

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them; and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. -[Luke 2: 8-14](#)

---

One of the pro-Trumpers at the rally I attended two weeks ago asked me what I thought Trump's chances were to overturn the election fraud. When I said I didn't think he had much of a chance, the pro-Trumper got quite angry with me. He went through the whole case for Trump and demanded that I see Trump was going to win. I told him again that I was hoping and praying for a Trump victory, and that I knew Trump had a slam-dunk, unimpeachable case against the Demon-crats. "Then why don't you think Trump is going to win?" the Trumper demanded. I could have referred him to Stevenson's "Thrawn Janet," (see "The Sacred Heritage," Sept. 30, 2007), but instead I kept it simple: "I don't believe that there are enough legislators or judges in this country who are interested in justice."

Our entire system of government is based on the theological error that has gained the upper hand in our churches. That error, or to be more accurate, that blasphemy, says that God does not reveal Himself to human hearts, He reveals Himself to human minds. Acting on that theological blasphemy, the European people built house-of-cards churches and house-of-cards governments, which were based on the supremacy of reason over revelation and the mind over the heart. We have all seen the image of Blind Justice with the scales in her hands. But should justice be blind? If the blind lead the blind, shall not both fall into a ditch?

Justice should not be blind to the precepts of the living God who requires mercy and not sacrifice. Reason, unilluminated by a heart connected to Our Lord and Savior, will always make decisions grounded in Satan's hatred of Christ and His people. The scholastics thought to avoid the evils inherent in human hearts by placing pure reason above the heart and making the human mind the conduit for God's grace. But doesn't that ignore the reality of our relationship with God? Are we pagans who come to God through illuminated minds? Our Lord and His apostle, St. Paul, made it clear: God comes to man through the human heart. The theologians, the men who have made a serious study of God, have told us that God was incorrect. The human heart, they tell us, is too sinful and problematic to be a conduit of God's grace. They have corrected God in the same manner that Dostoyevsky's Grand Inquisitor corrected Christ: "You thought too much of man, you should not have given him the freedom to choose between God and the devil." But God has chosen, in defiance of the experts on God, to "impart to human hearts the blessings of His heaven."

All decisions for good or evil are made in the human heart. Once those decisions are made, we use our reason to support those decisions. Philosophers and theologians, who try to reverse that process by claiming that the mind instructs the heart, fly in the face of reality and always increase the suffering of individual human beings who try to adhere to their theological and philosophical precepts. Every theologian or philosopher who derides sentiment has some underlying sentiment in his heart that rules his reason. The mad-dog liberal's overriding passion is self-love, and he hates Christ because to acknowledge Christ as his Savior would be an acknowledgement that he, the liberal, is not a god. So it is with the pagan white nationalists. They hate whites for the same reason the Jews hate whites – the white race once championed the living God. The European people's ancient faith is in direct conflict with the white nationalists' creed – "Nearer my genes to me, nearer to me, Because it is my DNA that leadeth me." The liberal must have the negro as his savior because the negro does not challenge his intellect, which is his true God. And the white nationalist must have the same God – his intellect. The end result of such self-love is the deification of reason as defined by the image of justice with the blindfold. But there is no such thing as blind, rational justice. Reason is a whore; she peeks out over the blindfold and decides in favor of the prevailing powers that be. When the powers that be are liberal, which translates to satanic, then 'justice' is satanic. ([1](#))

World War I marked the end of the Christ-believing European people, but it did not mark the end of an ethically Christian people. That Christian ethos survived through the first half of the twentieth century as a significant force in our courts of justice. By the second half of the twentieth century, 1965 was the demarcation point, the Christian ethos had disappeared from officialdom. Henceforth, the Christian ethos was banned to the underground with its parent, the Christian faith. When Trumpers look to blind justice, which is not blind, to remedy injustice – the fraudulent election – they are seeking redemption from the devil just as the pro-lifers have been seeking redemption from the devil for the past forty-seven years.

Is there no hope then for an electoral victory? There is a very slight hope. The liberals won't have a change of heart; the fact that Trump won the election will not compel them to concede the election to Trump. Our courts are filled with liberals who will rule according to what Satan wills. And Satan has decreed that there shall be no Christian presence in his Demon-cracy. The slight chance Trump has involves a repudiation of nonviolence on the part of Trump's supporters. The liberals must be afraid that Trump's supporters will not remain nonviolent if they are disenfranchised. They must make it clear that there shall be no peace if there is no justice.

This election fraud has its antecedents in the legalization of abortion forty-seven years ago. I used to protest outside an abortion clinic listening, with impotent rage, to snide remarks from the abortion doctors and their aides when they went past me on the way to the abortuaries. It made me wonder, "What would it take to stop such fiends from hell from doing what they are doing?" An appeal to their reason? No, their reason told the abortion doctors they would earn over \$100,000 a week at the clinics. Why should they turn down that money? If a man or woman has turned their heart over to Satan they can only be dealt with as Edgar dealt with his evil brother in *King Lear* and as Macduff dealt with Macbeth. The justices who are refusing to hear the fraud cases and the legislators who are ready to "move on with the Biden presidency" must be made to fear for their lives if they chose liberalism over justice, just as the abortion doctors who choose to kill babies for profit must be forced to face the ultimate penalty if they continue with their blood feasts.

My 'prejudices' regarding the black race were already formed before I became a police officer. What I saw as a police officer hardened me in my 'prejudices.' The blacks were indeed a 'gifted' race: they had a 'gift' for murderous savagery. But the horror of black savagery cannot compare with the pure, unmitigated evil of white liberalism. We are now witnessing, in the United States of America, an embodiment of the 'purest' manifestation of Satan that mankind has ever known since the devil's appearance in the Garden of Eden. All the evils of the

ancient and modern reigns of terror – Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah, the French Jacobins, the Northern Reconstructionists, the Soviet Gulags — have been synthesized and institutionalized in the United States of America. Our “beacon light” of “freedom” is a satanic horror. Can that horror be exorcised by a plea for justice addressed to the merciless angel of injustice and merciless cruelty?

The liberals have crossed a moral Rubicon, which has never been crossed before. We must see that horror for what it is. The great pastor and poet from Denmark, N. F. S. Grundtvig, spent his life emphasizing, “the human first.” What did he mean by that line in his most famous poem? He was defending the human heart over the illuminated mind. There was still, Grundtvig the poet maintained, even after the Fall, something of God left in the heart of man. A man could respond to God’s grace. Hence, if you deny what is truly human in man, you deny the image of God in man. That is the essence of Satanism, to destroy the image of God in man. Surely we can now see, if we look at modern liberalism, that Satan has imprinted his image throughout all the major institutions of our nation. We are commanded to follow Satan’s dictates in Church and State. Through the worship of the Sacred Negro we are bound to Satan. The “we are not prejudiced” and the “we are not violent” affirmations of the Trumpers will not put a dent in the satanic armour of the liberals. We must be prejudiced, we must love our own, and we must, because we love much, be violent in the face of the liberals’ violent attacks on the unborn and the white race.

The half-Christian, half-liberal faith of the Trumpers plays right into the hands of the liberals who are whole-heartedly committed to Satan. The Trumpers have taken Christ’s injunction to “love your enemy” and twisted it around so that it has come to mean, in their religion, that there is no such thing as evil. But that is not Christian. Alfred first defeated his enemies, the pagan Danes, and then extended mercy to them – he did not surrender to them because he thought heathenism and Christianity were compatible. Pickwick dedicated his life to the pursuit of Alfred Jingle, who defrauded orphans and widows. It was only when he met, in prison, the repentant Jingle, who was at death’s door, that Pickwick extended his hand to Jingle in Christian charity:

*“Good fellow,” said Jingle, pressing his hand, and turning his head away. “Ungrateful dog—boyish to cry—can’t help it—bad fever—weak—ill—hungry. Deserved it all—but suffered much—very.” Wholly unable to keep up appearances any longer, and perhaps rendered worse by the effort he had made, the dejected stroller sat down on the stairs, and, covering his face with his hands, sobbed like a child.*

*“Come, come,” said Mr. Pickwick, with considerable emotion, “we will see what can be done, when I know all about the matter. Here, Job; where is that fellow?”*

*“Here, sir,” replied Job, presenting himself on the staircase. We have described him, by-the-bye, as having deeply-sunken eyes, in the best of times. In his present state of want and distress, he looked as if those features had gone out of town altogether.*

*“Here, sir,” cried Job.*

*“Come here, sir,” said Mr. Pickwick, trying to look stern, with four large tears running down his waistcoat. “Take that, sir.”*

*Take what? In the ordinary acceptation of such language, it should have been a blow. As the world runs, it ought to have been a sound, hearty cuff; for Mr. Pickwick had been duped, deceived, and wronged by the destitute outcast who was now wholly in his power. Must we tell the truth? It was something from Mr. Pickwick’s waistcoat-pocket, which chinked as it was given into Job’s hand, and the giving of which, somehow or other imparted a sparkle to the eye, and a swelling to the heart, of our excellent old friend, as he hurried away.*

Does Christian charity, the charity that never faileth, mean that we must not fight against evil? That is, as Hamlet says, “The Question.” I believe, as Burke believed, that there is a “charity of honor” which compels us to fight, with all our heart and soul, against inhuman, heathen savagery and merciless, liberal cruelty. My heart goes out to my youngest daughter and my wife when they weep at every new cruelty and debauchery of the liberals. And my heart went out to that wheel-chair-bound Trumper who wept when a kind female Trump supporter gave him a free Trumpty bear. There is an agony of compassion in our hearts when we see the pain and suffering of our kith and kin. We long to fight against the inhuman creatures who are the cause of that pain and suffering. But must we end up like Lear in the storm, vowing to “do such things that shall be the terrors of the earth,” and then die, having failed to “do such things”? When the evil is so pervasive, when it is an evil such as the world has never seen before, how do you strike out against it? It is not a case of assassinating one tyrant, which would not be difficult. But when there is a vast network of men and women committed to the rule of Satan, whom do you strike first, and how do you know the most effective way to engage the enemy? One starts by seeing things with a heart that loves. The devil exists, and he works his will through the inhumanity of liberalism. We cannot make the liberals disappear by refusing to see them for what they are: the devil’s own. Only He who saves, if we call on Him by name, can give us the wisdom, the heart, and the courage to fight the devil and his minions.

I will do the Christmas things this Christmas. But I won’t lie – the liberals have pushed their satanic visages right to my door with this election fraud. My Christmas celebration will have a defiant element to it that it has not had in previous years. I would prefer a more peaceful celebration. But that is the nature of the world we live in right now.

The usual Christmas story will appear on this blog on December 19<sup>th</sup> and 26<sup>th</sup>. On January 2<sup>nd</sup>, I will, God willing, return as usual. God bless you, in defiance of the liberals, this Christmas and in the Christmases to come. +

---

(1) “Blind” justice has decided not to hear the Texas election fraud case. Our Supreme Court exists to ensure that Satan shall reign forever in the United States. Let us look to the one, higher authority, Jesus Christ, to sustain us in the war that we must fight against the most satanic army in human history.

# Remembrances X: What Child Is This?

December 19, 2020

Categories: Remembrances

## By Way of a Preface

When I started these stories I envisioned them as cautionary tales about a horrific future that we, as a people, were facing if the shadows of liberalism were not altered. That future has come upon us sooner than I imagined. The liberals have completely unmasked and are moving toward their final solution, which is the extermination of the non-illuminated whites. Who are the non-illuminated whites? They are the whites who do not accept every single aspect of liberalism: sexual debauchery, legalized abortion, and the worship of Satan through the sacred negro.

The liberals' end, in their satanic minds, justifies any and all means. The white grazers, white people who cannot accept the entirety of the liberals' illuminated agenda, are unable to cope with the liberals because they are part liberal themselves. They cannot get away from the soul-killing heresy, which says that God and democracy are one: they believe that God's way is the democratic way. And in a Demon-cracy, you do not fight evil, you vote against it. We are now, as a people, at the crossroads. If we do not reject non-violence, if we let the liberals get away with the complete disenfranchisement of the white race, the future I depict in these stories will be upon us.

I have refrained from suggesting actual battle plans in my blog posts because I believe that once the European people have the will, once they reclaim that "charity of honor," they will produce leaders who will know the best way to fight the liberals. I have already seen, in the wake of the election fraud, some very good suggestions as regards the practical measures that we should take once the real war begins. The will to fight, which will come when we are a fully integral Christian people, is all in all.

---

## Remembrances: What Child Is This?



Roses bloom and cease to be,  
but we the Christ child shall see.

-Hans Christian Andersen

---

## Act I. Scene 1.

Susan: (tied to a chair) Mother, may I be untied now?

Mother: No, you may not be untied.

Susan: Please, mother, the cords are hurting my hands.

Mother: I can't help that, you have been a very naughty little girl. You will remain tied to that chair until two o'clock. Then and only then will I untie you.

Susan: But I'm really and truly sorry.

Mother: You said that last time and then I found you this morning playing with that white boy you were forbidden to play with.

Susan: But I am white, and you said that my father was white, so why is it wrong for me to play with a white boy?

Mother: Now, you really are making me very angry, Susan. I have explained all of this to you before.

Susan: But I don't understand.

Mother: What is the one great commandant which is the basis of our religion?

Susan: That we should love the black race with all our heart, mind, and soul.

Mother: Yes, that is correct. But you did not follow that commandant when you played with that white boy.

Susan: But my father was...

Mother: Yes, I know, your father was white. But your father was an authorized white man. Do you know what that means?

Susan: You've explained it to be before, but I still can't understand.

Mother: I think you do understand, you're just being deliberately willful. But I'll go through it all again. Our black gods are nature gods; they represent all that is beautiful and good. But nature did not make them to fix things and build things; that is the task of white men. Now, white men are very, very evil, so we must not have too many white men in our nation. But we need a few white men to fix things and build things, therefore we don't kill all white men, we let a few live so that they can fix things and build things.

Susan: Was my father a fixer and a builder?

Mother: Yes.

Susan: Did he die?

Mother: Yes, he did, but I don't want you to talk about your father. He did some bad things before he died; he was not a good man.

Susan: Maybe Johnny is going to grow up to be a fixer and a builder.

Mother: Whether he grows up and is placed in the science lab or he is placed in the execution chamber should be of no concern of yours. In either case, you are not supposed to play with him. Now, I'll untie you, but you will be punished severely if you ever play with that boy again.

---

### Act I. Scene 2.

Later that night Susan hears a tapping at her second story bedroom window. She gets up and opens the window to a small balcony.

Johnny: May I see you?

Susan: I'm not supposed to see you ever again.

Johnny: Why can't you see me?

Susan: Because you are a white boy.

Johnny: But what is wrong about white skin? I have a storybook that has pictures, and all the people in the pictures are white.

Susan: I'm not supposed to look at storybooks that come from the bad time.

Johnny: How do you know my storybook is from the bad time?

Susan: You said the book had white people in it, so that means it is from the bad time. Any book that doesn't have black people in it is a bad book.

Johnny: But there are nice stories in this book. There is a story called "Hansel and Gretel." They were a boy and girl who get lost in the woods and discover a gingerbread house.

Susan: I don't want to hear anymore... What do you mean by a gingerbread house, you can't make a house of gingerbread.

Johnny: Well, there is one in the book. And Hansel and Gretel meet a witch and then...

Susan: That is wrong. Witches were invented by white men in order to insult women. It is wrong to read stories about them. My mother says that...

Johnny: I think your mother is a witch.

Susan: (starts screaming) Mother, mother, that white boy is here.

(Susan's mother runs into the bedroom with a Glock pistol and starts firing at Johnny as he climbs down to the ground. Susan's mother isn't sure, but she thinks one of the bullets hits Johnny in the leg.)

Mother: (on the phone) Operator, get me the police. Is this the police? Good, I want to report a white boy who tried to break into my home and assault my daughter. He is about eight years old, blonde, and I think I shot him in the leg.

Police Dispatcher: We will send a squad car around to see if they can pick him up.

Mother: They better find him, I don't want him bothering my daughter again. (Coming over to the bed to tuck her daughter in.) You did good, Susan.

Susan: What will they do to him if they catch him.

Mother: They will kill him.

Susan: Oh no, I didn't want that to happen. I just got mad when he called you a witch. (She starts to cry.)

Mother: Stop that this instant, Susan. Women never cry, you know that, it is written in Article II, Section 6, of the Feminist Manifesto. There is nothing soft, nothing sentimental, in women; we are strong, we have nothing called sentiment in us. That was an invention of white males who once ruled this land and enslaved women and blacks. Now, stop crying or I'll be forced to beat you again.

Susan: It's only that I feel sorry for...

Mother: You are not to feel sorry for a white boy. You simply must stop this. No more of it, do you hear?

Susan: Yes, mother.

---

### Act I. Scene 3.

A mountain stronghold of the White Underground.

John Taylor: Have you heard from Britain?

David Morgan: Yes, I have. I have a letter from Father Bontini. Would you like me to read it to you?

Taylor: By all means.

Morgan: (He reads the letter.) "This is not the first time I've had to write about Christopher Grey because he hasn't the time. He seems to have no rest, he is always going about his Lord's business. This time it was the plague raging through what used to be called Britain that called him away from the new Britain, which, as you know, used to be called Wales. You had the plague over there a year in advance of us, but it has now hit Europe with a vengeance. It is much more deadly than the COVID-19 virus of many years ago. This virus has a 90% kill rate and thus far there is no drug that can cure it."

"King Arthur took the measures necessary to keep us free of the plague. He placed armed guards on the border with orders to shoot and kill any and all invaders, whether they were Islamic soldiers or British-Islamic refugees. What else could he do? His policy, in my view, is in keeping with Christian charity. You can't allow your own people to be murdered by a virus spawned by your enemies. Arthur has literally launched all sorts of food supplies and experimental drugs over the border in cylinders in order to give some relief to those suffering from the plague, but he will not open up the borders."

"Christopher approved of Arthur's policy, but he felt called to do something more. He told me, 'There must be a Christian presence over there, in this crisis.'

"I asked him, 'Didn't the white Britons have a choice when they decided to stay in Islamic Britain instead of coming here to Christian Britain? Shouldn't they have to live with that choice?'

"Yes, they did have a choice, and not one single citizen of Christian Britain should have to suffer because of their apostasy. But I am not putting those Christians at risk. I'm going over there alone."

"But Christopher, what can you do? We have some drugs that can alleviate the pain, but there is no cure for this disease. You will die from it before you can really do any good."

"I'm 106 years old. Do I really have that many months left to live regardless of whether I die of the plague or not?"

"Those months belong to God, Christopher. I don't want you to give them away in a hopeless cause."

"Bless you, my friend. I know that you are speaking from the heart. But I feel I must do this. Those people, which are still my people, must, at the hour of their deaths, have some human conduit to Christ. If they will accept my love, it will link them to His love. So I must go."

"What could I say? I knelt and asked for his blessing before he went. I knew I would need that memory for the remaining years of my life without his presence. 'In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost.'

"That was six months ago. For some reason, known only to God, the Reverend Christopher Grey did not come down with the plague. The plague went down before Christopher Grey. He did not administer any drugs, but he was able to heal all those he came in contact with who had contracted the plague. What was his method? It was quite simple. In the case of the adults who came to him, he laid his hand on their foreheads and asked the Lord Jesus to come into their soul in order to heal them. And with the children he did likewise except that he took them into his arms as he asked Jesus Christ to heal them. Did he convert a whole nation because of his efforts? No, of course not. The whites, once they were healed, started talking about psychic forces and psychological factors that harnessed the power of the mind and gave the body assistance in fighting off disease. And many of the coloreds and the Moslems attributed the healing powers of Christopher Grey to the devil. But still, there were more than a few who were cured of the disease who did call on Him who saves for the first time in their lives. Whether that initial awakening will turn into faith is difficult to predict, but the grace of God was present, through Christopher Grey, in that heathen nation.

"Why was Christopher permitted to go about Islamic Britain for six months? Because quite early in his mission of mercy he healed the eight year old son of the High Caliph of London. The High Caliph did not convert, but he did remove all restrictions on Christopher's movements throughout Islamic Britain. We will not, here in New Britain, relax our vigilance, but for now Christopher's mission of mercy has made for a more peaceful situation between Christian Britain and Islamic Britain.

"Of course, the larger question is – Why was Christopher able to heal so many people? Certainly it was Jesus Christ who healed them, but why was Christopher able to heal them in Christ's name, when the rest of us could not? I do not have a definitive answer to that question. There are some things that we simply will not know until we have crossed over to that other shore. But there is one thing I can say about Christopher that might give us a glimmer – a glimmer of God's grace. I have never known a man less tainted with the pride of intellect than Christopher Grey. No doubt because of the events of his childhood and his young manhood Christopher has looked on knowledge as a revelation from God that comes to the heart that loves. Christopher, throughout his entire life, has rejected the enlightened intellect. He refused to 'evolve' away from his 'childish' and 'foolish' faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. I do not have Christopher's photographic memory, but I have committed Chateaubriand's comments on the pride of intellect to my memory and my heart:

'Now, if the primitive constitution of man consisted in accordances such as we find established among other beings, nothing more was necessary for the destruction of this order, or any such harmony in general, than to alter the equilibrium of the forces or qualities. In man this precious equilibrium was formed by the faculties of love and thought. Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men ; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in *knowledge* to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new *feelings*, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important : man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to *feel* rather than to *know* too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to under-take so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over-powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion ; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.'

"Christopher, first with his grief for his cherished pet and then later with the death of his beloved wife, loved so much, so deeply, that God vouchsafed him a vision of heaven, a heaven in which those he loved still lived in and through Christ. Christopher has never sought God through an illuminated mind and that is why, in my judgement, God has been able to work miracles by using Christopher's Christ-imbued heart as a channel of His grace. Does that sound like raving to you? I hope not. In the meantime, Christopher is now back in Christian Britain and is looking forward to another Christmas. I hope this letter finds you well and I hope the White Underground in your area continues to grow. God bless you, and Merry Christmas!"

---

Taylor: What can I say? I should say I'm surprised, but I'm not. I spent over a year in Christian Britain, which was long enough to get to know the Reverend Grey. He is not like other men.

Morgan: I like the way Father Bontini put it when he said that the plague didn't bring Christopher down, Christopher brought the plague down. It is true, what Bontini says, that Christopher has more completely purged the rationalist dragon from his soul than the rest of us. That is why he seems to be a man apart from the rest of us.

Taylor: But he doesn't feel apart from us, isn't that the key?

Morgan: Yes, it is, he loves much, like his Master.

Taylor: My faith is still in its infancy.

Morgan: So is mine, despite my gray hairs. (They both laugh)

---

## Act II. Scene 1.

Susan's mother was wrong; she did not hit Johnny with a bullet from her Glock pistol, which is another example of the insufficiency of mere fire power without accuracy. Johnny was dragging his leg when he fled from Susan's house because he sprained it when he jumped from the balcony. The 20+ bullets were sprayed all around him, but they did not hit him.

Johnny spent the night dodging the police cars. He knew of hideaways in alleys and old burned-out buildings that the police did not know about. In the early morning, after keeping on the move the entire night, Johnny came to an old dilapidated church on the edge of the city. At first he thought the church was abandoned without any inhabitants, but he saw a light in the adjacent rectory. Starved and desperate, he took a chance and entered the church. Needless to say the church was a 'converted' church: the sign outside read, 'The African Church of North America,' and inside the usual signs of the new religion were present. The former Stations of the Cross had been replaced by various scenes depicting the evolution of the black race from slaves to gods. Now, instead of Christ, a depiction of the Sacred Negro was at the front of the church. When Johnny entered the church, a white priest, about 75 years of age, was at the altar cleaning up the blood that had been spilled when the sacrificial white victim had been killed on the altar at last night's service. Johnny limped up to the old man with a vague hope that he could get something to eat without becoming a sacrificial offering himself.

Old Priest: What do we have here? A little white boy. I don't think you are supposed to be here, are you?

Johnny: Please sir, I'm very hungry, could you give me some food?

Old Priest: Certainly, you just wait here and I'll bring you some toast and jelly. Would you like that?

Johnny: Please, I'd like any food.

Old Priest: Good, I'll bring it. (The priest briefly leaves the room and brings back the food. He then sits down and waits until Johnny has eaten.) I'll bet that makes you feel much better. What is your name?

Johnny: Johnny, sir. And yes, it was good.

Old Priest: Now tell me the truth, Johnny, you are a white runaway, aren't you? You have run away from the white internment camp.

Johnny: I don't know what an internment camp means. The guards call it the white pigsty.

Old Priest: It amounts to the same thing.

Johnny: You won't send me back there, will you?

Old Priest: I am a priest in the African Catholic Church of North America, Johnny. Do you know what that means?

Johnny: It means you are going to send me back.

Old Priest: Johnny, you do not understand. You are a white boy. And as a white boy, you are full of evil, racist prejudices. If you are allowed to grow up free and unrestrained, how could we be sure that you wouldn't become a racist and hurt a black person? You might even become a member of the White Underground.

Johnny: But why do I have to be a prisoner in the white pigsty? You are white, and you are free.

Old Priest: There is where you are wrong, Johnny. I am not a normal white person. I am an illuminated white. By a process that you are too young to understand, I have become illuminated in my mind, which makes me black inside. To put it in terms that you can understand, let me just say that I thought very hard about how bad it was to be white, and I made myself, by thinking so hard, into a black man.

Johnny: But you still look white to me.

Old Priest: That is only on the outside, Johnny, on the inside I am black, and that is why I am free to perform the holy sacrifice at the altar every Sunday.

Johnny: You kill white people on the altar, don't you?

Old Priest: I wouldn't use the term 'kill,' Johnny, I would use the term 'sacrifice.' We sacrifice whites on the altar of the Sacred Negro.

Johnny: Will I be sacrificed on the altars of the Sacred Negro some day?

Old Priest: Yes, Johnny, you will be sacrificed there, as all members of the internment camps, the whites with no scientific aptitudes, are sacrificed. You, because you tried to run away, will be sacrificed on this altar next Sunday. While I was preparing breakfast for you, I called the police.

Johnny: Why do you hate me so?

Old Priest: I don't hate you, Johnny, it is not a bad thing to die, especially if we die on the altar of the Sacred Negro.

Johnny: But what happens to us when we die?

Old Priest: We become part of nature, we are absorbed by the elements.

Johnny: But I want to go to heaven when I die, me Johnny, I want to personally go to heaven to meet Jesus.

Old Priest: (very harshly) Who told you about heaven and Jesus?

Johnny: No one told me, I read about Jesus and heaven in a storybook.

Old Priest: (even more harshly) Storybooks, especially old storybooks, are forbidden in the African Republic of North America. Who gave it to you?

Johnny: No one, I found it. There were stories from the book, there were good white people in the book, too, white people who spoke of Jesus and heaven.

Old Priest: (slaps Johnny) That is racism, Johnny. You are not to speak of Jesus in such a manner. He is not a god.

Johnny: "Roses bloom and cease to be,  
But we shall the Christ child see."

That was in the book and I believe the book, because there were beautiful stories in the book.

Old Priest: (in a rage) You are not to speak of such things!

Johnny: I will, I will, you are going to kill me anyway!

Old Priest: (leaps upon Johnny and starts strangling him) I'll kill you, I'll kill you, you little fiend.

(In the midst of strangling Johnny, the priest has a heart attack and dies. As Johnny rolls free, he hears police sirens outside. As the police mount the stairs, he escapes out the window.)

## Act II. Scene 2.

A newly built science compound has been built over the ruins of the restaurant where Sister Jacqueline was taken away by the White Underground. It is dedicated to her. No one is allowed to mention the alleged miracle that happened there. It now houses about 80 white males with scientific aptitudes. They are afforded a little more freedom than the whites in the internment camps; they can get passes to leave the compound on special occasions, and they can receive visitors. Most of their time, however, is spent in the laboratories at the compound. They are not completely free to come and go as the illuminated whites are free to come and go. Susan's father, Thomas Kent, is one of the scientists living at the compound. He shares a small apartment with another inmate, one Peter Mackenzie, although neither inmate is referred to by name. Kent is Inmate #79 and Mackenzie is Inmate #80. Kent once lived free, but his wife, Susan's mother, reported him to the feminist branch of the enforcement bureau of the African State Church of North America with a charge of sexism. He was found guilty and sent to the science compound. He would have been executed if not for his scientific expertise. Susan's mother simply told Susan that her father was dead.

As the scene opens, Kent and Mackenzie are in their apartment after the working day. Kent is reading a scientific journal – all other reading is banned – and Mackenzie is watching a state-sponsored sporting event in which only black athletes are allowed to compete.

Mackenzie: (turning off the set) It isn't much of a game.

Kent: (looking up from his journal) What's the matter?

Mackenzie: The game is already over, the Number Two's got off to too big of a lead.

Kent: That's a shame.

Mackenzie: I don't know how you do it.

Kent: Do what?

Mackenzie: Live here without going nuts. I've been here 6 months, and already I can't stand it here. You've been here – how long have you been here?

Kent: If you mean how long have I been at this facility, it has only been about 10 months.

Mackenzie: I don't mean that. How long have you been a laboratory worker?

Kent: Five years. I was once a free worker, but my wife had me sent here.

Mackenzie: That is the downside of getting married.

Kent: Were you ever married?

Mackenzie: No, I was a free white, an illuminated white, but a co-worker reported me for making a racist comment.

Kent: What was it, or shouldn't I ask?

Mackenzie: I simply wondered why whites, if they were illuminated, shouldn't be allowed to play in the sporting events.

Kent: And that got you sent here?

Mackenzie: Yes.

Kent: It could have been worse, you could have been executed for such a remark.

Mackenzie: I suppose I was lucky, but still this place is driving me nuts. I've only been given two weekend passes since I've been here, and those passes are limited to places that are not more than five miles from this laboratory.

Kent: Yes, we are rather confined here.

Mackenzie: What did you do that made your wife report you to the feminist board?

Kent: We had a three-year old daughter named Susan. She would be eight years old now. Well, I don't know if any man, despite what the feminists say, ever gets rid of a certain feeling that he is dealing with something soft and sweet when he is dealing with the best of the opposite sex. When I thought my wife wasn't looking or within hearing distance, I hugged my daughter and called her "daddy's little sweetie pie." My wife heard me.

Mackenzie: And she reported you?

Kent: Yes, she did. In less than a half-hour, my life as an illuminated white was over, and I became a laboratory worker. It could have been worse if I hadn't been scientifically inclined.

Mackenzie: Yes, it could have, but still you must get sick of this grind.

Kent: I do, but most of all, I miss my daughter. I'm sure my wife has told her I was an evil man, and has probably told her I am dead.

Mackenzie: Do you hate your wife?

Kent: I suppose I should say I don't hate her because she was only doing her duty according to the feminist manifesto, but to be honest I must say – Yes, I hate her.

Mackenzie: I don't think I could ever get up the energy to hate.

Kent: A very wise man once said that we cannot love where we should love, if we do not hate where we should hate.

Mackenzie: Who was that man?

Kent: His name was Edmund Burke.

Mackenzie: Where did you hear of such a man, he isn't someone we are supposed to know about, I'm sure about that.

Kent: Have you ever heard of Herb Broadhurst?

Mackenzie: Yes, wasn't he that archivist who joined the White Underground?

Kent: Yes, he was. And it was on this very spot, where this laboratory was built, that Herb joined with the White Underground.

Mackenzie: Did you know him?

Kent: Yes, and he used to tell me about some of the stories of the white people he read about in the Archives.

Mackenzie: He wasn't supposed to do that, was he?

Kent: No, he wasn't. Nevertheless, I found his stories from the Archives quite interesting.

Mackenzie: They eliminated the Archives after what happened with Broadhurst, didn't they?

Kent: Yes, they did.

Mackenzie: Why was what happened at the Inn that used to be here hushed up?

Kent: Many people who were here that Christmas Eve night claimed a miracle occurred. They said a twelve-year-old girl was brought back from the dead.

Mackenzie (laughing) Is that all? She probably just received mouth-to-mouth CPR and recovered from an unconscious state.

Kent: Possibly, but there were some people who insisted that a man brought the girl back to life simply by touching her forehead.

Mackenzie: That is ridiculous. Who was the man?

Kent: No-one is quite sure who he was. He disappeared after the incident. Before the alleged incident occurred he was chained outside in the snow.

Mackenzie: Who had him chained there?

Kent: Sister Jacqueline had him chained there.

Mackenzie: Who released him?

Kent: That's the problem. Nobody knows how he got rid of his chains. He suddenly appeared at the door without his chains. He then went to the girl, who had been struck dead by one of Sister Jacqueline's policemen, and brought her back to life. That is how the story goes.

Mackenzie: Pure nonsense.

Kent: Maybe.

Mackenzie: What do you mean by 'maybe'? Surely you don't think some mysterious stranger actually brought a young girl back to life?

Kent: No, I can't say that I think that. But I know that Herb Broadhurst thought so, and I really liked that man.

Mackenzie: I didn't know him. But he wasn't a scientist, which is why he saw a miracle in something that was scientific. CPR is a wonderful thing, but it is science-based in its principles.

Kent: You're probably right, but I'd still like to know more about that night.

Mackenzie: What would you still like to know?

Kent: Well, I'd like to know what happened to the mysterious stranger.

Mackenzie: That is easy – he left with the White Underground.

Kent: No, he was gone before the White Underground arrived.

Mackenzie: He was probably waiting outside for them to arrive and left with them.

Kent: Possibly.

Mackenzie: You seem to want there to be a mystery where there really is none.

Kent: I suppose I do. But didn't you say you were bored here?

Mackenzie: Yes, I did.

Kent: Why, if science is all and all, are you bored with it?

Mackenzie: It's not science I'm bored with, it's the lack of outside diversions that I miss.

Kent: Well, then I still maintain that if science was all, you wouldn't need outside diversions.

Mackenzie: I don't see that.

Kent: Then let's drop the subject. All I know is that I miss my daughter.

Mackenzie: Wait, I hear something on the balcony.

(Kent goes out onto the balcony and finds a boy – it is Johnny – shivering with cold and barely conscious. He brings him into the apartment.)

---

### Act III. Scene 1.

The rectory of the major enforcement bureau of the African Catholic Church of North America. Monsignor McKinney (aged 55) and Father Mandela Johnston (age 34) are in the dining room finishing a late breakfast.

Johnston: I see that boy who killed one of our priests is still at large.

McKinney: Yes, I can't understand why the police haven't caught him yet. It's been three days now since the murder.

Johnston: Is it really that important that he is caught? After all, he is just one boy.

McKinney: I'm surprised at you, Father. It's of vital importance. Father Nicholas was of no particular importance – he didn't really have a parish, we had put him out to pasture six years ago – but he turned on the tape, as he was required to, before he spoke to that white boy. And that white boy blasphemed against the Sacred Negro.

He quoted from a forbidden book of stories, and he made reference to Christ, not as a forerunner of the Sacred Negro, but as the son of the living God. We must capture that boy and find out where he got that book. And we must find out who spoke to him about Christ. If that boy was an ordinary murderer, he would not be a concern, but since he is a blasphemer he is our concern. When the police apprehend him, they will turn him over to us.

Johnston: I'm sorry, Monsignor, I didn't realize the seriousness of the matter.

McKinney: It is easy, living as we do, to get complacent. We only associate with our fellow believers, but there is a white underground out there. We can't forget that.

Johnston: But aren't they just a small remnant?

McKinney: Small is a relative term. They have had an impact. Just two years ago they took Sister Jacqueline away to be tortured and killed.

Johnston: Do we know if she was killed?

McKinney: We must assume the worst; the white underground are racists.

Johnston: It's a terrible thing. And what about Father Taylor and Herb Broadhurst? They were members of the Illuminati and they became racists. It makes me sick to think of the enormity of their treachery.

McKinney: Yes, it's a terrible thing. To know the true God, the Sacred Negro, and then to descend to idolatry, superstition, and racism is unforgivable. I must preside over the trial of an apostate Illuminati today.

Johnston: I didn't know. Who is it?

McKinney: I don't believe you know him, it's Thomas Davenport; he was a psychologist in the Execution Division of our church.

Johnston: The same position that Father Taylor once held?

McKinney: Yes.

Johnston: What is it about that position that creates apostates?

McKinney: Don't be too hasty with your judgements, Father. We have hundreds of priest psychologists, and this is only our second case of apostasy.

Johnston: But even one case is too many.

McKinney: True, but we must keep things in perspective. I am going to look into shorter terms for our psychologists in the execution division. I think the pressure of deciding who must die and who will live grates on the psyche of some men.

Johnston: I don't think a really grounded man should have a problem. If a white man refuses illumination, he should die; it's that simple.

McKinney: I agree, but some men seem illuminated and then fall for reasons we still don't understand.

Johnston: Perhaps today at Thomas Davenport's trial you will be able to get some insight into his psyche that will help you weed out future apostates.

McKinney: He hasn't been found guilty yet.

Johnston: But isn't that just a formality? I heard he made an open declaration of his racism – he said that Jesus Christ was the one and only Son of the Living God.

McKinney: Yes, his guilt seems apparent from what I've heard, but I will let him explain himself in open court. Perhaps you'd like to attend.

Johnston: Yes, I would. I'd like to see one of these apostates close-up.

---

### Act III. Scene 2.

The trial of Thomas Davenport, formerly a priest-psychologist in the Execution Division of the African Roman Catholic Church of North America. Monsignor McKinney presiding.

McKinney: State your name.

Davenport: My name is Thomas Davenport.

McKinney: You have been charged with blasphemy against our holy faith. How do you plead?

Davenport: Guilty.

McKinney: What are you saying? Don't you want to issue a defense?

Davenport: I am guilty of blasphemy as you describe it. I do not believe in the Sacred Negro. I believe that he is a false god. I believe in the God of the white Europeans whom you persecute, I believe that Jesus Christ is the one true God who died on the cross to save us all from sin and death.

McKinney: Guards, have that man gagged. (Two guards tie Davenport's hands behind his back and then gag him.) Now, I must say a few words before I pass sentence. You have committed an unpardonable sin against our holy faith. When you attack that faith, you attack us all. We have struggled mightily against white racism, and it is only by the grace afforded us by the Sacred Negro that we have been able to conquer, within our own psyches (note that I do not use the word 'soul', which is a concept of white racists), the white racism within. Our illumination has been dearly bought. We cannot permit anyone to try and drag us back to racism.

(Monsignor McKinney rises from his seat and raises his arms in the air) I can see the Sacred Negro in my mind's eye; he calls on me to pass judgement on the racist before me. (He sits down.) I sentence you to torture and death two days hence. So die all racists.

Johnston: (coming up to Monsignor McKinney after the trial) I didn't get much of a chance to see into his psyche as he was not allowed to talk.

McKinney: Are you suggesting that I should have let him talk any further after he publicly blasphemed?

Johnston: No, of course not, but I would still like to learn a bit more about him, so I could be of some use in stopping such men from attaining any positions in our church again.

McKinney: I could give you a pass to visit him in his cell. Would you like that?

Johnston: Yes, I would.

McKinney: I'll arrange it.

---

### Act III. Scene 3.

Davenport's cell.

Father Johnston: I can't have your death sentence altered, I haven't the power. And quite frankly, I wouldn't alter your death sentence even if I had the power to. I think you deserve to die for your apostasy.

Davenport: Did you come here just to tell me that?

Johnston: No, I came here to tell you that if you cooperate with me, if you answer my questions, I can have the torture you are currently scheduled for remitted.

Davenport: I don't particularly care to be tortured, but I won't answer any questions that put my fellow Christians in jeopardy.

Johnston: My questions are not that type of questions.

Davenport: If they won't compromise anyone else, I'll answer your questions.

Johnston: Good. I would like to know how you, an illuminated white, made the descent into racism. By what process did you go from light to darkness?

Davenport: Of course, I do not see it as you see it. From my perspective I went from darkness to light. But since you ask me, I'll try to articulate the reason for what you call 'my apostasy.'

Like you, like all whites who are allowed to grow up and live in the African Republic of North America, I believed that the negro was sacred. I believed that we, as white men, were called upon to serve the negro with our whole heart, mind, and soul. And for many years, I did just that. All my work in the science lab was holy work to me, because it was done in the name of the sacred negro, it was done to make the sacred negroes' lives here on earth more pleasant.

I was given permission to marry a white woman, because I had demonstrated my scientific aptitude. The Illuminati on the council felt that my offspring might also be scientifically inclined. I was relieved when my son, at age three, scored very high on the scientific aptitude tests, because I saw there was an excellent chance that he would be allowed to live, that he would not have to be executed. Even though I knew it was in violation of Section III, Article 17 of the African Republic of North American's constitution, I had formed a very close bond with my son and my wife.

Johnston: Even though you knew such bonds were forbidden? When you knew that the procreation of the species was not supposed, within the bond of white marriage, to be connected with sentiment?

Davenport: Yes, I did form ties of sentiment with my wife and child. I just couldn't seem to help myself. But I still believed in the sacred negro despite my sentimental attachment to a white child and a white woman.

Johnston: I do not see how the two principles can be reconciled, but please proceed with your story.

Davenport: When Edmund was 6 years old, my wife died tragically in what they told me was a car accident.

Johnston: You don't believe it was a car accident?

Davenport: I believed it at the time, but now I know differently. I know that she was raped and murdered by your black gods. She got lost – she was always bad with directions – and drove into the rape and murder zone.

Johnston: You know that it is perfectly legal for blacks to rape and murder any white woman without a special pass. Did your wife have her pass?

Davenport: I don't know for sure, she might have forgotten it that day. But should that make a difference? Why should the blacks have the right to rape and murder white women even if they don't have a pass?

Johnston: If you weren't already scheduled for execution, that statement alone would be your death warrant. But go on — if you tell me your whole story, I will keep my promise and remit your torture.

Davenport: After my wife's death, I had only my son left to live for.

Johnston: You know that was wrong. You are not to live for what used to be called kith and kin; you are to live solely for the Sacred Negro.

Davenport: I know that is how it is supposed to be, but you asked me to tell my story.

Johnston: Go ahead.

Davenport: Two years after my wife's death, Edmund was eight; he contracted the plague. It came as quite a shock to me because he got the plague at a time when it had virtually died out in this country. It was still raging in Europe, but we no longer had any active cases. I could only conclude that I had carried it home from the lab. I had been working with the virus in order to develop a vaccine.

Now, before you interrupt me again, let me say that I knew I was supposed to report Edmund's illness. But I didn't, because I knew he would be executed. I packed up as many provisions as I could carry in the minivan and took Edmund to the mountains. I wanted him, if he had to die, to die in peaceful surroundings, not in a science lab. My special illuminated status allowed me to pass through the sentries guarding the roads.

Johnston: Did your son die in the mountains, then?

Davenport: No, he did not. The White Underground came upon us. That is all I will say. They came to me, a man who had sent hundreds of white Christians to their deaths for their refusal to worship the Sacred Negro, and they helped my son.

Johnston: How could they help your son? The plague is and was incurable.

Davenport: They told me there was a man in Britain who could cure the plague. He had just returned to Christian Britain after healing thousands of plague victims in Islamic Britain.

Johnston: And who was the man?

Davenport: His name was...

Johnston: Christopher Grey?

Davenport: Yes.

Johnston: He never cured anyone, all that is nonsense.

Davenport: He cured my son.

Johnston: If your son got better, it was a psychic phenomenon, it had nothing to do with Christopher Grey.

Davenport: That's what Christopher Grey said: he said he had nothing to do with my son's recovery. Only he did not call it a psychic phenomenon. He said that it was Jesus Christ who healed my son and that he was merely a vehicle for Christ.

Johnston: That is blasphemy. There are no miracles outside of the natural world. The so-called miracles are psychic phenomena. We must look to the Sacred Negro for the real miracles, the miracle of the Natural Savage untainted by the non-illuminated whites.

Davenport: So you say. But I saw a miracle. I had a mask and gloves on, a mask and gloves I had especially designed for myself when the plague had hit our country. The White Underground had us isolated from the rest of their population, but they kept us supplied with food and water. I didn't believe that my son could be cured, since he had entered the final stages of the disease, but there was a great peace amongst those people that made me glad that I had fled the city with my son. It was — you can make of this what you want — on the third day that I was among the White Underground that he, Christopher Grey, appeared. He simply nodded to me and walked right up to my son and took him in his arms. To me he looked like an enormous angel, like something from another world. He said, "Please, Lord Jesus, come into your child, Edmund Davenport, and cure him."

He held him for another two or three minutes in his arms and then he laid him back on the bed. And my son was plague free! I wept and I believed. I fell on my knees before Christopher and started to thank him. But he got on his knees beside me and thanked our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. And he was right — at that moment, when I saw my son healed through the power of Christ, I believed. Most certainly I am the least of God's children, because I persecuted His people, and I needed to see before I believed, but still I now belong to Him. I was captured by your police force when I came back to get a few of my things, but I am thankful that my son is with the White Underground. And that is my story. If it will make my death less painful, I am glad I told it to you. If not, it will not change my faith.

Johnston: You truly deserve the death sentence that Monsignor McKinney gave you. As for the torture that is customary in these cases, I'm afraid I lied to you. I do not have the power to remit your torture. And quite frankly I wouldn't do it if I could. You deserve to be tortured because you have gone over to the racist Europeans, the Chritsters, and must be punished most severely with torture and death.

Davenport: So be it then. I know He will sustain me.

Johnston: Jailer! It's time to let me out.

Morgan: (outside the cell) The jailer is temporarily indisposed. I relieved him of his duties. You and Mr. Davenport are coming with me.

Johnston: Who are you?

Morgan: My name is Morgan.

Johnston: The leader of the White Underground?

Morgan: Yes, and you are going to meet many of my friends and some of your former friends such as Sister Jacqueline, who remains our prisoner.

Johnston: Hel... (Morgan muffles his scream and takes him away, accompanied by the newest member of the White Underground, Thomas Davenport.

---

#### Act IV. Scene 1.

The apartment of Thomas Kent and Peter Mackenzie. Kent has placed Johnny in his bed, covered him with blankets, and brought him a cup of hot chocolate. Johnny has regained consciousness.

Kent: And where have you come from? Easy on the milk, don't drink it too quickly.

Johnny: I'm so hungry and thirsty.

Kent: I'll get you something to eat as well, but take your time with it. (Kent goes into the kitchen to get Johnny some leftovers. Mackenzie speaks to him in the kitchen.)

Mackenzie: I'm sure that is the runaway white kid the police are looking for.

Kent: Probably.

Mackenzie: Then we'll have to turn him in right now.

Kent: Let's wait a bit, at least let him eat.

Mackenzie: What's the use of that, he will be killed as soon as they take him.

Kent: Still, I'd like to give him this chicken.

Mackenzie: Why?

Kent: It would give me pleasure to feed a human being instead of a laboratory rat.

Mackenzie: Don't be absurd, I'm calling the police. (He walks over to the phone. As he does so Kent goes to his desk drawer and draws out a small semiautomatic pistol.)

Kent: Leave the phone alone.

Mackenzie: Have you gone mad?

Kent: Quite probably I have gone mad. Which is all the more reason why you shouldn't touch that phone — I will shoot.

Mackenzie: All right, I won't touch the phone. But if you harbor a white escapee from the internment camp we will both be executed.

Kent: Don't worry, I'll see to it that you're not implicated. Put your hands behind your back. (Kent ties and gags Mackenzie and puts him in the closet. Then he goes into the bedroom, bringing Johnny the chicken. When Johnny finishes eating, Kent speaks to him.)

Kent: You've been very busy these last few days, haven't you?

Johnny: Yes, I have, and I'm very tired.

Kent: Well, in just a little while you can get some sleep. But first I'd like you to tell me your story.

Johnny: Like in the storybooks?

Kent: Yes, if that will make it easier for you.

Johnny: Well, once upon a time I was born in a big prison camp. I don't know who my father and mother were, because I never, that I can remember, had anyone around me. There were only black men with whips and sticks around me. They always beat me. They told me if I failed the tests, they would kill me and eat me, just like the witch in the Hansel and Gretel story.

Kent: Did they, the guards, tell you about Hansel and Gretel?

Johnny: No, that was a book I found two years ago. I read it many, many times when no-one was paying any attention to me. I had a hiding place for the book just outside the camp. I also had a little tunnel I dug that led outside the camp. That is where I read the book and visited Susan.

Kent: Who was Susan?

Johnny: She was a white girl I used to go and see. I thought she liked me. I still think she does, but when I called her mother a witch, she screamed, and her mother shot at me. That was about five days ago, but I'm not sure exactly how long it has been. A lot has happened to me since that time.

Kent: What was the last name of Susan?

Johnny: I'm not sure what Susan's last name was. But her mother's last name was Wagner.

Kent: Johnny, that young girl is my daughter.

Johnny: Then she should be with you. I'm sure she is not happy with her mother, because her mother ties her to a chair when she is bad.

Kent: I don't think Susan could be so bad as to warrant being tied to a chair.

Johnny: I think that was my fault. When Susan played with me, she was being 'racist,' so her mother punished her.

Kent: Yes, she would do that. You were right, Johnny, Susan's mother is a witch.

Johnny: I thought so. But what can we do? Susan shouldn't have to live with a witch.

Kent: No, she shouldn't. I'm going to take care of that. But you haven't finished telling me your story. How did you end up here, and why are the police chasing you?

Johnny: They say I killed a priest of the African Roman Catholic Church of North America.

Kent: Wait, before you go any further, let me get my roommate out of the closet. I really shouldn't have put him there. (Kent leaves the room for ten minutes and then comes back with Mackenzie.) Now, Johnny, please go on with your story. My friend here will listen as well. And when you have finished, we will both leave together while my friend calls the police, but not before he has given us a half-hour head start. Isn't that right, Peter?

Mackenzie: Agreed.

Kent: Go ahead, Johnny.

Johnny: Susan's mother, the witch, started shooting at me, so of course I had to run away. I couldn't go back to the prison camp like I used to do because I knew Susan's mother had called the police. So I ran and hid, and I ran and hid some more until I came to an old African Roman Catholic Church. The priest there started being nice to me. He gave me something to eat, and he seemed kind. But when I said, "Roses bloom and cease to be; But we shall the Christ child see," he attacked me and started to choke me. I thought I was going to die, but then he suddenly stopped choking me. He rolled over on the floor beside me and stopped breathing. Then I saw the police cars outside the window and I ran away. As I was running away, I heard someone yelling I had murdered the old priest. I didn't murder him, but I knew they would kill me anyway because of Susan's mother, so I kept running.

Kent: How did you survive for five days and nights?

Johnny: I grabbed some food off the old priest's table before I ran from that church. I made that last two days. Since then I haven't eaten until now. It was on my fifth day of hiding and running that I came upon the big church festival. It was being held outside.

Kent: What were they doing at the festival?

Johnny: They were killing white people, isn't that what they always do at religious festivals?

Kent: Yes.

Johnny: Well, they had all the white people lined up – there must have been hundreds of them lined up waiting their turn to be killed on the altars of the big outdoor church. The black guards all had those guns that shoot a lot of bullets.

Kent: Were you hidden during the festival?

Johnny: Yes, I was in the bushes on a hill overlooking the festival. But I guess I wasn't paying attention because a black sentry came up behind me and grabbed me. "How did you escape," he said. I tried to get away, but he held me tight and started to carry me down to the religious festival where the whites were being killed. But halfway down the hill somebody started shooting at the black guards, and I heard one of them say, "It's Morgan and the White Underground." Then the white prisoners started running for cover, and the black guards started shooting back at the White Underground people. But soon all the blacks were dead, and the White Underground people came and started telling the white people they could come with them. I tried to cry out to the White Underground people, but the black man held his hand over my mouth and started running into the hills with me.

Kent: Didn't anybody from the White Underground see him running away with you?

Johnny: No, I guess we were too far away.

Kent: But you're here now. Somebody must have helped you get away?

Johnny: Somebody did — his name was Michael.

Kent: Tell me about it.

Johnny: Well, the black guard was quite angry with the White Underground for killing all his friends. That is what he said, but he didn't really seem as sorry for his friends getting killed as he seemed sorry that all the whites weren't going to be killed. He kept saying, "Well, at least I'll kill you, at least I'll kill you." And when we came to a clearing, he put handcuffs on me and made me kneel down while he built a fire. He said he planned to roast me alive. When he got the fire nice and hot, he undid my handcuffs, picked me up, and threw me in the fire.

Kent: Johnny, how is that possible – you don't have any burn marks on your body?

Johnny: I didn't burn up because he was there in the fire.

Kent: Who was there?

Johnny: Saint Michael the Archangel. That was his name.

Kent: Did he tell you that was his name?

Johnny: Yes, he did, and he said the Christ Child had sent him to watch out for me. He told me that Baby Jesus had heard me calling on Him by name when I told the old priest that, "Roses bloom and cease to be. But we the Christ child shall see."

Mackenzie: This is too much. The child is lying, he is making all this up.

Kent: Is he?

Mackenzie: Of course he is, you don't seriously believe in archangels and the baby Jesus?

Kent: People once believed in such things.

Mackenzie: Yes, in the age of superstition people believed in a lot of things, no doubt. But we are men of science.

Kent: You are a man of science. And you can have it.

Mackenzie: You believe his story?

Kent: I want to believe it.

Mackenzie: That's not what I asked you. I asked you if you believed his story.

Kent: (Looks at Johnny and seems to be studying his face) Yes, I believe his story, more than I believe in that science lab over there.

Mackenzie: You're insane!

Kent: Perhaps.

Johnny: The angel Michael must have known you would believe me because he took me here after he killed the black man. He told me you would take care of me.

Kent: If the angel told you that, then I will take care of you. We shall join a friend of mine, Herb Broadhurst, in the White Underground. But first I must go rescue my daughter Susan from that witch. Would you like that?

Johnny: Yes, I would, very much!

Kent: (addressing Mackenzie) You've promised me one half-hour head start.

Mackenzie: I'll give you more than that, I won't phone in a missing person report until the morning.

Kent: Thanks.

Mackenzie: (with a wave of his hand) Get out of here before you have me seeing angels.

---

#### Act IV. Scene 2.

Susan's apartment. Johnny has shown Kent where he can climb up to Susan's bedroom. Kent climbs up into Susan's bedroom, but he goes through Susan's bedroom to the witch's bedroom. Without waking the witch, he goes to the dresser, opens a drawer, and removes the clip from his wife's Glock. Then he goes back to Susan's bedroom and gently wakes her. Johnny has been waiting there in the bedroom as well.

Kent: Do you hear me, Susan?

Susan: Yes, who are you?

Kent: I'm sure you don't remember me, but I am your father, and I've come to take you away from here to a better place. And I'm taking Johnny with me as well.

Susan: My father is dead.

Kent: No, that is not true. I am your father. Look at me, Susan, look very carefully at my face.

Susan: I am looking.

Kent: What do you see?

Susan: (suddenly lighting up) I see love there, you love me! I know you must be my father!

Kent: Then you'll come with me?

Susan: Yes, oh yes!

(At this point, Susan's mother, the witch, enters the bedroom.)

The Witch: (pointing the Glock at Kent) I don't know how you got here, but you'll never leave here, you disgusting white male. (She pulls the trigger of the Glock, but of course nothing happens.)

Kent: I removed the bullets, my dear. (The witch rushes at Kent, her fists flailing, but Kent knocks her out with a straight right-hand punch. Then he goes over to her to see if she is still alive. She is still breathing.)

Susan: Why does my mother hate everyone?

Kent: Your mother is a liberal, Susan.

Susan: What is a liberal?

Kent: A liberal is someone who hates Jesus Christ, and because liberals hate Jesus Christ, they hate His people.

Susan: I don't understand. Who is Jesus Christ?

Kent: I don't understand much myself, Susan, but where we are going, there will be many people who understand about these things. They will tell us about creatures such as your mother who hate everyone, and they will show us other people who love one another as Jesus Christ once told us to do.

(Speaking more to himself now than to the others, Kent looks at his wife.) I thought I loved you. You're still beautiful, at least on the outside. Maybe that is why I was punished through you. I only looked on the outside, not on the inside.

Johnny: Will we go now?

Kent: Yes, let me tie her up and gag her before we go.

Johnny: Roses bloom and cease to be, but we the Christ child shall see.

Kent: Yes, we will.

---

#### Act V. Scene 1.

A room in the mountain headquarters of the White Underground. Herb Broadhurst, Morgan, Kent, and Thomas Davenport are there.

Kent: I'm very grateful to you for taking me, my daughter, and Johnny into your mountain refuge. We certainly were in need of a refuge.

Morgan: We all are. There are many such refuges scattered throughout the continent.

Kent: Are you the leader?

Morgan: Yes, but every refuge has their own, for want of a better word, clan leader. I simply keep all the various clan chapters in touch with each other and ultimately in touch with King Arthur II of Britain.

Kent: Who was crowned by Christopher Grey?

Morgan: Yes.

Kent: Is he actually a real person? I've heard so many strange stories about him.

Davenport: He is quite real. He has been here for the past month. He came to heal my son and show the worst of sinners, one Thomas Davenport, the grace of Jesus Christ. He'll be returning to Britain tomorrow, but tonight he'll celebrate Christmas with us.

Kent: I'd like to meet him, but I must say this whole Christian thing is a little above and beyond me.

Broadhurst: It's above and beyond all of us to some extent. We all are infants in our faith.

Morgan: Yes, we are, but we believe.

(Christopher Grey enters the room.)

Grey: Lord, I believe, help my unbelief. That is always our prayer. But it takes faith to make that prayer (looking at Kent and Davenport). Allow me to invoke an ancient privilege. Please kneel.

(They all kneel, while Grey prays.)

Dear God, please bless these, your children; help them to know you in and through their brothers and sisters in Christ, gathered together here in your name. Keep them always in your heart and give them the grace to allow you into their hearts. We ask this, in the name of Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior, Amen.

Morgan: Amen.

All: Amen.

Grey: I'll be back before I return to Britain, but right now I have a very important appointment with a young boy.

---

## Act V. Scene 2.

At the top of the mountain refuge where thousands of white Christians live, there is a huge nativity scene. Christopher Grey takes Johnny by the hand, and together they walk to the top of the mountain and stand before the representation of the Baby Jesus in the manger with the Virgin Mary, Joseph, the Wise Men, and the Shepherds kneeling before Him.

Johnny: Is this the Baby Jesus?

Grey: No, it's just a model, a picture in wood of the Baby Jesus.

Johnny: It's a nice picture, but I want to see the real Baby Jesus.

Grey: Why must you see him, Johnny?

Johnny: Because I love Him. "Roses bloom and cease to be, but we the Christ child shall see."

Grey: You shall see Him, Johnny. I want you to kneel down. Cup your hands like this (Grey cups his hands in prayer) and listen to what I say. (Grey recites, from memory, the nativity story from the Gospel of Luke:

"And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them."

Grey: Did you see Him, Johnny?

Johnny: Yes, I did, but I saw another person standing with the Baby Jesus. It was a man with a crown of thorns on His head and deep cuts in His hands and His side. And when I saw the crown of thorns and the wounds, I cried inside my heart, because I was sorry for Him. But then He became all shiny and bright, and He was beautiful. He still had marks on Him but they were healed. And I knew He loved me, I just knew it.

Grey: The Baby Jesus is that Man with the crown of thorns and the wounds. And the Baby Jesus is that wonderful Man of light. He is Christ, He is our Savior. Do you believe in Him, Johnny?

Johnny: Yes.

Grey: Let's go down the mountain. Your young friend Susan is waiting for you down there and so are the rest of your friends.

Johnny: Do they love the Baby Jesus too?

Grey: Yes, they do.

---

## Act V. Scene 3. Finis.

The Rev. Grey reads from Luke, chapter 2, and then he leads the faithful in song:

Away in a manger  
No crib for his bed  
The little Lord Jesus  
Laid down his sweet head  
The stars in the sky  
Looking down where he lay

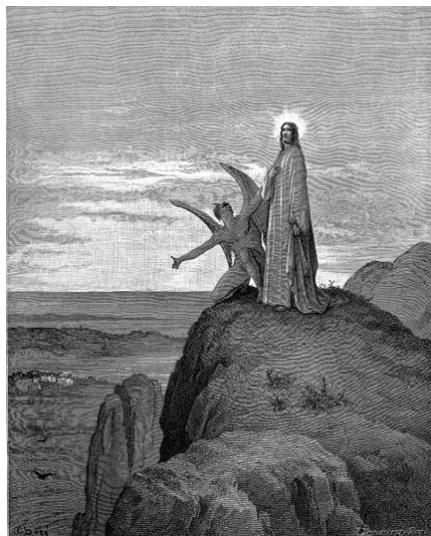
The little Lord Jesus  
Asleep on the hay

The cattle are lowing  
The poor baby wakes  
But little Lord Jesus  
No crying he makes  
I love Thee, Lord Jesus  
Look down from the sky  
And stay by my cradle  
Till morning is nigh

Be near me, Lord Jesus  
I ask Thee to stay  
Close by me for ever  
And love me, I pray  
Bless all the dear children  
In Thy tender care  
And take us to Heaven  
To live with Thee there  
And take us to Heaven  
To live with Thee there.

# The Satanic Unmasking

January 2, 2021  
Categories: Democracy, Muscular Christianity



Dore. The temptation of Jesus

Here is the indictment of the good Lord Hastings;  
Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.  
And mark how well the sequel hangs together:  
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me;  
The precedent was full as long a-doing;  
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
Untainted, unexamin'd, free, at liberty.  
Here's a good world the while! Who is so gross  
That cannot see this palpable device?  
Yet who's so bold but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

*—Richard the Third*

---

Reason is a whore; she peeks out over the blindfold and decides in favor of the prevailing powers that be. When the powers that be are liberal, which translates to satanic, then 'justice' is satanic. — CWNY

---

“Who is so gross, That cannot see this palpable device?” In the months prior to the election I thought that the Demon-crats would win because I knew they would fix the election. But as Election Day approached, I became somewhat hopeful. Trump had such an enormous lead that I thought, “Can they really get away with fraud of such magnitude?” Of course they, the Demon-crats, did get away with it. The toll of human suffering, not just in this nation, but throughout the world, as a result of the election fraud, is beyond measure. In this nation millions of non-illuminated whites will be exterminated through economic disenfranchisement and outright slaughter at the hands of the colored barbarians. And worldwide the only nation that has the power to stand up to the communist Chinese will become the lap-dog of the Chinese communists. Is there any silver lining in this whole affair? No, there isn’t. This is an unmitigated tragedy. But there is one thing that we can take out of the “palpable device”: We no longer have to play the democratic game. The letter writing, the voting, the protest marches, can now be seen for what they were and are – part of the liberals’ subterfuge, which they have chosen to throw off. The satanic device of the liberals, which is the democratic process, has now been revealed as a complete hoax. It is time to make war as the Psalmist bids us: “So let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their cords from us.”

Our nation, with some dissenting voices in the Southern half of the country, was founded on the heretical principle that our leaders govern by the consent of the governed. That is in direct contrast to the Christian European vision of leadership, in which a monarch and/or an aristocracy rule, not by Divine Right but in the name of Christ the King. We are all aware of the imperfections of such governments, because the liberals have told us for more than a twelfth-month of those imperfections. But has the Christian faith flourished under the rule of Christian kings and Christian aristocracies or has it flourished in the modern democracies? The answer to that question is obvious. The Christian faith and the European people thrived under the former regimes, and they are both, because they are one, about to be completely extinguished in the ‘Age of Democracy.’

Let us look at this thing called ‘democracy’ in the wake of the fraudulent American election. The spirit of democracy is grounded in the same spirit that motivated the demons in *Luke 8:32-37*:

*And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them. Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country. Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. They also which saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.*

The demons, against their own self-interest, desired to be free of the God of Mercy, so Christ freed them, and they went into the swine, who ran off a cliff into a lake and choked to death. The liberals are the demon-possessed swine: They are bound and determined, also against their own self-interest, to go over the cliff. They must avoid, at all costs, the loving embrace of Jesus Christ.

All the modern democratic governments are based on the Jacobin vision of equality. They take the Christian precept of the moral equality of all men before the living God and conflate it with a natural equality among swine, who are committed to Satan. There is no natural equality in God’s Kingdom; there is a spiritual aristocracy based on His, not Satan’s, precepts, the precepts of the Suffering Servant who bids His apostles seek greatness by being the “servant of all.” There is no mechanical equality of swine competing for the pig swill of the world’s material goods in Christ’s Reign of Charity. When we seek a worldly equality, we seek Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. In the United States, that kingdom is here and now.

There is a satanic undergirding to this great evil called democracy. Its proponents tell us we shall all be equal: "We shall be as gods." But all are not equal in a democracy: "Some are more equal." Those "some" are the white Illuminati and the colored barbarians, the people who do the will of Satan. The election of 2020 in this country revealed the satanic presence behind the façade of the liberals' "equality." The votes of non-illuminated whites were null and void while the votes of the illuminated whites became the voice of "the people." But the voice of "the people" is the voice of Satan. He works his will through the Illuminati and the people of color. When Robespierre was told his call for equality would lead to the extermination of all whites in San Domingo (Haiti), he was unmoved; in fact, he thought it was a great good, because the whites in San Domingo were non-illuminated whites. In Robespierre's satanic mind, they deserved to die just as the non-illuminated whites in France and throughout Europe deserved to die.

Robespierre's satanic utopia did not, as Burke warned us, die with Robespierre. It has become institutionalized throughout the nations of Europe. And it has become such a powerful entity, in church and state, that there is no one willing to oppose it. The Supreme Court justices in this country came up with all sorts of reasons why they did not want to even hear any election fraud cases. But there was only one reason why they didn't want to hear the cases: They were afraid of the utopian left who will stop at nothing to achieve their ends. They were not afraid of the Pro-Trumps who will stop at the crossroads and take the road marked, 'Quaker,' which is the road to oblivion, to their extinction as a people.

It is important to note that this electoral victory of the left was not a peaceful revolution. It was steeped in the blood of innocents such as Aaron Danielson, and it shall be upheld by the threat of more violence. Let us look at this, the latest and quite possibly the final revolution of the left, in light of the revolutions that preceded it. The first leftist revolt was in the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve had a filial connection to the living god. The Lord handed them a kingdom that was preserved and protected in and through His filial bond with them, His people. They broke that bond when they chose to become intellectual Christians, men and women who placed their reason above their heart to heart connection to the living God. We know what ensued from that 'shipwreck.'

Our incarnate Lord, Jesus Christ, restored our severed blood connection to the living God through His birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead; that was the belief of our European ancestors. Every leftist revolution is grounded in a movement away from the European civilization whose people had a blood connection to Jesus Christ. In a perversion of everyone's moral equality before God, the left has presented every attack against Christ's reign of charity as a step forward for mankind – as a progression from the darkness of the inequalities and inequities of the past toward the light of a utopian future of equality. Thus 'votes for women' begot feminism and legalized abortion, and the enfranchisement of non-Europeans begot the worship of the sacred negro. Whatever was opposed to Christian European civilization was lauded and whatever was remotely tied to Christian Europe was opposed with fire and sword. Once we understand that the inner dynamic of the liberal Illuminati demands they follow the path of the demons described in *Luke 8* we can understand why the liberals had to destroy Trump, even if it meant they had to take off their democratic masks and reveal their satanic visages for all the world to see.

On the surface Trump seems to be one with the liberals. He openly professed his belief in the equality heresy, which equates our moral equality before God to a mechanical equality of mankind, independent of the spirit which giveth life, and yet the liberals hated him as no man in public office has ever been hated before. Why? They hated and still hate Trump because he did not adhere to the inner dynamic of the equality heresy. That inner dynamic demands an inequality; it demands that some, the Illuminati and their colored minions, must be *more* equal. Every Republican candidate prior to Trump agreed to the extermination of the non-illuminated whites. The fact that Trump did not want non-illuminated whites to be exterminated made him an anathema to the liberals. And in this last election he was cast into outer darkness with his non-illuminated followers.

The mad-dog liberal media opposed Trump with a satanic vehemence. That was expected. But a great deal of the so-called conservatives, such as Ann Coulter and Drudge, also opposed Trump, and most of the Republicans gave him lukewarm support at best. My local Republican senator, for instance, sent me a snotty reply to my letter demanding he fight the fraudulent election: "The courts have spoken," he told me, so I should stop bothering him and find something better to do. What is obvious is that a committed violent minority, the left, have made it clear that only the illuminated will be permitted to live. The 'conservative' pundits and the Republican RINOs want to show the left they are not in support of the non-illuminated whites whom Trump represents. They want their easy lives of punditry and the Loyal Opposition to go on forever. And it is Biden, not Trump, who gives them the best chance to continue on as pundits and legislators, because they sense, like jackals, that Trump's followers will not fight back.

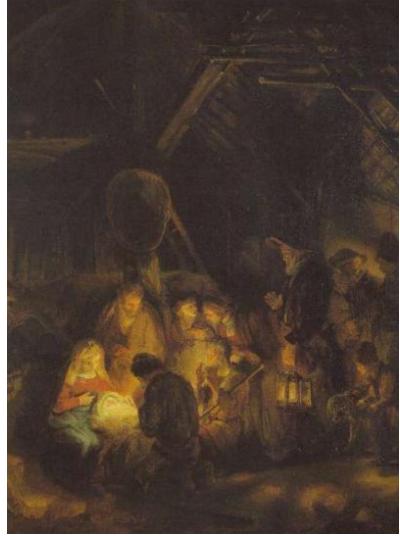
The late Rodney Dangerfield used to say in his comedy routine that he appealed to everyone who could do him absolutely no good. That was the reason for Trump's electoral 'defeat.' His appeal was to the disenfranchised white grazers who have been designated for the liberals' slaughterhouse. They voted for him in record numbers because he was the only Republican candidate who stood up for them as human beings with human needs rather than treating them as a universal aggregate to be manipulated for political purposes. I am in the field with the white grazers, I am not of the elect, I am not 'illuminated.' But although I am among the white grazers, I am not of them. I do not believe white pietas is a sin, nor do I believe that God and democracy are one. My task is to move the white grazers' hearts away from demoncracy toward white pietas. It seems like an impossible task. And it is impossible without Divine Intervention. I ask for that intervention now and at the hour of my death.

What do we make of the fact that Donald Trump's name coincides with St. Paul's sure and certain hope in *1 Corinthians 15: 52*? "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed." Some Christians have asserted that the juxtaposition of Donald Trump and the last Trump means that the end of the world, the final consummation, is near. I do not sneer at such speculation because in the last four years the intense hatred of the liberals for Trump seemed to come from a satanic depth that we had never seen before. Their hatred is so obviously from the devil that we cannot help but think that now the devil's great antagonist, Jesus Christ, is going to step forth and put an end to the devil's reign. But we can't take that route because of what our Lord tells us in *Mark 13: 31-33*: "Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father."

What we do know is that the American election of 2020 marked the great unmasking of the liberals. They took off the benign façade of democracy and revealed the satanic heart of "government for the people and of the people." The "people" are the Illuminati and their "ebony puppets," who are consecrated to Satan. They have only one agenda – to attack Christ through His people. They must always attack the 'image of God in man' culture of the antique Europeans. Any movement back to that culture and that people must be dealt with harshly. The 2020 election was not an election, it was a reassertion, through violence, of the liberals' power over the non-illuminated whites. I refer you once again to Walt Disney's 1959 retelling of the Sleeping Beauty fairy tale. Maleficent throws aside all subterfuge and stands before Prince Phillip in all her satanic fury: "Now you shall deal with me and all the powers of hell." That is what the liberals did in this last election – they unmasked and told us to deal with Satan and all the powers of hell. Can letter-writing, voting, and protest marches, move the powers of hell? Our supremely satanic Supreme Court gives the lie to that futile hope. The justices went with the forces of hell because they fear Satan's minions and do *not* fear the Christ-bearing people, because the Christ-bearing people have become... what have they become? They are like unto a modern Prince Phillip, who turns from Maleficent when she confronts him. His sword becomes a pen, and he hurries home to write an angry letter to Maleficent demanding she release Sleeping Beauty. He and the good fairies then organize a protest march around Maleficent's castle. After Maleficent sends out her goons to maim, torture, and murder the protestors, the surviving protestors find an alternative media outlet, one outlet among thousands that is not pro-Maleficent, and brag about their non-violent approach to all the powers of hell. Meanwhile, Sleeping Beauty rots in Maleficent's castle. We play the devil's game when we play the democratic game. Pray for the safety of the pro-Trump demonstrators on January 6, for they are going up against the devil's minions without the full armour of Christ. Instead of "Onward, Christian soldiers," they are marching to the tune of "We are not racist, we are non-violent." That discordant melody is music to the ears of Satan and his minions.

We must avoid, or we will surely forfeit our humanity which is our link to the living God, the 'religious' posturing that always comes in crises such as this. I am referring to the old bromide, 'God is punishing you for your sins by inflicting Biden and his demon-crats upon you.' In the Johnstown flood of 1889, there were 'religious' people who claimed the flood was visited upon the people of Johnstown because of the brothels in the town. But those 'religious' people ignored the fact that the brothels were on high ground and not touched by the flood. Such is the case when a rash of earthquakes hit California. There is a segment of 'religious' people who tell us the earthquakes are God's judgment upon the homosexuals who have made San Francisco their home city. But are the homosexuals the only people who suffer when the earthquakes strike California? We must reject such 'religious' posturing. When Solzhenitsyn went to the Gulag, he felt, after he had converted to Christianity while in prison, that he deserved his punishment because he had been a communist. That was a penitential act of a Christian. He looked at his own sins and decided that he needed to suffer for his sins. But Solzhenitsyn did not think that his fellow prisoners in the Gulag deserved their punishments. He had a compassionate empathy for their suffering and a holy rage against those who inflicted the suffering on his people. That should be our reaction to this violent assertion of the liberals' power over the non-illuminated whites. We must respond to this outrage as integral Christians have responded to evil throughout our human history, our Christian European history. We do not know why evil always seems to triumph over good. Our heart pulls us toward Him who saves, while our head tells us to court favor with the powers of this world. Let us incline toward that which is in our hearts, the love of Him who saves, even in the face of what seems like the death of all our earthly hopes. We are the people who "know not seems." We believe He is our beginning and our end. The Babe in the manger, the Suffering Servant on the Cross, and the Risen Lord are one. That mystery, the mystery of faith, will sustain us all through the night.  
+

"Roses bloom and cease to be,  
But we the Christ child shall see."



Rembrandt. The shepherds worship the child

# As Lambs to the Slaughter

January 9, 2021  
Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Pride of intellect

Tags: Edmund Burke



Dore. Nailing Christ to the Cross

He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. – [Isaiah 53: 7](#)

---

As to me, I was always steadily of opinion that this disorder was not in its nature intermittent. I conceived that the contest, once begun, could not be laid down again to be resumed at our discretion; but that our first struggle with this evil would also be our last. I never thought we could make peace with the system; because it was not for the sake of an object we pursued in rivalry with each other, but with the system itself, that we were at war. As I understood the matter, we were at war, not with its conduct, but with its existence; convinced that its existence and its hostility were the same. –Edmund Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

## Preface

The late Colonel Jeff Cooper, who wrote a column for *Guns & Ammo* magazine some years ago, once commented on the actions of an off-duty policeman who had attempted to stop an armed robbery while unarmed. He was shot and killed by the robbers. Cooper gave the policeman a ten for bravery and a zero for preparedness.

Those men and women who breached the Capitol building barricades in order to get at Congress were incredibly noble and brave. But what were they thinking? Our reason must be made to serve our hearts. Those brave, wonderful people should have known that our government is evil. You can't go up against such an evil entity unarmed. Protests do not work when the people protesting have been designated for slaughter by the powers that be. If the situation had been reversed, if Trump had won the election and Black Lives Matter barbarians and Antifa scum were storming the Capitol, they would have had a red carpet laid out for them, and the Federal police would have been ordered to stand down. And after standing down, they would have provided the rioters with milk and cookies. But no mercy will ever be shown by the Illuminati toward the unilluminated. In fact, Nancy Pelosi, who stands out for her supreme wickedness in a cabal of the wicked, said that the military was too kind to the protestors. "What if they had been black?" the wicked witch asked. We saw what happens with black rioters this past summer — they are allowed to burn, murder, and loot while the police stand down. And why didn't Trump order the military police to stand down in this case? I never blamed Trump for not stopping illegal immigration nor for not cleaning out the swamp, because I knew he had no support even within his own party for such initiatives. But I do blame him for not ordering the police or military defending our Capitol to stand down. What did he have to lose? Was he afraid he would be impeached? He has already been impeached and removed from office by way of the fraudulent election. Perhaps he did order the troops to stand down, and the policeman who murdered that unarmed woman acted against orders. I doubt it, because Trump, for all his bravery, is still half-liberal. I think he was afraid to face the disapproval of the liberals.

If we can't protest, then what can be done? We should do what the Scots did long ago in the town of Edinburgh (see Walter Scott's novel *The Heart of Midlothian*). When the townspeople had exhausted all legal means to remove a duly appointed bloody tyrant from their midst, they quietly, without a public announcement, took care of that bloody tyrant one dark night and then just as quietly returned home. So it was with Forrest and his men, and so it was in Skidmore, Missouri, in 1981, after the townspeople had tried in vain, by all legal means, to remove a bloody white tyrant from their midst.

As I understand it, one woman was shot to death, two men died of heart-related issues, and one woman died from an undetermined medical emergency. My heart and my prayers go out to them (yes, I pray for the dead; did not our Lord enjoin us to take all our trouble and cares to Him in prayer? I am troubled about their deaths because I care about those poor souls), to those incredibly brave, incredibly noble souls. But I must maintain that the woman who was slain and the woman who died did not belong there. What have we become when the women man the barricades? I understand the woman who was slain was a former member of the military. For shame on a nation that places women in the military. She is not to blame; she was merely following, imperfectly, a noble aim, without the support of a Christian-mentoring society which would have inspired her to step away from the ramparts and assume her God-given right to nurture and pray.

Need I point out that the media, part of the evil cabal called liberalism, labelled the protestors as 'rioters' after telling us for over a twelve-month that Antifa and Black Lives Matter murderers were 'protestors'? And what is to be said about the alternative 'conservative' news media, such as Newsmax? All they could do was plead for mercy from their liberal brethren: "Most of the protestors were nonviolent." Why do 'conservatives' who worship veterans that fought to make the world safe for communism in World War II regularly denounce any violence against an evil government that is infinitely worse than Adolph Hitler's government?

Let us see the light in this darkness called liberalism. Those who breached the ramparts had something within them that cannot be defeated. The liberals, at the height of their power, have seen the spirit above the dust that will bring them down.

---

When the left has triumphed, conservatives—if they are to remain conservative—must become counterrevolutionaries. What Burke said of France after the French revolution applies to every European nation. Burke said that the true Frenchmen were in exile because Jacobin France was not Christian France:

*The present system in France is not the ancient France. It is not the ancient France with ordinary ambition and ordinary means. It is not a new power of an old kind. It is a new power of a new species. When such a questionable shape is to be admitted for the first time into the brotherhood of Christendom, it is not a mere matter of idle curiosity to consider how far it is, in its nature, alliable with the rest, or whether "the relations of peace and amity" with this new State are likely to be of the same nature with the usual relations of the States of Europe.*

Once democracy, which is based on the demons' flight from Christ ([Luke 8](#)), becomes the organizational model of government in a nation, that nation is committed to the principle of 'ever leftward' toward the pit of hell. The legislators in a democracy are all leftists—they are all moving leftward to hell. The battles that spring up are between those who want to move gradually toward hell—in our country, they are called Republicans—and those who want to move rapidly toward hell. Those people are called, in our country, Democrats. But the important thing in a democracy is that all citizens sign on to the 'progression' of mankind; they must believe in the 'new power of a new species' and reject 'the brotherhood of Christendom.'

Can we be at peace with this new power, this democratic entity? No, we cannot be at peace with such a power. It is a giant succubus that will draw all people toward it and consume them body and soul. The left always progresses toward hell by the enfranchisement of an 'oppressed' minority. Once that oppressed minority is enfranchised, that minority has a vested interest in supporting the progression of the left. The liberals achieved their greatest success with the blacks. The banner of 'we are not racist' has served the liberals well. Whenever a black does not fall in line with liberalism, he or she is told they are not black, because a black must support the leftward lurch into hell in order to prevent a mythical right wing from returning to the inequality and 'racism' of the past.

Tragically we have also witnessed, in the 20<sup>th</sup> century and the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the virtual collapse of the traditional right wing bastion of European civilization – the Christian woman. By holding out that apple, the apple of equality, to the new Eves, the left destroyed the heart of Western civilization. After the rape fest in Cologne, Germany, a few years ago, a female Danish journalist asked, "Where were the men, why didn't they do something?" She went on to say that she did not want to go back to the bad old days of patriarchy, but she did want men to be men and protect women. You can't have it both ways. The men of Victorian Britain would not have tolerated a rape fest because they believed that the females of the species were their helpmeets, they believed that women were the life nurturers and the life bearers, and as such they deserved to be protected and treasured. When they became part of the leftist march toward hell, when they became a legion of Lady Macbeths, why should they still be protected and treasured?

After the Fall, our Lord spoke to Eve: "Unto the woman He said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception: in sorrow thou shall bring forth children: and thy desire shall be to thy husband and he shall rule over thee." That radical leftward shift from God's love to Satan's promise of equality with God that Adam and Eve made in the Garden of Eden was countered by Christ's charitable outreach on the Cross. Our propensity to sin remains, but through Him we were given a chance to restore our fallen nature. There is nothing on this earth that speaks of heaven more than a Christian family in which the male and the female have complementary roles rather than competitive ones. When equality enters into the familial hearth fire, there is no refuge from the devil; he is the omnipresent force from outside and from within. Can you really mount a campaign for Christian things – protection for the unborn, protection from the colored heathen within your nation and from without — when you cherish, through the democratic process, Satan's promise of, "You shall be as Gods"? There can be no true families and no true nations when the family and the state are democratized.

Biden claims Trump is attacking the democratic process by challenging the election results. And the mistress turned president in all but name, Kamala Harris, has articulated the moral underpinning of liberalism: "We want equity not equality." Yes, that sums it up: "Some are more equal." Biden and Harris are correct: the democratic process exists to ensure the continual dominance of Satan in what was once Christendom. Trump, who retains a few instincts of a European, senses that something has gone terribly wrong in America and Europe, but he does not understand that it is the democratic process that allows that wrong, the enthronement of Satan in the European world, to continue on in perpetuity. Trump fought nobly against all the forces of hell, but he fought without the full armour of Christ, and now, tragically, the liberals, like the hellhounds they are, will tear him to shreds while the clergymen, the Supreme Court justices, the Republicans, and the conservative pundits will look on with a Thomistic-Buddhistic quietude and thank whatever pig gods they pray to that they had the good sense to stay with the winning side. Burke describes such moral cowards in his great work, [On Regicide France after the Revolution](#):

*In truth, the tribe of vulgar politicians are the lowest of our species. There is no trade so vile and mechanical as government in their hands. Virtue is not their habit. They are out of themselves in any course of conduct recommended only by conscience and glory. A large, liberal and prospective view of the interests of States passes with them for romance; and the principles that recommend it for the wanderings of a disordered imagination. The calculators compute them out of their senses. The jesters and buffoons shame them out of every thing grand and elevated. Littleness, in object and in means, to them appears soundness and sobriety. They think there is nothing worth pursuit, but that which they can handle; which they can measure with a two-foot rule; which they can tell upon ten fingers.*

Yes, the Republican shadows of the liberals have been computed out of their senses by their liberal brethren. In the recent pro-Trump protest a very small percentage of the protestors got it right: they became violent. And what was the reaction of the Republican and 'conservative' establishment? They denounced the protestors who became violent because their violence endangered the 'democratic process.'<sup>(1)</sup> Do you need a translation of such doublespeak? Then let me translate—"We, the Republican servants of Satan, must continue to eat and drink at Satan's pig trough. And it is the demon-cratic process that enables us to eat and drink at Satan's pig trough now and forever." The 'violent' protestors are miracles of God's grace; they saw through the horror of the satanic entity called democracy. They are currently too few and they have no leader, but they have something within them that points us to something above and beyond Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

What do I make of the fact that Trump himself condemned the 'violent' protestors – "Be peaceful, be nonviolent"? Trump, like the vast majority of his followers, wants to blend Christianity and liberalism. They don't believe in the Christ of old, monarchial, aristocratic Europe, they believe in the new Christ of demon-cracy. But Satan and Christ are spiritual antagonists, so how can they be blended together? Trump was and is a brave man, with something inside of him that was and is struggling toward the light. However, if a man cannot give a name to that light, if he cannot see the real Aslan, the Christ of old Europe, he will ultimately be defeated by the mad-dog liberals who serve Satan. And those who follow him will be betrayed in deepest consequence, as the four martyrs were betrayed. The half-Christians will always lose to the fully committed Satanists, because the Satanists believe that Satan's kingdom of hell on earth can only be achieved by those who are violent: "The violent bear it away." The liberals act according to their faith. But the half-Christians who want to blend Christianity and liberalism will not act according to the Christian faith, they do not believe the Kingdom of Heaven is taken by violence, they believe that the Kingdom of heaven comes by uniting with Satan's minions in order to insure a perfect union of God and the devil. There is nothing on the face of the earth more reprehensible, more morally repugnant, than the American experiment in demon-cracy. We need no longer imagine what hell will be like, it is here and now in the United States of Satan.

We are reaping what the scholastics in the Catholic and the Protestant churches have sown. If man's reason receives God's revelation, independent of the human heart, which the scholastics maintain, then what prevents abstract reason from becoming man's God? Nothing prevents it. Robespierre was simply following the precepts of intellectual Christianity when he made a whore the Goddess of Reason. That great whore of Babylon, the Goddess of Reason, can be seen in all her satanic splendor whenever two or three are gathered together, in Church and State, in her name. No man is an island; we who are human need contact with other human beings. But what if humanity is divided between those who have renounced their humanity and those who are willing to blend what is human inside of them, a longing for the Mysterious Stranger, with that which is inhuman, the pig swill of liberalism? This final outrage of the 'conservatives' who have condemned the violence they should laud, gives us the answer to that question. We must walk away from those who want to blend Christ and Satan. We must walk away with the realization that some devils, and the satanic blending of democracy and Christianity is one such devil, can only be driven out by prayer and fasting.

This failure of the white grazers, the Trumpers, to see that they cannot make common cause with the liberals has broken my heart just as my parents' blending of Christianity and liberalism broke my heart. My mother was an ethical Christian who did not believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead, at least on a conscious level, and my father was a 'non-fundamentalist' Christian – the Old Testament was fairy stories, but the New Testament was true. But of course that truth was blended with the 'truth' that American democracy and Christianity were one and the same. When I became a Dream of the Rood Christian in my early twenties, I had to try to stay connected, in my heart, to my parents while maintaining a distance from their blended faith. What was difficult when I was a single man became even more difficult when I became a Christian father. How could I keep my children free of contagion while allowing them to experience the love of their grandparents? To this day I do not know the right and the wrong of my balancing act. Nor do I know the right and the wrong of my support for Trump and his followers. There was genuine humanity in Trump and those who supported him. But, oh, the horror of that blending process!

Why do men and women need to blend what is Christian with that which is satanic? It all, or so it seems to me, goes back to the original sin. Satan did not attack God directly, he did not tell Adam and Eve that God didn't exist, he told them that divinity rested in pure reason, divorced from their heart to heart connection to God. Whenever reason becomes the way to God, the path is made clear for man's reason and Satan's will to join together in defiance of the living God. We live in Satandom because we no longer believe that "the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men." If we are "foolish" as St. Paul was foolish, we will discover that the Mysterious Stranger has never and will never leave us bereft in this vale of tears.

No man should be an island, but if there are no human beings left on earth who believe in the Dream of the Rood we must make that island where Christ dwells into our world. Pray for the four martyrs who went like lambs to the slaughter. They were sacrificed, like so many of the unborn infants and the innocent whites who died before them, on the altars of liberalism. I wish that I had the power to destroy them all, the hellhounds of liberalism, but I do not. So I must rage against the dying of the light and I must pray. What else is left to us? In Thy name, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, we ask for a light in the darkness of Liberaldom to guide us safely home.+

(1) The 'conservatives' who worship 'peaceful protest' are still under the thrall of Liberaldom. They don't really want an end to the liberals' reign of terror, because they still have a place in Liberaldom. In a 'peaceful protest' you are saying to your rulers, "Hey, we represent a couple of million votes, you can't ignore us." But what if your rulers have turned off your votes? You can peacefully protest from now to doomsday, and you will not alter the status quo of Liberaldom. But of course the 'conservatives,' if they were really conservative, could see that obvious fact.

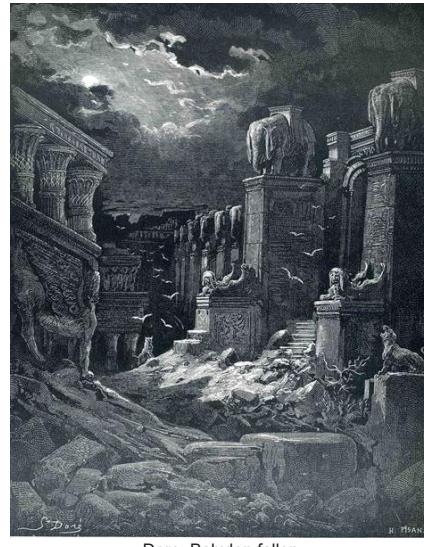
The barricade brigade whites are at the beginning. They have begun to understand the nature of demon-cracy. They have hearts that love much, but they still do not fully understand the evil of liberalism. If they did, they would not have launched a semi-peaceful suicide mission. Nor do I think Trump, who is half-liberal and half-Christian, fully understands just how evil the liberals are. He should flee the country now, with his entire family, or he will face the same fate as Louis XVI. These, our modern Jacobins, are much crueler than Robespierre, and he was the most bloodthirsty tyrant the European world has ever produced – until now.

# The Deed of Death

January 16, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Homeland, Jacobinism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Shakespeare



Dore. Babylon fallen

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach  
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death  
Art thou damned.

-Shakespeare, *King John*

---

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

*Revelations 18: 5*

---

I don't like the sci-fi genre in literature or movies, so I suppose I have no right to reference it, but Burke once quoted Bolingbroke even though he disliked his writings, so let me quote from the original *Star Trek* television show: "To boldly go where no man has gone before." On January 20<sup>th</sup>, the United States of America is going to go where no European nation has ever gone before: they are going to openly acknowledge that this country worships Satan. All the European nations under the guise of 'we the people' democracy have been trafficking with Satan for over one hundred years, but they never made it explicit because there were still many Europeans who needed the façade of Christianity to remain intact before they could wholeheartedly support demon-cracy. So the shadows of Christianity, Christian outward forms with weak marshmallow insides, such as 'prolife' movements and 'Christian' democratic parties, were allowed to remain in the Western world. But the prophetic fire has gone from the Christ-bearing people – the fire of men like Burke and Dostoyevsky, who warned the European people of the hellish world we would inhabit if we cast the Suffering Servant aside for our new manmade Jacobin systems of government. Will that fire ever return? We shall see, but as of now there is no indication that the spiritual fire of the prophets, which became part of the European people's soul when they embraced the embodiment of the prophetic fire, our Lord and Savior, will ever be seen in the European nations again.

What we have now in the European nations are little Christian marshmallow fires that are permitted to smolder so long as they do not threaten the larger satanic fire rapidly spreading throughout the European nations. What the Trump election, which became a non-election, represents is a declaration by the liberals that even the marshmallow fires shall be extinguished. There must be and there shall be no fire other than the one great fire – the all-consuming fire of the archangel Lucifer. The American tragedy is that we never had a right-wing. Without a right-wing, without men who are determined to conserve and defend a throne and altar consecrated to Christ, which is the guarantee that a people's Christian culture and traditions will be conserved, you do not really have a spiritual core in your nation worthy to defend. American 'conservatives' have always invoked our revolutionary founding fathers and our marvelous Constitution in their fight against their liberal brethren. They maintain that the American Revolution was not Jacobin in spirit, often citing Burke's opposition to certain unjust taxes that the British government imposed on the American colonies. But Burke never thought the American Revolution was a good thing. He told Benjamin Franklin he thought that America was much better off as part of Britain, but he did not feel you could force the Americans to be part of Britain if they didn't desire to be part of it. And in point of fact, one-third of the Americans wanted to stay with Britain (a whole colony of those Americans settled in New Brunswick), one-third were indifferent, and one-third wanted to be 'independent.' Conservatives who like to claim our Revolution was a conservative revolution are like the conservative Catholics who constantly defend the Vatican II documents by claiming they can be interpreted in light of traditional church teaching. Oh really? Then why haven't they been interpreted in light of traditional church teaching? And conversely, why, at every step along our wonderful constitutional path to hell, have our courts interpreted the Constitution with an eye on what is leftward and 'progressive'? And why was the anti-Jacobin South unconstitutionally forbidden to leave the Union when she perceived that the Northern government was a Jacobin government? The Constitution is mere paper and ink; it is our faith and our race that defines who we are as a people and what we should fight to preserve.[\(1\)](#)

The liberals are anti-Christian, and because they are anti-Christian, they are anti-white. Trump's victory in 2016 was a rearguard defensive action that took the liberals by surprise. But neither Trump nor his followers looked on his election as a rear-guard movement that bought white people some time to lick their wounds and mount a counterattack against the liberals. They didn't do what a defeated people should do, because they did not see themselves as a defeated people. They saw themselves as one faction of liberals who had just won a victory over another faction of liberals. About a month ago I mentioned that there was no spirit of counterrevolution among the Trump supporters I had talked to. Nor, apparently, was there any spirit of counterrevolution among the Trump supporters in the big march on Washington. The liberals successfully depicted the protestors who breached the barricade as 'violent rioters,' but they were not. They were unarmed and determined to carry their nonviolent protest to the halls of Congress. The poor deluded souls did not realize that there is no justice or mercy in a nation consecrated to Satan.

Let us look, one more time as it fades into oblivion, at the Trump phenomenon. Who were the hard-core Trumpers? Why did, and do, the liberals hate them and Trump? And what is behind the Trumpers' pacifism and inability to see the demonic nature of their enemies? Everything in European culture is centered on Christianity. All the modern heresies, Jacobinism, Americanism, Marxism, millennialism, and negro worship are Christian heresies, and liberalism is the synthesis of all the anti-Christian heresies. In the United States the synthesis of all those heresies has reached its most advanced stage. What was tolerated 20 years ago can no longer be tolerated today, because the liberal express train to hell can never stop or turn back. The Trumpers accepted most of the liberal agenda; they were willing to worship a blended Christ who was not the Christ of old Europe, and they were willing to worship the negro, but they wanted white people to be included in the universal liberal aggregate. However, that could not be tolerated because the non-illuminated whites, the whites who would not condemn whiteness itself as the original sin, had to be purged. The non-illuminated whites did not want to be purged, which is why they supported Trump, but ultimately, because they are devout believers in liberalism, they could not make war against the liberals. They will go to their doom, reciting their democratic litany: "We are non-violent, we are not racist, we are non-violent; we are not racist, we believe in the democratic process; though the democratic process slay us yet will we have faith in it."[\(2\)](#) As they recite the litany, the Trumpers salute an American flag

right before they line up to go into the execution chambers that have been prepared for them. Do I exaggerate? Unfortunately I do not. Every time two or three Trumpers are gathered together, you hear the litany of racial and religious suicide.

Our Lord tells us in *Luke 12: 34* that, "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." What do the Trumpers treasure, where are their hearts? Ah, there's the rub. The Trumpers' hearts are imprisoned by intellectual theories of God and patriotism. In religion their God is an esoteric God created by a break-away Anglican cleric in the early 1830s who made Christ subordinate to the unrepentant Jew. And their patriotism? It is not grounded in pietas – "I will fight for those of my own blood" – it is grounded in the equality heresy – "My country, 'tis of thee, sweet land of liberty" – liberty from any blood connection to our kith and kin and our God.

Our prayer should be "His will be done on earth as it is in heaven." But who is the He whose will should be done? Is it the Christ of old Europe or is it the blended Christ of the new Europe? The blended Christ is subordinate to Satan, which is why the 'conservatives' fell all over themselves to condemn the 'violence' of the few: "most were non-violent." Do the liberals ever condemn the violence of their minions? No, they do not. Because they are on the right side, they belong to Satan.

Satan is not an original thinker. He parodies, in everything he does, the living God. Satan wants his will to be done on earth as it is in hell. And in hell there is no heart-to-heart communion among mortals and there is no heart-to-heart connection to the living God. The Trumpers want to maintain some remnants of humanity within the confines of hell. That cannot be. You must either resist the liberals' determination to go where no nation has gone before – to hell on earth – with all your heart and soul – which means "to the knife" – or you must acquiesce to the liberals and descend into Satan's hell on earth. January 20<sup>th</sup> will either be the beginning of the counterrevolution or it will be the final bonfire that shall completely consume the white Europeans in its flames. It seems like it will be the latter, but there is always the fairy tale ending: "When hope seems nearly gone, God's relief to us will surely come."

Will God's relief "surely come"? *John 14: 14* is a very comforting verse, and it is also a very troubling verse: "If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it." What if we ask something in His name, and nothing happens? The unanswered prayer, particularly if it is a fervent heartfelt prayer, is a very great obstacle to faith. I don't have an adult answer to the unanswered prayer that would satisfy a philosopher. In pure philosophy there is no loving God, but is there something beyond philosophy, are there "more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophy"? As a young boy, I was sent to a camp for boys; the theory of such camps was that young boys could meet and do all sorts of 'fun' thing together. One of those 'fun' things at the camp I attended was a long canoe trip that entailed camping overnight in the woods – "Lions and tigers and bears, oh my!" On the second day of the canoe trip we were all supposed to canoe over what seemed, in my child's mind, to be very treacherous rapids. I'm sure they weren't really very treacherous, but in my mind's eye they were a death trap. Some of the boys felt as I did and refused to go. One of the counselors, with great disgust, had the "cowardly" boys take up their canoes and walk around the rapids. I was too cowardly to admit I was afraid, so I got to have the 'fun' of canoeing down the rapids. Again, I must stress that I thought the rapids meant death; I was afraid. But I had a child's heart that had been exposed to the Gospel of Christ. I had never heard of St. Thomas Aquinas or John Calvin, but I had heard of gentle Jesus who bids us take our cares and troubles to Him in prayer. I prayed to gentle Jesus and I lost all my fears. I never as an adult have ever been able to feel the complete security and confidence in God's grace and His loving personal concern for me that I felt then when I was still a child in my faith. In similar circumstances as an adult I would have said, "Plenty of people pray and their prayers are unanswered. Many good people suffer terribly and they pray. Many evil people do not pray and they flourish..." That and similar conundrums would occur to my 'adult' mind.

I prayed fervently for Trump's victory, and I know there were others, there were millions, who prayed fervently for Trump's victory. But there were also millions upon millions of Southerners who prayed for the victory of the South in that terrible civil war. And yet then, as now, the forces of Satan, won. We cannot comprehend the seeming indifference of God to our prayers unless we go beyond the magic of intellectual Christianity to the deeper magic, the magic of the heart-of-my-heart and blood-of-my-blood faith in Christ Jesus. This election should make us cast off demon-cracy and fight evil as men, at least European men, were meant to fight evil. The Trumpers who will not fight do not know the Christ who is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last." They only know an ecumenical Christ who floats around in a universal aggregate of false gods – the gods of color, the god of the Jews, and the god of demon-cracy, who is Satan. We cannot seek redemption from the devil. And isn't that what the Trumpers did by placing all their hopes in our supremely satanic Supreme Court?<sup>(1)</sup>

I have actually heard Trumpers say they were against the men and women who stormed the halls of Congress because they destroyed public property. Oh, the horror of sympathy for the devil and his minions! Those congressmen and women are the devil's own. If the bravados who breached the barricades had killed all the members of Congress who intended to vote against a reelection every single execution would have been meritorious. Those creatures from hell, those satanic, inhuman, congressional vultures from hell, with malice aforethought, intend to consecrate our nation to Satan on January 20<sup>th</sup>. But that is not as bad – horrors of horrors! – as destroying public property, is it?<sup>(4)</sup> It all comes down to this – Christians of the old European stock do not permit the rule of Satan. We must be blood and heart Christians. If we insist on being demon-cratic and intellectual Christians, we shall see Satan's banner over our nation for the rest of our natural lives, and those who honor that banner shall burn in hell for all eternity. That is not a consummation that I wish for, but then I do not understand the 'higher' religion of demon-cracy, pacifism, and non-violence – non-violence on the white side and nothing but violence on the Illuminati's and the colored minions' side. If we see Him, our Lord Jesus Christ, with the eyes of a child, we will write a new chapter of European history; we will cast off the rule of Satan and live in the light of His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. +

---

(1) "Throw our paper platforms, preambles and resolutions, guaranties and constitutions, into the fire, and we should be none the worse off, provided we retained our institutions – and the necessities that begot, and have, so far, continued them." (George Fitzhugh)

The necessity that has begot and continued our institutions is the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

(2) The 'conservatives' in the alternative news outlets such as Newsmax and Breitbart are still behaving like Hitler in the bunker who ordered non-existent troops to fight a war he had already lost. They are still giving us the 'news' of the liberals' atrocities so that we can vote the liberals out. But we did vote against the liberals. We voted against them in record numbers and our votes were thrown back in our faces. I look on that as a challenge to a duel to the death. The conservative pundits seem to look on the liberals' challenge as a mandate to grovel before the liberal Sanhedrin and recite the democratic litany over and over again: "We are not racist, we are non-violent, we love democracy." And the cowardly Republicans and the Democrats in the House and Senate are vying with each other to see who can condemn the 'rioters' more. None of them condemned Black Lives Matter or Antifa, but the 'rioters' must be condemned. On January 20<sup>th</sup>, the cowardly senators and representatives of Congress, Republican and Democrat, should all, while keeping their social distance, join hands virtually while they sing, to the tune of "Let's All Gather at the River":

"Let's all gather before the liberal Sanhedrin,  
The wonderful, wonderful Sanhedrin,  
Let's all gather at the liberal Sanhedrin,  
That flows by the throne of Satan."

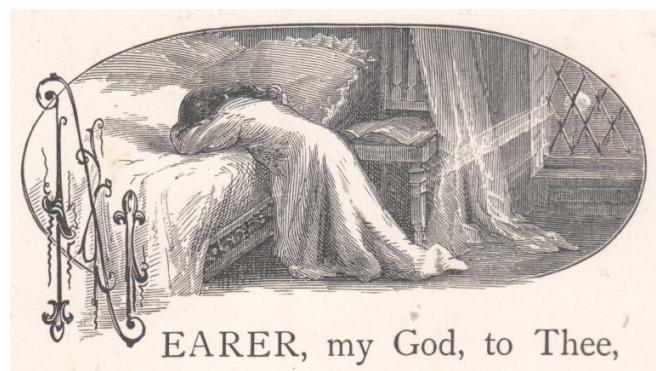
(3) Whatever his faults, Trump fought nobly for the disenfranchised white grazers. And because he fought for them, the liberals are still trying to send him to prison. It is not enough for them that he is leaving office, they must torture him and his family with the threat of jail. No one in the ranks of the Republican cowards will stand up for him. We can't deal with these satanic liberals peacefully. They don't want peace. They want to eliminate all things white and Christian.

I am frequently asked how I can admire Trump when he supports the American heresy. And I always answer the queries with, "For the same reason Sir Walter Scott supported the Georges who supplanted the Stewarts, while still admiring Bonnie Prince Charlie. Trump is at least a man; he has some remnant of Christian humanity in him. He is a lion among jackals and sheep. So is Curt Schilling, the baseball pitcher who will never be part of the jackals' Hall of Shame. Trump and Schilling may not have the whole integral Christian spirit we need, but the humanity and courage of men like Trump and Schilling is admirable. In an age when every single spark of humanity must be extinguished by order of the liberal Sanhedrin, it is not a little thing when some men who have a public voice speak out against the liberal Sanhedrin.

(4) There is a complete unreality about this election and its aftermath, a Gnostic unreality. The votes of flesh and blood people who voted for Trump became the computer printout votes of non-existent Gnostic people, all of whom voted for Biden, who ran a virtual, non-existent Gnostic campaign. Our Supreme Court made a non-decision, a Gnostic decision, to endorse the results of a Gnostic election. And our legislators, Republican and Democrat, endorsed the Gnostic results of the non-election. Now, I am told, there is going to be a virtual, Gnostic inauguration of a Gnostically elected president. But can the unreality of Satan's Gnosticism prevail forever? Real flesh and blood people voted for a man who looked on them as flesh and blood human beings. Will they be content to be Gnostically discarded into outer darkness? That is the question.

# Through the Valley of the Shadow of Death

January 23, 2021  
Categories: Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Fear of racist label, Religion of Satan  
Tags: Shakespeare



Nearer to Thee!  
E'en though it be a cross  
That raiseth me

-Sarah Flower Adams

---

And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

-Revelations 13: 15-18

---

Early on in Shakespeare's King Lear, the evil, bastard son of Gloucester gives a fiery defense of bastardy and evil. In the margin of his volume of Shakespeare, Melville commented on Edmund's speech: "There is an energy to demonism that mere virtue often lacks." Therein lies the answer to Trump's electoral defeat and the demise of the European people in the nations that once belonged to them. The white-hating liberals are animated by the demonic energy of Satan while the white grazers are devoid of the spiritual force necessary to combat the liberals, despite the fact that in sheer numbers they outnumber the liberals. This is not only the case in America, it is the case in all the European countries. What started out as a tiny liberal minority has grown into a large minority, but still, even in our modern pigsty European nations, the mad-dog liberals do not constitute a majority of the whites. And that is why the liberals must continue to 'de-white' the European nations; they need to join with the colored barbarians in order to form a majority coalition against the whites who are not willing to embrace liberalism in its entirety.

The unique feature of the American pigsty is that the American liberals in this last 'election' found a way to dispense with building a majority coalition. The un-silent minority simply imposed their will on the majority by fiat. The American election fraud has been noted by the liberals in the other European nations. Now they see that they do not have to wait for majority coalitions to impose their will on the white grazers, they can simply declare themselves the victors in every election. Who will say them nay? Weakness is something you dare not show to a satanic enemy, and that is what the white grazers showed in the election of 2020. They allowed the liberals to steal the election and they did nothing. Appealing to the satanic Supreme Court is the equivalent of doing nothing; it is "seeking redemption from the devil." Now it is open season on the non-illuminated whites, because the liberals know they will not fight.

The Illuminati, the liberals, have been at war with non-illuminated whites for over two hundred years, so what has really changed in this last election? What has changed is that the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage what they are doing. And when they no longer need to camouflage what they are doing, they can proceed with the destruction of the non-illuminated whites at an accelerated rate. The absence of a right-wing with men committed to a civilization grounded in pietas – the love of one particular people, those of your own blood, and the love of one particular God, Jesus Christ — has proved to be the downfall of the European people. Without white pietas they do not have the "passionate intensity" to combat the liberals' passionate, satanic hatred of the white race.

Yeats saw that the "blood red tide was loose," because "the best lack all conviction, while the worst are full of passionate intensity." But Yeats sought to counter "the worst" with his occult theology. He believed the 'discredited' and 'obsolete' faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, could not stand up to the demonism of "the worst." And he was right, to a certain extent: Intellectual Christianity cannot stand up to the satanic faith of the Illuminati because there is no true faith, the kind of faith that moves mountains, in intellectual Christianity. There is no blood and heart in intellectual Christianity, and faith, according to our Lord and His apostle, St. Paul, is of the blood and of the heart. Intellectual Christianity is grounded in a denial of the wellspring of faith, that still quiet voice in the human heart, which bids us seek our Lord and Savior. Can we give that still, quiet voice a name? Yes, we can. It is the Holy Ghost. And we are told by our Lord that the denial of the Holy Ghost is the one sin that shall not be forgiven.

In the Gospels the demons know who Christ is, and so does their master, the devil. But neither the demons nor the devil have any understanding of Christ because their demonic hearts are full of pride, envy, and fear of Christ. They do not love Him, they hate Him. But they can't attack Him directly, so they attack Him by attacking His children, those who believe in Him and love Him. In an old English poem from what the liberals call the Dark Ages — because the light of Christ's love shone in those 'Dark Ages' — is a poet's depiction of Satan rallying his demonic troops:

*We must earnestly plan to satisfy our vengeance on Adam and on his children together with him, if ever we can, to deprive Him there of his desire, if we can in any way devise it. No longer do I look to regain that light, that happiness, which He thinks long to enjoy with the host of his angels. We can never succeed in appeasing the wrath of mighty God. Let us snatch it from the sons of men, that heavenly kingdom, now that we may not have it, cause them to abandon His allegiance, to break the behest which He uttered. Then He will be angry at them in His heart, dismiss them from His protection; then they shall seek this hell and these dread depths; then we can have them for our followers, the sons of men, in these firm bonds.*

Satan sets forth:

*Then God's foe began to prepare himself, ready in his trappings; he had a faithless heart. He set on his head a helmet which made its wearer unseen, and bound it full tightly, fastened it with clasps. He knew many speeches of wicked words. He winged his way thence, passed through the doors of hell; by the fiend's art the fire was cleft in two. He purposed to beguile God's followers, men, secretly by evil deeds, to mislead and allure them, so that they should grow hateful to God.*

- "Genesis B." in R. K. Gordon. Anglo-Saxon Poetry

We must see that the liberals have taken on the mantle of Satan. Everything they do is dictated by their hatred of Christ, whom they attack through His people. No European can be admitted into the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth unless he completely repudiates the Christ of old Europe. That is the conundrum of the white grazers, the non-illuminated whites who voted for Trump. They want so desperately to be part of the liberals' world, but they also want to retain some Christian things as well. So they attempt to blend Christ with liberalism. The Protestants blend Judaism, negro worship, and Christianity, while the Roman Catholics blend Islam, Judaism, negro worship, tree-hugging, Buddhism, and every other religion under the sun with Christianity. And the more syncretic an organized "Christian" church becomes, the more evil it becomes. The Roman Catholics went 60% for Biden while the Evangelicals went 75% for Trump. But in the end every attempt to blend Christ results in either a complete embrace of the devil or a surrender to the passionate intensity of the devil and his minions. You can't be passionately for both the devil and for Christ. If you reject the Christ of old Europe, because the Europeans of the past were 'racist' you will end up in the liberals' camp. Yes, our ancestors were 'racist.' They were so racist that they loved their own people as Christ loved them. Without that love for our own people, in and through Christ, we are nothing, we haven't the passion to love or hate. And without that passion, without that spiritual intensity, a man or woman becomes the prey of the devil who roams the world seeking the ruin of souls. The weak majority without a passionate faith will always lose to the devil's own who have a strong, passionate, intense faith – the hatred of Jesus Christ. The white grazers love Christ with a diluted love – they want a non-Europe-centric Christ more compatible with liberalism. And the liberals want undiluted Satanism. Who wins when those two forces clash? Those who hate with the unadulterated hatred of Satan shall always win out over those who want a little bit of Christianity in their liberal churches.

Lincoln said that the Civil War in this country would determine whether a nation conceived by Satan could long endure. I know he used the term "conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal," but the proposition amounts to the same thing – conceived and dedicated to Satan. Equality is the nice sounding catchword that the devil uses to seduce mankind. He promised Adam and Eve equality with God, and his minions promise mankind a utopian equality of swine if they will embrace liberty, equality, and fraternity. But equality never means what it should mean: instead of a moral equality before God, the devil wants to see men turned to swine. And he wants some swine to be more equal: the colored swine and the illuminated swine. Nothing is more reprehensible than watching the swine, Republican and Demon-crat, competing for the pig swill of this world while stopping any attempt to de-swine the swine, to turn them back into humans again. The 'conservatives' always seek to please the liberals by showing them they are non-violent and not racist, because they want to be part of the devil's Pigsquealia.

Why, if white pietas is evil, is the devil so passionately against it? The major weapon of Satan's minions is always the race card. Their friendly opponents, the non-illuminated white grazers, are always put on the defensive by accusations of racism. They plead, on their knees, that they are not racist while conceding that their ancestors were racist. But their ancestors were full-blooded, passionate Christians. If the modern white grazer wants to be part of Liberaldom he must, or so he thinks, repudiate the passionate, heartfelt faith of his ancestors, the European people, in exchange for a faith in the unrepentant Jew, the sacred negro, Islam, the people of the Amazon rain forest, and, bringing up the rear, Jesus Christ. Is that a faith that will defeat the devil? No, it is not.

In his concession speech, Trump said to his followers that they had started something. No, they didn't. If Trump and his followers still believe in demon-cracy after what has happened to them, then it would have been much better had Trump never run for the presidency.<sup>(1)</sup> The great value of Trump's defeat in 2020 is that it stripped away the masks from the liberals' faces and revealed their satanic visages. We can see clearly, if we have eyes to see, that democracy is demon-cracy. When we have elections, they are only meant to choose candidates who comply with Satan's will. If there is one single spark of Christian humanity in a candidate, then that candidate will be crushed as Trump was crushed. Our courts, particularly our Supreme Court, are satanic; our legislators, Republican and Demon-crat, are satanic; and our churches exist only to caution us against embracing the racism of the Christ-bearing, non-democratic Christians of old Europe. "We must," they tell us, "be democratic and inclusive," and we must not be "racist and insular." But we must be 'racist'; we must love our own in and through Christ. If we don't, we will be unable to love Christ and hate the devil, we will continue to be the slaves of the demon-cratic Democrats and their shadows, the Republicans, who both serve the archangel Satan.

I have always looked on Aeschylus' play Prometheus Bound as a Christian play even though it predates Christ's entry into human history. I view it as Christian because Aeschylus portrays the divinity of charity. Prometheus opposed the cruel gods of Mt. Olympus – he stole fire from them and gave it to mankind because he felt sorry for suffering humanity. And of course we know what his punishment was – he was bound upon a rock, with eagles pecking his entrails. Aeschylus' vision of charity, that charity had to be the main attribute of a true God, was a prefiguration of the Christ story. All the truly great stories include the suffering servant. What was great in Trump's story was that he was on Mt. Olympus with the Illuminati of Liberaldom. He could have remained on Mt. Olympus and watched while his fellow gods tortured and destroyed the non-illuminated, the mere mortals who make up the ranks of the non-illuminated whites. But instead, he came down from Mt. Olympus as a forerunner of the one true God, the Suffering Servant, who was tied to a cross instead of a rock while the scribes, the Pharisees, and the pagan Romans pecked at His entrails. What is noble in Trump was his charitable outreach to non-illuminated whites who had, until he ran for office, no-one to stand between them and the devil's minions. And what was noble in Trump's supporters was that they gave him their love because of his sacrifice for them. But where the whole Trump movement falls apart is at the vital heart of existence. All that we are as a people and as individuals is bound up with our racial hearth fire and pietas. If we deny our racial hearth fire, if we condemn white pietas, we will forever be the slaves of the devil who keeps his kingdom in order by making the living God into an intellectual construct. Without pietas we can have no blood ties to man or to God. We won't be able to love and hate with all our hearts. And consequently we will lose all the major battles in life to the liberals, who are incapable of love but who hate with the passion and fury of Satan.

The moral zeitgeist belongs to the liberals — they have a purity of faith. That was glaringly apparent during this last election year. The liberals' minions burned, looted, and murdered with impunity last summer while the white grazers recited their litany of non-violence and Americanism. And the conservatives would not accept a leadership role in a counterrevolution; instead they sought to conserve liberalism. They wanted to 'humanize' the devil instead of combating him. Why do they want to sup with the devil? Because the devil is a "very clever fellow." As Hawthorne tells us in "The Celestial Railroad," as Melville tells us in The Confidence-Man, and as Josh Turner tells us in "The Long Black Train," the devil always promises us something that Christ won't give us – the kingdom of heaven on this earth. What that kingdom entails is different to different people. For a satanic Supreme Court Justice such as Amy Coney Barrett, it gives her the opportunity to have a blended, interracial family, to wear pontifical robes, and to use those robes as an excuse to sanction the devil's rule. A conservative pundit needs the devil to guarantee that he can continue with his punditry on into eternity. If he attacks the devil's system, if he calls democracy demon-cracy, then he will lose his pundit credentials. And on it goes – the Republican legislators prefer Biden because Biden supports an unadulterated reign of Satan without one single Christian glitch in Satan's machinery, and the white grazers must ultimately go along with the 'conservatives' who conserve liberalism, because they also want something they think only the liberals can provide. And the word 'think' is the operative word. For where our treasure is, there will our heart be also. Religion has become, in the Western world, a thing of the mind. The liberals have taken Satan into their hearts, and they have advanced his cause in the intellectual arena – in academia, in the churches (which have become pathetic 'Amen' choruses to academia), and in all of our major media outlets. The white grazer hasn't the heart to overcome that propaganda deluge. His resistance was his support for some humanity within Satandom, hence his support for Trump. And now that Trump has lost, the white grazers' resistance is "my vote has been stolen" posters.

Forrest's counterrevolution outlasted his lifetime; his people retained their culture into the 1950s before they completely surrendered to liberalism. Franco's counterrevolution lasted for his lifetime and as soon as he died the Spanish people immediately embraced liberalism. And Pinochet, that brave and noble man, was forced to witness the return of his people to the pigsty of liberalism before his death. Each counterrevolution became weaker as the heart of those counterrevolutions became more economic than Christian in substance. We must be motivated by a blood faith in the God of mercy and the love of our own people, we must have "that charity of honor" in order to fight and win a counterrevolution and then sustain that counterrevolution. That is why it is Forrest and his Christian soldiers who must be our exemplars; their counterrevolution outlasted them because it was grounded in pietas and was sustained by pietas. When the liberals' narrative prevailed – "the old South and Old Europe were racist" – the counterrevolution, the anti-Jacobin movement, failed.

You cannot mount a counterrevolution based on purely economic motives. It is completely legitimate to vote for the candidate with sound economic policies, but economics cannot be primary. We must love our Christian heritage, we must love as our 'racist' European ancestors loved. In that old hymn sung by those blessed Christian European heroes as they went to their deaths on the Titanic, having placed the women and children in the lifeboats – "Nearer, my God, to Thee! E'en though it be a cross That raiseth me" – we see what pietas is. To sing that hymn and to believe it, as those men who loved their own in and through the Savior did, is all in all.

We shall not put a dent in Satan's reign of terror, of which the good old USA is the leader and sustainer, until we have white pietas once again. How can we be nearer to God when He bids us take up our cross in order to follow Him? Our ancestors knew how that was possible, but the modern Europeans do not know how it is possible because they have forsaken their hearts in order to embrace all or part of liberalism. That still, quiet voice, the Holy Ghost, is still alive in our hearts. If we listen to His voice, He will point us to the vital center of old Europe, our Lord and Savior, who will sustain us in the counterrevolution that we must fight. +

(1) My extreme depression in the wake of this electoral defeat is like unto that of Jacob Marley in The Christmas Carol, who wants to interfere in human lives for their own good but cannot. I want to help my family members to weather this tragedy, but I must watch my women weep and my sons deprived of work through the COVID-19 'crisis' without being able to help them to the extent that I would like to help them. And secondly – I love Trump for what he tried to do for the non-illuminated white grazers. Now that he has no official standing, I fear for his family and for him, yet I can do nothing to help him. And thirdly, I cannot prepare the white grazers for what is coming upon them, because they still are "so far from doing harms that they suspect none." They still believe in demon-cracy and the benevolence of the liberals: "They are just misguided."

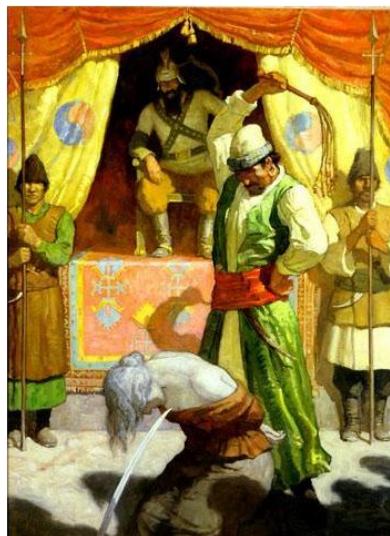
I take no pleasure in, 'I told you so.' Edgar is right: "Men must endure their going hence even as they are coming hither." But to observe the suffering of your loved ones and to be unable to alleviate that suffering is the hardest task given us on this earth. Yes, we must pray. When hope seems not just nearly gone, but completely gone, we still must pray because that is what our Lord, through the Holy Ghost, tells us we must do.

# Military Junta

January 30, 2021

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Jacobinism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Edmund Burke



N. C. Wyeth

The nature of things requires that the army should never act but as an instrument. The moment that, erecting itself into a deliberative body, it shall act according to its own resolutions, the government, be it what it may, will immediately degenerate into a military democracy; a species of political monster, which has always ended by devouring those who have produced it. —Burke

---

The Illuminati, the liberals, have been at war with non-illuminated whites for over two hundred years, so what has really changed in this last election? What has changed is that the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage what they are doing. And when they no longer need to camouflage what they are doing, they can proceed with the destruction of the non-illuminated whites at an accelerated rate. The absence of a right-wing with men committed to a civilization grounded in pietas — the love of one particular people, those of your own blood, and the love of one particular God, Jesus Christ — has proved to be the downfall of the European people. Without white pietas they do not have the “passionate intensity” to combat the liberals’ passionate, satanic hatred of the white race. —CWNY

---

## Preface

Without a predetermined intent I see I have relied very heavily on Burke in this week’s post. But how could it be otherwise since I am writing about a leftist, military coup similar to the military coup in France in 1789?

The age of prophecy ended with the coming of Christ, who was the fulfillment of the prophets’ vision. But during the Christian centuries of our people, God has always supplied us with men of vision who warned us what would happen if we abandoned Him who is our common hope. When Satan became incarnate in Jacobin France, God sent us a champion, Edmund Burke, to challenge the forces of Satan’s new order, in the name of Christ, the King. At first the ‘best’ men of Europe, men such as Walter Scott, championed Burke. But in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the tide turned: the ‘worst’ prevailed. The philosophy of Satan — the philosophy of Thomas Paine and Jean Jacques Rousseau — became the new religion of the Europeans. And the linchpin of that philosophy was and continues to be the Noble Savage who has replaced the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

The European people must forsake nature and nature’s god, the Noble Savage, before they can regain their humanity and become His champions instead of Satan’s lap dogs. The religion of the ‘enlightened’ men, the Paines and the Rousseaus, makes men worse than beasts, it makes them philosophers, who reject all things human for all things satanic:

*He melts with tenderness for those only who touch him by the remotest relation, and then, without one natural pang, casts away, as a sort of offal and excrement, the spawn of his disgusting amours, and sends his children to the hospital of foundlings. The bear loves, licks, and forms her young, but bears are not philosophers. Vanity, however, finds its account in reversing the train of our natural feelings. —Burke*

Of course the question is — what violates our natural feelings? Is it natural that we should adhere to Rousseau’s ‘natural’ philosophy of inhumanity? Or is it natural that we should love our own in and through the Savior, Jesus Christ? The conflict within the hearts of the Trumpers, who wanted to blend the love of their own with the love of an abstract philosophy with the noble black savage at its center, allowed the liberals to complete their conquest of the white race on November 3rd. Will that conquest be a permanent, irrevocable conquest? No, it shall not be permanent. Now that the “peace, that I deem’d no peace, is over and done,” the “no peace” of demon-cracy, we can lift up our eyes unto the hills and fight the devil’s minions, instead of democratically cringing and crawling before them.

*For the peace, that I deem’d no peace, is over and done,  
And now by the side of the Black and the Baltic deep,  
And deathful-grinning mouths of the fortress, flames  
The blood-red blossom of war with a heart of fire.*

*Let it flame or fade, and the war roll down like a wind,  
We have proved we have hearts in a cause, we are noble still,  
And myself have awaked, as it seems, to the better mind.  
It is better to fight for the good than to rail at the ill;  
I have felt with my native land, I am one with my kind,  
I embrace the purpose of God, and the doom assign’d.*

*-Alfred Lord Tennyson*

---

It is important, since language is sermonic, to call what happened November 3rd by its correct name: It was a military coup by a determined, violent, leftist army against a democratically elected President. Once that President was deposed, he was forced into exile with his family and a few of his followers. He is only in exile until the military junta currently in power can prepare their trumped up case (no pun intended) against him and bring him to trial. The outcome of that trial, like all trials in a leftwing, military dictatorship, has been predetermined.

Guilty as charged! Trump will be imprisoned after the trial and possibly executed, but it is much more likely that he will die mysteriously of unknown causes while in prison. While Trump faces his fate, all those people who supported the former President will be purged from the new order. That is the way military coups work. Biden has already created a goon squad and given them their instructions: "All religious fanatics, nativists, and racists must be purged." And in order to ensure that the leftist cabal doing the purging is protected, an army of National Guard troops guards the capitol. That is also the way military dictatorships must go about their business. They have no moral legitimacy and no popular support, so they must rely on sheer force to maintain themselves in power. I am told that Biden's significant other gives the troops cookies in the hope such offerings will offset the fact that they must live in giant parking garages. Such 'peace' offerings would not make me guard the enemies of my God and my people, but Esau sold his birthright for a pot of lentils, so maybe the National Guardsmen will betray their God and their people for a few chocolate chip cookies. We shall see in the months ahead.

Up to the time of the French Revolution, many of the European Christian sectarians who placed an unholy emphasis on their particular form of church organization disputed Burke's claim that, "All the nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines." But we must, if we see European history through and not with the eye, concede that Burke's assessment is correct. If we try to understand our people's history with our hearts then we can see the living God acting in and through them. And because His image was clearly embodied in the culture of the antique Europeans, the devil made it his mission to destroy that image:

*The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.*

-Burke

"That was then, not now — that was only Robespierre's France, and Burke was an extremist," is generally the response to any suggestion that the liberals' march to utopia in all the European nations is grounded in Satan's hatred of the living God, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. But the overriding passion of all liberal, leftist revolutions is the hatred of Jesus Christ. Each revolution differs somewhat in their local strategies and their "subordinate doctrines," but they are all united in that essential passion — they must attack Jesus Christ by destroying the Christ-bearing race. They must, at the behest of Satan, alternately seduce and compel the European people into abandoning their allegiance to Christ, "to break the behest which He uttered."

All the modern European democracies are on the leftward road to hell on earth, but let us look at the two utopian leaders, America and France, in order to see how Christendom has become Satandom and why the United States has become the most completely satanic nation on the face of the earth. Let us get to the heart of the American experiment in demon-cracy by going to the poetic inspiration of the American Revolution — it was Thomas Paine, the religious atheist, the man to whom Washington always turned when he needed to rally his troops:

*I do not believe in the creed professed by the Jewish church, by the Roman church, by the Greek church, by the Turkish church, by the Protestant church, nor by any church that I know of. My own mind is my own church.*

And then he proceeds to tell us about our faith in Jesus Christ:

*Of all the systems of religion that ever were invented, there is none more derogatory to the Almighty, more unedifying to man, more repugnant to reason, and more contradictory in itself, than this thing called Christianity. Too absurd for belief, too impossible to convince, and too inconsistent for practice, it renders the heart torpid, or produces only atheists and fanatics. (1)*

How does Paine, the atheist, justify his atheism? He is not, he tells us, an atheist; he believes in "nature and nature's God." And whom may that be? It is the Noble Savage of Rousseau who has been revealed to all mankind through the pure, deified reason of enlightened men such as Thomas Paine and Jean Jacques Rousseau.

The enlightened brain-trust of our experiment in demon-cracy decided to go with the seductive road to utopia. They cloaked their rebellion against the living God in the seductive garb of religious liberty and economic prosperity: "You can have your churches, you can keep what you earn, so long as you pay homage to our public God — which is nature, as defined by the minds of the enlightened ones." Whenever the seduction was seen for what it was, a revolution against Christ's reign of charity in order to install a satanic regime of merciless cruelty as was the case in 1860, the whistle blowers, in this case, the Southerners, were put to the sword by the non-seductive, masculine side of the liberal dragon. When the South was finally subdued in the 1950s, the softer, seductive Jacobinism resurfaced in our nation. Trump, who did not represent a counter-revolution but only a slight regression on the road to utopia, forced the liberals to return to the methods used in 1860, to violently impose their will on the recalcitrant, unilluminated whites. It seems, from my perspective, the satanic seduction of "We the People" demon-cracy was working quite well for the liberals. Was it really necessary to abandon the seduction by staging a military coup? After all, Trump did not oppose liberalism itself, he only wanted to keep the non-illuminated whites within Liberaldom. But having once progressed to the 'higher' stage of illumination, the devil's minions could not and would not go back. Will their intransigence, their abandonment of the seductive, democratic road to hell bring about their destruction? That is not something we know for sure. If the military coup is allowed to stand without a military response, then the liberals have successfully transitioned from the feminine side of Jacobinism to the masculine side, and then back to the feminine side. Like Talleyrand, they will have weathered all the political storms by being fully committed at all times to that which is expedient and satanic. They must always shun all things that 'stink' of self-sacrifice and Christian charity.

The French Jacobins started out with the direct approach — the guillotine for all non-illuminated whites — and then shifted to the seductive mode after Robespierre, but they never repudiated their regicide roots. Nicolas Sarkozy not very long ago affirmed France's cruel, utopian raison d'être by asserting that France is a regicide nation. The United States never was fully European as France was; our nation was always implicitly satanic from the beginning — "Government for the People and of the People" is a doctrine penned in hell. But "We the People," democracy was the liberals' seductive ploy, and the fact that they abandoned that ploy on November 3<sup>rd</sup> is significant. Is the blatancy of this military coup going to bring about a military reaction or have the European Americans been so beaten down and successfully propagandized that they will take all this without a whimper?

What are the parallels between the liberals' revolution of November 3<sup>rd</sup> and the French Revolution of 1789? First, there was a weak Christian populace. The French clergy at that time had become more concerned with the outward forms than the inner spirit of faith. They didn't care if the menfolk attended Jacobin gatherings all week so long as they sent their women to mass and attended mass for weddings and funerals:

*I have no doubt that some miserable bigots will be found here, as well as elsewhere, who hate sects and parties different from their own, more than they love the substance of religion; and who are more angry with those who differ from them in their particular plans and systems, than displeased with those who attack the foundation of our common hope. These men will write and speak on the subject in the manner that is to be expected from their temper and character. Burnet says, that when he was in France, in the year 1683, "the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this—they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly." If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet's story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is "much too much") amongst ourselves. The humour, however, is not general.*

The worship of the forms of faith over the substance, over He who is our common hope, became the whole of the religious formation of the European Americans. The syncretic Catholics — blending Islam, Judaism, feminism, negro worship, and environmentalism — and the syncretic Protestants — blending Judaism, feminism, negro worship, and Christianity — were unable to oppose straight-forward, unadulterated Satanism. Like Louis XVI, Trump was unable to oppose the liberals because he was part liberal himself. Trump did not want to suppress the violence in the streets this past summer because he feared to act against Black Lives Matter. When the police killed the murderer of Aaron Danielson, they did so because he had stepped away from his shield, the banner of Black Lives Matter. Was one black murderer or rioter ever brought to justice during the riots? No, instead white people who defended themselves were brought to 'justice.' When those in authority doubt their legitimacy — and all white Presidents, even Trump, the last and best President of our democracy, doubt their legitimacy — when they believe that 'white privilege,' whether the aristocratic 'white privilege' in old France or the 'white privilege' in the United States, is a sin, they will not be able to act in defense of themselves or their people. (2)

The courts always play an important part in maintaining a military dictatorship, giving the military regime an aura of legitimacy. Our Supreme Court consists of a cabal of puppets for Generalissimo Biden and his cohorts, just as the courts in Jacobin France were the puppets of Robespierre and company:

*From the forced repentance of invalid mutineers and disbanded thieves, you can hope for no resource. Government itself, which ought to constrain the more bold and dexterous of these robbers, is their accomplice. Its arms, its treasures, its all, are in their hands. Judicature, which above all things should awe them, is their creature and*

*their instrument. Nothing seems to me to render your internal situation more desperate than this one circumstance of the state of your judicature. Many days are not past since we have seen a set of men brought forth by your rulers for a most critical function. Your rulers brought forth a set of men, steaming from the sweat and drudgery, and all black with the smoak and soot of the forge of confiscation and robbery—ardentis massae fuligine lippos – a set of men brought forth from the trade of hammering arms of proof, offensive and defensive, in aid of the enterprizes, and for the subsequent protection of housebreakers, murderers, traitors, and malefactors; men, who had their minds seasoned with theories perfectly conformable to their practice, and who had always laughed at possession and prescription, and defied all the fundamental maxims of jurisprudence. To the horror and stupefaction of all the honest part of this nation, and indeed of all nations who are spectators, we have seen, on the credit of those very practices and principles, and to carry them further into effect, these very men placed on the sacred seat of justice in the capitol city of your late kingdom. We see, that in future, you are to be destroyed with more form and regularity. This is not peace; it is only the introduction of a sort of discipline in their hostility. Their tyranny is complete, in their justice; and their lanthorn is not half so dreadful as their court.* — Burke

Let us never lose sight of the fact that our Supreme Court and all the lesser courts are not courts of justice, they are the kangaroo courts of the liberal Sanhedrin. Their “fundamental maxims of jurisprudence” are dictated by what is expedient for their own survival and what is desirable to Satan, who is ultimately the guiding light of the American courts.

The key element, the satanic component that fuels and sustains the leftist regimes in this nation and all the European nations is the media, the Fourth Estate whom Burke called the pamphleteers. When our children hear nothing but leftist propaganda in the schools and churches, when our citizens hear nothing but ‘racism, racism, racism’ in every media outlet, is it any wonder the leftists were able to successfully conclude a military coup? And what do the conservatives, the shadows of the liberals, tell us we should do now that there has been a military coup? They tell us to continue doing what we did before the coup: We are to continue to listen to their atrocity stories and vote against the military junta. What world do the conservative pundits live in? No military junta has ever been voted out of existence. We can’t continue to recite the American litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” and expect to move a militant, leftist cabal of demons to grant our petition to live and breathe in Liberaldom. All non-illuminated whites are guilty as charged, and they will be dealt with. The conservative pundits who tell us we can affect change by voting are asking us to believe a lie so that they can keep their jobs as conservative pundits.

The hierarchy of organized Christian Jewry is part of the propaganda apparatus of the American Junta. They will permit the churches to exist so long as the churches support the junta. The liberals are constantly telling us the pre-Vatican II popes and the Protestant ministers in Germany did not speak out against Hitler. That, of course, is a lie. But our current crop of clerical sycophants do not speak out against a far greater danger than Hitler. They do not speak out against a Babylonian synthesis of horrors that makes Hitler’s regime seem like a bastion of decency in comparison. And I say this without any sympathy for Hitler’s regime. But is there any doubt which regime is the greater evil? As Christians we are not permitted, in theory, to choose the lesser of two evils, but in practice we might have to make such a Hobson’s choice if there are only two camps – the mad-dog liberals and the neo-pagans – who are doing the fighting. If all the ‘Christians’ side with the liberals because they are syncretic Christians, what will the European Christians do? They must fight, and they cannot fight with the mad-dog liberals and the syncretic Christians. Must they fight with the neo-pagans? No, they can’t. They must fight alone, as the few against the many. The upcoming civil war will not be pleasant – wars never are – but it would be even more unpleasant, it would be horrific, if we accepted the military dictatorship of the demon-crats and their Republican allies. When the Christian Saxons lost to the pagan Danes at the battle of Maldon in 991 AD, their “old companion” Byrhtwold sought to rally them for future battles in the war that they had to fight and win:

*Byrhtwold spoke; he grasped his shield; he was an old companion; he shook his ash spear; full boldly he exhorted the warriors: ‘Thought shall be the harder, heart the keener, courage the greater, as our might lessons. Here lies our leader all hewn down, the valiant man in the dust; may he lament for ever who thinks now to turn from this war-play. I am old in age; I will not hence, but I purpose to lie by the side of my lord, by the man so dearly loved.’ Godric, the son of Æthelgar, likewise exhorted them all to fight. Often he let fly the spear, the deadly dart, against the Vikings, as he went foremost in the host. He hewed and struck down until he fell in the battle; that was not the Godric who fled from the fight.*

To date the non-illuminated whites can be described as men who fled from the fight, because the democratic process demands that men must flee from Satan and his minions. Wouldn’t they, the liberal minions of Satan, be surprised if we suddenly turned in our flight and fought the liberal junta? +

(1) When I read Thomas Paine’s vitriolic, venomous attack on the God-Man, Jesus Christ, I feel as if I am reading the contemporary writings of the mad-dog liberals and the neo-pagans. Both groups are united with Paine in their hatred of the Light of the World. Who would be married to hell? The Christian Europeans must stand alone against the liberal world, forsaking all ideologies that are in opposition to His reign of charity.

(2) Louis XVI did not believe in the entirety of the Jacobin’s case against monarchical France, but he had been influenced by the pamphleteers, he was unable to see the satanic core of their rebellion:

*But the spirit of ambition, now for the first time connected with the spirit of speculation, was not to be restrained at will. There was no longer any means of arresting a principle in its course. When Louis the XVIth, under the influence of the enemies to Monarchy, meant to found but one Republic, he set up two. When he meant to take away half the crown of his neighbour, he lost the whole of his own. Louis the XVIth, could not with impunity countenance a new Republick: yet between his throne and that dangerous lodgment for an enemy, which he had erected, he had the whole Atlantick for a ditch. He had for an out-work the English nation itself, friendly to liberty, adverse to that mode of it. He was surrounded by a rampart of Monarchies, most of them allied to him, and generally under his influence. Yet even thus secured, a Republick erected under his auspices, and dependent on his power, became fatal to his throne. The very money which he had lent to support this Republick, by a good faith, which to him operated as perfidy, was punctually paid to his enemies, and became a resource in the hands of his assassins. —Burke*

The Swiss Guard who fought and died to the last man defending the Crown would not have had to die, nor did Louis XVI and his family and the countless number of French aristocrats have to die, had Louis seen that the Jacobins represented unmitigated evil and acted as a ruler must act in the face of unmitigated evil. So it was with Trump. If he had not believed, in part, in the justice of the liberals’ accusations of ‘racism’ against the white Europeans of the past, he would have acted forcibly against the rioters during the summer months prior to the November 3<sup>rd</sup> coup. Instead, he allowed them to assemble around the polling places in the battleground states and successfully intimidate the cowardly Republican shadows – shadows of the Demon-crats and shadows of men. When men in authority fail to act in defense of the good, the good are martyred, as the sainted Queen of France and the nobles of France were martyred:

*What softening of character is to be had, what review of their social situations and duties is to be taught by these examples, to Kings, to Nobles, to Men of Property, to Women, and to Infants? The Royal Family perished, because it was royal. The Nobles perished, because they were noble. The Men, Women and Children, who had property, because they had property to be robbed of. The Priests were punished, after they had been robbed of their all, not for their vices, but for their virtues and their piety, which made them an honour to their sacred profession, and to that nature, of which we ought to be proud, since they belong to it. My Lord, nothing can be learned from such examples, except the danger of being Kings, Queens, Nobles, Priests, and Children to be butchered on account of their inheritance. These are things at which not Vice, not Crime, not Folly, but Wisdom, Goodness, Learning, Justice, Probity, Beneficence stand aghast. By these examples our reason and our moral sense are not enlightened, but confounded; and there is no refuge for astonished and affrighted virtue, but being annihilated in humility and submission, sinking into a silent adoration of the inscrutable dispensations of Providence, and flying with trembling wings from this world of daring crimes, and feeble, pusillanimous, half-bred, bastard Justice, to the asylum of another order of things, in an unknown form, but in a better life. —Burke*

The four martyrs on the day of infamy and the countless white lives that will be lost during the military regime of Biden and his cohorts were and will be lost because there were and are no leaders in European America willing to rebuke any movement that forsakes His reign of charity and places “Black Lives Matter” at the forefront of their movement.

# The Demons of Liberalism

February 6, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Fear of racist label

Tags: Charles Maturin



Gustave Dore. The Vision of Death

"Listen," repeated Isidora, "is there no truth in the voice that speaks to you in tones like these? Alas! if there be no truth in religion, there is none on earth! Passion itself evanishes into an illusion, unless it is hallowed by the consciousness of a God and of futurity. That sterility of the heart that forbids the growth of divine feeling, must be hostile also to every tender and generous sentiment. *He who is without a God must be without a heart!*"

C. Maturin

---

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

---

I knew Trump's electoral victory in 2016 was a rear guard delaying action, not a genuine victory, but I still wanted to see it extended four more years. Even though it was only a sliver of Christian humanity that we saw during Trump's administration, that tiny sliver was worth something. Now that Trump is gone the leftward march of the Jacobins will continue onward at an accelerated rate. The only thing we can take out of this military coup that has any value, and it is not enough to make up for all the evils, is a certain moral clarity. We no longer need to play the democratic game. And in point of fact we must *not* play the democratic game, because it is the devil's game.

Recently, during a snow storm, I went out to one of my favorite hills at the edge of town and started running up and down it. A young man shoveling his walk obviously thought it rather odd to see an old man running up and down a hill in the middle of a snow storm, because he asked me why I was doing such a ridiculous thing. Since I do not hold political office or a job in academia, I told him why I was running up and down the hill: "I don't drink or take drugs, so this is my way of staving off the post-election depression." The young man's reply was quite interesting: "I hear you. Why don't we all just get our guns and blow the blankety-blank sons of blankety-blank away?" Why indeed?

The lines from Macbeth keep recurring to me: "Fit to govern? Not fit to live!" That describes the liberals in every branch of our government.<sup>(1)</sup> The violent overthrow of such creatures would certainly be a worthy and moral endeavor, but it would be immoral to mount a frontal attack, a traditional military counterrevolution, against the liberals from hell, because we would be wasting the lives of the good and true whites in an impossible cause. If Trump, as soon has he took office in 2016, had replaced the Obama military chiefs with his own people, and if he had worked secretly and diligently to strike quickly and decisively at the appointed hour – let us say on November 3, 2020 – to overthrow the demon-cracy of the liberals, by abolishing the satanic Supreme Court, by abolishing the House and Senate, and by abolishing the media and all the institutions of 'higher' learning, then we would have had every reason to support a counterrevolution, because it would have been right and proper and it would have had a reasonable prospect of success. But Trump was not a counterrevolutionary; he had no intention of overturning our demon-cracy and setting up a benevolent dictatorship, which is a great pity. Without the backing of a leader who has a large segment of the military on his side, as was the case with Franco and Pinochet, a direct military confrontation with the liberals, who own the army and the police, would be immoral, not because violence against the liberal Jacobins is immoral, but because the violence would be useless. The liberals would simply massacre the white counterrevolutionaries. And that is what I told the angry young man who wanted, understandably, to blow all the blankety-blanks away.

That having been said against direct military confrontations with the military junta, we must, if we are European Christians, do all we can to build up the heart to resist in our people. We must encourage them to fight for the Christian hearth fire values, for kith and kin. But we must be wise as serpents and gentle as doves. We must fight and kill in the name of the soft and gentle, the innocents in the womb and our people who are so far from doing harm that they suspect none, but we must fight with hearts of fire and wisdom. We need to have the rage of Lear in the storm – "I'll do such things!" – but we also need to have the wisdom to know where and how to "do such things."

There is a great white anger out there, but we need leadership, Christian leadership such as Nathan Bedford Forrest provided the South in those dark days after the Civil War. That leadership does not exist in the ranks of the men who have been incorrectly labeled conservatives. The history of American conservatism, with a few exceptions in the Southern United States, has been a history of the moderate branch of liberalism. There were the leftists, who were not moderate, who wanted to go very rapidly toward utopia, and then there were the moderate liberals, who wanted to move more slowly toward utopia. But the moderate liberals, who masquerade as conservatives, have never advocated a return to old Europe, to the right-wing values stemming from a Christian theocracy. Such a return would have been against the core values of liberty, equality, and fraternity. And what is missing in the conservative theories in the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries is that which is necessary: white pietas. I do not use the term 'feudalism' because it has medieval connotations, and Christendom is much more than just the medieval ages. Christendom did not die until the 20<sup>th</sup> century when the European people abandoned the God who enters human hearts for the God who enters human minds. When we lost our blood connection to the living God, we became Gnostic men without a real existence. The guerrilla warfare, the midnight raids on the bastions of liberalism, will only come about when the European people begin to feel that they *are* a people, a people bound to each other and their Savior in spirit and blood. I don't see that happening right now, but there is a white anger that has been unleashed by the military coup of 2020 that could be the start of something more than anger; it could be the first step on the road back to white pietas.

During the final days of the Trump appeals, I saw a News Max 'conservative' pundit interviewing one of the Proud Boys, the brave young men who go up against Antifa AR15s with baseball bats. The 'conservative' interviewer was giving the Proud Boy a chance to refute the liberals' charges against the Proud Boys, but there was one question he kept coming back to: "You are not racist, are you?" And the Proud Boy would answer, "No, we are not." That mini-liturgical ritual – "You are not racist?" and the reply, "No, we are not" – gives the lie to the conservatives. They are *not* conservative when they try to conserve the fusion of the noble black savage and Christianity. You cannot serve two masters: you cannot serve Christ and the

sacred negro. At Christmastime the word ‘Christ’ is viewed as politically incorrect, but on Martin Luther King Jr. day all those who do not praise his name in the reverent tones once reserved for Jesus Christ are cast into outer darkness. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. If we treasure the noble black savage, if our greatest fear is the fear of being ‘racist,’ then we will never become a people again. The conservatives in church and state are the great enemies of the European people.<sup>(2)</sup> They are the other side of the liberal coin Satan has created to perpetuate his reign here on earth. He sends us two evils so that if we flee from one evil to the other, we will still remain in his camp. Americanism, Jacobinism, and communism all stem from the same root, which is hell. It is pietas – the love of our own in and through the Savior – that Satan fears. That is why he has attacked the European people through his champions, men such as Paine and Rousseau. And that is why we, the European people, live in captivity, a Babylonian captivity; we have lost our vision of the living God who comes to human hearts and replaced that God with an intellectual construct of an impersonal God called the noble black savage. That god will never and has never existed in reality. He only exists in the satanic minds of the liberals who have built their ‘utopia’ with the terrible swift sword of ‘racism.’ But it is only white racism that is evil because it is only white racism that is grounded in the pietas which must be destroyed and never revived, because such a revival would bring back His reign of charity. And that, from the devil’s standpoint, would be the ultimate horror.

I said that in the aftermath of the coup there is now moral clarity. Perhaps I should have said, there *should* be moral clarity, because I really can’t say I see any moral clarity in the conservative pundits. They are still telling atrocity stories about the demon-crats and telling us to vote and trust the demon-cratic process to wash all our troubles away. “Keep the faith,” they tell us, “and vote Republican.” Perhaps we should keep another faith – the faith of our Fathers. Chateaubriand tells us that Adam “sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it.” The modern Europeans have gone back to the original sin. They have rejected the God who comes to human hearts in order to embrace the God who illuminates technocratic, inhuman minds. But that illuminated light is not from the God who took flesh and dwelt among us, it is not the light that shineth in darkness. The light of mental illumination comes from Satan. He bids us seek that illumination in order to plunge us into confusion, despair, and ultimately, into hell itself. The conservatives’ failure to see the hell that is liberalism, their willingness to sup with the devil and his minions, is something that makes a European Christian recoil in horror. We can’t make common cause with ‘conservatives’ who tell us to sup with the devil. Cortez did not sit and eat with Montezuma as he dined on the hearts of small children. Instead he personally tore down the altar of Quetzalcoatl and imposed his cultural values on the ‘natural, organic’ Aztecs. How is it possible to accept the liberals’ institutionalized Satanism without reacting as Cortez and his men reacted to the institutionalized demonic savagery of the Aztecs? It is only possible when the people whose ancestors took Christ into their hearts have left the Dream of the Rood for the dream of a utopia of the Illuminati who dance around an altar consecrated to the noble black savage.

In Conrad’s *Heart of Darkness*, the main character, Kurtz, who has made a descent into depravity and savagery, dies with the words, “the horror, the horror, the horror,” on his lips. Conrad’s alter ego, Marlowe, says of Kurtz, “it is something to have judged.” Kurtz was not, at his end, without some moral discernment – he saw what he had become and he was horrified by that evil. Trump did win the election – he got the majority of the votes. But a very large minority – almost half the country – voted for Biden and Harris. And the ‘conservatives’ who didn’t actually vote for the Biden-Harris ticket are advising us to deal demon-cratically with the new Biden-Harris regime. Do we see the depths of that tragedy? If we cannot see the horror, if we can actually accept and/or acquiesce to the liberals’ horror, then we have truly gone where no European has ever gone before. We have embraced Satan without a qualm or a single look back at what we once were as a people.

In 1820 Charles Maturin, an Irish clergyman, wrote a novel called *Melmoth the Wanderer*. In the novel the devil gives the main character an extra 150 years on earth, but he must, in that 150 years, find someone to take his place or else he will be eternally damned. Maturin takes us through a labyrinth of evil, introducing us to some hideous people who seem to be beyond redemption. But in the end, they all reject Melmoth’s devilish bargain. No matter what sins they are guilty of, they still, in the deepest recesses of their hearts, cling to their hope of redemption through Him who saves. They will not give up their souls to gain the world. So what starts out as a terribly dark novel turns out to be a story of redemption through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. That is not the case in the modern European nations. Writing in the latter half of the 18<sup>th</sup> century, Burke said that we were spending the unbought grace of life. And Herbert Butterfield, writing in 1950, said that we were barely surviving on the fumes of Christianity. When there are no Europeans left who will fight for His reign of charity, the link between His kingdom come and our earthly pilgrimage is severed. Without any remorse, with a satanic glee, the liberals are imposing their satanic will on the world. If the European people cannot see that horror, they will not fight it. In the name of our Savior, we must see the unmitigated evil of liberalism and we must, with the charity that is linked to His divine charity, combat the horror with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) I see that Liz Cheney has signed on to the impeachment of Trump. There is absolutely no difference between the Republican Demon-crats, the Democratic Demon-crats, and the robed demons on the Supreme Court. They all live in, and enjoy, the hell on earth they have created by giving their souls to Satan. “If, having entered hell you feel no flame, then you deserve the place to which you came.”

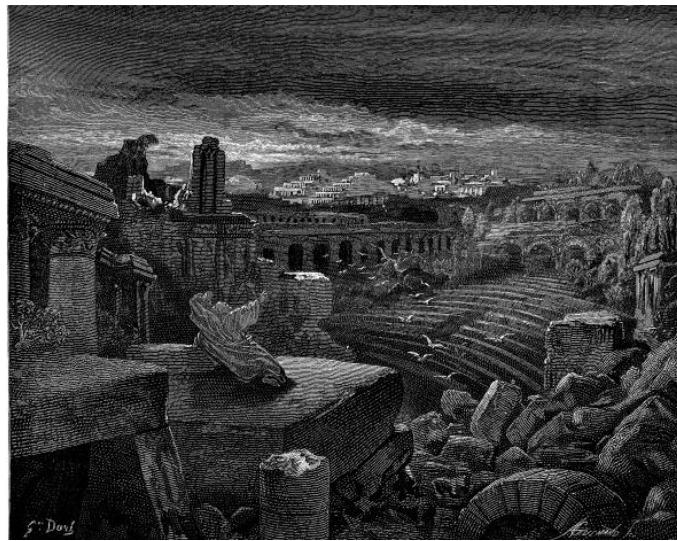
(2) We must challenge the ‘conservatives’ in church and state who use their alleged concern for the noble black savage to attack Christ’s reign of charity and defend Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. How can you base your religion on the hatred of your own people? When the European people loved their own, in and through Christ, they extended that love to the stranger. It does not work the other way around. You can’t hate your own people and love the stranger, because he who hates his own people cannot love anyone or anything. The modern Europeans’ alleged love for the noble black savage is grounded in intellectual pride and vanity. It pleases them to be the superior mind in charge of protecting the new suffering servant – the noble black savage. Never, never, never cave in to the blasphemy of the noble black savage.

# The American Kingdom of Hell on Earth

February 13, 2021

Categories: Europeans and Christ, Grazers, Liberalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Shakespeare, St. Paul



Dore. Isaiah's vision of the destruction of Babylon

Bloody, avaricious, false, deceitful,  
Sudden, malicious, smacking of every sin  
That has a name.

*-Macbeth*

---

And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there. But wild beasts of the desert shall lie there; and their houses shall be full of doleful creatures; and owls shall dwell there, and satyrs shall dance there. And the wild beasts of the islands shall cry in their desolate houses, and dragons in their pleasant palaces: and her time is near to come, and her days shall not be prolonged.

*-Isaiah 13: 19-22*

---

There is an ultra-religious contingent and an ultra-white-nationalist contingent in our anti-nation that took particular delight in Biden's victory: "It serves them right. They (the white grazers) didn't listen to us." I do not hold to that position, even though the white grazers did not listen to me either. And I do not hold to that position because there is redemption in the white grazers. Their religion is a confused mish-mosh of liberalism and Christianity, but they have not completely left their humanity behind as the ultra-nationalist, neo-pagans and the ultra-religious contingent have. I have a cousin who falls into the category which the ultra-religious and the ultra-white nationalists love to hate. She voted for Trump because she believed in his American blending of God, equality, and Mom's apple pie. She also had the courage to place a placard in front of her house that read, "All Lives Matter," for which she was reviled by many members of her family and her neighbors. My kindly, Trumpian cousin is one of those whom I have described as, "So far from doing harm that they suspect none." She genuinely cannot comprehend why "All Lives Matter" should be controversial; she does not understand why "Some are more equal."

After the military coup, my cousin asked me, "Why do they (the liberals) always win?" I told her to envision two boxers. One, the liberal, enters the ring knowing he is not as good as his opponent; in an equal match he will lose. So the liberal enters the ring with the determination that he will not fight by the rules. He will hit below the belt, he will punch in the clinches, and he will get in a few extra punches after the bell. And he knows he will get away with his dirty tactics because the referee is one of his cronies. Now, we come to the liberal's opponent, the white grazer. He enters the ring with the intention of fighting by all the rules and relying on the referee to ensure there is a fair fight. Whom do you think will win the fight?

The liberals successfully painted Trump as a real mean guy, an anti-democratic fascist, but Trump was a white grazer through and through. Beneath a gruff exterior he was Mr. Nice Guy inside. He honestly believed in the American heresy, which views our moral equality before the living God as a mandate to dispense with all the spiritual aristocracies which Christian men have established to support His reign of charity here on earth. Trump was a courageous man, who had the courage of his convictions. But unfortunately his convictions were part liberal, and those convictions did not allow him to act as a Christian leader should act towards the mad-dog liberals.

Even the liberals, now that the battle is over, have asked why Trump didn't have a Plan B. Why didn't he act to prevent the military coup that began in the summer with riots in the streets and ended with election fraud? Trump did not act against the Antifa and Black Lives Matter because he believed, in part, in the "some are more equal" heresy. Blacks are never in the wrong when they are violent. I know Trump used the excuse that he didn't want to violate states' rights by declaring martial law in the Democratic-controlled states that sanctioned the riots, but do you think the liberals, if the situation had been reversed, would have hesitated to violate states' rights? Wasn't our un-Civil War a complete violation of states' rights? Then there was the election. Do you think the liberals would have stood six feet away while all their votes were "flipped" to their opponent? And finally, would the liberals have allowed the Supreme Court to ignore their pleas for justice? The liberals believe in the kingdom of hell on earth. The democratic process is just a means to their end. If that process does not support their desired end, they will discard that process. Trump and his people actually believe in the democratic process. They believe that the American way is synonymous with truth and justice. [\(1\)](#) But the American way is not synonymous with truth and justice, it is synonymous with the kingdom of hell on earth.

I do not think there ever was or ever could be a better man than Trump within the democratic process. We should not work for another Republican to assume the office of the Presidency; the traditional Republicans are either mad-dog liberals such as Mitch O'Connell and Liz Cheney, or they are moderate liberals such as Mike Pence. They are much further to the left than Trump, but Trump is not the man to lead us away from demon-cracy, because he believes in the demon-kratic process. He is a good man, but he is a "city built upon a hill" American. We need someone who is more than a populist; we need a man of the right, a Eurocentric 'racist' who loves and hates with his whole heart.

In my mid-twenties I read a short treatise called, "A Reformation Debate," which was a debate between a Thomist and a Calvinist. And it struck me as I struggled through the debate that neither theology touched my heart. I understood the various arguments on both sides, but I had no desire to embrace either theology and say, "this is truth." In fact I was very troubled by the debate, but I would have been hard-pressed to explain why. It was only many years later that I finally understood why that "Reformation Debate" was so troubling. It was troubling because both men had made my faith in the God-Man into an intellectual construct that could be confined within the prison of a man-made theory. Despite theological differences, both theologians eschewed the blood faith of the European people. They had exchanged the God who comes to human hearts for the God who comes to the illuminated minds of clergymen. Neither the Thomist nor the Calvinist were atheists in the strict sense of the word. They professed to believe in the main tenets of Christianity, but they both had opened up the door to a speculative, philosophical faith that is a non-faith. The end result of theological speculation is liberalism. Faith is either revelatory, from the Divine Heart to human hearts, or it becomes a blended faith, which is the faith of the white grazers, or it becomes a scientific, nature-based faith in the Noble Savage, which is liberalism. The white grazer always loses to the liberals.

because the liberals have a purity of faith – they have emptied their hearts of all things humane and Christian. Their satanic ‘purity’ allows them to fight against their foes without pity, without mercy, and without acknowledging any law other than their satanic will. The white grazers, such as Trump and his followers, cannot mount any real assault against the liberals because they are not whole-heartedly against them. They have adopted the blended faith that is condemned in the *Book of Revelation*; they combine negro worship, Judaism, and every other non-Christian faith with the Christian faith. That syncretic faith is no match for the liberals’ straight-forward faith in Satan.

We must face this maniacal hatred the liberals have for Trump. (2) It stems from Satan. Simply because Trump wanted to keep Christ and the Christ-bearing race within Liberaldom, he was, while he was in office, and is still, now that he is out of office, being attacked by the demon-cratic Republicans and the Demon-crats. Trump has never repudiated liberalism. He is a liberal, but he wanted the white grazers to be included in Liberaldom. We have seen the result of that advocacy. Trump will be forever bound to the Promethean rock. And there is no redemption for Prometheus within the confines of liberalism. Prometheus needs a savior and so do we – a Savior who is something more than a lesser god in a pantheon of heathen gods. Our Savior is the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

The spirit of philosophical speculation that animated the Reformation debate was the same spirit that animated the governing body of the North in the 1860s. And it is that spirit which has reduced the European people to a level of superficiality that makes them an easy prey for the devil. The mind of man cannot comprehend God. When man seeks to confine God within a manmade philosophy, God becomes a superficial entity. He becomes a Noble Black Savage, or the sum of nature’s many parts, but He does not resemble the God of the European people when they were a people. Rembrandt’s Christ is not a blended Christ nor is He a noble black savage. At the core of our demise as a people is a change in the way we see. We no longer see life from the poetic depths of a heart that loves; instead we see with a mind that speculates. And what have we come up with in the age of speculation? Is this, our anti-culture of reason, the sacred negro, and science, the promised end? If that is all we are, mere philosophical shadows of men, then yes, this is our end.

Many people who saw Trump as the last Trump mentioned in *1 Corinthians 15: 52* have been devastated by his loss in November. But there may still be a Biblical significance in Trump’s loss. The election did mark the end of the demon-cratic subterfuge. Some liberals in other countries have condemned the election fraud, not because they were Trump supporters, but because the Americans were so blatant in their demonism; they took away the democratic façade of the liberals’ Satanism. But of course the old adage, “If a tree falls in a forest and no one is there, does it make a sound?” applies here. If the European-Americans have become morally neutered by centuries of philosophical trivialities, are they still capable of seeing Satan’s “palpable device”? Can they see evil and act against it? It doesn’t appear so. The conservative pundits are still responding to the military coup with their, “We are not violent, We are not racist” litany and the white grazers are still so far from doing harms – “We too are non-violent, We too are not racist” – that they suspect none. Though the liberals slay them, yet will they believe that truth and justice are united to the American, demon-cratic way. But is this, despite the fact that everything seems to be going on as before, the beginning of the end for the liberals? Did they need to crush Trump because he was not 100% liberal? They have sown doubt in the hearts of the white grazers. It is merely anecdotal evidence that I can point to, but I see something in the white grazers that was not there before. They have begun to hate. The liberals risked everything to destroy Trump and what have they gained? Like Melmoth the Wanderer, they have bought some time from the devil to wreak havoc throughout the world, but haven’t they lost something as well? Haven’t they lost, in the eyes of the white grazers, their claim to moral legitimacy? The Soviet empire fell when its people no longer believed in the regimes’ lies. The American liberals’ empire is going to fall apart because the immoral underpinning of the regime has been exposed to the light. “We the people” demon-cracy is a great lie conceived and maintained by the father of lies. The liberals’ “last trump” has begun; it will end, for them, in hell. We dare not follow them and their conservative allies, we must follow Him who saves, for it is better we lose the whole world than lose our souls.

Artists such as Shakespeare, Rembrandt, and Handel were certainly extraordinary – their artistic gifts were much greater than ours. But was their poetic alien to us? No, it was not. Their vision of the living God, their vision of Him who is “the grave where buried love doth live,” was the heartfelt faith of the European people. The new liberal Europe is a Europe in complete opposition to old Europe, in which Christ was the poetic center. The Biden-Harris regime is the synthesis of all the anti-European, and therefore, anti-Christian regimes that have been established throughout our people’s history. The regime is Sodom and Gomorrah, the regime is Babylon, the regime is Jacobinism, the regime is communism, and the regime is negro worship. What force on earth can defeat such a synthesis of evil? There is no force on this earth alone that can defeat the American synthesis of evil. But our Lord told us that we had someone within us, the Holy Ghost, who could unite our humanity to His divine humanity, and that divine-human link created Christian Europe. When we see what the antique Europeans saw, we shall reestablish our connection to the living God and the institutionalized evil of liberalism will give way to His reign of charity.

We are a long way from such a consummation. In fact, we have never, as a people, been farther away from His kingdom come, on earth as it is in heaven, than we are now. We, the remnant band, are like Lear after his earthly kingdom has been lost: We must “take upon’s the mystery of things, As if we were God’s spies.” So long as we have hearts of flesh, so long as we reject the philosophical speculation that leads to hell, we will remain connected to Him. And that connection will surely conquer the liberals’ kingdom of hell on earth, which has come so forcefully to fruition in the satanic regime of Biden-Harris. We are being told we must celebrate, all month long, the history of the Noble Black Savage. Shouldn’t we celebrate, this month, and all year long, a different Savior? We once were the people who saw a great light, the light that shineth in darkness: Christ’s Europe is our nation.+

---

(1) The 1950s *Superman* television show told us that Superman was fighting for “Truth, Justice, and the American way.” There is no truth and no justice in the American way. It is time to fight for His truth and His justice instead of fighting for the father of all lies and all injustices.

(2) The attack on Trump is an attack on all those who are white and Christian – all those whites who are non-illuminated. The Republicans who voted to impeach Trump see themselves as part of the Illuminati. After they join with their Demon-cratic allies to destroy Trump, they will come for thee and me. We must see this hatred of Trump for what it is – the complete intolerance of Satan’s minions for the slightest trace of Christian humanity in their kingdom of hell on earth. The liberals hate all things white and Christian because they belong heart, mind, and soul to the devil. We cannot dialogue with the devil’s own, we can only fight them with our whole heart, mind, and soul.

# The Sanctuary of the Heart

February 20, 2021

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Rationalism

Tags: Edmund Burke



Rembrandt. The Hundred Guilder Print

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. —Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

---

I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. —[John 17: 23](#)

---

White people are the only people in the history of the world whose “elective affections” do not fasten on their own kind. (1) This was made strikingly apparent, once again, in the aftermath of the pro-Trump protest that the liberals called an insurrection. I listened with an anger beyond anger as the liberals called for Federal troops to protect them against unarmed citizens whom they had defrauded. And I listened with horror as the conservatives rushed to condemn the ‘rioters’ (they used the liberals’ term because the conservatives *are* liberal), and praise the ‘hero’ who died defending the Capitol. Let us pause there. Why is that man a hero? He died defending the greatest evil in the history of the world – the American liberals who inhabit the joint houses of Congress. I am sorry that the misguided young man chose to defend such evil creatures and I’m sorry he died, but I have no place in my “elective affections” for the young police officer. He has his mourners – Biden, his wife, and the conservative shadows of the liberals, have all hailed the man who defended the reptilian entities that inhabit the Capitol building from unarmed protestors as a ‘great hero.’ (2) My “elective affections” go out to the young woman who was shot by the ‘great hero’s’ partners in crime – and the other three protestors who died in the protest. Why was there, and why is there still, no investigation of the death of the woman who was shot by the Federal police? The whole nation was commanded to mourn the death of the criminal George Floyd, yet the brutal murder of a white woman has not been and will not be investigated.

Trump repudiated white supremacy without ever forcing the liberals to define white supremacy. You lose every debate you engage in if you allow the enemy to define the terms. Brutus tried to paint all those who opposed the assassination of Julius Caesar as traitors who supported tyranny. Anthony refused to accept that label and consequently turned Brutus’s rhetoric against him: “Yet, Brutus says he was ambitious.” If Trump had challenged the liberals to define ‘white supremacy,’ what would they have said? We’ll never know because Trump did not challenge the liberals, which is terrible tragedy; it would have been quite useful to see what is implicit in liberalism made explicit. Trump could not be made out to be a segregationist, nor could he be accused of a sympathy for the chattel slavery of the old South. But what he could be accused of was a desire to see white people continue to live and thrive in the United States of America. That desire was in stark contrast to all the Presidents, Democratic and Republican, who preceded Trump. His predecessors all signed on to the destruction of the white race. And that is the real definition of a white supremacist – you don’t have to be a segregationist or in sympathy with the old South, all you have to do is oppose the extermination of the white race. That makes you a white supremacist. Trump was, by the liberals’ definition, a white supremacist; hence, all those who voted for him, and most certainly all those pro-Trump protesters, were also white supremacists. They all deserved to die. Nancy Pelosi had only one regret – she regretted that the Federal police were so easy on the ‘rioters.’

The hatred that the modern Europeans have for their own people is rooted in their religion. Modern whites believe in a cosmic religion of the intellect. In that religion, the more intensely you hate the old European religion of the God-Man and the people who placed their hopes in the God-Man, the more religious and enlightened you are. To hate evil, which is whiteness, and to love the good, which is all things opposed to whiteness, are the two main dogmas of the liberals’ faith.

Yeats saw that the blood-red tide was loose in the European world because the best lacked all conviction while the worst were full of passionate intensity. The best were and are the white grazers who want to blend modernity – the worship of the abstract intellect of man, the worship of the sacred negro, and the worship of science – with Christianity. While the worst, the mad-dog liberals, want ‘perfection’; they want a cosmic religion that has been purged of white pietas because it was and is mankind’s link to an antiquated God opposed to the cosmic religion of the liberals. Once what is honorable, what is charitable, what is merciful, becomes what is stupid, racist, and sexist, the liberals feel they have free reign, a sacred duty, to stamp out the people of the white race, who once stood for honor, charity, and mercy. Before Yeats stepped forward to champion his occult solution to modern man’s loss of faith, Burke warned us about the brave new world before us:

*But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiments and heroic enterprise is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.* —Reflections on the Revolution in France

Unlike Yeats, Burke did not see the occult sciences as the answer to the new world order. He made it clear that we had to cling to our old world order, in which white pietas was our link to the living God:

*We are bound in the sanctuary of the heart to Him who gave us our human nature.*

All civil society must be grounded in Him who is perfection if we are ever going to make even a “faint approach” to perfection. The Jacobins, the communists, and our modern ‘cosmic’ liberals view our “common hope” and the people who made Him their morning star, as the main obstacle to their perfect society. If a man’s elective affections are with those people who hate Christ and the Christ-bearing race, because they constitute an obstacle to the liberals’ utopia, then that man has made the descent into hell. Satan is his God.

It is in the “sanctuary of the heart” that we are bound to our kith, our kin, and our Lord. The devil, with an unrelenting maniacal fury, keeps attacking the Europeans’ “sanctuary of the heart,” so that we, the European people, will lose all memory of our connection to the living God. And the conservatives in church and state have gone along with the devil. They have told us, and they still tell us, to place our hopes in a fusion of a pure Christianity of the intellect with the pure liberalism of Satan’s disciples. That fusion is impossible. We cannot serve Christ and the devil. The hero in Disney’s *Snow White* says he has one heart and one love. In the sanctuary of our heart, whom do we love?

The Trump movement represented an undefined longing in the white grazers to return to a sanctuary of the heart – to once again feel that they are united through the love of their kith and kin to Him who is the author of their human affections. Christ is the beginning and the end of the longings of our heart; if we forsake those longings for the cosmic religion of the liberals and their conservative allies, we will be doomed, like the flying Dutchman, to man a ghost ship that can never land in a safe harbor.

The white grazers who supported Trump recited the litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” but while they recited that litany, there was something in their hearts that ran counter to that litany. They still had a remnant of white pietas — they recoiled, in part, from the litany that their leaders required them to repeat over and over again. Do I see more in those grazers than is actually there? Perhaps I do. But I will not proceed under the assumption that our Lord cannot breach the wall that the devil, through his liberal minions, has placed around the sanctuary of the Europeans’ hearts. He can breach that wall. It might sound antiquated and foolish to believe that all which is needful to defeat Satan is one simple prayer, “Come, Lord Jesus, into the sanctuary of my heart,” but that *is* what is needed and what is necessary. His Holy Word, shorn of scholastic distortions, is the most powerful weapon we have in the battle against our ancient foe.

Is the devil our ancient foe? If you are a white man, if your faith is of the blood and of the heart, you will answer, ‘yes,’ to that question. But if your faith is not of the blood and the heart, you will, if you are a liberal, say that the devil is your God, and you will, if you are a conservative shadow of the liberals, say you are an ‘Origenist’ who believes in the salvation of the devil. After all, the devil is not a racist; there are no spiritual aristocracies in his democratic utopia, so he must be at least co-equal if not better than his spiritual antagonist, the God of the ‘racist’ Europeans. Such is the logic of our conservatives in church and state who desire to blend the worship of Satan, through the Sacred Negro, with a respectable, tepid intellectual affirmation of Christianity. It can’t be done; you cannot sup with the devil. And why should you want to?

Let us return to the crux of the matter, which was and is the European people’s hatred of their own kind:

*The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master.*

“These papers” have become the internet, but they remain the “battery” that has pounded home, for more than a “twelvemonth,” the central theme of liberalism: “The white race must be destroyed.” And where does that leave the white grazer who longs for a racial hearth fire? It leaves him out in the cold. He must try to warm his heart by getting as close as he can to the hearth fires of the strangers, the people who are not of his own kith and kin. He warms himself by the Jewish hearth fire, by the noble savage’s hearth fire, while professing a generic love for all mankind. It is a terrible, terrible tragedy. I remember reading an essay by Allen Tate, one of the *I’ll Take My Stand* Southern agrarians. He correctly identified rationalism as the cause of the decline of the European people, but then he went on to say that what rationalism had created, the Europeans’ loss of faith, rationalism could cure. No, a thousand times no! Rationalism cannot cure us. If our hope is in ‘ $2 + 2 = 4$ ’ logic, we are of all people most miserable. Rationalism overturned the Dream of the Rood Christianity, it placed the European people back in the hands of the sophisters, economists, and calculators, the Athenians who saw the Christ story as mere foolishness and the Jewish scribes and Pharisees who saw the Christ story as a blasphemous, stumbling block. Rationalism kills faith. Let us return to that sanctuary of the heart and defend the yearning in our heart against all the world. We must love Him whom the liberals hate, in and through our kith and kin.

The liberals’ hatred for Christ and the Christ-bearing race cannot be defeated by a blended faith in intellectual Christianity and liberalism, because liberalism is rooted in the love of the devil. Why is it, that, as what was implicit in our anti-nation for the past century – that we are moving from a Christian ethos to Satan’s ethos – has become explicit, the white grazers see a greater need than ever to repeat their non-violent and non-racist litany? The European people must get up off their knees before the liberals’ Sanhedrin and reclaim their rights of memory. We belong to the God of our ‘racist’ fathers in the faith – the unblended God-Man of the European people, the God of our “ascending race.”

---

(1) The recent and successful attempt to murder the people of Texas through the “greening” process illustrates the reason that Trump’s electoral defeat was a tragedy. Trump did *not* want to exterminate the white race. The liberals *do* want to exterminate the white race. The Texas massacre is only the beginning. The liberals’ reign of terror will continue until the white grazers learn to hate the devil and his liberal minions.

(2) Now that the liberals have established the most satanic government in the history of the world, is it really morally tenable, is it Christian, to laud “our troops” and “our police” when they defend our satanic government? They are the liberals’ troops and the liberals’ police, and they will be used to protect and defend Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

---

#### Rest In Peace, Rush Limbaugh

I suppose I have no right to post a ‘Rest In Peace’ for Rush Limbaugh, because I was never an admirer of his American conservatism. But I prayed for him from the moment I heard of his illness and I wept when I learned of his death. I do not understand the appeal of Limbaugh’s Americanism. But like Trump, Limbaugh had more than just a sliver of Christian humanity in his Americanism. And for that reason, the liberals hated him. I mourn for him and I detest the liberal jackals who still want to pick at his entrails even after his death. We can’t compromise with such creatures.

# We Shall Not Kneel to the Liberals' God

February 27, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: J. S. LeFanu, Shakespeare



Fuseli. Miranda, Prospero, Ariel, and Caliban

We are bound in the sanctuary of the heart to Him who gave us our human nature. —Edmund Burke

“We must prepare to meet with Caliban.” —Prospero in *The Tempest*

This February has been the most horribly black-infested month in our nation’s history. There is no safe refuge from ‘black history.’ In our schools – preschool, kindergarten, grammar school, junior high, high school, and all through college – the message is clear: white is evil, black is good. And our ‘churches’ are one with the academy: whiteness is ungodly, blackness is godly. The sports’ programs are all about black athletes who have been ‘mistreated’ by whites, and the Illuminati of the press – television, newspaper, and internet – all speak with one voice: blackness is good, whiteness is evil. If you make a lonely trek to the North Pole, determined to go where there is no black history, you will discover, in the headlines of the old newspaper that you wrapped your coffee tin in, the liberals’ narrative: blacks are sacred, whites are evil. In the old television show, *Branded*, Chuck Connors was told, “Wherever you go, for the rest of your life, you must prove, you’re a man.” Wherever a white man goes in the European world, he must prove he is illuminated by denouncing the white race and bowing down before the noble black savage.

The George Floyd ceremony in the joint houses of Congress last summer was a horrific, barbarous religious rite. If we countenance such rites, in which the liberals worship Satan through the sacred negro, by our silence or by our participation in those rites, we are guilty of blasphemy against the living God. Blasphemy is something that the European people once took seriously, because when they blasphemed they were in league with the devil. But now the devil is a good guy — he is not a racist, nor is he homophobic, Islamophobic, transgender-phobic, he is only white-phobic, which is a good thing. And how does Christ, the Christ of the European hearth fire, stack up against Satan? Christ is a racist, he is homophobic, Islamophobic, etc., etc. He must be sent to the liberals’ hell and forced to bow down to the liberals’ god, the archangel Lucifer. But Christ shall never kneel to Satan:

*Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.*

*Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.*

And that refusal is what fuels the liberals’ satanic hatred. If Christ won’t kneel to them, they shall make His people kneel to them. In the name of the sacred negro, who is the liberals’ link to Satan, they will force Christ’s people to kneel down before Satan. That is what ‘black history’ month is all about. It is a satanic imitation of an old-fashioned European Christmas in which the birth of the Christ child was celebrated for twelve days. In this case, the noble black savage, who is the second person in the devil’s trinity, is given a whole month. That is right and proper — shouldn’t the liberals’ savior, the noble black savage, be honored instead of the Christ of old Europe?

Black history month, which has replaced the Christmas season as “the most wonderful time of the year,” is a month in which the lie of the noble black savage reaches its zenith. It is a lie put forward by the father of lies, for it is indeed a lie that whites, particularly the whites of the old South and of apartheid South Africa, mistreated blacks. What is true is that when whites treated blacks with mercy and charity, when they tried to elevate them to a world in which they were something other than predatory beasts consecrated to bloody gods of sacrifice, the blacks responded to the whites’ charity and mercy, in the main, with base ingratitude and barbarous savagery. They were and are Calibans:

Pros. *Thou most lying slave,*  
*Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have us'd thee,*  
*Filth as thou art, with human care, and lodg'd thee*  
*In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate*  
*The honour of my child.*

Cal. *O ho, O ho! would 't had been done!*  
*Thou didst prevent me; I had peopl'd else*  
*This isle with Calibans.*

Pros. *Abhorred slave,*  
*Which any print of goodness wilt not take,*  
*Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,*  
*Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour*  
*One thing or other. When thou didst not, savage,*  
*Know thy own meaning, but wouldest gabble like*  
*A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes*  
*With words that made them known. But thy vile race,*

Though thou didst learn, had that in't which good natures  
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou  
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,  
Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.

It was only when whites stood firm in their faith, when they accepted their duty as the Christ-bearing race and kept the colored races in benevolent servitude, that the black Calibans became something other than beasts of prey –

Cal. I'll be wise hereafter  
And seek for grace. What a thrice-double ass  
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god  
And worship this dull fool!

That “seek for grace” will only be heard from blacks who have learned what mercy is and forsaken the gods of bloody sacrifice. The God of mercy was at the heart of ‘racist’ Europe. The gods of merciless cruelty are at the heart of modern Liberaldom. Who is served by the lie of black history, that the whites who championed the God of mercy and love were evil because they tried to bring Christ to the savages of color without becoming absorbed by the savages of color? I repeat: who is served by that lie? It is the father of all lies. Black history month is a special celebration of all things satanic. And at the satanic center of this special month and our entire anti-civilization is the myth of the new suffering servant – the noble black savage.

Trump’s failure to win re-election was the direct result of his failure to challenge the central tenet of the liberals’ faith, their faith in the noble black savage. Trump never acted against the unmitigated evil of the liberals because he did not believe that anyone who was right about that which is essential – the belief in the nobility of the black savage – could be completely evil. Trump’s differences with the liberals never reached, on his part, the level of an outright war because he felt himself to be at one with them on the first article of their faith, which was and is their belief in the noble black savage. Then why didn’t the liberals make Trump one of their own? Why did they wage an unrelenting war against him? It was the subordinate doctrine to negro worship that brought Trump down. If you truly love the noble black savage, you must hate the white race. Trump, in the liberals’ eyes, was not really one of the Illuminati, despite what he said and did in support of the noble black savages; the liberals did not accept his stated faith because he did not hate whiteness. And the liberals were right to suspect Trump’s sincerity. If you do not hate the devil and all his works – and whiteness is the work of the devil in the liberals’ theology – then your love for the noble black savage must be questioned. In everything he does, the devil parodies Christianity. You must love the noble black savage and you must hate whiteness in Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth, because that theological construction is in direct contrast to Christ’s kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. Trump had a trace of white pietas in his soul, which prevented him from signing on to the destruction of the white race. In the liberals’ eyes, he was and is an apostate who must be burned in the fires of the inquisition after being tortured. In my view, you might as well be hung for a sheep as for a lamb – I wish Trump would denounce the noble black savage and support the Christ of old Europe, the God of our ascending race, but a man must go with the faith that is inside him. Trump sees a blended Christ, and as long as he sees that blended Christ, he will be part liberal and part Christian. And the liberals who are united in their purity of faith, who are 100% puritanical Satanists, will always be more than a match for halfway-house Christians such as Trump, who see with one eye fastened on the noble black savage and one eye fastened on Christ.

At the heart of this religious war, a war that Christians are losing, is this thing called culture. The triumph of scholasticism in the organized Christian churches allowed Satan, who was the driving force behind speculative, philosophical theology, to turn our Christ-centered revelatory faith – from His heart to our hearts – into a faith handed down from one great mind to another great mind. That ‘great mind’ faith does not need a culture composed of Christian hearts. Hence, both Protestant and Catholic Illuminati dismissed the blood faith of the European people as ‘mere culture’ and proceeded to follow the secular liberals into the brave new world devoid of flesh and blood Christians who believed in the Man of Sorrows with all their heart, mind, and soul. In the new Christianity all the theologians required was an intellectual assent from the feeble-minded laity to their purified, intellectual version of Christianity. The decline of the ‘cultural Christianity’ represented by Handel and Rembrandt did not and does not disturb the theologians because they never did like the beastly, unseemly, and philosophically unsound longings and passions in the human heart. Their minds are a much surer guide. But can the theologians’ assertions about the impracticality of the human heart stop the yearnings in our heart for something or someone over and above theology? Satan is and was audacious. He walked right into the main citadels of Christendom and revived the original sin. He preached speculative knowledge of God as the truth and the way, because he knew that speculative knowledge of God is not knowledge of God, it is the path to Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. Our culture of hearts bound to the sacred heart of Christ was replaced by Satan’s anti-culture of hearts committed to Satan through pure intelligence, the sacred negro, and science.

If we proceed as “God’s spies” in this prison of Liberaldom, we can see how we, as a people, became imprisoned by Satan’s minions. The devil came at the European people in the same manner that he attacked Uncle Silas:

*Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels.*

If you cut the cord to a man’s affections, his love for his kith and kin, and redirect his affections to an intellectual construct of God, haven’t you severed that man’s connection to the living God? At every turn of the utopian wheel the devil made promises based on the original sin in the Garden of Eden: “You shall be as gods.” Liberty, equality, and fraternity” – liberty from the living God, equality with Satan who permits infanticide, sodomy, and every other perversion known to man. And what is the devil’s fraternity? It is fraternity with the savages of color who have never abandoned the purity of their faith in the gods of sex and blood. It is those gods that the European people desperately cling to in the hope that they can be restored, through them and in them, to the blood faith that they lost when they abandoned their faith in the Dream of the Rood.

The evil seed of negro worship was planted by the devil in Europe’s green and pleasant land in order to turn our green and pleasant land into a barren desert, devoid of human life. Everywhere we see the fruition of the evil seed of negro worship, which is devil worship. The European people have become characters without an author because their “mysterious human relationships” with their kith and kin have been proscribed and demonized as ‘racist.’ For how long will the Europeans cede everything to the liberals because of white ‘racism’? You would think that a saturation point would be reached, that the European people would sicken from a steady diet of the sacred negro. But there seems, in this black-infested month of February, to be no end in sight. There are consequences if we fail to worship the negro. About twenty-five years ago I lost a job with a ‘conservative’ organization because of my ‘racism.’ So perhaps there are more Europeans out there who have sickened of the steady, unrelenting narrative of the liberals – ‘the negro is sacred, the white race is evil’ — but are afraid to openly acknowledge their rejection of the negro. But we owe it to our children to tell a different narrative. We can’t allow the liberals to own our culture and hope that somehow intellectual Christianity, the Christianity of the false Aslan, will serve as a corrective to negro worship. St. Paul walked right into the citadels of the Jewish and heathen worlds and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen. He is our apostle and we must follow in his train.

Boris Johnson congratulated America for getting back on track with Biden. What track are we on? We are on the hell-bound train to a world without light, without honor, without love, and without charity. Let us pause there. We can now see, in the United States, what a world without charity looks and feels like. God took flesh and dwelt among us even though the Jews considered His incarnation a blasphemy and the Athenian philosophers considered it to be foolishness. If we do not challenge the worship of the sacred negro and seek Christ through our “mysterious human relationships,” we will continue to live among and be like unto the demonic liberal swine who are determined to go headlong over the cliff while squealing their anti-hymn of praise for the sacred negro.

The new transgender mandate, that there shall be no males or females, is the logical outcome of a religion that is grounded in the rejection of the antique Europeans and their Christ-centered culture. Once they are rejected, He is rejected. And if He is no longer the savior, then all the values that stemmed from Him must be rejected in favor of all the values that stem from the worship of the sacred negro. Why shouldn’t we be sodomites, abortionists, and transgender creatures if He be not risen? And that is the driving force behind the anti-white movement. The liberals do not believe that Christ rose from the dead, they have no heart for our Savior because they do not believe He is the Savior who came into this world to save us from sin and death. If we love Christ in and through our people, our kith and kin, we will not be conservatives, seeking to conserve Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth by dialoging with Satan’s liberal minions. The counter-revolution starts in the sanctuary of the heart where He who is our beginning and our end dwells. +

# The Tears of God

March 6, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship

Tags: St. Paul



Rembrandt. The raising of Lazarus

Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept. —*St. John 11: 32-35*

---

The British good ol' boy, Boris Johnson, spoke for all liberals around the world and throughout America when he congratulated America for getting “back on track” with Biden. It seems, from my perspective, the height of insanity to earnestly desire to get “back on track,” on a train bound for hell. But of course the liberal swine are possessed by the devil, so when they get “back on track,” they are simply heading home. And they have been heading home for quite some time. In the name of utopia, they are progressing to a world where there is no humanity, which translates to — No Whiteness — to a world of purified Undines:

*They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. —Edmund Burke*

Our Lord, in the midst of mortal pain on the cross, said, “Forgive them, Lord, for they know not what they do.” But can the same be said of the modern liberals? They have almost two thousand years of Christian history before them, they have seen the Word made flesh in their people, and they have rejected the Word made flesh. They have become like unto the Jews who would not listen to the word of God as preached by St. Paul:

*Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. — Acts 28: 26-28*

The wheel has come full circle; our people who once championed the Word made flesh no longer, “see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart.” They have decided that Christ be not risen, and they must look for another savior to preside over another realm. Christ’s reign of charity must give way to Satan’s reign of merciless cruelty. That is the decree of the new Sanhedrin, the Sanhedrin of Judaized Europeans — the liberals.

I agree with the liberals on the point of contention, but I do not agree with their conclusion. The point of contention is: Did the European people get it right? Was there, at the vital center of their culture, not in the form of a syllogism but in the spirit and the blood, the answer to the riddle of our existence here on earth? I am one with the antique Europeans on that essential question: I believe that the Christ of old Europe, the Christ of the Gospels, was and is the Son of the living God. The liberals came to a different conclusion — they claimed and still claim that Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day. So all that stemmed from that belief must, of necessity, be discarded as false.

In the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, a whole cabal of writers, the existentialists, arose to lament the fact that we were alone in the universe without a God to call our own. But by the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the liberals had found a new god for the European people. They discovered, so they maintained, a magic deeper than the false magic of Christianity. They discovered cosmic rationalism, which encompasses the new trinity, consisting of the intellect of man, the sacred negro, and science. However, to use the language of Narnia, is there a deeper magic than the liberals’ deep magic, which is the magic of the white witch? Ah, there’s the rub! The philosophers and theologians cannot provide us with a magic deeper than the magic of the white witch. But the European people, the people with hearts of flesh, knew the deepest magic; they knew the Mysterious Stranger who created a realm in ancient Europe. And they knew Him because they understood Him as St. Paul enjoined them to understand Him, with their hearts. St. Paul came to us because he knew we would hear him. What has closed our hearts, in this, the century of European apostasy, to the Savior, the only begotten Son of the Father?

The two greatest proponents of cosmic rationalism were Albert Einstein (see *Einstein on Cosmic Religion and Other Opinions and Aphorisms*) and George Bernard Shaw (see *Back to Methuselah*). It was their contention that mankind had three religious stages. The first stage is the primitive, superstitious stage — fear of lightning as emanating from the gods, and fear of all naturally occurring disasters as emanating from the gods that must be appeased by sacrifice. The second stage is an extension of the superstitious stage with a certain added ethical component. That was mankind’s Christian stage. And finally there is the cosmic stage of religion, which can be attained by men of pure intelligence, men such as Albert Einstein and G. B. Shaw. I’m not making this up, those two incredibly superficial, incredibly vain, egotistical maniacs actually believed they had achieved a higher level of existence than our people with the hearts of flesh. And the modern liberals, most of whom have never read Einstein’s or Shaw’s incredibly superficial theories on the new cosmic religion, have absorbed the superficial faith of Einstein and Shaw. We are reminded of Karl Barth’s assessment of Feuerbach, who was also a cosmic rationalist, when we read Shaw and Einstein: ‘We have heard Feuerbach speak, and we have heard something that is nauseatingly, disgustingly trivial.’ Yes, it is superficiality and triviality that keeps Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth in order. If all that is trivial and superficial was not codified into law, there might be an outbreak of depth, and that would be a terrible blow to our new world order in which there must be no depth of thought or feeling.

What is institutionalized superficiality? It is the idea that the new God the Father — man’s abstract intellect (boldly stated in the first *Star Trek* movie: “We are our creator”), the new Savior — the noble black savage, and the new holy ghost — science, can give us a sustaining vision of God and man that can replace the antique Europeans’ vision of Christ the Lord. What is implicit in the new religion, that the cosmic man of science does not need the Suffering Servant, was made explicit in one of America’s national anthems — “Thine alabaster cities gleam,

undimmed by human tears." Really? Can we so construct our world, our brave new utopian world, that there is no need for human tears? That can only become possible if we build a superficial world in which there are only abstract human beings who belong to nature and nature's God, the noble black savage. There is no need to weep if a mathematical entity, an infinitesimally small particle of a statistical aggregate, disappears and returns to nature, what we once called death. But there is a great need for tears in the face of death if human beings are created in the image of God. In all of the Gospels, is there any more moving account of Christ's divine charity, of His loving concern for His people, than that moment when He wept before the tomb of Lazarus? When our tears are joined with the tears of God, we shake Satan's kingdom of hell on earth to its very core, because in our grief we have torn away the veil of liberal superficiality and touched the heart of the living God, the God who bled for us and who weeps with us.

The culture that our modern conservatives defend is a culture of superficiality presided over by a cabal of sophisters, economists, and calculators, who have no "compunctions visitings of nature" that can deter them from their maniacal quest to destroy every last human being even tangentially connected to the tears-of-God culture of ancient Europe. The liberals must destroy whiteness because they must destroy the Europeans' faith, their belief that Christ redeemed our tears. Such a faith is heresy to the liberals. They are building a perfect world of alabaster in which there is no need for human tears, and no need for a God of mercy who bled for us and weeps with us; 'through Him and in Him' is an anathema to the liberals.

Trump has holed up in Florida and is talking about running again in 2024. Why, if the liberals do not put him in jail before 2024, should we expect a different result than in 2020? Trump and his followers are still so "far from doing harm that they suspect none." So, again, why should we expect a different outcome if Trump runs in 2024? If we take into account the fact that the liberals are now codifying the process by which Trump was defrauded in 2020, it seems insane to expect good results from elections. But Americanism is a form of insanity.

Almost half of the American populace have given their support to Satan and his minions. They have completely, with malice aforethought, rejected the tears-of-God culture of the antique Europeans. And the rest of the Americans, the timid and confused majority, want to incorporate a new Christ into the cosmic religion of the liberals. They want the abstract intellect of man, the sacred negro and Christ, and they want science. What is wrong with that trinity? It is not a Trinity. You can't have Christ and the sacred negro as co-saviors. Trump and the white grazers who supported him will always lose to the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals have an integral faith; they have given their heart, mind, and soul to Satan. They are committed, through the sacred negro, to the kingdom of hell on earth. When you fight to conserve that kingdom by supporting "our troops" who defend the devil's disciples in the Capitol building, when you defend the rights of Planned Parenthood by condemning the men who bomb their headquarters, and when you condemn white pietas as racism, you are the devil's own; you are conserving that which must be opposed with fire and sword.

Let me reference two music videos that illustrate the tragedy of the white grazers who try to blend Christianity and liberalism. The first is the Hank Williams Jr. video in which he tells us that "A Country Boy Can Survive." At first our hearts soar when we hear him issue what appears to be a defiant rejection of liberalism – "We say grace, and we say Ma'am, and if you ain't into that we don't give a damn." He praises young white men who wear Confederate belt buckles and can "skin a buck and run a trout line." And when he contrasts the decadence of New York City to the country by comparing his friend's life in New York City with his life in the country: "My grandpa taught me how to live off the land, And his taught him to be a businessman," we begin to think that finally we have a fitting apologia for the white man. But wait – "Oh what a falling off was there!" When Mr. Williams shows us how his friend in New York City met his death at the hands of a mugger, the mugger is depicted as a white man. Now, one can make the case that there are vicious, murdering whites, and I would agree with you. But are white muggers really the great danger in New York City or any of our cities? No, the video loses all its impact, it fails at the moment of truth, by failing to confront the major heresy of our times – the worship of Satan through the noble black savage. So long as white Christians accept the liberals' heresy that blacks can do no evil because they are sacred, those selfsame whites will be half-Christian, and half-liberal, and they will never, never be able to defeat the demon-possessed liberal swine.

In another music video called "The Long Black Train," Josh Turner echoes the half-way house Christianity of Hank Williams Jr. The song, reminiscent of Hawthorne's short story, "The Celestial Railroad," depicts a beautiful, long, black train that beckons one and all to take a glorious ride. But of course that long, black train is destined for hell; we dare not take a ride on it. At first, as in the Hank Williams Jr. video, our hearts soar. What a magnificent depiction of the struggle between good and evil that can only be resolved by recourse to our common hope, our Savior Jesus Christ. But there is a tragic sinking in the video. As the train pulls up to two women, one black and one white, the white woman gets on board the train while the black woman remains behind, steadfastly rejecting the devil's temptation, and then the train speeds on. Now, again, you can make the case that there are blacks who stand with Christ and reject Satan while there are many, many whites (they are called liberals) who reject Christ and embrace Satan.<sup>(1)</sup> So what is wrong with the video? Why did I know, with metaphysical certainty, when I first saw the video, that the white woman, and not the black woman, would go to the devil? Even in the good whites, the Christians, there is more than just a touch of negro worship, which represents weakness in the face of the enemy. And the liberals always exploit that weakness to destroy every last vestige of the tears-of-God culture of the antique Europeans.

Why won't the European grazers, who are part liberal and part Christian, go the whole way? Why won't they stand with the antique Europeans and look on Christ as the beginning and the end, the first and the last? They are in the grip of the white witch, they fear that her deep magic of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science is deeper than Christianity. Her magic, which is the liberals' magic, is deeper than the wisdom of the theologians. But Christ was not a theologian, Christ wept before the tomb of Lazarus. And St. Paul was not a theologian; he bid us follow the foolishness of God, which is wiser than the wisdom of men. If we place our hopes in theology, we shall fail. If we place our hopes in elections we shall fail. But if we place our hopes in charity, in the tears of God, we shall touch the heart of God and we shall obtain the peace of God in our hearts, the peace that passeth the understanding of pure intelligence. There is a world beyond the superficial empire of Liberaldom. That is our world; we must cling to that world with all our heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) If the Josh Turner video had two white women facing the temptation of the long, black train, and one woman succumbed to the temptation and one did not, the religious message would have been entirely Christian – some reject Christ for the devil and some choose Christ over the devil. But instead we are given a very different message – Christ and the sacred negro are co-redeemers. That is blasphemy, and we must reject such an unholy blending of Christ and the noble black savage.

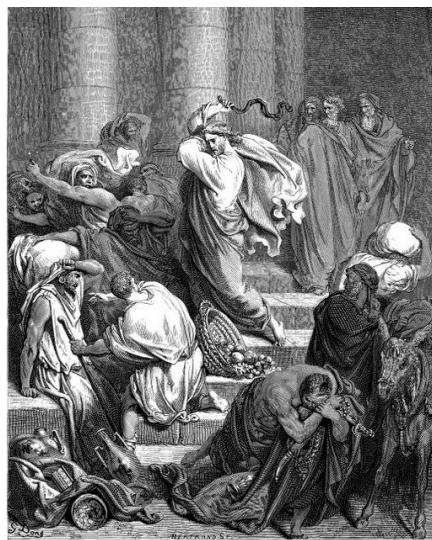
### A Prayer Request

The woman who goes by the name of the Vanishing American has published a blog for many years now. She consistently writes from the heart about our Christian European hearth fire. She is a wonderful and rare woman. Now, she tells us that she is quite ill. I have always included her in my prayers at night, but now I must pray all the more fervently for her recovery. I commend her to your prayers as well. These are indeed sad times when a good deal of our friends are people we have never, and will never on this earth, see face to face. But we have the tears of God to unite us, and that is more, much more, than a small consolation.

# We Cannot Barter Our Souls

March 13, 2021  
Categories: Jacobinism, Liberalism, Muscular Christianity, Negro worship

Tags: St. Paul



Dore. The Buyers and Sellers Driven Out of the Temple

Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law? They gather themselves together against the soul of the righteous, and condemn the innocent blood. But the LORD is my defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge. And he shall bring upon them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own wickedness; yea, the LORD our God shall cut them off. —*Psalm 94: 20-23*

---

The wheel has come full circle; our people who once championed the Word made flesh no longer, “see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart.” They have decided that Christ be not risen, and they must look for another savior to preside over another realm. Christ’s reign of charity must give way to Satan’s reign of merciless cruelty. That is the decree of the new Sanhedrin, the Sanhedrin of Judaized Europeans — the liberals. — CWNY

---

History does not tell us whether Louis XVI regretted his decision not to use violence on the bloodthirsty mob who stormed the palace of Versailles. He died nobly, refusing to receive absolution from the apostate priests who presided over his execution. But did he regret that his benevolence to the Jacobins resulted in the massacre of the Swiss guards who fought so heroically in his defense? Did he regret what he must have known was coming after his execution — the murder of his wife and children, and the murder of the French aristocracy? We do not know for sure what went on in the inmost soul of that king who was so far from doing harm himself that he could not see the satanic depths of his Jacobin enemies. Is it possible that even at the hour of his death he did not see the pure evil of the Jacobins and the terrible part he played in the destruction of Christian France by his failure to act against them? Yes, it is quite possible, because once a man’s soul is tainted with liberalism, his heart constricts and he cannot see clearly. Louis XVI was a noble king, but he had caught the disease, the sickness unto death, which is liberalism.

I bring this up because of an article I saw in a conservative publication in which a conservative pundit recommended that we, the people who did not vote for Biden, should fight “non-violently” against the liberals who defrauded us in the recent election. His advocacy has been and is the stance of Trump and his followers, so let us examine the conservatives’ faith in non-violence. Their faith is based on the assumption that liberalism — democracy, civil rights, liberty, equality, and fraternity — is good. So all those who profess a belief in liberalism cannot be pure evil. And you cannot use violence unless your enemy is pure evil. Is there such a thing as pure evil in the conservatives’ eyes? Yes, of course there is. White racism is pure evil, so you can and should use violence against white racists. Such violence is ‘good violence.’ The conservatives are always on the defensive, trying to show that they are not racist, while the liberals are always on the offensive, engaging in a war to exterminate white racists.

Let us hope that Trump and his family will not be executed as Louis XVI and his family were executed, but it is crystal clear that Trump has repeated the tragic mistake of Louis XVI because of his inability to see the unmitigated evil of liberalism. He did not order the Federal troops to fire on the black rioters during the summer of 2020 because he did not believe his liberal opponents who supported the rioters were pure evil. He believed, in part, in the justice of the liberals’ cause because they believe in the noble black savage, so he refused to act against the Black Lives Matter rioters and murderers. And the Supreme Court justices took note. The left let it be known that they would not tolerate a Trump victory, they would violently oppose a second term. Trump, on the conservative side, let it be known that he and his followers would be non-violent, they would not fight against any enemy that flew the Black Lives Matter banner. The United States did not *have* to become a vassal state of the Chinese communists; it did become a vassal state because the conservatives, who are not conservative, are Quakers, and the mad-dog liberals are violent Jacobins. The kingdom of heaven is taken by violence, and the kingdom of hell on earth was and is made possible by ‘good people’ who oppose the violence of the liberals with aggressive non-violence.

The liberals obtained a crushing victory in 2020, and they will remain ensconced in power, free to murder non-illuminated whites through legal channels, because they are willing to violently defend their satanic kingdom while the conservatives are unwilling to violently oppose them. And a non-violent response to violence is a surrender to violence. We can’t gnostically defeat liberalism. Evil is done by flesh and blood men at the instigation of Satan. We have to fight those flesh and blood minions of Satan as flesh and blood human beings must fight, with our whole heart, mind, and soul. If we fight gnostically, we are not really fighting. The non-violence of Trump and his people is the equivalent of a video game battle — it has no basis in reality.

The American conservatives are not conservative as Burke was conservative. Burke wanted to conserve Christian Europe against the Jacobins. The American conservatives want to conserve Emersonian superficiality: “There is nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so.” They want the great American talk show, with the devil as the host, to go on forever. And the debate is always the same — who can best serve the sacred negro? “We are not racists,” the conservatives tell their mad-dog brethren, “Our economic policies help the sacred negro while your policies hurt the sacred negro.” The liberals and the conservative-liberals only differ over the means, they are in agreement about the end: to build a new world order grounded in the noble black savage, which has nothing to do with the old world order, Christian Europe.

The United States is the crowning achievement of the new world order liberals. It has evolved into a state which has institutionalized all things satanic — sodomy, transgenderism, feminism, legalized abortion, negro worship, and the integration of every non-Christian religion into a religious unity opposed to the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. Why should we conserve such a nation? How can we justify our ‘non-violence’ in the face of such a Babylonian monstrosity? Are we human beings or are we liberals? We can’t be both. If we still regard ourselves as human beings created in the image of God, we must violently oppose the liberals who are determined to violently eliminate the image of God-in-man culture of the European people from the face of the earth.

Why did the liberals have to destroy Trump? Why did they and why do they still react so hysterically whenever his name is mentioned? Trump, like Louis XVI, is a moderate liberal, who thinks that Christianity and liberty, equality, and fraternity are compatible. And if they are compatible, there is no reason to exterminate the white Christ-bearing race. But the liberals, the Jacobins, know that Christ’s reign of charity is not compatible with Satan’s reign of merciless cruelty. They must, and they shall, eliminate whiteness from the face of the earth. The

liberals' kingdom is much worse than pagan Rome because the post-Christian is worse than the pagan, but pagan Rome and Liberaldom are alike in one essential: both kingdoms could and can tolerate all religions, save one. Christ's outlandish claim that He was the Son of the living God could not and cannot be syncretized into a multi-religious, diverse Roman empire or a diverse multi-religious liberal empire such as the United States. Christ and His followers had to be and must be purged from both empires.

Robespierre used the term 'purge' to describe what had to be done in order to purify France of Christians. The modern liberals, like Robespierre, are always purging their realms of white Christians. That is the essence of all modern democracies – the white race must be purged because it was the Christ-bearing race. And in order to ensure that they, the liberals, won't be purged from their utopian hell, they must show that they have gone beyond whiteness. (Chris Cuomo recently told a black newscaster on CNN that he, Chris Cuomo, was black in his soul.) That is why the white liberals are even more anti-white than the white-hating noble black savages. The liberals must prove that they are not white so they can preside over the purge of the non-illuminated whites.

Satan is not concerned with the intellectual Christianity in the organized churches. He can and does use the Emersonian superficiality in the churches to serve his kingdom of hell on earth. But he is concerned about cultural Christianity, the epistles-of-the-living-God Christianity that St. Paul spoke of: "Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart." (*2 Corinthians 3: 2-3*) Satan does not want any part of the people who took Christ into their hearts. That is why he has centered his attack on the spirit and blood culture of the antique Europeans rather than on organized Christian Jewry. He persuaded the Christian churchmen to defend their corporate, organizational church governments and let those 'insignificant' cultural entities, the epistles of the living God, who were and are the Christian Europeans, be consigned to the demonized dust heap of history. But let me ask the conservatives in Church and State a question: Why, if the 'racist' and 'sexist' culture of the antique Europeans is so evil, is it attacked by Satan's minions? Shouldn't you, the conservative churchmen and the conservative politicians, be against transgenderism, feminism, sodomy, legalized abortion, and negro worship? Shouldn't you be alarmed to find yourself in the same camp as the liberals, who advocate such things? Or does the fact that the liberals worship the noble black savage wash all their other sins away? Apparently it does.

Is there a reason why we must stand by while all the art works from the Christian era of our people are either banned outright or accompanied by severe lectures by illuminated, satanic liberals? Are we still a people if we permit liberals to demonize our heritage? Of course we aren't. During the election-fraud protest, an unarmed white woman was murdered by the Federal police, and there was no investigation of her murder. Ten months ago a black criminal died when a white police officer tried to arrest him, and the entire legal establishment, conservatives and liberal, have banded together to ensure that the white police officer is convicted of murder. The murder of the white protestor, the upcoming show trial of the white police officer, the daily sacrificial offerings of whites in our major cities to noble black savages, all are the result of whites' refusal to defend their cultural heritage for fear of being called racists. If you allow the liberals to demonize your past they will take that demonization to the next stage. They will demonize you in the present, which means the non-illuminated whites must pay for the past evil of the white race with their lives. The liberals and their black shock troops look on themselves as exterminating angels; they must and they will destroy the white race. They will kill without mercy and without pity because they are the anointed ones; they must purify their realm of white Christians.

Let us go back to the summer of 2020. Why did Trump fail to counter the violence of the Antifa, Black Lives Matter murderers and rioters with violence? Why did he permit them to set up their own government in direct opposition to his government? If we grant that Trump was not afraid to act against Antifaers who stepped away from their black shields, we are still left with the question of why Trump felt unable to act against Black Lives Matter. Was it because Trump lacked courage? No, that was not the reason. Trump has the courage of his convictions. His failure to act was *because* of his convictions. You can't defeat the liberals when you are part liberal yourself. I would have ordered every single rioter, Antifa and BLM, shot on sight had I been president (but of course, I could never be elected president), not because I am more courageous and decisive than Trump, but because I believe that the liberals and their colored shock troops are totally evil. I believe they are hell-bent on murdering my people and destroying every last vestige of our sacred Christian European heritage. Believing that, how could I do otherwise than respond with violence against the liberal-black violence? Everything depends on what we see in our hearts when we look at the liberals and the world they have created. Trump's faith is not my faith. His conversion from mad-dog liberalism to moderate liberalism was a sincere conversion. But is that enough? Can we stop along the path to the liberals' hell on earth? No, we can't. It is all or nothing; we can't be a little bit liberal and a little bit Christian. The liberals proved that when they carried the day on November 3, 2020. Now the liberals have it all, and the white grazers have nothing. But what do they have? They have hell on earth. And we have, at least we should have, moral clarity. The liberals are united in their hatred of Christ and his people; we cannot, nor should we want to, peacefully co-exist with them. Even if we wanted to, they would not permit it. They, like the giant in the fairy tale who wants the blood of an Englishman, want the blood of all non-illuminated whites, and that rather large majority consists of thee and me.

The pro-life movement in the 1970s was a dress rehearsal for the defeat of the Trumpers in 2020. The liberals at that time decided they could violently terminate the lives of the infants in the womb without facing any serious resistance from organized Christian Jewry. And they were right. The "pro-lifers," the moderate liberals, kept screaming, "We must be non-violent, we must rely on the courts." Isn't that what Trump kept saying?—"Be non-violent, we must rely on the courts." From whence comes this mystical belief in the courts? It comes from sinful man's reliance on abstract reason divorced from the heart of God. Our democratic system is not grounded in the heart and blood faith of the European people; it is not connected to the "tears of God" culture of the antique Europeans. Our laws stem from the man-made abstractions of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Such abstractions are antithetical to Christ's reign of charity, in which the law serves Christ rather than Satan. How can we expect justice, how can we expect respect for the Christian hearth-fire virtues of old Europe from law courts that are based on the principles of the Jewish Sanhedrin? Christ stood before the Sanhedrin and He was condemned to death because He refused to deny His divinity.

*But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses? Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands. —Mark 14: 61-64*

We can't place ourselves outside of the condemnation the Sanhedrin pronounced upon Christ. We can't tell the liberals who constitute the modern Sanhedrin that we do not know the Christ of old Europe, because we are afraid to be cast out of Liberaldom for being racist. We cannot share in His resurrection if we do not share in His crucifixion. The blending of Christ with Judaism, with Islam, the gods of the Amazon rain forest, and the sacred negro is an ignoble attempt to court favor (pun intended) with the new-old Sanhedrin of the liberals. What do we gain when we kneel to the liberals' Sanhedrin? Our lives? No, they want our blood; we won't save our lives by kneeling before them. But we will lose something of infinite value – we will lose our souls if we continue to bow down to the gods of Liberaldom. We will lose the promise of *1 Corinthians*: "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

Shall we stay with Emersonian superficiality, with a gnostic blend of intellectual Christianity and liberalism, or shall we return to the epistles of the living God – to our people when they believed that the "trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised"? Let me end with one final example of the contrast between the old European world of "charity never faileth" and our brave new world of demonic superficiality. About fifteen years ago I purchased a paperback copy of *The Epistles of St. Paul* because I wanted to make notes in the margins and underline certain passages, which was something I did not want to do in the family Bible. I found the following commentary in the introduction:

*Paul stayed in touch with his converts through formal letters that covered clarification of the doctrine, the impact of Jewish law on Christianity, heresy, personal intercession, corrections concerning earlier letters, and a review of previous letters to the church. One of those letters (*1 Corinthians*) included a controversial statement about women, "Let your women keep in silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law."*

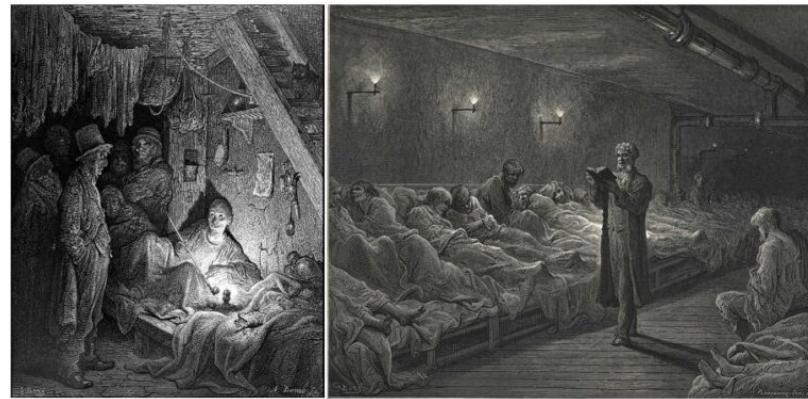
Is not that liberal editorial the essence of modern liberalism? Paul's sublime paean to charity and his incomparable, heartfelt assertion of our resurrection through Jesus Christ is reduced to nothing because he was sexist? That is the world that the conservatives tell us we must accept. Never! +

# The Dualism at the Heart of Europe

March 20, 2021

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Dostoyevsky, St. Paul



For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. —2 Peter 2: 21-22

---

The strange voice, exalted, oracular in mad inspiration, drew nearer in the darkness until Dr. Fu Manchu appeared in the circle of light. His mask-like face was transfigured, his eyes glittered like jewels. He was a seer, a prophet, a man set above human laws.

-Sax Rohmer

---

I was quite fond of the Dr. Seuss books when I was growing up. In later years he became an environmentalist and an anti-nuclear activist, but still, in his prime, he took us away from the Dick and Jane books and gave us some wonderful, imaginative stories. My favorite Dr. Seuss book was *King Stilts* in which the Patrol Cats of the Kingdom of Binn have a climactic battle with the Nizzards. Another favorite of mine was *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*. In that story, a small boy is bored with the horse and cart he sees every day on Mulberry Street, and he imagines a whole panorama of people and scenes that he sees on his imagined Mulberry Street. One of his imagined scenes has “A Chinese boy, Who eats with sticks.” That one line with the accompanying picture of a Chinese boy with chop sticks got the book taken off library shelves in America. *Fifty Shades of Grey* can be on the shelves, but not *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*. If Marco (that is the child’s name) had seen an LGBQTA parade on Mulberry Street, his book could have stayed on the library shelf, but he had to be Oriental-phobic and see a stereotypical Chinese boy, hence he and his book must be cast into outer darkness.

I’m not going to go into the liberals’ laundry list of children’s books from ‘racist’ Europe or the great literary works and other artworks that are now banned. Instead I want to focus on what the *Mulberry Street* book ban represents. It represents the alliance of the two most Satanic forces in the world – liberalism and Orientalism. The liberals worship the intellect of man divorced from the Christian heart, because they have rejected Jesus Christ; they hate Him. And because they hate Him, they hate the white Christ-bearing race. The Orientals also hate the white race because of the European’s connection to the God of charity and mercy. To the cruel, diabolical minds of the Chinese, St. Paul’s assertion that “knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth” is an anathema. They, the Chinese, do not even have a word for charity in their language. And the liberals are laboring with might and main to eliminate the people who once championed the God of charity and mercy.

The Chinese openly brag that the 21<sup>st</sup> century is their century. That certainly seems to be the case if we are talking about the principalities and powers of this world. The Chinese disposed of Trump by inflicting a virus on the West that destroyed the economies of the European nations, and they have reestablished themselves as the head of the World Health Organization. So long as liberalism is the religion of the European people, the Chinese will rule the European people, because the liberals’ hatred of Jesus Christ is in line with the Chinese’s hatred of Jesus Christ; hence, the liberals will always ally with the Chinese against the white Europeans, the Christ-bearing people, when they were a people.

Again, we see the significance of the Trump electoral defeat. Trump was a moderate liberal, which now passes for a conservative – he wanted to go back to the blending of liberalism and Christianity. But the liberals wanted purity. They wanted pure, unadulterated Satanism. So they looked to the Orient, to the masters of cruelty and demonism to help them avoid the horror of a return to moderate liberalism. The Chinese are not evil because they are communists, they are communist because they are evil. The mystical core of their culture was demonic well before they became a communist nation: “Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia” (*Acts 16:6*). [\(1\)](#)

The liberals who scream ‘racist’ when a European speaks of the demonic, mystical core of the Oriental cultures and describes the European people as the Christ-bearers, still believe in the mystic of the Orient and the Christ-bearing white race; they have simply reversed the mystic. They believe the Orientals are good, because they worship the intellect of man divorced from the heart, and they believe the antique Europeans and those who follow in their train were and are evil, because they think with the passion of a Christian heart, they believe in the Word made flesh, which is an anathema to the Gnostic minds of the Orientals and to the liberals of the West as well.

The stated purpose of the pro-life movement in this country was to procure legal protection for the unborn. If we keep that goal in mind we must state that the pro-life movement was a colossal failure. That does not mean that there was not something noble, something called charity, in the hearts of many pro-lifers, but it does mean that something was lacking in the movement. The same can be said about the Christian European missionary movements. There were many well-intentioned missionaries. And just as the anti-abortion movement saved some babies, so did the missionary movements save, through the power of Christ working within the movements, some heathen souls. But the Europeans did not Christianize the heathen nations as a whole. The mystical core of the heathen nations remained heathen – Mexico stayed Aztec, the Africans stayed with their gods of blood and sacrifice, and the yellow races stayed with the diabolical arts of Fu Manchu.

Now we come to the Europeans, the people who took the Word made flesh into their hearts and placed Christ at the mystical core of their culture. They dreamt the Dream of the Rood because they saw with their eyes and heard with their ears and understood with their hearts. From that moment on, the visionary moment, the word ‘European’ meant Christian. In the movie *The Mask of Fu Manchu*, based on the novels of Sax Rohmer, the evil Oriental genius, Fu Manchu, repeatedly refers to the “detested white race” as the Christ-bearing race. Yes, that is correct. An Oriental who becomes a Christian, and there are some, must go against the mystical core of his nation. In contrast, a European who goes over to the enemies of Christ must go against the mystical core of Europe, which is Christian. If enough Europeans become liberals, can the mystical core of Europe change? Can the European people become one with the enemies of Christ? The reason the mysticism of the East became so popular in the West in the 1960s and beyond is not because the East became Christian but because the West became anti-Christian.

The European people could never be defeated from without when they were a Christian people. They are not now the slaves of the Chinese because they were defeated by the Chinese; they are now the slaves of the Chinese because they no longer believe in themselves as the Christ-bearing race. They detest their ancestors, the white Europeans, with a greater intensity than the colored races detest the white Europeans. So long as that hatred of whiteness prevails in the West, the Chinese will rule the West. The answer to the question of whether the mystical core of Europe can be changed if enough Europeans become liberals, is yes. The mystical core of Europe can and has been changed. There is now a dualism at the heart of Europe. There is the old Europe, the Christ-centered Europe, which has given way to the new Europe that belongs to Satan. But we, the European people, have in our history, in our racial memory, something of

infinite value: our people once knew the Savior — we once shared our tears with and gave our hearts to Him who saves. That is why the liberals must reframe their new faith in Christian forms; they must, unlike the Orientals, have a triune God; they must have the sacred negro to replace Christ as the second person in their new trinity. Will that need for a secular savior ultimately bring them in conflict with their Oriental masters who do not need the sacred negro? Quite possibly it will. The devil's kingdom of hell on earth will not be harmonious. But that should not be our main concern. We, the remnant band of European Christians, shall remain with our first love — the Europe grounded in the love of the Word made flesh, which is an anathema to the liberals of the West and to the men of the East as well.

When faith in Jesus Christ becomes theology, when He becomes the end product of reason, our faith waxes cold, as cold as the Orientals' faith in their cruel, detached rational gods. Christian Europe was not exceptional because Europeans were smarter than the other races, Christian Europe was exceptional because the God whom the Europeans championed was a God with a heart of flesh. Christ was not the cloud of unknowing, He spoke to our ancestors and He speaks to us now, if we hear and see with our hearts, through the Holy Ghost.

The terrible slaughter of whites at our borders, the triumph of the Orient over the Occident in our culture and our economy is the result of the European people's descent into rationalism. The conservative-liberals are currently involved in an endless debate with the mad-dog liberals in which the one thing necessary is not even subject to debate. The one thing necessary is that we, the European people, should reject rationalism and return to the passionate, blood faith of the antique Europeans. Moderate liberalism is lukewarm, it becomes vomit; we shall never be able to combat the demonism of the liberals and the Orientals with the rational vomit of moderate liberalism. The modern shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, advocate rational vomit as a solution to all our ills. They want to show the liberals that the destruction of the white race and complete economic dependence on communist China is irrational. But are the liberals irrational? No, they are not. All decisions that we make, for good or evil, are made in our hearts. The liberals' hearts belong to Satan; they hate Jesus Christ. So it is quite rational for them to want to be ruled by the Chinese rather than by a moderate liberal such as Trump. Reason is a sword wielded in defense of our heart's deepest yearnings. The liberals yearn for all things opposed to His reign of charity: legalized abortion, sodomy, transgenderism, feminism, negro worship, and religious egalitarianism, with the exception of Christianity. The moderate liberals want, in their hearts, a lukewarm Christianity, so they use their reason to defend a Christian presence in Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. But Christ will not support such a kingdom; He wants our whole heart, He wants us to rely on Him and Him alone. The tragic blending of intellectual Christianity and liberalism has left the European people defenseless against the liberals' noble black savages and the Oriental gods of merciless cruelty.

Dostoyevsky's inability, when he was a member of a revolutionary cabal, to repudiate in his heart, "the radiant personality of Christ," mirrored my own experiences as a young man. I could not reconcile the irrationality of Christ's resurrection from the dead with reason and science. But was there something greater than reason and science? Why did I profess a non-belief in Christ, but still say my prayers in Jesus's name? We must try to understand God as St. Paul enjoined us to understand Him, with a "heart of flesh." Why is the human heart, which our Lord and St. Paul always referred to as our link to the living God, constantly derided by 'Christian' theologians and liberals? The theologians deride the heart because the passions we find therein can lead a man to heaven or hell. "There must," the theologians tell us, "be an easier route to heaven." There isn't. But there is a sure route to hell — it is by way of the human mind abstracted from the wellspring of existence, the human heart connected to His sacred heart. The liberals deride the sentiments emanating from the human heart, because they fear such sentiments might lead to Him. So they preach reason in order to cloak what is in their hearts — the hatred for Christ and His people.

During my struggle to come to a Pauline understanding of God, I had numerous conversations with a teacher, a former Catholic priest who was now a religious agnostic, which is more than a bit of a contradiction, but he was one. My teacher-friend could not reconcile faith in Christ with the rational apologetics that he believed in. He was right, by his lights. The compatibility of faith and reason — reason as defined by the philosopher and the theologian — cannot give us the blessed assurance of the prophets and St. Paul. But is not man more than reason? Is he more than a piano key? Dostoevsky's inability to renounce the "radiant personality of Jesus Christ" brought him to believe in the God who transcends our reason. That became my belief as well. My teacher, the lapsed Thomist, needed a strong dose of the poetic of our people — their belief in the God-Man whose love for us reaches into the secret chambers of our heart and gives us the heart to understand what the philosophers and theologians can never understand — the Word made flesh.

Christ is a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Athenian philosophers, but He is the morning star to the poet of the absolute, our apostle, St. Paul. We must see Christ as St. Paul saw Him and as our people saw Him — he and they held the living God in the "fleshy tables of the heart." The sword of the spirit is the word of God. What then is the sword of Satan? It is reason detached from the heart of Christ. The liberals and the Chinese wield that sword. Must we surrender to them, who are the principalities and powers of this world? Our Supreme Court does whatever they say.<sup>(2)</sup> And our church men loudly proclaim the compatibility of Christ and liberalism in the hopes that the terrible swift sword of Satan will descend on the non-illuminated whites instead of on them. We have only that charity of honor to keep us upright in this, the evil day, Satan's day. But that 'only' is everything. "This must not go on" comes from a heart of flesh, a European heart that belongs to Christ and His people. The evil of moderate liberalism, which is modern conservatism, is that it tells us we do not have to make the Dostoyevskian choice — we do not have to decide between Christ and the devil. But we do have to decide about the "radiant personality of Christ." Was He the Son of the living God or was He a false God, a charlatan? The liberals and their Chinese allies have made their decision. Let us leave the vomit of moderate liberalism and stand with the people who were not afraid to embrace the foolishness of the Cross of Christ. +

---

(1) I once read an account written by a European missionary to China of the first time he told the Christ story to a group of Chinese. He was delighted when they listened with intense interest to the story of Christ's crucifixion. But then they promptly went out and crucified a group of white Europeans traveling through China. Whatever is good in the colored races was the result of the white Europeans' refusal to accept the colored races' cultural values. Now that everything stemming from old Europe is deemed 'racist' and everything emanating from the colored races is deemed good, we are witnessing the enthronement of Satan in the European countries.

(2) Brett Kavanaugh was one of Trump's appointees. He returned that enormous favor by betraying Trump. He was one of the Supreme Court 'Justices' who refused to hear the election fraud cases because he was afraid of the Left and wanted to court their favor. The self-serving Amy Barrett was one with Kavanaugh. Both 'Justices' remind me of Pip's sister in *Great Expectations*. After Orlick beats her into imbecility, she always is very concerned to please him, because she does not want another beating. Kavanaugh and Barrett both took a liberal beating at their confirmation hearings. Barrett, because of her sex, might avoid another beating, but Kavanaugh's moral cowardice will not help him. Biden and company are still going after him. He deserves his fate. If you won't stand tall, if you won't leave the vomit of moderate liberalism in order to fight the mad-dog liberals, you deserve the place to which you came — the kingdom of hell on earth. Biden and his legion of devils have the hellish audacity to tell us that their policy of white genocide is the kinder and gentler policy. Kinder to whom? Sympathy for the devil has become the worship of the devil. Everything that is anti-Christian, everything that is satanic, has been enshrined into law in the United States of Satan.

# Orphans

March 27, 2021

Categories: Charity, Europeans and Christ, Muscular Christianity, Religion of Satan

Tags: Charles Dickens, D. P. Duguauquier



Sleep, my child and peace attend thee  
All through the night;  
Guardian angels God will send thee  
All through the night.  
Soft, the drowsy hours are creeping,  
Hill and vale, in slumber sleeping,  
I my loving vigil keeping,  
All through the night.

While the moon her watch is keeping  
All through the night;  
While the weary world is sleeping  
All through the night.  
O'er thy spirit gently stealing,  
Visions of delight revealing,  
Breathes a pure and holy feeling,  
All through the night.

Deep the silence round us spreading,  
All through the night;  
Dark the path that we are treading,  
All through the night.  
Still the coming day discerning,  
By the hope within us burning,  
To the dawn our footsteps turning,  
All through the night.

Star of Faith the dark adorning,  
All through the night;  
Leads us fearless toward the morning,  
All through the night.  
Though our hearts be wrapped in sorrow,  
From the home of dawn we borrow,  
Promise of a glad tomorrow,  
All through the night.

---

The liberals' war against the white race, called 'cancel culture,' has met little resistance within the ranks of the white grazers and their conservative leaders. Our culture is what we are as a people; it is our literature, our art, our music, our families, and our faith. If we allow the liberals and their colored allies to cancel our culture, what is left to us? What is left to the white person who is willing to allow his culture to be cancelled is nothing. He will attempt to show his liberal overlords that he is black, pure black inside, in order to prove that he has been illuminated, but illumination is hard to prove. There is nothing from white culture that will not ultimately be condemned as racist. How can a European completely divest himself of everything white and still remain in this world? He can't. First the grazers who want to retain something of white Europe in their liberalism will be eliminated, but in the end the liberals will have to eliminate themselves, because no one will be able to maintain the perfect purity of the un-white.

Whenever I talked to conservatives or white grazers during this past election year, I came up against a wall when I brought up the race issue. Whenever I said that the liberals could not be defeated unless white people faced the fact the liberals were bound and determined to eliminate the white race, the grazers and the conservatives, "turned all their faces away." I was bringing up the black rhino in the living room that we are all supposed to ignore, even though the black rhino gores all the white people that come near him.

Why am I not supposed to bring up the liberals' attack, through the noble black savage, on the white race? I am not supposed to bring that subject up because the white race has been brought before the liberal Sanhedrin and found guilty of racism, so now and forever white people must not fight against their cancellation as a people. They must walk softly, speak gently, and do penance for their racism by grafting their souls onto the black race. It is my contention that white people must not become pure black inside, they must be white, pure white inside. What was the horrendous crime that white people committed, the sin without pardon? Their sin, when they were a people, was that they took the Son of the Living God into the vital center of their culture. Ever since the Europeans' Dream-of-the-Rood moment in time, the liberals, at first on the outer fringes of Christian Europe, now at the center of liberal Europe, have been stand-ins for Caiaphas. They are forever condemning the Christian Europeans to death. And it is 'racism' that allows the liberal Sanhedrin to cancel the white Europeans' culture and their lives with complete impunity.

After the murder of a white this past summer by a noble black savage, I heard a conservative commentator say that the shootings and the riots in our country are not a race issue, they are a "human issue." We should be against murder and riots because such things are "inhumane." Of course murder is inhumane, but the murders throughout our nation *are* a racial matter. The liberals permit and encourage the murder of whites because they hate the humane God, the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. If we do not support the 'racist' culture of the antique Europeans who believed that individual human beings were created in the image of God and not in the image of the beast, on what grounds can we oppose the murder of white people in our nation or anywhere else in the world? If we are all statistical aggregates, belonging to nature, and whites are the defective spores of nature's statistical aggregate, why should we care when white people are 'cancelled'? The liberals do not care, they want to see whiteness eliminated from the face of the earth. And they will get their wish if white 'conservatives' keep hiding under the bed every time the liberals scream, 'racist.' [\(1\)](#)

That the race war, which only one side, the liberal side, is fighting, is a religious war is so obvious that I shouldn't have to say it. But it is not obvious to the willfully blind conservatives, so I will state the obvious: All that is good, not only in the European nations, but in the non-European nations as well, stems from the fact that the antique Europeans believed that love came down from heaven in the person of Jesus Christ. That is why the murder of whites throughout our nation is a race issue. If we are not 'racist,' if we are not white Christians who love and hate with hearts of flesh, what are we? We are liberals, and liberals are not opposed to the murder of white people because they are the evil ones, who once believed in the God that opposes all things liberal – abortion, sodomy, negro worship, etc. Moderate liberals who appeal to the liberals' humanity do not understand liberalism. And they do not understand liberalism because they are divided against themselves. They want *some* liberalism, but not all of it. So they close the eyes of their heart and refuse to acknowledge what the heart of a European Christian can see: The liberals are pure evil; they hate Jesus Christ. The Christian European is one with the Psalmist: "Lord, how long shall the wicked, how long shall the wicked triumph?"

The wicked triumphed in this last election because they were willing to use violence in order to impose their will on a confused majority coalition that believed in the sacred, democratic litany: "We are non-violent, we are not racist." And what does non-violence in the face of evil result in? Are human lives saved? No, because when the good will not fight the wicked, evil flourishes. The Chinese communists once again can deal out death at the head of a death squad called the World Health Organization, and the colored hordes can once again bring death and destruction to white Americans at our open-door borders. All that amounts to nothing in comparison with what the white conservatives think they have gained by not fighting – they are able to say, "We are non-violent, we are not racist." But if we have hearts, if we are Europeans, we should be violent and we should be 'racist': we should love our own in and through the Savior, and we should fight for our own in His Holy Name.

What happened in America in 2020 already occurred in the European colonies throughout Africa and Latin America. Under liberal guidance the colored races killed and murdered the whites in order to gain 'independence':

*Just punishment was to be meted out to the perpetrators of violence. Indeed, the Belgian public prosecutor wasted no time in attacking a European who had shot a Congolese in the very act of raping his wife and although he was not sentenced his action was criticized. He should have first mediated with the offender before passing to acts of violence. Mediate against violence. The fundamental error committed by all sensitive consciences since colonialism went out of favor. Against primitive force one can only employ force. Mediation is a sign of weakness and will be assessed as such...*

*The year 1959 was a constant example of the futility of mediation against force. The political leaders in the Congo used the threat of riots as a weapon to oblige the Belgian Government to concede immediate Independence. From a vague future promise in January 1959 it became reality for July 1960, eighteen months later. –Congo Cauldron, D. P. Duguaquier*

I am against slavery, not because slavery is bad for blacks; on the contrary, slavery was very good for blacks, particularly in the old South. They never knew charity until they were treated, by the white slave owners, with Christian charity. I am against black slavery because of what Agnes McGehee says in Stark Young's novel *So Red the Rose* when she laments all the white blood that was shed on behalf of the negro. Whenever white nations take a colored minority into their midst, there will always be a contingent of liberals – the Christ-haters – who will use that colored minority as a weapon against the white Europeans. That is why racial purity is so important. Without their colored minions, liberals lose their sword. They still must be fought, because liberalism is pure evil, but without their colored minions, without their noble black savages, the liberals lose their savior and must fight against an enemy who no longer fears them because they don't have their terrible swift sword called 'racism.'

If wishes were horses, beggars would ride. I wish I could send all the colored tribesmen in the European nations back to Africa, but that is not going to happen. So how do we deal with the terrible swift sword of the liberals, the noble savage? First we must see him for what he is, an ignoble savage:

*To come to the point at once, I beg to say that I have not the least belief in the Noble Savage. I consider him a prodigious nuisance, and an enormous superstition. His calling rum fire-water, and me a pale face, wholly fail to reconcile me to him. I don't care what he calls me. I call him a savage, and I call a savage a something highly desirable to be civilised off the face of the earth. I think a mere gent (which I take to be the lowest form of civilisation) better than a howling, whistling, clucking, stamping, jumping, tearing savage. It is all one to me, whether he flattens his hair between two boards, or spreads his nose over the breadth of his face, or drags his lower lip down by great weights, or blackens his teeth, or knocks them out, or paints one cheek red and the other blue, or tattoos himself, or oils himself, or rubs his body with fat, or crimps it with knives. Yielding to whichsoever of these agreeable eccentricities, he is a savage—cruel, false, thievish, murderous; addicted more or less to grease, entrails, and beastly customs; a wild animal with the questionable gift of boasting; a conceited, tiresome, bloodthirsty, monotonous humbug.*

Even if the noble black savage is not noble, we should not mistreat him, the black apologist asserts. I agree, and so does Charles Dickens:

*To conclude as I began. My position is, that if we have anything to learn from the Noble Savage, it is what to avoid. His virtues are a fable; his happiness is a delusion; his nobility, nonsense. We have no greater justification for being cruel to the miserable object, than for being cruel to a William Shakespeare or an Isaac Newton; but he passes away before an immeasurably better and higher power than ever ran wild in any earthly woods, and the world will be all the better when his place knows him no more.*

Which brings me to the second part of our 'should not' – we should not let the liberals cancel our culture because of our white ancestors' alleged mistreatment of the noble black savages. The myth of mean whites mistreating blacks is only true when seen with the utopian eyes of the liberals' intellects. But when we see them, our white ancestors, through the eyes of the heart, something quite extraordinary happens. We see the only people in the history of the world who treated a savage, captive race with charity and mercy. If you wish to see what that "charity of honor" looks like when it is practiced, I suggest you read Stark Young's [So Red the Rose](#).

The two utopian powers, the intellectual Christians and the secular liberals, have joined forces to destroy the white European people by separating them from the incarnational culture of old Europe. Our people with the hearts of flesh were once connected in blood and spirit to the living God. The intellectual Christian sees imperfections in the antique Europeans, he sees wars, lust, envy, and every sin proscribed by our Lord, so the intellectual Christian damns the Christian Europeans and looks to a purer Christianity as practiced by the Chinese, by the Mexicans, by the negroes, or by the Indians of the Amazon rain forest. But in casting his lot with the purer Christians of color, the intellectual Christian has cancelled our spiritual base. If we can't stand with Christian Europeans who knew the Savior in their hearts, then we have nothing firm and solid on which to stand in the day of battle. We will be overwhelmed by the secular utopians, the liberals, while the Christian utopians join the army of the secular utopians against the Christian Europeans, who must be cancelled because what they consider pietas, the love of their own, the Christian and liberal utopians call 'racism.'

The reason there is never a Christian response to the evil that is liberalism is because the hearts of the Christian churchmen have waxed cold. They should be against the liberal utopians because the liberal utopians support everything that is against Christianity, but still the intellectual Christians support the liberals. They use 'racism' as an excuse for their abandonment of the Christ-bearing race. However, is that really the reason they hate whites and love the noble savages of color? No, it is not. The churchmen have left the faith that is bred in the bone and the blood behind for a faith in their own intellects. They fantasize that the new Christians, the people of color, will follow the clerical Atticus Finches to a new land, a utopian land, where all white Europeans have been cancelled except the exalted ones, the clerical Atticus Finches. The secular liberals have other ideas. They will use the apostate clergymen for their own purposes, and then they will exterminate them as well.

The Greek philosophers' religion of pure mind gave way to the mystery religions. People wanted direct contact with the deity, without the mediation of reason. But the mystery religions had no moral content; the gods of those religions had no love for individual men and women. It was Christ, who was and is the Love which visited earth, who gave us the personal, ethical, and loving contact with the living God. The churchmen, over time, turned the love which passeth the understanding of pure reason into a philosophy. That is why the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century gave birth to the death-of-God existentialist writers. Christ's resurrection was not rational, and yet man needed a loving God. Hence, the despair of the existentialists who could not see anything greater than man's reason. But something developed in the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century which was much worse than the despair of the existentialists. The existentialists said, "Christ be not risen, so all is cheerless, dark and deadly." The new age liberal, the heirs of the French and American Jacobins, said, "Christ be not risen, isn't that wonderful! Now we can once again have our own mystery religion. We can have direct contact with our god – the sacred negro." The reason the George Floyd ceremony in Congress resembled some strange

religious ritual was because that is what it was – a strange, bizarre, satanically-inspired religious ritual. St. Paul told us what the true mysticism was and is in *1st Corinthians 13*. We come in direct contact with the one true God in and through our people, who loved Him. Charity never faileth. Why should we deal peacefully with the liberals who have declared war on that “charity of honor” culture of the antique Europeans? And why should we be moderate liberals who seek a place for whites in the kingdom of hell on earth rather than evicting the liberals and their colored minions from what was once Christian Europe? Whoever tries to cancel the culture of the antique Europeans, be they theologians, mad-dog liberals, or managerial conservatives, sins against the living God. If you take the mystical core away from our culture, you take away Christ. It is His culture, so magnificently described by Handel, that we will celebrate on Easter Sunday. That is the culture of life everlasting, which is in direct opposition to the liberals’ culture of death and darkness. Cancel our culture? No, in the name of Christ, thou shall not cancel our culture. We shall, in His name, cancel *your* culture.+

---

(1) The conservative Quakers tell us that the murder of Asians in Atlanta occurred because we do not discourage violence. No, such indiscriminate, unjustified violence occurs when you support the image-of-the-beast-in-man culture of the liberals. Why is it that the only violence of white people in recent years is the wrong kind? It is because white people are not immune to the new cultural influences — the culture of the liberals’ beast-in-man. We will either have the religion of Jesus Christ, or else we will have the religion of the devil.

# The Heart of Hearts

April 3, 2021

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Rationalism, Uncategorized  
Tags: J. S. LeFanu, Kenneth Grahame, Shakespeare, Thomas Nelson Page



And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. —[Luke 24: 28-29](#)

---

Samuel Beckett was one of the premier existentialist novelists and playwrights of the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century. In one of his later plays he depicts two men taking cover in the midst of a massive bombing raid. They see a small child in an open field who will surely be killed if one of them does not save him. One man says, “We have got to save him.” The other replies, “Leave him there, it just doesn’t matter.” The second man was right; if God does not exist, nothing really matters. Whether we live 100 years or one year, it all amounts to the same thing: Nothing really matters. The existentialists did us a great service by pushing the ultimate question in our faces: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day? They, the existentialists, said, “No, Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day.” But the existentialists did not think that was good news. They responded to their discovery that Christ be not risen with despair, which is how we should respond to that terrible news. The liberals’ reaction was different from the existentialists’ reaction; they were and are delighted with what they claim their scientific brains have discovered – that Christ be not risen. Now joy can reign supreme if only we can get rid of whiteness and become black, pure black inside. Of course, those who will not become black, pure black inside, must be eliminated. That includes thee and me.

Every denominational branch of Christian Jewry has denied the Holy Ghost. In Dostoevsky’s *Brother Karamazov*, the Grand Inquisitor hurls two charges at Jesus Christ. Both charges seem to be unanswerable. First, the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He thought too much of men; He should not have given them free will, because they don’t want it. They simply want material guarantees that they will have security in this world. And secondly, the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He is a liar: He said He would return to earth and set all things right, and He did not return. He left mankind bereft, He left them orphaned. In his original notebooks, Dostoyevsky had Christ give a rational answer to Ivan’s Grand Inquisitor. But he changed his mind, and in the final manuscript Christ simply embraces the Grand Inquisitor and kisses him. Unfortunately the churchmen could not resist the temptation to give a rational explanation to the Grand Inquisitor. Every Christian sect has given us their rational explanation to the Grand Inquisitor’s accusations against Christ, and every Christian sect’s rational explanations have driven their followers into the arms of Satan. The answer to the Grand Inquisitor can only be found in the human heart, where the Holy Ghost resides. If you bypass the human heart, because it can lead men astray, and bid them look to pure reason, you have left them without the Comforter, who tells us, through the mystical, undefinable virtue of charity, why Christ has not left us bereft and why He has not thought too much of us in giving us the freedom to choose heaven or hell.

There is a third charge that Ivan, stepping away from his Grand Inquisitor persona, makes against Christ. Ivan rejects Christ because of human suffering. A loving God, if He was a merciful God worthy of our love, would not permit such suffering. That is Ivan’s contention. And Alyosha has no rational answer for him; he merely points to Christ on the cross. Did I say merely? That merely is all in all.

Liberalism has spread as our scientific knowledge has expanded. Christ did not come back as He said He would, nor has He alleviated human suffering, despite the fact that He claimed to be a God of mercy and compassion. That is the liberals’ seemingly unanswerable charge against Christ. So the liberals demand that we hand our wills over to them so that they can give us what Christ cannot or will not give us, the alleviation of our physical suffering through science and the alleviation of our emotional and ‘psychic’ ills (they no longer use the term ‘spiritual’) through the science of psychology. And for the ecstatic moment, the sense that we are in direct contact with the divine? The liberals have given us the sacred negro. What more could a man want out of life?

The churchmen have responded to the liberals’ assault against Christ as the false comforters responded to Job. They were defeated, their rational apologetics are no match for Ivan Karamazov, so now they just say “amen” to whatever the liberals put forth. It is a pathetic spectacle. But our people, the antique Europeans, did not cave in to liberalism despite the fact that they suffered much while they looked for His return. Why did they believe? God has sent us a comforter who has given us the answer to that question. There is nothing more comforting, more uplifting, than that passage in *St. Luke* in which he describes the walk the two disciples took with Christ on the road to Emmaus and their subsequent reaction to His divine presence at the Inn: “Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?” Christ has not broken His promise to us and He never will. Search the scriptures with your heart, and you will find Him.

*And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.* —[Luke 24: 33-36](#)

Let me share, in closing, four quotes from the heart of Christian Europe that have become part of me. If you are a regular reader, you will recognize the passages because I have used them often.

First, there are the lines from *The Wind in the Willows*. Ratty’s love for his river describes my love for Christian Europe. I don’t care about any nation outside of that nation.

*I beg your pardon,’ said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. ‘You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!’*

*‘THE River,’ corrected the Rat.*

*‘And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!’*

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other.'

Secondly, there is Thomas Nelson Page's response to all those who attack our European kith and kin:

*On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.* —[Under the Crust](#)

Thirdly, there is LeFanu's vision of the light that shineth even in the face of death:

*Next day was the funeral, that appalling necessity; smuggled away in whispers, by black familiars, unresisting, the beloved one leaves home, without a farewell, to darken those doors no more; henceforward to lie outside, far away, and forsaken, through the drowsy heats of summer, through days of snow and nights of tempest, without light or warmth, without a voice near. Oh, Death, king of terrors! The body quakes and the spirit faints before thee. It is vain, with hands clasped over our eyes, to scream our reclamation; the horrible image will not be excluded. We have just the word spoken eighteen hundred years ago, and our trembling faith. And through the broken vault the gleam of the Star of Bethlehem.* —[Uncle Silas](#)

And finally, there is the Gentle Bard of Avon, who tells us about the living God who transcends our and Horatio's philosophy:

*SONNET 31*  
Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;  
And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,  
And all those friends which I thought buried.  
How many a holy and obsequious tear  
Hath dear religious love stolen from mine eye,  
As interest of the dead, which now appear  
But things remov'd, that hidden in thee lie!  
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;  
That due of many now is thine alone:  
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,  
And thou (all they) hast all the all of me.

-William Shakespeare

Christ Has Risen!

Indeed He Has! +

# The Lamentations of the European People

April 10, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Democracy, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism

Tags: D. P. Duguauquier, Edmund Burke



How doth the city sit solitary, that was full of people! how is she become as a widow! she that was great among the nations, and princess among the provinces, how is she become tributary! –*Lamentations 1:1*

---

The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up. –*Matthew 4: 16*

---

What D. P. Duguauquier described in 1959 was an exact description of what happened in the United States in the summer and fall of 2020:

*The year 1959 was a constant example of the futility of mediation against force. The political leaders in the Congo used the threat of riots as a weapon to oblige the Belgian Government to concede immediate Independence. From a vague future promise in January 1959 it became reality for July 1960, eighteen months later.*

The majority of the American people voted for Trump, but their votes were not counted because the Supreme Court Justices and the legislators, even those who were not in complete sympathy with the violent rioters, were afraid of the violent rioters. So they sided with the liberals against the white Americans who voted against their own extermination. That is a very depressing fact. But it has been made more depressing by the conservatives who refuse, in the wake of the liberals' military coup, to abandon demon-cracy and fight back. The conservatives are still proceeding as if the electoral defeat can be reversed by more demon-cracy. They tell us what Biden and company are doing on our borders, in our schools and universities, and about what they are doing to the economy. And then they tell us to vote, completely ignoring the fact that we did vote and to no avail. Even if we had lost the election legally, we should not, we could not, as Christians, accept such horrors as legalized abortion and white genocide just because a majority voted in favor of those evils. But isn't it even more obvious that we must fight when the liberals have made it clear that they will proceed with their Satanic agenda with or without the consent of the majority of their countrymen? Back when abortion was made legal, the clergymen told us not to fight, they told us to win the baby killers over to the good side by gentle persuasion. That was very successful, wasn't it? And now the conservatives tell us we must win the Christ-hating, white-hating liberals over to the good side by gentle persuasion, through the same democratic process that has brought us legalized abortion and white genocide.

The conservatives responded to the liberal sanctioned violence in 2020 with the unreality of Emersonian platitudes – “There is nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so.” The conservatives decided that if they just *thought* that the liberals would give them fair play, the liberals would *give* them fair play. Trump, instead of declaring martial law up to and through the elections in order to stop the violence in the streets and to ensure honest elections, simply talked wistfully of appealing to a few honest judges. We saw how that turned out. Why can't the conservatives see what is obvious? The liberals mean what they say. They have told us they are going to destroy whiteness and everything that whiteness represents, which is everything that is even remotely connected to Christian Europe, so why must we continue to vote in elections that have no meaning and non-violently stand by while our people are slaughtered and our culture is eradicated?

The depression I feel after the liberals' military coup in 2020 is not because a democratic tradition died. That ‘tradition’ needed to die because it was contrary to our Christian European heritage. My depression stems from the fact that the conservatives refuse to acknowledge that there has been a military coup that demands a response from white people which is genuine and heartfelt. You can't fight evil by pretending there is no such thing as evil. After the Christian Spaniards were defeated by the Moslems in 770, they went to the caves and secret places and took the vow, “To the knife.” It took them 700 years to drive the Moslems from Spain, but they did it. We must make a similar vow. The liberals will not be deterred from what they feel they must do – they must destroy the Christ-bearing race. It is fight or die. But of course a man can't and won't fight the liberals if he is part liberal himself. The moderate liberals, the ‘conservatives,’ will not fight the liberals because they do not believe that liberalism is intrinsically evil, that it is rooted in Satan's hatred for Jesus Christ. The conservatives' differences with the liberals are only managerial; they think they are better qualified to run a liberal government than their mad-dog liberal cousins. Hence the conservatives are still doing all the liberal, democratic things, urging Americans to vote after voting has been proven to be useless. And they are urging the white grazers to be non-violent after the mad-dog liberals have proven the effectiveness of violence. The conservatives still do not understand that the democratic process is designed to destroy the image-of-God-in-man culture of the white Christian Europeans, so they can never be our leaders; we must look elsewhere:

*In a mass we cannot be left to ourselves. We must have leaders. If none will undertake to lead us right, we shall find guides who will contrive to conduct us to shame and ruin. –Burke*

We have no leaders because we have no true conservatives in church or state. A European, if he is a Christian, should not look to conserve a particular theology or rite, he should seek to preserve the European people's mystical, blood connection to Jesus Christ. He should enjoin his people to search the Scriptures with their hearts and to stay connected to Christ in and through their people. When the churchmen preach Athenian philosophy, they become as sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal, they become nothing; they are grist for the liberals' mill. Likewise the secular conservatives, who are not conservative; they seek to preserve a man-made abstract system of government that is not grounded in the blood faith of the European people, just as the churchmen want to jettison the blood faith of the European people in order to conserve their mind-forged abstract theologies.

What are the conservatives talking about when they speak of ‘preserving our democratic way of life’? I suppose if you forced a conservative to explain his love for democracy, he would talk about the four freedoms – freedom of worship, freedom of speech, freedom from want, and freedom from fear. And what do those freedoms, enunciated by Franklin D. Roosevelt and illustrated by Norman Rockwell, amount to? We have the freedom to worship Satan through the sacred negro, we do not have the freedom to criticize liberalism, we do not have freedom from want because we must always be subject to the economic policies of the liberals which are designed to impoverish whites, and we do not have freedom from fear because we live in constant fear of our cruel liberal overlords. Is such a society worth conserving? No, it is not. We should work with might and main to destroy the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. From the first freedom, the freedom to worship, stems all the other freedoms. And that so-called freedom to worship is the great blasphemy of the American experiment in democracy. We cannot

have a state consecrated to Satan, through the noble black savage, and then claim there is freedom to worship so long as you pay homage to the state's gods. Our God is a jealous God, and that is right and proper, because it was our God and only our God, the God of the white Europeans, who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. Certainly He died for all, but only one race has ever championed the God of mercy and love. Try and picture a world without the Christ-bearing race. Such a world would be an absolute horror. And yet that is the world the liberals are building. They have 'illuminated' themselves beyond whiteness through their mystical connection to the noble black savage. Is that a 'nobility' we should seek? Such a 'nobility' forbids the worship of the God of mercy, forbids us to speak of or defend the antique Europeans who worshipped the God of mercy, denies us our daily bread if we do not worship at Satan's altars, and bids us fear the liberals who keep their kingdom in order through violence and terror. Will we ever be men again? Only if we see His blood upon the rose and respond to that vision with the passion of men and women who have forsaken moderate liberalism and intellectual Christianity for the Dream of the Rood.

The conservatives will only be allowed 'fair' elections when liberals are convinced the white grazers will vote the way the liberals want them to vote. The white grazers voted the wrong way in 2016, they did not vote for their own extermination, so they were not permitted to vote in 2020. If the liberals can manage to completely flood the United States with Africans, Moslems, Mexicans, and Chinese in the next four years, they might allow the white grazers to vote, but of course their votes will be overwhelmed by the colored majority. What has happened in South Africa will be the new status quo in America. The blood-red colored tide will envelop the white grazers, and they will write a new page of American history that shall be called the Lamentation of the White Grazers:

*Remember, O LORD, what is come upon us: consider, and behold our reproach.  
Our inheritance is turned to strangers, our houses to aliens.  
We are orphans and fatherless, our mothers are as widows.  
We have drunken our water for money; our wood is sold unto us.  
Our necks are under persecution: we labour, and have no rest.  
We have given the hand to the Egyptians, and to the Assyrians, to be satisfied with bread.*

-Lamentations 5: 1-6

What Burke told his fellow Britons — that what was happening in Jacobin France should be the concern of every European — is what must be said of what has happened and is happening in the United States. The United States has taken the democratic gambit of Satan further than any European nation has ever taken it before. But even the Eastern European countries that now seem like bastions of peace and tranquility compared to the United States and the wealthier nations of Western Europe have the liberal infection. They have universities in which liberals dwell, and they all claim to be democracies. As the wealthier nations of Europe become third world nations, the demon-hordes of color will look to the Eastern European nations. Democratic platitudes will not stop the hordes; only a Christ-centered people can put on the whole armor of Christ and defeat the colored barbarians from without and the liberals from within. And the latter danger, the liberals from within, is the greater danger. If you do not purge the liberals from within your nation, you will eventually become like unto the United States – a kingdom of hell on earth.

I frequently watch the European vignettes of the "Voice of the Globe," the New York based actor James Fitzpatrick, who did a series of travelogues from the 1930s through 1950. I view the travelogues in much the same spirit that I reread Scott and Dickens: I will never, in the flesh, live in a Christian society, so I live in such societies through the stories of Scott, Dickens, and the European travelogues of James Fitzpatrick. In several of his European travelogues Fitzpatrick praises the white race, which is now verboten to do, but in some of his finest pieces, such as the short glimpses he gives us of rural Holland and rural Denmark, Fitzpatrick attributes the many virtues of those communities to democracy. *Au contraire*, the Holland and Denmark of 1949 seem like white parades because they are ethnically and racially homogenous, and because the people living there are still living on the capital of the Christian faith. In less than 20 years those white parades will become diverse, and they will sicken and die, because of the demon of democracy.

Burke tells us that, "Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclature." The Dream of the Rood Europeans saw the divine charity bleeding on the cross and they made that divine condescension their faith. If Christ is scientized, He becomes like unto all the false, man-made systems. That is what theology in the churches and democracy in government does – theology scientized God and democracy scientized man. The mystical core of our faith is in our spirit and blood connection to our people in and through Christ. That was St. Paul's faith, and it was the faith of the Europeans who came to Rome as conquerors but who still bent their knees to Christ, not as slaves, but as free men who saw in Christ the Lord a hero God greater than Odin, Thor, and all the principalities and powers of this world. That faith must still be our faith. We must, like Simon the Cyrenian, take up the cross of Christ. Simon was forced to carry the cross, but we shall willingly take it up. We can no longer allow the divine love to lie bleeding in the prison of liberalism. Ever since the satanic conception of the "Land of Liberty," Americans have replaced pietas with "city on a hill" blasphemy. Now this American city of Satan can serve as a warning to white Europeans here and throughout the world. Liberalism is the greatest heresy of them all, because it is the synthesis of all heresies. All the heresies – Orientalism, Islam, Judaism, and negro worship, which differ from each other in many ways, are united by one great passion – the hatred of Jesus Christ. And that is and always shall be the one great passion in hell.

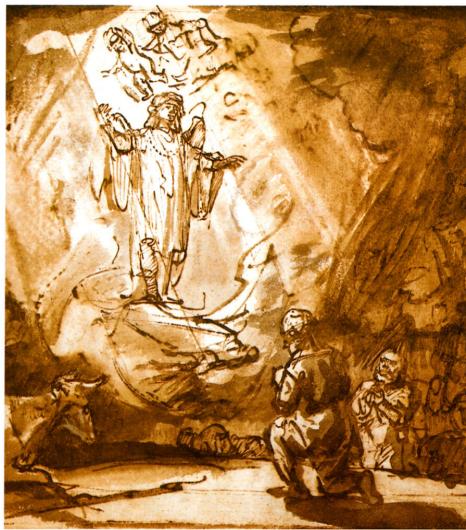
If we can't find it in our hearts to oppose the passion of liberalism with a passion like unto the divine passion, we are no longer Europeans. I can't believe, I refuse to believe, that the people who once saw a great light will continue to accept the reign of Satan. The realization of what we have lost will sustain us in our battle to become, once again, the Christ-bearing race.  
+

# The Liberal Swine Hate the Good Shepherd

April 17, 2021

Categories: Charity, Democracy, Fairy tale mode of understanding

Tags: Charles Tazewell, Dream of the Rood



And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. —Matthew 8: 28-32

---

The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever. —Psalm 23

---

When I was a young man who read the conservative publications such as *National Review*, I was alarmed at the conservatives' assumption that the "American people" constituted an unchanging aggregate that would always be 51% against legalized abortion, socialism, homosexual marriage, etc. How, when liberals completely dominated the universities and had almost total dominance in the lower grades, could the "American people" stay constantly at 51% against all things evil? Of course they couldn't. Each generation was more liberal than their parents, and the ground shifted. What was unthinkable to a majority of Americans 45 years ago has become acceptable to the majority in 2021. The conservatives never "took their stand," they simply moved slightly to the right of the ever leftward marching mad-dog liberals. So long as they stayed to the right of the liberals, the conservatives felt that they were fighting the good fight. When the liberals preached abortion on demand, the conservatives preached abortion up to six months and no tax-funded abortion. When the liberals preached gay marriage, the conservatives preached the right of heterosexuals to marry. When the liberals preached transgender bathrooms, the conservatives held out for different sex bathrooms. And on it goes, the liberals advance, and the conservatives make a mild protest, and then they move on to another issue. But the conservatives are running out of ground to stand on. When the liberals have gone to the extreme left, when they have built hell on earth, what issue will be left for the conservatives? When every institution in our country is satanic and every coin has only two left sides, how can anything noble and honorable, how can anything Christian survive? We have arrived at that pass. There is no longer any non-liberal spot of ground on which a Christian can take his stand.

Now that we are at the end of the American experiment in demon-cracy, we can see what demon-cracy was and is all about. It is about the expenditure of "the unbought grace of life." At first when there is still an abundance of God's grace in the culture, it doesn't seem to matter to the general Christian populace whether the government is founded on the principle of 'Christ be not risen,' but it does matter. Unlike the French Jacobins, who guillotined Christians, our government permitted Christians to worship Christ in private. But why have American conservatives buried our anti-Christian history? Jefferson rewrote the New Testament in order to eliminate all the fairy tale elements from that "fantastical tale." Christ became Socrates in Jeffersonian democracy, and the American 'conservatives' claimed Jefferson as their limited government exemplar. Over time the secular, 'Christ be not risen' ethos of our government became the reigning faith in our culture. And now nothing that happens in this nation can proceed according to Christian principles.

Let us take the recent COVID-19 'crisis' as an example. When there was still something of the Christian ethos (I won't say the Christian faith) left in America in the 1950s and early 1960s, a virus such as COVID-19 would not have been politicized as it has been. Democrats and Republicans would have wanted to know the truth about the virus. And the medical people would have still had something inside of them, some tiny remnant of God's grace that would have made them tell the truth about the virus, about its causes, about its true danger to the national health, and about the best drugs and vaccines to be taken or what ones were unnecessary to take. But now who can the non-medical lay person trust? The mainstream scientific-medical community tells us that whatever the liberals say is true. And the pagan libertarians come forward with their experts telling us the whole thing is a hoax. When Christ has been banished from a people's culture, and He has been banished from our culture, there is no truth. That does not faze the liberals in the slightest, because their utopia, which is a dystopia, is founded on untruth and unreality.

Dr. Michael Yeaton, a former vice president and scientist for Pfizer, one of the vaccine manufacturers, recently wrote [an article](#) in which he stated that the liberals are going to use the COVID-19 vaccine to murder Americans. He said that by constantly requiring booster shots, they would gradually poison millions of people. Of course the liberals have damned such accusations as "conspiracy theory," but I neither believe nor disbelieve something because it is a conspiracy theory. There are bogus conspiracy theories, and there are factual conspiracy theories, and we must determine the truth of any conspiracy theory based on our perception of "what is truth." I do not know with metaphysical certainty that what Yeaton says is true; I tend to believe what he says though, because I do know that the liberals are totally evil. They hate mankind as the devil hates mankind, and they have shown they will stop at nothing to destroy the "image of God in man" race, the white Europeans. But won't illuminated liberals and non-whites be killed by the vaccine as well as unilluminated whites? Yes, they will, but during the 2020 election liberals said it was better that millions upon millions of people should die of COVID than Trump should be re-elected, so why should they care about the collateral damage of the vaccine? Nothing means more to them than their hatred of Jesus Christ, whom they strike back at by destroying the Christ-bearing race. And that is why I believe that Yeaton is telling us the truth about the COVID-19 vaccine.

Burke placed liberalism in its proper context when he said that the first liberal was the devil. Liberalism takes many forms because the devil is a very clever fellow. Melville's *The Confidence-Man* is a very depressing read because we are never introduced to the devil's antagonist, but Melville does give us a very accurate description of the subtlety of the enemy of mankind. In our experiment in demon-cracy the devil was seductive: "You can run your nation on sound rational principles and you can have your God, your pie in the sky, for private use." But if reason is truth and private faith is irrational, why shouldn't the government destroy those private, irrational, and racist (white pietas is always deemed racist) yearnings in the hearts of white people? The ruling liberal oligarchy of the United States that conducted the murder, rape, burn and pillage attack on the South in 1860 through 1877 made explicit what had always been implicit in America: our ruling ethos was and is satanic. The unbought grace of life which had taken root in the hearts of Southern people had become, in the minds of the Northern Jacobins, too intrusive. The South represented a major obstacle to the Northern Jacobins' onward march off the cliff with the swine. So the liberals of the North abandoned the great seduction and applied naked force. When they decided that the South was properly subdued, they returned to their "land of liberty" seduction. I was very sad when the heroic moderate

liberal, Rush Limbaugh, passed away. And I was even more saddened when I learned that his favorite hymn was the blasphemous “Battle Hymn of the Republic” which he asked to be sung at his funeral. The moderate liberals, the conservatives, are always trying to seek redemption from the devil. It can’t be done. Origen was wrong: the devil cannot be redeemed, and we should stop trying to redeem him. The devil will always be about his business, which is the destruction of the unbought grace of life that once was predominant in European culture. We should not want to conserve democratic America, we should want to destroy that America and return home to our racial hearth fire consecrated to Christ the Lord.

After Trump’s electoral victory in 2016, the liberals, as in 1860, switched from the seductive mode of Jacobinism to the naked-fist mode of Jacobinism. For four years they threw away the façade of democracy and attacked Trump and the white grazers with their fangs fully bared. The election of 2020 marked the successful conclusion of the liberals’ violent assertion of their right to exterminate the unilluminated white grazers. But unlike the men and women of the Old South, the modern unilluminated whites did not respond as Forrest and his people responded to violent, overt Jacobinism. The liberals have now returned to the seductive mode of Jacobinism, and the white grazers have returned to the pastures of Liberalism in order to await their democratic execution.

Trump and his followers were nowhere near in spirit and blood to the Southern people in 1860. But ever leftward means that as the liberal juggernaut advances it shall never go back. That is why the liberals decided that Trump had to be violently crushed: he represented a slight regression on the liberals’ road to hell. They shall never sound retreat as they trample out the culture and the lives of the European people. They can be defeated, but not by moderate liberals who seek redemption from the devil. They can only be defeated by Europeans who do not try to balance science and reason with faith.

*Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time.*

The police officer who shot and killed an unarmed woman in the **protests**, not riots, on January 6<sup>th</sup>, is not even being charged with a crime. The police officer who tried to arrest the man-god George Floyd, who died from a drug-induced heart attack, is being tried for murder while Black Lives Matter and Antifa scum are dictating what the verdict must be by holding their usual rape, burn, and pillage outrages in the streets of Minnesota. And meanwhile, the protestors from January 6<sup>th</sup> are being tortured in their prison cells. The liberals believe in violence: there is ‘bad’ violence, which is done in defense of His reign of charity, and there is ‘good’ violence, the murder and the torture of unilluminated whites who oppose any part of the liberals’ satanic agenda. Is it possible that we still do not see through the spirit of the liberals’ thought? Why can’t the white European grazers see what the liberals are? They are committed heart and soul to Satan. If we peacefully protest against liberal outrages, we are aiding and abetting the liberals. The violence of the liberals in defense of Satan’s reign of cruelty can only be met with violence by men who still believe in that charity of honor. Perhaps there are no such men left in the European nations. Is there any liberal outrage that could make an “intelligent man, a European,” say, “this must not go on”? Or are we, as a people, doomed to fade into the Babylonian night, chanting, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” before the liberals and their black gods?

Behind the nonresistance to evil of the white Europeans is the notion that intelligent thinking men do not do things according to a blood faith. They believe that the good Christian eschews the wisdom of the blood for the science of theology. But what if all true wisdom comes from the blood, from a heart connected to the Savior? There is no dogmatic theology in the Gospels or in the epistles of St. Paul, but the churchmen, past and present, insist that we must submit to rational theology designed to subvert the Son of God. Christ left us a comforter, who can be found in the human heart, and they, the theologians, bid us deny the comforter and seek out the men who believe that divine love can be confined within a syllogism.

The white grazers, the American conservatives who believe in demon-cracy, believe that the Shylockian liberals are well-intended. The conservatives do not believe that the Shylockian liberals hate all things Christian with a maniacal fury that can only be violently opposed, it cannot be appeased. Neville Chamberlain has been eternally damned for “appeasing” Hitler, but what can we say about the modern conservatives who appease the liberals, who are infinitely worse than Hitler? George Fitzhugh, that magnificent man of the Right, said that the Southern people should only be law-abiding so long as their government was conservative; when their rulers ceased to be conservative, no man, if he was Christian, could serve the government. We are a people in exile, or more accurately, we are a people in bondage. Our comfort and our hope lies within. We need to take our stand on the only ground left to us, a heart connected to Christ, through the Holy Ghost. The American experiment in democracy has been exposed for what it is – a demon-cracy consecrated, through the sacred negro, to Satan. If we believe that the Lord is truly our shepherd, we will make what is now Satandom conform to that which was once within the hearts of our people, the Grace of God. What was good in our people was of God, the God who enters human hearts. The land of the European storybooks was and is His land. We have forgotten the story of the littlest angel, who responded to the divine love with a burning, all-consuming love of his own. The pure in heart shall see the face of God, they shall see Jesus Christ and they shall refuse to kneel to the liberal swine. +

*There was a breathless pause, and then the rough, unsightly box of the Littlest Angel began to glow with a bright, unearthly light, then the light became a lustrous flame, and the flame became a radiant brilliance that blinded the eyes of all the angels!*

*None but the Littlest Angel saw it rise from its place before the Throne of God. And he, and only he, watched it arch the firmament to stand and shed its clear, white, beckoning light over a Stable where a Child was Born.*

*There it shone on that Night of Miracles, and its light was reflected down the centuries deep in the heart of all mankind. Yet, earthly eyes, blinded, too, by its splendor, could never know that the lowly gift of the Littlest Angel was what all men would call forever*

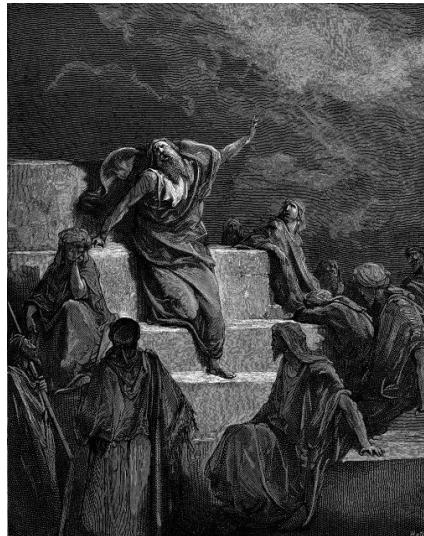
**“THE SHINING STAR OF BETHLEHEM!”**

# The United States of Baal

April 24, 2021

Categories: Muscular Christianity, Negro worship, Rationalism, Religion of Satan

Tags: Herman Melville, Shakespeare



And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. —*Jeremiah 32: 35*

---

“You are the moderate man, the invaluable understrapper of the wicked man. You, that moderate man, may be used for wrong, but are useless for right.” —*The Confidence-Man* by Herman Melville

---

About two weeks before the Presidential election, which turned out to be a non-election, I went to a shooting range with three of my sons. While my sons shot, I roamed around the range, talking to the white, pro-Trumpers at the range. It was nice to be among men who hated Biden and company, but it was very disturbing to learn that the pro-gun Trumpers had no plan B if Trump lost. All their hopes were in the American democratic process, and they didn't believe that process would let them down. And then about three weeks after the election, I went to a local pro-Trump rally (see [Unmitigated Evil](#)). At that rally, I found the same refusal to believe that the democratic process was an instrument of evil. The Trumpers at the rally all believed that the Supreme Court would rectify the injustice of the election.

The white Americans who voted for Trump constitute the opposition to the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. And their opposition is a non-opposition because they still believe that the democratic process and the grace of God are one and the same. To oppose democracy is to oppose God, such is the belief of the white American grazers. They are currently in a democratic coma because they are unable to reconcile their faith in demon-cracy with what has happened in America in the months before the election and in the months after the election. They are like a character in a Kafka novel who has been dragged out of bed in the middle of the night and lined up before a firing squad without knowing why he is about to be executed.

Louis XVI and his family were executed because they were royal, they represented Christian France, which was an anathema to the Jacobins. So it is with the white grazers: They are being executed because they represent, in the liberals' minds, Christian Europe. Even though the white grazers have shown themselves willing to repudiate Christian Europe, to the extent that they even know there *was* such an entity, the liberals will not let the white grazers into Liberaldom. Why? The white grazers cannot be part of Liberaldom because they still retain, even though they have repudiated Christian Europe, some tiny remnants in their souls that stem from our Christian European heritage. One grazer might balk at transgenderism, another might balk at homosexual marriage, but they all, the white grazers, have a slight issue with some aspect of the liberals' brave new world. And even the slightest hesitation, the slightest opposition to the liberals' entire agenda, marks a man for extermination. In Shakespeare's *Richard III*, Buckingham has done everything the bloody tyrant Richard III has commanded, he has murdered all those who blocked Richard's path to the throne. But he balks at the prospect of killing the young princes in the Tower, the sons of Edward. That slight hesitation costs Buckingham his life. Richard III must have complete obedience, there can be no turning back once you have given your soul to Satan. So it is with our mad-dog liberals. The moderate liberals are quite willing to acquiesce to almost the entirety of the liberals' agenda, but that *almost* has damned them. The liberals can't trust them. The incredible fervor with which the liberals support every new leftward perversion is the result of their fear that their fellow liberal jackals might place them in the ranks of the unilluminated, if they, like Buckingham, show the slightest hesitation in supporting the ever leftward march toward utopia.

The recent guilty verdict against Derek Chauvin, the verdict demanded by the left and their colored minions, highlighted the moral bankruptcy of the white grazers. When you jettison your past, you jettison your soul. Derek Chauvin was not guilty of any crime whatsoever. (1) His only ‘crime’ was whiteness. All the moderate liberals who never, never condemn the black barbarians for anything, but instead spend all their time and energy condemning our white European heritage because of ‘racism,’ are guilty of blasphemy against the living God who is at the heart of ‘racist’ Europe, and they are guilty of the murder of the white race. There is no democratic answer to the blasphemous, murderous, merciless reign of the negro-worshipping liberals. No European nation has ever sunk as low as this nation, called the United States of America but which should be called what it is – the kingdom of hell on earth.

This latest liberal atrocity is like unto the election fraud of last November, but it is much worse. Derek Chauvin's conviction was a horror, it was an attack on a completely innocent man, because of what he represented – a white man trying to prevent a black savage from practicing black savagery. Some white conservatives have expressed relief because they think the conviction will prevent a race war. Such people are moral cowards devoid of all humanity. And the moderate liberals' cowardice will not, as they hope, save them. How long do you think you will survive, Mr. White Grazer, when you announce to all the world that you will not fight for your own people, that you will give them up to the liberals who will place them on the sacrificial altars consecrated to the merciless, black barbarians?

Can we say with Macbeth that we have “supped full of horrors”? No, we can't; the crucifixion of Derek Chauvin is just the beginning of horrors. Now the slaughter of whites will increase tenfold, and there will be no opposition. It makes one wonder if there ever was a white race. Perhaps there never was a Narnia? Yes, there was. We still have souls to save, so we must, even though the liberals have enthroned Satan through and in the sacred negro, continue to cleave unto His Europe while defying the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. But let there be no more discussions and debates with liberals. That is the greatest blasphemy of all — we cannot dialogue with Satan.

On the same day that the liberal Sanhedrin condemned Derek Chauvin to death by way of crucifixion, the Republican Party sent me a fundraising letter. Did I want to stop the leftist agenda? Well, all I had to do was send them money. When has the Republican Party or any of their ‘conservative’ allies ever addressed the central issue? When have they ever condemned the worship of Satan through the sacred negro? When have our churchmen, who also send me fundraising letters, ever condemned the worship of Satan through the sacred negro?

There is the image-of-the-beast-in-man culture that is liberalism, and there is the image-of-God-in-man culture of the antique Europeans. “I shall not serve,” was Satan's response to our Lord. Shouldn't that be our response to Satan? The mock elections that are predetermined in favor of the liberals, the mock trials that are designed to punish whites who oppose the sacred black gods of the liberals, make up the essence of American demon-cracy. If a man has a soul he will oppose that satanic entity with his whole heart, mind, and soul. If he doesn't have a soul? Then he shall not feel the flames and he shall dwell in Satan's kingdom forever.

Prior to the Supreme Court's decision to validate the fraudulent election, a whole host of conservative pundits sat around discussing the superb case Trump had. Surely, since the evidence was on his side, he would win. After all, we are a nation of laws. It was the same before the Derek Chauvin verdict: Surely, the conservatives maintained, there couldn't be a verdict of murder. The conservatives, who are not conservative, think that law is some objective, rational entity out there, outside of the human heart, that we can refer to in order to solve all the serious problems of mankind. But that is a false concept of law. Our laws stem from our religious faith. When we were a Christian people we sought to make our laws conform to Christ:

*The quality of mercy is not strain'd.  
It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven  
Upon the place beneath. It is twice bless'd:  
It blesseth him that gives and him that takes.  
'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes  
The throned monarch better than his crown.  
His sceptre shows the force of temporal power;  
The attribute to awe and majesty,  
Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings;  
But mercy is above this sceptred sway;  
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings;  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show liktest God's  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.*

-The Merchant of Venice

When a police officer kills a white woman trying to seek justice from the liberal overlords who have consecrated themselves, through the sacred negro, to Satan, he is doing good. That is why no charges were filed against the officer who murdered Ashli Babbitt. But when a white police officer tries to arrest a black barbarian in the act of committing a crime and that black barbarian dies of a heart attack while resisting arrest, the police officer is condemned to life imprisonment. Derek Chauvin's failure to understand the liberals' state religion has made him a sacrificial offering on the altar of the liberals' black gods. No one will defend him, because there is no one left in the United States of Satan who believes in that other God, the God who once took flesh and dwelt among us, the God of mercy and love.

White Europeans are doomed to extinction so long as there is no European right wing. Conservatism is liberalism if the conservatives seek to conserve demon-cracy, and that is the case in America. A man of the right seeks to conserve his people and their ancient faith; he does not seek to conserve an ever-leftward marching, militant, atheist government dedicated to Satan. It is truly amazing and disgusting to witness the capitulation of the conservatives to militant leftism. The conservative News Max channel regularly has the leftward-leaning Alan Dershowitz as one of their leading pundits! Small wonder that the white grazers live in a Kafkaesque nightmare when mad-dog liberals are now considered conservative. (2)

Is there a way out of this nightmare? Yes, there is. It seems like the end of everything because we have elevated man's reason above God's word, His word made flesh. What did our Lord tell the apostles on the road to Emmaus? He told them of the Scriptures, of the great prophets who gave them hope in the coming of the Messiah. He did not tell them to place their hopes in a new government of the people and for the people. Nor did St. Paul enjoin us to place our hopes in the scientized minds of clever theologians, he told us to search the Scriptures with our hearts. In the Word made flesh we shall find the story of a people who come to ruin every time they abandon the Divine Love to serve Satan. The liberals have made it strikingly clear that they are one with Satan, and they maintain an intimacy with that reptilian deity through their black gods. The bizarre ritual in the houses of Congress, when our government officials knelt in reverence to George Floyd, the black fire god, marked the union of Satan and the apostate white Europeans. Every nation of Europe should renounce the United States of America if those nations intend to be European nations, and every white European within the satanic United States should not take the sword from his hand until the government dedicated to the proposition that Satan is our lord and master has been destroyed. Is it so hard to take up arms against evil? Must we crawl on our bellies before the serpent in this world and share eternal hell with him in the next world? The Psalmist gave us hope, and our people once embraced that hope:

*I will hear what God the LORD will speak: for he will speak peace unto his people, and to his saints: but let them not turn again to folly. Surely his salvation is nigh them that fear him; that glory may dwell in our land. Mercy and truth are met together; righteousness and peace have kissed each other. Truth shall spring out of the earth; and righteousness shall look down from heaven. Yea, the LORD shall give that which is good; and our land shall yield her increase. Righteousness shall go before him; and shall set us in the way of his steps.*

-Psalm 85: 8-13

Liberalism is the folly of rational man defying the Word made flesh. There is faith, hope, and charity in that other world – the fairy tale land of old Europe. That is our world, and the Crowned King of that world bids us rise and ride in defense of that world, and in defiance of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth, which has come to a terrible fruition in the United States of Satan. +

---

(1) Derek Chauvin is facing life in prison because he failed, when growing up, to learn about the United States of America. Our nation is governed by Satan, in and through the sacred negro. You cannot arrest a black in commission of a crime, because blacks, by liberal fiat, do not commit crimes. Only white people commit crimes. If Derek Chauvin had confined his arrests to white people and white people only, he would be a free man today. Pray for that poor young man who trusted in American demon-cracy.

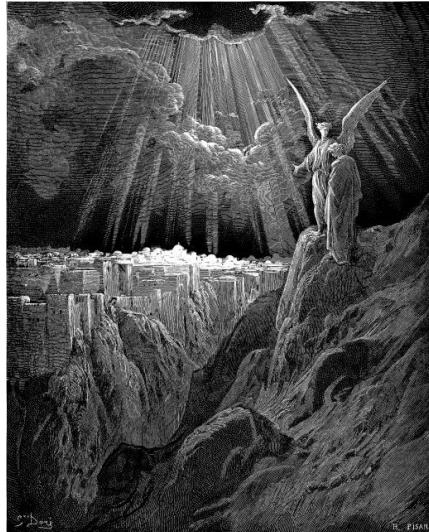
(2) Dershowitz has not even, as Horowitz did, expressed any repentance for his leftism. He has not changed any of his leftist views. He was and is a mad-dog liberal. But the liberals have gone past mad-dog liberalism. To what? They have gone from mad-dog liberal to maniacally satanic. "Tis the times' plague when madmen lead the blind." Is Alan Dershowitz now the conservatives' resistance to liberalism? That is not resistance, that is surrender. Nietzsche longed for the coming of the Übermensch, the man of the future who was beyond good and evil. I long for a hero, a European from the past, who knows the difference between good and evil. Our people and our culture once belonged to Christ. This, our modern un-culture, and the liberals who govern us belong to Satan. We must see them for what they are and deal with them as European heroes once dealt with such creatures from hell.

# Which Is Given Unto Us

May 1, 2021

Categories: Grazers, Liberalism, Negro worship

Tags: Edmund Burke, Francis William Bourdillon, Walter Scott



Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. —[Edmund Burke](#)

---

But king Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites; Of the nations concerning which the LORD said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto these in love. And he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the LORD his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father. *1 Kings 11: 1-6*

---

**M**y elective affections are not with the police as a generic aggregate. Quite the contrary — when the laws of your nation are satanic, the police, nine times out of ten, will be at odds with white Europeans. But my elective affections always go out to the white police officers who have maimed or killed black criminals who were resisting arrest. Going all the way back to the Rodney King arrest, I have only heard of one instance in which I thought the white officer was in the wrong when dealing with a black criminal. That one instance was the female officer's accidental use of a gun instead of a taser. And even in that case it was criminal negligence, not murder.

The moderate liberals, the conservatives who support the police in the aggregate, always end up selling out the white policemen who actually try to do real police work by arresting black criminals. Lou Dobbs, for example, who used to be a conservative on Fox News before Fox News went over to mad-dog liberalism, immediately, before any facts in the case came out, condemned Derek Chauvin as a murderer. And so it is with all the white conservatives. They condemn the white policemen who maim or kill black criminals such as Jacob Blake or George Floyd while lauding the “99% of good officers” who do not maim or kill black criminals. But let me insist on something that should be so obvious I shouldn't have to say it — There is no such thing as an immaculate arrest when the man or woman being arrested resists arrest. Immaculate arrests only take place when there is no resistance to the arrest. When criminals resist arrest, the police must use force. That is why we call it, in the aggregate, a police *force*. The vast majority of violent crimes in our nation are committed by blacks. If the police cannot use force to arrest blacks, of what use are our police forces? They are of no use, they are harmful; after the lynching of Derek Chauvin it has become abundantly clear that the police will only be allowed to arrest whites. So why should whites support ‘our police’ who are not our police? We live in a police state, but the real state police are Antifa and Black Lives Matter. They are the liberals’ storm troopers.

When the liberals decided to dispose of Trump as president, they used their storm troopers to ensure there would be no opposition to the fraudulent election. ([1](#)) When the liberals wanted a guilty verdict against Derek Chauvin to ensure that there will never be any opposition to the liberals’ religion, the worship of the sacred negro, they called upon their storm troopers again. The reason the liberals use violence is because violence works. The moderate liberals who call themselves conservative can be “used for wrong, but are useless for right” because they will not fight liberalism so long as the liberals hold to the worship of the sacred negro. They all, from Trump on down to the rank and file white grazers, are afraid of being racist. Nothing good will come from any conservative group, and there are always new ones starting up, which does not make the restoration of white pietas and the dismantling of negro worship its primary purpose.

The liberals have a blood faith: they believe in the sacred blood of the negro. Through him, they commune with their god, who is Satan. The white grazers do not have a blood faith; their clergymen have told them that a blood faith is forbidden to whites. But men must have a blood faith, so the white grazers do what Solomon did when he destroyed the Kingdom of Israel — they go whoring after foreign gods. In the Catholic Church, they blend Islam, Buddhism, Judaism, the rain forest gods, and the sacred negro into a Christ-hating Christianity. And the evangelicals blend Judaism and negro worship into a Christ-neutralizing religion. Behind the white whore-mongering, the desire for non-Christian gods, is the prohibition in the white ‘Christian’ churches against a blood faith. Scott describes in [The Lay of the Last Minstrel](#) a man who does not have a racial and familial hearth fire:

Breathes there the man, with soul so dead,  
Who never to himself hath said,  
This is my own, my native land!  
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burn'd,  
As home his footsteps he hath turn'd  
From wandering on a foreign strand!  
If such there breathe, go, mark him well;  
For him no Minstrel raptures swell;  
High though his titles, proud his name,  
Boundless his wealth as wish can claim;—  
Despite those titles, power, and pelf,  
The wretch, concentrat'd all in self,  
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,  
And, doubly dying, shall go down  
To the vile dust, from whence he sprung,  
Unwept, unhonour'd, and unsung.

Our homeland is our race and our faith. We cannot love in the aggregate. If we are not allowed to say, “these are my people and Christ is the God of my people,” we will go whoring after other people and other gods. We will love the sacred negro, we will love the Jews, we will love the Moslems, while we denounce our own people and our God because they are ‘racist.’

What Allen Tate stated straight out, that the problems caused by rationalism could be cured by rationalism, was implicit in all the ‘death of the West’ books published in the 20<sup>th</sup> century. From Spengler through Weaver, the basic assumption of the conservative thinkers was that the Europeans could find a magical, rational talisman that would save them from their downward spiral to oblivion. But there is no such magic talisman; just as the alchemists were never able to transform base metal into gold, so were the rationalists unable to dispose of the God who comes to human hearts and replace Him with the God who comes to illuminated minds, without creating a rift between God and man. “Man proposes, man disposes,” has replaced, “man proposes, God disposes.” The living God cannot and will not bend His will to man’s will, because man’s will, divorced from the heart of God, becomes Satan’s will. (2)

A few years back, the blog called the *Daily Kene* showed a horrific video of a bunch of noble black savages watching another noble black savage drown. They made no attempt to save the poor man because contrary to the liberals’ narrative, the noble black savages are not noble. They don’t care for George Floyd or any other black man shot by white police, they care about black power; hence they riot when the police act against black criminals. The more they riot, the more timid the police, who work for the liberals, become. The blacks do not understand why the liberals worship them, but they do understand that the liberals will cede everything to them so long as they keep screaming ‘racist.’ And they shall continue to murder, rape, and burn so long as whites have souls so dead that they will not fight for their own people.

Let us place an unilluminated white in that same body of water where the black drowned, much to the delight of his fellow noble savages. The liberals stand by on the shore and push the white victim back into the water while shouting, “Racist!” at him. The creatures of color throw things at him while they laugh and scream, “Drown, whitey, drown!” And what do the moderate liberals, the conservatives, do? They hold a meeting of the minds. One pundit says, “I think he is guilty of racism, we had better let him drown. If we don’t, the liberals will say we are racist.” Another ‘conservative’ – I believe it was Amy Coney Barrett – says, “There might be riots if we try to save him, and besides, I am very busy doing my devotions to George Floyd, so we must – it is a moral imperative – let him drown.” As the drowning white man tries, for the 20<sup>th</sup> time, to pull himself to the shore, Amy, assisted by Father Moderate Christian, steps on his fingers and pushes him back into the water. One conservative pundit is somewhat troubled by Father Moderate Christian’s actions: “Father, why are you pushing him back into the lake to be drowned? Isn’t it incumbent on us as Christians to try to save him?” Father Moderate Christian replies, “I think we must see the larger picture here. It is better that one man should die than the church of Christ should be deemed racist.” The conservative pundit replies, “Yes, I understand. But I still think we should meet here again next week to discuss the need for guard rails around the lake. After all, a black might drown in the lake, and that would be disastrous.” “Yes, I agree,” says the treacherous Amy Coney Barrett, “We must keep the blacks from drowning in the lake.” So the unilluminated white drowns, to the unmitigated glee of the liberals and the noble black savages, and with the passive, self-serving approval of the moral cowards, the moderate liberals.

“Behold, I show you a mystery.” It is through our mysterious human relationships with our kith and kin that we come to an understanding of the mystery of Christ’s incarnation, His divine condescension on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. If we shun those human relationships, we shall never understand the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. Why have our churchmen allowed the liberals to co-opt the term ‘humane’? Why is the worship of the ignoble black savages who have no humanity considered the beginning and the end of the Christian faith? If Christ is indeed the God-Man shouldn’t we know Him through what is good, what is noble, and what is humane? The liberals’ devotion to the sacred negro allows them to love what is evil, what is ignoble, and what is inhumane. Francis William Bourdillon expressed all this quite well:

*The mind has a thousand eyes,  
And the heart but one;  
Yet the light of a whole life dies  
When love is done.*

Satan rides triumphant throughout the European nations because the European grazers have been seduced by abstract reason, which has a thousand eyes for that which is evil but no heart for the divine love which passeth the understanding of abstract reason. Philosophical, theological Christianity tells us that we need not climb to the top of the mystical mountain nor go through the dark and foreboding wood in order to encounter and defeat the fire-breathing dragon. Instead, the great minds tell us we need only steep ourselves in superficiality, in Emersonian platitudes, which always tell us that we must love the sacred negro with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Is it just a coincidence that our churchmen have come up with the same theology as the secular liberals? No, it is no coincidence, because when you forsake your people, “love is done,” and you will seek to renew what you have lost through the heathens of color. It can’t be done; how can we be united with the Divine Love when we cling to the noble black savage as our god?

Solzhenitsyn once observed that the most striking thing about the West was the decline of courage. What causes a decline in courage? I think the cause lies in the human heart. When a man has nothing he loves enough to fight for, when his kith and kin are not his people but are instead part of the large aggregate called humanity, a man will become fearful of displeasing the principalities and powers of this world, and he will embrace Satan because Satan is seemingly more powerful than Christ. (3) The Supreme Court justices who refused to hear the fraudulent election cases feared the wrath of Antifa and Black Lives Matter. And so did and does Trump fear the BLM/Antifa creatures from hell. And likewise the judge and jury who convicted Derek Chauvin. They all are white Undines who fear their own shadows because their shadows might reveal their white features. They have gone beyond love and hate to that statistical world of universal humanity, in which there is no such thing as “my own people,” there is only the sacred negro who inspires the Europeans to... What does the sacred negro inspire the Europeans to do? He inspires them to hate their own and court favor with the wicked. It is of eternal moment, it is all in all, that the wicked, the liberals and their colored minions, shall not root out the image of God in man from the face of the earth. If we love much, if we love our people in and through Christ, we will still have hope, because we will see His image in man: “And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.” +

(1) When revolution has overturned all the old norms, and the fraudulent presidential election was such a revolution, it is immoral to still proceed as if nothing evil has occurred:

*The faction is the evil spirit that possesses the body of France; that informs it as a soul; that stamps upon its ambition, and upon all its pursuits, a characteristic mark, which strongly distinguishes them from the same general passions, and the same general views, in other men and in other communities. It is that spirit which inspires into them a new, a pernicious, and desolating activity. Constituted as France was ten years ago, it was not in that France to shake, to shatter, and to overwhelm Europe in the manner that we behold. A sure destruction impends over those infatuated Princes, who, in the conflict with this new and unheard-of power, proceed as if they were engaged in a war that bore a resemblance to their former contests; or that they can make peace in the spirit of their former arrangements or pacification. Here the beaten path is the very reverse of the safe road. -Burke*

(2) The liberals have the clarity and determination to carry the day because they have committed, heart and soul, to Satan. The white grazers do not have a clear commitment to God or the devil. Hence they are cannon fodder for the liberals:

*It is a dreadful truth, but it is a truth that cannot be concealed; in ability, in dexterity, in the distinctness of their views, the Jacobins are our superiors. They saw the thing right from the very beginning. Whatever were the first motives to the war among politicians, they saw that it is in its spirit, and for its objects, a civil war; and as such they pursued it. It is a war between the partisans of the ancient, civil, moral, and political order of Europe against a sect of fanatical and ambitious atheists which means to change them all. -Burke*

Such is the war that the moderate liberals will not fight – a war against “a sect of fanatical and ambitious atheists which means to change them all.”

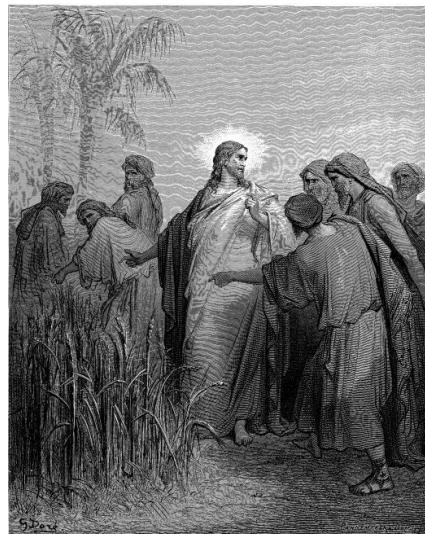
(3) Only one apostle had the courage to stand by our Lord and Savior at the foot of the cross, when it appeared that the principalities and powers of this world had triumphed over Him. That apostle was John, the same apostle who laid his head on Christ’s sacred heart at the last supper. “Perfect love casteth out fear.”

# Pharisaical Hatred

May 8, 2021

Categories: Democracy, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Shakespeare



What direction the French spirit of proselytism is likely to take, and in what order it is likely to prevail in the several parts of Europe, it is not easy to determine. The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master. —Burke, *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France*

---

The myth of American democracy and of all democratic governments is that there is no need for leaders — no need for Kings, clan chieftains, aristocrats, etc. There is no need for men who have been bred to rule and lead their people, because in a democracy every man, through the power of the ballot, is his own king, his own clan leader, and his own aristocracy. He is all leaders in one through the sacred ‘will of the people.’ All that the people need is pundits, mere purveyors of the news, who enable men and women to exercise their supreme authority by voting, based on the information they receive from the pundits.

In actual practice democracy is the rule over many, by the will of a few. The best example of democracy in action takes place in the New Testament. The followers of Christ were unorganized and ill-prepared for the Sanhedrin-manipulated election. “Give us Barabbas!” was the cry of organized Jewry, and the truth was crucified. Likewise in Jacobin France, it was not the will of the people to kill their Christian king, but it was the will of a small cabal of revolutionaries led by a demonic madman that was able to control and dominate the people of France through the mythic entity called ‘the people.’

It is truly extraordinary to see how the democratic myth can still hold the white grazers in check even after the myth has been exposed as a lie. In this past election, for example, Trump defeated his opponent, but that was not the result our ruling liberal oligarchy wanted. So they changed the ‘will of the people’ to what they wanted — their will is the will of the people. And despite the fact that the liberals’ did not even make a very good job of it — they were very inept — the results of the fraudulent election were allowed to stand. Recently, the ‘conservative’ News Max station apologized to Dominion Voting Systems for saying the election was rigged by them. Now, many of us must tactically lie in this liberal kingdom of Babylon lest we be fired and/or imprisoned — this is *not* the Land of the Free — but if you are in a position of leadership, if you are a purveyor of the news that enables, under the rules of democracy, the making of each man a king through his vote, then you dare not, you must not lie. You have replaced the traditional leadership of the European people, so if you lie you are a traitor. The election was rigged, the American people should take up arms against the liberal oligarchy; to continue to lie, to continue to urge more democracy, more voting, more peaceful protests is treason against the European people, it is aiding and abetting white genocide.

When Lou Dobbs called Derek Chauvin a murderer in order to appease the liberals, who were not appeased, when News Max apologized for stating the truth about the election, when William F. Buckley Jr. agreed not to criticize the Jews in his magazine *National Review*, and when Pence called for prayers for Jacob Blake at the Republican convention, they all justified their lying treachery by telling themselves that by strategically avoiding the white genocide issue they could still serve “the people” on many other issues. But aren’t they acting the part of the witches in *Macbeth* when they become that type of leader?

*But 'tis strange;  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles to betray's  
In deepest consequence.*

The honest trifles about tax reform and less government pale in contrast to the issue of deepest consequence the conservatives ignore: Buried deep within the hearts of the antique Europeans, their white hearts, was a passionate, intense love for Jesus Christ. The sole purpose of liberalism is to destroy that passionate, intense love in the hearts of the modern Europeans. Are we going to maintain our ancient hearts or are we going to become one with the liberal Leviathan which has a thousand mind-forged eyes of reason and no room for that one essential eye — the eye of the human heart? In *Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky’s Father Zossima tells Alyosha what hell is. He tells him that hell consists of those people who have lost the capacity to love. Yes, that is correct. The first liberal, who was Satan, sought to separate Adam and Eve from God by urging them to know God through the eyes of reason rather than through the eyes of their hearts. That was, is, and ever shall be the essence of liberalism — to kill the passionate heart and deify man’s abstract reason.

The race issue is the issue of deepest consequence because our race contains our spiritual, passionate affections that connect us to the living God. And I stress, The Living God. We can be mentally connected to the lifeless God of Theology, to a scientized nature-God, but we can only be connected to the Living God through the channels of grace that flow through the blood and heart, through our human affections which are inextricably linked to our racial hearth fire. The liberals will not feel the flames in their next world, which is hell, because they have already ceased to love in this world. They hate their own people and yearn for all things connected to Satan. The moderate liberals, who want to conserve the anti-pietas kingdom of Liberaldom, are killing the European people with honest trifles that deceive them in deepest consequence. We must love our own in and through Christ or else we will cease to have hearts that love, and we will not feel the flame.

The mad-dog liberals no longer feel the flames, they live quite comfortably in hell; so long as they can spew out their venom on all things bright and beautiful, everything stemming from Christian Europe, they are happy. But the moderate liberals are in a different place. They still are a bit uncomfortable with the intense heat of hell. Still, they do not want to leave hell, they do not want to fight the devil and his minions. They want to negotiate with the devil and his minions — “Couldn’t you please turn the heat down just a little bit? We will worship the negroes, but can’t we please keep Christ around for Sundays and holidays? We will not put a stop to any sexual depravity, but can’t we, pretty please, be allowed to prance around with signs protesting legalized depravities?” The conservatism of the moderate liberals is grounded in a lie, the lie that Satan is really not such a bad guy, he can be civilized if he is

democratized. My belief, which is what my ancestors believed, is that Satan is not a good guy. Satan has no heart, he is pure, unadulterated mind. And that mind hates Christ and His people.

The sad story of the Europeans' descent into hell is always before us in the horrific spectacle of negro worship. Whenever the moderate liberals, who believe in the salvation of the devil, want to criticize their extremist liberal cousins, they make the claim that it is they, the mad-dog liberals, who are racist. The moderate liberals find a 'good black' who accuses the liberals of being the real racist plantation owners with their system of welfare. The Breitbart-type news outlets also try to play the reverse race card by accusing the mad-dog liberals of racism. The 'you are the real racist' game underscores the anti-European underpinning of the modern conservatives. They don't want to conserve the 'racist' culture of old Europe, which was Christian, they simply want whites to be allowed a place in Liberaldom, which is hell. But the Trump debacle should have served as a warning to the conservatives. Satan will not compromise, he will not humanize hell. You must either become one with Satan, as the mad-dog liberals have become one with him, or you must oppose him. You cannot, as the white grazers who voted for Trump, attempt to keep one foot in His kingdom come and one foot in hell. If you do that, you will be cast into limbo, too lukewarm for hell and too timid for heaven. It is only the violent, the passionate hearts, who shall bear it away.

The clown in Shakespeare's *All's Well That Ends Well*, like most of Shakespeare's clowns, is a man of great perception. He sees that a man cannot traffic with the devil. He cannot, like the moderate liberal, play court to the devil in this world and hope for salvation in the next:

*I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world; let his nobility remain in's court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flow'ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire.*

That is the wisdom of our ancestors, which we forsake at our peril. All the conservative blather about racism, 'it is thee, not me, who is racist,' is part of Satan's kingdom, it is the politics of the great fire. The Bible burnings in Oregon are the most accurate representations of the endgame of liberalism. We cannot compromise with these creatures called liberals. Before the election and even more so after the election, I made an effort to associate with pro-Trumbers. That contact was better than the alternative – contact with mad-dog liberals – but ultimately the white Trumbers were a depressing lot. While amongst them, I was conscious of the fact they did not feel the flames of liberalism. They felt slightly overheated, they wanted to cool the liberals down, but they did not want to destroy Liberaldom. I had to leave their presence, because I did not want to be consumed by the great fire.

The assumption of all conservatives in the age of demoncracy is that what is good, what is noble in men is a given. They feel that all men share a universal heritage that can be appealed to within a democratic framework. But that is a lie. What is good in man comes from one God, Lord Jesus Christ. When the people who made that God the center of their culture are dismissed because they were 'racist,' because they loved their own, you have nothing noble, decent and good to build on. You have a thousand points of satanic light in your mind-forged world, but you have lost the light of His love that was a life-sustaining presence in that ancient European culture. The light emitting from white hearts connected to Him sustained European civilization and all non-European civilizations as well. There is no rational argument a man can make that will make the white grazers realize they will be consumed by the great fire if they do not repudiate the blending of negro worship, democracy, and Christianity. A man can only love His Europe and hope that the light from that love will ignite other human hearts. That doesn't seem very likely, does it? But that is how the devil wants us to feel. He wants us to die in despair, without a vision of His divine love. The one thing necessary then is that we keep to what we know in our white hearts: There was a Narnia, it was Christian Europe, and we should take the narrow gate to that kingdom while forsaking the great fire called Liberaldom.

In the United States of Baal we have been moving, for many years, to the enthronement of Satan. But the final enthronement of Satan became obvious during Trump's presentation of men and women who had been healed after getting COVID-19 by taking the hydroxychloroquine drug. The liberals, like the Pharisees who condemned Christ for healing on the Sabbath, took no interest in a drug that could prevent the death of over a half million of their countrymen. All they wanted was to destroy Trump, so they launched a vicious smear campaign against the drug and prevented the emergency use of it until after Trump left office. Are these people, people who can hate as the devil hates, but are incapable of loving anybody or anything, most especially not their own people or anything connected to old Europe, people with whom we can form an incorporate union? No, we cannot do such a thing. We are bound to Him in and through our people; that is our indivisible union, not the liberals' union with Satan. +

# The Strange Mutations of Liberalism

May 15, 2021

Categories: Democracy, Good ground of Christian culture, Religion of Satan

Tags: Shakespeare



But who comes here? My father, poorly led? World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations make us hate thee,  
Life would not yield to age.

---

In my mid-twenties, some forty years ago, I was very involved in what was called the pro-life movement. Now, looking back, I can see that the movement should have been called, ‘Seeking redemption from the devil.’ Legalized abortion was the inevitable consequence of a system dedicated to the new trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science. You cannot combat a satanic evil by working within a system designed by Satan.

During the past election year, I felt like I was back with the pro-lifers (and many Trumpers were pro-lifers). Trump was vehemently opposed by the liberals because they saw him as a regression on the road to a liberal utopia, which, from a Christian standpoint, is the road to hell. The only rule that the liberals played by was – Trump must lose. The violent riots during the summer, the liberal and Chinese-backed coronavirus, were all designed to defeat Trump. The liberals succeeded because the pro-Trumper committed the same error as the pro-lifers: They sought redemption from the devil. Instead of declaring war against the forces of Antifa and Black Lives Matter, Trump appealed to the democratic process — “I support federalism” – which was the equivalent of an appeal to the devil. The devil laughed Trump to scorn while his minions cavorted and rioted in the mean streets of America. We needed a hero in authority, not a Constitutional expert: “Down these mean streets a man must go, who is not mean himself and is neither tainted nor afraid.” The election was decided in the mean streets. The moral cowards on the Supreme Court were not going to go down the mean streets because they, like the Trumpers, were tainted with liberalism, and they were afraid.

Forty-nine years ago, the pro-lifers drew a line in the sand – “Thou shall not legalize abortion.” And the liberals crossed that line. “We’ll fix you,” the pro-lifers declared, “We’ll take it to the courts.” And the courts backed the liberals. What comes next? The pro-lifers had nothing left, they had shot the one arrow in their quiver, the democratic arrow. The same thing happened this fall. The conservatives drew a line in the sand – “Do you want continual riots, do you want a COVID-19 police state where everybody who sniffs is locked away in a COVID-19 concentration camp, and do you want to live in slavery to the Chinese communists?” “Hell, no,” the white grazers said. “Then vote for Trump,” the conservatives decreed. And then came the fraudulent election. Did the conservatives, who drew the line in the sand, tell us to get our guns and storm the Capital? No, they told us to, “Take it to the courts.” Isn’t that déjà vu? Isn’t that what the pro-lifers said 49 years ago?

God will judge the souls of the conservatives, He will decide whether they were invincibly ignorant or in actual league with the devil, but in either case we dare not follow their path; we dare not, we must not, seek redemption from the devil. Which leaves the Christian European with Hamlet’s dilemma: “The time is out of joint; – O cursed spite, That ever I was born to set it right!” Like Hamlet, like Mason’s Harry Feversham, and like Conrad’s Lord Jim, we feel called upon to do something besides voting and protesting through democratic channels. We feel that a democratic, non-violent response to the violence of the enemy is cowardice in the face of the enemy.

The only response, outside of democratic channels, to the evil of liberalism, has been a neo-pagan response. The neo-pagan shooters have sought to combat the horror of liberalism with their own horror, the indiscriminate murder of the enemy, making no distinctions between civilians (women and children) and combatants. That can never be the Christian, European way. But neither can the conservatives’ litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” be the way of the Christian European. We have lost that charity of honor that was and is the sole possession of the European who remains connected to Christ through his racial hearth fire. Every successful liberal ‘progression’ in the 19<sup>th</sup>, 20<sup>th</sup>, and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries was pushed forward with the sacred negro at the forefront of the movement. The Unitarian North crushed the Christian South, waving the banner of the sacred negro. The legalization of abortion was not violently opposed by professed pro-lifers because their assumption was that because the liberals championed civil rights, which translated to the worship of the sacred negro, they could not be evil. They were only misguided, because the only true evil was and is racism. Thus the fear of racism makes cowards of the white Christians. So long as the liberals, following Engels’ advice, march leftward under the banner of the sacred negro, they will be able to march onward to hell completely unopposed by white Europeans. Trump allowed the federal police to shoot the murderer of Aaron Danielson because that Antifa creature from hell stepped away from his black shields. But Trump did not act against the murdering, rioting, Antifaers en masse because most of them kept their black shields in front of them.

A young man is not a coward if he does not step forward and charge the liberal leviathan. Great counterrevolutionary movements come from a people. When that entity no longer exists, when white pietas has been intellectualized out of existence in church and state, the individual white man, the European, does not feel he has a spiritual homeland, a people, to fight for. Alfred, Forrest, and Havelock had a Christian base; we, their descendants, do not have any Christian ground upon which we can “make our stand.” That is a tragedy of Shakespearean and biblical proportions.

The legalization of abortion in this nation in 1973 made explicit what was implicit in our nation from its foundation – the United States was and is a republic dedicated to the proposition that, “Christ be not risen, let us look for a new God and a new government based on that new God.” Man’s abstract reason became the new God, and the new Savior became the sacred negro, and the new Holy Ghost became science. Whenever the liberals thought their new trinity was being seriously challenged, they responded with violence in order to protect that trinity. The Christian South was struck down in the 1860s, and Trump and his followers were struck down in 2020. Trump’s protest seemed quite mild compared to the counterrevolution of 1860, but the liberal leviathan of 2020 was much more advanced than the leviathan of 1860. What was once acceptable then is no longer acceptable. It is now glaringly apparent that the unmitigated evil of liberalism, which has spawned legalized abortion, negro worship, transgenderism, homosexual marriage, and every other evil under the sun is not going to be eradicated democratically. But it is also clear that the white grazers refuse to believe that liberalism, and the demon-cracy created to advance liberalism, is evil.

If we reject the moral cowardice of the ‘conservative’ purveyors of more demon-cracy to defeat their liberal brethren, what do we do? “How should we then live?” Well, as I mentioned previously, we certainly do not do what the neo-pagan shooters have done, we do not grab semi-automatic rifles and start blazing away. There has never been a successful counterrevolution against a liberal oligarchy launched by one or two individuals who hope to advance their pagan cause by killing a great number of people in one big shooting spree. There have been

successful counterrevolutions against liberal oligarchies when a large segment of a Christian people will no longer tolerate the rule of Satan. The American people have not reached the stage of counterrevolution; they do not believe the liberals are satanic. We always come back to race: The white grazers do not believe that people who love the sacred negro can be satanic. But the liberals are satanic, they have replaced Christ with the sacred negro. Nothing good will happen in our anti-nation until white Europeans bend their knees to Christ and forsake the sacred negro.

At the end of *King Lear*, Edgar, who has gone from a man who, "is so far from doing harm that he suspects none," to a man who faces unmitigated evil in the person of his evil bastard brother and kills him, has this to say: "The weight of this sad time we must obey; Say what we feel, not what we ought to say." Shouldn't we always speak what we feel, not what we ought to say? Yes, we should. But when our society is healthy, when the unbought grace of life is far from spent, our social structures can stand a certain amount of verbiage that is the mainstay of politicians and academics. But when all that is sacred has been undermined by Satan's minions working within the fabric of our culture, we dare not lie, we dare not indulge in Emersonian platitudes. We must, like Edgar, speak what we feel, not what we ought to say. The word is father to the deed. If we speak the truth about the liberals, that they are pure evil, if we speak the truth about negro worship, that it is blasphemy, we will be preparing the ground for the counterrevolution that our people are so unwilling, at this point in their history, to fight.

The tragedy of Shakespearean and biblical proportions in the great drama of the European people can be seen before our eyes in *King Lear* and *Genesis*. We, the European people, have, like King Lear, turned our kingdom, which was given unto us by Christ the Lord, over to evil ministers. And they are wreaking havoc on us while we stand by, refusing to believe that the evil ministers are evil. And the *Genesis* part of our story is like unto *King Lear*. We have returned to Eden in order to enact a second fall of man. We have denounced our filial connection to the Lord God, and we have returned to the worship of our own intellects. Lear starts his journey back through the narrow gate of humility which he finds in a hovel:

*O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them,  
And show the heavens more just.*

And we can reclaim our hope, our only hope, through humility as well. We can accept our dependence on the Babe in the manger:

*And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another; Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.  
And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.*

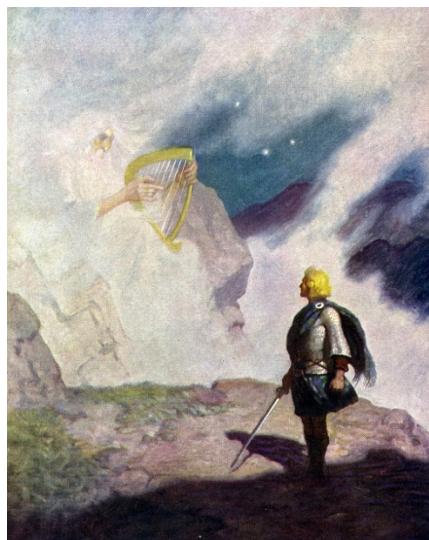
We are so far away from the Christ story that was once at the center of our people's history. However, we still have rights of memory in old Europe. I see a people lost in Liberaldom. But it is up to old men who see past Liberaldom to point to the star of Bethlehem and bid their people return home. +

# Mystic Europe

May 22, 2021

Categories: Charity, Chivalry, Christ the Hero, Fairy tale mode of understanding

Tags: Edmund Burke



But now all is to be changed. All the pleasing illusions, which made power gentle and obedience liberal, which harmonized the different shades of life, and which, by a bland assimilation, incorporated into politics the sentiments which beautify and soften private society, are to be dissolved by this new conquering empire of light and reason. All the decent drapery of life is to be rudely torn off. All the superadded ideas, furnished from the wardrobe of a moral imagination, which the heart owns, and the understanding ratifies, as necessary to cover the defects of our naked, shivering nature, and to raise it to dignity in our own estimation, are to be exploded as a ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion. —Burke, [Reflections on the Revolution in France](#)

---

Right from the beginning of the French Revolution, Burke saw with astounding clarity and vision what the French Revolution was and what its consequences would be. It seems, as we look back on his prophetic witness to the truth, that Burke was vouchsafed a vision of the living God acting in the history of His people and that our Lord called upon him to bear witness, before the European people, of that vision. Edmund Burke did not, like Jonah, try to avoid his prophetic mission. He bore witness to the European Ninevites. Tragically, the European people, unlike the Ninevites, did not heed the warnings of the prophet, and their subsequent history has been a history of a people who are, “lost, lost, lost.”

What was Burke’s vision? He saw a Europe which was grounded in the Dream of the Rood:

*The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and economy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources.* —Burke, [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)

Of course Roman Catholic and Protestant scholastics who made and still make the ceremonies and subordinate doctrines of Christianity into the whole of Christianity would dispute Burke’s assertion that the nations of Europe prior to the French Revolution had the same Christian faith. But the truth will out; it is in the blood. The history of our people, the history of their elective affections, tell us that Burke, not the scholastics, is right. There was a Narnia, there was a race of people who took the Christ story into their hearts and built their nations upon that rock: The European people became the Christ-bearing race.

The ways of God are not the ways of men. When the Israelites left the path of righteousness, God did not send a multitude of experts to show the people the way back to the true path. Instead he sent one prophet — Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Isaiah, etc. And finally He sent the fulfillment of the prophecies, His only begotten Son. All prophetic witness after the fulfillment of the prophecies must be a prophetic witness that calls the people of God, the Europeans, back to the ways of righteousness, to the truth of God in Man and Man in God. Burke saw with blinding sight that Jacobinism was not a regime change, it was the devil’s ultimate gambit against the living God:

*The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.*  
—[Regicide Peace](#)

“Yes, yes,” the bulk of the European intelligentsia said after Robespierre’s bloodletting became too blatant to ignore, “Burke was right about Robespierre, but he goes too far when he equates democracy and Jacobinism. That borders on obsession, and obsession is wrong.” But all the prophets were obsessed with their people’s apostasy from the living God. And that is what the acceptance of demon-cracy entails, the acceptance of a system of government established by the mind of Satan to ensure that the liberals’ ‘image of the beast in man’ culture replaces the ‘image of God in man’ culture of the antique Europeans.

When the European people disengaged from the customs and manners of old Europe, they disengaged from the living God. Once virtue consists of a man’s adherence to the democratic process, he can abandon outmoded virtues, such as honor and chivalry, which were virtues stemming from Christian Europe. In fact, the democratic man can become a coward without honor and still hold his head high in the new democracy in which honor and chivalry are relics of undemocratic Europe. Burke’s defense of Marie Antoinette and his condemnation of the new democratic/Jacobin ethos that made a virtue of her torture and execution still speaks to us today. The modern demon-crats are one with the Jacobins, and the entire unilluminated white race is being prepared for the guillotine:

*It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in, —glittering like the morning-star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! what a revolution! And what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.* —  
[Reflections](#)

We cannot live in this democratic hell, we cannot live in this land without charity, without honor, and without chivalry. The shadow men, the conservatives who want to conserve a milder Jacobinism, do not want a return to His Europe. I recently saw a News Max conservative condemning two Biden recruitment ads, one with a lesbian telling us to join the Army, another with homosexual male telling us to join the Army. Certainly the ads were insults against everything decent and honorable, but so was the News Max response. With the moderator were two female commentators who insisted that the Army should be color-blind, sex-blind, and value-neutral. That was and is the American way, the two women intoned. That may be the way of the shadow conservatives, but it is not the way of a Christian European. A Christian European does discriminate; he builds an army of the men of his own race and faith, and he defends his racial hearth fire where his women folk live and thrive. He does not send them to war in the name of equality and/or equity. And sexual orientation does matter. You can't build the esprit de corps necessary if open faggotry is permitted in the armed forces. But of course that is the traditional wisdom of the old European culture of honor and chivalry. Such things are now verboten in the age of diversity, equity, and inclusion.

The conservatives routinely drink from the fount of cowardice and dishonor when they defend the police as an aggregate — “99% of the police are good!” — while condemning actual policemen who defend the white race by arresting black criminals — “All police are good except the one bad policeman in Minnesota.” You can regularly appease the principalities and powers of this world if you abandon that ‘charity of honor’ culture that Burke spoke of and accept the ideals of democratic Jacobinism. Solzhenitsyn, in his master work *The Gulag Archipelago*, observed that Lady Macbeth would have slept quite soundly if she had had an ideology to justify herself. Without an ideology she eventually succumbed to the “compunctions visitings of nature” and was unable to live with what she had done. Modern liberals and their conservative brethren are made of sterner stuff. They do have an ideology — it is demon-cracy — and they can support every evil under the sun and denounce all that is good and noble under that evil banner of demon-cracy without ever feeling one single pang of conscience.

The idea that reason and science is truth and what emanates from the moral sentiments of the heart is false first took hold in the Christian churches, the whitened sepulchers of the false Aslan, and then was disseminated throughout Christendom. The storybook faith in Christ the Lord went underground along with the moral sentiments, such as chivalry, honor, and pietas, that accompany a faith in the storybook Christ. Burke wondered why ten thousand swords did not leap from the scabbards of chivalrous Frenchmen determined to defend their Queen. Well, as we have seen over the past two European centuries, rational scientific men do not fight in the name of irrational and unscientific codes such as chivalry and that charity of honor. But it is my contention that nothing but evil will come from the contending parties of moderate liberals and mad-dog liberals, because both parties are contending for bragging rights in hell: “We are more enlightened and scientific because we love the sacred negro more than thee,” both contending parties claim. But why is the ‘beast in man’ culture of the sacred negro more enlightened and scientific than that dear, dear land of storybooks, Christ’s Kingdom Come? Precisely because it is a ‘beast in man’ culture is the reason the modern liberals and modern conservatives believe that we must be democratic. Men who think, contrary to the word of God, that nature and nature’s God should be our touchstone of reality will always choose to be ruled by the devil rather than Christ.

The devil has taken great pains to present the European people with two paths that seem to diverge in the woods, but which end in the same place, in Satan’s kingdom of eternal night. The monstrous entity of liberalism has two satanic factions. The first is the Robespierre faction. That faction is represented by Biden and company, who come right at the white race and tell us they intend to eradicate all things white and Christian, and then they proceed to do just that. Then there is the second faction, the moderate liberals, who are incorrectly called conservatives. They are like unto the Jacobins after the death of Robespierre: they want the same democratic utopia as their liberal brethren, but they do not think it is necessary to eliminate the entire white race in order to bring about a democratic utopia on earth. Charlton Heston, in his farewell speech to the NRA, summed up the moderate liberals’ back-door Jacobinism. He cited Washington, Jefferson, Madison, Adams, and Thomas Paine as providing the ideological underpinning of our great republic and bid us be faithful to that heritage. I loved Charlton Heston’s movies when I was growing up, and I admired his real life courage in standing up to the mad-dog liberals. But we cannot, if we are white Christians, take the path recommended by Heston and the ‘conservatives.’ We must hew out a third path in the woods, the ancient path. The true path has been covered with thorns and buried under a mountain of liberal granite, but it is the only path for the European people. If the only culture in which Christ dwelt, in which true charity, the charity grounded in His divine charity, was supreme, is to “be exploded as a ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion,” and racist and sexist as well, then we have descended below the level of the beasts, because they will have retained more humanity than the modern Europeans, the subhuman, desouled Undines of the shadowlands.

The demon-eratic spirit is grounded in hell; it is a celebration of the virtues of unrestrained demonism. “Let joy reign supreme,” Satan decrees, and the enlightened Europeans scream, “Amen!” Satan’s will-be-done has been presented to Europeans in the form of utopia, and the Europeans have responded to Satan’s slick sales pitch with the same enthusiasm with which a pig eats his swill. In the name of a future in which the pig swill of liberty from God and liberty from faith, hope, and charity constitutes our brave new world the liberals proceed with their leftward march into hell –

*It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls “the compunctions visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. –[Reflections](#)*

Every evil ever conceived by the mind of Satan has been institutionalized in the United States of Babylon. But in point of fact Babylon was a godly state compared to the American republic of Satan. Why should we fly the Masonic flag of the stars and stripes, which is only a mildly leftward-leaning flag. Why don’t we fly a flag with Satan’s image emblazoned on it? That would reflect the inner reality of our satanic nation.

The utopians from hell always win because their enemies, the antique Europeans, were not perfect. The utopians can point to invented imperfections, which is the case 98% of the time, but they can also point to real imperfections. No Christian father, no Christian king can stand up to a utopian critic. If all Christian fathers and all Christian kings can be deposed because they are not perfect, then what father and what king can stand? They can’t stand, and it is Christian fathers and Christian kings who upheld the European culture of honor, charity, and chivalry. There is no honor in a democratic culture that bids us betray our own people. There is no charity in a democratic culture that permits the slaughter of the unborn and the massacre of the white race. And there is no chivalry in a democratic culture that recruits women to fill up the ranks of the military in foreign wars and allows them to abandon their domestic hearth fires at home.

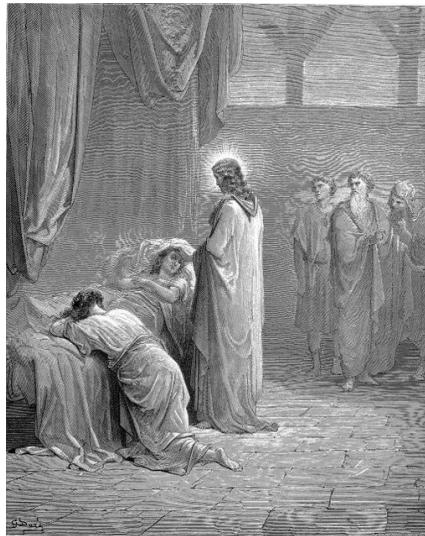
Can we proceed, as the News Max conservatives tell us we must, into the future without that charity of honor that Burke saw at the heart of Christian Europe? Sir Walter Scott was a passionate defender of Burke because he saw the Europe that Burke saw. It was, at its spiritual core, a mystic fairy land presided over by a Shakespearean clown, a man who seemed to be fool but who was wiser than the worldly-wise, because he saw life feelingly. Who was and is that mysterious figure walking in and out of our European storybooks? He is Christ the Lord, the King of Kings. Scott’s first epic poem was *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*. The last minstrel of Christian Europe was Edmund Burke. He sang us a lay of charity and honor, a song of old Europe, and he refused to yield to the sophisters, economists, and calculators that sought to destroy that world. Endlessly reciting, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” is a pathetic capitulation to the liberals’ new world devoid of charity, honor, and love. My heart is in the coffin with old Europe where buried love doth live! +

# Systemic Satanism

May 29, 2021

Categories: Jacobinism, Liberalism, Negro worship

Tags: Shakespeare



While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain which said, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further? As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. *And they laughed him to scorn.* But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. —*Mark 5: 35-42*

---

There has always been and always shall be a segment of religious tough-guys in both the Protestant and Roman Catholic churches, who try to make themselves more religious than thee and me by emphasizing mankind's disgusting, creeping, crawling sinful nature in contrast to the magnificence of God's nature, which is in direct contrast to our disgusting, creeping, crawling, sinful nature. But there is a problem with the Puritanical-Jansenist emphasis on God's magnificence and man's sinfulness: Why, if man is irredeemably evil, did God send His only begotten Son to redeem us from sin and death? How can irredeemably disgusting, creeping, crawling, sinful creatures inherit eternal life? No, we must adhere to what the Bible tells us, that we are created in the image of God, and we must adhere to what the reality of life tells us:

*The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipp'd them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cheris'd by our virtues.* —Shakespeare, All's Well That Ends Well

In Hawthorne's masterpiece *The Scarlet Letter* he depicts a woman who has committed adultery, Hester Prynne; the Reverend Dimmesdale, who is her partner in sin; and Roger Chillingworth, who is the wronged husband. Hawthorne does not, as the moderns would do, try to claim that Dimmesdale and Prynne are not sinners, but in the course of the novel, he shows us how a man, Roger Chillingworth, who sees himself as without sin and who continually dwells on the sins of others, can become like unto the Pharisees and become the enemy of the God of mercy and charity and place himself in the hands of the devil. In his master work, *The Woman of the Pharisees*, Francois Mauriac depicts a woman who zealously seeks out, in the name of her Jansenist God, the sins of others while refusing to look at the mingled yarn of her own life. Mauriac observes: "Some people choose God, but God does not choose them."

I bring up what might seem like an antiquated religious dispute because the Puritan-Jansenist vision of God is very much with us today in modern liberalism. I remember many years ago hearing an Elvis impersonator describe himself as "more like Elvis than Elvis." I thought that was quite an amusing advertisement, but the liberals who are more puritanical than the Puritans and more Jansenist than the Jansenists are not amusing. They are not amusing because they are deadly serious about their religion, and they have imposed their fanatical religion on the people of Europe.

The new religion of the modern Puritanical-Jansenist liberals is as follows: There is an original sin – it is whiteness. Are all whites damned? Yes and no? Most whites are damned; there is nothing they can do to avoid eternal damnation. But a few whites can be saved, the illuminated whites who have achieved, through the power of their illuminated minds, blackness. That seems like a contradiction – how can whiteness be unredeemable on the one hand, and yet liberals can, on the other hand, be redeemed? "It's a mystery," the liberals assert, "You, the unredeemed, cannot understand such things." During the COVID-19 pandemic, we saw the liberals' mystery religion in practice. The illuminated whites, such as Gretchen Whitmer of Michigan, went to all sorts of outings and parties, at which they were unmasked as they frolicked and played on the fields of Liberaldom. But the unredeemed had to wear masks, and they were not permitted to frolic and play in the fields of Liberaldom. So it shall always be with the liberals. They do not see our lives here on earth as a mingled yarn with good and evil running through every human heart, they see an unmixed yarn with evil in whiteness and all good in the black race and in the liberal race (they believe they are a new Gnostic race), which has gone beyond the evil of whiteness to the pure good of blackness.

The failure of professed Christians in the ranks of the moderate liberals to attack and repudiate the liberals' new-old religion is the reason that Biden and company rule America. Trump, like Louis XVI, did not believe in the evil of the Jacobin liberals. Louis XVI believed that if the Jacobins' issues with the French monarchy were addressed they would cease their attacks on the monarchy. But the Jacobins did not want to negotiate with the King, they wanted to destroy him because he represented Christian Europe, which they hated with their whole heart, mind, and soul. Trump tried to dialogue with the modern Jacobins; he tried to show that he was like unto them, in that he too loved the sacred negro. But there was nothing Trump could do to appease the liberals, he was a leftward-leaning, moderate liberal trying to survive in a world that had moved on to extreme leftism. Trump stood up to the Chinese by defunding the WHO and he kept the border under control by threatening to withhold financial aid to Mexico if they didn't stop the illegal aliens on their side. Countless white American lives were saved by his actions. But all his efforts were then thrown away when he failed, like Louis XVI, to do what was necessary to maintain his regime. When Black Lives Matter attacked, Trump surrendered his government to the liberals. Why? He capitulated because he believes in the sacred negro. You cannot attack negroes who march against "white privilege," because they are the saviors in the new trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science.

The moderate liberals are like unto the Jacobins who opposed Robespierre's Puritanical-Jansenist Jacobinism. The moderate liberals want to broaden the gate and allow more whites into the circle of the illuminati. Hence they protest against the Black Lives Matter and liberal charge of systemic racism. "We are not systemically racist," the moderate liberals cry. But still salvation comes only to an elite, even under the canopy of the moderate liberals, because they damn all the Europeans of the past, the real systemic racists. What would happen if white people actually banded together and proclaimed, "Yes, we are racist, we love our own and hate those people who attack our people and our culture"? Of course that won't happen so long as the Europeans believe that the negro is sacred and Christ be not risen.

Let us see how the conservatives' moderate negro worship plays out in the political arena. They go to our Texas border and do an exposé, interviewing a few Republican congressmen in order to show us, "the real people," who are the true kings, through the ballot box of the American experiment in demon-cracy, what is happening under the new 'come one, come all' policy of the Biden administration. After reporting on the horrific carnage, they conclude their report with the statement, "Biden better do something." Why should Biden do something?

Isn't the destruction of the white race the desired end of Biden's religion? And haven't the conservatives signed on to the consequences of that religion by refusing to challenge the religion of the sacred negro?

It is the same with the issue of the police. The conservatives tell us that no one wants to be a policeman anymore because they will be thrown into jail if they use violence against the sacred negroes. For some reason, they can't find enough men who want to stand around while Antifa and BLM scum shoot at them. The conservatives claim they are pro-police, and they deplore the fact that we will now have to scrap the bottom of the barrel in order to recruit police. But how can you call for prayers for Jacob Blake (as Pence did) and acquiesce to the imprisonment of Derek Chauvin and still claim to be pro-police? The conservatives love the theory of police, but they are unwilling to defend actual policemen who do what has to be done if this country is ever going to be a nation: aggressively arrest and kill, if necessary, the black savages who roam about the country seeking the blood of whites, and who, when they are unable to find white blood, turn on each other. The beasts and cannibals amongst us are not gods, they are not noble savages; they are ignoble, savage predators whom we worship at our physical and spiritual peril. And the latter peril is the greater peril. What good will it be if we obtain a portion of the liberals' material wealth by worshipping the sacred negro if by doing so we lose our soul?

Once systemic Satanism takes root in a nation, every public official who goes against that systemic Satanism will be crucified as Christ was crucified. It matters not to Satan if the public official wants only a slight digression away from Satan's rule, that public official will be crucified. That is what was and is behind the crucifixion of Derek Chauvin. He acted against the sacred negro, who is the lodestar of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth, so he had to be crucified. Trump and his followers tried to escape crucifixion by selling out 'racist' whites in the present, such as Derek Chauvin, and by selling out whites from the past, such as Nathan Bedford Forrest and Enoch Powell (see his "River of Blood" speech). There is systemic racism in America and the nations of Europe; it comes from Satan, who is a systemic racist who hates the white race because he hates the God-Man, Jesus Christ, and he lives in fear that the European people will step away from their Babylon captivity and become, once again, the Christ-bearing race.

The great purveyor of Satan's systemic racism are the liberals, both mad-dog and moderate, and the blacks. They fight and quarrel amongst themselves, but they are united in their hatred of white 'racists.' And who is a white racist? A white racist is whomever loves his people in and through Jesus Christ. The conservative News Maxers and Breitbarts can drone on from now till doomsday, but they will not deter the mad-dog liberals from implementing Satan's final solution for the problem of racism, which is the extermination of the white race, unless they repudiate their systemic Satanism, their desire to seek redemption from the devil through the worship of the sacred negro. The greatest systemic racist of them all is the archangel Satan; he hates the white race.

We have repeated, in our new nation conceived in Satanism and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created in the image of the beast, the sins of the Pharisees. Whatever is Christian, whatever is noble and good, whatever stems from His divine charity, is scorned. When Trump tried to give us hope that the COVID-19 illness did not have to be a death sentence by interviewing people who had survived the illness by taking the drug hydroxychloroquine, he asked the press surrounding him if he was doing wrong. The press, like the Pharisees, "held their peace."

*And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him. And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace. And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. —Mark 3: 1-6*

The scorn of the Pharisees for Christ's charity is the mark of the liberals. What is behind their scorn and their mockery? It is Satan. Why should the people that loved the God-Man who raised Jairus's daughter and who gives us, through His crucifixion and resurrection, the promise of eternal life, be mocked and scorned as sinful, crawling, wretched racists? Why should the new Puritan-Jansensists of Liberaldom be permitted to rule in a kingdom of systemic Satanism? We must hurl the same defiance at Satan's liberal minions that Satan hurled at the Lord God — "We shall not serve."

Is George Floyd our God? If he is not our God, we cannot traffic with the devil through his liberal minions. The first step back, the most important step back, will take place within that kingdom of the human heart. If we reject demon-cracy and the worship of the sacred negro, we will find that other world — the world of light, of love, and of eternal life. If we keep denouncing all that was good and honorable in old Europe and lauding all that is ignoble and base in this world, His kingdom come will become a fantastical fable in the minds of the moderate liberals and it will become an evil relic of our racist past in the minds of the mad-dog liberals. But what if there is still something in our hearts that rejects the systemic Satanism of the liberals? If we cling to Him in and through our people, we will not be overcome by the devil and his liberal minions. In chapter three of St. Mark's Gospel, the scribes and Pharisees accuse Christ of casting out devils because He is a devil: "He hath Beel-ze-bub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils." Christ points to His acts of charity and asks, "How can Satan cast out Satan?" And then He warns us that:

*Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith they shall blaspheme: But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation. —Mark 3: 28-29*

The Holy Ghost is the Comforter who tells us, in the kingdom of the heart, that we are something more than creeping, crawling, sinful creatures; we are created in His image and we can be redeemed if we reject the systemic Satanism of Liberaldom and return to Christ's Europe. +

# Even to the Edge of Doom

June 12, 2021

Categories: Faithful hearts, Homeland, Jacobinism, Scientism, Uncategorized

Tags: Shakespeare

## To My Readers —

I was unable to post on June 5<sup>th</sup> because of internet problems beyond my control. I do not believe that computers are intrinsically evil; if I did I would never use them. But on the whole I do not think the computer age has been a blessing. The great mistake made by the computer enthusiasts in the ranks of the conservatives, men such as George Gilder, was the mistake of assuming that technical advances were good in and of themselves, independent of the human beings using the technologies. As the European people regressed morally, they became a post-Christian people with advanced technology. The result has been a tyranny unequaled in the less technological ages. The internet tech giants are able to exercise a leftist tyranny over the European people that makes Stalin and Hitler look like benevolent dictators.

I will not cease my attack, via the pen, against the liberal leviathan until God calls me home. So if you don't see a post on a given Saturday, it means I have shuffled off this mortal coil or I am, once again, having internet problems.

As regards this week's post — I once, in my student days, shared a train seat with an Englishwoman in her mid-forties who was doing a one-year stint in the United States for an English company she represented. In the course of a long conversation, mainly about her native land, she confided to me that in all her travels throughout Europe and the United States, the American people were the only people who got upset if you told them you didn't want to be a citizen of their country. She didn't understand the American exceptionalist mentality, which was anti-pietas. I told her there once had been a segment of Americans in the old South who loved their nation simply because it was "their own, their native land," but on the whole, she was right: Our people loved a utopian ideal, not a homeland. In spite of all that we have become, our 'conservatives' still refuse to reject American exceptionalism. They are still American Undines. When will ensoulment take place? When we see His Europe and say, "This is my own, my native land."



You do me wrong to take me out o' the grave.  
Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound  
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears  
Do scald like molten lead.

[King Lear](#)

---

The conservatives have latched onto new evidence, provided by scientists, that tells us the COVID-19 virus was and is a man-made virus that the Chinese communists cooked up in their laboratories in Wuhan in order to kill as many Americans as possible. My reaction to that report is the same as Horatio's reaction to Hamlet when Hamlet tells him what his father, come back from the grave, has told him:

Ham. *There's ne'er a villain dwelling in all Denmark—  
But he's an arrant knave.*

Hor. *There needs no ghost, my lord, come from the grave  
To tell us this.*

I need no scientists to tell me that the Chinese communists are evil.

If you believe that communism is an evil ideology, if you believe the historical record of nations who hold to that ideology, you should not need scientific evidence to convince you that the Chinese communists were and are involved in germ warfare. All things are lawful to those who believe there is no God, so why should we doubt for one moment that the Chinese communists are evil men with evil intentions? We *will* doubt that obvious piece of history if we are religious atheists, if we are liberals who believe in the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science.

If we turn to the liberals' Holy Ghost, which is science, to refute the liberals' narrative of the good, the pure, and the beneficent Chinese communists, we will fail to refute the liberals. We will fail, because there is no truth in science — she is a whore who will serve whomever pays her. The leftist liberals can come up with their own scientists to refute the moderate liberals' scientists. Pilate asked Christ, "What is truth?" and then consented to the crucifixion of The Truth. The liberals are the embodiment of the Jews who sought to crucify The Truth, and the moderate conservatives are the embodiment of Pontius Pilate who consented to that crucifixion because he needed empirical, scientific evidence before he could believe in The Truth enough to oppose the very real 'this world only' power of the Sanhedrin. But what is our faith if it can be seen with the empirical eye? It is not faith, it is a reed for every new scientific wind that blows.

The scholastic era in the Church marked a great shift in the interior eye of the European Everyman. Prior to the scholastic era, the high Middle Ages, the Dream of the Rood was the vision of the European people. Christ was above the natural world, He was our Savior and He was our kith and kin.

*Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.*

*There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.*

#### **-The Dream of the Rood**

When the inner eye ceases to behold the vision of the Dream of the Rood, but instead is overcome by the outer eye which looks upon nature and nature's god, the Holy Ghost is rendered obsolete, He becomes nothing. It did not happen overnight, the worship of science as the true comforter, but it did come about. The two democratic revolutions, the American Revolution and the French Revolution, codified that reordering of the Europeans' spiritual vision. When God is scientized, when He is studied with the empirical eye, He becomes an impersonal God, a remote God that people turn to as they turn to a philosophical construct or a self-help book. But He is no longer the God whom St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. And that God is the only God who can sustain us in this world and give us eternal life in the next world.

Communism is a derivative of American and French Jacobinism, and they are derivatives of the scientizing of God. When God is scientized, man becomes scientized, because man is created in the image of God; thus, a false view of God gives us a false view of man. And the men of science, acting on the false view of God, can proceed to analyze, categorize, and dissect "poor, bare unaccommodated man" out of existence. The conservatives tell us that we should resist communism. Why should we resist communism? The answer always is: it is a bad economic system and it is opposed to liberty. But democratic capitalism is a bad economic system, and it is opposed to liberty as well. Let me digress. My great-grandfather on the Welsh side of my family came over to this country when he was a baby. Obviously, he didn't have any say in the matter, he came over to the land of liberty with his parents. At eight years of age, he became a breaker boy in the mines, and he worked six fourteen-hour days a week from age eight until his death at age sixty. Now, in those years between eighteen and sixty, he married, fathered children, and had Sundays off, so his life was not unmitigated misery. But if we are looking at the entity called capitalism, which is an offspring of the democratic way that American conservatives are always touting, is the misery index of Russian communism and of American capitalism that different? I would prefer the life of a Russian peasant under communism to the life of a coal miner, but I would prefer the life of a factory worker in the U.S., as miserable as that might be, to life under communism. And yes, American capitalism was humanized, the work hours were shortened for the laboring classes, and a middle class came into being. But still, we can't leave the issue of the scientizing of man. There is a pernicious evil behind American democracy; it is a system of government and economics that is opposed to the European people's Dream of the Rood.

If we are picking the greater evil, it seems that the iron fist of communism, which is the Jacobinism of Robespierre, is worse than the seductive, veiled evil of American demon-cracy, which is the Jacobinism of the French Directory after the fall of Robespierre, but both systems are evil manifestations of a material-based view of a man and God, which makes science the new Holy Ghost. Are we permitted to choose the lesser of two evils? No, we must cleave to the Dream of the Rood and forsake communism and demon-cracy.

In our country, we can see the fatal consequences of choosing the seemingly lesser of two evils. The 'lesser' of two evils can shift ground, the seductive veil can be removed to reveal an iron fist. Whenever the liberal demon-crats feel that their empire is being challenged, they become hysterical, like an evil woman who finds that her feminine charms no longer charm, and they resort to the iron fist. This happened in America in 1860 through 1877, and it happened again in 2016 through 2020. And the white grazers always allow the leftist demon-crats to go back to the seduction, even though the demon-crats have shown them the evil behind the demon-cratic façade. I recall seeing an old gangster movie (there is a great deal of practical wisdom in the B-Westerns and the gangster B-movies) in which a wounded gangster sought refuge in a hideout for gangsters run by a gigantic female gangster. The Amazon Ma Parker started to strangle the wounded gangster, but when she found out that he did not have the money from his robbery on his person, she stopped strangling him and tried to behave like Florence Nightingale. Of course the wounded gangster did not believe in the sudden transformation of the Amazonian gangster. He waited for the right moment and then eliminated her. That was the wise and prudent thing to do, but the gangster had a great advantage: he did not have a mystical faith in the goodness of all Ma Parkers who ran a refuge for gangsters. "Yet though you slay me, still I shall trust in thee," is the faith of the white, moderate liberals as regards the mad-dog liberals.

When the Southern people were sufficiently 'reconstructed' and allowed back into the Union, upon what terms were they allowed to come back into the Union? They were allowed to come back into the Union under the original demand of the Northern Jacobins – "You must accept the enfranchisement of the negro." And of course what was implicit in that enfranchisement of the negro was the worship of the negro as the second person of the new Trinity. The mini-rebellion of 2016 was not a full-blown counterrevolution, as was the case in 1860; it was a small protest against the liberals' blatant leftism, but it was put down with fire and sword because the liberals, having obtained absolute power, were not going to allow even a slight digression from 'the truth and the way,' which is their kingdom of hell on earth.

It is a tragic spectacle when the conservatives blather on about the demon-cratic way and our great star-spangled-banner-American heritage while the liberals enjoy the fruits of an uncontested, fraudulent election victory and openly canonize black criminals while crucifying all the white policemen who try to prevent black savagery. But that shall always be the American way so long as the American way is opposed to the European people's ancient customs and manners. Those customs and manners were grounded in Christ's love for his people and their response to His love.

There was, until the 20<sup>th</sup> century, great resistance to the new world order which bid us turn to the new Holy Ghost of science instead of the Holy Ghost of Christianity. The lay of the European minstrels (see [Nineteenth Century Way to God](#) and [The Sacred Heritage](#)) told us of another world of charity, honor, and love that could only be abandoned at the cost of our souls. We will always believe a lie if we think that His charity of honor, the charity that never faileth, can be relegated to the historical archives, while 'real' history, the history of the beloved sacred negroes and the onward march of leftist feminists, sexual perverts, and mass murderers (abortionists), is applauded and lauded in our public ceremonies as part of the fabric of our nation.

We cannot resist the onward leftist march of the mad-dog liberals by appealing to our leftist American heritage. That heritage is not a heritage, it is a base betrayal of our sacred heritage, our Christian European heritage. Why are the men and women arrested on January 6<sup>th</sup> for trying to stop a leftist military coup being tortured in prison without a conservative outcry? Why was Derek Chauvin crucified without a conservative outcry? Why do the conservatives insist that we must not be racist and we must be non-violent? The answer to all those questions is that the conservatives are not conservative, they are the members of the Jacobin Directory who signed on to the murder of Louis XVI but finally opposed Robespierre when he came after them.

When Thomas Molnar reviewed Russell Kirk's book *The Conservative Mind*, he said that Kirk had proved there were some conservatives in America, but he had failed to prove that they ever had any influence. When has our government ever taken the side of Christian Europe against the Jacobins? During the French Revolution we supported the Jacobins. In the Civil War our Jacobin government destroyed the Christian South. In World War I we supported the side of the anarchists who struck at the last Christian empire in Europe. And in World War II, we chose to support the Russian communists, when a Christian nation would have fought Nazism and communism. Didn't we finally get it right in Korea and Vietnam? No, we didn't, because we didn't fight communism in the name of Christ, we fought it in the name of demon-cratic capitalism. It is not possible for a man of honor to cling to the anti-Christian, anti-European star-spangled myth of American demon-cracy. That is why the liberals have worked so hard to destroy the white man's code of honor. If you demonize honor, chivalry, and charity, all the virtues stemming from the white Christians' code, you will place the Europeans under the mantle of science, and science has no honor. In the trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science, we have seen Satan placed on the throne of Europe. He cannot be humanized, he can only be dethroned. And a dethroning will only take place when the European people return to their first love, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

My own struggles to come to terms with the liberals' new Holy Ghost mirror Dostoyevsky's experience. The forces of modernity seemed to be correct: An intelligent man, a man of reason and science, could not believe that Christ was the Son of the Living God. But still, there was that "radiant personality of Christ." My dream, my inner eye, saw Christ and only Christ standing between me and all the "heart-ache and the thousand natural shocks that flesh is heir to." Beyond cold reason, beyond the sacred negro, and beyond science, is the God-Man, who has left us a comforter infinitely greater than science. Do not our hearts burn within us for something more than the demonic forces of Jacobinism-communism and demon-cracy? I cannot believe that Satan can completely eradicate, through the new trinity, our love for the God-Man. "If this be error," if Satan can kill all longing for the God-Man in the hearts of the European people, still, I shall hold onto my Dream of the Rood, "even to the edge of doom."

Ever since the Garden of Eden, Satan has prowled about the world, seeking the ruin of souls. Through ideology, by making God and then man an object of the natural world to be studied and dissected, Satan has achieved his greatest success. I once, while teaching Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet*, which is not even my favorite of Shakespeare's plays, became so overcome with the charity of heart that could see all our faults and still love us with an overwhelming love, that I wept uncontrollably in front of a stunned group of adolescents. Shakespeare's unflinching faith that our humanity was linked to a charity that surpasses pure reason, is the faith that brings us to the divine humanity of our Lord and Savior. When we are connected to the culture of His divine humanity, the condemned, racist culture of old Europe, we feel something stir within us that makes us recoil from modernity and cling to that vision we see with

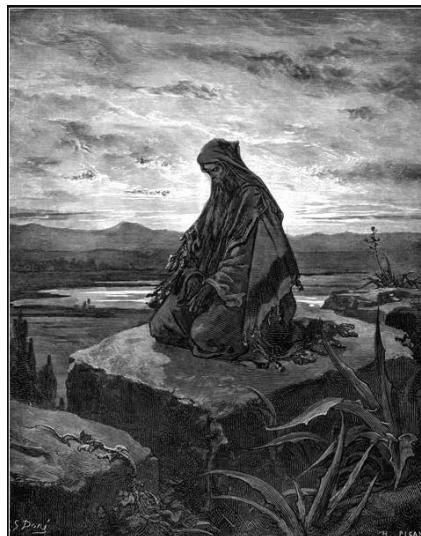
the interior eye of the heart. Something momentous is occurring in the European nations. Satan is consolidating his power, and it seems there is nothing left in the European people's souls that can help them resist Satan. We are bound upon a wheel of fire that our own "tears do scald like molten lead." Only the Dream of the Rood, our European vision, can put out that fire and dry our tears. +

# To Comfort All That Mourn

June 19, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Europeans and Christ, Liberalism

Tags: Edmund Burke, Hippolyte Taine



The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn. [Isaiah 61: 1-2](#)

---

In the 1700s, Burke warned the European people that they were spending, in their passion for liberty, equality, and fraternity, the “unbought grace of life.” In 1950, Herbert Butterfield stated that the European people were living off of the fumes of Christianity. Now what is left to us? There is nothing left to us from that culture of God’s grace. What started out as a small cabal of demonic creatures called liberals became a large, militant army that purged the unbought grace of life from the hearts of the European people. Nothing good will follow in the European drama without the unbought grace of life that we have cast aside.

Liberalism, like Christianity, is a revelatory faith; it is not a philosophy. When you try to make it a philosophy, you kill it. Even though the liberals profess to be adherents of pure reason, reason is only the first person of their trinity. They must be true to their inner dynamic, to their mystical core, which is the sacred negro, if they want to maintain their faith. The advocates of pure reason without reference to the sacred negro within the boundaries of Liberaldom are like unto the scholastics within the bowels of Christendom. They are harmful parasites because they seek to pluck out the mystery which sustains the faithful; in the case of liberalism – the mystery of the Man-God, the Sacred Negro, and in the case of Christianity, the scholastics seek to pluck out the mystery of the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

We must go back in time and see with the inner eye – with that eye we see the failure of Greek rationalism. It was the mystery religions that had captured the hearts of the people at the time that Christ entered human history. He did not defeat Mithras and Cybele because He offered mankind a rational alternative to the irrationality of the mystery religions. Oh no! He revealed, in His divine humanity, a mystery greater than Mithras and Cybele, He revealed to us God in Man and Man in God. Christ’s triumph was not a triumph of reason over unreason, it was a triumph of charity over the ecstasy of cruelty and unbridled sexual license.

Liberalism represents the return of the mystery religions, through the sacred negro. The liberals, in their mystery religion, worship cruelty and sexual license; they cannot be reasoned out of their religion. They have rejected the Light of the World; all things are lawful once that rejection becomes your religion. “No light reaches eyes which regard blindness as clear-sightedness; no remorse affects a soul which erects barbarism into patriotism, and which sanctions murder with duty.” (Taine)

In 2016, when the liberals were taken by surprise by Trump’s victory, they revealed, without the usual subterfuges, the essence of their faith. They openly, through Black Lives Matter and Antifa, and through the COVID-19 virus, sanctioned the murder of whites. And they were unopposed. They successfully painted Trump as a real mean man who was opposed to the light of liberalism, but he was no such man. Trump was and is a liberal who wants to reinstate a few Christian fumes into the body of liberalism. That might have been possible in 1960, but not now. Satan goes forward; he does not go back. The moderate liberals have latched onto an auxiliary doctrine of liberalism, which is demon-cracy, and made it the sum total of their religious faith. That is why they continue to blather on about voting the scoundrels out, even after the scoundrels have shown they do not believe in ‘one man, one vote’ democracy. They believe that a vote that does not serve mad-dog liberalism is not a vote. The mad-dog liberals adhere to the satanic essence of their faith; they will not be deterred by outward forms. They will use the Constitution and the demon-cratic process only so long as they serve their faith; when such outward forms no longer serve their faith, they will discard those forms. Obama’s election was allowed to take place because his election served liberalism. Trump’s election did not serve liberalism, so he was barred from being re-elected. That is always the way it shall be in Liberaldom. The liberals’ revelatory faith is directly opposed to the Christian faith. The two entities cannot peacefully co-exist. When conservatives turn all their faces away from the January 6<sup>th</sup> protestors, when they bid us recite the litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” they bid us accept the rule of the liberals and their satanic gods in perpetuity.

Do the moderate liberals, the News Max type of conservatives, really oppose liberalism? They differ with the liberals on many issues, but do they oppose the onward march toward Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth? No, they do not. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. If a gang of murdering barbarians attack my house, seeking to put my family to the sword, and my neighbors say, “We are against robbery and murder, but we will not fight against robbers and murderers. We will wait until an election comes up, and we will vote against robbers and murderers, and we will abide by the elections’ results, even though the robbers and murderers are the people counting the ballots,” then I know what my neighbors are – they are moderate liberals who “may be used for wrong, but are useless for right.”

It’s a truly disgusting spectacle to see ‘conservatives’ continuing to dialogue with their liberal brethren who are feasting on the blood of white people. By the rules of the conservatives’ blasphemous, demon-cratic religion — that what is right is determined by a majority vote — the liberals do not have a right to rule, but still the conservatives continue to conserve demon-cracy and condemn all those who oppose demon-cracy. Burke refused to recognize the regicide Jacobins as the legitimate rulers of France. We should also refuse to recognize the regicide liberals as the legitimate rulers of our nation.

*Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclator. France, though out of her territorial possession, exists; because the sole possible claimant, I mean the proprietary, and the Government to which the proprietary adheres, exists and claims. God forbid, that if you were expelled from your house by ruffians and assassins, that I should call the material walls, doors and windows of \_\_\_\_\_, the ancient and honourable family of \_\_\_\_\_. Am I to transfer to the intruders, who not content to turn you out naked to the world, would rob you of your very name, all the esteem and respect I owe to you? The Regicides in France are not France. France is out of her bounds, but the kingdom is the same...*

*This example we shall give, if, instead of adhering to our fellows in a cause which is an honour to us all, we abandon the lawful Government and lawful corporate body of France, to hunt for a shameful and ruinous fraternity with this odious usurpation that disgraces civilized society and the human race. –Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Even if Biden had won the majority of votes in a fair election as Obama did, the election would have been an invalid election. All American elections are invalid for the same reason that there are no valid elections in France or in any of the European countries. They are invalid because democracy is demon-cracy; it is from hell. The liberals hold that any government that is not a demon-cracy is not a legitimate government, but the exact opposite is the case. No government that is not grounded in pietas, which is part of the “unbought grace of life,” is a valid government. All the nations of Europe were once grounded in pietas, and our own anti-nation once had a small European remnant that took their stand against the liberal leviathan in the name of pietas—the love of their own in and through the Savior.

I suppose now that typewriters have gone the way of the horse and buggy, the phrase, “he didn’t adjust the typewriter,” has gone out of our vernacular language. But I still use the term to describe my failure to adjust to the changing times. I have failed to adjust the typewriter during the transfer from the ‘fumes of Christianity’ culture in which I grew up to the ‘death of the fumes of Christianity’ culture and the institutionalization of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. In the ‘fumes’ culture of the 1950s and 1960s, liberals were not as blatant about their intent to destroy every last remnant of white Christian Europe. But as the fumes died out, the liberals dispensed with their subterfuges because they no longer feared any opposition to liberalism. All resistance to liberalism has ceased; that was made abundantly clear when the conservatives accepted the verdict of the fraudulent election. It’s difficult to comprehend, to adjust the typewriter, but that is the current state of the European people: they have been desouled by the ‘image of the beast in man’ culture of liberalism.

The greatest danger to the European people is not the mad-dog liberals, it is the moderate liberals in church and state. And by greatest danger, I do not mean that the moderate liberals – the conservatives – are as morally reprehensible as the mad-dog liberals. Far from it, the moderate liberals are not, as the mad-dog liberals are, outside the ken of humanity, they have many humane and noble instincts. But that is why they are so dangerous. They mix some Christian fumes into their liberalism, and we are tempted, because we are lonely, to settle for their moderate liberalism. But the Dream of the Rood Christians ultimately must recoil in horror from the moderate liberals just as we would recoil in horror from a reptile lover who tells us we can sleep with venomous, poisonous snakes without being bitten. The dialogues with liberals, the great talk shows, are predicated on the assumption that we can all be snake charmers, we can mesmerize deadly cobras with our incredible, superior reason. Or, to put it in Shakespearean terms, “You bid me seek redemption from the devil.”

Lincoln said it all when he made his Gettysburg address. He joined America with regicide, Jacobin France when he spoke of a nation, “conceived in liberty” (liberty from God) and, “dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal” (but some, the sacred negroes, are more equal than others, because such men are gods who point us to the ‘image of the beast in man’ culture of the archangel Satan). Our forefathers cannot be the men Lincoln references – the Jeffersons, the Franklins, and the Paines. Our forefathers are the men with the Dream of the Rood in their hearts; they are the antique Europeans, and they are the apostles and St. Paul, who bid us adhere to His word and keep His image, not the image of the beast in man, before our eyes.

The great enemies of Christian Europe were and are the liberals, but the liberals’ allies in the war against the ‘image of God in man’ culture takes us, at first, by surprise. The ‘Christian’ clergy have always been the enemies of the Europeans’ Dream of the Rood. Why? They have stood and still stand in opposition to Christ’s Europe because they do not believe the light of Christ’s love penetrated to the core of European culture. They believe, with St. Augustine, that there is the city of God, which consists of the structure called the Church and the parchments put out by Church officials, and there is the city of man, which is the city of sin and desolation. But doesn’t such a theology assume that God’s grace is an illusion? If Christ’s love cannot turn human hearts to Him, what are we doing here on earth? Are we only supposed to know God through the computer printouts of the clergymen? Small wonder that the liberals have triumphed over the Christian Europeans. The liberals have a savior while the European people have... What do they have? They want to cling to a few Christian fumes while maintaining a place in Liberaldom. But the liberals’ gods are jealous gods. They do not want to share their place in the liberals’ trinity with Jesus Christ. There cannot be, there must not be, two redeemers. The liberals have overmanned the conservatives because the conservatives want to serve two masters. It can’t be done. It is Christ or the negro. The liberals have taken their stand while the conservatives have taken no stand, and by taking no stand they have made their choice – they serve the sacred negro, and through the sacred negro they serve Satan. The minstrel in the old hymn asks Mary if she knows that, “When you kiss your little Baby, you kissed the face of God?” We need to ask the men with the great minds in the ranks of the clergy and the conservative pundits, “Do you know that when you reject His Europe, the people with the hearts of flesh, you reject Christ?”

A few years after I got out of college, I stopped at the house of a professor I had become friends with during my college years. During the course of our, “what have you been doing over the last few years” conversation, I mentioned that I had gone over to the ranks of the men and women he considered his enemies – the Christian Europeans. I knew that such news would not delight him, but I was very surprised at his vehemence. He eventually asked me to leave his house. Before I left, there was an exchange between the militant atheist, my former professor, and the Christian European, myself, that I shall never forget. He wanted to turn the existence of God into a philosophical debate. He brought up all the false defenses of Aslan he had heard during the course of his career, the Thomistic apologetics and other such ‘Christian’ explanations of the ways of God. I agreed with all his criticisms. And my agreement only increased his hatred. How could I agree with his refutation of Christian apologetics and still adhere to the Christian faith? I took my stand with Alyosha Karamazov and pointed to the mysterious stranger, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Rational, democratic man has rejected the mystery of the God-Man who promised us a different liberty, a liberty diametrically opposed to liberalism:

*And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. –[Luke 4: 16-19](#)*

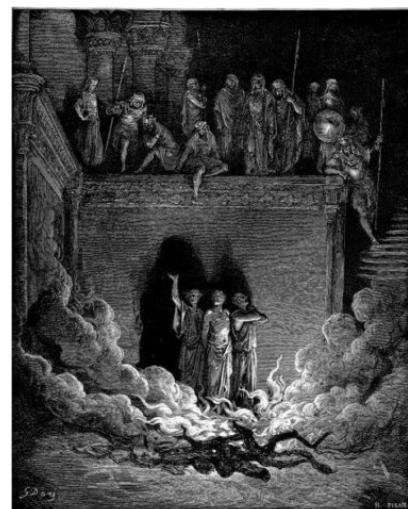
Liberalism in all of its many guises, clerical, moderate, and mad-dog, must be rejected because it is an ideology forged by Satan to destroy Christ’s people. The unbought grace of Christ’s Europe has been spent. The fumes of Christianity have disappeared — never to return? The head says never again, but the heart seeks His Europe and only His Europe. It is the mystery of Christ’s God-Manhood that shall sustain us in our battle with the liberal leviathan. In that mystery, charity and manhood are united. What Burke called the charity of honor is what sets the European culture on a different level from all the pagan cultures and our modern satanic culture. Achilles dragged the body of Hector three times around the walls of Troy after he had triumphed over him in battle. Achilles had the honor of a pagan, but he lacked charity. Prince Hal honors his foe, the noble Hotspur, after he has defeated him in battle because he has that charity of honor. And the modern liberals? They do not have the pagan’s honor or the Christian European’s charity. They are treacherous, immoral monsters of dire cruelty and evil. It is difficult to stay united to the dead, nay, it is an impossibility if we do not love much. The charity that never faileth, the charity that the God-Man imparts to us will keep us bound to our honored dead and to the Savior who rose again on the third day. Never, never shall we forsake the Europeans’ Dream of the Rood, because that Dream is Truth, it is the vision of the Divine Charity, of the God-Man, who draws us to Him in defiance of the hell of liberalism.+

# Furnace and Guillotine

June 26, 2021

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Europeans and Christ, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke



Now if ye be ready that at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and dulcimer, and all kinds of musick, ye fall down and worship the image which I have made; well: but if ye worship not, ye shall be cast the same hour into the midst of a burning fiery furnace; and who is that God that shall deliver you out of my hands? Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, answered and said to the king, O Nebuchadnezzar, we are not careful to answer thee in this matter. If it be so, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O king. But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up. Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury, and the form of his visage was changed against Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego: therefore he spake, and commanded that they should heat the furnace one seven times more than it was wont to be heated. —Daniel 3: 15-19

How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders? -Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

television show is *Leave it to Beaver* (1957–1963). I love the movie and the show because they are both wonderful representations of the ‘Christian fumes’ culture of the middle half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. They portray people who still behave according to that charity of honor practiced by our Lord when He walked this earth. But, alas, I realize when viewing the movie and the television show, that the fumes of Christianity are not going to sustain me in the war against the liberals. The Achilles heel in the ‘Christian fumes’ culture is quite evident in *Miracle on 34<sup>th</sup> Street* and in *Leave It to Beaver*. In the movie, Kris Kringle is only against amateur psychologists trying to practice psychotherapy, he is not against the scientific dissection of man and God so long as it is practiced by a licensed psychologist. And we hear much about the spirit of Christmas in the movie, but nothing about the Babe in the Manger, who is the reason for Christmas. Likewise, in *Leave it to Beaver*, Ward and June are wonderful parents – they have a Christian ethos – but they are moderate liberals, with a Norman Rockwell view of God as the benevolent Father of American democracy who stays in the background while Americans march ever onward to... I prefer the worlds of *Miracle on 34<sup>th</sup> Street* and *Leave It to Beaver* to our modern world, but the fumes’ culture, once it has been destroyed, cannot be resurrected any more than the burnt-out coals of a charcoal fire can be turned into a raging fire again. We must go back to the live coals that started the original fire.

There is so much for us to learn from the story of Prometheus, who stole fire from the gods of Greece and gave it to men, because he had compassion for them. We all know his punishment – he was tied to a rock where eagles pecked at his entrails. Is that story a presentiment, through a glass darkly, of our redemption through Jesus Christ? The true fire was not an actual fire, it was the fire in our hearts that was ignited by Christ’s bold act of divine charity. When the divine heart makes such a sacrifice, how can human hearts fail to respond? Our people did respond to Christ’s loving embrace, and the evidence of that response is contained in our history, not the history told by statisticians, but our history as told by the European bards. If you read that story with the inner eye of the heart, you will see something of “great constancy; but how so ever, strange and admirable.”

I feel myself to be part of a long line of people who were constant and unyielding in their love of Him who died on the cross. I don’t see how we can part from those people and still be connected to the God who comes to human hearts. Obviously, the modern Europeans think I am wrong. The churchmen tell me that I must not feel connected to a particular people who loved much, they claim that I need only be connected, through their minds, to an abstract God who does *not* impart to human hearts, He only imparts to an elect group of human minds. And the secular counterparts of the churchmen tell me that the culture of those dear old folks of long ago was racist, sexist, and homophobic and that I need to be, I must be — or they will destroy me — connected to the culture of the true god, the sacred negro. And that is what is at the heart of all the political and ecclesiastical wars of the latter part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century and the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Now that even the fumes of a Christian culture have died out, will there be any Europeans who will fight to go back, not to the ‘Christian fumes’ culture of *Miracle on 34<sup>th</sup> Street* and *Leave It to Beaver* but to the culture of the antique Europeans? It doesn’t seem likely. But then it didn’t seem likely back then, in ancient times, that the European people would see beauty on the cross and embrace that cross. But they did.

There was a man who lived up the street from me in the town where I grew up, who was an alcoholic. He was a sad case, because he left behind a wife and five kids when he died prematurely of liver cancer. When he was given less than a month to live, he kept planning vacations and other activities that he envisioned taking place many, many months after his date with death. Everything was business as usual in Mr. \_\_\_\_\_’s mind, not because, “I’ve got to keep going right to the end,” but because he didn’t even want to consider his death. The conservatives have taken the same stance vis-à-vis reality as my neighbor of long ago. They spent a year prior to the presidential election urging Americans to vote against the liberals’ agenda by voting for Donald Trump. And the majority of Americans did just that; they voted for Donald Trump. But the liberals, following in the footsteps of Joseph Stalin who said, “It doesn’t matter how many people vote, only who counts them,” nullified the election of Donald Trump. What should be the reaction of the conservatives who urged us to vote our troubles away? They *should* tell us we should give up on the democratic process and look to such exemplars as Alfred the Great and Nathan Bedford Forrest. But of course, the conservative sons of Martha did not tell us to rise and ride. Instead they told us to sit tight and vote Republican. “Fifty-one percent of the American people are against LGBTQTA, and sixty-one percent are against transgender bathrooms,” the conservatives intone. “So vote Republican and all will be well.” All will *not* be well if we vote Republican. The only Republicans that can be elected are Republicans that do not challenge the status quo of liberalism. If any Republican shows himself to have a genuine desire to return to the fumes of a Christian culture – to combine Christianity with liberalism – they will be cast out of the political arena. The democratic way is the demon-cratic way; it must be discarded.

I only just learned – *mea culpa, mea culpa*, I did not do proper homage — that this past month has been LGBTQTA month. All of our major institutions have celebrated the beautiful wonder and magnificence of sexual perversion. In one of the two instances in the Old Testament in which God came down in person to condemn and warn mankind of their sins (the tower of Babylon was the other instance), He came down to earth to condemn the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. What do we think of a civilization that institutionalizes and lauds the depravities of Sodom and Gomorrah? Do we think that we can dialog with the rulers of that civilization? Do we think that we can form a community with the citizens of that anti-civilization who support such practices? What are the conservatives trying to conserve? Why do they bid us seek redemption from the devil through the demon-cratic process? Is it because they do not believe there is a devil who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls? If that is the case, then we must conclude they also do not believe in the devil’s antagonist who does not prowl about the world seeking our ruin but who asks us to let Him into our hearts so that He can impart to us that charity of honor, which is more than a match for the wickedness and snares of the devil.

Let us be clear about the linchpin of the liberals’ theocracy. It is the sacred negro. He is their savior, to whom they look to uphold all the evils that stem from their black mystery religion. Legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, feminism, transgenderism, and the systematic destruction of the white race are made possible through and in the worship of the sacred negro. And it has now become so blatant that a white European has to be in a moral coma, he has to be a mesmerized devotee of the sacred negro not to see the soul-killing satanic essence of the liberals’ faith. Witness the reverent call for silent devotion to the infamous George Floyd in the Senate, witness the call for prayers for Jacob Blake by the great ‘conservative’ Mike Pence at the Republican Convention, and watch the faithful, the white faithful, gather around the gigantic statue of George Floyd in Newark, New Jersey. Is such a religion worthy of our support? Can we bow to the sacred negro and still call ourselves Christians? Can we call ourselves human beings? No, we can’t, because no pagan has ever stooped as low as the European who bends his knee to the sacred negro. It is all or nothing for the white European. Either he will be a European, a Dream of the Rood Christian, or he will be the lowest form of life, he will be a liberal.

To be a liberal or not to be a liberal is the great question. The whites who voted for Trump are not all of the same ilk, they voted for him for a variety of reasons, but they all were dissatisfied with some aspects of liberalism. That is not enough. You can’t rearrange hell to make it more comfortable, more compatible for humanity, for the simple reason that there is no room for humanity in hell. Hell is the absence of humanity. The reason our churchmen have been of no use to us in the battle against the liberal Leviathan is because they have supported a gnostic Christianity, which denies the possibility of an incarnational culture. If there is no such thing as a heart of flesh, if all that is good emanates from the mind of God and is then

disseminated to the minds of a few great men, then all that is human, all that stems from the human heart, must be regarded as evil. But what about our people's loving response to Christ's incredible act of divine charity? Is that response an illusion that creatures such as I cling to in sinful defiance of the great men of intellect? There are so many evil manifestations of the liberals' absolute tyrannical control, with the tacit consent of the Christian clergy, of the European people. I recently read that a Christian organization, which professed to adhere to Biblical principles, was denied tax exempt status by the IRS. The reason for the denial was simple – the IRS said that since people who had Biblical principles voted Republican, anyone who professed such principles was not eligible for tax-exempt status. Everything seems to be going to hell so quickly now, but there has been only a façade of a real civilization for the past fifty years. Behind that façade was a satanic presence waiting to emerge, under the auspices of the sacred negro, and make life on this earth an extension of hell.

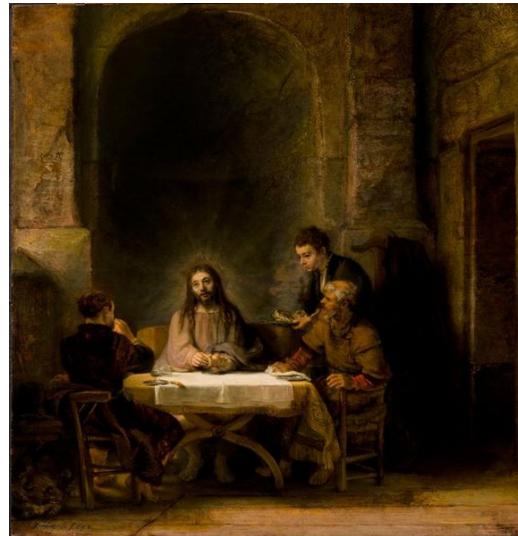
"Beauty is truth, truth beauty,—that is all ye know on earth, and all ye need to know," was Keats' assertion. But we still must decide what is beautiful. Keats saw beauty in a Grecian urn and the French Revolution. The modern Europeans see beauty in the sacred negro. And our churchmen see beauty in their syllogisms. I see something different. I see a civilization in which the penultimate of truth and beauty was the Savior who bled and died for us. That Christ is the grave where "buried love doth live" was the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. I do not see how we can forsake that faith for the liberals' mystery religion, which is grounded in their fervent faith in the sacred negro and the perversions that accompany that faith. What is truth, what is beauty? Christ is Truth, Christ is beauty. That was the faith of our people when they were a people. All the 'conservative' think tanks and 'conservative' political action groups cannot put European civilization back together again unless they embrace the Christ-centered culture of the condemned, 'racist' Europeans of long ago. That was our hope in ages past and our only hope in this age of decadence and desolation. My original question remains: When the Divine Heart makes such a sacrifice, how can human hearts fail to respond? +

# The Grace of the King

July 3, 2021

Categories: Charity, Christ the Hero, Negro worship

Tags: G. M. Trevelyan, Shakespeare



There shall be the song of angels, the delight of the blessed; there shall be the dear face of the Lord brighter than the sun for all the happy ones; there shall be the love of friends; life without death; a glad multitude of men; youth without age; the glory of the heavenly hosts; salvation without sorrow; rest without strife for those who did right; the glory of the blessed; day without darkness, radiant, full of splendor; gladness without griefs; peace henceforth without dissension between friends happy in heaven; love without enmity among the saints. There shall be neither hunger nor thirst there, sleep nor grievous sickness, nor the heat of the sun, nor cold nor care; but the band of the blessed, the most glorious of hosts, with the Lord of heaven shall ever enjoy there the grace of the King.

-[from "Christ," an old Anglo-Saxon poem](#)

---

I understand the mad-dog liberals. Their hatred for Jesus Christ and the people who once loved Him has placed them with Shylock, outside the ken of humanity:

*I am sorry for thee, thou art come to answer  
A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch,  
Uncapable of pity, void and empty  
From any dram of mercy.*

But I do not understand the News Max conservatives and the Breitbart conservatives. These people seem to have retained some “dram of mercy” in their souls, and yet they try to dialog with liberals who have no “dram of mercy.” Portia sees past Shylock’s formal protestations of “justice, justice,” to what is in his heart, the hatred of Jesus Christ and His people. And she, because she has become a stand-in for our Lord, does what is needful. She offers him a chance for mercy:

*Therefore, Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.*

Shylock does not repent, and he is forced to pay the consequences of his satanic opposition to Christ’s reign of charity:

*Tarry, Jew:  
It is enacted in the laws of Venice,  
If it be prov’d against an alien  
That by direct or indirect attempts  
He seek the life of any citizen,  
The party ‘gainst the which he doth contrive  
Shall seize one half his goods; the other half  
Comes to the privy coffer of the state;  
And the offender’s life lies in the mercy  
Of the Duke only, ‘gainst all other voice:  
In which predicament, I say, thou stand’st;  
For it appears, by manifest proceeding,  
That indirectly, and directly too,  
Thou hast contrived against the very life  
Of the defendant; and thou hast incur’d  
The danger formerly by me rehears’d.  
Down, therefore, and beg mercy of the Duke.*

-[Merchant of Venice](#)

It is not wrong to point out the history of the Jews’ opposition to Christ’s reign of charity. But we must see that the European liberals have become like unto the Shylockian Jews: they have become Christian apostates, who have no mercy or charitable impulses, not a dram; they have only a maniacal hatred for Jesus Christ and the people who once championed Him. Can we dialog with such creatures? Of course we can’t. And yet the conservatives bid us dialog with them. So, I repeat, I do not understand the conservatives.

Let me make a distinction between the unmen such as Romney and Pence and men like Trump. Romney and Pence said things that theoretically placed them in the moderate liberal-conservative camp, but then when they felt the political winds were shifting, they moved over to the mad-dog liberal camp. Their ilk we shall always have with us:

*Is like a villain with a smiling cheek,  
A goodly apple rotten at the heart.  
O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!*

Trump, to his credit, actually believed in a fusion of Christianity and liberalism. And when he obtained office, he remained true to his stated faith. Trump's faith is the same faith as the News Maxers' and the Breibarters' faith; it is not wholly incompatible with Christianity nor is it wholly incompatible with liberalism. And that is the rub. Our God is a jealous God. You can't be part Christian and part liberal. And the liberals' God, the sacred negro, is a jealous god; you can't retain even the fumes of a Christian culture if you want to have a place in Liberaldom. It seems as if the liberals and the moderate liberals should not be at odds. Don't they both support civil rights, economic prosperity, and the four freedoms? No, they do not. The mad-dog liberals do not want civil rights for the negro, they do not want equality. They want the negro as a God: all whites must worship the sacred negro. The conservatives are always trying to show the mad-dog liberals that they love Martin Luther King Jr. and that they are for the full enfranchisement of blacks. They are not 19<sup>th</sup> century Southerners nor are they 1950 segregationists. But that is not enough. The liberals and their black minions have even developed a new doublespeak for the worship of the sacred negro; that doublespeak is "equity." It is supposed to mean that when blacks have been suppressed for over one thousand years, it is not enough to make them equal, they must be *more* equal. That is right and fair, isn't it? "No, it isn't right and fair," the moderate liberals say. They stick to equality. But they fail to see the religious zeal behind the liberals' "equity." Equity means the worship of the sacred negro. You must reject equality and the enfranchisement of the negro if you really want to put an end to equity, which is the worship of the sacred negro and all the perversions that follow in the wake of that satanic religion. But it would be undemocratic to oppose the enfranchisement of the black race. It would place a man back with the evil empire, the land of Forrest and the pre-Civil War white Europeans of the South. Yes, it would. The old South was *not* an aberration that sprang from hell in the midst of Liberaldom, it was a land connected to His Europe. To be Southern, in the best sense of the word, was to be a Walter Scott European. The South was the last bastion of the code of the white men in North America. Equality and equity are one and the same; the mad-dog liberals have grasped that fact, the moderate liberals have not. Hence the moderate liberals blather on about their love for Jackie Robinson and Martin Luther King Jr. and do not understand why the liberals continue to hate them.

The result of a conservative leadership that does not understand the evil of liberalism, that wants to dialog with the devil, has been the massacre of the innocents. All the babies murdered in the womb had to die because the conservatives refused to see that you cannot dialog with liberals. The whites who are murdered in the streets by black barbarians, the whites who stormed the Capital unarmed on January 6<sup>th</sup> and are now being tortured in prison are all victims of a conservative leadership that bids their followers be non-violent and democratic in the face of a satanic enemy that is violent and totalitarian. The mixture of a messianic belief in the democratic process and a disbelief in the demonic origins of liberalism is a recipe for disaster we should no longer follow.

My efforts to understand the moderate liberals is still a work in process. During the days preceding the 2020 Presidential election and after the military coup that subverted the election, I went out of my way to speak to Trump supporters. Was there one common denominator among them that distinguished them from the mad-dog liberals and the antique Europeans? Yes, there was. The Trumpers, who are called conservatives by the mad-dog liberals, did not and do not believe that whites *cannot* be part of Liberaldom because they are irredeemably racist as the mad-dog liberals maintain. They do not use the n-word, they support civil rights, they honor Martin Luther King Jr., and they repudiate the racist Europeans of the past, so why do the liberals condemn them? They feel they are being treated unfairly by the liberals. And of course they are being treated unfairly, but the liberals are not committed to anything remotely resembling fairness. They are committed to their mystery religion which must have a savior, which is the sacred negro, and which must have a devil, which is the unenlightened white, most particularly the unenlightened white male. The Trumpers are forever on the defensive, trying to prove they are not racist, while the liberals are always on the offensive, asserting the impossibility of redemption for the unenlightened white. And 'enlightenment' is always defined as the complete acceptance of the evil of everything the antique Europeans considered to be virtuous – chivalry, charity, and pietas. And that is where the Trumpers break with the antique Europeans. The antique European wants to rise and ride in defense of Derek Chauvin, who is being crucified because he did what was chivalrous and honorable — he fought for the right against black barbarianism, while the Trumpers seek to distance themselves from his 'racism.' When the antique European hears of a woman in Greece who was raped by an Afghan and then raped by three Pakistanis to whom she went for aid, he does not want to *vote* against the rape of white Greek women, he wants to kill the perpetrators of the crime and drive the rest of their tribe out of Greece and off the face of the earth. The white grazers, the conservatives, are the only people on the face of the earth who will not act instinctively, according to their hearts, when their people are brutalized, tortured, and murdered by colored barbarians within and without their nation. Their "elective affections" are not with their own people because they do not believe they are a people. That is regrettably and tragically what separates the white grazers, the News Max conservatives and the Breibarters, from their Christian ancestors. And that separation is what keeps all those who follow the "conservatives" in the liberals' hell on earth. "And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us that would come from thence." — [Luke 16: 26](#)

Two authors, one English, one Southern, who were still writing in the early part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century but who personally adhered to and 'romanticized' the 19<sup>th</sup> century code of the white man, which was under attack in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, show us the transition from the whiteness of "bred in the bone Christianity" to the darkness of an intellectual affirmation of the Christian God, which is blended with an elective sympathy with the heathen gods of liberalism. Just as Solomon affirmed his faith in the God of Israel while paying homage to the heathen gods of his wives, so do the modern conservatives give lip service to the Savior while they give their hearts to the heathen gods of color. Page writes of a Christian gentleman who deliberately loses a horse race rather than risk injuring a man who has fallen off his horse during the race. A witness to the scene says that he couldn't have planned such a chivalrous act, it must have been by accident. "No," a wise observer replies, "It was no happy accident, his action was 'bred in the bone.'" And Thomas Nelson Page's European counterpart, P. C. Wren, concurs; he depicts the living faith, that charity of honor, which is bred in the bone of the white man, in his novel *Beggar's Horses*. The hero, "the bravest of the brave," who has killed in the name of "that charity of honor," is given the highest tribute that a Christian gentleman can give another man: "I'll take your word on it, Ganesh. For you're the best and whitest man God ever made." Yes, there is the gulf between our modern world, which the conservatives bid us accept, and the old world, Christian Europe, which we must cling to and champion. Whiteness is not evil in that old world, it is our earthly connection to His kingdom come, because it is through pietas, which is our whiteness, coupled with the charity of honor, that we remain connected to the heart of our Savior.

When our people bent their knees to Christ, they did so, not as the conquered but as the conquerors. They remain the only people, as an entire people, who adopted the religion of the people they conquered. Why? Because they saw that Odin and other hero gods were forerunners of the one true Hero God. The Savior did not ask them to renounce the code of heroes such as Gunnar:

*He that lavished rings in largesse,  
When the fight's red rain-drops fell,  
Bright of face, with heart-strings hardy,  
Hogni's father met his fate;  
Then his brow with helmet shrouding,  
Bearing battle-shield, he spake,  
'I will die the prop of battle,  
Sooner die than yield an inch,  
Yes, sooner die than yield an inch.'*

-from the Icelandic story in Burnt Njal, retold in Trevelyan's [History of England, Volume 1](#)

Christ called upon them to take the warriors' code to a higher level, to that charity of honor which He and He alone can impart to human hearts. The unyielding battle hymn of Hogni's father, Gunnar, became, once it was purified by Christ the Lord, the [Dream of the Rood](#). And the defense of all the values stemming from the Dream of the Rood, faith, hope, and charity, constitutes the code of the white man that sustained our people in all the Christian centuries preceding the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries. The democratic ethos, the American way, call it what you will, is no substitute for the code of the white man.

The Europeans' belief in fighting hero gods prepared them for their eventual faith in the one true Hero God:

*The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself.* — [History of England](#)

But something happened to the people who saw Christ as the Hero of heroes and the King of kings. That something was the rationalist dragon. When I was in Crete, I went through the cave that was supposed to have been the labyrinth that Theseus went through when he encountered the Minotaur. And since I believed that the myth was grounded in fact, I was thrilled, even though it was just in my imagination, to relive Theseus' heroic encounter with the Minotaur. What the great scholastics did — quite possibly they were well intentioned — was to eliminate that journey through the labyrinth of the human heart because they wanted to spare us the encounter with the Minotaur. But what if the Christian must encounter the Minotaur in order to get past the Minotaur to that other door, the door where buried love doth live? St. Thomas set barriers up, where reason and science were not supposed to go, lest those two entities should destroy faith. But what if reason and science will not stop, what if they will break the barrier behind which faith dwells and start to dissect faith until there is no faith left? What force on earth shall stop the dissection of God and man in the name of reason and science? The Christian hero will stop them, the man who, like St. Paul, has a heart connected to His divine heart. If we must eschew the labyrinth of the human heart because we might be killed by the Minotaur of evil passions, how will we have the good passion, how will we have the heart to defeat the liberals who are the great disectors of man and God?

Without the hero who is not afraid of the labyrinth of the human heart, we have only mad-dog liberals intent on destroying all things white and Christian through the unholy trinity of reason, the sacred negro, and science, and moderate liberals, the white grazers, who want to keep reason and science as the first and third part of the modern trinity while keeping Christ and the sacred negro as co-redemptrists. That can never be; we are not men of reason or science, we are men possessed with an interior poetic vision which sees the God above reason and science. And such men do not do homage to the sacred negro, they see only one God, the heart of hearts, and the one True Hero God. When white men believe in their whiteness, in that charity of honor which connects them to the Savior, the liberals' day will end. Until that re-ensoulment of the white man occurs, Satan, through negro-worshipping liberalism, will rule what was once the green and pleasant land called Christian Europe. +

# Wrought by the Devil

July 10, 2021

Categories: Democracy, Jacobinism, Liberalism, Negro worship, Religion of Satan

Tags: Edmund Burke, St. Paul



"Antioch, farewell! For wisdom sees, those men  
Blush not in actions blacker than the night  
Will shun no course to keep them from the light."

-Pericles, Prince of Tyre

---

From the dunkest pit of hell Biden comes forth to instruct the world, according to the dictates of his master, the archangel Lucifer. But tyrannicide is not an option, because Biden represents a cabal that is legion. His life is safe because he is merely a spokesperson for that legion. If he disappears tomorrow, another member of the legion from hell will assume his place. No government official can say, "a personality dwells here," because there is no humanity in liberalism; the liberals are unmen who have given their souls to Satan.

Biden recently spoke to some of his denizens and pulled out a card on what was (he claimed) the death toll of the coronavirus pandemic. He had the satanic temerity to say his heart bled for the 600,000+ victims of the illness! This from the man who was a member of the liberal cabal that was unalterably opposed to any restrictions on trade or traffic with communist China. This from the man who was a member of the cabal that did everything they could to restrict the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug because Trump had suggested it could help in the treatment of the disease. Whatever is the actual number of deaths from COVID-19, is there any doubt that Biden and his liberal partners in Satanism deliberately, with malice aforethought, wanted to kill as many Americans as possible with the virus in order to stop Trump from winning re-election? No, there is no doubt. And yet the bloody monstrosity, a creature from hell, stands before the American people and claims he weeps over the people he helped to murder. One is reminded of the carpenter in Lewis Carroll's tale who weeps over the oysters he has just eaten. And that is all actual humans are to the liberals: something to be eaten by the liberal Leviathan.[\(1\)](#)

What Burke said about our elective affections being an infallible indication of what was in our hearts was and is true. My elective affections are with the Dream of the Rood Christians of Old Europe. Outside of my own family and a few other men and women, whom I only know through the internet, I do not know any Dream of the Rood Christians. But I still retain a certain affection for those in the moderate liberal camp who have not abandoned all the values stemming from the Dream of the Rood culture. That is where I break with the neo-pagans who see no difference between Trump and Biden, and some of whom even prefer Biden. Trump and his followers had and have more than just a "dram of mercy" in their souls, and Biden and the creatures that voted for him have no "dram of mercy" in their souls. How can a Christian European be indifferent to the contrast? The blended Christianity of Trump makes him blind to the satanic essence of liberalism, it makes him weak on so many issues, such as negro worship and the deification of the unrepentant Jew, but that dram of mercy in his soul also made him try to actually mitigate the effects of the coronavirus, to oppose the communist Chinese, to help Americans maintain their jobs, and to keep our Southern border under control. Those are not little things that a Christian should treat with an Olympian, philosophical indifference.

All that having been said in defense of Trump and his followers, the sad fact remains that the fusion of Christianity and liberalism, which is the essence of Trump's movement, results in the triumph of Satan. Why? As oft this stage we have shown – Christ cannot be blended and still be the Son of the living God. Christ cannot reach our hearts if He is a co-redempstorist forever united to the sacred negro, a subordinate God to the nation state of Israel, or an end product of a syllogism. He must stand alone as the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords. We who are about to die need the unblended suffering Servant who has redeemed us from sin and death.

After the death of Robespierre, there was a large contingent of moderate English liberals who thought that an honorable man could make peace with Republican France. Burke pointed out to those moderate liberals that every single member of the Directory had signed on to the death of the King. He was adamant in his continued opposition to the spirit of liberty, equality, and fraternity that was destined, if unchecked, to destroy all of Christian Europe. Of course it was unchecked and it did destroy Christian Europe. And America? The framers of our Constitution, Franklin, Madison, and Jefferson, were religious atheists, and our great military hero, George Washington, rallied the troops by quoting from the most pernicious, evil European man who ever walked the earth – Thomas Paine. When the South rebelled against American Jacobinism, the Southerners claimed, "We did not sign on for this." The modern Jacobins said, "Yes, you did." And the Northern Jacobins were right. Negro worship is implicit in any nation that is founded on the proposition that nature and nature's god shall rule. For what is nature, in the propositional sense? It is man's reason, it is Thomas Paine's logic, which preaches that Christ be not risen and the natural savage is our God. The South had no Christian King, no Alfred, so the South lost the war. They only held the enemy at bay when they had a fighting Monarch, Nathan Bedford Forrest. We are a hierarchically endowed people – "I serve the King, and the King serves Christ," must be our battle cry.

The moderate liberals in Burke's England were like unto the Trumpers; they were – and the Trumpers are – Origenists, who believe in the conversion of the devil:

*The October Politician is so full of charity and good nature, that he supposes, that those very robbers and murderers themselves are in a course of amelioration; on what ground I cannot conceive, except on the long practice of every crime, and by its complete success. He is an Origenist, and believes in the conversion of the Devil. All that runs in the place of blood in his veins, is nothing but the milk of human kindness. He is as soft as a curd, though, as a politician, he might be supposed to be made of sterner stuff. He supposes (to use his own expression) "that the salutary truths which he inculcates, are making their way into their bosoms." Their bosom is a rock of granite, on which falsehood has long since built her strong hold. Poor Truth has had a hard work of it with her little pickaxe. Nothing but gunpowder will do. – [Letters on a Regicide Peace](#)*

It is worth noting that Origen, the theologian who believed, contrary to the Gospel, that the devil could be converted, emasculated himself. Isn't that what our moderate liberals have done? Haven't they spiritually emasculated themselves before the sacred negro? Trump, an alpha male in so many respects, would not act during the summer of 2020 as the violence in the streets escalated. And why didn't he act? He didn't act because Antifa used Black Lives Matter as their shield. The murderer of Aaron Danielson was killed because he stepped away from his black shields, while all other Antifaers, who kept their sacred shields, rioted and murdered with impunity. Some Democratic governors who defunded their police forces are now making

some efforts to refund their police, and the moderate conservatives are applauding their efforts, albeit with a few, “I told you so” thrown in. But the amount of police and funds is not the central issue. You can increase the police force tenfold in numbers and funds, but that will not stop our cities and towns from becoming crime-ridden hell holes. It is not numbers and money that we need. You could cut every police force in half, in terms of numbers and money, and still put a major dent in violent crime if you empowered your police departments to fight, to actually fight, against black barbarians. So long as white policemen have been spiritually neutered, so long as they are trained to believe that crime is not crime if it is done by the sacred negroes, you will not have any police forces, you will have servants of the sacred negro who are hired to keep white citizens from defending themselves. Look what six black jurors and six white jurors did to Derek Chauvin. They sentenced him to a lifetime crucifixion because he took action against a black criminal. If you believe in the salvation of the devil, then you will never fight the devil’s own, the liberals and their colored gods.

The moderate liberals, who do not believe that the liberals are the devil’s own, have “nothing but the milk of human kindness” in their hearts when it comes to the sacred negroes and the mad-dog liberals, but they have made throwing their own people to the wolves a ‘conservative’ tradition. The police officers who stopped Jacob Blake from harming black children were thrown to the wolves, Derek Chauvin who arrested a drug-soaked criminal that died of a heart attack while resisting arrest, was thrown to the wolves, and every white man or woman who even suggests, let alone acts in self-defense, that whites should not commit racial suicide is thrown to the wolves, or should I say, the hellhounds of Liberalism. Conservative Origenists cannot lead a counterrevolution, but they can lead a mass suicide movement based on their belief that a man can be saved by the devil once he rejects the extremism of white pietas.

Let me offer a counter-proposal to the moderate-liberals’ proposal that we can convert the devil if we are civil, polite, and rational. Let me state the obvious – the devil hates Christ because the devil is evil and Christ is good. The devil cannot be redeemed. We are called, as Christians, to hate the devil and all of his works. And what is the proudest work of the devil? It is the liberals; the devil cannot create a human being, but he can refashion what was wrought by God into something so hideous, so evil, that it becomes the work of the devil. Burke put it quite well when he wrote that the Jacobins could not strike God out of heaven, but they could obscure Him from our sight by “defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.” The major indictment of modern Liberalism, and most particularly of our own “land of liberty,” is that the modern liberals have gone further than any people at any time in history in blotting out the image of God in man. And the European people were once the people who championed the image of God in man in defiance of the heathen world. “Oh, what a falling off was there.” Now, a Christian of the old stock must champion Christ in defiance of the new Europe, a post-Christian Europe, infinitely worse than any heathen nation ever was. And the moderate liberals tell us that we can redeem such a nation if we support civil rights, free enterprise, and the salvation of the devil. For shame, for shame, eternal shame if we make such a compromise with the devil and his minions.

Western civilization was founded on the belief that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. Modern Europe, the Europe we see before our eyes today, was founded on the belief that Christ be not risen, He is not the Son of the Living God. That is why Burke labored so manfully to warn us about the French Revolution. The civil wars between rival claimants to Christian thrones were very sad affairs, but such wars did not constitute a change in the ruling faith of the nations involved in the civil wars. The French Revolution did constitute a change from Christ is risen to Christ be not risen. And in our anti-nation Thomas Paine’s hatred of Christianity was institutionalized through the seductive lure of, “you can keep your religion if it remains a private thing, but the serious business of our nation is the promotion of liberty, equality, and fraternity, independent of that great imposter, Jesus Christ.”

St. Paul told the Jews, with great sadness because they were his people, that he would take his message, that Christ was the Son of the living God, to the Gentiles and they would hear him. And our people did hear him. God bless them for it. But what has happened to the European people? Why have they hardened their hearts, like the stiff-necked Jews that St. Paul condemned, against the living God? Let us look to [Acts 28: 26-29](#) for the answer to that question:

*Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.*

St. Paul told the Jews and he tells us that our understanding of God comes from the heart: “and understand with their hearts, and should be converted, and I should heal them.” The medieval scholastics and the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, who bid us understand God with our minds while eschewing our heart’s passions because those passions are evil, left us bereft of our shield against the wickedness and snares of the devil, who can manipulate our reason to believe his lies. Our shield and strength was and is a heart connected to His heart, through and in our people who saw, in their hearts, the Word made flesh, and who believed in their hearts.

Most of the giants of religious atheism, Rousseau, Paine, Darwin, Freud, and Marx, were products of the 18<sup>th</sup> and 19<sup>th</sup> centuries. The 20<sup>th</sup> century liberals such as Shaw and Einstein merely parroted their atheist forefathers. We, the Europeans of the 20<sup>th</sup> century and the 21<sup>st</sup> century, inherited either the mad-dog liberalism of the religious atheists or the moderate liberalism of the English moderates whom Burke fought against. My parents were moderate liberals and their moderate liberalism, which they bequeathed to me and my siblings, turned my sister into a mad-dog liberal. There is free will; my sister was sent to a private ‘religious’ college where she was exposed to intellectual Christianity as a buttress against atheism. But she went the way of mad-dog liberalism for the same reason her contemporaries went over to mad-dog liberalism: Intellectual Christianity did not touch her heart, but the wickedness and snares of the devil did touch her heart. I pray for her conversion while condemning, with all my heart, her evil religion that is devoid of all mercy and all charity. Liberalism is the synthesis of all evil; we cannot be demur and moderate in the face of that evil. Is there any heart left in the bowels of what was once Christendom who hates the image of the beast in man culture of Satan enough to rise and ride in defense of His Europe? In one of his Christian hymns, the singer Glen Campbell asks, referencing his own death, “Who will sing one song for me?” Every time I hear that song, I reply, “I will.” And that is all we can do for our Lord when He asks us who shall stand with Him in the last great battle: “I will,” is our answer, and then we will rise and ride in defense of Christ’s Europe. +

---

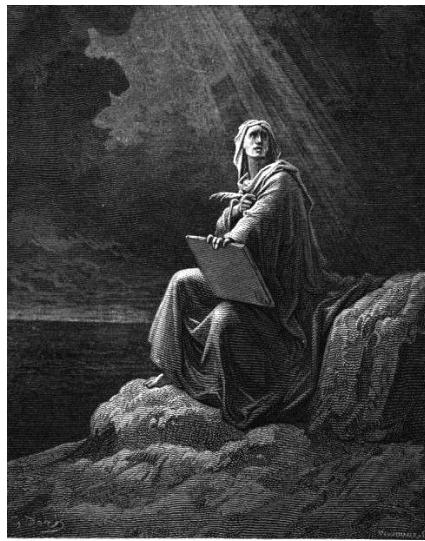
(1) Burke and Taine added cannibalism to the sins of the Jacobins because they drank the blood of the guillotined aristocrats. So do our modern Jacobins consume the blood of aborted babies in facial creams and beauty products while feasting, through their black gods, on the blood of slaughtered whites.

# The Seal of the Living God

July 17, 2021

Categories: Europe as the Christ-Bearer, Faithful hearts, Religion of Satan

Tags: St. John



And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof? And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. —*Revelations 5: 1-5*

---

There was, even in the Christian centuries (pre-twentieth century) of the European people, differences between Christian sects regarding the importance of the Bible. Still, I do not think an objective historian would deny that the Bible was the most influential book in Western civilization prior to the 20<sup>th</sup> century. But during all the Christian centuries of Europe, a different book, an underground book, was being written. This book was never put into one printed volume, but it exists as an ongoing work in progress, which is being written, under Satan's direction, by men and women who hate the living God, whose story was imparted to us in that other book, the Holy Bible.

The beginning of the Book of Liberalism is contained in the Old and New Testaments. There we see Adam and Eve's rebellion, instigated by Satan, their punishment, and the eventual redemption of mankind through Jesus Christ. And in the Pharisees' hatred of Jesus Christ we see liberalism writ large. The subsequent history of the European people consists of the conflict between the Europeans who took the Word of God into their hearts and acted according to that faith within, and the Europeans who rejected that faith and took Satan into their hearts. That second story, the story of Satan's people, is the story that has gained the upper hand in this, the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the century of Satan.

It should be noted, but it has not been noted by the conservative-moderate liberals, that the liberals have turned another page in the Book of Liberalism and started a new chapter. In the last chapter, the liberals used democracy to conceal their Satanism. But in the new chapter, which is part of Satan's work in progress, the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage their Satanism. After years and years of liberal dominance in church and academy, the liberals feel that the white Europeans will not resist naked force. They think, and it seems like their assessment is correct, that they can impose their will upon a people who have no stomach for a fight to the death with the liberals and all the powers of hell. The capitulation of the European people to the liberals is a worldwide phenomenon, but it is particularly manifest in the United States, which had less of a European tradition to start with. What are some of the signs of the new chapter in the Book of Liberalism? Let's turn the page from the 'Christian fumes' culture that was surviving on the fringes of Satandom to the new chapter in which the 'Christian fumes' culture has been eradicated.

The COVID-19 "crisis" was a landmark event that showcased the liberals' new chapter, "The End of the Christian Fumes Culture." In the previous chapter of the book of Satan, the liberals were not so blatant about their desire to kill white people. But in the new chapter, they murdered whites by creating a deadly disease, spreading a deadly disease, thwarting a cure for the deadly disease, and using the deadly disease to shut down the economy in order to destroy the white-working man. The liberals did not care about angering whites because they knew the moderate liberals in church and state would advise the whites to be nonviolent and to trust in the democratic process. They, of course, were right.

The second sign of the new chapter was the fraudulent election. The liberals did not even do a good job, they were quite transparent when they rigged the election. But they had the backing of the Supreme Court, which is the supremely satanic Court, and they once again had the backing of the moderate liberals who were quick to condemn anyone who challenged the fraudulent election. Which brings us to another sign of the new chapter of liberalism – the throwing of all whites who still want the 'fumes of Christianity' culture to the wolves.

The January 6<sup>th</sup> protestors were thrown to the wolves because they were "violent." How charging unarmed against armed police constitutes "violence" is unclear to me, but nevertheless they were "violent," so the moderate liberals, who want to remain in the Book of Liberalism and make that book a more moderate, less satanic book, called the protestors violent and threw them to the wolves of Liberaldom. And Trump himself was thrown to the wolves of Liberaldom by Amy 'The Liberal' Barrett, Brett 'The Coward' Kavanaugh, and the other sycophants of liberalism on the supremely satanic Supreme Court. Likewise, Pence and his Republican partners in crime, who make the Cowardly Lion look like a hero, threw Trump to the wolves in order to ensure that they would not be thrown out of the book of life, which is, in their warped, sick minds, the Book of Liberalism.

On page 561 in the Book of Liberalism, it says, "The European people will now proceed into the future without leaving a place for the whites who want to live in the 'Christian fumes' culture of the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century." Trump wanted to turn back to page 550, which read, "We must allow for a few Christian fumes lest we stir up the few remaining die-hard Europeans." That was Trump's huge mistake. You can't turn back the pages of Satan's Book of Liberalism. The preceding chapter, the 'Christian Fumes' chapter, is closed. We must leave Satan's book entirely or else we will become part of Satan's story and be, "lost, lost, lost." We needn't, if we see with the interior eye, wait until the final chapter of Satan's work in progress is written. We know how it ends, it ends in hell.

The apostle John, when he was a prisoner on the Isle of Patmos, was vouchsafed a vision of the living God that we ignore at our peril. Christ Himself tells John that, "I am he that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore. Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death." That is how Christ's book ends: He comforts the apostle John, who remained at the foot of the cross when all the others fled. Christ tells John not to despair because, "the lion of the tribe of Judah" can and shall open the book of the seven seals. The Christian European has now been isolated on his own spiritual Isle of Patmos; every cultural remnant of Christian Europe has been taken away from him. But there is St. John's vision of the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world. Do we want to be part of that story which ends with the triumph of the God of love and mercy? Or do we want to be part of the devil's work in progress? How does his story end? The devil's story ends in hell, a hell where there is no love, no mercy, and no humanity; there are only beasts that "prey upon each other like monsters from the deep." Isn't that hell already upon us? Under the mantle of Black Lives Matter every aspect of the European people's lives have been Satanized. The COVID-19 "crisis" is just the beginning of the new chapter of Satan's story. He has ordered his minions to proceed with the final crackdown; through "Black Lives Matter" he intends to completely eliminate the image of God in man.

Toward the end of his life, Francois Mauriac explained why he had spent a lifetime writing novels when so many literary critics told him his novels were worthless. He said that he felt, despite so many contrary opinions, that he was called by God to write his novels. I feel the same way about my writing; I feel that I have been called by God to bear witness to the 'image

of God in man' culture of the antique Europeans. If I am wrong, our Lord will tell me so at the Last Judgement. But until that time, I must, like Posthumus in Cymbeline, follow that inner vision.

The 'image of God in man' culture is Rembrandt, it is Handel, it is Shakespeare, it is Dickens, it is Scott, but it so much more. It is my great uncle, a coal miner, singing, "All Through the Night," at a family reunion, it is millions and millions of such "simple fools" who kept faith with the "Lamb of God." What is the end result of our lives if we keep faith with that 'image of God in man' culture that Satan and his liberal minions are so determined to eradicate from the face of the earth? We will see, like St. John who remained steadfast at the foot of the cross, a vision of the living God who broke the seal of the book of the seven seals. We must, now that we have been left on our own Isle of Patmos, stay with that vision even as Satan, through Black Lives Matter, attempts to tear the living God from our hearts.

I have more than just a little affection for those men and women, such as Trump and his supporters, who want to hold onto the Christian fumes culture of the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century. But we must see that such a fusion of liberalism and Christianity is not possible. We must see liberalism for what it is – the ongoing story of Satan's counter-culture to Christian Europe, his 'image of the beast in man' culture. So long as 'conservative' means slightly to the right of the mad-dog liberals, so long as conservatives only want to be part of Liberalism by claiming, "We are not racist, we do not support racist Europe" — which means they are opposed to white pietas and the 'image of God in man' culture that was formed by white pietas — the 'conservatives' will be overwhelmed by the mad-dog liberals and they will become part of Satan's story.

The "Black Lives Matter" chapter of Satan's book of death is intended to be the last chapter in his book. Once Black Lives Matter is triumphant, once all whites bow down to the image of the beast, Satan will have completely obliterated God's image in man. All whites will sing the litany, "We are not racist, we are not violent." And there will be more tests of white subservience. "All must be vaccinated" will only be the start. Everything evil will be 'mandatory' and everything good will be proscribed. Will there be any resistance to the final satanic advance of liberalism? It doesn't seem like there will be any resistance, but we do not know what can happen when our interior eyes are focused on the Christ of Old Europe. Quite possibly the same elder who spoke to John will speak to us: "Weep not; see, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, He who came from David, has won the right to open the book and its seven seals." Why should we beg, "We are not racist," for a place in Satan's book when we can see what John saw and be comforted as John was, by the Lamb of God? That is our consummation, that is what we must devoutly wish for. Let us walk out of Satan's work in progress into the Christ story; let us be, once again, the people who saw a great light.

Over 70 million people, most of whom were white, voted for Trump. That means over 70 million people were dissatisfied with some aspects of liberalism. I'm sure that less than 1% of those 70 million want, as I do, a return to Christian Europe while the rest still believe in most of the liberals' agenda. But there's the rub – the liberals will no longer brook any opposition. No one will be allowed to accept 'most' of the liberals' agenda; the liberals must have, in the final chapter of liberalism, complete obedience. So from their perspective, they need to eliminate 70 million people. And they will not use gentle persuasion. No life is safe so long as Black Lives Matter is the dominant religion of the white race. We can rally around the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, or we can crawl on our bellies in front of the sacred negro. Is there any moral beauty in the liberals' faith? Is there any charity, mercy, or love? Then why must we adhere to the liberals' faith and forsake our ancient faith? Yes, we have been exiled to Patmos, but Patmos is our salvation, for it is there that we shall see, if we seek Him in our hearts, the Lamb of God who broke the seal on the book of the seven seals and revealed to us a vision of God's love that will defeat Satan and his Black Lives Matter kingdom of eternal night. +



"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life..."

# Community of the Blood

July 24, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Classical liberalism, Europeans and Christ, Faithful hearts

Tags: Charles Dickens, Shakespeare, Stark Young



O momentary grace of mortal men,  
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!  
Who builds his hope in air of your good looks  
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,  
Ready, with every nod, to tumble down  
Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*-Richard the Third*

---

Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. — [John 8: 43-45](#)

---

The moderate-liberal Ann Coulter, with the emphasis on liberal, recently included in her criticism of Black Lives Matter a condemnation of the ‘racists’ of the Old South. Coulter’s attempt to maneuver away from the extreme left while pandering to a non-existent moderate left by condemning the ‘racist’ Europeans of Christian Europe is all too typical of the moderate-liberals who pollute the print and internet mediums with their liberal conservatism. What are the moderate liberals trying to conserve? They want to conserve a liberalism that is three-quarters of the way to hell. But at the vital center of liberalism is Satan. He doesn’t want three-quarters of what was once Christian Europe, he wants it all. And he shall get it all if the only resistance to his reign is conservatives who want to stay slightly to the right of the mad-dog liberals as they progress to that final leap off the cliff with the swine. The first wave of swine plunging off the cliff will be the mad-dog liberals, and the second contingent will be the conservatives who will squeal out, “We are not racist,” as they plunge into oblivion right behind their swinish brethren, the mad-dog liberals.

The moderate-liberals are continually appealing to some unknown God that is rational, democratic, and a civil rights advocate. They want that God to intervene in human affairs and explain to the mad-dog liberals that their moderate brethren are not racist, they are not irrational, and they are not against science. Then, the unknown God will place the mad-dog liberals in subordinate positions to the oh-so-smart and oh-so-non-racist moderate liberals, and all will be well. Why don’t the moderate liberals, many of whom profess to be Christian, try to please a God who made Himself known to us, who took flesh and dwelt among us, rather than an unknown God who supports liberalism? The answer to that question can be found in an article by Allen Tate in which Tate made an analysis of the sickness of the West and decided, quite correctly, that rationalism was the root cause of the decline of Western civilization. But then Tate went on to conclude that what rationalism had caused, the demise of Western civilization, rationalism could cure. That is a conclusion that was penned in hell. Rationalism is a spiritual sickness, it cannot be cured by another, stronger dose of rationalism any more than cancer can be cured by injecting more cancer cells into the infected, diseased area of the body.

The moderate liberals refuse to accept what Burke said about liberalism –“The first liberal was the devil.” They, like Adam and Eve, like the mad-dog liberals, have succumbed to, “Ye shall be as gods.” If the moderate-liberals accepted Burke’s assessment of liberalism, that it is from the devil, they would have to forsake their rationalism, they would have to rely on a heart connected to His heart in order to overcome the wickedness and snares of the devil. “No,” the moderate liberals proclaim: “We propose and we dispose, let God stay away from the affairs of men.” But St. Paul tells us that, “Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.” If we do not abhor liberalism because within Liberaldom are the political talk shows in which we can dazzle the world with our good, rational solutions to the problems caused by bad rationalism, and such punditry is worth the world to our egos, then we will not serve the good, we will serve Satan.

I am struck, whenever I read St. Paul, how deeply St. Paul’s Christ-imbued vision of existence penetrated the heart and mind of Edmund Burke. St. Paul’s injunction that we should, “Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good,” was echoed many years later by Edmund Burke when he enjoins his countrymen to oppose the Jacobins: “They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.” The moderate liberals do not hate liberalism, they do not abhor evil, but they do hate the antique Europeans and their Christ-centered civilization — they hate “that which is good.” Coulter’s hatred of the Christian South lays bare the rotten core of what passes for conservatism. So, I ask again, if you are not striving to conserve that which is good, because that which is good is deemed ‘racist,’ then what are you striving to conserve? The ‘conservatives’ are striving to conserve a liberalism that stops just short of going off the cliff with the swine. But that is not possible, because the swine are possessed by the devil. Only the Christ of old Europe, who was the Christ of the Southern people who took European civilization to these shores, can stop the European people’s plunge off the cliff of liberalism. But we must believe that liberalism is of the devil. If we don’t, we shall not call on Him who saves, and we will be damned.

Once everything Satanic has been institutionalized in a nation, a European Christian cannot be conservative, he must be a counter-revolutionary. Need I go through the list of institutionalized perversions? Legalized abortion, sodomy, feminism, transgenderism have all been institutionalized under the mantle of the liberals’ one true God, the sacred negro. You can’t plead for a milder, gentler form of negro-worship than the type of worship advocated by Black Lives Matter. Once you have accepted the premise that liberalism is good, you must accept whatever the liberals’ savior commands. The black gods have no mercy, not a dram; if Coulter and her ilk want liberalism, then they must accept Black Lives Matter.

If we turn from the vomit of liberalism, be it moderate or mad-dog, we can see another way to face existence. Before his son Edward went off to war to face off against the Jacobins of the North, Hugh McGee gave his son the essence of his faith:

*“The way I’ve been obliged to see it is this: our ideas and instincts work upon our memory of these people who have lived before us, and so they take on some clarity of outline. It’s not to our credit to think we began today, and it’s not to our glory to think we end today. All through time we keep coming in to the shore like waves—like waves. You stick to your blood, son; there’s a certain fierceness in blood that can bind you up with a long community of life.”*

*“I never forget you, Father,” Edward said.*

"Your father wouldn't know what the world was without that. And think with passion, it's the only kind of thought that's worth anything."

### So Red the Rose

The South had its American Exceptionalists — Thomas Jefferson was the worst — but the South that had to be destroyed was the South that was rooted in European civilization, a civilization that had a blood tie with the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. A propositional faith and a propositional nation can be discarded quite easily for a new propositional faith and a new propositional nation, but a blood tie is forever. The willingness with which ‘conservatives’ denounce their blood ties to old Europe, of which the Old South was an exemplar, shows their willingness to make peace with the devil. Which brings us back to Origen and his belief in the conversion of the devil. Can such things be? Is it only necessary that we affirm God, even if that God is the devil?

I agree with Walter Scott who said that the true historians are the bards. Homer was the great historian of the ancient Greeks just as the anonymous bard who wrote the Dream of the Rood, William Shakespeare, Charles Dickens, and Walter Scott himself were and are the historians of old Europe. And in our history as a people there is a recurring theme: The European people are constantly reenacting the Christ story. The villains imitate the Jews who crucified our Lord; the cowardly individuals who ultimately side with the Christ-haters, the Pontius Pilates of the world, are present as well — they are called ‘conservatives.’ And then there are the Christian heroes who follow in His train. There is an incredible scene in Charles Dickens’ Nicholas Nickleby in which the sublime beauty of a Christ-imbued hero comes to the forefront and gives us a glimpse of “that charity of honor.” Unable to watch the continual torture and degradation of a helpless, wretched man-child at the hands of the sadistic schoolmaster, Wackford Squeers, against his worldly, material interests, Nicholas steps forward and stops the torture by beating the schoolmaster. Later, when Nicholas is alone with the wretched Smike as his companion on a road bound to nowhere, the wretched outcast says to Nicholas Nickleby, “You are my home.” Yes, “In my house are many mansions.” The European, the Dream of the Rood European, the pre-Civil War Southern European, and every European who has not bent his knee to the liberals and the liberals’ gods, has only one home. Wherever His mercy and His charity dwells is “home” for the European. We are part of a community that goes all the way back to the stable in Bethlehem. If we sever our connection to that community, we are worse than nothing, we are the people who have chosen to follow Satan. And that terrible betrayal cannot be glossed over by a pathetic, blasphemous attempt to blend Satan and Christ in one universalist, Babylon state consecrated to the sacred negro.

In Shakespeare’s Richard III, Buckingham has lied, cheated, and murdered to help Richard obtain the crown. But when he balks at killing the two young princes, the true heirs to the throne, Richard turns on his hitherto loyal lieutenant:

*I will converse with iron-witted fools  
And unrespective boys; none are for me  
That look into me with considerate eyes.  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.*

The moderate-liberals must not waver, they must not stop at civil rights, they must go on to the worship of the sacred negro; they must not stop at first trimester abortions and no federal funding for abortions, there must be abortion-on-demand and federal funding; they must not stop at the condemnation of the racist Europeans of the past, they must consent to the extermination of all whites as a reparation for the past. And on it goes. Will the moderate liberals suffer the fate of Buckingham? I don’t think the pundits such as Coulter and the News Maxers will; they will shift ground and join the mad-dog liberals. It is the unwashed whites in the rank and file, like the individuals who charged the Capitol on January 6th, who will be exterminated. Those people still, and that is truly remarkable in this day and age, retain some heartfelt beliefs that run counter to liberalism. And unlike the conservative pundits, they are not about to abandon their beliefs because the principalities and powers of this world are against them. So they did what the conservative pundits were too ‘wise’ to do, they attacked the liberal Leviathan armed only with a fierce hatred of liberal tyranny and a love for the last remnants of grace in a country committed to Satan.<sup>(1)</sup>

The COVID-19 vaccine is now killing more people than COVID-19, and there are more and more reports that the vaccine itself does not prevent COVID-19. Yet we are inundated with threats from the vaccine police: “You must be vaccinated.” Isn’t it obvious that the COVID-19 crisis is just the start of an escalating series of liberal-manufactured crises that will be used to ensure that Satan shall rule in perpetuity over the European people? I do not deny that COVID-19 exists. Like most viruses it hits some people harder than others. I have known people who threw it off quite easily and others who had to be hospitalized because of the illness. But the liberals are not interested in ending COVID-19, they are only interested in using the virus to further terrorize the European people. To what end? To consolidate their power, which is the power of Satan, over the European people.

The most damning indictment that can be made against the moderate liberals is that they do not hate the mad-dog liberals. They do not look at what the mad-dog liberals have wrought and “cry havoc and let loose the dogs of war.” Eventually they will be completely absorbed by the mad-dog liberals, and they will, “having entered hell, feel no flame,” because they will have become unmen without any soul to call their own. The ‘progress’ of liberalism is about desoulement. If a man has achieved desoulement, if he has severed his blood ties to that community of souls connected to the Suffering Servant, he can rest content with all things satanic, and he will seek to conserve Satandom so long as Satan agrees to couch his evil in high-sounding phrases such as ‘liberty, equality, and fraternity,’ which are all covered under the sacred canopy of “Black Lives Matter.” What good does it do a man to gain the whole world if he loses his soul? “What soul?” the modern European responds. “Show me the soul.” I can’t put the soul in a computer printout, but I can point you to that long blood line of Europeans who believed in the Word Made Flesh. Let us cleave unto them and kneel before Him who is our home. +

---

(1) When Satan rules a nation, through the sacred negro, it is not possible to remain Christian and still stay connected to modern Europe. But the great unwashed whites are not going to seek out that which has been lost, in dusty, discredited tomes of ancient lore. Modernity is their world, and they must make the best of it, so when a Trump comes along, a man who doesn’t want them, the despised white under-class, to be exterminated, they cling to him. I honor Trump for showing concern for the downtrodden whites and I honor them for at least showing some dissatisfaction with liberalism. My people are the antique Europeans, but I still have that in my heart which is sorry yet for the persecuted and condemned white grazers who are more sinned against than sinning. The great washed, the conservative pundits, will survive because they will keep shifting their ground, they will never take their stand. But the great unwashed, who are my people to the extent I have any people left, will not be able to shift their ground, because they will be unable to swallow liberalism whole. As a consequence, they will be exterminated. It is up to the antique European, the man connected to His Europe, to say, “Stop! This must not go on!”

# A Blood Faith is Forever

July 31, 2021

Categories: Liberalism, Negro worship, Rationalism, Scientism

Tags: Charles Dickens, Thomas Nelson Page



The South had its American Exceptionalists — Thomas Jefferson was the worst — but the South that had to be destroyed was the South that was rooted in European civilization, a civilization that had a blood tie with the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. A propositional faith and a propositional nation can be discarded quite easily for a new propositional faith and a new propositional nation, but a blood tie is forever. The willingness with which ‘conservatives’ denounce their blood ties to old Europe, of which the Old South was an exemplar, shows their willingness to make peace with the devil. Which brings us back to Origen and his belief in the conversion of the devil. — CWNY

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth. —*Under the Crust*

---

When a nation, such as the United States of America, which is really a non-nation, has institutionalized blasphemy against the living God, it’s hard to call any one liberal overlord the most blasphemous liberal overlord of them all, but when one of the Pope-essa of Liberaldom, Mika Brzezinski, steps forward and says that anyone who does not get vaccinated is not Christian, then I think we must give the title, Most Blasphemous of Them All, to Mika Brzezinski.

Has Mika the liberal Pope-essa, ever, in her long career as a blasphemer, supported anything Christian? No, she has not. In point of fact, and I use the word ‘fact’ because the liberals claim to love facts, she has consistently supported everything that is satanic — Black Lives Matter, Hillary Clinton, Joe Biden, sodomy, legalized abortion, transgenderism, the extermination of the white race, and the list goes on and on. It is clear whom Mika serves: she serves the devil, who is and always shall be, “a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.” Mika, like all liberals, is a murderer and a liar, because she worships the devil in and through the sacred negro. So when Mika speaks ex cathedra from the holy liberal pulpit of MSNBC, we must listen to what she says, not as our doctrine, but as a revelation from her master, the devil. And we see in the great Mika’s condemnation of the non-vaccinated the truth behind the COVID-19 ‘crisis.’

COVID-19 was created by the American medical-scientific establishment and the Chinese government to kill and control white Europeans and destroy the economies of the white European nations. The fact that blacks were and are particularly susceptible to COVID-19 did not and does not bother the liberals in the slightest. The liberals do not care about individual blacks; if they did they would follow Christian policies similar to the old South and apartheid South Africa. Those societies more than any other societies actually tried to elevate, morally and economically, blacks to a higher level of existence in which they were something other than beasts. As it stands now, the liberals worship blacks in the abstract because they need them to justify and sanction all the blasphemies and depravities of Liberaldom. So long as Black Lives Matter reigns supreme, Satan shall reign supreme.

The COVID-19 virus was used to destroy Trump, who was unique among American Republican presidents in that he actually wanted white people to be part of America, but the virus was not concocted solely to destroy Trump. European nations that never had a Trump are using COVID-19 for their own ends, and the liberals are keeping the COVID-19 ‘crisis’ going in this country even though Trump has been disposed of. So what is the reason for COVID-19? Isn’t it obvious? COVID-19 is a very useful tool in the hands of the malevolent liberals. They can use it to further solidify and perpetuate their kingdom of hell on earth. “All must be vaccinated” is liberal double-speak; what they mean is all whites must obey all the dictates of liberalism. And all the dictates of Liberaldom can ultimately be summed up by one prime directive. “The white Christ-bearing race must be exterminated.”

It is not a case of COVID-19 being a hoax. I live in a multi-generational household in which every member of my household, with one exception, caught the virus.<sup>(1)</sup> Thankfully no one in my household died or had to be hospitalized, but it was a serious illness. And I know of many other people who have contracted the illness, but this illness, this thing called COVID-19, has been treated differently than other illnesses that plagued our people in the Christian and Christian-fumes eras of our history. The liberals deliberately created, in league with the Chinese communists, COVID-19; they fought tooth and nail to prevent people from recovering from the illness, and they are doing everything possible to keep the illness alive in order to consolidate their power over the American people. Why do they need power? Because too many white Americans — Trump’s election in 2016 was a warning to the liberals — will not go willingly to the gas chambers. So through COVID-19 and other ‘crises’ that will be coming down the liberal pike, the liberals hope to complete the extermination of the white race, always exempting themselves, of course, who have gone beyond whiteness (“I’m black inside,” intones Chris Cuomo).

It is not a good sign that America has ‘achieved’ a 70% vaccination record. That is a terrible thing to contemplate, because it indicates that Americans still, despite the fact that the medical-scientific community worked hand in glove with the Chinese government to create COVID-19, believe in Science writ large. To oppose Science is to oppose the liberals’ Holy Ghost, and just as opposing the Holy Ghost is the unforgivable sin in Christianity, so is opposing Science the unforgivable sin in the liberals’ satanic inversion of Christianity. Through abstract reason, the sacred negro, and holy science, the liberals promise redemption for all the members of a universalist community of men and women of color, and, of course, the desouled illuminated whites who have elevated themselves to a ‘higher’ level of existence than the ‘racist’ Europeans of the past.

It is not, unfortunately, that the 30% of unvaccinated Americans are unvaccinated because they are Christian Europeans getting ready to rise and ride against Liberaldom in the name of Christ the King. The unvaccinated remain unvaccinated for a myriad of reasons, most of which have nothing to do with Christianity. Quite the contrary, most of the professed Christians in the ranks of the moderate liberals are pro-vaccination. And that is understandable since the moderate liberals, the conservatives, do not look on liberalism as institutionalized Satanism. This vaccine crisis is part of a very old gambit of Satan that he has used time and time again: “Intelligence is science, and science is truth,” Satan tells us. And who wants to be stupid? Isn’t abstract reason the first person of the liberals’ trinity? We are back with Balzac who skewered the decadent intelligentsia of Paris: “In Paris, when they say a man has a good heart, they mean he is as stupid as a rhinoceros.” The unvaccinated do not have complete trust in the medical-scientific establishment, and that mistrust is the beginning of wisdom, a wisdom that could lead — but it is by no means written — to the foolishness of God.

In that magnificent novel, *Shane*, Marian Starrett laments the existence of guns. She yearns for the day when there will be no guns in the valley because then, she fantasizes, there will be no more killing. Shane very gently disagrees. He tells her that a gun is just a tool, no better or no worse than the man who wields it. So it is with reason; it is a tool, no better or no worse than the heart that wields it. But the moderate liberals do not regard reason as a tool of the heart; they regard it as an independent deity that can solve all of man's problems. The problem of mad-dog liberalism can be solved, the conservatives believe, by reference to the deity of reason. But the mad-dog liberals cannot be swayed by the deity called reason. They use reason to serve the passion in their hearts, the hatred of Jesus Christ and the Christ-bearing race. You cannot, as the conservatives in church and state maintain, reference pure reason in order to bypass the evil passions of the human heart. By doing so you will leave Satan and his passionate followers triumphant in the lists without any Christian challengers, because there can be no knights of charity without passionate hearts connected to His passionate heart. Banning passion and appealing to pure reason as an antidote to evil passions partakes of the same gun-banning wish of Marian Starrett; you must support the good passion, the Christ-centered passion, in order to defeat the passionate followers, through the sacred negro, of Satan. Hugh McGee's advice to his son is always apropos: "And think with passion, it's the only kind of thought that is worth anything."

On a weekly basis, I receive letters from 'conservatives' urging me to give money to and vote for Republican candidates. If I don't, they warn me, very bad things will happen: "It will be the end of our Republic." Shouldn't the conservatives address the problem of the rhinoceros in the bedroom before they continue to urge the white grazers to get out there and support the Republican Party? We *had* a presidential election in this anti-nation in which the man who recorded an astounding majority of the votes was not allowed to win the election because some of his policies were not sufficiently anti-white and anti-Christian to please the liberal cabal that rules our anti-nation. If the conservatives want me to send funds to the protestors who went unarmed against the brutal, sadistic Capitol Police on January 6<sup>th</sup>, I will gladly send them funds. If they want me to join them in an effort to free Derek Chauvin, I will send them funds. But I have nothing but contempt for moderate liberals who think more liberalism is the cure for liberalism. Satan is the font of liberalism, and he is and always shall be a murderer and a liar. The conservatives who urge us to seek redemption through the democratic process urge us to seek redemption from the satanic founder of the democratic process. "Crucify Him," and then, "Crucify His people," will always be the battle cry of the men and women in charge of the demon-cratic process. Pure reason will not put a stop to such evil.

How does a demonic creature such as Mika Brzezinski dare to use Christianity to defend her demonism? She is permitted to do so because of the conservatives in church and state have shifted from a faith in our Lord and Savior who rose from the dead on the third day to a faith in a 'Judeo-Greco-Roman-Celtic-Christian tradition.' Conservatives in the twentieth century affirmed God, a God of many faiths and many peoples, but they did not affirm the one true God of one particular people. Burke was very specific about what should be conserved — it was Christian Europe. He did not want to preserve a propositional faith in a generic God who was all things to all people. Christ cannot be blended with a messianic faith in the nation state of Israel or in a pantheon of gods, consisting of the sacred negro, Muhammed, and the gods of the Amazon Rain Forest. He is either our Beginning and our End, or He is a useful tool of the liberals, to be pulled out of the closet every time they want to put the moderate liberals on the defensive. Why do the conservatives, the type of people who send me letters instructing me to defeat the mad-dog liberals by voting Republican, always respond to the aggression of the liberals by ceding the high ground to the liberals? When Derek Chauvin arrested a black criminal and that criminal died of a heart attack while resisting arrest, the 'conservatives' met the liberals' war cry of 'racism,' with a cowardly betrayal of Derek Chauvin: "Most cops are good, just Derek Chauvin is bad." When a brave band of protestors charged the liberal barricades on January 6<sup>th</sup>, the conservatives responded to the liberals' charges of treason with, "Most of the protestors were non-violent." Pontius Pilate lives and thrives in the ranks of the conservatives. And Pontius Pilate seemed to have more remorse than our modern conservative Pontius Pilates because he could not pour the balm of, "I am not racist," over his soul.

Dickens closed his masterpiece, *A Christmas Carol*, by enjoining all of us to keep Christmas in our hearts as the repentant Scrooge kept Christmas in his heart: "May that be truly said of us and all of us!" Let it be truly said of us, the European remnant, that we are racist as the Dream of the Rood Christians of old Europe were racist, that we love our own with a passion that is grounded in the love of our Savior whose love passeth the understanding of 'pure' reason but enters and dwells within the heart that loves.+

---

(1) The medical-scientific community does not even understand the intricacies of the human body, so why on earth should we allow them to dictate to us on all things spiritual as well as physical? Despite living in close quarters with members of my family who had COVID-19, I did not contract the virus. I think it had something to do with my blood type, which differs from the rest of my family, but I'm not really sure why I didn't contract the virus. But of course our medical-scientific experts are sure about everything. And they are particularly sure that the dead do not rise again. We, the last Europeans, hold to the contrary: Christ did indeed rise from the dead on the third day, and He has prepared a place for us in His house of many mansions. That is what the COVID-19 crisis is all about, Charlie Brown, it is about the eternal war between Christ and the devil. We dare not, we must not, be found wanting in the great battle.

# The Minstrel Sleeps

August 7, 2021

Categories: Christ the Hero, Faithful hearts, Homeland, Resurrection

Tags: Alfred Lord Tennyson, Dream of the Rood, St. Paul, Thomas Hughes



Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die.

---

To the faithful in Christ who have followed Cambria Will Not Yield, we, his family, must tell you that the greatest man of our time has received his reward: Cambria Will Not Yield has left this world and gone to Christ's kingdom. Some of you may know this already: [Shotgun Barrel Straight](#) has posted a video on his blog in honor of Mr. Cambria, spoken from the heart which is thankfully received in our hearts, let us tell him. Thank you, Shotgun Barrel Straight; so many of your words are ours. You are right; there just does not seem to be any appropriate words to say, to express what this means to so many of us, to describe the man, the poet, the soldier, that Cambria Will Not Yield was.

He was a burning and a shining light in this land of darkness. What can we say in memoriam of him? How can we, his family, do better than to keep his blog up as long as we can for all to see and read? And how can we all do better than to take his words to our hearts and live for Christ and His people? His own writings stand as the best memorial; in them you can read of his entire life-long war for Jesus Christ and His people against Satan and his followers, battle by battle, for each article he wrote with his heart's blood. His passing was sudden; our Lord must have needed him right away to carry on the good fight elsewhere, just as a soldier in war is transferred, for he was and is Christ's soldier always.

*Arthur paused a moment, and then said quickly, "I'll tell you how it all happened. At first, when I was sent to the sick-room, and found I had really got the fever, I was terribly frightened. I thought I should die, and I could not face it for a moment. I don't think it was sheer cowardice at first, but I thought how hard it was to be taken away from my mother and sisters and you all, just as I was beginning to see my way to many things, and to feel that I might be a man and do a man's work. To die without having fought, and worked, and given one's life away, was too hard to bear. I got terribly impatient, and accused God of injustice, and strove to justify myself. And the harder I strove the deeper I sank. Then the image of my dear father often came across me, but I turned from it. Whenever it came, a heavy, numbing throb seemed to take hold of my heart, and say, 'Dead-dead-dead.' And I cried out, 'The living, the living shall praise Thee, O God; the dead cannot praise thee. There is no work in the grave; in the night no man can work. But I can work. I can do great things. I will do great things. Why wilt thou slay me?' And so I struggled and plunged, deeper and deeper, and went down into a living black tomb. I was alone there, with no power to stir or think; alone with myself; beyond the reach of all human fellowship; beyond Christ's reach, I thought, in my nightmare. You, who are brave and bright and strong, can have no idea of that agony. Pray to God you never may. Pray as for your life."*

*Arthur stopped—from exhaustion, Tom thought; but what between his fear lest Arthur should hurt himself, his awe, and his longing for him to go on, he couldn't ask, or stir to help him.*

*Presently he went on, but quite calm and slow. "I don't know how long I was in that state—for more than a day, I know; for I was quite conscious, and lived my outer life all the time, and took my medicines, and spoke to my mother, and heard what they said. But I didn't take much note of time. I thought time was over for me, and that the tomb was what was beyond. Well, on last Sunday morning, as I seemed to lie in that tomb, alone, as I thought, for ever and ever, the black, dead wall was cleft in two, and I was caught up and borne through into the light by some great power; some living, mighty spirit. Tom, do you remember the living creatures and the wheels in Ezekiel? It was just like that. 'When they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the voice of the Almighty, the voice of speech, as the noise of an host; when they stood, they let down their wings.' 'And they went every one straight forward: whither the spirit was to go, they went; and they turned not when they went.' And we rushed through the bright air, which was full of myriads of living creatures, and paused on the brink of a great river. And the power held me up, and I knew that that great river was the grave, and death dwelt there, but not the death I had met in the black tomb. That, I felt, was gone for ever. For on the other bank of the great river I saw men and women and children rising up pure and bright, and the tears were wiped from their eyes, and they put on glory and strength, and all weariness and pain fell away. And beyond were a multitude which no man could number, and they worked at some great work; and they who rose from the river went on and joined in the work. They all worked, and each worked in a different way, but all at the same work. And I saw there my father, and the men in the old town whom I knew when I was a child—many a hard, stern man, who never came to church, and whom they called atheist and infidel. There they were, side by side with my father, whom I had seen toil and die for them, and women and little children, and the seal was on the foreheads of all. And I longed to see what the work was, and could not; so I tried to plunge in the river, for I thought I would join them, but I could not. Then I looked about to see how they got into the river. And this I could not see, but I saw myriads on this side, and they too worked, and I knew that it was the same work, and the same seal was on their foreheads. And though I saw that there was toil and anguish in the work of these, and that most that were working were blind and feeble, yet I longed no more to plunge into the river, but more and more to know what the work was. And as I looked I saw my mother and my sisters, and I saw the Doctor, and you, Tom, and hundreds more whom I knew; and at last I saw myself too, and I was toiling and doing ever so little a piece of the great work. Then it all melted away, and the power left me, and as it left me I thought I heard a voice say, 'The vision is for an appointed time; though it tarry, wait for it, for in the end it shall speak and not lie, it shall surely come, it shall not tarry.' It was early morning I know, then—it was so quiet and cool, and my mother was fast asleep in the chair by my bedside; but it wasn't only a dream of mine. I know it wasn't a dream. Then I fell into a deep sleep, and only woke after afternoon chapel; and the Doctor came and gave me the Sacrament, as I told you. I told him and my mother I should get well—I knew I should; but I couldn't tell them why. Tom," said Arthur gently, after another minute, "do you see why I could not grieve now to see my dearest friend die? It can't be—it isn't—all fever or illness. God would never have let me see it so clear if it wasn't true. I don't understand it all yet; it will take me my life and longer to do that—to find out what the work is." —[Tom Brown's School Days](#)*

He would yearn to comfort each and every one of you now in your grief and fear, just as he ever strove to do when he was writing; there are so many works of Old Europe he quoted from to give and receive comfort. He would encourage you to read them now, we know, as you feel the need: Shakespeare's 31<sup>st</sup> Sonnet, *King Lear* (his favorite work of literature), *Tom Brown's School Days*, *Uncle Silas*, and *The Shepherd Who Watched by Night* to name a few, and especially the Gospels. The very last chapter he read aloud with us, his family, was St. John 16:

*Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the*

*world. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.*

Cambria Will Not Yield followed in the footsteps of our Lord and Savior and the antique Europeans; he took up the Cross and followed Him to the end; we know with certainty that he is risen with Him now.

*Then the young Hero – He was God almighty – firm and unflinching, stripped Himself; He mounted on the high cross, brave in the sight of many, when He was minded to redeem mankind. Then I trembled when the Hero clasped me; yet I durst not bow to the earth, fall to the level of the ground, but I must needs stand firm. -The Dream of the Rood*

But to those of us who must remain and wait yet a little while, Cambria Will Not Yield would have this to say in St. Paul's words:

*Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.*

He read those words to us, his family, many times; he would want to say them to you now as well.

Our prayers are with you all; please pray for us; we are in need of them. We all need Christ's comfort and strength now more than ever, as night seems to be closing in around us; hold on till the dawn in His name and for His sake! Cambria Will Not Yield is still standing with us, for his spirit of loving fire can never be quenched. He was a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief, as our Lord was. Although he had full cause of weeping, he journeyed out of the shadow of the raven and into the light of the risen Lamb.

*Then from the dawn it seem'd there came, but faint  
As from beyond the limit of the world,  
Like the last echo born of a great cry,  
Sounds, as if some fair city were one voice  
Around a king returning from his wars.*

-Idylls of the King

If you would find comfort in them, please listen to Cambria Will Not Yield's favorite hymn, [Abide With Me](#); he played it more times than a man can count, he loved it so. Also, [No More Nights](#), which he came to love deeply in his later years.

Jesus Christ abide with you, dear brethren, and all of us! He will not leave us comfortless; believe that. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. May the grace of our lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen. +

